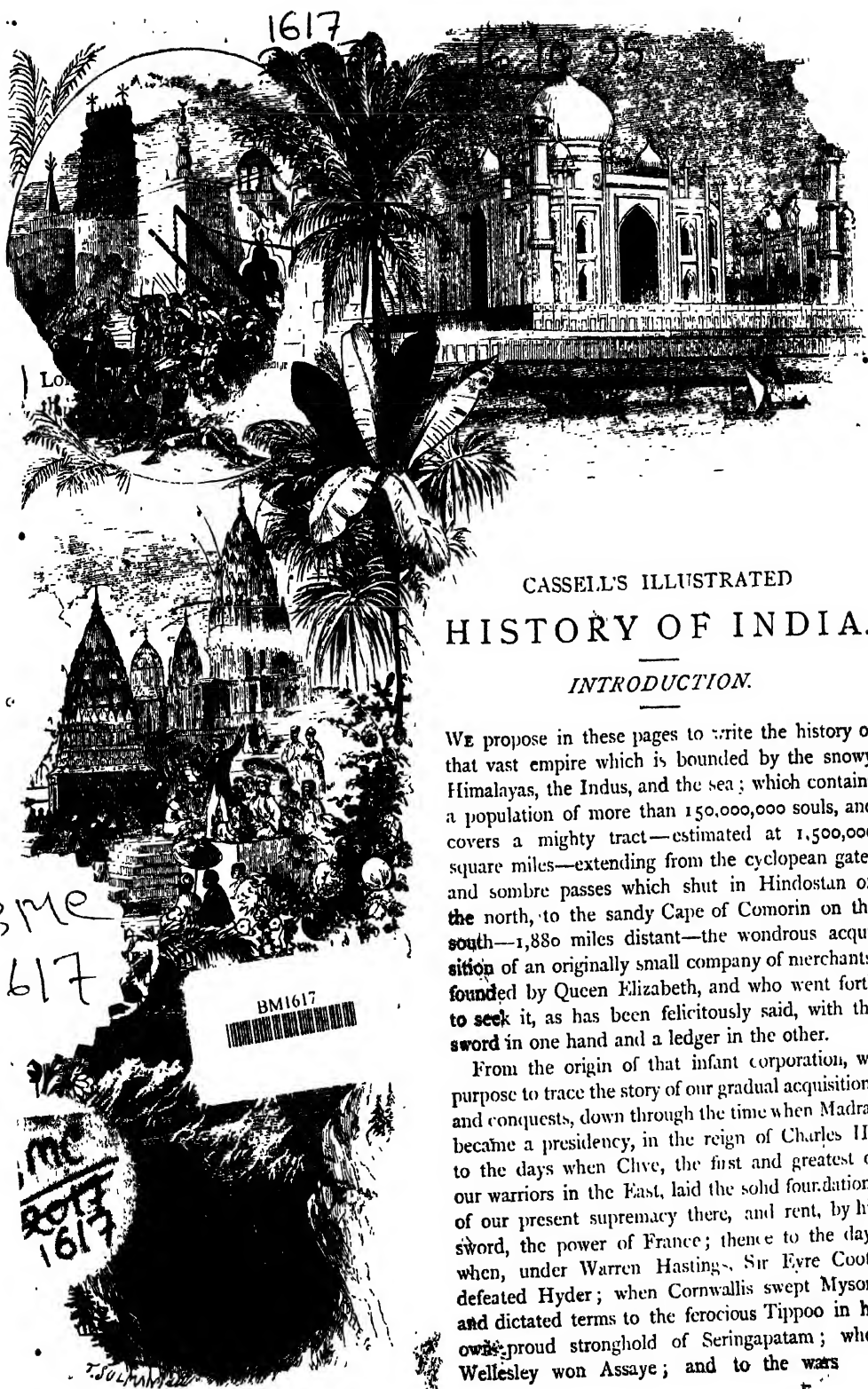


Cassell's Illustrated
History of India.

1865

Sas.
Librarian

Uttarpara Joykrishna Public Library
Govt. of West Bengal



CASSELL'S ILLUSTRATED HISTORY OF INDIA.

INTRODUCTION.

WE propose in these pages to write the history of that vast empire which is bounded by the snowy Himalayas, the Indus, and the sea; which contain a population of more than 150,000,000 souls, and covers a mighty tract—estimated at 1,500,000 square miles—extending from the cyclopean gates and sombre passes which shut in Hindostan on the north, to the sandy Cape of Comorin on the south—1,880 miles distant—the wondrous acquisition of an originally small company of merchants, founded by Queen Elizabeth, and who went forth to seek it, as has been felicitously said, with the sword in one hand and a ledger in the other.

From the origin of that infant corporation, we purpose to trace the story of our gradual acquisitions and conquests, down through the time when Madras became a presidency, in the reign of Charles II., to the days when Clive, the first and greatest of our warriors in the East, laid the solid foundations of our present supremacy there, and rent, by his sword, the power of France; thence to the days when, under Warren Hastings, Sir Eyre Coote defeated Hyder; when Cornwallis swept Mysore and dictated terms to the ferocious Tippoo in his own proud stronghold of Seringapatam; when Wellesley won Assaye; and to the wars

more recent years, when, in succession, Dalhousie, and Canning annexed and ruled under our sway four extensive kingdoms—the Punjaub and Pegu, Oude and Nagpore, all their cities and fortresses; and down to the horrors of the Mutiny, when the pious and heroic Havelock, Neill, Campbell, and Outram—"the Bayard of India," as he was named by the lion-hearted conqueror of Scinde—so terribly avenged the destruction of our people, and when, eventually, the title of the Queen of the British Isles, or Empress of India, was proclaimed in the Palace of Delhi by the heroic Wilson and his soldiers, after the two last descendants of the Great Mogul had perished under Hodson's hand in the Tomb of Hoonauon.

Nor shall we forget, in the course of our history, those other brave men, who in remote and perilous times have traversed Hindostan, and whose "kingdom was not of the sword"—the courageous missionaries of many lands and creeds; for there St. Thomas the Apostle, who is said to have perished at Melapore, and St. Francis Xavier, "the Apostle of the Indies," led the van of those preachers who, in later years, came from Britain, Holland, and Denmark, facing peril and toil, and in many instances cruel martyrdom.

Apart from the political progress of the East India Company, the moral and material advancement of India (so signally shown when Lord Dalhousie introduced cheap postage, railways, and the telegraph) shall all be traced, together with that commerce which every year assumes vaster proportions, and is capable of almost indefinite extension; for now the rich natural productions of Hindostan are being more fully developed, under the appliances of Western civilisation; and thus, while wool comes from Afghanistan, and 2,4,000,000 acres of land are already under cotton cultivation, and 1,000,000 acres under indigo, the silver blossoms and tender leaves of the tea plant are beginning to cover the slopes of the Himalayas and the hill districts of the North-Western Provinces; rice is being grown in the south, and thousands of logs of teak are now furnished yearly by the forests of Tenasserim, of Martaban, and Malabar.

All the vast means there for accumulating wealth are being more and more developed by the introduction of those railways, some of the bridges and viaducts of which are the most magnificent in the world; and when the ten great contemplated lines are finally complete, we shall have a grand total of 5,850 miles. Then, indeed, will the mineral wealth of India, its mines of coal, copper, and iron, tin, bago and lead, gold, silver, and precious

stones, be more fully developed, and European enterprise rewarded.

In these pages we also propose to refer occasionally, in their place, to the past historical events of India, without wearying the reader by much of barbarous dynastic record; and also to the wonderful vegetable productions of that teeming land, and the marvels of its native architecture, the remains of its mosques and tombs, and rock-hewn temples, from the vast fabrics of the Patans, who as Bishop Heber says, built like giants but finished their work like jewellers, to the more elegant and luxurious red-and-white marble palaces of the Moguls, and other princes.

Our vital interests in India are great beyond doubt, as it affords—and for ages, let us continue to do so—the most ample arena for exertion, honest enterprise, and hardy valour, which when combined, make a character so essentially British.

We do not, as yet, possess the whole of India, as two other nations still retain some places of but small value—the French at Pondicherry and Carical on the east coast, at Mahé on the south west, and at Chandernagore on the Hooghley, above Calcutta; the Portuguese at Goa, on the west coast, and at Diu, on the north, between the Gulfs of Cambay and Cutch; while the Looshans, and the Bhotanese on the southern slopes of the Himalaya range, are fast coming under our sway.

A subject so attractive and of such importance as India, has caused the production of several works, by distinguished soldiers and statesmen, many of whom bore important parts in the events they describe. Yet, with all this interest in our Indian possessions, which in extent are equal to all Europe without Russia, we have much to learn yet, by a general and comprehensive history.

"Every schoolboy knows who imprisoned Montezuma, and strangled Atahualpa," says Macaulay, in his Essay on Lord Clive; "but we doubt whether one in ten, even among English gentlemen of highly-cultivated minds, can tell who won the battle of Buxar, who perpetrated the massacre of Patna, whether Surajah Dowlah ruled in Oude or in Travancore, or whether Holkar was a Hindu or a Mussulman. The people of India, when we subdued them, were ten times as numerous as the Americans whom the Spaniards vanquished, and were at the same time quite as highly civilised as the Spaniards. They had reared cities larger and fairer than Saragossa or Toledo, and buildings more beautiful and costly than the Cathedral of Seville. They could show bankers richer than the richest firms of Barcelona or Cadiz; viceroys

whose splendour far surpassed that of Ferdinand the Catholic, myriads of cavalry, and trains of artillery, which would have astonished the Great Captain; so it might be expected that every Englishman who takes any interest in any part of history, would be curious to know how ^{few} of his countrymen, separated from their home, an immense ocean, subjugated, in the course of a few years one of the greatest empires of the world."

CHAPTER I.

A BRIEF GLANCE AT ANCIENT INDIA AND THE FORMATION OF THE EAST INDIA COMPANY.

LONG before the invasion of India by Alexander the Great, the Greeks had travelled there in search of knowledge, for there, more than two thousand years, or, as Voltaire says, "the celebrated Pilpay wrote his Moral Fables, that have since been translated into almost all languages. All subjects whatever have been treated by way of fable or allegory by the Orientals, and particularly the Indians." Hence it is that Pythagoras, who studied among them, and Pachimerus, a Greek of the thirteenth century, expressed themselves in the spirit of Indian parables.

India, on this side of the Ganges, had long been subject to the Persians, and Alexander, the avenger of Greece and the conqueror of Darius, led his army into that part of India which had been tributary to his enemy. Though his soldiers were averse to penetrate into a region so remote and unknown, Alexander had read in the ancient fables of Macedonia that Bacchus and Hercules, each a son of Jupiter, as he believed himself to be, had marched as far, so he determined not to be outdone by them, and thus the year B.C. 327 saw his legions entering India by what is now called the Candahar route, the common track of the ancient caravans from Northern India to Agra and Ispahan. Encountering incredible difficulties, and surmounting innumerable dangers, he marched across "the Land of the Five Waters," now named the Punjab, to the banks of the Hydaspes (a tributary of the Indus) and the Hyphasis. "No country," says Robertson in his "Historical Disquisitions," "he had hitherto visited, was so populous and well cultivated, or abounded in so many valuable productions of nature and of art, as that part of India through which he led his army; but when he was informed in every place, and probably with exaggerated description, how much the Indus was inferior to the Ganges, and how far all that he had hitherto beheld, was surpassed in the happy regions through which that great river flows, it is not wonderful that his eagerness to view and take possession of them

should have prompted him to assemble his soldiers, and propose that they should resume their march towards that quarter where wealth, dominion, and fame awaited them."

But after the erection of twelve stupendous altars on the bank of the river, he found himself by the pressure of circumstances compelled to issue orders for retiring back to Persia. Collecting a numerous fleet of galleys, built of pines, firs, and cedars, he descended to the mouth of the Indus, where his army and fleet parted company. He marched with the troops by land, while Nearchus, who wrote an account of the voyage, sailed with the galleys through an ocean till then unknown. He went by the Persian Gulf and the Euphrates, while Alexander was traversing the deserts of Gedrosia, now called Beloochistan.

By this expedition of the adventurous Greeks, a sudden light was thrown upon the vast nations of the East, though the accounts given by Nearchus of all he saw—the serpents, the banian-tree, the birds that spoke like men (unless he meant the parrots)—were greatly exaggerated.

Alexander left behind some of his hardiest Macedonians to keep possession of the conquered country on the banks of the Indus, but his death, which happened shortly after his retreat, hastened the downfall of the Persian power in Hindostan, though it was not quite annihilated. Seleucus, the holder of Upper Asia, on the death of his warlike master, marched into those countries which had been subdued, partly to establish his own authority and partly to curb the King of Maghada, with whom eventually he concluded an amicable treaty by giving him his daughter in marriage on receiving fifty elephants; and from this time till nearly two hundred years after, we hear no more of Indian affairs. With all the exaggerations of early writers, if, says Elphinstone in his history, "we discard the fables derived from Grecian mythology, and those that are contrary to the course of nature, we shall find more reason to admire the accuracy of these early writers,

wonder at the mistakes into which they in a country so new and different from their and where they had everything to learn by of interpreters, generally through the medium of languages than one."

Strabo and others refer to the Indian sects of philosophers, and the peculiar lives led by the Brahmins, together with the feats of those half-crazed ascetics called "fakirs," of the self-immolation named the "suttee," and those magnificent and wonderful fairs, festivals, and gatherings for religious purposes, which successive foreign conquests, and the mingling of foreign blood, have all left to-day unchanged, as when the trumpets of the Macedonians proclaimed the fall of Porus.

During those dark ages that followed the decline and fall of the Roman Empire, the Oriental trade with Europe, small though it was, became greatly diminished, but some of the productions of the East had become necessary for, and consecrated to, the services of the Church. "Even in our remote island of Great Britain, and in the poor semi-barbarous Saxon period, the venerable Bede had collected in his bleak northern monastery at Jarrow some of the spices and scented woods of the East. At the dawn of our civilisation under Alfred the Great, English missionaries are said to have found their way to the coast of Malabar."

There, in the sixth century, a merchant of Syria settled with his family and left his religion, which was Nestorian, and as these Eastern sectaries multiplied, they called themselves Christians of St. Thomas.

Vasco de Gama's discovery of the way to India by the Cape of Good Hope in 1498, where, according to Canoëns, he saw the Spirit of the Mountain and the Storm, led to a great commercial revolution; the Eastern trade, which hitherto had its emporiums at Constantinople, Venice, and Amalfi, and whither goods were conveyed from India, Persia, and Asia Minor, or by the way of the Red Sea, was turned into the Deccan and a new channel. Hence the most valuable part of that important trade was placed in the hands of the Portuguese merchants and conquerors, who, by holding the Straits of Malacca, secured the commerce of the Indian Archipelago, and monopolised it for all Europe during the sixteenth century, till on the English, Dutch, and French beginning to find their way round the dreaded "Cape of Storms," and to appear on the shores of India, the Portuguese lost their influence as rapidly as they won it.

In 1588, the year of the Armada, one of the bravest navigators of the Elizabethan age, Captain Thomas Cavendish, returned after a two years'

exploration of the Molucca Isles, where he had been kindly treated by the natives, who assured him that they were quite as willing to trade with the English as with the Portuguese. He and others applied for a small squadron for India, but the English Government did not think the subject deserving of consideration.

The first genuine English expedition to India partook more of the warlike and piratical than the commercial element, and was rather a species of cruise against the Portuguese.

It was fitted out in 1591, under Captains George Raymond and James Lancaster, and consisted of three large ships, the *Penelope*, *Merchant-Roy*, and *Edward-Bonaventure*, which sailed from Plymouth on the 10th of April.* Storms and tempests, wreck and other disasters, attended this expedition, which never saw India, and after more than three years of perilous wandering in unknown seas, Lancaster, almost the sole survivor, landed at Rye on the 20th of May, 1604, a ruined man.

As another example of the danger and uncertainty of voyaging by unexplored seas and shores in those days, when navigation was in its infancy, and superstition invested unknown lands with more than material perils, we may mention the expedition of Captain Wood, who sailed from London for the East Indies in 1591 with three vessels, the *Bar*, *Bear's-whelp*, and *Benjamin*. He was bearer of a letter from Queen Elizabeth vaguely addressed to the Emperor of China. Every species of disaster attended his little squadron, which, instead of finding the East Indies, was driven to the West, where the last survivor was heard of at Puerto Rico, in 1601.

It was not until the great Sir Francis Drake captured five large Portuguese caravels, laden with the rich products of India, belonging to certain merchants of Turkey and the Levant, and brought from Bengal, Agra, Lahore, Pegu and Malacca—and undoubted intelligence of the wealth of the country had begun to flow in through other channels—that any anxiety was manifested by the English to participate in the riches of the East; and on the departure of the first Dutch expedition in 1591, under Cornelius Hootman, their national pride and rivalry were thoroughly roused.

In one of those five caravels taken at the Azores, named the *St. Philip*, there were found many papers and documents, from which the English fully learned the vast value of Indian merchandise, and also the method of trading in the Eastern world.†

Accordingly a company was suggested for that

* Camden and Hakluyt.

† Camden.

purpose, in September, 1599, the petitioners being Sir John Hart, Sir John Spencer, knights of London; Sir Edward Mitchellson, William Candish, Esq., Paul Banning, Robert Lee, Leonard Holiday, John Watts, John More, Edward Holmden, Robert Hampson, Thomas Smith, and Thomas Cambell, citizens and aldermen of London; and upwards of two hundred more, being those "of suche persons as have written with there owne handes, to venter in the pretended voiage to the Easte Indias (the whiche it maie please the Lorde to prosper), and the somes they will adventure: xxij September, 1599."

Such was the origin of that wonderful commercial body of merchants, who in time to come were to give the British colours to the slopes of the Himalayas, Burmah, Ava, Java, and through the gates of Peking.

The sum subscribed amounted to £30,133 6s. 8d., and a committee of fifteen was deputed to manage it. They were formed into "a body corporate and politic" by the title of "the Governor and Company of Merchants of London, trading into the East Indies."

On the 16th of October, the queen having signified her approbation of their views, the committee began to exert themselves to procure armed vessels for the expedition, when suddenly—Spain having become desirous of peace—the whole affair was nearly crushed by the queen's approval being withdrawn, as she feared the voyage might give umbrage to Spain. Eventually, on the 31st of December, a Royal Charter of Privileges was given to the company of merchant adventurers, but conditionally for fifteen years only.*

Thomas Smith, alderman of the city of London, was named the first governor, with twenty-four members as a committee; and the space over which they were empowered to trade was of mighty extent, as it included Asia, Africa, and even America, with all cities and ports therein, and beyond the Cape of Good Hope to the Straits of Magellan.

The spring of 1601 saw the expedition in readiness at Woolwich, under the command of Captain James Lancaster, the unfortunate survivor of that squadron which left Plymouth in 1591.

It consisted of only four vessels; the *Red Dragon*, of 600 tons; the *Hector*, of 300 tons; the *Swan*, of the same tonnage; and the *Guest*, a victualling ship of 130 tons. They had on board in all 550 men, well furnished with arms, ammunition, and food, and had with them money and goods to the value of £20,000 as a trading stock.

* The Woolwich of that day was little more than a

* It is given at great length by Purchas at page 139, vol. i.

hamlet with a church, having a square tower double aisles, on a bare green eminence, north of which lay an old dock built by Henry VIII. Its inhabitants were chiefly fishermen; but we can easily imagine the excitement with which gathered crowds on shore, and in craft on river, must have watched the departure of Lancaster and his shipmates, when, on that eventful 15th of May, 1601, these four little vessels dropped down the Thames on their voyage to that distant land of which the people had scarcely the least idea, but which they regarded with something of awe and mystery. "It is curious," says Macaulay, "to consider how little the two countries, destined to be one day so closely connected, were then known to each other. The most enlightened Englishmen looked on India with ignorant admiration. The most enlightened natives of India were scarcely aware that England existed. Our ancestors had a dim notion of endless bazaars, swarming with buyers and sellers, and blazing with cloth of gold, with variegated silks, and with precious stones; of treasures where diamonds were piled in heaps, and sequins in mountains, of palaces compared with which Whitehall and Hampton Court were hovels, and of armies ten times as numerous as that which they had seen assembled at Tilbury to repel the Armada."

With such visions in their mind, and full of high hopes and aspirations, after a brief detention at Torbay, Lancaster's crews saw the white cliffs fade into the sea, and the 20th of June found them two degrees north of the line.

The first place they visited was the island of Sumatra, where they met a welcome reception. In the Malacca Straits, Lancaster captured a large Portuguese vessel having on board calico and spices sufficient to load all his ships, and on being thus suddenly enriched, he bore away for Bantam, in Java, where he left some agents—the first founders of the Company's factories, and sailing from thence for England, came safely to anchor in the Downs in September, 1603. James of Scotland had been crowned King of Great Britain three months before.

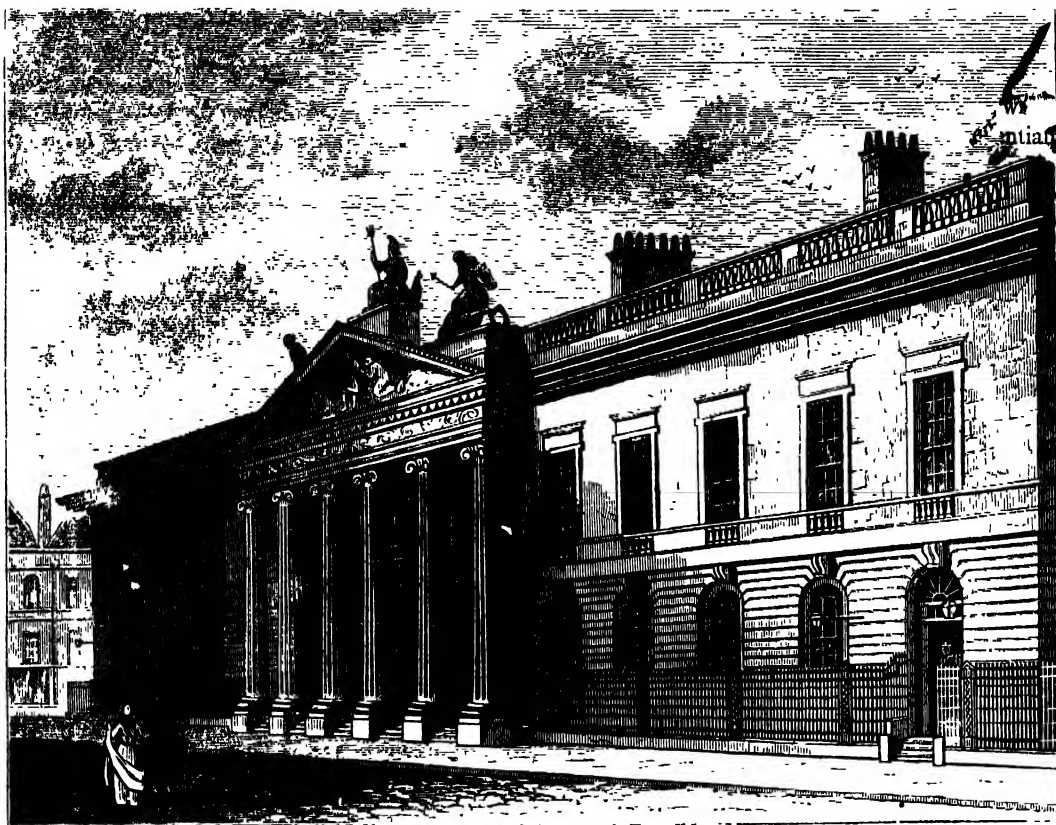
As three generations passed away before events seemed to indicate that the East India Company would ever become a great military and commercial power in Asia, a brief glance at its history will bring us to the reign of Charles II.

In 1609, the Company obtained a renewal of its charter for an undefined period, subject to its dissolution by government on a three years' notice; but before 1612, when a firman of the Mogul emperor confirmed the Company in certain privileges

W isles of the Indian Ocean, and on the con-
 a t of Hindostan, their ships had each made
 and voyages to the East, realising enormous
 profit.
 ore lew great things have had a smaller beginning
 than that stupendous anomaly, the British Empire
 in India," says a historian. "It was in the course
 of 1612, in the reign of James, that the agents of
 the Company timidly established their first little
 factory at Surat. . . . At this period the

of the Company for three years, he found all his
 diplomacy baffled by the intrigues of the Portu-
 guese; he obtained some new privileges, however,
 and some petty territorial grants.

The Dutch, whose power in the Indian Seas far
 exceeded ours, were quite as jealous, and in their
 resolution to secure the lucrative trade in the Spice
 Islands, perpetrated a detestable outrage at Am-
 boyna, a fertile isle in the Molucca group, where
 we had a little factory at Cambello, occupied by



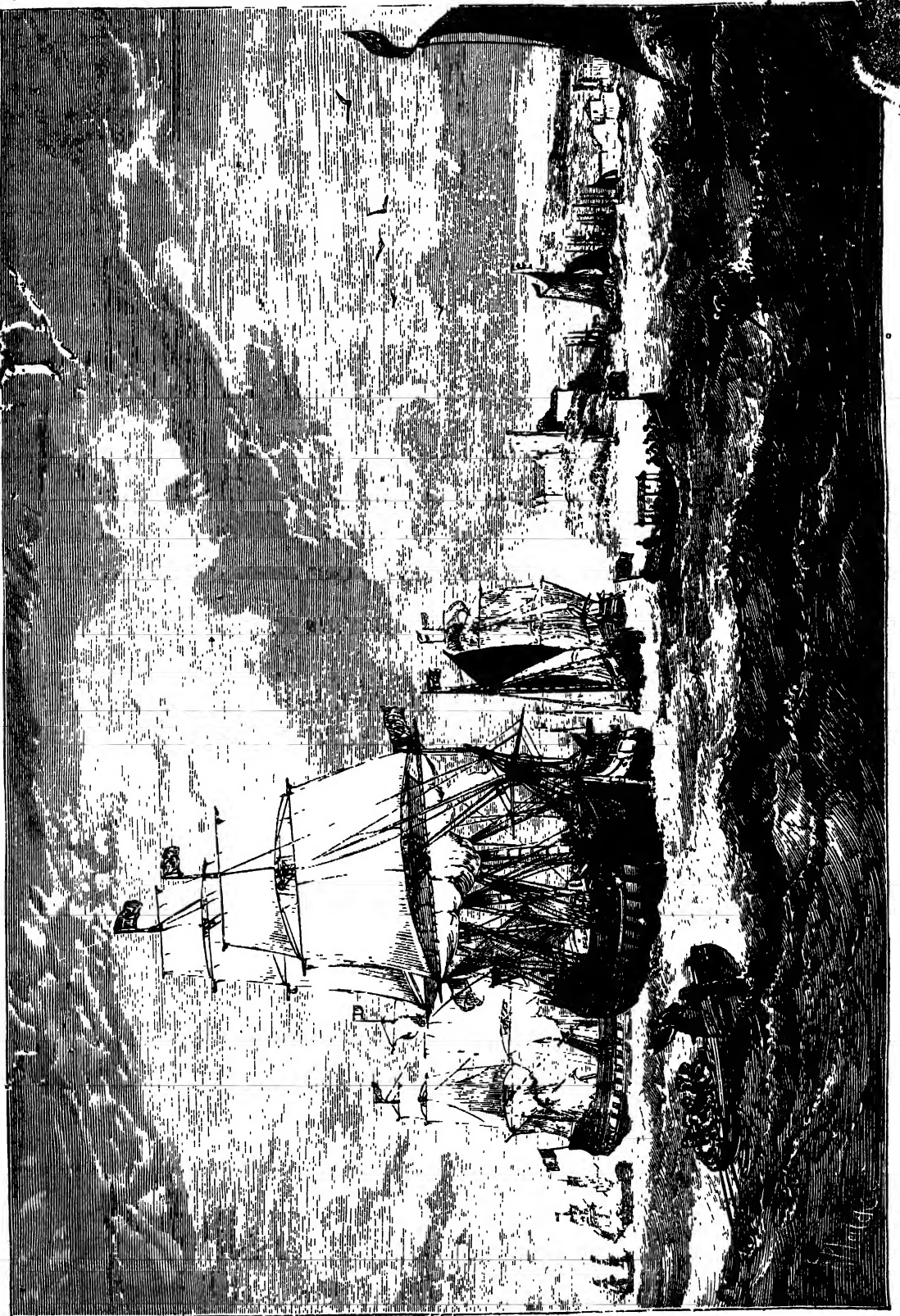
THE OLD EAST INDIA HOUSE.

nominal sovereigns of the whole of India, and the
 real masters and tyrants of a good part of it, were
 the Mohammedanised Mogul Tartars, a people widely
 different in origin, manners, laws, and religion from
 the Hindoos, the aboriginal, or ancient inhabitants
 of the country."

At the solicitation of the Company, yet in its
 infancy, King James sent as ambassador to Delhi
 Sir Thomas Roe, in 1615. Landing at Surat with
 eighty English men-at-arms in their full panoply of
 steel, with trumpeters, banners, and considerable
 pomp, he marched across the country to Ajmere,
 where, on the 23rd of December, the Mogul em-
 peror received him with unwonted ceremony; but
 though he remained as ambassador in the interests

eighteen defenceless Englishmen. These were
 invited, in a most friendly manner, one evening in
 1622, to visit the governor of a Dutch castle which
 was garrisoned by 200 soldiers. He suddenly
 closed the gates, accused them of a design to sur-
 prise his petty fortress, put them to the most
 dreadful tortures, and finally cut off the heads of
 ten.

A Portuguese and nine Japanese were de-
 capitated as accomplices of the English, and this
 massacre was, according to the Abbé Raynal,
 neither resented nor punished until the time of
 Cromwell; so our trade in the Spice Isles was
 abandoned, and the affairs of the Company began
 to decline, though in 1623, on the 4th of February,



er royal grant was made to them at West-
aster.*

an this crisis, through the favour in which a
broughton stood with the Shah Jehan, they
were authorised to make a new settlement on the
Hooghley, and the ground on which Fort St. George
and Madras now stand was obtained from a native
prince. Thereon Mr. Francis Day instantly erected
the fort, and soon around it there sprang the
town, to which the natives always resorted as the
best place for trading; and therein they placed the
money they acquired, to protect it from their native
lords and princes.

During the great Civil War and the suspension
of all trade, the East India Company sank into
comparative obscurity; but in 1652, Cromwell re-
confirmed its privileges, and to their peculiarity
must be ascribed the growth of its political power
in Hindostan. Upon payment of a very incon-
siderable sum, they obtained from the native
government of Bengal an unlimited right of trading
throughout that province, without the payment of
any duty.

On the 3rd of April, 1661, they obtained a new
charter from Charles II., giving them authority to
make peace or war with any prince or people "not
being Christians;" and seven years subsequently,
the isle of Bombay, which had been ceded by
Portugal, as part of the marriage portion of the

Princess Katharine, was granted to the Company,
"in free and common soccage, as of the manor of
East Greenwich, at an annual rent of £10 in gold
on the 30th of September in each year." Soon
after, the king granted the Company the isle of St.
Helena, as a resting-place. In 1687, the Company,
lured by the defensible nature of Bombay, trans-
ferred (says Bruce in his "Annals of the East India
Company") the presidency over all their settle-
ments thence, from Surat; and from that time the
city, with its magnificent port, began to spread and
increase steadily.

The Company did not get possession of the
"island of Bombaim," as Mr. Pepys calls it, with-
out some trouble, as the Portuguese, according to
Dr. Fryar, refused to surrender it, until five English
ships of war, under James Ley, Earl of Marl-
borough (who was killed in battle with the Dutch
in 1665), appeared before it, and "landed 500
stout men, commanded by Sir Abraham Shipman,
who was appointed generalissimo for the King of
England on the Indian coast."

Our Indian trade was liable to frequent inter-
ruptions by the fierce wars among the natives,
fermented in many instances by the Dutch and
Portuguese; and these insane strifes, by weakening
the Mogul empire, encouraged the English to re-
linquish the merely standing on their defence, and
to become aggressive.

CHAPTER II.

FOUNDATION OF CALCUTTA AND FALL OF THE MOGUL EMPIRE.—ANGRIA THE PIRATE, ETC.

IN this spirit, in the year 1686, a Captain Nichol-
son, with ten armed vessels of from twelve to
seventy guns each, having on board only six com-
panies of infantry, 1,000 strong, proceeded up the
Ganges, with orders to levy war against the Mogul
emperor, the descendant of the mighty Tamerlane,
the Nabob of Bengal!

This force was ridiculously small to be employed
for either warlike or political purposes; but the
totally undisciplined state of the Bengalese was
fully considered. Nicholson's orders were to seize
upon Chittagong, which had been the great empo-
rium in the time of Ackbar, and was now held by
the Rajah of Arracan. The interior is moun-
tainous and still covered with jungle; but between
the ranges are well-cultivated valleys, covered with
olive, mango, orange and plantain trees.

• Rymer's "Fœdera."

On being joined by the Company's fleet, Nichol-
son found himself at the head of nineteen sail; but
he managed matters so badly that he was beaten off
by the cannon of Chittagong; on which the nabob,
inflamed with fury, destroyed the English factories
at Patna and Cossimbazar. Upon this, the Com-
pany sent out a large ship called the *Defence*, with
a frigate, under Captain Heath, who had no better
success than his predecessor. He arrived in
Bengal in October, 1688, and came to anchor in
Balasore Roads. The members of our factory
there had been seized and imprisoned. Captain
Heath opened a negotiation for their release with
the native governor, but was too impatient to
await the result of it. He landed at the head of
160 soldiers, captured a thirty-gun battery, and
plundered the town; but the result of these pro-
ceedings was, that the English prisoners were carried

into the interior, where they perished in hopeless captivity.

From Balasore, Heath now sailed to Chittagong, and after some fruitless negotiations there, he went to Arracan, and finally arrived at Madras in March, 1689, with fifteen ships, on board of which was all that now remained to the Company of their once flourishing factories in Bengal. The irritated nabob vowed to expel the English everywhere from his dominions. Our factory at Surat was seized; the island of Bombay was environed by an Indian fleet; the factories at Masulipatam and Vizagapatam were captured, and in the latter many of the Company's servants were put to cruel and lingering deaths; but, according to the histories of Mill and others, the treasury of the nabob began to sink low, and he and his ministers believing that, from their recent failures, the Company could never become sufficiently strong to be formidable, became open to friendly negotiations.

Surat was restored with all that had been taken; but during our contests with the natives, our powerful enemies, the French, had won a footing in India, and established themselves at Pondicherry, on the Coromandel coast, where they obtained a slip of land, five miles in length, from the King of Bejapore, and at once proceeded to fortify it, while sedulously cultivating the friendship of such native princes as were inimical to the English, who now saw the stern necessity for obtaining, by gold or steel, an extension of territory to render them independent of all native princes.

"The truth is," says Sir John Malcolm, "that from the day on which the Company's troops marched one mile from their factories, the increase of their territories and their armies became a principle of self-preservation; and at the end of every one of those numerous contests in which they were involved by the jealousy, avarice, or ambition of their neighbours, or the rapacity or ambition of their servants, they were forced to adopt measures for improving their strength, which soon appeared to be the only mode by which they could avert the occurrence of similar danger."

While Pondicherry was growing in strength, so far were the Company from being able to attempt its destruction, that they were unable to hold the sea against a French squadron of four ships, armed with twenty, forty, sixty, and sixty-six guns respectively, which hovered on the western coast of India, and captured one of their large ships within forty miles of Bombay. About this time Tegna-patam, a town and port not far from Pondicherry, was acquired by purchase from a native prince, and thereon the Company built a stronghold called Fort

St. David. "It is rather curious," says Beve, "that while the French, with whom we were at war, allowed the Company quietly to fortify themselves in their immediate vicinity, the Dutch allies, manifested the utmost jealousy, and refused to recognise the right which the Company claimed, in virtue of their purchase, to levy harbour dues and customs."

About nine years later, more important acquisitions were made by the Company. Aurungzebe, the Mogul emperor, had made his son Assim Ooshaun, Viceroy of Bengal, and as the latter aspired to dethrone his father, as Aurungzebe had dethroned his, money was requisite for the scheme. Thus, for a good round sum he sold to the East India Company the zemindarships of Govindpore, Chutanutty, and Calcutta. The word *zemindar*, according to Grant's "Inquiry into the Nature of Zemindary Tenures" (1791), signifies a possessor or holder of land, without ascertaining the particular mode of tenure, or the interest in the lands holden. But in 1707, nine years after these territories were acquired, Fort William (so called in honour of the late reigning king) was finished, a town rose under its protection—the future "City of Palaces"—and the Company made Calcutta its presidency, and it rapidly rose to the dignity of being capital of British India.

The actual founder of our settlement at Calcutta was Mr. Job Charnock, one of the first Englishmen who made a conspicuous figure in the political theatre of India, and who, it may literally be said, laid the first stone of the mighty fabric of our Eastern Empire; and his tombstone was long visible in the old cemetery of Calcutta. The Company had now a footing in Bengal, similar to that it already possessed at Madras and Bombay.

In 1693, King William had granted a new charter to the Company, under which it was required to augment its capital stock, then amounting to £756,000, to £1,500,000, and to export in every year British produce to the value of £100,000. But the power of the Crown to grant such a monopoly was questioned by the Commons, who passed a resolution declaring, "that it is the right of all Englishmen to trade to the East Indies, or to any part of the world, unless prohibited by Act of Parliament." In this situation the affairs of the Company remained until 1698, when, to obtain a charter conferring an exclusive right of trading to India, £2,000,000, at eight per cent., were offered to Government by a number of subscribers unconnected with the old Company, which, to maintain its privileges, had previously offered £700,000 at four per cent.

us were two East India Companies erected in the same kingdom, which could not but be as prejudicial to each other. A few private persons now began to speculate on their own risk, of establishing a kind of third company. In 1702, these corporations were in a measure united by an indenture tripartite, to which the queen was the third party, and six years later saw them perfectly consolidated by Act of the first British Parliament, by their later name of the "United Company of Merchants trading to the East Indies."

From this period, the Company has occupied a station of vast importance in the commercial

infuriated mob, on a gibbet within the high-water mark.* Before the Consolidating Bill had passed the Commons, the Great Mogul, Aurungzebe, a man whose heart never felt a generous sentiment or inspired that feeling in the heart of another—died, and fierce wars followed his death.

His son Azim, or Assim, was proclaimed emperor in Hindostan; his son Bahadur Shah seized the remote throne of Cabul, and marching down to Agra, at the head of the hardy Afghans, the ferocious Kyberees, and other tribes, defeated his rival in a severe battle, in which Azim and his two grown-up sons were slain, and his youngest, an infant, was captured.



RIVER VIEW IN RAIPOOTANA.

interests of this country; and an account of the various legislative provisions which have been made for its support and regulation may be found incorporated in most of the histories of England. At this period English and Scottish ships seem at times to have fought each other in Indian waters, as some of those sent from Edinburgh by the Darien Company were, after the ruin of that colony by the artifices of William III., attacked, and their crews treated as pirates. For acting thus, an English captain named Green, was seized in 1705, when in command of the *Worcester*, East Indiaman, in Burntisland harbour, together with thirteen of his crew, who were alleged to have been concerned in the murder of an entire Scottish crew in the Indian Seas. For this, after a due trial, Green and two of his crew were conducted to Leith, and there hanged, amid the execrations of an

Scarcely was the sword sheathed, when a prince named Cambakah unfurled the standard of revolt in that spacious district named the Deccan, or "the South," a term applied by Hindoo writers to all that portion of Hindostan which lies to the south of the Nerbudda river; but in advancing, he was defeated and slain near Hyderabad.

Every event subsequent to this, by weakening the Mogul, tended to strengthen the Company's prospects of territorial aggrandisement; for though thus victorious, he was compelled to make a truce that was humbling and dishonourable with the plundering Mahrattas, and to stoop to a compromise with the Rajpoots. These were barely accomplished, when the fierce and fanatic Sikhs burst into his territories and ravaged them as far as Lahore on the one side, and the gates of Delhi on the other.

* Burton's "Trials."

In the towns captured, they massacred, with wanton barbarity, men, women,* and children, and even dug up the bodies of the dead, that they might become food for birds and beasts of prey. They were led by a chief called Bandu, who had been bred a religious ascetic, and who combined with bold and daring counsels a sanguinary nature.

Bahadur Shah had to march against them in person, and compelled them to retire to the mountains, where Bandu took refuge in a fort, which, though surrounded, was too strong to be stormed. The Sikhs cut a passage through at the point of the sword, and a man was taken, who gave himself up as Bandu, that the latter might escape. The emperor, though sufficiently struck by the prisoner's noble self-devotion to spare his life, yet was ungenerous enough to send him in an iron cage to Delhi.*

Bahadur died soon after, in February, 1712, and left four sons to contend for the throne. Zehander Shah, who triumphed over his brothers, after putting to death every prince of the blood he could lay hands on, by having their eyes torn out of the sockets, was in a few months dethroned by his nephew Farokshir, though already the Hindoos were beginning to feel, that for the vast majority of the population of India, any form of government would be better than this, and these convictions made the coming reign of the Company easier.

Farokshir had been seven years on his bloody throne, when again the Mahrattas, and the Sikhs under Bandu, invaded him. The latter was made prisoner, and conveyed to Delhi with a hundred and forty others, all of whom were beheaded, while their unfortunate leader was tortured to death. The emperor soon after was assassinated, and succeeded by a young prince of the blood, who died in three months, to be succeeded by another youth, who died—most probably by poison—within a shorter period. Long ere this, the Mahratta drum had been heard in every part of the empire, and wherever it was beaten, carnage, ravage, and plunder ensued.

Mohammed Shah was now set upon the throne, and under him, the empire of the Great Mogul crumbled away. The Hindoos and Mohammedans began to fight constantly, even in Delhi; and the Shiah and Soonees, the two rival Moslem sects, slaughtered each other. Under the rule of the Nizam-ul-Mulk, the Deccan was rent from the empire; the Rohillas seized upon the northern provinces, and in 1739, all went still more to wreck and ruin, when the Persians, under the great Nadir

Shah, 80,000 strong, laid siege to Candahar, pushing on, crossed the Indus by a bridge of boats, and advanced into the Punjab, massacring Hindoos and Mohammedans.

Delhi was taken and sacked. From sunrise to sunset that magnificent city was given up to the fury of 20,000 soldiers; and slaughter, rapine, and outrage reigned in their most horrible forms. Nadir's sole object was plunder. He seized the imperial treasures and the jewels of the famous "peacock throne"—a mass of priceless gems. He plundered all the Omrahs of the empire, and the common inhabitants, employing every species of the most inhuman torture to extort contributions. Many died under these cruelties, and many slew themselves to escape them.

After a residence of fifty-eight days, he marched from Delhi, carrying off with him treasure, in money, plate, and jewels, to the value of £30,000,000 sterling.

The Mogul had escaped with his life only. He preserved his liberty, but was so stupefied by his humiliation and defeat, that a kind of lethargy, born of despair, seized him. His capital was a ruin; his treasury empty; his army destroyed; the sources of revenue gone; the Mahrattas threatened him on the south, while the Afghans hung like a thundercloud on the mountains of the north-west; and now it was that, amidst this dissolution and dismemberment of his own mighty empire, the British began to lay the sure and solid foundation of theirs.

About this time Angria the pirate greatly infested the Indian seas, his flotilla being always recruited by the military and other stores captured from British ships. An expedition was fitted out against him in 1737. Among those commanding the Company's troops were William Mackenzie, son of the Earl of Cromartie, formerly of the Scots Brigade; and among the Company's sea officers Patrick, son of James, Lord Torphichen. But the whole force perished in a tempest; and Angria and his brother, also a pirate, held the seas against all comers, till naval operations were taken against them by Commodore Bagwell.

After long watching for Angria, on the 22nd of December, 1738, he at last descried this ferocious wretch, who was for so long the terror of the Eastern seas, issuing with nine grabs and thirteen gallivats from the strong port of Gheriah, which opens in a point of land that juts out into the ocean 170 miles southward of Bombay, and forms a good land-locked harbour. The fortress here was the abode and stronghold of Angria. Grabs were three-masted, square-rigged vessels of about 200 tons,

* Bohn's "India;" "Hist. of the Punjab," &c.

us
the
al
s
n
of
e
The
7c
though
their
force
was
greatly
superior
to
his,
they
fled
from
his
cannon,
and
took
shelter
in
Rajah-
pore.
Their
swift
sailing
rendered
them
successful
in
flight,
and
though
they
suffered
from
Bagwell's
broad-
sides,
they
contrived
to
elude
him,
and
in

complaint at Bombay; and Captain Inchbird was compelled to make prizes of his grabs, gallivats, and fishing boats. Nevertheless Menajee seized upon the isle of Elephanta, so celebrated for its wonderful cave and mythological sculptures, which have been so often described, and which lies only seven miles south-west of Bombay. When at last reduced to misfortune by the neglect of his brother, he became the sycophant of the British, and humbled himself to beg their aid-- but for a time only.



VILW NEAR CAPE COMORIN

spite of his vigilance, while he pursued them, some of their ships captured certain British merchantmen. Soon after this craven flight from Bagwell's little squadron, four large East Indianmen were attacked by a powerful flotilla belonging to the same pirate chief. A single ship of the commercial squadron beat them off with severe loss; though the British in their sea encounters with these pirates were deficient in promptitude, their physical strength, however, caused them to be greatly dreaded, while their capacity to handle large ships inspired wholesome fear.

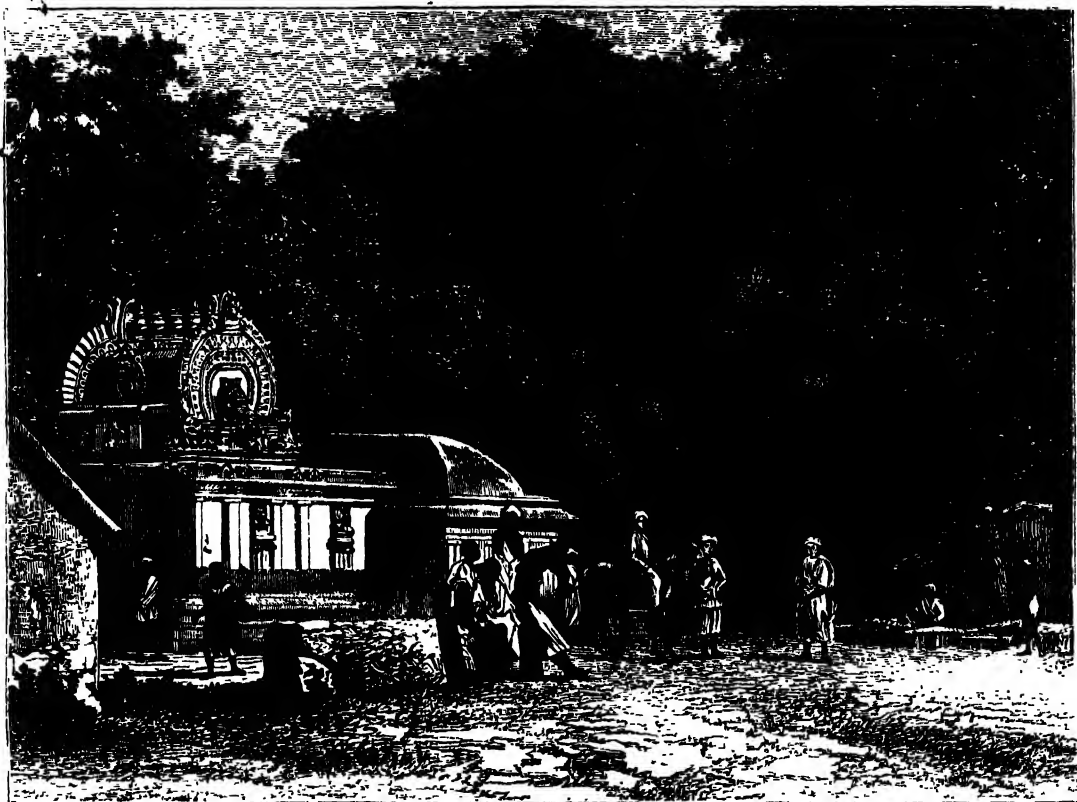
The union of the clashing interests of the rival Indian companies, the tranquillity and commercial prosperity, all contributed to increase the value of our growing possessions in the East, and to encourage the Company to seek their extension. "Every year some branch in India was lopped off the Mogul tree; some adventurer succeeded in making an independent sovereign state out of a smaller or larger portion of that empire; there was a constant destruction and reconstruction, on attempts at it. The mass of the population had now a much stronger aversion to the Mussulmans

The other Angria, named Menajee, by his violence, insolence, and daring spirit, alternated by strange cowardice, was a source of perpetual than to European Christians. They showed a marked preference for our rule and protection. And at Surat, Bombay, Fort St. David, Calcutta, and

every establishment where we could protect them, they flocked to trade with us and live with us. Even many of the Mussulmans, when oppressed at home, took refuge in our settlements. The Company were signally indebted, in various stages of their progress, to humble practitioners in medicine. It was in consequence of a cure effected on the favourite daughter of one Mogul emperor that they had first been allowed a footing in Bengal.*

In the year 1715, a Scottish medical man named

Hamilton, as a reward for curing, at Delhi, Emperor Farokshir of a dangerous disease, obtained for the Company a gram of three villages, at Madras, with the liberty of purchasing in Bengal thirty-seven townships, and conveying their goods through the province duty free; and about seven years after the death of Farokshir, the Company was allowed to establish a court of justice, consisting of a mayor and nine aldermen, at each of the three presidencies of Madras, Bombay, and Calcutta.



VIEW NEAR PONDICHERRY.

CHAPTER III.

THE SIEGES OF MADRAS, FORT ST. DAVID, AND PONDICHERRY.

THE French East India Company, having made Pondicherry a formidable stronghold, now began to excite the fears and jealousy of the English Company by their increasing influence and extending trade; and on Sir Robert Walpole losing office at home, the war which broke out in Europe rapidly spread to India; and many of the most distinguished officers in the French service repaired to the East, for the express purpose of attacking the

* Macfarlane.

British settlements before they were capable of defence.

Among these was M. de la Bourdonnais, who from a subaltern rank in the navy had risen to be Governor of the Isles of Bourbon and Mauritius, and who prepared a squadron in France for the East. Of this our government was duly informed, and a British naval force, commanded by Commodore Bernet, comprising two ships of sixty guns each, one of fifty, and a frigate of twenty, soon hovered

the Eastern seas, and between the Straits of Malacca and Malacca made many valuable French prizes, and one of forty guns was taken into the service and named the *Medway's Prize*. In July, 1745, the commodore was off the coast of Coromandel, at a time when there was no French fleet there as yet, and when Pondicherry, with all the strength of its fortifications, had a garrison of only 436 Europeans under M. Dupleix.

By an agreement made with the Nabob of Bengal, Bamel's operations were confined to the sea, and a few more prizes were taken prior to his death at Fort St. David, after which Captain Peyton assumed the command, and, when cruising on the morning of the 25th of June, 1746, off the coast near Negapatam, he suddenly sighted the squadron of La Bourdonnais, consisting of nine sail, armed with 294 guns, and carrying 3,300 men, 700 of whom were Africans. The flag of La Bourdonnais was on board a seventy-gun ship.

Our squadron had not half this number of men; but they were resolute and better disciplined, and keeping the weather-gauge, baffled all the manœuvres of the French to beat to windward. The indecisive conflict that ensued was maintained by cannon alone, and Peyton, without the consent of his officers, bore away to Trincomalee, leaving the enemy in possession of the ocean.

M. de La Bourdonnais, believing that he had nothing further to fear from our naval force, bore up for Pondicherry, where he began to prepare in earnest for the siege of Madraspatam, as it was then called, a prize worth fighting for, and, to all appearance, to be won without much labour. Madras proper consisted of three divisions. Its northern quarter was a vast assemblage of huts; adjoining this was the Black Town, or Chinnapatam, occupied by Indian and Armenian merchants, and surrounded by a low wall. South of this lay the White Town, or Fort St. George, forming a parallelogram 400 yards long by 100 broad. A very defective wall, strengthened by four bastions, engirt it; there were no outworks. Within it stood an English and Roman Catholic church, the factory, and some fifty houses for the Europeans, whose number was only 300. Of these, 200 were soldiers. The governor never went abroad without being attended by sixty armed peons, besides his British guard, and with two Union Jacks borne before him.

Such was the state of Madras when M. de la Bourdonnais appeared before it on the 14th of September with eleven sail, two of which were bomb-vessels, manned by 3,700 men. The troops, artillery,

and stores were landed, and a camp formed where the Count d'Estaing, captain of artillery, was sent forward with a hundred bayonets to reconnoitre a place where defence was never seriously contemplated, but which was not to be surrendered at the first shot. On the 18th, the town was battered by twelve mortars on the land side, and by three of the largest ships of the squadron from the seaward; their fire was so heavy that the little garrison began to think of negotiations; and on the 20th, Messrs. Monson and Haliburton came forth as deputies, and urged that as the town was within the territory of the Mogul, the attack should cease; but understanding that the views of the French were serious, asked what contribution would induce them to retire.

"I do not traffic in honour," replied La Bourdonnais proudly. "The flag of France shall be planted on Madras, or I shall die before its walls!"

Preparations were made for an assault, which there were no means of withstanding; and to spare the little place the horrors of a storm, on the 21st the town and fort capitulated, all the garrison, &c., were made prisoners of war, but were allowed to go where they pleased, "on condition that they shall not bear arms against France till exchanged. The garrison to be landed at Fort St. David, the sailors to go to Gondeloar, and the Watreguel Gate to be put in possession of the French troops at two in the afternoon—all mines and countermines to be revealed." La Bourdonnais pledged himself upon his honour to restore Madras to the Company ultimately, on a fixed ransom; but M. Dupleix, who had previously formed his own schemes for universal conquest, and had a desire for the entire conduct of the war, insisted that the former should break the treaty of capitulation, and at all hazards retain Madras. But La Bourdonnais was averse to a plan which would compromise his honour; and leaving all authority in the hands of M. Desprémenil, he hurried to Pondicherry, in October, to remonstrate with the governor.

Many quarrels and much coolness ensued, after which La Bourdonnais took his departure to France, in order to answer certain allegations made against him by M. Dupleix and others, and to seek such patronage from the East India Company as might enable him to return and crush them. But on his homeward voyage he was taken prisoner by a British ship of war, and brought to England, where, as he had shown himself alike a man of honour, valour, and humanity, he was received with favour by all ranks.

"A director of our East India Company offered

direct dependence on Bokhara; and during the negotiations about the frontier, between 1866 and 1873, Russia at first objected to that State being included in Afghan territory, but subsequently withdrew her protest, for the reason that the then Prince of Manneneh was a devoted personal adherent of Shere Ali of Cabul.

It was soon evident that Russian intrigues were pressing upon the latter prince in another direction, for, according to the *Bombay Gazette* of January, 1877, the Governor of Herat had advised his sovereign to release Sirdir Khan, the chief of the Jamshaiel Turcomans, an alien race in the vicinity of that city, who were about to ally themselves with Russia; hence, it was augured that, notwithstanding the apparent friendship and cordiality inaugurated between him and the Indian Government at the great Umballa durbar in 1869, his regard for the Indian administration had never been sincere, and he was the more likely to become the tool of Russia.

That Shere Ali was suspicious of us there could be little doubt, though he accepted our presents of arms and money; but, being as unscrupulous as most Afghans, he would not hesitate to repudiate the most solemn engagement he made if it interfered with his whim or his intent; and it is very probable that he was suspicious of our designs, for, despite all assurances that we had no desire to enter his country, we had established an outpost at Quettah, or Shawl, on the south flank of the Tukata range of mountains, where the people are Afghans and Beloochees. That this measure gave him high umbrage was evident from the fact that he directed Sofdar Ali, commanding the Kandahar army, to visit the Bolan Pass, and discover what was the object of the British Government in constructing a road through it.

But, be Russian intrigues what they might, the time had now come when it was necessary for the Indian Administration to fix its attention on Afghanistan. It had been asserted that Shere Ali had been for some time in very indifferent health, and that if he died of disease, or by assassination—as the luckless Shah Sujah perished—there would commence a reign of anarchy and misrule, by which Russia, under the pretence of intervention, would be sure to make permanent profit. Our representative at the Court of Cabul was a mere moonshee—Atta Mohammed Khan—instead of a man of position, and it was well known that on peril of his life he dared only forward to the Indian Administration such local information as Shere Ali

permitted him to despatch, and that had become a crying necessity for some British agent at all hazards, residing in Cabul, to watch the progress of events.

The practicability of invading the British possessions in India by land has often been asserted, and almost as often been on the point of being put to the test; and during the campaign of Moscow, in 1812, the idea was actually revived, and it was currently believed that, in the event of peace, a corps of the French army, under Davoust, aided by one of similar strength from Russia, was to descend the Volga, cross the Caspian Sea, and march on India; and this rumour gained ground about the time of Lord Moira's nomination as Governor-General and Commander-in-chief.

In 1829, long before the Russians had, as they have now done, pushed their frontier almost in sight of the Cabul mountains, and overrun Bokhara and Turkestan, two works bearing on this much-agitated subject appeared, one by General Sir De Lacy Evans, "On the Practicability of an Invasion of British India," and another on the same subject, published anonymously.

The former work, the author of which was an officer of the highest distinction, who had served in the operations against Ameer Khan and the Pindarees, is full of information relatively as to the routes that offer themselves, and to the nature of the countries through which they pass, and show the perfect practicability, even then, of that enterprise which it is commonly believed has been in the Russian mind for many years past.

Some of the regions to be traversed by the invader are barren enough, but others are among the finest in the world, with regard to the soil or the climate, with an abundance of all that an advancing army would require, and, particularly, that most essential element, the means of transport. Horses and camels constitute the chief wealth of the inhabitants, and these quadrupeds abound in numbers, together with oxen, asses, and mules. The principal line of march indicated in the work of General Evans is facilitated, throughout a great portion of its extent, by a navigable stream, on which are always numerous craft of a size and construction most suitable for the conveyance of troops and stores; and, lastly, he asserted, at that time, as to the disposition of the natives, or their powers of resistance, if averse to the invader, that the accounts were such as to divest the most cautious of any doubt with respect to the success of the undertaking. On the great plains of the Oxus, or, more properly speaking, from Orskberg to the vicinity of Cabul, neither in the mode in

which the natives are armed, or in ability to act in concert, was there anything, it was asserted, which a disciplined army could not overcome.

In 1834 the matter was also well discussed by Colonel Head, of the Queen's Royals, who served as Quartermaster-General to the force assembled

and that they had steam navigation in view on the Sea of Aral. But since Colonel Head wrote, they have spread their lines and intrigues far beyond Khiva. He points out a route from the Gulf of Balkan to Herat as being the shortest line by which the Indus can be approached, while General



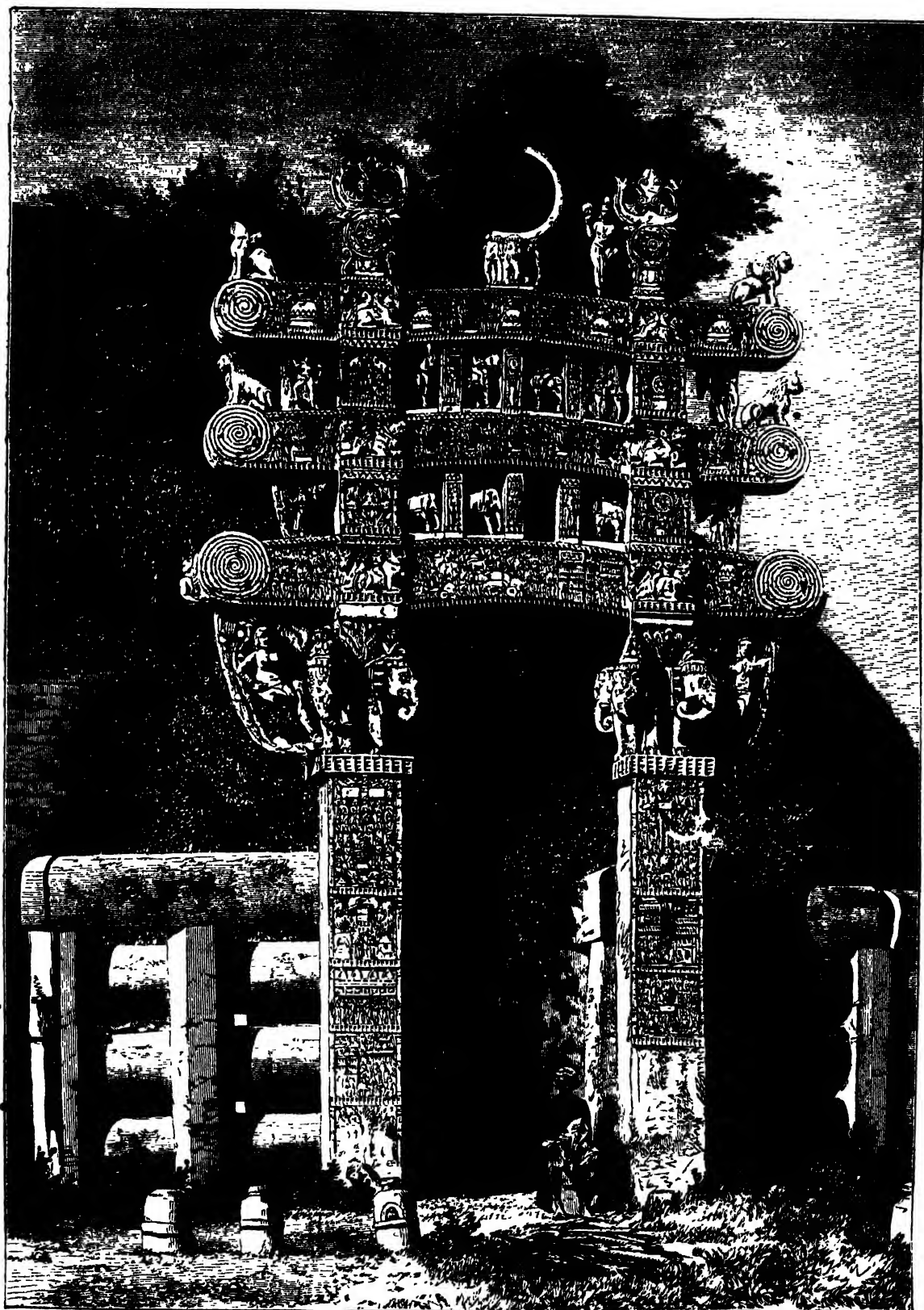
PORTRAIT OF H.R.H. THE PRINCESS OF WALES.

before Kolapore, in the South Mahratta country, during 1827.* He gives little that is new on the subject, but bears ample testimony, as a military man, to the ease with which a Russian invasion could be attempted; and he quotes, as a startling circumstance, the evidence taken before a Select Committee of the House of Commons, that the Russians had surveyed the Oxus with great care, were establishing a military colony at Khiva,

* "Journey from India to Europe," &c.

Evans advocated one by Khiva and Bokhara, Balk, and Cabul, the very point to which the State policy, attention, and watchful diplomacy of Indian statesmen are now drawn.

In the spring of 1877 there came to light an example of the interest taken by Russia in our Indian frontiers. We have referred in its place to the important Trans-Himalayan explorations, and the mission undertaken by Sir Douglas Forsyth, by order of the Indian administration, to Kashgar and



EXAMPLE OF HINDOO ARCHITECTURE : NORTH GATE OF THE TEMPLE OF SANCHI.

the regions of the Upper Oxus. It transpired that the reports of these examinations—at least, the complete form in which they were to be laid before the Viceroy and the Indian Secretary of State—were ordered to be “carefully preserved from circulation, lest they might offer a too desirable contribution to Russian research in the same regions.” But in spite of these instructions, it is not unlikely that copies of the reports were carefully perused and studied in the very quarters where it was hoped they would not be attainable.

It can be shown that Russia, in the event of any movement towards India, besides her railway that runs north from Rostov, on the Sea of Azof, to Vladikavkas, north of the Kasbek Pass, over the Caucasus, has still another line that commands the supply from Astrakhan, by steamer to Baku, a port on the Caspian Sea, and close to the Persian frontier. While the railway above-named leaves 140 miles of road over the Caucasus to be accomplished ere Tiflis is reached, by the Caspian Sea troops and stores could be poured, with ease, at once into Trans-Caucasia. A movement of this nature would render the attitude of Persia of great interest to India: between her frontier and the Baku-Tiflis road lie those plains over which her armies and those of Russia have fought again and again: and seldom without success to the former, while disciplined by British officers and paid by British subsidies.

When these aids were withdrawn Persian reverses began, and in 1827 Paskiewitch defeated the army of the Shah, and dictated to him terms of peace in his capital of Teheran. There, now, the Russian influence is great, while we have lost our hold upon the Shah, who, while perhaps hating and fearing Russia, has virtually become almost her vassal.

From Moscow to Vladikavkas is a five days' journey by railway. The circle of Moscow contains 100,000 troops. From Kasan by the Volga to Baku is ten days by steam; and as the circle of the former place contains permanently 30,000 troops, Russia could quietly and with ease increase the Trans-Caucasian army to a quarter of a million of soldiers. To detach Persia from Russia would strengthen our frontiers, both towards her and Cabul. “A few good native Indian troops,” says a writer who has studied the question, “a considerable number of experienced officers speaking Persian, and a money subsidy, would turn Persia from a Russian alliance. With Persia hostile, a Russian line of advance through Baku is endangered. . . . If further motives be needed for such a step in Persia, I need only point to the fact, that

if Persia were in our hands, any Russian advance along the Attrek Valley, now recognised as the only route by which India will ever be really endangered, would become impossible; and that our prestige throughout the entire East would be raised, while that of Russia would proportionately fall.”

Looking to another quarter, some very able Anglo-Indians, and even travellers of foreign nations, have affirmed that the next great danger to British India will be from the Chinese, all the more so that rifled cannon and breechloaders are coming into use even there. We have already seen a little of this peril on our Burman borders, and also on the other side of India, at Yarkand; but we were tolerably assured of safety while Sir Jung held the strong passes beyond the pestilential Terai of Nepaul.

We lost our chief friend and strength on the frontier in question—the Chinese—when “the Bismark of Nepaul,” Sir Jung Bahadoor, Knight Grand Cross of the Bath and of the Star of India, died suddenly in the Terai, on the 25th of February, 1877. These orders of chivalry he had received as the reward of the good services he had rendered us during the siege of Lucknow, when the division of Ghoorikas marched on Lucknow from their yet un-mapped native hills of mist and rain. He aided us in the subjugation of Eastern Oude, and subsequently allowed our troops to cross his borders in pursuit of the rebels. The story of Sir Jung's life presents a sensational career of romance and crime most singular in this age of the world, even in India.

The nephew of an influential Ghoorika gentleman, he spent his earlier years in gambling and Indian dissipation of every kind, but repaired to the capital, Khatmandoo, with the intention of pushing his fortune on his uncle becoming chief Minister of the kingdom of Nepaul. Ambitious, he speedily became a man of mark; unscrupulous, he resolved to take a short path to power by the murder of his uncle. The idea of committing this crime is said to have been suggested to him by the Ranee, or queen, who had formerly been that uncle's patroness; but who now, for some reason best known to herself, desired his destruction.

He perished accordingly, and then the Ranee, who appeared to have been the virtual ruler of Nepaul, transferred her favour to the nephew, Sir Jung, whom she made Commander-in-chief. Another assassination, that of his uncle's successor both as Minister and favourite of the fickle Ranee, became necessary for the further advancement of his fortunes. So far as actually known, he did not

commit this foul deed with his hand ; but that he profited thereby was a suspicious and undoubted circumstance. A colleague of the victim was accused of having been the assassin ; the Raneé demanded vengeance ; to cloak himself, perhaps, Sir Jung was quite ready to gratify her ; and a horrid tragedy ensued. Sir Jung suggested to a friend of the murdered man to put his alleged destroyer to death, and become himself sole Minister of Nepaul. Finding that he hesitated, Jung Bahadoor, having the whole Ghoorka army at his orders, determined to arrest him till the dark scheme was carried out, and gave an armed party the signal to do so. The son of this too weak, or too scrupulous man, thinking his father's life was in peril, rushed forward to save him, but was instantly cut down ; while his unfortunate father, who sought to avenge him, fell a corpse under a bullet from the rifle of Jung Bahadoor.

The slain man had many friends, who were also the enemies of the favourite. Fourteen of these, all chiefs of rank, were in the room when these deaths took place, and it was alleged that they sought to take summary vengeance. However that may be, Sir Jung, trusting to the fidelity of his followers, with his own rifle shot down thirteen of them before they could escape from the room. It has been alleged that this was a deliberate massacre planned beforehand, as the

victims were everywhere hemmed in by his guards. The next morning, having a majority of friends at court, to his office of Commander-in-chief he added that of Prime Minister.

A party was soon formed against him, but the conspirators were seized and beheaded ; while the Raneé, who had taken some part in the plot, with her husband and two sons, were banished. The heir, Dhiraj Toorendri Bikram, was placed upon the throne, "but Jung Bahadoor was a genuine Mayor of the Palace to *Roi Faincant* ;" for so much was the prince kept in the background, and so little known of him, that many people in Britain believed the Minister to be the King of Nepaul. He made little attempt to conceal the great power in his hand, for when, on his visit to this country, in 1850, he was entertained by the East India Company, he said, in replying to his health, that henceforth "his army, his munitions of war, and his own life should be devoted to the service of Great Britain ;" but never a word did he say of the king, his master. Whatever his early deeds, he became a firm friend of the British Government. He went much to court, and was a good deal fêted in society ; he travelled in England and in Scotland, and in the latter country was so struck with the magnificent appearance of the Grenadier Company of the 93rd Highlanders, that he wished to purchase it !

CHAPTER LXXXIX.

CONCLUDING REMARKS.

WHEN we consider the progress of British power in the East, and the long course of events we have narrated, it is impossible not to be impressed with surprise and admiration. Before the union or consolidation of Great Britain, and when England was single-handed, a few merchant adventurers, anxious only to gain a paying trade, sent a few small vessels to the then almost unknown East as a bold experiment. Some perished amid tempests, and some were destroyed by enemies, but others, more fortunate, returned with cargoes valuable enough to stimulate the owners to fresh and greater exertions ; and this went on day by day till Britain became the possessor of one of the finest empires of

the Orient, "and beheld her merchant factors," says M. Dupin, in his time, "reign over a hundred millions of subjects. The conquests of her merchants in Asia began where those of Alexander ceased, and where the terminus of the Romans could never reach. At this moment, from the banks of the Indus to the frontiers of China, from the mouths of the Ganges to the mountains of Thibet, all acknowledge the sway of a mercantile company shut up in a narrow street in the City of London."

Since Dupin wrote, the latter have passed away ; but even beyond India our power in the East has extended in the seas and isles of China and else-

where, once vast regions that had for ages slept in lonely and enervated magnificence and luxury. For generations Britain in a great measure neglected the continent of India, and her mercantile exertions were mainly directed to the spice islands of the Eastern Archipelago and the shores of the Persian Gulf. In the latter the returns were far from satisfactory, though aided by the dangerous practice of seizing and pillaging the shipping of the natives. In the former direction, the avarice and jealousy of the Dutch presented so many obstacles that the spice trade was all but destroyed.

On the western coast of India our tenure of possession became more solid and different, when the Island of Bombay, with its magnificent harbour, became the property of Great Britain, as part of the dowry of the Infanta Catherine of Portugal; yet, at first, there seemed grave doubts whether this great acquisition was calculated to injure or advance the interests of the growing East India Company. To carry royal prerogative to its utmost limit was, in those days, the general policy of the English Government, which began to exercise in the East a species of authority calculated to nullify the chartered rights of the merchant Company.

Quarrels, complaints, and recriminations ensued, and it is difficult to see how they might have ended had not the English Government luckily discovered that the Island of Bombay, instead of being a source of revenue, was yearly a heavy loss. By a court so needy as that of Charles II., and so much impoverished by the long Civil War, this was an evil difficult to endure, and the arrangement was, fortunately, concluded by which the East India Company took possession of Bombay, with all its responsibilities.

This acquisition proved of vast importance. Prior to it, the Company had only been merchant traders, whose presence among those seas and shores had been permitted solely by the sufferance of the native princes; but now they too became sovereign lords, with a solid basis for more extensive operations; and relinquishing the fawning tenor of address which had been their use and wont in transactions with the Indian powers, they adopted a loftier language, and, adding the sword to the ledger, acted with a bolder bearing.

No longer satisfied with the mere profits of simple trade, they began to reckon the revenues of their territories, and gave orders to those who served them, in a civil or military capacity alike, that these funds were expected to form an important feature in the exchequer of the future. From thenceforward the idea of growth in power and

wealth was never forgotten; and as it became enlarged, the Company, despising their first existence by sufferance, began to contemplate conquests; and for the warlike element thus necessarily introduced in such a land as India they soon found ample scope: first, in repelling the aggression of native princes, and then in their struggle for supremacy with France, whose power, at one time, seemed ready to crush British interests for ever in Hindostan.

Fierce was the struggle, but France was everywhere beaten in the end; the battle of Plassey, after "Clive the Avenger" had rescued Calcutta from the perpetrators of the Black Hole atrocity, broke up the strong confederacy against us, and changed the destiny of Bengal, obtaining, ere long, for the Company the absolute control of the revenues of that great and populous province, with those of Behar and Orissa, together with the full right to appropriate them to their own purposes, subject only to certain stipulated payments. From that moment, as holders of the Dewanee, the Company acted as absolute lords of the three provinces. Paniput limited for ever the power of the aspiring Mahrattas; and the battle of Buxar, fought three years after, made "the gentlemen in Leadenhall Street" masters of the entire valley of the holy Ganges, from the Himalayas to the sea.

The empire of British India, thus founded, continued to extend and advance, in spite of every hostile combination against it, till each and all were overthrown. Wellesley, at Assaye, secured all Southern India; Ochterlony won to us the Ghoorkas from the mountains of Nepal. In later years, the defence of Herat preluded the war in the Khyber Passes, and Napier won us Scinde. All India is ours from sea to sea; but for every rood of it we have taken blood, and given it freely.

Owing to the magnitude of the interests involved, it was necessary to proceed with prudence ere the Crown could exercise its rights in India as in its other dependencies; and the final step of annexation might have been delayed for a time but for the catastrophe of the sepoy revolt, for which the Company could be in no way to blame. It was urged, however, "that a Government which was not ignorant of the danger, but allowed itself to slumber even till the crisis actually arrived, must have laboured under grave defects, both in substance and form;" and the horror and indignation excited by the Mutiny of the Bengal army led to the final extinction of the Company as a ruling power; and hence, since then, the monarch of Great Britain rules India like other dependencies of the Crown.

In the administration of India the Viceroy and Governor-General is supreme, but assisted by a Council of six, in addition to the Commander-in-chief. This body forms that which is called "the Supreme Government of India," and passes in review the entire management of public affairs, the business of which is further conducted in six separate departments, viz. :—The Financial, which looks to questions of finance, and also stamps, excise, and postal business; the Home Department deals with the educational, medical, ecclesiastical, judicial, police, and other matters, including the penal settlements of Nicobar and Port Blair; the Foreign Department conducts the relations with Cabul, Nepaul, and other countries, and corresponds with the political agents of the numerous semi-independent native princes; the Military Department controls the Army and Marine Service; the Public Works Department has the charge of matters connected with such works and the telegraphs; the Department of Agriculture, Revenue, and Commerce deals with questions of revenue, trade, public exhibitions, weights and measures. Each of these departments is under the care of a secretary, and each is also the special care of a member of the Supreme Council, who has authority to deal with affairs of routine and minor importance, selecting only those which are deemed worthy the consideration of the Viceroy and assembled Council.

The Legal Member takes charge of Government Bills in the Legislative Council, which consists of twelve members (besides the seven of the Supreme Council), of whom one-half must be unconnected with the public service. The three presidencies have each their own local council, and that of India legislates for those provinces which are unprovided with such administrations, or in matters of exceptional importance affecting the empire.

In British India, exclusive of the native States of nearly 190 millions of inhabitants, 73·07 per cent. are supposed to be Hindoos, and 21·45 per cent. are Mohammedans, and the average number of inhabitants is 211 per square mile. The slender European population, ever changing in numbers, even if equally distributed over this vast territory, can produce little or no effect upon the manners, modes of thinking, or the domestic habits of the people, more especially as none of them, in any capacity, purpose to reside permanently in India, their only aim being to realise money as fast as possible, and return to spend it at home—having no more in common with the social habits of the people, as Edward Burke remarked, than if they still resided in Europe.

In the matter of education much is done by

opening schools and providing them with well-qualified teachers; but in the selection of subjects to be taught, the Indian administration is compelled to stop short and exclude the only topics by which the Hindoo mind and heart can be reached; hence, much of the teaching in Government schools is lost upon three-fourths of those who attend them. "Thus knowledge," says a writer, "cannot find a resting-place in the mind of persons whose previous beliefs consist of such monstrous dogmas as Hindooism inculcates, and whose religious observances, entwined with the ordinary business of life, have become to them a second nature. The case of the remaining fourth of the scholars is somewhat different. Their object is probably to obtain some of the Government appointments, for which the knowledge acquired in schools and colleges is an essential qualification. They accordingly pass through the whole curriculum, and will in due time be found seated at the desks of Government offices. But there is, unfortunately, another side to the picture, and when inquiry is made into the private character of these men, it is too often found they have paid dear for their knowledge. They have cast away their early beliefs without substituting anything better, and belong to liberalised Hindoos, who ape the manners and practise the worst vices, but are utter strangers to the virtues, of European society; and to this class, but with all its worst qualities exaggerated, the infamous miscreant Nana Sahib belonged."

Those who are most averse to intrusive proselytism may not be uninterested in the voluntary efforts which are made to promote the welfare of Her Majesty's Indian subjects by the diffusion among them of a knowledge of the Christian faith, and an inculcation of the gentle practices of Christianity. "We have had before us, from personal experience," says the late editor of the *Friend of India*, in 1875, "very good examples of their active agencies in the matter of mission schools and native churches, and these were of Baptist origin." There is a "boarding-school" in Calcutta, he tells us, for native children, which is strictly missionary. The school hours begin at six in the morning, before which hour the female boarders must have bathed and breakfasted, and after which, in common with the out-door boarders, they have singing, prayer, and perusal of the Scriptures.

The missionary lives close by, and if he has a wife she assists him. A large water-tank divides the mission-house and the school from the bungalow of girl boarders, who manage their own affairs to the utmost before the school opens and after it closes. The object of this system is to interfere

as little as possible with any of their domestic arrangements, and also to take them as little as need be out of their native system of life.

At a native church in Lower Bengal (the editor

Never could there have been, in the early times of Christian teaching, a more solemn service or a more attentive body of listeners. Surely, we may ask, are not ideas—seed, we may say—being planted



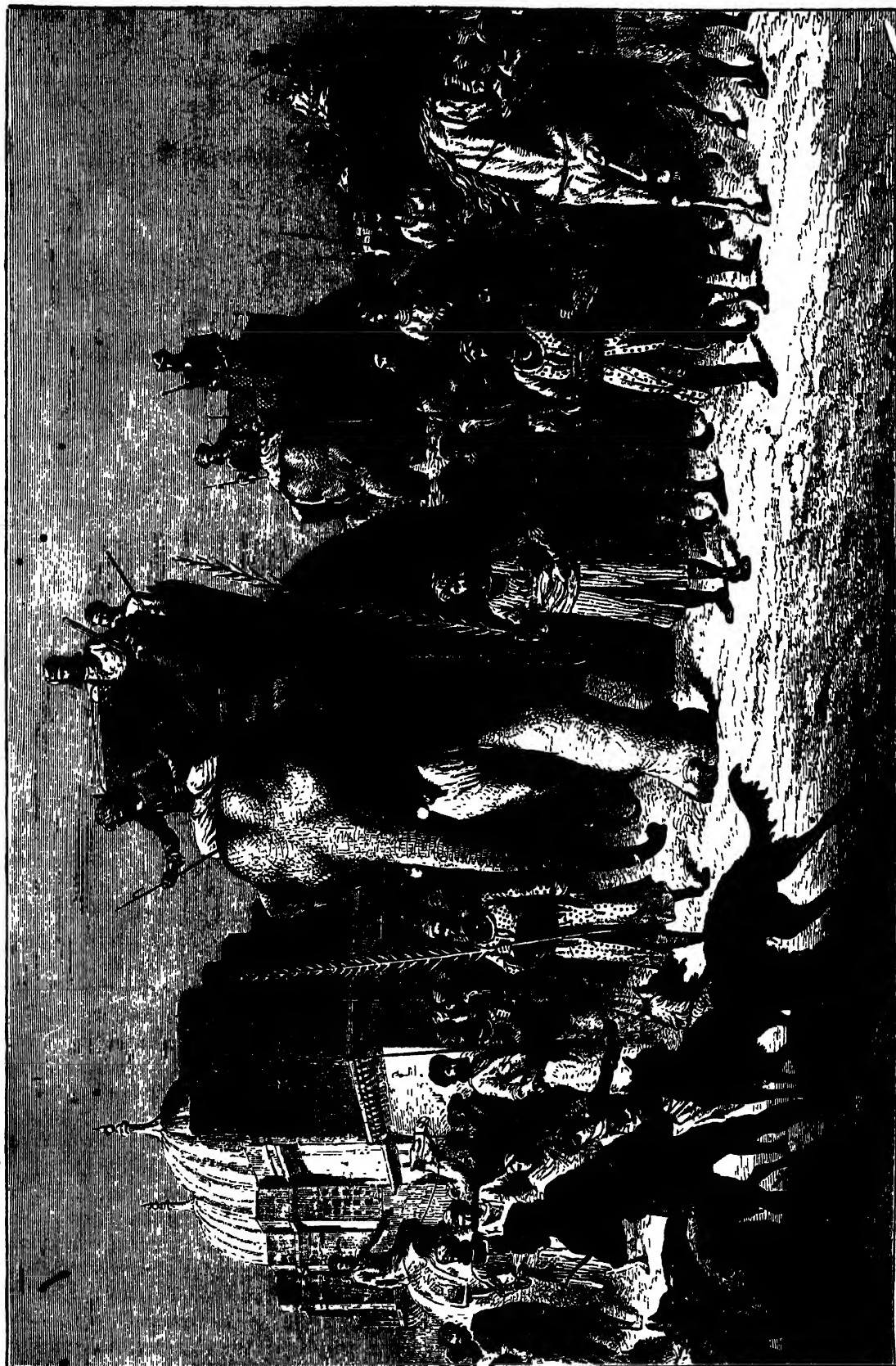
A CASHMERE WIDOW.

tells us), a practical, thoughtful, and much-esteemed missionary was leaving it and the village also for Britain, and the people, who looked upon him as a father, asked him to baptise, ere he departed, such of them as had arrived at the years of discretion.

"The congregation that assembled for this purpose might number perhaps two hundred (we write from memory), men, women, and children.

there? They sat on the floor, of course, the men in one place, the women in another. At the end of the service the people left their chapel and crowded round a large tank, singing lustily, while the minister went down into the water and baptised one after another, we know not how many. Then they all crowded round him to say good-bye."

It was in the Baptist Chapel at Serampore that



CAVALCADE SETTING OUT ON A TIGER-HUNT.

the gallant Sir Henry Havelock was married, and there the table at which the ceremony was performed is still preserved as a species of relic.

It is not remarkable, perhaps, that in British India the State chaplains and the missionaries have often regarded each other with eyes the reverse of friendly, for though belonging to the same holy service, they seem to feel as if it were to different branches of it. "The missionary," says the writer quoted " (in some cases), looks upon the chaplain as a careless Gallio, albeit among the apostles; while the chaplain looks upon the missionary (in some cases) as a meddling intruder into matters with which he has no concern. In reality, they are merely working in different ways for the same end—we are saying nothing here of any principle involved as to their right to State support or otherwise—and it is not too much to say that India, even native India, has owed more than she has yet discovered to the chaplains. Fervour is good in its place, as the missionary meetings are good and useful; but the men who are not compelled to send in reports to any committee, or look for the suffrages of any meeting or assembly, have now and then held the balance, not without usefulness, in the war of sects. . . . Whatever the cause may be (in stations and cantonments), the English regiments in India always seem to supply a considerable number of church attenders; and what is more, we are greatly mistaken if the attendance is not one of choice. To the Scottish or Irish soldier, of course, all the associations are different. To the English soldier, the old familiar words and tunes tell of home, of the church on the hill, and a good many things besides. The appearance of an Indian church is peculiar, from the long punkahs moving alike over the heads of the minister and congregation, so that the latter obtain only glances of the former: much in the same way as you see a revolving light. Then the punkahs are pulled by coolies, who, at times, look on the whole affair with undisguised amazement as something beyond their ken. It is the white man at his *poojah*, bowing to and praising his all-powerful God—the God that had dethroned Brahma, and trampled on Mahomet, and seemed only to grow stronger in times of danger and difficulty. It is said, when Nana Sahib had condemned the men to die at Cawnpore, a gentleman, clergyman or otherwise, stepped forward, and said it was customary for white men to make *poojah* (i.e., to pray) before they died; might they now? 'Yes,' was the reply; 'but be quick.' They were quick, and then died, leaving their dear ones to what fate we know. . . . Soldiers who have been years in India are serious in solemn

matters; and under the punkahs, with the birds flying through and through the windows that seem to nestle among the green leaves of the cantonment church, we have seen some very serious faces indeed. Then some men might dance on the following evening, or act an amateur play; why not? The chaplain would be likely to echo the question, while sometimes working in his own vocation his own way."

Over many of the native princes and gentlemen changes are coming fast. As an instance of this we may mention, that when a public meeting was held at Calcutta to prepare for the visit of the Prince of Wales, the best reported speeches were made by high-class natives; though at balls, levees, and garden parties, native gentlemen are certainly rather out of place, unless, like the Maharajahs of Vizianagram, of Puttiala, Sir Salar Jung Bahadoor, and others, they have become half English in tone and manner. They are unable to dance, but they can promenade and talk freely enough with ladies. It has now been seen that we can only gain the affections—if they are to be won—of the high and educated classes of British India by meeting them on a frank footing of friendly equality. Rajahs, it has been said, may put chains of gold over a visitor's neck, and wealthy bankers and merchants bow low to the European, but good feeling and kindness alone can procure the unbuyable courtesies of life.

Of all the royal lines of India, the most remarkable is the Rajpoot. Mr. Talboys Wheeler says it is the proudest there, and that, with the exception of the Jews, there are no living people of higher antiquity or more pure descent than the Rajpoots, or Sons of the Rajah. They claim to be the representatives, lineally, of the Kshatriyas—the descendants of those Aryan warriors who subdued the Punjab and Hindostan in times of the most remote antiquity.

To this day they are said to display many of the characteristics of the Mahabharata and Ramayana—those famous Hindoo poems, the first of which is a sanscrit epic, consisting of 100,000 verses, and, like the latter, was well known in India in the second century before our era. The Rajpoots form a military aristocracy somewhat of the feudal type; they are heroically brave, generous, chivalrous, and keenly sensitive of the honour of their women. When occasion serves, their chiefs are ready to lead the lives of homeless outlaws, like the Pandana brothers, or retire into exile as haughtily and silently as Rama, when he retired with Sita into the forest to lead a life of seclusion and austerity; and such is their nature that, but for the paramount power of the British Government, they would still, from generation

to generation, wage bloody and exterminating wars. "The Rajpoots are the links between ancient and modern India. In the days of old they strove with the kings of Magadha for the suzerainty of Hindostan from the Indus to the Lower Gangetic valley. They maintained imperial thrones at Lahore, at Delhi, at Canouj, and Ayodhya (or Oude). In later revolutions their seats of empire have been shifted further west and south, but the Rajpoot kingdoms still remain as relics of the old Aryan aristocracy."

In all, the Government of India has about 153 feudatories, to whom salutes of cannon are accorded. Their troops far outnumber ours; the artillery, in many instances, are magnificent, and their wealth is enormous, while their revenues are personal; for very rarely does the money return to the people in the shape either of expenditure, improvement, or administration. A long line of ancestry is not necessary to procure a chief or prince honour in the eyes of the people. The late Guicowar of Baroda, at no remote distance, was the descendant of a cowherd as his name imports; the adventurous Mulhar Rao Holkar was also the son of a herdsman and Raojee.

Scindia, though allied to some of the best families in Rajpootana, sprang from the caste of cultivators, and began life as a humble menial in the service of Baloojee Vishwunath; while the kingdom of Oude was founded in the middle of the eighteenth century by a merchant of Khorassan—the Land of the Sun.

That the great mass, if not the whole, of the people of India are more at ease under our rule than ever they were, or would be under native dominion, must be apparent even to themselves; and they must have been well aware that under any native dynasty the suppression of the sepoy revolt would have been followed by a massacre unparalleled in history, and that every town and province wherein the conquered were found, would have been converted into a howling desert. Well did they know that we used our triumph with moderation, and that the punishments were few and slight, compared with the hideous enormity of the crimes that elicited them; and perhaps they were acute enough to see in this circumstance some of the gentle teachings of Christianity, especially when leniency in the hour of triumph was followed by humanity and liberality in the terrible time of famine.

They are slightly taxed; they have no conscriptions, as when under their nabobs and rajahs; they sow and reap in security from the march of armies, the raids of Pindarees, and the ravages of Dacoits; and can mourn as little as the European over the

decayed greatness of many of the native rulers, whose personal vices and shameful misgovernment led to British intervention and the abolition of those powers, which amounted to nothing more than a faculty or proneness for mischief, extortion, cruelty, and tyranny. Bishop Heber tells us that when he was on his tour in the Upper Provinces there were serious apprehensions of a drought of rain, to be, as usual, followed by scarcity and famine, but the rain of heaven descended, and fear passed from the hearts of the people. At this juncture Archdeacon Corrie, when on his way to join the bishop, heard two native farmers conversing in a field by the wayside. "Neighbour," said one of them, "the rain has come at last!" "Yes," said the other; "and we have now a government that will let us eat our bread in peace and quietness." It has been said that no eloquence, poetry, or rhetoric could pay a higher compliment than this to the old East India Company and the parental rule of the British administration.

It is worthy of remark that to the last days of his life the Duke of Wellington, who won his first fame in India, never ceased to devote attention to its affairs, and always applauded the old mixed system of Indian administration, deprecating any measure which tended to diminish the power of the directors; but the grand old duke could not foresee the dark time of the Mutiny, and still less that the monarch he had served in his old age, would be proclaimed Empress of India.

Great indeed has been the progress of that country between the days of Warren Hastings and our own time. The inborn recklessness of human life peculiar to the Hindoo in so many forms has been well-nigh crushed out by kindness, and the highest-class education has been placed within the reach of all the wealthy. New channels for industry are constantly being opened up, and the people are learning to make articles for European employers in European style, and to drive bargains as hard as any in the Western world. In counting-rooms and banks the clerks are nearly all natives, and in many of the printing-offices the compositors are Hindoos. When railways were introduced, it was long doubted whether natives would use them. They asserted that they would not. A holy brahmin was to stand before a train and forbid it to move; but as the engine advanced, the brahmin thought it prudent to leap out of the way, saying the Fire-Horse was the Horse of Fate. In the trains every carriage is crowded by natives now, the people standing up as closely as they can be wedged together, heedless of caste. But the

carriages are no better than cattle pens, and are often a disgrace to the companies, who urge the extreme lowness of the fares, and the native tradesmen, earning perhaps little more than fourteen shillings per month, cannot afford to pay much.

We may remark that the term "presidency," which is still applied to the Governments of Bengal, Bombay, and Madras, is no longer a correct one, and in the case of the first-named is almost misleading. But the expression is a relic of the days when the three infant settlements of Fort William, Fort St. George, and Bombay were each under the authority of a president, and comprised all that Britain then held in India.

In fact, British India now contains nine provinces, each under its own civil government, but subordinate to the Viceroy in council. Bengal was under the charge of the latter till 1853, when it became a separate administration, under a lieutenant-governor. The North-west Provinces were separated from it in 1833, under a lieutenant-governor. The Punjaub, after its annexation, was, as we have told, placed under a Board of Commissioners, but became a lieutenant-governorship in 1859; Oude, annexed by Lord Dalhousie, is equal in size to Holland and Belgium. The Central Provinces were formed in 1861. Assam was made a separate province in 1874. Madras and Bombay, &c., we need not refer to; but the revenue of these nine provinces, amounting to the average of fifty millions sterling, enables the British Government to maintain peace and goodwill throughout an empire equal in size to all Europe without Russia.

Mysore and Berar, though under British protection, do not contribute to the revenue of India, the three great and chief sources of which are land, salt, and opium. The latter is a Government monopoly in Bengal, those persons only being allowed to grow it who will undertake to deliver the entire crop to the Government agents. The opium is prepared in the Government depôts at Patna and Ghazepore, where it is sold by auction, and being superior in quality to that of China, it finds there a ready sale. The Bombay opium revenue is derived from the drug grown in Malwa, which pays a heavy duty on entering British territory.

The native states of India—the most important of which are Hyderabad, Scindia, Baroda, Jeypore, Travancore, Cashmere, Jodporc, Holkar, Puttiala, Oodeypore, Bhurtpore, and Bhopal—cover an area of nearly 600,000 square miles, containing a population of about 55,000,000, with military forces estimated at 300,000 men of all arms.

"In dealing with India," says a writer, "the first difficulty is to know where and how to begin, and the only other difficulty is to know where and how to end. The subject seems inexhaustible. . . . The history, for great events, extending over vast periods—for relation to ever-recurring waves of fierce conquest, with strange and stupendous civilisations—wonderful in art and even in polity—overlying strange barbarisms, ready in a moment to take fire and level all civilisation to the ground, has scarcely any parallels. No one, we grant, after seeing Rome, would deem any work of art in India exceptionally grand, though there is grandeur in much. It is when viewed in relation to races almost changeless that Indian art seems to tell a story all its own, and so often causes the visitor to sit down calmly to try and think out some of the strangest problems in the history of mankind."

And with regard to those stupendous temples, mosques, and tombs scattered over India, and the carvings of which tell such strange and often terrible stories of the remote past, it is most gratifying to find that the administration, while attending to the material welfare of the people, does not forget the duty of investigating, classifying, collecting, and in many instances repairing, the antiquarian remains that still exist. Nor is the literature of the past overlooked; and scholars have been employed to visit the seats of native learning, and to invite the *savants* to commit to paper the strange traditions which have been transmitted to them. Like Europe, India has had its successive styles of architecture, and, singularly enough, the changes in these styles have been almost coeval with the changes in the West, while divided into two great classes, the Hindoo and Mohammedan.

The former may be subdivided into three—viz., the Buddhist, consisting of carved caverns, monasteries, temples, and pillars, such as remain at Ellora, near Bombay, and near Bhilsa, in Malwa; the Jain, the principal works of which are in Rajpootana, Gwalior, and Bundelcund; and lastly, the Brahmin, the style of which extends over a vast period: hence it is difficult to attain more than an approximate determination of their age.

The Mohammedan architecture is divided into that of the Patans, "who built like giants and finished their work like jewellers," and the Mogul; but, as the religion of the Prophet forbids the representation of anything living, man or inferior animal, the actual sculpture of India is limited to the Hindoos. Only two such examples of Mohammedan art were known to exist: They were lost sight of for years, having been buried, and only came to light after the sepoy revolt.

Vast indeed are the architectural remains in India. Apart from the rock-hewn temples, such as those at Ellora, Salsette, Adjunta, and Elephanta—the work of at least 2,000 years ago—there are other remains which indicate that fully 3,000 years past India was nearly as far advanced in civilisation as she is now, and contained a mighty population, not merely scattered over the land in rural villages, but assembled in great centres, where multitudes were extensively engaged in manufacture and trade, and that indicate such centres to have been the capitals of once independent but now forgotten states.

The commerce of India may be considered under two great heads—viz., that which is maintained with Europe and America, and the coasting-trade, being that which is carried on between one portion of the peninsula and another, and from thence to the Gulfs of Persia and Arabia and the eastern shores of Africa. The Indian trade with Europe is almost entirely carried on by Great Britain, and, till the extinction of the Company's monopoly, it was exclusively the commerce of that body; but the moment that the trade to India was thrown open, a vast amount of capital and of tonnage were embarked in it by private individuals.

Wonderful indeed is the vegetable kingdom of India. It produces those species of grain which are most common to Europe; but rice, the chief food of the inhabitants, is the great object of culture, and the vast plains of the country are peculiarly fitted for its produce. There are no fewer than twenty-seven varieties of it cultivated, and under good care the soil yields crops all the year round. Maize comes next to rice in the Western Provinces, on poor soil and hilly ground; sugar is reared in some places; and also tobacco, but the latter is inferior to that of America. Among the many trees and families of palms, the cocoa-nut is the most remarkable. In one season a vigorous tree will yield 500 full-grown nuts. The leaves of the fan-palm are used as paper, and from its trunk is procured the liquor called palm-toddy. The fruit of the plantain is used as bread. The bamboo we have already referred to. Every species of fruit is to be found in British India; but the most exquisite of all are the mango, which is to be obtained on the west of the Bay of Bengal, and another called the mangosteen. Sandal-wood is confined to Mysore, and the cotton-tree and pepper vine are natives to some places in India. It is in Bengal, Behar, Oude, and Agra, that indigo is chiefly cultivated.

The kossa-grass of the natives deserves particular notice among the poas. It is regarded as sacred, and is held almost constantly in the hands of those

who are anxious to be regarded as extremely devout. It is, moreover, of the greatest use in this climate, as from its roots are made those kind of mattings called *tatties*, which are placed against the doors and windows, and by being constantly watered keep apartments cool, while spreading a fragrance and freshness through them. On the frontier of Eastern Bengal there is an immense tract of country covered by a peculiar kind of growth, called by the natives *augeah-grass*. It thrives in sandy soil, grows to the height of thirty feet, and is thicker than a man's wrist.

In the Rajmahal district of Bengal, the common jungle-grass attains the height of ten feet, and is tipped on its summit by a beautiful and elegant down, resembling the feathers of a swan; but to treat of these matters in detail, or of the fauna of India, which is no less rich and varied than its flora, would require volumes rather than a reference in these concluding remarks.

The first place is unquestionably due, among quadrupeds, to the elephant, which, besides living in wild herds, has been from time immemorial domesticated, and employed in all labour requiring strength and sagacity. The buffalo, yak, and camel are also domesticated, and the latter is of great use in the west, on the borders of the desert which it is required to traverse. Man has been unable either to utilise or subject the one-horned rhinoceros; and the wild jungles teem with tigers, leopards, panthers, hyenas, and jackals, and many species of monkeys; and among many other varieties of the cervine tribe, we may enumerate the wild sheep, the goat, and the ass, also wild, the wild boar and hog, the chickara or four-horned antelope, the hog-deer, and the Nepaulese stag; while the birds include almost every species that fly.

When we pass to the lower order of the animal kingdom, the transition is less agreeable; for there we find, in all the large streams—but more especially in the Ganges and the Indus—the hideous alligator; and there are large and venomous snakes infesting both land and water, and so numerous as to include no less than forty-three varieties, the most terrible of which is the deadly *cobra di capello*.

The coasts and rivers of British India teem with fish, furnishing many varieties and an unlimited abundance of food; among these are the leopard-mackerel and the mango fish—the former measuring three feet, and the latter, occasionally, four feet in length; and both find a place at the dinner-tables of the Europeans.

Everywhere over all that wonderful land, from sea to sea, from the low sandy point of Cape

Comorin to the slopes of the mighty Himalayas, the full and teeming life of India, animate and inanimate, in its vigour and exuberance, never fail to impress even the most unimpressionable of Europeans.

As a mineral country, India has not yet been fully developed. Though in distant ages gold was so abundant there, that the Indian was the only one of the Persian satrapies which paid tribute in that precious metal, it has only some river washings now, which are not very valuable; while its once famous diamond mines have been nearly exhausted. Coal is being discovered and worked well, however, at Raneegunge and elsewhere; it has mines of copper, and produces iron, from which steel of the most exquisite quality is manufactured; nitre is abundant, and its vast beds of salt, already referred to, are believed to be inexhaustible.

The old idea, once so prevalent, that to uphold and perpetuate our power in the East it was deemed good policy to keep the natives in igno-

rance, nor to teach them aught of Christianity and science, has now completely passed away, and a better, truer, and juster spirit prevails, as we have amply shown.

Nothing is left undone to seek to raise them, if possible, to our own level in regard to religion, to education, and the general civilisation of the Western world. Every successive administration of late years has laboured towards this glorious end; and the determination of what that sequel should be was fully announced by the spirit of the Imperial proclamation at the great Delhi durbar, that in future every justice shall be done to British India.

A time may come when that mighty empire, having attained a full knowledge of its own vast resources, may be able to dispense with our tutelage; but unless this consummation is to be peacefully reached—thus shedding a greater glory on the British name—we must hope that the day of its accomplishment will be far distant.

THE END.



“SALAAM.”

GENERAL INDEX.

- Abdullah, Sultan, ii., 449.
- Abercromby, General, Retreat of, i., 290; Commander-in-Chief, i., 311; defeats Gholaum, i., 318.
- Achmuty, General, i., 441.
- Adams, Major, Meer Cossim's Letter to, i., 100; Troops Mutiny, i., 102.
- Aden, Capture of, ii., 95.
- Afghan, Courtiers' Rapacity, i., 425; Province of, ii., 464; and Russia, ii., 519.
- Afghan War, Origin of, ii., 71; Army of the Indus, ii., 75; Plan of the Campaign, ii., 76; Treatment of the Ameers, ii., 76—78; Colonel Nott's March, ii., 80; Bolan Pass, ii., 81; March to Candahar, ii., 82; Storming of Ghuznee, ii., 83—87; Capture of Cabul, ii., 88; Rewards, ii., 89; Storming of Khelat, ii., 89; Struggle in the Nussook Pass, ii., 93; Insurrection of the Ghiljies, ii., 96; Fighting in the Khoord Cabul Pass, ii., 98; Insurrection in Cabul, ii., 100; Indecision of Elphinstone, ii., 102; Affairs at the Cantonments, ii., 104; Conference, ii., 108; Murder of the Envoy, ii., 111; Terms with the Enemy, ii., 111; Homeward March, ii., 112; Carnage in the Passes, ii., 113—115; Sale in Jelalabad, ii., 117; Akbar Khan defeated, ii., 119; Fight at Urghandaub, ii., 121; Attempt to Recapture Candahar, ii., 122; General Nott takes the Field, ii., 128; Pollock's March, ii., 130; Close of the War, ii., 135.
- Afghans, Irruption of, i., 111.
- Afreedies, The, ii., 562.
- Afzulghur, Battle of, i., 400.
- Aga Mir, ii., 53.
- Agnew and Anderson, Murder of, ii., 165.
- Agra, Siege and Storming of, i., 374; Outbreak at, ii., 257; Prince of Wales's Reception at, ii., 539.
- Agriculture, Indian, ii., 406.
- Aherwa, Battle of, ii., 284.
- Ahmedabad, Capture of, i., 198.
- Ahmednuggur, Fort, taken, i., 364.
- Aix-la-Chapelle, Peace of, i., 17.
- Ajagehr, Capitulation of, i., 412.
- Akbar II., i., 424.
- Akbar Khan, ii., 95, 108, 110; Treachery, ii., 111—113; Defeat at Tizeen, ii., 130.
- Akhoond of Swat, ii., 561.
- Akwaz, The Affair at, ii., 224.
- Albuquerque, Alfonso, ii., 188.
- Alexander, The Frigate, i., 497.
- Aleppi, Massacre of, i., 430.
- Alexander the Great in India, i., 3.
- Ali Mohammed, London Agent of, i., 136; and Lord Pigot, i., 146.
- Ali Moorad, ii., 137.
- Alingore, i., 48.
- Aliwal, Battle of, ii., 153, 154.
- Allahabad and Korah ceded to the Mahrattas, i., 159.
- Allahabad, Treaty of, i., 106; Outbreak and Massacre at, ii., 258.
- Allyghur, Storming the Fortress of, i., 370; Foundation of the College of, ii., 555.
- Almorah, Fall of, i., 461.
- Alumbagh, Attack on and Occupation of, ii., 297—300.
- Alvar, The Succession of, ii., 24.
- Ambajee Ingliia, i., 403.
- Amboor, Defence of, i., 119.
- Amboyna, Massacre by the Dutch at, i., 6; Capture of, i., 437.
- Ameer Khan, Exploits of, i., 399; Treachery, i., 414.
- Ameer Sing, Defeat of, i., 458.
- Ameers of Scinde, ii., 53; Treatment of, ii., 76; Treaty with, ii., 78; Threat of, ii., 136; Description of, ii., 141; as Rulers, ii., 160.
- Amethie, Capture of, ii., 334.
- Amherst, Lord, Governor-General, i., 558; Burmese Quarrel, i., 561; Tour through the Upper Provinces, ii., 24; Review of Administration, ii., 27.
- Andaman, Islands of, ii., 377; Convicts of, ii., 410; Lord Mayo's Visit to, ii., 411.
- Angria, The Pirate, i., 11.
- Animal, Mortality from Wild, ii., 467.
- Aong, The Victory at, ii., 283.
- Apa Sahib, Revolt of, i., 490; at Seetabuldee, i., 493; Arrest of, i., 512; Escape, i., 530; again in Arms, i., 530; Flight, i., 531.
- Arass, Battle of, i., 173.
- Arcot, Capture by the French, i., 23; Re-capture by Clive, i., 29; De Lally enters, i., 70; again taken, i., 83.
- Argaon, Battle of, i., 377—380; Lake's March to, i., 386.
- Ariancoopan, Boscawen's Attack on, i., 17.
- Army, Re-organisation of, i., 108; Sir John Malcolm on the, ii., 238; Indian, of 1857, ii., 337; State of, ii., 509.
- Arnee, Battle of, i., 33; Sir Eyre Coote's Attack on, i., 232.
- Arracan, Invasion of, by Berring, i., 447; Capture of, ii., 2.
- Arrah, Victory at, ii., 292.
- Arts, Domestic, among the Hindoos, ii., 426.
- Aryan and Scythic Races, ii., 454.
- Aseerghur, Siege and Capture of, i., 531.
- Ashta, Encounter at, i., 509.
- Asia, Russian Aggression in, ii., 461—465.
- Asoff-ud-Dowlah, i., 168; Household of, i., 170.
- Assam, War in, i., 575; Turmoils in, ii., 47.
- Assassination of Surajah Dowlah, i., 59.
- Assaye, Battle of, i., 365—368.

- Auckland, Lord, Governor-General, ii., 64; Proclamation of, ii., 116; Afghan War, ii., 71; Character of Administration, ii., 123.
- Aurora*, Loss of, i., 134.
- Austin, Admiral, ii., 194.
- Azecz-ud-Dowlah, i., 354.
- Azim and Bahadur Shah, Rivalry of, i., 10.
- Babul-Nullah, Battle of, i., 162.
- Backergunge, Physical Character of, ii., 526.
- Bader Ke Serai, Battle of, ii., 268.
- Bagwell, Commodore, and Angria, i., 11.
- Bahadur, Sir Jung, Career and Death, ii., 565.
- Bahadur, Shah, i., 10.
- Bahoor, Action at, i., 35.
- Baillie, Major, Troops destroyed, i., 215; and the Nabob of Oude, i., 547.
- Bajee Rao, Treachery of, i., 484; Defeat, i., 489; at Koreigaum, i., 508; Wanderings, i., 509; Surrender, i., 525; Exile, i., 526.
- Balambangan, Island of, i., 143.
- Bangalore taken by Hyder Ali, i., 128; Storming of, i., 284; Retreat to, i., 290.
- Baptists in India, ii., 233; Lord Minto's Edict against, ii., 233.
- Barilly, The Outbreak in, ii., 256; Victory at, ii., 320.
- Barlow, Governor-General, i., 405; Discontent at his Measures, i., 411; Vindictiveness, i., 432.
- Barnet, Commodore, Squadron of, i., 13.
- Baroda, The Guicowar of, ii., 441; Attempt to murder Colonel Phayre, ii., 442; Trial, ii., 447; Banishment, ii., 444.
- Basscin, Seaport of, ceded, i., 17.
- Battle of Residents at, i., 3; Treaty of, i., 363; at, ii., 195.
- Batta, Disputes concerning.
- Bazaar, A Mahratta, ii., 35.
- Battle of, i., 291.
- Beder, Battle of, i., 315.
- Bednore, Capture of, i., 238; Revolt in, ii., 50.
- Begum, Munny, Accounts of, i., 180.
- Begum of Bhopal, ii., 488.
- Begums of Oude, i., 255.
- Beja Khan, ii., 159.
- Belgaum, Capture of, i., 519.
- Belgic Castle stormed, i., 439.
- Benares, Treaty of, i., 160; Massacre at, i., 249; Residents murdered, i., 321; Outbreak and Massacre at, ii., 260.
- Benfield, Paul, Claims of, i., 147.
- Bengal, Right of Trading in, i., 8; Factories destroyed, i., 9; Dutch in, i., 80; Meer Cossim, Nabob of, i., 96; Famine in 1770, i., 130.
- Bentinck, Lord William, Governor-General, ii., 35; Financial Reforms, ii., 35; Abolishes Flogging in the Native Army, ii., 38; Abolition of the Sutte, ii., 39; Thuggee suppressed, ii., 41; Dacoitee suppressed, ii., 44; Encouragement of Knowledge, ii., 44; Overland Route established, ii., 45; Tour of the Upper Provinces, ii., 52; Close of his Administration, ii., 58.
- Berar, Invasion of, by Ameer Khan, i., 416; Western, ceded, ii., 203.
- Berhampore, Visit to, i., 472; Revolt at, ii., 243.
- Bernadotte, Anecdote of, i., 241.
- Berring, King, i., 447.
- Betel Nut, Legend of the, i., 267.
- Betwa, Battle of, ii., 322.
- Beymaroo, Fighting at, ii., 106.
- Bheels, The, i., 527.
- Bhotan, War in, ii., 364—371.
- Bhow Mullan, Troops at, i., 202.
- Bhurtpore, First Assault on, i., 395; Second, i., 397; Third and Fourth, i., 398; Blockade of, i., 399; Terms of Peace, i., 401; Siege of, ii., 21.
- Bidjeerghur, Capture of, i., 254.
- Birch, Mr., Murder of, ii., 447.
- Bishops, First Indian, ii., 232.
- Bithoor, Victory at, ii., 290.
- Black Hole and Prisoners, i., 47; Victims, i., 48.
- Black Town, Pillage of, i., 72.
- Blake, Mr., Murder of, ii., 57.
- Blenheim* and *Jaru*, Loss of, i., 417.
- Bokhara, The Russians at, ii., 374.
- Bolan Pass, The, ii., 81.
- Bombay captured from the Portuguese, i., 8; Treaty, i., 196; Military Establishment, i., 207; Marine, i., 209.
- Bonaparte, Letter of, to Tippoo, i., 328.
- Boolo Combo, Fort of, captured, i., 438.
- Boscawen, Admiral, at Ariantcoopan, i., 17.
- Bourchier, General, Campaign in Lushai, ii., 584; at Chelam, ii., 388; at Lalboora, ii., 390.
- Bourdonnais, M. De la, i., 13; before Madras, i., 14; in the Bastille, i., 15.
- Brahmins, Punishment of, i., 184.
- Braithwaite, Colonel, Troops of, destroyed, i., 227.
- Bretton, Major, Death of, i., 72.
- Briggs, General, on Sepoys, i., 36.
- Brooke, Captain, Stratagem of, i., 128.
- Browne, Colonel, Critical Position of, i., 203.
- Brown, Colonel, Expedition of, ii., 456; Attack on, ii., 459.
- Bruce, Captain, at Gwalior, i., 202.
- Bruelle, Captain W., i., 144.
- Buddha, Sacred Tooth of, ii., 483.
- Buddiwal, Combat at, ii., 152.
- Budget, First Indian, ii., 381.
- Bukhti Thapa, Vow of, i., 463.
- Bulwunt Sing, Rajah, ii., 20, 23.
- Bundelcund, Conquest of, i., 377.
- Burmese War, First—Invasion, i., 448; English Forces, i., 565; Prisoners, i., 566; Capture of Rangoon, i., 566; Mortality among the Troops, i., 567; Minor Operations, i., 568; Storming Stockades, i., 569; Attack on the Great Pagoda, i., 572; Colonel Smith's Repulse at Kaikloo, i., 573; Attack on Maha Bandoola, i., 574; Fall of Rangpoor, i., 575; Capture of Arracan, ii., 2; Operations of Sir Archibald Campbell, ii., 3; Capture of Donabew, ii., 4; Prome, Battle of, ii., 6; Capture of Melloone, ii., 8; Battle of Pagamhew, ii., 10; Yandaboo Treaty, ii., 11.
- Burmese War, Second—Origin of, ii., 192; Operations at Rangoon, ii., 193; Martaban captured, ii., 194; Capture of Bassein, ii., 195; Prome taken, ii., 196; Pegu taken, ii., 196; Annexation of Pegu, ii., 197; Annexations, ii., 200; Reforms, ii., 208.
- Burn, Colonel, at Shamli, i., 391.
- Burnaby, Captain, ii., 417.
- Burnes, Sir Alexander, ii., 52, 71; and the Ameers of Scinde, ii., 77; Murder of, ii., 100.
- "Burrissal Guns," Mystery of, ii., 526.
- Busseret Gunge, Victory at, ii., 289.
- Bute, Lord, Peace Treaty of, i., 92.
- Buxar, Battle of, i., 104.
- Buz-Buzia, Fort, Fighting at, i., 50.

- Cabral, Alvarez Pedro, ii., 188.
 Cabul, Capture of, ii., 88; Insurrection in, ii., 100; Re-captured, ii., 231.
 Caillaud, Captain, i., 62; at Tanjore, i., 69.*
 Caillaud, Colonel, defeats Shah Zada, i., 94.
 Calcutta, Foundation of, i., 9; Black Hole Tragedy, i., 47.
 Calpee, Advance on and Capture of, ii., 323.
 Calvert, Captain, at Amboor, i., 120.
 Cambakah, Revolt at, i., 10.
 Campbell, Colonel Alexander, i., 339.
 Campbell, Sir Colin, Commander-in-Chief, ii., 292; Advance to Lucknow, ii., 302; at Dilkhoosa and Secunderbagh, ii., 303; and Shah Nujjeef, ii., 303; Relieves Lucknow, ii., 304; Retreat from Lucknow, ii., 305; March to Cawnpore, ii., 309; Battle of Cawnpore, ii., 310; Second March to Lucknow, ii., 314; Final Attack on Lucknow, ii., 315; Takes Lucknow, ii., 316; Victory at Bareilly, ii., 320; Made a Peer, ii., 337; Captures Amethie, and Pursuit of Bene Madhoo, ii., 334; Death, ii., 363.
 Canal, The Ganges, ii., 208.
 Candahar, Horrors of the March to, ii., 82; Relief of, ii., 125.
 Canning, George, i., 557.
 Canning, Lord, Governor-General, ii., 236; Warrant for Disbanding the 19th Regiment, ii., 245; Proclamation on the Fall of Lucknow, ii., 317; Proclamation of Peace, ii., 335; Holds a Durbar at Cawnpore, ii., 336; First Viceroy, ii., 332; Re-models the Judicature of India, ii., 362; Departure, ii., 363.
 Canton, Capture of, ii., 135.
 Cantonments of Poonah, i., 488; at Cabul, ii., 99, 112.
 Carangoly, Fort, Capture of, i., 219.
 Caravels, Drake's Capture of, i., 4.
 Carigat, Battle of, i., 287.
 Carnac, Major, defeats Shah Alum, i., 97; Battle with Scindia, i., 206.
 Carnatic, Province of, i., 20; Invaded by Hyder Ali, i., 213; Claimants for the Throne of, i., 353.
 Carriers of India, ii., 474.
 Cartridges, Story of the Greased, ii., 241.
 Cashmere Gate, The, ii., 277.
 Caste, Indian, ii., 474.
 Cauvery, Battle of, i., 227.
 Cauverypauk, Battle of, i., 33.
 Cavendish, Captain, at the Molucca Isles, i., 4.
 Cawder Beg, Exploits of, i., 333.
 Cawnpore, Wheeler, Sir H., at, ii., 263; Mutiny and Massacre, ii., 264; Siege of the Entrenchments, ii., 265; Second Massacre, ii., 266; Third Massacre, ii., 285; Scene of the Massacre, ii., 286; Sir Colin Campbell's March to, ii., 309; Campbell's Victory at, ii., 310; a Durbar held at, ii., 336.
 Census of British India, ii., 466.
 Ceremonies, Hindoo Religious, ii., 437.
 Ceylon, Affairs of, in 1801, i., 358; Conquest of, i., 543; Revenues of 1875, ii., 536.
 Chamoorchee, Capture of, ii., 365.
 Champion, Colonel, Expedition of, i., 161; Letter to Hastings, i., 164.
 Chan-chi-uan, Battle of, ii., 353.
 Chanda, Capture of, i., 514; Rebels defeated at, ii., 314.
 Channer, Major, Gallantry of, ii., 449.
 Characteristics, Hindoo, ii., 434.
 Charbagh, Bridge of, ii., 298.
 Cheetahs, Hunting with, ii., 479.
 Cheetoo, a Pindaree Leader, i., 477; Defeat, i., 502; Fate, i., 595.
 Chelam, Destruction of, ii., 388.
 Cheyte Sing, Arrest and Escape of, i., 250; Address, i., 251; Flight, i., 254.
 Chiefs, Mahrattas, Disputes among, i., 316.
 Chillambaram, Coote's Attack on, i., 220.
 Chillianwalla, Battle of, ii., 173.
 China War:—Origin of, ii., 339; Sir H. Grant's Forces, ii., 340; Landing at Pootoo, ii., 340; Occupation of Pehatang, ii., 344; Battle of Tinh, ii., 345; Attack on and Capture of Tangkoo, ii., 347; Advance on the Takoo Forts, ii., 351; Tientsin, ii., 252; Battle of Chan-Chai-wan, ii., 353; the Bridge of Pa-le-Chao, ii., 355; Advance on Pekin, ii., 356; Capture of the Summer Palace, ii., 357; Sufferings of the Prisoners, ii., 358; Capture of Pekin, ii., 359; Peace, ii., 359.
 Chingama Pass, The, i., 116.
 Chingleput, Clive at, i., 35; Fort of, i., 70.
 Chinhutt, Battle of, ii., 262.
 Chinsurah, A Dutch Defeat at, i., 81.
 Chiriaghathi Mountains, March over, i., 465.
 Chitapett taken, i., 83.
 Christianity, Early, in India, ii., 228.
 Christians, Persecution of, in China, ii., 339.
 Cholera Morbus, i., 500; Contagion of, ii., 473.
 Chunar, Treaty of, i., 255.
 Chunda Loll, i., 413.
 Chunda Sahib, i., 23; Death, i., 34.
 Churut Sing, ii., 69.
 Chuttur Sing, Insurrection of, ii., 171.
 Clarke Walpole, Death of, ii., 93.
 Clavering, General, and Hastings, i., 188; Death of, i., 189.
 Clive, Robert, Birth and Ancestry, i., 21; School days, i., 22; Enters the Company's Service, i., 22; Dispute with a High Official, i., 22; Fights a Duel, i., 22; Behaviour at the Attack on Poonah, i., 22; Love for his Native Country, i., 23; Attempt to commit Suicide, i., 23; Made Captain, i., 28; Captures and defends Arcot, i., 29; Desperate Situation, i., 32; Battle of Arnee, i., 33; Battle of Cauverypauk, i., 33; and Lawrence, i., 34; Takes Trichinopoly, i., 34; at Chingleput, i., 35; Returns to England, i., 35; Colonel and Commander of Fort St. David, i., 43; "Clive the Avenger," i., 49; at Fort Buz-Buzia, i., 50; Re-captures Calcutta, i., 50; Hooghly taken, i., 51; Engagement at the Mahratta Ditch, i., 52; at Chandernagore, i., 52; Battle of Plassey, i., 57; at Moorshedabad, i., 59; Moderation, i., 61; Governor of Bengal, i., 80; Created Lord Clive, i., 81; Wealth, i., 90; Enemies, i., 92; Governor and Commander-in-Chief, i., 93; Last Visit to India, i., 93; in Council, i., 94; Treaty of Allahabad, i., 106; Re-organises the Army, i., 108; Prohibits Private Trade, i., 109; "Clive's Fund," i., 110; Leaves India, i., 110; Character, i., 110; Letter to Colonel Smith, i., 123; and the Government, i., 132; Suicide, i., 133.
 Code, Macaulay's Penal, of 1837 in force, ii., 338.
 Coimbatore taken, i., 245; Floyd's Retreat to, i., 281.
 Colar, Capture of, i., 124.
 Colborne, General, March to Kinta, ii., 448.
 College, Fort William, i., 351.
 Collineau, General, ii., 351.
 Combermere, Lord, ii., 21.
 Commerce, Indian, ii., 575.
 Comonah, Reduction of, i., 413.

- Companies, Three East Indian, i., 10.
- Company, East Indian, Formation of, i., 3; Charter, i., 5; Early History, i., 5; Temporary Declension, i., 8; Charter of Charles II., i., 8; Charter of 1693, i., 9; Causes of Success, i., 12; Mismanagement, i., 121; Plenipotentiary, and the, i., 137; Vote to General Smith, i., 142; Members, i., 166; A Divided, i., 167; Military Charter, ii., 58; Dissolution of, ii., 330.
- Concan, Campaign in, i., 204.
- Conneveram, The Pagoda of, i., 29; Captured, i., 74; Abandoned by Munio, i., 217.
- Convoy, Capture of a Dutch, i., 228.
- Coolie Emigration, ii., 440.
- Coorg, Rajah of, i., 246; i., 298; Revolution in, ii., 51.
- Cope, Captain, i., 20; at Madura, i., 27.
- Cornish, Admiral, i., 86.
- Cornwallis, Lord, Governor-General, i., 268; and the Nabob of Oude, i., 269; and Jewan Bukht, i., 270; at Bangalore, i., 284; at Carigat, i., 287; Junction with the Mahrattas, i., 290; Retreat to Bangalore, i., 290; Advance on Seringapatam, i., 299; Operations against Seringapatam, i., 302—306; Terms of Peace, i., 308; Courtesy to Tippoo's Sons, i., 308; Close of his Administration and Return to England, i., 310; Second Administration, i., 404; Death, i., 405.
- Cottages, Hindoo, ii., 424.
- Council, Clive in, i., 94; Madras, Folly of the, i., 123.
- Cremation, Hindoo, ii., 469.
- Cruisers, Action with French, i., 313.
- Cuddalore, Siege of, i., 240; Naval Action off, i., 241.
- D'Aché, Count, i., 63, 64; Instructions, i., 68; Action with Pococke, i., 75.
- Dacoitce, Suppression of, ii., 44.
- Dalhousie, Earl, Governor-General, ii., 164; Annexation of Punjab, ii., 179; Roads and Canals, ii., 183; Jotce Persaud, Affair of, ii., 184; Burmese War, ii., 192—197; Annexations, ii., 203—207; Persian War, ii., 210; Death—Review of his Administration, ii., 227.
- Dalton, Captain, at Trichinopoly, i., 38; Battery of, i., 40.
- Danes in India, ii., 192.
- Darapooram, Capture of, i., 243.
- Darien, Scottish Expedition to, i., 179.
- Dass, Jumna, Imposition of, ii., 445; Death, ii., 521.
- D'Auteuil, Message of, i., 26.
- De Bussy, Marquis, i., 26; at Hyderabad, i., 40; at Golconda, i., 41; and De Lally, i., 71; taken Prisoner, i., 82; in France, i., 92; at Arnee, i., 232.
- Deccan, The Nizam of, and the Mahrattas, i., 315; Arrest of French Officers in, i., 325; Treaty of 1800, i., 349.
- De Conflans, Marquis, i., 76.
- Deeg, Victory at, i., 392.
- De Lally, Count, Early Career, i., 63; Instructions, i., 64; Nolan's Estimate of, i., 65; Invests Fort St. David, i., 65; Captures it, i., 68; March to Tanjore, i., 68; Retreat, i., 69; Enters Arcot, i., 70; Conduct to De Bussy, i., 71; Before Madras, i., 71; Retreat, i., 72; Sails for Mauritius, i., 75; at the Battle of Wandiwash, i., 81; Quarrels with the Council, i., 83; Besieged in Pondicherry, i., 86; Treaty with Hyder Ali, i., 86; Negotiations with Coote, i., 87; Tortured, i., 88; Execution, i., 89.
- Delhi, General Massacre at, ii., 249; Victims in the Palace of, ii., 250; Preparations for the Recovery of, ii., 267; Badulee Ke Serai Victory, ii., 268; the Corps of Guides, ii., 269; Siege, ii., 270; Nicholson arrives, ii., 273; Struggle for the Siege Train, ii., 274; Nujufghur Combat, ii., 274; Assault and Capture, ii., 275, 279; Retrospective History of, ii., 545; Queen proclaimed Empress in, ii., 548; Prince of Wales's Visit to, ii., 595.
- Derby, Earl, Despatch of, ii., 460.
- D'Estaing, i., 71; a Prisoner, i., 72.
- Devi-Cottah, Expedition against, i., 20; Second, i., 21; Importance of, i., 23; Fall of, i., 68.
- Devotion, Noble, i., 11.
- Dewangiri, Capture of, ii., 368; Retreat from, ii., 369; Re-capture, ii., 371.
- Dhalimacote, Storming of, ii., 365.
- Dhar, Capture of, ii., 321.
- Dherma, The, ii., 434.
- Dhoondia Waugh, i., 349; Defeat, i., 350; Death, i., 351.
- Dhuleep Sing, ii., 146.
- Dilkhoosa, Fighting at, ii., 303.
- Dinapore, Mutiny at, ii., 291.
- Dindigul, Capture of, i., 280.
- Disarming Native Troops, ii., 254.
- Doab, Revolt in, ii., 255.
- Dolphin, Piratical Attack upon, ii., 210.
- Donahew, Capture of, ii., 4.
- Doogaur, Battle of, i., 203.
- Dost Mohammed, ii., 71; Surrender of, ii., 94.
- Doveton, Captain, and Tippoo, i., 314.
- Doveton, General, at Nagpore, i., 495.
- Dowlut Rao, i., 315.
- Drake, Mr., i., 45, 51.
- Drake, Sir Francis, i., 4.
- Draper, Colonel, at Manilla, i., 111.
- Draper, Sir W., i., 70, 72.
- Dubbha, Victory at, ii., 140.
- Dulhoy, Fort, taken, i., 198.
- Dundas, Three Resolutions of, i., 297.
- Dupleix, M., Governor of Pondicherry, i., 14; Treachery, i., 15; Alliance with Chunda Sahib, i., 23; Mutiny of his Troops, i., 26; Treachery, i., 26; Governor of the Mogul Dominions, i., 27; and Major Lawrence, i., 34; Captures a Swiss Company, i., 35; Intrigues with English Allies, i., 398; Fate of, i., 41.
- Dupleix, Madame, i., 38.
- Durjan Sal, ii., 20; Cruelty, ii., 22; a Prisoner, ii., 23.
- Dutch, Expedition, under Hootman, i., 4; Treachery, i., 6; Naval Action with, i., 80; Settlements reduced, i., 320; Squadron destroyed, i., 419; in India, ii., 190.
- Dyaram, Flight of, i., 474.
- Education, Indian, ii., 404.
- Edwardes, Lieut., ii., 165; at the Battle of Kineyree, ii., 167.
- Egerton, Colonel, Defeat of, i., 196.
- Egypt, Expedition to, i., 356.
- Elephanta, Caves of, ii., 477.
- Elgin, Lord, in China, ii., 350, 352, 357, 360; Viceroy of India, ii., 362.
- Ellenborough, Lord, Governor-General, ii., 123; Energy of, ii., 124; Inflated Proclamation, ii., 134; Recall of, ii., 144.
- Elhot, Ensign, Suicide of, i., 44.
- Ellis, Mr., and Meer Cossim, i., 98.
- Elphinstone, General, in Poonah, i., 485.
- Elphinstone, General W. Keith, ii., 100; Infirmities, ii., 105; Indecision, ii., 105; Prisoner, ii., 114; Letter to Sale, ii., 118.
- Elphinstone, Mountstuart, Embassy of, i., 425.

- Empire, British, of India, Commencement of, i., 6.
 Empress, Queen Victoria proclaimed, ii., 515.
 Episcopacy in India, ii., 404.
 Eroor, Battle of, i., 118.
 Etawah, Battle of, i., 170.
 Etojee, Cruel Death of, i., 384.
 Eunuchs, Torture of, i., 256.
 European Officers, Revolt of, i., 434.
 Expedition to India, First English, i., 4.
 Fakirs, Senessee, Irruption of, i., 160; ii., 34.
 Famine of 1770, i., 130; of 1876, ii., 419; 422, 533, 556;
 Cost of Relief, ii., 558.
 Fauna, Indian, ii., 575.
 Ferozepore, Blunders at, ii., 252.
 Ferozeshah, Battle of, ii., 149.
 Ferruckabad annexed, i., 354; Victory at, i., 392.
 Festivals, Hindoo Religious, ii., 431.
 Finnis, Col., Murder of, ii., 247.
 Fletcher, Colonel, at Tanjore, i., 141.
 Flint, Lieut., Daring of, i., 219.
 Flogging abolished in the Native Army, ii., 38.
 Floyd, Colonel, defeats Tippoo, i., 279; Retreat to Com-
 batore, i., 281.
 Forces, Indian and Queen's, Amalgamation of, ii., 337.
 Forde, Colonel, Action with Conflans, i., 76; Defeat of the
 Dutch by, i., 81.
Fougette, A., i., 152.
 Fox, C. J., Speech on Pitt's India Bill, i., 265.
 France, Isle of, Conquest of, i., 437.
 Francis, Philip, Hostility to Hastings, i., 166; Duel, i.,
 189; Thirteen Resolutions, Defeat of, i., 297.
 Fraser, General, Death of, i., 393.
 French at Pondicherry, i., 9; Madras captured by, i., 14;
 East India Company, i., 16; Declension of, i., 89.
 Fullarton, Colonel, Defence of Patna by, i., 95; Campaign,
 i., 243, 249.
 Futtehpore, Victory at, ii., 282.
 Fyzabad, Revolt at, ii., 262.
 Fyzooli Khan, i., 258.
 Gama, Vasco De, Voyage of, i., 4.
 Ganges, Steamers on the, ii., 473; Illumination of, ii., 494.
 Gawilghur, Storming of, i., 380.
 Geriah, Fort, i., 43; Capture of, i., 44.
Gertrude, The, and the Mahratta Fleet, i., 144.
 Gheriah, Battle of, i., 101.
 Gillespie, The, ii., 92; Insurrection of, ii., 96.
 Ghulam Mohammed Khan, Defeat of, i., 318.
 Ghoorkas, Intrigues of, i., 470.
 • Ghurwal and Kumaon ceded, i., 470.
 Ghaznee, Storming of, ii., 83, 87.
 • Gillespie, Colonel Rollo, at Vellore, i., 409; Attack on Fort
 Cornelis, i., 443; Quarrel with Sir S. Raffles, i., 444;
 Slain, i., 455.
 • Gingeel, Fort, i., 26; Capture of, i., 89.
 Girls, Bengalee Slave, ii., 530.
 Goa, City of, ii., 189; ii., 481.
 Goddard, Colonel, March to Surat, i., 195; Pursuit of the
 Mahrattas, i., 200; Disastrous Retreat, i., 205.
 Godlieg, M., i., 41.
 Godwin, General, at Martaban, ii., 194.
 Goen, Richloff Van, ii., 191.
 Golconda, De Bussy at, i., 41.
 "Golden Rock," Engagement at, i., 39.
 Goldsmid, General Sir F. J., ii., 393.
 Gonds, The, i., 527, 529.
 Goojerat, Conquest of, i., 369; Insurrection in, i., 546;
 Description of, ii., 176.
 Goomsur, Rajah of, ii., 63.
 Gopal Sing, i., 417.
 Goreham, Lieut., Escape of, i., 129.
 Gough, Lord, at Maharajahpore, ii., 143; at Ramnuggur,
 ii., 172; at Chillianwalla, ii., 174; at Goojerat, ii.,
 177.
 Government and the Company, The, i., 131, 134.
 Grafton, Duke of, and Macpherson, i., 136.
 Grant, Charles, Death of, ii., 14.
 Grant, Dr., Murder of, ii., 105.
 Grant, Sir J. Hope, at Cawnpore, ii., 311; at Lucknow, ii.,
 317; in Oude, ii., 334; Campaign in China, ii., 340;
 ii., 359.
 Greeks in India, i., 3.
 Grenadiers, Bravery of, at Arass, i., 173.
 Griffin, Admiral, i., 15; Disgrace and Death, i., 16.
 Grosvenor, Mr., Mission to Manwyne, ii., 460.
 Guicowar, Palace, Illumination of, ii., 479.
 Guides, The Corps of, ii., 269.
 Gwalior, Mahrattas of, ii., 142.
 Haliburton, Lieut., i., 36.
 Hamburg Memorial, The, i., 177.
Hannibal, Capture of the, i., 231.
 Hardinge, Sir Henry, Governor-General, ii., 146; Engages
 in the Sikh War, ii., 148; Proclamation, ii., 157; Close
 of his Administration, ii., 162; Despatches, ii., 329.
 Harland, Sir R., and the Company, i., 137.
 Harris, General, Career of, i., 324; Army of, i., 331; Battle
 of Malavelly, i., 333; Letter to Tippoo, i., 338; at
 Serengapatam, i., 338; Letter from, i., 348.
 Harris, Lieut., Murder of, ii., 524.
 Hastings, Warren, Disgrace at the Council's Treachery, i.,
 100; Ancestry and Early History, i., 149; A Boyish
 Dream, i., 150; Early Career in India, i., 150; Singular
 Marriage, i., 150; Clive's Advice, i., 152; State of
 British India at the Commencement of his Government,
 i., 152; Orders of the Secret Committee, i., 155;
 Arrests Mohammed Reza Khan, i., 155; Nuncomar,
 i., 158; Difficult Position, i., 159; Treaty of Benares,
 i., 160; Administrative Success, i., 165; First Gover-
 nor-General, i., 166; his Divided Council, i., 167;
 Letter to Mr. Sullivan, i., 179; Charged with Bribery,
 i., 180—182; Letter to the English Directors, i., 182;
 Triumph of Nuncomar, i., 183—185; Continued Oppo-
 sition of the Council, i., 186; Communications to Lord
 North, i., 187; Quarrel with General Clavering, i.,
 188; Duel with Francis, i., 189; Instructions to
 Colonel Goddard, i., 197; Encouragement of Literature,
 i., 201; Treatment of Cheynte Sing, i., 250; Flight from
 Benares, i., 251; Begums of Oude, i., 255; the Nabob's
 Gift, i., 257; Journey to Lucknow, i., 260; Resignation
 and Return to England, i., 261; Reception in England,
 i., 262; Impeachment, i., 262; Death, i., 263.
 Havelock, Colonel William, Death of, ii., 173.
 Havelock, General Sir Henry, Vindication of the Burmese
 War, i., 562; on board the *Erin*, ii., 226; Active
 Operations, ii., 280; Junction with Renauld, ii., 281;
 Victory at Futtehpore, ii., 282; Victories at Aong and
 Pandoo Nuddee, ii., 283; Battle of Aherwa, ii., 284;
 Advance into Oude, ii., 287; Victory at Bussaret Gunge,
 ii., 287; Fighting at Boorkiya, ii., 290; Battle of
 Bithoor, ii., 290; Meeting with Outram, ii., 293;

- Advance on Alumbagh, ii., 297; Charbagh Bridge, ii., 298; Relief of Lucknow, ii., 298; Death, ii., 305.
- Hearsey, General, Warnings of, ii., 242.
- Heath, Captain, at Balasore, i., 8.
- Herat, Mohammed Shah and, ii., 72; Lieut. Pottinger at, ii., 74.
- Highlanders at Aherwa, ii., 285.
- Hindoo and Mohammedan, Antipathy between, ii., 240.
- Hindoo of British India, The, ii., 423, 438; British and "French Intercourse with, ii., 471.
- Hindustan and Deccan, Armies of, i., 482.
- Hodson and the Princes of Delhi, ii., 278.
- "Holla on Horse," ii., 274.
- Holcombe, Lieut., Expedition and Death, ii., 454.
- Holi, Festival of, ii., 431.
- Holkar, Rise of the House of, i., 382; Jeswunt Rao, i., 382; Brother's cruel Death, i., 384; Proposals to Lord Lake, i., 385; Campaign against, i., 386; Pursuit, i., 387; Attacks Delhi, i., 390; Defeat at Ferruckabad, i., 392; at Deeg, i., 392; Continued Defeat, i., 394; Total Defeat, i., 400; Pursuit by Lord Lake, i., 406; Peace, i., 407; Insanity and Death, i., 414.
- Holwell, Mr., i., 45; Narrative of the Black Hole Imprisonment, i., 47.
- Hooghly, Settlement on the, i., 8; Captured, i., 51.
- Hootnan, Cornelius, i., 4; ii., 190.
- Hughes, Sir E., Fleet of, at Nagpore, i., 226.
- Humberstone, Colonel, i., 229.
- Hyderabad (Deccan), Contingent of, ii., 202.
- Hyder Ali, Treaty with Count De Lally, i., 86; Origin, i., 112; Early Career, i., 113; Conquers the Malabar Provinces, i., 114; and Nizam Ali, i., 116; at the Battle of Eroor, i., 118; Present to Nizam Ali, i., 119; at Amboor, i., 120; Defeat at the Pass of Singarepatta, i., 122; Captures Mangalore, i., 122; Dealings with the Nairs of Malabar, i., 123; Outwits Colonel Wood, i., 124; Defeat at Oosasta, i., 125; Captures Bangalore, i., 128; Irruption in the Carnatic, i., 129; Letter to M. Law, i., 129; Treaty a. Madras, i., 130; and the Peshwa, i., 135; Method of procuring Money, i., 212; Swartz's Mission to, i., 212; Invades the Carnatic, i., 213; Destroys Colonel Baillie's Troop, i., 215; Camp of, i., 218; Battle of Porto Novo, i., 221; Battle of Pollilore, i., 224; Battle of Sholingur, i., 225; Death, i., 236; Character, i., 237.
- Hydernaghur, Fort, Capture of, i., 238.
- Imhoff and Hastings, Strange Contract between, i., 150.
- Impey, Sir Elijah, and Nuncomar, i., 184; and the Begums of Oude, i., 258.
- Indigo, Disturbances in the Districts of, ii., 338.
- Indore, Mutiny at, ii., 306.
- Indus, Army of the, ii., 75.
- Infanticide, ii., 161; Willoughby's Crusade against, ii., 162.
- Infants, Mortality of, ii., 537.
- Inglis, Brigadier, at Lucknow, ii., 263.
- Inglis, General, on the Siege of Lucknow, ii., 296.
- Innes, Lieut., i., 32.
- Intrepid*, Action with a Privateer, i., 352.
- "Irish Rajah," The, i., 423.
- Irrigation, ii., 401.
- Irwin, Captain, at Oudanullah, i., 101.
- Ismail and Abdullah, ii., 450.
- Ismail, Expedition against, ii., 452.
- Jackson, Coverley, at Oude, ii., 236.
- Jansens, General, i., 441, 445.
- Java, Factories founded at, i., 5; Expedition to, i., 441; Surrender of, i., 445; Future History of, i., 446.
- Jelalabad, Sale in, ii., 117; Earthquakes in, ii., 118.
- Jervois, Sir William, ii., 449.
- Jeypore, ii., 501; Rajah of, i., 479.
- Jhansi, Annexation of, ii., 201; Outbreak and Massacre at, ii., 257; Capture of, ii., 322.
- Jhelum, Mutiny at, ii., 308.
- Jingalls (note), i., 163.
- Joassamecs, Exploits of the, i., 550, 554.
- Johnstone, Commodore, Action with Suffren, i., 227.
- Jones, Lieut., on Monson's Retreat, i., 388.
- Jones, Sir W., Death of, i., 312.
- Jotee Persaud, The Affair of, ii., 184.
- Jubulpore, Combat at, i., 496.
- Juglulluk Pass, Horrors of the, ii., 114.
- Juggernaut, Car of, ii., 433.
- Jugglers, Indian, ii., 29.
- Jungle, Fighting in the, ii., 386.
- Junks, Chinese, ii., 347.
- Jury, Trial by, established, ii., 530.
- Kaikloo, Repulse at, i., 573.
- Kakhylens, The, ii., 458.
- Kallinger, Fort, Capture of, i., 422.
- Kalunga, Fort, Capture of, i., 455.
- Kamaroot, Storming the Stockades of, i., 570.
- Kandy and its People, i., 539; Expedition against, i., 543.
- Kandyan Chiefs, ii., 482.
- Kasya Hills, Revolt among, ii., 47.
- Kavanagh, James, Adventure and Reward, ii., 302.
- Kaye, Sir William, Death of, ii., 521.
- Keating, Colonel, at Aras, i., 173.
- Kent* and *Le Confiance*, Action between, i., 352.
- Kent* Man-of-War, The, i., 53.
- Khadem-Husseini, Rout of, i., 95.
- Khedive and the Suez Canal, ii., 455.
- Khelat, Storming of, ii., 89; Affairs of, ii., 518; Khan and the Railway, ii., 539.
- Khiva, Russian Invasion of, ii., 416.
- Khokand, ii., 461; Conquest of by the Russians, ii., 462, 464.
- Khoord-Cabul Pass, Fighting in, ii., 98; Carnage in, ii., 113.
- Khoosh-ab, Battle of, ii., 216.
- Khyber Passes, Carnage in, ii., 113, 115.
- Kilpatrick, Captain, at Trichinopoly, i., 40.
- Kineyree, Battle of, ii., 167.
- King, Commodore, i., 231.
- Kinta, General Colborne's March to, ii., 448; Capture of, ii., 449.
- Kirkee, Battle of, i., 489.
- Kistnagherry, Attempt on, i., 293.
- Koer Sing, ii., 317.
- Kohat, Ambuscade at, ii., 556.
- Kolattam*, or Plait Dance, ii., 485.
- Kolapore, Rajah of, ii., 18; Mutiny at, ii., 320.
- Koles, Insurrection among, ii., 48.
- Korah, Battle of, i., 105.
- Koreigaum, Battle of, i., 507.
- Kota Lama, Capture of, ii., 450.
- Krithricka Deepuni*, Festival of, ii., 540.
- Kung, Prince, Wade's Despatch to, ii., 459.

- Lacadives, The, ii., 376.
 Lahar, Fort, stormed, i., 201.
 Lahore, ii., 252; Prince of Wales's Visit, ii., 496.
 Lake, General, Commander-in-Chief, i., 332, 364; Storms Allyghur, i., 370; Battle of Delhi, i., 371; Siege and Storming of Agra, i., 374; Battle of Laswaree, i., 375; Raised to the Peerage, i., 381; March to Argaoon, i., 386; War with Holkar, i., 389; Pursuit of Holkar, i., 391; Victory at Ferruckabad, i., 392; at Deeg, i., 393; at Bhurtpore, i., 395, 401; Negotiations with Scindia, i., 403; Pursuit of Holkar, i., 406; Resignation and Death, i., 411.
 Lakshman Dawa, Tragic Story of, i., 412.
 Lalboora, Destruction of, ii., 390.
 Lambert, Commodore, at Rangoon, ii., 193.
 Lancaster, Captain, i., 4.
 Land, Assessment of, ii., 37.
 Laswaree, Battle of, i., 375.
La Sybille and *La Forte*, Action between, i., 345.
Laurel and *La Canonnière*, Action between, i., 419.
 Law, Hindoo Criminal, ii., 429.
 Law, James Francis, i., 62; Surrender to the English, i., 97; Hyder Ali's Letter to, i., 129.
 Law Reforms, ii., 64.
 Lawrence, Colonel, at Madras, i., 71.
 Lawrence, Major, i., 16, 20; and M. D'Auteuil, i., 26; and Clive, i., 34; at Bahoor, i., 35; at Trichinopoly, i., 38; Despatch, i., 39; Pension, i., 60.
 Lawrence, Sir Henry, at Lucknow, ii., 261; at Chinhutt, ii., 262; Death of, ii., 263, 279.
 Lawrence, Sir John, Viceroy, ii., 363; Tenancy Question of Oude and the Punjab, ii., 371; Character and Close of his Administration, ii., 375.
 Lefebvre, Project of, i., 363.
 Leslie, Captain, i., 17.
 Leslie, Colonel, Overland March, i., 191, 193.
 Life, Indian Social, Statistics of, ii., 466.
 Light, Captain Francis, i., 266.
 Li-Hung-Chang, Wade's Letter to, ii., 459.
 Lindsay, Admiral Sir John, ii., 134.
 Linois, Admiral, in the Indian Seas, i., 381; Action with Company's Ships, i., 382.
 Lloyd, Captain, i., 17.
 Louis XVI., Tippoo's Presents to, i., 273.
 Low, Colonel J., Proceedings at Lucknow, ii., 65.
 Lucas, Lieut., Devotion of, i., 237.
 Lucknow, Mutiny at, ii., 261; Siege, ii., 262; Inglis at, ii., 263; Death of Sir H. Lawrence, ii., 279; Residency, ii., 280; Terrible State of the Defenders, ii., 294, 297; First Relief of, ii., 298; Continuation of the Siege, ii., 302; Advance of Sir Colin, ii., 302; Second Relief, ii., 304; Retreat from, ii., 305; Sir Colin again attacks, ii., 315; Fall of, ii., 316.
 Lushais, The, ii., 539; Expedition against, ii., 383; War with, ii., 387.
 Lytton, Lord, Viceroy, ii., 513; Speech to the Council, ii., 514; Views of his Duties, ii., 520; Meeting with Ranbir Sing, ii., 530; at Peshawur, ii., 530; and the Tea Planters, ii., 531; Address at Shikarpur, ii., 531; at Delhi, ii., 543; Speech at Delhi, ii., 550; at Puttiala and Allyghur, ii., 555.
 Macao, Capture of, i., 436.
 Macartney, Arrival at Madras, i., 225.
 Macdowall, General, i., 431, 432.
 Macnaghten, Sir W., and the Afghan Chiefs, ii., 107; Difficulties of, ii., 109; Murdered, ii., 111.
 Macpherson, Sir J., i., 266.
 Madagascar, The Company of, i., 16.
 Madhoo Rao, Death of, i., 135.
 Madras in 1746, i., 14; Capitulation of, i., 14; French before, i., 71; Siege and Retreat, i., 72; Threatened by Tippoo, i., 117; Treaty of, i., 130; Military Establishment of, i., 209; Dissensions at, i., 431; Prince of Wales at, ii., 485; Harbour Works, ii., 532.
 Madura, Captain Cope at, i., 27; Expedition against, i., 62; Capture of, i., 63; Island of, i., 445.
 Magazine, Defence of, in Delhi, ii., 249.
 Maharajahpore, Battle of, ii., 143.
 Maheidpore, Battle of, i., 499.
 Mahé taken, i., 89.
 Mahrattas, Engagement with, i., 38; and De Bussy, i., 40; Action in the Ditch, i., 52; Guthrie's Account of, i., 191; Cornwallis' Junction with, i., 290; Treaty with, in 1803, i., 381.
 Maitland, Colonel, at Bhurtpore, i., 395.
 Malabar Coast, Naval Operations on, i., 44; Colonel Smith's Conquest on, i., 123; Conquest of, i., 282; Nairs of, and Hyder Ali, i., 123.
 Malacca, Our Policy towards, ii., 446; Native Government of, ii., 453.
 Malartic, Proclamation of, i., 327.
 Malavelly, Battle of, i., 333.
 Malay, Piracy, ii., 446; War character of, ii., 452; Peninsula, Extent of, ii., 446.
 Malays, Captain Osborne's Opinion of, ii., 447; Engagements with, ii., 448.
 Malcolm, Captain J., Mission to Persia, i., 428.
 Malcolm, Sir J., and Bajee Rao, i., 525; Death of, ii., 56; on the Indian Army, ii., 238.
 Maldives, The, ii., 376.
 Malet, Sir C. W., Discoveries of, i., 267.
 Malligaum, Fall of, i., 520.
 Maloun, Capture of the Heights of, i., 461, 464.
 Malwah, i., 537.
 Manar, The Isles of, ii., 375.
 Mandalay to Momiën, ii., 456.
 Mangalore, Captured by Hyder Ali, i., 122; Siege of, i., 240.
 Manila, Expedition against, i., 14; Capture of, i., 112.
 Manwyne, Murder of Mr. Margary at, ii., 459; Grosvenor's Mission to, ii., 460.
 Margary, Mr., Character, ii., 455; Expedition to Yunnan, ii., 457; Fate, ii., 458; Death, ii., 459; Reparation made, ii., 468.
 Markham, Abstract of Affairs by, ii., 508.
 Marley, General, in Nepaul, i., 459.
 Marriages, Hindoo, ii., 428.
 Martaban, Capture of, ii., 212.
 Masulaks, Discovery of, ii., 533.
 Masulpatam, Storming of, i., 26; Capture and Re-capture, i., 77.
 Matthews, General, Surrender to Tippoo, i., 239; Horrible Death, i., 239.
 Maun Sing, Proposal of, ii., 301.
 Mauritius, Proposed Expedition to, i., 356.
 Mayo, Earl, Viceroy, ii., 380; Circuit of India, ii., 380; Feudatory States, ii., 381; Relations with the Hill Tribes, ii., 383; Foreign Policy, ii., 394; Retrenchments, ii., 395, 398; Visits the ex-King of Oude, ii., 398; Railways, ii., 400; Irrigation, ii., 401; Education, ii., 404; Agriculture, ii., 406; Prison Discipline, ii., 408; Visits the Andamans, ii., 410; Assassination, ii., 412.

- McCaskill, General, ii., 134.
 Meanee, Battle of, ii., 138.
 Medows, General, and Tippoo, i., 282; Gaiety of, i., 285, 293.
Medway, Prize taken by, i., 14.
 Meeran, Death of, i., 95.
 Meer Cossim, Nabob of Bengal, i., 90; Quarrel with the Company, i., 99; Atrocities of, i., 101; Deposed, i., 101.
 Meer Jaffier Khan, i., 56; Treachery, i., 57; Nabob of Bengal, i., 59; Deposed, i., 96; again made Nabob, i., 101; Death of, i., 105.
 Meerut, Atrocities committed at, ii., 247.
 Mehndee Hassein, Defeat of, ii., 314.
 Mehrab Khan, ii., 89.
 Mekran, Boundary Question of, ii., 392.
 Melloone, The Affair of, ii., 8.
 Menajec, Character of, i., 12.
 Merchandise, Land Transport of, ii., 474.
 Mergui Archipelago, ii., 377.
 Meru, Town of, ii., 519.
 Metcalfe, Sir C., and Bhutpore, ii., 21; Provisional Governor-General, ii., 62.
 Mhow, Mutiny at, ii., 308.
 Minerals, Indian, ii., 407; ii., 575.
 Minto, Earl, Governor-General, i., 411; First Difficulties, i., 412; Troubles with Ameer Khan, i., 416; Sikh Affairs, i., 433; Memorial of Madras Officers, i., 432; Visit to Madras, i., 436; Expeditions to Java, i., 441; Resignation and Death, i., 449.
 Mohammed Ali and the Company, i., 27.
 Mohammed Shah, Expedition against Herat, ii., 72.
 Mohammerah, Expedition to, ii., 218; Squadron off, ii., 220; Capture of, ii., 221.
 Moira, Earl, Governor-General, i., 450; Lord Teignmouth's Letter to, i., 450; Created Marquis, i., 469; House-tax, i., 472; Campaigns against the Pindarees, i., 482; Generosity, i., 538; Case of William Palmer and Co., i., 548; Close of Administration, i., 556.
 Molucca Isles, Explored, i., 4; Conquest of, i., 437, 439.
 Mornien, Sladen's Mission to, ii., 456.
 Monghi, Fort, taken, i., 101.
 Monopoly, Company's, Destroyed, ii., 60, 62.
 Monson, Colonel, Death of, i., 186.
 Monson, Colonel, Disastrous Retreat, i., 387, 389.
 Montessor, Tippoo's Attack on, i., 332.
 Montauban, General Cousin de, in China, ii., 341, 346, 350, 353, 355.
 Moodker, Battle of, ii., 148.
 Mohtay, ii., 164; Operations in the Field, ii., 166; Prisoner, ii., 171.
 Mooi, John, Exploit of, i., 21.
 Moorsledabad, The Action at, i., 101.
 Mornington, Earl, Governor-General, i., 323; Treaty with Nizam of Deccan, i., 325; War with Tippoo, i., 329; Negotiations with the Mahrattas, i., 347; Deccan, Treaty of 1800, i., 349; Letter to Lord Teignmouth, i., 352; Created Marquis, i., 353; Treaty of Oude, 1801, i., 354; Mission to Persia, i., 356; Affairs of Ceylon, i., 358; Intended Resignation, i., 361; Reasons for the Mahratta War, i., 362; Treaty of Bassein, i., 363; Agra, Siege and Storming of, i., 374; Battle of Laswarce, i., 375; Resignation, and Review of his Administration, i., 404.
 Moro Ragonath, Case of, ii., 45.
 Moulton, Revolt in, ii., 164; Description of, ii., 168; Siege of, ii., 169; Capture of, ii., 171.
 Mughis, The, i., 447.
 Mulhar Rao at Maheidpore, i., 500.
 Mulwagul betrayed, i., 124; Fighting near, i., 128.
 Mundisore, Victory at, ii., 321.
 Mungulwar, Victory at, ii., 293.
 Munro, Sir Hector, at Buxar, i., 104; at Pondicherry, i., 194; at Negapatam, i., 226.
 Munro, Sir Thomas, i., 508; Death, ii., 26.
 Murdan, Mutiny at, ii., 255.
 Murray, Mr., at Persia, ii., 212.
 Mutiny, The Indian, of 1857 (*see* Sepoy Rebellion, the Great).
 Muzaffer Jung, i., 24, 27.
 Mysore, Hyder Ali's Succession, i., 112; Colonel Smith at, i., 116; Mahratta Invasion of, i., 135; Partition of, i., 346.
 Nabob, Flowery Description of a, i., 136.
 Nadir Shah, Delhi plundered by, i., 11.
 Nagas, Treachery of, ii., 454; Punishment, ii., 454.
 Nagpore, Battle of, i., 495; Annexation of, ii., 201.
 Nana Furnavese, Negotiations with, i., 197.
 Nana Sahib, ii., 263; Cruelty of, ii., 265, 267; Flight, ii., 290; Defeat at Cawnpore, ii., 310; Reported Surrender, ii., 445.
 Napier, General, in China, ii., 344, 349, 352, 359; Abyssinian Expedition, ii., 374.
 Napier, Lord, Resignation of, ii., 509.
 Napier, Sir Charles, ii., 136; at the Battle of Meanee, ii., 138; Suffers from Sunstroke, ii., 141; Rules in Scinde, ii., 159; War with the Hill Tribes, ii., 159; Commander-in-Chief, ii., 176; Reprimand and Resignation, ii., 182; Death, ii., 183.
 Nautch Girls, ii., 33.
 Naval Brigades in the Malay War, ii., 452.
 Navy, The Company's, i., 209.
 Nawab Nizam, Expenses of, ii., 532.
 Negapatam, Naval Action of, i., 14; Capture of, i., 226.
 Neill, Colonel, at Benares, ii., 260; Effective Measures, ii., 286; Death, ii., 298.
 Nepaul, Territory of, i., 452; Early History of, i., 453.
 Nepalese and Ghookas, i., 453.
 Nepalese War, i., 454; Terms of Peace, i., 464, 467.
 Neptune, Burning of the, i., 15.
 Nicholson, Captain, Expedition of, i., 8.
 Nicholson, Colonel, Energy of, ii., 255; Moving Column, ii., 273; at Delhi, ii., 275; Death, ii., 279.
 Nicolbar, Islands of, ii., 377.
 Nixon, Captain, Detachment of, destroyed, i., 129.
 Nizam Ali, Treaty with the Company, i., 114, 122; and Hyder Ali, i., 116, 119.
 Northbrook, Lord, Viceroy, ii., 415; Famine of 1875, ii., 419, 422; Prince of Wales's Letter to, ii., 506; Administration, ii., 511.
 Northern Circars, Ceded to the French, i., 41; Colonel Forde sent to, i., 76.
 Nott, General, Defence of Candahar, ii., 122; and General England, i., 125; Takes the Field, i., 128; Re-captures Ghuznee, ii., 129.
 Nuffosk Pass, The Struggle in, ii., 93.
 Nujcem-ud-Dowlah, i., 106.
 Nujufghur, Combat at, ii., 274.
 Nuncomar, Character of, i., 154; Treacheries, i., 158; Conspiracy, i., 180; Triumph, i., 182; Accused of Forgery, i., 183; Condemnation and Death, i., 184.

- Nundydroog, Storming of, i., 293.
 Nusseerabad, Revolt in, ii., 256.
 Nuthall, Colonel, Expedition to Nagas, ii., 454.
- Ochterlony, Sir D., Defence of Delhi by, i., 389; Bravery and Success, i., 458; at Maloun, i., 464; Created Baronet, i., 465; Again in the Field, i., 465; and the Ghorka Messenger, i., 467; Rewards, i., 469; Knight Commander, i., 538; Death, ii., 20.
- Omichund, Fate of, i., 59.
 Omdut-ul-Omrah and the British, i., 138.
 Oodeypore, Prince of, ii., 477.
 Oomraiz, Fort of, captured, ii., 16.
 Oosasta, Hyder Ali defeated at, i., 125.
 Opium, Trade in, ii., 37.
 Orleals, Hindoo Criminal, ii., 430.
 Orissa, Famine of, ii., 373.
 Osborne, Captain, Mission to the Malays, ii., 447.
 Oudanullah, Battle of, i., 101.
 Oude, Treaty of, 1801, i., 354; Misgovernment of, ii., 53; Struggle for the Succession, ii., 65; Story of its Annexation, ii., 203, 207.
 Outram, Sir James, ii., 215; at Mohammerah, ii., 220; at Akwar, ii., 224; and Havelock, ii., 293; Death of, ii., 363.
 Oxus, Boundary of, ii., 464.
- Palaghaut, Capture of, i., 280.
 Palaghautcherry, Capture of, i., 245.
 Palmer, William, and Co., Case of, i., 548.
 Pandak Indut, Death of, ii., 452.
 Pandoo Nuddee, Victory at, ii., 283.
 Pandy, Mungal, ii., 244.
 Panany, Battle of, i., 230.
 Paniput, Tragic Incident at, i., 406.
 Parahs, White, ii., 409.
 Parsees of British India, ii., 470.
 Patan Chief, i., 27.
 Patna, Relief of, i., 94; Taken and Plundered, i., 99; Retaken by Meer Cossim, i., 100; Massacre at, i., 101; Retaken, i., 102; Action at, i., 104.
 Pattinson, Lieut., Bravery of, i., 507.
 Patunker, Mann Sing Rao, ii., 26.
 Payne, Dr., Reports of, ii., 537.
 Pearse, Colonel, Overland March of, i., 222; Hastings' Visit to, i., 261.
 Peasant, The Hindoo, ii., 372.
 Peel, Captain, Naval Brigade of, ii., 302.
 Pegu, Capture of, ii., 196; Annexation of, ii., 197.
 Peltang, Occupation of, ii., 344.
 Peiho, Repulse at, ii., 350, *et seq.*
 Peking, Advance on, ii., 356; Capture of Summer Palace at, ii., 357; Capture of, ii., 359.
 Pellew, Sir Edward, Exploits in the Indian Seas, i., 419.
 Penang, Possession of, i., 266.
 Peninsula, Malay, Extent of, ii., 446.
 Perak, Unsettled state of, ii., 446; Situation and Resources of, ii., 447; Proclamation and Revolt, i., 447; to be governed by the English, ii., 450.
 Persia, Malcolm's Embassy to, i., 428; Pirates of the Gulf of, i., 555; Suppression of, i., 555; Visit of the Shah of, to England, ii., 418.
 Pertaub Sing, ii., 66.
 Peyton, Captain, Cowardice of, i., 14.
 Phayre, Colonel, Attempt to Poison, ii., 442.
 Philippine Isles, Conquest of, i., 111.
- Pickersgill, Lieut., Exploit of, i., 465.
 Pigot, Lord, Governor of Madras, i., 146; and the Council, i., 147; Arrest and Death, i., 148.
 Pindaree, The *Durras* of, i., 501; and Mahratta War, Close and Result of, i., 534.
 Pindarees, i., 476; Leaders, Military, and Strength, i., 477; Lawless Exploit, i., 476; Encounters with the English, i., 480; Preparations to conquer the, i., 482; Defeat of, i., 502; Flight of, i., 503; Last of the, i., 505. •
 Piracy, Malay, ii., 446.
 Pitt, William, India Bill of, i., 263.
 Plassey, Battle of, i., 57.
 Pococke, Admiral, wounded, i., 54; Engagement with D'Aché, i., 65; off St. David, i., 75.
 Poiboi, ii., 388.
 Polier, Major, i., 68, 72.
 Pollilore, Battle of, i., 224.
 Pollock, General Sir George, ii., 116; Successful March, ii., 119; March to Cabul, ii., 130.
 Pondicherry, French at, i., 9; English Prisoners at, i., 15; Origin and Description, i., 16; Naval Action in the Roads, i., 65; Besieged by Coote, i., 85; Surrenders, i., 87; Reduction of, i., 194; French Fleet at, i., 219; Naval Action off, i., 231.
 Poonah taken by the British, i., 489; Prince of Wales's Reception at, ii., 478.
 Pootoo, Landing at, ii., 340.
 Popham, Captain, Exploits of, i., 201.
 Population, Indian, i., 1.
 Porto-Novo, Battle of, i., 221.
 Port Praya Bay, Naval Action in, i., 227.
 Portuguese Indian Trade, i., 4; Vessel captured, i., 5; at Salsette, i., 171; in India, ii., 186, 189.
 Postal, Indian, Arrangements, ii., 208.
 Pottinger, Lieut., at Herat, ii., 74.
 Press, Censorship of the Indian, i., 559; Bribery of, ii., 532.
 Princes, Indian and English, Influence of, ii., 572.
 Princess Mary, The, i., 16.
 Prisoners at Pondicherry, i., 15; Hyder Ali's Treachery to, i., 129; Horrible Treatment of, i., 239; Cruelty to, i., 286; Tippoo's, i., 305; Sufferings of, in China, ii., 358; Burial of the Remains of, ii., 359.
 Prisons, Discipline of, ii., 408; Discussion of, ii., 561.
 Proclamation, Queen's, of 1858, ii., 332.
 Promé, Battle of, ii., 6; Taken, ii., 196.
 Pulo Aor, Sea-fight off, i., 382.
 Punjab, Annexation of, ii., 179.
 Pureshram Bhow and his Army, i., 203.
 Puttiala, Death of Maharajah of, ii., 507.
- Queen Victoria proclaimed Empress, ii., 548.
- Raffles, Sir Stamford, i., 441; Governor of Java, i., 445.
 Ragobah, Treaty with, i., 172; Concessions to the Company, i., 174; Fallen Fortunes of, i., 175.
 Rahma Ben Jauhir, the Pirate, i., 551.
 Rai, Baboo Purno-Chandra, Murder of, ii., 536.
 Railways, Indian, ii., 209; and Lord Mayo, ii., 400.
 Rajahmundry Taken and Re-taken, i., 77.
 Rajah, of Anjore and the French, i., 24.
 Rajah Sahib at Arcot, i., 130.
 Rajpoots and Sikhs, i., 153.
 Rameshwaram, The Island of, ii., 376.
 Ramnarain, Murder of, i., 98.
 Rannuggur, Repulse at, i., 251; Battle of, ii., 172.

- Ram Sing of Bende, ii., 56; Rise of, ii., 70.
 Rana of Gohud, Treaty with, i., 200.
 Rance of Burdwan, i., 182.
 Pance of Jhansi, ii., 322, 325.
 Rangoon, Capture of, i., 564, *et seq.*
 Rathalme, Malay Village, attacked, ii., 452.
 Raymond and Lancaster, Capts., i., 4.
 Raymond, Gen., i., 317; Death of, i., 318.
 Rebellion of Ali Jah and Durah Jah, i., 316.
 Reform, Military, Lord Mayo's, ii., 395, 398.
 Reforms, Financial, ii., 35, 37; Lord Dalhousie's, ii., 208.
 Regiment, Lally's, Mutiny of, i., 75.
 Renaud, March of, ii., 281; Death of, ii., 283.
 Residency, Lucknow, Description of, ii., 261.
 Retrenchments, Lord Mayo's, ii., 394.
 Retribution, The Army of, ii., 268.
 Rewah taken, ii., 313.
 Reza Khan, Mohammed, i., 154; Arrest of, i., 155; Trial, i., 157.
 Rickabash, Fort, Storming of, ii., 105.
 Ripaud, Capt., Treachery of, i., 326.
 Rites, Hindoo Funeral, ii., 438.
 Roberts, Col., at Deccan, i., 326.
 Rock, Sugar-Loaf, Engagement at, i., 39.
 Roe, Sir Thomas, i., 6.
 Rohilcund, Conquest of, i., 164.
 Rohillas, Hostilities against, i., 160.
 Roi, Gerard le, i., 16.
 Rose, Sir Hugh, Campaign of, ii., 321; Commander-in-Chief, ii., 337.
 Ross, Gen., Capture of Kota Lama by, ii., 450.
 Route, Overland, Established, ii., 45; from India to China, ii., 521.
 Royal Titles Bill, ii., 519.
 Rule, British, Effects of, ii., 513.
 Rumhold, Sir John, Governor of Madras, i., 148.
 Runchunder Gunnesh at Doogaur, i., 203.
 Runjeet Sing, i., 423; Treaty with, i., 424; ii., 52.
 Russia and the Imperial Title, ii., 561.
 Russian Invasion of Khiva, ii., 416; and English Interests in Asia, ii., 464; Intrigues, ii., 562; Conquest in Asia, ii., 563.
 Ryder, Admiral, Despatch of, ii., 452.
 Ryots, Discontent of, ii., 507.
 Sacrifices, Human, ii., 538.
 Sadoolapore, Battle of, ii., 173.
 Sadut Ali, Sovereign of Oude, i., 321; Treaty with, i., 322.
 Salabut Jung of Deccan, i., 40; Treaty with the British, i., 77.
 Salbye, Treaty of, i., 206.
 Sale, General, Personal Encounter of, ii., 86; March through the Khoord Cabul Pass, ii., 98; at Jelalabad, ii., 117; Defeats Akbar Khan, ii., 119; Death, ii., 149.
 Sale, Lady, a Hostage, ii., 131; Release, ii., 131.
 Salisbury, Marquis, Secretary for India, ii., 520.
 Salsette, Islands of, conquered, i., 171.
 Salt, Duty on, ii., 399.
 Sandhurst, Lord, Death of, ii., 521.
 Sattara, Annexation of, ii., 200.
 Saugor, Mutiny at, ii., 308.
 Savandroog, Storming of, i., 293.
 Schomberg's Action with Roquefort, i., 440.
 Scinde, Amers of, Quarrel with, i., 545.
 Scinde, Embassy to, i., 428; Conquest and Annexation, ii., 141.
 Scindia, Mahadajee, Death of, i., 315.
 Scindia, of Deccan, Hostile Designs of, i., 401; Treaty with, i., 406.
 Scindia, Reformed Contingent of, i., 484.
 Scindia, Surrender and Rent of, The, i., 206.
 Sehitab Ray, i., 155, 157.
 Scottish East India Company, i., 177; Opposition to, i., 178; Failure, i., 179.
 Seunderbagh, Fighting at, ii., 303.
 Seekur Khutree, Encounter at, i., 466.
 Seetabuldee Hills, Battle of, i., 491.
 Seetapore, Revolt at, ii., 262.
 Sepoy Corps of 1759, i., 208.
 Sepoy Rebellion, The Great:—The Greased Cartridges, ii., 241; Revolt at Berhampore, ii., 243; Disbanding Troops, ii., 245; Atrocities at Meerut, ii., 247; Incapacity of General Hewitt, ii., 248; Atrocities at Delhi, ii., 249; Vigorous Measures in the Punjab, ii., 251; Measures taken at Lahore, ii., 250; General Disarming of Native Troops, ii., 254; Revolt in Doab, ii., 255; The Outbreak in Rajpootana and Rohilcund, ii., 256; Outbreak and Massacre at Jhansi, ii., 257; Outbreak and Massacre at Allahabad, ii., 258; Benares, Outbreak and Massacre at, ii., 260; Mutiny in Oude, ii., 261; Siege of Lucknow, ii., 266, 275; Assault and Capture of Delhi, ii., 275; Mutiny and Massacre at Cawnpore, ii., 263, 267; Death of Sir H. Lawrence, ii., 279; First Relief of Lucknow, ii., 298; Second Relief of Lucknow, ii., 304; Retreat from Lucknow, ii., 305; Third Massacre at Cawnpore, ii., 285; Mutiny at Indore, ii., 306; Mutinies at Mhow, Saugor, and Jhelum, ii., 308; Sir Colin at Lucknow, ii., 315; Lucknow Taken, ii., 306; Victories at Chanda, ii., 314; Victory at Bareilly, ii., 320; Mutiny at Kolapore, ii., 320; Campaign in Central India, ii., 321, 326; Operations in Oude, ii., 334; End of the Mutiny, ii., 335.
 Sepoys first mentioned, i., 36; Anecdotes of, ii., 238; Character, ii., 239.
 Serapis, The, ii., 400.
 Seringapatam, Advance on, i., 299, 302; Tippoo's Camp attacked, i., 302; Redoubts captured, i., 303; Investment of the City, i., 304; Attempts to negotiate, i., 305; Cornwallis's Danger, i., 304; Treaches, i., 306; Terms of Peace, i., 308; Results, i., 309; Harris's March to, i., 332; Siege of, i., 338; Storming of, i., 340; Spoils, i., 344.
 Seringham, Engagement at, i., 38.
 Seronge, Major Carnac's Surrender at, i., 205.
 Sevace Sing, Massacre by, i., 415.
 Seyd Ahmed Ali and his Followers, ii., 46.
 Seyd, Ibrahim, i., 345.
 Seyed, Sahib, Floyd's Attack on, i., 279.
 Shah Nujjeef, Capture of, ii., 303.
 Shah Sujah, Fate of, ii., 126.
 Shah Zada, Defeat of, i., 94.
 Shastra, Murder of, i., 476.
 Sheikh Dulloo, Expedition to, i., 481.
 Shekhwatee Campaign, ii., 57.
 Shelton, General, ii., 105.
 Shere Ali, ii., 380.
 Shereef Mohammed, ii., 539.
 Share Mohammed, ii., 141.
 Shikarpur, Lord Lytton's Address at, ii., 531.
 Sholapore, Attack on, i., 513.
 Sholingur, Battle of, i., 224.

to become security for him and his property; but the government desired no security beyond the word of La Bourdonnais, and permitted him to return to France. It would have been better for him if they had kept him in England; for, upon the representations of the insidious Dupleix, he was arrested without process, and thrown into the Bastille, where he pined for three long years." He died soon after his liberation.

"It has been said," says Baron Grant, in his papers (1801), "that the interest of his wife alone, who was of the family of Auteuil, preserved him from being sacrificed; but whether it was from chagrin, or some other cause, he did not long survive. (It has been suspected that he was poisoned.) M. de la Bourdonnais was soon revenged. M. Dupleix was, in his turn, obliged to render an account of his conduct, and died in a state of penury."

Our friend, the Nabob of Arcot, sent a body of his native troops, under Maphuze Khan, to drive the French out of Madras, but they fled at the first discharge of the French cannon; and now Dupleix publicly broke the treaty we made with La Bourdonnais, and ordered every article of property, public or private, British or native, except the clothes and trinkets of the women, to be confiscated—an edict executed without mercy.

The governor and some of the principal inhabitants were next carried off to Pondicherry, and triumphantly, but meanly, exhibited there to a mob of 50,000 spectators. Among these captives was a young man named Robert Clive—the Clive who was yet to avenge the insult put upon himself, his companions, and his country! Dupleix now turned his attention to Fort St. David, and prevailed upon the Nabob of Arcot to quit our cause and join him, but three attempts he made against that place failed signally.

After Madras, this place was our most important settlement on the Coromandel coast, and upon the capture of the former, became the seat of the presidency. The fort, small but strong, stood 100 miles south of Madras, fourteen south of Pondicherry, and formed the nucleus of a considerable territory, within which stood the rising town of Cuddalore, the climate of which is so delightful that it is still one of our principal stations where soldiers are placed who choose to remain in India after having served out their time or become inviolated. Dupleix thought that, until he could utterly crush us on the coast of Coromandel, his object was but half accomplished so long as Fort St. David remained in our hands. Recalling from Madras M. Paradis, a Swiss whom he had placed there as governor—

a man without humanity or scruple—that officer came on with 300 men, and on being reinforced from Pondicherry, appeared before Fort St. David with 1,700 Europeans, six field-pieces, and mortars. Ere operations began, the officers, for some reason, refused to serve under him, and the command was assumed by M. de Bury.

At daybreak on the 9th of December, 1746, the Pennar, which joins the sea some distance north of the fort was reached, unopposed, save by a few of our sepoys, the white smoke of whose fire spurted out from the green leafy jungles in which they were concealed. A greater resistance had been anticipated, yet the garrison consisted of only 200 Britons, 100 Topasses, or natives of Portuguese blood, while the whole force for the defence of the territory was only 2,000 peons, with 900 muskets among them.

The sudden appearance of a body of 9,000 horse and foot, belonging to the nabob, led by his sons Maphuze Khan and Mohammed Ali, burning to avenge their late repulse at Madras, filled the French with consternation, and, abandoning their baggage, they made a rush to cross the river. The garrison made a sally, and, joining the Raj troops, pursued them for six miles.

Two subsequent attempts were equally unsuccessful, though the nabob now threw his whole weight into the French scale, recalled his army from Fort St. David, and sent Maphuze Khan in state to Pondicherry, where a grand reception awaited him.

Our situation on the Coromandel coast was becoming desperate now; our people looked in vain for assistance from home, and had almost ceased to hope for it. On the 2nd March, the French made their third attempt, in strength, and this time under M. Paradis. To their surprise they found the passage of the river was to be contested by a troop of volunteer horse with three field-pieces. These were driven in after a three hours' contest, when a squadron of ships was seen coming to anchor in the roads, with the Union Jack flying. On this the French retired in all haste to Pondicherry.

The new arrivals proved to be the squadron which had been inactive in Bengal, and was now under the command of Admiral Griffin, who had come from Britain with two ships, one of sixty and the other of forty guns. Partly by recruits from Bengal, England, and Bombay, Fort St. David now became so strong that it was beyond the reach of danger, and then the subtle Dupleix began to tremble for Pondicherry itself. But the approach of the October monsoon compelled the admiral to bear away for Trincomalee, on the way burning

sinking in Madras Roads the *Neptune*, a French ship of fifty-four guns.

His flag was on board the *Princess Mary* (sixty guns), and his whole squadron consisted of eleven sail, mounting 560 pieces of cannon.

The spring of 1748 saw it once more before Fort St. David, while at the same time, Major (afterwards General) Stringer Lawrence, an officer of the highest merit, arrived to take command of all the Company's troops in India; but for some months little of moment occurred, though in consequence of a rumour that Dupleix was about to make an attempt on Cuddalore, the major formed an intrenched camp near the passage of the Pennar. Dupleix had here recourse to treachery, and tempted by gold 400 sepoys to desert with their commander on a given opportunity. Fortunately the scheme was discovered. Two suffered death, and the leaders of the sepoys were sent in irons, for life, to St. Helena.

About this time Rear-Admiral Griffin received intelligence, on the 9th of June, from Captain Stephens of the *Lively*, twenty guns, that he had discovered seven French ships of war off the coast, so he resolved to sail at once to attack them. By noon next day they were seen a few leagues to windward of Fort St. David, careening well over, for the wind was blowing half a gale. This had prevented our admiral getting under weigh till eleven at night, when he put to sea, his sailors bursting with impatience to meet the enemy. M. Bouvet, their commander, was an able officer and experienced seaman, and took care to avoid a battle. To deceive Griffin, he kept to windward the whole day, and at night bore away under a press of sail, even to his royals, for Madras, where he anchored on the morning of the 11th, having accomplished the object of his voyage, by landing 400 soldiers, and £200,000 in silver for M. Dupleix, after which he put to sea, and steered for the Mauritius.

In the meantime Admiral Griffin had looked into Pondicherry Roads, and not finding the enemy there, bore away for the rough billowy roads of Madras, where he met with an equal disappointment. Popular clamour now wanted a victim. He was summoned home, tried by a court-martial, and most unjustly dismissed his Majesty's service. He was—when too late—restored, and died in 1771.*

The next great event of the Indian war, which hitherto had excited little or no interest in England, was the first attempt to reduce Pondicherry, and, if possible, drive the French out of India. "India," says a leading journal in 1875, "is as remote from

this country as though it were situate in another planet, even now that the English occupation has conveyed a sense of identity."

The first project of a French East India Company was formed under Henry IV., by Gerard le Roi, a Flemish navigator, who had made voyages to Hindostan in Dutch ships. By letters patent, in 1604, the king granted him an exclusive trade for fifteen years. Five years after, he formed a new association, and obtained letters patent, 2nd March, 1611. Four years passed without any enterprise being undertaken; some merchants of Rouen, therefore, solicited the transfer of these privileges to them, and engaged to fit out a certain number of vessels for India in 1615. These Gerard opposed, till the king united both companies by a charter, 2nd July, 1615.

Still nothing of enterprise was attempted, and in 1642 a new commercial company was formed, under the great Cardinal Richelieu, called "the Company of Madagascar," where it made some progress, and established a colony of 100 Frenchmen, who built them a fort; and then, after various changes of fortune, it was abandoned, and factories were established at various places, and lastly at *Boudoutscheri*, where they erected their principal entrepôt of Indian commerce, and named it Pondicherry.

Fortified by M. Marten, Pondicherry speedily became a place of importance, and the foreign commerce of France attained its zenith in 1742; yet only seven ships were sent to India, with cargoes to the value of 27,000,000 livres. At the period to which we have come, "the governor's house was a handsome edifice, and equal to the finest hotels in France. This officer," says a contemporary, "is attended by twelve horse-guards, and 300 foot soldiers, who are called peons. On days of ceremony he is carried by six men in a palanquin, whose canopy and panels are adorned with a rich embroidery, and various ornaments of gold. This pomp is necessary in a country where the power of a nation is determined by the exterior splendour of those who represent it."

Occupying a gentle declivity at the south-eastern extremity of a long flat eminence, Pondicherry was even then one of the best-built modern cities in India, with an aspect alike pleasing and commanding. Its strong citadel stood within the town, and, along with it, was enclosed on the three land sides by a ditch, rampart, and wall flanked by bastions. The eastern front, which faced the sea, was defended by works armed with 100 guns; but that number was quadrupled before the place was finally captured.

* Schomberg, "Naval Chron."

—A mile distant from these defences, a thick jungly hedge of aloes and other thorny plants, mingled with cocoa-nut and other palms, was carried round for a circuit of five miles from the seashore to the river Ariancoopan, forming an impenetrable barrier to cavalry, and, without the use of the axe, one equally so to infantry. Each roadway through this hedge that led to the town was protected by a redoubt armed with guns; and near where it joined the river was a small but strong work named Fort Ariancoopan.

The season was far advanced before our besieging force commenced operations; yet instead of capturing one of the petty forts and making a dash at the city, they began operations by wasting their time and strength in attacking the fort by the river. Through the neglect of the officer commanding at St. David's, no means had been taken, though the fleet had long been expected, to ascertain when the siege would commence. An engineer sent to reconnoitre Ariancoopan reported that it was a place of small strength; and this was confirmed by a deserter, who stated that it was manned by only 100 sepoys; whereas the fort, which was triangular, regularly scarped, and surrounded by a deep dry ditch, was garrisoned by 100 Europeans and 300 sepoys, under a resolute French officer.

This was about the 8th of August, when Admiral Boscawen had arranged everything for the siege, and had off the place his squadron, consisting of fifteen sail, six of which were line-of-battle ships, and carrying in all 662 guns. Entrusting the squadron to Captain Leslie, of the *Vigilant* (sixty-four), he landed to conduct the operations. The *Exeter* and *Pembroke* (sixty guns), and the *Chester* and *Swallow* (sloops), were ordered to anchor and sound the roads, prior to the larger ships approaching to batter.

On the 12th of August, Captain Lloyd, of the *Deal Castle* (twenty), landed in command of 1,100 seamen who were to co-operate with the troops; and the 27th of September saw the line-of-battle ships warped within range of the place. Admiral Boscawen, who had been grossly misled, ordered the instant assault of Fort Ariancoopan; and though made with resolute bravery, the results were most disastrous. Inspired by shame or fury, and with the conviction that they could not be beaten, the gallant stormers persisted in the attack, and did not retire until 150 of them were killed by grape and musketry, and Major Goodere, a most

experienced officer of the royal service, had fallen mortally wounded.

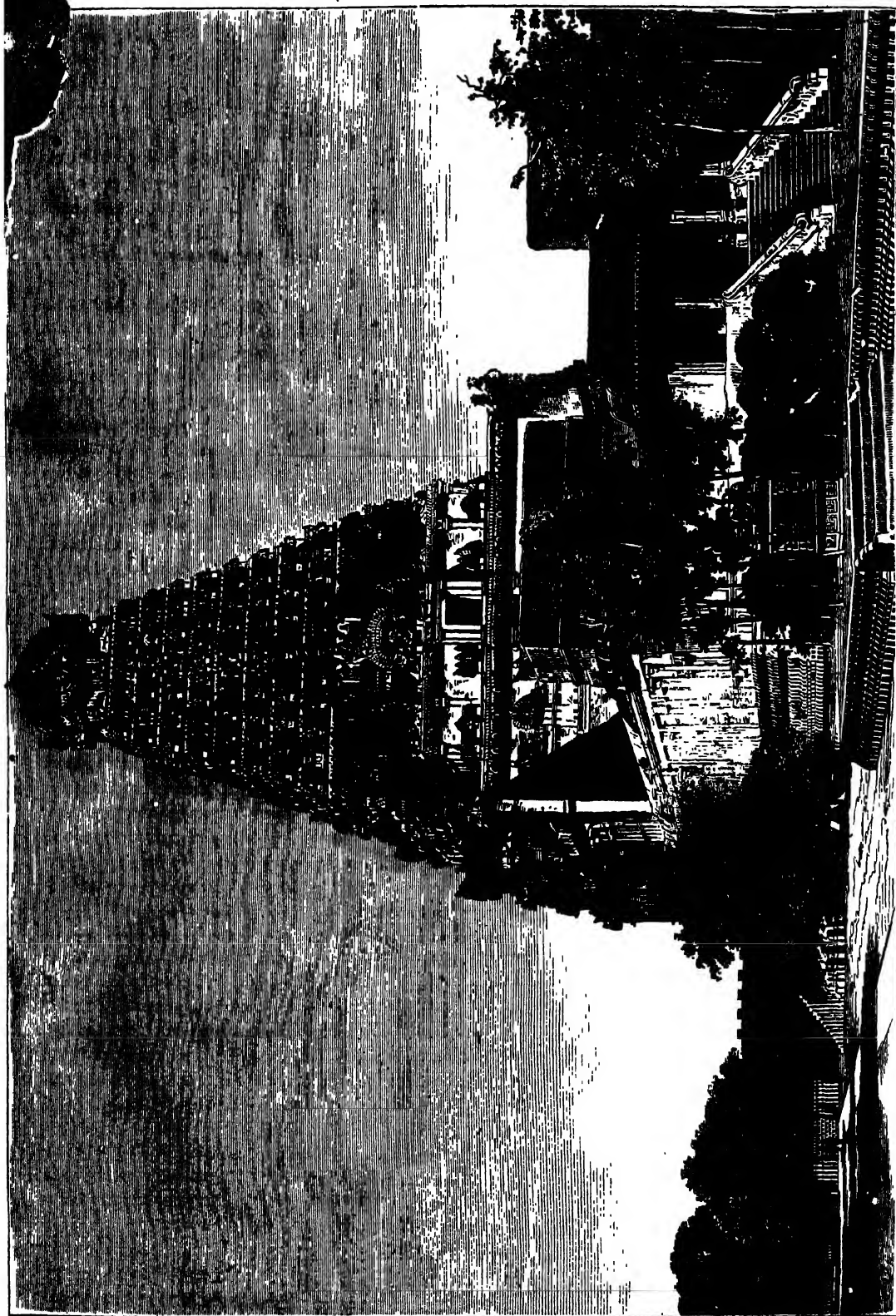
Though finding that they had been deceived in the strength of this outwork, instead of making an approach to the city from another and weak point, the siege was postponed till Ariancoopan could be reduced; and the French were not slow to profit by the blunder, by keeping the attacking force in play for eighteen days, when, on their magazine blowing up, they abandoned it.

Passing the formidable hedge, the besiegers opened their first parallel at the distance of 1,500 yards from the place, instead of 800 yards from the covered way. They then found they had broken ground in the wrong direction, and that between their works and the town they had a deepening morass. September was a month for sickness, and the rainy season was fast approaching; yet very shame prevented our people from retiring, and though many lives were lost in the process, two batteries of eighteen and twenty-four pounders, and two bomb-batteries were erected; but their fire never told, and neither did that from the ships, as all were a thousand yards distant, and the breaching-guns of the present age had not been conceived.

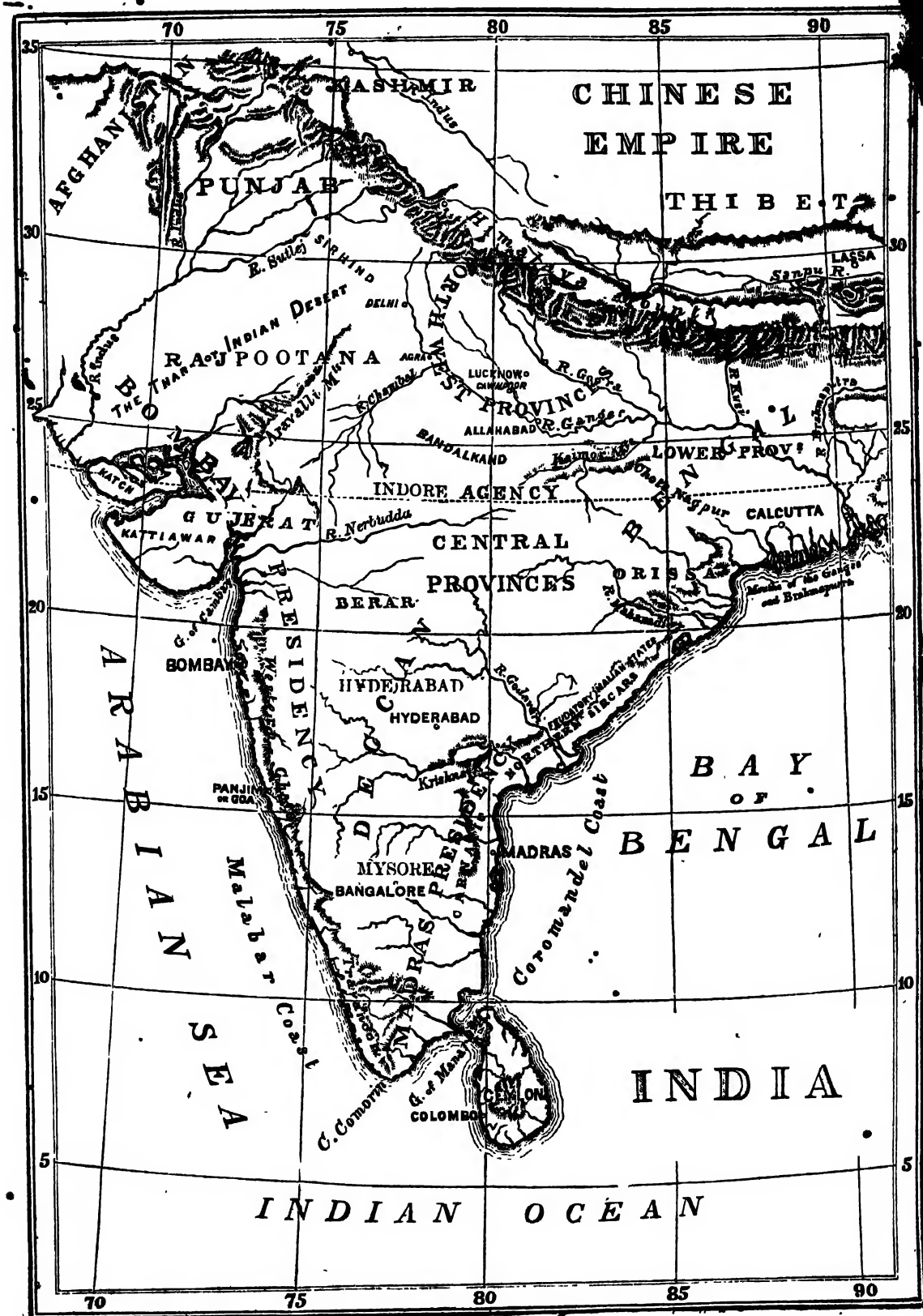
Finding that they were nearly surrounded by water, that the monsoon might dash the ships to pieces, and that they had lost 729 soldiers, and 265 seamen, out of their original strength of 3,720 men, they abandoned the siege. On the 6th October, the troops marched back to Fort St. David, and, to avoid the monsoon, Boscawen sent the squadron to Achin and Trincomalee; and all felt that nothing had been produced but a series of heartless blunders, over the result of which, the French garrison, originally consisting of 1,800 Europeans and 3,000 sepoys, sang *Te Deum*. Dupleix's loss was only 250 men.

In November, the commanders received advice that a cessation of arms had taken place between Great Britain and France, prior to the Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle; and, as possession was to be restored in the state, as nearly as might be, to that condition in which it was at the commencement of the war, the Company completely recovered Madras.

At this time, the French, by their manners and subtle mode of paying flattering compliments, were supposed by the natives of India to be a people superior in valour to us; but though M. Dupleix was nothing of a soldier, he had many brave officers under him.



SKETCH MAP OF INDIA.



CHAPTER IV.

THE TANJORE CAMPAIGN.—ROBERT CLIVE.

THE Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle was of very brief duration, and failed to secure quiet between the British and French in India, where it seemed but a false truce, and Mill, who is generally severe upon the former, attributes the first act of indirect hostility to our armed intervention in the affairs of Tanjore; and true it is, that the anarchy prevailing among the native rulers opened a way to easier conquests in the Carnatic, a province of Hindostan on the eastern side of the peninsula, with a coast of 650 miles, and where the altitude of the mountains produces the most important effect in the nature of the seasons by preventing the clouds from passing over them.*

Dupleix, who hated the British, and made no secret of his hope to drive them out of India, was infuriated by the peace, and, by his menaces he prevented them from settling quietly to business and trade; thus they neither disbanded their native troops nor sent home the slender aid that had come to them from Europe, and the first event which broke the treacherous calm was an alliance between us and Syajee, Prince of Tanjore, an extensive and well-cultivated district in the Carnatic, though in the month of January the whole face of the country is one continuous sheet of paddy-ground, here and there interspersed with villages, the total number of which is about 5,000.

Syajee had been deposed by his brother Pretaueb Sing—the deposition of one prince by another is a common event in Oriental politics—and asked our aid to recover his throne, offering to give us in return the district and fortress of Devi-Cottah, provided we could take it by the sword. For this purpose an expedition was at once prepared, and on hearing of it, M. Dupleix expressed great horror of the ambitious views of the English, who took means “indirectly to inform him that the place they desired to obtain was of value for trading purposes only, and they were not about to wrest it from its legitimate sovereign, but to conquer it as his ally.”

The force by which it was expected Syajee would dethrone his usurping kinsman, consisted of only 400 Europeans, and 1,000 sepoys, with four field-pieces, and four mortars. These troops, accompanied by Syajee, and commanded by Captain Cope, set out in March, 1749, while the battering

guns and provisions proceeded by sea in four ships, two of which were of the line. After a march of twenty miles, during which they were much harassed by a species of guerillas, the troops encamped at the banks of the Valaru, near its confluence with the sea; but the wrong season had been chosen, for our leaders were still new to India. The change of the monsoon took place on the very evening of their halt, and a dreadful hurricane ensued, which lasted with such violence till four the next morning, that many of the horses and draught bullocks were killed, the tents torn to rags or swept away, and the stores were destroyed. Meanwhile at sea, a piteous event occurred.

H.M.S. *Pembroke* (sixty guns) was wrecked, only six of her crew escaping. The *Lincoln* and *Winchelsea*, East Indiamen, were also wrecked; and worst of all, the *Namur* (seventy-four), one of the finest ships in the navy, was cast away at the mouth of the Valaru, and, save two midshipmen and twenty-four men, every soul on board, to the number of 750, perished. Admiral Boscawen happened fortunately to be on shore.

Whether it was owing to these events, or that Captain Cope failed to keep up a due communication with the fleet, which was four miles distant, is scarcely known; but after throwing several shells into the place, the attack was abandoned, and Pretaueb Sing's troops were seen in motion to dispute the passage of the Coleroon, while not a single person of rank, or a *risala* of horse, came to the standard of the forlorn Syajee.

Captain Cope now fell back to Fort St. David—his whole line of march lying through a thick, dark wood, where he was exposed to the galling matchlocks of unseen enemies, while the plains beyond were covered by glittering masses of matchlockmen and troopers with lance and shield—“with nothing better to detail than misfortunes and blunders.”

Orme* and Mill vary considerably in their details of the two attacks upon Devi-Cottah, before which another expedition appeared, but fitted out with more prudence, as it was led by Major Lawrence, whom Macaulay describes as a sensible man, though devoid of certain soldierly attributes. To escape the dangers of a land march, Lawrence

* Rennell.

* “History of the Military Transactions of the British Nation in India.”

proceeded at once by sea, with six ships, three of which were of the line, carrying 800 Europeans, with artillery and baggage, while 1,500 sepoys accompanied them in coast boats. When he came to anchor in the Coleroon, he led the force up an arm of the river direct to Devi-Cottah, and encamped on the bank opposite to it, for the double reason that the Tanjore army lay under its walls on one side, and a perilous marsh was on the other.

Enclosed by a brick wall eighteen feet high, and flanked by strong towers, the fortress was an irregular hexagon. The attack was made on its eastern flank, which in three days was breached by the fire of four twenty-four-pounders, and the gap declared practicable; but the chief difficulty was to cross the branch of the Coleroon, which was dangerously rapid, and had jungly banks, which the enemy were quite prepared to defend.

In this dilemma, a brave and skilful ship's carpenter, named John Moor, constructed a raft capable of carrying 400 men, and swam the river in a dark night, when he succeeded in attaching, unseen, to a large tree, a rope, the other end of which was rove through a purchase-block attached to the raft, by means of which the whole troops were safely carried over, and soon cleared the jungle.

The enemy had not repaired the breach, but contented themselves by digging an intrenchment. This presented a serious obstacle to the troops, more especially as before it lay a deep and muddy nullah. The attack, however, was resolved on, and Lieutenant Robert Clive, who had now completely relinquished the civil for the military service—and of whom more anon—with the rank of lieutenant, bravely volunteered to lead the forlorn hope. His offer was accepted, and he dashed, sword in hand, across the nullah at the head of thirty-four Europeans and 700 sepoys. This force he had formed into two bodies. It was the design of Lieutenant Clive to take the *épaulement* in flank, while the sepoys, pushing on to the front, should keep the garrison in check.

Unfortunately, the native troops, overtaken by an unaccountable panic, held back; and the sequel was, most disastrous. Concealed behind the projection of a tower was a body of Tanjore cavalry, who suddenly rushed forth with lance and tulwar upon the little band of Europeans, all of whom were instantly destroyed, save Clive and three others.

Clive, who was reserved for greater events, escaped the downward stroke of one horseman by nimbly springing aside, and with his three men escaped to the sepoy corps, which, though it failed

to advance, yet stood in good order beyond the nullah, where the Tanjoreans, overawed by the steady aspect, did not attempt to attack them.

Nothing daunted by this check, Major Lawrence now ordered the whole of the Europeans to the front, placing them, as before, under the orders of Lieutenant Clive. On this occasion all went as could have been wished. The Tanjore cavalry attempted to charge the stormers, who repelled them by a volley and a bayonet charge which tumbled them over in heaps, horse and man; while the former, animated by the heroic example of their leader, dashed up the rugged breach, and soon made the place their own.*

Nor were the future operations of the expedition less fortunate. A detachment of 100 Europeans and 200 sepoys took possession of the Pagoda of Achereran, a strong square edifice five miles south-westward of Devi-Cottah, where they repulsed a fierce attempt, made amid the darkness of the night by an infuriated and yelling horde, to recapture it. With all this, it was not difficult to perceive that, in the expectations they had been led to form by the statements of Syajee, the British had been deceived. As before, not a single Tanjorean joined them; and the chiefs were, in consequence, well pleased to come to an accommodation which, while it secured to our own government the possession of Devi-Cottah with all its dependencies, obtained for the dethroned prince an annual revenue of 9,000 pagodas (about £350), together with all the expenses of the war.

"This last stipulation," says Beveridge justly, "all things considered, was utterly disgraceful to those who exacted it; but the king was not in a condition to resist, for events had just taken place in Arcot which made him aware that he might soon be engaged in a deadly struggle with still more formidable enemies."

And now the suitable moment has come wherein to relate something of the past life of that Lieutenant Clive who has already been brought prominently before the reader as a subaltern officer, and who was to be the future conqueror, the really true founder of all our greatness in the East, and with whose name the history of our acquisitions and dominion there is inseparably connected.

Robert Clive, the eldest of a family of six sons and seven daughters, was born on the 29th of September, 1725, in the mansion of a small estate called Styche (in the parish of Moretown-Sea, Salop), which had been in possession of his family for fully 500 years—a family "which," says Mr. Gleig, "never aspired to a station of society more

* "Brit. Mil. Com.," vol. iii.

evated than that of the middling gentry, a rank now unhappily extinct." But it is said that the first establishment of the Clives in Shropshire dates from the reign of Henry II.

His father was bred to the law, and practised as an attorney in the little town of Market Drayton, on the Fern. His mother was Rebecca, daughter and co-heiress with her sister of Mr. Gaskell, of Manchester, whose other daughter, Sarah, became the wife of Hugh, Lord Semple, who commanded the king's left wing at Culloden, and was colonel of the Regiment of Edinburgh—the 25th. Many tales are current respecting the youthful extravagances of Robert Clive, and of these we can scarcely here pretend to sketch an outline; but rather refer the reader to Sir John Malcolm's work. His temper was wayward and reckless; he was impatient of control and resolute in purpose; and the former element is shown in the frequency with which he changed his places of abode between his eleventh and eighteenth years. He was first settled in Cheshire, under the tuition of Dr. Lostock, who, though he failed to manage the boy, foretold that "few names would be greater than his." We next find him at Market Drayton, under the master of the grammar school; and it was while here that there occurred the singular episode of his sitting astride a gargoyle of the church tower which was carved like a dragon's head. Such acts as this compelled his father to send him to Merchant Taylors', London—with little effect, as he was soon transferred to another school in Herts, where his master, Sterling, spoke of him as "the most unlucky boy that ever entered his establishment."

It is very probable that his adventurous spirit, his pugilistic encounters, his love of racing, boating, cricket, and all manner of out-door sports, with his wild and daring manner, which made him the terror of ushers, and to be known as "naughty Bob," and deemed, as Macaulay says, "a dunce, if not a reprobate," kept the lad from following, as his father wished, the frigid study of the law, and led him into the ranks of the East India Company's civil service. He had barely completed his eighteenth year when he landed at Madras in 1744, and entered at once upon his official duties.

The impatience of control he had shown as a scholar was not the less exhibited when he was a clerk or "writer." He became involved in a dispute with a senior, and was commanded by the governor to ask pardon. He did so, however unwillingly, and the functionary, hoping to smooth over all coldness of feeling, invited young Clive to dinner.

"No, sir," replied he, scornfully; "the governor

commanded me to apologise to you, and I have done so; but he did not command me to dine with you."

With all this, the idle Salopian schoolboy now became a severe student, and devoted his attention to the culture of the native languages. Two years, passed thus, when the advent of war between Britain and France opened up a more congenial field for his ability and ambition. He was present at the bombardment of Madras in 1746, and became, on parole, the prisoner of La Bourdonnais, and was one of those, as we have said, who were made a public spectacle by Dupleix when he violated the terms of the capitulation. Disguised as a native he made his escape from Pondicherry, and on reaching Fort St. David, became a gentleman volunteer, and in that humble capacity gave proofs of the indomitable courage that inspired him. He once formed one of a party at play, whom two officers by ungentlemanly cheating contrived to fleece. The winners were noted duellists, so the other losers paid their money in silent rage; but Clive refused to follow their example, and taxed the players with knavery. He was challenged, went out and gave his fire, upon which his adversary quitting his ground, put his pistol to Clive's head, desired him to ask his life. Clive did so; but the bully now required that he should pay the sum he had lost, and retract what he had said.

"And if I refuse?" demanded Clive.

"Then I fire," replied the other.

"Fire, and be hanged!" said Clive coolly. "I still say you cheated; nor will I ever pay you."

The gamester, struck with the bold bearing of his antagonist, called him a madman, and threw away his pistol. We must not finish this anecdote, continues Mr. Gleig, without recording Clive's conduct in the sequel. When complimented by his friends, he observed,—

"The man has given me my life, and I have no right in future to mention his behaviour at the card-table; though I shall certainly never pay him, nor associate with him again."

In 1747, he sought and obtained the rank of ensign, still retaining his position in the civil service, so few were the Europeans then in India. He marched against Pondicherry, was in the attack on Fort Ariancoopan, and the retreat to Fort St. David. During the affair of Pondicherry, it chanced on one occasion, that the ammunition of his picket, when hotly engaged, fell short. Eager to avoid a repulse, he hurried rearward to the dépôt, and carried up a fresh supply ere his absence was observed by his men. Of this circumstance a brother-officer took advantage to cast a slur upon

his character; but Clive called the slanderer to such a severe account, that the latter was compelled to resign his commission. One strong feature in the somewhat melancholy mind of Robert Clive was an intense love of his own country.

"I have not enjoyed a happy day since I left my native country," he wrote to one of his relatives; "I must confess at intervals when I think of *my dear native England*, it affects me in a very particular manner. . . . If I should be so blest as to visit again my own country, but more especially Manchester, the centre of all my wishes, all I could hope or desire for would be presented in one view."

In his Essay on Malcolm's "Life of Clive," the latter, says Macaulay, "expressed his feelings more *soberly* and pensively than we should have expected from the waywardness of his boyhood, and the inflexible sternness of his later years."

When lonely and in low spirits, at Madras, he twice attempted to shoot himself through the head;

on each occasion the pistol snapped, and then received the impression that divine Providence had designed him for some important career, miraculously saving his life.

"Such," says Nolan, "was the state of mind of this young man, who was borne a prisoner by the perfidious Dupleix to Pondicherry, and there paraded about for the sport of a people who were little better than their infamous governor. It is easy to conceive how the high spirit of Clive chafed under these indignities; but his resolute will and fertile genius soon found an opportunity to assert themselves. Well had it been for Dupleix and for France, if the wanderer who so well affected the mien and garb of Islam, had been fettered in Pondicherry, or if La Bourdonnais' clemency and honour had prevailed, and the young clerk had been left in 'Writers' Buildings' at Madras, until commercial success, dismissal, or suicide had prevented him from interfering in the field of war with the governor of Pondicherry, and the genius of French conquest."

CHAPTER V.

PROGRESS OF THE WAR IN THE CARNATIC, ETC.

THOUGH the means by which it was obtained are open to question, the possession of the fortress of Devi-Cottah, with its district, proved of immense importance to the Company. Situated most advantageously on the Coromandel coast, with the channel of the Coleroon immediately under the town walls, ships of the largest burden could approach with ease, though there was a bar at the mouth of the river, and this was of all the greater consequence that from Masulipatam to Comorin there was no harbour that could receive a vessel even of 300 tons burden. In addition to this, the district was fertile, rich and highly cultivated.

Though partially baffled, M. Dupleix was in no wise intending to relinquish his schemes for conquest or for availing himself of local contentions. The British flag had not waved many days on Devi-Cottah ere he was engaged in transactions of great moment, and taking part in a revolution in the Carnatic.

A number of princes disputed the succession to the throne of that country—the six sons of Nizam-ul-Mulk—and Dupleix, acting precisely upon our own plan in India, *Divide et impera*, resolved to make profit out of the civil war by adhering to

the strongest claimant, Chunda Sahib, who had collected a large army, and eagerly courted his assistance, and through whom he hoped to attain a complete ascendancy throughout the whole of Southern Hindostan. These ambitious projects are fully admitted by the Abbé Raynal, Voltaire, and Orme. In addition to this war in the Carnatic, fierce disputes were in progress among minor princes for the possession of other dominions bordering upon, or connected with it.

From Pondicherry Dupleix marched a body of 400 French soldiers, and 2,000 sepoys, many of whom were disciplined Caffirs, and in the first battle, by a ball fired by one of these, Chunda Sahib's most powerful opponent fell. Mohammed Ali, son of the fallen nabob, fled to Trichinopoly, a strong place, while the allied conquerors marched to Arcot, which surrendered on the first summons. Mohammed earnestly implored succour from the British, offering high prices for their aid, but they were few in number, they were without orders from home to justify them for embarking in such new and extensive operations; moreover, peace had been concluded at home, and they were amply occupied in taking repossession of Madras, and strengthening

Meanwhile, Dupleix sent some troops with Chunda Sahib to plunder the Rajah of Tanjore, now giving up Devi-Cottah to us, and compelled that prince to give to France two lacs of rupees, and eighty-one villages belonging to Carical, which

the latter, whom he now kept loaded with chains and carried him thus in his train wherever he went.

Nazir Jung and Prince Anwar-ud-Deen, who claimed the sovereignty of the Carnatic, having united their forces, and drawn into their service



NATIVE OF MADRAS.

the French had seized in 1736, and had built a fort there.*

In the adjacent regions of the Deccan—that great and powerful country which formerly dominated over the whole of the Carnatic—the succession to the late Nizam-ul-Mulk had been bitterly disputed between his son Nazir Jung and his grandson Muzuffer Jung; but the former prevailed over

* Malcolm's "Life of Clive," &c.

nearly all the Mogul troops, advanced suddenly to the frontier of that country at the head of an immense army, including 30,000 Mahrattas to act as light cavalry. On their approach, Chunda Sahib and his French friends retreated towards Pondicherry, where Dupleix, by incredible exertions, increased his contingent to 2,000 men, and added a column of well-trained sepoys, with an excellent park of artillery.

In the meantime, to sustain Mohammed Ali, we had contrived to send a few slender detachments to Trichinopoly, a fortified city on the southern bank of the Cauvery, long the capital of the Naik of

panies had also been sent to aid the Rajah Tanjore; and Major Lawrence, on joining the with a few more, found himself enabled to aid the army of the Nazir Jung with 600 British soldiers.



SACRED POOL NEAR TRICHINOPOLY.

Madura. It is famous for its magnificent temples and mosques, and is surrounded by a double loop-holed wall; and in its centre the citadel crowns a singular isolated and stupendous rock, of almost sugar-loaf form, 350 feet in height, on the little plateau of which are now the arsenal and military hospital. While garrisoning this place, a few com-

Though that officer had obtained the orders of his civil superiors for this armed co-operation, he had painful doubts as to whether he was justified in fighting French troops in time of peace, without distinct orders from London; while "the presidency, having satisfied themselves that the man who could muster an army of 300,000 men must be

The real soubahdar, had got rid of all their doubts and scruples on the subject of his title, and unanimously resolved to share his fortunes." He advanced with the showy and glittering army of Nazir Jung, the French and their allies strongly intrenched themselves, and, confident of victory, quietly waited the attack. Their position was so admirable, that Major Lawrence advised Nazir against the risk of an attack; but the haughty Indian prince replied, that "it became not the son of Nizam-ul-Mulk to retreat before any enemy!"

The guns opened the strife, and the infantry were put in motion for a closer attack, with matchlock and gingal, but at this crisis the French troops became utterly disorganised. Numerous as was the mighty host of Nazir Jung, the only really formidable portion of it was Lawrence's handful of Britons with their old "brown Besses" and socket-bayonets; hence M. d'Auteuil sought to bribe it into inactivity, by sending a secret messenger to acquaint the major that, "though their troops were arrayed on opposite sides, it was his wish that no European blood should be spilled, and therefore desired to know in what part of Nazir's army the British were posted, in order that none of his fire might go that way."

Estimating this remarkable communication at its true worth, Major Lawrence replied,—

"The British colours are carried on the flag-gun of our artillery, and though I, too, am anxious to spare European blood, I shall certainly return any shot that may be sent me."

But M. d'Auteuil, in proposing this absurd neutrality, had not given the true reason, which was that his men were in open mutiny, and that thirteen of his officers had resigned their commissions in front of the enemy. This was to revenge themselves on Dupleix, with whom they had a fierce dispute, before leaving Pondicherry. Whatever the cause by which these men courted death by the articles of war, matters not; one account says they were enraged at not sharing the booty of Tanjore, but, however that may be, M. d'Auteuil ordered his whole contingent to quit the field, and march home. Chunda Sahib, who saw his own troops now deserting fast, thought he could not do better than follow M. d'Auteuil; so the whole position was abandoned without another blow, and for a time the triumph of the British and their allies seemed quite secure, though Chunda, at the head of his cavalry, repeatedly charged the Mahrattas, who, led by Morari Rao, hung like a cloud upon the flanks and rear of the flying column, the arrival of which in wretched flight at Pondicherry, threw all that place into consternation.

The refusal of Nazir Jung, with true Indian cunning and rapacity, to grant to Britain a territory near Madras as the reward of her co-operation, so irritated Major Lawrence, that he instantly marched his 600 men back to Fort St. David. On the other hand, Dupleix had not lost heart; by various arts he pacified the mutinous officers, infused a new spirit into their soldiers, and opened a secret correspondence with some disaffected chiefs of the Patan troops in the army of his antagonist, Nazir. These were ferocious and warlike mercenaries, who were divided into clans or tribes, like those of the Scottish Highlands; and they engaged to perform various services, even to the murder of Nazir, if wished.

D'Auteuil again took the field, and one of his officers, at the head of 300 bayonets, was allowed by the Patan guards to penetrate into the heart of Nazir's camp in a dark and cloudy night, and slay a thousand men in cold blood, with the loss of only three; while at the same time, a small French detachment sailed for Masulipatam (a seaport having a great trade with Bassorah on the Persian Gulf), which was escalated and taken by Colonel Forde in 1739. Landing in the night, they assailed its fort—a great oblong work close by the sea—and stormed it with trivial loss, while another detachment seized the Pagoda of Travadi, within fifteen miles west of Fort St. David. These troops were under "the French Clive," the Marquis de Bussy, who, continuing his rapid career, next stormed the famous hill-fort of Gingee, which towers above six other conical mountains on the summit of a mighty rock, and is impregnable to ordinary modes of attack. Built by the ancient kings of the Chola dynasty, strengthened by the Naik of Tanjore in 1442, and successively by the Mohammedan kings of Bejapore, the Mahrattas, and the Mogul, it was deemed a maiden fortress, and its capture struck awe into the hearts of the Indians, and filled all Europeans with astonishment.*

Impressed by this event, Nazir Jung opened a secret correspondence with Dupleix, who replied to his letters in a friendly spirit, and drew up a treaty of peace, while at the same time arranging for a treacherous revolt in the camp of Nazir, against whom he posted 4,000 men unseen under the great rocky hill of Gingee, with ten field-pieces, to await the summons of the Patan traitors.

The secret signal was given, and 800 Europeans, with 3,200 sepoy, burst into the camp of Nazir, who, on the first alarm, mounted his battle-elephant, and was hastening to the lines, when two musket-balls entered the howdah and shot him through the

heart. He fell out, dead, at the feet of the savage traitors, who slashed off his head, and bore it through the lines upon the spear.

The tragedy caused a sudden revolution. The chains were struck from the limbs of his nephew, Muzuffer Jung, who was instantly proclaimed Soubahdar of the Deccan, and set out in military and Indo-barbaric triumph for Pondicherry, where, to reward the French, he gave them a great part of the fallen prince's treasures, appointing Dupleix governor of all the Mogul dominions on the Coromandel coast, from the mouth of the Kistna to Cape Comorin, while Chunda Sahib obtained the government of Arcot. But neither the new soubahdar nor Dupleix could satisfy the avarice of the Patan chiefs, who marched off to their native mountains full of rancour and revenge, sentiments to which they had an opportunity of giving full sway in the spring of 1751.

In that year it became necessary for Dupleix to turn his attention to certain revolts which broke out in the Carnatic—as he shrewdly suspected, not without encouragement from the Company or its native allies, and the new soubahdar took the field at the head of the Raj, or state troops, accompanied by a French force under the Marquis de Bussy. On this march into the interior, a mutiny burst forth in a portion of their army, and it was discovered that a savage pass in the territory of Kurpa (*en route* to Golconda) was in possession of the ferocious Patans, armed with their long juzails or rifles, matchlocks, and gingals, together with arrows and other missiles.

Bussy ordered up his light guns to sweep the pass with round shot and grape. The Patans fled, but one, by a Parthian shot, sent an arrow through the brain of the new soubahdar, and slew him on the spot. Another account says he was slain by the javelin of the Nabob of Kurnool. Be that as it may, the native army packed up their lotahs and rice-kettles to retire, when the energetic Bussy proclaimed a third soubahdar, in the person of Salabut Jung, the infant child of Muzuffer, a tiny black youngling, who was now borne aloft in triumph through the ranks. It is worthy of remark that to the succession of children no respect is ever shown in India, where hereditary right has no fixed rule of successions, and hence the domestic dissensions by which, from first to last, we have ever profited. The army continued its march to Hyderabad, where it was given out that ere long France would make the Great Mogul to tremble on his throne at Delhi.

The sudden ascendancy of the wily Dupleix filled the Council of the East India Company with something more than genuine consternation, and

they endeavoured to induce Mohammed Ali to break off those negotiations whereby Trichinopoly was ultimately to be surrendered to France; but Mohammed Ali declared that he would hold out Trichinopoly to the last gasp, whereupon we pledged ourselves to aid him with men, money, and ships. Yet for all this, in his first faintness of heart, he might have joined Dupleix. To encourage him, the presidency at Fort St. David twice sent him succour; but the results were far from satisfactory, and in one instance we had a positive defeat, owing to the smallness of the force at our disposal, and as Major Lawrence had returned to England, the Council were at a loss to whom to give the command of the first expedition.

Lieutenant Robert Clive was too junior in rank and years, so they gave the command to Captain Cope, who, says a writer, "might have been of the same stock as Sir John Cope, the hero of Prestonpans." With a mixed force of 600 men, he advanced to Madura, a town situated in a wild and hilly district, then as now in some parts swampy, in others cultivated with paddy-wheat, sugar, and tobacco, and having savage districts where elephants, tigers, chetahs, antelopes, and hogs roam untamed. Its fortifications were then rectangular and extensive, and consisted of a ditch and wall, round which mephitic miasma and fever are yet exhaled from the stagnant basins of the fort. This unsavoury place still adhered to Mohammed Ali, though a garrison, led by a soldier of fortune, held it against him.

Captain Cope had with him only three field-pieces, and two cohorns, with 150 Europeans, and 600 native horse, with which to invest a city two miles in extent. He was joined, however, by 5,000 of Mohammed's men, but his whole power of breaching depended on an antique Indian gun, the shot for which was so soon expended that it failed to enlarge some ancient gaps in the outer wall; yet to one of these the stormers advanced with the bayonet, to find it held, among others, by three stalwart champions, one of whom, a bulky man, was clad "in complete armour," *i.e.*, chain mail, and these defenders cut down many of the stormers ere they perished. In the interim, a storm of balls, arrows, and stones was poured from the rampart above, and on gaining the parapet, the little handful of Britons saw there a sight which was sufficiently appalling "On each side of the breach was a mound of earth, with trees laid horizontally upon it (an abatis?), yet leaving openings through which the enemy thrust their pikes, while at the bottom of the rampart a strong entrenchment had been thrown up, and from three to four thousand

men stood ready to defend it. The assault, in which it would have been madness to persist, was abandoned, and on the following day, Captain Cope, after blowing his old gun to pieces because he had not the means to carry it away, returned crestfallen to Trichinopoly."

He had not retired a moment too soon, for 3,500 of his allies went instantly over to the enemy. All this only serves to show that the means at the disposal of our officers were too small to achieve much as yet, in a region so warlike and populous.

On the falling back of Cope, Trichinopoly, a place of vital importance, was immediately besieged by the French and the forces under Chunda Sahib. As it was the only place in the Carnatic which now remained in the hands of our ally, and as the French were showing what we might expect by planting white Bourbon flags in every field around our boundaries, and in some instances insolently within our limits, the presidency at Fort St. David became roused to greater exertions.

There were mustered 500 Europeans, 100 Caffirs, and 1,000 sepoy, and eight guns, and these, with Captain Gingen, a somewhat weak and wavering officer, marched to raise the siege. With him went the famous Clive, but unluckily merely in the position of a commissary. According to Cambridge's "War in India," a spirit of jealousy and division existed among our officers which could not fail to be prejudicial to the work in hand. Captain Gingen marched in April, 1751, and at the same time Chunda Sahib began his movement to meet him at the head of 12,000 horse, 5,000 infantry, and a strong battalion of French. The opposing forces met near the great fort of Volconda, which is fifty miles north-west of Trichinopoly, barring the way from that city to Arcot, and the chief defence of which is a rock 200 feet high, a mile in circuit, and moated round by the Valaru. On this rock were three walls, one at the bottom hewn out of the living stone, another near it, and the third at the summit. The governor was summoned by

both parties, but, looking down from his perch complacently on those below, replied that he would wait the issue of a battle.

The forces that opposed ours were no doubt overwhelming; but the British troops behaved in such a manner as British troops never behaved before or since. They fled at the first shot! Clive, the young subaltern, strove in vain to rally them, while Abdul Wahab Khan, Mohammed Ali's brother, riding up to them upbraided them for their cowardice; but the Caffirs and sepoy fought for some time with undoubted valour. Another account, which we would rather believe, says:—"It is but just to the English nation to say that only a few in that detachment were English; they consisted for the most part of Germans, Swiss, Dutch, French, and Portuguese deserters; all these, except the Dutch, were in awe of the French, whose reputation for discipline and military science, together with the late splendid victories of themselves and their allies, had spread an impression among all nations in India, save the English, that they were invincible." Gingen, who was calling councils of war, and debating when he ought to have been fighting, was hurled from position to position, till, by changing his line of march, and literally stealing away under cloud of night, he contrived to reach Trichinopoly, after an eighteen hours' march without refreshment, in the hottest season of the year. Chunda Sahib was close on his rear, and the siege was renewed with more vigour than ever.

Lieutenant Clive contrived to make his way to Fort St. David, where he stormed at, and execrated, the conduct of our officers, and solicited some employment more suited to his abilities. In a lucky hour he was promoted to the rank of captain, and the Council adopted a plan which his bravery and genius had formed, and entrusted the boy-captain—for in years he was little more—with the execution of his own daring project.

This was nothing less than to relieve Trichinopoly by making a sudden and furious attack upon Arcot, the capital of the whole Carnatic.

CHAPTER VI.

CAPTURE OF ARCOT.—DEFENCE OF IT BY CLIVE.—CAUVERYPAAK.

FOR this perilous and important service, the attack upon Arcot, the whole force of Captain Clive amounted to only 200 Europeans, and 300 sepoy; he had only eight officers, six of whom had never

been under fire, and four were younger than himself, and had just left the Company's civil service. His artillery consisted of three light field-pieces—probably six-pounders. On the 26th August he marched

from Madras fall of confidence in the success to come, for with him there "was no such word as fail."

Proceeding south-east, he reached Conjeveram on the 29th, and there learned that the fort of Arcot was garrisoned by 1,100 men, nearly thrice his force, and on the 31st, a march due west from the bank of the Paliar, brought him within ten miles of Arcot. He now sent back to Madras for two eighteen-pounders, to be sent after him without delay. The country people, or the scouts employed by the enemy, now preceded him with tidings that they had seen the British marching with the greatest unconcern, amid a dreadful storm of thunder, lightning, and rain, which was actually the case. This was considered a fearful omen by the native garrison, who instantly abandoned the fort, and a few hours after their departure saw Clive marching, amid tens of thousands of wondering spectators, through the streets of Arcot, the capital of an extensive maritime district, a large, but unwall'd town, surrounding a large and strong fort.

After the capture of Gingee by the Mogul armies, they were forced to remove in consequence of the unhealthiness of the plains of Arcot, and this led to the erection of the city in 1716. Anwar-ud-Deen, the nabob, having been slain in battle in 1749, the town was taken by Chunda Sahib, supported by the French, and was now in turn taken by Clive, who found in the fort eight pieces of cannon and great abundance of munition of war.

As he scrupulously respected all property, and permitted about 4,000 persons who had dwellings within the fort to remain there, together with £50,000 worth of goods which had been deposited therein for security, this won him many friends among the natives, who cared little for either of the parties who were contending for the lordship of their native land. As a siege was soon to be expected, says Dr. Taylor, he exerted his utmost diligence to supply the fort, and made frequent sallies to prevent the fugitive garrison who hovered round, from regaining their courage.

He made a search at the head of the greater part of his slender force, with three field-guns, and found a body of the enemy, on the 4th of September, posted near the fort of Timery, but after discharging a field-piece a few times, they fled to the hills before they could be brought within musket-shot. Two days after, he sallied forth again, and found, as before, the enemy 2,000 strong posted near Timery, in a grove, covered by a ditch and bank, and having, about fifty yards in their front, a large alligator tank, almost dry, and choked by luxuriant weeds.

As he advanced, the enemy opened with two field-

guns, and killed three Europeans. On this, Clive led up his troops rapidly, but the enemy found shelter in the tank, as behind a breastwork, where they were so well sheltered, that they could inflict severe loss, yet sustain none. Clive now sent two subdivisions to take the tank on each flank by opening a cross and enfilading fire. On this, they fled, and Clive won the village under the walls of the fort, the holders of which, perceiving that he was without a breaching gun, refused to surrender and he, knowing that the enemy's cavalry were hovering about, fell back on Arcot, where he spent the next ten days in strengthening the works.

Meanwhile, the enemy increased to 3,000 men collected from various parts of the Carnatic, and encamped within three miles of the fort, prior to besieging it, for which purpose they were making preparations; but on the night of the 14th, when their camp was buried in sleep, Clive, the indefatigable, burst into it, sword in hand, swept through it from end to end at the point of the bayonet, slaying and wounding right and left, without the loss of a man, while the enemy fled on all sides with shrieks and confusion, and, when day broke none remained there but the dying and the dead.

The two eighteen-pounders with some stores were meanwhile on their way, under a sepoy escort and, in the hope of intercepting them, a body of the enemy occupied the great Pagoda of Conjeveram "the City of Gold," the Orissa of Southern India and headquarters of heathenism, situated amid the most lovely scenery, where the roadsides are planted with palm-trees; but Clive had tidings of their plan, and sent thirty Europeans and fifty sepoys to attack the great pagoda, from whence they expelled the enemy, who retired to a neighbouring fort. Then their numbers began daily to augment and Clive, anxious for the safety of his convoy sent all his force against them, save eighty men.

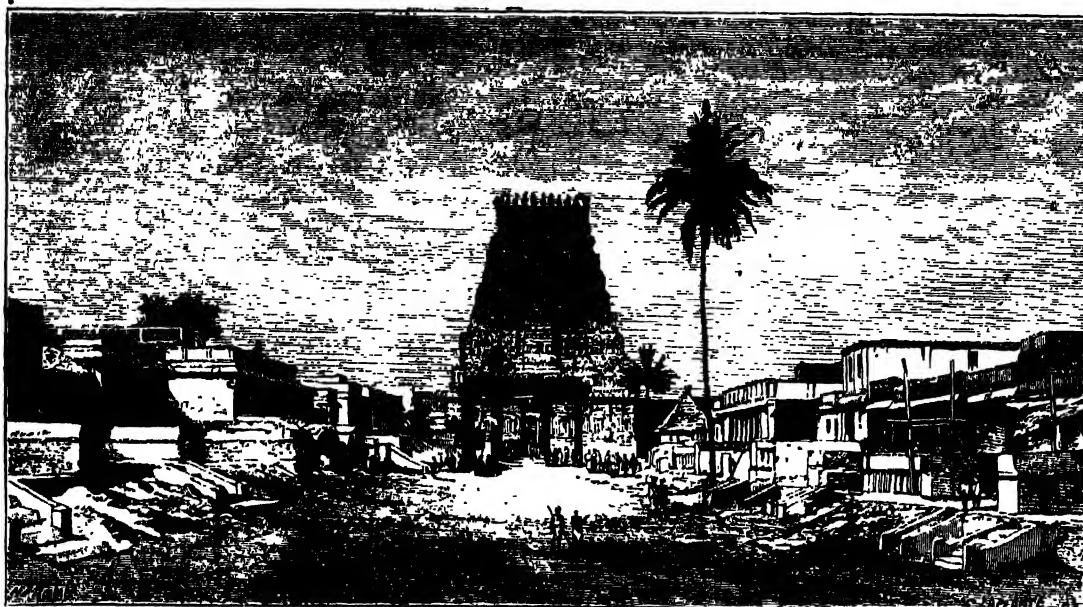
On this, the enemy most dexterously became the attacking force, and, quitting the pagoda, reached Arcot by a détour and environed the fort in the dark with horse and foot. As day broke, they opened a musketry fire upon the ramparts from some house-tops that commanded them. As this produced no effect, a body of horse and foot, oddly mingled together, with shouts, yells, and warlike music, made a furious rush at the great gate; but a well-directed shower of hand-grenades scared the horses, which scoured about in all directions, trampling down the foot. Clive then opened on them with musketry, and they fled *en masse*.

An hour later, they suddenly renewed the attack, to be quite as rapidly repulsed, and between night and morning, Clive's main body from the

the pagoda, "with the sepoys and the two precious and glittering cannon from Madras, appeared on the battlements of the town," and Clive quietly opened his batteries to receive them.

As he had fully calculated, Chunda Sahib withdrew a great portion of his force from the siege of Trichinopoly, and sent his son Rajah Sahib with 4,000 native horse and foot, and 150 Frenchmen, from Pondicherry to Arcot, where they suddenly took possession of the palace on the 23rd of September. Clive, naturally impetuous, was somewhat unwilling to be cribbed and confined to the fort, and resolved, by a vigorous effort, to rid himself of the enemy utterly. "Facing the north-west gate of

On wheeling eastward, Clive found the white-coated French infantry, with four field-pieces, drawn up at the palace, from whence they opened fire at thirty yards' range, but were speedily driven in-doors. Meanwhile the rajah's troops fired from the houses, and shot down fourteen men who were sent to drag off the French guns; and, after a severe fight, Clive fell back to the fort, to which Glass's detachment returned about the same time, the enemy's strength rendering the attempt to dislodge them a failure. In addition to the killed, Clive had sixteen disabled, one mortally, including Lieutenant Revel of the Artillery and Lieutenant Trenwith, who, by pulling Clive aside when he



ENTRANCE TO THE PAGODA OF CONJEVERAM.

the fort was a street, which, after running north for seventy yards, turned east to the nabob's palace, where Rajah Sahib had fixed his headquarters. From the palace another street ran south, and was continued along the east side of the fort. The space thus bounded by streets on the west, north, and east, and by the north wall of the fort on the south, formed a square occupied by buildings and enclosures."

To avail himself of these thoroughfares, so as to put the enemy between a cross fire, was now the plan of Clive. With four field-pieces, and the greatest part of his petty force, he sallied from the north-west gate, and advanced along the street that led north and east, while Ensign Glass had orders to proceed from the east gate up the street leading north to the palace, the common point at which both detachments were to meet.

saw a sepoy taking deliberate aim at him, lost his life, as the sepoy changed the aim, and shot Trenwith in the body. Next day Rajah Sahib was reinforced by 2,000 men from Vellore, under Mortiz Ali, and other troops were coming on.

Clive was now more than ever cooped up within the narrow limits of an old fortress, the walls of which in many places were crumbling into ruin. The French tirailleurs picked off many of his garrison, and another night sortie left him with only four officers fit for duty. To spare his provisions, he was now reluctantly compelled to put forth all the natives, save a few artificers. His garrison now consisted of 120 Europeans and 200 sepoys, to oppose a besieging force of ten thousand men—viz., 150 Europeans, 2,000 sepoys, 5,000 peons, and 3,000 cavalry. Every avenue was blocked up, and for fourteen days the enemy



CLIVE LEADING HIS MEN UP TO CONJEVERAM.

pressed the siege with musketry from the house-top, while a bombardment from four mortars was incessant. Many of our people were killed, and more wounded, and Clive had many escapes, three orderly sergeants who attended him singly, when visiting the works, being killed by his side.

On the 24th of October there came in from Pondicherry two eighteen-pounders and seven smaller pieces, which were at once got into position; and in six days these had beaten down all the wall between two of the towers, making a practicable breach fifty feet wide; but while this was in process, Clive was cutting a deep trench, erecting palisades and an earthwork in rear of it, and to enfilade the approach he planted a field-piece on one of the towers, with muzzle depressed, and two other guns on the flat roof of a building within the fort and facing the breach; but the besiegers, aware of these skilful preparations, declined to attempt an escalade until another breach was effected at the back of the fort.

Within that precinct Clive had found one of those enormous bombards, or cannon, for the manufacture of which the Orientals have always been celebrated. Local tradition averred that this gigantic gun had been sent from Delhi by the Emperor Aurangzebe, and that it had been drawn to Arcot by 1,000 bullocks. Though in Dow's translation of "Ferishta," guns are mentioned, it has been supposed that the proper term should have been *naphtha*, as no cannon were used in India before the time of the invasion of Baber (the founder of a line of kings under whom India rose to the greatest prosperity) in 1537, but mention is made of arrows tipped with naphtha and shot against opposing troops, so early as the ninth century. Clive raised a mound of earth high enough to command the palace of the rajah, and on that mound he placed the monster cannon. He found some of the iron balls belonging to it, each weighing seventy-six pounds, and requiring a charge of thirty pounds of powder. The first of these tore like a whirlwind through the palace, making a clean breach in the walls on both sides, to the terror of the rajah and his attendants. Clive ordered it to be fired once daily, but on the fourth discharge it burst with a terrible crash.

The perilous condition of the little band in Arcot being known at the presidency, there were sent from Madras 100 Europeans and 200 sepoys, under Lieutenant Innes, to assist Clive; but after a considerable portion of the route was accomplished, they were nearly surrounded by 2,000 native troops with some French artillery, and

compelled to fall back on Fort Ponamalee, fifteen miles from Madras. Clive and his "handful" were thus left to their fate; but the valour of their defence produced a deep moral impression on the native mind.

Clive now opened a communication with Morari Rao, a Mahratta chief who lay encamped with 6,000 men among the mountains thirty miles westward of Arcot. He had come there as hired ally of Mohammed Ali, but on seeing the desperation of his affairs remained aloof. The charm of Clive's name was being felt now, so Morari replied that he "would not lose a moment in coming to the assistance of such valiant men as the defenders of Arcot, whose behaviour had now convinced him that the English could fight."

Tidings of this unexpected alliance alarmed Rajah Sahib, who suddenly sent a flag of truce, offering honourable terms to the survivors of the garrison and a large sum of money to Clive, threatening, if his offers were not accepted, to put every man in the fort to the sword; but Clive disdained the proffered bribe, and laughed the threat to scorn. Yet all the Mahrattas did was to plunder the town and gallop away.

The French guns had effected a new breach, which Clive had counterworked as he did the first; but on the 14th of November, the great religious festival held in commemoration of the murder of the holy brothers, Hassan and Hussein, when the Moslems of Hindostan inflame their fanaticism by the belief that all who fall in battle on that day, go straight to the joys of Paradise, and resort to the maddening use of bhang and hempseed to deaden their sense of danger, Rajah Sahib's forces assailed both breaches with the utmost fury. Elephants with large plates of iron fixed to their heads were driven against the gates at other points; and in rear of these enormous living battering-rams scrambled a yelling multitude, their eyes flashing like their swords, with the drugs they had swallowed and the wild devotion of the hour.

Wounded by musketry, the elephants rushed madly to and fro, and after trampling many of the rabble-rout to death, trotted away, trumpeting, with their probosces in the air. The work at the breaches was more serious; but the enemy were repulsed at both, by two o'clock in the afternoon, with the loss of 400 men, whom Clive gave them two hours' leave to carry away. So many were disabled now by wounds and sickness, that the strength of the garrison now was no more than eighty British, officers included, and 120 sepoys; and these served five pieces of cannon and expended 12,000 cartridges in repelling the attack.

At four o'clock the fire again reopened from the town, nor did it close until two next morning, when suddenly the flashes ceased, and a dead silence ensued. When day broke, Clive learned, to his joy and astonishment, that the whole army of Rajah Sahib had abandoned Arcot in haste and disorder, leaving their guns and much ammunition behind them. "During the fifty days the siege went on," says Macaulay in his Essay on Lord Clive, "the young captain maintained the defence with a firmness, vigilance, and ability that would have done honour to the oldest marshals of France. The garrison began to feel the pressure of hunger. Under such circumstances, any troops so scantily provided with officers might have been expected to show signs of insubordination; and the danger was peculiarly great in a force composed of men differing widely from each other in extraction, colour, language, manners, and religion. But the devotion of the little band to its chief surpassed anything that is related of the Tenth Legion of Cæsar, or the Old Guard of Napoleon. The sepoys came to Clive, not to complain of their scanty fare, but to propose that all the grain should be given to the Europeans, who required more nourishment than the natives of Asia. The thin gruel, they said, which was strained away from the rice would suffice for *themselves*. History contains no more touching instance of military fidelity, or of the influence of a commanding mind."

A detachment from Madras, under the command of Captain Kilpatrick, arrived safely at Arcot on the evening of that day on which the siege was abandoned. Leaving a slender garrison under the captain to hold the fort, Clive departed on the 19th of November, to follow up the fast retreating foe, with 200 Europeans, 700 sepoys, and three guns; after being joined by a small body of Mahratta horse sent by Morari Rao, he overtook the enemy near Arnee—a strong fort fourteen miles south of Arcot. They mustered 300 French, with 4,500 native horse and foot.

Aware of their great superiority in force, they faced about to offer battle. Clive placed the Mahrattas in a palm tope on his left; the sepoys held a village on the right; the Europeans, the centre, or open ground between these points. In front lay swampy rice-fields, with a causeway through them, leading to the village. Most spirited was the action that ensued.

The Mahrattas made five distinct charges, but were always repulsed. The enemy attempted to advance by the causeway, but the fire of our artillery drove them to flounder in the rice-fields, and a general alarm soon produced a flight and

total rout. The darkness of the night that suddenly on, alone saved the French from destruction; but the Mahrattas captured 400 horses, 100,000 rupees, and so great was the disgust of the enemy's sepoys, that 600 deserted to Clive with all their arms and accoutrements.

Still pressing on, Clive, a pursuer now, captured the strong Pagoda of Conjeveram, strengthened the garrison he had left in Arcot, and returned to Fort St. David, to report that triumphant campaign which covered him and his comrades with glory. But his labours were not yet over, for—though Mohammed Ali, instead of being besieged in Trichinopoly, saw the whole country open to him, and a great part of the Carnatic submissive to his will—the enemy soon reassembled, and 4,500 natives, with 400 French and a train of guns, began to ravage the territories of the Company.

In February, 1752, Clive was ordered to drive them back, with a force consisting of only 380 Europeans, 1,300 sepoys, and six field-pieces, while the enemy mustered 400 Frenchmen, and 4,500 natives, with a large train of artillery, yet they did not venture to risk an encounter, so great was now their terror of the conquering Clive, at whose approach they fell back to Vandaloer, and intrenched with equal strength and speed.

As he approached again, they retreated from position to position; but Clive, by lengthening and quickening his marches, came suddenly upon them at Cauverypauk—a town some sixty miles from Madras, chiefly remarkable for its tank, which is the most magnificent structure of its kind in Southern India, as it is no less than eight miles in length by three in breadth, and is enclosed by an embankment planted with beautiful palmyra trees. Here they took post and opened a fire with nine guns at 250 yards from a wooded bank, while their whole force lay in a species of ambuscade; but Clive's plans were made coolly though time pressed.

Posting his infantry in a nullah immediately on his left, and sending the baggage rearward half a mile under a guard, he dispatched a detachment with two field-pieces against Rajah Sahib's horse, who were spreading over the plain, and employed his remaining force to answer the fire from the bank. Advancing along the nullah, or watercourse, the French came on in columns of sections, six men abreast, but were met by the British bayonets in the same order; yet no charge ensued, doubtless from the peculiarity of their formation, though, under the brilliant moonlight, a sputtering fire of musketry was kept up for two hours. The rajah's

orse, who failed in many attempts upon the baggage, were kept completely at bay.

So many of Clive's gunners were killed and wounded, that he found the fire of his three field-pieces overborne by the French now, and no alternative was left him but to storm the battery, or retreat. He chose the former, and on an intelligent sergeant, whom he had sent forward to reconnoitre, reporting that the enemy's rear was quite uncovered, he dispatched a strong party to approach it, unseen, by a détour. He accompanied this party half-way, and returned only in time to find his front about to fall back.

Rallying them, sword in hand, he was renewing the fight, when, all at once, the enemy's cannon ceased firing; then he knew that the rear attack had proved completely successful. Reaching the bank unperceived, the detachment poured in their fire at thirty yards, thus turning the position and taking the guns. Instantaneous was the panic, and, without firing another shot, the foe fled, leaving fifty French and 300 sepoys dead upon the field. Many of the French, who had crowded into a choultry, surrendered as prisoners. Nine field-pieces, and three cohorns were taken. The fort of Cauverypauk at once surrendered. Clive's loss in killed was forty British soldiers and thirty sepoys.

The surviving Frenchmen made a rush to the usual place of shelter, Pondicherry, while Chunda Sahib's troops dispersed and fled to their homes in all directions.

Just when the presidency at Fort St. David were about to dispatch Clive to Trichinopoly, Major Lawrence returned from England, and took the command as superior officer. From that impetuosity and impatience of control which characterised Clive in the camp, as of old at school and in the counting-house, it might have been expected that after such brilliant achievements, he might dislike to act with zeal in a subordinate capacity; but it was not so with the self-taught soldier of India.

"He cheerfully placed himself under the orders of his old friend," says Macaulay, "and exerted himself as strenuously in the second part, as he could have done in the first. Lawrence well knew the value of such assistance. Though himself gifted with no intellectual faculty higher than plain good sense, he fully appreciated the powers of his brilliant coadjutor. Though he made a methodical study of military tactics, and, like all men thoroughly bred to a profession, was disposed to look with disdain on interlopers, he had yet liberality enough to acknowledge that Clive was an exception to common rules."*

* *Review*

Taking Clive with him, the major set out for Trichinopoly, with 400 British, 1,100 sepoys, and eight guns. As now 20,000 Mysoreans, and 6,000 of the warlike Mahrattas were ready to co-operate with him, the troops of Chunda Sahib, and the French who had mustered in and about Trichinopoly, broke up in something more than despair. The latter retired to the isle of Seringham, which is formed by the junction of the Coleroon and Cauvery.

There they took possession of the most celebrated of its Hindoo temples, the great pagoda near its western extremity, an edifice surrounded by seven enclosures of massive brick, at the distance of 350 feet from each other, the outer being nearly four miles in circumference. Dupleix sent M. d'Auteuil to reinforce them here, but he was driven into an old fort on the way, and compelled to capitulate. This was followed by the surrender of those in the great pagoda on the isle, as they were in a state of starvation; so Chunda Sahib, finding himself deserted by the last of his forces, surrendered to the leader of the Tanjore army, who promised him protection, but put him in chains.

This ended, for a time, the operations in and about Trichinopoly, the sieges and blockades of which lasted fully a year, and the most ample details of them will be found in the thick quarto volumes of Orme; but now a violent dispute ensued between Mohammed Ali, the Mahratta chiefs, the Rajah of Mysore, and the Tanjoreans, who each and all claimed the person of the prisoner Chunda Sahib. To end the growing quarrel, Major Lawrence proposed that the fallen prince should be surrendered to Britain; but the Tanjoreans solved the difficulty in true Indian fashion, by cutting off Chunda's head and sending it to his now fortunate rival, Mohammed Ali, who, with savage exultation displayed it on a spear before his army. "Lawrence and Clive have both been blamed for suffering this foul assassination; but it will appear on candid examination of the facts, that neither they nor their allies had any foreknowledge or anticipations of the deed, which sprung from the jealousy and ferocity of the Tanjore chief, over whom they had no control."

In detailing these affairs, the *London Gazette* of the 6th January, 1753, has the following:—

"M. Dupleix at the desire of Salabad Jing, has solicited for a peace, which the nabob is willing to consent to, provided it is made to our satisfaction, as he owns himself much obliged to us."

Then we have a report of Major Lawrence, dated Trichinopoly, 12th June, 1752, detailing certain operations:—

"We have killed and taken prisoners an army much more numerous than our own, with all their artillery, which amounts to about forty pieces, and ten mortars. We found among the prisoners about thirty French officers, about six killed, and about 800 private men. They were acting as allies to the rebels, that have almost destroyed this country, and we gave our assistance to the lawful prince, who is so sensible of his obligation to the English that I have great hopes our Company will be able to carry on their trade here to more advantage than any other European nation. I am going to begin my march through the Arcot country, to settle the tranquillity of it, and am above 100 miles from the seaside."

The troops of Mysore and some of the Mahrattas occupied Trichinopoly; those of Tanjore marched home, so the British with their sepoy marched against Gingee, a strong place which was held by a brave French garrison. The attacking force consisted of 200 Europeans, 1,500 sepoy, and 600 black cavalry, all under Major Kinnear, an officer just arrived from home, who was repulsed, and had to fall back with considerable loss. Elated by this success, Dupleix reinforced the victors, who were mustering 450 French, 1,500 sepoy, and 500 native horse, and took post near the northern boundary of Fort St. David, while the Company's troops held a position at a redoubt in the boundary hedge three miles westward of the fort.

There they remained inactive, awaiting the coming of 200 Swiss, who had arrived at Madras from England. To avoid delay, 100 of them were embarked in the light boats of the country, and sailed for Fort St. David. It was assumed that on the sea Dupleix would not venture to violate the British flag; but as soon as they were seen from Pondicherry, a ship was sent out to make them all prisoners. "The capture was loudly complained of, as a violation of the peace subsisting between Great Britain and France; but Dupleix thought he had a sufficient precedent in the capture of French troops at Seringham."

The other Swiss company reached Fort St. David safely, and on the 7th August, 1752, Major Lawrence took command of the whole force, consisting of 400 Europeans, 1,700 sepoy, and 4,000 of the nabob's troops. The enemy now took post at Bahoor, where Lawrence attacked with equal skill and vigour. The French and British met in a charge, and the clash of

steel was heard as the bayonets crossed; but shot was the struggle. Two platoons of our grenadiers by main strength of arm, broke the enemy's centre on which their whole line gave way, and had the nabob's horse, instead of turning their energies to plunder, used lance and sabre well, not a man should have escaped. Morari Rao, who had been won over by Dupleix, was on his way to join the French with 3,000 Mahrattas, when he met some of the fugitives. So, with that treachery which is so perfectly Oriental, he made his appearance in the camp of the nabob, "complimenting him on the victory, and lamenting his misfortune in not having been able to join him in sufficient time to share it."

Clive was now detached to Coulong, a town of the Carnatic, twenty-four miles from Madras. The forces he took with him are represented as being 500 newly-raised sepoy, and 200 recruits who had come from London, and who are represented as being gaol-birds, "and the worst and lowest wretches that the Company's crimps could pick up in the flash houses." Yet Clive made soldiers of this singular rabble, though they fled at the first shot, and one hid himself at the bottom of a well; but Clive kept them to their duty, "and by the time the fort surrendered, they were heroes." Cutting up, or taking prisoners, some detachments that were marching from Chingleput (a day too late) to relieve Coulong, Clive, by a rapid march of forty miles to the former place, compelled the French commander to surrender it on the 31st of October, permitting him to march out with the honours of war, and proceed to Pondicherry.

Chingleput was a strong fort, 400 yards long by 320 broad, situated at the base of two mountains, close to the left bank of the Paliar.

Clive now returned to Madras, and finding his health, which had never been very robust, greatly impaired by all he had undergone, he returned on leave to England, where he was greatly fêted after his landing at Plymouth, on the 10th of September, 1753,* and was presented with a diamond-hilted sword by the East India Company, which, with rare delicacy, he declined to receive unless a similar gift was presented to his brother-officer, Lawrence.

His departure was deplored by the army, and his absence was soon felt along the whole coast of Coromandel.

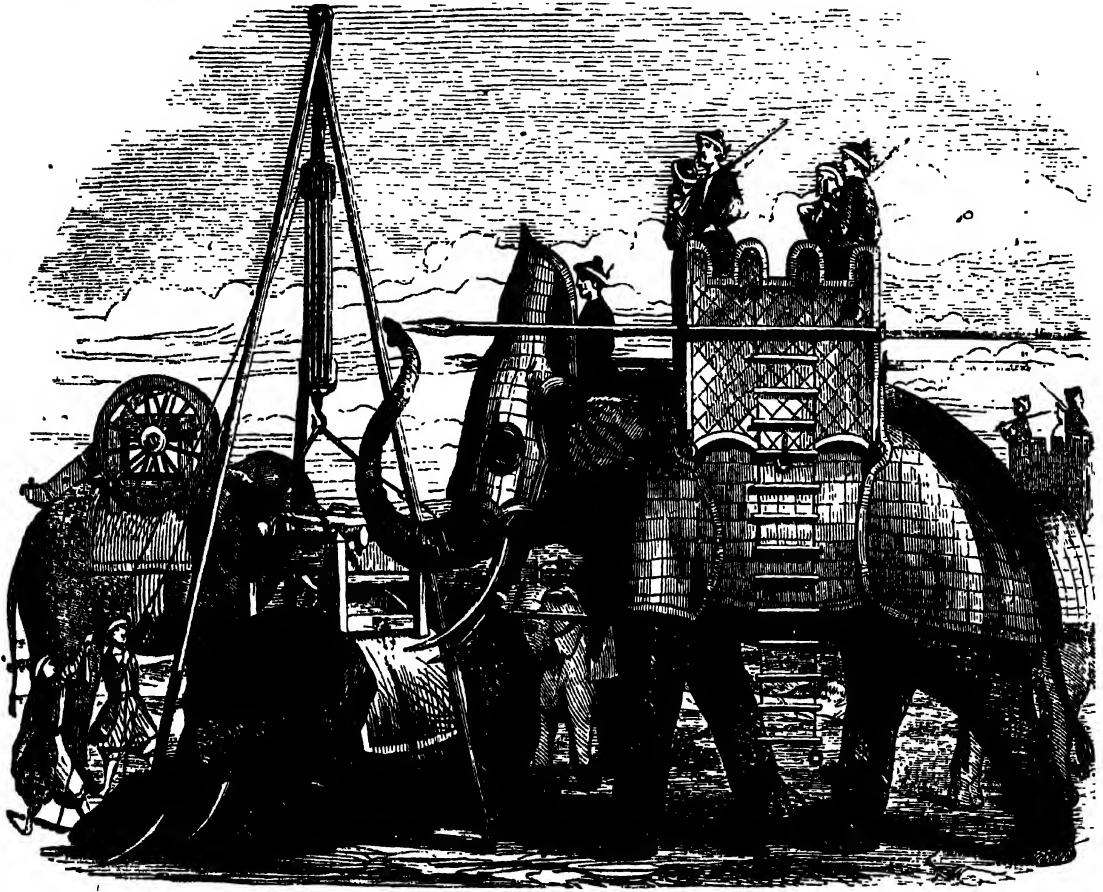
* *Gentleman's Magazine.*

CHAPTER VII.

OF THE SEPOYS.—SIEGE OF TRICHINOPOLY.—BATTLES OF THE GOLDEN AND SUGARLOAF ROCKS, ETC.

"SEPOY," says Colonel James briefly, in his "Military Dictionary," "derived from *sephaye*, natives of India who have enlisted themselves into the service

sulky fanatic, who was instantly hacked to pieces by his comrades. Haliburton's memory was long revered by the Madras sepoy's.

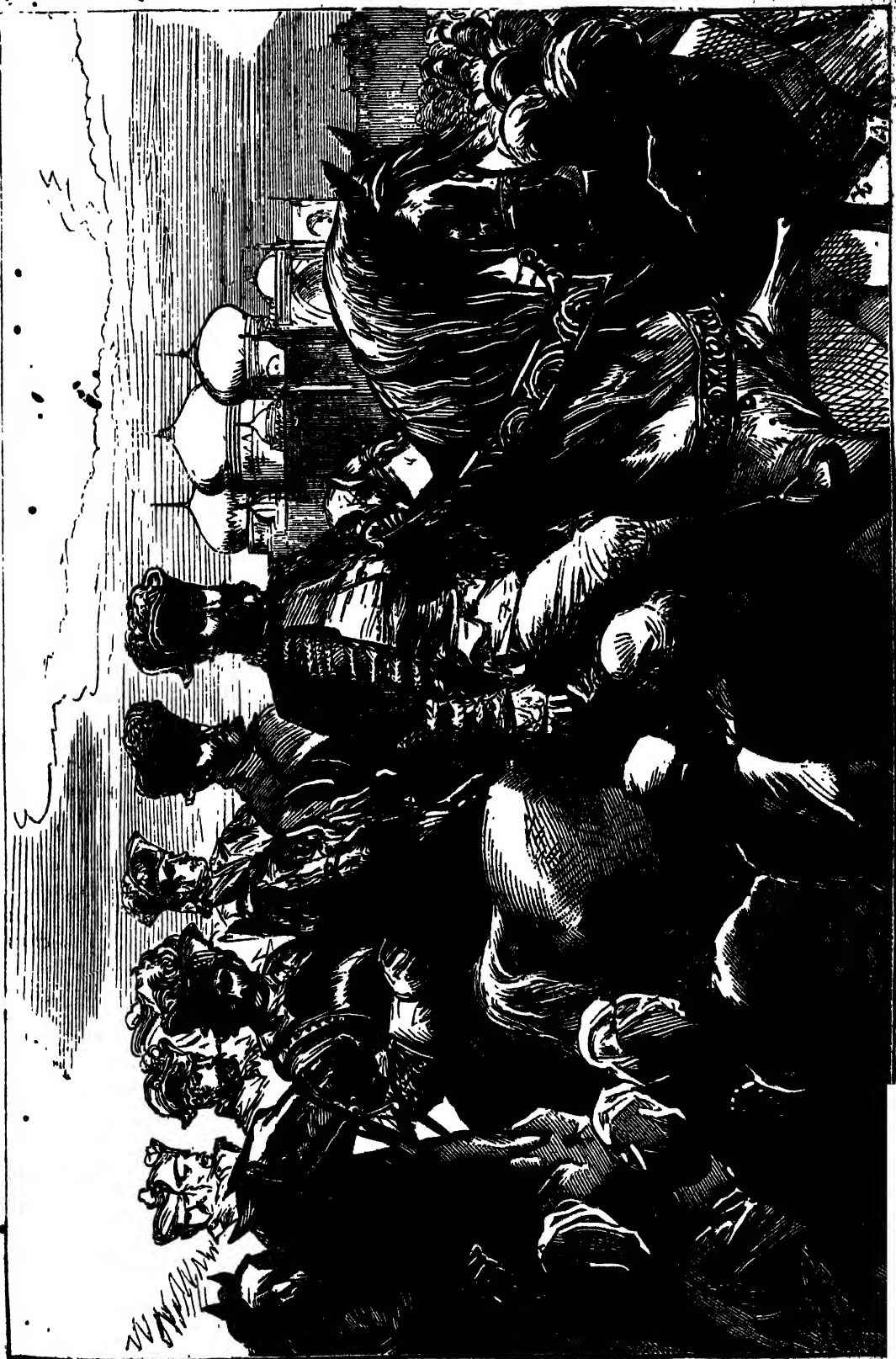


ELEPHANT EQUIPPED FOR BATTLE, WITH ARMOUR, HOWDAH, ETC.

of the East India Company." The first sepoy's seen in India were a body of 200 natives, mingled with a few Portuguese soldiers, in 1594, under the Moguls.

The French had raised a body of them before we began the practice, and it would appear that our first sepoy's were trained in 1746, during La Bourdonnais' siege of Madras. Some British officers were then attached to certain irregular native infantry, whom they began to drill and discipline. The system was first introduced into the Madras army by Lieutenant Haliburton, a Scotsman, who, like Clive, had quitted the civil for the military service, but was shot, in 1748, by a

"The aborigines of the Carnatic," says General Briggs, "were the sepoy's of Clive and Coote. A few companies of the same stock joined the former great captain from Bombay, and fought the battle of Plassey in Bengal, which laid the foundation of our Indian empire. They have since distinguished themselves in the corps of pioneers and engineers, not only in India but in Ava, Afghanistan, and the celebrated siege of Jelalabad. An unjust prejudice against them has grown up in the armies of Madras and Bombay, produced by the feeling of contempt for them existing among the Hindoo and Mohamadan sepoy's. They have no prejudices themselves, are always ready to serve abroad, and



ARRIVAL OF MAJOR LAWRENCE AT COILADY.

embark on board ship, and I believe no instance of mutiny has occurred among them. It is to be regretted that separate regiments of this race are not more generally enlisted."

Among the earliest and most brilliant service of the Madras sepoys was the defence of Arcot. At first they appear to have been either Mohammedans or high-class Brahmins, and soon became remarkable for the reverence of their military oath, their attachment to their officers, and their entire devotion to the British flag—by their good conduct in cantonments, and their bravery in battle; but all this was long before the dark days of the Mutiny.

We have said that, before the death of Haliburton, sepoys were first disciplined at Fort St. George, in 1748. At that period they were chiefly under the command of native officers; and one of their soubahdars, or captains—Mohammed Esuf—seems to have been a heroic soldier, whose name frequently appears in the pages of Orme.

The first regular regiment of Bengal native infantry (styled *Gillis-ka-Pultan*), in scarlet with white facings, was not raised till 1757. And so it was that, British pluck apart, by turning the Indians against themselves, we have been able, as a writer has it, to conquer "a most singular people, who were well fed and well clad, who had a written language and composed metaphysical treatises when the forefathers of the race that now bears sway over 2,000,000 of them were still wandering in the woods of Britain and Germany, all of them savages, and some perhaps cannibals!"

During the progress of the war in the Carnatic, the talent possessed by M. Dupleix for intrigue and diplomacy won him many successes, for he had emissaries everywhere, and the native princes, omrahs, and zemindars were as subtle as they were false. In his intrigues he had an able assistant in Madame Dupleix, who had been born in India, and knew alike the languages and the character of the Indians: moreover, she was inspired by greater ambition than the governor himself. To such intriguing it was, that the Mysorean ruler broke with us and joined him, and that his pernicious example was followed by Morari Rao, the Mahratta, and the Moslem governor of Vellore.

On being joined by these faithless allies of ours, the French once more blocked up Trichinopoly, into which, on the 6th of May, 1753, Major Lawrence threw himself, with the resolution of resisting, even as the absent Clive would have done.

As soon as the major became certain of the defection of the Mahrattas—a people trained to war from their earliest years, and taught to regard learning as better adapted to Brahmins than

warriors—he ordered an attack upon that portion of their troops that was yet within his reach. Under cover of night, the attack was led by Captain Dalton, who hurled out of the city, at the same time, a number of Mysoreans who were still pretending to be allies, but were mistrusted.

Shortly after, the Mahrattas made a furious attack upon one of our advanced posts, and cut to pieces seventy British and 300 sepoys. Neither they nor the Mysoreans had any idea of attempting to reduce the fort by storm, though they hoped to do so by famine. To this end, they blocked up every avenue, and kept patrols of horse scouring the country to intercept supplies of every kind, and cut off the noses and ears of all whom they found infringing their orders. In Trichinopoly the magazines had been entrusted to the care of a brother of Mohammed Ali; but when Captain Dalton inspected the stores, he found that this man had sold the contents, and there remained only fifteen days' provisions for those in the place.

On the 7th May—the very day after Major Lawrence threw himself into Trichinopoly, a detachment of 200 French, and 500 sepoys, with four field-pieces, sent by Dupleix, arrived at Seringham, and joined the whole Mysoreans, while the entire force that Lawrence could muster amounted to only 500 British, 2,000 sepoys, and 3,000 of the nabob's horse. With the infantry only—as the horsemen, like the Swiss of old, refused to march because their pay was in arrear—he crossed over to the island, and was immediately assailed by the troops of Mysore in heavy strength. He drove back their infantry, but their cavalry, headed by the fiery Mahrattas, fought valiantly, yet were driven in. The brunt of the conflict then fell on the French infantry and artillery, who held their ground, and kept up a cannonade till evening, when Major Lawrence deemed it prudent once more to cross the Cauvery.

The resistance of that day had convinced him that M. Astruc would prove a more formidable opponent than the former holder of Seringham, the Scoto-Frenchman, James Francis Law (of Lauriston, near Edinburgh), nephew of the Comptroller of France, who was created Count de Tancarville for his many great services in India. So Lawrence found that, instead of attempting to dislodge Astruc from the pagoda and isle, it would be wiser to endeavour to replenish the magazines in the city with provisions, a difficult task, that kept him otherwise inactive for five weeks. Meanwhile Dupleix, fully aware of the importance of the post, poured reinforcements into Seringham, until the whole force there amounted to 450 French, 1,500

sepoys, 3,500 Mahrattas, 8,000 Mysorean horse, and 16,000 Mysorean infantry; and, to oppose all these, Lawrence could oppose but 500 British, and 2,000 sepoys, of whom 700 were constantly employed in escorting provisions.

When provisions for fifty days had been procured, the major determined to march into the Tanjore country, with the double purpose of meeting a reinforcement he expected from the presidency, and of inducing the king to furnish him with a cavalry force of which he stood much in need, for escort, patrol, and other duties, but the troops of Tanjore were clamorous for pay, and declared the nabob should not quit the city till they were satisfied. This the king failed to achieve, "and the singular spectacle was seen of 200 Europeans, with fixed bayonets, escorting the nabob, in whose cause the Company had already expended much blood and treasure, because his own troops, so far from escorting him, were bent on committing outrage on his person."

A few days after his departure, they threatened to join the enemy, so, glad to be rid of them on any terms, Captain Dalton let them march off at noonday without firing a shot at them. The whole country around Trichinopoly was now in possession of the foe; the city alone remained to be contested for, and arrangements were made accordingly. As starvation threatened the inhabitants, they quitted their homes, and in less than a month 400,000 of them disappeared, and there remained behind only a garrison, which, including soldiers, and every description of artificer, did not exceed 2,000 men. The burden of defence lay upon 200 Europeans, and 600 sepoys, stationed at long intervals upon the walls. The former held the gates, and were day and night under arms, but their spirit, if it ever flagged, rose when the approach of Major Lawrence became certain.

On being reinforced from Fort St. David, and accompanied by 3,000 Tanjore horse and 2,000 matchlockmen, under the command of Monajee, on the 7th of August, he arrived at a place called Dallaway's Choultry (*i.e.*, Caravanserai) on the south bank of the Cauvery, five miles eastward of Trichinopoly. The swampy plain that intervened was so flooded by recent rains, that it was necessary to strike southwards. The convoy consisted of 4,000 bullocks, supposed to be laden with provisions, though most of them were in reality appropriated by the nabob and his officers, "selfishly for the transport of baggage and trumpery."

"Since my letter of the 14th instant," reported the major to the directors, in a despatch dated at the camp near Trichinopoly, "Captain Ridge

joined me with a detachment of above 200 Europeans. This addition made me resolve to attack the enemy, as the monsoon approached, and their situation was such, that they cut off our provisions, which must have ended in the loss of Trichinopoly. Accordingly, on the 19th (September) I made a motion in the night, towards the left of the enemy's camp; for they had possession of two large rocks, about a mile distant from each other, and I found it necessary to gain one of them.

"The whole day of the 20th was spent in cannonading; and, the better to conceal our design, I had ordered out an eighteen-pounder from the fort, that they might think we had no other means than that of disturbing them in their camp with our shot. This lulled them into security; but at four o'clock in the morning of the 21st, our Europeans being disposed in three lines, with the seapoys (*sic*) on our flanks, and the horse in our rear, we attacked the rock on the left, called the Golden Rock, and gained it without any loss, the enemy retiring after a faint resistance, and leaving behind them two pieces of cannon.

"This earnest of success encouraged our men greatly, and determined me to push on to the main body; so, that no time might be lost, we advanced towards the Sugar-loaf Rock just as day began to break. The enemy were drawn up close to the rock, and had fortified themselves with breastworks, so it was necessary to gain their Black Camp, that we might fall upon them in the rear. This was effected with little trouble, and our soldiers marched through a constant fire from nine pieces of cannon, attacked a line of men which greatly outnumbered themselves, and in ten or twelve minutes drove the enemy out of their lines. They, however, rallied and made some faint resistance, afterwards supported by the Morattas, who rode up, very desperately; but as these could not sustain a galling fire which fell upon them from all quarters, they at length ran away, and left us complete masters of the field of battle, their whole camp, baggage, ammunition, and ten pieces of cannon.

"The remains of their army retreated; some towards Altoora and Seringham, some towards Tandamou's country, and some towards Tanjour. The Polligars and seapoys bring in prisoners every minute. The action lasted two hours. We took eight officers, 100 soldiers, besides the killed, about sixty more. The Morattas saved the rest, and prevented a pursuit, as they were vastly superior to Monage, our Tanjour friend."

We had many men killed and wounded. Among the latter were six officers, including Lawrence,

who received a musket-ball in the arm, and Captain Kilpatrick severely. Among the French officers taken here was M. Astruc, undoubtedly one of the best in their service.

Major Lawrence now, after reinforcing the garrison in the city, so as to make it, as he thought, sufficiently strong, with ordinary vigilance, to resist any attempt made upon it, marched to Coilady, on the frontiers of Tanjore, where supplies were abundant, while Captain Dalton sailed for England, and Captain Kilpatrick, on whom the command had devolved, was confined to bed with his wounds.

It was about this time, the 28th of November, that a secret assault was made upon the city, around the walls of which the Mahrattas and Mysoreans were distributed in detachments, making feints before the ditch to divert the attention of the guards and inlying pickets from a French battalion, which was to make the real attack at a point called Dalton's Battery. At three p.m. this battalion, 600 strong, was to commence the escalade, supported by 200 more and a body of sepoys. The battery was guarded against them by only fiftysepoys and a few European matrosses. All were on the alert when the rounds passed at midnight, but the event proved that, worn out with fatigue, all were asleep when, without an alarm being heard, the escalade began to cross the ditch and plant their ladders against the wall. The bayonet soon disposed of the sleepers, and the assailants began to move along the wall in strict silence; but within the battery was a pit thirty feet deep, into which many of them fell, and then their screams of pain and the explosion of their muskets broke the silence of the early morning.

Finding all concealment at an end now, the French on the wall turned the battery guns and fired upon the town, with a random volley of musketry, while shouting "Vive le Roi!" with all their drummers beating the *pas-de-charge*, to strike terror, as they hoped. Unable to leave his bed, Captain Kilpatrick gave the necessary instructions to Lieutenant Harrison, the next officer in seniority, and a fire was kept up on the passage leading to a gate in the inner wall, but two men who were attempting to blow it open by a petard were killed. Those who had got into the narrow way between the two walls rushed back to the battery to escape; many missed the ladders and took a leap of eighteen feet into the wet ditch and perished miserably. "By daybreak," says the report, "those who did not choose to venture their necks by jumping off the battery to save themselves, called out for quarter, which was given them. There

were taken on the battery 297 European prisoners, besides sixty-five wounded, forty-two killed in the ditch, and nine officers. The rest of their loss was not known, but it was believed that it must have been pretty considerable. In this action the garrison had scarcely any loss."

We are told that the noise of the firing was heard at Coilady, on which Major Lawrence reinforced the garrison, and soon after marched in with all his forces.

On the 13th of February, 1754, after much fighting, and after the country had been so devastated around Trichinopoly that no firewood could be procured within six miles of it, one of our convoys was attacked and severely cut up by 12,000 of the enemy's horse, led by Morari Rao, and another whose name was to become famous in the annals of the future—Hyder Ali. Besides the whole of the provisions and military stores, £7,000 fell into the hands of the enemy, who would have made a massacre of all the prisoners, but for the timely arrival and honourable intervention of the French.

To detail all the various events connected with the siege of Trichinopoly would be foreign to our work; suffice it that, soon after the last-mentioned encounter, there was a complete suspension of arms in this part of the Carnatic; but while the war there drained the exchequer of Pondicherry, Dupleix and his compatriot, Bussy, took care, by their interest at the court of the Deccan, to acquire territory, and receive far more than sufficient to compensate any such drain; while the Carnatic itself was, in the prospective policy of the former, soon to belong to France, and Britain, utterly vanquished, would be compelled to withdraw from Madras and the coast of Coromandel.

While these events which we have been narrating were in progress, the Marquis de Bussy had taken his departure for Hyderabad, more than a year before, to establish Salabut Jung on the throne of the Deccan. With his troops he penetrated further into the country than any European had ever done before, and, to all appearance, had consolidated the authority of his ally; when Uddeen, a prince of the Mogul's choice, suddenly came against Salabut, at the head of 100,000 horse, but, just as he was entering Golconda, he was carried off by poison. Upon this, many of his vast host returned to their homes; but not so the Mahrattas. Eager for the spoil of a rich and hitherto unwasted province, they continued to advance, and encountered the troops of Salabut and Bussy in several places. "Bussy, who had the genius of Clive, defeated them repeatedly, and once or twice, with so much slaughter, that the

Mahrattas were anxious for peace. Salabut Jung then purchased their retreat, by ceding to them some districts near Berar and Berhampore, and they gladly withdrew from the murderous execution of Bussy's quick musketry and artillery."

Taking advantage of a temporary absence of the marquis, the ungrateful Salabut withheld the pay of the French troops who had saved him from destruction, and he sought to attain their ruin by separating them into small and remote detachments, which were influenced by his courtiers, who expressed their disgust to see a handful of white men swaying the whole affairs of the Deccan. So, on discovering this state of affairs, the restless and warlike Mahrattas began to sharpen their sabres, and prepare for a new strife in the Deccan.

Then Salabut Jung implored Bussy to save him again, and he did save him, but at an enormous price; for, before the end of 1753, he had obtained the cession of five important provinces. These were Ellore, renowned for its sugar-canes, and then also for a diamond mine; Rajahmundry, a province consisting of 4,690 square miles, prized for its fertility and the excellence of its tobacco; Cicacole, through which the Gundwana flows to the sea; Kondapilla and Guntoor, having an area of 4,690 square miles, well adapted for growing rice in the plains. This acquisition, called the Northern Circars, made France mistress of the sea-coast of Coromandel and Orissa, for an uninterrupted line of 600 miles, affording her thus a vast revenue, and every means for pouring provisions, men, and money into Pondicherry and the Mauritius.

But the grandeur of the projects of Bussy and Dupleix was as yet unseen alike by the court of Versailles and the French India Company; and intrigues against the governor procured his recall to France, where he found himself "obliged to dispute the miserable remains of his once splendid fortune with the French East India Company, to dance humble attendance on ministers and their satellites, and solicit audiences in the ante-chambers of his judges."

He sunk into indigence, and was soon for-

gotten in France, though he was long remembered in India.

His successor was M. A. M. Godlieu, who proceeded at once to negotiate peace between the French and the British and their allies in India, and on the 26th December, 1754, the provisional treaty was signed at Madras by him, and Mr. Sanders, our president there. The French stipulated to withdraw their troops from the Carnatic, and to intrigue no more with the native princes there, thus leaving Mohammed Ali, the ally or puppet of Britain, nominally undisputed nabob of the province. They also agreed that the territorial acquisitions of the French and British should be settled and defined on the principle of equality, thus virtually resigning nearly all that Bussy and Dupleix had acquired by their wars and policy.

Meanwhile, the adventurous marquis was left unmolested in Golconda, where he lived in the pomp and splendour of an emperor, and controlled the whole of the Deccan; but the Mysoreans, alleging that the French had no authority to bind them "by their paper agreements," which they failed to comprehend, seemed disposed still to block up Trichinopoly, and hovered in its neighbourhood, till scared away by a rumour that the Mahrattas were on the march to attack them.

Their departure finally closed that siege which had lasted so long, and certainly developed in our troops no small amount of skill, valour, and steadiness.

Scarcely, however, was peace made in the remote East, when Britain and France became involved in fresh disputes: the French complaining that we kept our troops with Mohammed Ali, to aid him in the collection of his revenue and the reduction of subjects who were refractory; while we justified our conduct by pointing to Bussy and his troops in the Deccan. Hence the old bitterness grew, and it soon became evident that neither peace nor truce would endure long on the shores of Coromandel, and an expedition for the East began to be prepared at home.

CHAPTER VIII.

GERIAH REDUCED.—CALCUTTA TAKEN.—THE BLACK HOLE.

REINFORCEMENTS were now sent out to the French at Pondicherry, chiefly Irishmen, under the Count de Lally, son of Captain Lally, of Tullach-na-Daly, one of those who left Ireland after the Treaty of

Limerick. He had with him his own regiment of the Irish Brigade, 100th of the French line, and 600 hussars under the command of Fitcher, a partisan officer of high reputation. Like the rest

of the Irish Brigade, the uniform of Count de Lally's Regiment is thus described in the "Liste Historique des Troupes de France" (1753):—"Son uniforme est: Habit rouge, paremens d'un vert clair doublure blanche, boutons jaunes, peches en travers garnies de trois boutons, culotte blanche, douze boutons sur le devant de l'habit

the rest of the squadron, consisting of the *Kent* and *Salisbury* (each of seventy guns), the *Bridgewater* (fifty), and the *Kingfisher* (sloop), under the command of Rear-Admiral Charles Watson (to whose memory a monument was afterwards erected in Westminster), sailed from Ireland, having on board Colonel J. Aldercron's regiment, the 39th (now called "The



LORD CLIVE.

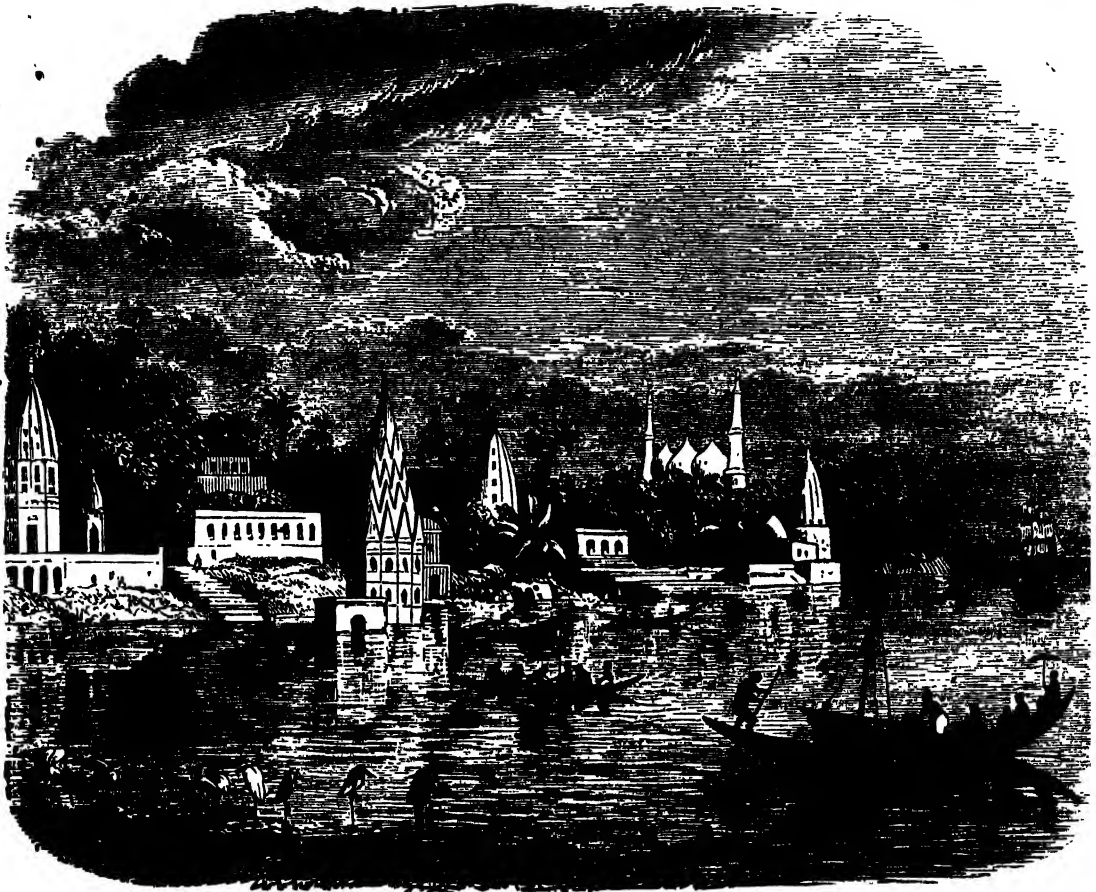
et trois sur la manche, veste verte garnie de chaque côté de douze boutons, chapeau bordé d'or" (vol. iii.).

On the other hand, we were not slow in sending succours to the East. On the 12th of March, 1754, a squadron sailed, having on board a company of artillery, several cannon, and warlike stores. In going round by Cork for more troops, the *Eagle* and *Bristol* were driven ashore, so the *Tiger* and *Cumberland* sailed in their place. On the 24th,

Dorsetshire"), which, as the first British regiment that ever unfurled its colours in Hindostan, bears the proud motto: "Primus in Indis." A squadron of the Company's ships, with other troops, artillery and stores, sailed about the same time from Plymouth; and Aldercron, who had a long interview with the Duke of Cumberland before leaving London, was appointed "Commander-in-chief of His Britannic Majesty's forces, and those of the British East India Company in that quarter."

As there was no immediate work for the squadron to do on its arrival in Indian waters, it was resolved to send some of the ships to destroy the haunts of certain pirates who, for more than fifty years, had been committing the most horrid depredations and outrages along the coast of Malabar, and against whom several somewhat futile expeditions had been fitted out from time to time. Clive, who

tory was round where washed by the sea, and formed a continuous precipice about fifty feet high. Above this rose the fortifications, consisting of a double wall, flanked with towers. The sandy isthmus contained the docks where the grabs were built and repaired; and immediately beyond, on the north, was the harbour, partly formed by the mouth of a stream which descended from the Ghauts."



SCENE ON THE BANKS OF THE GANĠES.

had arrived with the troops, and, with the rank of colonel, was now commandant of Fort St. David, urged that no time should be lost in carrying the attack into effect, with a united British and Mahratta force. The chief nest of the pirates, the harbour and fort of Geriah, was the point selected for attack. This place was 160 miles distant from Bombay, and was reported by the admiral, in his survey made in 1755, to be, "though undoubtedly strong, very far from being impregnable. Its site was a rocky promontory (on the Malabar coast), connected with the mainland by a narrow belt of sand, stretching south-east, about a mile in length by a quarter in breadth. The face of the promon-

The naval portion of the expedition, under Admiral Watson, consisted of sixteen sail, carrying, irrespective of the five bomb-ketches, 242 guns, with 2,885 seamen, a battalion of 800 Europeans, and 1,000 sepoy on board. All the preparations having been completed, the fleet sailed on the 7th of February, 1756, from Bombay, after some unpleasant disputes concerning the distribution of prize-money had been adjusted. The Mahratta army, under Ramajee Punt, had previously advanced from Choal, a seaport twenty-three miles south of Bombay. On the appearance of the fleet as it ran along the palm-covered coast of Malabar, Toolajee Angria, the chief of the pirates, in high

alarm, left the defence of the fort to his brother, and, hastening to the camp of the Mahrattas, endeavoured to avert his coming fate by effecting an accommodation; and had he succeeded, the Mahrattas, on gaining possession, would have compensated themselves for that share of the plunder of which the British commanders had secretly resolved to deprive them.

On the 11th, our squadron was within gunshot of Geriah. Admiral Watson summoned the fort, and without receiving any answer, gave orders to clear away for action. The fleet was formed in two parallel divisions, with the admiral's flag on board the *Kent* (seventy), and that of Rear-Admiral Pococke on board the *Cumberland* (sixty-six). The guns opened on the fort at only fifty yards, while the lighter portion of the squadron, under Captain H. Smith, of the *Kingfisher* (sixteen-gun brig), attacked the fleet and dockyard. In ten minutes one of the three-masted grabs which crowded the harbour was set on fire by a shell, and in a few minutes more the entire piratical fleet, which for so many years had been the terror of the Malabar coast—and, indeed, of the Indian Sea—including eight fine grabs and three ships of forty guns each, was one mass of devouring flame.

Long after the last of the shipping in the docks and harbour had perished, the cannonade against the batteries continued, and by half-past six the fire of the enemy was totally silenced. Clive—though no surrender had been intimated—now landed at the head of the troops, and took post between the walls of the pirate town and the Mahratta army, who, if they had entered, would have left nothing but bare walls behind them. The pirates, in whom savage ferocity had too long been mistaken for courage, made but a feeble resistance. Angria fled from the fort soon after the attack began, taking with him part of his treasure, but abandoning his two wives and children, who were made prisoners by the admiral, and treated with the greatest humanity.*

There were found in the fort 250 pieces of cannon with six brass mortars, and four elephants, together with a great quantity of ammunition and stores. About £100,000 sterling in rupees, and £30,000 more in valuable plunder, were taken; and Admiral Watson (who had only twenty killed and wounded) after leaving a sufficient number of troops and a naval force to keep the place, anchored in the roads of Fort St. David on the 14th of May.

Prior to this, after excluding the Mahrattas from all share in the plunder taken, our officers disagreed

* Schomberg, "Naval Chron."

as to their own. Those of the navy, as bearing the king's commission, claimed a greater portion than those of the Company; and they decreed that Clive, though he commanded the entire land force, should only share with a post-captain. On this delicate and unpleasant subject some warm correspondence ensued; but it was productive of no evil consequence, and failed to interrupt the mutual esteem that subsisted between Admiral Watson and Colonel Clive, who, after being for a time at Bombay with the artillery, entered upon his duties at Fort St. David, by somewhat of a coincidence, on the 20th of June, 1756, the very day on which Calcutta fell into the hands of Surajah Dowlah, Nabob of Bengal, an event which must now engage our attention.

That branch of the Company which had been settled at Calcutta had risen rapidly under the quiet rule of Aliverdy Khan, a prince alike wise, liberal, and humane; hence our factors and their numerous native agents travelled through every part of his dominions in perfect safety and without molestation. In April, 1756, Aliverdy died, and was succeeded by his grandson, Surajah Dowlah, a cruel and rapacious, weak and effeminate youth, who, from infancy, had hated the British. "It was his whim to do so," says Macaulay, "and his whims were never opposed."

He had seen the coffers of his grandfather filled, directly or indirectly, by the trade of the British, and he had been led to imagine that the wealth and treasures of these intruders and unbelievers amassed within the walls of Calcutta were fabulous in amount, and were tangible. Pretexts for quarrel were never wanting in India, and the result of several disputes was, that the passionate and imperious young nabob ordered the British to destroy their fortifications at Calcutta, and on their refusing to do so, he gave way to a paroxysm of rage, and threatened to behead, or impale, Mr. Watts, our resident at his court of Moorshedabad.

At the latter place he collected his whole army, and sent a detachment of 3,000 men to invest the factory and petty fort which we possessed at Cossimbazar, in the sandy tract formed by certain branches of the Ganges. In four days the crumbling old gates of the fort were thrown open to the besiegers, who exulted over and shamefully insulted the little garrison, which consisted of only twenty-two Europeans and twenty Topasses, under an ensign named Elliott, who, to escape their brutal indignities, put a pistol to his head and blew out his brains.

Striking his tents, Surajah Dowlah now began his hostile march upon Calcutta, which, at this crisis,

had a garrison of only 264 regulars, with a militia force of 250 raised among the inhabitants, and 1,500 Bucksaries, or native matchlockmen, on whose arms, discipline, or faith there was no relying. Of the garrison only 170 were British; the rest being Portuguese, Topasses, and Armenians, and, to make the case more hopeless, says Orme, not ten of them had ever seen any actual military service, while but small engineering skill had been displayed upon Fort William.

It stood near the Hooghley, and formed nearly a parallelogram, of which the longest sides, the east and west, were two hundred yards in length; the breadth on the south was one hundred and thirty yards; on the north only one hundred. The walls were four feet thick, and, forming the outer side of apartments, were perforated for windows; and the roofs of these formed the platform of the ramparts. At each of the four angles was a bastion mounted with ten guns; but two of those on the south were rendered ineffective by the erection of a line of warehouses, on the roofs of which were several three-pounders.

The east gateway was armed with five guns, and a battery of heavy pieces, run through embrasures of solid masonry, was outside on the brink of the Hooghley, near the western wall.

On the 15th of June the terrible nabob, after coming on with such haste that his troops perished daily of fatigue and sunstroke, reached the river, and transported his great army to the Calcutta side by means of an immense flotilla of boats. The drums beat; the regulars and militia got under arms; the natives fled with bales of rice on their heads, and 2,000 Portuguese, as Christians, were received into the fort, the outworks of which required a great force to defend, more than the garrison could spare.

At noon the van of the nabob's army was within the bounds of the Company, and in a few minutes the firing commenced, and was continued till night-fall, when a young English ensign, who had served under Clive in the Carnatic, made a sortie, at the head of a mere platoon, drove the Bengalees like chaff before him, and spiked four pieces of cannon. On the following day the attack from the north was relinquished, and a mighty force of the besiegers poured into the town on the east side, where no defences existed.

Conceiving that the fort could not be defended, but rather the approaches thereto, the garrison now, with equal haste and precipitation, threw up three successive batteries, armed with two eighteen-pounders and field-pieces, at about 300 yards from the gates.

Elsewhere trenches were dug and breastworks thrown up, but on the 19th of June all these works were stormed in succession by the yelling hordes that attacked them. Without hope of aid or succour, the little handful of Britons defended them with stern valour, if without skill, and in the general consternation that followed their sudden capture, the Indian matchlockmen vanished, together with all the timid Armenians and Topasses, who worked the guns, and then our people gave themselves up to despair.

As soon as darkness fell, nearly the whole of the European women were safely conveyed out of the fort, and embarked in certain craft that lay in the river to convey away persons and property. At midnight the besiegers advanced to the assault, but the mere roll of our drums scared them back. On the 20th, they rushed again to the attack, aided by artillery, and then it was resolved to abandon the place, as incapable of defence; but the greater part of the native boatmen had gone off, and the matter of embarkation, which would have been easy before, became a task of peril and difficulty now.

The madness of great fear and total want of order prevailed. Men, women, and children, we are told, rushed with piteous cries to the water's edge, imploring to be embarked. The boats became crowded by more than they could carry. Many were overset or swamped, and their occupants drowned. If any reached the shore, they perished under the matchlock-balls and fire-arrows of the nabob's people. Among those who rushed from the fort to the river, were Mr. Drake, the governor, Minchin, the captain-commandant, and a Captain Grant, who escaped in the last boat, and thus were left, Mr. Holwell, one Englishwoman, and 190 men, chiefly British soldiers, to shift for themselves.

Seeing two or three boats, after a time, returning, Mr. Holwell, whom those now remaining elected governor, in place of him who had deserted them, locked the water-gate of the fort, and carried off the keys to prevent further flight: a ship was still seen lying off the creek, where a work called Perring's Redoubt stood, and an officer went to her, in a boat, with orders to bring her down instantly to the fort, with a view that, at a proper moment, the whole garrison might embark and escape at once; but she struck upon a sandbank, and was abandoned by her crew.

So, as this last hope departed, the wretched remnant of the toil-worn garrison found themselves attacked with greater vigour; but such is the valour that is sometimes born of the most desperate circumstances, that they resisted successfully all that

day, and all the subsequent night. By order of Mr. Holwell, signals were constantly made by day with flags, and by night with fires, to recall the shipping from Govindpore back to the fort; but no other attention was paid to them, save when a native boatman was sent down the river to observe what was occurring. Nothing but imbecility on the part of commanders can account for this conduct in British seamen. "Never," says Orme, with reference to the subsequent horrors, "was such an opportunity of performing a heroic action so ignominiously neglected! for a single sloop with fifteen brave men on board, might, in spite of all the efforts of the enemy, have carried away all who suffered in the dungeon." On the following day, the attack was pressed with still greater vigour.

Then, some of our soldiers, perceiving how the effect of one well-directed dose of grape scattered the Indians by thousands, began to take heart anew, and urged a steady perseverance in the defence, but others, less sanguine, recommended an instant surrender to Surajah Dowlah, forgetting how little likely he was to yield them mercy. By letter, Mr. Holwell made an attempt to obtain a capitulation; but the attack still went furiously on. Covered by a fire of matchlocks that blazed from the walls of the adjacent houses, a strong column of the enemy began to escalate the northern curtain of the fort; but were hurled back with terrible loss, though twenty-five of the little garrison were killed, and fully fifty, more or less, wounded in the effort.

It was at this time, when under the blazing sun of an Indian summer, the whole place was filled with dust, gunpowder smoke, and ringing with moans, groans, and shrieks of anguish from those who writhed under undressed wounds in which the flies were battenning, that some of the survivors broke open the arrack store-room, and swallowing the ardent spirit as if it were water, became fatuously stupid or raving mad. At two in the afternoon, a flag of truce came towards the fort, and, while Mr. Holwell was conferring with the bearer, the nabob's troops came storming and swarming against it on every side, over the palisades and weaker points by ladders, firing at every one they saw. A gentleman fell wounded by the side of Mr. Holwell, who endeavoured to collect the men on the ramparts to sell their lives as dearly as possible. But those who were sober could not be got up in time, and those who were drunk burst open the water-gate, hoping to escape by the river. As they opened it, a mass of Indians who were lurking close beneath the walls, rushed in like a living flood, while thousands poured in over the undefended curtain,

and advancing into the heart of the fort, met those who had come in by the gate.

About twenty of the garrison threw themselves in despair over the walls, to escape death by mutilation and torture; while the miserable remnant piled the arms they had wielded so well, and surrendered, with prayers for mercy.

At five in the evening, the cowardly tyrant, Surajah Dowlâh, who had kept at a comfortable distance, so long as there was the least chance of peril to his precious person, now entered the fort with all the air of a conqueror, and seating himself in the principal hall of the factory, summoned Mr. Holwell before him. In all the copiousness which the native language afforded for abuse, he reviled that unfortunate gentleman for daring to oppose his will and defend the fort, and fiercely and bitterly complained of the small amount of treasure, only £5,000 sterling, when his avaricious imagination had fancied there must be millions.

Dismissing Mr. Holwell, he recalled him to ask "if there was no more money," and then dismissed him again. About seven in the evening he summoned the sturdy Briton to his presence once more, and gave him his word as "a soldier that he should suffer no harm." Perhaps the nabob was beginning to consider that he had gone a little too far, and Mr. Holwell seems to have thought that the tyrant did not mean to violate his promise, but merely gave general instructions that the prisoners "should, for the night, be secured."

On returning to his comrades in misfortune, he found them surrounded by a strong escort, gazing upon a terrible conflagration that reddened all the sky, and which, whether by accident or design is unknown, had been kindled outside the fort. Without having the least suspicion of the awful fate that was impending over them, they asked where they were to be lodged for the night; and then they were marched to a verandah, or open gallery, near the eastern gate of the fort, and, about eight o'clock, the principal officer who had charge commanded them all to go into a room in rear of the gallery. This room, says Mr. Holwell, in his *Personal Narrative*, was "at the southern end of the barracks, commonly called the *Black Hole Prison*; whilst others from the Court of Guard, with clubs and drawn scimitars pressed upon those of us next to them. This stroke was so sudden, so unexpected, and the throng and pressure so great upon us, that next the door of the *Black Hole Prison*, there was no resisting it; but, like one agitated wave impelling another, the rest followed us like a torrent;" in short, to avoid being cut to pieces.

The door was then instantly shut and locked upon them.

Even for a single European prisoner the chamber in which these unfortunate creatures now found themselves would have been by far too small, in such a climate, at the height of the Indian summer. The dungeon was only twenty feet square. "It was the summer solstice, when the fierce heat of Bengal can scarcely be rendered tolerable to natives of England by lofty halls and the constant waving of fans. The number of the prisoners was 146."

The chamber had only two small windows, and these were deprived or obstructed from air, by two projecting verandahs.

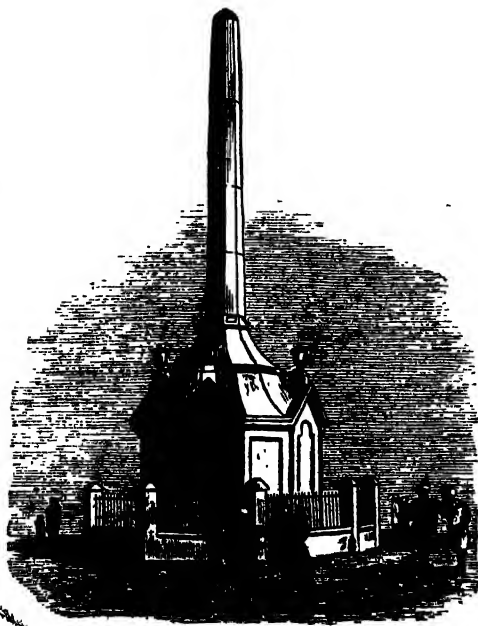
"Nothing in history or fiction," says the eloquent Macaulay, "not even the story which Ugolino told in the sea of everlasting ice, when he wiped his bloody lips on the scalp of his murderer, approaches the horrors that were recounted by the few survivors of that night. They cried for mercy. They strove to burst the door. Holwell, who, even in that extremity, retained some presence of mind, offered large bribes to the gaolers. But the answer was, that nothing could be done without the nabob's orders; that the nabob was asleep, and that he would be angry if any one awoke him. Then the prisoners went mad

the murderers mocked their agonies, raved, prayed, blasphemed, and implored the guards to fire on them. The gaolers in the meantime held lights to the bars, and shouted with laughter at the frantic struggles of their victims. At length the tumult died away in low gaspings and moanings. The nabob slept off his debauch and permitted the door to be opened; but it was some time before the soldiers could make a lane for the survivors, by piling up, on each side, the heaps of corpses, on which the burning climate had already begun its loathsome work. When at length a passage was made, twenty-three ghastly figures, such as their mothers would not have known, staggered one by one out of the charnel-house. A pit was dug. The dead bodies, 123 in number, were flung into it promiscuously, and covered up."

The details of this event, as given by Mr. Holwell, are most harrowing. One officer saved his life by sucking the perspiration from his shirt, as several others strove to do; while the steam that rose alike from the living and the dead was appalling; "it was," he says, "as if we were forcibly held with our heads over a bowl full of strong volatile spirit of hartshorn until suffocated. . . . I felt a stupor coming on apace, and laid myself down by that gallant old man, the Rev. Mr. Jervas Bellamy, who lay dead with his son, the lieutenant, near the southernmost wall of the prison."

Many died on their feet, and remained so standing, the press around not permitting the corpses to fall.

"But these things," continues Macaulay, "which, after the lapse of more than eighty years, cannot be told or read without horror, awakened neither remorse nor pity in the bosom of the savage nabob. He inflicted no punishment on the murderers. He showed no tenderness to the survivors. Some of them, indeed, from whom nothing was to be got, were suffered to depart, but those from whom it was thought anything could be extorted were treated with execrable cruelty. Holwell, unable to walk, was carried before the tyrant, who reproached him, threatened him, and sent him up the country in irons, with some other gentlemen who were suspected of knowing more than they chose to tell about the treasures of the Company. These persons, still bowed down by the sufferings of that great agony, were lodged in miserable sheds, and fed only with grain and water, till at length the intercessions of the female relations of the nabob procured their release. One Englishwoman had survived that night.



OBELISK ERECTED IN MEMORY OF THE SUFFERERS AT THE BLACK HOLE.

with despair. They trampled each other down, fought for places at the windows, fought for the pittance of water with which the cruel mercy of

She was placed in the harem of the prince at Moorshedabad."

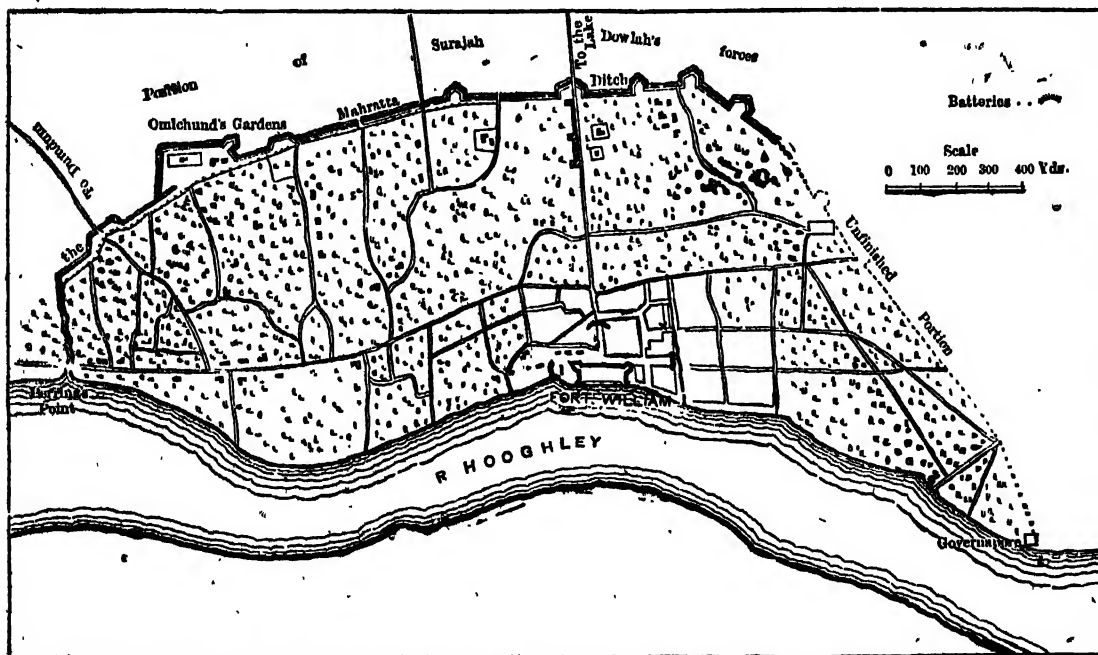
This lady, who was possessed of considerable attractions, was the wife of Captain Carey, an officer of the Company's sea service, who perished in that awful night. The following is the "List of persons smothered in the Black Hole Prison," as given by Mr. Holwell (exclusive of sixty-nine non-commissioned officers and soldiers, whose names he did not know), "making on the whole 123 persons."

Of the Council: E. Eyre and Wm. Baillie, Esq., and the Rev. Mr. Bellamy.

Stephenson, Guy, Porter, Parker, Caulker, Bendall, Atkinson, and Leech.

Mr. Holwell—whom the nabob frequently threatened to blow from a gun unless he would reveal where treasures that had no existence, save in his own imagination, lay—erected at Calcutta an obelisk to the memory of those who perished in that catastrophe, which he survived for more than forty years. He died in 1798 at the age of eighty-seven.

The brutal nabob informed his nominal master, then seated on his crumbling throne at Delhi, that he had utterly expelled the British from Bengal, and forbidden them for ever to dwell within its



TERRITORY OF CALCUTTA WHEN ATTACKED BY SURAJAH DOWLAH, 1756.

Of the Civil Service: Messrs. Revely, Law, Jenks, Coles, Valicourt, Jebb, Torriano, E. Page, S. Page, Grub, Harod, Streat, P. Johnston, Ballard, N. Drake, Casse, Knapton, Gosling, Byng, Dod, and Dalrymple.

Army Captains: Clayton, Buchanan, and Witherington.

Lieutenants: Bishop, Hays, Blagg, Simson, and Bellamy.

Ensigns: Paccard, Scott, Hastings, C. Wedderburn, and Dumbleton.

Sea Captains: Hunt, Osburne, Purnell, Carey,

precincts; and that, having completely purged Calcutta of the infidels, to commemorate the great event, he had ordered that, in all future time, it should be called by a new name—Alinagore, or "the Port of God." On the 2nd of July he collected his army, and, after leaving behind him 3,000 men in Fort William, made a triumphant departure from the place. His barges were decorated with banners and streamers, and the air was filled with the clangour of Indian drums and barbaric music, as he proceeded to fall upon his neighbour and near kinsman, the ruler of Purneah.

CHAPTER IX.

"CLIVE THE AVENGER."—CALCUTTA RETAKEN.—HOOGHLEY AND CHANDERNAGORE REDUCED.

THE dreadful news of the event at Calcutta reached Madras early in August, and excited the keenest resentment.

From the whole settlement there rose one

resentment he felt at the recent events at Calcutta, and the pleasure and satisfaction with which he accepted that command which—though he knew it not—was destined to crown him with fame



VIEW OF GOVERNMENT HOUSE, CALCUTTA.

universal cry for vengeance. If ever Britain had a cause for war, she had it now against the monstrous Surajah Dowlah, and her people would have been unworthy of an empire had they failed to punish the author of crimes so terrible. So great was the ardour in Madras, that within forty-eight hours an expedition up the Hooghley was determined upon, and it was the universal desire of the Council that the command of the troops, only 2,400 in all, should be given to Clive, "to punish a prince" who, as Macaulay says in his Essay, "had more subjects than Louis XV., or the Empress Maria Theresa."

On the 11th of October, 1756, Clive wrote to the directors, expressing the great horror, grief, and

and glory, and to win him the name of "Clive the Avenger"—"Clive the Daring in War."

Five days subsequently, the expedition sailed from Madras Roads. The squadron consisted of the *Kent* (sixty-four guns), bearing the flag of Admiral Watson; the *Cumberland* (seventy), with that of Rear-Admiral Pococke; the *Tiger* (sixty); *Salisbury* (fifty); the *Bridge-water* (sloop, twenty); the Company's ships, and two transports. The land force consisted of 900 Europeans, 250 of whom belonged to H.M. 39th Regiment, and 1,500 sepoys. "The weather proved so extremely tempestuous," says Captain Schömburg, "attended with other disasters, that the admiral did not reach Balasore Roads before the 5th of December."

The *Cumberland*, *Salisbury*, and *Blaze* (fireship) parted company in great distress." The first was under the necessity of putting into Vizagapatam; the second rejoined the admiral some days after his arrival in the river; but the *Blaze* never reached Bengal. All this caused a loss of 250 bayonets from the original strength, together with the heavy artillery on board of the *Cumberland*.

As the river pilots refused to take charge of large ships over the shoals, Captain Speke, who had been frequently in Bengal, undertook to do so, having no doubt of its being practicable; and by his skill and judgment they were all brought to anchor in safety, on the 15th of December, off Fulta, a town on the eastern bank of the swampy and jungly Hooghley, where the anchorage is quiet and protected from the sea, and lies twenty-five miles below Calcutta.

Here the admiral made the necessary arrangements for an attack on the enemy's batteries. A vessel was procured, converted into a bomb-ketch, and the command of her given to Lieutenant Thomas Warwick, first, of the *Kent*.

At Madras, letters had been procured from Mr. Pigot, the governor, Mohammed Ali, Nabob of Arcot, and Salabut Jung, Soubahdar of the Deccan, exhorting Surajah Dowlah to redress the wrongs he had done at Calcutta; and these missives, with others written by Admiral Watson and Lieutenant-Colonel Clive, were sent open to Monichund, now governor of Calcutta, who replied that he dared not send such menacing documents to his imperious master; and on this, it was resolved to bring matters to the issue of the cannon at once.

On the 27th, the squadron moved up the river, and two days after was brought abreast of Fort Buz-Buzia, otherwise Budge-budge, on which a heavy cannonade was opened, and maintained till evening, by which time the enemy's guns were silenced; but there was no indication of a surrender, as when darkness fell they kept up a smart fusillade, and volleys of fire arrows, which streaked the gloom with arcs of red light. On board the *Kent* a council of war was held, and it was resolved to carry the fort by storm next morning; and in order to strengthen the troops, a detachment of seamen was landed, under Captain King, R.N., while Clive took on shore 500 bayonets, and proceeded, under the direction of Indian guides, to make a *détour* across a country full of swamps and intersected by numerous rivulets, for the purpose of taking the garrison prisoners if attempting to escape.

As there were no draught bullocks, his infantry had to sling their firelocks, and drag two field-pieces and a limber. "The men suffered hardships

not to be described," says Clive in his despatch. On reaching a point in rear of the redoubt, the detachment, now weary, halted, some in a deep hollow, others apart in a grove, and the artillerymen beside their guns, which were pointed to command the road by which any fugitives from the fort might be expected to come.

"It is difficult," says his biographer, "to account for the absence of common vigilance which both Clive and his brother-officers displayed on this occasion. Not a picket nor a sentry appears to have been planted; while the men, weary with their march, were permitted to go to sleep without orders, and at a distance from their arms."

Monichund, the nabob's governor, if not a hero, but rather the reverse, was both wary and cautious. His spies had tracked Clive throughout the whole of this movement, and beheld its rather unsoldier-like conclusion; and he at once took his plans. Issuing out of Buz-Buzia, to which he had come the day before, at the head of 2,000 foot and 1,500 horse, he came upon the slumbering bivouac, into which he poured a volley of matchlock-balls and arrows.

Clive amply redeemed his error by the coolness and promptitude with which he repelled the danger. Not a soldier was permitted to quit his ground, and though the line was formed without much order, it stood firm under the fire, which it was not permitted to return. Two parties from the flanks were thrown forward in double-quick time, to take in reverse the assailants, who had now crowded into a village, where they were attacked with that unfailing British argument, the bayonet, which gave the artillerymen time to rush into the hollow and bring up the guns, with which they opened a fire that soon quelled the enemy; and on Monichund receiving a musket-ball through his turban, he thought only of flight; and Orme is correct in surmising that, "had the cavalry advanced and charged the troops in the hollow at the same time that the infantry began to fire upon the village, it is not improbable that the war would have been concluded on the very first trial of hostilities."

The instant that Monichund fled, the troops marched to the village adjoining the fort, and found the *Kent*, which had outsailed them, anchored abreast of it. The assault was deferred until next day, when to assist in it, 250 seamen were landed. One of these, a Scotsman named Strachan, "having just received his allowance of grog, found his spirits too much elated to think of sleeping," and straggling close to the fort, scrambled over the rampart, and seeing no one there, hallooed to the advanced guard that he had "taken the fort!" It

was found to be evacuated. On being reprimanded by Admiral Watson, Strachan swore that he would never take *another* fort as long as he lived. He was afterwards wounded in one of the actions under Admiral Pococke, and became a pensioner of the Chest at Chatham.

Clive now marched along by land, while Admiral Watson sailed up the river. On the 2nd January, 1757, the armament was off Calcutta, and a few broadsides from the fleet expelled the garrison, and sent them flying after their fugitive general, Monichund, while, without the loss of a life, the place was retaken, the somewhat unworthy Mr. Drake was reinstated in his office of governor, and all the merchandise was found in the condition in which it had been left when the Council fled, as the *viceroy* had ordered it to be reserved for himself; but every private dwelling had been sacked and wrecked.

Within a week and a day after, Clive, impetuous and rapid in all his movements, was before the important fortress and town of Hooghley, the batteries of which bristled with heavy guns, and were manned by 3,000 of Surajah Dowlah's Bengalese, who fled almost at the first cannon-shot, and so complete now was the panic existing among the forces of the nabob, that Major Coote, with 150 Europeans and sepoys, was able, with ease, to scour the country for miles, and destroy or capture, as suited him, vast stores of rice and other provisions, including £15,000 taken at Hooghley.

The sepoys were left to garrison Hooghley, while the Europeans returned to Calcutta, with spoil to the value of a lac and a half of rupees. This was on the 19th January.

Surajah Dowlah, having by this time massed another enormous host at Moorshedabad, and believing Clive's army—if it deserved the name—to be smaller than it was, began his march for Calcutta full of vengeance and ferocity, and uttering the most terrible menaces.

Clive was prepared for him, and, resolved not to be hemmed up in the miserable fortress, he erected a fortified camp northward of the town, and at the distance of a mile and a half from the Hooghley, thus effectually providing that no enemy from the northward should be able to violate the Company's territory, without at least developing his designs. This done, and a garrison being thrown into a redoubt or castle at Perring's Point, Clive established his outposts, and waited with all patience the turn events might take.*

Luckily Clive was furnished with artillery and stores from the *Marlborough*, before the 30th of

January, when the nabob crossed the river about ten miles above Hooghley, and as he continued his march, the country people who had supplied the "Unbelievers" with provisions, concealed their property and fled. On many occasions Clive felt severely the want of that most necessary arm in war—cavalry.

Thus, on the 30th he wrote to the nabob a conciliatory letter, proposing peace; Surajah Dowlah, it is said, returned a courteous answer; but continued the march of his swarthy hordes, whom he knew Clive could only confront by a literal "handful." Lord Macaulay alleges that the overtures were made by Surajah Dowlah, and that he offered to restore to the British their settlements with compensation for the injuries done; while Admiral Watson was opposed to peace or truce being either made or accepted by Great Britain. His idea was simply this: that as to places previously in our possession, we had captured them; as to compensation, we could take it with cold steel.

On the whole, the sturdy admiral felt that till Surajah Dowlah found his viceroyalty over Bengal in danger, and, after losses and defeats, was compelled to sue for peace, he would ever remain a treacherous, though flexible enemy, and one ever ready for war, if it could be made with the hope of success; and, by striking a bold and decisive blow, Admiral Watson believed that a permanent peace might be secured.

The French at Chandernagore—a station which they had obtained on the west bank of the Hooghley, sixteen miles distant from Calcutta, so far back as 1676—declined joining the Indian army, and disgusted, perhaps as Europeans, by recent events at Calcutta, made proposals to the British for a constant truce between them and Bengal, notwithstanding any war between the two crowns in Europe, or any other part of the world.

By the 3rd February, all the villages north-eastward of Calcutta were seen in flames, indicating thus, by rapine, the march of the nabob's army. Reluctant to take any step which might render the pacification to which he looked forward impracticable, Clive beheld, without opposition, this swarm of semi-barbarous warriors take possession of a great road which, stretching north and south, conducted to a stone bridge; and about noon some of their pillagers penetrated into a suburb of Calcutta occupied by the humbler natives; but a sally from Perring's Redoubt repulsed them with loss, after which the nabob's army intrenched itself in a large garden, a mile south-eastward of the British camp.

About an hour before night came on—there is no twilight in India—Colonel Clive, with the

* Gleig.

greatest part of his forces and six field-guns, issued from his camp, and attempted to drive them from their post; but they threw out cavalry who pressed upon his flanks, and replied to his fire by nine guns of heavier calibre, and after a small loss, he was compelled to fall back.

Meanwhile the cowardly nabob still remained some miles distant, and, pretending to negotiate, requested the attendance of certain deputies at a village near Calcutta, to arrange the terms of peace. After some trouble, two who went—Messrs. Walsh and Scrafton—found him close to the city, in a house actually within the Mahratta Ditch; and, after an angry altercation about delivering up their swords, which they resolutely refused to do, they were admitted to an audience. Surajah Dowlah, stern and stately, surrounded by all the terrors of utter despotism, was seated on the musnud, and had about him “the principal of his officers, and the tallest and grimmest of his attendants, who, to impress them, and to look more stout and truculent, had dressed themselves in wadded garments, and put enormous turbans on their heads. During the conference these fellows sat scowling at the two Englishmen, as if they only waited the nabob’s nod to murder them.”

Uninfluenced by this, they stoutly remonstrated with the nabob for thus violating the territory of the Company, and delivered to him a paper containing the terms on which Clive alone would make peace. Without deigning to reply, the haughty nabob abruptly broke up the meeting, and as Walsh and Scrafton left the apartment, Omichund, a Hindoo to whom the house belonged, whispered them in the ear, to “have a care for their lives!” Thus, instead of going to the tent of the nabob’s minister, as they had intended to do, the deputies carefully ordered their attendants to extinguish their torches, and through the darkness and confusion, fled back to the camp of Clive, who resolved to bring matters to a stern issue next morning.

Having ascertained that the greater portion of the Indian artillery was still in the rear, on being strengthened by 600 seamen from the fleet, armed with firelocks, about an hour before daybreak he moved from his camp in silence, and formed his forces, consisting of 650 Europeans of the line, 100 artillerymen, 600 seamen under Captain Warwick, R.N., and 800 sepoys, “in a single column of threes in front, facing towards the south.”

The 39th Regiment took post in rear of a wing of sepoys, the other wing succeeding them; in continuation of these came the six field-pieces,

drawn partly by seamen and partly by lascars, who carried the spare ammunition. Clive, like all the rest of the officers, was on foot, and, at a given signal, the whole advanced, covered by a few patrols.

“About three in the morning,” he reports in his letter to the secret committee, “I marched out nearly my whole force, leaving only a few Europeans with 200 new-raised Bucksarces to guard our camp. About six, we entered the enemy’s camp in a thick fog, and crossed it in about two hours with considerable exertion. Had the fog cleared up, as it usually does, about eight o’clock, when we were entire masters of the camp without the ditch, the action must have been decisive, instead of which it thickened, and occasioned our mistaking the way.”*

While it was yet dark, the head of the column would seem to have fallen upon an outpost of the enemy, which, after the discharge of a few matchlocks and rockets, retreated, though not until one of their missiles made a sepoy’s cartridge-box to explode, thus causing some disorder in our ranks; but the columns still pressed on, till they came near the quarters of the nabob, and then for the first time since their advance did they become aware of an impending attack. The clank of hoofs was heard coming rapidly from the direction of the Mahratta Ditch. The fog parted like a curtain for an instant, and a well-mounted line of glittering Persian cavalry was seen within twenty yards of their flank. The troops halted, and poured in a volley with such terrible effect, that the enemy was swept away before it, “as dust is swept aside by the breath of the whirlwind.”

Once more the onward march was resumed over the dead and dying Persians, but slowly, the infantry firing random platoons into the fog, and the artillery discharging balls obliquely to clear the direction of the column, and yet protect its progress. After surmounting a causeway which was raised several feet above the adjacent district, the troops became entangled in deep and muddy fields, over which, though intersected by innumerable ditches and watercourses, it was necessary to drag the guns.

By nine o’clock the fog rose, and the awkward position of our troops became distinctly visible. Then the enemy’s horse made repeated attempts to charge them both in front and rear, but were repulsed on every occasion by the well-directed fire of this handful of brave fellows, who were outnumbered beyond all calculation. The enemy’s guns bore on them severely, while they had to abandon two of their own, which were hope-

* Malcolm.

lessly sunk in the mud. Nevertheless, with the dogged obstinacy of genuine Britons, the column wheeled again to its right, and, bearing down all opposition, passed the Mahratta Ditch in triumph.

Ere Clive drew off, he lost in this affair twenty-seven Europeans of the line, twelve seamen, and eighteen sepoy, in all fifty-seven, while his total wounded amounted to 117 of all ranks. But the carnage committed by his soldiers, who were mad for revenge on the perpetrators of the Black Hole massacre, caused a universal panic in the Indian army, the losses of which were twenty-two officers of distinction, 600 men, 500 horses, four elephants, and a vast number of camels and bullocks. Smollett says the nabob's loss was 1,000 men—killed, wounded, and prisoners.

Clive was not disappointed as to the effect to be produced on the feeble mind of the nabob by that morning's work; for next day Surajah Dowlah quitted Calcutta, and encamped on a plain six miles distant, where Clive was preparing to give him battle again, when he received a humble note, in which the nabob prayed for peace. He was not only to restore the Company's factories, and all plunder, but to permit the complete fortification of Calcutta, and to confirm all privileges granted to the British on their first coming to the country, including the presidency over thirty-eight adjacent villages, conformable to a disputed grant from the Great Mogul.* Only three days after this treaty was concluded, he proposed an alliance offensive and defensive against all enemies, and this Clive ratified.

This treaty gave but slender satisfaction to parties at Calcutta, and Admiral Watson, with sailor-like bluntness, said while it was pending,—

"Till he is well thrashed, don't flatter yourself he will be inclined to peace. Let us, therefore, not be over-reached by his politics, but make use of our arms, which will be much more persuasive than any treaties or negotiations."

Many openly expressed extreme anger at the terms of this sudden treaty, as they had suffered keenly by bereavement and loss at the hands of Surajah Dowlah, whose name inspired every Briton with hate and horror, as did that of the terrible Nana of later times; but Clive fully justified himself to Mr. Payne, in a long letter printed in Sir John Malcolm's work.

The treaty was no sooner concluded, than the faithless nabob began to intrigue against the British.

War having broken out between Britain and France at home, it was apparent to all that there could be no permanent security for Calcutta while the French

were in possession of Chandernagore, which Clive and Admiral Watson at once made preparations to attack, the former previously instructing our agent, Mr. Watts, at the court of Moorshedabad, that he was extremely reluctant to march without the consent and assistance of the nabob; but all diplomacy failed to get him to act.

Admiral Watson ordered the captains of the *Kent*, *Tiger*, and *Salisbury*, to land all heavy and superfluous stores at Calcutta, while the *Bridge-water* and *Kingsfisher* were to escort the military stores up the river, in order to accelerate the march of the troops under Clive, and on the 19th of March, the three first-named vessels came to anchor off the fort which commands the neat little town of Chandernagore, the territory of which extends two miles along the Hooghley, and one mile inland.

The garrison, under M. Renault, was 900 strong, 600 being Frenchmen of the line and militia, the rest seamen and sepoy. Smollett says there were 1,200 sepoy in the place, and that it was armed with 123 guns, and three mortars.

Clive had been before the fort by the 15th, and in one short day's work, drove in the French outposts, and forced them to spike and abandon all the guns on one of their outworks. On the 16th he got his heavy guns into position, and for three subsequent days threw in shells from a cohorn and mortar; but it was not until the 23rd, that, after removing certain obstructions in the bed of the stream, our three large men-of-war opened their broadsides on the fort, when a dreadful battering by land and water ensued.

The French fought with their usual valour, and seemed likely to have the best of the conflict, till the guns of the *Tiger* blew one of their ravelins literally to atoms. Admiral Watson's ship, the *Kent*, fought closer to the works than was intended, and as she was allowed to pay out her cable, and fall into a disadvantageous position, she suffered severely in shifting her ground. On both sides every shot told, while the land batteries delivered a cross fire. By nine o'clock next morning the enemy's guns were silenced, and a flag of truce was flying on their works. Then Captain Coote went on shore to arrange the terms, and found that the works presented a dreadful sight, one of their batteries had been twice cleared, and forty men lay dead within another.

While terms were pending, many men with their officers stole out of the fort and escaped. By three o'clock the rest capitulated. In the last decisive attack Clive had only one man killed, and ten wounded; but before the ships came into action, he had fifty casualties. The *Kent* had nineteen

* Orme; *London Gazette*, 20th Sept., 1757, &c.

men killed, and forty-nine wounded; the *Tiger* thirteen killed, and fifty wounded. Mr. Perrean, the first lieutenant, and Mr. Rawlins Hay, third of the *Kent*, were among the slain. Mr. Staunton, fourth, was wounded, as were also Captain Speke and his son, by the same shot. The master of the *Tiger* was killed, and the Rear-Admiral (Pococke) slightly wounded. The ships suffered great damage in their masts, hulls, and rigging; the *Kent* alone had six guns dismounted, and 138 shot in her hull.*

his advance was useless, as Chandernagore must fall ere he could reach it. The nabob was unstable as water, and Macaulay thus sums up his character:—

“The nabob had feared and hated the English even while he was still able to oppose to them their French rivals. The French were now vanquished; and he began to regard the English with still greater fear and still greater hatred. One day, he sent a large sum to Calcutta, as part of the



VIEW IN MOORSHEDABAD.

Young Speke, a genuine hero, died soon after having his leg amputated; but his father, who mourned him deeply, survived, to distinguish himself under Sir Edward Hawke, at Belleisle, though he never perfectly recovered from his wound.

The keys were delivered to Captain Latham of the *Tiger*. The Jesuits were permitted to retain all their church vessels, and the natives full possession of their civil rights.†

During the siege, our new ally, the nabob, sent several imperious letters ordering our commanders to desist, and even sent a division of his army, under Roydullab, to attack Clive, but the latter was luckily met by a messenger, who assured him that

compensation due for the wrongs he had committed. The next day he sent a present of jewels to Bussy, exhorting that distinguished officer to protect Bengal 'against Clive the Daring in War, on whom' says his highness, 'may all bad fortune attend.' He ordered his army to march against the British. He countermanded his orders. He tore Clive's letters. He ordered Watts out of his presence, and threatened to impale him. He sent for Watts, and begged pardon for the insult. In the meantime, his wretched maladministration, his dissolute manners and love of the lowest company, had disgusted all classes of his subjects, soldiers, traders, civil functionaries, the ostentatious Mohammedans, the timid, supple, and parsimonious Hindoos. A

* "Naval Chron."

† Smollett.



CLIVE AT PLASSEY.

formidable conspiracy was formed against him, in which were included Roydullab, the minister of finance, Meer Jaffier, the principal commander of the troops, and Jugget Seit, the richest banker in India. The plot was confided to the English agents, and a communication was opened between the malcontents at Moorshedabad and the committee at Calcutta."

While this conspiracy was maturing in his capital, camp, and court, he was again collecting a great army for the purpose of falling upon Clive, under the chief conspirator, Meer Jaffier Khan, a Mohammedan soldier of fortune, who had been raised to the highest dignity by the late Nabob Aliverdy Khan, who had given him his daughter in marriage.

CHAPTER X.

BATTLE OF PLASSEY.—DEFEAT, FLIGHT, AND DETHRONEMENT OF THE NABOB OF BENGAL BY COLONEL CLIVE.

ON the 16th of August, the service suffered a severe loss by the death of Admiral Charles Watson, who fell a victim to the Indian climate, to the great regret of all. A monument in Westminster Abbey was erected to his memory by the East India Company, and the king was pleased to create his son a baronet of the United Kingdom.

Exactly two months prior to this event, Clive began to move his little army towards Plassey, where Meer Jaffier was assembling an army, and it was calculated that half of the force would implicitly obey his orders.

Clive sent before him a letter full of reproaches to Surajah Dowlah, for his duplicity and numerous breaches of faith, and calling upon him to choose between submission to the demands of Britain, or instant war. On the 16th of June, he halted at Patlee, and sent Major Coote to reduce the mud fort of Cutwah, near the junction of the Hadjee and Bhagaruttee rivers. A letter now came, but of a most unsatisfactory nature, from Meer Jaffier, for instead of announcing an approach to form a junction, it spoke in somewhat ambiguous terms of the reconciliation with the nabob, and an oath by which he had bound himself not to take part against him. "Meer Jaffier, of course, declared that the whole was, on his part, a trick by which he hoped to lure the nabob to his ruin; but when, on the 19th, another letter arrived, in which he gave only the vague intelligence that his tent would be either on the right or the left of the army, and excused himself for not being more explicit, because guards were stationed on all the roads to intercept messages, Clive's suspicions became thoroughly roused. Meer Jaffier meant to deceive him, or had miscalculated his strength. On either supposition, further advance was perilous in the extreme."

The situation of Clive was now one of painful anxiety, as he could confide neither in the courage nor the sincerity of his confederate; and whatever confidence he had in his own skill and the valour of his troops, he could not fail to see the rashness of attempting to engage an army outnumbering his force by twenty to one. Before him rolled a river, over which to advance was easy; but if defeat followed, not a man of his little band would ever return alive; and now for the first, perhaps the last time, he shrunk from the deep responsibility of private decision.

He summoned a council of war, at which the majority pronounced against fighting, and he almost instantly concurred with them. "Long afterwards," we are told, "he said he had never called but one council of war, and that if he had taken the advice of that council, the British would never have been masters of Bengal." After they separated, he retired into a grove of mango-trees, and passed nearly an hour there in deep thought.

He then came forth, resolved to put all to the issue of the sword, and gave orders for the passage of the river on the morrow.

The morrow saw the river—the Cossimbazar—in his rear, and, at the close of a weary day's march, long after the sun had set, the toil-worn army halted in a mango tope near Plassey, within a mile of the enemy, who had reached that place twelve hours before them. During the whole night Clive was unable to sleep; throughout the stillness and the darkness, he heard the incessant sound of drums and cymbals from the mighty camp of the nabob; and his heart quailed at times, as he thought of the vast prize for which he was, in a few hours, to contend against odds so mighty.

"Nor was the rest of Surajah Dowlah more

peaceful. His mind, at once weak and stormy, was distracted by wild and horrible apprehensions. Appalled by the greatness and nearness of the crisis, distrusting his captains, dreading every one who approached him, dreading to be left alone, he sat gloomily in his tent, haunted, a Greek poet would have said, by the furies of those who had cursed him with their last breath in the Black Hole."

On the other hand, our soldiers, "few but undismayed," if not confident of victory, were resolute to deserve it; and wistfully on that morning must they have watched the reddening east, as the dawn of the battle-day of Plassey—the day that was to decide the fate of India—came quickly in!

The nabob was at the head of 50,000 infantry and 20,000 horse, with fifty pieces of cannon, directed chiefly by forty French officers and deserters.

Clive had only 1,000 Europeans, 2,000 sepoys, and eight pieces of cannon. Among the former were the small remains of three regiments, H.M. 39th, the 1st Bengal Fusiliers, and the 1st Bombay Fusiliers, now numbered respectively as the 101st and 103rd of the British line. He had also 150 gunners and seamen.

The grove in which this little force lay at Plassey was 800 yards long by 300 deep, and consisted entirely of mango-trees, planted in regular rows. Around it were a slight embankment and a ditch choked up with weeds. Its northern angle was within fifty yards of the river. A hunting-seat belonging to the nabob, which stood upon the bank of the latter, with its walled garden and other enclosures, covered one of Clive's flanks, and soon became useful as a hospital. Meanwhile the enemy occupied an intrenched camp about a mile distant in his front, which, commencing at the neck of a peninsula formed by an acute bend of the stream, ran directly inland for 200 yards, after which it formed an obtuse angle, and ran away for nearly three miles in a north-easterly direction.

A redoubt armed with cannon stood in the acute angle. Three hundred yards beyond it was an eminence covered with beautiful trees, while a couple of large water-tanks, surrounded by mounds of green sward, offered peculiar advantages, either in advancing or retreating; and all these features of the position were seen by Clive, who, when day dawned, climbed to the roof of the hunting-seat, and with his telescope began to examine the camp of the nabob.

Suddenly there was a great stir within it; and ere long the heads of the glittering columns, attired

in costumes of many brilliant colours, began to move into the green plain, where the vast multitude began to form in order of battle, in aspect most striking and picturesque.

There came the 50,000 infantry of Surajah Dowlah, variously armed with spears, swords, daggers, and rockets; others had the matchlocks of the Cromwellian days, but beautifully inlaid. "The bowmen formed their lines as those of Cressy or Poitiers; but the turbaned heads and flowing drapery of these Eastern archers were far more picturesque. The musketeers carried their dusky weapons with less propriety and grace, and as men less skilful with their arms."

There were the 20,000 cavalry, and from amid them many a line of crooked tulwars, of brass-orbed shields, and tasselled lances displayed alike the pomp and reality of war, as they flashed in the morning sun.

The mode in which the fifty cannon were moved formed not the least remarkable feature in this vast army, which came in the shape of a semicircle, as if to enclose the little force that seemed to lurk, rather than defiantly form, in the grove of mango-trees. They were all of heavy metal, and drawn by beautiful white oxen, whose movements were far more active and graceful than Europeans would think likely in such animals, traced to field artillery. Each gun was placed on a large wooden stage, six feet above the ground; and, to aid in the advance of these cumbrous platforms, which bore also the gunners and ammunition, behind each was an elephant pushing with his head.

Apart from all these were four pestilent light field-pieces, worked alone by Frenchmen, who posted them in one of the tanks near the edge of the grove.

Clive, whose whole artillery, as we have said, consisted of only eight field-pieces, with two mortars, drew up his slender force in one line, the three European regiments, each with a front of only about 150 files, in the centre, and just beyond the skirts of the grove. He posted three cannon on each flank, and the remaining two, with the howitzers, under cover of two brick-kilns, to protect his left. He then passed the order along the line to keep steady, and neither advance nor retire without being commanded to do so, after which he again took himself to his post of observation on the housetop.

The enemy, instead of continuing to advance, halted, and at eight in the morning commenced a general cannonade, the signal for which was a shot from the French artillerists at the tank. Clive's guns promptly responded, and with excellent

effect, disabling many of the enemy's cannon, by killing or alarming the oxen and elephants, and throwing the native *gholandazees* into confusion; but it was to silence the efficiently-handled pieces of the French that the fire was chiefly directed.

By nine o'clock, Clive, finding that several of his men were falling under those dreadful wounds inflicted by cannon-shot, ordered the whole line to take shelter within the *topc*. Upon this movement taking place, the enemy, conceiving it was a sudden flight, with fierce, exultant, and tumultuous yells, pushed on their artillery, all thirty-two and twenty-four-pounders, and fired with increased ardour; but as the Europeans and sepoy crouched behind the trees, they received no damage from the storm of iron that swept over their heads and tore the mango grove to splinters; while their lighter field-guns made dreadful lanes through the dense masses of horse and foot that covered the open plain, piling, in torn and dismembered heaps, the corpses over each other.

The day passed thus till noon came, when a heavy shower of rain fell, and, by wetting their ammunition, caused the fire of the enemy to slacken. Amid this long cannonade, Meer Meden, a general upon whom the nabob placed the greatest reliance, received a mortal wound from a cannon-ball. He was borne to the tent of his highness, and while the faithful officer was in the act of explaining certain arrangements which might ensure victory, he expired.

Surajah Dowlah, frantic with rage and despair, now summoned Meer Jaffier, whose great column of troops had hitherto remained inactive, or in a species of armed neutrality, on one flank of the line. The nabob, taking off his turban—the most abject act of humility to which a Mussulman can stoop—implored him to avenge the fall of the loyal Meer Meden, “and to rescue from the perils that beset him, the grandson of that Aliverdy by whose royal favour he—Jaffier—had grown so great.”

Jaffier bowed, quitted the tent, and sent a secret letter to Clive, who never received it till the battle was over. It was a request to push on to victory. Unmoved by the agony of spirit in which he left his master, the traitor suggested a retreat to their entrenchments. Another officer high in rank, named Mohun Lall, pointed out the certain destruction which must ensue if such advice were taken; but the helpless nabob gave the fatal order.

Accordingly, while to the astonishment and joy of Clive and his troops, one portion of the Indian army, with all its lumbering platforms, elephants, and teams of oxen, some forty or so to a gun, began a retrograde movement, that wing commanded by

Meer Jaffier remained stationary. Clive now saw the precise state of matters, and ordered the whole line—led by the 39th Regiment—to advance. Dull though he was, the nabob now understood the inaction of Jaffier, and, mounting a swift dromedary, at the head of 2,000 of his best cavalry, forsook the field, while his traitor general drew off his troops from the line of battle. The rest flung away their arms, and betook them to instant flight.

With a bravery worthy of a better cause, the few Frenchmen in the field strove in vain to rally and reform the panic-stricken horde; “but, as the alarm and the rout of their allies increased they were swept from the plain, as the mountain rock borne down by the avalanche; and these brave men were merged in the crowd whose mad flight bore everything before it.”

Meer Jaffier's column was the last to give way, though it scarcely fired a shot.

“Push on—push on—forward!” were now the shouts of our advancing line, and at the point of the bayonet, the camp was entered without any other opposition than that occasioned by the abandoned cannon, the overturned platforms, the herds of oxen, killed and wounded men, and elephants, pyramids of baggage, the same débris that covered all the plain.

“Being liberally promised prize-money, the troops remained steady in their ranks, though surrounded by the gorgeous plunder of an Oriental camp. After a brief halt, which enabled the commissaries to collect as many bullocks and horses as were requisite for the transport of the cannon, the troops advanced in the highest spirits as far as Daudpoor, towards which the advanced guard had been pushed for the purpose of observing the enemy's rear, and then the lists of the day's losses were made up.”

Clive's casualties were singularly few. Only sixteen sepoy and eight Europeans lost their lives; the wounded were forty-eight in all; of these twelve were British. Of the enemy 500 were slain alone. The future results of this great victory were not less remarkable than the victory itself. At eight o'clock in the evening, Clive halted in Daudpoor, and next morning he saluted the intriguing traitor, Jaffier, as Subah or Nabob of Bengal, Behar, and Orissa.

No battle won by Clive gained him so much glory and emolument, and in no battle in which he was engaged did the issue, in reality, result less from any act of his. Jaffier's treason was the chief cause of the nabob's hordes being defeated; and, but for that, not a man of Clive's little band could have escaped a miserable death.

Clive urged Jaffier at once to march on Moorshedabad, where Surajah Dowlah arrived in twenty-four hours after the battle, and called around him his counsellors.

The wisest of these advised him to place himself in the hands of Clive, from whom he had nothing to fear but confinement. He viewed this as the suggestion of treason. Others urged him again to try the fortune of war, and approving of this advice, he gave orders accordingly, but lacked the manly spirit to adhere even for one day to his resolution; and when he learned that, acting

on Clive's suggestion, Meer Jaffier and his troops were coming on, his terror became too great for control.

Instead of rushing forward, sword in hand, at the head of all who adhered to him, and yielding up his throne only with his life, he disguised himself in a mean habit, and with a casket of jewels in his hand, let himself down in the night from a window of his palace, and, with only two attendants, in the hope of finding protection from Law de Lauriston, embarked on the river for Patna, on the southern bank of the Ganges.

CHAPTER XI.

ASSASSINATION OF SURAJAH DOWLAH.—COOTE'S EXPEDITION.—TRICHINOPOLY ATTACKED AGAIN.

ESCORTED by 200 British soldiers and 300 sepoys, a few days after the battle. Clive marched into Moorshedabad, where a palace was assigned him for his residence, surrounded by a garden so spacious, that within it he encamped his troops, and the ceremony of installing Meer Jaffier was instantly performed.

The soldier of fortune who was now Nabob of Bengal was led by Clive to the seat of honour, who placing him upon it, according to a custom immemorial in the East, made him an offering in gold, and turning to the assembled natives, congratulated them on the good fortune that had freed them from the worst of tyrants; after which, the new sovereign was called upon to fulfil certain engagements into which he had entered with his new allies.

Meer Jaffier now, however, declared that there was not money enough in the treasury of Surajah Dowlah to pay what the British demanded according to the treaty with them. On this the nabob-maker suggested that they should repair together to the residence of the great Hindoo banker who had been concerned in the conspiracy against their late ruler. Jaffier consented, on which they went forthwith, followed by Omichund, of Calcutta, who had been much mixed up in all their intrigues, and thought the time was at hand when he too should be paid.

• On arriving at the *sai's* or banker's, however, Omichund was not invited to seat himself on the carpet with the other Hindoo capitalists; and, dismayed by this unexpected slight, he seated himself among his servants in the outer part of the hall; and on finding that he was to receive nothing, fell almost

immediately into a state of imbecility, and died in that condition eighteen months after. The treaty between Clive and Jaffier, as written in Persian and English, was then read, and after much consultation it was agreed that one-half the sum promised the British troops should be paid immediately in coin, plate, and jewels taken out of the treasury, and the other half should be discharged in three years by equal instalments.

Two days after this, came tidings of the capture of Surajah Dowlah, who had been taken at Rajahmahal, where his boatmen, worn out by excessive exertions, were permitted to pass the night in their craft, while the disguised nabob and his two attendants sought shelter ashore in a deserted garden. Now it chanced that at break of day he was recognised there by one who had but too good reason to remember him, the tyrant having shorn him of his ears about thirteen months before. The person whom he thus maltreated was either a dervish or a fakir, and by a strange coincidence the fallen nabob sought the cell of this devotee, who received him with apparent hospitality, but, inspired at once by revenge and the hope of reward, he made the circumstance known to Meer Cossim, Jaffier's son-in-law, who then commanded in Rajahmahal.

Surajah Dowlah was instantly captured, and after being subjected to every possible indignity, was brought back, as a felon, to his own palace, and dragged before his supplanter at midnight. He crawled in the dust to the new nabob's feet, weeping, and praying for mercy. It is said that Meer Jaffier, moved alike by pity and contempt, was inclined to spare his miserable life; but that

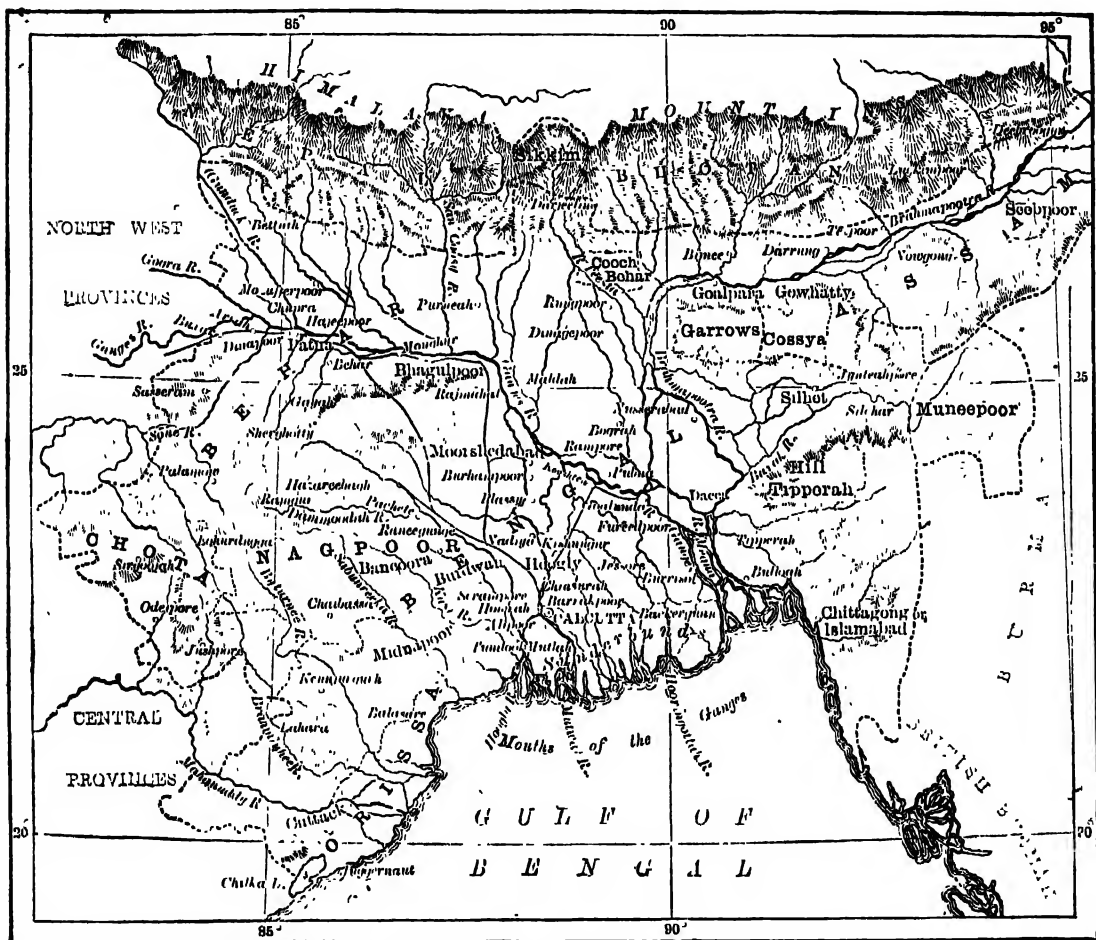
Meeran, his son, a wretch as vile and ferocious as even Surajah Dowlah, urged that the latter should be put to death, to render the throne of Bengal and his own succession thereto more perfectly secure.

To await his fate he was removed to a remote chamber in the palace of Moorsheelabad, where he did not remain long in suspense. As soon as his

for having avenged them on their most malignant enemy."*

Meeran, his murderer, was only in his seven-teenth year.

Clive and the committee of the Company on the 6th of July obtained payment of 7,271,666 rupees (equal to £800,000 sterling), in addition to which the former obtained from Jaffier as his own reward



MAP OF BENGAL, BEHAR, AND ORISSA.

slayer entered, he saw his dreadful purpose in his eyes, and begged for a few minutes' respite for ablution and prayer; but this was denied him. A few home stabs of the poniard soon dispatched him; and in the morning his bloody remains were exposed through the city on an elephant, after which they were thrown into the grave of his maternal grandfather, Aliverdy Khan. He was only in the twentieth year of his age.

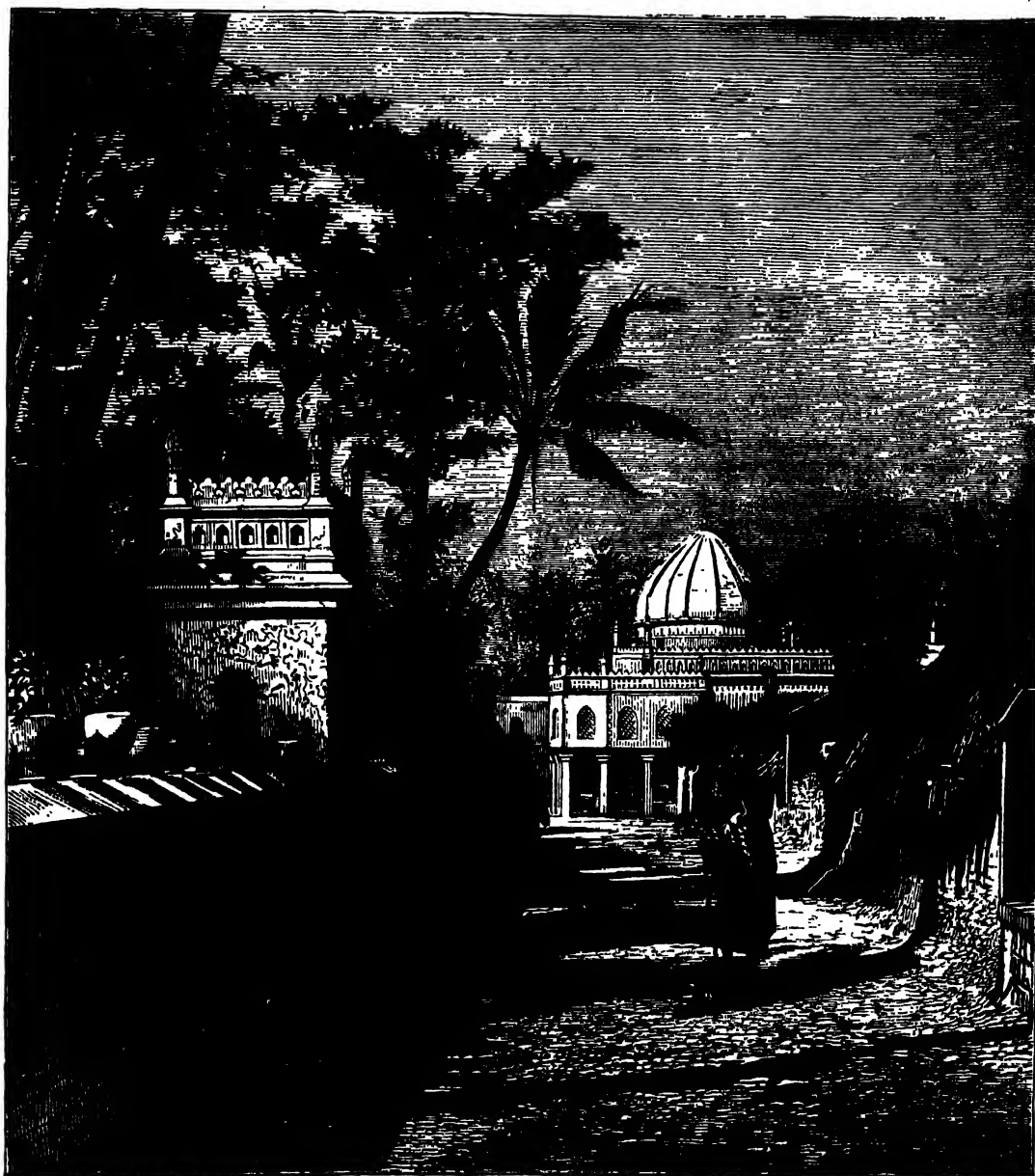
"In this act the English bore no part; and Meer Jaffier understood so much of their feelings that he thought it necessary to apologise to them

£160,000, out of which he granted an annuity of £300 to his old brother-officer, Lawrence, who had grown old in the service, and was poor. This treasure altogether filled 700 chests, and was embarked in 100 boats, which, escorted by soldiers and all the boats of the British squadron, proceeded along the river to Fort William, with banners flying and music playing—"a scene of triumph and joy, and a remarkable contrast to the scene of the preceding year, when Surajah Dowlah had ascended the same stream from the conquest and plunder of Calcutta."

* Macaulay.

In August the Company received in cash and treasure 3,255,095 rupees, with a right to establish a mint of their own at Calcutta, achieved the expulsion for ever of the French, and obtained the entire

there was no limit to his acquisitions but his own moderation. The treasury of Bengal was thrown open to him. There were piled up, after the usage of Indian princes, immense masses of



VIEW NEAR TRICHINOPOLY—THE MOSQUE OF NUTHUR.

right of all property within the Mahratta Ditch, with 600 yards round it, and all the land in the neighbourhood of Calcutta between the river, the lake, and Culpee, in rental from the nabob, with a right of free trade throughout the provinces of Bengal, Behar, and Orissa, save in salt and betel. "Trade revived, and signs of affluence appeared in every English house," says the great Essayist. "As to Clive,

coin, among which might not seldom be detected the florins and byzants with which, before any European ship had turned the Cape of Good Hope, the Venetians purchased the stuffs and spices of the East. Clive walked between heaps of gold and silver, crowned with rubies and diamonds, and was at liberty to help himself."

The new nabob lived and moved under British

control; the Council at Calcutta reigned, and he administered; and in London the India Company purchased for him, as presents, a fine musical clock, some rich watches and rings, to be taken to Moorshedabad by Clive or some other official.

James Francis Law was now in the field, at the head of a French force, said by some accounts to have been 2,000 strong, including those troops which escaped from Chandernagore. He had been hastening to the aid of Surajah Dowlah, who had requested his presence for the defence of Bengal; but when tidings reached him of the battle of Plassey, where he might have turned the fortune of the field, he wisely halted. "Had he proceeded twenty miles further," says Orme, "he would have met and saved Surajah Dowlah, and an order of events very different from those we have to relate would have ensued."

From other sources he soon learned how completely all was lost, with the death of the wretched nabob; so he began his retreat with all speed into Behar, intending to offer his military services to Ramnarrain, the governor of that province, who was inclined to assume independence. Clive, therefore, resolved to make the French prisoners, if possible, before they reached Patna.

For this purpose he sent in pursuit of Law a detachment of 230 Europeans, 300 sepoy, and fifty lascars, with two field-guns, under Major Coote, of the 39th Regiment, while the baggage and stores, in forty boats, went up the river; but so many were the unavoidable delays, that by the 6th of July, when the little column began its march, Law was half-way to Patna.

On the 10th of July, Coote was at Rajahmahal, and on the following day the baggage boats came in. Meer Jaffier's kinsman, who, as we have said, commanded in that district, would not yield the least assistance; thus it was the 18th before Coote reached Boglipur, on the Ganges, in a district then covered with forests and thickets, amid the remains of which the wild elephants roam to this day. Continuing to advance, with slender hope of overtaking his Scottish antagonist, who was already reported to be beyond Patna, Coote, an indefatigable soldier, on the 21st reached Monghyr, a group of villages and market places covering a great extent of ground.

Here our troops, who expected to be received as friends, found the whole native garrison—who occupied the strong fortress on a peninsula, which is also a precipitous rock—standing to their guns with port-fires lit, so they had to make a détour and avoid the place, which was long famous as a source of contention between the ancient kings of

Behar and Bengal, and which, in 1580, had been the headquarters of Todermall, the general of the great Ackbar.

On the 23rd, Coote was at Burhai, where his European troops, worn out and harassed, broke into open mutiny. To shame them, he ordered them all into the boats, and, at head of the sepoy alone, pushed on to Behar, the boats being towed by natives. On the 1st of August, Coote reached a small town at the confluence of the Sona with the Ganges. Three days were spent in crossing the stream, and when Coote reached Chupra, a long narrow town in a marshy district by the Ganges, he found that the ubiquitous Law had reached Benares, and was 140 miles off!

Further pursuit was hopeless. He was now on the frontier of Oude with a small force, utterly exhausted, and by the sinking of several boats, almost destitute of the material of war. If he failed to overtake Law, he succeeded, however, in striking terror into Ramnarrain and other native princes, and compelled them by such oaths as they held sacred—on the Koran, the waters of the Ganges, and so forth—to be true and obedient to the puppet of the Company, the new nabob, Meer Jaffier.

Coote's detachment on returning, was quartered at Cossimbazar; the rest of the victors of Plassey were sent down the river, and cantoned at Chandernagore, then considered a more healthy place than Calcutta, where Clive was received with every acclamation and honour.

While these stirring events had been occurring in Bengal, our people had been idle in Coromandel, and endeavoured to preserve a truce with the French in Pondicherry. Though weakened by absence of the troops and ships they had sent to act upon the Ganges, the presidency of Madras dispatched Captain Caillaud to make an attempt upon Madura, a town on the right bank of the Vighy. Its fortifications were then very extensive though now much dilapidated; but its narrow, dirty, and irregular streets are still surrounded by a ditch and wall. Of old, it was chiefly celebrated for its temple dedicated to the divinity Killayadah. The captain proceeded against this place from Trichinopoly, while sending a detachment against Vellore, a town 100 miles westward of Madras. On reaching Madura, though greatly distressed by want of money to pay his men, he made an unsuccessful assault, and ere he could repeat it, had to fall back on Trichinopoly, where the French were beginning to show themselves.

Abandoning tents, baggage, and artillery, he hurried back to defend Trichinopoly, which he had left garrisoned by only 165 Europeans, 700 sepoy,

and 1,000 other natives, furnished chiefly by Mohatamed Ali, and a Hindoo chief of Tanjore. Within the walls were no less than 500 French prisoners, and these had found means to communicate with their countrymen outside. Before Caillaud received the letter which desired his return, the latter had commenced operations with 1,000 European infantry, 150 European horse, and 3,000 sepoys, supported by guns, the whole being led by M. d'Auteuil, who threw shot and shell into the town for four days, and summoned it to surrender; but the officer in command was resolved to defend it to the last.

Ere M. d'Auteuil could attempt to take the place by storm, Caillaud, with splendid rapidity and skill, though so exhausted by the fatigues he had undergone that he could neither stand nor walk, marched his whole force *between* the besiegers and Trichinopoly, which they entered under a salute of twenty-one guns. This turn of affairs so startled and disgusted M. d'Auteuil, that he withdrew finally to Pondicherry, and in the Carnatic the war now languished till the French suddenly captured the great British factory at Vizagapatam.

In the month of September, there suddenly appeared off Fort St. David, a squadron of twelve French ships, commanded by an officer of great reputation, M. Bouvet. He had on board the old

Regiment of Lorraine, 30th of the line. They were 1,000 strong, with fifty artillerymen, and sixty volunteers, the whole under Major-General the Marquis de Soupires. They passed on to Pondicherry, and landed there, and the British commanders became much perplexed as to what the object of this expedition was.

Bouvet, as soon as he was rid of the troops, fearing that our admiral would bring against him a heavier force than his own, quitted the coast, but in such haste, that he took away with him most of the heavy artillery, and all the ammunition he had brought.

"Crowding all his canvas, he bore away for the Mauritius—flying from Admiral Watson, who had been nearly a month in his winding-sheet, and whose fleet, under the command of Rear-Admiral Pococke, was still in the Hooghley."

By a new expedition from Trichinopoly, about the time of Bouvet's departure, Captain Caillaud took Madura; 170,000 rupees was the sum paid by him to the chief of that place for its surrender, and its possession became of the greatest importance to the British now, on the Coromandel coast. But a stronger expedition than France had yet sent out, and under an officer second only to Clive in energy, though not quite in military talent, was coming to the shores of Hindostan.

CHAPTER XII.

COUNT DE LALLY.—HIS "INSTRUCTIONS."—SEA BATTLE.—SURRENDER OF FORT ST. DAVID.—COUNT D'ACHÉ'S INSTRUCTIONS.—TANJORE ATTACKED.

As soon as the war had fairly commenced in Europe, the ministry of Louis XV. prepared a formidable expedition to the East, and the arrival of it was daily looked forward to at Pondicherry. It was not, however, until the 28th April, 1758, that a squadron of twelve ships reached the coast. This squadron was commanded by Count d'Aché, and had on board two regiments of infantry 1,100 strong, a corps of artillery, and a great many officers of the highest distinction, the whole under the command of Count de Lally, an officer who had been since his boyhood in the service of France, and had fought at Fontenoy, where he had taken several English officers prisoners with his own hand. A very accurate account of this leader, whose name was soon to become so famous in the East, is to be found among the papers of Baron Grant, Governor of the Mauritius, privately printed in 1801.

"The Count de Lally," says the baron, "was the son of a captain in the Regiment of Dillon (in the Irish Brigade) who passed into France after the capitulation of Limerick, and a French lady of distinction. Soon after his birth, which was in 1697, he was entered, as was the custom in the French army, a private soldier in his company. He made a considerable progress in those sciences which formed a principal part of the education of the French nobility. Being the son of an officer of distinguished merit, it was natural for him to make military acquaintances; and being, by his mother's side, allied to some of the first families of France, he had more favourable opportunities than the generality of his companions, to form connections of the first rank. These advantages, added to a fine person, advanced young Lally, at the age of nineteen years, to a company in the Irish Brigade."

At the age of twenty-five, the young soldier of fortune was sent by the court of France to negotiate affairs in Russia, where his handsome face, address, and manner won him the favour of the czarina, and soon after his return he was promoted to the colonelcy of a regiment in the brigade.

In 1745, when Prince Charles Edward landed in Scotland, Colonel Lally came to England on pretence of looking after some Irish property, but in reality to serve the Jacobite cause. His presence was discovered by the Duke of Cumberland, who ordered his arrest; but by the interposition of one in power—said to have been the Prince of Wales—he was preserved from a prison, and permitted to return to France; and from that time, till the appointment of Lally to the rank of lieutenant-general in the East, his life offers little that merits attention.

At this time, so high did he stand with the court of Versailles, that he received the most extraordinary powers over all the French possessions and establishments in India; and it was confidently anticipated, that when his troops were added to those of the Marquis de Soupires, the French supremacy in the Carnatic would be completely restored.

Lally had with him a chest containing two millions of livres, when he landed at Pondicherry on the 28th April, and the following were the "instructions" issued to him by the French East India Company:—

"The Sieur de Lally is authorised to destroy the fortifications of all maritime settlements which may be taken from the English; it may, however, be proper to except Vizagapatam, in consequence of its being so nearly situated to Bimlipatam (a Dutch factory), which in that case would be enriched by the ruin of Vizagapatam, but, as to that, as well as the demolishing of *all places whatsoever*, the Sieur de Lally is to consult the governor and superior council of Pondicherry, and to have their opinion in writing; but, notwithstanding, he is to destroy such places as he shall think proper, unless strong and sufficient arguments are made use of to the contrary, such, for example, as the Company's being apprehensive for some of their settlements, and that it would then be thought prudent and necessary to reserve the power of exchange in case any of them should be lost.

"Nevertheless, if the Sieur de Lally should think it too hazardous to keep a place, or that he thought he could not do it without too much dividing or weakening his army, His Majesty then leaves it in his power to act as he may think proper for the good of the service.

"The Sieur de Lally is to allow of no English settlement being ransomed; as we may well remember, that after the taking of Madras, last war, the English Company in their Council of the 14th July, 1747, determined that all ransoms made in India should be annulled. In regard to the British troops, the officers and writers belonging to the Company, and to the inhabitants of that nation, the Sieur de Lally is to permit *none of them* to remain on the coast of Coromandel; he may, if he pleases, permit the inhabitants to go to England, and order them to be conducted in armed vessels to the island of St. Helena. But as to the officers and writers belonging to the East India Company, as well as soldiers and sailors, he is to order them to be conducted, as soon as possible, to the island of Bourbon, to work for the inhabitants of that place, according to mutual agreement; though the sending of them to the French islands is to be avoided as much as possible, to prevent them becoming acquainted with the coast, as well as the interior part of the islands.

"If the exchange of prisoners should be by chance settled at home, between the two nations, of which proper notice will be given to the Sieur de Lally, and that the islands of France and Bourbon should have more prisoners than it would be convenient to provide for; in that case it will be permitted to send a certain number to England, in a vessel armed for that purpose.

"No British officers, soldiers, &c., are to be permitted to remain in a place after it is taken; neither are they to be suffered to retire to any other part of the settlements. The Sieur de Lally is not in the least to deviate from the above instructions, unless there should be a capitulation which stipulates the contrary; in which case the Sieur de Lally is faithfully and honestly to adhere to the capitulation.

"The whole of what has before been said, concerns only the natives of Britain; but as they have in their settlements merchants from all nations, such as Moors, Armenians, Jews, Pâtaners, &c., the Sieur de Lally is ordered to treat them with humanity, and to endeavour, by fair means, to engage them to retire to Pondicherry, or any other of the Company's acquisitions, assuring them at the same time that they will be protected, and that the same liberty and privileges which they possessed before among the English will be granted them.

"Among the regiments furnished to complete the Regiments of Lorraine and Berry (71st of the French line) there are 300 men from Fitcher's recruits, lately raised, and, as it is feared there will be considerable desertions among these new

recruits, the *Sieur de Lally* may, if he pleases, leave them on the Isle of France, where they will be safe from desertion, and replace them from the troops of the island."

Such were the instructions given to the count, and their whole tenor fully displays the high and perfect confidence of conquest entertained by the ministry and East India Company of France. But Lally, says Nolan, was not destined to be so fortunate as when at Fontenoy, and he writes of him with perhaps too great severity when he adds, that "England, whom in his remorseless bigotry he hated, was destined to triumph over him on a distant field, and cause the sun of his glory to set soon and for ever. Lally was not so skilful as he was brave, although he possessed many of the finest intellectual qualities of a good soldier. He was rash, vehement, impatient, and tyrannical; he chafed at obstacles which might have been patiently surmounted had he preserved his temper. A furious religious animosity towards the English, as the chief Protestant nation, blinded his judgment as to present means and probable results, and threw him into acts of precipitancy, from which even his great valour and resources in danger could not extricate him."

His orders had reference, in the first place, to the immediate reduction of Fort St. David, and great was his indignation when he found that no preparations had been made for the transport of provisions, stores, or cannon. In this state of affairs, prudence would have suggested some delay; but his resolution was formed, and obstacles only made him more obstinate to proceed. On the very evening of his arrival in Pondicherry Roads, he learned that the Count d'Estaing, with 2,000 Europeans and sepoy, was on the march for Fort St. David already, without even ascertaining the correct route, or bringing with him provisions. The result was, the troops lost their way, and arrived in the morning worn out by fatigue and hunger; and next day, when other troops were dispatched, with cannon, stores, and baggage, still greater errors occurred, for Lally, in utter violation of the religious prejudices of the natives with regard to caste and rank, compelled them, without distinction, to supply the place of bullocks, and to become hewers of wood and drawers of water.

• He was thus regarded by them with such abhorrence that they deserted from him on every available occasion; and while he was erring thus in policy, the fate of his whole armament was trembling in the balance.

On the appearance of D'Aché's squadron off

Fort St. David, two of our frigates there, the only ships on the station, the *Triton* and *Bridge-water*, commanded respectively by Captains Townly and Smith, were run on shore, and, to save them from the enemy, were burned by their crews, who retired, with their arms, into the fort.

On the 24th of March, Admiral Pococke had been joined by a reinforcement from home under Commodore Stevens. On the 17th of April he was cruising to windward of Fort St. David in order to intercept D'Aché, and on the 29th he got sight of the enemy at anchor in the roads, and our two frigates, still smoking where they had been beached the night before. Immediately on our fleet coming in sight, that of France weighed and put to sea, on which Pococke threw out the welcome signal for a "general chase;" but, soon after, perceiving that the Count d'Aché formed line with a disposition to engage, he signalled to draw into line of battle ahead.

The captains of the *Cumberland* (fifty-six guns), *Newcastle* (fifty guns), and *Weymouth* (sixty guns), mistook the signal, and delayed the admiral from coming to close quarters till four in the afternoon, when the battle began.

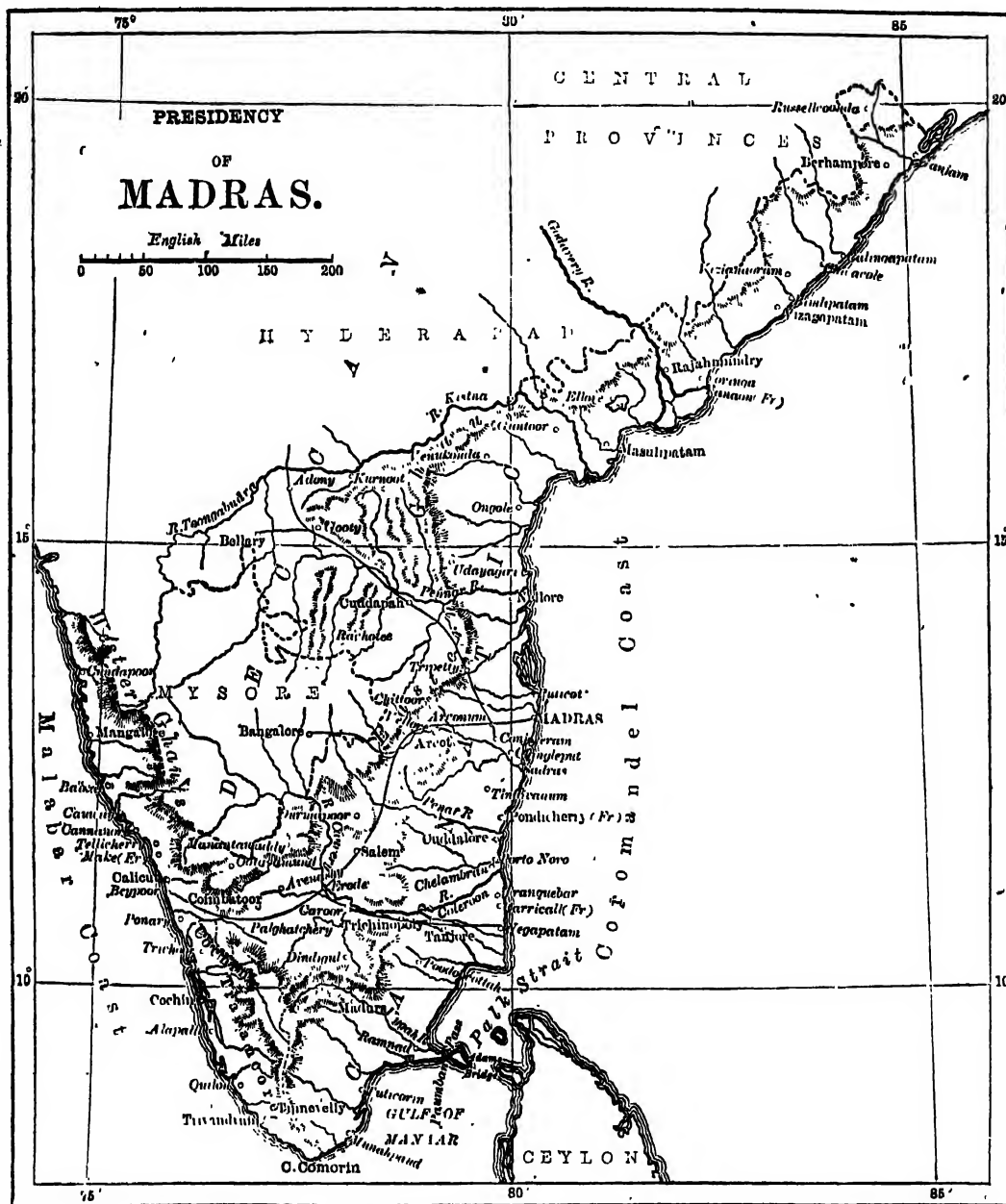
Our fleet consisted of eight sail, four of them being of the line, armed with 424 pieces of cannon; that of the enemy consisted of nine sail, four of which were of the line, armed with 492 pieces of cannon. The conflict was maintained with great spirit until after dark, when M. d'Aché, on being joined by the *Comte de Provence* (seventy-four guns), Captain de la Chaire, and a frigate from Pondicherry, and finding his ships much shattered and disabled, hauled his wind and bore away. At night he came to anchor off Alamparva, where the *Bien Aimée* (fifty-eight guns) was totally lost. As was frequently the case in battles with the French, our fleet was too crippled aloft to follow, so the admiral contented himself with keeping the weather-gauge of them. Our total losses in this indecisive action were 118 killed and wounded; those of the enemy were 562, so crowded were their ships with men.

And now the investment of Fort St. David was pressed with vigour. Its garrison consisted of 619 Europeans, of whom only 286 were effectives; 250 scamen from the two frigates, and 1,600 sepoy, topasses, and lascars. The officer commanding—after the siege operations were fairly commenced by the erection of a breaching battery—indulged in a reckless waste of ammunition, by permitting his garrison, according to Orme, to blaze away day and night "on everything they heard, saw, or suspected." In this useless process they disabled twenty of their own guns.

By the 30th May, the parallels were advanced to within 200 yards of the glacis, and an incessant fire was poured in from thirty-four guns and mortars. It was now evident to Major Polier, the officer

been 2,500 Europeans, exclusive of officers, and the same number of sepoys.

Pococke saw the French fleet lying in Pondicherry Roads, safe under the batteries; but Count

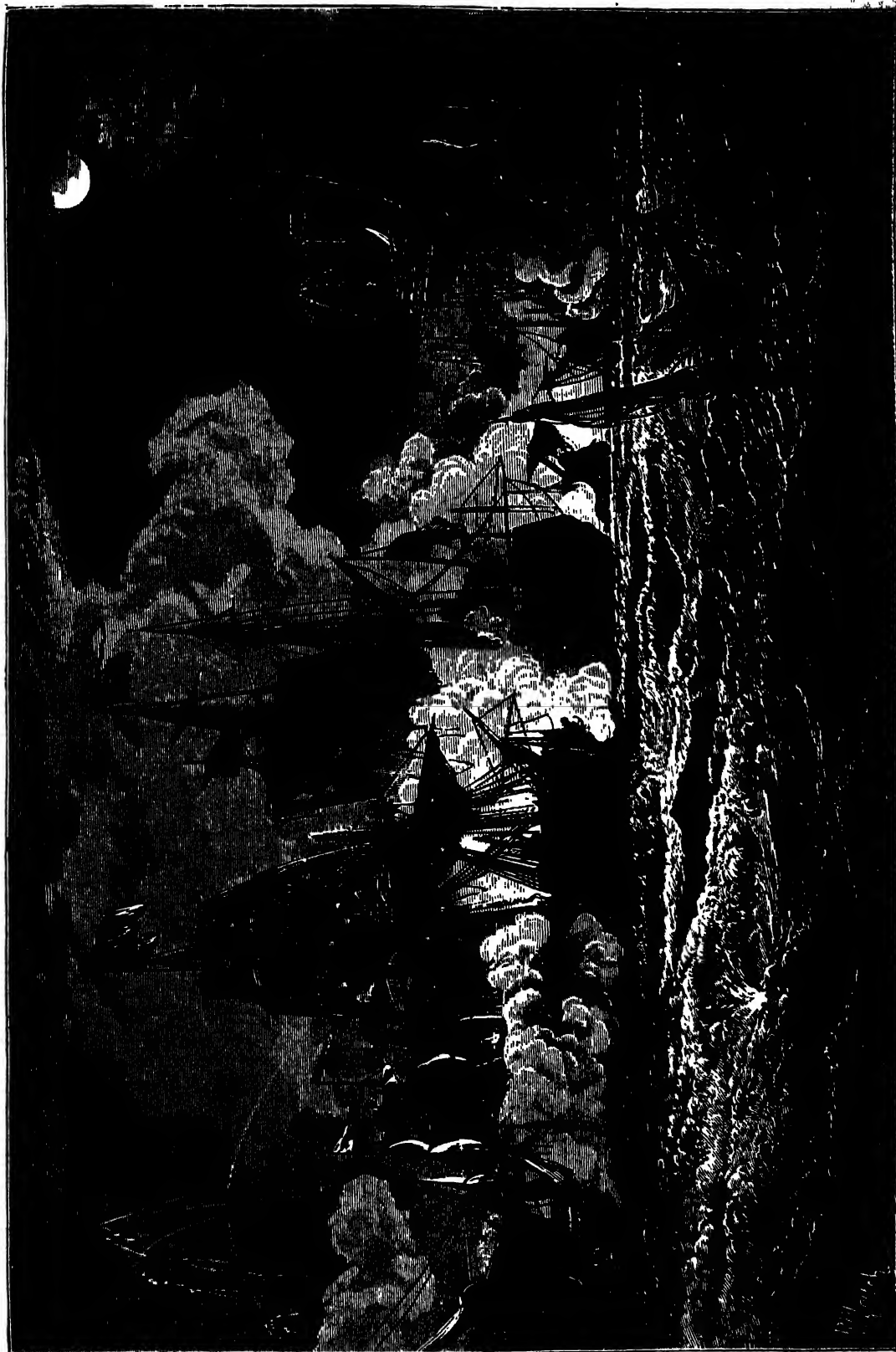


MAP OF THE PRESIDENCY OF MADRAS.

commanding, that if not relieved, the place must soon have to be surrendered. He was not without hope of relief, as he knew that Pococke was off the coast, and he knew that officer would not permit Fort St. David to fall, if he could help it.

Orme states Lally's force before the place to have

d'Aché's courage had been cooled by the recent encounter, and he only quitted the protection of the shore on getting from Lally a reinforcement of 400 Europeans, and as many sepoys, for small-arm service. On this he steered at once for Fort St. David, while Pococke was unable to pursue. One of his ships, the *Cumberland* (fifty-six), Captain



NAVAL ACTION BETWEEN THE BRITISH AND THE FRENCH IN PONDICHERRY ROADS.

Martin, sailed so slowly as to be a drag upon the others; hence the squadron got lee-way, lost ground, and came to anchor at Alamparva.

This decided the fate of Fort St. David. Seeing the futility of further resistance, on the 2nd June, Major Polier replaced the Union Jack by a white flag of truce. In the evening a company of French grenadiers was admitted into the fort; with drums beating and colours flying, the garrison marched to the foot of the glacis, and surrendered themselves prisoners of war to the French, who were drawn up in line to receive them, and they were transmitted with all speed to Pondicherry, to await exchange with an equal number of French, while Lally, who rejected the proposal that Fort St. David should not be demolished, immediately ordered the fortifications—in obedience to instructions from France—to be razed to the ground.*

The fall of Devi-Cottah followed. That little place was held by only thirty British soldiers, and 600 sepoys, who retired to Trichinopoly on hearing that D'Estaing was dispatched against them with a considerable force, while Lally marched back to Pondicherry, and a *Te Deum* was sung for his successes.

The instructions given in France to the Count d'Aché supplemented those given to the Count de Lally.

In the fourth article of these, it was ordered "that should the operations on the Bengal river be attended with success, the conquered places may either be kept, or the fortifications, civil buildings, and warehouses utterly destroyed. Should the latter plan be resolved on, not a factory ought to remain, nor an English inhabitant (even those born in the country) suffered to reside in the province. This resolution, they observe, is the most effectual means to establish their [the French] reputation on the Ganges. But they seem to recommend only the destruction of the new fort, and the preservation of old Calcutta, on condition of a ransom, and the observance of a strict neutrality in Bengal for the future.

"This the French seem most desirous of, but insist on ready money for the ransom, and hostages for the payment of agreements, since the English have publicly declared they will abide by no treaty of ransom. His Most Christian Majesty, in a letter of the 25th January, 1757, to Count d'Aché, instructs him *not to leave an Englishman* in any place that shall be taken, but to send in cartel ships to St. Helena, or suffer to pass to England all free merchants and inhabitants not in the Company's service; but *to keep prisoners* all civil

servants, officers, and soldiers, and not set any at liberty, unless exchanged against those of equal rank. As to the prisoners, they are all to be sent to the island of Bourbon, and there kept in deposit, till it may be thought proper to send them to France."*

The weakness of Polier's defence at Fort St. David had inspired Lally with a contemptuous opinion of British troops, and this somewhat strengthened his recollections of their rout before the Irish bayonets at Fontenoy, and led him to anticipate easy and brilliant conquests over them in India; and now it chanced that there was discovered about this time, in the nearly empty treasury of Pondicherry, a bond for 5,600,000 rupees, which had been given by the Rajah of Tanjore to Chunda Sahib, and by the latter to the French, in satisfaction for various claims they had upon him. Lally wanted money sorely, and here was a means of pressure whereby to obtain it.

"The French had found in Fort St. David a prisoner of greater importance than they expected," says Orme; "his name was Gatica, uncle to the deposed King of Tanjore, whose pretensions the English asserted in 1749, when they entered that country and took Devi-Cottah. The king then and now reigning, when he ceded that place to them in proprietary; stipulated by a secret article that they should prevent this pretender from giving any molestation in future, to insure which it was necessary to secure his person; . . . and Gatica was now produced at Pondicherry with much ostentation and ceremony, in order to excite the apprehensions of the king that the pretender himself would appear and accompany the French army."

Taking with him this personage, who had pretensions to the throne of Tanjore, Lally at the head of his horse and foot, began the long march towards that kingdom, leaving 600 Irishmen of his own regiment and 200 sepoys, as a corps of observation, between Pondicherry and Alamparva. His short Indian experiences had as yet taught Lally nothing. On this suddenly conceived expedition, his troops were without transport for stores, were destitute consequently of food, and subjected to the greatest privations, in traversing a country full of local difficulties.

Before reaching Carical, to which the baggage and heavy guns had been sent by sea, the troops crossed no less than sixteen rivers, many of which they had to ford girdle-deep, after wading to them through extensive flats of mud or soft sand. He next proceeded to Nagpore (everywhere the wildest

* Orme.

* Baron Grant.

excitement being produced by the insults offered by the French to women and Brahmins), where he hoped to levy a contribution; but, being warned in time, the native merchants, having carried off all their money and jewels, offered so little for the redemption of their houses, that Lally let his hussars loose in the place, which was given up to pillage.

A somewhat peremptory application procured him from the Dutch at Negapatam 20,000 pounds of powder; and, under the same influence, from the little Danish settlement on the coast, 10,000 pounds more, with six field-pieces.

In his line of march, he found the great Pagoda of Kivalore, which stands five miles westward of Negapatam. Halting there, he ransacked the houses of the Brahmins, and, by dragging the tanks, got possession of a number of hideous and useless idols, which, instead of being gold, were base metal, hence he incurred the most horrible odium, without the smallest profit. At the next pagoda he passed, Lally acted still more rashly; for, on the accusation of being spies, he blew six Brahmin priests from the mouths of his guns.

And now Tanjore was before him. The king had little confidence in the army he had mustered to oppose the invader; and the British, who should have been his principal supporters, only tantalised him, by sending 500 sepoy, under Captain (afterwards Colonel) Caillaud, from Trichinopoly, together with ten European gunners and 300 peons. Unable to cope with Lally in the open field, the king in his desperation had recourse to diplomacy, and opened negotiations which had no issue, though they procured a respite.

Lally sent into the city a Jesuit father, named Esteban, and a French captain, who demanded payment of the old bond in full. The king offered 300,000 rupees. Lally then said he would take £1,000,000 in money, with 600 bullocks and 10,000 pounds of gunpowder, but Monajee, who was still the king's general, scouted the proposals, and was quite disposed to fight. Lally's guns were now opened on the gilded roofs of the temples and tall pagodas that towered above the walls of Tanjore, while his horse swept the country and sent drove after drove of oxen to Carical and Pondicherry. The king now made overtures to gain time, and even sent 50,000 rupees to Lally as an earnest of his good intentions; but the latter, on hearing of Caillaud's approach, broke off all negotiations, and pocketing the rupees, swore that he would send the king and all his family slaves to the Mauritius.

By the 2nd of August two breaching batteries

were opened within 400 yards of the south wall, but so slight was their effect, that a five days' cannonade made only a six-foot breach, and by that time only 150 rounds remained in the magazine. The country people, now thoroughly infuriated, everywhere destroyed his stragglers, and great bodies of Tanjore cavalry threw themselves between Lally and those places from whence he could alone procure supplies.

Rumours then came of a naval engagement in which the squadron under Count d'Aché had been discomfited by the fleet of Admiral Pococke. Somewhat disheartened now, Lally summoned a council of war, at which ten of his officers urged a retreat, and two an immediate assault and storm at the point of the bayonet.

Under an escort of 150 Europeans, he now sent all his sick and wounded to the rear, and in the course of that night, Caillaud's sepoy entered the city, and joined the Tanjoreans in a sortie made by dawn next day on the French camp, while the savage coolies from the hills, and hordes of armed country people assailed the rear. Lally's Irish soldiers fought with all the inherent valour of their race, and he, in the conflict, had more than one hair-breadth escape.

In one instance he was nearly blown up by the explosion of a limber; in another, he was so nearly cut down and sabred, that he was trampled under the hoofs of the king's cavalry. Then three of his guns were taken, and many of his soldiers perished in the first onslaught; but when the French—we should rather say Irish, as being the most numerous—recovered their presence of mind, they began their retreat in good order, and retook the guns after nightfall; but they had previously spiked their heavy ordnance, thrown the shot into wells, and burned most of their baggage.

Galled on every hand by the armed peasantry and swarms of Tanjore horse, half famished, and perishing with thirst, the unfortunate soldiers of Lally continued a most disastrous retreat until they reached Trivitore, and ultimately Carical, on the Coromandel coast, where the first and most unwelcome sight that greeted them was the British fleet under Admiral Pococke, riding at anchor near the mouth of the Cauvery.

In the two naval encounters that had taken place, Pococke's force had been inferior, yet D'Aché, after his recent experiences, had no desire even to wait for reinforcements which might have given him superiority in a third encounter. Hearing that he was about to leave the coast, Lally rode with all speed to Pondicherry, summoned a council on the 28th August, with a view of stopping the

count, but the latter declared that his ships required great refitting, that sickness and battle had reduced his crews, and, in defiance of all Lally's wishes, he

weighed, and, under a press of sail, bore away for the Mauritius.

This was on the 2nd September, 1758.

CHAPTER XIII.

PROGRESS OF THE BRITISH AND FRENCH CAMPAIGN IN INDIA.—SIEGE OF MADRAS AND CAPTURE OF CONJEVERAM.

To procure the sinews of war, the Count de Lally now projected the reduction of Madras and the invasion of Arcot, which was held only by a few of our sepoys and the cavalry of Mohammed Ali. To make assurance doubly sure, by means of a son of the late Chunda Sahib, he made a secret bargain with the commander of these cavalry to deliver up the place for 13,000 rupees, and certain military employment under the King of France; and hoping now to relieve the pressure of those pecuniary wants which the disastrous expedition to Tanjore had occasioned, he began his march for Arcot.

This expedition he conducted with great energy, dispatch, and success. En route he captured several forts. His Irish soldiers performed prodigies of valour, and Lally himself was always seen sword in hand where danger was greatest; yet military strategists affirm that he failed to cut off our supplies in Madras, which should have been part of his scheme. Be this as it may, the 4th of October, 1758, saw Lally, as Mill has it, "on the terms of a pretended capitulation, amid the thunder of cannon, make his entrance into Arcot," the capital of an extensive maritime district, surrounding a large fort.

He entered amid great pomp, and that parade of which he was so fond, and wasted much of that which he could ill spare—gunpowder; but the wealthy bankers and merchants had all departed at his approach, and the poorer people concealed all their most valuable possessions. "His late acquisitions had not hitherto reimbursed the expenses of the field," says Orme, "nor established his credit to borrow; so that his treasury could barely supply the pay of the soldiers, and could not provide the other means of putting his army in motion, and all the government of Pondicherry could immediately furnish was 10,000 rupees."

The chief error of Lally's campaign was his omitting to take—as he might have done by a

coup de main—the important British fort at Chingleput or Singhalapetta, situated in a pleasant valley on a small tributary of the Palar. As this stronghold covered the conveyance of supplies to Madras, he ought at once to have seized it; but as soon as the British recovered from the temporary panic caused by the rapid progress of Lally, they strengthened the place by every means in their power; and "while the French, or Irish commander, as he may with more strict propriety be called, spread like a fiery meteor over the country," there came from Britain a naval reinforcement, having on board the old 79th Regiment, 850 strong, under Colonel Sir William Draper, the same officer who is mentioned by "Junius." At the same time the wise and gallant Caillaud, with his Europeans, was recalled from Trichinopoly, and thus Chingleput was powerfully strengthened.

While declaring that he had never lost sight of that place, but fully comprised its reduction among his general plans, Lally wrote from Arcot to Pondicherry for money to pay the troops, and to find transport for conveying them against it; but as the council had gone to seed, he was compelled to put his men in cantonments, and proceed to Pondicherry in person.

Lally's ambitious spirit had led him to desire that he should be the sole hero for France in India; thus, the instant he had reduced Fort St. David, he recalled from the Deccan M. de Bussy, of whose exploits he openly spoke in slighting terms, though he gave him the *Cordon Rouge* by order of the king. "Bussy," says a writer, "had hitherto been left by the French court with the mere rank of lieutenant-colonel, so that not only Lally and Soupires, but also six or seven other officers recently arrived from France, ignorant of India and its concerns, and in other essentials his inferiors, were above him in rank, and he was liable to be put under the orders of any one of them."

But these French officers were not animated by the rivalry of the Count de Lally.

"The colonels, sensible of the advantages that might be derived from his abilities," says Orme, "and his experience and reputation in the country, and how much these opportunities would be precluded by the present inferiority of his rank, signed a declaration requesting, on these considerations, that he might be appointed a brigadier-general, in supercession to themselves, which would place him next in command to M. de Soupires. The public zeal which dictated this request, conferred as much honour on those who made it, as their testimony on M. de Bussy."

The names of the officers who signed this chivalrous and remarkable paper were among the noblest in France, and included those of the Count d'Estaing, De la Faire, Breteuil, Verdière, and Crillon. Lally somewhat resentfully and rashly attributed this interest in Bussy to the wealth of that officer, who was too much of a Frenchman not to retort with scorn; and so this ill-matched pair were to co-operate in the reduction of Madras, to which lack of money was the chief obstacle. An officer of reputed ability, M. Morasin, whom Lally had appointed governor of Masulipatam, now joined them in conference. Lally, who believed that Bussy had realised a mighty fortune in Golconda, now desired him and Morasin to raise funds on their personal credit, which his own conduct had rendered impossible.

Bussy urged that "the consolidation of conquest, and the exercise of French power at the court of the Deccan, was much more important than the influence of the British at the inferior and subsidiary court of the Carnatic." Reasons the most convincing were offered in vain; Lally had but one object in life—the removal of the English, whom he detested with hereditary hate, from all India, and his views were most popular with his Irish soldiers.

In a letter to Bussy, written after the capture of Fort St. David, he wrote thus:—"It is the whole of British India which it now remains for us to attack. I do not conceal from you that, having (once?) taken Madras, it is my resolution to repair immediately, by land or by sea, to the banks of the Ganges, where your talents and experience will be of the greatest importance to me."

The council at Pondicherry declared themselves unable to support the army. The military men, at the instant capture of Madras, while Lally wanted of means to attempt it. Then undoubtedly one of the most

gallant officers in the French army, exclaimed at the council of war,—

"Better to die under the walls of Madras, than of hunger in Pondicherry!"

Thus, as there were but two prospects—starvation or fighting, it was resolved to adopt the latter, as Lally hoped to pillage the Black Town, and coop up the British in Fort St. George. Prior to marching, there are two accounts of how some money was procured. Orme says, "The arrival of a ship at Pondicherry on the 18th from Mauritius, which brought treasure, together with 100,000 rupees, brought by M. Morasin from Tripetta, enabled Lally to put the French troops in motion again." Elsewhere we are told that he advanced his own money, 60,000 rupees, and prevailed upon various Frenchmen in Pondicherry to advance more, which barely exceeded half of his own contributions.

He was thus enabled to equip a little force of 7,000 men, of whom 2,700 were Irish and French, to proceed against Madras. He was ready to march in the first week of November, but the weather detained him longer, and his resources were being so rapidly consumed, that he had barely a week's subsistence left when he began, as Smollett states, to cross the plain of Choultry, on the 12th December, in three divisions, intent on fulfilling the boast he had made on taking Fort St. David, "that he would yet dine in Madras sup in Calcutta."

Our people in Madras had made a good use of their time in preparing for his reception. A Pococke, who had stood off to sea to avoid the monsoon, sent 100 marines to join the force which was commanded by Colonel Clive's old superior, who had in the service a large force of native cavalry, under a brave and active partisan officer, who patrolled and scoured the country, kept open the road to Trichinopoly and rendered insecure every avenue by which the French could hope for supplies or reinforcement.

The total force under Lawrence within the set amounted to 1,758 Europeans, 2,220 sepoy, 200 of Mohammed Ali's cavalry—these French scarcely worth their rations."

"On the 12th of December," says company's *Gazette*, "the French army moved, notwithstanding and Mamalou towards Madras; very one makes them for about an hour as they of the slaughter Plain, and killed forty without you will be still side, as the French had little that were it not for served. They marched in sustained—and directly towards our people, to speak more and the other down St. Thomas."

On that day the output

driven in, as Lally, with M. de Crillon at the head of his regiment, pressed upon them with impetuosity, and they retired into the fort. All day on the 13th the count reconnoitred the place, and on the 14th he entered the Black Town, which was open and defenceless; and then a scene of reckless pillage began, while his Irish soldiers became intoxicated. On this being known in the fort, Colonel Draper and Major Brereton, at the head of 600 men, with two field-pieces, rushed out and made a sortie upon them.

Unfortunately, the drummer-boys struck up "the Grenadiers' March" too soon. This gave a warning to the French, and the Regiment of Lorraine, more orderly than its Irish comrades, got under arms; yet they were somewhat taken by surprise, and a furious struggle ensued. They took post at a point where the narrow streets crossed each other at right angles. Had the Marquis de Bussy, who was near, made one of his usual bold and decisive movements, such as he was wont to do when acting on his own responsibility, he might have taken our troops in the rear, and cut them off to a man. But he remained inactive, and afterwards pled that he had no orders to move, and was without cannon. It has been suggested that the want of cordiality between him and Lally occasioned this coolness; but it may be that the feeling extended to Bussy's comrades; for at Aughrim, Lisburne, and other fields where they fought side by side, the French evinced considerable jealousy of valour, daring Irish comrades. There is something strange in the account of this affair, as given by the *Gazette*, which says: "Colonel Draper lies in Ma . . . a push as would astonish all who do . . . him; and if he had been briskly followed by his two platoons of grenadiers, he would have brought in eleven officers and fifty men; but they did not do justice to their leader, who received of a whole force of two platoons to himself. He received several balls through his coat, but was not killed. So had Captain Beaver."

of which the head of a few Irish, Lally came on to which the Regiment of Lorraine, and Draper's wealthy band, given into the fort, with the loss of his his approach, and 200 men killed, wounded, and their most valuable, and the slain were Captains Billingtons had not . . . On the side of the enemy, the field," says O'Connell's own account, there were seven to borrow; so that ten killed and wounded; and the the pay of the soldiers as taken prisoner. Here fell other means of putting Polier, who, unable to bear the government of Pondicherry, which had been cast upon furnish was 10,000 rupees. The defence of St. David, threw The chief error of that he was a man of courage. omitting to take—as

The close contest was maintained for a time with terrible rancour. From the streets, it had extended into the interior of some of the houses. In one, about twenty British soldiers were found lying dead, covered with bayonet wounds, with their French or Irish antagonists beside them in the same condition.

An Armenian merchant, residing in the Black Town, gave Lally 80,000 livres to save his house from pillage; a Hindoo partisan gave him 12,000 more, and on procuring certain provisions and stores with this money, he began to throw up his batteries. His heavy artillery were still at sea, and his only thirteen-inch mortar was captured, *en route*, by some of our sepoys.

On the 6th of January, 1759, he opened against Madras with his field-pieces, and kept up a continual shower of shot and shell till the 26th, by which time twenty-nine cannon and mortars were disabled on the works, though the latter remained uninjured. By the accounts given by deserters, their loss in officers and men in the advanced batteries was very severe, and after they were compelled to quit them, their fire gradually decreased to six pieces of cannon. However, they pushed their sap along the seaside, so far as to embrace the north-east angle of the covered way, from whence their musketry compelled the besieged to retire, and in this situation matters remained for several days, till Lally sprung a mine; but so injudiciously that he could make no use of it.*

Dissensions were daily increasing in his camp and councils, and when he had been two months and four days before Madras, his condition became almost desperate, when, on the 16th February, Admiral Pococke returned to the coast, with two frigates, having on board 600 more men of Colonel Draper's regiment. These were nearly all landed at once from the *Revenge* and H.M.S. *Queenborough*, commanded by Captain (afterwards the unfortunate Admiral) Kempenfeldt. By this time, all Lally's money, including 1,000,000 livres from Pondicherry, and all his provisions, were utterly exhausted. Three weeks before, his last bomb had been exploded, and nearly all his gunpowder expended; and, pouring out invectives, and blaming every one but himself, he raised the siege, and on the night of the 17th, silently and expeditiously, after abandoning his stores, began his retreat towards Arcot.

In making this movement, "he was greatly distressed by the want of money and provisions; the natives, knowing his habits, removed or concealed as much of their rice and cattle as was possible; and occasionally he had to feel in vain

* *Gazette Extraordinary.*

and rear, and in straggling or foraging parties, the sharp execution of the flying columns of native horse, and the deadly animosity of the coolies, and Colliers, who glided like ghosts round his camp, and stabbed in the dark."

The bitter chagrin and mortification of Lally are well depicted in the following letter, written to M. de Leyrit (and intercepted) some days before the night on which he left his camp at Madras:—

the company's officers, I would break him like glass, as well as some others of them.

"I reckon we shall, on our return to Pondicherry, endeavour to learn some other trade, for this of war requires too much patience.

"Of 1,700 sepoy which attended our army, I reckon nearly 800 are employed on the road to Pondicherry, laden with sugar, pepper, and other goods, and as for the coolies, they are all employed



VIEW OF MADRAS FROM THE SEA.

"A good blow might be struck here: there is a ship of twenty guns in the roads, laden with all the riches of Madras, which, it is said, will remain there until the 20th. The *Expedition* is just arrived; but M. Gerlin is not a man to attack her, as she has made him run away once before. The *Bristol*, on the other hand, did but just make her appearance before St. Thomas, and on the vague report of thirteen ships coming from Porto Novo, she took fright, and after landing the provisions with which she was laden, she would not stay long enough to take on board twelve of her own guns which she had lent us for the siege!

"If I were the judge of the point of honour of

for the same purpose, from the first day we came here.

"I am taking my measures from this day to set fire to the Black Town, and blow up the powder-mills. You will never imagine that fifty French deserters and 100 Swiss, are actually stopping the progress of 2,000 men of the king's and company's troops, which are still here existing, notwithstanding the exaggerated accounts, that every one makes here according to his own fancy, of the slaughter that has been made of them; and you will be still more surprised when I tell you, that were it not for the combats and four battles we sustained—and for the batteries which failed, or, to speak more

properly, were improperly made—we should not have lost fifty men, from the commencement of the siege to this day. I have written to M. de Larche, that if he persists in not coming here, let who will raise money on the Polygars for me, I will not do it. And I renounce, as I told you a month ago, meddling directly or indirectly with anything whatever that may have to do with your administration, whether civil or military. For I had rather go and command the Affairs of Madagascar, than remain in this Sodom, which it is impossible but the fire of the English must destroy sooner or later, even though that from heaven should not.

“I have the honour, &c. &c.,

“LALLY.

“P.S.—I think it necessary to apprise you that, as M. de Soupires has refused to take upon him the command of this army, which I have offered him, and which he is empowered to accept, by having received from the court a duplicate of my commission, you must of necessity, together with the council, take it upon you. For my part, I undertake only to bring it back either to Arcotte or Sadroster. Send, therefore, your orders, or come yourself to command it, for I shall quit it on my arrival there.”

So great was the discontent prior to the retreat to Arcot, that it is supposed that but for the strong attachment his Irish soldiers had to his person, the French would have seized him and given the command to Bussy.

The tidings of his misfortunes, many of which were due to his own faults of temper, preceded his arrival at Pondicherry, and were hailed with undisguised satisfaction by French and natives alike, notwithstanding his undoubted talent and bravery as a soldier. The remonstrances sent by Lally to France, at this time, says Baron Grant, evince the horror and distraction of his mind, and the kind of intelligence that prevailed between

him and those he commanded, while the British gained every advantage over him. “

The Madras treasury was almost empty by this time, in consequence of the heavy drains made upon it during the last six months, and as several of the chiefs at Madras and elsewhere were discovering symptoms of dissatisfaction, so far from following Lally's retreat, our troops did not take the field till the 6th of March. The nominal Nabob of the Carnatic, and *protégé* of Britain, Mohammed Ali, had proved a rather costly auxiliary. His two brothers, who had been instigated by the French, and had so often sought French aid, now, in the time of Lally's adversity, betrayed them. One savagely murdered all the French officers in his service, except one. The native princes and chiefs were destitute alike of principle, faith, or honour, of mercy, hospitality, or justice; so, as our officers were anxious to recover complete influence in the province, at the date given, a force consisting of 1,156 Europeans, 1,520 sepoys, and 1,120 Colliers (regularly drilled troops also), were equipped for a campaign under Colonel Lawrence.

He commenced his march for Conjeveram, where Lally had concentrated his forces, and was searching in vain for those unfortunates whom he had entrusted to the treacherous brother of Mohammed Ali, who was anxious now—as the star of France seemed on the wane—to renew his allegiance with the nabob, and his friendship with us; but for twenty-two days the troops remained within sight of each other without firing a shot, or nearly so; when suddenly ours wheeled off to Wandiwash, and began to break ground before the town and fortress.

On the French hastening to defend that place, our troops under Major Brereton evaded them, and by a skilful *détour* hurried back, and took the much more important fortress of Conjeveram.

After this, on the 28th of May, both Colonel Lawrence and the Count de Lally put their troops into cantonments, as the rainy season was at hand.

CHAPTER XIV.

SEA-FIGHT OFF FORT ST. DAVID.—AFFAIR OFF WANDIWASH.—DEFEAT OF CONFLANS BY COLONEL FORDE.—MASULIPATAM STORMED.—SURAT TAKEN.

DURING the occurrence of these events on shore, the fleets were not idle. Admiral Pococke arrived from the western coast of India, and cruised about in search of French ships in April. A little later,

three of the Company's ships reached Madras with 100 recruits, and tidings that the gallant Coote was coming with 1,000 of the king's troops; but, at the same time, it was announced that no treasure

could arrive till 1760, dispiriting tidings which the Council did not permit to transpire beyond their chamber. At the end of July, the first division of the promised troops arrived at Negapatam, where Pococke's squadron lay, and on the 20th of August he bore away for Trincomalee in the island of Ceylon, where he came in sight of the enemy's fleet, which had been reinforced by three new ships from France.

On the 10th of September the weather allowed the ships to operate, and the British squadron having, as usual in those old days of genuine seamanship, the weather-gauge, came down abreast, while the French lay to in line of battle off Fort St. David on the main land.

Admiral Pococke had nine sail all of the line, carrying 638 guns, and 3,025 men; the French admiral, Count d'Aché, had eleven sail of the line and two frigates, carrying 896 guns, and 4,980 men. As our ships came on, the *Elizabeth* (sixty-four guns), Captain Richard Tiddiman, had orders to lead with the starboard, and the *Weymouth* (sixty guns), Captain Sir William Baird, Bart., of Saughton Hall, with the larboard tacks on board; the *Queenborough* (twenty guns), Captain Kirk, to repeat signals. At eleven o'clock Rear-Admiral Stevens, who led in the *Grafton* (seventy guns), began the battle, which was maintained on both sides with undoubted bravery till four in the afternoon, when some of the French ships began to give way, and the British, much crippled aloft, were unable to follow them quickly.

M. d'Aché having received a wound which rendered him insensible, and Captain Gotho being killed, and the Chevalier de Monteul, his second captain on board *Le Zodiaque* (seventy-four guns), having wore the ship to join those which had run to leeward, the rest mistook the manœuvre for flight, and bore away under all the sail they could crowd.

Admiral Pococke pursued them as well as he could till darkness closed on the sea, when, ordering the *Revenge* to keep them in sight, he hove to for the repair of damages. Our losses in this battle were 118 killed and 451 wounded, sixty-eight of whom were mortally injured. Among the former were five officers of various ranks, and among the latter two captains.

Count d'Aché, who had all his topmasts standing, got safely into Pondicherry, which was his real object, when the Council of the French India Company were on the verge of despair. He brought them only 180 soldiers, but he brought them that which they required much more, money to the amount of £16,000, and a quantity of diamonds worth £17,000 more, which had been

taken out of a British East Indiaman some time before.

As soon as Pococke had our fleet in fighting order, he came off Pondicherry on the 27th of September; but while his fleet was still hull down, Count d'Aché got under weigh, and with a press of sail bore away for Mauritius; so Pococke returned to the roads of Madras. The whole inhabitants of Pondicherry, civil and military, signed a protest against this measure of D'Aché, but he was deaf to remonstrance, and pleading that his orders were to save his ships, he would do nothing more for the settlement than leave behind him 500 Europeans and 400 Caffirs, whom he had serving on board. He had with him General Lally, and several other officers; "thus leaving," says Smollett, "the British masters of the Indian coast, a superiority still more confirmed by the arrival from England of Rear-Admiral, afterwards Sir Samuel, Cornish (who subsequently served at the conquest of Manilla) with four ships of the line, with which he joined Admiral Pococke at Madras on the 18th of October.

Prior to these naval matters, and to the departure of Count de Lally, occurrences of great importance took place on land.

Before the arrival at Pondicherry of the treasure and diamonds, the troops of Lally had been reduced to the direst distress. Even his faithful Irish Regiment mutinied, and he had to erect gibbets round the city to deter deserters from leaving it. When the Irish mutinied, the whole French force became demoralised. The Regiment de Lally had been regarded in India with the prestige of glory it had won in France and Flanders; but they simply mutinied under the pressure of hunger, thus their disobedience shook the loyalty of the Regiments of Lorraine, Berry, and all the other troops.

The British, who had taken by surprise the Fort of Cauverypauk in July, were now tempted by the disorder that reigned among the troops of Lally, to make an attempt upon Wandiwash. Accordingly, on the 26th of September, our entire force, under Colonel Brereton, marched from Conjeeveram for this purpose, on being joined by 300 men of Colonel Coote's battalion under Major Gordon. This made up his whole strength to 400 Europeans, 7,000 sepoy, seventy European and 300 black horse, with fourteen guns.

On the march he invested and took the fort of Trivitar, from whence he proceeded to Wandiwash, where the French were posted 1,000 strong under the walls of the fort, which was commanded by a rajah, and armed with twenty guns, under a French cannoneer, with a company of native *gholandasces*. On the 30th, at two in the morning,

Colonel Brereton attacked the town on three points, and after a very obstinate conflict, drove them from it; but was unable to retain the advantage he had won.

During the attack his native pioneers deserted, so that proper traverses or barricades could not be made in the streets, along which, as soon as day broke, there swept a dreadful discharge of grape from the fort. Meanwhile the French infantry had retired into a dry ditch, which served them as a species of entrenchment, from whence they made furious sallies with the bayonet, though the troop of European horse were already in motion to attack them.

In this emergency, the fire from the fort compelled our people to draw off, and their retreat might have become a flight, had not their reserve ably covered it; yet it was not effected without the loss of several officers and more than 300 men killed and wounded. After this mortifying result, Colonel Brereton, loth to abandon hope, lingered in sight of the fort for a few days, till the rains compelled him to return to Conjeveram. The defeat sustained here by our troops, at the hands chiefly of their own brother-islanders, seems greatly to have injured the *morale* of our slender forces, and, as illustrative of this, Mill tells us the following anecdote:—

“A detachment of grenadiers were very expeditiously quitting the vicinity of danger, when their officer, instead of calling after them—an imprudence which would, in all probability, have converted their retreat into a flight—ran till he got before them, and then suddenly turning round, cried, ‘Halt!’ as if giving the ordinary word of command. The *habit of discipline* prevailed; the men stopped, formed according to orders, and marched back into the scene of action.”

But this success of the French, however brilliant, neither clothed the men, nor supplied them with provisions.

The fort was afterwards garrisoned by French and sepoy, while other forces of the enemy, under Bussy, were assembled at Arcot.

On the recall of that officer by Lally from the Deccan, the British had taken advantage of his absence to begin secret negotiations with the native chiefs, and even with Salabut Jung; while Clive from Bengal had dispatched Colonel Forde towards the Northern Circars—those valuable provinces which, as we have already stated, had been ceded to Bussy. The colonel, who had with him 500 British troops, 2,190 native infantry, according to one account (but only 300 Europeans, 800 sepoy, and 150 sowars, according to another),

with thirty field-guns, a howitzer, and mortar, proceeded by sea to Vizagapatam, out of which the French troops had been driven by Anunderauz, the Rajah of Vizanapore, who had hoisted British colours on that place; and the Marquis de Conflans was already in motion to avenge the insult. On landing, the colonel joined the army of Anunderauz, who engaged to co-operate against the French, in the hope of obtaining the sovereignty of the Deccan. Thus, before marching, a treaty was drawn up between the colonel and the rajah.

In the first place, all plunder was to be equally divided; every province conquered was to be left to the rajah, who was to collect all its revenues, with the exception of those of the seaport towns, which, with the revenue of the districts adjacent, were to belong to the English East India Company, and no treaty for their restitution or disposal to any one else could be made without the consent of both. Finally, it was stipulated that the rajah was to supply 50,000 rupees per month for the support of our troops, and 6,000 for the expense of their officers.

On the 1st of November, the colonel began his march, and on the 3rd was joined by the forces of the rajah, nearly 4,000 strong, armed with pikes and lances, and having four guns, worked by Europeans; but it was not until the third of the following month, that they came in sight of the enemy, under the Marquis de Conflans, whom Bussy had left in charge of the Deccan, “near the village of Jallapool,” says Smollett, “but the French declining battle, the colonel determined to draw them from their advantageous situation, or march round, and get between them and Rajah-mundry.”

The force of Conflans consisted of 500 Europeans, with more cannon than they could handle, and a large body of native troops, including 500 cavalry, and 6,000 sepoy—a force sufficient to overawe hordes of effeminate Hindoos, but too weak to stand against the troops of Forde, whose first care was to get rid of those of the rajah, as he feared they would not fight. On the 7th, before dawn, that officer began his march, leaving all the sable pikemen and archers on their ground; but, at the request of the rajah, he took them under his orders, and the whole force marched to Jallapool, where he halted on a little, but cultivated, plain, and formed in order of battle at nine a.m.

Conflans, believing that Forde meant to retire, had quitted his strong ground on the road that led to Vizagapatam, and opened the affair by a cannonade, which was followed by forty minutes of musketry. The French, who had come on in considerable haste and disorder, came suddenly upon

our troops, who had been concealed by a tall crop of Indian corn, and who routed them with considerable loss, by eleven o'clock. Under Captain Knox, the conduct of our sepoys was most resolute. Conflans fell back upon his camp under a fire of heavy artillery; but he was soon hurled from it by Colonel Forde. Some of the French threw down their arms and cried for quarter; but the greater portion took wildly to flight.

Conflans had the precaution to send off, early in the day, his treasure on two camels; but the spoil captured by Forde was considerable, and included thirty guns, mostly brass, fifty tumbrils laden with ammunition, seven mortars, 1,000 draught bullocks, and all the tents and military stores. This victory cost him only forty-four Europeans killed and wounded, including five officers, while the French lost thrice that number, but a great many sepoys perished on both sides. Mounted on a fine horse, the marquis rode from the field and never drew bridle till night, when he reached the town of Rajahmundry, forty miles distant.

When the rout of the French began, Colonel Forde naturally ordered the rajah's horse to advance in pursuit, but ordered in vain, for these dusky warriors, as well as their infantry, with Anunderauz in the very heart of them, had all taken shelter, comfortably and conveniently, in a deep dry tank, where they cowered during the whole action, and refused to move while balls were flying about.*

If Anunderauz was reluctant to fight, according to stipulation, he was still more reluctant to pay; already Forde had spent all that was in his military chest, and his situation became critical, though the French were still retreating. Rajahmundry, which they abandoned, was seized by Captain Knox with a detachment, that he placed in the fort, which was on the north side of the Godavery, and was alike the key and barrier to the whole country of Vizagapatam. It was, however, given up to the rajah on his paying the expenses of our expedition; but soon after, the French retook it, and found therein a considerable quantity of prize-money, baggage, and effects belonging to Forde's officers.

The marquis had now established his headquarters in Masulipatam, from whence he urged Salabut Jung to send him instant assistance, lest the British, if unopposed, should make themselves masters of the entire Deccan. Collecting troops from Hyderabad and Golconda, the puppet nabob put his force in motion; but Colonel Forde, by marching through Ellore, where several native chiefs joined him, on the 6th of March, 1759—the day on which he had the gratifying

intelligence that Lally had been compelled to raise the siege of Madras—he appeared, in front of Conflans' abiding-place, Masulipatam, one of the most considerable seaport towns in Hindostan, and the strongest and most important place possessed by the French upon the coast. It occupied a rising ground between two morasses, and was separated from the sea by some narrow sand-hills. It was at once invested, and much adverse cannonading took place.

By the 7th of April, the ammunition of the besiegers, who were much fewer in number than the besieged, was nearly expended; but as two breaches had been made, Forde resolved on an immediate assault, as his situation was again critical. He had only two days' powder left for the guns in battery; Salabut Jung was at hand with the army of the Deccan, and Conflans was hourly expecting succours from Pondicherry. The assault was made on three points, at night. Captain Yorke led the chief forlorn hope.

Under cover of the starless gloom, the storming parties arrived softly and unseen to the very edge of the ditch, before they were discovered. Then over the walls, flashing redly through the dark, there came a terrible discharge of musketry and grape; but at the point of the bayonet the breaches were entered, and with shouts and cheers, our troops carried bastion after bastion, driving the foe like sheep before them. At last an officer came from the marquis to obtain quarter for the fast-perishing garrison, and it was granted as soon as he ordered his soldiers to cease firing.

Thus, with only 340 Europeans, a few British seamen, said to be thirty men from the *Hardwicke*, and 700 sepoys, did Colonel Forde capture by assault the strong city of Masulipatam, though garrisoned by 522 Europeans, 2,039 Caffirs, Topasses, and sepoys; and therein he found 150 pieces of cannon, and vast munition of war. Salabut Jung, perceiving the success of our forces here, as at Madras, being well nigh sick of his French alliance, and dreading the ambition of his brother, who had set up a separate interest against him, after marching to relieve Conflans, halted, and after waiting for a little time to see which side won, made advances to the Company, with which he concluded a treaty to the following effect:—

"The whole of the Circar of Masulipatam shall be given to the English Company. Salabut Jung will not suffer the French to have a settlement in this country, nor keep them in his service, nor give them any assistance. The English, on their part, will not give any assistance to the enemies of the soubah."

In addition to Masulipatam, eight districts, as well as jurisdiction over the district of Nizampatam, with the districts of Codover and Wacalcannar, were granted to the Company, without the reserve fine or military service. The whole of the territory thus ceded extended to eighty miles along the coast, and twenty inland, with a revenue of 400,000 rupees yearly.

Thus rapidly and surely, by dividing, conquering, and availing ourselves of the quarrels, jealousies, and wretched ambitions of the native rulers, were we gaining the vast empire, district by district, and province after province.

Seven days after the Union Jack had been hoisted on the ramparts of Masulipatam, two French ships with 300 soldiers on board, appeared in the offing, but understanding the fate of the place, bore away for Ganjam; and Colonel Forde was received with all honours, in the camp of our new friend and ally, Salabut Jung, who offered him for his own private property, a large district, if he would march against his rebellious brother, the Nizam Ali; but the colonel declined, and urged the nabob to join him in driving the French out of Rajahmundry, a movement which the latter anticipated by crossing the Kistna and marching westward, to join Bassaulet Jung, who took them into his pay, while Colonel Forde remained on the coast to re-establish our factories, which had been destroyed by Bussy.

Our merchants at Surat, finding themselves much oppressed, and exposed to many perils by the Sidee, who commanded the castle on the one hand, by the governor of the city, and by the Mahrattas who claimed a share in the revenue of that place on the other, applied to the presidency of Bombay, begging the equipment of an expedition to capture the fortress, and settle the government of the city upon a personage named Pharass Khan, who had been Naib, or deputy governor, under Meah Atchund, and as such had regulated all to the satisfaction of the inhabitants. The proposal was at once embraced, and Admiral Pococke sent two of his ships on this service, while 850 infantry and gunners, under Captain Richard Maitland, of the Royal Artillery (a regiment raised only nine years before), were embarked on board the Company's armed vessels, commanded by Captain Watson, on the 9th February, 1759; the whole under a civil servant named Mr. Spencer.

A landing was effected at a place called Dentsorie, about nine miles from Surat, on the 15th, and there a camp for refreshment was formed on the pleasant shore of the Gulf of Cambay. In two days Captain Maitland advanced against the

French Garden, in which a considerable number of the Sidee's men were posted; but were driven out after a sharp contest. He then threw up a battery to breach the walls; but as that process seemed tedious, a council of war, composed of naval and military officers, proposed a general attack, which was accordingly executed next morning. An officer who was present details the operations thus:—

"The large ships were of no use. The *Bombay*, grab of twenty guns, and four bomb-ketches, being the only ships that had water enough to go into the river, and it was with difficulty that those got up to the town. The place was first attempted by the troops, but they were twice repulsed with considerable loss, which with desertion greatly reduced them. As the last game we had to play, it was determined to break the chain and attack the place with our shipping. Accordingly, upon the 1st of March, the *Bombay*, grab, and *Success*, ketch, of twelve six-pounders and an eight-inch mortar, commanded by Captains John Cleugh and James Lindsay, ran against the chain together and broke it. The town was defended by four batteries and 5,000 men, who made a gallant defence. The dispute lasted four hours, in which time we fired 500 shot and forty-two shells, the distance from their batteries being only forty yards. Next day the castle surrendered. Our ships lost a fourth of their complement in killed and wounded."*

We took possession of the fortress in the name of the Emperor of Delhi, from whom the Company shortly after obtained the commissions of Governor of Surat, and Admiral of the Mogul fleet, with an assignment of £25,000 yearly, out of the customs, to support the marine and citadel. but our success against the Mahrattas in 1803 compelled that people to relinquish finally and for ever, all claim on Surat, the commerce of which, at the time we conquered it, included diamonds, pearls, gold, musk, ambergris, spices, indigo, silk, and cotton; but since the rise of Bombay, the value of its traffic has declined.

We were fairly established as legal possessors of the fortress. The conquest cost us only 200 men, after which Captain Watson came to anchor off Bombay, on the 9th of April.

Colonel Forde—an officer then little known, but in whom Clive detected military talents of a very high order—with his slender force remained in Masulipatam, awaiting further orders from the presidency of Bengal, or from Colonel Clive, who had taken upon himself the responsibility of every great measure, and for months had acted as if he were Governor-General of all Hindostan, though his real

* *Edinb. Chron.*, 1759.



CAPTAIN YORKE LEADING THE FORLORN HOPE AT MASULIPATAM.

post was merely Governor of Fort St. David, on the coast of Coromandel. The directors in London, after the catastrophe at Calcutta, and the cowardice of Mr. Drake there, had unwisely appointed a

government by rotation; but the members of this government themselves made Clive their president, and after hearing the particulars of Plassey, the Court of Directors named him Governor of Bengal.

CHAPTER XV.

THE DUTCH IN BENGAL.—BATTLE OF WANDIWASH.—THE COUNTRY RAVAGED.—CHITAPETT REDUCED.

THE French were not the only European enemies with whom we had to cope at this time in Hindostan. The envy and avarice of the Dutch had become excited by the extent of our trade there, and more particularly in Bengal, and as they possessed a strong fort at Chinsurah, on the western bank of the Hooghley, about twenty miles from Calcutta, where permission had been given them to erect it in 1656, by the Sultan Mohammed Choudjah, they resolved at least to engross the whole trade in saltpetre; and with this view are supposed to have tampered with the new nabob, or soubah, and secured his connivance, notwithstanding that he lay under such obligations to the Company.

Their plans met with the complete approval of the Governor of Batavia, who chose the time to enforce it when the British squadron had gone to the coast of Malabar. On the pretext of strengthening the Dutch garrisons in Bengal, he equipped a squadron of seven vessels, having on board 500 Dutch troops and 600 Malays, under the command of a colonel who bore the very English name of Russell. After touching at Negapatam, these forces entered the river of Bengal early in October.

Clive, who was then at Calcutta, on hearing of their designs, which he was determined to defeat, complained to the nabob, "who, upon such application, could not decently refuse an order to the Director and Court at Hooghley, implying that this armament should not proceed up the river." Colonel Clive, at the same time, wrote to the Dutch commodore, intimating "that, as he had received information of their design, he could not allow them to land forces and march to Chinsurah." The commodore replied that he had no intention of sending troops to Chinsurah, but begged that he might land some for refreshment, a request which was granted, on condition that they should not proceed inland.

In defiance of this arrangement, and the order

of the nabob, as soon as all the ships were in, the commodore sailed up the river to Tannah Fort, only two miles below Calcutta—a stronghold which we had taken in 1756—and there disembarked the whole of the Dutch troops, who at once began their march, with drums beating, for Chinsurah. In the meantime, by way of retaliation for the affront he had sustained in being refused access to the Dutch factory, he seized several vessels belonging to the East India Company, and on the *Calcutta*, Indiaman, commanded by Captain Wilson, dropping down the river homeward bound, he gave that officer to understand, that if he dared to pass, he should be sunk without delay. As if to leave no doubt of this, he triced up his ports, and ran out his shotted guns.

On this the captain put about, and stood back to Calcutta, where two other Indiamen lay, and made his report to Colonel Clive, who forthwith ordered the three ships to clear away for action, and attack the seven Dutchmen. Their weight was thus:—

The *Calcutta* (twenty-six guns), Captain Wilson; *Duke of Dorset* (twenty-six guns), Captain Forrester; *Hardwicke* (twenty-six guns), Captain Sampson.

The Dutch armament was armed with 302 guns, so the contest seemed most unequal. The decks of our ships were "lined with saltpetre bags to screen the men from shot, and each took on board two additional twelve-pounders."*

On dropping down the river, the three Indiamen found the enemy in order of battle, and ready to give them a hot reception. The *Duke of Dorset* being the first within range, began the conflict by a broadside of thirteen guns, which was promptly returned; and as a dead calm unluckily intervened, this single ship was, for a time, exposed to the whole fire of the enemy's squadron. On a little breeze springing up, the *Calcutta* and *Hardwicke* came down to her assistance, and a heavy fire was

* *Royal Mag.*, 1760.

now maintained on both sides, till two of the Dutch ships cut their cables and bore away, and a third was driven on shore. Finding his force thus reduced to four, the commodore, after a few more broadsides, struck his colours to Captain Wilson, and the other two captains followed his example. Singularly enough, this victory was won without the loss of even one British seaman, while the decks of the Dutch presented a dreadful scene of carnage. Out of one ship no less than thirty corpses were flung to the alligators in the river. The prisoners were sent to Calcutta. The seventh ship attempting to make her escape, was captured by the *Orford* and *Royal George*, which had just come from Europe.

The 1,100 troops were not more fortunate in their progress. Clive no sooner learned that they were actually in full march to Chinsurah, than he dispatched Forde after them, with only 500 men from Calcutta, with orders to stop them at the French Gardens. Proceeding northward, that officer entered the town of Chandernagore, where he was fired upon by a party of Dutch sent out from Chinsurah to meet the coming reinforcement, but were routed and dispersed. Colonel Forde pushing on, in the morning of the 25th November found the enemy prepared to face him on a plain near Chinsurah, where, after a brief but bitter contest, he totally defeated them, and slew many. All who survived were taken prisoners.

During this contest, the nabob's son, Meeran, at the head of a strong army, maintained a suspicious neutrality, and there is little doubt that he would have declared for the Dutch had they been victorious. As the event proved, he now offered to reduce Chinsurah; but the affair was soon after adjusted. The Dutch on the payment of £100,000 for damages, received back their ships and all the prisoners, save 300 who took service under the Company. The articles of agreement between them and the Dutch were ratified on the 5th day of December, 1759, and "the affixing of his signature to that deed was the last act of authority which Clive performed, for his health having again given way to the ravages of the climate, he set sail early in February for England."*

There he remained five years, and in December, 1761, as a reward for his many brilliant services in India, was raised to the peerage as Lord Clive of Plassey, K.B., a title now merged in the Earldom of Powis.

He left behind him in India many brave and experienced officers, inspired by his own genius, and trained to war under his own eye; and among

these the most conspicuous was Colonel (afterwards Sir Eyre) Coote, of the old Irish family of Castle Cuffe in Queen's County. While the French forces were cantoned in the vicinity of Wandiwash, and Lally and Bussy were engaged as usual in bitter quarrels, Coote on the 21st November, 1759, proceeded with some reinforcements against Wandiwash, which, with a rapidity like Clive's, he carried by storm on the 29th, at the head of his own regiment, the 84th, which he had under his orders with other Europeans, 1,700 in all, with 3,000 sepoys, and fourteen pieces of cannon. At Wandiwash he took prisoners 900 men, with forty-nine guns. From thence he marched to Carougoly, and took that place also, on the 10th of December, though defended by the Irish Colonel O'Kennely with 600 men. On the other hand Lally, having obtained the assistance of some Mahratta horse, by some skilful movements, surprised Conjeveram, where, to his disappointment, his starving troops found the magazines empty.

As the breaches made by our artillery at Wandiwash were still open, Lally hoped to recover that place. Assembling all his forces at Arcot, on the 10th of February, 1760, he began his march and came in sight of the battered fortress; but while he and his engineers were considering the mode of assault, Coote suddenly came upon them from the neighbourhood of Conjeveram, and compelled them to fall back. The military pride of Lally forbade him to retreat, for he drew up in order of battle near the walls of Wandiwash, which was a rectangular fort with fourteen redoubts, and, nothing loth, Coote prepared to meet him.

Our troops on this day consisted of 1,900 Europeans, including eighty troopers, 1,250 sowars, or native cavalry, and 2,100 sepoys, formed in three lines. In the first, the old 84th Regiment was on the right flank, the old 79th on the left, with two battalions of the Company in the centre—all without their grenadier companies. On the wings of this line were 1,800 sepoys. In the second line were all the grenadiers, 300 strong, with 100 sepoys on each flank. The third line was formed by the black horse, with eighty Europeans in their centre. A little in advance, and on the left of this line, were two field-guns, covered by two companies of sepoys. Coote had twenty-six pieces of cannon in all.

The enemy's force consisted of 2,250 Europeans, of whom 300 were hussars, and 1,300 were sepoys—450 French and natives being left at the batteries against the fort. The Mahratta horse numbered 3,000 sabres; but instead of taking any part in the contest, they contented themselves with guarding their own camp, and waiting to loot the

* Gleig.

baggage of whoever might be defeated. On the right were posted the European horse, on the left was Lally's Irish Regiment, now reduced to 400 men, protected by a tank. The centre was formed by the Regiment of Lorraine, 400 strong, and the Bataillon d'Inde, 730 strong. In the tank, to strengthen the left, were 300 men, chiefly marines from the ships of Count d'Aché. In rear was another tank held by 400 sepoys, whom Bussy had brought from Kurpa; and the rest, 900 in number, were posted in rear of a ridge that lay along the front of the camp. Each flank of this ridge was held by fifty Europeans. Lally had in the field sixteen field-pieces; four were placed in the front tank, and the rest by threes, between the different bodies of troops forming the general line.

Lally began the battle in person. While the British were advancing in the order we have given, before they had halted, or were even within cannon-shot, the fiery Irishman, at the head of his European horse, by sweeping round the plain made a dash at Coote's third line; but the moment his intentions were perceived, the two companies of sepoys, posted apart with the two field-guns, were ordered to form *en potence*, that is, at an acute angle from the line, to enfilade the approaching cavalry. At the same time the black horse went threes-about to the rear, as if to face the enemy, but purposely threw themselves into confusion, that they might have a pretext for flight, and thus left the eighty Europeans alone to receive the coming charge, before which they must inevitably have given way.

The two sepoy companies with the two guns, which were well handled by Captain Barker, poured in such a flanking fire, that the French cavalry fled, and left Lally no choice but to follow them with a heart swollen by rage. By this time we had halted, the cannonade had opened on both sides, and the superiority was decidedly with the guns of Coote, while Lally, on returning, found his infantry full of bitter impatience under the loss they were sustaining by not being brought to closer quarters. This he fully seconded by his own hot impetuosity, for he ordered the whole line to advance, and then the roar of musketry and clouds of smoke became general from flank to flank.

The Regiment of Lorraine formed in a column of twelve files frontage, advanced at a rush against our 84th, thinking to burst through it by sheer weight; but Coote ordered the battalion to "reserve its fire until their assailants were within fifty yards," and then it went crashing into their front ranks, nearly every bullet killing double deep. The oblong column staggered, reeled, and swayed to

and fro for a moment; it then pushed on over the fallen, and mingled with the 84th in a wild, dreadful mêlée with the bayonet; but, unable to withstand that resolute regiment, it gave way in utter disorder. At that moment a French tumbril exploded in the front tank, killing and wounding eighty men, and all in its neighbourhood abandoned the place.

Of this disorder Coote took instant advantage, and ordered Major Brereton to advance with the whole of the 79th Regiment and seize the tank. Bravely he executed the order, and had just carried the point, when a bullet slew him. He was a gallant and accomplished officer, whose fall was a loss to the army and his country. The capture of the tank uncovered the left of the Regiment de Lally, which, as soon as the field-guns there were brought to play upon it, began to waver, and then the day was lost to France, while Bussy, making a gallant effort to retrieve its fortune by a bayonet charge, was taken prisoner.

The centre and other flank of the enemy's line made little or no resistance, while the sepoys, posted in rear of the covering ridge, when ordered to advance, flatly refused to obey; and, convinced now that further fighting was useless, Lally abandoned his camp to the British, who instantly entered it. In this battle, a writer says truly: "The handful of heroes of Lally's own corps was left to do battle with the whole British army. The infantry, cavalry, and artillery fell upon their unprotected flanks: yet still they fought until the field was soaked with their blood, and the tired remnant were swept before the repeated charges of overwhelming numbers as the monsoon rolls over the surges of the sea. The Irish suffered dreadfully, and were left alone to combat and to die, winning for themselves an honour scarcely inferior to that of Fontenoy, even in defeat."

But for the manner, moreover, in which these brave exiles covered the retreat, the French army must have been utterly annihilated. The French loss was 800 men killed and wounded, and fifty taken prisoners, among whom were Brigadier-General de Bussy, Quartermaster-General, the Chevalier de Godeville, Colonel Murphy, and several other officers. There were also taken twenty-four pieces of cannon, eleven tumbrils, the tents, and all the baggage.

The British losses were 262 killed and wounded. Coote's native cavalry did no more for him than Lally's Mahrattas did for France; they kept safely out of reach of shot and shell, and would not follow up the enemy even when routed. On being joined by the detachment which he had

left on the batteries before Wandiwash, Lally continued his retreat without reinforcing his garrison in the small hill-fort of Chitapett; and Coote, on whom no chance of advantage was ever thrown away, resolved to capture it, while Captain Wood, with his garrison, was ordered to advance from Cauvery-pauk and invest the fortress of Arcot; and 1,000 native cavalry, and 300 sepoy under the Baron de Vanerst, were dispatched south to ravage all the country between Pondicherry and Alamparva, in retaliation for the outrages committed by the French and the Mahrattas in the districts of what was now becoming British India; and these orders they executed with such genial fidelity, that they gave to the flames eighty-four villages, and captured 8,000 head of cattle, entailing terrible sufferings on the poor peasantry, who had no interest what-

ever in this war which those Europeans had come to wage among them.

On the 26th of January, 1760, Chitapett was invested, and made but a small show of resistance; for in three days Coote and his entire force halted within cannon-shot of it; two eighteen-pounders guns were placed in battery, and soon made a practicable breach. On this, the Chevalier de Tilly surrendered with his garrison of fifty-six Europeans and 300 sepoy. On the same day the Khan, with all his pestilent Mahrattas, evacuated the Carnatic.

Almost immediately after, the town and fortress of Timmerycottah surrendered. This place is chiefly remarkable for a great cataract near it, which has a fall of sixty feet in height into a basin 120 feet in breadth.

CHAPTER XVI.

CAPTURE OF ARCOT AND REDUCTION OF PONDICHERRY.—FATE OF THE COUNT DE LALLY.—FALL OF THE FRENCH POWER IN INDIA.

INTENT on fresh conquests and on utterly crushing the power of France in India, the 1st of February saw Colonel Eyre Coote before Arcot. The works of the fortress had been greatly strengthened of late. The ditch had been hewn in the solid rock to a uniform depth of six feet. A glacis and covered way had been carried completely round the inside of it, and on the north a strong ravelin, armed with six pieces of cannon, communicated with the fort by a gate, before which lay a draw-bridge.

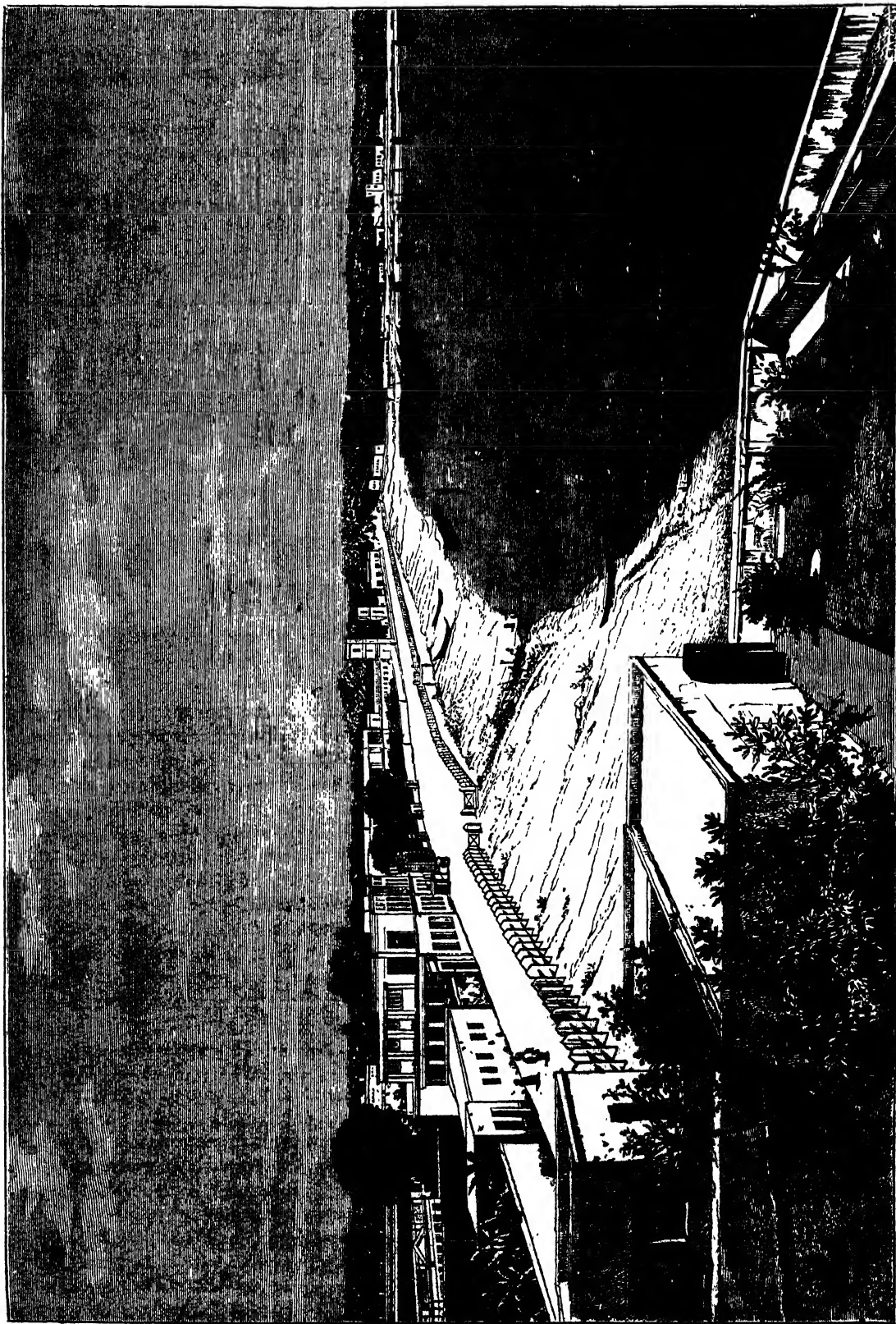
The three British batteries opened on the 5th, but the artillery was light, and ammunition scarce, so their progress was slow; yet the sap was pushed on, till by the 9th it was very near the glacis, and two breaches had been made within six feet of its base. The means of defence were by no means exhausted, when, to his natural surprise, Coote received an offer of voluntary capitulation. The terms were briefly arranged, and the grenadiers of the army next morning took possession of the gates with fixed bayonets.

The garrison, consisting of 247 Frenchmen, and the same number of sepoy, had not as yet suffered a single casualty, and might have held the place till it was regularly assaulted; but the French were

fast losing alike heart and prestige. In Arcot were found twenty-two pieces of cannon, four mortars, and much warlike stores. The 29th of February saw Coote before Tyndivanum, a town situated at the junction of several roads all leading to Pondicherry, which is only twenty-five miles distant. "The object of this march," says Beveridge, "could not be misunderstood; and the French, who had commenced the war in the full confidence of establishing an undisputed supremacy, became aware that their next struggle must be for *existence*. To prepare for the worst they endeavoured to obtain possession of all the commanding posts in the vicinity."

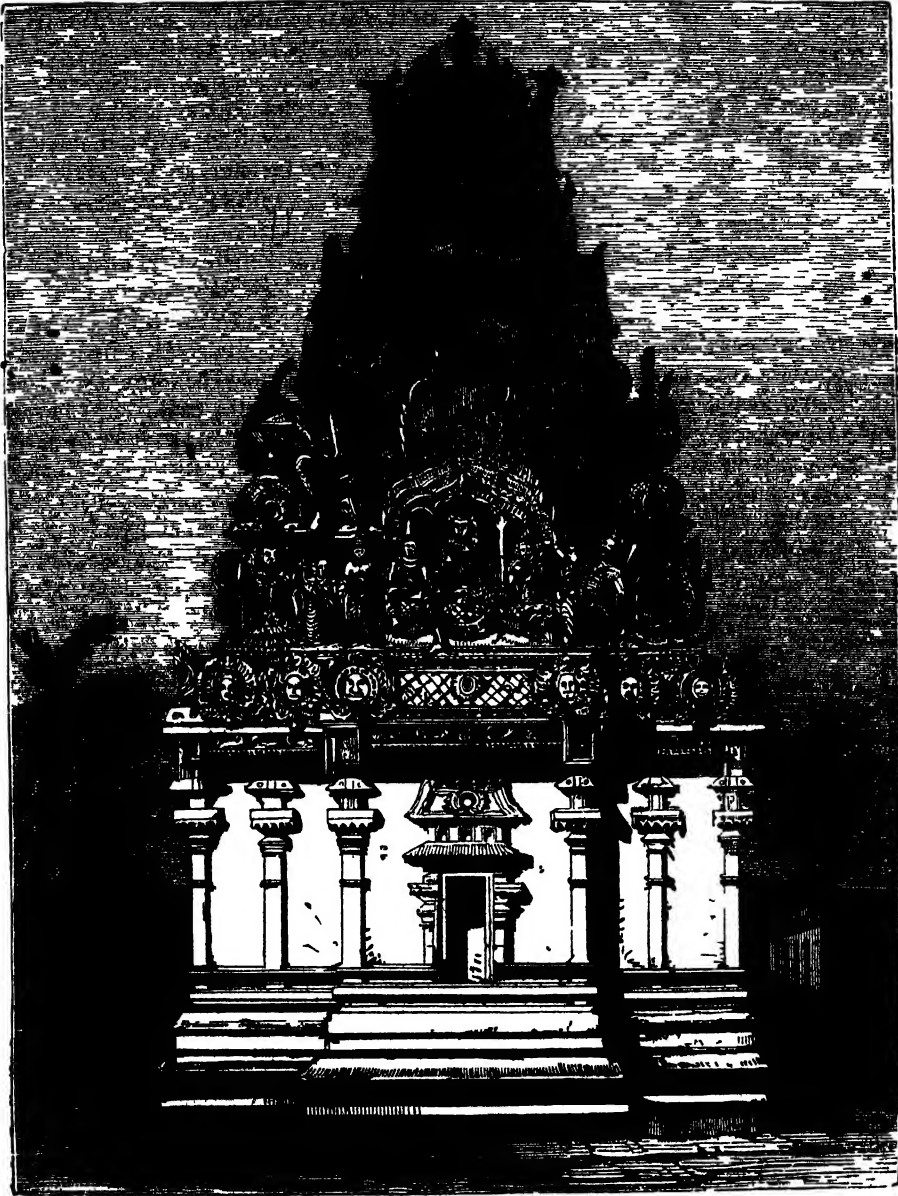
Lally, who, after his defeat at Wandiwash, found it impossible to remain long on the strong but barren hill of Gingee, to which he had retreated, now fell back with his famished forces to Pondicherry. There he quarrelled with the Council and all the civil authorities, calling them "embezzlers and peculators—traitors and cowards." And while these unseemly squabbles went on in the last stronghold of France in India, her flag was torn down by the troops of Coote, from every place on which it had been hoisted.

Timmerycottah, we have shown, surrendered,



VIEW OF CHANDERNAGORE.

and Trinomalee also; Devi-Cottah was evacuated; Alamparva and Permacoil were taken by storm, and the country wasted by fire and sword. Carical, the most important place on the coast next to 1760, triumphantly encamped within four miles of that place, which was to witness the last scene in the unsuccessful and brilliant, but stormy, career of the famous Count de Lally.



PORTICO OF A PAGODA AT PONDICHERRY.

Pondicherry, was blocked up by an armament from Madras; the garrison made a wretched defence, and surrendered on the 6th of April ere Lally could attempt to relieve it; and the captures of Chillambaram, Valdore, and Cuddalore, rapidly followed. All the petty forts round Pondicherry were speedily reduced; the whole surrounding country fell into the hands of the British, who, by the 1st of May,

The approach of the rainy season, together with his well-known skill and resolute character, caused a regular siege to be deemed impracticable for a time; but ultimately it was resolved to block up the fortress by sea and land. Lally had with him only 1,500 French troops (100 of them being horse), the remnants of nine battalions of the king's and company's service. The cavalry, artillery, and Invalides

of the latter; the Creole volunteers of the Isle of Bourbon; the Artillerie du Roi; the Regiments de Marine, de Lorraine, d'Inde, and his own, the 119th of the line. He had 900 sepoys. There were at this time three corps in the French service named from the ancient province of Lorraine—Les Gardes Lorraines, or 30th Foot; 69th Regiment de Lorraine, and 104th Royal Lorraine.

It was long since the French had received the slightest succour from their impoverished mother country, against which we were now waging a desperate war in America, the West Indies—in every quarter of the globe where she had possessions, ships, or colonies. Hemmed up in the strong town with faint and fading hopes, Lally could but long for the arrival of some squadron, that would bring him men, money, or provisions, from Bourbon, the Mauritius, or some other quarter. But he would be a bold and skilful French seaman who could now escape the keen-eyed vigilance of the British sailors of those days; for Admiral Cornish blocked up the Coromandel coast with six sail of the line, and Admiral Stevens, who had succeeded Admiral Pococke, now appeared with five ships of the line, on board of one of which came three companies of the Royal Artillery.

The entire fleet of Cornish was a very powerful one, and consisted of nineteen sail, twelve of which were of the line, armed with 668 pieces of cannon.

In his dire extremity Lally turned his eyes towards Mysore, where Hyder Ali—whose terrible name was to find an echo in future history—had established his authority by force of arms. To bring Hyder on Coote's rear, and compel him to raise the siege, Lally offered him present possession of what it was scarcely in his power to give, the fortress of Thiagur, on a mountain which was fifty-two miles from Pondicherry, and commanded two passes into the Carnatic, with the future possession of Tinevelly and Madura—after dispossessing the British, no easy task for even Hyder. A treaty, however, was concluded, and that personage agreed to send cattle to feed the starving French, and troops to fight their besiegers.

Coote sent a detachment to cut off their march. This was done effectually; the Mysorean force was small, and on meeting a repulse, and discovering fully the deplorable state to which Lally was reduced, they fell back with the cattle to their own country. Shortly before this, six of the Company's ships arrived at Madras and there landed 600 men. More and more troops continued to pour in, but still not a ship, not a man, or a barrel of beef for Lally; "and in October a picturesque regiment of

kilted men from the bleak Highlands of Scotland were disembarked to try their mettle, and their power of enduring heat in the lowlands of Hindostan."

The corps thus referred to was the 89th Highland Regiment, which had been raised in the preceding year among the clan Gordon by Colonel S. Long Morris, who had married the Duchess Dowager of Gordon, and the men almost all of them bore the Gordon surname. But at first only a detachment of it served at Pondicherry.

Lally, on the 17th of March, had fallen back on the fortress, bravely disputing every foot of ground, until in front of Pondicherry, where he formed his famous lines, which for twelve weeks he defended with such valour and skill, till he began still more to lose heart after Hyder Ali failed him. Colonel Coote was aware that the fortress was so strong by art and nature, that he could hope to reduce it by famine only, especially when held by such a soldier as Lally, who had a vast store of ammunition and cannon, including 700 pieces of all kinds, many millions of ball-cartridge, and had planted on the thirteen great bastions, the six gates, and the walls, which were five miles in circumference, 508 brass and iron guns, independent of mortars.

Lally led a fierce sortie on the night of the 2nd of September against Coote's advanced posts, but was repulsed with the loss of many men and seventeen guns. Of this affair an officer of the 89th wrote thus: "After a volley from our pieces, these we threw down—off with our bonnets, out with our swords, gave them [the French] three huzzas, and rushed in full speed to the muzzles of their guns, of which they left us in full possession, though not without loss on our side, for the guns were filled almost to the mouth with bars of iron six inches long, and lesser pieces of jagged iron," &c.* Eight days subsequently the last work of the fortified lines was carried, and the French were completely enclosed in Pondicherry. Coote had 110 men killed, including Major Monson, whose leg was carried away by a cannon-ball. In this affair the Highlanders, who were only fifty in number, and commanded by Captain George Morrison, in their fierce eagerness to get at the enemy burst from the rear through the grenadiers of the 79th Regiment.

Count d'Aché, the naval commander, having by his sailing elsewhere, completely abandoned Lally to his fate, a fifty-four gun ship, a frigate of thirty-six, and four French Indiamen, were hopelessly shut up in the roadstead. In the month of October, only five sail of the line, under Captain Robert Haldane, were required to block up Pondicherry from the

* Letter in *Edinburgh Courant*, 1761.

seaward, while Coote pushed on the investment by land, and on the 16th November, after the arrival of a ship from Madras, with the necessary stores, it was resolved to turn the investment into a close siege.

Scarcity of provisions compelled Lally to expel a vast number of natives from the town; but as Coote drove them back, many perished under the fire of the guns, which were in full operation. Many of our people died of fatigue in the trenches. Among these was Sir Charles Chalmers, of Cults, a Scottish baronet who served in the artillery, though his estates had been forfeited after Culloden.

On the 26th of October, Coote's forces were 3,500 Europeans and 7,000 sepoys.

The rains abated on the 26th, and Colonel Coote directed the engineers to select proper places for the erection of the batteries, and they all opened together on the 8th December, at midnight. Though formed at a considerable distance, they had a serious effect, but the besieged returned the fire with great vigour. This mutual cannonading continued until Christmas Day, when the engineers formed a new battery, and effected a breach in the north-west counterguard and curtain. Though the approaches were retarded for some days by a violent storm, which almost ruined our works, the damage was soon repaired, and a considerable post, the Redoubt of San Thomé, was taken from the enemy in assault, by the 89th Highlanders, but was afterwards recaptured by 300 French grenadiers from the sepoys who occupied it.

By this time the scarcity of provisions in the city was so great, that the soldiers had to subsist on the flesh of elephants, camels, horses, and dogs. The latter sold, says Baron Grant, for twenty-four rupees each.

By the 15th of January, 1761, another battery, armed with ten guns and three mortars, was opened against the skirt of the Bleaching Town, and another was formed at only 150 yards from the walls. It proved unnecessary, as on the evening of the 15th, just as the red sunshine was fading on the great bastions of Pondicherry, a white flag was seen coming from thence to the trenches.

The bearers of it were Father Lavacer, "supérieur général des Jesuites Français dans les Indes," Colonel Durré, of the Artillerie du Roi, and MM. Moracin and Courtin, members of the council. They bore also two memorials, one signed by Lally, and the other by the governor and council. The former was very characteristic of the count, from its proud and petulant style. As if he had been about to dictate terms, instead of receiving

them, he began by an irrelevant preamble, that "the British had taken Chandernagore, against the faith of the treaties of neutrality which had always subsisted between the European nations in Bengal, and especially between the British and French;" also, "that the government of Madras had refused to fulfil the conditions of a cartel between the two crowns."

In consequence of this, it was impossible for him to propose a capitulation for the city of Pondicherry; but, that "the troops of the king and company surrender themselves, for want of provisions, prisoners of war to his Britannic Majesty, conformably to the terms of the cartel;" adding that Colonel Coote might take possession of the Villenore Gate on the morrow.

"I demand," wrote Lally, "from a principle of justice and humanity, that the mother and sisters of Raza Sahib (then in the city) may be permitted to seek an asylum where they please, or that they may remain prisoners among the English, and not be delivered into the hands of Mohammed Ali Khan, which are red with the blood of the husband and father, to the shame of those who gave up Chunda Sahib to him."*

To all this, Colonel Coote replied thus:—

"The particulars of the capture of Chandernagore having been long since transmitted to His Britannic Majesty by the officer to whom the place surrendered, Colonel Coote cannot take cognisance of what passed on that occasion, nor can he admit the same as in any way relative to the surrender of Pondicherry.

"The disputes which have arisen concerning the cartel concluded between their Britannic and Most Christian Majesties being as yet undecided, Colonel Coote has it not in his power to admit that the troops of His Most Christian Majesty, and of the French East India Company, shall be deemed prisoners of war to His Britannic Majesty; but requires that they shall surrender themselves prisoners of war, to be used as he shall think consistent with the interest of the king, his master; and Colonel Coote will show all such indulgences as are consistent with humanity.

"Colonel Coote will send the grenadiers of his regiment, between the hours of eight and nine o'clock to-morrow morning, to take possession of the Villenore Gate; and the next morning, between the same hours, he will take possession of the gate of Fort St. Lewis.

"The mother and sisters of Raza Sahib shall be escorted to Madras, where proper care shall be taken for their safety, and they shall not on any

* London Gazette, 1761.

account be delivered into the hands of the Nabob Mohammed Ally Cawn (*sic*).

"Given at the headquarters, in the camp before Pondicherry, the 15th day of January, 1761.

(Signed) "EYRE COOTE.

"To Arthur Lally, Esq., Lieut.-General of H.M.C. Majesty's forces in India, &c. &c."

Coote declined any reply to the question of respecting the churches and permitting the free exercise of the Roman Catholic religion. According to stipulation, at the hours named, the grenadiers of the 84th took over the Villenore Gate from the Irish soldiers of Lally, mutually presenting arms; and the 79th Regiment took possession of the citadel.

So fell the capital of the French Indies, after a siege which the skill of Lally, together with his obstinate valour, had protracted, amid innumerable difficulties, against forces far exceeding his famished garrison in numbers. On the 17th, he marched out at their head, exposed to many insults, as his long resistance had maddened his soldiers. On that day, there came forth with him, officers included:—Artillerie du Roi, 83; the Regiment de Lorraine, 237; the Regiment de Lally, 230; the Regiment du Marine, 295; Artillery of the French East India Company, 94; Cavalry and Volontaires de Bourbon, 55; Bataillon d'Inde and Invalides, 316 of all ranks. To cut to pieces their commissary was one of the first acts of these prisoners of war, and Lally would have shared the same fate had he not taken shelter in the British camp.

The munition of war found in Pondicherry was enormous, and the mere list thereof would fill many pages. There were taken 671 guns and mortars, 14,400 muskets and pistols, 4,895 swords, 1,200 poleaxes, 84,041 cannon-balls, with gunpowder in proportion, 22,500 shells and hand-grenades, 12,000 iron ramrods, 20 hogsheads of flints, and so forth. The whole plunder was valued at £2,000,000 sterling.

The fortifications were ordered to be blown up, and the Gordon Highlanders formed the new garrison, and on the same day that Lally surrendered, his Scottish comrade, Law de Lauriston, on whose assistance he had long relied, was totally defeated by Major Carnac, and taken prisoner, together with sixty French officers, and the young Mogul, whom he had persuaded to advance against Coote with a vast host.

On the 3rd of February, the nabob made his entry into Pondicherry, accompanied by his brother; both were seated in a magnificent howdah, on the back of a gigantic elephant; six more

elephants followed, two and two, bearing chiefs; next came his twelve wives in a covered wagon drawn by buffaloes, and then followed his troops, armed with bows and arrows, shields and tulwars, matchlocks, lances, and daggers.

Miserable indeed was the fate that befell Lally after all his wounds, services, and exertions in the cause of France. By the contemptible court of Louis he was made a special victim to popular clamour. After being detained for nearly four years in a close prison, and being most barbarously and infamously tortured again and again, he was condemned to be executed, according to the following Report among the papers printed in the scarce "History of the Mauritius," by the Vicomte de Vaux.

"In consequence of the very weighty conclusions which the procureur-général had given against the Count de Lally, he was removed during the night of Sunday, 4th May (1763), from the Bastille to the prison of the Conciergerie, which communicates by several staircases with the different apartments belonging to the Court of Parliament. Though it was but one o'clock in the morning when he arrived at the Conciergerie, he refused to go to bed, and about seven he appeared before the judges. They ordered him to be divested of his red riband and cross, to which he submitted with the most perfect indifference; and he was then placed on the stool to undergo a course of interrogation. At this moment, clasping his hands and lifting up his eyes, he exclaimed, 'Is this the reward of forty years' faithful service?' The inquiry lasted six hours. At three in the afternoon it recommenced, and the Marquis de Bussy and Count d'Aché were successively confronted with him. . . . The sitting lasted till ten at night, when the count was taken back to the Bastille, surrounded by guards and several companies of the city watch.

"The following day, at six in the morning, the judges began to give their opinions, and they were not concluded till four in the afternoon, when they pronounced an *arrêt* which contained only a simple recital of the proceedings against him and other persons accused of abuses and crimes in the East Indies, with their acquittal or condemnation, but without stating the facts or reasons on which they were respectively founded. The sentence stated that he had been accused and convicted of having betrayed the interests of the king and the East India Company; of abusing his authority, and of exactions, &c., from the subjects of His Majesty, as well as the foreigners resident in Pondicherry; for the reparation of which, and other crimes, it was declared that he should be deprived of all his titles, honours,

and dignities, and have his head separated from his body in the *Place de Grève*."

Sacrificed to the mob, as La Bourdonnais and Dupleix had been, this brave Irish soldier of fortune was accordingly drawn on a hurdle to the *Place de Grève*, on the 9th of May, with a gag in his mouth to prevent him addressing the people, and there he was hurriedly, almost privately, beheaded in the dusk of the morning—"a murder," says Orme, "committed with the sword of justice,"—and almost in sight of his son, the famous Count Lally de Tollendal of a future era.

At the reduction of Pondicherry, no regiment suffered so much as that of Sir William Draper, who raised a beautiful cenotaph near his own house on Clifton Downs, surmounted by an urn, and inscribed as, "Sacred to those departed warriors of the 79th Regiment, by whose valour, discipline, and perseverance, the French land forces were first withstood and repulsed, the commerce of Britain preserved, and her settlements rescued from impending destruction."

It also bore the names of two majors, ten captains, and twenty-one subalterns, who fell in the war in Asia.

The white banner of France still waved on the hill-fort of Thiagur, fifty miles in the interior—the same place which Lally had promised to Hyder Ali, and over the triple stronghold on the hill of Gingee, about thirty-five miles westward of Pondicherry; but both places were totally isolated, and destitute of all hope of relief, and they, with the little settlement of Mahé on the coast of Malabar, were yet to be reduced, ere the conquest of French India could be quite complete—yet we had only four battalions of the line, at that time, in the country.

In January, 1761, some shipping from England had landed troops at Tellicherry to be employed in the reduction of Mahé; but, as it lay within the boundaries of the Bombay Presidency, authority to attack it did not arrive till the beginning of the subsequent month, and an alliance with some of the neighbouring chiefs was diligently formed meanwhile by the French governor, who had only with him 100 Europeans, while the attacking force under Major Hector Munro of the old Gordon Highlanders (who died a general in 1806), consisted of 900 British, and 700 native troops. Though the chiefs promised liberally, when the major and Admiral Cornish appeared off the coast on the 10th February, not a man of them was forthcoming; and the governor deemed himself fortunate, when, instead of being compelled to surrender at discretion, he was permitted to march out with the

honours of war, and was sent under cartel to the isle of Bourbon. Thus was this district, so rich in pepper, cardamom, cacao, arak, sandal, and other odoriferous woods, added to our possessions, till it was given back in 1783.

Prior to this, Gingee had been invested by Captain Stephen Smith, with eight companies of sepoy. It was commanded by a Scotsman, in the French service, named MacGregor, whose garrison consisted of only 150 Europeans, 600 sepoy, and 1,000 Colliers, or hill-men. Conceiving the hill-forts to be impregnable, he was somewhat surprised to find that one was taken by storm. The two most powerful yet remained, and a deadly climate added to their strength, so on being summoned, MacGregor stoutly replied that he could defend himself for three years against 100,000 men. Ultimately he demanded terms, which, though somewhat extravagant, were acceded to, and on the 5th of April, he marched out with the honours of war.

Thiagur, which had been returned to the French, after their treaty with the Rajah of Mysore was broken up, shared the fate of Gingee. After being blockaded and bombarded by Major Preston for sixty-five days, the governor, though he had still two months' provisions in store, surrendered on the same terms as those which were accorded to Lally, and then the French had not so much as a single military post in all India.

Some castles or forts, named Motally, Nelleasaroon, and Veremala, which were subordinate to Mahé, after being suddenly evacuated by the French, on the fall of that place, were promptly occupied by some Nairs, under a chief with the lofty title of "Kapoo, King of Cherical and nephew of Badenkalamkur, King Regent of Colastry." Without delaying an hour on hearing of the movements of this mysterious personage, Major (afterwards Sir Hector) Munro, with 380 Gordon Highlanders—who but a year before had been shepherds, ploughmen, and gillies in Scotland—some of the Company's troops, a twelve and nine-pounder, marched against him. Captain Nelson, lately engineer of the French garrison at Mahé, and several French officers, burning for revenge on their faithless black allies, accompanied him as volunteers; the forts were taken, and with them fell the last fragments of the French power in India. "It was on the Malabar coast," says a writer, "that the first contentions began; and when the rumble of warlike preparations was hushed, and the tap of the French drum was silent along the shores of Coromandel and in the Deccan, the din of battle was heard, and the mournful parade of

vanquished and disarmed captains was seen on the coast of Malabar."

The smallness of the British forces in India in

these wars seems strange, when we find by Millan's Lists in 1762 that the number of men employed in that year for the service amounted to 328,127.



HINDOOS OF THE DECCAN.

CHAPTER XVII.

CLIVE RETURNS TO INDIA FOR THE LAST TIME.

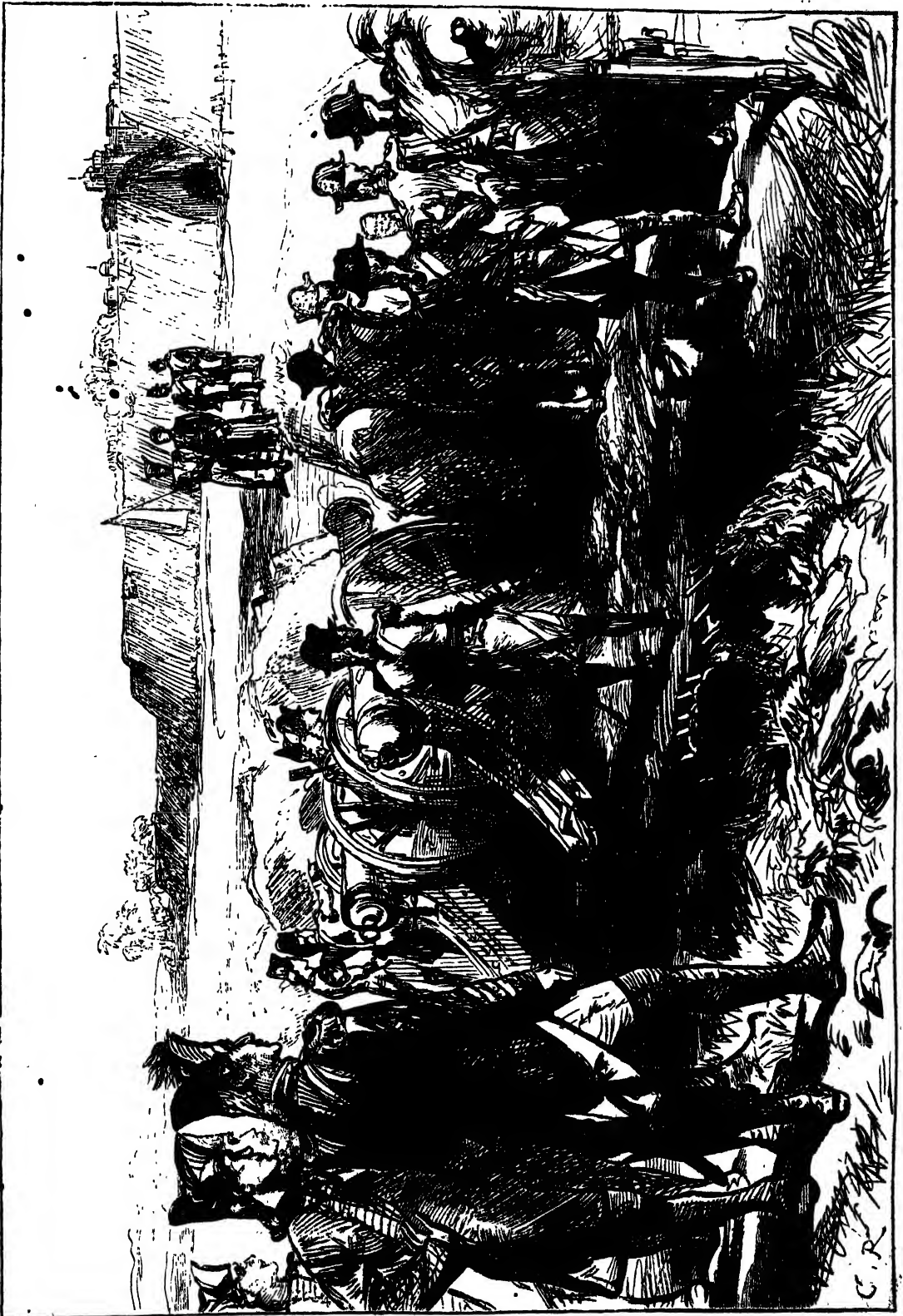
WE have already related how Clive had been honoured in England, and raised to an Irish peerage; but serious changes took place in the British government on the death of George II., the accession of George III., and the formation of a cabinet under the Earl of Bute, in place of Clive's friend and patron, the great Chatham. The fortune Clive had accumulated by his thrift, and the chances of successful warfare in the East, without reckoning the jaghire that had been conferred on him, amounted to £300,000, and the latter was valued at about £30,000 more. He was deemed to be far richer than he really was, and Macaulay rates his fortune very high.

"The wealth of Clive was such as enabled him to vie with the first grandees of England," says the great Essayist. "There remains proof that he remitted more than £880,000 through the Dutch East India Company, and more than £40,000 through the English Company. The amount which he also

sent home through private houses was considerable. He invested great sums in jewels, then a very common mode of remittance from India. His purchases of diamonds at Madras alone amounted to £25,000. Besides a great mass of money, he had an Indian estate valued by himself at £27,000 a year. His whole annual income, in the opinion of Sir John Malcolm, who is desirous to state it as low as possible, exceeded £40,000; and incomes of £40,000, at the accession of George III., were at least as rare as incomes of £100,000 now. We may safely affirm that no Englishman who started with nothing has ever, in any line of life, created such a fortune at the early age of thirty-four."

On his own friends and relations he spent the sum of £50,000.

All parties courted him, for his wealth could command many votes in the House. His admiration for Pitt was great, and he steadily adhered to him, till the Great Commoner lost office



THE FRENCH COMMISSIONERS COMING TO TREAT FOR THE SURRENDER OF PONDICHERRY.

by the preponderating influence of Lord Bute; thus when the latter made overtures to him, Clive rejected them; and when the unpopular minister—unpopular chiefly through the provincial spirit of the age—carried on his negotiations for a peace with France, he most naturally avoided Clive on all questions touching the condition and affairs of India. Though he had drawn this neglect upon himself, the fiery conqueror of Bengal became incensed, all the more that he knew that the French ministry were in constant communication with the Marquis de Bussy on the same matters.

After his capture at the battle of Wandiwash, Bussy had instantly been liberated on his parole by Colonel Coote, who sincerely respected him as a man and a soldier; and when the hero of Golconda arrived in Paris he experienced a reception very different from those accorded to Lally or Dupleix. Some time before he left India he had remitted from the Circars and the Deccan a vast fortune to France, where he married a niece of the Duc de Choiseul, and was shown the highest favour and consideration at the court of Louis XV.

As the negotiations for the treaty of peace went on, Clive joined Pitt and the Opposition in condemning and denouncing it. He foresaw what would follow—the restoration of Pondicherry and other places to France—and warmly urged that the French should be limited as to the number of men they were to maintain on the coast of Coromandel, and that—save as merchants—they should never be admitted into Bengal.

The Earl of Bute thanked him for his memorial on these matters, and though impatient to carry out the treaty, which was far indeed from satisfying Clive, the terms of it proved less unfavourable to our interests in India than they might have been; but the eleventh article nearly undid all that Clive, Coote, and others had done. It ran thus:—

“In the East Indies, Great Britain shall restore to France, in the condition they are now in, the different factories which that crown possessed, as well on the coast of Coromandel and Orixá as on that of Malabar, as also in Bengal, at the beginning of the year 1749. His Most Christian Majesty shall restore on his side all that he may have conquered from Great Britain in the East Indies during the present war; and will expressly cause Nattal and Tapanouly, in the island of Sumatra (given to the Dutch by the Count d’Estaing) to be restored: he engages further not to erect fortifications, or keep troops in any part of the dominions of the Soubah of Bengal. And in order to preserve future peace on the coast of Coromandel and Orixá, the English and French shall acknowledge

Mohammed Ally Khan for lawful Nabob of the Carnatic, and Salabut Jung for lawful Soubah of the Deccan; and both parties shall renounce all demands and pretensions of satisfaction with which they might charge each other or their Indian allies for the depredations or pillage committed on either side during the war.”*

Finding themselves quite unable to win over Clive to their interests, the Bute ministry began to league themselves with a Mr. Sullivan, and certain other directors of the Company, who openly hated him, and were forming plans to diminish alike his wealth and reputation. Nothing was said, as yet about his conduct towards Surajah Dowlah, or against his acceptance of treasure from Meer Jaffier after the battle of Plassey; but that which Sullivan, and those who leagued in jealousy and hate, called criminal, “was Clive’s acceptance of the jaghire, and his insisting on payment of those quit-rents from the Company.”

The best lawyers of the day maintained that the grant of rent which Clive had obtained was valid, and made exactly on the same terms as those by which the Company held their possessions in Bengal; they had acquiesced in the grant for two years, and in making any attempt to prove that Meer Jaffier was without the power to confer on Clive the estate in dispute, they must equally show that the nabob had no right to confer what he had done on the Company.

It was alike unwise and indelicate to scrutinise too closely any of those rights acquired in India; yet the directors, in their hostility and their avaricious desire to appropriate £30,000 per annum; which they were bound to pay to the nabob before his transfer of rent, and in their narrow-minded hatred of Clive, persevered in their plans, and actually confiscated the estate by stopping payment of the rents, which they put in their own pockets.

Lord Clive, equally impetuous and indignant, without the delay of a day, filed a bill in Chancery against the Court of Directors, who, under the guidance and influence of Sullivan, endeavoured to protract the judgment of Chancery by those stratagems of delays which the chicanery of the law so readily permits; but it is alleged that, damped by the same opinions delivered by Mr. Philip Yorke, who died Lord High Chancellor of Great Britain in 1770, and of Sir Fletcher Norton, afterwards first Lord Grantly, who died in 1789, and of other equally eminent lawyers, they became hopeless of obtaining a decision in their favour.

Clive determined to carry war into the enemy’s

* Cormick’s History, vol. i.

camp, had ordered his agents in Calcutta to institute proceedings against the Company there, and to transmit an exact account of them, that the same course might be adopted in Britain. But while this internal strife was going on, and the Company were seeking to crush the man who had buttressed up their crumbling power, and won for them provinces equal to empires, came the startling tidings that the garrison and all the British residents at Patna had been destroyed by the sword; that political movements undertaken by the feeble Council at Calcutta had proved wretched failures; and that all in Bengal was going to confusion, and worse than confusion.

Even the most bitter of the enemies of the hero of Plassey, of "Clive the Daring in War," saw that he, and he alone, could remedy these fatal evils, and overtures were made for his speedy return to India; and a meeting was summoned by the proprietors of stock, who were resolved that their present prosperity and hope of future profit should not suffer through the piques and party spirit of those directors whom they elected; and at a very full and general Court of the East India Company, Lord Clive was earnestly solicited to return and resume the management of affairs. At the same time the immediate restitution of the jaghire was proposed.

On this, Clive, who was present, not conceiving it right to take advantage of the present burst of feeling and sense of emergency, requested that this motion should not be put to the vote, adding, however, "that from a sense of the impropriety of going to India while so valuable a part of his property remained in dispute, he would make certain proposals for a compromise to the Court of Directors, which would, he trusted, lead to an amicable adjustment of the affair."

He also declared emphatically that he must decline to undertake the management of Indian affairs until the removal of Mr. Sullivan from his influential post of chairman, as he could never act as governor and commander-in-chief while his movements and measures in India were liable to be cavilled at, and condemned by, officials at home, especially by one who was ignorant of all Indian affairs, and was, moreover, his avowed and inveterate enemy. A tumult so loud followed this announcement that Mr. Sullivan could scarcely obtain a hearing; but as an overwhelming majority of those who were present declared that Clive, and Clive alone, could save Bengal, after Sullivan had wished to try the matter by ballot Clive was ultimately nominated "Governor and Commander-in-chief in India, with the express understanding that no officer, of whatever rank, should have the power of interfering with his command there."

Still he declined to accept the nomination until the next annual election of directors should become known. Accordingly, on the 25th of April, 1764, an obstinate contest ended in the triumph of Clive, while Sullivan's election as a director was carried by only one vote; and in his subsequent contest for the chair he was totally defeated, and two staunch friends of Clive, Messrs. Rous and Boulton, were elected respectively chairman and deputy-chairman. The affair of the jaghire was next taken into consideration, and the court agreed to the proposals made by Clive. "They confirmed his right to the full amount of the jaghire rents for ten years, if he should live so long, and provided the Company should continue during that period in possession of the lands round Calcutta charged with those rents."

So ended this unseemly dispute; and for the third and last time Clive sailed again for India, taking—as usual then and until recently—the long way round the Cape to Calcutta, which he reached on the 3rd of May, 1765. He found the confusion and disorganisation more fearful than he could have anticipated, and that Warren Hastings had been correct when surmising that the excesses and follies of the Europeans were as mischievous as the intrigues and crimes of the native rulers. Though the functionaries in India had long since received orders from Leadenhall Street that they were not to accept those presents which the native princes were so prone to give, eager for gain, and respecting but little the orders of negligent and far-distant masters, they had again set up for sale the wretched and thorny throne of Bengal. The sum of £140,000 sterling had been distributed among nine of the most powerful—perhaps the most corrupt—servants of the Company, and in consideration of this bribe an infant son of the deceased nabob had been placed on the musnud of his father; and the news of this degrading bargain was the first thing that Clive heard on his landing at Calcutta.

"Alas!" he wrote to a friend, "how is the English name sunk! I could not avoid paying the tribute of a few tears to the departed and lost fame of the British nation—irrecoverably so, I fear. However, I do declare by that great Being who is the Searcher of all hearts, and to whom we must be accountable if there be a hereafter, that I am come out with a mind superior to all corruption, and that I am determined to destroy these great and growing evils, or perish in the attempt!"

He summoned the Council, and told them his resolution to have a thorough reform, and to use to the fullest extent the civil and military powers

with which he had been vested. Then Mr. Johnstone, one of the boldest and most corrupt men present, made some show of opposition, until Clive interrupted him, and haughtily demanded, with knitted brow and raised voice, whether "he meant to question the authority of the new government;" and

Johnstone quailed before him, saying that he never had the least intention of doing such a thing; "upon which," wrote Clive, on the 6th of May, to his friend Major Carnac, "there was an appearance of very long and pale countenances, but not one of the Council uttered another syllable."

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE REVOLUTION IN BENGAL.—MEER JAFFIER DEPOSED.—MEER COSSIM MADE NABOB.—HIS QUARREL WITH THE COMPANY.

CLIVE fully redeemed his pledge; but ere we proceed to show how he did so, we must go back some five years in our narrative of Indian affairs.

Before Clive left India in February, 1760, he had secured the appointment of Mr. Henry Vansittart (who ten years after was drowned in the *Aurora* frigate) as his successor in the government, and of Colonel Caillaud as commander of the forces. The latter appointment took immediate effect, but the former, as Mr. Vansittart had been previously attached to the Madras Presidency, for a time was deferred, and, by virtue of seniority, the office was temporarily conferred on Mr. Holwell, the survivor of the Black Hole catastrophe, the son of Zephaniah Holwell, a timber merchant and citizen of London. During the brief tenure of his office, Mr. Holwell, by hard labour, had succeeded in convincing his colleagues that another revolution in Bengal was necessary, and when Mr. Vansittart arrived to assume office in July, the whole scheme was laid before him. The Nabob Meer Jaffier was to be cajoled or coerced into a resignation, and to rest satisfied with a merely nominal sovereignty, while the reality would be vested in Meer Cossim, his son-in-law. As a stranger to the local politics, Mr. Vansittart was naturally disposed to be guided by what he deemed the experience of the Council, and on their representations rather than on convictions of his own, he concurred in the proposed revolution; but prior to relating its results, it will be necessary to mention some important military operations.

About the time that Clive took his departure from India, it had been rumoured that Shah Zada had reappeared on the frontier, had collected an army, and was advancing upon Patna and Moorshedabad. The vizier, Ghazi-ud-Deen, at Delhi, against whom the Shah Zada alleged in the first

instance he had taken up arms, murdered the imbecile Mogul Emperor, Alumgeer II., in a fit of desperation, and consequently the Shah Zada was said to have become the legal claimant of the vacant throne. Accordingly he took upon him the state and title of emperor, calling himself Shah Alum, or "King of the World," and conferred the office of vizier upon Sujah Dowlah, the powerful ruler of Oude, who had shown but scanty interest in his fortunes when, in the year before, he was flying before the sword of Clive. With the assistance of this Oude nabob, Shah Alum collected a greater army, and appeared before Patna, where the native governor, Ramnarrain, had only in garrison seventy European soldiers and a slender battalion of our sepoys, and was, moreover, suspected in his fidelity to Meer Jaffier.

Patna must have fallen, had not Colonel Caillaud come suddenly on it at the head of 350 Europeans, 1,000 sepoys, under Colonel Cochrane, and six guns, together with 15,000 horse and twenty-six guns, with which he had been joined, when *en route*, under Meeran, the son of the Nabob Meer Jaffier. With these troops the colonel completely routed the "King of the World," and compelled him to retire from before Patna; but as Meeran, thinking, perhaps, that enough had been done, declined to pursue with his cavalry, and as a strong Mahratta force had joined the enemy, the new emperor, instead of retiring to Benares, suddenly took the route to Moorshedabad, and at the same time was joined by the erratic Scottish adventurer, James Francis Law, and a small body of Frenchmen who followed his fortunes, and, like him, had previously fought against Clive and Lawrence in the Carnatic.

On being followed up, Shah Alum left his camp in flames, and fled to Oude; but he was encouraged on

being joined with some fresh forces, under the sub-governor of Purneah, Khadem-Hussein, who, after many intrigues, threw off the mask of loyalty, and joined the invader's army. Shah Alum, doubling on his pursuers, got back to Patna, which had been left almost without troops, but a Scottish surgeon named Fullarton undertook to defend the place with all who would adhere to him, while to Law was assigned the task of attacking it.

Two assaults were gallantly repulsed by Fullarton and a few stout-hearted Britons belonging to the factory; part of the wall was breached and the rampart scaled by Law and his Frenchmen, who were hurled back; but a renewed attack, with greater numbers, was expected, and hope was abandoning Fullarton and his followers, when suddenly Captain Knox, who, in the hottest season of the year, had marched with singular rapidity from Moorshedabad, at the head of 200 Europeans, a battalion of sepoys, 300 horse, and five guns, broke through the besiegers, and leading the light troops of his force, drove them from their works.

During these conflicts, on the issue of which their lives depended, the people of Patna crowded the walls, with their minds full of alternate hope and fear; and while watching the ebb and flow of battle, were equally ready to welcome any one who could save their goods and existence.

This gallant officer (Captain Knox) had hoped to surprise the enemy's camp by night, but missed his way, and when day dawned, he found himself face to face with 12,000 men. To escape was impossible; there was nothing for it but to fight the enemy under Khadem-Hussein, whom he completely routed, and drove with all speed towards the north, whither he was followed by Colonel Caillaud and Meeran, who crossed the Ganges with his sable cavalry, and moved all the more actively and rapidly, from a belief that the traitor naib had with him all the treasure of Purneah.

The latter, finding himself hotly pressed, put the treasure of that extensive province upon camels and elephants, and, to give these animals some miles' start, he faced about and opened fire on his pursuers. After skirmishing for some time, he quitted the field with all speed, abandoning his baggage and cannon to the enemy.

On the 2nd of July, the fourth day of the pursuit, a tremendous storm necessitated a halt, during which a thunder-bolt struck the gilded tent of Meeran, killing him on the instant, and at the same time a professional story-teller, and a slave who was chafing his feet. Six round holes were found in the back of his head, the blade of the scimitar that lay on his pillow was partially melted, and the

tent-pole was charred. The French raised a rumour that he had been assassinated, and Edmund Burke alluded to it in his speech, when opening his charge against Warren Hastings. Meeran, who by his dreadful crimes merited this awful end, left none to regret him, and after this evil omen his troops became totally unmanageable, and Colonel Caillaud had to fall back on Patna.

Meanwhile, the troops of Meeran marched to Moorshedabad, where the treasury was totally empty, and where they threatened to slay their ruler, Meer Jaffier, if they did not receive their arrears of pay. Other bodies of malcontents now rose in arms against him, and the irruption of successive hordes of predatory Mahattas seemed about to consummate the ruin of the old and weak nabob.

Henry Vansittart, the new governor at Calcutta, on the other hand, found his exchequer empty, and all the troops, European and native alike, half mutinous for want of pay. In desperation, he was thus compelled to join in a plot for dethroning Meer Jaffier, and crowning a new Nabob of Bengal. Thus, on the 27th September, 1760, Meer Cossim Ali, his son-in-law, and general of his army (which he had attached to himself by settling the arrears of pay), engaged, by secret treaty, that when placed on the throne, he should make over to the half-bankrupt Company the fruitful provinces of Chittagong, Burdwan, and Midnapore, for the maintenance of an efficient force in Bengal, and that five lacs of rupees should be given as *douceur* for the war in the Carnatic.

That pretexts for this remarkable treaty might not be wanting, they alleged the detestation and contempt which Meer Jaffier had evoked by his misgovernment, his inability to contend with surrounding difficulties, and that the desperate state of the Company's exchequer made it an absolute necessity that their claims existing against him should be liquidated, and that those which were certain to be contracted in the future should be secured by some certain guarantee; but notwithstanding all these vague allegations, the gross injustice of the new revolution was but too apparent.

A gentle and somewhat formal man, Mr. Vansittart, in a somewhat conventional spirit, went personally to Moorshedabad, with the rather odd intention of persuading Meer Jaffier that he was equally unfitted for, and unworthy of, the throne, which he ought to resign, or abdicate, in favour of his son-in-law. On hearing this, the old nabob, we are told, stared with bewilderment, and chafed with natural wrath; "but the quiet and peace-loving

governor had brought 180 British soldiers, 600 sepoy, and four pieces of cannon to second his persuasions; his own [that is, Meer Jaffier's] army had declared for Meer Cossim, many of his own chiefs were seeking his life, and there was no help for him."

A message was then sent to the effect that if he did not comply, they should be obliged to storm the palace. Astonished and terrified by this menace, he ordered the gates to be opened to the

proper to break your engagements? I would not break mine! My dead son, Meeran, forewarned me of all this. I desire that you will either send me to Sabut Jung (Lord Clive), for he will do me justice, or let me go on a pilgrimage to Mecca; and if not, permit me to retire to Calcutta. You will, I suppose, let me have my women and children, therefore give me budgerows (river-boats) immediately."



BAS-RELIEF FROM AN INDIAN TEMPLE.



IDOL FROM AN INDIAN TEMPLE.

troops, exclaiming that he was betrayed. Most, if not all, of the documents connected with these affairs appear in Vansittart's "Transactions in Bengal from 1760 to 1764," and the letters of the unfortunate nabob disclose a dignity mingled with despair, that won alike the sympathy of the governor and of Warren Hastings, who received orders to arrange the new government with the ministers and functionaries at Moorshedabad, while Colonel Caillaud was directed to environ the palace with his troops. When a meeting took place between the last-named officer and the nabob, the latter said,—

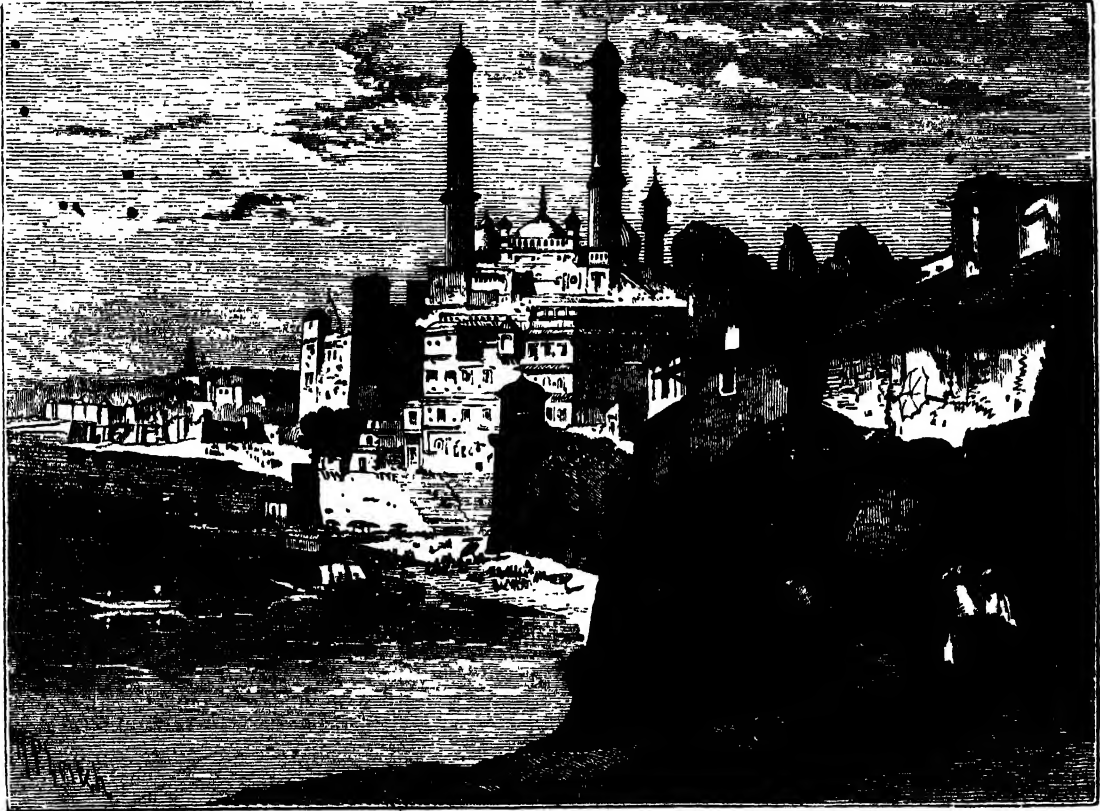
"You English placed me on the throne, so you may depose me if you please. You have thought

This last request of the nabob's was immediately laid hold of, though the effect of fear and despair, and construed into a voluntary resignation. "Accordingly," says the letter of an officer in the *Universal Magazine* for 1764, our troops took possession of the palace, Meer Cossim was raised to the musnud, and the old nabob was hurried into a boat, with a few of his women and necessaries, and sent away to Calcutta in a manner wholly unworthy of the high rank he had so lately held, as is also the scanty subsistence allowed him here by his successor." The latter was proclaimed nabob amid salutes of cannon and the thundering of gongs, drums, and tomtoms, while Mr. Vansittart,

Mr. Holwell, and others of the Council, who had for their own purposes effected this revolution, fondly assumed that the new prince would suit their purpose better than the deposed one; but Meer Cossim soon let them perceive that he had a will of his own, with a courage that would have been heroic but for his ferocious cruelty.

His subtle professions of gratitude seemed at first sincere, all the more that, having procured some money, he paid the arrears due to our troops

took ere the enemy had mustered in sufficient force. Meer Cossim had placed some of the troops that had belonged to Meeran under Carnac, who, on being joined by others under Rannattain, won an easy and complete victory over the Mogul. In this conflict, Law, who had been so long restlessly flitting from place to place, on being abandoned by his French companions, who were sick of the aimless life he led, seated himself astride one of his guns, and in that eccentric position sur-



VIEW OF BENARES.

at Patna, and sent about seven lacs of rupees to Calcutta. Yet the administration which Meer Cossim had installed in his new capacity of nabob at Moorshedabad, and was about to continue, seemed rather an uncertain one. The "King of the World" was again hovering on his frontier, and causing the alarm of another war. Accordingly Major John Carnac, who had succeeded Colonel Caillaud in command of the Company's Indian troops in Behar, fixed his headquarters at Patna, the celebrated capital of that province, early in January, 1761, and as soon as the rains—which in some seasons deepen the Ganges there sufficiently to float a man-of-war—ceased, he commenced operations against Shah Alum, whom he over-

rendered himself to Major Carnac, who paid him many high encomiums on his perseverance, conduct, and bravery, and sent him into camp in his own palanquin.

The defeated emperor retired towards Delhi, from the neighbourhood of which he sent Meer Cossim his investiture as Soubahdar of Bengal, Orissa, and Behar, in consideration of a yearly tribute of twenty-four lacs of rupees. And now the time had come when Mr. Vansittart seemed to think it important to form such a connection with the Emperor Shah Alum as might secure the sanction of his name to whatever measures it might be necessary to adopt. Consequently Major Carnac, instead of following up his victory, requested an

interview, and after some delay, was permitted to visit the humbled potentate in his camp, and after a friendly understanding had been formed, they returned together to Patna.

This was but the beginning of those fresh complications which Clive had to unravel on his third return to India, for now Meer Cossim not unnaturally betrayed great jealousy of this new and remarkable connection which the Company had formed; yet, in return for the investiture he had received, he was induced to acknowledge Shah Alum as emperor. The latter then took his departure for the west, with the intention of gaining possession of his capital, and Major Carnac, after escorting him to the frontiers of Behar, received a new offer of the dewannee for the Company—namely, the receivership of all Bengal, Behar, and Orissa—if they would send an army into Central India, to secure him the possession of Delhi, and of a throne that was tottering to its fall,—a project fully entertained by the Council at Calcutta, though, for pecuniary reasons, it was temporarily abandoned.

Meer Cossim now found himself pressed again and again for money, though he had paid to eight of the members of Council, personally, for his elevation, upwards of £200,000, of which Mr. Vansittart alone pocketed 500,000 rupees, or £58,333 sterling; while in ceding to the Company the provinces of Midnapore, Chittagong, and Burdwan, he had given away the third of his revenues. Accordingly, finding that he was being continually applied to for money, he in turn looked about him for some one to plunder, and his eye soon fell upon Ramnarrain, the Hindoo governor of Patna, whose coffers had long been an object of greedy solicitude to the dethroned Meer Jaffier, but had always been preserved by the influence of Clive.

On being warned of Meer Cossim's designs upon one who had been to us a faithful ally, Mr. Vansittart at first ordered Major Carnac to afford every protection to the doomed Ramnarrain; but being a man of a wavering mind, while he listened to the peaceful promises of the nabob on one hand, he took offence at some high-spirited remarks of the major, to supersede whom he now sent Colonel Coote to command in Patna; but, like Carnac, that officer, seeing the part he was expected to play in the coming tragedy, bluntly declined either to be an active agent in, or a passive spectator of, the destruction of the unfortunate Hindoo. Consequently he was recalled, and Ramnarrain was shamefully left to the mercy of Meer Cossim.

The latter now pretending that he simply meant to call him to a reckoning on account of some

arrears, which he said he and his father had never obtained, threw him into prison, while his house was broken open and ruthlessly plundered; his relations and servants were cruelly tortured by the most devilish devices to compel confession of where his supposed hidden treasures lay; yet the baffled tyrant found but very little to reward the risk he ran. Fearing the just indignation of such Englishmen as Coote and Carnac, he did not murder the man he had ruined; but two years later, when he came to blows with the Company, he deliberately slew in cold blood Ramnarrain and several other Hindoo and Mussulman chiefs.

The outrage at Patna caused the native nobles to lose all confidence in the Council and entire government at Calcutta; and all sects thinking it wiser to conciliate the new nabob than trust to foreigners who were equally faithless, offered alike their money and their swords to Meer Cossim, who thus began to flatter himself that he would soon be in a position to defy British intrusion; so thus the evil grew apace, and quarrels with Meer Cossim readily began.

A Mr. Ellis, a man of haughty and hot spirit, had been appointed head-factor at Patna, where, from the first day he entered on his official work, he acted as if his object had been, not to conciliate, but to exasperate the native government; and this system of folly soon produced its bitter fruit, for Meer Cossim, stung by petty insults which degraded him in the eyes of his people, began to scheme out vengeance.

"He began by complaining and protesting against the abuses made of the *dustuks*, or permits, by which he was deprived of his revenues, and, soon proceeding from words to deeds, he stopped goods protected by the *dustuks*, and he even stopped and searched boats going up the Ganges, not merely with the *dustuks*, but with the Company's flag flying. In nearly every instance he found salt, betel, tobacco, or some other of the articles prohibited or reserved to the nabob in the treaty; and in many instances he ascertained that the servants of the Company had sold the *dustuks* to natives—to his own subjects, who had no right to them. Frequent acts of violence accompanied these measures, for the British, and the natives in their service, would not easily submit to any search, and it was not in the nature of men like the officers and troops of the nabob to exercise the right of search with gentleness and moderation. To remedy these evils, Mr. Vansittart negotiated a new treaty, which, while leaving some advantages to the servants of the Company, made a surrender of others. But this inept governor had

not the faculty of enforcing obedience on the wilful and rapacious crew at Calcutta and the other British factories, and Meer Cossim had neither the power nor the will to make the treaty be observed on his side."

Thus, finding that in every way his revenue suffered, Meer Cossim resolved, after the insults of Mr. Ellis, to tolerate this state of affairs no longer, and doubtless, tyrannical and rapacious though he was, he had justice on his side in this instance; and in writing to Vansittart in March, 1762, he said: "From the factory in Calcutta to Cossimbazar, Patna, and Dacca, all the English chiefs, with their *gomastaks*, officers, and agents, in every district of the government, act as collectors, renters, and magistrates, and, setting up the Company's colours, allow no power to my officers. And besides this, the *gomastaks* and other servants in every district, in every market and village, carry on a trade in oil, fish, straw, bamboos, rice, paddy, betel-nut, and other things; and every man with a Company's dustuk regards himself as not less than the Company."

In the end, finding that the grievances of which he complained were not likely to be remedied, and

that the Company, backed by their Council, ultimately insisted on trading free, he declared the whole inland trade to be *free*.

This dictum caused the greatest consternation at Calcutta, for it cut up by the roots that system of private trade monopoly by which so many princely fortunes were made; so the quarrel progressed, till it became too evident that cold steel alone could decide it. Though two deputies of the Company, Messrs. Amyatt and Hay, were in his territory, vainly seeking to bring about an accommodation, Meer Cossim resolved to write no more, and calling the boldest of his soubahdars around him, he deliberately seized two of the Company's boats that were proceeding on the river with arms to Patna, while he made preparations for getting that place into his possession, and destroying all our troops that were there.

According to a quarto volume published by a member of the Mayor's Court, Calcutta, the then revenues of the provinces of Bengal, Behar, and Orissa, collected by the Company, were worth £3,600,000 sterling yearly, and might, he adds, with management have been by this time (1762) increased to £6,000,000.*

CHAPTER XIX.

MEER COSSIM DEPOSED.—DEFEATED BY MAJOR ADAMS.—MASSACRE OF THE EUROPEANS AT PATNA.—
BATTLES OF BUXAR AND KORAH.

BEING secretly apprised of the nabob's intentions, a majority of the Council sent orders to Mr. Ellis, their chief at Patna, to anticipate his design by taking possession of the citadel, if he had reason for believing that the secret information was true. Aware of the bad feeling existing between Meer Cossim and Mr. Ellis, Mr. Vansittart and Warren Hastings voted against giving Ellis so much discretionary power; but he acted upon it the instant he received it, and accordingly, on the night of the 24th June, 1763, took by surprise the citadel of Patna.

Prior to Mr. Ellis thus bearding the lion in his den, blood had been shed in the vicinity of Patna. He had perceived that discontent and desertion were becoming dangerously prevalent among our sepoys there, and probably was correct in attributing this to the influence of Meer Cossim, whose people sometimes defended the deserters by having recourse

to arms. Some of these fugitives took refuge in the fort of Monghir, and Ellis, as resolute as he was violent, sent a party of troops with orders to search the place. The *killedar* in command refused them admission, on the plea that Monghir was both a fortress and royal residence of the nabob, and could not be searched. Shots were exchanged, and Ellis, in hot anger, ordered the officer to hold his ground within a mile and a half of the place.†

On receiving news that his personal enemy had captured the citadel of Patna, the nabob was transported with a fury that knew no bounds. As soon as the citadel, which is small, was taken, an indiscriminate plunder of the city followed, and so great was the disorder that reigned everywhere, that a small party of the soubahdars entered the city at

* "Consideration of Indian Affairs," by Alderman Bakt.

† Gleig's "Life of Warren Hastings."

noon next day and retook it, putting the pillagers to the sword. The clerks and other gentlemen of the factory, with the slender remains of the troops, fled across the Ganges to Chuprah, but were all destroyed or captured—those who had the latter fate were sent prisoners to Monghir, where they found, as companions in their misery, their countrymen from the factory at Cossimbazar, which had been attacked and plundered at the same time. When Ellis attacked Patna, Mr. Amyatt had begun his homeward journey, but a party sent after him by order of the nabob seized him, and in the scuffle he was murdered, as were also two Hindoo bankers, who were supposed to be attached to British interests; and now, while plunging thus into war, we had but four line regiments in all India, the 39th, 79th, 84th, and 89th, or old Gordon Highlanders, of which the first alone is now in existence.

Four days after these events, a letter was written by the Nabob Cossim to Mr. Vansittart, which displays the sarcastic bitterness of his heart, and in which he alleges the rout of a band of robbers who managed British affairs in Patna, a ground for demanding the restitution of all the lands of the soubahdaree surrendered by him on his accession to power.

“To the Governor, &c., June 28th, 1763.

“In my heart I believed Mr. Ellis to be my inveterate foe, but from his actions I now find he was inwardly my friend, as appears by this step which he has added to the others. Like a night-robber, he assaulted the Petta of Patna, robbed and plundered the bazaar and all the merchants of the city, ravaging and slaying from the morning to the third *pahr* (afternoon).

“When I requested of you 200 or 300 muskets laden in boats, you would not consent to it. This unhappy man, in consequence of his inward friendship, favoured me, in this fray and slaughter, with all the cannon and muskets of his army, and is himself relieved and eased from his burden. Since it was never my desire to injure the affairs of the Company, whatever loss may have been occasioned by this unhappy man to myself, in this tumult, I pass over; but you, gentlemen, must answer for any injury which the Company's affairs have suffered; and since you have unjustly and cruelly ravaged the city, destroyed the people, and plundered effects to the value of many lacs of rupees, it becomes the justice of the Company to make restitution to the poor, as was formerly done for Calcutta.

“You, gentlemen, are *wonderful friends*; having made a treaty to which you pledged the name of

Jesus Christ, you took from me a country to pay the expenses of your army, with the conditions that your troops should always attend me, and promote my affairs. In effect, you keep up a force for my destruction, since from their hands such events have proceeded. I am entirely of opinion that the Company should favour me, in causing to be delivered to me the rents for three years of my country.

“Besides this, for the violence and oppression exercised for several years past in the territories of the Nizamat, and the large sums extorted, and the losses occasioned by them, it is proper and just that the Company should make restitution at this time. This is all the trouble you need take; in the same manner as you took Burdwan and other lands, you must favour me in resigning them.”

Mr. Warren Hastings, of whom we shall have much more to record at a future time, had become so disgusted with the selfishness, trickery, and gross injustice of the Council, that he had resolved to resign his place among them; but his patriotism, as a Briton, became inflamed by what he called “the unparalleled acts of barbarity and treachery” with which the new war was opened on the part of the nabob.

The Council at Calcutta now entered into new arrangements with the very man they had deposed, old Meer Jaffier; and, as the best mode of curbing the new career of his son-in-law, Meer Cossim, resolved to replace him on his throne. Completely passive in their hands, this Indian Baliol granted an exemption to the Company's servants from all duties save upon salt; he engaged to pay the Company thirty lacs of rupees, and to maintain, at his own charge, an army of 24,000 horse and foot.

To the cities of his three great provinces, Bengal, Orissa, and Behar, he issued his mandates as their lawful and indisputable nabob, and joined the British, who had taken the field, and were now marching on Moorshedabad. The forces were under the command of Major Thomas Adams, of the 84th Regiment, who had with him only 750 Europeans, with some native cavalry and infantry. Starting from the vicinity of Chandernagore on the 24th July, he came to blows with Meer Cossim who had taken up an intrenched position in front of Moorshedabad.

Cossim's army was formidable, not only from its numbers, but from having with it a great body of sepoys, who had been well trained in the European manner by a Swiss adventurer named Sumroo, who had been a sergeant in the French service. His troops, however, gave way, and after a brief

opposition, the intrenchments were stormed, and the British entered Moorshedabad, while Cossim retreated, leaving behind him all his guns. Adams, after a short halt, continued his march up the Hooghley, and reaching Sooty on the 2nd of August, found the enemy encamped on the Gheriah. Two days before this, Major Adams had been joined, from Burdwan, by Major Carnac, with 100 Europeans, a battalion of sepoy, a rissala of black horse, and two pieces of cannon.

Major Adams reports in his despatch to Charles, Earl of Egremont, that he came in sight of the enemy between seven and eight in the morning, drawn up in order of battle, and much more numerous than he expected. There were 8,000 sepoy, 20,000 horse, twenty pieces of cannon, besides matchlockmen and rocketmen, armed with that terrible species of missile termed by the French the *fougette à feu*, in the use of which the Indians excelled. "The artillery were all mounted in the English manner, and served by 200 Europeans taken at Patna, of which one company were artillerymen, and their sepoy were armed, clothed, and accoutred like our own. The whole was divided into brigades, and posted in a very advantageous manner."

The troops formed line to the front without receiving a shot till they began the attack, after which the conflict was maintained with great resolution for about four hours, when the enemy gave way, abandoning sixteen pieces of cannon, two of which were four-pounders. Their cavalry charged the 84th Regiment, when partially separated from the rest of the line, with great spirit, in front and rear three different times, coming within a few yards of the bayonets. Of the enemy 2,000 lay dead on the field, and eighty Europeans, all foreigners, deserted to Major Adams, with 150 boats laden with military stores. The Britons captured at Patna refused to join the service of the nabob, so he kept them prisoners at Monghir.*

During the battle, Meer Cossim kept safely within the fort at Monghir, where he vented his fury by committing several atrocious murders, and among others who perished was the unfortunate Ramnarrain, whom he had kept in captivity ever since he had been so shamefully abandoned by Mr. Vansittart. As if he gathered courage from the blood he had shed, he now joined his army, which had taken up a strong position near Oudanullah, a fort on the right bank of the Ganges, eight miles south of Rajahmahal. There he is said to have had 60,000 men in trenches armed by 100 pieces of cannon.

* Despatches.

Our strength was barely 3,000 men, who for some days made regular approaches under cover, by the shovel, till three in the morning of the 4th September, when the vast works of the enemy, including a ditch fifty-four feet wide, were attacked bravely by two companies of British grenadiers and one of French volunteers, together with five companies of sepoy grenadiers, the whole led by Captain Irwin, of H.M. 84th Regiment; 1,000 sepoy with two guns formed the supports. The whole line of works was carried; "the number of slain," reported Adams, "is incredible, and the number drowned exceeded the slain."

Cossim fled back to Monghir, for the rout was complete; of his cavalry 1,500 were taken prisoners, but were dismounted, disarmed, and dismissed, "the first instance of the kind ever known in this country." The whole district was strewed with dead bodies, and on our troops approaching the Pass of Tillia Gheriah, which had been armed with cannon, the fort was instantly abandoned, and on this we took, including swivels and cannon of all kinds, 265 pieces.

Major Adams now attacked and took Monghir, but Cossim had escaped to Patna, where he meditated a horrid massacre, for while before the fort, Major Adams received from him a letter, which after containing an ominous allusion to his prisoners, concludes thus:—

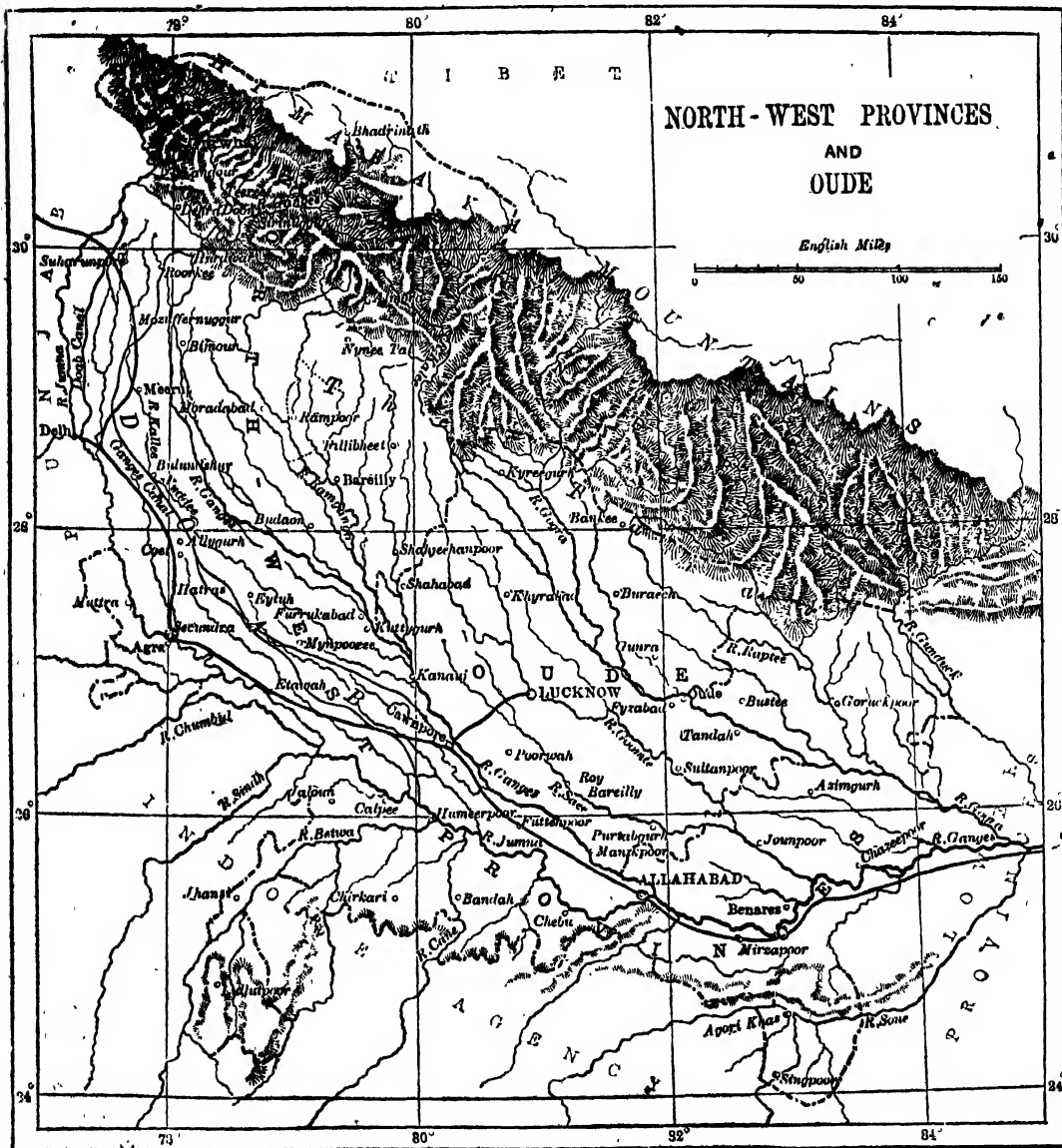
"Exult not upon the success which you have gained, merely by treachery and night assaults, in two or three places over a few jemidars sent by me. *By the will of God*, you shall see in what manner this shall be revenged and retaliated."

Rendered desperate by the fall of Monghir, he now ordered the butchery of all his prisoners, and to the very letter this was executed by Sumroo, whom Major Adams calls "a German and an infamous villain," while Malcolm asserts that he was a Frenchman, whose *nom de guerre* had been "Sombre" in the French service. By this wretch, every British prisoner in Patna, to the number of nearly 200, was murdered, except Dr. Fullarton, at a banquet to which he, singularly enough, invited them. Previously to the slaughter beginning, the knives and forks were all removed, and the unhappy men defended themselves as well as they could with plates, bottles, and furniture, till the last of them was shot or cut down. "These barbarous soldiers," says Cormick, "revolted at the savage order: they refused at first to obey, desiring that arms might be given to the British, and that they would then engage them. Sumroo, fixed in his purpose, compelled them by threats and blows to the accomplishment of that odious service."

Even a little child of Mr. Ellis was put to death, as was also a Captain Jochier who was found alive three days after

Aware that he was now completely beyond the pale of mercy, Meer Cossim fled from Patna, which Adams stormed on the 6th of November, taking

late to catch the fugitive, who, with Sumroo, sought the protection of the Nabob of Oude, Sujah Dowlah, who had just been nominated vizier to the young emperor, at Allahabad, and with him was Shah Alum. Having previously concluded a treaty with the fugitive nabob, he affected to



MAP OF OUDE AND THE NORTH-WEST PROVINCES.

there, and at Monghir, 212 guns and seventeen tumbrils, and though there were but slender hopes of overtaking the blood-stained fugitive, our troops, inspired with fresh fury, continued the pursuit.*

Early in December, the major was at Caramnassa, a river of Hindostan whose waters are supposed to have so evil an effect that its name implies "The Destroyer of Pious Deed," but he was too

* *London Gazette*, June 16th, 1764.

attempt his restoration, and marched his army to Benares, where he encamped within a few miles of the British troops. He was still accompanied by the young Mogul, who had some forces under his orders, and as a portion of the sepoys trained by Sumroo still followed that scoundrel, the entire mass at Benares was formidable.

It was at this most critical time that a very alarming mutiny broke out in the camp of Major



THE SEFOYS AT BUXAR.

Adams ; many of the sepoy's deserted to the enemy, and whole platoons of French, Germans, and Swiss, who had taken service under our colours, marched off to Benares, with their arms and accoutrements. Thus Major Carnac, who arrived to take command, deemed it prudent to fall back on Patna, where the mutinous spirit was fostered by the scarcity of provisions, and where his camp outside the walls was suddenly attacked, on the 3rd May, by an overwhelming force of the enemy's best disciplined infantry, led "by the devil Sumroo." But the spirit of disaffection had vanished at the sight of the enemy ; the sepoy's in English pay rivalled in steadiness the native British troops ; attack after attack was repulsed, and the battle, which began at noon, was ended at sunset by the defeat and rout of the assailants. Almost immediately after this reverse, the Nabob of Oude opened up a correspondence with Meer Jaffier, the restored nabob, and offered to support him in Bengal and Orissa, "if he would cede to Oude the whole country of Behar."

In the true Indian spirit of falsehood and intrigue, the Emperor Shah Alum sent a message to Major Carnac, offering to abandon both the Nabob of Oude and Meer Cossim, in barter for our alliance and protection. These proposals came to nothing for the present, for Major Carnac, as a preliminary, demanded the surrender of the murderers, Cossim and Sumroo, so the two nabobs and the emperor retreated from Behar into Oude.

In May, Major Hector Munro reached Patna at the head of his Gordon Highlanders, just as the spirit of mutiny was appearing again, and he took sterner and prompter measures than his predecessors to crush it, and in this, says General Stewart, he was well supported by his own regiment. In front of the line, he blew twenty-five of the discontented from the mouths of his cannon, and from that day forward every clamour ceased. These twenty-five—one account says fifty—were selected by lot out of a whole battalion of sepoy's who, after threatening to murder their European officers, were marching off by night to join the enemy, but were surrounded and taken in their bivouac. They were tried by a drum-head court-martial, and found guilty by their native officers. When four had been blown to atoms, the sepoy's tumultuously declared the executions should stop there ; but the resolute Highland officer ordered the artillery to load with grape, and turn their guns upon them, while he drew up the Gordons and the English corps between the wheels, and ordered the sepoy's to ground their arms. They obeyed, and these terrible executions went on to the end.

As soon as the rainy season was over, Major

Munro, now in command of the whole, led his reformed army once more against the enemy. On the 15th September, his entire strength was 857 Europeans, 5,279 sepoy's, 918 black cavalry—in all 7,054 men, with twenty guns.

On that day he crossed the Sona, where some earthworks had been thrown up ; these he captured, and after suffering considerable annoyance from the native cavalry who hung upon his flanks, on the 22nd October he reached the town and fort of Buxar, situated on the right bank of the Ganges, in the province of Behar. The fort is small and square, having a high rampart, cased with smooth green turf, with a lower fort extending to the river. The town is large, with several handsome mosques and bazaars, and there before it ensued a battle by which Hector Munro confirmed the British in possession of Bengal and Behar.

The Vizier Sujah Dowlah and Meer Cossim occupied an intrenched camp, with their combined forces, amounting to 40,000, some say 60,000 men. The details of the battle are given with the brevity that is characteristic of a soldier, by Major Munro, in his letter of the 26th October, to John, Earl of Sandwich, then Secretary of State.

"I have the pleasure to acquaint your lordship that His Majesty's troops and the India Company's, which I have the honour to command, have gained a complete victory over the King and the Vizier of Hindostan, the 23rd of this month. Their army consisted of 50,000 men at least. Enclosed I have the honour to send your lordship a return of ours. They had 6,000 men killed on the field of battle, and we took 130 pieces of cannon from them, besides several stores of different kinds.

"On the 22nd I encamped so near the enemy's camp, as to be just out of range of their shot. On the morning of the action, at daylight, I went out with some of the principal officers to reconnoitre their situation, intending to attack them the following day ; but finding the whole army under arms, returned to camp, ordered in our advance posts and grand-guards (*i.e.*, guards commanded by a field-officer), the drums beat to arms, and in less than twenty minutes after, the line of battle was formed, having made my disposition for it the day before. They began to cannonade us at nine in the morning, and in half an hour after, the action became general. We had a morass in our front which prevented our moving forward for some time, by which means—as the number of cannon they had well-levelled, and equally well-disciplined, galled us very much—I was forced to order a battalion of sepoy's from the right of the first line, to move forward to silence one of their batteries which

played upon our flank, and was obliged to support it by another battalion from the second line, which had the desired effect. I then ordered both lines to face to the right and keep marching in order to clear the left wing of the morass, and when done to face our former front, the right wing wheeling up to the left, to clear a tope or small wood, that was upon our right. Then the first line moved forward, keeping up a very brisk cannonade.

"I sent orders to Major Pemble, who commanded the second line, to face it to the right-about and follow the first; but that officer saw the propriety of that movement so soon, that he began to put it in execution before he received my order. Immediately after, both lines pushed forward with so much ardour and resolution, at which time the small arms began, that the enemy began to give way, and at five minutes before twelve, their whole army was put to flight.

"Give me leave, my lord, to intreat your lordship may be pleased to acquaint His Majesty with the gallant and brave behaviour of the troops in general, and I beg particularly to recommend Captain Charles Gordon of the 89th (Highland) Regiment, my aide-de-camp, for his brave and spirited behaviour. . . . I wish Major Pemble might be recommended to the Chairman and Court of Directors for his bravery and good conduct. Both these officers had their horses shot under them. I have the honour to be, &c.,

"HECTOR MUNRO."

The lists of casualties gave of Europeans killed, wounded, and missing of all ranks, 70; of natives, 746; and 112 horses killed.*

For this victory, which was so important in its results, Munro was immediately made a lieutenant-colonel, and received the thanks of the Council at Calcutta; while Sujah Dowlah, execrating his allies, fled on the spur to Lucknow. Shah Alum repeated to Munro the overtures he had made to Carnac, complaining that Sujah Dowlah treated him more like a state prisoner than a monarch. The major applied to the Council for orders, and he was at once authorised to treat with the emperor, who, in the meanwhile, with such troops as adhered to him, kept close to our camp.

When Munro halted in Benares, Sujah Dowlah offered him twenty-five lacs of rupees for the Company, twenty-five more to distribute among his soldiers, and eight for himself, if he would quit the kingdom of Oude; but the Highlander, like his English comrade, sternly declined to treat with the nabob in any matter until Meer Cossim and Sumroo

were given over to him for due punishment. Sujah Dowlah, who had already quarrelled with the ex-nabob, and seized all the treasure that personage had with him, urged "that he could not be guilty of a breach of the sacred laws of hospitality, but that he would undertake to induce Meer Cossim to abandon all thoughts of sovereignty and flee to some distant country, where he could give no umbrage to the Company or Meer Jaffier."

Concerning Sumroo he was less scrupulous, and proposed to invite him to a feast, as he had invited the British at Patna, and there have him "publicly murdered, in presence of any English gentleman Munro might choose to send to witness the punishment." Such proposals met with little sympathy in the British camp, so the negotiations came to an end, while those with the emperor were hurried to a close. The latter, as Mogul and lord of all the land, granted to Britain the country of Gazipore, or Ghazipur, with an area of 2,300 square miles, ever regarded as one of the most fertile districts of Hindostan, and famous for its breed of cavalry horses, with all the rest of the territory of Bulwunt Sing, Zemindar of Benares; the British, in return, agreeing to put Shah Alum in possession of the city of Allahabad and the remainder of the dominions of Sujah Dowlah. As a last and desperate expedient, the latter applied to Ghazi-ud-Deen, vizier and assassin of the late emperor, father of Shah Alum, for aid; and this chief, on being joined by Mulhar Rao Holkar, burst into Oude at the head of his Mahratta horse. With these allies, Sujah Dowlah once more measured swords with us, as we had taken possession of Lucknow, his capital, and Allahabad, the greatest fortress in the country. On the 3rd of May, 1765, a battle was fought near Korah, in the province of Allahabad, by our troops, under the command of Carnac, now a general. Our artillery cut the Mahrattas to pieces, and the whole of the confederate army was driven across the Jumna.

About this time the aged Meer Jaffier died. The Council at Calcutta had recalled him from the army in order to wring money out of him; but having none to give, and being fretted, harassed, and fevered by importunities on one hand and threats on the other, the unhappy old man was allowed to retire to his palace at Moorshedabad, where he breathed his last on the 31st of January, 1765, four months before the battle of Korah. Sujah Dowlah took refuge in Rohilcund; Meer Cossim escaped, and went in quest of his jewels. Sumroo abandoned the vizier when his cause ceased to be prosperous or his service profitable, and fled to far-off regions beyond the Indus. The Council,

* *London Gazette*, 1765.

incompetent and unsteady, and occupied to the full by their usual occupations of plunder and oppression, knew not what course to take now, for Bengal was nearly ruined. The minds of all men there had been unsettled by successive revolutions; trade and industry had disappeared. "The Council and the native rulers had, by their unprincipled ambition,

turned it into a vast Aceldama. The directors in London knew all this, and sought, and found a remedy."

This remedy was Lord Clive, whose landing in India we have already related, and the effect that his presence and menaces had upon Mr. Johnstone and other members of the Council.

CHAPTER XX.

CLIVE DICTATOR IN INDIA.—STATE OF THE COUNTRY.—DISCONTENTS IN THE BENGAL ARMY.— REFORMS CONTINUED.

AFTER his arrival, Clive found that old Meer Jaffier was dead, and that there had been appointed a new nabob in the person of Nujeem-ud-Dowlah, his son, but that the Council had placed the whole management of his affairs under the control of an agent appointed by themselves.

Covenants which interdicted all the servants of the Company from accepting presents had reached India in the preceding January, a short time before the death of Meer Jaffier, and consequently were in possession of the Council, when those remarkable individuals openly set them at defiance by accepting bribes on the accession of Nujeem-ud-Dowlah, on the shallow pretext of leaving the said covenants unsigned, and that they could not think of settling anything finally until the arrival of Lord Clive.

After that, one of the first resolutions of the select committee was, that the covenants should be signed instantly. Delay was still urged; but the Council were told that they must sign at once or quit the service. It was but too evident that Oriental luxury, corruption, and the desire for amassing large fortunes in a little time, had so universally infected the Company's servants, that nothing less than a total reform could avert impending ruin.

"Fortunes of £100,000," said Lord Clive, "have been acquired in the space of *two years*; and individuals very young in the service are returning home with a million and a half."

It has been thought worthy of notice that when the covenants were transmitted to the officers of the army for signature, General Carnac, though commander-in-chief, and a member of the select committee, declined to sign; but this was on special grounds. He had received a gift of 80,000 rupees, from Bulwunt Sing, the chief of Benares. The

covenants bore a date antecedent to that of the gift, but as he had not been aware of their existence, he refused to sign till the date was altered, so that he might not lie under the charge of having violated them.

Soon after his arrival at Calcutta, Lord Clive, on the 24th of June, 1765, proceeded to the north-west, to negotiate in person with the emperor and the Nabob of Oude, who, having lost all hope of successful contention with us, had come to the camp of General Carnac, and thrown himself upon the generosity of Britain. On the 16th of August, a treaty was signed at Allahabad. By this it was agreed that Shah Alum, the Mogul, was to be satisfied with the possession of Allahabad and Korah, and that all the rest of Oude should be restored to Sujah Dowlah, who was to continue vizier to the emperor; never, on any occasion, were they to consort with, or give shelter to, Meer Cossim or Sumroo; and they were to oppose the Mahrattas and defend the frontier of Bengal; while the British bound themselves to assist the Mogul in all cases of invasion. In right of his imperial authority, which would have been but a name without the presence of our troops, the Mogul ceded to Britain the dewanee, or collection of the revenues in Bengal, Behar, and Orissa, in return for which he was to receive, in addition to the revenues of Allahabad and Korah, twenty-six lacs of rupees per annum.

In short, along with this dewanee, which in effect constituted the Company lords and masters over the vast and fertile regions named in the grant, the young Mogul confirmed the right of the Company to every other acre they possessed in India.

Though this treaty was a master-stroke of Clive, it was the beginning of a connection with Oude

which, to the present hour, has been a fruitful source of trouble to Britain, and the end of which we cannot yet foresee.

On the accession of Nujeem-ud-Dowlah, a spiritless youth (who desired us to take the whole military defence of the country into our own hands), to the nominal musnud of Bengal, the Council had named Mohammed Reza Khan, a Mussulman, a man of honour and ability, to the post of naib, which the new nabob wished to be held by Nuncomar, one of the worst of the Hindoo chiefs; but Clive on his arrival concluded that Nujeem was as unfit to be nabob as Nuncomar was to be naib, and compelled the young man to retire from the occupation of royalty on a pension of thirty-two lacs of rupees.

Lord Clive had always disapproved, even when at home in England, of the first revolution effected by the Company, in the deposition of old Meer Jaffier; and he considered that the violence and rashness of most of the Council, and the excessive licence permitted to the junior servants of the Company, and to their still more rapacious native agents, "had precipitated the revolution against Meer Cossim, who," in his opinion, "having been once elevated to the musnud, and made to pay for that elevation, ought to have been maintained upon it, and kept in the right way by a mixture of conciliatory and restrictive measures."

Though he was totally without confidence in the faith or honour of the native chiefs and princes, he conceived the possibility of managing them, and deemed it most injurious to Britain that the Company should be perpetually making and breaking treaties with them, and keeping the whole of Bengal in a state of change and uncertainty. Before his departure from Europe he had assured the Court of Directors that by this kind of conduct we had lost the confidence of the people of India.

"To restore this ought to be our principal object," he continued, "and the best means, in my opinion, will be by establishing a moderation in the advantages which may be reserved for the Company, or allotted to individuals in this service. During Mr. Vansittart's government all your servants thought themselves entitled to take large shares in the monopolies of salt, betel, and tobacco (reserved by treaty to the nabob); the three articles, next to grain, of greatest consumption in the empire. The odium of seeing such monopolies in the hands of foreigners need not be insisted on. But this is not the only inconvenience; it is equally productive of another, quite as prejudicial to the Company's interests—it enables many of your

servants to obtain, very suddenly, fortunes greater than those which, in former times, were thought a sufficient reward for a long continuance in your service."

In one passage of singular brilliance in his "Essay on the Life of Clive," Macaulay thus sums up or describes the then state of Bengal:—

"At every one of these revolutions the new prince divided among his foreign masters whatever could be scraped together in the treasury of his fallen predecessor. The immense population of his (Meer Cossim's) dominions was given up as a prey to those who had made him a sovereign, and could unmake him. The servants of the Company obtained—not for their employers, but for themselves—a monopoly of almost the whole internal trade. They forced the natives to buy dear and sell cheap. They insulted, with impunity, the tribunals, the police, and the fiscal authorities of the country. They covered with their protection a set of native dependants, who ranged through the provinces, spreading desolation and terror wherever they appeared. Every servant of a British factor was armed with all the power of his master, and his master was armed with all the power of the Company. Enormous fortunes were thus rapidly accumulated at Calcutta, while thirty millions of human beings were reduced to the extremity of wretchedness. They had been accustomed to live under tyranny, but never tyranny like this. They found the little finger of the Company thicker than the loins of Surajah Dowlah. Under their old masters they had at least one resource—when the evil became insupportable the people rose and pulled down the government. But the English government was not to be so shaken off. That government, oppressive as the most oppressive form of barbarian despotism, was strong with all the strength of civilisation. It resembled the government of evil genii rather than the government of human tyrants. Even despair could not inspire the soft Bengalee with courage to confront men of English breed—the hereditary nobility of mankind—whose skill and valour had so often triumphed in spite of tenfold odds. The unhappy race never attempted resistance. Sometimes they submitted in patient misery. Sometimes they fled from the white man, as their fathers had been used to fly from the Mahratta; and the palanquin of the English traveller was often carried through silent villages and towns, which the report of his approach had made desolate. The foreign lords of Bengal were naturally objects of hatred to all the neighbouring powers; and to all, the haughty race presented a dauntless front."

This was the state of affairs to which Clive had

come, as he hoped, to make an end, and when he returned to Calcutta in September, most irksome were the duties that lay before him. He had enforced the signature of the covenants interdicting presents, but as large bribes had been given and received after these documents arrived, and they were therefore, though unsigned, or unexecuted, legally binding, it was deemed necessary to make strict inquiries regarding them; and in the sequel, Mr. Spencer, the governor, and nine other leading officials, were dismissed from the Company's service.

Every member of Council had more or less shared in the profit system, and the most rapacious and oppressive of their civil servants were those who had the highest patronage at home—for in Leadenhall Street kinsmen and friends, or near connections, were influential directors and shareholders; and the general task of reform that Clive had before him was a harder battle than Plassey to fight.

One of his first proceedings after his arrival in the country was to reorganise the army of Bengal, by telling off the corps of which it was composed into three divisions or brigades. These, which consisted respectively of one European regiment of infantry, now in the British service, one company of artillery, one squadron of native cavalry, and six battalions of sepoy, were stationed, the first brigade at Monghir, the second at Bankpore, near Patna, 100 miles beyond Monghir, and the third at Allahabad, 100 miles beyond Patna, as a corps of observation on the Mahrattas. Though there existed a perfect understanding among the officers attached to these brigades, the whole of them regarded a threatened diminution of their allowance of double *batta* with disgust. It was even agreed, so early as December, 1765, says Gleig, that the meditated act should be resisted, and that the publication of any edict requiring them to dispense with that field allowance should be a signal for a general resignation of their commissions, and, in effect, a dissolution of the entire army. We are somewhat at a loss, says his biographer, to account for the extraordinary deficiency of intelligence which kept Clive in ignorance of this conspiracy up to the very moment of its completion; yet that the case was so, the event completely proved.

On the 1st of January, 1766, an order was issued that the double *batta* should cease, and that the troops in Bengal should be placed on a footing similar to those upon the coast of Coromandel, that is to say, single *batta* when in the field, and when in garrison none at all. In a very short period the spirit of discontent spread throughout the subaltern officers, to such an extent that 200

commissions were collected for resignation, at a time when 60,000 Mahrattas were on the frontiers, within 150 miles of Allahabad.

Early in April, Clive hurried to Moorshedabad, where a congress of native chiefs was held, when a letter of Sir Robert Fletcher, who had succeeded to the command of the army at Monghir, on the departure of Colonel Hector Munro, made him aware that the army was in a state of mutiny. Though Sir Robert wrote in strong terms, Lord Clive could scarcely persuade himself that the danger was so imminent, till a brief inquiry satisfied him that it was so.*

From Colonel Smith, the officer commanding at Allahabad, he learned that his officers, like those of Fletcher, were also in a state of mutiny; that the Mahrattas were in motion, that they were collecting boats, and that the European troops of the Company could no longer be relied on—that, in fact, ruin seemed at hand. Clive instructed Smith to keep a resolute front, and only yield when there could be no alternative between concession to the discontented and destruction at the hands of the enemy.

Urging the Council at Calcutta to lose no time in procuring a fresh number of officers, pointing out that among the merchants, whose all was at stake, some might be found fit for service, he hastened towards Monghir, and hurried to the chief seat of the conspiracy, relying on the steadiness of the sepoy, whom he knew to be devoted to himself. Without the hesitation of an hour, he placed the ringleaders under arrest, accepted the resignations of all, and sent the more eminent defaulters as prisoners to Calcutta. A few courts-martial followed, many were cashiered, some were permitted to retire on pensions, and some were reinstated; but Sir Robert Fletcher, who was tried on a charge of concealment of mutiny, was found guilty and dismissed the service.

Though H.M. (old) 96th Foot had come to India, two out of the first four British regiments in India had returned home—the 84th and 89th Highlanders—in the year before this time of peril, and both deserve at least a brief notice for their bravery in the field.

Of the war-worn 84th, but little more than a company in number landed with the colours from the *Boscawen*, Indiaman, under Major Richard Sherlock. In October, 1759, the regiment had landed at Madras, where it served till the fall of Pondicherry, in 1761, after which it was ordered to Bengal, and *en route* a detachment of twenty-one officers and 244 men were on board the *Pattasalam*,

* Gleig.

without water or provisions. They were cast on the coast of Orissa, made prisoners, and remained so, fed only on rice and water, till December following, when they were sent to Fort William, in the last stages of misery. It appears that this regiment, between the time it left England in

others, in all 780 men, not a man was brought to the halberts or deserted during these five years."

Both regiments were disbanded soon after their return home, an order having been issued in 1763 to reduce the army to the present 70th Foot.

Clive still continued actively the work of reform at Calcutta, where many, confident in their powerful patronage at home, protested, and refused to act under him, upon which he resolved to procure support elsewhere, and got some civil servants



CLIVE DEPARTING FROM INDIA.

April, 1759, and January, 1764, buried thirty-eight commissioned officers and upwards of 1,300 men.

The 89th Gordon Highlanders served in all the operations we have recorded, with this very remarkable circumstance, that during their five years' fighting in India, there were neither death, promotion, nor change among the officers, save in one instance, when Lord William Gordon was promoted to the 67th Regiment.

"There is another circumstance," says General Stewart, "in itself highly honourable to this respectable corps, that out of eight companies raised by the Duke of Gordon, Major Munro, Captains M'Gillivray, Grant, M'Pherson, and

from Madras. "Then recourse was had to the gentler ways of flattery and entreaty, arguments, persuasions, and prayers; but they would have been as profitably employed in bidding the monsoons to forget to blow at their fixed seasons, or in commanding the Ganges to roll back its waters to their sources among the eternal snows of the Himalayas. Nothing could turn Clive from his purpose."

The private trade and dangerous privileges assumed by the servants of the Company, he as rigidly prohibited as the extortion or reception of presents from the natives. From papers laid before Parliament in 1766, it appears that the latter were frequently imprisoned in order to obtain from them

large sums for the remission of crimes which never had existence; and that those who collected the revenue in the provinces ceded by Meer Cossim constantly extorted presents for themselves.

In strong contrast to the selfish conduct of others, there was no finer example of Clive's disinterestedness than the use to which he applied a legacy of 100,000 secca rupees, or £70,000, left to him by old Meer Jaffier. He paid it into the Company's treasury at Fort William, to lie at interest for the support of European officers and soldiers, disabled or decayed in the Company's service in Bengal, and for the widows of those who might die on service there. The Company afterwards extended this provision, but the original fund still bears the name of Clive. From this fund a colonel originally received £300 per annum, and the scale descended according to rank, so that a private obtained £10 per annum in addition to his pension; but alterations have been made subsequently, from time to time.

Fully satisfied with the fortune he had amassed, he had declared, on accepting his duties as a reformer, that he renounced all claim to the monetary advantages attached to the post of governor—that he wanted only a reform, complete and thorough, which, in the end, should prove equally a benefit to the oppressor and the oppressed, to the poor natives and to the British nation. Seldom has a man so scrupulously adhered to the purity of his plans amid temptations such as those that beset Clive; for in India the princes would have paid any price for his open or secret alliance. According to Sir John Malcolm and others, the Rajah of Benares offered him diamonds of the greatest value; the Nabob of Oude pressed him to accept a large sum of money and a casket of costly jewels. Clive courteously, but peremptorily refused, and he always boasted with truth that his last administration, instead of increasing his fortune, had greatly lessened it. After a stay of eighteen months, the state of his health made it necessary that he should return home, and on the 16th of January, 1767, he met the Select Committee at Calcutta for the last time. After a long address, full of sound advice, he concluded thus:—

"I leave the country in peace: I leave the civil and military departments under discipline and subordination: it is incumbent on you to keep them so."*

A few days afterwards he left India for ever, with General Caillaud, on board the *Britannia*, Captain Ross, and in July reached London, where he was received with universal acclaim, and welcomed by

the king and queen, to whom he brought princely presents from the Nabob of Oude.

It is worth recording that he gave twenty guineas to the seaman who first sighted the white cliffs of his beloved old England.

The name of Clive must for ever remain connected with the glory and the greatness of British India. "All the qualities of a soldier were combined in him, and each so admirably proportioned to the rest, that none predominated to the detriment of the other. His personal courage," continues Edward Thornton, in his "British Empire in India," "enabled him to acquire a degree of influence over his troops which has rarely been equalled, and which, in India, was before his time unknown; and this, united with the cool and consummate judgment by which his daring energy was controlled and regulated, enabled him to effect conquests which, if they had taken place in remote times, would be regarded as incredible. Out of materials the most unpromising, he had to create the instruments for effecting these conquests, and he achieved his object where all men but himself might have despaired. No one can dwell on the more exciting portions of his history without catching some of the ardour which led him through those stirring scenes; no one who loves the country for which he fought can recall them to memory without breathing, mentally, honour to the name of Clive.

"In India his fame is even greater than at home, and that fame is not his merely, it is his country's. As a statesman, Clive's vision was clear, but not extensive. He could promptly and adroitly adapt his policy to the state of things which he found existing; but none of his acts display any extraordinary political sagacity. Turning from his claims in a field where his talents command but a moderate degree of respect, and where the means by which he sometimes sought to serve the state and sometimes to promote his own interests, give rise to a different feeling, it is due to one to whom his country is so deeply indebted, to close the narrative of his career by recurring once more to that part of his character which may be contemplated with unmixed satisfaction. As a soldier, he was pre-eminently great. With the name of Clive commences the flood of glory, which has rolled on till it has covered the wide face of India with memorials of British valour. By Clive was formed the base of the column, which a succession of heroes, well worthy to follow his footsteps, have carried upward to a towering height, and surrounded with trophies of honour, rich, brilliant, and countless."

* Malcolm's Life; "History of India," &c.

Before sailing from Calcutta his last act was to name, as his successor in the office of governor, Mr. Harry Verelst, who five years afterwards published a work on the government of Bengal. His assistants in office were, Messrs. Cartier, Smith, Sykes, and Beecher, and, according to Mill, Clive had barely departed ere the old system of corruption and insubordination began to prevail.

The Afghans, in 1767, created some alarm in Bengal by marching upon Delhi; but, after laying waste a few provinces, they retired by the passes to their native mountains.

But in describing the wars and troubles in Bengal, we have somewhat anticipated the progress of events in the Carnatic, to which we shall therefore now devote our attention.

CHAPTER XXI.

CONQUEST OF THE PHILIPPINE ISLES.—AFFAIRS OF THE CARNATIC.—HYDER ALI, ETC.

By our capture of Pondicherry, that ascendancy which the French had hoped to establish in the East was so completely overthrown, that the government of Madras thought the time had now come to humble the Spaniards by depriving them of Manilla, the capital of the Philippine Isles, but as this then important affair, though an East Indian expedition, is somewhat apart from general Indian history, our notice of it must be brief.

These isles, which form an extensive archipelago in the Indian seas, and are sometimes called the Manillas, were originally named after Philip II. of Spain by the Spaniards, who first settled there in 1565, though they had been discovered by Magellan in 1520, and isle by isle they gradually became masters of the whole group, which have now a population that borders on 3,000,000 of whites, Chinese, and natives.

This reduction was planned by Colonel Draper, who prevailed upon the Madras Government, in 1762, to send the *Seahorse* frigate, Captain Grant, to cruise near the archipelago, with orders to intercept all vessels bound for Manilla, the capital; and on the 21st of July the first division of the fleet sailed from Madras Roads under Commodore Teddinson. The second followed on the first of the next month, under Admiral Sir Samuel Cornish, when the whole armament consisted of fourteen sail, led by the flagship *Norfolk* (seventy-four guns), having on board the 79th Regiment, under Colonel Draper, a local force furnished by the inhabitants of Madras, consisting of 600 sepoy, a company of artillery, another of Caffirs, and two of pioneers and Topasses, two of French mercenaries, and a party of lascars as labourers.

On the 27th, the armament rendezvoused off the lofty and palm-covered isle of Timoan, and on the

23rd of September appeared off Manilla, the capital of the archipelago, which occupies a kind of spit of sand at the mouth of a tolerably navigable river. The Spanish force in garrison consisted of the governor's guards, a battalion of the *Regimiento del Rey*, under Don Pedro Valdez, some marines and artillery, a company of Pampangos, and another of cadets, the whole being commanded by Lieutenant-General Don Felix de Egulux, and his second, Brigadier the Marquis de Villa Medina.

A place for landing was selected two miles south of the city, and three frigates, warped close in shore, covered the descent with their broadsides. The 79th, with 274 marines, and some gunners and matrosses, with one mortar and three field-guns, in the long-boats and launches of the squadron, were formed in three divisions. Colonel Draper leading the centre, Colonel Monson the left, and Major More the right, they pulled rapidly in shore, through a dreadful surf, which, by dashing the boats against each other, stove several, by which much munition of war, but no lives, were lost. The guns of the shipping drove back the enemy, who were in force to oppose the landing, which was successfully achieved, and next day 632 seamen, under Captains Collins of the *Weymouth* (sixty), Ourry of the *Elizabeth* (sixty-four), and Pritchford of the *America* (sixty), landed to reinforce the troops.

A few days were now unavoidably spent in reconnoitring, seizing advantageous posts, and erecting batteries, and in securing the communication with our shipping; but during these days there were dreadful storms of thunder, lightning, and blinding rain; yet the invaders soon discovered that the fortifications of the town, though regular, were incomplete. The ditch had never been

finished; the covered way was out of repair; the glacis was too low, and many places were without guns. The garrison under Don Felix mustered 800 Spaniards, who were reinforced by many half-castes, and 10,000 Pampangos, or men of the country, all Indians remarkable for their fearlessness and intense ferocity, who murdered every one that fell into their hands, even one of our officers when bearing a flag of truce, thus provoking the most terrible acts of retaliation. The governor of the Philippines was also the archbishop who predicted that the British would be destroyed like the host of Sennacherib. Draper's force was too small to invest a place of such extent as Manilla; he could but attack it on one side, while the others were open for the reception of supplies, and of those terrible Pampango archers, of whose aid the commandant availed himself to the utmost.

On the morning of the 4th October, 1,000 of these attacked the cantonment of the naval brigade, by stealing softly forward under cover of some brushwood, encouraged by a hope that the fire-arms might have been rendered unserviceable by the recent rains. Their united yells pierced the still morning air, as they fell suddenly upon a picket of the 79th, whose flank fire, ere they fairly reached the seamen, shot down three hundred of them. Armed only with spears and bows, they rushed upon the bayonets that pierced their naked bodies, and died gnawing them with their teeth like wild beasts. In this affair Captain Porter, R.N., and many seamen were slain.

While the savages made this sortie, another body of them made a sally from a different point, and with tumultuous yells drove our sepoys from a church which they occupied, and this post Don Felix instantly filled with men of the *Regimiento del Rey*, till Draper's field-guns dislodged them, with the loss of seventy men. But this cost him an officer and forty men of the 79th. After this, the courage of the Pampangos cooled, and by them the city was nearly left to its fate, which was soon sealed.

A practicable breach was made, and sixty volunteers of different corps, under Lieutenant Russel of the 49th, supported by the grenadiers of that regiment, led the forlorn hope. "Colonel Monson and Major More were at the head of two grand divisions of the 79th; the battalion of searpen advanced next, sustained by other two divisions of the 79th; the Company's troops closing the rear." In this order the forces made a furious rush, with the bayonet, at the breach, which was carried in spite of all opposition, and the troops forced their way into the Plaza, where the Spaniards fired on

them from the houses, and Major More was shot by the arrow of a Pampango. In the guardhouse above the Royal Gate 100 defenders, who refused all quarter, were bayoneted to the last man; three hundred more, who attempted to escape over the river Pasig, were drowned; the archbishop and staff capitulated in the *Casa del Ayuntamiento*, to Captain Dupont of Draper's regiment, and the capital of the Philippines was won. It was ransomed from pillage on the payment of four millions of dollars, and in it were taken 556 pieces of brass and iron cannon and mortars, and with it fell the whole archipelago under our dominion.*

The flames of war were now kindled in the Carnatic by Hyder Ali, the ruler of Mysore, whom we last saw in brief alliance with James Francis Law and his band of roving Frenchmen. This remarkable adventurer, who became one of our most formidable antagonists in India, had since his expedition towards Pondicherry, in his vain attempt to succour the Count de Lally, greatly added to his forces, which were chiefly recruited from the wild and military freebooting tribes of Western India; but instead of paying them, Hyder made the singular arrangement that they should pay *him*, by according him half the booty they might win under his banner; thus, by degrees, he won more horses, elephants, camels, arms, and treasure than his nominal master, the Rajah of Mysore, upon whom he ultimately made war; and, as the court of the latter had the usual number of disaffected chiefs and traitors, he defeated and made him prisoner, and as his name and habits attached all marauders to his standard, out of the fragments of old principalities he formed for himself the great, compact, warlike, and vigorous empire of Mysore. Therein he became the founder of Mohammedanism, and our most dreaded and strongest enemy in India. By the end of 1761, the authority of this singular marauder was firmly established in Mysore, a country enclosed by the Eastern and Western Ghauts, 210 miles in length, by 140 in breadth, having a fertile table-land 3,000 feet above the level of the sea.

His origin was a most humble one. His grandfather had been a wandering dervise; Macaulay says his father was a petty collector of revenue; but another account has it that he was a naik or subaltern, for, in the very scarce papers of Baron Grant, we are told, that "about the year 1728, Cuttulich Khan, Soubah or Governor-General of the Deccan, sent Termamoud Khan, an officer of reputation, and a Patan by birth, to deprive the Nabob Abdoul Ressous Khan of his

* Draper's Despatches.

government of Sirpi, which is a province of the kingdom of Maiṣṣour (Mysore). That prince determined to try the fortune of arms, went forth to meet his competitor, and after a very bloody battle the Nabob of Sirpi was defeated and slain. Among the dead was Fatty (Futteh) Naick, the father of Hyder Ali, an excellent warrior in the service of the nabob."

Futteh Naik, he continues, left two sons and a daughter; the eldest was named Saber Naik, and the younger, who was then ten years old, was named Hyder Naik or Ali. He was born at Divanelli, a fort situated between Oscota and Colar. They had an uncle with whom the eldest entered the service of the King of Mysore; but Hyder only remained in the vicinity of the districts where they served. At an early age he was bold, untractable, and overbearing; he could neither read nor write, nor would he receive instruction from any one. A writer in the *Gentleman's Magazine*, 1769, states he was first a sepoy in the Dutch service at Negapatam, where he rose to be a sergeant; at all events, when Nunderause, brother-in-law of the King of Mysore, as well as the vizier and general of his army, assembled the troops to join the Soubah Nazir Jung, and entered with him into the Carnatic in 1750, against Mustapha Jung, who was intending to seize the soubahship of that province, Hyder Ali, now a strong and hardy young warrior, collected sixty matchlockmen and five or six horsemen, with whom he repaired to the camp of Nunderause (then besieging the fort of Deonhully, twenty-four miles north-east of Bangalore), by whom he was well received, and appointed within four years commander of 500 infantry clothed and disciplined in the European manner, with 200 cavalry and a couple of field-pieces.

Hyder took part in the expedition when the Mysore troops marched from the plains of Arcot to join Nazir Jung, who had succeeded his father, Nizam-ul-Mulk, as Soubahdar of the Deccan, and when Nazir, through the intrigues of Dupleix, was treacherously abandoned by so many of his troops, Hyder Ali distinguished himself by a furious attack on the flanks of the French. When the day was lost, and Nazir had fallen into the hands of the Nabob of Kurpa, who destroyed him, Hyder lost not a moment in turning the event to his own advantage. On the first alarm he selected 300 Beder Peons, who plundered friend and foe without scruple, and when the officer in charge of Nazir's treasure began to load the camels, two of them, laden entirely with gold coins, were adroitly separated from the rest of the caravan, by the peons, and conveyed to Deonhully. This spoil, with

horses and arms picked up in every direction, laid the foundation of Hyder's fortune, and he proceeded forthwith to augment the number of his forces by the strange mode of pay we have stated.

"Movable property of every description was their object," says Colonel Wilkes* "and, as already noticed, they did not hesitate to acquire it from friends, when that could be done without suspicion, and with more convenience than from enemies. Nothing was unseasonable, or unacceptable, from convoys of grain down to the clothes, turbans, and ear-rings of travellers or villagers, whether men, women, or children. Cattle and sheep were among the most profitable heads of plunder; muskets and horses were sometimes obtained in booty, and sometimes by plunder."

So many kindred spirits joined him, that by the year 1755, he was at the head of 1,500 cavalry and 3,000 regular infantry, with four guns; but when he set out to occupy the position of Foudjedar of Dindigul, a fort engirdling a stupendous rock in a valley bounded on the west by the mountains of Malabar, he marched at the head of 2,500 horse, 5,000 infantry, and 2,000 peons, with six guns, leaving Kundee Rao behind him to attend to his interests; and ere long Hyder began to aim at greater power, for now he strove by means of skilful artificers at Pondicherry, Seringham, and Trichinopoly, directed by French overseers, to organise a regular artillery, arsenal, and laboratory, and the wretched state of the government of Mysore greatly favoured his growing ambition. With all his skill and ability, which were undoubted, he still remained an Oriental barbarian, and the praises bestowed upon him by some European writers are alike uncalled for and ridiculous.

"That such a man could ever have extended his sway over the greater part of India, or, at least, that he could ever have rendered that sway durable, appears a fantastic dream; and that a character stained by the darkest treachery, ingratitude, and cruelty, should have found admirers in historians pedantically moral and severe in their estimates of other actors in these wars and revolutions, must be attributable to a love of paradox and contradiction, or to the predetermined plan of praising all that prevented, and blaming all that promoted, the establishment of the British empire in India, that great result—not unattended with faults and crimes, which no conquest ever yet was—conferring more happiness upon millions of people, than they ever had enjoyed, or could hope to enjoy under their native Mohammedan or Hindoo rulers.†

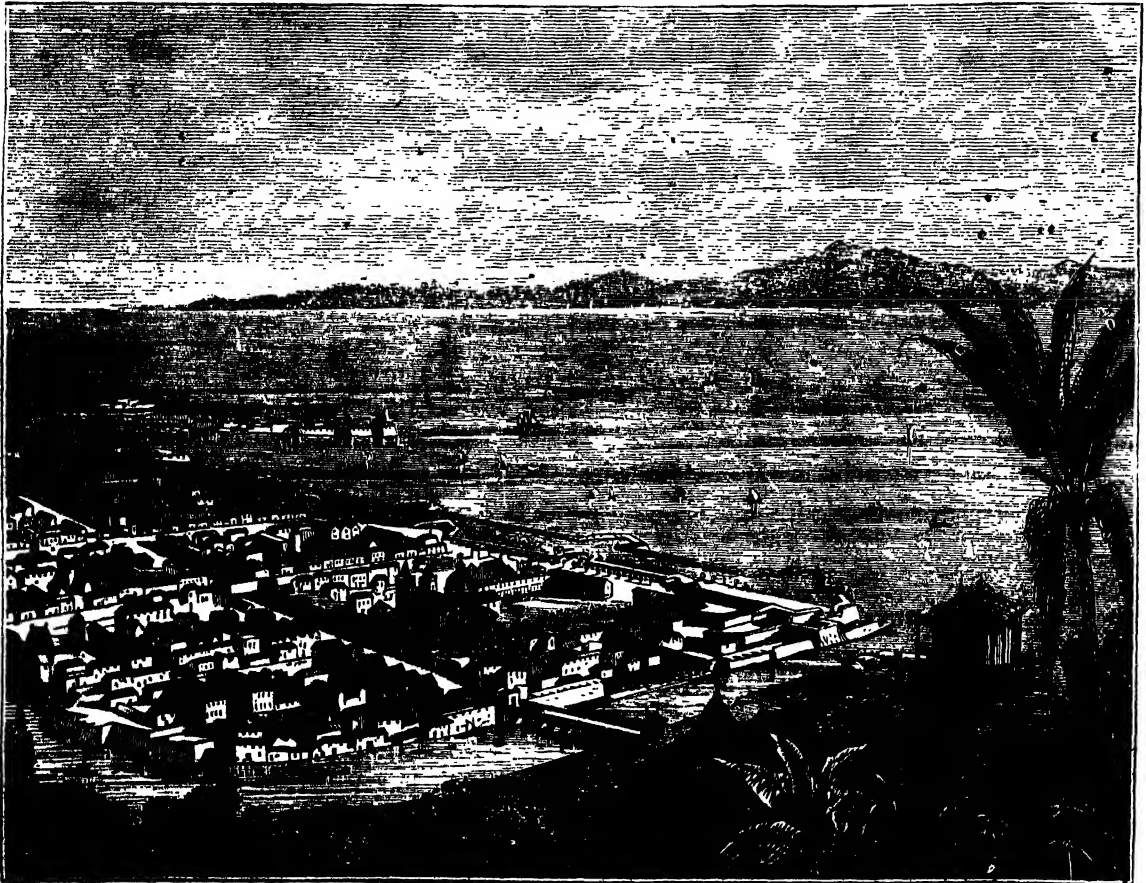
* "Historical Sketches of India."

† Knight's "England."

The power of his predecessor on the throne of Mysore having been set at defiance by the Rajahs and Polygars of Chitteldroog, Gooty, Harponelly, Balapoor, and Lera, they were soon reduced to obedience by Hyder, who, cunning as he was fiery, thereupon affecting to take the cause of a young impostor—a kind of Indian Perkin Warbeck—marched to the city of Bednore, which then consisted of a place eight miles in extent, and where

compelled him to disgorge thirty-two lacs of rupees.

Notwithstanding this mortification, he soon after acquired by conquest the whole province of Malabar, and, to keep the country quiet, put all the nairs, or Hindoo chiefs, to the sword without distinction; but he had barely achieved this, when he found it necessary to repair to Seringapatam, which he had made his capital city, and had strongly



VIEW OF MANILLA.

he took plunder to the value of twelve millions sterling, and changed its name to Hydernagur; keeping that rich and prosperous country for himself—for it was all the more rich and prosperous, that being girdled by lofty mountains, it had long escaped the ravages of Indian war. Sundy, on the northern frontier of Bednore, was next captured by him, and its ramparts were destroyed, nor did his freebooting army halt till it reached the banks of the Kistna, where he was assailed by Madhoo Rao, Peishwa of the Mahrattas, with an immense cavalry force, who rent from him some of his recent conquests, and, according to Colonel Wilkes,

fortified, as a necessary precaution against probable events, having heard that the British, the Mahrattas, and the ruler of the Deccan had formed an armed alliance against him. Though he could neither read nor write, the memory and acuteness of Hyder were remarkable; his agents were everywhere, and his spies overran the whole country. Thus, he had a knowledge as full, and a clearer view of the tangled web of Indian politics, than any one of his time, save Clive or Warren Hastings.

The Deccan was no longer in the hands of Salabut Jung, the old ally of the Marquis de Bussy. In Golconda and Hyderabad, fresh revolutions had



HYDER ALI.

rent the state, and Salabut was the captive of his brother, Nizam Ali, who occupied his musnud, until the arrival of the Treaty of Paris, which recognised the deposed prince as the lawful Nizam or Soubahdar of the Deccan, on which Ali, to prevent further trouble, put him immediately to death. At first the Nizam indulged in hostility against Britain; he invaded the Carnatic and made war upon Mohammed Ali, in a manner singularly barbarous and destructive, till he was checked by Colonel Charles Campbell, at the head of a small force.

• After that, he concluded a treaty with the East India Company, confirming to them all the acquisitions made by Colonel Forde in the Northern

Circars, on the payment of a small feudal tribute, and holding in readiness a portion of their troops to aid him if at war. By the latter clause, it became necessary for the Company to stop the astonishing career of Hyder Ali, and thus they joined the confederacy with the Nizam and the Mahrattas, with the double view of curbing him and ensuring their own safety.

In this new and important movement, the first to take the field was the Peishwa, who covered the rich table-lands of Mysore with clouds of his predatory Mahratta horse, when everything was as usual ruthlessly given over to fire and sword, while Colonel Joseph Smith, with a British force followed him.

CHAPTER XXII.

WAR WITH HYDER ALI.—THE CHINGAMA PASS.—BATTLE OF EROOR.

WHILE Hyder Ali's officers, by his orders, were everywhere cutting the embankments of the tanks, poisoning the wells, burying the grain, and driving cattle and the peasantry into the woods, to check the progress of the Mahrattas, Nizam Ali was marching against Mysore by the eastern route, at the head of a great but ill-disciplined host, and Colonel Smith at the head of our troops, moved by the northern frontier to effect a junction with him.

It had been arranged with Madhoo Rao that the districts through which Nizam Ali was to march, were to be left unpillaged, that he might procure sustenance, but the Mahrattas swept them bare; thus he advanced with the utmost difficulty and privation, and did not reach Toombudra till the 9th of March, 1767, and on the 24th of the same month intelligence reached Colonel Smith, that the retreat from Mysore of our faithless allies, the Mahrattas, had been purchased. That officer, says a writer on India, "had suspected from the first that the presidency had engaged in a disjointed expedition, and urged on them the necessity of adjusting some reasonable plan of action. Nizam Ali had already begun to talk of retracing his steps and returning in the ensuing year. It is believed, indeed, that the only thing which now induced him to advance was the hope of concluding an agreement, by which Hyder was to give him a present of twenty lacs of rupees, and pay him an annual tribute of six lacs, for making common cause with him against the Company. Since his purchase of the Mahrattas, Hyder had continued to urge the treachery, but said nothing of the bribe, and the Nizam had some hopes of being able to extort it, by going forward and working on Hyder's fears."

The stupid Council at Madras paid but little attention to Colonel Smith's reiterated suspicions of a secret collusion between our remaining ally and the enemy. Their conceit and impertinence disgusted the troops, and nearly brought ruin upon everything. His suspicions became a certainty when he found the troops of Nizam Ali, after entering Mysore, treating it as a friendly country, and when Smith's forces came up to a point where it was stipulated that the two armies should form a junction, great was the astonishment of our soldiers, when, as they marched into an encampment on one quarter, they saw those of the Nizam departing by another, for he had now openly joined Hyder, and

their combined armies made preparations to press upon ours.

In this war, into which we had been partly deluded and were now betrayed, great was the preponderance on the side of the new allies, Hyder and the Nizam. Their combined cavalry made a total of 42,860 sabres and lances; their infantry were 28,000 strong, with 109 pieces of cannon; and to oppose all this, Colonel Smith had 1,000 natives and thirty European cavalry, with 5,000 sepoy and 800 European infantry, and sixteen guns.

Colonel Smith was a brave and intelligent officer, but perfectly ignorant of the land in which he was warring. Thus, having gained but imperfect knowledge, he threw up a redoubt in the eastern gorge of a mountain pass, through which he supposed the enemy must come to reach the lower ground; and while waiting under arms to receive them, his cattle, which had been left grazing quietly in the rear, were suddenly driven off, and the cavalry which he dispatched to their rescue were attacked on all sides by superior numbers, and did not rein up in the camp till nearly a third of them were destroyed. Most perilous was now the situation of our force, which was so painfully weak as contrasted to the masses it had to oppose.

Colonel Smith was unable to move till the 28th of August, when thus crippled by the loss of supplies; and in the meantime Hyder, taking advantage of his inactivity, assailed and captured the fort of Cauverypatam. At first the colonel's movements were involved in error; he guarded passes that were unlikely to be penetrated, and left unguarded those that were so; and thus in one special instance, he left entirely free a pass, through which the troops of Hyder poured like a torrent or living cataract, sweeping away outposts, baggage, cattle, and all the supplies of our army, to reinforce which, Colonel Wood was dispatched with some more troops from Trichinopoly.

Hyder was aware of their approach from the direction of Trinomalee, and might have intercepted them by occupying the Pass of Singarpetta or Chingama, through which alone a junction with Smith's force could be made; but by some error on the part of Hyder, the colonel was allowed to take possession of it unopposed. The Nizam Ali was so enraged by this affair, that he openly upbraided Hyder with it, and hinted that if the

war was to be conducted thus, he would make peace with the Company in his own fashion.

Hyder now became more than ever active to prevent the junction, and with many rissalas of predatory horse, pressed the flanks and rear of Smith's force, and whenever it halted for the night it was harassed by flaming and roaring flights of the terrible Indian rockets. Once, when he thought the British were in an unfavourable position, he ventured to attack them, but was repulsed with the loss of 2,000 men. Though Colonel Smith lost only 170, he was unable to follow up the advantage, as once more the enemy had carried off the baggage, and with it his scanty store of rice. Famine now pressed him sorely, and he was compelled to push on for Trinomalee, which he reached on the 4th of September.

When Colonel Smith made his rapid and fatiguing march to Trinomalee, a Hindoo town of great holiness among the Brahmins, and situated on a mountain fifty-two miles north-west of Pondicherry, he trusted to an assurance from Mohammed Ali, that he would there find an abundance of food stored up. But, to the terrible disappointment of him and his soldiers, there was no rice, and no more paddy—unprepared grain—could be procured than sufficed for a day's rations. So great were their past sufferings, and so great seemed those yet to come, that there occurred an event unexampled in British military annals—a Lieutenant Hitchcock *deserted*; but only to be captured and thrown into prison, where he died in dreadful misery of mind.

In search of food, Colonel Smith was compelled to quit Trinomalee, leaving in it, though a place of little strength, his sick, wounded, and military stores. We are told that Hyder's Mysoreans came on with their hordes of cavalry, eddying like a flood, sweeping away, in every case, bullocks, rice-carts, and footsore stragglers. Colonel Smith, after his men had marched, fought, and starved, for twenty-seven consecutive hours, at last formed the longed-for junction with Wood's corps, and returned to find Trinomalee safe, though a battery had been thrown up against it, and 10,000 horse were covering the operations; but on Smith's arrival, the whole Mysore force hurried to the west, and encamped six miles distant, yet within view of that magnificent Pagoda of Trinomalee, which is eleven storeys in height, and has forty stately windows.

Still no stores or food came, and the misery of the troops deepened, for in the fanciful grandeur of their own policy, the Council made no preparations to support their forces in the presence of a powerful and barbarous enemy, thus our small

army was reduced to a system of marching and foraging at the same time, while 40,000 fleet and active horsemen, with lance and tulwar, flew around them, crossing every rice-swamp or paddy-field, occupying the wretched tracks that served as roads, destroying the villages, devouring the hidden stores, and ravaging everything and everywhere. As vultures gathered on a field of carrion, the Mysorean troopers found nothing too mean for their prey.

Yet the undying reputation of British bravery checked the hordes of Hyder, who could only hope to conquer our troops by famine and fatigue; and in this terrible emergency some hidden stores of buried grain were found; the soldiers were fed, and again could fight. Hyder knew of their dire distress, but not of the discovered supplies or the recruited strength they brought; but, having scarcely any cavalry, Smith's efforts at defence were seldom very effective. Grasping at a favourable moment, Hyder detached his son, then only seventeen, the ferocious Tippoo Sahib of wars to come, to the neighbourhood of Madras with 5,000 Mysore cavalry. His advance was so swift and secret, that he nearly caught the members of the presidency and the wealthiest of the Europeans in their country villas; but the city, the Black Town, the warehouses, mansions, gardens, villages, and all things in its vicinity were ravaged and destroyed. It is of these affairs that a powerful pen thus wrote:—

"On a sudden, an army of 90,000 men, far superior in discipline and efficiency to any other native force that could be found in India, came pouring through those wild passes which, worn by mountain torrents and dark with jungle, lead down from the table-land of Mysore to the plains of the Carnatic. This great army was accompanied by 100 pieces of cannon, and its movements were guided by many French officers, trained in the best military schools in Europe. Hyder was everywhere triumphant. The sepoys in many British garrisons flung down their arms. Some forts were surrendered by treachery, and some by despair. In a few days the whole country north of the Coleroon had submitted. The British inhabitants of Madras could see by night, from the top of Mount St. Thomas, the eastern sky reddened by a vast semicircle of blazing villages. The white villas, to which our countrymen retire after the daily labours of government or trade, when the cool evening breeze springs up from the bay, were now left without inhabitants; for bands of the fierce horsemen of Mysore had already been seen prowling among the tulip-trees and near the gay verandahs. Even the town was not thought secure, and the

British merchants and public functionaries made haste to crowd themselves behind the cannon of Fort St. George."

Tippoo, however, retired as rapidly as he had advanced, with great booty; but his father and his ally hovered in the open country near Trinomalee.

Still marching eastward in search of food, Colonels Smith and Wood evacuated Trinomalee, and resolved to place their wounded in the fort of Chittapet, and canton their troops in Arcot and Vellore; and it became now apparent to the supine presidency, that if young Tippoo menaced the gates of Madras, it was of the utmost importance that the army should canton itself wherever food was to be had; so they ordered Smith to keep the field at all hazards.

Matters were come to this terrible crisis, when they were brought to an issue on the 26th of September, 1767.

The British under the two colonels amounted now to 10,400 infantry, and thirty European and 1,500 indifferent native cavalry, with thirty-four guns, while the strength of the allied enemy was nearly the same overwhelming multitude as before.

At noon on the 26th, our people came in sight of the enemy at Eroor, or Errour, a fortified town in the province of Mysore. There the Hoggree river runs close to the fortifications, and there is a stately flight of steps to the water's edge, built by some pious Hindoo. Sixteen of the enemy's heaviest cannon opened on Colonel Smith's left flank, while a morass, which could not be discovered without a close reconnaissance, intervened between the opposing lines. Colonel Smith, ignorant of its existence, took ground to the left, and then discovered it, while Hyder, whose plan was to entangle him in it, was ready to fall upon his right, even should he succeed in passing it with the redoubts still in front. On the right the swamp seemed to be terminated by a hill, behind which the greater portion of the enemy's force was posted unseen, and Colonel Smith naturally conceived that by making a circuitous movement in that direction, he would find himself in contact with the enemy's left.

No sooner had he begun this movement than Hyder, still under the impression that the British were in a state of starvation, and only too anxious to escape in the direction of Arcot, put his troops in motion instantly to cut off what he conceived to be a retreat. Thus the two armies, each taking ground to its right, made a circular movement round the base of the hill—each unseen by the other—Smith to the south-east, and Hyder from the south-west, till, to the astonishment of both,

after encircling the hill, in the sequel they found themselves face to face, and a battle become inevitable.*

In the haste of forming a new alignment, the European discipline of Smith's troops gave them a vast superiority over the hordes of Hyder and the Nizam, and thus, in forming up to the front, they gained advantageous ground, while the confusion of the enemy, whose masses, recoiling on each other, got huddled together, and unable to execute any formation, increased, and only thirty of their 100 pieces of cannon could be brought into action, as many had been left in the redoubts thrown up before the morass; and those, being less ably handled than the European artillery, were soon put to silence, while the latter, left free to act, made such dreadful havoc with round shot and grape among the enemy's cavalry, that they soon became a mere plunging mob of shouting men and swerving horses; and on seeing this, Colonel Smith ordered a general advance of the whole line.

The moment the lines confronted each other on changing their ground, Hyder suspected the day was lost, and requested the Nizam to get the guns into the redoubts and defend the fortified position; but the Nizam, furious with rage and mortification, refused the advice, and declined to quit the field till he saw the steady British line coming on, firing as it advanced, ere the bayonets would come flashing down to the charge. According to his general wont, he had all his favourite wives in the field, or near it, in gilded and cumbersome howdahs on the backs of elephants, and with the order that the artillery should retire, he added that the zenana should also fall back; but from one of the howdahs, a dark-skinned damsel called aloud, "This elephant has not been taught to turn—it follows only the standard of the empire!" The odalisque made good her wish, nor did her unwieldy bearer turn his tail to the foe till the standard had passed to the rear. By that time our bullets were flying among the gorgeous howdahs, and many were stricken for whom they never were intended. Our troops advanced to the charge, and then the whole gave way before them, and, abandoning everything, the cowardly Nizam, at the head of a body of chosen horse, fled towards the west, nor halted till he had left the gorges of the Chingama Pass behind him.

After recording this, the *London Gazette* adds: "We followed them till the strength and spirits of our army were quite exhausted, and obliged us to halt on the spot where we are now encamped, which is about eight miles on the road to Chingama

* *London Gazette*, 1768.

from Trinomaleg. Last night we seized nine of their guns, and are now in possession of about fifty pieces, which they could not carry off in their precipitate retreat. The enemy's loss must be great, but cannot be ascertained, as the moment a man is killed or wounded his companions carry him off. The prisoners inform us that our cannon made great havoc among them. We have learnt since, that fourteen more pieces of the enemy's cannon have been found among the bushes."

When day broke next morning, the whole of the enemy's force could be seen, scattered in flight along the road as far as the eye could reach. Hyder had behaved like a resolute soldier, as he was. After providing for the safety of the Mysoreans, and dispatching his field-pieces by the best road to the rear, he was now seen covering it, attended by a troop of European cavalry and 3,000 select horsemen of Mysore, together with his state retinue, which consisted of 300 carefully-chosen men on foot, clothed in scarlet and armed with lances of light bamboo, eighteen feet long, twisted round from top to bottom with their spiral plates of silver; the equal intervals of polished silver, and the dark brown of the seasoned bamboo, giving an elegant appearance to these formidable, yet ornamental weapons.*

Want of food prevented Colonel Smith from following up the enemy, whose losses were supposed to be above 4,000 men, while his casualties were only 150 killed and wounded. Such was the battle

of Eroor, a victory won, like all our others in India, over the most overwhelming odds, and one which cleared the Company's territory of further incursions by young Tippoo and his flying cavalry force; but, as the rainy season was at hand, Colonel Smith put his troops into cantonments at Conjeveram, Trichinopoly, and Wandiwash, and repaired to Madras to arrange for a regular commissariat when again he took the field.

At Baramahal, the Nizam and Hyder remained for nearly a month without an interview, each sulking and thoroughly dissatisfied with the other. "The former," says a print of the period, "is now in a most embarrassing situation, and must feel severely the effects of his unsteady conduct. He is encamped with an ally who will neither supply him with money, suffer him to retire, nor let him throw himself upon our mercy."

Hyder, seeing the necessity for some line of action, made the first overtures, as he had more sense and more at stake than the Nizam, and to smooth matters over, a series of splendid festivals and ostentatious visits mutually ensued, and at one of the feasts given by Hyder, he placed the Nizam on a throne formed entirely of bags of silver coin to the value of a lac of rupees, covered with cushions of embroidered silver; and all the treasure, with many more valuables, were carried off by the Mysorean attendants as presents; thus the reconciliation between the allies, if a hollow one, was public enough to suit the purpose of Hyder Ali.

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE DEFENCE OF AMBOOR.—OUR TREATY WITH THE NIZAM.—HYDER ALI AND THE ZEMINDARS OF BEDNORE, ETC.

THE tyrant of Mysore, ever indefatigable, even in defeat, was the first to move. The three places in which Colonel Smith had cantoned his troops of necessity, were somewhat objectionable, on account of their being so far apart; but it was supposed that the last three months of the year, being a period of prodigious rain, would necessarily cause a species of truce; but early in November, 1768, Hyder was in the field, and moving northward of Baramahal, retook the town of Triptur, a well-peopled place in a district covered with fruit-trees;

* Colonel Wilkes' "Sketches."

and then Veniambaddy, from whence he pushed on for ten miles, till he came to Amboor, where a regiment, now called the 10th Madras Native Infantry, was in garrison.

The town, the inhabitants of which then, as now, lived chiefly by the export of castor oil, is built with great regularity, and the fort, though now gone to decay, was then of great strength, on the summit of a smooth granite mountain that terminates the beautiful valley of Baramahal on the north, and overlooks the fertile vale through which the Palar winds away towards Arcot and

Vellore. On one side only was the fort accessible, and had for its additional defences two outworks or redoubts. On the 10th of November, Hyder was before it, but was stoutly met by the sepoy, 500 strong, with a sergeant, and fifteen other Europeans, the whole commanded by Captain Calvert, a very brave officer, who had been wounded at the battle of Eloor. The lower works were assaulted and taken, and Calvert had to retire into the citadel, where he threw into prison Mucklis Khan, the

service—in fact, the command of half his army—if he would surrender the place. The captain's scornful reply was, that the next messenger who came with proposals so insulting would be hanged in the breach; so, from the 10th of November till the 7th of December, all Hyder's efforts were in vain.

On that day the glitter of arms in the valley below announced the approach of a force under Colonel Smith, who, as he pushed on to raise the



THE ROUT AT ELOOR.

native killedar, whom he discovered intriguing with Hyder; but, from the nature of the post, the siege made little progress.

Hyder's success in gaining the lower works had been chiefly attained through the perfidy of the killedar, and on being deprived of his aid, he scarcely knew how to proceed. His guns effected a breach in an inaccessible place, by which he attempted again and again to storm; but his troops were hurled back under a withering and concentrated fire, which piled the killed and wounded up in heaps before the stony gap. Hyder sent a flag of truce with eulogistic praises of the bravery of Captain Calvert; and then dispatched another, offering him the highest military honours in his

siege, beheld with joy the British flag still flying on the fort of Amboor, from which Hyder at once began his retreat. Government directed that the sepoy regiment which so valiantly defended the place, should have the name and rock of Amboor embroidered on its colours; but an Indian historian records that Hyder "had not mistaken his man. Calvert was not the blunt and honourable soldier for which his conduct on this occasion entitled him to credit; for it is painful to state, that, at a later period he was brought to a court-martial, and found guilty of defrauding the Company by false returns;" but the spirit of corruption was strong among the Anglo-Indians then.

Smith pursued Hyder, but was compelled to

abandon the pursuit from the deficiency of his commissariat, the "penny-wise and pound-foolish" impediment and disgrace of every British military enterprise, down to the landing of our army at Eupatoria in the Crimea; so true it is that "England learns nothing by war." Though, in this instance, the defeat was caused by the new campaign being commenced sooner than was anticipated by the fiery Hyder, no real progress had been made for supplying the army in the field.

the Company's forces to bring him to a close engagement; but after the 26th of September, he, with all his fire and rashness, became exceedingly cautious.

The Company being supine, or simple enough to depend on promises of Mohammed Ali, whose duplicity and want of faith were but too patent, neglected to form a proper commissariat system, and thus the movements of their troops were somewhat hampered in the field. Amboor had been relieved by the



DEFEAT OF HYDER ALI IN THE PASS OF SINGARPETTA.

But the truth is, that Hyder's devastations in the Carnatic had been attended with correspondingly distressing effects. That staunch friend and ally of the Company, the Nabob of Arcot, was nearly ruined. The income of the Madras establishment being inadequate for its present exigencies, heavy remittances from Bengal became necessary, and as these were unavoidably made in a base kind of gold coin, the loss in the difference of exchange was said to amount to (only) £40,000. A stop was put to the usual investments from Madras to China, no silver being now floating in the country, and manufactures being almost at a standstill from terror of the enemy; while Hyder, till the battle of Eroor stopped his career, baffled every effort of

main body which Colonel Smith had assembled at Vellore, while Colonel Wood's column, which had been in cantonments at Trichinopoly, had orders to enter the district of the Baramahal, by the Pass of Singarpetta, while the former officer, on the 8th December, came on Hyder at Veniambaddy, from whence he had sent off what remained of his heavy artillery prior to joining Nizam Ali. To cover his real intention he took up a position as if to give battle, and after exchanging a few shots with Smith's column, moved off; but prior to that movement, he had the serious mortification of seeing his troop of mixed European horse, under the French Captain Aumont, ride over to the enemy.

In his retreat, he was closely followed by Colonel Smith, till the latter had, as usual, to halt for provisions; but the advance-column under Colonel Tod fortunately found some grain and cattle in Tripatore. At Cauverypatam on the river Panaur, the whole forces were united; but as Hyder, on his capture of the place in 1767, had greatly strengthened the works by the engineering skill of the French officers, Colonel Smith did not as yet feel himself in a position to attempt its reduction.

By sending out detachments of lightly-armed and fleetly-mounted horsemen to sweep the country, Hyder made it almost impossible for Smith to procure food for his forces. Everywhere his convoys, unless protected by stronger guards than he could well spare, were cut off. Hyder's spies having informed him that one of these would on a certain day, come through the Pass of Singarpetta, guarded by a single regiment, Hyder with 6,000 horse and foot, and five field-pieces, set out to intercept it, confident of success. But the colonel had also his spies, and on hearing of Hyder's movements, reinforced the convoy by a battalion of sepoys, two companies of European grenadiers, and two field-pieces, and when Hyder came thundering down the pass at the head of his cavalry, he was received with such a concentrated fire of grape and musketry, that his people were routed with slaughter, his favourite horse was shot under him, and he was compelled to return, defeated and infuriated, to his headquarters at Cauverypatam.

Fearing that his position there could not long be maintained, on the 14th December, he sent his sons Tippoo and Ghazee Khan, with his baggage and train of heavy guns, to the westward, and on the 18th, Nizam Ali moved northward with the main body of his army, as now he began to tremble for the safety of his own capital; a Bengal expedition under the command of Colonel Peach having landed on the coast of the Northern Circars, was reported to be menacing Hyderabad.

This movement so alarmed him that he entirely forsook the confederacy with Hyder, and entered into secret communications with Colonel Smith, and made overtures for peace, leaving Hyder to his fate, a measure quite consonant with Mussulman faith on the part of one prince to another, throughout all Indian annals.

His separate treaty with the British was concluded on the 23rd of February, 1768. By it the Company recognised his rights and titles as Soubahdar or Nizam, and agreed to assist him whenever required, with two battalions of sepoys and six pieces of cannon, properly manned and served; he agreeing on his part to reconfirm the Company's

right in the Northern Circars, and to reduce the tribute for these five provinces, in perpetuity, to seven lacs per annum, for the space of six years; and also to grant them the dewanee of Balaghaut, the central plateau of the Mysore country, with an area of 25,000 square miles (then, however, in possession of Hyder), subject to the payment of seven lacs of rupees to himself, and to the tribute of *chout*, i.e., one-fourth of the revenue to the Mahrattas.

Yet in this game of diplomacy, the Company acted with some folly. The Nizam granted them everything on condition that they should pay him tribute, thus leaving the position of both pretty much the same as it was before, and he granted them the dewanee of a district which they would have to conquer ere they could obtain a rupee of it; and thus he, though beaten in battle, reaped, through the vain and dull Council at Madras, all the fruits of a victory.

The chiefs on the Malabar coast, who had been reduced by Hyder, now revolted against him, while at the same time the Bombay Government took the field, and a naval expedition made its appearance off the Honawar coast, where Hyder had previously begun to prepare a fleet and had appointed as admiral of it, Lutfi Bey, an officer of his cavalry! This man, though brave, was of course utterly inefficient as a naval officer, and soon disgusted all the practical seamen under his command. Hence, when our expedition appeared off the port, Hyder's squadron, consisting of two ships, two double-masted grabs, and a few gallivats, came out and joined it. By this defection Honawar, Fortified Island, and Mangalore, fell an easy prey to us, while Hyder entrusting the defence of Bangalore to Fuzzil Oolla Khan, on the 20th January, 1768, accompanied by Tippoo, brought on his whole force by quick marches, breathing defiance and revenge. Our troops in Mangalore, by the active operations of young Tippoo and his cavalry, had been kept in perfect ignorance of his approach, and when in May, he suddenly appeared before the place, they were filled with genuine and somewhat disgraceful consternation. Thus, after a defence that was almost a mockery, the garrison, consisting of 200 European infantry, 1,200 sepoys and forty-one gunners, made a hurried embarkation in boats and fled, leaving all their artillery and stores, and what proved more painful still, eighty Europeans and 180 sepoys, all sick or wounded, to the mercy of the enemy, while Honawar and Fortified Island fell without resistance, and the victorious Hyder, recovering all that had been rent from him, was able to reascend the Ghauts before the rainy season set in.

His main body, with the heavy guns and stores, he ordered to proceed by easy marches to Bangalore, while with a chosen force he hurried northward to Bednore, where he summoned before him all those whom he knew to be disgusted by his exactions, and hence favourable to their British invaders. He quietly told them that he knew their treasons; death was the penalty for these, but he resolved to inflict a punishment more profitable to himself.

"A list of criminals was then produced, and against the name of each, an enormous fine appeared. The conduct of Hyder Ali's affairs was marked by great precision; for every purpose there was a distinct provision. Among other establishments, nicely contrived, so as to contribute to the great machine of his government, was a department of torture. To this the offenders present were immediately consigned, till their guilt should be expiated by payment of the sums in which they were respectively mulcted, and orders were issued for taking similar proceedings against those whose fears kept them away."*

He resorted to a still more perfidious measure to punish the disaffected Nairs of Malabar. The author just quoted says, "It was intimated to them that their Mysorean lord was tired of his conquests in Malabar, which he had hitherto found a source of charge rather than profit; and if he were reimbursed the expenses incurred in their attainment, he was ready to abandon them, and that it was his intention, that the territories of those who refused to contribute to that purpose should be transferred to those who acceded to the proposal."

The consequence of this artful threat was, that no one risked forfeiture, and the officers of Hyder returned from Malabar laden with spoil.

It was now the August of 1768, and Hyder's absence in Malabar had not been turned to due account by the Company, whose government at Madras had organised no efficient mode of gaining intelligence, and were unable to apprise their officers of where Hyder actually was. Thus the rumour went about, that he was playing a double game; one of which was to lure our troops into his own territory, and starve them all to death by enclosing them in a desert; the other that he would burst into the Carnatic and give all to fire and sword in their absence; and these stories made Smith, who could not march fifty miles in any direction without supplies, loth to advance.

The Madras Council urged a concentrated effort in the direction of Bangalore, but Smith, who was not in the best of humours, urged that in the

barren territory around it he could by no means provision his army, and that the better mode of proceeding would be, to occupy, in the first instance, the fertile districts on the frontiers of Mysore. Obstinate in their new functions, the Council would not surrender their own ideas; but, to seem to defer to Smith's opinion as a soldier, they resolved to adopt his plan in a certain sense. They ordered him to advance on Bangalore, and to detach a force under Colonel Wood to occupy the frontier. This was making matters worse than ever, by dividing in two an army already too small for the first enterprise, and, to complete their folly, they sent to the army two members of Council, as *field deputies*, who were to act in concert with the presidency, and control the movements and plans of the commander-in-chief.

The presence of functionaries such as these, disgusted alike the officers and soldiers, and we are told that "from the moment of their arrival in camp, the spirit of the army seemed to evaporate." In a letter to Colonel Smith, Lord Clive expressed in strong terms his views of the weak conduct of the officials, who, at Madras, seemed disposed to ruin everything.

"Whoever may have been to blame, no impeachment can be laid against you," wrote Clive; "I need not enter into reflections upon the fundamental errors of the war. For the honour of the nation and of the Company, I wish they could be forever buried in oblivion, or at least, remembered only by ourselves, to warn us upon any future occasion. The measure of sending field deputies has been justly condemned by everybody. Gentlemen in the civil service may be very properly employed out of the presidency in the collection of the revenues; but nothing can be more absurd and pernicious than sending them to a camp, where they can only embarrass and obstruct plans and operations they do not understand."

Nevertheless, though thus trammelled, Colonel Smith's forces took the field, and a body of the Bombay troops came to strengthen his operations, by falling upon Malabar and the principality of Carnara (Hyder's recent conquests). They then marched down to the western coast, and captured Mangalore, Onore, and other places, thus drawing Hyder in their direction. This enabled Colonel Smith to reach the vicinity of Bangalore, and overrun the fertile country near the frontiers. He then moved north to intimidate Nizam Ali, and quicken his negotiations for peace; and after accomplishing that end, he turned his steps southward to Kistnagerry.

This town and fortress are in the district of the

* Thornton.

Baramahal, situated on a perpendicular rock seven hundred feet high, and thus inaccessible to escalade; but Colonel Smith reduced it, after a four months' blockade, on the 2nd of May. Under Colonel Wood, the other division of the army, by an incredible career of rapid service, reduced all the other forts in and about the Baramahal, including Salam-below-the-Ghauts, Tingrecotta, Darampoory, 120 miles westward of Pondicherry, Ahtoor, Namcul, Errouad, an ancient fortress of the Nafcs of Madura, Deiancotta, Satimangulum, with its great temple dedicated to Vishnu, Coimbatour, a well-built town on the Cauvery, Aravacourchy, Darampooram, and Dindigul, a fortress on an enormous granite rock, 400 feet in height, and on two sides completely unscalable. On its highest summit is a Hindoo temple, and in its northern side a deep cavern inhabited by Mohammedan dervishes. But unfortunately the retention of these captures, from the slenderness of our forces, and poverty of the material of war, proved an impossibility.

Colonel Wood, under the belief that there were only three practicable passes into Mysore, guarded these, but the enemy eluded him by penetrating others, for he and his officers were alike ignorant of the country, and the duty and precaution of procuring trustworthy guides, which the nabob should have done, occurred to none. Thus Colonel Wood lost, to Hyder, all the conquests he had made, and the latter having at his command large bodies of active cavalry, contrived so to bewilder that officer, as to leave him no chance of a well-concerted plan, while the natives were always betraying or surrendering even the strongest of our captures without firing a shot.

On the 8th of June, Colonel Donald Campbell, commanding the advanced column of the British army, laid siege to Mulwagul, a strong place, where he expected great resistance; but it was betrayed to him by the native governor. A brother of Mohammed Ali had married the sister of this official, and the former being Foujedar of Arcot, had appointed his brother-in-law to exercise under him the fiscal administration of Trinomalee. The principal was removed from office, and the dependant, to avoid giving up his accounts to Mohammed Ali, went over to Hyder. Desirous of a change, he now offered to betray the fortress, on condition that his accounts should be deemed as closed. To this Mohammed agreed, but though the killedar was thus false to his trust, it chanced that the soldiers of the garrison were not.

To obviate the difficulty, the killedar informed his chief officers that he had succeeded in obtaining

200 men who had been disciplined in the European manner—two complete companies, in fact—and that on a certain night they would arrive under their own native officers. At the given time, they were seen ascending the steep winding way to the fortress, led by Captain Mathews, an Englishman, who was not only attired, but painted like a native, and thus they were admitted into the heart of the place. By daybreak, says Thornton, the mask was thrown off, and the fortress was in our possession.

Campbell's next movement was on Colar, a Mysorean town enclosed by a mud wall, and defended by a stone fortress, amid gardens in the highest state of cultivation. Against this place he was compelled to make regular approaches, and it was surrendered at discretion, after he had carried his troops close to the glacis. Meanwhile, our main body, advancing in the same direction, reached the town of Arlier in time to hear of the fall of the former place, from which Campbell was ordered to march back to headquarters.

A few other operations succeeded, and the army moved to Oosoor, which, after a brief siege, fell on the 11th of July. Still Colonel Smith was destitute of cavalry, he was hampered by the field deputies, and, worse than all, they were accompanied by a Chevalier St. Lubin, as privy councillor and guide. "He ultimately proved to be a mere impostor, but was, in the meantime, believed, on his own assertion, to have lived with distinction at Hyder's court, to be intimately acquainted with his plans and resources, and to have extensive influence among his officers, native and European." *

An agreement was now made for Morari Rao to join us with a select body of his own troops, and, preceded by an advanced guard, on the 4th of August he joined the army at Oosasta with about 3,000 Mahratta horse and 2,000 foot; but on the same day Hyder entered Bangalore with the light troops of his advanced column. He heard of the junction of the Mahrattas with Colonel Smith, and knew well the locality of their camp, for his spies were everywhere. Morari had been urged by the colonel to encamp within the advanced pickets of our army; but replied, with a confident smile, that he knew how to manage Hyder, and pitched his tents a mile to the right.

The Mysorean leader formed a plan to penetrate into the Mahratta camp, and on the night of the 22nd of August, two infantry columns, with 6,000 horse and some elephants, set out with this intent, and with special orders to bring the head of Morari

* Beveridge.

Rao to Hyder, who was to remain in reserve with the main body, to support the attack or counteract any movement on the part of Smith. But Morari had his corps of spies as well as Hyder, and was quite aware of the coming event. He gave strict orders that none of his cavalry were to mount, but that each man should remain stationed at his horse's head. His further orders were, that they were to be on the alert, and attack all mounted men, without waiting for any password or countersign. This had a fatal result for Captain Gee, Smith's aide-de-camp, who, on riding into the Mahratta lines, was instantly cut down.

The cavalry of Hyder were followed so closely by his infantry, that the Mahratta camp would have been assailed in force, but for a curious episode. The battle-elephant of Morari Rao, irritated by

receiving an accidental wound, tore up the chain by which he was picketed, and seizing it with his trunk, he swung it madly aloft and around him, and while rushing wildly through the camp, he dashed with it at the advancing cavalry of Hyder. These, supposing that the Mahrattas were charging them, recoiled and rushed over their approaching infantry supports. All then became confusion and dismay, which the sudden breaking of dawn, and the flashing of the British bayonets as they got under arms, completed. The Mysoreans fled, after losing 300 men, while the Mahrattas lost only eighteen.

The London papers of the time state that Hyder had more than 400 French officers in his army, who were incessantly instructing his troops in the European system of discipline.

CHAPTER XXIV.

NARROW ESCAPE OF COLONEL WOOD'S ARMY AT MULWAGUL.—ANNIHILATION OF NIXON'S
DETACHMENT.—HYDER BEFORE MADRAS, ETC.

HYDER, probably weary of this profitless war, made overtures for peace. He actually proposed to cede the Baramahal and pay ten lacs of rupees; but these overtures were rejected by the field deputies, who had no limits to the extravagance of their demands. The negotiations were finally broken off about the end of September, 1768, and the strife, which had never been entirely suspended, was renewed with more bitterness than ever. About this time, too, as if to make matters worse, the presidency, dissatisfied with Colonel Smith, because he had treated their deputies on their opinions in war with little respect, and because he had not taken the strong city of Bangalore, recalled that brave and able officer to Madras, entrusting the entire command—always, however, subject to the absurd and benumbing influence of the deputies—to Colonel Wood; and soon after, the fatal effect of this change became painfully apparent.

These deputies from the Council, arrogant, ignorant, self-sufficient, and over-ruling, took it upon them to draw forth the British garrison which occupied the fortress of Mulwagul, and placed therein a company of the people of Mohammed Ali, who sold the place to Hyder, precisely as the previous Mohammedan killedar in his service had

sold it to the nabob. "Colonel Wood's strategy proved very deficient, and Smith's superior military talent was by this means, and the pompous interference of the field deputies, rendered nugatory."

On finding the place betrayed, Wood resolved on its recapture, as he had been too late to attempt its relief on first hearing of its danger. He easily won the lower fort, but an attempt to gain the upper by a night escalade failed,—though it was very nearly successful through the bravery and presence of mind displayed by an English officer named Brooke. On the 4th of October, the following day, Colonel Wood perceived a body of light troops in motion, as if about to throw a convoy into the place, and he set out with two companies with a field-piece to reconnoitre. He had not the least idea that Hyder's army was in his immediate vicinity, and allowed himself to be lured two miles from his camp, when he suddenly saw a body of at least 3,000 horse, and a column of infantry, with a powerful artillery, taking up ground to cut him off.

Flight alone remained to Colonel Wood, who now exhibited more presence of mind and skill than were his wont. He abandoned his gun, formed his two companies into a grand-division square, and fell back, firing from every face of it, till he was joined by a battalion under Captain

Mathews, who had been detached to succour him. The united corps made a succession of stands, and were able to retreat in order till the main body gave them more support.

rather stones of unequal heights and dimensions, and every varied form, from six to sixteen feet in diameter, scattered like the fragments of an earlier world, over the whole surface of the plain.



BIRD'S-EYE VIEW OF THE PAGODA OF THE EAGLE'S NEST, NEAR CHINGLEPUT (MADRAS PRESIDENCY)."

Desperate was the struggle that now ensued, for Hyder's force, increased by fresh columns, made a hot and fierce pursuit, while his well-handled artillery came rapidly up to the front, and every step made the ground, over which our people had to retreat and fight, more and more rough and severe.

It "consisted of a congeries of granite rocks, or

Obliquely to the right, and in rear of the situation in which the advanced troops were engaged, was a small oblong hill, skirted at its two extremities with an impenetrable mass of such stones, but flat, and covered with earth at the top to a sufficient extent to admit of being occupied by more than one battalion; the rocky skirts of this hill extended in a ridge of about 300 yards towards the plain &



stones, and under its cover the Europeans had been placed in reserve till the action should assume a settled form. Hitherto, amid a mass or cover and impediment, which bade defiance to a regular formation, the intervals between the rocks, and sometimes their summits, were occupied with troops; the smaller openings were converted into embrasures for guns; and supports successively arrived from each army to those who were engaged. It was a series of contests for the possession of rocks, or the positions formed by their union, without any possibility of the regular extension of a line on either side, so that a rock was sometimes seen possessed by Mysoreans within the general scope of the British defence, and by the British among the Mysoreans.*

Fighting with all the energy of valour and despair, our soldiers disputed every stone and fragment of rock with the enemy, and often by the bayonet, but overborne by numbers, confusion at last began to spread among their thinning and straggling ranks. It was at this moment that a happy thought occurred to Captain Brooke, who having been wounded in the escalade on the preceding day, was left with four companies in charge of the baggage, sick, and wounded. Observing a flat rock unoccupied, by a circuitous route and concealed by crags and foliage, he took possession of it and had two pieces of cannon drawn into position thereon by such of his wounded men as could work. With these and the four companies, he opened a sudden and biting fire of grape and musketry on the left flank of Hyder's force—the point from which if any aid from Smith was coming, it must have appeared. To give force and colour to this conviction, Brooke and all his party shouted from time to time, "Hurrah! Hurrah! Smith! Smith! Smith!" and Wood struggling, unaware of the stratagem, responded with the same cry, on which Hyder at once ordered a retreat.

Through his cavalry probably, Hyder was not long in learning that he had been deceived, and returned full of rage to the attack, and was attempting with his horse a charge up hill, to where the British—taking advantage of the lull procured for them by Brooke—were in a strong position, but he failed to achieve anything, and as night closed in, our people were left in possession of the field, on which lay, *hors de combat*, eight officers and 229 rank and file, with more than 1,000 of the enemy. By this time the ammunition on both sides was completely expended, and Wood lost two of his guns.

The British were in a very dangerous position in the

field began next day, between Wood and Hyder, who could handle his unwieldy masses with decided genius. Avoiding a general action, for the first defeat he had sustained from Colonel Smith made him cautious, he began a species of predatory operations, laid aside the heavy cannon so much used by Indian princes, reduced his baggage, and came swooping down on our garrisons in succession, capturing forts and making many prisoners.

Having by a skilful stratagem turned Wood's attention to a different quarter, he fell suddenly on Bangalore, in the Pettah of which, the colonel had left all his baggage and train of heavy guns, which were at once seized by Hyder, while the misled colonel, with 700 Europeans, 4,000 sepoys, and two brass eighteen-pounders, was hastening to meet him, where he was *not*. In Bangalore much merchandise and treasure were taken. The inhabitants fled in terror to the fort, and now a dreadful scene ensued. The garrison closed the gates to prevent the confusion consequent on overcrowding, and a multitude of terrified creatures pressed like a human surge against them, seeking to secure themselves and some of their valuables from the ravages of Hyder's Mysoreans, till more than two thousand men, women, and children were crushed or trampled to death.

Returning from Oosoor, whither he had been lured, Wood reached Bangalore, only to see in the distance, the dust of Hyder's retiring force—but retiring with everything of value in the place. His troops were now compelled to wander about for the merest supplies, neglected by the Councils of Madras and Bombay, who thought only of making secure the chief city of each presidency.

The fleet and active horse of Hyder cut off Wood's foraging parties, beat up and drove in his outposts at the most unexpected times, carried off all supplies, and by day and night harassed his toil-worn troops. In one of those flying attacks, after a running fight of several days and nights, when Hyder was making incredible exertions to utterly cut off the division of Wood, the latter was, to his great surprise, suddenly relieved by the retreat of the enemy. This was about ten o'clock at night on the 22nd of November, after he had lost seven officers and 220 men.

When day broke, a great column of dust explained the cause of the sudden deliverance. Major Fitzgerald, the second officer in command of Colonel Smith's division (the colonel being then at Madras), halted at Venicatigerry, and on hearing of how Wood was pressed, hastened to his succour. In another hour he would have been too late, and

Wood's field-guns had only five rounds left in the limber-boxes.

Major Fitzgerald found Wood extremely depressed, and without hope of further successful contention. The major reported this to Colonel Smith, who laid his letter before the Council, which, long ere this, had begun to see that Wood was not the man to conquer Mysore. He was summoned to Madras, put under arrest and tried by a court-martial, but escaped dismissal, as incapacity is not a crime. But his treatment was hard, for he was a brave and good soldier, though not adapted to a command so important, and, more than all, so ill supported by the members of the Council themselves. Yet he had done his utmost to discharge his duties faithfully.

Colonel Lang succeeded him in the field, but by the end of the year 1768, Hyder recovered every acre of territory he had lost, and to open a new campaign on the offensive, after mustering under Fuzzul Oolla Khan, 7,000 regular troops and a great body of irregulars, with ten guns, he ordered that officer to descend into the low country. After sweeping away the isolated posts left by Colonel Wood, and carrying many forts by attack or treachery, Fuzzul Oolla Khan announced to Hyder that by the 4th December, he would complete his descent by the Guljehatty Pass.

The 6th saw Hyder in person descending eastward into the Baramahal, and giving out everywhere, by the voice of emissaries, that he had destroyed the British army, and was preparing for the final conquest of Madras. Early in January, 1769, by carefully eluding a battle and marching rapidly through some of the most unfrequented ghauts or passes, he burst into the Carnatic, and laid waste the British provinces of Tinnevely and Madura, and penetrated into the district of Pondicherry, where again the standard of France was flying, and where many Frenchmen were beginning to indulge in the hope that our fall in India was, perhaps, at hand.

Amid these rapid operations, few affairs created more interest at the time than the total annihilation of a detachment of 250 British troops under Captain Nixon, whom Hyder attacked with two divisions of infantry, numbering some 10,000 men, and a cavalry force still more numerous. Undaunted, Nixon drew up his little band in a good position, and quietly waited the onslaught of this sea of armed Indians. Pouring in a volley so close that every shot told, he then charged with the bayonet, and Hyder's infantry reeling under the volley, actually broke, and turned to leave the field.

But Hyder's cavalry now fell upon the rear of

Nixon's detachment, and the most horrible carnage ensued. Under the sabre every man perished, save a Lieutenant Goreham, who, by his knowledge of the native language, prevailed upon an officer of rank to save his life, by giving him a seat on the crupper of his saddle.

The Frenchmen at Pondicherry, many of whom joined him, confirmed Hyder in the plan he had already adopted, of avoiding pitched battles with us, and making use of his great cavalry force to cut off all detached parties, and to plunder, burn, and destroy the country from whence we, and our ally, Mohammed Ali, drew supplies. In pursuance of this scheme, Hyder surprised many isolated posts and took many prisoners, whom he sent to Seringapatam, where they were most barbarously and infamously treated.

Meanwhile the French had been sedulously engaged in strengthening Pondicherry, where M. Law, who had so often appeared prominently in these wars, looked forward hopefully to restore the French ascendancy in India, and he doubted not but that the time had come, when he received a letter from Hyder with the following passage :—

"Considering the friendship and regard which the French Company and the sirdars (*i.e.*, generals) of their king in Europe bear to me, I am very glad to hear of their happiness and power, also of your health. You have doubtless heard from them the repeated victories which, by the blessing of God, have attended the Circars troops; also the defeat of the English, and my laying waste Trichinopoly, Arcot, and other countries. My victorious armies are now gone towards Madras, near to which they will proceed, when you will certainly send to me a person of distinction, to inform me of certain affairs of your country in Europe as (of) these parts; and till then, be constant in writing me very particular letters advising of the above matters, the situation of affairs in Europe, the English seaports and their sirdars, all of which will be the means of increasing our friendship and regard."

Being destitute of cavalry, the British commanders could neither come up with Hyder, nor intercept him. Worn out by futile and forced marches, while they toiled after him, his fleet horsemen flitted from place to place, and were seldom seen or heard of till they had given some town to the flames. In the course of his operations, Hyder had proceeded to Cauverypooram, where he summoned our garrison to surrender, offering to release all on parole. Seeing the futility of resistance, this was accepted; but Hyder, with the usual perfidy which made him so hateful, violated the capitulation, and the garrison, with Captain Fraser, their com-

mander, were flung into the dreadful dungeons of Seringapatam, where already several prisoners, including Captain Robertson, had succumbed to their sufferings.

"We have lost," wrote an officer in March, 1769, "since I joined the army, twenty-nine officers, and 800 European soldiers. Hyder has many of our best men prisoners." The writer adds, that he was three months a prisoner at "Bingaloor," but procured his liberty by curing one of Hyder's wives of a nervous disorder.*

Seeing the perils thickening around them fast, the inept Council at Madras became sensible of their folly, restored Colonel Smith to the command, and recalled those field deputies, whose presence with the army had caused so much mischief. They could not, however, raise a corps of cavalry, and for want of that most necessary arm, Smith, though an able and most energetic officer, could do little more than cover and protect several rich districts, and check some of the flying squadrons; but he was unable to prevent Hyder paying a second visit to Pondicherry to concert measures with his French friends; though Hyder manœuvred, advancing as if retreating, for Smith was following till both armies were 140 miles to the south of Madras, when the Council, in their terror, besought a forty days' truce (which Hyder cut down to twelve) prior to having a treaty of peace, which Captain Brooke and a Mr. Andrews were empowered to negotiate.†

Hyder now suddenly sent off his infantry, guns, and baggage of every description, with orders to retire by the Pass of Ahtoor, and pushing on at the head of 6,000 horse and 200 foot, on the 29th of March "he appeared sudden, and unexpected as a cloud in the Indian summer, upon the heights of St. Thomas, which overlook Madras."

Though Fort St. George was strong as ever, the Black Town, the warehouses, the beautiful villas, and

little villages around it, were as open and defenceless as in the time of young Tippoo's recent visit, and a great amount of valuable property lay quite at Hyder's mercy, if Colonel Smith's weary infantry failed to arrive in time.

Thoroughly dispirited by the unexpected turn the war had taken, the Council, on receiving a characteristic letter from Hyder, who felt himself in a position to dictate terms, did not assume more than they were ready to concede.

His first demand was for an alliance, offensive and defensive; but this seemed so objectionable, that Mr. Dupré, member of the Council and next in succession to the chair, declared it would be necessary to break off all negotiations if it were persisted in; yet in the end it was substantially conceded.

Hyder sent for Mr. Dupré, and his character, the demand, and the pressing circumstances under which it was made, rendered instant compliance necessary. The councillor went to the Mysorean camp on St. Thomas, and, after a series of conferences, the terms of a treaty were adjusted; and on the 3rd and 4th of April it was signed respectively by the governor, the Council, and Hyder Ali.

"A mutual restoration of captured places was provided for, and Caroor, an ancient dependency of Mysore, which had been for some time retained by Mohammed Ali, was to be rendered back. After the conclusion of the treaty, difficulties arose from a demand of Hyder for the liberation of some persons kept prisoners by Mohammed Ali, and of the surrender of some stores at Colar. With much persuasion the nabob was induced to comply with the former demand, and the latter was yielded by the British Government, probably because it was felt to be in vain to refuse."

And thus ingloriously ended our needless, improvident, and most ill-conducted war with Mysore, a war which showed to the fullest extent the vanity and weakness of the then government of Madras.

CHAPTER XXV.

FAMINE IN BENGAL.—DEATH OF LORD CLIVE.—INTERFERENCE OF GOVERNMENT.

THE Treaty of Madras had not been long signed when in the beginning of the following year, 1770, the financial difficulties of the Company were doubled by calamities that were frightful. Small-

* *Scott's Magazine*, 1769.

† Thornton.

pox raged throughout the land with all the rancour of a plague; the crops of rice and paddy-wheat failed; the tanks were empty, and the rivers shrank; disease and starvation stalked grimly together throughout the most populous and fertile

districts, where, the people perished unnumbered, by thousands and tens of thousands, in the fields, in the topes and thickets, in the streets, by the wayside, and in ruined and deserted forts and temples, the dying and the dead lay so thickly that the hot, breathless air became tainted; and though the statistics of death were never correctly known, it is supposed that nearly a third of the entire population perished. "Tender and delicate women whose veils had never been lifted before the public gaze, came forth from those inner chambers in which Eastern jealousy had kept watch over their beauty, and threw themselves before the passers-by, imploring a handful of rice for their children. The Hooghley every day rolled down thousands of corpses close to the porticoes and gardens of the English conquerors, and the very streets of Calcutta were blocked up by the dying and the dead."

"At this time," says a writer in the London papers, "we could not touch fish, the river was so full of carcasses, and of those who did, many died suddenly. . . . We had a hundred people employed upon the Cutcherry list (at Calcutta) with dhoolies, sledges, and bearers to carry the dead and throw them into the Ganges. I have counted from my bed-chamber window in the morning when I got up, forty dead bodies lying within twenty yards of the wall, besides many hundreds lying in the agonies of death for want, bending double, with their stomachs quite contracted to their backbones. I have sent my servant to desire those who were able, to remove further off, whilst the poor creatures looking up with arms extended, have cried out, '*Baba! Baba!*' (My Father! my Father!) . . . One could not pass along the streets without seeing multitudes in their last agonies crying out as ye passed them, 'My God! my God! I am starving—have mercy on me!' whilst on other sides, numbers of dead were seen with dogs, jackals, hogs, and vultures feeding on their carcasses."*

For these calamities the government could not be entirely blamed, yet some measures ought to have been taken to lessen the evil which was certainly foreseen. There had been long an excessive drought; hence, as the rice crop was sure to perish, means should have been taken, if possible, to store the granaries and magazines from other quarters. Instead of doing this, the members of the government certainly stored up grain, but they speculated in it as individual merchants, realising enormous profits on a calamity that was certain to ensue. "One corn-morant," we are told, amassed of rice "to the value of fourscore thousand pounds." Ere the

dreadful famine had reached its height, the entire rice in Bengal had been bought up by the servants of the Company, and when the dire pressure came, it was by them sold at a tariff of ten times beyond its actual, or at least original, value.

Prints of the time state in round numbers, that in the province of Bengal two millions of persons perished in two months, including 30,000 Europeans; another account reduces this to 450,000 souls. Such were the statements brought by the *Lapwing* packet on the 16th September, 1770.

Among those who perished of small-pox—dying in his garden—was the actual Nabob of Bengal, who was succeeded by a younger brother named Mobarek-ud-Dowlah, a boy in his tenth year, an event of which the directors at once hastened to take a mercenary advantage, by ordering that during his nonage, his annual allowance should be reduced to sixteen lacs of rupees, thus saving to their own coffers the annual £100,000 "which they were, under a formal obligation to pay, and to which the nabob's title was at least as good as theirs was, to the grant of the dewanee."

The great increase of the Company's power and wealth generally, about this time began to attract the attention of the home government, and the directors received a significant notice from Augustus, Duke of Grafton, K.G., then premier, that the progress of their affairs would be brought before Parliament. Hence, in November, 1766, a committee of the whole House was appointed to inquire into the affairs of the Company, and copies were demanded of all treaties with native princes for the ten preceding years.

By this application, which could not be misunderstood, it was evident that the ministry desired that the nation should share in the profits; and hints were thrown out that these might legitimately be employed in relieving the people of some of their heavy taxations, an idea, which, very strangely, seems to have been originally suggested by Lord Clive, then serving in Parliament as member for Shrewsbury.

While collecting evidence on which to base their proposed measures, the House subjected Lord Clive and several other civil and military officials of the Company to a severe and somewhat offensive scrutiny, out of which sprang a report, which was in due time brought forward by the chairman, containing the grave charges of cruelty, treachery, and rapacity, against all who were concerned in the famous Bengal Revolution of 1756.

Lord Clive found himself the chief object of this attack, which was pressed forward with a degree of rancour, hostility, and party bias that were remark-

* *Scots Magazine*, Sept., 1771.

able in their degree. Had these proceedings not been tempered by a little magnanimity, it is not improbable that the hero of Plassey would have been one more in the long list of great men whose services have been repaid by the ingratitude of their cotemporaries. But after a fiery debate it

"If the resolution proposed should receive the assent of this House, then I shall have nothing left that I can call my own, except my paternal fortune of five hundred a year, which has been in the family for ages past. But upon this I am content to live; and perhaps I shall find more real content



HINDOO GIRL.

was carried, "That all acquisitions made under the influence of a military force, or by treaty with foreign powers, do of right belong to the state."

To this was added the additional and most offensive clause, that in acquiring his wealth, "Lord Clive had abused the powers with which he had been entrusted." It failed by a small majority; but the sting remained; and though Clive was little of an orator, and seldom addressed the House, he spoke now with equal dignity and force

of mind and happiness than in the trembling affluence of an unsettled fortune. But to be called, after sixteen years, and after an uninterrupted enjoyment of my property, to be questioned, and considered as obtaining it unwarrantably, is hard indeed, and a treatment of which I should not consider the British Senate capable. Yet if this should be the case, I have a conscious innocence within me, that tells me my conduct is irreproachable — *Frangas non flectes*. They may take from me what

I have ; they may, as they think, make me poor ; but I will be happy. Before I sit down, I have one request to make to the House, that when they come to decide on my honour, they will not forget their own."

He then left the House, in which, after a long

on our Acquisitions in the East Indies." Clive now declined to take command of the forces destined to act against the American colonists, as his constitution had never recovered the shock given to it by the climate of India, and his once strong mind was fast sinking under many kinds of



RELIGIOUS MENDICANT.

and warm debate, on which the sun arose, it was declared—but by a slender majority—that Lord Clive had rendered great and meritorious services to his country. One of Clive's most inveterate enemies was a Scottish naval officer, Captain George Johnstone (son of Sir J. Johnstone, Bart, of Westerhall), who fought a duel with Viscount Sackville, and was author of two little pamphlets, one entitled "A Letter to the Proprietors of East India Stock," in 1771, and the other, "Thoughts

suffering. The depression on his spirits deepened fast ; he retired to the seclusion of the country, where he sunk into a melancholy and desponding state ; and ultimately, on returning to his town house in Berkeley Square, died by his own hand, when not quite fifty years of age. He was buried at Moretown-sea, the parish in which he was born.

Such was the end of Clive the Daring in War. "In the awful close of so much prosperity and glory the vulgar saw only a confirmation of their

own prejudices, and some men of real piety and genius so far forgot the maxims both of religion and philosophy as confidently to ascribe the mournful event to the just vengeance of God, and to the horrors of an evil conscience. It is with very different feelings," adds Macaulay, "that we contemplate the spectacle of a great mind ruined by the weariness of satiety, by the pangs of wounded honour, by fatal diseases and more fatal remedies."

In May, 1767, the amount of the Company's dividend was restricted by Parliament, in a Bill which restrained them from increasing it beyond ten per cent. till the next session of Parliament, and prohibited the voting of dividends save by ballot, in general courts specially summoned for that purpose. As this was the first instance in which Government had directly interfered with the Company in the management of their own revenue, it met with much opposition, especially in the Upper House, where the celebrated Earl of Mansfield stigmatised the measure as being, what it really was, an unjustifiable interference with the vested rights of private property. It was fully carried, however, and when about to expire was continued in force for one year more.

Defeated thus, the proprietors of Indian stock were compelled to listen to a compromise, and while the claims of the Crown to their territorial acquisitions remained undecided, became bound, in the terms of two successive Acts, to hand over to the Lords of the Treasury the sum of £400,000 per annum for two successive years, and afterwards for five years more, commencing in February, 1769. "They agreed, moreover, annually to export British merchandise to the amount of £380,837; not to augment their dividends beyond twelve and a half per cent., by augmentations not exceeding one per cent. in one year; and after paying their simple contract debts, bearing interest, and reducing their bonded debt to the sum lent to Government, to furnish an additional loan to the latter of their surplus receipts at two per cent. interest. These arrangements were obviously made under the influence of the golden dreams which were at this time universally indulged in. The only thing in the Act which indicates some degree of distrust is a proviso that, if the dividend should fall below ten per cent., the payment into the exchequer should be proportionately reduced, and that, if the dividend should fall to six per cent., the payment should entirely cease. A still more unequivocal expression of distrust was given by the directors when, mainly on the ground of the unsatisfactory state of their finances, they adopted the extraordinary measure of sending out to India a commission of supervisors, with complete

powers to suspend, if necessary, even the presidents and councils, to investigate every department of affairs on the spot, and frame regulations adapted to the exigency of the circumstances."

These officials were Colonel Forde, Mr. Henry Vansittart, and Mr. Scrafton. They sailed from Spithead, 2nd of October, 1769, in H.M.S. *Aurora*; but, after touching at the Cape of Good Hope, 27th of December, she is supposed to have foundered at sea, in the Gulf of Sofala—at least she was heard of no more. William Falconer, her purser, author of "The Shipwreck," perished with her, as did also the Rev. William Hirst, M.A., chaplain to the commission, an excellent astronomer, who observed the transit of Venus at Madras in 1761, and in the Greenwich Observatory in 1769.

Now that they had begun the work of interference, Government knew not where to stop, and next sought to claim a share in Indian politics, and, as a prelude thereto, received with favour a request from the Company to have the use of two ships of the line and some frigates; but while the directors were congratulating themselves upon this welcome addition to their resources by sea, they were nonplussed by a message from ministers to the effect, that the naval commanding officer of these vessels should be invested with full powers as a plenipotentiary, to treat with native princes, and to decide all questions of peace or war, as the necessary result of a clause in the Treaty of Paris, by which His Britannic Majesty had agreed to acknowledge the legal titles of the Soubahdar of the Deccan, and of Mohammed Ali to the Nabobship of the Carnatic. The opposition of the Company was so strong and decided that, in the same year, 1767, the Cabinet agreed to modify their object; and Thomas, Viscount Weymouth (afterwards Marquis of Bath), volunteered, in the name of the latter, to explain "that the difficulty of a sole plenipotentiary, if it ever existed, is removed; the Crown does not wish to interfere with the powers of the commission (the supervisors); wants no authority over your servants, nor any direction or inspection of your commercial affairs; disclaims even a recommendation of any person to be employed in it; in short, only wishes to be enabled to assist you effectually; and, in order to that, finds it necessary to have a share in the resolutions and deliberations of the Company, merely with regard to the two objects of peace and war, when His Majesty's forces are to be employed."

Eventually, after much more debating, in 1770 the ministry sent out Admiral Sir John Lindsay, K.B., with some frigates, "to give countenance

and protection to the Company's settlements and affairs." The Company themselves had put all their own vessels of war in the Indian seas under the command of Sir John, who had been knighted for his gallant behaviour at the capture of the *Havannah*, and who was now appointed, by commission under the Great Seal, His Majesty's Minister Plenipotentiary, with powers to negotiate and conclude arrangements with the sovereigns of India generally. Armed with such powers, Sir John Lindsay assumed an authority to which the presidency very imperfectly and most unwillingly submitted. Hence "quarrels arose, and each party determined to see as black what the other saw as white."

In truth, the appointment of Sir John Lindsay proceeded from a conviction existing in the mind of George III. and his cabinet, that a mere company of merchants ought not to be vested with the important right of having diplomatic relations with the reigning monarchs of India, and in part from the intrigues of the Nabob Mohammed Ali, who, for a considerable time, had actually a party and species of agency in London—where his enormous debts to the Company and also to private individuals, were a matter for much discussion before Parliament began to interfere in our Indian affairs—and where he was generally known, by the name of his capital, as the Nabob of Arcot.

While all these vexed discussions were in progress, and before the year preceding Lindsay's appointment closed, the Treaty of Madras had barely been signed, when the Mahrattas invaded Mysore.

The Peishwa Madhoo Rao led his army in person, and with cavalry as swift and active as those of Hyder, and much more numerous, swept all before him, capturing strong fortresses, and large towns, burning villages, and slashing off ears, noses, and lips, till this savage prince seemed to threaten Mysore with greater ruin than Hyder had brought upon the Carnatic.

In virtue of the Treaty of Madras, Hyder Ali now called upon the Council there to aid him with their troops; but the Council affirmed, and

apparently with truth, that Hyder had brought the war upon himself, by intending to begin an offensive war against the Peishwa, who had merely anticipated him, and by leaguings with certain discontented Mahratta chiefs. He was not engaged in a purely defensive war, therefore, they said, they were not bound to yield him succour.

Hyder's difficulties grew daily greater. He and Tippoo were defeated in many encounters, till the enemy were at last in possession of all Mysore, save Seringapatam, and some other strong fortresses. He offered treasure, and endeavoured to excite the alarm of the Council at Madras, by showing what turbulent and dangerous neighbours the Mahrattas would prove, if they succeeded in conquering and occupying Mysore; but every application remained unheeded, and to his rage they declined to aid him by a single field-piece, or sepoy, though when the Mahrattas began to menace the Carnatic, our troops were sent to the front and compelled them to fall back.

Madhoo Rao was forced to quit the field in consequence of ill health, and return to Poonah; but he left at the head of his army Trimbeck Rao, a great warrior, who was so successful that Hyder was eventually obliged to purchase peace, by the cession of a great part of his northern dominions, and the payment of fifteen lacs of rupees, or £150,000, with the promise of an equal sum at a future period.

By this he well understood that if he would preserve his territories from the most dreadful ravages, he must again pay the Mahrattas a great sum for their forbearance; but soon after the treaty of peace, the Peishwa Madhoo Rao died in his twenty-eighth year, and his widow burned herself on his funeral pile. He had been highly respected, and much beloved as a sovereign, having been—withstanding his savage warfare in Mysore—mild and equitable in his government, which was especially formed for the protection of the poor from oppression, and the equal maintenance of the rights of all classes.

And now, all immediate danger being removed for a time, Hyder Ali remained humble and quiet.

CHAPTER XXVI.

MOHAMMED ALI.—THE COMPANY AND THE MINISTRY.—WAR WITH TANJORE.

By the acknowledgment of Mohammed Ali as Nabob of the Carnatic, in the Treaty of Paris, an ample field for his ambition, in aspiring to be monarch of all Southern India, seemed to open up before that now little more than nominal potentate, who, while cherishing the most extravagant hopes in secret, felt galled and maddened by the control which the Company exercised over all his plans and movements; and he was ready to embrace any scheme which he conceived might give him those sovereign rights which not unnaturally he deemed his own. We have already said that he had a party and agency in London. Among his advisers was a Scotchman named Macpherson, son of the minister of Sleat, in Skye, who, in the year 1767, had come to Madras, as purser of the Company's ship *Mansfield*, commanded by his uncle, Captain Macleod. Having by some means been introduced to the nabob, Macpherson soon won so much of his confidence, that he sent him back to London, as his chief agent, with orders to prosecute his interests, and with letters direct to the premier, the Duke of Grafton, his object being, as he stated, to obtain relief from the oppressions under which he (the nabob) laboured. After having an interview with the duke, who proved remarkably suave and subservient to his visitor, the agent expatiated at great length on the high merits of the nabob, and was bold enough, in his name, to offer valuable presents to the minister and his secretary.

Instead of being offended, the duke accepted them, and spoke with great feeling of the stern oppression "which the princes of India laboured under, from the usurped authority of the commercial subjects of the state;" adding, finally, that it was his determination to use all his influence, as premier, in support of the interests of Mohammed Ali. While thus pledging himself to the nabob, says Beveridge, the Duke of Grafton was generous enough not to overlook the merits of his agent, and rewarded him for his attempt to undermine the Company by sending him back to India, early in 1770, with the appointment of a writer in their service; and to this contemptible intrigue, the conduct of the ministry in stealthily carrying out the scheme which they professedly abandoned—interference with the Company, and the appointment of Lindsay as their plenipotentiary—must be

ascribed; and it is extremely probable that it is to the pen of Macpherson, or certainly one of his "party," we owe the following flowery description of the nabob, which appears in several London and Scottish prints of the time, as "by one who has a personal knowledge of the original," and is amusing from its bombast.

"Mohammed Ali Kawn, the reigning Nabob of the Carnatic, is the son of Anwar-ud-Deen Kawn, who, at eighty years of age, crowned a life of honour by a death of glory: he died in arms while he was defending a frontier of his country against his own and the natural enemy of Great Britain. His son, who succeeded to his station and virtues, is about five feet five inches in height; his mould and figure presenting an admirable union of manliness, ease, and elegance. His interior portrait is eminently legible to every intelligent beholder, as the benign emanations of a soul where justice, humanity, fortitude, and discernment are virtually enthroned and exerted. Dignity and condescension are seldom so happily combined as in this prince's whole manner and aspect. Noble, polite, and affable in his general address, whenever he unbends in the hours of innocent and sprightly relaxation, his deportment becomes inexpressibly engaging. He has been equalled by some, but has been surpassed by none, in the filial, conjugal, and parental virtues. Repeated vicissitudes have left the visible traces of solicitude and retrospection on his countenance; but his spirit is too sublime and active to languish under the influence of melancholy. . . . To these numerous virtues he has added the embellishments of his local, indeed, his Oriental literature, being well versed in the Persian and Arabian historians and poets, and possessed of a natural fund for the mental entertainments of others, in his good understanding, genuine wit, and a general taste and ingenuity. His genius, though uncommonly active, is by no means desultory, though he will indulge in *bon mots* with a visitor while dispatching letters of real business. In a word, if the interior perfection of a politician consists in a clear head and penetrating spirit, if his external advantages are comprehended in an engaging person, and an almost bewitching address, few princes have merited the character in a higher degree than Mohammed Ali Kawn."

This panegyric will be found at fuller length in the *Scots Magazine* for 1770, yet it is passed on

one who behaved like a coward when co-operating with our slender force under Captain Cope during the war in 1750; but his virtues are equally lauded in a contemporary work, translated from the Persian.*

This much belauded personage was yet to play a considerable part in our affairs in the East.

On anchoring at Madras, Sir John Lindsay lost little time in acquainting the Company, or the Council rather, with the great powers vested in him, as the plenipotentiary of the Crown, and as such, having full right to treat with the native princes, and also to inquire into the entire conduct of the late war; and that hence, they who had hitherto deemed themselves supreme within their own presidency, were to hold, for the future, but a very subaltern position.

Sir John added, that the Crown had entrusted him with royal letters and presents to Mohammed Ali, Nabob of the Carnatic; and, as in delivering them he was to act as the representative of His Majesty George III., it was plainly the duty of the Council to follow in his train. The latter were struck with indescribable surprise on hearing all this, and, after a time, plainly told Admiral Lindsay that they were resolved not to submit to this degradation.

Equally great were the astonishment and anger of the Court of Directors at Leadenhall Street, when, on the 22nd of March, 1771, they received from the Council the first intimation of the commission so surreptitiously given to the admiral, or, as he was generally called, Commodore Lindsay. "We must either have delivered to him our papers or not," ran the report; "we must either have rendered him an account of our transactions or not; we must have admitted him to have shared in our deliberations or not. There appeared to be no room for hesitation. We were charged with the Company's affairs—we had no instructions from our constituents. Their rights were attacked. We must either have supported them, or basely surrendered them. Our fortunes may be at stake in the issue; but were our lives at equal hazard, we should, without a moment's hesitation, have taken the part we have done. The die is cast; we must stand the issue."

Though this letter was somewhat rebellious in tone, on the 8th of April the directors addressed a letter to the Earl of Rochford, one of the principal secretaries of state, urging that Sir John Lindsay's singular appointment was a direct violation of the ministerial promise given to the Company, painting a disastrous view of its probable results, and

predicting, unless his powers were withdrawn, the ruin of the consequence, influence, and credit of the East India Company.

But the earl's reply was far from satisfactory, as the ministry insisted upon their right to appoint a plenipotentiary. In a quibbling way, the Court were told that Sir John Lindsay had been recalled, but that his commission would remain in force, as Sir Robert Harland, Bart. (another naval officer), had been appointed to succeed to it, and "beside the particular orders given him to promote, as far as possible, a strict union between the nabob and the servants of the Company, and to remove every suspicion of the Company lying under the king's displeasure, he had received instructions to make the support of their importance and honour in the eyes of all the powers in India, a principal point of his attention."

After these vague assurances had been given at Leadenhall Street, Sir Robert Harland, Rear-Admiral of the Red (the only son of a distinguished naval officer of the same name), arrived at Madras on the 2nd of September, 1771, with a squadron of His Majesty's fleet, and, having doubtless secret orders, at once showed his resolution to endorse every measure sanctioned by Sir John Lindsay, who, in defiance of all existing obligations, had declared himself on the side of Mohammed Ali.

The details of all the correspondence that ensued between the Court of Directors, the Council, and Sir Robert Harland, would but weary the reader. Sir Robert is described as having been a very violent and headstrong man, who performed his duties often with more zeal and energy than wisdom. As in the month subsequent to his arrival, in the war we have already recorded, the Mahrattas were in possession of all Mysore, save Seringapatam and a few of the stronger forts, and were already menacing the Carnatic, he represented the state of neutrality as highly perilous, and in defiance of the Treaty of Madras, hotly urged the presidency to conclude an alliance with the conquering Peishwa, and leave Hyder to his fate.

Supported in their views by the other presidencies, the Council of Madras rigidly declined to have any part in the war against Hyder, or to form a new treaty with the Peishwa. The land forces of the Company, they urged, were not at the disposal even of the king's plenipotentiary; and they were only sent, as we have said, towards the frontiers to protect the Carnatic.

While the war was being waged between Hyder and the Mahrattas, the Rajah of Tanjore had attempted to seize some territory belonging to, or

* A. Dow's "History of Hindostan."

claimed by, Mohammed Ali, who called upon his allies, the Company, for assistance, while the rajah courted, by turns, Hyder and the Peishwa to aid him in his invasion. Though the Council at Madras declined being dragged into a new war with Hyder to further the nabob's dreams of conquest, they could not refuse him assistance in a case where justice seemed on his side, and more especially where their own means of revenue were concerned.

During the progress of their late war with Hyder, the Rajah of Tanjore had manifested the greatest reluctance to assist the Company with that arm which they required so much, cavalry, a contingent of which he was bound to furnish, and he made no suitable return for the tranquillity which his territories enjoyed under the protection of the Company, who hence deemed him somewhat of a masked enemy. Thus, when the nabob complained that the rajah had marched into the Marawar country, a division of Ajmeer (one portion of which is desert, the other abounding with grain, tobacco, cotton, and wheat), and moreover that he had attacked some Polygars, who were dependants of the Carnatic, the Council instantly remonstrated with him in high terms; but he replied scoffingly:—

“If I suffer Moravee to take possession of my country, Nalcooty to take my elephants, and Tondemar to injure me, it will be a dishonour to me among the people, to see such compulsions used by the Polygars. You are a protector of my government; notwithstanding you have not settled a single affair. I have finished the matter relating to Moravee, and confirmed him in his business; the affair with Nalcooty remains to be finished; but that I shall finish also.”

While our troops, ready to march, assembled at Trichinopoly, it was resolved to attempt to negotiate with the rajah through Omdut-ul-Omrah, the eldest son of Mohammed Ali; but this proved a failure. Indeed, the latter personage, after inducing the Company to take up his quarrel with Tanjore, began to be apprehensive that they might conquer the whole district for themselves, instead of doing so for him. Accordingly, he offered to give the Company a good round sum for the dominion, and thereupon an agreement was signed, by which Tanjore was to be formally annexed to the Carnatic, to which naturally, it certainly belonged.

On the 12th of September, 1771, when our troops, under General Smith, were about to commence their march, it was discovered, upon inspection, that the nabob's younger son, who had been entrusted with the provision department, had, with genuine Indian rascality, betrayed his trust, and

that there was not food in the camp for a single day.*

By great exertions, General Joseph Smith procured the necessary supplies, and the army crossed the frontiers of Tanjore. The latter is a populous and well-cultivated district of Southern Hindostan, bounded on the north by the Coleroon, on the south by the zemindaries of Ramnad and Shevanga, and on the west by Trichinopoly. In January the whole face of the country, a dead flat level, is one continuous sheet of paddy-ground, interspersed with villages, of which there are now nearly 5,000 in number.

On the 16th of September our troops were before Vellum, a fort situated eight miles south-west of the city of Tanjore—one of the chief bulwarks of the country. A battery against it was thrown up, and armed to breach it; and a practicable gap in the walls was soon effected; but at midnight on the 20th, the garrison silently evacuated the place.

Marching on Tanjore, the capital, a city some six miles in circumference, containing two forts, and one of the finest Hindoo temples in Southern India, the general invested it, forming his camp on the same ground where Lally had been so unfortunate, and he had effected a breach which was reported practicable on the 27th October, when further operations were arrested by an intimation from Omdut-ul-Omrah, the eldest son of Mohammed Ali, called by the British, the “Young Nabob,” that the rajah had come to terms, that he had signed a treaty of peace with him. He had accompanied the expedition, and in some way had arranged that the rajah was to pay a princely sum of money, to surrender the districts which the nabob claimed, and which were asserted to be the original cause of the quarrel; that he was to defray all the expenses of the expedition, to become the ally of the Nabob of the Carnatic in all future wars, and to demolish, if required to do so, the strong fortress of Vellum. But, “before putting an end to hostilities in this way, Omdut-ul-Omrah had just had a serious quarrel with his British allies. He was informed that, by the usages of war, the plunder of places taken by storm belonged to the captors, and it was the prospect of this very plunder that had allured him to Tanjore. He offered a fixed sum of money to the troops in lieu of it; but it was considered a Jew's bargain; the offer was rejected, and violent altercations took place.”

Incensed by these measures, which were quite beyond their calculations—and in which the nabob fully acted on the new ideas of independent

* Mill, “History of British India.”



sovereignty for which he was indebted to the impressions given him by our ministry, chiefly through his agent, Mr. Macpherson—the Council at Madras sent General Smith orders not to evacuate Vellum or withdraw his batteries from Tanjore, until the rajah should have made good one of his promised payments in gold or jewels.

As they seem to have well known beforehand, the rajah was not punctual in his time of payment, and when it was past, they declared that he had violated the treaty. To prevent a renewal of hostilities, the rajah consented to leave the fortress of Vellum in our hands, and to cede to us two districts in the neighbourhood of Madura. Thus, year by year, went steadily on the great system of gradual absorption and acquisition.

The rajah's concessions, by admitting weakness, only tempted the Company to attack him once more; thus in the summer of 1773, General Smith had orders to advance again from Trichinopoly. In the June of that year, the nabob had complained to the governor, Mr. Dupré, that the luckless Rajah of Tanjore was not only ten lacs of rupees in arrear of the sum which he had engaged to pay him, but had applied for a body of troops, both to Hyder and the Mahrattas, to aid him in his quarrel; and, moreover, that he had instigated certain marauders to ravage the borders of the Carnatic.

A few days after, at another conference, he not only urged the conquest of Tanjore, but offered the Company, in the event of their proving victorious, ten lacs of pagodas, or about £350,000, the pagoda being a gold coin, used principally in the south of India, and worth about 6s. 8d. It was called a *hoon* by the Mohammedans, and a *varaha* by the Hindoos. After giving it as their candid

opinion that the rajah was perhaps not to blame, with curious inconsistency, they went on to say, that "it is evident that in the present system, it is dangerous to have such a power (*i.e.*, the rajah) in the heart of the province; for as the honourable Court have been repeatedly advised, unless the Company can engage the rajah in their interest by a firm support in all his just rights, we look upon it as certain that should any troubles arise in the Carnatic, whether from the French or a country enemy, and present a favourable opportunity of freeing himself from his apprehensions of, the nabob, he would take part against him, and at such a time might be a dangerous enemy in the south. The propriety and expediency, therefore, of reducing him entirely before such an event takes place, is evident."

Put into fewer words, says Beveridge justly, the argument is merely this:—our relations with the nabob will not allow us to do the rajah justice. It is therefore reasonable to presume that he will seek justice elsewhere. As in this way he may become a formidable enemy, our true policy is to put it out of his power, by taking the first favourable chance of destroying him.*

Accordingly, on the 31st July, General Smith took the field at Trichinopoly, while the nabob bound himself to make payment in advance, by cash or good bills, for the whole expense of the expedition, to provide all necessaries, save military stores, and to pay in future for a force of 10,000 sepoy; and on the 3rd of August, the entire forces under Smith and the nabob's second son, Modul-ul-Moolk, began their march from the Sugar-loaf Rock, towards the territories of the doomed rajah.

CHAPTER XXVII.

THE CONQUEST OF TANJORE.

IN the year before the Tanjore expedition, the troops for Trichinopoly, consisting of 520 British infantry and artillery, and three battalions of the Company's sepoy, with six siege-guns, had marched into the Marawars, over the Polygars of which, the rajah held a doubtful rule, as they had formerly paid tribute and allegiance to the Nabobs of the Carnatic.

These troops were led on that occasion by General Smith and a Colonel Bonjour, and with these were some of the nabob's cavalry, and two battalions of his sepoy, under Omdut-ul-Omrah. Ramdampooram, the capital of the Greater Marawar, was stormed early in April; and by the middle of June the troops of our ally were in full posses-

* "Hist. India," vol. ii.

sion of all the forts of that country. The conquest of the Lesser Marawar was much more difficult, and is said to have been accompanied with such cruelties even on the part of the British, that this new expedition spread terror through Tanjore as it advanced.

The troops destined, as a print of the time has it, for the destruction of "the ill-fated Rajah Toolajee, for having dared to assert the rights which had descended to him from a long line of martial ancestors," on the 6th of August were before the city of Tanjore; and a week later there came from the rajah a letter, in which, after declaring that he had submitted to the hard terms imposed by the nabob, he added this:—

"Some offence should surely be proved upon me before an expedition be taken against me. Without any show of equity, to wage an unjust war against me, is not consistent with reason. This charitable country is the support of multitudes of people; if you will preserve it from destruction, you will be the most great, glorious, and honoured of mankind. I am full of confidence that you will neither do injustice yourself, nor listen to the tale of the oppressor. I only desire a continuance of that support which this country has formerly experienced from the English, and you will reap the same so good an action deserves."

But the unfortunate prince appealed to English clemency in vain, and after a smart skirmish between the nabob's two regiments of regular cavalry and the Tanjore horse, in which the latter were broken and routed, the army encamped to the westward of the city, at the distance of two and a half miles, establishing a post at a village half-way between them and the principal fort.

Regarding Indian tactics, it has been remarked that the Asiatics have a dread of fire-arms, the true cause of which lay in the inexperience of their leaders, who never knew the advantages of discipline, and kept their infantry on a low footing. Their cavalry, though ready enough to engage with the sabre, were extremely unwilling to come within gunshot, through fear, not of themselves, but of their fine horses, on which all their fortunes were expended. And nothing is so ruinous, continues this writer, to the military affairs of Hindostan,* as their false notions of artillery; they are scared by that of the enemy, and have a foolish confidence in their own, placing their chief dependence on the largest pieces, which they neither know how to move nor manage. They give them pompous and sounding names, as the Italians do their guns, and have some that carry a ball of seventy pounds. "When we march round them with our light field-

pieces, and make it necessary to move those enormous weights, their bullocks, which at best are very untractable, if a shot comes among them are quite ungovernable; and, at the same time, are so ill-harnessed, that it occasions no small delay to free the rest from one that shall happen to be unruly or slain."

The attention of General Smith was first directed to the fortification of his camp, which work was complete by the 20th of August, on the evening of which all the rajah's outposts were attacked and driven in. Colonel Fletcher, at the head of a chosen party, broke into the very centre of his cavalry camp, while Colonel Vaughan attacked and stormed two pagodas, within five hundred yards of the fort; yet the garrison of the rajah, 20,000 strong, were resolved to make a stout resistance. The same night an intrenchment, 300 yards in length, was dug between these two pagodas, and the temples formed an excellent shelter for our troops when, next morning, the garrison opened a heavy fire upon them.

Redoubts were thrown up, and trenches run out to the right and left; but on the 24th, the rajah made a sortie, with horse and foot, sepoy and Colliers, to scour these works. Fletcher, who commanded, was wounded by two barbed arrows, and must have given way, had not Vaughan advanced to his support; after which the nabob's horse and our grenadiers came up, when the enemy were driven in, and the trenches held.

About six the same evening the grenadiers took possession of five pagodas, about 400 yards from the chief post. At the right extremity of the parallel a six-gun battery was erected, and a four-gun battery on the left, with two others between them, armed with sixteen guns, all of which opened on the city on the 27th; and two nights later the sap was advanced 300 yards. More batteries were thrown up and more trenches dug, till the 6th of September, when our men were within a few yards of the crest of the glacis, and next day the infantry effected a lodgment on the face of it.

The sap battery was next constructed, and from thence a gallery was sunk for a passage into the ditch, and a practicable breach was made before daybreak on the 16th. On both sides the guns were worked furiously, but the breach was made wider, and orders came to carry the place by storm on the morning of the 27th. There was, however, no attempt made to defend the breach; they advanced straight into the town, and met with so little opposition in the end, that only three grenadiers were wounded.*

* "Authentic Journal of the Siege of Tanjour."

A letter from an officer present to a friend in Scotland, dated Trichinopoly, 18th October, 1773, states that he was one of those who had the honour to be detailed for the storming party under Colonel Vaughan. After entering, he adds, "the two European companies of the 1st Brigade, after making a short halt, to cool the men, marched, without shedding a drop of blood, to the rajah's palace, who, upon getting proper assurances of his life, surrendered with his attendants. Old Monajee, his general, who was so much in the interest of the nabob during his troubles, was taken with all his family. During the siege we had seven officers killed and fifteen wounded. Our loss in non-commissioned officers and privates was equally moderate."

The plunder of the place amounted to £800 sterling for every captain, £400 for each subaltern, and the rest in proportion; while the Company were to obtain 100 lacs of rupees from the princes of the Carnatic for the conquest of Tanjore; but, from future proceedings at Leadenhall Street, on the 28th of April, 1774, it would appear that the unhappy rajah was imprisoned, and his daughters forcibly placed in the seraglio of the nabob. And yet the Company, by a treaty signed in 1762, had given him security for his throne.*

The details of all this disgraceful affair did not reach London till the 26th of March, 1774. The Council felt somewhat ashamed of themselves, and detained the despatches as long as possible, and, on receipt of them, stormy indeed was the meeting that took place at the India House, when General Richard Smith moved, and Mr. Orme seconded him, that the Court of Directors should return thanks to General Joseph Smith, for his gallantry in the conquest of Tanjore. This was opposed, and we are told that when Sir Robert Fletcher narrated some of the features of the event, with those attending the previous conquest of the Marawars, "several proprietors quitted the court, and the strongest marks of horror, pity, and amazement were visible in the countenances of those who stayed to hear the shocking narrative."

It was ultimately carried, however, that General Smith had only obeyed his orders, and done nothing deserving of censure; and so the original motion was carried. The plundering of Tanjore, it was agreed, had occurred in mistake, the order to abstain from it not having been properly communicated to the several officers, while "for the murder of the rajah, and the outrages committed on his daughters by the nabob, no excuse was alleged but the Asiatic custom."

* Mill, Colonel Wilkes, &c.

The rumour of the rajah's murder proved to be a mistake, or exaggeration, as he was merely thrown into prison.

A prevailing suspicion that the Dutch had been assisting the rajah was confirmed after the capture of Tanjore, when they took possession of its sea-port, Nagport, and some other ports, on the plea that they had become theirs by purchase. But neither the Council nor the nabob recognised this alleged purchase, and the former justified their refusal to do so, on the plea that the rajah held his lands of the nabob in fee, according to the feudal system which prevailed all over India. "The assertion that the feudal system prevailed all over India," says Beveridge, "and the argument founded upon it, are ludicrous in the extreme, and only prove into what incompetent hands the interests of the Company, in the Madras Presidency, were at the time committed."

After long delays on the part of the directors, pressure at home was brought to bear upon the Council. They were condemned for all they had done; the president was deprived of office, and his successor had orders to restore the rajah to his throne—events to be noticed in our next chapter.

By this time the Company and their servants could readily obtain money of the inhabitants of India, by the various means of rents, revenues, and trade; and the use they made of these means, and their talents as statesmen and soldiers, will best appear from the following statement, published in 1776, as an account of the sums proved and acknowledged to have been received for the use of the East India Company, from May, 1761, to April, 1771:—

From the net revenues arising from the customs	£
in Bengal	235,882
From the territorial revenue, clear of all charges	15,763,828
Gained by Indian goods	451,651
Gained by European goods	290,062
	£16,750,423
Restitution for expenses incurred in war:—	£
By Meer Jaffier, in 1757	1,200,000
By Cossim, in 1760	62,500
By Meer Jaffier, on his restoration to the mus-	
nud, in 1763	373,000
By Sujah Dowlah, for peace, in 1765	583,333
	£2,218,833

To these sums received for the use of the Company are to be added those distributed by the princes and other natives of Bengal, to the Company's servants, from the year 1757 to the year 1766, both inclusive, as follow:—

On deposing Surajah Dowlah, and placing Meer Jaffier on the masnud in 1757	£ 1,238,575
On deposing Meer Jaffier in favour of Meer Cossim, in 1760	200,269
On restoring Meer Jaffier, in 1763	437,499
Received of the king, queen-mother, and one of the princes, in 1765 and 1766	90,999
Received of Meer Jaffier, in 1763	600,000
Received of Meer Jaffier again, in 1763	600,000
	£3,167,342

To these sums are to be added £300,000 for Lord Clive's jaghire for ten years; and what was

made by private trade was in addition to the enormous sums given. Lord Clive calculated the duty on salt, betel-nut, and tobacco at £100,000 per annum to the Company. This he supposed equal to half the profits of the trade itself; and if he was as near in this, as he was in his calculation of the *dewannee*, which is a reasonable supposition, the sum thus received from the inland trade in ten years would be two millions, which, added to the sum proved to be received, makes the whole sum* to be £24,640,621 sterling.*

CHAPTER XXVIII.

JUDGES APPOINTED IN BENGAL.—BALAMBANGAN.—INTERNAL DISSENSION AT MADRAS.

To preserve coherency in our narrative of the unjust conquest of Tanjore, we have somewhat anticipated the course of events elsewhere.

For the better exercise of justice in India, in March, 1774, "the king was pleased to grant, direct, and appoint," that there should be, within the factory of Fort William, at Calcutta, a court of record, which should be called "The Supreme Court of Judicature at Fort William, in Bengal"—the said court to consist of one principal judge, who shall be called the "Chief Justice," and three other judges, who should be called "Puisne Justices;" and he was pleased to appoint Elijah Impey, Esq., of Lincoln's Inn, to be Chief Justice; Robert Chambers, of the Middle Temple, Steven C. Le Maistre, of the Inner Temple, and John Temple of Lincoln's Inn, Esqs., to be Puisne Justices of this court, "with power to perform all civil, criminal, and ecclesiastical jurisdiction."

In the midsummer of the same year the Company had a dispute with the Governor of the Manillas concerning their settlement at Balambangan, a rich and fertile island, fifteen miles distant from the northern extremity of Borneo, and to the west of Banguey Island. It is about fourteen miles long, by about four broad, and had been ceded by the King of Sulu to the Company, who built a factory upon it in 1773 under a Mr. Harboard.

To the latter the Spanish governor of the Manillas sent a most peremptory message, that if he "did not, immediately on receipt of the notice, retire with all the English who were with him on the island, he would send a sufficient force

to bring him away, and destroy all such works and fortifications as he had erected."

The petty King of Sulu had granted the Company this island as an act of gratitude. He had been at war with the Spaniards, and having been taken prisoner by them in a sea-fight, had been detained for thirteen years a captive at Manilla, till our capture of that place; and the idea of a settlement on the island of Balambangan was warmly encouraged by the Governor and Council of Madras. Mr. Harboard declined to accede to the peremptory orders of the Spaniard, and it was urged, that by the Treaty of Munster in 1648 (the only treaty existing between the English and the Spaniards, which explains and regulates the rights and limits of the latter in the East Indies), the Spaniards had no right to extend their Asian navigation further than they had at that time carried it; and consequently they could have no claim to the island of Balambangan.† Nevertheless it was seized by the Sulu people at the instigation of the Spaniards, our people escaped with difficulty, and their property, to the value of £200,000, was destroyed or captured.

The island remained uninhabited and desolate until 1803, when a new settlement was made upon it; but proving expensive, without promising to be of any real advantage, it was withdrawn, and once more the isle became a wilderness.

In the year 1776 the Company's ships were ordered to complete their complement of men,

* "Hist. Transactions in the Indies," London, 1776.

† Dalrymple's "Clear Proof," &c., 1774.

and have all their guns on board, as a protection against the privateers during the war with America, and in that year one of the Company's vessels had to fight a battle with a whole Mahratta fleet.

It chanced that the *Gertrude*, from Surat, Captain William Bruelle, then in latitude $18^{\circ} 29'$

that personage would send a boat on board. But on two more shots, which wounded two of his men, being received, he piped all hands on deck, and thus addressed them :—

“My lads, the time is come when, if you would remain free, you must be brave. Remember who



THE PALACE OF TANJORE.

fell in with this hostile squadron, and the largest of the ships fired two guns at her. Though the enemy consisted of three grabs, having three masts each, with two bow-guns, and twelve on each side; six two-masted grabs, with two guns forward and eight on each side, and fifteen armed gallivats, the gallant Bruelle ran up the British colours in defiance, and somewhat doubtful of the Mahratta chief's intention, thought perhaps

you are—Britons and free men, while the enemy are only Mahrattas, a parcel of niggers and pirates, to whose rascally fleet, however numerous it may be, our ship is as much superior as an elephant to a herd of deer. Look at your bleeding mess-mates, who demand revenge at *your* hands; and let us show our employers, the Honourable Company, that we deserve the favour we receive at their hands.”

The drum beat to quarters, and a heavy fire



ARREST OF LORD FIGOT.

was opened, both broadsides being engaged till night fell. By sunrise the conflict was renewed, and, sword in hand, Bruelle beat off many attempts to board him; but though the enemy, many of whose craft he had disabled, strove hard to cripple him by carrying away a mast, with both tiers of his guns spouting shot and fire, he bore under a press of sail right through them, and bearing on his course, reached Batavia safely on the 25th of January.

— When he left the Mahratta fleet astern, blood was dripping from all their scuppers, and amid the cries he heard were the voices of many he affirmed to be Europeans.

In electing a new governor for Madras in 1775, the Court of Directors, whose attention had been so pointedly called by Sir Robert Fletcher and others, to the unjust and iniquitous affair of Tanjore, by a small majority carried the nomination of Mr. Rumbold; but it was afterwards voted at a Court of Proprietors, also by a small majority, that the directors should appoint Lord Pigot, who had signed the treaty of 1762, and had ever disapproved of all that had been done in infraction of it.

The friend and correspondent of Clive, he had held the post of governor till 1763, when he returned to England a man of wealth, influence, and of the highest consideration, which had raised him first to a baronetcy, and then to an Irish peerage, as Baron Pigot of Patshul. He wished to reform the presidency of Madras, as his friend Clive had reformed that of Bengal. His election was secured; but before his departure from England, the Court of Directors "passed sentence of condemnation on the policy which had been pursued by the presidency, and declared their opinion that, on account of oppressions exercised by the Nabob of the Carnatic, the Tanjoreans would submit to any power rather than his."

On the 11th of December, 1775, Lord Pigot took his seat as Governor of Madras at Fort St. George, and found, that in the matter confided to him, he was obstructed by all kinds of difficulties and intrigues, but the restoration of the Rajah Toolajee to his territories, as they existed in 1762, was keenly taken in hand by him. Yet some additions of importance were added to the old treaty of that year. The rajah was to bind himself to permit Tanjore to remain garrisoned by the Company's troops; to assign lands for their maintenance; to pay the tribute of the nabob, and assist that prince in war with such forces as he might require, with the concurrence of the Company. It was also arranged that, without the

sanction of the latter, he should form no treaty with any foreign power.

The luckless rajah, now a helpless prisoner, was only too glad—though by these terms reduced to vassalage—to submit to almost any stipulation that restored him to freedom and his territories; but the nabob took a very different view of the affair, though Lord Pigot held several interviews with him, and with delicacy broke the subject gradually.

Tanjore, the nabob urged, belonged to him by right, and his claim thereto had been recognised by the King of Great Britain, who, in a letter delivered by his plenipotentiary, had congratulated him on the rapid success of his expedition against that place. Moreover, the rajah had forfeited all right to Tanjore by daring to alienate any portion of its territory, and by entering into treasonable correspondence with the enemies of the Company, of which he (the nabob) had ever been a faithful ally, and he begged the continuance of their friendship, with their favour and their pity upon his grey hairs. Yet this plausible Asiatic but a few months before, had been entertaining in secret the ambassadors of our foeman, Hyder Ali, with a glowing picture of the mutual delight to be experienced by them, when they should behold from his mansion in Madras, and "from the terrace on which they were then seated, the expulsion of the last infidel Englishman over the surf which foamed at their feet."*

On finding that his hypocritical appeals were made in vain to Lord Pigot, the nabob urged his inability to pay his English creditors, to whom he was largely indebted, if the revenues of Tanjore, the chief source of this security, were taken from him. His next plea was delay; but, obviating every difficulty, Lord Pigot, after the subject had been fairly broached, lost no time in restoring the rajah, for the crops were then on the ground, and it was of the utmost importance that they should be reaped for his benefit.

Under Colonel Harper, a body of the Company's troops, as a preliminary, entered the city of Tanjore, and, much to the disappointment of Sir Robert Fletcher, who had resumed the office of commander-in-chief at Madras, Lord Pigot took upon himself the honour of the re-installment, the Council having invested him with full powers to do so. Lord Pigot entered the capital city on the 8th of April, 1776; the rajah's restoration was proclaimed amid salutes of artillery, and in the depth of his emotion in a glowing address that teemed with words of joy, he exclaimed, "Had I a thousand tongues, I could not express my gratitude."

* Auber.

He was but too thankful to agree to the somewhat humiliating stipulations by which his throne was restored to him. He placed his whole territory under the protection of the Company's troops, and instead of assigning a grant of land for the maintenance of the garrison at Tanjore, he undertook to defray it by an annual payment of £160,000 sterling.

Returning to Madras, Lord Pigot on the 5th of May reported to the Council his proceedings at Tanjore, and though approbation was expressed of them generally, it soon became obvious that much difference of opinion existed regarding the details, and "in this new shuffling of the cards, each party began to accuse the other of foul play, and of personal, and the most interested motives. Fierce quarrels ensued, and some of the revolutionary tricks which they had been playing in the divans of nabobs and rajahs came to be repeated in their own council chamber."

A civil servant of the Company named Mr. Paul Benfield, whose salary was so small as to be inadequate for his ordinary expenses, now asserted that he held assignments of the revenues of Tanjore to the amount of £160,000 for money lent to Toolajee, and on the growing crops, to the value of £72,000, for cash lent to individuals. Lord Pigot on receiving this statement—a somewhat startling one to be made by an underpaid junior civilian—simply replied that he would lay it before the Council. The latter body requested Benfield's vouchers for this debt, but he had none to produce, and referred them to the records of the *kutcherry*, or office, for the obligations, and also to the nabob, who said he would acknowledge the debt; but when the £72,000 came to be scrutinised, it sank down to £12,000, and it was also found that Benfield was not the principal creditor, but the agent or representative of those creditors by whom the £12,000 had been lent; and then it became but too apparent that the whole claim was a gigantic attempt to swindle, got up too probably by a collusion with the nabob, to cheat the rajah. Upon this view, without asserting it, the Council acted, by deciding to decline compliance with Benfield's request, as the claims brought forward were totally unconnected with the government.

This was on the 29th of May, and four days after, the inconsistent Council voted by a majority that the decision should be reconsidered, on the quibbling pretext that they thought Mr. Benfield had *demand*ed payment, whereas it appeared that he merely requested it; and to make matters worse, they insulted Lord Pigot by deciding in opposition to him, that the nabob was entitled to

make assignments on Tanjore; that such documents were public claims, and that Toolajee be instructed to recognise the validity of all pledges in corn held by Benfield.

Most violent were the dissensions which now ensued between Lord Pigot and the Council; and others followed fast. Colonel Harper had been left in command at Tanjore, but a Colonel Stuart chose to assert that the post, as the most important held by the Company's troops, was his in right of seniority; and in this matter, which a reference to the dates of their respective commissions would have set at rest, he was vigorously supported by Sir Robert Fletcher, who still cherished his grudge against Lord Pigot, and "who, having found himself once more in his proper element, in the midst of strife, had leagued with the majority."

The necessity for a European resident at Tanjore was generally admitted; but the nomination caused violent discussion. Mr. Russell was proposed by Lord Pigot, who thought that gentleman would carry out his own proper plans; and because he did so, others in a spirit of opposition proposed that Colonel Stuart should hold the joint offices of civil, or resident, and military commandant; and consequently he was at once appointed. More violent and unseemly disputes occurred for several days, before Colonel Stuart's instructions were approved of, and an order was issued to Colonel Harper desiring him to hand over his command at Tanjore to that officer. The president refused to sign either the instructions or the order, and until he did so the two documents were valueless.

On the 22nd of August the Council met again, when the old majority produced a minute containing a series of proposals to the effect "that the vote of the majority constitutes an act of government, without the concurrence of the president by signature or otherwise, and that it was unconstitutional for the president to refuse either to put the question or to execute the decisions of the majority."

Lord Pigot proposed on all the petty matters in dispute, to refer to the Court of Directors; but this idea was not accepted, and the majority resolved that if his lordship still persisted in declining to sign the required papers, that the secretary should do so in the name of the Council; and on this, the most extraordinary proceedings took place. After the order empowering the secretary to act thus was fully written out, and two of the Council had appended their signatures thereto, Lord Pigot seized the document, and drawing forth another, said that he had a charge to present.

This, just prepared by himself, was to the effect that "Messrs. Brooke and Stratton, two of the majority, had, by signing the order to the secretary, been guilty of an act subversive of the authority of the government." It would seem that by the standing orders of the Company, no member of Council, when under an accusation, could vote on any question referring thereto, and hence the effect of this move, by reducing the two factions to an equality, gave the casting vote to Lord Pigot, who, instantly availing himself of the privilege, carried a motion suspending Messrs. Brooke and Stratton.

On the 23rd of August the majority, instead of attending the Council, sent a formal protest by a notary, wherein they denounced the proceedings of the previous day, and declaring themselves the governing body, claimed the loyal obedience of the presidency; nor was the claim long permitted to remain unacted on, for copies of the protest were instantly served on the commanders of the troops, and on all vested with authority. Inflamed by anger at all this, Lord Pigot summoned the Council, but none attended save his own party, who passed a vote suspending all the rest, and ordered Sir Robert Fletcher to appear before a court-martial.

On the evening of the same day, the majority of the Council met elsewhere, and appointed Colonel James Stuart temporarily commander-in-chief, as Sir Robert Fletcher was on the sick list, with orders to arrest the president. This obnoxious task the colonel executed in a manner that showed a singular want of delicacy and good taste. His appointment to the command having been approved of by the unsuspecting president, he spent the greater part of the 24th with him over business matters. They breakfasted, dined together, and the colonel had an invitation to sup with him, and during all this time the arrangements for the arrest were in progress, and it was put in execution thus: Lord Pigot, in his carriage, with his intended guest by his side, returning from an evening drive, found himself suddenly surrounded by a guard of soldiers, who seized his horses, and ere he could speak, the colonel drew a warrant from his pocket, and told him that he must consider himself a prisoner. In this capacity he was conveyed to his residence at Mount St. Thomas, and detained in custody, while all who adhered to him were suspended by the violent and dominant party.

He now claimed the protection of the king's flag, on which our admiral, Sir Edward Hughes,

demanding the immediate surrender "of George, Lord Pigot," with a safe conduct on board the flagship, in the name of His Majesty; but this application was first ignored, and finally resisted by the Council. These strange proceedings in Madras raised at home a storm in both Houses, which was heard in long echoes throughout every part of the country; and Admiral Pigot declared in the Commons that his brother had been offered a bribe equal to £600,000, if he would only defer the full restoration of the Rajah of Tanjore.

After various proceedings, which a writer has justly characterised as "difficult to describe with brevity, and as difficult to be understood if given in the fullest detail," on the 26th of March, 1777, the Court of Directors, by a majority, took a favourable view of Lord Pigot's administration, and ultimately they recalled the members of Council who had deposed and arrested him; they restored him to office, but ordered his instant return to Britain, and that he should deliver over the government to his successor and opponent, Sir Thomas Rumbold, Bart. (of Farrand, in Yorkshire). But ere these orders reached Madras, poor Lord Pigot was in his grave. The imprisonment and affront had preyed so deeply on his health and spirits, that he died about eight months after his arrest.

In April, 1779, his brother, Admiral Pigot, moved and carried a series of resolutions in the House of Commons, among which was an address to George III., praying for the prosecution of four of the members of the Madras Council who were then in England—Messrs. George Stratton, Henry Brooke, George Player, and J. Megin. They were accordingly tried in a court of law, but merely for a misdemeanour, and the verdict of a special jury was obtained against them. "When brought up for judgment, their only punishment was a fine of £1,000 each, which to men so wealthy was scarcely a punishment at all, and was not so severe as taking five shillings from a poor man for being drunk and disorderly."

Sir Thomas Rumbold had reached Madras in February, 1778, and took upon himself the civil government, while the command of the forces was assigned to General Sir Hector Munro. The Carnatic now began to be menaced again, by Hyder Ali and his irrepressible allies, the French; but ere treating of his advance through the Ghauts, it will be necessary to narrate some proceedings elsewhere.

CHAPTER XXIX.

WARREN HASTINGS.—THE FIRST GOVERNOR-GENERAL.—AFFAIRS IN BENGAL, ETC.

AFTER the departure and loss of the three supervisors, Vansittart, Scrafton, and Colonel Forde, in the *Aurora* frigate, the government of Bengal had been left in the hands of Mr. Cartier; but within two years it was notified by the Court at Leadenhall Street to Mr. Warren Hastings that "he was nominated to the second place in Council at Calcutta; and that, as soon as Mr. Cartier should retire, it was their wish that he should take upon him the charge of government till further orders."

The course of all events in India—then so remote from Europe, so far as rapid communication went—had long been regarded in England with total indifference, save by the relatives of the few who were then in the service of the Company, or the holders of stock; and there was long the feeling that it was impossible for people in Britain to understand the transactions in Hindostan; but now these were beginning daily to attract more and more attention, though few men, not holders of India stock, could comprehend the strange anomaly, presented in Leadenhall Street, of a dozen or so plain, business-like citizens of London, calling themselves directors, and a few hundred holders of shares, called proprietors, managing the affairs of about 100,000,000 souls, at the distance of so many thousand miles.

Warren Hastings reached Calcutta on the 17th of February, 1772, and on the 13th of the subsequent April, on the resignation of Mr. Cartier, he assumed the actual government of the presidency; and from that time began the brilliant and startling career by which his name, like that of Clive, is inseparably woven up with the history of British India.

In pursuance of the "Regulating Act," and in choosing him who was to be the first Governor-General, there was no difference of opinion as to the person most worthy of that important post. All pointed to Warren Hastings, from his long experience of India, his wonderful industry, and many other merits. Clive had considered him the best man for the appointment, and had been the first to congratulate him upon it. But the four members of Council appointed with him, and, unfortunately, each with powers nearly co-extensive with his own, were General Clavering, Colonel Monson, Mr. Philip Francis, and Mr. Barwell.

"Warren Hastings," says Lord Macaulay, in his

Essay, "sprang from an ancient and illustrious race. It has been affirmed that his pedigree can be traced back to the great Danish sea-king, whose sails were long the terror of both coasts of the British Channel, and who, after many fierce and doubtful struggles, yielded at last to the valour and genius of Alfred. But the undoubted splendour of the line of Hastings needs no illustration from fable. One branch of that line wore, in the fourteenth century, the coronet of Pembroke. From another branch sprang the renowned Chamberlain, the faithful adherent of the White Rose, whose fate has furnished so striking a theme both to poets and historians. His family received from the Tudors the earldom of Huntingdon, which, after long dispossession, was regained, in our time, by a series of events scarcely paralleled in romance. The lords of the manor of Daylesford, in Worcestershire, claimed to be considered as the heads of this distinguished family. The main stock, indeed, prospered less than the younger shoots. But the Daylesford family, though not ennobled, was wealthy and highly considered, till, about two hundred years ago, it was overwhelmed by the great ruin of the Civil War. The Hastings of that time was a zealous Cavalier. He raised money on his lands, sent his plate to the mint at Oxford, joined the royal army, and after spending half his property in the cause of King Charles, was glad to ransom himself by making over most of the remaining half to Speaker Lenthall. The old seat at Daylesford still remained in the family; but it could no longer be kept up, and in the following generation it was sold to a merchant of London. Before this transfer took place, the last Hastings of Daylesford had presented his second son to the rectory of the parish in which the ancient residence of the family stood."

The living was poor, and lawsuits soon ruined the holder of it. His eldest son, Howard, obtained a place in the Customs; his second, Pynaston, a reckless lad, married before he was sixteen, and died in the Antilles, leaving to the care of his penniless father an orphan boy, before whom lay a strange and ever memorable destiny—Warren Hastings, who was born on the 6th of December, 1732.

"The child was early sent to the village school, where he learned his letters on the same bench

with the sons of the peasantry; nor did anything in his garb or fare indicate that his life was to take a widely different course from that of the young rustics with whom he studied and played. But no cloud could overcast the dawn of so much genius and so much ambition. The very ploughmen observed, and long remembered, how kindly little Warren took to his book. The daily sight of the lands which his ancestors had possessed, and which had passed into the hands of strangers, filled his young brain with wild fancies and projects. He loved to hear stories of the wealth and greatness of his progenitors, of their splendid housekeeping, their loyalty, and their valour. On one bright summer day, the boy, just seven years old, lay on the bank of the rivulet which flows through the old domain of his house to join the Isis. There, as threescore and ten years later he told the tale, rose in his mind that which, through all the turns of his adventurous career, was never abandoned. He would recover the estate which had belonged to his fathers. *He would be Hastings of Daylesford!* This purpose, formed in infancy and poverty, grew stronger as his intellect expanded, and as his fortune rose. He pursued his plan with that calm but indomitable force of will which was the most striking peculiarity of his character. When, under a tropical sun, he ruled 50,000,000 of Asiatics, his hopes, amidst all the cares of war, finance, and legislation, still pointed to Daylesford; and when his long public life, so singularly chequered with good and evil, with glory and obloquy, had at length closed for ever, it was to Daylesford that he retired to die.*

A writership for him was obtained in the Company's service, and after perfecting himself in arithmetic and book-keeping, young Warren—so called from the family name of his mother—still remembering his inflexible resolution to recover Daylesford, in his eighteenth year sailed for India, then regarded as the sure high-road to fortune; that India which (out of Leadenhall Street) was still a land but little known in England, save as a shore, the bottom of whose sea "was rich with pearls and ambergris; whose mountains of the coast were stored with precious stones; whose gulfs breed creatures that yield rich ivory; and among the plants of whose shores are ebony, redwood, and the wood of Hairzan, aloes, camphor, cloves, sandal-wood, and all other spices and aromatics; where parrots and peacocks are birds of the forest, and musk and civet are collected upon the lands."†

Full of such ideas, Warren Hastings landed in Bengal in the October of 1750, and began his

career in the factory of Cossimbazar, where he was made prisoner, when, as already related in its place, it was surprised by Surajah Dowlah, and Ensign Elliot shot himself. Under Clive he served at Plassey as a private volunteer; and having early attracted his attention, Hastings was, by him, appointed agent for the Company at Moorshedabad in 1758, and there he continued till 1761, and in those three years must have had ample opportunity to make a fortune, had he chosen to imitate the reckless cupidity of those around him; and after becoming a member of the Bengal Council, at a period when his colleagues were heedlessly following their insatiable thirst for gain by grinding oppression of the natives, and after vehement protestations against their conduct, he returned to England in 1764, by which time he had acquired a moderate degree of wealth, for he was enabled to present £1,000 to a sister, and settle £200 yearly on an aunt.

As Clive, at this time, was somewhat averse to employing Hastings in Bengal, from the circumstance of his having been a member of Vansittart's obnoxious Council in Bengal, he was appointed second member of Council at Madras, for which he sailed, in the *Duke of Grafton*, in the spring of 1769; and it was on this voyage that the only eccentric event of his life took place. Among the passengers was a German named Imhoff—who called himself a baron, yet worked as a portrait-painter—with his wife, a native of Archangel, a witty, agreeable, and attractive woman, with whom Hastings fell in love, all the more readily that she seemed heartily to despise her husband; and long ere the protracted voyage round the Cape was over, it had been finally arranged that, for the payment of a sum of money, "the baron" was to apply for a divorce in some German court, where the marriage tie could be most easily dissolved, and that Hastings, when the lady should thus be set free, was not only to marry her, but to adopt her children. The baron, by this speculation, pocketed far more money than he could hope to gain by painting portraits in India; while "the young woman who was born under the Arctic Circle was destined to play the part of a queen under the tropic of Cancer."

The Imhoffs continued to live in Madras as man and wife, Hastings defraying the expense of their splendid establishment, till about a year after, when he became President of Bengal, and "the decree of divorce permitted the baron to depart with a well-filled purse, the wages of dishonour; and the baroness now became Mrs. Hastings, to hold her levees, as the wife of the first Governor-

* Macaulay.

† "Travels of Two Mohammedans."



JAUT ZEMINDARS AND PEASANTS.

General of India. The children also seem not to have been forgotten, for one of them is afterwards met with, bearing the rank and title of Lieutenant-General Sir Charles Imhoff.*

Hastings began his administration at Calcutta under many disadvantages. The famine, to which we have alluded, had occurred under the government of Cartier, and only a few months before the accession of Hastings to the chair took place.

"The situation of affairs," wrote Clive to him at this juncture, "requires that you should be very circumspect and active. You are appointed Governor at a very critical time, when things are suspected to be almost at the worst, and when a general misapprehension prevails of the mismanagement of the Company's affairs. The last parliamentary inquiry has thrown the whole state of India before the public; and every man sees clearly that, as matters are now conducted abroad, the Company will not be long able to pay the £400,000 to Government. The late dreadful famine, or a war either with Sujah Dowlah or the Mahrattas, will plunge us into still deeper distress. A discontented nation and disappointed minister will then call to account a weak and pusillanimous Court of Directors, who will turn the blow from themselves upon their agents abroad, and the consequences will be ruinous both to the Company and their servants. In this situation, you see the necessity of exerting yourself in time, provided the Court give you proper powers, without which, I confess, you can do nothing; for self-interest or ignorance will obstruct every plan you can form for the public."

And now, it may not be out of place to note the relations of Britain to the adjacent Indian powers, and of those powers to one another at this period, when the government of all our three possessions in the peninsula of Hindostan devolved upon Warren Hastings.

The government of the emperor at Delhi, who for years had been dependent upon the British, the Nabob of Oude, or the Mahrattas, was feeble in the extreme—so feeble, that even the Nizam of the Deccan, or the Subahdar of Bengal, could affront his authority, which the major portion of the princes of India had completely shaken off. Thus now many vassals took advantage of the general decay of the Mogul power to raise their own, by any means, while Afghans, Sikhs, and Mahrattas, and the more powerful nabobs, were insulting the territories of those adjacent to them, and over many of which they usurped that authority which belonged, by legitimate right, to the Mogul emperor. With

* Beveridge.

a state of affairs so perilous around him, it required, on the part of Warren Hastings, the most steady vigilance to maintain the balance of power in India, where our wars, in general, hitherto had arisen from the necessity of preventing the French, Portuguese or Dutch, from being too strong for our safety.

At this time, all the states and tribes around us were intent on incessant warfare, plunder, and the acquisition of territory; while many of their chiefs had higher ambitions still. The Court at Leadenhall Street deemed Allahabad, 450 miles up-country from Calcutta, as the leading centre, from which, "as from a watch tower, the English could look around upon the greedy and restless powers that prowled about them." From thence, so long as it suited their policy, they respected the nominal power of the Mogul, but under its prestige exercised themselves the reality thereof.

From that point of vantage, with its powerful fort, could be watched the territories of the Rohillas, Mahrattas, and Jauts, and of Sujah Dowlah, the Nabob of Oude; and, indeed, previous to the arrival of Hastings, the Council at Calcutta had ordered a strong brigade to occupy Allahabad, as being the key to Central India.

Northward of the mighty Ganges reigned the Nabob of Oude, who, by his position and great resources, could always prove a troublesome enemy; and who, if in alliance with the Company, could make them, and himself, the umpires of power in Hindostan. The numerous chiefs of the Rohillas ruled their warlike tribes in detached bands near the frontiers of the Mogul and those of Sujah Dowlah, but yet were unable to make any great movement without the instant knowledge of the former or his vizier; yet they could, at any time, launch 80,000 soldiers, chiefly well-mounted cavalry, on any point they chose. These Rohillas were among the best warriors in India, and regarded the Nabob of Oude as having some traditional authority over Rohilcund, the land wherein they dwelt. They were also deemed the best swordsmen in India, and were famous for the use of those terrible rockets, then so often handled in war, and which, under the name of a *fougette*, a French writer describes thus:—

"In shape it resembles a sky-rocket, whose flight is gradually brought to take a horizontal direction. It forces itself immediately forward, cuts as it penetrates, by the formation of its sides, which are filled with small spikes; it becomes on fire at all its points, and possesses within itself a thousand means by which it can adhere, set in flames, and destroy. It is more effectual," he continues, "for

the defence of harbours than red-hot shot: by means of its natural velocity it does more execution, and in a less space of time, than the most active field-gun could achieve, and requires but one horse; and as a defensible weapon, it must be admitted that, where a small body of men is attacked, the *fougette* may be adopted with the greatest advantage."

The tribe of the Jauts extended over the land, from Agra to within a few miles of Delhi, and they held three forts, which, like many others in India, enjoyed the reputation of being impregnable. Their artillery enjoyed, moreover, the highest reputation for skill and efficiency. South-west of Delhi lay the country of the Maharajah Madhoo, a ruler over many tribes; but the mass of his people were Rajpoots, or Rajpoots.

"These were deemed the proudest and bravest warriors in Hindostan. They were vain of their lineage, that they were universally descended from kings, and hence their name of *Raj-poots*. They could not patrol or forage like the Mahrattas, nor fling their rockets like the Rohillas, nor handle their cannon like the Jauts, neither had they the stature of the men of Oude; but they surpassed even the Rohillas in the use of the sword, and had the prestige of never having given way in battle. In a war with the Jauts," he continues, "their cavalry charged through the fire of ninety pieces of cannon, were thrice repulsed, each time only retiring to re-form, and at the fourth charge they won the victory. In stature they were rather below the middle size; but their persons were well-proportioned, their countenances handsome, and expressive of dignity and courage." *

The Sikhs, originally a Hindoo sect, whose chief

doctrine was universal toleration, held all the territory from Sirhind, a barren and sandy district, in many places destitute of water, to the banks of the "Forbidden River," as the Nilab is named; for Ackbar, on his way to conquest, ordered a fort to be built upon the stream, which he named *Attock*, which means, in the Hindoo language, "forbidden;" hence by their superstition it was unlawful to cross that river.* They were now rapidly rising into importance in war and politics; but they were, as yet, too remote to be considered by the British in their Indian complications, however brave, energetic, and industrious they might be. Of all the tribes, from their power, policy, and position, the Mahrattas were the most likely to give Warren Hastings trouble—except, perhaps, the people of Mysore, whose importance depended on the skill and genius of their rajah. A kindred race with the Mahrattas, occupying contiguous territory, the Mysoreans were nearly similar in their social and military habits.

The general instructions given by the Court of Directors to the governors and councils in this remote land to which they sent them, were to the effect that they were to be—if possible—on friendly terms with *all* these nations, but to avoid, at the same time, alliances with them, offensive or defensive, as such would be certain to lead to wars; but also, not to allow any one to attain sufficient preponderance of power to attempt the conquest of the rest, and thus, by welding India into one vast people, become too formidable for us.

And generally and intelligently was the policy thus inculcated, carried out by the Councils of Presidencies, prior to the appointment of Hastings as first Governor-General.

CHAPTER XXX.

MOHAMMED REZA KHAN AND THE RAJAH NUNCOMAR.

WARREN HASTINGS, it has been remarked by a recent writer, guided his government by an intimate knowledge of, and sympathy with, the people. At a time when their tongue was simply deemed a medium of trade and business, Hastings, skilled in the languages of India, was versed in native customs, and familiar with native feelings; so we can scarcely wonder that his

* Nolan.

popularity with the Bengalees was such that, a century after the great events we are about to narrate, the Indian mother hushed her babe to sleep with the name of Warren Hastings; and with him began, consciously and deliberately, the great purpose of subjecting all that vast peninsula to the crown of Great Britain.

The first duty of public importance that devolved

* See Dow's "Hindostan."

upon Hastings was in connection with the instructions sent out by the Court of Directors in 1771, and which arrived only ten days after he succeeded to the chair—relative to the curtailment of the allowance of the boy-nabob, Mubarek-ud-Dowlah, whose father had perished of small-pox during the dreadful famine. After this, Nuncomar (or Nund-comar), an infamous Hindoo Brahmin, to whom we have referred in relating the events of Mr. Vansittart's government, was competitor for the post of chief minister, with Mohammed Reza Khan, a Mussulman of Persian extraction, a man of active, able, and religious habits, after the manner of his race. In England he would have been deemed a corrupt politician; but, judged by the Asiatic standard, he was a man of perfect honour.

Nuncomar, the Brahmin, whose name, by a melancholy fatality, has been inseparably connected with that of Warren Hastings, was a man who had played many important parts in the revolutions which had taken place in Bengal since the time of Surajah Dowlah, the perpetrator of the Black Hole atrocity; and in Nuncomar the national character of the Hindoo—if nationality he has—was strongly personified; and what that character is, is thus strongly summed up by Macaulay:—

“What the Italian is to the Englishman, what the Hindoo is to the Italian, what the Bengalee is to other Hindoos, that was Nuncomar to other Bengalees. The physical organisation of the Bengalee is feeble, even to effeminacy. He lives in a constant vapour-bath. His pursuits are sedentary, his limbs delicate, his movements languid. During many ages he has been trampled on by men of bolder and more hardy breeds. Courage, independence, and veracity are qualities to which his constitution and his situation are equally unfavourable. His mind bears a singular analogy to his body. It is weak, even to helplessness, for purposes of manly resistance; but its suppleness and its tact move the children of sterner climes to admiration, not unmingled with contempt. . . . What the horns are to the buffalo, what the paw is to the tiger, what the sting is to the bee, what beauty, according to the old Greek song, is to woman, deceit is to the Bengalee. Large promises, smooth excuses, elaborate tissues of circumstantial falsehood, chicanery, perjury, forgery, are the weapons, offensive and defensive, of the people of the Lower Ganges. All those millions do not furnish one sepoy to the armies of the Company. But as usurers, as money-changers, as sharp legal practitioners, no class of human beings can bear a comparison with them. With all his softness, the Bengalee is by no means placable in his enmities,

or prone to pity. The pertinacity with which he adheres to his purpose yields only to the immediate pressure of fear. Nor does he lack a certain kind of courage, which is often wanting in his masters. . . . The European warrior, who rushes on a battery of cannon with a loud hurrah, will sometimes shriek under the surgeon's knife, and fall into an agony of despair at the sentence of death; but the Bengalee, who would see his country overrun, his house laid in ashes, his children murdered or dishonoured, without having the spirit to strike one blow, has been known to endure torture with the firmness of Mucius, and to mount the scaffold with the steady step and even pulse of Algernon Sydney.”

Mohammed Reza Khan, on being appointed Naib-Dewan and Naib-Nizam, had complete control of the Bengal revenues, for the behoof of the Company, through the former office, while the latter enabled him to wield executive authority during the nonage of the orphan nabob. He had enjoyed the government of the province for about seven years; and in addition to the annual salary of nine lacs (£90,000) paid to himself, he had the uncontrolled disposal of about £320,000, intrusted to him for the use of the nabob; and when the order came to reduce that stipend to sixteen lacs of rupees, it fell to Hastings to put it in execution—and for this he was afterwards censured and condemned, as if the act had originated in himself.

However much the saving made may have lessened corruption, or purified the atmosphere of the young nabob's court, no corresponding increase was visible in the exchequer at Calcutta; and Hastings, in perplexity, was left to struggle through all the cares consequent on an almost empty treasury, while every ship and every despatch from Leadenhall Street brought clamorous demands for money—ever and always money.

Great were the power and influence which were placed in the hands of Mohammed Reza Khan; but, though his character stood high, and the belief was general that he had displayed equal fidelity and ability in the discharge of his trusts, nevertheless, rumours to the contrary began to be circulated, mysteriously and insidiously, whenever it was found that the revenues were falling short of what the Council of Bengal had sanguinely anticipated would be the means of exculpating themselves; and ultimately they did not scruple to insinuate that the fault lay with the management of Mohammed Reza Khan—thus it was resolved to deprive him of his important and profitable employments.

The general opinion now got rapidly abroad that he must have acquired enormous wealth during

those years in which the little nabob's thirty-two lacs, and all the money raised by taxes, duties, and privileges in Bengal, had passed through his hands. These rumours were industriously propagated by certain Hindoos, who had considered that a Mohammedan minister of finance was a great encroachment upon that monopoly which the greedy race thought they should have in all money matters; and the chief of those grumblers was the Maharajah Nuncomar, who had resolved to destroy the Mohammedan administration, and rise upon its ruins, although the Company's servants had repeatedly detected him in the most criminal intrigues, and once in a case of forgery. On another occasion, while professing the strongest attachment openly to the British, it was discovered that he was the medium of a secret correspondence between the Mogul emperor at Delhi and the French in the Carnatic, with a view to undermine us.

As no Indian minister who ever held such a post as his had proved honest, it became an easy matter to accuse him of duplicity and rapacity, as there were few habits so ancient in the East, or for which there were so many precedents; and now Nuncomar began openly to urge that Mohammed Reza Khan, who had always been far too popular, was becoming a great deal too powerful, and was nursing in secret a plan to overturn the Company. The alarm thus sounded, it became an easy matter to dissipate the esteem in which he had been held, especially by the poor, when there were laid to his charge every vague or true story of oppression and calamity, but chief of all, the recent plague and famine, with the spread of the small-pox.

These charges, with all the others, and hints as suspicious concerning them, had been duly transmitted to the directors in London by a crafty Hindoo named Huzzernaul, a well-paid creature of Nuncomar, who had an extensive acquaintance with the servants of the Company; while his master made himself popular in Calcutta by a judicious distribution of presents, and thus formed a party sufficient to influence the votes and opinions of the members of the Court of Directors, whose embarrassments and cupidity made them readily take the worst view of the unsubstantiated charges brought against the luckless Mohammed Reza Khan, whose downfall was at once resolved on.

And with this view, on the 28th of August, 1771, the Secret Committee wrote thus to Hastings:—

“By our general orders you will be informed of the reasons we have to be dissatisfied with the administration of Mohammed Reza Khan, and will perceive the expediency of our divesting him of the rank and influence he holds as the

Naib-Dewan of the kingdom of Bengal. But, though we have declared our resolution in this respect to our president and council, yet, as the measures to be taken in consequence thereof might be defeated by that minister, and all inquiry into his conduct rendered ineffectual, were he to have *any previous intimation* of our design, we, the Secret Committee, having the most perfect confidence in your judgment, prudence, and integrity, have thought proper to intrust to your special care the execution of those measures which can render the naib's conduct subject to the effects of a full inquiry, and secure that retribution which may be due.”

The unconscious naib was not the only person to be arrested, as the governor was also enjoined to take measures for securing the whole family of Mohammed, together with the persons of all his known partisans and adherents, and, by such means as prudence might suggest, to convey them all instantly to Calcutta.

Though Hastings had not the least feeling of hostility to the naib, he was compelled to enforce these obnoxious orders, and took his measures with his usual zeal and dexterity. At midnight a battalion of sepoys surrounded the palace of the doomed minister at Moorshedabad. He was roused from sleep, and told that he was a prisoner. With Mussulman gravity, he simply bent his head in submission to the will of God, and went forth. But he went not forth alone, as, among others, there was arrested with him a chief, named Schitab Roy, whom he had made governor of Behar, and whose valour was only equalled by his attachment to the British; and this loyalty was never so much evinced as on that day when Captain Knox's little band of British bayonets scattered the whole host of the Mogul like chaff before the walls of Patna.

After being conducted to Calcutta, the inquiry into the conduct of the fallen minister was postponed for many months; and in the meantime, his office at the court of Bengal was entirely abolished. It was ordered by the Secret Committee, that none of those persons who were arrested with him should be liberated until he had exculpated himself, and made full restitution of all those sums which he was alleged to have appropriated to his own use; and yet further, they vaguely instructed the governor “to endeavour to penetrate into the most hidden parts of his administration, and to discover the reality of the several facts with which he was charged, or the justness of the suspicions they (the Secret Committee) had of his conduct.”

Such instructions were more worthy of the ferocious Vehmgericht of the Middle Ages than of

persons deriving their authority from a court of quiet old gentlemen, sitting in Leadenhall Street, when George III. was king; but they were imperative, and left Hastings no alternative but to obey, or be dismissed in disgrace. In the same tenor the committee continued thus :—

“The Secret Committee knew Nuncomar to be a liar and a scoundrel, and therefore it was that they expected scoundrel's work from him. They gave Hastings no hint to be on his guard against his lies and malice—that was not their cue, for they wanted evidence, and cared not of *what* kind



WARREN HASTINGS.

“We cannot forbear recommending to you to avail yourself of the intelligence which Nuncomar may be able to give respecting the naib's administration; and, while the envy which Nuncomar may bear this minister, may prompt him to a ready communication of all proceedings which have come to his knowledge, we are persuaded that *nothing scrutable of the naib's conduct can have escaped the watchful eye of his jealous and penetrating rival.*”

Concerning these singular instructions, a writer says most justly :—

—but they warned Hastings not to give the villain too much for his services, and not to promise him the office of Naib-Dewan.” *

The office of minister at Moorshedabad, we have said, was abolished, and the government was transferred from thence to Calcutta—from native to European hands; and a system of civil and criminal justice, under British superintendence was established, and the nabob was no longer, even

* Knight.



MUSSULMAN SCHOOL AT ALLAHABAD.

when of age, to have an ostensible share in the government, though he was still to receive his diminished annual allowance, and to be surrounded by a mock state of sovereignty. As he was still an infant, the guardianship of his person and property was intrusted to a lady of his father's harem, known as the Minnee, or Munny Begum; while the office of treasurer of the household was bestowed upon Goordass, a son of Nuncomar. The services of the latter were wanted—or his silence, perhaps—and it was deemed a master-stroke of policy to reward the able and unprincipled spy and traitor by the promotion of his unoffending son.

The double government was now dissolved, and every way the Company were lords and masters of Bengal. Still the trial of the accused was delayed from time to time, till they were brought before a committee, over which Hastings presided in person. The gallant Schitab Roy was fully acquitted of all charge or suspicion, and a formal apology was tendered for the unmerited affront put upon him, and every Eastern mark of honour was

accorded him. Presented with jewels, clothed in a shining robe of state, he was sent back to the seat of his government at Patna; but his health had suffered in captivity, and his high spirit had been so wounded by the degradation he had endured, that he died soon after of a broken heart; his appointments were given to his son, Kallian Sing.

The charges against Mohammed Reza Khan were not so quickly disposed of, as the inquiry, instead of being confined to the time he was Naib-Dewan of Bengal, was taken back to his earlier years, when he had been collector of the revenues at Dacca; and equally numerous and confident were the charges of his accusers, who were certain of his conviction, and of the distribution of his defalcations among them. One blunder with regard to the Dacca charges was soon proved. The name of Mohammed Reza Khan had been substituted for that of his predecessor in office, Mohammed Ali Khan; and he had, in consequence, been charged, during the two years he had held

the collectorate, with an annual payment of thirty-eight lacs of rupees, instead of twenty-seven lacs, the sum for which he had actually agreed. A sum of eleven lacs per annum, or twenty-two lacs for the two years, was at once cut off from the balance supposed to be due by him; and in the end, though the perfect innocence of the naib was not quite clearly established, Hastings was indisposed to deal harshly with him; and after a long hearing, in which the vindictive Nuncomar appeared as accuser, and in which he displayed but too plainly the rancorous hate that inspired him, Hastings declared that the charges had not been made out, and that the fallen man was at liberty. "The rival, the enemy so long envied, so implacably persecuted, had been dismissed unhurt; the situation so long and so ardently desired had been abolished. It was natural that the Governor should be, from that time, an object of the most intense hatred to the vindictive Brahmin. As yet, however, it was necessary to repress such feelings; but the time was coming when that long animosity was to end in a desperate and deadly struggle."

While the position of affairs was thus, the Rajah Nuncomar began a new series of subtle villainies. Cruel, heartless, and infamous though he was, he was not without a zeal for the promotion of the Brahmin faith, and the uprooting of Mohammedanism in Bengal. With this view, or to this end, he sent to his son Goordass, the treasurer to the nabob under our auspices, certain letters, which he desired to have copied by the Munny Begum, then regent to the infant prince; and these were to pass as if addressed from herself to the Council at Calcutta. In these specially-designed

letters were complaints of infractions of treaties by the British, of curtailments of the royal rights of her little charge, and bluntly demanding the restoration of those rights.

By this scheme, Nuncomar thought to kindle such a quarrel as should rouse the British to subvert the Mussulman influence in Bengal; and by humiliating a rival creed, in the confusion and fighting that must ensue, to gratify his hatred of Moslem and Christian alike, while, at the same time, power and plunder might accrue to himself. Hastings soon discovered where the evil spirit was at work; but aware how great and dangerous was the influence that this artful and malevolent son of Menou possessed at the India House, he deemed it prudent to take no step until he had put the Court of Directors in possession of the facts.

Instead of ordering his instant arrest, they delayed to reply distinctly for some time, affecting to deem him no worse than other natives; and there would seem to be little doubt that Nuncomar, by the money at his disposal, had won over, in London, some very high partisans, who dreaded the discovery of their having accepted such bribes. One of the objects contemplated by Nuncomar, both in India and England, was the destruction of Warren Hastings, who had foiled his plans before.

Foreseeing all this, the latter urged upon the directors that there could be no hope of peace or quiet in Bengal if this dangerous man was listened to; but while this last despatch was on its way, events transpired that were of more immediate importance than punishing the intrigues or contradicting the malevolent representations of the Maharajah Nuncomar.

6

CHAPTER XXXI.

THE TREATY OF BENARES.—ROHILLA WAR.—BATTLE OF BABUL-NULLAH, AND CONQUEST OF ROHILCUND.

FOR some time prior to these events, Warren Hastings had been busily devising means for placing the internal trade of Bengal, and the external traffic of the Company, upon a better footing, and in the reformation of all ranks and classes of the Company's servants; and in making these changes—which were deemed innovations, and most unwelcome ones—he became antagonistic to all, and

found all antagonistic to him, as he was intrusted with the execution of these necessary reforms and alterations. As Clive had done before him, he was thus unconsciously, while in the fulfilment of his trust, sowing the seeds of hatred and vengeance, the effect of which he was to feel in time to come; and, in addition to these thankless and laborious tasks, were added the constant anxieties that arose

from the Company's peculiar connections with the Nabob of Oude, with Shah Alum, and the encroaching Peishwa of the Mahrattas, who at uncertain times burst into the heart of India, carrying war and terror from Delhi to the frontiers of Oude, and from the Ghauts of the Carnatic to those behind Bombay. In addition to these he had cause of trouble by murderous hordes of all descriptions—Jauts, Dacoits, Afghans, Bheels, Khonds, and Thugs, "and others of that long array of monstrosity which give to the history of Hindostan the appearance of fable, or of a hideous dream."

In his treaty with the Mogul emperor, Shah Alum, Lord Clive had guaranteed that weak and forlorn monarch the quiet possession of Allahabad and Korah, with twenty-six lacs of rupees annually as a stipend from the Company, who, amid their many embarrassments, had long grudged this money, which would appear to have been, at no time, too punctually paid, and for fully two years had been withheld altogether. Hastings had ample reasons to plead for withholding the stipend, though it happened, unluckily for him, that these reasons were not specified as probabilities in the Treaty of Allahabad; and hence, in natural anger, Shah Alum, quitting Korah and Allahabad—the only territories he had, and the possession of which he owed entirely to the Company—early in 1771, courted the alliance of the Mahrattas, and took the field with a mixed and numerous army. In this, it is said, that he was secretly encouraged by Sujah Dowlah, of Oude, who longed to be rid of his presence, that he might seize upon both Korah and Allahabad, which had belonged of old to the kingdom of Oude, and which he hoped might fall under his rule, with the aid of the British, if he could make a pecuniary bargain with them.

In making this junction with the Mahrattas, Hastings taxed the Mogul with equal treachery and ingratitude to the Company, and in a letter to Sir George Colebrooke, of Gatton, M.P., and long chairman of the Court of Directors, he said, that "of all the powers of Hindostan, the English here alone have really acknowledged his authority. They invested him with the royalty he now possesses; they conquered for him and gave him a territory."*

By the end of 1771, the Mahratta chiefs bore the forlorn and foolish Mogul triumphantly into Delhi; but though in the gorgeous palace of Aurungzebe, he was but a state prisoner in the hands of those hordes of warlike horsemen, who

compelled him to do whatever they pleased; and he was soon hurried into the field, as they were eager for plunder, for the conquest and permanent possession of the land of the Rohillas, Rohilcund, or Kuttahir, an extensive district, which belonged of old to the province of Delhi, lying between the Ganges and the Gogra, and between the 28 and 30 parallels of north latitude. Its climate is temperate, and its soil most fertile. Long had the eyes of the vizier nabob, Sujah Dowlah, coveted this tempting district, in the hope of obtaining it by British aid and the Company's sepoys.

On learning that the Mogul had weakly ceded Korah and Allahabad to the Peishwa of the Mahrattas, who declared his intention of taking immediate possession, the nabob claimed our assistance to prevent these perilous marauders from obtaining a footing in provinces that lay in the heart of his own territory—a settlement that would bring them close upon our own frontier. Thus, to anticipate their movements, Hastings threw into Allahabad a British garrison, under Sir Robert Barker, who was warmly welcomed by the deputy of Shah Alum, that official declaring that his master was no longer a free agent, but a captive of the Mahratta chiefs, who were actually in the habit of subjecting him to blows, and other degradations, when he refused to sign such decrees and firmans as they demanded.

Anxious to preserve peace, as the best means of restoring the prosperity and trade of Bengal after the scourge of the famine, the Governor would gladly have contented himself with the demonstration of posting a brigade in Allahabad; and for some time he paid no attention to the representations of Sujah Dowlah, who persistently urged that the Mahrattas, after subduing Rohilcund, would overrun the whole of Oude, and then, bursting down by the Ganges, would spread death and havoc through Bengal and Behar, as they could bring 80,000 men into the field—men, before the flash of whose spears the effeminate Hindoos and timid Bengalees would grovel in the dust.

About this time, Hastings sent a detachment, under Captain Jones, to drive the Bhotanese, a fierce and resolute mountain race, out of Cutch-Bihar, a fertile and healthy province, lying between the Choncosh and the Ghoraghat rivers and the stupendous mountains of Bhotan, and to annex it to the Company's dominions, to which geographically it belonged. Jones followed the Bhotanese into their own remote country, and took their strongest fortress—Dhalimacotta—by storm, compelling them to send a *bonze*, or friend of the

* Gleig, "Memoirs of Warren Hastings."

Bogdo-Lama, as ambassador to Calcutta. At this same time, the attention of Hastings was fully occupied by the sudden inroads and devastations of the Senessee Fakirs, a vast multitude of variously armed men, who united in themselves the several characters of living martyrs, saints and jugglers, robbers and assassins, although such a combination was not reconcilable to Indian ideas and superstition.

Hordes of these wretches, almost naked, smeared with ochre, ashes, and ghee, had been for ages prowling over all India, pretending to live by alms and prayer, while stealing, murdering, and committing every species of abomination. An army of them, led by an old woman, calling herself an enchantress, had at one time defeated that of the Emperor Aurungzebe, and made him tremble on his peacock throne at Delhi. Silently, swiftly, the present horde, in bands of about three thousand each, rushed through Bengal, burning, destroying the villages, and committing unnumbered horrors wherever they went. Five battalions were sent in pursuit of them, but they swept from place to place with a celerity that defied the pursuit of any regular infantry. To save the Company's exchequer, Hastings had reduced the native cavalry, and, save a troop or so of horse, we had none in that part of India. When it was weakly supposed that this filthy swarm of fakirs had crossed the Brahmaputra river, they suddenly reappeared in various places in the interior of Bengal.

In a letter to Sir George Colebrooke, dated March, 1773, Hastings says, that though "the severest penalties were threatened to the inhabitants in case they failed to give notice of the approach of the Senessee, they are so infatuated by superstition as to be backward in giving the information, so that the banditti are sometimes advanced into the very heart of our provinces before we know anything of their motions, as if they dropped from heaven to punish the inhabitants for their folly."

One of their detached bands fell in with a small party of our troops, under Captain Edwards, and threw them into confusion; after which, that officer, in attempting to rally his men, was slain and mutilated.

Excited by this petty victory, the savage fakirs rushed into fresh excesses, and actually put to the rout an entire battalion of sepoys, led by an officer who had been most vigilant in their pursuit, but who, until this occasion, always found them gone before he reached the place to which he had been directed. With one detachment,

the Governor hastened to pursue and to punish, ordering another to follow a different track, which the fakirs usually took on their return. Yet, after great exertions by these and other corps, nothing was achieved, and those terrible marauders, covered with the blood of many assassinations, and laden with valuable plunder, crossing steep mountains and deep rivers in safety, reached their fastnesses in those wild and distant districts that lie between Hindostan, Thibet, and China; but the results of their ravages had a serious effect upon the revenues of the Company, quite as much from real as from pretended losses.

The nabob was now told that the operations of the Company would be purely defensive; and that, though troops had been placed in Allahabad, nothing should tempt them to overstep the strict line of defence, or allow our arms to pass beyond the frontier of Oude. But the wily nabob knew well the financial difficulties of the Company, and did not lose courage. He therefore proposed a personal interview at Benares. He reached that magnificent city on the 19th of August, 1773, and on the 7th of September there was concluded between him and the Company what has been named the Treaty of Benares, the leading articles of which were:—

"That the districts of Korah and Allahabad, which, less than three months before, had been formally taken possession of by one of the members of the Calcutta Council, 'in the name of the Company, acting as allies of the king, Shah Alum,' should be ceded to the nabob for fifty lacs of rupees, payable to the Company, twenty in ready money, and the remainder in two years, by equal instalments; and that for whatever of the Company's forces the nabob might require, he would pay at the fixed rate of 210,000 rupees per month for a brigade."

This treaty was very severely commented upon at home, and doubtless it bore injustice on the face of it, inasmuch as it engaged the Company to sell, for their own behoof, districts which were held by them in trust. Notwithstanding this, the biographer of Hastings maintains that he really cannot see "upon what grounds, either of political or moral justice, this proposition deserves to be stigmatised as infamous." But though that clause of the treaty looked harmless enough, the understanding which bound the Company to accept money as the price of blood, and to hire out its troops as mercenaries, bore an unpleasant construction.

"If we understand the meaning of words," comments Macaulay, "it is infamous to commit a wicked action for hire, and it is wicked to engage

in war without provocation. In this particular war, scarcely one aggravating circumstance was wanting. The object of the Rohilla war was this: to deprive a large population, who had never done us the least harm, of a good government, and to place them, against their will, under an execrably bad one. Nay, even this is not all. England now descended far below the level of those petty German princes who, about the same time, sold us troops to fight the Americans."

Be all this as it may, the war went on, though the Government were not without misgivings; and Hastings, in a singularly blundering and somewhat sophistical way, compared the relation of Rohilcund to Oude, with that of Scotland to England, before the union of their crowns; but he forgot that Scotland was an independent kingdom, while the Rohillas were scattered over a country peopled by different races, who regarded them as intruders and severe task-masters; so, in that sense, the simile was absurd.

"The Rohilla country," he wrote, "is bounded on the west by the Ganges, and the north and east by the mountains of Tartary. It is to the province of Oude, in respect both to its geographical and political relation, exactly what Scotland was to England before the reign of Queen Elizabeth. It lies open on the south where it touches Oude. The reduction of this territory would complete the defensive line of the vizier's dominions, and, of course, leave us less to defend, as he subsists on our strength entirely. It would add much to his income, *in which we should have our share.*"

And with these incentives, it was resolved to make war on the first opportunity.

Hastings was not deceived in his anticipation that the Vizier-Nabob of Oude would soon want his assistance. As the year 1773 was closing, the nabob was somewhat scared by a rumour that the Abdallees, a fierce and warlike Afghan tribe, were about to invade him, and actually applied for some place of shelter within our territories for the women and children of his family, and also for those of the principal chiefs of Oude. Hastings immediately granted this request, considering that it sounded well in favour of humanity, and to the honour of Britain; while, at the same time, he shrewdly supposed that the families of these great zemindars would be accompanied by a host of retainers and servants, many of whom might settle within the safe and certain frontier of our territory; but he was disappointed in this. The Abdallees did not come down from their native mountains, so the nabob and his zemindars kept

their zenanas and children at Lucknow and Fyzabad.

But soon after, the Nabob of Oude made an application of another kind. Encouraged by some successes which he had obtained over the Mahrattas, and by a new alliance made with the Mogul, who had escaped from these invaders, and had actually offered to assist in the reduction of Rohilcund, he applied for the promised brigade of the Company's troops, which, under the command of Colonel Champion, received orders to begin its march from Patna.

There was no longer any disguise as to the kind of service in which these troops were to be engaged, for the colonel was distinctly told "that the object of the campaign was the reduction of the Rohilla country lying between the Ganges and the mountains. On entering the vizier's country, he was to acquaint his excellency that he was at his service, and seek a personal interview, for the purpose of concerting the intended operations in which the Company's troops were to be employed."

In making these hostile arrangements, the claims of humanity were completely omitted, as nothing was remembered about mitigating the evils of war to the unfortunate people about to be attacked and sacrificed; but the money question—the 210,000 rupees per month—was kept prominently in view, and Champion had orders to fall back on Benares if it was permitted to be a day beyond the month in arrear.

The colonel commenced his march at a time when the Governor did not think that the vizier-nabob, who was conferring with the Mogul in the vicinity of Delhi, could be ready to take the field. However, "the brigade," he wrote, "will gain in its discipline by being on actual service, and its expense will be *saved*." On the 21st of February, 1774, Colonel Champion took the field; and on the 24th of March he crossed the Caramnassa, a small river which falls into the Ganges near Buxar, and was in full march towards the country of the Rohillas, when he received a letter from their leader, a famous warrior, named Hafiz Rahmet, proposing an accommodation.

This could not be listened to, as the nabob, who had formerly made the non-payment of forty lacs of rupees a pretext for the war, now demanded two *crores*, equal to two millions sterling—more than the whole country contained in specie. The luckless Rohillas, aware now that nothing but their destruction would satisfy a cruel enemy, to whom the Company, in whose equity they had hitherto placed some reliance, had completely abandoned them, prepared to put the whole affair to the issue

of the sword, and, in hot haste, mustered 40,000 men—infantry, horse, and rocketeers.

With these, Hafiz Rahmet took up a strong position at Babul Nullah. There, on the morning

"It is impossible to describe, a more obstinate firmness than the enemy displayed," reported Colonel Champion to Hastings. "Numerous were their gallant men who advanced, and often



INDIAN FAKIR.

of the 23rd April, they were seen under arms as Champion's brigade advanced in line against them, and they did not decline the encounter; so the battle began on both sides with equal spirit. Champion had, save a few field-guns, musketry only; the enemy, in addition to their matchlocks, had their heavy artillery and terrible rockets.

pitched their colours between both armies in order to encourage their men to follow them; and it was not till they saw our whole army advancing briskly to charge them, after a severe cannonade of two hours and twenty minutes, and a smart fire of musketry for some minutes on both flanks, that they fairly turned their backs. Of the enemy,



CAMEL JINGALL.*

* Jingalls, small brass cannon mounted upon camels, have been long used in the native armies of India. Though almost useless when opposed to the means and appliances of modern warfare, they possess the advantage of easy transport across country, or over bad roads. In India especially this quality is a very valuable one, the camel being able to carry his burden across nullahs and over portions of road torn away by mountain torrents in the rainy season, where no carriage of any description could venture.

The rider, who is also the artilleryman, works the gun from his seat on the shoulder of the camel, for which purpose he shifts his position, facing round towards the gun, and leaving the management of the camel to the *benkendaize* on foot, who turns the animal about as opportunities present themselves, to enable the gunner to point his weapon, which works upon pivots giving it a vertical and horizontal movement.

above 2,000 fell on the field, and among them many sirdjirs (leaders). But what renders the victory most decisive is the death of Hafiz Rahmet, who was killed while rallying his people to battle. One of his sons was killed, one taken prisoner, and a third, returned from flight to-day, is in the hands of Sujah Dowlah. . . . I wish I could pay the vizier any compliment on this occasion, or that I were not under the indispensable necessity of expressing my highest indignation at his shameful pusillanimity—indispensable, I say, because it is necessary that the administration should clearly know how little to be depended on is this their ally. The night before the battle I applied to him for some particular pieces of cannon, which I thought might prove of great service in the action, but he *declined* giving the use of them. He promised solemnly to support me with all his force, and particularly engaged to be near at hand, with a large body of cavalry, to be used as I should direct. But, instead of being nigh, he remained beyond the Gurrah, on the ground on which I had left him in the morning, surrounded by his cavalry and a large train of artillery, and did not move thence till news of the enemy's defeat reached him."

Thus the nabob, behaving as nabobs usually do, remained, like a coward, in safety till the victory was won, and then his unwarlike rabble rushed on to pillage the Rohilla camp; "while the Company's troops," adds Champion, "in regular order in their ranks, most justly observe: 'We have the honour of the day, and these banditti the profit.'"

Both the nabob and the colonel (who was not indifferent to a little prize-money) complained of each other to Hastings, and in the rancour of their feelings, exaggerated each other's faults. Fyzoola Khan, with the remains of the army, and a considerable amount of treasure, made good his retreat to the mountains; but the defeat and death of the gallant Hafiz Rahmet decided the fate of his country, which was forthwith pillaged without mercy, while its unhappy people were subjected to every barbarity; and the Company's brigade, after winning the victory, had to remain quiet spectators of the awful use made of it, and "were," says Champion, "witnesses of scenes that cannot be described."

This affords a sufficient key-note for one of Macaulay's eloquent passages, thus:—

"Then the horrors of Indian war were let loose on the fair valleys and cities of Rohilcund. The whole country was in a blaze. More than 160,000 people fled from their homes to pestilential jungles, preferring famine, fever, and the haunts of tigers,

to the tyranny of him to whom an English and a Christian government had, for shameful lucre, sold their substance and their blood, and the honour of their wives and daughters. Colonel Champion remonstrated with the nabob-vizier, and sent strong representations to Fort William; but the Governor had made no conditions as to the *mode* in which the war was to be carried on."

In the sequel, many reports of the war, perhaps exaggerations, reached Europe through British channels—through Champion and his officers, who were alike incensed at, and disgusted with, the nabob; and Hastings soon felt, to his cost, the consequences of this over-colouring in the many pamphlets put forth by his enemies about this time. One narrative, published at London in 1781, affirms that 500,000 souls had been driven from Rohilcund across the Jumna; another account reduces this to 18,000 men, found with arms in their hands; but the Hindoos of the country, about 700,000 in number, experienced by the conquest nothing more than what they were always accustomed to—change of masters.*

Champion described the misery of the people generally as "unparalleled," and the country as overspread with the flames of rapine; and the feeling became strong that the Bengal Presidency had no right to participate in this war, and sell their troops for money to a dastardly tyrant, by whom the finest population in India were subjected to every evil. Agriculture languished, commerce died, and under Sujah Dowlah, Rohilcund became the most miserable part of his wretched dominions.

Before the Rohilla war was finished, Nujeef Khan, who commanded the army of the Mogul, Shah Alum, marched in to claim his share of the spoil. As Sujah Dowlah, who piqued himself upon his position as vizier, or prime minister, at the court of Delhi, felt it proper to act, in all matters, as if with the sanction of the emperor, yet he was not quite prepared to give that sham potentate a share of the conquered country; and Colonel Champion, to whom they referred, finding himself unable to decide between the two, referred them to the Governor and Council, who wriggled themselves out of the matter by a decision in the following terms:—

"It is our intention to persevere in pursuit of the object which originally engaged us in the present enterprise, and to adhere strictly to our engagements with the vizier, without suffering our attention to be diverted by foreign incidents or occurrences." In other words, says a writer, their treaty with Sujah Dowlah was of a nature

* Hamilton's "History of the Rohilla Afghans."

that did not permit them to be over-fastidious; and, without inquiring whether it was consistent with his other obligations to yield a portion of his conquest, they were determined to perform their part to the very letter, and thereby establish an indefeasible right to all they had stipulated in return.

After the defeat at Babul Nullah, Fyzoola Khan, a valiant Rohilla chief, took up a strong post near the frontiers, at the head of all the fugitives and dispossessed, expecting that he would be joined by other tribes of the great Afghan family, and also that the Mahrattas would betake them to horse and spear, a contingency, the fear of which induced the nabob to open secret negotiations with him, an unexpected turn of affairs, which disgusted Colonel Champion and his brigade. The latter were becoming worn out by long and forced marches, short rations, and the total absence of all prize-money, and now did not feel themselves over-anxious, in such a despicable cause, to attack a bold and hardy enemy in a formidable position, amid rocky mountains, defended by trenches, stockades, and redoubts.

A hurried treaty was concluded with Fyzoola Khan; he surrendered one-half of all he possessed to the Nabob of Oude, who condescendingly presented him with a *jaghire*, or estate, in Rohilcund. A few chiefs remained with him on the frontiers, but the majority, with their followers, quitted the land for ever, and went forth, with sword and lance, to seek elsewhere another home. Thus the Afghan race were nearly rooted out of Rohilcund. "Yet is the injured nation not extinct. At long intervals gleams of its ancient spirit have flashed forth; and even at this day, valour and self-respect, and a bitter remembrance of the great crime of England, distinguish that noble Afghan race."

The war being nearly over, the vizier intimated to Colonel Champion, in the month of May, that he had no further occasion for the services of the troops in the field before the rains, so preparations were made for cantoning them at Bareilly; the nabob having now acquired the whole territory lately possessed by Hafiz Rahmet, with Ouly and Bessauly.*

All this had barely been adjusted, according to the writer just quoted, when the brigade was called again into the field by intelligence that matters had been accommodated between the Mahratta chiefs. The nabob was, therefore, anxious to complete the total subjugation of the whole country, by which any designs of the Mahrattas and the Mogul—who had taken into his service the infamous Sumroo, the assassin of Patna—might be frustrated.

* Auber's "British Power in India."

Under these circumstances, Colonel Champion again advanced, a demonstration which quelled all disturbances, and finally established the authority of the nabob. The latter had been punctual in his monthly subsidies to the brigade, and had given an assignment on his treasury for fifteen lacs, due by the treaty of 1773, for the second payment on account of the cession of Korah and Allahabad.

After this, he and the Mogul having entered into negotiations by which they satisfied, or, more likely, pretended to satisfy each other, Colonel Champion was directed by the Council to be present to watch all proceedings generally, but to abstain from committing the British to any new engagements. This he did with equal faith and suspicion; for having been disposed to attribute too much importance to the despicable intrigues of Indian courts, he considered the allies of the Company to be just as dangerous, if not more so, than their enemies.

Peace was now established, and whatever may be said of the political morality of the Governor, the financial results did him honour. In less than two years after he took the chair, he had, without adding to the burdens of the people, given £450,000 to the annual income of the Company, besides procuring a million in ready money. He had also relieved Bengal from military expenditure, amounting to a quarter of a million a year, by throwing that charge on the Nabob of Oude; and "there can be no doubt, that this was a result which, if it had been obtained by honest means, would have entitled him to the warmest gratitude of his country; and which, by whatever means obtained, proved that he possessed great talents for administration."

On the 11th of May, 1774, a measure, abolishing the right to buy and sell slaves who had not been previously known as such, was carried into effect. The object was to prevent child-stealing for the purposes of slavery—a practice which the Dutch and French, but more particularly the latter, had greatly encouraged.

The suppression of those savage robbers, known as Dacoits, offered many difficulties; but the Governor, by his skill and perseverance, achieved it, greatly to the relief of the people and Government.

In the year 1774, Mr. Halkhead, of the civil service, made an English translation of the Mohammedan and Hindoo Codes of Law. It was published in March the following year, and dedicated to Governor Hastings, to whom the translator attributed the original plan, result, and the ultimate execution of this most useful work.

CHAPTER XXXII.

DISSENSIONS AT CALCUTTA.—AFFAIRS OF OUDE.—REVOLT OF THE MATCHLOCKMEN.

THE Rohilla war had barely come to conclusion, when the new constitution, as formed by Parliament, came into full operation. Hitherto, Warren Hastings, as simple Governor, had exercised an undivided authority; but now that he became Governor-General of India, his unity of power was to cease. The members of his Council, General Clavering (aide-de-camp to the king, and colonel of the 52nd Regiment), Mr. Monson, and Mr. Philip Francis, arrived at Calcutta on the 19th of October, 1774. Mr. Barwell, the fourth member, had been in India long before. On the following day, the existing government was dissolved by proclamation, and Hastings, with the rank of Governor-General, took possession of all powers of office.

A commission was issued to him, constituting him Governor and Commander-in-chief of the fortress and garrison of Fort William and the town of Calcutta, the object of this conjunction being to obviate all chance dispute with the senior officer in command, who, without his sanction, was not to leave Bengal; and Lieutenant-General Clavering (afterwards Sir John Clavering, K.B., Bart., of Axwell, in the county of Durham) was appointed Commander-in-chief of all the Company's forces in India.

The Company reposed great confidence in the integrity, propriety, and co-operative disposition of Mr. Barwell, who had been long in the country; but Clavering they did not know. It has been said that he was a man of strong prejudices, and that, as a king's officer, he disdained the military service of the Company, although, more than once, he was constrained to compliment the talents and bravery displayed by its officers. Unfortunately, he and Colonel Monson arrived in Bengal with a determination to thwart and oppose the civil servants of the Company, and, more especially, the Governor-General, believing that by so doing, they were sustaining the public prejudice that existed in England, particularly in the House of Commons; for at home there was a large circle of short-sighted politicians, who were desirous of seeing the Company destroyed, and the territories they had acquired handed over to the Government.

These were the leading party men, who were anxious to secure to themselves the power and patronage which would thereby accrue to their

parties respectively, if the three presidencies were governed by, and under the immediate control of, the home ministry. Mr. Philip Francis—supposed by some (Macaulay among others) to have been “Junius”—was a man by nature haughty and turbulent, tyrannical and malignant; and the Court of Directors, though they knew neither his temper nor his talent, knew enough of his antecedents to be certain that no position would satisfy his ambition, no courtesy soften his arrogant temper, and that his combative spirit would inspire him to carry out any quarrel to the bitter end. “In short, he has been described as a man whose disposition “alone was enough to produce discord in Paradise;” and of his four colleagues in the new system of government, not one was acceptable to Hastings.

Francis, we are told, hated him, from the beginning, with an intensity of which few English natures are capable; but among the judges who had arrived with the new members of Council, was Sir Elijah Impey, an old and dear friend of Hastings. They had been schoolfellows together at Westminster, and Hastings, in his delight at the appointment, had written thus to Impey:—

“The news of your appointment to preside over the High Court of Justice affords me every cause of satisfaction, without a circumstance of regret to alloy it. In truth, my friend, nothing else could have reconciled me to that part of the act which, if any latitude is left to you, may, and I am sure will, be a source of the most valuable benefits to this country.”

The members of the new Council soon began their open war with Hastings, by references to the affairs of Oude and the recent conquest of Rohilcund; and asserted, by implication, that he embarked in that strife from private and sordid motives, and that fraud and selfishness inspired his whole transactions with Sujah Dowlah. Hastings, conscious of his own superior knowledge of Indian affairs, and the character of the natives, and of the system which worked best with the princes, had, in conformity with his own ideas and line of action, appointed his friend, Mr. Middleton, to be president and agent at the Court of Oude, with instructions that on all secret and important matters he was to correspond with himself alone, without communicating with the Calcutta Council, the members of which did not preserve that judicious secrecy which

he considered so necessary for the success of diplomatic schemes everywhere, but nowhere so much as in India.

Hastings maintained that the immemorial usage of the civil service left the whole correspondence with the native powers and princes in the hands of the Governor, and that, in this light, Mr. Middleton could alone correspond with, and receive orders from, himself; but this was precisely the point to which the arrogant Francis, and his two unheeding military coadjutors, now addressed themselves.

They demanded that the whole of Middleton's correspondence, from the date of his arrival at the nabob's court, should be laid before them; but Hastings refused to produce more than a portion, and hence their suspicion that he had been actuated by sordid motives and self-aggrandisement; though Hastings was now actually a poorer man than when he had quitted his more subaltern post at Madras in 1771. Constitutionally, he was indifferent to money for himself, and was far above the base motives so readily imputed to him.

He had made, as we have stated, great reductions in expenditure, and gathered, for the benefit of the Company, enormous contributions, though perhaps neither the economy nor the gain had been carried on with the strictest principles of political justice. But Philip Francis (afterwards Sir Philip, and K.B.), from the ungovernable nature of his temper, and activity of his disposition, backed by Clavering and Monson, constituted a majority of the Council; they assumed the whole powers of governance, and Hastings, with his solitary adherent, the conscientious Barwell, was reduced to a cipher, and, naturally, a species of anarchy ensued.

They voted and passed a motion that Mr. Middleton should be instantly recalled from Oude, although Hastings passionately urged upon them that "such a measure would be attended with the very worst effects, as proclaiming to the natives that the British authorities were no longer agreed among themselves, and that the government of Calcutta was falling into a state of revolution."

The nabob, who had no conception of a divided power, or of the nature or use of a Council, and who had always been used to look, in all matters, direct to Hastings in person, was utterly confounded by this sudden state of affairs; and when Middleton showed him the letter of recall, he burst into tears, in his timid nature regarding it but as the precursor of hostilities against himself. Other differences arose

daily in the Supreme Council, which, by ignorant intermeddling, soon contrived to throw the affairs of Bombay and Madras into confusion; and the imperious commands of Francis, indorsed by Clavering and Monson, were let loose as a curse on British India; and Lord Macaulay records the result of their mal-administration to have been, "that all protection to life and property was withdrawn, and that gangs of robbers (Dacoitee?) slaughtered and plundered with impunity, in the very suburbs of Calcutta. Hastings continued to live in the Government House, and draw the salary of Governor-General. He continued even to take the lead at the Council Board in the transactions of ordinary business; for his opponents could not but feel that he knew much of which they were ignorant, and that he decided, both surely and speedily, that which to them would have been hopelessly puzzling. But the higher powers of government and the most valuable patronage had been taken from him."

He began to complain bitterly of the precipitancy, rashness, and ignorance of Francis, Clavering, and Monson, and, in a letter to Sullivan the director, written in the December of 1774, he wrote thus:—

"I am afraid you will see too close a resemblance in the disputes in which I am engaged to those between our late friend (Mr. Vansittart) and his Council; but I trust that, by the benefit of his example and my own experience, and by a temper which, in spite of nature, I have brought under proper subjection, I shall be able to prevent the same dreadful extremities which attended the former quarrels. . . . Without friends, without any kind of personal interest, I have but a discouraging prospect; yet I am prepared for the worst, and shall return quietly and contentedly to England the moment I hear of my recall, for there is no room for palliatives. I hope that my reputation may be spared; but if it is to be blackened for the sake of giving a fair colour to the severity which is to be exercised towards me, I will most certainly defend myself, and I am sure that I shall be able to do it, to the shame of my calumniators."

In a letter written on the same day to Frederick, Lord North, then premier of Great Britain, and afterwards second Earl of Guildford, he said, with reference to the quarrels in the Indian Council—

"I do not mean in this letter to enter into a detail of its rise and progress, but will beg leave to refer to those despatches for the particulars, and for the defence both of my measures

and opinions. I shall here assure your lordship that this unhappy difference did not spring from me, and that, had General Clavering, Mr. Monson, and Mr. Francis brought with them the same conciliatory spirit which I have adopted, your lordship would not have been embarrassed with the appeals of a disjointed administration, nor the public business here retarded by discordant quarrels.*

The Rohilla war was a never-ending source of dispute. One party described the natives who had been dispossessed as all that Macaulay paints them; the other averred that they had all the craft and treachery peculiar to the worst class of the Indians, to which was added the blood-thirstiness of the jungle tigers, and that the real objects of pity in Rohilcund were the meek and oppressed Hindoos. Champion's brigade was to be withdrawn; but the price of the war was to be paid into the treasury, and the nabob was to be compelled to pay to the last anna all he had promised, and to be terrified into making earlier payments than had been agreed upon. "Thus," says a writer pithily, "if they considered the Rohilla war as diabolical work, they would still have the devil's money;" and these resolutions were carried into execution forthwith, despite the most earnest remonstrances of Hastings and of Barwell.

Their proceedings so harassed and terrified Sujah Dowlah, that it is supposed they shortened his life, for he died soon after, early in January, 1775, in his last moments dictating a letter to Warren Hastings, in which he implored protection and friendship for his eldest legitimate son and successor.

The latter, by name Asoff-ud-Dowlah, now succeeded to the nabobship of Oude, with all its dependencies, including Rohilcund; but the petty majority of the Council were now as harsh to the son as they had been to the father, and started a very strange doctrine. They maintained that the treaty made with the late nabob expired with himself, and that they were therefore entitled to negotiate with his successor, on the principle that all former arrangements had ceased to be binding. From whence these pundits drew their ideas of international law does not appear, but the profits to accrue therefrom confirmed them strongly in a sense of their own wisdom. In one sense, as a very heavy debt was owing the Company, it appeared that an application of their doctrine to the new nabob would be very efficacious, so, through their agent at Oude, Mr. Bristow,

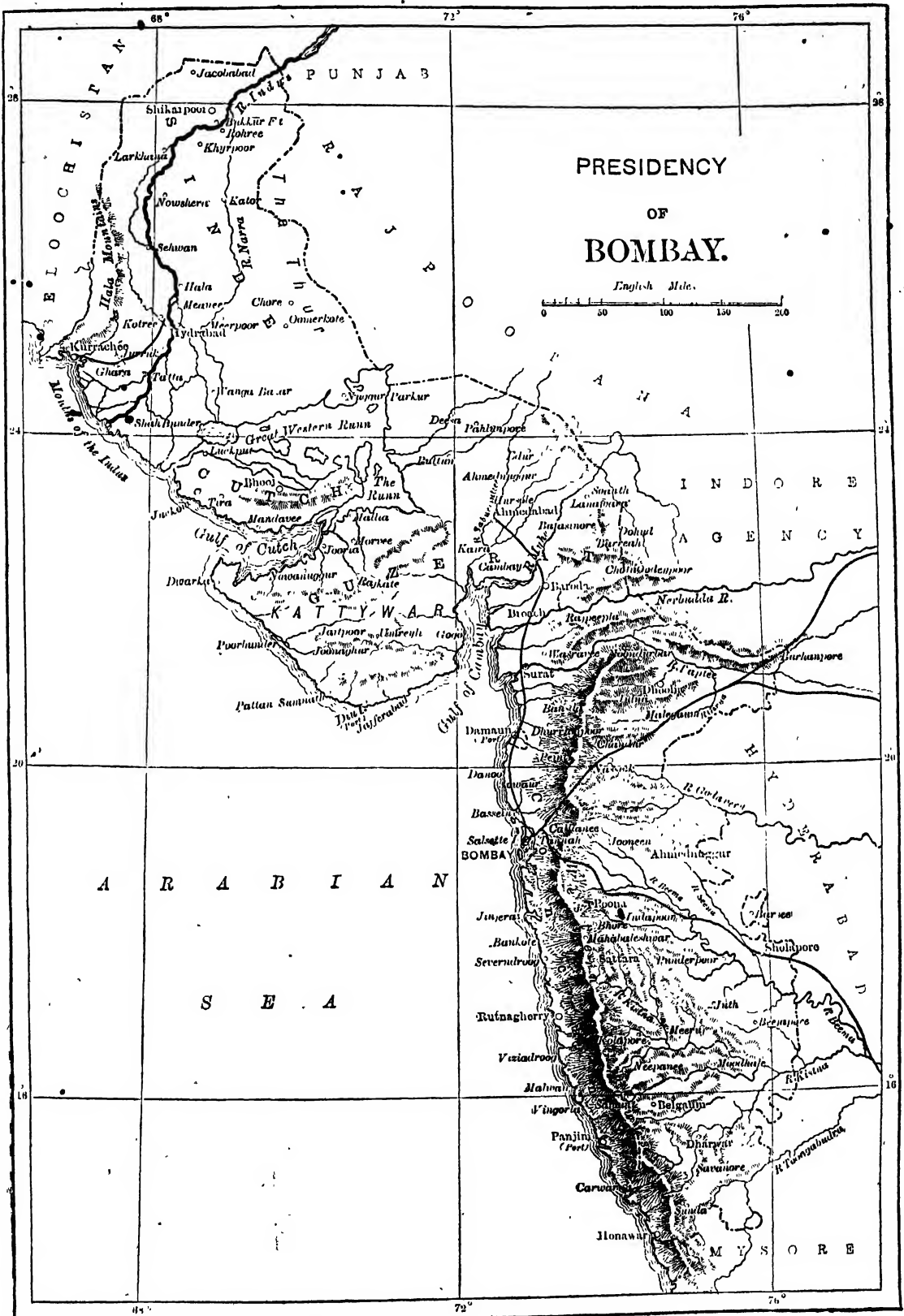
* Gleig's "Life of Hastings."

who had succeeded Mr. Middleton, and who took his orders from, and acted entirely in the spirit of, Messrs. Francis, Clavering, and Monson, the luckless Asoff-ud-Dowlah was peremptorily commanded to accede to a treaty which contained one essential article that was, undoubtedly, far more questionable than Hastings' arrangements for the conquest of Rohilcund.

Their terms were, that all the sums of money due to the Company by the late Sujah Dowlah were to be fully and rapidly discharged; that the purchase of Korah and Allahabad, for which fifty lacs of rupees had been paid (or promised) should be ratified, but only on condition that over and above the purchase-money the Company should receive a free grant of the territory of Benares, held under Oude, by the Rajah Cheyte Sing, as zemindar, and yielding a revenue of 3,210,000 rupees (or £221,000), which territory it was not in the nabob's power to cede, as it had been solemnly guaranteed to the rajah by Hastings.

There is little wonder that, in such hands, Asoff-ud-Dowlah displayed what the author of the "British Power in India," terms "the most fluctuating disposition," and delayed to sign the new treaty till he found that delay and resistance availed him not. Moreover, the monthly pay of the Company's brigade, if it was to remain in Oude, was to be increased by 50,000 rupees. Hastings, with just indignation, refused to sanction this treaty, which, nevertheless, met with the warmest approbation of the Court of Directors at home; for these gentlemen, inspired only by the spirit of, acquisitiveness, looked smilingly at the money clauses, heedless of the gross injustice of the conditions, or the young prince's ability or inability to fulfil them.

Great importance had been all along attached to the alliance with Oude, as a barrier against the Mahrattas; but matters were not improved by the accession of Asoff-ud-Dowlah. Suspecting the fidelity of Busheer Khan, who commanded in Rohilcund, he took the true Oriental way to get rid of him, by ordering his assassination; but the latter escaped to Agra, where Nujeeb Khan, the general of the Mogul army, took him into his service. Shortly after, two chiefs, to whom he had entrusted his conquests in the Doab, threw off their allegiance, and declared themselves independent. These events, with other disturbances fermented by the ambitious spirit of Murteza Khan, the prime minister of Asoff-ud-Dowlah, induced the Council to interfere, more especially as the subsidy had fallen heavily into arrear. In his desperation he applied to his mother, Baboo Begum, who had



possession of all his father's treasure, and she gave him the sum of thirty lacs, and a release for a sum of twenty-six lacs previously advanced, on his binding himself to trouble her for money no more.

To provide for defence abroad and tranquillity at home, he placed European officers over his troops; but having disbanded a body of matchlockmen, while their pay was five months in arrear, a dangerous mutiny broke out, and 4,000 of them set out to attack his camp at Etawah, on the banks of the Jumna. There the banks of the river are prodigiously high, and are rent or perforated into enormous holes and ravines by the action of the rains, while the soil is a hard conglomerated earth. The town, which overhangs these ravines, has a curious aspect, many of the houses being perched on crags which have been cut off from the main body; but ruin and desolation are everywhere apparent.* Yet in no part of India, save the hill-districts, are more beautiful flowers, birds, and insects to be seen. There the oleanders, spreading into large shrubs, send forth their delicious perfume from clusters of pink and white blossom; the baubool also breathes from its bells of gold, while the white jasmine and other flowers that are full of fragrance abound; and amid the bushes may be seen the lovely little tailor-bird, sewing leaves together in his sweetly-scented nest; the bright green fly-catcher; the ring-necked parroquet; and the *hyaks*, or crested sparrows, whose breasts are of the brightest yellow, and look like gold as they float along; and numbers of gaily-plumaged water-birds feed there along the banks of the Jumna.

Here, then, in this romantic spot, Asoff-ud-Dowlah came to meet his mutineers, if disbanded men can be called so. He went forth in person, but having failed to pacify them, resolved to put them down by force, and for this purpose drew up 15,000 sepoys in line. Mr. Bristow, as resident, remonstrated against this proceeding, but in vain, and a regular battle ensued. Some of the matchlockmen, appalled by the force opposed to them, gave way; but of 2,500, who bravely held their ground, 600 were killed and many wounded, while 300 sepoys fell—altogether a new way of settling arrears of pay, that seems rather costly. After this disturbance was quelled, Asoff-ud-Dowlah spent many days sunk in dissipation, in drinking to excess, and amusing himself by the intoxication of all about him. "Such was the ally from whom the Company had been taught to expect so much!"

The nabob, while lingering at Etawah, obtained from the emperor, Shah Alum, the office of Vizier of the Mogul Empire, which had been held by his

father—an empty title, for which he had to pay by a handsome present. But intrigues began to prevail at his court and everywhere around him. His favourite minister, Murteza Khan, behaved to all with insulting arrogance, and, in return, was cordially hated as an upstart; and at the head of the malcontents was Kojah Bussunt, an eunuch, who had frequently distinguished himself in battle, and now commanded the army of Oude. So bitter was the hatred between Kojah and Murteza Khan, that one night, after an apparent reconciliation, when they had both drunk to excess, the latter was murdered by some assassins.

Affecting to be innocent of this atrocity, Kojah Bussunt waited on the nabob to explain, but was ordered at once to be beheaded. Saadut Ali, the nabob's brother, and real instigator of the murder, fearing that he was in danger, mounted a swift horse, and fled to Nujeeb Khan; so thus, in one day, did the nabob lose his general, his minister, and his brother. From Etawah he went to Lucknow; but his army being left without a head, and in arrears of pay, became ready for mutiny; and, as jealousy of their European officers afforded a ready pretext for disturbance, on a given day, several battalions, though distant from each other, concerted to set them totally at defiance. Some of the officers effected an escape with great difficulty; and, at last, by stern measures, to which two of the Company's regiments lent their aid, the mutineers were reduced or scattered.

The Oudean officer commanding at Korah, by name Mahboob Ali Khan, was an object of suspicion to the nabob, who requested that two of the Company's battalions might occupy that district; and they were readily sent under Colonel Parker, an officer whose mode of procedure was both unwise and eccentric. The first step he took, was to disarm all the officers of Mahboob, whose troops at his approach had received him by a royal salute of twenty-one guns in his honour. Most singularly, Parker chose to deem this an act of defiance, and demanded the surrender of the guns. This was of course refused, on which the colonel, at the head of his troops, fell on with the bayonet, and in ten minutes had captured the whole brigade of field-pieces. All this looked so much like the commencement of a war that the nabob, in his sober moments, was sorely perplexed, and at one time denounced Mahboob as a traitor, and at another thanked the blundering Parker for his services, at the same time permitting the former to appear at court, and to receive new marks of the highest favour.

This state of matters also perplexed the Council

* Archer.

at Calcutta, who found that, now, Oude was more likely to prove an incumbrance than an ally, and Hastings began to have many misgivings. He had removed the brave Rohillas, whose love of war and freedom would have made them valuable allies in

repelling the Mahrattas; and for them he had substituted a government whose head was a drunkard, and which was so torn by internal dissension, as to be quite incapable of making a resistance to any foreign aggressor or invader.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

SALSETTE CONQUERED.—TREATY WITH RAGOBAB.—THE BATTLE OF ARASS.—FALL OF RAGOBAB
THE MAHRATTA.

THE Supreme Council, as provided by the Regulating Act, asserted their authority over the other two presidencies, and required from each a complete periodical report of its actual condition, commercially, politically, and financially. The political state of Bombay, which had been so long quiet and undisturbed by war, now became grievously troubled, "for the Council there had entered upon the stormy and incomprehensible sea of Mahratta politics."

The first temptation to intrigue had been the island of Salsette, which lay in their neighbourhood, and which the British had coveted for more than a hundred years. It lies on the western coast of Hindostan, separated from that of Bombay by a strait or channel only two hundred yards wide. It is eighteen miles long by twelve broad, and has now a population of more than 50,000, of whom one-fifth are of Portuguese origin. For the supply of Bombay in wood, charcoal, and sea-salt, its acquisition seemed a necessity, and, moreover, it was rich in crops of sugar, cotton, hemp, flax, and indigo. Its most remarkable objects are the colossal cave temples at Kennery, containing giant statues of Buddha, and one of which the Portuguese converted into a church. The Christian annals of Salsette go back to the 14th century.

The directors at home had long wished to deprive the Mahrattas of it, and in 1769 had much applauded an attempt to obtain it by negotiation, if other means failed. In 1773, advantage was taken of the confusion and domestic dissension consequent to the assassination of Narrain Rao, and the election of a new peishwa, and it was resolved to occupy the island; but nothing was done until the next year, when the startling tidings came from Goa that the Portuguese Government were about to dispatch from the Tagus, a strong

force, with the avowed intention of recovering their lost possessions from the Mahrattas, and among these, Salsette and Bassein were included. The Company had no right whatever to the places for which they were then negotiating with Ragobab, Peishwa of the Mahrattas, but the possession of them would afford many important advantages, and Salsette, at least, they were resolved to secure.

The Portuguese Government, though driven out by violence, had never recognised the legal right of the captors, and they were resolved now to reassert their own by the sword; and there cannot be a doubt that when the matter stood thus, it lay between them and the Mahrattas, and the Company had no plea for interference, and ought to have stood aloof. But the Bombay Council thought differently, and even while negotiating with Ragobab, and affecting friendship for the Mahrattas, a mean advantage was taken of their dissensions, and an attempt was made to obtain possession of the fort of Tannah, situated at the head of Bombay harbour, and on the east side of the island of Salsette. It is yet of great strength, and by its guns commands the channel between the island and the coast.

They tampered with the Mahratta killedar, or governor, who opened a communication with President Hornby, and offered to give up his important trust for two lacs and 60,000 rupees. Ultimately he agreed to do so for one lac and 20,000 rupees; but ere this treacherous bargain was concluded, the peishwa, hearing of the Portuguese armament, reinforced the Mahratta garrison; so, as corruption proved unavailing, the Bombay Government resolved to draw the sword, and anticipate the Portuguese, while they were yet at sea. Accordingly, on the evening of the 12th of December, 1774, an expedition consisting of 620 Europeans, including artillery, 1,000 sepoys, and

200 gun-lascars, under General Robert Gordon, conducting the military, and Commodore Watson the naval, portion of the armament, was dispatched against Tannah, though, both while negotiating with Ragobah and deliberating on the intended capture, the Bombay Council were doubtful of the extent of their powers, as the Regulating Act made them subordinate to the Council and Governor-General at Calcutta. But there was no time to be lost, for the very day after the expedition departed, the Portuguese fleet came to anchor off Bombay harbour, and lodged a formal protest against it.

The Council were not to be moved from their purpose now, and by December the 20th, Gordon's batteries opened against Tannah, which is still a straggling, though not a large town, and in seven days he had achieved a practicable breach. Before advancing to the assault, it was necessary to fill up the ditch, after which the stormers advanced, but were repulsed, with the loss of one hundred Europeans killed and wounded. Among the former was Commodore Watson, whose mode of death was remarkable, as a cannon-shot struck the sand close to him and drove the fine particles into his body.*

On the following day the attempt to storm was successful. Tannah was captured, and, in revenge for the previous day's repulse, our people most barbarously put the whole garrison to the sword. After the fall of the fort, and of another at Versovah, on the northern extremity of the isle, the whole place, so long coveted by the Company, was in their hands on New Year's Day, 1775, and it has remained ever since in our possession. At the present day the Great Indian Railway, from Bombay to Callian, after sweeping across Scin-marsh, enters the island of Salsette, and has a station at Bhondup. On approaching Tannah the line is embowered among beautiful trees. The viaduct across the channel is 1,000 feet in length, the ferry way forty feet broad. On the other side the traveller finds himself passing for about a mile along the margin of the Callian river, surrounded by scenery that is among the most magnificent in the world.

"It will be seen," says a writer on India, "that the Regulating Act did not come into operation under very favourable circumstances. In each of the three presidencies a conquest had been made on grounds which it is impossible to justify. The Council of Bengal had lent themselves to a dastardly tyrant, and sent their troops to execute his cruel and wicked behests, for no better reason than because they were in want of money, and he had agreed to give it to them. The Council of Madras

had in like manner become the tools of Mohammed Ali, and put him in possession of the kingdom of Tanjore, not because the rajah had done them any injury, but, on the contrary, because they had, by their own confession, injured him; and having thus reason to fear that he might become their enemy, deemed it necessary, for their own security, to aggravate the injury tenfold, by robbing him of his personal liberty and depriving him of his kingdom. The Council of Bombay had done iniquity on a less extensive scale, but in a still more flagrant manner. In their conquest they could not even pretend the entanglements of allies whose importunities they found it impossible to resist, but unblushingly seized upon property belonging to one ally, and claimed by another, simply because they had long coveted it, and had ceased to have any hope of obtaining it except by violence!"

Though the capture of Salsette had been effected on the pretext of excluding the Portuguese, it placed the Company in a new position with regard to the Mahrattas, to whom, of ancient right, the isle belonged, and on the possession of which they had always piqued themselves; and though the nation was then rent in two by a contention for the office of peishwa, the attention of both parties was drawn to the aggression of the Bombay Government. The latter, having now begun a double game, were compelled to continue it, and thus, while offering friendly explanations to the ministerial party at the capital of the Deccan, they were actively negotiating a secret treaty with Ragobah, the Mahratta chief who claimed and assumed the post of peishwa.

He had sought their assistance, but declined it on finding that the cession of Salsette was to be the price of their alliance. In the September of 1774, his cause was strengthened by the adhesion of Holkar and Scindia, two powerful and warlike Mahratta chiefs; but the party at the capital induced them to secede, and hence Ragobah, unable to keep the field, was compelled to retire to Goojerat, a movement made with a double view. The first was to obtain the aid of the Guicowar Govind Rao, and the second to renew negotiations with the Council of Bombay.

Accordingly, on reaching Baroda (which Sir John Malcolm describes as one of the richest of Indian cities in his time), on the 3rd of January, 1775, Ragobah wrote to Mr. Gambier, the Company's factor at Surat; and through him a treaty was concluded between the Bombay Government and Ragobah, on the 6th of March. By this document, the former recognised the latter "as the true peishwa, and agreed to furnish him immediately with 500 Europeans, and 1,000 sepoys, with a due

* Duff's "History of the Mahrattas."

proportion of artillery. This force was ultimately raised to 3,000 men in all, of whom 700 or 800 were to be Europeans."

In return for this assistance, Ragobah was to cede to them for ever the seaport of Bassein, which gave them command of the extensive teak-forests that now supply the dockyards of Bombay, and, among other islands, Salsette (over which our flag was already flying), and other districts, yielding in all 25,000 rupees of revenue. He further stipulated to pay at the rate of a lac and a half of rupees monthly, as the expense of 2,500 men; and as he had no money, he deposited with the Company, under promise of redemption, jewels and plate to the value of six lacs, in security of a stipulated advance.

The infantry of Ragobah at this time consisted of pikemen and matchlockmen. All wore turbans; the former had long robes that flowed to their feet, and, in addition to a tasselled pike, about seven feet long, carried a tulwar and round shield, both slung by a belt under the left arm. The latter were dressed in a similar manner, but had shorter jackets and drawers, made according to their own fancy, no uniformity of shape or colour being enforced.*

The treaty now formed was a flagrant violation of the Regulating Act, and made the whole Bombay Government liable to suspension from office. Yet they began, without fear or scruple, to make those warlike preparations which, under its tenor, become necessary. Indeed, some time before the 6th of March, when the treaty was signed, a little column, 1,500 strong—of whom eighty gunners and 350 infantry were Europeans—under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Keating, had sailed from Bombay for Surat, and a reinforcement was to follow on the arrival of certain troops that were expected from Madras; but now the Bombay people found themselves in a dilemma.

On the 27th of February, when the colonel came to anchor off the bar of Surat, he received tidings of a terrible disaster which had befallen Ragobah, whom he had come to reinforce. The united forces of the Poonah government, Holkar and Scindia, 30,000 strong, under Hurry Punt Phurkay, had entered Goojerat and forced him to do battle. In this, the treachery and timidity of his own troops became so apparent, that he suddenly quitted the field, and, with 1,000 chosen horsemen, fled to Cambay, the nabob of which, though his friend, was afraid to give him shelter. Thus he had been compelled to ride to Surat, where he had been for four days when Colonel Keating arrived. Yet the latter found himself, by

the orders he had received, impelled to take the field. Some remains of Ragobah's forces were still hovering in the vicinity of Cambay, which lies seventy-two miles north-west of Surat, and is a large town enclosed by a strong wall, the twelve gates of which were then shut every night; so, sailing along the coast, the colonel entered the gulf on which the city stands, and disembarked his troops, which, before advancing inland, were joined by two companies of grenadiers and a battalion of sepoy's, thus making his strength up to 2,500 men.

On the 17th of April, these formed a junction with what remained of Ragobah's troops, now reduced to little better than a disorderly rabble. 20,000 strong, clamouring for food and pay. Under the command of Hurry Punt Phurkay, the enemy mustered 20,000 horse and 5,000 foot. The allies began their advance against him on the 23rd of April, by moving northward, but, for some reasons unknown now, after ten days they were only thirty miles from Cambay. Ragobah, it is said, wished to move towards Ahmedabad, but as the orders of the Bombay Council to proceed against Poonah were imperative, an advance in that direction was made at last.

Yet the marches were made with singular tardiness towards the river Mhye, which flows from the Vindhya Mountains through the province of Goojerat. On its banks a decisive battle was expected, as it was known that Hurry Punt had express orders to attack Ragobah if he should venture to cross the stream. Thus, on the morning of the 18th of May, when Colonel Keating, with the allies, had reached the jungly plain of Arass, a smart cannonade from six field-guns, which opened suddenly from a thicket in their rear, announced the enemy, a large column of whom were seen advancing from another point.

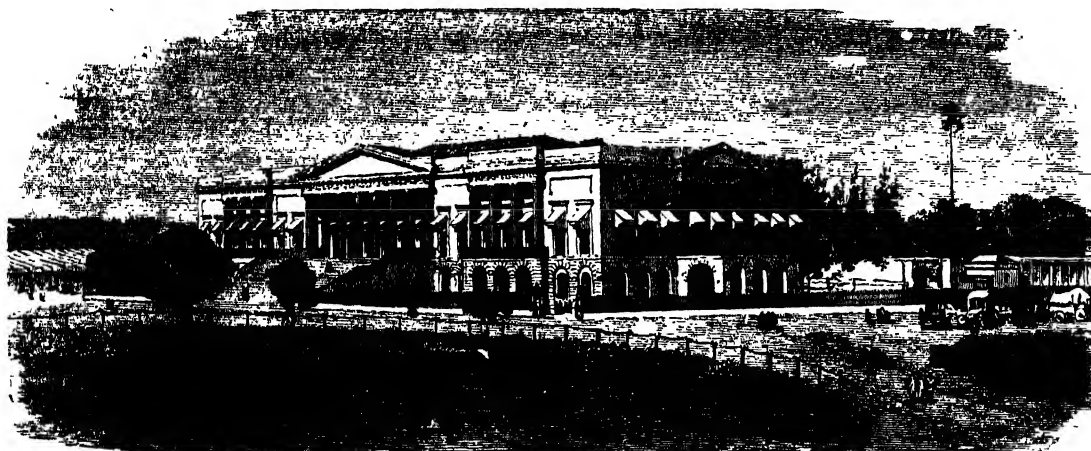
Keating's guns soon silenced the battery in the tope, but as it was remarked that two of the cannon had not been withdrawn, it was resolved to capture them by the bayonet. For this purpose the two grenadier companies, with the rear-guard, faced about, and were just forming to make a dash at the thicket, when they were furiously charged by several rissalas of the enemy's horse. The latter were repulsed with slaughter; but they made a second charge, more resolute and desperate than the first. It was also repelled, but with heavy loss to us, many of our bravest grenadiers and two captains being cut down by the keen-edged sabres of the enemy. Colonel Keating handled his artillery well; but he omitted to bring on his supports in a proper manner, and of this the Mahrattas hastened to take advantage.

* Forbes's "Oriental Memoirs."

On one hand, they blocked up the narrow way with two elephants, and on the other, by charging the luckless grenadiers in the rear, contrived to cut them off from the main body. Undismayed by all this, the hardy Britons faced about, rear rank in front, and drove all before them with lead and steel; but the undisciplined rabble horse of Ragobah, by careering wildly about the field, interposed between them and the advancing line, thus causing the greatest confusion. Wishing to get clear of these people, and make a flank movement, Colonel Keating gave the words, "To the right face;" but unfortunately, amid the din and medley of sounds, the sepoys mistook the command for "right-about face," and, supposing they were defeated, began at

impeded by the discontents of the peishwa's troops, who refused to cross the stream until their arrears were paid.

On the 10th, the colonel began his march up the river, and, after proceeding twenty miles, on learning Hurry Punt was also on the same side only four *ross* (*i.e.*, eight miles) distant, he resolved to take him by surprise; but this attempt was baffled through an alarm spread by some of Ragobah's unruly plunderers. Hitherto the campaign had been rather successful. Not only had the foe been defeated at Arass, but Ragobah obtained, in July, that of which he stood so much in need, a considerable sum of money, and moreover he weakened the hostile confederacy against him, by



THE TOWN HALL OF BOMBAY.

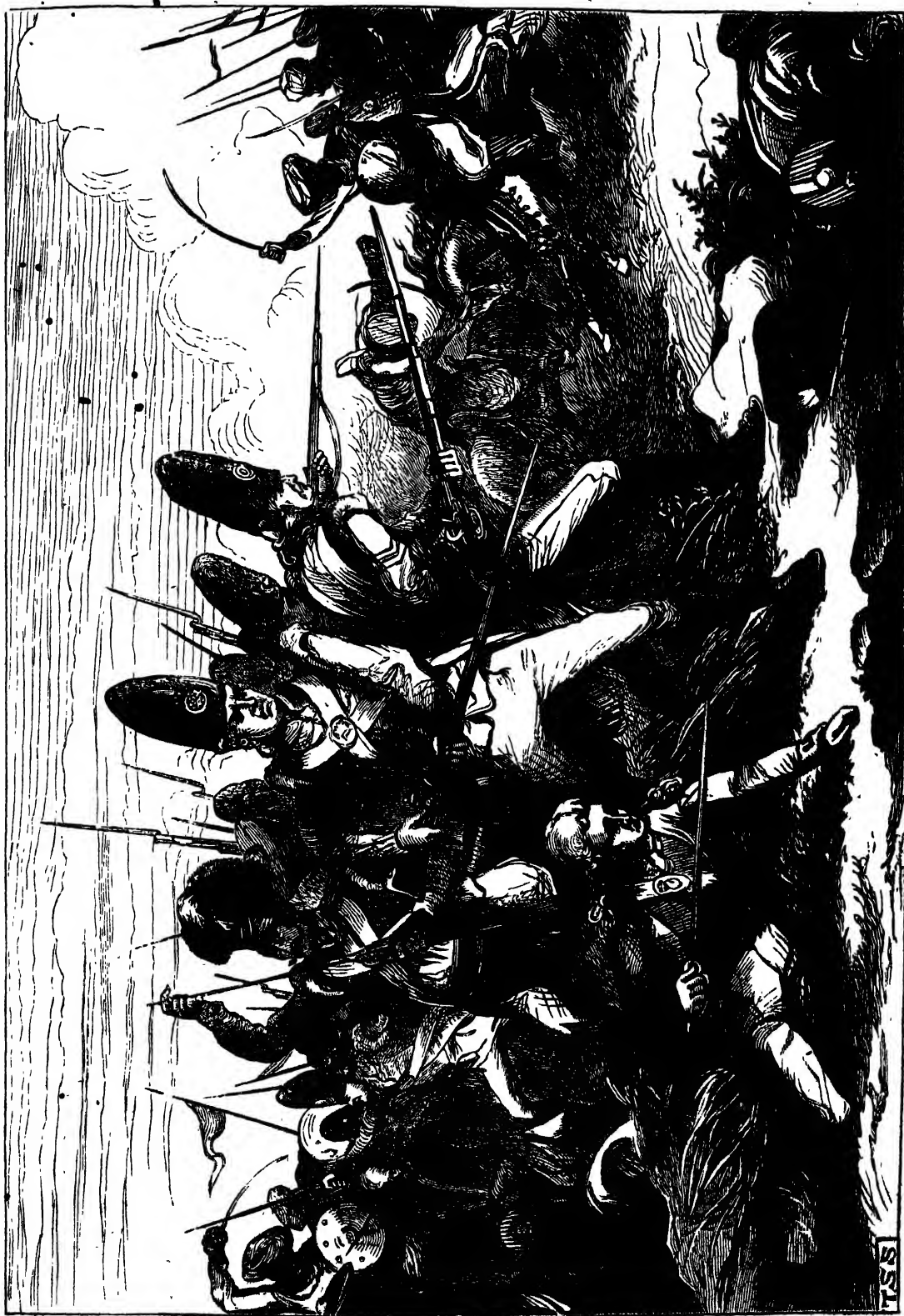
once to retire, followed by the Europeans, who shared in the mistake.

In the end, the ranks were everywhere broken; yet the remains of the grenadiers and rear-guard, by one most desperate rush, achieved a junction with the line, which had once more faced to the front; but, profiting by the confusion, the enemy mingled with them, sword in hand, and a great loss of life ensued. Notwithstanding all this, by the exertions of Keating, the line was restored to perfect order, and this, with the excellent artillery service, redeemed the fortune of the day, and the Mahrattas were totally routed; but there lay dead on the plain of Arass 222 of ours, of these eighty-six, including eleven officers, were Europeans.

At Baroach, a town on the Nerbudda, Colonel Keating deposited his wounded on the 29th May, and there he remained till the 8th of June, his intention being to cross the Nerbudda, but the only ford proved impracticable; moreover, he found all his movements, after the affair at Arass,

obtaining the submission of Futteh Sing, in Goojerat, who became bound to furnish, at his own expense, 3,000 horse for Ragobah, and 2,000 more whom the latter was to pay. Futteh Sing was also to pay twenty-six lacs of rupees in sixty-one days, while the Company were to receive the Guicowar's share of the Baroach revenue, and several villages valued at 13,000 rupees. Nor was this all; for Ragobah, in his gratitude, permanently ceded to them territories, the annual value of which was estimated at 77,000 rupees. Adding all together, by taking advantage of this civil war, the Company obtained an accession of revenue valued at £240,000 sterling.

After escaping the surprise intended for him, Hurry Punt Phurkay had crossed the Nerbudda, and returned to the Deccan, while one of his officers, named Gunesh Punt Beeray, who had been left in command of a column for the protection of Ahmedabad, had suffered a defeat



THE BATTLE OF ARASS: THE GRENADIERS AT BAY.

from Ameer Khan, one of Ragobah's captains, who forthwith commenced the siege of Ahmedabad.

This city, the name of which signifies "the abode of (Shah) Ahmed," its founder, once the capital of the kingdom of Goojerat, stands on the right bank of the Saubermutti river, and is still surrounded by a high wall, with towers at every fifty yards, and twelve great gates. And now the leading ministers at Poonah began to fear, by this general success of Ragobah, that the worst disasters were in store for them. The Mahratta Rajah of Berar, who had been his enemy while he was a fugitive, was now suspected of an inclination to join him, while Nizam Ali, ever on the look-out for his own interests, under the threat of joining Ragobah had succeeded in extorting from the Poonah ministry, treasure equal in value to nearly eighteen lacs yearly. "The most encouraging circumstance to the Poonah ministers, was the dislike generally entertained to Ragobah. He habitually thwarted and even attempted to undermine, the wise and virtuous Madhoo Rao, whose memory was held in veneration; if not an instigator to the murder, he was certainly in league with the murderers of Narrain Rao; he was now claiming the office of peishwa to the prejudice of the legitimate heir, Narrain Rao's posthumous son; and he made himself the special abomination of the Brahmins, by his present connection with usurping and impure Europeans. On all these grounds they had some reason to hope that he could not finally triumph. Still it was impossible to deny that Ragobah's success had sufficed to modify the opinions of many, and that a new campaign, as successful as that which had just been concluded, would have enabled him either to dictate terms to his enemies, or made them glad to come to an accommodation with him. Fortune, however, was about to give him another turn of her wheel."

At this crisis, when the road to Poonah, which was a kind of Mahratta capital, seemed open to him, the Bengal Government, having been fully invested with the powers of peace or war, condemned the proceedings of the Bombay Council, whom they rated in very high terms; ordered them instantly to withdraw their troops and recall their resident from Poonah, after which they sent one of their own, to frame treaties and undertake a line of policy very different from that which had led Colonel Keating to fight a battle on the plain of Arass.

In the end of 1775, Colonel Upton, the new agent, reached Poonah. His instructions were, to treat with the chiefs of the Mahratta confederacy, which the Supreme Council deemed most likely to prevail in the end; but he was also furnished with a letter to Ragobah, in case he should prove the stronger. If the confederacy prevailed, the letter might be destroyed; but, if they were defeated, he was at once to open negotiations with Ragobah; but he had only been a few days at Poonah, when he found that the Mahratta chiefs were in a state of extreme uncertainty. They were at a loss what to do, until they saw what side the British would probably take.

The pertinacity of those chiefs in insisting on the instant restoration of Salsette, Bassein, and all that had been acquired by force or treaty from Ragobah, soon removed the doubt and vacillation of the Supreme Council of Bengal, who finally determined "that the peishwa recognised by the presidency of Bombay was to be recognised by them also as the rightful sovereign, and that the cause of Ragobah was to be supported with the utmost vigour, and with a general exertion of the whole power of the British arms in India."

But Ragobah gained nothing by this high-sounding resolution, for he was jockeyed alike by both parties. To gain their own end the confederated chiefs agreed to relinquish all claim to Salsette, Bassein, and other disputed places, on which the majority of the Council decided to abandon the cause of Ragobah, "and give up their claims to Bassein and the other territory, which the then lawful, but now unlawful, peishwa had given to the presidency of Bombay as part of the price of their assistance."

A treaty to this effect was concluded by Colonel Upton, and then Ragobah, knowing that his life was in danger, was fain to pray for an asylum in Bombay. His request was granted; but the Supreme Council, who so lately were about to support him "with the whole power of the British arms in India," actually sent orders from Calcutta that he was not to be received, lest such shelter might give umbrage to the confederated chiefs at Poonah, with whom the treaty had been finally concluded, and the fallen Ragobah was condemned to a wandering, and almost vagabond life.

"Verily," says a writer, "Francis, Clavering, and Monson were proper men to moralise on the political conduct of Clive and Hastings!"

CHAPTER XXXIV.

THE SCOTTISH EAST INDIA COMPANY.—ITS RISE, PROGRESS AND DESTRUCTION.

IN tracing the progress of the British power in India it is impossible to omit some notice of the now forgotten Scottish East India Company, which was formed at a period when the northern kingdom was sorely impoverished by the effects of the Revolution, when her energies were cramped by the perfidy of its promoters, and when, as even Macaulay has it, "the blood of the murdered Macdonalds continued to cry for vengeance in vain."

Though their crowns were worn by one monarch, Scotland and England, in 1695, were still separate and independent kingdoms, and there was nothing to prevent the former from having its East India Company as well as the latter, more especially as, in addition to a most numerous militia force at home, she had plenty of men to spare for service abroad; thus we find that in the old Dutch war, subsequent to the Revolution, Scotland contributed to the English fleet 8,000 seamen, to the Dutch fleet, 3,000 men, and to the allied army twenty battalions of infantry and six squadrons of horse; and in his place in the Scottish Parliament, Andrew Fletcher of Saltoun adds, "I am credibly informed that every fifth man in the English forces was either of this nation or Scots-Irish, who are people of the same blood with us."

So early as 1617, James VI. had given his sanction to the formation of such a company, by granting letters patent, under the Great Seal of Scotland, to Sir James Cunningham, of Glengarnock, appointing him, his heirs and assignees, to be its governors and directors, "with authority to trade to and from the East Indies, and the countries or parts of Asia, Africa and America, beyond the Cape of Bona Sperantia to the Straits of Magellan, and to the Levant Sea and territories under the government of the Great Turk, and to and from the countries of Greenland, and all the countries and islands in the north, north-west, and north-east seas, and all other parts of America and Muscovy."

This somewhat extensive grant degenerated into a mere nothing, so far as the public were concerned, as the grantee sold it, with all his rights, for a certain consideration, to the English East India Company, "who thus escaped the danger of a competition which in honest and skillful hands might have proved formidable." So in Scotland the idea of such a company was forgotten until after the Revolution of 1688.

On the 14th June, 1695, the Parliament at Edinburgh passed an Act for the encouragement of foreign trade, in which "our sovereign Lord and Lady (William and Mary II.) the King's and Queen's Majesties, considering how much the improvement of trade concerns the wealth and welfare of the kingdom, and that nothing hath been found more effectual for the improving and enlarging thereof than the erecting and encouraging of companies, whereby the same may be carried on by undertakings to the remotest parts, which it is not possible for single persons to undergo, doe therefore, with advice and consent of the Estates of Parliament, statute and declare, that merchants, more or fewer, may contract and enter into societies and companies for carrying on of trade, as to any subject and sort of goodes and merchandise, to whatsoever kingdoms, countreyes, or parts of the world not being in warr with their Majesties, where trade is in use to be or may be followed, and particularly beside the kingdoms and countreyes of Europe, to the East and West Indies, to the straits and trade of the Mediterranean, or upon the coast of Africa, or northern parts or elsewhere, as above."

By an Act passed subsequently, on the 26th June, 1695, John, Lord Belhaven, who had command of a troop of horse at the battle of Killiecrankie, and was Lord Clerk Register of Scotland, with various other individuals specially named, were constituted "a Free Incorporation, with perpetual succession, by the name of *the Company of Scotland trading to Africa and the Indies*." Half the capital was to be allotted to subjects within the kingdom of Scotland, but Scotchmen abroad and foreigners, were allowed to subscribe, the smallest sum being £100, and greatest £3,000. This company the Scottish Parliament empowered to equip, for the space of ten years, such ships as they thought fit, and to "plant colonies, build cities, towns, and forts," on uninhabited places in Asia, Africa or America, to defend themselves by force of arms, and to seek reparation for all damage that might be done them by sea or land. Special and most ample were the privileges conferred on this new company, and the liberality of the Parliament was fully seconded by the kingdom at large, and though Macaulay rather exaggerates, when he says that, "from the Pentland Firth to the Solway every man who had a hundred pounds was impatient to put down his name," in a

short time the subscription list was well filled. The amount subscribed was £400,000, and the list contained the names of 1,219 shareholders, among whom were the leading nobles, public bodies, clergy, lawyers, merchants, officers of the army, and individuals of all classes, thus showing, beyond all doubt, that this new Indian Company was a great national movement by a people eminently intelligent, wary, and resolute in action.

Liberal subscriptions were anticipated from other countries, and the managers, among whom was the famous William Paterson, a native of Dumfries, founder of the Bank of England, and also of the Bank of Scotland, dispatched commissioners to London, Amsterdam, and Hamburg with authority to open new lists, and confer the privileges on all who might apply for them. But now the English Parliament took the alarm, and their attention was specially drawn to the subject by a petition from their own company in the December of 1695, complaining bitterly that all Scotland, by an Act of her Parliament, had been made a vast free port for East India commodities, which, the petitioners added, "will unavoidably be brought by the Scots into England by stealth, both by sea and land, to the vast prejudice of the English trade and navigation," and to the detriment of the revenue.

William of Orange, though he hated the Scots, and knew that their crown had been given him by an illegal convention of the Estates, found himself in a dilemma. He dared not question the competency of the Scottish Parliament to grant the Act complained of, without attacking the national independence of the kingdom, and he dared not sanction it without placing himself in opposition to the English Legislature.

"*I have been ill served in Scotland,*" he answered vaguely, "*but I hope to find some remedy to prevent the inconveniences which may arise from this Act.*" He thought to achieve this by dismissing most of the Scottish Ministry and choosing others, while the English Parliament took a more decided and more absurd step, by resolving that the directors of the Scottish East India Company were guilty of a high crime and misdemeanour, and that Lord Belhaven, William Paterson, and others whom they named, should be impeached for the same.

Though the English Parliament were powerless, and legally incompetent to pass such a resolution, it only had the effect of rousing indignation in Scotland. The commissioners sent from Edinburgh to Hamburg had every prospect of having their subscription list well filled by the traders of that opulent city, when their hopes were frustrated in a very unexpected manner.

On the 7th of April, 1697, a memorial was presented to the Senate of Hamburg, signed by William's envoy at the court of Lüneburg, setting forth that for the merchants of that city to enter "into conventions with private men, his subjects, who have neither credential letters, nor are any other ways authorised by His Majesty," would be an affront which he would not fail to resent. This document, which was not of a satisfactory description, contained what appeared to many to be a deliberate falsehood, and a gross misrepresentation of what the Scottish commissioners actually were. It was considered to amount to an unwarranted interference with the independent rights of Scotland and Hamburg, and drew forth the following reply from the senate and general body of the merchants:—

"We look upon it as a very strange thing that the King of Britain should hinder us, who are a free people, to trade with whom we please; but are amazed to think he would hinder us from joining his own subjects in Scotland, to whom he has lately given such large privileges by so solemn an Act of Parliament." The tenor of the envoy's document, however, had the effect of spreading such doubts in the Bourse, that, though the merchants signed for large sums, they appended conditions which virtually made their subscriptions void, unless some protection were offered them against the intimations of King William's memorial.

To afford them this protection, on the 28th of June in the same year, the Council-General of the Scottish Company presented an address to the king, remonstrating with him on the iniquity of his proceedings in threatening the city of Hamburg, by persons acting in his name. William now found the awkwardness of his position, and feared that to justify the memorial of his envoy might throw all Scotland in a flame, no difficult matter in those days; so after the delay of a month he promised, on his return to England from the Continent, to take into consideration the complaint of the Scottish East India Company, and in the meantime his envoy would cease, by the use of his name, to obstruct their trade with the merchants of Hamburg.

This answer, which was probably interpreted as an evasion, promised more than William ever performed, and matters were drawing to a crisis, when the proceedings of the Scottish Company paved the way for their own extinction. Finding themselves baffled in attempting to settle on any territory in amity with Britain, they selected the Isthmus of Darien, situated between the Atlantic and Pacific, which seemed so advantageous that all other con-

siderations were forgotten, and the first expedition, consisting of five large vessels, laden with merchandise, military stores, and 1,200 men, sailed from Leith to found on that distant neck of land the colony of New Caledonia, and a city to be called New Edinburgh. Other ships and other colonists, full of enthusiasm, sailed from Scotland; but Spain claimed the land on which they settled, and sent an overwhelming force against them. In vain, amid starvation and pestilence, did they defend a fort patriotically named by them, St. Andrew, and engage single-handed in war with the powerful monarchy of Spain, while all resource and succour were cut off from them by every sea and shore, till of the 3,000 Scotsmen who landed on Darien, only a remnant ever returned home, being permitted to embark in the Company's ships.

"The voyage was horrible!" says Macaulay, "scarcely any Guinea slave-ship ever had such a middle passage. Of 250 persons who were on board of the *St. Andrew*, 150 fed the sharks of the Atlantic before Sandy Hook was in sight; the *Unicorn* lost all its officers, and about 140 men.

The *Caledonia*, the healthiest ship of the three, threw overboard 100 corpses. The squalid survivors, as if they were not sufficiently miserable, raged fiercely against one another. Charges of incapacity, cruelty, and insolence, were hurled backward and forward. The rigid Presbyterians attributed the calamities of the colony to the wickedness of Jacobites, prelatists, and atheists, who hated in others that image of God which was wanting in themselves. . . . Paterson was cruelly feviled, and was unable to defend himself. He had been completely prostrated by bodily and mental suffering. He looked like a skeleton. His heart was broken. His invention and his plausible eloquence were no more, and he seemed to have sunk into second childhood."

And thus, in the year 1698, passed away the Scottish East India Company, ending in what was named the Darien Expedition, which, like other projects, formed without due knowledge of actual facts, and carried into execution without the necessary preparations and proper precautions, was an entire and miserable failure.

CHAPTER XXXV.

THE CONSPIRACY OF NUNCOMAR.—HIS ARREST, TRIAL, AND EXECUTION.

WHILE the capture of Salsette and other events in Western India had been in progress, other bands of Mahrattas, descending into the valley of the Ganges from Delhi and Agra in 1775, plundered severely the northern portions of the dominions held by Asoff-ud-Dowlah, the young Nabob of Oude, who was as great a coward as his father had been, and, moreover, was totally destitute of the ability the old man possessed.

These devastations caused a serious decrease in the current of supply to a treasury which the Supreme Council had emptied; and they were accompanied by alarming rumours of a new league between the Mogul Emperor, the Sikhs, Mahrattas, Rohillas, and other Afghan tribes, with a view to the general conquest of the whole kingdom of Oude. As the plans adopted by the Supreme Council at Calcutta, to break up or repel this league—if it really existed—were neither good nor consistent, the nabob owed his safety, as yet, to quarrels which broke out among the chiefs of these warlike

tribes, and the poverty and indecision of the Court of Delhi; for at Calcutta, in every meeting of Council, the voice that was least heeded, was that of the Governor-General Hastings.

The latter, full of indignation, and hopeless of achieving any change, sent to London, for the perusal of the premier, Lord North, papers which he averred were perfect and literal copies of his correspondence with Mr. Middleton, our former resident at the court of Oude. This he did to vindicate his own character, and announced to his friends at home that he should, without fail, return to Britain by the first ship, unless he received a vote of approbation from the Court of Directors on his past conduct, for the petty, yet most hostile, majority, continued to heap up accusations against him.

In a letter to Mr. Sullivan, dated 25th February, 1775, he wrote thus:—"These men (Clavering, Monson, and Francis) began their opposition on the second day of our meeting. The symptoms of

it betrayed themselves on the very first. They condemned me before they could have read any part of the proceedings; and all the study of the public records since, all the information they have raked out of the dirt of Calcutta, and the encouragement given to the greatest villains in the province, are for the sole purpose of finding grounds to vilify my character, and undo all the labours of my government." *

It would appear that, on the 2nd May, 1775, Mr. Charles Grant, a well-known philanthropist and statesman, whose father fell in the Pretender's army at Culloden, who was then one of the members of the Provincial Council at Moorshedabad, forwarded to Calcutta a set of accounts which he had received from a native, who was now in his service, but had formerly been a clerk in the treasury of the nabob. According to these papers the guardian of the latter, the Munny Begum, had received nine lacs of rupees more than she accounted for; and when questioned on this matter, the clerk asserted that the begum's head eunuch had endeavoured to bribe him, before he parted with the accounts, to deliver them up and return to the nabob's service, while Mr. Grant asserted that similar offers had been made to himself. The majority of the Supreme Council were thus satisfied that the accounts were correct, and resolved to suspend the begum from her office, which was, for the time, united with that of the nabob's dewan, then held by the son of Nuncomar, Rajah Gourdash; and Mr. Goring was dispatched to Moorshedabad to investigate the matter without delay.

As Goring received his appointment from the majority, he was fully influenced by their spirit, and the orders given him were, to require from the begum the whole of the public and private accounts for the preceding eight years, and to hand them over to the Provincial Council, Messrs. Grant, Maxwell, and Anderson, who were to examine them minutely. Goring, a few days after his arrival, dispatched to Calcutta memoranda of disbursements amounting to £15,000 to Hastings, and the same amount to Middleton.

Hastings, when these accounts were read, wished Goring to be asked, "in what manner he came by the accounts he now sent, and for what reason this partial selection was made by him?" This question, which they declined to put, would, it is averred by some, have elicited the fact that he had extorted the account by intimidation, and selected these particular items to inculcate Hastings. "But though Mr. Goring's bias might thus have been made manifest," says a writer, "it does not

* Gleig's "Warren Hastings."

follow that his account was inaccurate, and the important question therefore is, Were these disbursements really made? Did Mr. Hastings, when he went to Moorshedabad, in 1772, and the begum was formally installed as the nabob's guardian, receive £15,000 from her under the name of entertainment money? It is admitted on all hands that he did. In his answer, so far from denying the receipt, he justifies it on various grounds. The Act of Parliament prohibiting presents was not then passed, the allowance made was in accordance with the custom of the country; it put nothing into his own pocket, and had he not received it, he must have charged an equal amount against the Company."

Hastings, by other arguments, fully defended himself, but now another charge was brought forward by "Francis, Clavering, and Monson, who had got hold of the great informer or *arch-devil* of Bengal, the notorious Nuncomar, and were inciting him to collect evidence and bring charges against Hastings, as Hastings had encouraged him, by command of the Secret Committee of the Court of Directors, to produce charges against Mohammed Reza Khan."

Nuncomar put into the hands of Francis a letter addressed to the Governor-General and Council, requesting him, in his official capacity, to lay it before the board, and Francis, nothing loth, accordingly did so, on the day he received it. This document entered into various details respecting the case of Mohammed Reza Khan, insinuating that he had obtained his release by bribery and corruption, and concluded with "the specific charge against Mr. Hastings of having received three lacs and a half (354,105 rupees) for the appointments of Munny Begum and Gourdash."

In presenting this formidable letter, Mr. Francis, of course, professed to be totally unacquainted with the contents thereof, but Hastings, knowing as he did the deep craft and malignity of the Hindoo character, was not without reason to feel disquieted. A violent altercation ensued, and Hastings spoke bitterly of the manner in which he was treated, and with supreme contempt of Nuncomar and his accusation, and at the same time denying the right of the Council to sit in judgment upon the Governor-General.

On Colonel Monson very improperly suggesting that Nuncomar should be called before them, Hastings resolved to shield himself from the intended insult.

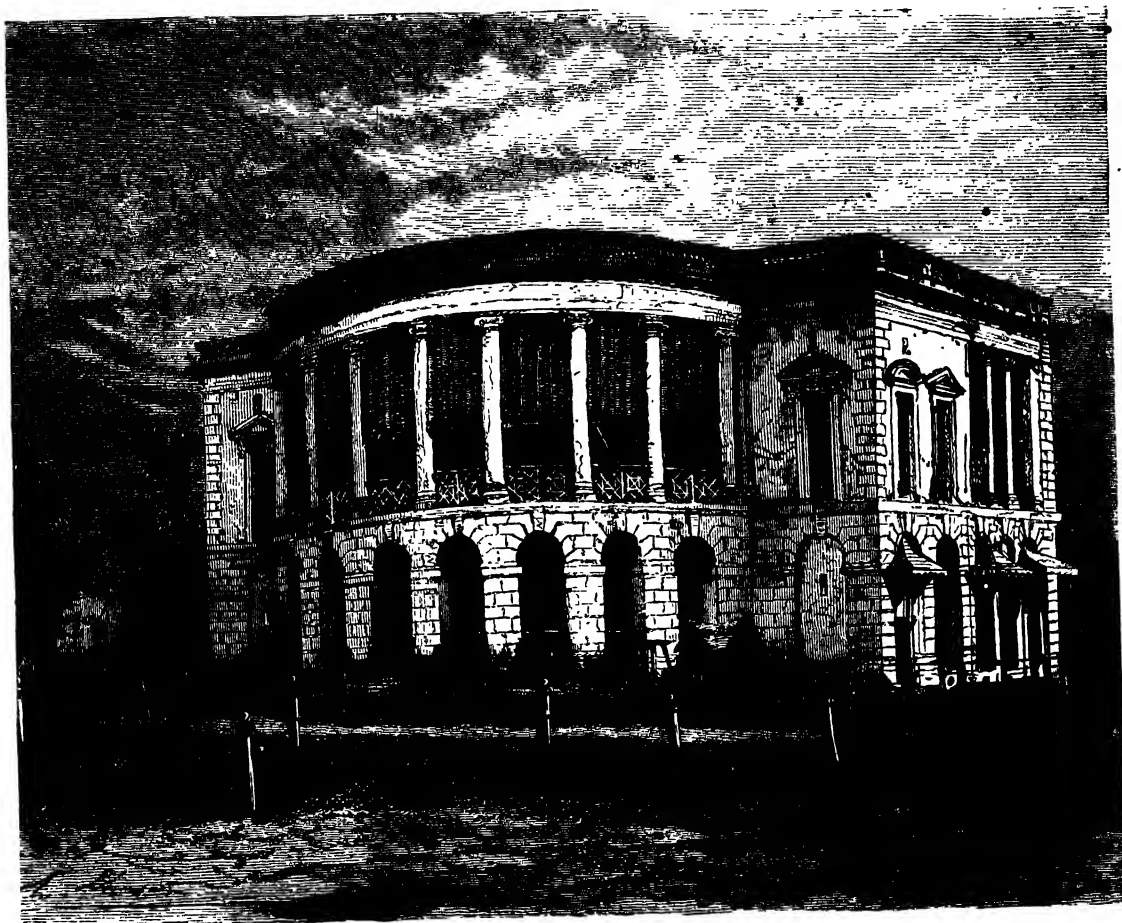
"Before the question is put," said he, "I declare that I will not suffer Nuncomar to appear before the board as my accuser. I know what belongs to

the dignity and character of the first member of this administration. I will not sit at this board in the character of a criminal, nor do I acknowledge the members of this board to be my judges. I am reduced on this occasion, to make the declaration that I consider General Clavering, Colonel Monson, and Mr. Francis as my accusers."

In the course of his speech, Hastings stated that

supported, whom against my nature I have cherished, till like a serpent he has stung me, is now in close connection with my adversaries and the prime mover of all their intrigues; but he will sting *them*, too, or I am mistaken, before he quits them. I have expelled him from my gates, and while I live will never re-admit him."*

At the next Council meeting, a letter from



EUROPEAN RESIDENCE IN CALCUTTA.

he had expected such an attack to be made upon him, as he had seen a paper containing many accusations against him, and had been told it was taken to Colonel Monson by Nuncomar, who, for some hours was employed in explaining the nature of the charges to the colonel. He then produced a translation of the paper and desired it to be recorded.

Monson, thus suddenly put on his defence, denied that he had seen any paper whatever, though he admitted the fact that he had been visited by Nuncomar.

At this crisis, Hastings wrote thus to Sullivan:—

"Nuncomar, whom I have thus long protected and

Nuncomar was laid on the table, requesting that he might be permitted to attend and substantiate his allegations. Tempestuous was the debate that ensued, till Hastings rose, declared the sitting at an end, and left the room, followed by Barwell. The other members kept their seats, voted themselves a Council, put Clavering in the chair and requested Nuncomar to appear. He accordingly did so, and not only adhered to his former charges, but, in true Oriental fashion, produced a large supplement. He boldly stated that Hastings had received a great sum for appointing Gourdess treasurer to the

* Gleig's "Warren Hastings."

nabob's household, and committing the care of his person to the Munny Begum; and he put in a letter, bearing her seal, to establish the truth of his story.

This seal Hastings alleged to be forged; but if genuine, it proved nothing, "as everybody who knows India had only to tell the Munny Begum that such a letter would give pleasure to the majority of the Council, in order to procure her attestation. The majority, however, voted that the charge had been made out; that Hastings had corruptly received between thirty and forty thousand pounds, and that he ought to be compelled to refund." *

The Council did yet more than all this. At the prompting of Nuncomar, the trio called to their aid a Hindoo woman, the Ranee of Burdwan, whom Hastings had expelled from Calcutta in consequence of her violent and intriguing character; and she, after being duly instructed, sent in most circumstantial charges, accusing Hastings of extortion to the amount of 1,500,000 rupees, and his *hmyan*, or native secretary, with extorting a great deal more; the fabulous total being set down at considerably above nine millions of rupees.

She produced witnesses in support of all this, but, as natives, they were deemed totally unworthy of credit. The next great charge entertained by this trio was, that Hastings had appropriated to himself two-thirds of the salary of the *Phousdar*, or governor of the fort and town of Hooghley, a post once held by the irrepressible Nuncomar. Hastings was willing to refer all these matters to the English judges, but denied the competency of the Council to take them up. Moreover, however innocent, he was certain to be misjudged by them; so the trio continued their sitting, though Hastings and Barwell were absent.

This last charge was worse supported even than that made by the ranee in her revenge. Two *Indian* witnesses and two dubious letters, were all the evidence produced. But thick and fast other charges came pouring in. "The trumpet has been sounded," wrote Hastings in a letter given by Gleig, "and the whole host of informers will soon crowd to Calcutta with their complaints and ready depositions. Nuncomar holds his *darbar* in complete state, sends for *zemindars* and their *vakeels*, coaxing and threatening them for complaints, which, no doubt, he will get in abundance, besides what he forges himself. The system which they have laid down for conducting their affairs is, I am told, after this manner: The General rummages the consultations for disreputable matter with the aid of old Fowke. Colonel Mopson receives, and, I have

* Macaulay's Essay.

been assured, descends even to solicit, accusations. Francis writes. Goring is employed as their agent with Mohammed Reza Khan, and Fowke with Nuncomar."

In Bengal, the general feeling among the British residents, at this most painful crisis, was strongly in favour of the unfortunate Governor-General; while the Company's servants were all in his favour, as one who had attained his high position from being a civilian and a volunteer, serving with a musket on his shoulder. Despite the general sympathy accorded him, Hastings felt his position painfully; and, knowing that if the authorities in England took part with his pitiless and unwearied enemies, nothing would be left for him but to send in his resignation: to be prepared for the worst, he placed it in the hands of his agent in London, Colonel MacLean, with instructions not to produce it until the feeling in the India House should prove completely adverse to him.

Now indeed the vengeance and triumph of Nuncomar seemed complete. His daily levees were crowded by his exulting countrymen, and thither resorted the triumphant trio of the Council. His house became literally an office for the reception of charges against the Governor-General; and, it is said, that by alternate threats and wheedling, this villanous Hindoo induced some of the wealthiest men in Bengal to lodge complaints. But he was playing a perilous game with institutions of which he knew not the nature; neither did he know the danger of driving to despair a man possessed of the acuteness and resolution that characterised Warren Hastings. Neither did it occur to him that there was in Bengal an authority perfectly independent of the Council—one which could protect him whom the Council meant to disgrace and destroy. Yet such was the fact. Within the sphere of its own duties, the Supreme Court was entirely independent of the Council; and, with his usual sagacity, Hastings had seen the advantage to be derived from possessing himself of this stronghold, and he acted accordingly. The judges—especially the Chief Justice—were quite hostile to the obnoxious trio, and the time had now come to put the formidable machinery of the law in action, and Nuncomar was soon to be rudely awakened from his pleasing day-dreams.

On the 11th of April, he was accused, before the judges of the Supreme Court, of being party to a conspiracy against the honour of the Governor-General and others, by compelling a certain person to write a petition, in tenor injurious to their character, and sign a statement of bribes having been accepted by his Excellency and his officials.

On the 12th an examination was instituted before the judges, and a charge on oath made against Nuncomar, a native named Radoreham, and a Mr. Joseph Fowke; and the three accused were bound over for trial at the next assizes. Meanwhile Clavering, Monson, and Francis left nothing undone to influence public opinion, both in Calcutta and London, by descanting largely on the political vices of Hastings. In the former city, where they (the four) were well known, those malignant efforts utterly failed; but it was not so in England, where prejudice found great sway in the Court of Directors and in the Houses of Parliament. Aware of all this, the Governor-General exerted himself to uphold the justice of his own cause; and, in a letter written to the Court at Leadenhall Street about this crisis, he there referred to the rectitude of his conduct, and the perfidy of his enemies.

"There are many men in England, of unquestioned honour and integrity, who have been eye-witnesses of all the transactions of this government in the short interval in which I had the chief direction of it. There are many hundreds in England who have correspondents in Bengal, from whom they have received successive advices of those transactions, and opinions of the authors of them. I solemnly make my appeal to these concurring testimonies, and if, in justice to your honourable court, by whom I was chosen for the high station which I lately filled, by whom my conduct has been applauded, and through whom I have attained the distinguished honour assigned me by the legislature itself, in my nomination to fill the first place in the administration of India, I may be allowed the liberty of making so uncommon a request, I do most earnestly entreat that you will be pleased to call upon those who, from their own knowledge, or the communications of others, can contribute such information, to declare severally the opinions which they have entertained of the measures of my administration, the tenor of my conduct in every department of this government, and the effects which it has produced, both in conciliating the minds of the natives to the British Government, in confirming your authority over the country, and in advancing your interest in it. From these, and from the testimony of your own records, let me be judged; not from the malevolent declamations of those who, having no services of their own to plead, can only found their reputation upon the destruction of mine."

But, while he was writing thus, the petty majority of the Bengal Council, and the malevolent Nuncomar, were openly and shamelessly making every effort to

blacken Hastings and blast his reputation, till the morning of the 6th of May, 1775, when all Calcutta was astounded by the sudden tidings that Nuncomar had been taken up on a charge of felony, committed, and flung into the common gaol.

The crime with which he was charged was the forgery of a bond, six years before, and the ostensible prosecutor was a native, "but," says Macaulay, "it was then, and still is, the opinion of everybody that Hastings was the real mover in the business." Be that as it may, the judges were resolved to proceed in the matter according to the law of England, by which forgery—a mere trifle in India—was then a capital crime. The rage of the majority rose to boiling heat. They protested—but in vain—against the proceedings of the Supreme Court, and demanded that their ally should be admitted to bail. But to such messages the judges returned haughty and resolute answers; so all the baffled Council could do was to heap honours on the family of Nuncomar. On the 9th May they dismissed the begum from her office, and bestowed it on the prisoner's son, Rajah Gourdass, who had hitherto been acting under her orders. In a letter addressed nine days after this to Colonel MacLean, Hastings wrote:—"The visit (by the trio) to Nuncomar, when he was to be prosecuted for conspiracy, and the elevation of his son when the old gentleman was in gaol and in a fair way to be hanged, were bold expedients. I doubt if the people in England will approve of such barefaced declarations of their connections with such a scoundrel, or such attempts to injure and impede the course of justice."

On this letter a writer remarks with truth, that however well grounded such reproaches were, and however indefensible, gross, and indecent, was the conduct of the trio, while the dark suspicion cleaved to Hastings that old Nuncomar was in prison through his means, or through the means of information afforded to his adherents, it was bad taste in him, considering the position in which he stood relatively to the prisoner, and his own rank and station in India, to hint at the gibbet before the man was tried; but then we must remember that the letter was a private one, and that the provocation he had received was great. On the same day that he wrote this letter, he revoked the discretionary power given to Colonel MacLean in London, of tendering his resignation, as he was now resolved to remain where he was, and see the affair to its end.

Messrs. Clavering, Monson, and Francis made a great and noisy display of virtuous indignation at the arrest and imprisonment of their friend, the

great informer, a degradation very awful in the eyes of a Brahmin; but the dark day of the trial drew inexorably near, and when it came, Nuncomar—after a true bill had been found against him—was brought before Sir Elijah Impey and a jury composed of Englishmen; and a native Calcutta merchant deposed to facts, while there was an accumulation of evidence to prove that six years before, the prisoner had committed forgery on or in a private bond—a matter that had before become the subject of judicial proceedings in the Court of the *Dewanee Adawlut*, and for which he had been sent to prison, from which, singularly enough, he had been indebted for his release to the kindness, or interest, of Warren Hastings.

This act of forgery had taken place six years before the Regulating Act had been passed, and before Calcutta was under English law. There was a vast amount of contradictory swearing, and the necessity for having every word of the evidence carefully interpreted, protracted the trial to a most unusual length. Nuncomar had witnesses to swear against almost every allegation that those for the prosecution swore to, so the jury had a mass of probabilities to weigh as to the side on which most perjury lay; but that Nuncomar was guilty of the crime laid to his charge cannot be doubted, and the many notorious villanies of his previous life gave further presumptive evidence of his guilt. Yet it was universally believed that Sir Elijah Impey conducted the trial more in the spirit of a partisan than a judge. He had deemed that his dear friend Hastings was very ill-used, and was now but too glad to come to his rescue.

The great informer's tactics for defence did not extend beyond the production of witnesses, who are always to be bought with facility in India by any party in possession of money or power, "and he could not be made to comprehend how the life of a great man like himself could possibly be put in jeopardy by a few crooked characters drawn by a reed or pen years ago." However, the jury—respectable men, whose sense and regard for their oaths would not allow them to be guided in their decision by anything but the evidence that was laid before them—thought differently from Nuncomar, whom they found guilty of the imputed felony.

Sir Elijah Impey assumed the black cap, and according to the genuine Old Bailey formula—most difficult to render into Persian or Hindostani—pronounced sentence of death with due solemnity. Even when the startled Nuncomar was made fully to comprehend that the matter was no jest or idle ceremony to strike terror for a time, he hourly expected to be reprieved; but he was left for

immediate execution, an event to which two great classes in Calcutta looked forward with very different feelings. The Moslems hated him for the active part he had taken in the proceedings against Mohammed Reza Khan, and deemed that he was only enduring a most just retribution; but the Hindoos were bewildered by amazement, grief, and horror, that a Brahmin, the head of his caste in Bengal, should suffer death—and such a death—by a legal sentence and for a crime so trivial, seemed altogether a new and most unnatural thing; and they clung to the hope that the punishment dared not be inflicted. They had but one satisfaction—that his sacred blood was not to be shed.

Their views of this matter are thus given in the writings of Lieutenant-Colonel Tone, who in 1798 commanded a regiment of infantry in the service of the Peishwa of the Mahrattas:—"It is a generally received opinion that the Brahmins possess an unbounded influence over the minds of the people. This supposition I have every reason to believe erroneous; I can declare I could never discover any ascendancy of that kind. I have known them frequently punished very severely as delinquents, some even put to death by order of the Prince. 'Tis true the blood of a Brahmin is never shed, but they are dispatched by other means. The late Tuckojee Holkar, who was a Mahratta, put his minister (a Brahmin) to death, by wrapping him in clothes steeped in oil, and setting fire to them. The most common mode is to keep the limbs immersed in cold water until they swell, which carries the party off in a few days. Inferior persons are punished in various manners. Cutting off the nose and ears is commonly practised; but when death is inflicted, the criminal is sometimes dragged at an elephant's foot till he expires. Another mode is, to put the prisoner's head into a large bag, and pound it with a mallet used for driving home the tent-pegs; but the most universal way is to cut off the arms and legs of the delinquent, and leave him to languish in the woods until he dies. Executioners are low-caste people, who are employed in carrying the large camp ensigns; the operation is generally performed with a common country razor, which must produce the most excruciating pain."*

Rascal though he was, Nuncomar died with the courage and indifference of a Greek Stoic. When the sheriff had waited upon him, the evening before his execution, offering such services as were in his power:

"I am grateful for all your favours," replied Nuncomar, "and hope they will be continued to my family, but fate is not to be resisted. The

* *Asiatic Annual*, 1798.

will of the Almighty must be done," he added, placing a finger on his forehead. He then requested the sheriff to give his respects to General Clavering, Colonel Monson, and Mr. Francis, begging them to protect his son, and "consider him henceforward as the real head of the Brahmins." He busied himself overnight with writing notes and looking over accounts in his old way. The sheriff never doubted but that he would take some secret poison, and expected to find him dead next morning. On alighting from his palanquin he walked more erect than usual, and placed his hands behind him to be tied with a silk handkerchief, while looking about with perfect unconcern; but he told the English that the cloth with which they wished to cover his face must not be tied by any of *them*; so it was done by a household servant of Brahmin caste. "He gave the signal by a motion of his foot, and he hung on the rope as motionless as if he had been a statue of wood or bronze taken out of a Hindoo pagoda."

On the 5th of August, Nuncomar was hanged on the common gibbet till he was dead, and his death made a terrible impression on the vast multitude of natives who beheld it; and we are told that those who were near enough to witness all the details of the event—a ghastly and revolting novelty—filled the hot and breathless air with howling and frantic shrieks. Those uttered by the Hindoos, who were taking their last leave of him, were beyond description appalling. "With a sort of superstitious incredulity, they could not believe that it was really intended to put him to death, and when they saw him tied up and the scaffold drop from under him, they set up a universal yell, and with piercing cries of horror and dismay, betook themselves to flight, running many of them as far as the Ganges, and plunging into that holy stream (which they believe to be the eldest daughter of the mountain Himavata, issuing from the root of the Bujputra tree and flowing direct from heaven), as if to wash away the pollution they had contracted in viewing such a dreadful spectacle. After hanging for the usual time, the body was cut down, and delivered to the Brahmins for burning. It was the novelty and unsightliness of the execution, that made this deep

impression upon a people who consider everything new as horrible."

While all this excitement prevailed among the natives in the city, and the people were flying from the place of execution, till the ghastly corpse was left there almost alone, so calm was the mind of Hastings, that from a comparison of dates, it appears that but a few hours after, he was seated at his desk penning a letter to Dr. Johnson, about his tour in the Hebrides, Jones's Persian Grammar, and the history, traditions, arts, and natural productions of India.

Hastings, however, was not much of a gainer by the death of his arch enemy—a tragedy which, certainly, he might have prevented by a word. It had one result; the exulting herd of native informers vanished. This was, no doubt, a great relief, but it was, perhaps, purchased at a dear rate. The majority of the Council, says a historian who is not too favourable to Hastings, had by their bitter language and violent measures, taken decidedly a wrong position; and had the trio been permitted to continue their reckless course, in their ignorance of India, their rashness, and malevolence, it is impossible to foresee what mischief they might have caused there and at home. "But when it came to be known," says this writer, "or at least generally believed that for the purpose of stifling inquiry he [Hastings] had allowed a judicial murder to be committed, it was no longer possible for him to attract any public sympathy. Everything he said or did was construed into the worst possible sense; and when at last the whole of his Indian administration was brought under review, even those on whose aid he had most confidently calculated, chose to desert him, rather than risk the loss of popularity by making common cause with him. In calculating the gain and loss of Mr. Hastings, through Nuncomar's execution, if we place on the former side the silence which it imposed on herds of native informers, we must place on the latter side, the general suspicion which it brought on all his proceedings, and which ultimately subjected him to all the anxiety and ruinous expense of a public impeachment."

Thus ended the conspiracy of Nuncomar.



SIR EYRE COOTE.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

EXTRAORDINARY PROCEEDINGS IN BENGAL.—DUEL BETWEEN THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL AND
MR. FRANCIS.

THE old Hindoo, Nuncomar, had paid the last penalty of all his crimes; but the excitement caused by his death did not end with that catastrophe. The majority of the baffled Council knew well what had been the part played by Nuncomar towards Mohammed Reza Khan, even while, for their own purposes, courting the wily Hindoo; but now that the latter was gone, they did not hesitate to urge that his rival, as the most trustworthy man in Bengal, should have the charge,

not only of the household of the young Nabob Asoff-ud-Dowlah, instead of Gourdass, whom they had so recently promoted, but also of the higher office of dewan, which he had held previous to his arrest and downfall in 1772.

They further suggested that Mohammed should have the superintendence of the native criminal courts, as the Naibs had before, and that the *Nizamut Adawlut* should be removed from Calcutta back to Moorsshedabad.

In their anxiety to reverse, alter, or suppress anything that Hastings had done, they resolved on this measure simply to destroy one upon which he prided himself, and considered his greatest achievement, and which he deemed indispensable to the existence of our authority in Bengal; but in contempt of his opinion and of all his remonstrances, the obnoxious trio carried out their own plans.

In the same spirit of antagonism they condemned and destroyed the system of revenue and finance

Supreme Court were insulted by the three members of Council, who obstructed everything.

On the 25th of September, 1776, the majority was reduced by the death of Colonel Monson. His health had given way, and obliged him frequently to be absent from the council board. Latterly he had been unable to attend at all, and Hastings, by his casting vote, was able to establish an ascendancy as complete as that which the majority had previously possessed, as there re-



DUEL BETWEEN WARREN HASTINGS AND FRANCIS.

which he had so recently introduced—a system, though not without faults, infinitely more free from them than that which was anterior to it, and less tyrannical than the old form of collection used by the native princes. The strong representations and bitter complaints on these measures sent home by Hastings, were now more frequently addressed to Lord North than the Court in Leadenhall Street, of whose approbation he was long uncertain, as he might well be, on finding the grotesque facility with which they condemned in one despatch, the plan or order of which they had highly approved in another. He urged in vain that his hands were fettered; that the public business, by the manner in which he was thwarted, stood still; that the judges of the

mained only two on either side. This death “has restored me the constitutional authority of my station,” he wrote, on the 26th of the same month, to Lord North, “but without absolute necessity I shall not think it proper to use it with that effect I should give it, were I sure of support from home.”

Nevertheless he did use it, voting always with boldness and effect, and leaving the general and Francis to declaim and protest, as he, before, had done in vain; yet they possessed influence enough at Leadenhall Street to obtain a strong reproof.

“To our concern,” wrote the directors on the 4th of July, “we find that no sooner was our

Council reduced by the death of Colonel Monson to a number which rendered the president's casting vote of consequence to him, than he exercised it with an improper degree of power in the business of the revenue, which he never could have expected from any other authority."

We have already related how Hastings, in the time of his mortification and absolute despair, had announced to his agent in London his intention of resigning. It would appear that Colonel MacLean, after keeping the letter by him for several months, actually did show it to the chairman, his deputy, and another director, and upon their report, the intended resignation was formally accepted, and a successor to Hastings was chosen in the person of a Mr. Wheeler, who, as the new Governor-General of India, was presented to George III., while General Clavering was ordered to occupy the chair until that gentleman's arrival in Bengal.

Tidings of these proceedings reached Calcutta, after the lapse of months, as usual in those days, and threw everything into confusion. Hastings declared that the Court of Directors had no power to accept that which he had never given; that his letter about resigning had been revoked by one sent subsequently; that Colonel MacLean had no authority to show it; that nothing in that letter amounted to a tender of resignation, and that even if it had, the subsequent missive annulled it. Finally he declared his resolution to remain at his post.

Greater grew the rancour and confusion now. He refused to permit General Clavering to take the chair, and summoned the meetings of Council as he had hitherto done; while, on the other hand, Clavering stormed and insisted on his rights as Governor-General temporarily, and, as such, summoned the Council in his name. Had Hastings still been in a minority, he might have left the chair without a contest; but he was now the real master of British India, and was resolved not to quit his high place; so there were now two Councils and two parties claiming supreme power, as Barwell attended the summons of Hastings, and Francis that of the irate general. The two latter met at the usual Council table; the two former at the Board of Revenue. Clavering now proceeded to take the oaths of Governor-General, *ad interim*, and to preside and deliberate; while Hastings required Sir Elijah Impey, and the other judges of the Supreme Court, to attend the Revenue Board and give him their opinion.

They met, but to no purpose, as the general had got possession of all the home despatches, and refused to deliver them up. Hastings assured the

judges that if in them they could find one word from which his resignation could be deduced, he would instantly give over his office. The general and Francis enclosed copies of some—but only some—of the despatches, upon which they averred their claims were indisputably based; they did not, however, offer to abide by the decision of the judges, but agreed to suspend the execution of their orders, as a Council, until the opinion of the Supreme Court was delivered.

Meanwhile Clavering demanded the keys of the fort and treasury, and wrote to the bewildered commandant of the former, requiring his obedience at once; but Hastings, clenching the keys with a firmer grasp, wrote opposite orders to the commandant, and evinced the fullest determination of sternly meeting force with force. Civil war seemed about to break forth in the streets of Calcutta, when the judges luckily came to the conclusion that it would be illegal, as yet, for General Clavering to assume the chair, and otherwise persevere in his present course. So, for the present, he and his adherent, Francis, gave place to Hastings, and wrote to the judges acquiescing in their decision. Clavering, however, was uncourtous enough, when the Council next met, to absent himself without sending an apology for doing so. Yet he was a man who (while the Governor-General was spending in the public service the moderate private competence he had accumulated), though new to India, and "who had never known toil or danger, was hoarding and scraping, jobbing, speculating, trading, and resorting to all those means which enabled him to return to Europe with a very large fortune."

Hastings, with his decided majority, that is to say, his casting vote and Barwell's against General Clavering, now carried the bold resolution, "that the general, by taking the oaths as Governor-General, &c., had actually vacated his seat as senior councillor, and could no longer sit at the Board in any capacity." But in this he failed to carry the judges with him, and he was compelled to accept a compromise, the terms of which they dictated.

Eventually the two hostile parties agreed to refer their disputes to Leadenhall Street for a decision, and to leave matters at Calcutta as they stood before the arrival of those despatches which embroiled everyone. Meantime, however, many changes were made in favour of the friends of Hastings. Among others, Mr. Middleton was sent back as resident to the court of Oude, and Mr. Bristow, an adherent of the old majority, was recalled; and Mr. Francis Fowke, son of the Mr. Joseph Fowke, who was implicated with Nuncomar, was recalled from Benares. The health of Clavering

had long been giving way, and, after an illness of fourteen days, he died on the 30th of August, 1777, and on the 22nd of the following month we find Hastings writing thus to a friend:—"The death of Sir John Clavering has produced a state of quiet in our councils, which I shall endeavour to preserve during the remainder of the time which may be allotted to me. The interests of the Company will benefit by it; that is to say, they will not suffer as they have done by the effects of a divided administration."

Shortly after this event, Mr. Wheler arrived at Calcutta, and took his seat in the Council. Before encountering the long voyage round the Cape, he had naturally conceived that he was to take the chair rendered vacant by the alleged resignation of Warren Hastings; but ere he sailed he had heard of Monson's death, and preferring certainty to the hope of a problematical vacancy, he had wisely landed, hastened to London, and had himself appointed in the colonel's place.

The re-appointment of Middleton, the recall of Fowke, and some other measures, produced much angry discussion among the directors, who censured Hastings severely in the beginning of 1778, and sent him peremptory orders "that Mr. Francis Fowke be immediately reinstated in his office of resident and postmaster of Benares;" but, peremptory as these orders were, Hastings chose to disregard them.

The offices of General Clavering as Member of Council and as Commander-in-Chief, were conferred on Sir Eyre Coote—the same officer who had distinguished himself so much in Indian warfare, from the battle of Plassey to that of Wandiwash and the capture of Pondicherry. By nature he was somewhat obstinate, haughty, and self-willed; so he frequently disputed the authority of Hastings, and voted with Wheler and Francis. Thus, when this occurred, the views of the Governor-General were over-ruled. The vigilance of Francis never slept; his bitterness was only equalled by his vigilance, and there were but too many occasions in which, by duly managing Sir Eyre, he succeeded in putting Hastings into a minority.

The latter, however, could also practice the art of judicious management, and by gratifying Coote's love of "allowances," in most instances secured his vote. Besides, Coote more generally agreed with Hastings than with Francis, who was ignorant of India, which the veteran soldier knew well. The latter was often in the field, and then Hastings had everything his own way; but these contingencies in the constitution of the Council gave great uncertainty to its decisions, and frustrated some

of the best administrative measures of the Governor-General.

It seems now very remarkable that while the directors at home were alternately menacing and censuring Warren Hastings, they utterly omitted to avail themselves of the expiry of the period fixed for the tenure of his office by the Regulating Act, to insist on a new appointment; and thus by the Act 19 George III., chapter 61, he was continued in his office of Governor-General for another year. Soon after this renewal of the tenure of office, mutual friends made an attempt to effect a reconciliation between Hastings and Francis, and it was less difficult than might have been supposed, for the former was now threatened with the loss of Mr. Barwell, who was about to return to Europe, thus leaving his friend in a minority, while Mr. Francis, who had been so long in that unpleasant position by the deaths of Monson and Clavering, was not unwilling to escape from it, even at the sacrifice of his apparent consistency.

A kind of truce was accordingly made, the terms of which seem to be but little known, as ere long they became involved in an acrimonious dispute, of which each gave his own version, while seeking to charge deceitful dealing on his adversary. Hastings had too probably the best reason for complaint; but he lost his temper, and used language provocation could scarcely justify. And afterwards, not in a moment of excitement, but a time of calmness, he penned these words:—

"I do not trust to Mr. Francis's promises of candour, convinced that he is incapable of it. I judge of his public conduct by his private, which I have found to be void of truth and honour."

This language led to the result which Hastings—long since weary of his contumacy—evidently contemplated, according to the usages of society at that time, and for more than sixty years afterwards.

A duel was fought, in which Mr. Francis was so severely wounded, that he narrowly escaped with his life. The conduct of Hastings throughout this painful affair was most honourable, for he not only made repeated inquiries after the health of his adversary, but offered him a visit, which Francis—malignant to the last—coldly declined. He had a proper sense, he said, of the Governor-General's politeness, but could not consent to any private interview. Henceforth they would only meet at the council board.

They did meet there occasionally after, yet only to be found, as of old, antagonists on opposite sides; but Francis profited so little by this bootless strife that he lost heart in it, and sailed for Europe.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

A QUARREL WITH THE MAHRATTAS.—THE MARCH OF COLONEL LESLIE.

It was high time now that some unanimity should prevail at that long-divided council board, and it soon became powerfully apparent to what peril the able Governor-General had exposed his country and British interests in India by risking his life in a duel with Mr. Francis; for a crisis had come, with which he alone was competent to deal; and, according to Macaulay, it is not too much to say, that had he been taken from the head of affairs, the years 1780 and 1781 would have been as fatal to our power in Asia as to our power in America.

The Treaty of Poorundhur, concluded with the Poonah Ministry by Colonel Upton, failed to satisfy either the Company or the predatory Mahrattas, each party having striven to elude their obligations under it, and to lay the blame thereof upon the other, a state of matters that very readily produced a rupture, the more immediate cause of which occurred in March, 1777, when a French ship, laden with all the munition of war and many articles of European export, arrived at Chowal, a Mahratta port some twenty-three miles southward of Bombay, and landed several Frenchmen, who proceeded at once to Poonah. One of them bore the character of an ambassador to the Mahrattas, and was the Chevalier St. Lubin, whom the Council of Madras, during the former war with Hyder, had the folly to send, as one of the meddling field deputies, to watch their own general, and control the movements of his army.

This chevalier was a mere adventurer, credit to whose false statements, that he had lived long among the Mahrattas, and knew them well, had been given in France, where much mortification was beginning to be felt at the ascendancy which we had established in India. It was then thought that amid the combinations now forming, and the war which we seemed to be about to wage with the Mahrattas, a locality might be obtained, to form the basis of future operations against us.

The bare retention of her possessions on the east coast was the utmost France could look for on that side; the west, then, presented a more favourable prospect, and was nearer the seat of the coming war than the Mauritius. After listening to much of such arguments as these, the French Ministry sent the chevalier to Poonah, where he soon began to exercise great influence. In the strife then raging between us and our American colonies, French-

men of great name and high rank were taking an active part, without any declaration of war between the courts of St. James's and Versailles; hence it was reasonably supposed that Frenchmen would not be very scrupulous in India, where they had never ceased their intrigues, since—despite the advice of those who knew Indian politics best—Pondicherry and Chandernagore had been restored to them.

The reception accorded to St. Lubin at Poonah caused considerable alarm at Bombay, the presidency of which, being nearest the scene of the Mahratta intrigues, was most likely to be affected by them, and, but for the restrictions involved by the Regulating Act, the Bombay Council would at once have begun to prepare for war. But their old freedom of action could not be exerted now with the same strength as before, though it had been in a measure restored to them by the directors disapproving of the manner in which they had been interfered with by the Governor-General, and giving it as their opinion that an alliance originally with the now fugitive Ragobah would have been more for the honour and advantage of the Company, for his "pretensions to the supreme authority," added the directors, "appear to us better founded than those of his competitors. Therefore, if the conditions of the Treaty of Poonah have not been strictly fulfilled on the part of the Mahrattas, and if, from any circumstance, our Governor-General and Council shall deem it expedient, we have no objection to an alliance with Ragobah on the terms agreed upon between him and you."

This was exactly what the presidency wished, as they were eager to anticipate any fresh designs of the French and Mahratta chiefs, and to recover Bassein and other territory which had been surrendered under the unpopular treaty concluded by Colonel Upton. Hastings heartily disapproved of the treaty—all the more so, perhaps, that it was the work of Clavering, Monson, and Francis—which he would have prevented had he been able.

Indeed, by the time that St. Lubin arrived with presents for them from the unfortunate Louis XVI., the Mahratta chiefs had scarcely performed one article of it; and Hastings, who had long reflected on the best means of securing our Indian empire, and those possessed by the French for recovering their lost ascendancy, soon came to the conclusion

that our chief peril would lie in an alliance between the French and Mahrattas, and that their attempt to form one should be prevented at once, by the sword, by diplomacy, and all other means.

At this crisis, tidings reached Calcutta that there was a quarrel among the chiefs at Poonah, where a kind of regency had been constituted, and a powerful faction, headed by Baboo, had resolved to draw the sword for Ragobah, and had actually applied to the Council at Bombay for assistance, and to this party it appeared that the latter had committed itself by promises and encouragements; and moreover, it was plain that the territory of Bombay would be imperilled if the faction opposed to Baboo and Ragobah should prove victorious. To aid Bombay in the coming strife seemed only in accordance with true policy, since it would not only frustrate the ambitious schemes of our great European rival, but secure our future ascendancy in the Mahratta councils, beside giving accessions of territory, which would more than compensate for the expense of the war. This opinion, by means of Warren Hastings' casting vote, prevailed, and it was resolved to assist the Bombay Presidency in the war with the Mahrattas.

It is a strange thing that very shortly before the time of which we are writing, the name of this people was almost unknown in Europe; and Guthrie, in his *Grammar*, in 1764, describes them as mercenaries, inhabiting the mountains between India and China; whereas they are a southern people, whose original home was in the land of Candesh and Baglana, in the Deccan, extending north-west as far as Goojerat and the Nerbudda river. According to Colonel Tone, the three great tribes that compose them are the *Koonby*, or farmer, the *Dungar*, or shepherd, and the *Cowla*, or cowherd.*

Poonah was their kind of metropolis, he adds, and the seat of Brahminical authority, yet it contained then one Christian church and many mosques. They have no titled nobility, and no peishwa could be appointed without first receiving the *khelat*, a certain quantity of cloths, delivered from the hands of the rajah, which virtually constituted him in his office. When he took the field in person, the *jerryput* was always displayed, this being a small swallow-tailed pennon, formed of cloth of gold. "The Mahrattas are straight, and clean-limbed men," says Gordon, "with complexions of various shades, from black to light brown, but darker near the sea; and they are bred alike to agriculture and to arms."†

* *Asiatic Annual Register* (1798).

† "Geographical Grammar" (1789).

It was thus carried at Calcutta that Bombay should be assisted with money and troops. Ten lacs of rupees were to be sent there by bills, but the conveyance of troops presented obstacles of no ordinary nature; so, of course, in Council there arose a fresh dispute as to the most proper mode of sending the Bengal troops on so long a journey, but Hastings boldly suggested the new idea of a march over land. At this time the brigades of the Company were stationed far to the north and west, near the frontiers of Oude, and not only would much time be lost in bringing a sufficient force down to Calcutta, but a long and tedious voyage round the mighty peninsula of Hindostan at an unfavourable season would inevitably intervene, ere they could reach the scene of operations. Hence the new suggestion of Hastings—new, at least, in India; but he had studied well the capabilities of the native troops, and had a perfect reliance on their steadiness and powers of endurance, and he had long wished for an opportunity to show the might and military power of the Company to some of the rajas and rajahs of the interior—princes who, from the remoteness of their situation, had hitherto been in ignorance of both, and many of whom could scarcely comprehend whether this mysterious "Company" consisted of only one man or many. Thus, after a due consultation with certain officers, on whose skill and talent he could rely, though the Council proved averse to this march over land, he ordered it on his own responsibility.

At Calpee, on the right bank of the Jumna, where a hill-fort in a strong position defends the picturesque passage of the river, at a small distance from which stands a town, of old the capital of a petty state, there assembled, in the summer of 1778, that force which was expected to penetrate through the hostile and then unknown regions which lay between the banks of the Ganges and the Gulf of Cambay—the point being nearly equidistant, in a direct line, from Calcutta and Bombay, 600 miles W.N.W. of the former, and 680 miles N.N.E. of the latter. In the last given direction, the distance by any practicable route cannot be less than 1,000 miles, and this was the march about to be taken through a country barely known, if known at all, some parts of which might be friendly and others hostile, by a force mustering 103 European officers, 6,624 native troops, with 31,000 camp-followers, including the bazaar, carriers of baggage, officers' servants, and families of the sepoys. The command of the whole was entrusted to Colonel Leslie, who, though he had all the personal courage, lacked the dogged perseverance attributed to his countrymen,

and eventually did not prove equal to the execution of a conception so brilliant and daring.

He began his march on the 12th of June; but he had not proceeded far, when a letter from Mr. Baldwin, our consul at Grand Cairo, brought to Calcutta the news that war had been declared at London and Paris; news which so much alarmed the Council lest Calcutta should be attacked, that they insisted on the recall of the Bombay expedition; but Hastings, still resolute in purpose, insisted

improvised a regular marine establishment, raised nine new battalions of sepoy, and a strong force of native artillery; and, being thus confident and at ease in his own quarter, he turned all his attention to the march of the army westward, and to the progress of affairs at Poonah and in Bombay.

Before the march of Leslie began, Hastings, with great and wise forethought, had sent letters and presents to those native princes through whose territories the colonel would have to pass. More-



NATIVE HUT AT BOMBAY.

that it should proceed, as the river Hooghley, Calcutta, and Bengal could be defended without it; and the energetic Clive himself could not have overcome obstacles more resolutely than the Governor-General did on this trying occasion.

He seized Chandernagore, which the French had omitted to fortify, and sent orders to the presidency of Madras instantly to occupy Pondicherry, the walls and works of which had been repaired and so strengthened (an infraction of the former treaty of peace) that it could not be taken without a desperate siege.

He then ordered the formation of some strong lines of works to defend the approaches to Calcutta; and collecting shipping of all sorts and sizes, he

over, he had nearly settled the preliminaries of an alliance with Moodajee Bhonsla, the Mahratta Rajah of Berar, whose states were most extensive, situated about midway between the Bay of Bengal and the western coast, and whose power and influence were fully equal to those of any Mahratta prince of the period.

Colonel Leslie's orders were to push on with all rapidity, so that he might leave the Nerbudda in his rear before the rainy season set in; but, instead of doing this, he permitted himself to be retarded by some petty Rajpoot chiefs, whom the Poonah Mahrattas had instigated to obstruct him; and in a desultory warfare with them, he wasted the time he should have spent in advancing, according to

one account. According to another, as he marched through Bundelcund, his troops were frequently harassed by the young rajah of that district—so celebrated for its scorching heat, called “the death-heat of Bundelcund,”—and also by a young Maratta chief, called Ballarjee. Leslie's supplies were frequently cut off; but a spirited and successful attack upon a position the rajah and the chief had taken up not far from Chatterpore, amid the most beautiful and romantic scenery of the

“The rest of the march will be easy and practicable, if Colonel Leslie does not entangle himself in the domestic discontents of the two brothers, in which his inducements are strong and his provocations great. He was, on the 30th of July, at Chatterpore, where he had for some time been detained for the repair of his carriages. He writes that he was then on the point of leaving it. I wish he had.”

Leslie, however, was not in such haste as his leader desired; for, on reaching Rajahmurt, in



VIEW OF THE CITADEL OF POONAH.

Bundelcund, completely disconcerted them both, and compelled them to keep at a more respectful distance.

After this affair, the colonel was joined by the elder brother of the rajah, who laid claim to his throne, and by several other chiefs of Bundelcund; “for, go where they would, the British found factions, disputed successions, and other mad contentions to tempt their ambition, and furnish means for aggrandisement.” But Hastings’ whole desire was, that the expedition should reach the great point for action, without becoming involved in petty wars by the way. Thus he wrote on the 16th of August, 1773, to Sullivan,—

“the Country of Diamonds,” on the 17th of August, he made a long halt to negotiate with the pretender, and other lords of the district; but this delay was in part attributable to the indecision of the Bombay Council, under whose orders he had been desired to place himself the moment he left the Jumna in his rear.

Incidents that were undoubtedly somewhat embarrassing, had occurred in the meanwhile: at Poonah, where the treaty with Ragobah, and his cause generally, were not proving so successful as the Council at Bombay had anticipated, and their conduct became what has justly been termed the nearest approach to absurdity.

To Colonel Leslie they sent an order, to halt *en route*, alleging as a reason, their dread of the expense and risk, and the dissent of two members of Council from the original scheme, a plea which excited the profound contempt of Hastings. Three days after the first order, the Bombay politicians sent Leslie a second order rescinding the first, and desiring him to press on with all speed. Leslie, though brave, was by nature irresolute, perhaps inactive, so he remained where he was; and justified himself for doing so, by showing that an army which he expected from Bombay to make a junction with him had not yet begun its march; and that the presidency had failed to avail themselves properly of the dissensions at Poonah, or to pave the way for his progress through districts that were dangerous.

On the other hand, the Council at Bombay excused their apathy, by alleging that the members of their secret party in Poonah, from whom they expected active and armed assistance, had been cast into dungeons, and that it was vain now to prognosticate what might be the chances of Ragobah becoming either peishwa or regent. As matters stood, Hastings thought it necessary to recall Colonel Leslie, and confide the command

of the expeditionary army to an officer of more activity and enterprise.

He accordingly ordered him to be superseded by the second in command, Lieutenant-Colonel Goddard. By the same courier, he wrote to the Rajah of Bundelcund and the competitors there, disavowing all the tactics and transactions of Colonel Leslie, and declaring all that officer's treaties and agreements invalid.

It has been thought not improbable that the loitering commander might have been made to answer at Calcutta, for the mode in which he had handled his army, before a court-martial or court of inquiry; but he was summoned before a higher tribunal.

Before the order of supercession reached him, he died of fever at Rajahghur (or Rajeghur), on the 3rd of October, 1778. Goddard was raised to the rank of full colonel; and, freed from all the trammels that beset his predecessor—especially the authority of the wavering magnates at Bombay—forthwith quitted the land of Bundelcund, and taking the route to Malwa, continued his march for a long time in ease, peace, and plenty, without experiencing or expecting any of the many impediments which had beset the less fortunate Leslie.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

PONDICHERRY REDUCED AGAIN.—THE MARCH OF COLONEL GODDARD.

We have said that Pondicherry could not be reduced without some obstinate work. The task of recapturing that place, which the French had no right to fortify again, was assigned to Major-General Sir Hector Munro, who, on the 17th of October, 1778, took the town and fort by capitulation, after a siege of two months and ten days, at the head of the East India Company's forces, and those of the nabob.*

On the 8th of August, part of the troops intended for the siege encamped on the Redhill, four miles distant from Pondicherry, the French troops in which were commanded by Major-General de Bellecombe and Brigadier Law, of Lauriston. On the 21st, our troops took possession of the remarkable boundary hedge described in an earlier chapter. On the 6th and 7th of September we

broke ground before it on the north and south sides, Sir Hector being resolved to push on two attacks at once. On the 18th, the batteries, armed with twenty-eight battering guns and twenty-seven mortars, opened with a terrible fury, to which those of the enemy responded from day-dawn till evening, when their fire began to slacken, while ours was redoubled.

"The approaches," says Sir Hector, in his despatch to Viscount Weymouth, the Secretary of State, "were continued with the utmost expedition; but the obstinate defence of the garrison made it necessary to act with caution, and the violent rains that fell retarded the works. A gallery being carried into the ditch to the southward, a breach made in the bastion called L'Hospital, and the faces of the adjacent bastions being also destroyed, it was resolved to pass the ditch by a bridge of

* *London Gazette*, 1778.

boats made for the purpose, and to assault the place; while, on the north attack, our batteries had ruined the whole face of the north-west bastion, and a float was prepared to pass the troops over the ditch, where they had stockades running into the water. This was intended to have been put in execution on the 15th of October, before daylight; but in the forenoon of the 14th the water of the ditch to the southward was so raised by the rains for two or three days before, that it forced itself into the gallery, broke it down, and damaged the boats intended for the bridge.

"It required two days to repair the damage done, and everything being ready for the assault, it would have taken place on the 17th; but on the 16th, M. Bellecombe sent in a letter by his aide-de-camp, M. de Villette, relative to a capitulation, which was signed by both parties next day. The gallant defence made by M. Bellecombe will ever do him honour; and I beg leave, in justice to the troops I had the honour to command, to assure your lordship that they acted with the most determined resolution on every occasion."

Thus Bellecombe had no better fortune in Pondicherry than the Count de Lally a few years before. Admiral Sir Edward Vernon, who gave great assistance during the siege, landed the marines of his squadron, with 200 seamen, to act as a naval brigade, if required, in the assault.

The lists, terms of the capitulation, and the colours taken at Pondicherry, Sir Hector sent home in charge of his aide-de-camp, Ensign Rumbold, of the 6th Regiment (son of the Governor of Madras), then serving as a volunteer in the war in India.

The terms of the capitulation demanded by the French included that the garrison, after giving over the old Villenore Gate, should "retire by the sea-port, with arms and baggage, colours flying, drums beating, lighted matches, with six cannon, two mortars—each piece to have six charges, and each soldier fifteen cartouches;" but it was answered that, in consequence of their bravery, "the garrison are to march out of the Villenore Gate with the honours of war; they will, on the glacis, pile their arms by order of their own officers, where they will leave them with their drums, the cannon, and mortars. The officers to keep their arms, and the Regiment of Pondicherry, at General Bellecombe's particular request, to keep their colours."

The colonel of this corps, M. Auvergne, Brigadier Law de Laurisson, Colonel Russell, and other officers of rank, were permitted to take away their baggage unsearched; and there fell into our hands 391 guns and mortars, thirty-two of which were unserviceable, 6,295 stands of various arms, 1,000 swords and

pistols, and great stores of everything. The garrison consisted of about 3,000 men, 900 of whom were Europeans; the total loss in killed and wounded was 680. The besieging force was 10,500, of whom 1,500 were Europeans. Our losses were 224 killed, and 693 wounded.*

So thus fell Pondicherry into our hands for the third time.

During the time of the investment, a sharp engagement took place at sea between our squadron, under Sir Edward Vernon, and the French, under M. Tranjollie. On the same day our troops broke ground before the town of Pondicherry, Vernon, when (with five sail, one of which was the *Rippon*, 60) chasing a frigate into the roadstead, descried six sail of the enemy to the south-westward; but the wind was so light that it was impossible to come within range of them till the morning of the 10th of August, when they bore down on our fleet in a steady line abreast. After some manœuvring, Vernon won the weather gauge, and signalled to bear down on the enemy, who had formed on the starboard tack.

"I intended," reported Sir Edward, "forming our line on the larboard tack, till the leading ship had stretched abreast of their rear, then to have tacked and formed opposite the enemy's ships; but having so little wind, and the uncertainty of a continuance, I thought it necessary to bring them to action, which, at three-quarters past two, became general."

After close fighting for two hours, the enemy stood away to the south-west, leaving our vessels sorely crippled aloft; but the admiral hoped to encounter them again next day, so the whole night was spent "in reeving, splicing, and knotting the rigging, getting up a maintopsail yard, and foretop mast, the others being destroyed." But the enemy bore away out of sight, which enabled Vernon to steer into the roads of Pondicherry, and take part with Munro in the reduction of that place. His total loss in the engagement was eleven killed, and fifty-three wounded.

Colonel Goddard, as we have related, continuing his march, crossed the Nerbudda and reached the city of Nagpore, which Hastings, with a prospective glance, declared should be the proper centre for all our possessions and connections in India, though it is situated in a low, swampy plain, watered by a river called the Nag, or serpent, from its numerous windings. It was but a small place, and was but a village when, in 1740, Ragoji Bhonsla fixed there the seat of the Mahratta Government, and made it the capital of Berar.

* *London Gazette*, 1778.

By the 1st of December, Colonel Goddard had established friendly relations with the Mahrattas of that state; and there he received despatches from Bombay, acquainting him that, at last, an army had been put in motion for Poonah, and it was expected that he would form a junction with it in the vicinity of that city. This Bombay force, 4,500 strong, was under Colonel Charles Egerton, who, on quitting the coast, boldly marched through the Ghauts, reached Khandala, and by the 4th of January, 1779, was in full advance upon Poonah, with twenty-five days' provisions in store.

Flying squadrons of Mahratta horse hovered about him, skirmishing and retreating; but Egerton could nowhere hear aught of a friendly Mahratta army, which Ragobah had given assurances would repair to his standard. Ragobah, who accompanied the colonel with a very few followers, and who had obtained a considerable loan from the Bombay treasury, was now questioned sharply, on which he represented that the undecided Mahratta chiefs would not join the British until some formidable blow had been struck.

By the 9th of January, Egerton was within sixteen miles of Poonah, at the point where he expected to meet and form a junction with Goddard's column; but now he was compelled to halt, as a great body of Mahratta horse was seen in front, and their aspect greatly excited the fears of two civil commissioners, whom, unfortunately for the credit of the expedition, the Bombay Government had ordered to accompany it. On the unmanly pretext that subsistence would become precarious if they continued to advance—though eighteen days' rations were still in store—they ordered a retreat. It was begun at night, on the 11th of January, the heavy guns having been thrown into a tank, and a quantity of stores buried.*

The army of Mahratta horse, 50,000 strong, came thundering after them, and eventually surrounded them completely, cut down or slew by rockets about 400 men, and carried off nearly all the baggage and provisions. The two helpless commissioners were overwhelmed by terror and despair, and even Egerton declared that it was impossible to carry back the column to Bombay; so Mr. Farmer, the secretary of the committee or commissioners, was sent to negotiate. The first demand was that Ragobah should be delivered up, and this degrading request would actually have been complied with, had he not previously made a better arrangement, by agreeing to surrender to Scindia. The next demand was, that the Bombay Government should, by treaty, surrender all the territory

* Duff's "Hindustan."

they had acquired since 1756 and the death of Madhoo Rao, together with the revenues drawn from Broach and Surat. Also, that orders should be sent to Colonel Goddard to retire peaceably back to Bengal. The terrified commissioners did as they were commanded, and signed a treaty at Wurgaon to the effect of all this, and Lieutenant Charles Stewart and Mr. Farmer were left as hostages in the hands of the enemy; but on descending the Ghauts, the first act of the commissioners was to commit a dangerous breach of faith—dangerous so far as the lives of the hostages were concerned—by countermanding the order they had sent to Colonel Goddard, when, under the dictation of the Mahrattas, they forbade him to advance; these instructions no doubt explain the contradictory messages which so greatly puzzled that officer.

This dishonoured army now continued its march without molestation to Bombay, where two colonels, Egerton and Cockburn, were dismissed the service, and a Captain Hartley, who had distinguished himself, was promoted to the rank of lieutenant-colonel.

In the meanwhile Colonel Goddard had continued his march towards Poonah, confident in the formation of a junction with Egerton at the appointed time; but when he reached the great city of Berhampore, the ancient capital of Candeish, on the northern bank of the Tapti, 980 miles from Calcutta by the route he had taken, he had to halt again, in perplexity by the nature of his orders and advices. "By one letter from the field commissioners, written in compliance with their treaty, he was told to retrace his steps; by another from the same field commissioners he was told that he must pay no attention to what they had said; but these lack-brains gave him no account or intelligible hint of what had befallen their Bombay army."

Full of strange doubts, the colonel continued to halt at Berhampore, till the 5th of February, 1779, when he became cognisant of the real state of affairs. In great indignation he resolved not to be bound by a treaty made by fools and cowards, who had no right or authority over him, as he had already orders which absolved him from the command of the Bombay Government; but fearing there might be more at stake than he knew of, he bravely resolved to continue his march towards the western coast, and avoiding Poonah, from whence a body of horse had been sent out to intercept him, to push on for Surat, where he would find himself in a British settlement, with the open sea to Bombay, and where he would be in readiness to act as his orders from Bengal or occasion might require.

From Berhampore the route to Surat was 250 miles; the disposition of the intervening country was very dubious, and the Mahratta horse were hanging on his rear; but his decision, and rapidity of movement, together with the splendid discipline and conduct of his Bengal native infantry, saved him alike from all danger and dishonour. Wherever he and they went the fame of a good name preceded them. The march was a long one, and accompanied by many toils and perils; but there were no pillaging, no insult or wrong offered to the people, hence they flocked on all hands to supply his men with provisions, and to accord all the service and information in their power.

The march lay through one of the most fertile and best cultivated tracts of Hindostan, thickly dotted with defenceless villages and open towns, with much valuable property in them, and luxuries most tempting to the sepoy; "but nothing was touched, nothing taken without being paid for; and thus the inhabitants, instead of flying and concealing their provisions and property, as they had ever done at the approach of an army, quietly pursued their occupations, or thronged to relieve his wants by a traffic beneficial to both parties."

In nineteen days after quitting Berhampore, Goddard entered Surat amid the acclamations of the people, thus achieving a triumph more valuable than any victory could prove. "Be assured," wrote Hastings, in one of his letters to Sullivan, "that the successful and steady progress of a part—and that known to be but a small part—of the military force of Bengal from the Jumna to Surat, has contributed more, perhaps, than our more splendid achievements to augment our military reputation, and to confirm the ascendant of our influence over all the powers of Hindostan. To them, as to ourselves, the attempt appeared astonishing, because it had never before been made or suggested. It has shown what the British are capable of effecting!" *

Colonel Goddard was promoted to the rank of brigadier-general, and soon received the commands of the Supreme Council at Calcutta to take upon himself all future wars and negotiations with the Mahrattas. On being made aware of the disgraceful treaty between the Bombay commissioners and the chiefs of that people, the Supreme Council first provided for their own safety by ordering a brigade to the banks of the Jumna, and sending their commander-in-chief to inspect and put upon a war footing their military resources on the north-west frontier, where an attack was expected. After this they gave their attention to the Bombay Presidency, and manifested a spirit worthy of all praise, while

Hastings urged the Council there to exert themselves for the retrieval of their misfortunes, and arm themselves with means adequate to that end.

But the Bombay Council chose to deem themselves slighted when Goddard was appointed brigadier, with powers to negotiate for the Governor-General, as our plenipotentiary at the court of Poonah, and objected particularly to the cantoning of a military force within their limits, and independent of their authority, as being unconstitutional. The Governor-General, heedless of their petty spirit, on the 15th of April, 1779, directed Brigadier Goddard to endeavour to negotiate a peace on the terms of the Treaty of Poorundhur, with an additional clause excluding all French from any portion of the Mahratta territories. By the end of May he received more detailed instructions, directing him, if peace could not be obtained on the above terms, to form an alliance with Futteh Sing, the acknowledged head of the Baroda or Guicowar dominions. There was another alliance from which great things were expected.

This was one with Scindia, whose rivalry with Nana Furnavese, the Mahratta minister, was well known; these two chiefs, while acting together with apparent cordiality, only hid thereby their secret and mutual animosity, and of this a marked instance occurred. By the Treaty of Wurgaon, Ragobah had been committed to his care, and on his prisoner, Scindia had settled an estate in Bundelcund worth twelve lacs of rupees. Ragobah thus believed that Scindia was his friend, and Nana was also satisfied, because Scindia became security that Ragobah would molest his government no more; so the latter was sent to take possession of his new property, but having received a hint that he would probably be confined in the castle of Jhansi, and being slenderly guarded, he watched his opportunity, and when his escort was about to ford the Nerbudda, he escaped, and fled with all speed to Broach, and put himself under the protection of the British. This was all believed to be a scheme of Scindia's, who thus widened the breach between the Nana and the Company, and led the minister to fear that there was a plan on foot for establishing Ragobah at Poonah.

Thus, after Goddard had been negotiating with him for some months, all hope of a treaty came to an end when the Nana demanded the immediate surrender of the Isle of Salsette and the person of Ragobah, as preliminaries thereto. Previous to this, Ragobah, with his two sons, Amrut Rao and Bajee Rao, a child of four years, had visited the camp of General Goddard, who gave him an allowance of 50,000 rupees per month, which was

* Gleg, "Life of Warren Hastings."

censured by the Bengal Government, who intended to make no more use of him politically. Too late, the discovery had at last been made that it was impolitic to attempt to thrust upon the warlike Mahrattas, a person whom the whole nation, instead of flocking to his banner, as expected during the recent expedition, viewed with general indifference and aversion.

But now, therefore, that the declaration and double demands of Nana Furnavese made war inevitable, it was resolved that it should be carried on, not in

the name of Ragobah, but in that of the East India Company alone; so General Goddard, on receiving his final answer from the Nana, set out for Bombay, where he arrived on the 1st of November, 1779.

The object of the general's visit was two-fold—to arrange the plan of future warlike operations, to urge the preparation and march of a reinforcement, and also to adjust the proposed allowance with Futteh Sing, the Guicowar of Baroda. The Council would have preferred delay, but they could not resist the urgency of the energetic Goddard.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

WAR WITH THE MAHRATTAS.—GODDARD TAKES THE FIELD.—DUBHOY AND AHMEDABAD CAPTURED.—FIRST COMMUNICATION OVERLAND ESTABLISHED BY WARREN HASTINGS.

ACCORDINGLY, a detachment of the Bombay troops, consisting of 100 European artillery, 200 European infantry, and two battalions of sepoys, under Colonel Hartley, were immediately embarked for Goojerat. From Madras, 100 artillery, 500 Europeans, and one battalion of sepoys were expected, under Colonel Brown; from Bengal, 2,000 sepoys were expected by the route overland, but failed to appear; and on returning to Surat, where the main body of his army was cantoned, General Goddard dismissed the envoys of Nana Funavese, and opened a negociation with Futteh Sing, of Baroda; but finding that prince loth to entangle himself by any definite treaty, on the New Year's Day of 1780 he put his army in motion, and crossed the river Tapti.

Progressing slowly northward, till overtaken by his siege-train and stores from Broach, he then moved to attack the fort of Dubhoy, which was held for the peishwa by an officer with a garrison of 9,000 Mahrattas. This place—including the remains of an ancient Hindoo city, of which there is no history extant, but which was probably abandoned because of its low and unhealthy situation—had once fortifications three miles in extent, with the remains of many elegant temples. In 1779, it was little more than a mass of magnificent ruins, and which drew a squalid population of 40,000 souls.*

The fort formed a quadrangle of two miles in circuit, the rampart being of large hewn stones,

* Forbes.

strengthened by fifty-six towers. Between two of these was a kind of Moorish archway of great beauty, named "the Gate of Diamonds." On the 18th of January, 1780, General Goddard was before it, and by the 20th he had thrown up a battery of three eighteen-pounders within 200 yards of the walls; but the garrison was found to have evacuated the place in the night. He garrisoned it by a company of sepoys, and some irregular troops, under James Forbes, author of the "Oriental Memoirs," and pushed on in the direction of Baroda. *En route* he was met by the Guicowar Futteh Sing, who had been so greatly impressed by the sudden fall of Dubhoy—which was believed by the natives to be a place of great strength—that he entered into an alliance with us, offensive and defensive. By this, in addition to other advantages given to the Company, he agreed to furnish them with a body of 3,000 horse; one of the stipulations in his favour being the possession of Ahmedabad, towards which our troops at once advanced.

This strong and stately city, which has been already described, had then a population of 100,000 persons, and a garrison consisting of 6,000 Arab and Scindia infantry, with 2,000 Mahratta horse, the whole being under a Brahmin officer in the service of the peishwa. Goddard arrived before its lofty and turreted walls on the 10th of February; by the 12th this active officer had his batteries armed and in operation. Thus a practicable breach was effected by the evening of the 13th. Two days after, the city was won by storm;



GENERAL GODDARD ENTERING SURAT.

but few details of the event are given. Our total loss was only 105 killed and wounded. Among the latter were twelve European officers; two of them, who were volunteers, died of their wounds. Not the least honourable part of this gallant assault was the subsequent steadiness and good conduct of the troops, as only two men not belonging to the garrison were killed.*

The standard of the Guicowar had barely been displayed upon the towers of Ahmedabad, when tidings came of the approach of Mahadajee Scindia and Tookajee Holkar, with 20,000 horse, at the head of which they had forded the Nerbudda, and were now on the march to Baroda.

On the 6th of March, General Goddard crossed the Mhye to do battle with them, an offer which they declined by retiring at his approach; and as a proof of his wish to stand well with us, Scindia set at liberty—to their great relief of mind, no doubt—Mr. Farmer and Lieutenant Stewart, who had been given up as hostages at Wurgaon, and who arrived in the British camp; and the reports they gave of Scindia's professions of friendship for the Company, and his hatred of Nana Furnavese, afforded some ground for a belief that he would prefer our alliance. But Goddard, suspicious that Scindia merely meant to amuse himself till the rainy season came on, broke off all negotiations, and gave him only three days to consider. On the 16th of March, the envoy returned with certain terms, the substance of which were "that Ragobah should retire to Jhansi, and live on his jaghire of twelve lacs; that the government should continue in the name of Madhoo Rao Narrain as peishwa; and Bajee Rao, Ragobah's son, be appointed the peishwa's *dewan*."

Though mentioned last, this was the most essential part of the proposed terms; Bajee Rao, a child of four years, could not act as *dewan*, thus Scindia would take him to Poonah and manage for him. So General Goddard replied:—

"That as these proposals amounted to nothing less than that the Company should assist Scindia in acquiring the entire power of the state, it was necessary that he should, on his part, consent in the name of the peishwa to certain concessions in favour of British interests."

Scindia, finding himself baffled in spinning out the negotiations for months, as he had hoped, now entered into secret communication with Govind Rao, the brother of Fatch Sing, and his rival claimant for the office of Guicowar, with a view of putting him in possession of Goojerat; but on discovering this new intrigue, Goddard resolved on

* Duff.

immediate battle. This was no easy matter to attain, as, by the rapid movements of their cavalry, Scindia and Holkar were for many days enabled to avoid an attack. The former having placed his baggage under the protection of the hill fort of Pamonghur, threw out many patrols of fleet horsemen to alarm him in case of danger, and to obviate a surprise.

Nevertheless Goddard, with a small but select portion of his forces, after being encamped quietly for six weeks near Scindia, on the morning of the 3rd of April resolved to give him an *alerte*. Heading his troops in person, and marching silently ere day dawned, he passed the Mahratta patrols, and even their grand-guard, or in-lying picket of some thousand men, and was pushing on for the camp, which lay a mile beyond, when dawn came in with its usual Indian rapidity; the glitter of steel was seen, and an alarm was given by the Mahratta drums.

The main body of the enemy were soon in their saddles and advancing to the attack, when a heavy musketry fire from our people sent them scampering to the right-about; but General Goddard, who had been under the impression that he had won a complete victory, was rather mortified when, after encamping, he perceived the enemy still, as before, in his front. On the 14th of April, he was joined by the welcome Madras contingent, under Colonel Browne. A week subsequently, he made another attempt on the camp of the Mahrattas, who retired under a shower of rockets.

Retreating in confusion to the Ghauts, the Mahrattas left Goddard undisputed master of the country between the mountains and the sea; but as the rainy season was at hand, he moved to the Nerbudda, and put his troops in cantonments.

In the meanwhile, many transactions had been taking place which were of interest, and of which but little notice has been taken in history. Among these was the alliance formed by Warren Hastings with the Rana of Cohud, a mountainous territory full of strong military positions, particularly the famous fortress of Gwalior. The rana, then described as "a chief south of Agra," by a treaty signed on the 2nd of December, 1779, was to furnish 10,000 horse for service against the Mahrattas; whenever peace took place between the Company and the latter, the rana was to be included therein, and his present possessions, with the fort of Gwalior, were guaranteed to him. On the other hand, the Company were to furnish a force for the defence of his country, on his paying 20,000 Muchildar rupees for each battalion of sepoys: nine-sixteenths of any acquisitions were to go to the Company.

"Mr. Hastings, in the midst of his other varied and important avocations," says a well-known writer, "did not lose sight of the interests of science and literature.

"A copy of the Mohammedan laws had been translated by Mr. Anderson, under the sanction and patronage of the Government, and sent home to the Court, together with the Bengal Grammar prepared by Messrs. Halked and Wilkins, 500 copies being taken by Government at thirty rupees a copy, as an encouragement of their labours. Mr. (afterwards Sir Charles) Wilkins was also supported

in erecting and working a press for the purpose of printing official papers, &c. The *Madrassa*, or Mohammedan college for the education of the natives, was established by the Government. In order to open a communication by the Red Sea with Europe, the Government built a vessel at Mocha, having been assured that every endeavour would be made to secure the privilege of despatches with the Company's seal being forwarded with facility; the trade with Suez having been prohibited to all British subjects on a complaint to the King's ministers by the Ottoman Porte." *

CHAPTER XL.

EXPLOITS OF CAPTAIN POPHAM.—CAPTURE OF GWALIOR.—SIEGE OF BASSEIN.—BATTLE OF DOOGAUR.—GODDARD'S DISASTROUS RETREAT, ETC.

THE Bombay Government now urged General Goddard to seize Parneira, a hill fort fifteen miles north of Dumaun, which had been built in the time of Sevajee, about 150 years before. But ere this could be attempted their wishes were gratified. Gunnessh Punt, a Mahratta warrior, having set out on a plundering expedition, and ravaged the districts on the south of the Tapti river, carried his devastations to the vicinity of Surat. On this, Lieutenant Walsh, of the Bengal Cavalry, was sent out at the head of the Candahar Horse (as some of the Nabob of Oude's cavalry were designated); and this active young officer succeeded not only in surprising the camp of Gunnessh Punt, and routing his people, but in further capturing three forts in the district of Dumaun, one of them being that of Parneira. About the same time, a party of our troops under Major Forbes routed one of Scindia's detachments near Sinnore, on the Nerbudda, and cut it to pieces.

The Bengal contingent which was to have followed Goddard in his rapid march to Surat having been countermanded, was employed in a different direction. In consequence of our alliance with the Rana of Gohud, it was deemed advisable to make a diversion, by operating against the Mahrattas in Malwa, by marching through his territories. Sir Eyre Coote was greatly in favour of this measure; but wished that a larger force should be employed than the detachment originally intended to reinforce Colonel Goddard.

This body, under Captain William Popham, was 2,400 strong, formed into three battalions of 800 bayonets each, with a small force of native cavalry, and some European gunners with a howitzer and a few field-guns. In the beginning of February, 1780, Captain Popham crossed the Jumna, and attacked and put to flight the Mahrattas who were ravaging the country about Gohud. At the request of the rana, he then marched against Lahar, a fortress fifty miles west of Calpee, which proved a place of greater strength than he expected, for his guns failed to effect a practicable breach, thus he ordered an escalade without one.

With resolute gallantry, his stormers fought their way in, and Lahar was ours, but at the loss of 120 rank and file. Sir Eyre Coote, who did not anticipate this success, in consequence, obtained some battering guns, and held them, with four more battalions under Major John Carnac, in readiness to cross the Jumna.

These operations preluded a more brilliant affair, for after leaving Lahar, Captain Popham found himself near the famous fortress of Gwalior, before which he encamped during the rains. Few places in India were more celebrated than this Gwalior, in the province of Agra—"the Gibraltar of the East." It is situated on a hill a mile and a half in length, but in few places more than 300 yards in breadth. The sides are steep, and 340 feet in height. It is, in fact, an isolated rock of ochreous sandstone,

* Auber.

partially capped with basalt. The lower portion of the rock is sloping; but immediately above this the sandstone starts up precipitously, and in some places is impending. Along the edge of this precipice rise the ramparts, with Saracenic battlements and towers. The entrance is from the north, and consists of a steep road, succeeded by an enormous staircase, hewn out of the living rock, but so wide and gentle in acclivity that laden elephants can ascend it. A strong and lofty wall protects this staircase, and in it are seven gates of great strength. Should all these difficulties be surmounted, an enemy would find his work but half begun, as within them stands a citadel consisting of six lofty round towers, connected by curtain walls of great height and thickness. Along the eastern base of the rock lies the town of Gwalior, which is still greatly benefited by those pilgrims who come to pray at the tomb of Ghase-al-Alum, a famous Sufi, who died there in 1560; but the fortress had a fame so far back as 1023, when it was summoned by Mahmoud of Ghizni. During the Mogul government it was used as a state prison, and within its gloomy walls several princes have terminated their existence by opium or the dagger.

Though the capture of such a rock-built fortress might have seemed hopeless to some men, Captain Popham was not one of them, and he resolved to attempt it. He had a good coadjutor in the rana, and a better still "in Captain Bruce, one of a family insensible to danger," for he was the younger brother of James Bruce, of Kinnaird, the great Abyssinian traveller. Fortunately, the rana was thoroughly acquainted with the interior of this fortress (which Scindia had made a grand dépôt for artillery and military stores), and he kept spies within it, who could act as guides.

After every preparation had been made with the utmost secrecy, the night of the 3rd of August was chosen for the attempt. The command of the stormers and escalading party was assigned to Captain Bruce, and it consisted of two companies of chosen sepoy, with four lieutenants. It was an old story in the Indian army that one of these subalterns, named Douglas, was the first to volunteer for the forlorn hope, but gave place to his senior, saying, with reference to their historic names, that "where a Bruce led, a Douglas should be proud to follow."

Be that as it may, supported by European bayonets and two battalions of sepoy, the escalade crept close to a point where the scarped rock was only sixteen feet in height, and this was easily surmounted by the scaling ladders. Beyond this, a steep ascent led to the base of the second wall,

which was thirty feet high. But this also was surmounted, by the aid of the rana's spies, who, by ropes, made the ladders fast. As each soldier reached the crest of the wall and got inside, he squatted down. At the head of twenty sepoy Captain Bruce had barely entered thus, when some of the former began in a reckless way to shoot the garrison as they lay asleep within the walls. A useless alarm was thus given; but the sepoy stood firm till their supports came pouring in; and the garrison, thus surprised and intimidated, made scarcely any resistance, for Gwalior was taken without the loss of a man.

With the results of Popham's brilliant little campaign the Bombay Government had every reason to be satisfied; but some formidable difficulties had arisen. Their exchequer was empty, and they knew not how it was to be replenished. Before the close of the preceding year the Carnatic had been seriously disturbed, and as a ruinous war had begun to rage there, the money which the Bengal Government had intended to send to Bombay was required to supply the still more urgent necessities of Madras; and the expedients to which the Bombay Council were compelled to resort, evince the extent of their monetary necessity. Loans for their own credit were proposed for negociation in Bengal; a quantity of copper lying in the Company's warehouses, valued at twelve lacs of rupees, was sold to the highest bidder; and a plan was formed to seize the resources of the enemy, by anticipating them in the collection of the revenue.

With a view that the new campaign should be opened with the siege of Bassein, the European troops under General Goddard were conveyed by sea to Salsette. The battering train was prepared at Bombay, from whence the sepoy were to proceed by land; but meanwhile the wretched state of the local finances compelled the occupation of all the disposable troops at Bombay in work of a different nature. Thus, early in October, 1780, five battalions were placed under Colonel Hartley, with orders to cover as much as possible of that extensive maritime district named the Concan, which is 220 miles in length by forty in breadth, and peopled by Brahmins of a peculiar race, not acknowledged by the rest in India. This occupation was to enable the Bombay agents to collect part of the enemy's revenues, and secure the rich rice harvest ere the rains fell.

Before the colonel could fully achieve this object, his services were required for the relief of Captain Abington, who had made an attempt to surprise the strong fortress of Bhow Mullan, which stands eastward of the Isle of Bombay. He gained possession

of the outer wall, but the garrison retired into a species of citadel where they set him at defiance; and while attempting its reduction, his retreat was cut off by more than 3,000 Mahrattas, who completely surrounded him till Hartley came to his relief. Soon after this, the colonel drove the enemy completely out of the Concan; he took possession of the rocky Bhore Ghaut, thus enabling the Bombay treasury to be quietly replenished at the expense of the enemy's crops and rupees, after which, on the 13th of November, General Goddard formally inaugurated the siege of Bassein.

Situated at the distance of twenty-eight miles northward of Bombay, this place stands on an island separated by a narrow channel from the mainland of the Northern Concan. Its fortifications—originally the work of the Portuguese in 1531—were strong and extensive, though they are ruinous now; hence regular approaches were necessary, and several batteries armed with twenty-four-pounders were thrown up between the distances of 500 and 900 yards. One, of twenty mortars, at the former distance, did great execution, while Hartley's column covered the operations, by preventing the Mahrattas from raising the siege, for which purpose they poured troops through the Concan as fast as they could be mustered.

These forces, 20,000 strong, led by a warlike and able Mahratta officer named Rumchunder Gunnesh, now turned all their fury against the slender covering army of Hartley, now by many casualties reduced to barely 2,000 bayonets. On the 10th of December, while the colonel was in position at Doogaur, he was suddenly assailed by horse and foot in front and rear, but completely repulsed the enemy. On the 11th, the attack was resumed, with a similar result, though the well-handled cannon of Gunnesh did considerable execution; and that officer, perceiving that Hartley's flanks were powerfully secured by two eminences, without the capture of which he could not force the position, was resolved at every hazard to make himself master of at least one of them.

Thus, on the morning of the 12th, while other Mahratta leaders attacked Hartley again in front and rear, Gunnesh, at the head of his Arab infantry, accompanied by 1,000 other regular infantry led by Senhor Noronha, a Portuguese officer in the service of the peishwa, made a detour for the purpose of capturing the eminence. For this movement the keen foresight of Colonel Hartley had fully prepared him, by the erection of breastworks, and planting a gun upon each height. Under cover of a dense fog the attacking force came on, but suddenly it cleared away, and the opposing parties were literally face to face. There was a momentary

pause, and then the work of havoc began; and it was terribly increased by the arrival of more guns from Hartley's right flank.

The Mahrattas came gallantly on again and again, till Rumchunder Gunnesh fell, and the bearing of his dead body rearward through the ranks, caused the whole of his troops to give way with precipitation and after a terrible loss of life. On the day before this, Bassein had surrendered to General Goddard. For his bravery here, Colonel Hartley was afterwards appointed to the command of H.M. 73rd Foot, and at a later period won fresh honours in India as a general officer.

Though negotiations for a probable peace were again opened, it was resolved to press the Mahratta war with vigour. Thus General Goddard, after spending some time in front of Arnaul, a fort ten miles north of Bassein, determined to menace Poonah, thinking thereby to hasten the treaty of peace—a menace which he had not quite the force to put in effect.

In the end of January, 1781, he forced a passage through the Bhore Ghaut, at the head of only 6,152 men, of whom 640 were Europeans; and the minister, Nana Furnavese, "though under no alarm, thought it good policy to pretend it, and tried to amuse General Goddard with a show of negotiation, while he was straining every nerve to increase the army and render the surrounding country a desert."

For safety he sent the infant peishwa to Poorundhur, and advanced with the main body of the army, under Hurry Punt Phurkay and Tookajee Holkar, towards the Ghauts; while another leader, named Pureshram Bhow Putmordhan, descended into the Concan, to cut off Goddard's foragers and his communication with Bombay, towards which, the menacing of Poonah having produced no result, and the rains being at hand, the general was now anxious to return; but that movement it seemed impossible to effect without sacrificing some of his most necessary material of war.

So active was Pureshram Bhow that every detached party was cut off; thus, in April, Goddard had to send to Panwell no less than three battalions of sepoys, ten guns, and all his cavalry, under Colonel Browne, to escort some grain and other stores. *En route* to that place the escort was attacked by Pureshram Bhow, who would have been beaten off had he not been reinforced by Holkar. Browne, on finding this large combined force in his front, could not venture to proceed to Panwell without an accession of strength. Goddard was aware of the necessity for this, but unluckily the greater part of his cattle had gone down to bring up the supplies; thus he could not march

with the whole of his troops without risking the sacrifice of a large amount of public property, neither could he march with a portion but in the certainty of being cut off.

prepared at once to retreat, by sending, on the 19th, his guns and baggage to the bottom of the Ghauts ; but though he deemed himself unobserved, the Mahrattas were cognisant of all his movements.



LOW CASTE HINDOO WOMEN OF BOMBAY.

Colonel Browne eventually was succoured from Bombay, and though exposed, during a three days' toilsome and devious march, to the incessant attacks of 25,000 horse, besides great bodies of rocket-men and infantry, he succeeded with no little difficulty in bringing in the convoy in safety on the 15th of April.

On this junction being effected, General Goddard

Thus Tookajee Holkar, with 15,000 men, took post below the Ghauts, while Hurry Punt Phurkay, with 25,000 horse, 4,000 foot, and a brigade of guns was in position above them, and the moment Goddard began to move on the 20th, the latter marched with all speed down into the Concan and captured a great quantity of the baggage and military stores.

The whole retreat was a species of flying battle—a succession of furious attacks and firm repulses; but in three days the troops, jaded, worn, and harassed, reached Panwell, after leaving 460 killed and wounded by the way. Goddard then dispatched a reinforcement to Tellicherry, which was in con-

time when he was supposed to be in danger; but as its services were not required thus, Carnac employed them in the invasion of the fertile province of Malwa, where he reduced Tipparu, and advanced against Seronge, a large open town, so celebrated for its manufacture of chintzes that it has often



GWALIOR.

siderable danger; the Madras troops were sent back to their own presidency, while the remainder of the army was cantoned at Kallian during the monsoon.

While this most luckless campaign had been in progress, the Government of Bengal had attempted a diversion by carrying the war into the country of Scindia. Under Major Carnac a body of troops had been detailed to assist Captain Popham, at a

been plundered by contending parties. He reached it on the 16th of February, 1781, and there, unfortunately, he permitted himself to be surrounded by Scindia with a large force, and was soon reduced to the greatest distress, by the want of provisions and forage.

He contrived to report his situation to Colonel Morgan, who commanded our troops in Oude, and that officer dispatched to his assistance three

regiments of infantry, two of cavalry, and a brigade of guns. Meantime, Carnac, now a colonel, had no respite from Scindia, and after he had endured for seven consecutive days an unrelenting cannonade, he resolved to retire and cut his way out at all risks. Amid the darkness of midnight, on the 7th of March, his troops began their route in the strictest silence; but by daybreak they were discovered, pursued and galled by clouds of hostile horsemen for two successive days, till they reached Mahantpoor, where they obtained a supply of provisions, after which they halted and prepared to make a resistance.

Scindia also halted at a distance of five miles, as if awaiting an attack, and finding none made, his guards became less on the alert; this apparent apathy was the result of a suggestion made by Bruce, the hero of Gwalior; and on the night of the 24th, when Scindia was least expecting such a thing, Carnac broke sword in hand, into his camp, and put him completely to rout, with the loss of thirteen pieces of cannon, three elephants, twenty-one camels, many horses, and his principal standard—a result that rendered him somewhat more disposed to think of measures for peace. On the 4th of April, Colonel Muir came in with his little division, and as senior took command of the whole. While the troops remained encamped where they were, attempts were made to attach some of the Rajpoot chiefs to our cause, but in vain; and now, in the true spirit of Indian gratitude, the Rana of Gohud having gained all he wanted, in the possession of Gwalior, thought to make terms with Scindia for himself.

The latter, seeing he had nothing more to hope for, and considerably cooled by his late defeat, made overtures of peace to Colonel Muir, and as his demands were moderate, they were accepted. Colonel Muir was to recross the Jumna, and Scindia was to retire to Oujin (or Ujjain) in Malwa, an ancient city, once the capital of Bichchrajit, a rajah who reigned over Hindostan 500 years before the birth of our Saviour; Scindia's possessions west of the Jumna were all to be restored to him, with the exception of Gwalior, which was to be retained by the rana "so long as he behaved himself." At Salbye (in the province of Agra), a town on a mountain twenty-seven miles south-eastward of Gwalior, on the 17th of May, 1782, a treaty was eventually concluded, by which we were certainly not much the gainers.

"By the Treaty of Salbye, which consisted of seventeen articles," says Beveridge, in summarising it, "the Company resigned everything for which they had engaged in a long, bloody, and expensive

war, and returned to the same state of possession as at the date of the Treaty of Poorundhur. Salsette and a few small islands in the vicinity of Bombay were confirmed to them, but they lost Bassein, on which their hearts had long been set, and all the districts and revenues which had been ceded to them in the Guicowar territory, and other parts of Goojerat. Ahmedabad, too, which had been guaranteed to Futteh Sing, returned to the peishwa, and all the territory acquired west of the Jumna was restored to Scindia. In this last cession Gwalior was not excepted, because the Rana of Gohud, by attempting to make separate terms for himself, was held to have forfeited the privileges of an ally. Ragobah, entirely abandoned by the Company, was to receive 25,000 rupees a month from the peishwa, and have the choice of his place of residence. The only articles which might be considered favourable to the Company were a very vague agreement, that Hyder should restore his recent conquests from them and the Nabob of Arcot, and an exclusion of all European establishments except their own and those of the Portuguese, from the Mahratta dominions. Though no part of the treaty, Broach and its valuable district were made over to Scindia, in testimony of the service rendered by him to the Bombay army at Wurgaoon, and of his humane treatment of the two English gentlemen left as hostages on that occasion. These were the ostensible grounds of this extraordinary gift, though different grounds were taken by the Governor-General and Council in justifying it to the directors. It would have the important effect, they said, of attaching so distinguished a chief to the Company's interests; while the expediency of retaining what was given was doubtful, inasmuch as the expenses were nearly equal to the revenues, disputes about boundaries might arise, and the price of cotton, the staple of the district, had risen in Bombay, after the Company had obtained possession of it. This last fact, of which more charitable explanations might have been given, was characterised by the Governor-General and Council as 'the natural consequence of a commercial place (being) possessed by men who are dealers in the specific article of trade it produces.'"

The Bombay Government did not view this treaty with favour; and openly insinuated that they could have made better terms; but, great though the advantages were on the side of the Mahrattas, the tortuous policy of their minister, Rana Durnavese, made him affect to be not fully satisfied with it. Hence the ratifications were not finally exchanged till the 24th of February, 1783, a delay owing to

the pride and jealousy of Scindia, who thought to make terms still more advantageous to himself by working alternately on the fears of Hyder and the Company.

In the hope of receiving some tempting offer

from each, he continued to play one off against the other, nor did he actually decide in favour of the Treaty of Salbye, until compelled to do so by the death of Hyder Ali, an event to be recorded in its own place.

CHAPTER XLI.

OF THE LAND AND SEA FORCES OF THE EAST INDIA COMPANY.

THE military establishment of Bombay had its origin when the Company were first put in possession of that island; but the forces there deteriorated gradually from the first body of royal troops who garrisoned it under old Sir Abraham Shipman, in the time of Charles II., until the close of the first half of the eighteenth century. The local strength grew necessarily greater as the possessions and interests of the Company expanded.

In 1741, the Bombay troops consisted of one European regiment, having a captain, twenty-four subalterns, a surgeon, two sergeant-majors, 162 non-commissioned officers, twenty-six drummers, and 319 privates, the famous old "First Europeans." To these were added thirty-one Indo-Europeans, 900 Topasses, two native paymasters, a linguist, and an armourer—in all 1,479 men, divided into seven companies.*

Besides this corps, was a native militia of 700 men, having native officers, whose appearance must have been very remarkable, as they were all differently appareled, some being dressed as soldiers, some as sailors, while rude native costumes were worn by others.

"A few made themselves like South-sea Islanders, by bedizening themselves in the most fantastic manner; many wore scarcely any apparel at all, the usual piece of calico (the *cummerbund*) wound round the body, serving as raiment and uniform. Their arms were as various as their costumes—muskets, matchlocks, swords, spears, bows and arrows."

Of the latter weapons, the most remarkable were the fire-arrows, then, and for ages before, freely used by all the tribes of Hindostan—supposed to be identical with the same Greek fire which "was either launched in red-hot balls of stone and iron, or darted in arrows and javelins, twisted round

with flax and tow, which had deeply imbibed the inflammable oil."*

Naphtha was well known to the ancient Indians, and volcanoes of it, still in a high state of activity, exist at Baku, where the perpetual fire is worshipped on the western coast of the Caspian.† And naphtha for fire-arrows was also known to the Persians, while something like gunpowder is distinctly referred to at the sieges of Abulualid, in the year of the Hegira 712.‡

Save in war, the singularly-armed militia force we have mentioned were seldom mustered, but were used as peons, servants, and runners; and as such were badly paid, kicked, flogged, and smitten at the tyranny or caprice of the civilians, whose retainers they were; and it was not until 1750 that the military services of these unfortunate creatures were dispensed with.

In Madras and Bengal, the sepoys were of higher caste and better disciplined. Some of these were brought to Bombay, but they declined to serve there unless paid at a higher rate. The transfer of sepoy troops between the three presidencies ere long became an affair of custom; but among the directors at Leadenhall Street there existed a strong disposition to under-pay their troops, and they were for ever impressing upon their Indian officials the necessity of retrenchment. In this spirit a European regiment was removed from the island fortress of Sion, which commands the channel of Salsette, and replaced therein by a corps of Topasses, half Portuguese and half Indians, who were also half Christians and half idolaters. By this a saving of 14,364 rupees was effected, and the safety of the whole place endangered by a garrison of troops on whom so little reliance could be placed.

The officers of the Company's service were both

* Gibbon.

† See Hanway's "Account."

‡ Berrington's "Hist. Middle Ages."

European and native; but the latter, always more or less hostile in secret to the former, sometimes proved unfaithful; and we are told what seems incredible, that at this period, about 1740, some European officers attained the rank of captain without being able to write. Their pay was small, and hence, in war, it was frequently increased by plunder.

The menaces of the French and Mahrattas causing an augmentation of the forces at Bombay and Surat, distinguished officers of the king's army took service in India, and young men of good birth and education were appointed as cadets. In imitation of the French East India Company, sepoy battalions were gradually formed, while a few regiments of the line and regular companies of artillery came from Britain. These changes were effected with more spirit when war broke out, in 1744, between the rival commercial Companies.

While the strife was in progress, two years later, the Council raised at Surat a native force of 1,000 men, and it was considered politic to recruit them from various castes and nations, and thus were seen Arabs and Abyssinians, Hindoos and Mussulmans, Jews, Topasses, and Guebers marching under the Union Jack; and this was the force which, as British troops, came to the assistance of Fort St. David.

It was about this time that, to obtain an efficient artillery force, the Bombay Council engaged Major Goodyear, an officer who had served on board the fleet of Admiral Boscawen, and appointed him their commandant, and a member of Council, with a palanquin and £250 per annum. He then raised the local company of artillery, and the old system of *gholandazees*, with assistant lascars, was abolished. Ten infantry companies, of seventy rank and file each, were next embodied, making, with officers of all ranks, a total of 841; and promotion went by seniority. From the service, in the spirit of the times, all Catholics were by order excluded; yet, in spite of this, they secretly enlisted in such numbers, that the most of the soldiers were, ere long, men of that persuasion. The difficulty of finding Englishmen to serve at first was very great; and most of the officers who served in India in those days were Scotchmen.

In 1752, we find a Captain Alexander De Ziegle, with a company of Swiss under his command, serving at Bombay; but they were so ill-treated by the English, that the most of them deserted to Dupleix. In the August of the subsequent year, we find a Scottish baronet, Major Sir James Foulis, of Ravelston and Colinton, in the county of Edinburgh, in command of the troops,

among whom he introduced many useful reforms. He conciliated the affections of all ranks, save the civil officials, by whom at last, he was so grossly insulted, that he resigned his post and returned home.

Strict discipline was first introduced among the Company's land force when the Mutiny Act was made applicable to it, by a Bill which passed Parliament in 1754. In October it was proclaimed at the gate of the Fort of Bombay, and received the unanimous assent of the troops upon the parade; and from that day many date the genuine formation of the Bombay army. Towards the close of 1755, Major Chalmers arrived in command of three companies of the Royal Artillery, and this enabled the local company to improve upon their model. The number of regulars then on the island was only 1,571, and these comprised many European nationalities.*

In addition to this there were 3,000 trained sepoys; while, at Surat and Cambay, Arabs were always preferred for garrison service, notwithstanding their wayward bursts of wild fanaticism. In 1759, a special corps of 500 sepoys was first disciplined strictly according to the rules of the British army; and it was calculated that, on an emergency, the presidency could muster 15,750 men, including 450 for the marine service. The covenanted servants, captains of merchantmen, and other Europeans, who formed one company, mustered about 100. The native population capable of bearing arms amounted to 3,017, and that of Mahim, a town and fort seventeen miles north of Bombay, to 1,865; but, says a writer, "so silent are the historians of British India regarding the rise of the European and native army, that their readers might suppose it to have been without any rudimental germs, never to have passed through the slow process of growth, but to have sprung at once into vigorous existence. We read of no mortifications, no blunders, no failures to which men must ordinarily submit before their institutions attain to full strength. Such, however, there certainly were. Even when soldiers had been found, and the living material provided for the ranks abundantly, there was continual perplexity when attempting to make the proper arrangements for clothing, arming, paying, provisioning the troops, and other similar matters."

At first the clothing issued was so indifferent and so irregularly supplied, that the men had to supply defects themselves, thus their appearance was often tattered and always motley. The first genuine reform in the attire of the sepoys was

* "Bombay Diary."

when they were supplied with scarlet jackets of broadcloth and white linen turbans to distinguish them from native enemies; and in 1760, the uniform of the troops in the three presidencies, was assimilated; but all had to complain bitterly of the deductions made from their pay for these necessaries; while sometimes the Europeans were paid daily, and sometimes kept for months in arrears.

The year mentioned was remarkable for the bitter hostility that existed between the Bombay army and the civil authorities, defiance of whom seemed to have become a principle among the troops. "The new code of military law," says a local periodical, "the importation of regular troops from Britain, the organisation of an army with European discipline and admirable appointments, had produced no better fruit than this. The spirit which animated the officers was active also in the ranks. Desertions were frequent, and Sir James Foulis estimated the annual loss from this cause and death, at ten per cent. So many men deserted from the factory in Scinde that sufficient were not left for its defence in case of a sudden surprise, and it became necessary to release some prisoners for want of a guard. Punishments were of frightful severity. At Surat, eight Europeans deserted during the military operations; all were retaken; one was shot, and the others received 1,000 lashes each. Of seven Topasses who deserted a little later, under extenuating circumstances, five were sentenced to be shot; but, as an act of mercy, were permitted to escape, with 800 or 1,000 lashes. Even the king's troops were contaminated; and at Tellicherry, when called into active service, loudly and insubordinately uttered the old complaint of want of beef, protesting against the fish rations supplied to them on four days of the week."*

As the native army increased, its form changed. In 1766, we find ten battalions of 1,000 each, with three European officers to each corps. In 1770, there were eighteen battalions of a similar kind; and in 1784, this army had increased to 2,000 native cavalry and 28,000 infantry.

For recruiting their forces at home, in 1771, it would seem to have been arranged that the India Company were to pay to Government £60,000 for permission to build barracks in the islands of Guernsey and Jersey, for 2,500 men, where a regiment of recruits was to be formed for service in India, consisting of three battalions of 700 men each; one of Irish Roman Catholics, one of Germans, and one of Swiss Protestants, and hence, from the mixed nature of their forces in those days, originated the general term *Europeans* for all whites. A battalion

of artillery 400 strong was also to be raised by drafts from Woolwich, for which the Company were to pay £10,000 annually. The three battalions were to be constituted thus, as a brigade—one colonel, one lieutenant-colonel, one major or brigade-major for the whole. Then, for each battalion:—one major, seven captains, eight lieutenants, seven ensigns, one adjutant, one quartermaster, twenty-eight cadets, three surgeons, twenty-one sergeants, twenty-one corporals, thirty drums and fifes, 700 privates. The king's Lieutenant-Governor of the Isle of Guernsey was to command all these troops prior to their embarking for India.*

In Madras, the military system progressed very slowly, as there was a strong prejudice against the enlistment of natives, from a fear that the power thus created might be turned against ourselves; while among the Europeans the want of military spirit is said to have been remarkable. The factors were unwilling to carry arms, and for the young men who served under them, soldiering seemed to have but few attractions; for in those days the highest ambition of a Briton in India was to accumulate a fortune and return home; but, by the close of the half-century, when the French were off its coast, the military preparations at Madras were somewhat considerable; only a few hundreds of the troops were Europeans, while several thousands were sepoys and Topasses.

In Bengal, the process of raising a native army was similar to that in the other two provinces; but the natives were there sworn in—the Hindoo by the waters of the Ganges, and the Mussulman by the Koran—and organised as regular soldiers; but this took place at a later period than at Bombay or Madras, as, in 1707, when Calcutta became the seat of a presidency, the garrison consisted of about 300 sepoys only; but in 1739, the Mahratta incursions necessitated the enrolment of whole companies of natives, and in later years the discipline of the sepoys there was more complete, thoroughly organised on the European system, and the ranks were filled by men chiefly from the upper provinces, but often natives of Burmah, Assam, Malabar, and other places were found among them.

Of the three presidencies, Bombay alone arrived at the dignity of possessing a regular navy, for although Bengal had a marine service, in most respects it was more like a mercantile marine, each Indiaman being a species of armed letter of marque. Madras was without any naval establishment; but that of Bombay guarded the Malabar coast, and protected the interests of Britain and India in the Gulfs of Persia and Arabia.

* *Bombay Quarterly Review*.

* *Scots Magazine*, 1771.

In the second quarter of the eighteenth century the condition of the Company's marine was at a somewhat low ebb ; for as good officers and seamen were then invariably paid off in time of peace, it became difficult to procure either in time of war ; but after the reductions consequent to a time of peace, in 1742, the Bombay navy was thus organised :—

There was a superintendent, under whom were eight commanders (one being styled the com-

twenty guns (6 to 12-pounders), five ketches carrying from eight to fourteen guns (4 to 6-pounders), eight gallivats, and one praam. The officers were increased in number, by two commanders, ten more lieutenants; and, to improve the *morale* of the whole, divine service was now first performed on board, and all gambling, swearing, &c., strictly forbidden; and in 1761, a regular uniform was adopted by the officers, who, by the Governor in Council, were "ordered to wear blue frock coats, turned up with



SEPOYS, 1757.

modore), three first-lieutenants, four third officers, and six masters of gallivats. In the first rank of fighting vessels were two grabs, the *Restoration* and *Neptune's Prize*, the former manned by eighty Europeans and fifty-one lascars; the latter by fifty Europeans and thirty-one lascars. On board of the praams were thirty Europeans and twenty lascars. Complaints of favouritism being common in those days, it was at last ordered that all promotions should be regulated by the dates of commissions.

After war broke out between France and Britain, the appearance of French men-of-war and privateers in Indian waters, in 1744, compelled Bombay to augment her marine, which was now ordered to consist of three ships of twenty guns each, a grab of

yellow, dress-coats and waistcoats of the same colour, and according to regulated pattern. Large boot-sleeves and facings of gold lace were the fashion for the superior grades, while the midshipmen and masters of gallivats were to rest contented with small round cuffs and no facings." °

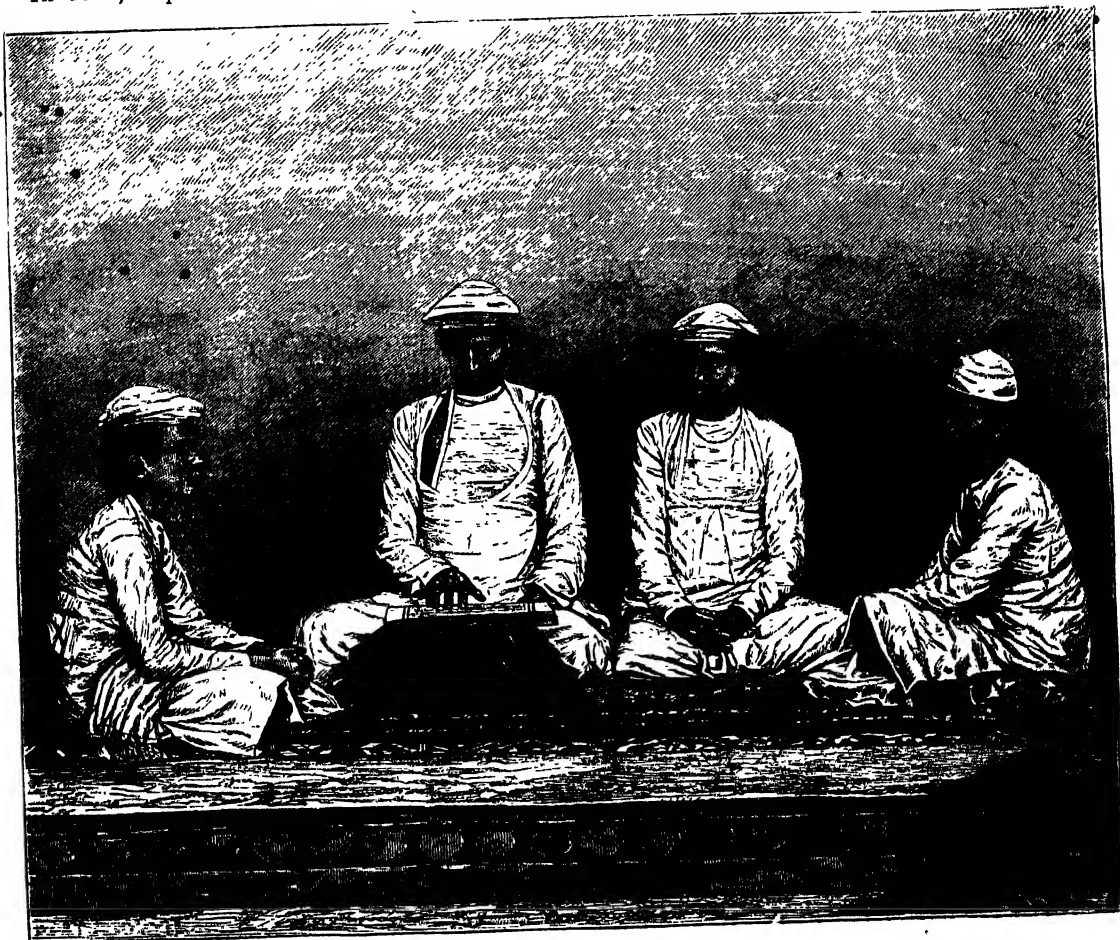
In 1824, the Honourable Company's marine consisted of fifteen sail, ships and brigs. Two of the former were named the *Hastings* and the *Tignmouth*. The total numbers of the crews were only 558 Europeans and 838 lascars, with 110 officers. The command of the whole was vested in a superintendent, who had the rank of rear-admiral. The internal economy was regulated by him also, with the aid of a Marine Board, which was

composed of himself, the master-attendant, and boat-master, till it was dissolved in 1830. At the commencement of the Burmese war, several vessels of the marine joined H.M. fleet, and acted in concert with it, and their fitness for warlike purposes is well described by Captain Marryat, who served in the same squadron.

In 1828, Captain Sir Charles Malcolm, of the

from one port to another; and also for the suppression of piracy to the eastward, particularly in the Straits of Malacca and Singapore, till that duty was undertaken by H.M. ships.

In 1830, Sir Charles Malcolm estimated that not less than ten sail were necessary to repress piracy in the Persian Gulf, the Red Sea, and Gulf of Cutch.*



GROUP OF BRAHMINS.

Royal Navy, arrived in Bombay to act as super-intendent; in the following year martial law was extended to the service, and the officers took rank with those of the king's fleet.

The natives employed as soldiers on board these vessels were drafted from the Bombay Marine battalion, a corps 700 strong, and well disciplined.

These vessels were, in time of peace, chiefly employed in the conveyance of treasure from the Malabar coast to Bombay, and of important packets

Thus, in time, the marine of Bombay, with improved discipline, increased numbers, and a handsome uniform, became quite a little navy, though it did not call itself so; for it was thrown into the shade by the occasional presence of our stately first-rates, and dashing frigates; but its deeds in war, like those of many other Indiamen who fought their way at sea, were second to those of no navy in the world.

* E. I. U. S. Mag., 1837.

CHAPTER XLII.

HYDER ALI AND SWARTZ THE MISSIONARY.—INVASION OF THE CARNATIC.—DESTRUCTION OF COLONEL BAILLIE'S TROOPS.

SILENTLY but actively Hyder Ali, for the space of seven years, had been concocting schemes with the French at Pondicherry, increasing and disciplining his forces, and preparing and perfecting the sinews of war by a system of finance, that, curiously enough, has been applauded by some writers, though it consisted chiefly in extortion from his subjects, and the pillage of his neighbours. An illiterate man, Hyder could neither read nor write; yet he was a good mental arithmetician in a certain way, and he was assisted by learned Brahmins, who were great accountants and expert financiers; but his chief resource was the old Indian practice of pouncing upon any man of reputed wealth; and if he escaped Hyder by suicide, his family and servants were barbarously tortured till the secreted hoards were attained.

A Brahmin dewan sent a dying declaration, that the full amount of his fortune was 50,000 pagodas, and prayed him to receive the money into the treasury, and leave his family untouched and in peace. Hyder took the money, and though doubting not that a judicious application of torture might have led to the disgorging of more, he made a merit of leaving the family free; but his next dewan, also a Brahmin, was frightfully tortured till he gave up every farthing he had, on which he was permitted to crawl away, a beggared cripple.

His successor was a Mussulman, an able and honourable man; but he, too, was subjected to torture, and died under it, as he had no money to give up. Another dewan, on being dismissed from office, declared solemnly that all he possessed was 10,000 rupees, which he had when appointed, so he was flung into a dungeon, where he died, and the rupees were taken from his family, who were thus reduced to beggary.

The missionary Swartz, who lived some time in Mysore, wrote thus of Hyder:—

"He is served through fear; two hundred people with whips in their hands stand always ready for duty, for not a day passes on which numbers are not flogged. Hyder applies the same cat to all transgressors alike—gentlemen and horse-keepers, tax-gatherers and his own sons. It will hardly be believed what punishments are inflicted on the collectors. One of them was tied up, and two men came with their whips and cut him dreadfully;

with sharp nails they tore his flesh asunder, and then scourged him afresh while his shrieks rent the air."

To extort money by torture was common then all over the East, from Pekin to the Golden Horn, and was not unknown in Europe during the Middle Ages, and even in England under the more barbarous of the Plantagenets, "when men buried in the earth what they could not secure in trade or in banks, and the possession of which they could not own without danger."

So by such means the treasury of Mysore was well filled, and all the weight that money could give, was on the side of Hyder when he began to prepare for war against us in 1780.

In the preceding year, the governor, Sir Thomas Rumbold, endeavoured to ascertain his precise intentions, and for this purpose resorted to the Rev. Mr. Swartz, the eminent Danish missionary, whom Bishop Heber, in his Journal, characterises as being one of the most active and fearless, successful and able missionaries who had appeared since the days of the Apostles. While pursuing his labours in Tanjore, Sir Hector Munro invited him to visit Madras, when the governor pressed him to make a journey of inquiry to Seringapatam; as the object was to prevent the effusion of human blood, the good missionary undertook it, as he records, for three reasons: "First, because the mission to Hyder was not attended by political intrigues; second, because this would enable me to announce the Gospel of God my Saviour in many parts where it had never been known before; and third, as the honourable Company and the Government had shown me repeated kindness, I conceived that by this journey I might give them some marks of my gratitude."

Accordingly he wrote to Hyder, announcing his visit, and on the 25th of August, 1779, he entered Seringapatam; and in his first interview with the dreaded despot, he tells us that the latter desired him to take a seat beside him, on a carpet of exquisite tapestry. He listened to all Swartz had to advance with politeness and pleasure; but said, openly and unreservedly, that "the Europeans had broken all their solemn promises and engagements; yet that, nevertheless, he was willing to live in peace with them, provided——." But provided what,

Mr. Swartz omits to tell. In Hyder's army he found a body of European troops, French and Germans, together with some Malabar Christians, among all of whom he pushed his missionary work, and to whom he preached every Sunday. He had many interviews with Hyder, on whom he urged friendship and peace. On one occasion Swartz said that he deemed the subject of his visit "in no wise derogatory to the office of a minister of God, who is a God of Peace."

"Very well," replied Hyder—"very well. I am of the same opinion with you; and wish that the English may be as studious of peace as you are. If they offer me the hand of peace and concord I will not withdraw mine."

Swartz returned, very well satisfied with the success of his peaceful mission, early in October, to find that in the preceding month Sir Thomas Rumbold had strangely taken measures to render war with Mysore inevitable, by sending Colonel Harper with a force to aid Bassulet Jung at Adoni, in defiance of a remonstrance from Nizam Ali. The colonel began his march, pursuing a route which for 200 miles led through the most difficult passes in the territories of the Nizam and of Hyder, who had both avowed their resolution to bar the way; a fact which the Madras Government not only utterly ignored, but even omitted to ask permission to make the movement, on the singular plea that friendly states might always march their armies through each other's territories.

The consequence of all this folly was, that when Colonel Harper's force entered a narrow and tortuous valley between gloomy and precipitous hills, he found his further progress barred by a great abattis of felled trees, with their branches thrown outward, and lined with musketry, while along the heights on each flank, were troops moving collaterally with his line of march, and another force was closing up his rear.

Out of this terrible snare he had barely time to escape by a precipitous and rather ignominious retreat, on which he was immediately reinforced from Madras, while a remonstrance was sent to Hyder on his "unfriendly behaviour." He replied, by intimating his resolution not to allow any British force to reach Adoni, which was then a town of considerable strength in the Balaghaut territories; nor would he permit his inveterate enemy, Mohammed Ali, to obtain possession of Gantoor, the jaghire of Bassulet Jung, on any conditions whatever. And this intimation he enforced by sending troops who ravaged the country of Adoni up to its very walls.

Bassulet then found himself in an awkward predicament; he had drawn upon himself the

vengeance of the terrible Hyder, and was threatened with that of his brother; and now Sir Thomas Rumbold, fearing the complication he had created, just before he quitted Madras in bad health, and conceiving that something might be effected by another peaceful mission, in February, 1780, dispatched Mr. Gray, formerly of the Bengal Civil Service, on an errand that proved worse than useless; for now Hyder Ali, who had exhausted the whole of his small stock of patience upon the gentle Swartz, became filled with sudden fury, and confident in his strength, after prayers in all the mosques, and grotesque and uncouth ceremonies in all the Hindoo temples, quitted Seringapatam in the month of June at the head of a force "which had probably not been equalled, and certainly not surpassed, in strength and efficiency by any native army that had ever been assembled in the south of India."*

Its total strength was 90,000 men, of whom 28,000 alone were cavalry. In addition to his well-drilled infantry, he had 40,000 peons, 2,000 artillery and rocketeers, 400 Europeans, and a complete staff of French officers to direct everything on the best European plans. His train consisted of 100 pieces of cannon of all calibres.

With his fierce heart fired alike by pride and the promptings of revenge, Hyder beheld this great host, with its myriad camp-followers, pouring through the wild passes down upon the plains of the Carnatic from the high table-land of Mysore, that great kingdom of his own creation, and ere long, for a time, he was everywhere triumphant. Of Hyder's invasion one of the most eloquent men of the age spoke thus:—

"Having terminated his disputes with every enemy and rival, who buried their mutual animosities in their common detestation, he drew from every quarter whatever savage ferocity could add to his new rudiments in the art of destruction; and compounding all the materials of fury, havoc, and desolation into one black cloud, he hung for awhile on the declivities of the mountains. Whilst the authors of all these evils were idly and stupidly gazing on this menacing meteor which blackened all their horizon, it suddenly burst, and poured down the whole of its contents upon the plains of the Carnatic. Then ensued a scene of war the like of which no eye had seen, no heart conceived, and which no tongue can adequately tell. All the horrors of war before known or heard of were mercy to that new havoc. A storm of universal fire blasted every field, consumed every house, destroyed every temple. The miserable inhabitants

* Colonel Wilks.

fleeing from their flaming villages, in part were slaughtered; others, without regard to sex, to age, to the respect of rank or sacredness of function—fathers torn from children, husbands from wives—enveloped in a whirlwind of cavalry, and amid the goading spears of drivers, and the trampling of pursuing horses, were swept into captivity in a hostile and unknown land. Those who were able to evade this tempest fled to the walled cities; but in escaping from fire, sword, and exile, they fell into the jaws of famine.”*

There is more of eloquence, perhaps, than of accuracy in this quotation; for the object of Hyder was to conquer not destroy the fertile Carnatic; but in too many instances he was incapable of repressing the ferocity and marauding propensities of his troops. To meet this immense force so carefully developed and carefully prepared by Hyder, the presidency of Madras had an empty treasury, a factious and divided Council, an army only some 6,000 strong, including their sepoys, all wholly unarranged for a campaign, and scattered over the wide tract of country around Trichinopoly, Pondicherry, Arcot, and Madras, some cantoned and some in forts, but all far apart, and ill supplied with provisions and all the munition of war.

No reliance whatever could be placed upon the troops of our ally, the Nabob of the Carnatic, and this was soon proved by their taking to flight in masses, or deserting also in masses to Hyder Ali. It was difficult to collect the scattered forces of Madras, and nowhere were they strong enough to check the overwhelming columns and rapid advance of the Mysoreans, to whom some places were surrendered by treachery, and others through despair; but Sir Hector Munro was advancing at the head of one body of troops, and his countryman, Colonel Baillie at the head of another; but ere this, once again from Mount St. Thomas, near Madras, the flames of rapine could be seen by night, and the black columns of smoke towering skyward by day, before orders were given to get our troops in motion; and once more, as in the previous war, blacks and whites gathered in trembling crowds under the guns of Fort St. George, as being the only place where they could find safety.

Colonel Harper's little column at Guntoor, on the command being taken by Colonel Baillie, was the first that began to move southward, while a fast sailing ship, flying with all her canvas spread before the south-west monsoon, brought the terrible tidings to Calcutta, implying from Warren Hastings men and money, or Madras would be lost, and a death-blow struck to the British Empire in India.

* Edmund Burke.

So Hastings resolved to suspend the incapable Council of Madras, and to commit to Sir Eyre Coote the whole administration of the war.

Colonel Braithwaite, commanding in Pondicherry, was ordered to advance on Madras by the way of Chingleput. Colonel Cosby, commanding at Trichinopoly, was ordered to join the main army collecting under Sir Hector Munro. But meanwhile, many fortified places were falling as stated, into the hands of Hyder, and chiefly through the treachery or cowardice of the killedars of the Nabob Mohammed Ali. Lord Macleod (who had served under the Pretender at Culloden, and now, as a soldier of fortune, had become a Swedish lieutenant-general), arrived in Madras Roads on the 20th of January, 1780, at the head of his own regiment, the Macleod Highlanders (now the 71st of the Line), 1,000 strong, and the last act of the effete Council was to the effect that he should command in the field, and take post at Madras. But Sir Hector Munro, with less judgment, it is averred, insisted that the place for battle should be Conjeveram, and he carried his point in this movement, which was strongly condemned by Colonel Baillie, then pushing on from Guntoor.

On the 20th of July, 1780, Hyder, after issuing through the pass of Chingama, dispatched his second son, Kurreem Sahib, with 5,000 cavalry to plunder Porto Novo (called by the Hindoos Parangupet), thirty-six miles from Pondicherry, off which a French armament was then hovering, while a large body of horse spread over the country to pillage and devastate it. On the 21st of August, Hyder was before Arcot, where he learned the British forces had begun their march for Conjeveram, forty-two miles distant, where Munro halted on the 29th, the same day that Hyder quitted Arcot.

By incredible exertions Munro had collected a force of 5,209 men, of whom the only Europeans were the Highlanders of Lord Macleod, and one battalion of the Company's service, with the European grenadiers of another corps. He had with him eight days' rice, and was anxiously waiting to form a junction with Colonel Baillie, who was coming on with a force stated by one authority to be 3,000 strong, by another 2,813.

This junction Hyder resolved to prevent, and sent his son, the terrible Tippeo Sahib, with fully 5,000 horse, 5,000 infantry, a large irregular force, and sixty heavy guns, with orders to destroy, if he could do so, every man of Baillie's little column. On the 25th of August the column, in ignorance of what was in store for him, reached the river Cortelaw, and as it was almost dry, encamped on its northern bank. That evening the stony pullah

became filled and swollen by the sudden mountain rains, and next morning it was utterly impassable. Six days did the unfortunate officer wait there anxiously for some indication that the fatal river was about to subside; but seeing none, he wrote to the Government, proposing to descend to its mouth at Enore, and there cross it by means of boats. This letter was never answered; but on the 4th of September he contrived, by a subsidence of the waters, to reach Perambaucam, within fifteen miles of Munro's camp, where he was compelled to halt and take up a position, on finding that Tippoo, who had been watching all his movements, had made certain dispositions to attack him.

Though the disparity between the strength of the forces was great, a three hours' contest ensued, during which the British troops, while weary by a long and forced march, and weakened by hunger, fought with matchless bravery, and the action was indecisive, though Tippoo would have given way but for the fiery energy of his French staff-officers. The result was, that Baillie wrote to Munro, stating that in the exhausted state of his troops he was unable to join him, and hoped to be succoured on his present ground. At the same time Tippoo wrote to his father Hyder, saying that without fresh troops success was impossible.

For some unaccountable reason the general failed to comply with the colonel's request at once, and meantime Hyder, whose camp was only six miles distant, made a movement which gave him command of the very road by which any succours must come. Munro, who was afraid to risk the loss of his chief stronghold, the great and stately pagoda of Conjeveram, wherein lay his provisions, baggage, and heavy guns, after a delay of three days—days of dreadful anxiety to Baillie's little force—reinforced him by the grenadier and light companies of the Macleod Highlanders, under Captains John Lindsay and Baird (afterwards Sir David Baird), and two companies of European grenadiers, the whole being under the command of Colonel Fletcher, an officer whose great sagacity enabled him to reach his destination by suddenly adopting a route of his own, and thus baffling his treacherous guides, who were in the pay of Hyder. By this dexterous movement he effected his junction with Baillie, whose force was augmented, mustered 3,720 men—but small as opposed to the army of Mysore.

Baillie, now confident that now he should be able to reach Conjeveram, started for that place on the 9th of September. Hyder, on hearing of this, gave way to one of his usual temporary ruses, but finding that he might be attacked in front and rear, did not attempt to move

till informed by his spies that Munro was apparently remaining quietly at Conjeveram, on which, as soon as darkness fell, he sent on the greater portion of his infantry and cannon to cut off the doomed column, which had not marched a mile from Perambaucum when it fell into a terrible ambushade prepared for it in a dense jungly grove, through which Hyder knew it must pass, and where he had raised three great batteries—one in the front, and one on each flank—armed with fifty-seven pieces of cannon.

Hyder's masses, lurking amid the dark jungle, allowed our weary troops, toiling on in the dark, though kept on the alert by occasional shots from vedettes, and flights of rockets, to come almost within pistol-shot of the masked works, when a roar, as if the earth had been rent asunder, shook the place, and the gloomy grove became filled with flashes and smoke, as all the guns opened on every side with round shot and grape, while the rattle of musketry in a fourth quarter, announced that they had been attacked in rear. Baillie had with him ten guns, but as he was moving in a kind of hollow square, with his sick, wounded, baggage, and stores in the centre, there was great difficulty in using them.

In this attack were thirty battalions of sepoy infantry, with 400 Europeans under Colonel Lally and other French officers, who, we are told, when day dawned, were struck with admiration at the manner in which the Highlanders, led by Captain Baird, a man of great stature, "performed their evolutions, in the midst of all the tumult and peril, with as much coolness and steadiness as if on parade." So stern was the resistance, that by six a.m., victory was actually declaring for our little band, when, after many bloody repulses—no less than thirteen in succession—the flower of the Mysore horse gave way, and Colonel Lally, with his Europeans, was ordered to cover the retreat.

But a sudden change took place; two of our tumbrils blew up, destroying several lives and most of the ammunition at a time when the pouches of those who struggled and staggered onward over the dead and dying were almost empty; and now the whole, crowded into a helpless mass, were mowed down by sabre, or shot in hundreds. The whole of the sepoys were soon annihilated, and the Europeans, now reduced to four hundred men, fought in a kind of square, or mob, the men with their bayonets, and the officers with their swords. Waving a white handkerchief, Colonel Baillie sought quarter, and believing it was granted, gave the order to ground arms, and the moment this was done, the Mysoreans rushed on them to indulge in



HYDER ALI AND THE MISSIONARY.

universal and unresisted slaughter, in which the young soldiers of Hyder "amused themselves with fleshing their swords and exhibiting their skill on men already most inhumanly mangled, on the sick and wounded in the dhoolies, and even on women and children."*

The very few who survived were saved by the merciful interposition of Colonel Lally and his Frenchmen; but no human language, and no pen,

heavy stores into a deep tank, and as he had only one day's rice remaining, began his retreat for Chingleput, where he found none of the provisions which should have been stored for him there by Mohammed Ali; but he had the satisfaction of being joined at that place by the detachment of Colonel Cosby.

After some hesitation, Sir Hector now marched north eastward, for Mount St. Thomas, where he



RUINED TEMPLE OF CHILLAMBARAM.

can describe the future sufferings of the few that fell into the hands of Hyder Ali. Sixty-eight officers fell, including Colonel Fletcher. Colonel Baillie was taken, and died of his wounds; Captain Baird had four, yet he was chained to another prisoner and thrown into a dungeon at Seringapatam, where he remained three, or nearly four, years.

The destruction—so complete—of Baillie's column, which Munro should have succoured with every bayonet under his orders, now compelled that officer to abandon Conjeeveram. On the morning of the 11th September, he threw all his guns and

* Colonel Wilks.

took up a position at Marmalong, with a river protecting his front, while Hyder remained forty miles distant, in his strongly-intrenched camp at Mooserwauke; and so for the time ended a twenty-one days' campaign, which was full of disaster but not dishonour to the British arms, though the result excited the greatest consternation at Madras, and scarcely less so in Calcutta, where, however, more vigorous counsels prevailed, and it was resolved to supply the former with all requisite forces and treasure. Hyder meanwhile remained in his camp, of which Colonel Wilks has given the following forcible picture:—

"His camp, like that of most Indian armies, exhibited a motley collection of covers from the scorching sun and dews of the night, variegated according to the taste or means of each individual, by extensive enclosures of coloured calico surrounding superb suites of tents; by ragged cloths or blankets stretched over sticks or branches; palm-leaves hastily spread over similar supports; hand-

some tents and splendid canopies; horses, oxen, elephants, and camels; all intermixed without any exterior mark of order or design, except the flags of the chiefs, which usually mark the centres of a congeries of these masses; the only regular part of the encampment being the streets of shops, each of which is constructed in the manner of a booth at an English fair."*

CHAPTER XLIII.

SIR E. COOTE TAKES COMMAND IN THE CARNATIC.—DARING ACT OF LIEUTENANT FLINT.—HYDER'S SHIPS DESTROYED.—THE PAGODA OF CHILLAMBARAM ATTACKED, ETC.

ON the 5th of November, 1780, Sir Eyre Coote arrived in Madras, bringing with him fifteen lacs of rupees, 500 British troops, 600 lascars, and about fifty gentlemen volunteers. A considerable body of native infantry were ordered to march through the country of Moodajee Bhonsla, whom Hastings had succeeded in withdrawing from Hyder's cause after he had actually sent 30,000 cavalry towards the maritime district of Cuttack for the purpose of invading Bengal. But for the energy of Hastings at this crisis, it is, perhaps, too probable that there would have been an end of our power in India—in the Carnatic and the Northern Circars most certainly.

He had to contend with an empty exchequer, and a Council that not even the pressure of danger could inspire with unanimity. The fifteen lacs committed to the care of Sir Eyre as a supply for the army, Hastings had gathered by sending mis-sives and agents over the land to wherever it could be procured—at Patna, Moorshedabad, Lucknow, and Benares, "wherever he had a claim or could invent one—for all considerations gave way in his mind to the paramount duty of preserving the British Empire in the East. If he could have coined his body—his soul too—into lacs of rupees, he would have done it at this tremendous crisis." And now he turned with confidence to the veteran, Sir Eyre Coote, who had fought under Clive at Plassey, who had defeated Lally and Bussy at Wandiwash, and captured Pondicherry in the last war.

Peace was concluded with Scindia; amicable arrangements were made with other Mahratta chiefs, under the guarantee of the Rajah of Berar,

and the gallant Popham was recalled from the Jumna. Sir Eyre, who had but recently returned from Europe, gave Hastings his entire support, and recognising the spirit, wisdom, and decision of his plans, though now somewhat infirm in health, he assumed the task confided to him cheerfully and with enthusiasm—the task of grappling with the dreaded Hyder.

Aware that more reinforcements would be required for that purpose, and knowing since Goddard's expedition to Surat, that the native troops might be trusted on long marches, Hastings resolved to prepare another column to move on Madras by land, and strained every nerve to procure the best officers and men; and thus, early in the year 1781, this force, under Colonel Pearse, the counterpart of Goddard, began its route through Cuttack, the Northern Circars, and more than half of the Carnatic, a distance of fully 1,100 miles, through a country intersected by many great rivers, which were all to be crossed nearest their mouths, and where, therefore, they were broadest. Pearse's column consisted of five small battalions of sepoys, a few native cavalry and artillery. These overcame every obstacle, reached Madras at a most critical time, and proved of great service in the war.

Prior to this, on the 19th September, 1780, Hyder again invested Arcot, which Mohammed Ali considered as his capital, and had consequently expended a great sum in having it regularly fortified by a European engineer, who environed it with a rampart having bastions, and a ditch; but omitting ravelins or lunettes, which are smaller works made beyond a ditch. Laid down by his French officers,

* "Historical Sketches of the South of India."

Hyder's batteries and approaches proved so successful, that after six weeks of open trenches, two breaches were reported practicable, and against these two columns—one led by Tippoo Sahib and Mha Mirza Khan—rushed to the assault. Both proved eventually successful, and the European troops, after retiring into the citadel, were compelled to surrender by the treachery of the native infantry whom Hyder's gold had corrupted.

Sir Eyre Coote was unable to take the field before the 17th of January, 1781, when he did so at the head of only 1,700 Europeans, and about 5,000 native troops, the movements of which were greatly impeded by the want of draught cattle, Hyder's fleet horse having swept the country of everything. Thus, small vessels laden with stores had to accompany the movements of the army, and keep close in shore. At that time Hyder was fully occupied by the investment of five different garrisons defended by British officers. Amboor, one of these, had capitulated on the 13th; but Chingleput, another, was relieved by the advance of Coote on the 19th. In the fort of Carangoly Hyder had placed a garrison of 700 Mysoreans; but as information came to Coote that they were about to leave it, he sent 1,000 bayonets in the night, under a Captain Davis, to take it by surprise. The garrison was found under arms; but the captain blew open the gates and took the fort by assault, and by doing so inspired the troops with confidence.

Wandiwash, the scene of so much fighting in these years, was preserved to us (when, by treachery, it was about to become the prey of Hyder) by a remarkable act of daring on the part of a young officer, Lieutenant Flint. On the approach of Hyder, the killedar, an officer of Mohammed Ali, became justly suspected, so Flint was dispatched with only 100 men to get possession of the place. Though threatened that the guns of the fort would be turned upon him if he dared to approach the walls, he nevertheless did so, saying that he had a letter from the nabob, which he was ordered to deliver into the hands of the killedar alone, and for this purpose begged admission with a few men. The killedar refused, but agreed to receive the letter in the space that lay between the outer and inner barrier. Attended by only four faithful sepoys, Lieutenant Flint entered, and found the killedar sitting on a carpet, surrounded by several officers, with thirty swordsmen as his personal guard, and a hundred sepoys drawn up for his protection, their white teeth and eyes gleaming malevolently out of their dark visages.

After a few prefatory remarks, Flint confessed that he had no letter, but offered, as an equivalent

therefore, the order of Sir Eyre Coote, acting in concert with Mohammed Ali; but this the killedar treated with contempt—he desired the lieutenant to be gone instantly, and rose to depart. On this Flint seized him by the throat, and threatened him with instant death if he raised a hand for rescue, while the four sepoys levelled their weapons at his breast. At that moment the rest of the little detachment rushed in, and Wandiwash became ours. On the very day it was to have been surrendered to Hyder. Overawed by the resolute courage of this hardy young Briton, the nabob's garrison agreed to serve under his orders, and he at once took every means to defend it.

As a stratagem to induce surrender, Hyder collected all the wives and children of the garrison whom he had captured at a neighbouring village, and, surrounded by guards, drove them in a screaming and clamouring crowd towards the walls, preceded by a flag of truce, on the bearer of which Flint with his own hand levelled a gun. He fired; the flag vanished and the crowd dispersed. This was on the 30th of December, 1780. By the 16th of January in the following year, when the enemy were working their way by galleries into the ditch, Flint repulsed them by a sortie; after which, and on hearing tidings of the fall of Carangoly, and the approach of Sir Eyre Coote, they abandoned the siege on the 24th, when Flint had expended his last cartridge.

After this, nearly six months elapsed before the army was enabled to act with brilliancy in the field, owing to the wretchedness of its equipment, and the defect of all commissariat.

After the affair of Wandiwash, Hyder had such a wholesome dread of the name of Coote, that it is said he was inclined to treat with him and retire by the Ghauts, when the sudden arrival of a French fleet gave him new courage, and compelled the British to change their line of march, and encamp on the heights above Pondicherry, from whence they could see the enemy's squadron at anchor in the roadstead. On the capture of Pondicherry the British commander had contented himself with the partial destruction of the fortifications, and putting into it a slender garrison, which had been withdrawn on this new invasion by Hyder. The French officers had given their parole, and the inhabitants had been permitted to continue their usual avocations; but now the temptation became too great, when they saw our people flying from the place in all directions, and ere the armament from France appeared, they had made our resident a prisoner, flown to arms, enlisted sepoys, and collected a store of provisions at a convenient distance from

Porto Novo. Coote, upon this, disarmed the inhabitants, and then marched to destroy their depôt.

Encouraged by the arrival of the French shipping, Hyder now descended to the coast, with the intention of protecting that depôt, and for this purpose moved on our right flank, with the intention of keeping open his communication with the fleet. On one occasion the two armies were so close to each other that the veteran Coote, with the spirit and agility of his earlier years, left his palanquin, mounted his horse, and spurred along the lines, telling the troops that the day had come for beating Hyder; but the latter did not accept his challenge to fight, as he began a rearward movement into the interior, dispirited by the disappearance of the French squadron, which, with the old hereditary dread of ours, sailed for the Isle of France on the 17th of February, 1781, on hearing of the approach of Admiral Sir Edward Hughes.

Coote was now incapable of following Hyder, as a dangerous sickness had broken out in his army, and the country had been so wasted by war that it was impossible to find forage for his cattle. Thus Hyder and Tippoo were enabled to penetrate into the rich and beautiful province of Tanjore and give all to fire and sword; after which the latter ventured to menace Wandiwash again; but the Mysore shipping suffered much at the hands of ours.

Thus, in the November of 1780, H.M.S. *Sartine* (twenty-eight guns), in company with two armed Bombay snows, being off Mangalore, discovered two of Hyder's ships close under the lee of the land. The boats were manned and armed, and the Mysoreans attacked. One was cut out triumphantly, and the other driven on shore; but during this service the *Sartine* grounded on some rocks, was bilged, and had to be abandoned. Soon after, Sir Edward Hughes, K.B., being off the same port with the squadron, consisting of eleven sail (seven of which were of the line), discovered several of Hyder's ships at anchor in the roads. As the water shoaled too much for our shipping to attack them, the boats were piped away to do so, under the guns of the two Bombay snows. Amid a heavy fire from the enemy's cannon the boats were steadily and fleetly rowed in, and with hearty cheers the enemy's ships, to the number of five, were boarded and taken. Three, carrying respectively twenty-eight, twenty-six, and twelve guns, were burned; one, of ten, was taken; another, of ten, was driven on shore and destroyed; while a sixth escaped by throwing her artillery overboard. But in this service we had sixty-two of all ranks killed and wounded.*

The admiral, having thus destroyed the infant

navy of Mysore, then bore away for Bombay to refit; but the middle of June saw him at Madras with reinforcements from the former presidency.

On the 16th of that month, Sir Eyre Coote began to move westward, and two days after he crossed the Velaour, a river which, after traversing the Carnatic, falls into the Bay of Bengal. His object was to attempt the capture of the fortified pagoda of Chillambaram, a magnificent edifice, a miracle of grotesque and elaborate carving, dedicated to the worship of Siva, one of the triad of the triple Hindu divinity. The details and carvings of this stately pagoda remind one of the lines of Dante in the "Inferno:"—

"How strange the sculpture that adorns these towers!
This crowd of statues, in whose folded sleeves
Birds build their nests; while canopied with leaves
Parvis and portal bloom like trellis'd bowers,
And the vast minster seems a cross of flowers."

And amid its marvellous carvings, as in those of all similar edifices throughout the East, the pagoda thrush, esteemed among the finest choristers of India, has its home. "It sits perched on the sacred pagodas, and from thence delivers its melodious song."*

This edifice Hyder had greatly strengthened, thinking thereby to arrest the southward progress of the British, and keep it as a depôt for himself and the French. Sir Eyre Coote, on being falsely informed that its holders were only a small force of irregulars, thought to capture it by a sudden night attack; and for this purpose marched at dusk with four battalions of sepoy and eight guns. The town around the pagoda was speedily entered, and the assailants were pushing on with spirit into the heart of the place, when suddenly the garrison, which consisted in reality of 3,000 well-trained men, under a resolute officer, opened a dreadful fire upon them; and having, in addition to the usual means of defence, provided enormous bundles of straw saturated with oil and other combustible ingredients, on a sudden they converted the whole place through which the stormers would have to pass, into a mass of roaring flame, from which the sepoy recoiled in a panic, so the attempt was abandoned.

Recrossing the river, Coote now encamped at Porto Novo, near its confluence with the sea, when Hughes arrived to announce that Lord Macartney had been appointed Governor of Madras, and that he—the admiral—was under orders to attack the Dutch at Negapatam; but prior to doing so, Sir Eyre suggested another attack upon Chillambaram, by the united land and sea forces.

* Schomberg.

* Pennant's "Hindustan."

CHAPTER XLIV.

THE BATTLE OF PORTO NOVO.—ARRIVAL OF COLONEL PEARSE'S COLUMN.—BATTLES OF POLLILORE AND SHOLINGUR.—STATE OF VELLORE.

BEFORE steps could be taken for that purpose, Hyder took post but a few miles distant, with his whole army. In the south he had previously been amassing an enormous amount of plunder, in money, merchandise, men, women, and cattle. The people consisted of artisans and their families, whom he captured to occupy the isle of Seringapatam; boys were seized for forced conversion to Islam, and girls to fill zenanas and become the mothers of military slaves. After Hyder heard of the failure on the pagoda of Chillambaram, he actually marched 100 miles in two days and a half, and having placed himself between Sir Eyre Coote and Cuddalore, began to entrench with all the skill his French officers could exert.

By this means he baffled the intended movement on the pagoda, and covered his own designs upon Cuddalore, thus making matters so critical for Sir Eyre Coote that the latter summoned a council of war, being in doubt whether he could advance either to Trichinopoly or Tanjore. The resolutions of the council were, that the attack on the pagoda of Chillambaram be abandoned, and that an attempt be made to turn the enemy's flank, force his position, or to bring on a general engagement; and that for this purpose four days' rice, borne by a fatigue party, should be brought from the fleet into camp.

Hence ensued the conflict which was known as the battle of Porto Novo, where by seven o'clock on the morning of the 1st of July, the British quitted their encampment and got under arms, with their right flank towards the sea.

When we first became acquainted with the scene of this brilliant victory about to be narrated, it was in the possession of the Mahrattas, and in 1684 we obtained permission from Sambagi to carry on a free trade at Porto Novo, where the Dutch and French subsequently erected factories, near the mouth of the Velaur, which boats can enter without fear of the surf which rolls so heavily along the coast of Coromandel.

"As generally happens in Indian warfare," says General Stewart, "there was, at Porto Novo, a great disproportion between the force of the enemy and that of the British. Hyder, at the head of an army of 25 battalions of infantry, 400 Europeans, from 40,000 to 50,000 horse, and above 100,000 match-lock men, peons and polygars, with forty-seven

pieces of cannon, was attacked by General Coote, whose force did not exceed 8,000, of which the 73rd Highlanders was the only British regiment."

The road to Cuddalore, which was held by the army of Hyder, lay N.N.W. of the British position, and on its left was the termination of a lagoon. Great bodies of Mysore cavalry, with the latter in rear of their right and centre, covered the plain; while Hyder's more select horse, with a park of light guns, were drawn up beyond the lagoon.

With his baggage and camp-followers under a strong guard moving between his right and the sea, Sir Eyre Coote advanced in two lines, the first led by Major-General Sir Hector Munro, and the second by Major-General James Stewart. A mile and a half of marching, in front of Porto Novo, across a level plain, brought them in sight of the enemy, whose position was clearly defined. It extended right across the Cuddalore road, on commanding ground that ran to some sand-hills near the shore, and was strengthened by front and flanking redoubts and batteries. When the lines halted, an hour was spent in careful reconnoitring, during which the enemy maintained an incessant cannonade; to this not a shot was returned; but at nine in the morning Sir Eyre gave orders to wheel, with "left shoulders forward," into open column of battalions, and take ground to the right, eastward of the sand-hills. The latter run parallel to the coast, and are about 1,100 yards from the sea; they thus completely covered the movement. On reaching a gap in the sand-hill range, the first line, still in columns, pushed through and rapidly deployed to the front in order of battle, with its face to the west and its rear to the sea, occupying a height in the movement. Under a heavy cannonade the troops waited with great impatience until the height was planted with artillery by the second line, now forming up to the front; Sir Eyre moved on with the first, his right under cover of a long and dense hedge, and his left protected by guns and a battalion in column.

In the meanwhile Hyder had removed the guns from his redoubts to a line at right angles with these works to enfilade the advancing lines by a furious cannonade, and then he made an attempt, by a general charge of his cavalry, to overwhelm them. This failed, and amid terrible carnage, in which fell Kurreem Sahib, the enemy's line was

broken, and a precipitate retreat began. The only European regiment—the 73rd Highlanders—was on the right of the first line, and led all the attacks, “to the full approbation of General Coote, whose notice was particularly attracted by one of the pipers, who always blew his most warlike sounds whenever the fire became hotter than ordinary. This so pleased the general that he cried aloud, ‘Well done, my brave fellow! You shall have a silver set of pipes for this.’ The promise was not forgotten, and a handsome set of pipes was presented to the regiment in testimony of the general’s esteem for its conduct and character.”*

Meanwhile a strong body of Mysorean infantry, with their guns, supported by a cloud of glittering cavalry in rich flowing dresses, with brilliant appointments, attempted to fall on Coote’s rear. Facing about, the second line met this attack with the greatest bravery, and a close and severe contest ensued, in which the enemy were completely foiled, and by sheer dint of the bayonet, were driven—horse, foot, and guns—over all the heights, and were completely frustrated in an attempt to gain the position they had first occupied.

At the time the cavalry charge was made on our first line, a similar attack was to have been made on the second; but the horse detailed for this service lost heart, and gave way on the fall of their commander, who was killed by a cannon-ball from a Company’s schooner, which opened an effective flank fire from the sea. Hyder viewed all these operations from a gentle eminence in rear of his position, where he sat cross-legged on a stool covered by a rich carpet; and though the near approach of our first line compelled him to withdraw his guns and then his columns, he seemed to have no thought of his own safety, till a favourite groom—an old and privileged servant—ventured a hint on the subject; but he received it with a torrent of obscene abuse, while a fit of madness seemed to seize him, and he raved, blasphemed, and rent his garments. Then he became stupefied with vexation, on which the old groom put on his slippers, saying, “We shall beat them to-morrow; meanwhile, mount your horse.”

Once in his saddle, he was soon out of the field, and fled with all his cavalry—crestfallen, yet full of savage spirit—to Arcot, from whence he sent instructions to Tippoo to abandon the investment of Wandiwash, which he had resumed with thirteen siege guns, and where the gallant Flint, now a captain, had completely foiled him in an attempt at an *escalade*. Coote—who had not sufficient dragoon force wherewith to pursue, halted on the

ground he had won—lost in this great victory only 306 in killed and wounded, while the total loss of Hyder was estimated at 1,000 men. In the unavailing bitterness of his heart he exclaimed, “The defeat of many Baillies will not destroy these accursed Feringhees. I may ruin their resources by land, *but I cannot dry up the sea.*”

The moral effect of this victory on our troops was great; before it they had been somewhat despondent; now they were full of confidence and ardour. But their resources were no way improved by it, as Coote could not follow it up at once, owing to the deficiency of food and equipage.

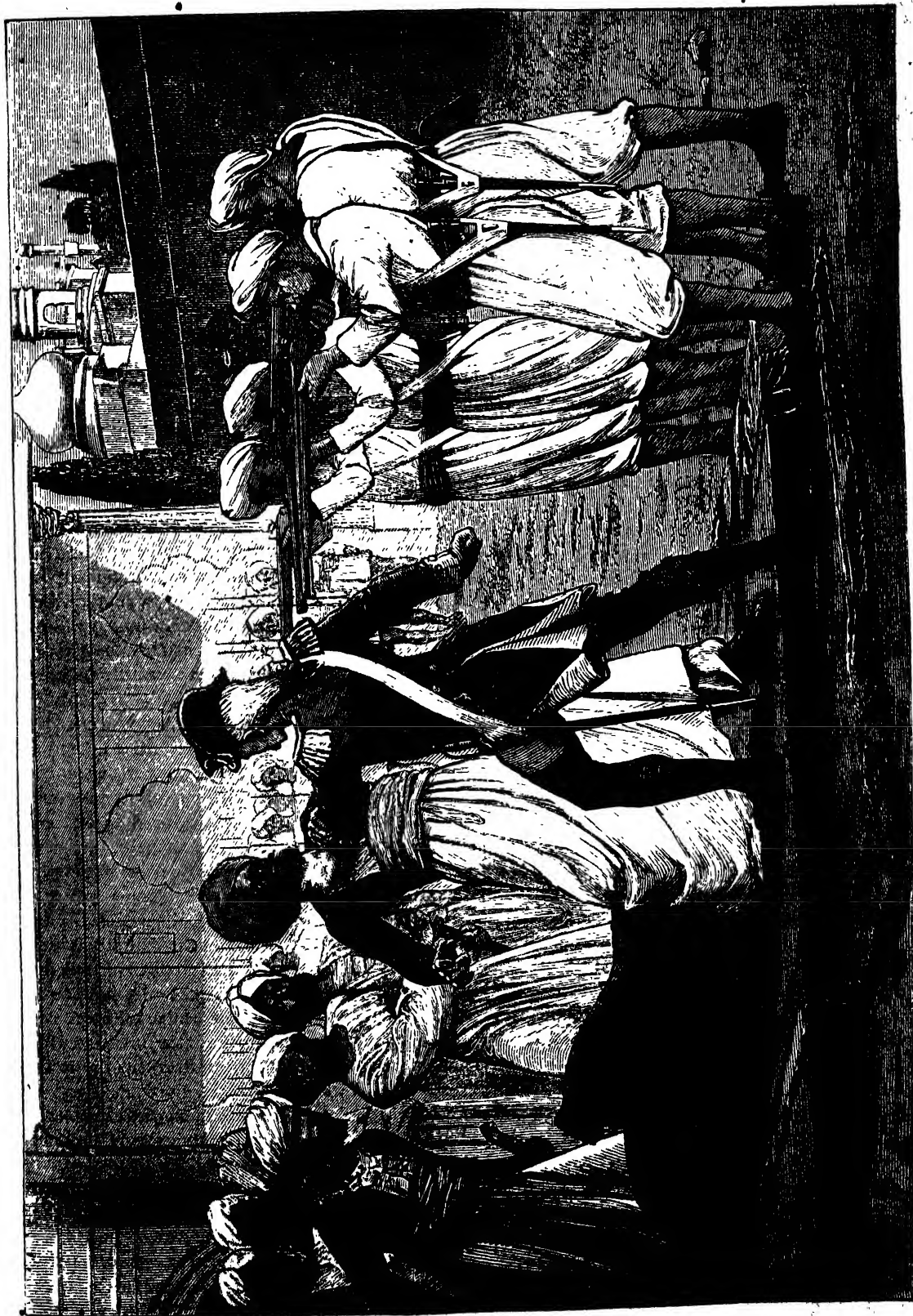
While these operations were in progress, the column from Bengal, pushing on through the territories of the Rajah of Berar, had reached the grain-growing district of Nellore, about 100 miles north of Madras, and for the purpose of facilitating a junction with it and covering Wandiwash, Sir Eyre Coote marched in a northerly direction, keeping near the coast to draw supplies from the shipping, and daily expecting another action; but Hyder now began to move to the westward. When Coote reached Carangoly, on the 21st of July, he first learned that the blockade of Wandiwash had been abandoned, and that Tippoo, in high hope to repeat the catastrophe that had befallen Colonel Baillie, was hastening to intercept Colonel Pearse’s column from Bengal; and to frustrate this idea, Coote, with the experience of Munro’s blunder before him, marched by Chingleput to Mount St. Thomas.

By this time Colonel Pearse had reached the town and large square fortress of Pulicat, which we had recently, without loss of blood, taken from the Dutch, who established a factory there in 1609. Tippoo had beset the ordinary road to Madras by an ambush and other obstructions, but forgot that there was another route between Lake Pulicat and the sea, towards which it runs northward of the town for forty-eight miles; and by this way Colonel Pearse marched unmolested. But twenty-four more miles remained to St. Thomas, and by making two marches north, Sir Eyre effected a junction with Pearse, thus adding nearly a third to his numerical strength.

The colonel was greatly commended for the mode in which he had brought his men on their long march; and in one of the last general orders Hastings issued to the army of Bengal, when five years afterwards Goddard’s corps returned, he said truly, “There are no difficulties which the true spirit of military enterprise is not capable of surmounting.”

Thus reinforced, Sir Eyre turned his attention,

* General Stewart, vol. ii.



THE MARCH OF PEARSE.

to Tripassore, a strong fort which stands about thirty miles westward of Madras, covering one of the roads to Arcot, and this place, in view of Hyder's army, he took by unconditional capitulation on the 22nd of August. Hyder now drew off to his old camp at Mooserwauke, where—while cursing French counsels and interests—he began to gather heart enough to risk a battle in defence of Arcot, the siege of which he knew would be one of the chief objects of the campaign.

So, near his camp he chose his own battleground—the scene of Baillie's disaster—which he deemed fortunate, and resolved to fight on the eleventh day of the Feast of Ramazan; and he selected his position, after ascertaining all its strategic advantages, and in his choice he was confirmed by his magicians and astrologers, "whose prognostics promised success on any day of the month; but more especially on the eleventh."

"Both armies," says the gallant historian of the Highland regiments, "were animated by very different motives; the Mysorean army by their superstitious anticipation of success, and the British by a desire to revenge the death of their friends, of whom they found many melancholy relics and marks of remembrance on the ground where they now stood." These were the unburied bones of Colonel Baillie's unfortunate men.

Among these grim remains our advanced guard halted at nine o'clock in the morning of the 27th August. South-westward of this fatal spot large columns of the Mysore horse had been seen hovering for some time, but now the whole army of Hyder was found in full force in front and on both flanks, drawn up on strong ground intersected by rough ravines and deep watercourses.

Sir Eyre's troops formed in line of battle under a dreadful cannonade, endured with coolness and courage; and now began an action, which lasted for eight hours, yet the details of which are amazingly meagre, though our troops in the field mustered 11,000 men, and those of Mysore 80,000 of all arms. Hyder knew every foot of the ground, and left nothing undone to strengthen it. By a vigorous flank movement Sir Eyre succeeded in seizing and holding the village of Pollilore (which gave its name to the conflict), and thus hurled back the enemy's left by his first line, and his right by the second, compelled him to retreat, just as the sun was setting, and to encamp on the ground he had quitted, at Mooserwauke, a fact which renders our victory somewhat dubious, and certainly nugatory. The rough nature of the ground, and the great cover it afforded to skirmishers, caused our loss to be only 421 killed, wounded, and missing; while that

of Hyder was about 2,000. General Stewart and Colonel Brown lost each a leg by the same cannonball. Our losses, it has been said, would have been less, but for some jealousies exhibited by certain officers.

The British troops now became greatly distressed by the want of provisions—they possessed nothing but their arms and ammunition. Disgusted with a state of matters that bade fair to injure their reputation, General Munro and Sir Eyre went to Madras with the resolution to resign; but the latter was persuaded by Lord Macartney to resume the command, and try the result of one more battle.

In the fort of Poloor he deposited his siege guns and everything that might impede swift and active movements. This was on the night of the 26th of September, and Hyder feeling confident, from the wild and tempestuous state of the weather, that the drenched camp and starved cattle of the British would prevent them moving, sent his own cattle some miles away to pasture, and allowed the drivers and many of his troops to scatter in search of food.

Early on the morning of the 27th, Sir Eyre rode out to reconnoitre the camp of Hyder near the hill of Sholingur, which he was fortifying for the purpose of preventing any attempt to relieve Vellore, which Colonel Lang, whose garrison was starving, was on the verge of surrendering. On gaining the crest of an eminence, Sir Eyre perceived at a little distance a long ridge of rocks manned by the troops of Mysore, and he sent forward a brigade to dislodge them. In doing so and surmounting the ridge, the brigade saw the whole army of Hyder at the distance of only three miles. The bugles were sounded, the troops got under arms with all haste, and a very short time sufficed to bring them face to face with Hyder's main body, at the very time his camp-followers had begun to strike the tents.

The tyrant of Mysore was completely taken by surprise: his cattle were far in the rear, and many stragglers were absent from the colours; yet he gave all his orders with prudence and judgment, intending only to act on the defensive till his forces recovered their confusion, and the sound of the cannon should recall all absentees. On the other hand, Sir Eyre Coote was resolved that not a moment should be lost in coming to blows, and after a few rapidly-executed arrangements, ordered a general advance of the whole line.

Formed in two great columns, the Mysorean cavalry, by repeated charges, strove to impede the advance of our people, who poured into them biting and searching showers of grape and musketry. These charges availed Hyder only so far that they gave him time to get out of the field all his guns,

save one field-piece. After this, his whole troops gave way; and with the loss of 100 men the victory was ours. On the field lay 5,000 of the enemy killed and wounded, with three cavalry standards; but these and the glory of the battle, Sir Eyre Coote says in his despatch, he would gladly have exchanged for seven days' food for his famishing troops.

He now dispatched, under a Colonel Owen, five battalions with some guns, and two companies of Europeans, towards Vellore, with orders to intercept some of those convoys of grain which often came to Hyder down the Damaracherla Pass. The Mysoreans soon came in sight of this small force, to the support of which Sir Eyre was hastening, when by some of our irregular horse, whom he met in full flight, he was informed that Owen's column had been cut to pieces. He still pushed on, discrediting such a terrible result, and was soon relieved by a despatch from the colonel, intimating that he was quite safe and in a strong position, after repulsing Hyder in a sharp conflict.

The garrison of Vellore, a fortress on the right bank of the Paliar, fifteen miles distant from Arcot, and deemed one of the keys of the Carnatic, was now in a state of desperation. Scarcely a meal of rice was in store, and the troops had been precariously subsisting on grain obtained in remote villages, and brought in by stealth, when the nights were dark and stormy. The season of bright moonlight that was approaching now, would render this resource impossible, and Colonel Lang and Sir Eyre were aware that but two alternatives remained—to throw in supplies, or enable the garrison to escape. Having obtained a little supply of rice from the Polygars of Calastry, Sir Eyre determined on the former plan, and made three forced marches from the hills, while Hyder, dreading another battle, retired beyond the Paliar; thus Lang's garrison obtained supplies adequate to six weeks' provision, or thereabouts.

And now for his own bare subsistence, Sir Eyre fell back upon the Pollams, a district of which Chittore (or Chittoor) is the capital, twenty miles distant from Vellore. As this place was alleged to be the halting-place for convoys of provisions sent to Hyder through the Damaracherla Pass, Sir Eyre, at the head of his starving soldiers, resolved to capture it, in the hope to find food, though one of the most important forts in Hindostan—at least

in the province of Rajpootana. The town is still "what would be called in England a tolerably large market town, with a good many pagodas, and a meanly built but busy bazaar." *

Above this rose the fortress on a high rock, scarp'd by art all round the summit to the height of 100 feet, and surmounted by a wall patched and strengthened at several periods, for the Mohammedans captured Chittoor in 1303; it was long besieged by Ackbar, and stormed by Aurungzebe in 1680; and now it was taken by Coote after a four days' siege; but bitter was the disappointment of his hungry soldiers.

No grain was found; the monsoon was at hand, and a retreat was unavoidable to Tripassore, where the troops arrived on the 22nd November, after forced marches through a literal inundation. It was a dreadful time for our poor soldiers. So scant was the food, that each day half the army went without it in succession; and the camp-followers perished in uncounted numbers amid the swamps through which the route lay, after the monsoon burst. Cattle perished too; stores were abandoned, and Mohammed Ali's horse, originally numbering 680 sabres, were decimated, like the rest, by famine or drowning. Southwards from Tripassore the shattered army continued its weary march, till it reached its cantonments near Madras; and thus ended the campaign of 1781 with Hyder—a campaign which, though full of triumph, was also full of misery and of death.

Lord Macartney, that truly great man, when he arrived at Madras on the 22nd of June of that year, brought the first intelligence of the war between Britain and Holland, and thus his first object now was to make himself master of all the Dutch factories and settlements along the coast. Sir Hector Munro who, after the battle of Pollilore had proceeded to Madras with the view of returning home to Scotland (offended, some say, by a blunt response made to a remark to Sir Eyre Coote), but who was still fit for duty, was now persuaded by Lord Macartney to undertake the direction of the siege of Negapatam.

On the 10th of April, 1782, *La Fine*, one of Suffren's squadron, took a Trincomalee vessel, on board of which was "the Sieur Boyd (a Scotsman), whom Lord Macartney was sending as ambassador to the King of Candy." †

* Heber.

† *Gazette de France*, Jan., 1783.

CHAPTER XLV.

NEGAPATAM AND TRINCOMALEE CAPTURED.—VELLORE RELIEVED.—DESTRUCTION OF BRAITHWAITE'S TROOPS.—OPERATIONS IN MALABAR.

NEGAPATAM, which signifies the "city of the serpents," as the district abounds with those reptiles, which the natives deemed holy, and an inexpiable crime to destroy, is a considerable seaport town in Tanjore, and was the capital of the Dutch possessions in India. It was well fortified, with a regular citadel of a pentagonal form, having wet ditches. On the north of this lies the town, beyond which towers a gigantic pagoda, which, tradition asserts, was built by the devil in a single night; but thereon now flies the British flag, which may be discerned by the telescope, at the distance of seven leagues at sea. Negapatam was taken in 1660 from the Portuguese by the Dutch, in whose hands it soon became a flourishing city, and such it was when our armament appeared before it in 1781.

On the 20th of October Sir Edward Hughes arrived at Nagore, a few miles north of Negapatam, with the fleet consisting of eight sail, five being of the line, and carrying in all 392 guns; his own flag being on board the *Superb* (seventy-four).

Sir Hector Munro was already before it with 4,000 men, blocking up a garrison consisting of 8,000 men, about 500 of whom were Europeans, 700 were Malays, 4,500 sepoy, and 2,300 cavalry of Hyder Ali.

After driving the Dutch out of Nagore, the marines and troops, with a battalion of seamen, were landed to reinforce Sir Hector Munro, while the heavy artillery was brought on shore by Captain Ball, of the *Superb*, through a dreadful surf that was boiling snow-white along the beach, occasioning incredible fatigue to the seamen, who exhibited a spirit and perseverance equal to the occasion. On the night of the 29th some strong lines, flanked by redoubts, which had been thrown up to defend the approach to the town, were stormed brilliantly by the troops, seamen, and marines. On the 5th of November the admiral brought the squadron nearer to the citadel, on the flank of the captured lines, and a strong battery, armed with eighteen-pounders, was ready by the 7th, to open within 300 yards of the walls, when the admiral and Sir Hector summoned the governor to surrender; but he replied, "That, being obliged by his honour and oath to defend the place, he could not enter into any agreement for its capitulation; but should defend it to the last."

The siege was now pressed with greater vigour than ever; thus, by the 10th, the governor, seeing the futility of further defence, substituted a white flag for that of Holland; the terms asked were acceded to, and the city was delivered up to his Majesty's arms. Our precise loss is not exactly given; but that of the squadron was twenty seamen and marines killed, and fifty-eight wounded. Most of the latter died of fatigue. Immediately after this success, the setting in of the monsoon causing danger to the fleet, the naval brigade was re-embarked, and the squadron sailed for Ceylon, where it captured Trincomalee, on the 11th of January, 1782. Eventually, the appearance of five of the Company's ships, which had been at Bencoolen, off Penang, "alarmed the Dutch governor to such a degree, that he instantly surrendered that place, and gave directions for all the other Dutch settlements on the coast to be delivered up to the British."*

For more than a hundred years the Dutch had most jealously guarded all access to the island of Ceylon, for they highly valued Trincomalee, as one of the most important towns and ports in India, and the most secure place of refuge for ships when surprised by the storms and tempests peculiar to those seas. It was the great depôt, too, of the sugar-cane, of cinnamon, and of valuable pearls. The resistance it made to our arms was most feeble, and the value of the conquest was great.†

Though Sir Eyre Coote still persisted in his intention of resigning, and was suffering from delicate health, he determined to undertake the relief of Vellore, which was still besieged. Thus on the 2nd of January, 1782—the same day on which the fleet sailed from Negapatam—he rejoined the army then encamped near Tripassore. On the 6th he had a stroke of apoplexy, which rendered him senseless; yet on the following day this energetic and fine old soldier was so far recovered, as to admit of his being borne in a palanquin, and in that he went to the front, with the troops for Vellore. Three days after, when Hyder came in sight, he found that Coote had made such arrangements that an attack was hopeless, and he fell back; thus on the 11th, the day which the

* *Naval Chron.* † Barrow's "Life of Lord Macartney."

Commandant Lang declared was the last to which he could hold out—the fortress was victualled anew for three months more, and Coote, with the army, returned to Tripassore.

While these events were in progress, Colonel Braithwaite, a brave officer, who, to assist at the siege of Negapatam, had sent all his available troops, under Colonel Nixon, and then returned to his command at Tanjore, fell into a calamity singularly like that which overtook Colonel Baillie at Perambaucam. On reaching Tanjore, he had in view the recovery of some of the strengths of that province, which the subtle Hyder and the fiery Tippoo had obtained by bribery rather than the sword; and by the same art Braithwaite became a victim. In February he was encamped on the left bank of the Cauvery, in a plain, one of those pieces of flat alluvial soil in Tanjore, where rice, coconuts, and indigo abound, but which at that season are usually swamps. He had with him only 100 British bayonets, 1,500 sepoys, and 300 native horse, when—having been deceived and misled by his guides and spies—he was suddenly attacked by Tippoo at the head of 20,000 Mysoreans, and 400 Frenchmen, under Colonel Lally. Of the former 10,000 were cavalry, with twenty pieces of cannon. Long, mad, and desperate was the conflict that ensued, and notwithstanding the awful odds, it was the French who actually decided the matter by rushing on the exhausted sepoys with the bayonet, as the struggle had lasted from sunrise to sunset.

A general massacre of all the survivors was prevented alone by the humanity and generosity of the French officers, who, in many instances, risked their own lives by stabbing and cutting down the savages of Tippoo, to save the wounded and defenceless British soldiers. The few survivors of this disastrous surprise—including Colonel Braithwaite—were cast into the dungeons of Seringapatam, where Captain Baird and the Highland prisoners of Baillie's detachment were still lingering in misery. It was the fortune of Colonel Lally to be present on both these fatal occasions, to seek to arrest the carnage and give succour to the helpless.

The regular light cavalry of Madras, latterly clad in French grey, with pale buff facings, and consisting of eight regiments, to which we shall have to refer at a later period, and which were the first arm we had of the kind in India, were originally raised by Mohammed Ali, the Nabob of the Carnatic. The first of these corps, the *rissalas*, or troops, of which formed one regiment under British officers, had served in the Mysore campaign in 1768; but though augmented during the subse-

quent ten years, the force fell away, eventually, in numbers and efficiency, and hence, perhaps, the many advantages that occurred to Hyder and Tippoo, by escaping a cutting up after defeat. Towards the close of the war we have now to narrate, these light cavalry were improved and increased, and by 1784, when the strife was ended, they were formally transferred, with all their European officers, from the service of the nabob to the more permanent establishment of the East India Company.

“From that moment all the mutinies among them, caused by the intrigues of a venal court and irregular payments, ceased, and for a period of more than sixty years (says a writer in 1853) their career has been one of faithful service and brilliant achievements. Among their brave soubahdars who live in the tradition of our native armies, and whose name and fame are preserved in the history of British India, Secunder Beg, Cawder Beg, and Sheik Ibrahim, were the most remarkable.”

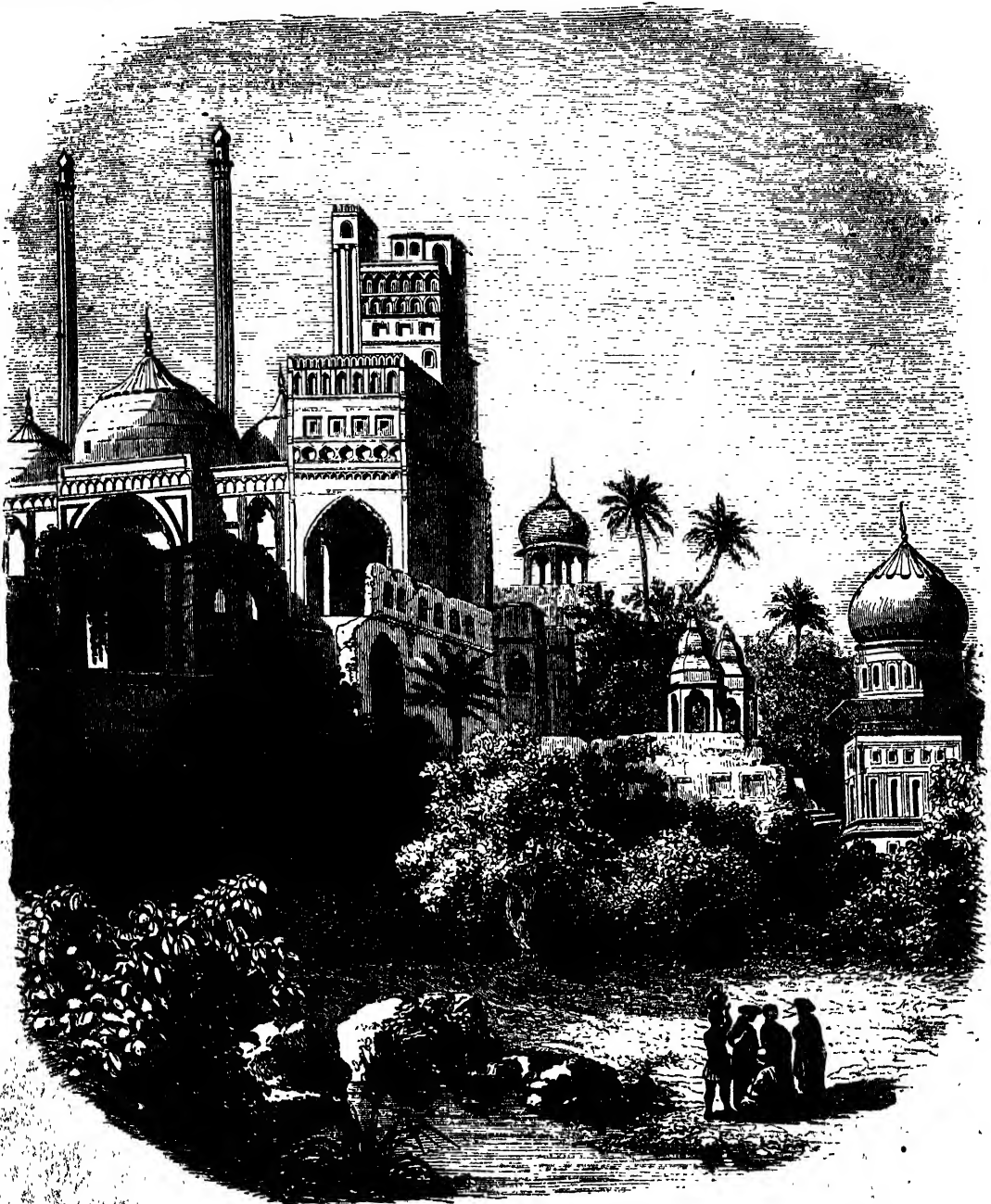
In detailing the disaster which befell Braithwaite's troops, we have omitted to mention the success of the Company's forces on the coast of Malabar, from whence, in the year 1780, Hyder had detached a column for the reduction of Tellicherry, the commerce of which, in sandal-wood, pepper, and spices, was then great. Though very imperfectly fortified and garrisoned, that place was enabled to make a long defence, and, by the arrival of reinforcements under Major Abingdon, to raise the siege—a brilliant achievement, which resulted in the capture of all the enemy's guns and baggage, with 1,200 Mysorean prisoners, including Sirdir Khan, their general.

It chanced that in the early part of the preceding year, an expedition under Major-General William Medows and Commodore Johnstone had sailed from Portsmouth, intended to attack the Cape of Good Hope. It consisted of twenty-six sail (exclusive of the Company's ships), five of which were of the line. The troops on board were the 2nd Battalion of the Black Watch (afterwards numbered as the 73rd Highlanders), the 98th and 100th Regiments, with one company of each of the following corps—namely, the 8th, 9th, 20th, and 47th Foot, and a party of the Royal Artillery under Lieutenant Hislop. On the way out, when at anchor in Port Praya Bay, the expedition was suddenly attacked by the French fleet under M. de Suffren, *en route* to reinforce Hyder. He was repulsed, but with the loss of 166 killed and wounded, including eleven officers of both services. The attack on the Cape was abandoned, as M. de Suffren was there before Commodore Johnstone,

who contented himself with the capture of a valuable convoy of Dutch East Indiamen in Saldanha Bay.

We cannot give to our readers a better idea of

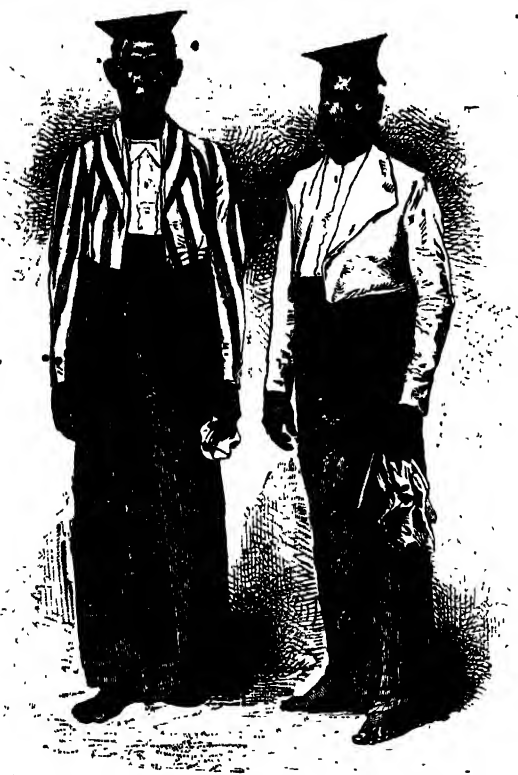
computed at less than 10,450,000 florins, exclusive of private property. To this, if we add the loss of our ships, viz., *Vrouw Catherine Guillelmine*, taken by



VIEW OF THE PALACE OF VELLORE.

the very heavy loss the Dutch brought upon themselves by their conduct, than by transcribing here their own statement of the matter. They therein express themselves in the following terms:—"By the taking of our settlements on the coast of Coromandel and other parts, our loss cannot be

surprise and unawares by the enemy on the first news of the rupture, and valued at five tons and a half of gold, and above; the *Herod, Waltemade*, from Ceylon, captured at the Cape of Good Hope, worth about nine tons of gold; the *Concorde*, sunk on its way from India, and valued at eight tons of



CINGALESE OF THE COAST

gold; the taking and destroying the ships in the Bay of Saldanha, estimated at sixty-three tons of gold; the *Dank Baerheid*, from Bengal, likewise captured in Saldanha Bay, worth, together with its cargo, at least fourteen tons and a half of gold; the *Croordbeck*, on its way to Europe, also taken, and valued at one ton of gold; finally, the ships *Groenendaal* and *Canaan*, captured in the Bay of Trincomalee, whose joint cargoes might be worth above five tons of gold; so that the loss in ships cannot be less than 103 tons of gold, or 10,300,000 florins; which, added to the loss sustained by the capture of our settlements, make together the excessive total of 26,750,000 florins!"*

Scurvy having attacked the troops, they were compelled to put into the Island of Joanna, one of the Comorro Group, on the east coast of Africa, where provisions were abundant; but on landing to refresh, the men caught a local fever, and many died of it; thus, by many delays, it was not until the 5th of March, 1782, that, after a twelve-month's voyage, the expedition reached Bombay, and on the following month sailed for Madras, after landing the troops, of whom 121 officers and men died at sea.

General Meadows having remained on board,

* *Pitt. Mag.*, 1783.

the actual command of the troops now devolved upon Colonel Mackenzie-Humberstone, of the 100th Regiment, who had raised that corps for the king's service, and belonged to the house of Seaforth, but assumed the name of Humberstone on succeeding to an estate so called in Lincolnshire. Under his orders, an expedition was now formed to attack the Malabar coast, but chiefly Palacatcherry, which was considered of importance to Hyder Ali. The troops consisted of 1,000 Europeans (formed of seven companies of the 42nd Highlanders, and some of the 100th Regiment), with 2,500 sepoys. Early in September, 1782, he took the field in the kingdom of Calicut, which had belonged to the Tamuri rajahs till it was invaded by Hyder in 1760. When Cheraman Permal resolved to end his days at Mecca, he divided the Malabar country among his nobles; but having nothing left to bestow on the ancestor of Tamuri, he gave that chief his sword, and all the territory in which the crow of a cock could be heard from a certain temple; and hence the name of the territory—*Calicuda*, or "the land of cock-crowing." Storming several forts in his march, Humberstone reached his destination on the 19th of October, when, on a full examination, the fort was found to be of greater strength than was supposed; at the same time intelligence came that Hyder's son, Tippoo, was marching with a large



WOMEN OF CEYLON.

force to its relief. Under all these circumstances a regular siege could not be undertaken, and an assault was not deemed advisable; so Colonel Humberstone fell back on Mangaracota, one of the forts he had taken; but the tidings of Tippoo's advance being confirmed, he blew it up, with another stronghold named Ramgaree, and retired to Paniany, a seaport closely pressed by the enemy, who were in great strength.

Lieutenant-Colonel Norman Macleod, of the Black Watch, having now arrived, assumed the command, but found himself surrounded by 10,000 cavalry and 14,000 infantry, including two corps of Europeans under the French general, Lally. By this time many casualties had reduced the Highlanders and the party of the 100th Foot to 380 bayonets, and only 2,200 of our sepoys and those of Travancore (with the king of which Humberstone had concluded a treaty) were fit for duty. Colonel Macleod began to strengthen by field-works his position at Paniany, a small place consisting still of about 500 edifices, forty of which are mosques and Hindoo temples; but ere they were finished, Tippoo and Lally were upon him, and he was attacked with great fury, on the morning of the 29th November, by the latter. Lally advanced with great spirit at the head of his two French battalions; but after a sharp conflict the enemy was repulsed, with the loss of 100 killed and 1,000 wounded.

The whole weight of Lally's attack was directed against the post held by the Highlanders, whose repeated charges with the bayonet chiefly won the day. "This little force, attacked on ground not

regularly fortified, by very superior numbers, were skilfully disposed and regularly led on. They had nothing to depend on but their native valour, their discipline, and the conduct of the officers. These were nobly exerted, and the event has been answerable. The intrepidity with which Major Campbell (who was wounded) repeatedly charged the enemy was most honourable to their character." * Our loss was eight officers, and eighty-eight soldiers, killed and wounded.

On the day after this victory, Sir Edward Hughes, on his voyage to Bombay, came in sight of Paniany, and on learning the state of affairs, offered to embark the whole troops, or leave Macleod a reinforcement of 450 Europeans. The colonel preferred the latter, and thus found himself able to muster 800 Europeans, 1,000 sepoys, and 1,200 peons of Travancore. Tippoo, after his defeat, retired a little way to await the arrival of his heavy equipments, and more troops from his father (whom these sudden operations in Malabar had filled with such alarm that he was forced to weaken his army in the Carnatic), that he might resume, with weight, his attack upon Paniany. But suddenly, on the morning of the 12th of December, the turbaned horsemen, armed with spear and shield, who had been daily watching the British position, had vanished from their posts; and then it became certain that the whole of Tippoo's troops were pushing eastward by forced marches towards Seringapatam.

Hyder Ali was dead, and Tippoo left Paniany and our troops unmolested, in his haste to ascend the musnud and secure the treasure.

CHAPTER. XLVI.

SEA-FIGHTS OFF PONDICHERRY AND CEYLON.—COMBAT OF ARNEE.—TRINCOMALEE.—DEATH OF HYDER ALI.

ARNEE his attack on Commodore Johnstone in Port Praya Bay. M. de Suffren, usually called the *Bailli de Suffren*, arrived at Porto Novo on the 10th of March, 1782, and landed a French force, consisting of 3,000 troops, mostly veterans, including a regiment of Africans, under M. Cossigny, who informed Hyder, then failing in health and spirit, that a larger force, under the famous Marquis de Bussy, might be expected, and that certain operations

were to be concerted in the interval, and among these was the proposed reduction of Cuddalore, as a depôt for the troops of France. Hyder and Tippoo were alike filled with joy by this intelligence; yet the strength of his friends somewhat alarmed the former, and he secretly resolved that he would never admit them in force into Mysore.

Suffren—André Pierre de Suffren de St. Tropez,

* General Orders, 1782.

whose portraits represent him to have been a stout and portly man, with queued hair and an amplitude of chin—had not left the Isle of France till about the time that Commodore Johnstone sailed from the Comorro Group (after which he was long becalmed, and carried by the changing monsoon to the coast of Arabia Felix); but more fortunate than his conqueror, he had reached the Coromandel coast early in January, 1782, having on his way made a capture of H.M.S. *Hannibal*, of fifty guns, Captain Alexander Christie. She had been cruising off the coast of Sumatra, and on the clearing up of a thick fog found herself in the very heart of Suffren's fleet; yet she was not taken without a desperate conflict. Her crew were given up as prisoners to Tippoo, who placed them among others of our sea service, some of whom he kept shut up in Chillambaram, where they were subjected to brutalities indescribable. Suffren's arrival at Madras was first made known by the grabs and gallivats of the coast flying before him; and some of these craft, laden with rice and other supplies for the famishing army of Sir Eyre Coote, were taken by his quick sailers.

Sir Edward Hughes, after leaving the small garrison in Trincomalee, was fortunate enough to reach Madras by the 8th of February, without encountering the superior squadron of Suffren; and, with equal good fortune, a part of Commodore Johnstone's squadron, which, on his long and protracted voyage, had been separated from the rest, ran past the French unseen, and joined Admiral Hughes on the 9th at Madras. This division, consisting of only three line-of-battle ships and some transports, must have been taken if discovered by Suffren; and the loss would have been most serious, as they had on board General Medows, the 98th Regiment, and the four companies of other corps already mentioned—about 1,200 men in all.

By this accession, Sir Edward Hughes found himself at the head of eleven sail, nine of which were of the line, his flag being on board the *Superb* (seventy-four). The squadron carried 620 guns, and 4,820 seamen and marines. To reinforce the latter, 300 men, duly officered, from the 98th Regiment, were put on board, and every possible exertion was made to get in all the requisite stores and provisions; but before these were complete, the enemy's fleet appeared on the 15th in the offing, about four miles outside the roads of Madras. The British ships were all foul and sorely damaged by long service, while those of France were newer and better found.

The fleet of M. de Suffren consisted of twenty-

six sail, including eleven line-of-battle ships (of which the *Hannibal*, now commanded by Beaumont Le Maître), was one, and six flutes and transports, one of which was named in honour of J. F. Law—*Le Lauriston*. There were on board 850 guns, and (irrespective of the transports) 6,681 seamen, together with 3,457 soldiers, drawn from the Regiments D'Austerie, L'Isle de France or 89th, La Légion de Lausanne, and other corps; thus the disparity in men and metal between the two squadrons was very great.

On the enemy coming in sight, Sir Edward Hughes immediately placed his ships, with springs upon their cables, in the position most suitable for the defence of the many transports and merchantmen that crowded the roadstead; but, instead of standing-in, Suffren bore away to the southward. Hughes now landed all his sick, weighed on the 16th, and put to sea, and the few British vessels that were clean and coppered came up with and captured six sail of the French convoy, including the *Lauriston*. She was deeply laden with all the munition of war, and had on board 300 men of the Regiment de Lausanne; she was taken by the Hon. Captain Lumley, of the *Isis* (fifty).

As Hughes had anticipated, Suffren bore round to protect his convoy; the two fleets were close to each other all night, and just as grey dawn on the 17th stole over the sea, and the lights in Pondicherry were dying out, the battle began. Suffren de St. Tropez had the double advantage of possessing the weather gage and a concentration of strength, for some of our ships had fallen away to leeward, though beating hard to come within range. Thus the brunt of the conflict was borne chiefly by five of our vessels, and two of these, the *Superb* (flag, seventy-four) and the *Exeter* (sixty-four), under Commodore King, were terribly mauled aloft, as the French fought their guns in the old fashion—to cripple and escape. The *Exeter* was reduced to a wreck, with all her top hamper hanging downward in a confused mass; thus, on two French ships bearing down upon her, the master inquired of the commodore what was to be done? "Done?" was the response; "fight her, till she sinks!"*

And sunk she must have been, but for the prompt assistance given to her by Captain Wood in the *Hero* (seventy-four). One account says, that during all this time "the van of the British lay almost becalmed, and could render no assistance to their friends, so the force of the action fell on five of the ships, the enemy got no further than the *Superb*." At six o'clock, a sudden squall gave us the advantage of the wind, and enabled Hughes to continue

* Ann. Reg., Schomberg.

the engagement with such spirit and strength, that, despite the storm of musketry from the troops, so destructive at close quarters, in twenty-five minutes the enemy hauled their wind, housed their guns, and stood away to the north-east for Porto Novo, under all the sail they could crowd, having evidently suffered severely. Some of our ships were so damaged by shot-holes below water that it was dangerous to carry much sail on them, and as it was impossible to plug these efficiently while afloat, the admiral bore away for Trincomalee to refit. In the battle the king lost two brave captains—Stephens of the *Superb*, and Reynolds of the *Exeter*. The squadron had thirty-two men killed, and ninety-five wounded.

Before returning to the progress of events ashore, we shall here narrate briefly another engagement between the rival admirals, which ensued as soon as they had completed their repairs. On the 8th of April, Sir Edward Hughes, with eleven sail of the line, returning from Madras, found himself almost within gunshot of Suffren's fleet, but he pursued his course towards the coast of Ceylon, having orders to victual and reinforce Trincomalee, and the French followed him closely. On the 11th he was fifteen leagues to windward of his destination, for which he bore away in the night. The morning of the 12th came gloomily in, and saw our squadron off a dangerous lee shore, along which the white surf was boiling angrily, while the French, who by our change of course had gained the wind, were coming along in all their strength, under a cloud of canvas, and the admiral was compelled to engage them at the greatest disadvantage.

By noon the roar of battle began, and by three o'clock it became general in both fleets, and on both sides masts and yards came crashing down, but more especially on board the *Monmouth* (sixty-four), which was mauled till she was towed, like a mere log, out of the line, with 147 killed or wounded men lying between her decks. The battle lasted till darkness fell, and, after all, it was a drawn one, for both fleets had suffered severely, and neither could claim a victory. Our loss was 137 killed and 430 wounded; that of the French somewhere about 600. For a week the fleets remained in sight of each other repairing their damages, which were too severe to permit a renewal of the conflict; and, after some manœuvres which seemed to indicate an intention of doing so, Suffren bore away along the coast to the Dutch settlement of Batavia, while Hughes ran into Trincomalee.

A few days after this event, the French troops, now under the Marquis de Bussy, united with the army of Hyder, and captured—in accordance with

the plans announced by Colonel Cossigny—the seaport of Cuddalore, which, though important as to position, was a weak place, and garrisoned by only 400 sepoys, and five European gunners. Thus, in absence of both fleets, the French achieved that which they so much wished—a convenient depôt.

From thence the marquis and the Mysorean army advanced against Wandiwash, still held by Captain Flint; and Coote, though still suffering from his recent stroke of apoplexy, advancing rapidly to the relief of that place, encamped on the same ground whereon he had defeated Count Lally and the marquis twenty-two years before; but neither he nor Bussy were the men they had been in the wars of 1760. Yet the prestige of old Sir Eyre was still great, and instead of accepting the battle he offered, notwithstanding their vast numerical superiority, Bussy and Hyder drew off towards Pondicherry.

Sir Eyre Coote then threatened the town of Arnee (fourteen miles south-west of Arcot), in the strong fort of which Hyder had deposited a great store of general plunder and provisions, hence he lost no time in advancing to its relief. Thus, at eight o'clock a.m. on the 2nd of June, when Sir Eyre was preparing to encamp near it, a heavy but distant cannonade was suddenly opened on his front and rear. There now ensued a series of brilliant manœuvres, for the double purpose of grappling with the enemy and covering the baggage, (always an object of solicitude to the enemy's horse), and these produced a desultory combat (rather than a battle) which only ended a little before darkness fell, with a capture from the enemy of one piece of cannon, and eleven tumbrils. Had Coote possessed cavalry, he might have taken all the Mysorean guns; but as usual he had no means for following up the victory—not even food. To reduce Arnee by fraud or force seemed hopeless now, so Sir Eyre on the 4th moved again to the front; but Hyder, while declining an encounter, succeeded, by an ambuscade, in cutting off 166 British soldiers, and capturing fifty-four horses with two guns. After this, so much sickness prevailed among his troops, that Sir Eyre was compelled to fall back to the vicinity of Madras.

While Hyder's attention had been fully occupied by the affair of Arnee, Lord Macartney devised a scheme to succour Vellore, which was again in great straits. Accordingly he prepared a train of 500 bullocks, 24 carts, and 2,000 coolies laden with provisions, escorted by 200 sepoys under a young ensign. The latter was joined ~~en route~~ by 1,500 Polygars, and succeeded in achieving the duty

assigned to him. But in returning from Vellore he and his escort were attacked by Hyder, and compelled to surrender at discretion. So, by sea and land alike, the war was now to be waged in the Carnatic, for much of the success on shore depended upon the operations of the fleets by sea. The French admiral was most anxious to gain possession of Negapatam, which he deemed a better basis than Cuddalore on the Pennar for the future operations of his countrymen, and seized the first opportunity to appear before it, a movement which at once brought stout old Sir Edward Hughes out of Madras. In the battle that ensued the fleets were nearly of equal strength. It was fought on the 6th of July, 1782; the conflict, though most severe, was again indecisive, yet the losses were great. On our side were 77 killed, and 223 wounded. Among the former were Captains Maclellan of the *Superb*, and Jenkinson, of the 98th Regiment, two officers of remarkable bravery. Of the enemy there fell 779 killed and wounded. They relinquished all further designs against Negapatam, which the Madras Government, by a very singular policy, without consulting Sir Eyre on the subject, ordered to be demolished.

Sir Edward Hughes—a most indefatigable officer—now made preparations once more to revictual Trincomalee, a movement in which he was anticipated by Suffren. Appointing a rendezvous off the coast of Ceylon, where another squadron joined him with eight transports full of troops, the latter made a dash into the harbour, landed 2,400 men, and pushed the attack by sea and land with such vigour as to compel Captain Macdonald and some of the 42nd Highlanders to make a speedy surrender; thus, when Sir Edward Hughes came off the town soon after, he saw, to his astonishment and mortification, the white standard of Bourbon flying on the ramparts and in the roads.

While Hyder was hearing the bitter tidings that before Colonels Humberstone and Macleod's troops his affairs were going to wreck in Malabar, he was thrown into still greater dismay on hearing of Warren Hastings' successful policy in concluding a treaty between the British and the Mahrattas, so that now he expected to have upon him all the strength of that warlike race, who, on more than one bloody occasion, had proved more than a match even for him. He became filled with perplexity, and suspicion, even of his friends.

"I must march alone," said he, "against these faithless Mahrattas, who will be invading Mysore, into which I dare not admit the French in force."

Worn and shaken by anxiety, his health had long been declining now, and after the stirring, cruel,

and sanguinary life he had led, it was natural that he should be haunted by constant dread of murder and conspiracy. Once, when asked by his best friend, Gholam Ali, why he started and muttered so much in his sleep, "My friend," said he, bitterly, "the state of beggars is more delightful than my envied monarchy, for they see no conspirators when awake, and dream not of assassins when asleep."

He had begun to think seriously of returning into Mysore, but permitted himself to be persuaded by the marquis that the strife in the Carnatic was far from hopeless, and that means might yet be taken to baffle the policy of Hastings, and lure back the Mahrattas to a closer alliance, if not to neutrality; and, guided thus, while the wily old Mysorean amused Sir Eyre Coote and kept him inactive by the intimation that he might accede to the Governor-General's treaty with the Mahrattas, and even become a party to it, he was secretly preparing with all his strength to co-operate with the marquis in the capture of Negapatam. And now came tidings of another battle between the fleets of Suffren and Hughes, in which, though the former was defeated, he left the latter so crippled that little was won by the victory.

It occurred off Trincomalee, on the 3rd of September, the day after Hughes had arrived only in time to find the place in the enemy's hands.

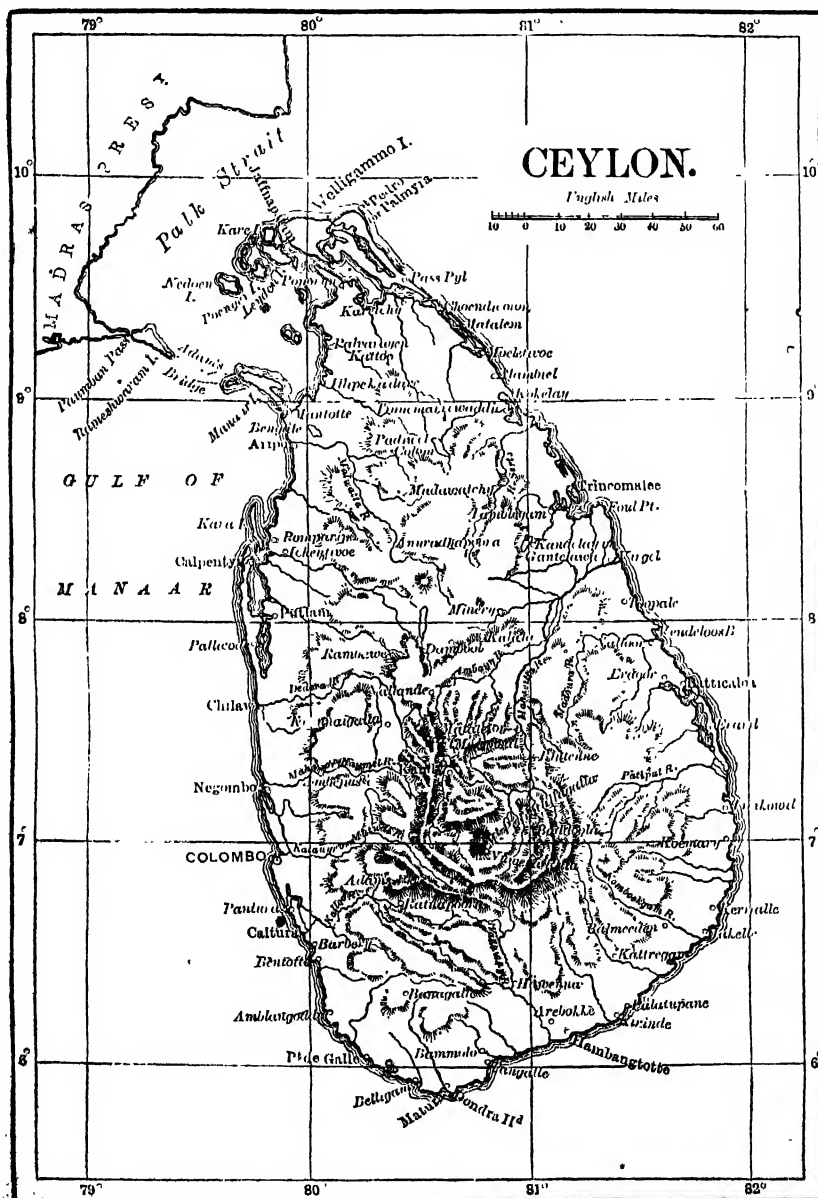
Proud of his recent success, and preferring to fight with plenty of sea-room, Suffren came confidently out of the roadstead at the head of nineteen sail, of which four were seventy-fours, eight were sixty-fours, three were fifties, and the rest frigates. Hughes had seventeen sail, of which twelve were of the line, and the battle that now ensued was the most desperate that had yet been fought. For four hours the centres of the two lines were fiercely and furiously engaged, though there was a little lull in the booming of the cannon and rattle of the small arms about half-past five in the afternoon. Then Hughes wore round with all his fleet, and renewed the attack with double advantage and energy. The mainmast of *L'Heros* (seventy-four), Suffren's ship, and next his mizen-mast, with all the small-arm men in their tops, went crashing over by the board.

The *Worcester* (sixty-four), about the same time lost her maintop-mast, and at seven the main body of the French fleet hauled their wind, and for twenty minutes became exposed to a most severe fire of every kind from ours, when the battle ceased, and the enemy bore away. Our loss was 51 killed, and 283 wounded. Among the former were Captains Watt of the *Sultan* (seventy-four), Wood of the

Worcester, and Lumley of the *Isis*; and among the latter were some officers of the 78th Highlanders, and the 98th Regiment, which were serving on board as marines. The French squadron returned to Trincomalee on the night of the action, and so

the wounded, 676.* *L'Héros*, the flag-ship, had on board at the commencement of the action 1,200 men, of whom 380 were killed and wounded.

The monsoon was fast approaching; thus Sir Edward Hughes, on his return to Madras, gave his



MAP OF CEYLON.

great was their haste, lest they should be pursued, that *L'Orient*, Captain Pallière, ran ashore in the dark, and was totally lost.

De Suffren was so dissatisfied with some of his captains that he sent six of them to the Mauritius under arrest, and the loss he sustained was never published, the slaughter having been unusually great. The slain are said to have been 412, and

line-of-battle ships such repairs as enabled them to proceed to Bombay, where it was his intention to have them all coppered. "It is said that shelter might have been found for him nearer at hand, on the Coromandel coast, but it is not so clear that Hughes could have found there the accommodation, materials, and workmen he wanted, though

* *Naval Chronicle.*



SEA-FIGHT OFF TRINCOMALEE.

Suffren had contrived to do wonders in this way at Cuddalore, improvising an arsenal or ship-yard, and, to encourage others, working himself in his shirt-sleeves, like a common shipwright."

Had the admiral not deemed himself in some way slighted by the general and Lord Macartney, it is supposed that he might have remained in Madras roads to co-operate in the proposed attack on the French lines at Cuddalore; but there was the probability that had he been a day longer in putting to sea the whole fleet might have perished. He sailed on the 15th of October, and had made a good offing before nightfall. By that time, we are told that the sound, so well known in Madras—the roar of the coming monsoon—was heard, and the rising surf began to shake the coast, as there came on one of the most dreadful hurricanes ever known in Indian waters. For miles, next day, the shore was covered with shattered wrecks, and the bodies of the drowned or the dying. Vessels of every kind were sunk at their anchors or dashed to pieces on the shore—among others, the *Earl of Hertford* (Indiaman). A few cut their cables, put to sea, and, to the astonishment of every one, outrode the tempest.

Some of those that perished were laden with rice for the garrison, the town, and the army; thus the food was gone without a possibility of supplying more, and a local famine ensued; and thousands of the natives of the Carnatic who had fled to Madras to escape the cruelty of Hyder Ali, were among the first to suffer. Every road that led to Madras, and the streets of the city itself, were strewn with the emaciated dead and dying; prayers, entreaties, and moans were heard on every side, addressed to the passers who had not a grain of rice to give, and who were soon to perish in their turn; for, before supplies came from Bengal and elsewhere, 10,000 persons perished of sheer hunger.

"For months together," says Burke in one of his eloquent speeches, "these creatures of sufferance, whose very excess and luxury in their most plenteous days had fallen short of the allowance of our austere fasts, silent, patient, resigned, without sedition or disturbance, almost without complaint, perished by a hundred a day in the streets of Madras; every day seventy at least laid their bodies in the streets, or on the glacis of Tanjore, and expired of famine in the granary of India." The multitudes of dead and dying were so great as to raise fears of a new calamity—the plague. The dead bodies were collected daily in carts; and buried in large trenches without the town; and for several weeks not less than from twelve to fifteen

hundred a week, says one authority, were thus disposed of.

Five days after the departure of Sir Edward Hughes, Sir Richard Bickerton came into the wreck-strewn roads of Madras, with a small squadron from Britain, having some troops on board; but with no provisions to spare, after his long voyage round the Cape, and deeming it to be his duty, when menaced by the still-blowing monsoon on one hand, and the great superiority of Suffren on the other, to join Sir Edward, he put to sea, and bore away for Bombay, about the same time that Sir Eyre Coote, now completely shattered in health, sailed for Calcutta.

As the command now devolved upon General Stewart, he sent 400 Europeans to co-operate with the Bombay troops, who, under General Goddard, were about to assail Hyder from the west, 500 men to reinforce Negapatam, and 300 Europeans into the Northern Circars, where the French were expected, but never appeared; for now an unusual inactivity seemed to possess both Suffren and De Bussy. Negapatam, which was weakly garrisoned and open, was not attacked, neither was Madras, then alike stricken with fever and famine; and the small squadron of Sir Richard Bickerton, who had with him only five sail of the line and a frigate, passed and repassed almost within sight of the French fleet.

And now, at this crisis—while, as related, Tippoo was defending Malabar—died Hyder Ali, on the 7th of December, 1782, in what was supposed to be the eightieth year of his age, as the actual date of his birth was never accurately known. His disease was a singular one, named by Mohammedans the *sertan*, or "crab," a swelling behind the neck or upper portion of the back, and supposed in form to resemble the crustacean named. By the Hindoos it is named the *raj-poor*, or "royal sore"—a kind of Indian king's-evil, peculiar to persons of royal rank; and in old Hyder's case, the skill of Bussy's best physicians, like the charms of his own conjurers and magi, failed to cure him. Poornea and Kishen Rao, his two Brahmin ministers, when they found his death impending, agreed to conceal the event, when it took place, till the arrival of Tippoo, as the only means by which they could keep the army together.

Accordingly, they placed the body in a large chest filled with fragrant powder, and sent it from the camp at Vellore to Seringapatam, and from there it was secretly deposited in the somewhat obscure tomb of his family at Celan, a little town of Mysore; but Tippoo afterwards had it conveyed to Seringapatam, where it was laid in a superb

mausoleum, which, as a work of art, is still endowed and kept up by our Indian Government.

Though called the tyrant of Mysore, and in many ways a man without much scruple when he had an end to achieve, and though cruel and barbarous to his European prisoners, Hyder Ali, when judged of by the standard of his age, religion, and country, was not an indifferent sovereign, and as a warrior he ranks high under any test. Neither the troops he led, nor those who opposed him, allowed him to adopt a line of policy to display the qualities of a great general; thus to accomplish his ends he was compelled to adopt means that often seemed insignificant; his warfare being a series of skirmishes, rather than pitched battles, or regular campaigns. In Hyder, it was the skilful adaptation of his instruments to his purposes, neither allowing his confidence in vast numbers, nor the skill with which he could direct them, to lure him from the path he had marked out, that proves him to have been no common man. He knew, appreciated, and feared the prowess of the British troops, and turned his knowledge to the best advantage by assailing them only when and where they were weak. Hence his great success—a success which his great age and death alone prevented attaining a point that might have altered the future history of British India.

His barbarous treatment of our soldiers who fell into his hands, language can neither sufficiently describe nor reprehend, and from his Oriental nature he was totally incapable of appreciating such self-

devotion as was shown by one of them—Lieutenant Lucas—one of his captives in the awful dungeons of Seringapatam. We are told that when Sir David Baird was one of these unfortunates, the wounds he had received when Baillie's detachment perished were unhealed, were all but mortifying, and that his health was sinking. When the *myar* made his appearance one morning, bearing with him fetters weighing nine pounds each, which were destined for these unhappy men who had survived the destruction of their comrades, resistance was futile; and they submitted to their fate. But when it came to Sir David Baird's turn, one of the officers—a noble Englishman named Lucas—sprang forward and urged the cruelty of fettering the limbs that were full of festering wounds. To this the *myar* replied, that there had been sent as many sets of fetters as there were prisoners, and that all must be put on.

"Then," said the gallant Lucas, "put a double pair on me, so that Captain Baird may be spared their use."

"Even the *myar*," says the narrator, "though used to scenes of human misery, was moved by this act of self-devotion, and consented to refer the case to the *kedadar*, who held the 'Book of Fate.' Fortunately for Sir David Baird, that book was propitious; the irons were (after a time) dispensed with, and thus was this man, then a captive in the dungeons of Seringapatam, spared to become one day a conqueror and its master!"

But in this we are somewhat anticipating the story and the fate of Tippoo Sahib.

CHAPTER XLVII.

CAPTURE OF BEDNORE IN CANARA.—SIEGES OF CUDDALORE AND MANGALORE.—PEACE WITH FRANCE.

"THE Tiger"—for such was the appropriate name, when translated, of Hyder's son, Tippoo, now in his thirtieth year—reached the camp in which Hyder died on the 2nd of January, 1783, and assumed the reins of government, with an army of 90,000 men, a treasury containing rupees to the amount of three millions sterling, together with jewels and valuables, the accumulated plunder of many provinces, during many years, to an extent that has been said to defy computation. On the evening of his arrival, he held a *darbar* of all his principal

officers seated on a humble carpet, stating that his great grief would not permit him, as yet, to ascend the musnud; but all knew that this was mere affectation, and none who saw him, or knew him, were deceived by it.

With his great resources, a French alliance, a passion for war, power and aggrandisement, and more than all, a rooted antipathy to the British, Tippoo treated with scorn the overtures for peace with us, which, had he lived but a few weeks longer, old Hyder would have accepted. After paying his last

duties to the remains of his father, Tippoo hastened to join the main body of the army, amply provided with presents and treasure to secure the allegiance of the troops. He was now joined by a French force, mustering 900 Europeans, 250 Kaffirs and Topasses, and 2,000 sepoy, with a brigade of twenty-two guns, and the plan of future operations was at once discussed. The French urged the immediate capture of Madras; but, as the Marquis de Bussy was not yet present, Tippoo reminded the principal officers that before this they had often declared that the French were, by their orders, limited to defensive operations. His own plan, therefore, was to leave a strong column of his army under Seyd Sahib to co-operate with the marquis as soon as he arrived at head-quarters, and be ready to attack us, while he, with the rest of his troops, moved to the westward, where our rapid success had greatly alarmed him. The instant Hyder's death was rumoured, the Government of Madras had urged their new commander-in-chief, General Stewart, to take advantage of the confusion the event was likely to cause in the Mysore camp; but he strongly declined to march, on the plea that he "did not believe in the death of Hyder, and if he were dead, the army would be ready to march at the proper time."

General Stewart, like Sir Eyre Coote, was a king's officer, and viewing the Company as a mere trading corporation, though they were his paymasters, he was not disposed to be accountable to them, especially in the matter of handling the royal forces. The position he was inclined to adopt appeared so extravagant that Lord Macartney lodged a minute against it. However, the general did not put the troops in motion until the 15th of January, 1783, thirteen days after Tippoo's arrival in camp, and his peaceable proclamation as Sultan of Mysore. In his position as governor, Lord Macartney undertook to direct the operations of the campaign, as a prelude to which he somewhat unwisely ordered the demolition of some forts, and though contrary to the advice of Coote he had dismantled Negapatam, he now ordered the destruction of Wandiwash and Carangoly.

The greater portion of February was wasted in the work of demolition; but in the vicinity of Wandiwash General Stewart, who was now at the head of 14,000 men (3,000 of whom were British), offered battle to Tippoo, who declined it, and crossed the Arnee in some haste, recalling his garrisons from Arcot and other places so quickly, that it seemed evident that he was about to evacuate the whole Carnatic.

But Tippoo was not so much seeking to avoid

Stewart as to defend his own dominions, for Colonel Mackenzie-Humberstone, as soon as Tippoo had left the coast of Malabar, marched his sepoy by land, and sent his Highlanders and other British troops by sea, northward to the coast of Canara (which is separated from Mysore by the Western Ghats), to co-operate with a portion of the Bombay army, then occupied in the reduction of his richest provinces and dependencies. Long was the march for the sepoy, and stormy the voyage for the Royal Highlanders, but the junction was effected in the month of January at Cundapore, fifty-five miles northward of Mangalore; and on the 23rd General Mathews marched to attack Bednore, the capital of Canara, of old named the "bamboo village," but which had become a city of some wealth and magnitude, for when captured by Hyder, he found twelve millions sterling of plunder in it, and there he built a fort named Hydernaghur. It is strong in position, and was well fortified when Mathews advanced against it, considerably harassed in his march by flying parties of the enemy's horse; but his greatest impediments were a succession of field-works, erected on the face of a mountain which his troops had to ascend. But, "on the 26th of February, 1783, the 42nd, led by Colonel Macleod, and followed by a corps of sepoy, attacked these positions with the bayonet, and, pushing on like Highlanders, were in the breastwork before the enemy were aware of it; four hundred men were bayoneted, and the rest pursued to the walls of the fort."

Here, Lieutenant Hislop, of the Royal Artillery, had the half of a leg torn away by an Indian rocket. Seven forts were thus stormed, each being captured at a rush. After this service the next object of attack was the great fort of Hydernaghur, which towered with a formidable aspect over all, and compelled the leaders to act with extreme caution. It occupied the summit of the loftiest ghaut or precipice, 5,000 feet above the level of the sea, with a dry ditch in front, armed with twenty pieces of cannon, and on the face of the mountain were seven more batteries, placed on terraces above each other, with internal lines of communication. "The outward approaches," says General Stewart, "were obstructed by large trees, cut down and placed transversely, so as to prevent the ascent on any part, except that immediately exposed to the full effect of the guns. These obstructions, formidable if well defended, were, however, of no avail, for the spirit with which the lower defences were attacked and carried struck such terror into the enemy that they evacuated this strong position in the course of the night, and, making no further

resistance, Bednore was taken possession of on the 27th of January, 1783."

In it were found 8,000 stands of new arms, and every necessary supply for the immediate use of the troops. We thus got possession of the principal fort of a fertile province, from where Tippoo drew most of the provisions for his army. Many of the other forts of Canara surrendered on being summoned, but Mangalore and Annanpore held out. Against the latter Major Colin Campbell marched with the Highlanders and some other troops, and on the 15th of February he stormed it with great loss to the enemy. In thanking his column for the spirited conduct it displayed, Major Campbell said that "his particular acknowledgments were due to Captain Dalzell and the officers and men of the 42nd Regiment, who headed the storm; but strongly recommends that when the bayonet can be used, not a shot should be fired." Mangalore on the coast surrendered as soon as it had been breached.

The operations of our troops in Canara were greatly impeded by quarrels and complaints about the division of prize money. General Mathews refused to divide any with either officers or men, which was most illiberal, as at that time they had received no pay for several months. Colonels Macleod and Mackenzie-Humberstone left the army to lay their complaints against their leader before the Governor of Bombay. He was superseded, and Macleod was ordered back to Bednore with the rank of Brigadier-General. He was accompanied by Humberstone, a Major Shaw, and others; but on their voyage down the coast they were attacked by a piratical Mahratta fleet, that killed or wounded every man on board their vessel. Major Shaw was slain on the instant; Humberstone, one of the best officers that ever drew a sword on Indian soil, died of his wounds, and Macleod, sinking with three wounds, was taken prisoner into Gheriah. All the other officers perished—Lieutenant William Stewart, of the 100th Regiment, being literally hacked joint from joint.

Meanwhile Mathews was acting in a most unwise manner. He had scattered his army all over the country in wretched mud forts, and fixed his headquarters in Bednore without laying in a sufficient stock of ammunition or provisions, and placed the 42nd Highlanders at a distance on the coast.

When he fancied himself in a state of security, Tippoo advanced with a great force, secured the Ghauts, cut off all communication between the coast and Bednore, a protracted resistance in which was impossible without supplies. Tippoo advanced to the attack with two columns, and our troops, after

attempting a defence, for which their strength was most inadequate, retired, after serious loss, into the citadel, where they continued to fight till it was beaten—by sheer dint of cannon-shot—to ruins around them. General Mathews then, in accordance with the opinion of a council of war, agreed to surrender on certain terms, to which Tippoo agreed. One of these guaranteed the safe conduct of the garrison to the coast; another provided for the security of private and surrender of public property. Unfortunately, in order to appropriate the money in the treasury, which now by right belonged to Tippoo, the officers of the garrison, then in long arrears of pay, were told to draw for whatever sums they pleased, these to be afterwards accounted for at Bombay; and in this way the treasury was emptied—innocently, we must suppose.

In the terms of their capitulation the garrison marched out on the 3rd of May, 1783. Tippoo, only too anxious to find a pretext for violating the capitulation, obtained one from the prisoners themselves. On being searched, the missing treasure was found to be divided among them. Thus, instead of being permitted to march to the coast, Tippoo bound them all with chains and ropes, and sent them to his horrible dungeons in Mysore.

Mathews was taken in fetters to Seringapatam, and is said to have been murdered by having boiling lead poured down his throat, in presence of his wife, who became insane on beholding the outrage. Two hundred and ten soldiers were spared, to become artizans if they would embrace Mohammedanism. The rest were destroyed in many ways, too shocking to describe. Some were left chained to dead bodies; out of nineteen officers who were taken, seventeen were murdered by order of Tippoo. Some had their throats cut slowly and by degrees; others were pinioned, and had poison poured down their throats while their jaws were held forcibly open; and the tidings of these barbarities excited our troops to such an extent, that they resolved neither to take nor give quarter in battle with the troops of Tippoo "the Tiger."

Our whole forces in India at this time mustered only 17,800 men. These were Burgoyne's Light Dragoons, the Bengal Cavalry—700 sabres, and the European infantry, 9,000 strong; two battalions of Highlanders (viz., 2nd Battalion of the 42nd, afterwards the 73rd Foot, and the Rosshire Buffs), the 3rd, 36th, 52nd, 98th, 100th, 101st, and 102nd Regiments, with 436 of the Royal Artillery. The sepoys of the three presidencies made up 30,000 more, exclusive of De Bruygerse's Hanoverian corps of 1,000 strong.

Tippoo now, breathing only fury and destruction

—all unsated by that treatment of the prisoners, which all along had been the fixed mode both with him and his father—now went through the Ghauts to attack Mangalore, then occupied by the 42nd, and some fragments of Mathews' army. It was considered a most important point, as its harbour was one of the best on the coast of Canara; so the middle of May saw it invested by Tippoo and his French allies.

Prior to this, Lutf Ali Bey had taken up a position, with a considerable force, within twelve miles of the place; but he was suddenly attacked by Colin Campbell (now a lieutenant-colonel), who, on the 6th of May, routed him in an incredibly short time, with the loss of all his guns, while the now slender Black Watch had only seven privates killed, Captain Stewart, and sixteen privates wounded. By the 20th it was completely invested by Tippoo. Notwithstanding this, Colonel Campbell endeavoured to keep possession of an outpost about a mile from the town, because it commanded the principal avenue to it. At this crisis, Campbell's garrison consisted of only 243 Highlanders of all ranks, with 1,500 native troops fit for duty; and with these he had to

oppose, says General Stewart, an overwhelming force, "that consisted of 90,000 men, exclusive of a corps of European infantry under Colonel Cossigny, Monsieur Lally's corps of Europeans and natives, a troop of dismounted French cavalry from the Mauritius, the whole supported by ninety pieces of cannon."

And now ensued a siege which lasted from the middle of May, 1784, till the 30th of January of the following year, to relate all the events of which would occupy too much space, but which, for the brilliance and bravery of the defence, is unequalled in the annals of war save by Heiden's defence of Colberg, in Pomerania.

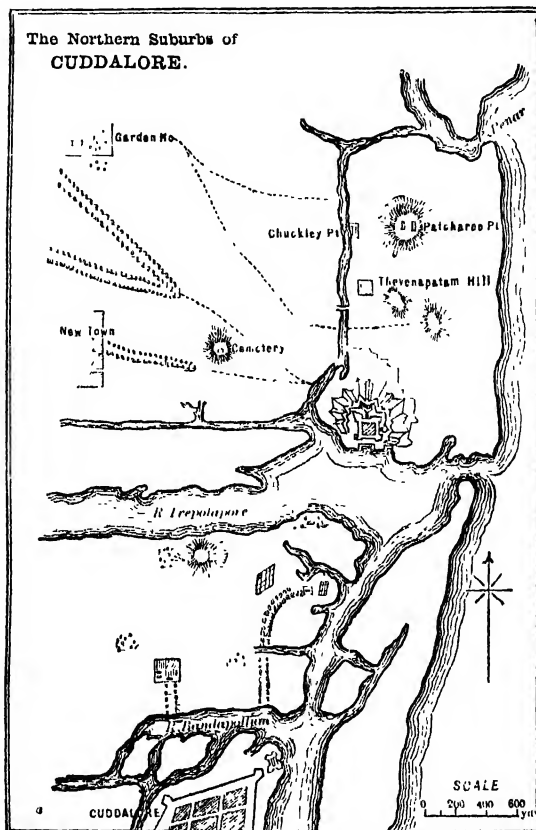
The troops in the outpost were attacked, and reached the main body in Mangalore with the utmost difficulty, and confident now of early triumph, Tippoo sent a flag of truce, imperiously demanding an instant surrender. Colin Campbell dismissed the messenger without an answer, and, much to his astonishment and rage, Tippoo found himself compelled to begin a regular siege, in the details of which he was greatly assisted by the experience of Colonel Cossigny. Three separate

attacks, embracing the faces of the fort accessible by land, instead of open breaches, produced only masses of barrier-like ruin, "while attempts at assault were repeated and repelled so often as to become almost an affair of daily routine."

Tippoo counted on easy conquest, but the siege detained him from more important operations, for months passed and yet Campbell defied him in Mangalore; and meanwhile preparations were made elsewhere for the reduction of Cuddalore, where Bussy commanded a garrison of French and African troops from the Isle of France. But old General Stewart, though minus a leg, found himself before the place, at the head of the 101st and 102nd Regiments, the 15th

Hanoverians, 250 recruits from Scotland for the Highlanders, and the old 23rd Light Dragoons. Colonel Stewart, of the 78th, commanded that corps and the 73rd, which formed a Highland Brigade.

On the morning of the 13th of June, an attack was made from three points, but, by some mistake, not simultaneously; thus the marquis was enabled to direct his whole strength against each attack in succession. One of the assailing columns, on being repulsed, was pursued by the French for some distance, but Colonels Cantart and Stewart, with a handful of the Macleod Highlanders, rushed to the front, and possessed themselves of those works,



PLAN OF THE NORTHERN SUBURBS OF CUDDALORE.

which, in the eagerness of their pursuit, the enemy had left open and undefended. Thus the fate of the day was changed, for though the Highlanders were forced to retire from the more advanced works they had entered, they resolutely retained possession of the principal French redoubt. The conflict on this day lasted from four a.m. to five in the evening; yet only one of our officers fell—the Hon. John Lindsay, of the Macleod Highlanders.

distance, and never came to close quarters. Five of our ships were so unmanageable that they fell away to leeward, while many of Suffren's were so leaky that the crews had to work their guns and pumps alternately, till the squadrons parted in the dark, and thus ended the fifth and last indecisive battle between these rival admirals.

On the 25th of June the marquis, who had been reinforced by 2,400 men from the fleet of De



TIPPOO SAHIB.

On the 14th of June the fleet of Sir Edward Hughes appeared in the offing; and that of Suffren did so much about the same time. The two admirals, often in sight of the hostile lines and of the British camp, tacked and manœuvred from that day till the 20th, each trying to gain the weather-gage of the other. On the 20th, Suffren fired a few shots at long range for twenty minutes, before a gun was fired by the British fleet. Then the broadsides of the latter opened, and the thunder of a heavy cannonade pealed over the sea and up the long salt-water nullah of Cuddalore; but Suffren, who had the advantage of the wind, chose his own

Suffren, made a gallant sortie from the beleaguered fort, but was repulsed with heavy loss. Among the captured was a handsome young sergeant of the French marines, whose appearance and manner attracted the notice of Colonel Wagenheim, of our 15th Hanoverian Regiment, who took him to his tent, had his wounds dressed, and treated him with much kindness, for though but a sergeant, he seemed much above his station, having been bred to the law, yet his parents were humble people of Pau.

Long years after, when the army of France in its great career of conquest entered Hanover under

Marshal Bernadotte, his *levée* was attended by Wagenheim, then an aged general officer. "You have served, I understand, in India?" said Bernadotte. "Yes." "At Cuddalore?" "Yes." "Do you remember taking a wounded French sergeant there under your protection?" After a time the veteran called the episode to memory, adding, "He was a fine young man, and I should be glad to hear of his welfare." "I was that young French sergeant," replied the marshal, "and now will omit no means of testifying my gratitude." And old Wagenheim lived to see the marine he had protected, Prince and Marshal of the Empire, Prince of Ponte Corvo, Crown Prince of Sweden, and finally Charles John XIV., King of Sweden and Norway.*

On the 1st of July the tidings came of the preliminaries of peace between Great Britain and France, so hostilities at once ceased at Cuddalore as elsewhere between the troops of the two countries, though they were continued against Tippoo Sahib; and yet the cannon boomed against Campbell's little band in their isolated post at Mangalore.

On the 19th of July—nineteen days after the treaty of peace was known to the French authorities, and after fifty-six days of open trenches, Colin Campbell received a letter signed "Peveron de Morlay, envoy from France to the nabob, Tippoo Sultan," informing him then, that hostilities had ceased at Cuddalore, and that he was in possession of a letter which he was enjoined to deliver to him in person—a letter which is supposed to have been long in the Mangalore camp before its existence was acknowledged to Campbell; and during all that time the besiegers had been making the most vigorous efforts to obtain possession of the place, too probably with the intention of treating the garrison as that of Bednore had been treated.

The treaty of peace with France, and the consequent intimation from Colonel Cossigny that he and the rest of the French, including MM. Lally and Boudenot, could give him no further aid, filled the despot with transports of rage. By that treaty, which Tippoo would now be under the necessity of concluding, a general restitution of conquests would take place, and consequently Mangalore would return to him without an effort; but his rage and obstinacy at having been so long foiled by Colonel Campbell made him disregard these facts, and still press the siege. Under the cover of admitting Peveron de Morlay—who is said to have been quite capable of any deceit or dissimulation—to deliver his letter, a body of troops landed and won possession of an outwork that commanded the harbour;

* Colonel Wilks.

and though an armistice had been concluded with Tippoo on the 2nd of August, he continued every operation short of an actual assault, with greater vigour than ever. By the third clause of that armistice, a bazaar was to be established, from which the troops were to procure provisions. To the shame of Tippoo, this was evaded, and the result was that Campbell's soldiers were reduced to the verge of starvation.

On the 26th of the preceding April, Sir Eyre Coote had died at Madras, from whence his remains were sent home to Britain, and trophies were erected to his memory in Westminster Abbey and Leadenhall Street.

Brigadier-General Macleod, holding now the chief command in Malabar and Canara, a fortnight after the armistice, arrived with a detachment of Hanoverians to reinforce his comrades. He took up his residence in the town, but found that he had to send the Hanoverians to Tellicherry, while the garrison was still permitted to starve, and the wily Tippoo continued to amuse both Macleod and Campbell, by pretending that he was about to depart with all his troops for Seringapatam, which he had not the least intention of doing; for suddenly he threw off the mask, declared that not an ounce of food should reach the garrison, and proceeded to the repair of his old batteries and the erection of new; so Macleod, full of wrath, sailed for Tellicherry to collect the means of rescue.

Two fleets, one from the south and another from the north, were, on the 22nd of November, seen standing into the roads. Relief was now at hand. "The signal was made that the troops would land to the southward," wrote Colonel Campbell; "they were discovered in the boats; any moment promised a speedy attack. Confidence and joy appeared in every countenance; even the poor, weak, emaciated convalescent, tottering under the weight of his firelock, boldly stood forth to offer what feeble aid his melancholy state admitted of." But again the cunning of Tippoo prevailed; he entangled Macleod in a correspondence; and the latter, after arranging that the garrison should have a month's food, sailed again on the 2nd of December, without seeing it sent in. Scurvy now began to afflict both officers and soldiers, who, on the 20th December, were put on the shortest allowance compatible with life.

"We now," says Colonel Fullarton, "arrive at the most interesting moment of the war. The garrison of Mangalore, under its inestimable commander, Colonel Campbell, had made a defence that has seldom been equalled and never surpassed. With a handful of men, worn out by famine, he

resisted for many months a formidable force under Tippoo Sultan. The whole power of this prince, assisted by the science of the French auxiliaries, could not force a breach that had long been laid open, and he repulsed every attempt to take it by storm." *

A small quantity of food was sent in by General Macleod, but the scurvy continued to increase; two-thirds of the Highlanders were in hospital, and most of the sepoy were blind. Eventually, on the 26th of January, 1784, Colonel Campbell, seeing the utter hopelessness of further resistance, capitulated on honourable terms, and with all that remained there of the noble Black Watch and their sepoy comrades, sailed for Tellicherry, on the coast of Malabar.

"The only explanation that has ever been given of the shameful desertion of this brave garrison is," says Beveridge, "that the preliminary articles of peace stipulated a term of four months to be allowed to the native belligerent powers of India to decide; and that the hostilities necessary to give succour to Mangalore might have been, or seemed to be, an infringement of these articles. There could not be a lamer excuse. The preliminary

articles never could have meant, that, during the four months indulged to one belligerent for the purpose of making up his mind, he was to be at liberty to make war, while his European antagonist was not to be at liberty to resist him, or that, after concluding an armistice, the native power might violate its obligations, while the European power should be bound to observe them." But the capture of Mangalore cost Tippoo dear, as it so long locked up the entire resources of his army, prevented the collection of his revenue, and permitted the invasion of his richest provinces.

Colonel Colin Campbell (called John in some works) was the eldest of the seven sons of Lord Stonefield, by Lady Grace Stuart, daughter of the Earl of Bute. He had served in the old 74th, or Argyleshire Highlanders, and been a prisoner of war in America. He died on the 23rd of March, 1784, at Bombay, where a handsome monument was erected by the Company to his memory, and the memory of Captains Stewart, Dalrymple, and all who fell at Mangalore, which was the last service in which the 2nd Battalion of the Black Watch was engaged under that name, as it was constituted the 73rd Regiment of Highlanders.

CHAPTER LXVIII.

CAMPAIGN OF COLONEL FULLARTON, ETC.

THE new Sultan of Mysore, deserted by France, was not without some alarm at the prospect of being left single-handed to contend with Britain, which now he hated all the more bitterly, that he had nearly ruined himself by the time wasted in attempting to take the half-ruined fort of Mangalore; yet the tone he adopted, when invited to be a party to the general pacific arrangements, was high, and his vakeels intimating that everything we had taken from him or his father should be restored, spoke plainly enough, though little was said about restitution on his part. Lord Macartney sent three commissioners to accompany his vakeels to Seringapatam to negotiate there, even while Tippoo had been beleaguering Campbell in Mangalore.

Colonel William Fullarton, of Fullarton, M.P., an excellent officer, whose work we have recently quoted, had arrived from Europe with some reinforcements at the end of the preceding year, and

was about to aid Stewart in that intended attack, which the news of peace arrested; but prior to that his career had been a brilliant one.

On the 2nd of June, after making a rapid progress in the country beyond Tanjore, he had taken the important fortress of Darapooram, in the province of Coimbatore, thus opening one of the roads to Tippoo's capital of Seringapatam, and distant from it only 140 miles.

"This valuable place affords ample supplies for men and cattle," says the colonel, in his account of the campaigns, 1782-84; "is capable of considerable defence, and is far advanced in the enemy's country, being equally distant from the two coasts. Although the position of an army there would always be of eminent advantage, it was more particularly so when we reduced it, because Tippoo Sultan had recovered Bednore, captured General Mathews, and invested Mangalore. The southern army (Fullarton's own column) was not sufficient

* * * "View of English Interests in India."

in strength to think of marching on Seringapatam, and was so far from being able to oppose the whole power of Tippoo, that we could not afford to garrison even Darapooram, and were obliged to destroy the fortifications. Yet we might assuredly have reduced the rich tract that lies below the mountains of Mysore, which would have compelled Tippoo to raise the siege of Mangalore, and march his main body against us; or if Tippoo had persisted against Mangalore, we should have amply subsisted the army, have reduced a valuable territory, and prepared for more important conquests. But General Stewart's orders to march towards him at Cuddalore obliged me to relinquish these advantages."

In Dindigul, a formidable fortress we have already described, and which he had stormed with remarkable bravery, Fullarton left a garrison to keep his communications open, and facilitate a retreat to the heart of Mysore; and Colonel Forbes, whom he had left in his rear in the south, perfected all his arrangements with great ability, and established friendly relations on every hand; and now, to enable Fullarton to resume the prosperous campaign which Stewart's orders had interrupted, Lord Macartney, when our troops were withdrawn from Cuddalore, reinforced him with 1,000 Europeans, and four regiments of sepoys.

Advancing into Tinnevely, an extensive district comprising 5,800 square miles, still displaying vast tracts of forest, waste, and jungle, the population of which are Hindoos of the most primitive kind, and whose chiefs are called Polygars, he reduced them to quiet and tribute, after destroying one of their chief fastnesses, a great forest. These Polygars, taking advantage of the war with Tippoo, had broken into rebellion against us, and been ranging the country from Madura to Cape Comorin. After subduing them, and also the hill Collieries, who had been committing the most dreadful excesses, Colonel Fullarton, at the head of 16,000 troops, and many more thousands of camp-followers, came marching by the stupendous rock of Dindigul, and by Darapooram, but without other supplies than such as he could extort from the natives. Money he had none; but he had in plenty, cannon and munition of war, collected from the captured places, while the Rajah of Travancore, who had befriended Colonel Humberstone, undertook to supply provisions, in case of his marching into the possessions of Tippoo on the southern coast.

With the Zamorin of Calicut (the lineal representative of that ancient Hindoo sovereign who received Vasco de Gama), and with several other rajahs who had been dispossessed by the conquering Hyder in

times past, and who by him had been most barbarously treated, a successful correspondence was now opened up. Eager for repossession and sanguinary revenge, these petty potentates agreed to contribute all the aid they could to overthrow the second tyrant of Mysore. But the prudent Fullarton took other means to ensure their goodwill and adhesion, by surrendering some petty duties which his predecessors had been in the habit of levying upon all articles sold to the troops in camp or cantonments; by checking all pillaging with a strong hand; by paying all respect to the superstitions or deep-rooted religious prejudices of the castes and races among whom he found himself. He also made a great alteration in the mode of marching his troops by sections. The old way had been the "Indian file," following each other in succession (vulgarly called by the soldiers "goose-file"), by which means a large army was often miles apart from van to rear, and this led to many disasters. He established an intelligence department, and so complete and effective was it, that he was kept constantly informed of the strength and whereabouts of the enemy, and also where grain was to be found anywhere within 200 miles of his front or flanks. "Several hundred people, cunning natives, who have a natural genius for the occupation of scouts and spies, and who after inspection can model you a fortress in clay, and show to a nicety its weak points, were constantly employed on these services, and confidential intelligences were thus established at every considerable town in Mysore, in the durbars of the rajahs and the very camp of Tippoo."

Colonel Fullarton, in the midst of his triumphant career, halted near Darapooram, to await intelligence of the commissioners, whom he knew Lord Macartney had sent to Tippoo; but on the 16th of October, when, by an official letter from Tellicherry he was informed that Tippoo was playing "fast and loose" with General Macleod, and, despite the armistice, had commenced active measures against Campbell's famished band in Mangalore, his mind became inspired with soldierly indignation, and he resolved to resent the state of affairs sharply.

He had conceived two plans of operation. 1. To march right across the peninsula of Hindostan, through a hostile country 500 miles in extent, to Campbell's assistance. 2. To make a dash at Seringapatam, and hurl the dynasty of Hyder from the musnud, or compel Tippoo to abandon Mangalore in order to save his capital.

Upon the latter and boldest movement he resolved, though not by the regular route, which offered no secure retreat in case of disaster, but by another, which was more circuitous, and possessed

several military advantages. Palicaud, or Palaghautcherry, sixty-eight miles south-east of Calicut, and near the coast, had been completely rebuilt by Hyder. It possessed all the approved features of European fortification; it was deemed one of the strongest places in India, and commanded a pass amid mountains covered by thick forests of teak-wood. No passage lay through these, and the plains and deep rice-grounds—cut and intersected in every direction by the Paniany river—especially during the rainy season, might be defended, by a few companies of resolute infantry, against all the cavalry of Mysore.

Fullarton saw that by the possession of this fort he commanded the avenues to Malabar and Coromandel, to Calicut, Cochin, and Travancore, and the hoisting of our colours on its ramparts would give fresh confidence to the Zamorin, and all who were anxious to effect the downfall of Tippoo. The colonel also saw that it would leave him free to veil his movements and to advance against Seringapatam either by the way of Coimbatore and the Gujelhetty Pass, or by Calicut and through that of Dumaticherry.

Fullarton, for all these weighty reasons, resolved that Palaghautcherry should be his. and on the 18th of October, 1783, he began his march against it, at the head of 13,636 men, confidently believing that he should halt finally under the walls of Seringapatam. Storming several petty forts in his way, he marched through a rich country abounding in all supplies, till he reached a district where the streams run east and west to the seas of Malabar and Coromandel. From thence he had to cut his way through a dense forest, twenty miles in length, filling up nullahs, cuts, and watercourses as he went, for the transmission of his cannon and cattle. Trees were cut down, roads actually made, and fourteen days of indescribable toil were spent by the army in their passage through this forest alone.

To add to the sufferings and misery of the troops, the rain began to fall in such torrents as are alone known in India, and never ceased till they were clear of it.

In the leafy waste amid which the torrents poured, no tents could be pitched; the nullahs became gorged with water, the oxen lost their footing, and the soldiers had to take the drag-ropes to get the guns and baggage on. After toils that no pen could describe, the indefatigable Fullarton found himself before the great fortress of Palaghautcherry, and after the battering train was in position against it, on the 15th of November, the garrison surrendered, timidly delivering up a place capable of the most protracted resistance.

Fullarton found in it 50,000 pagodas in money, together with a great supply of grain, cannon, and all the munition of war; and the son of the old Zamorin of Calicut, who rode on the colonel's staff during the siege, now begged to have restored to him the dominion of which Hyder had divested his father; but the colonel averred the restoration would be more completely effected if he moved on Calicut, yet as a pledge of his good faith he gave him the territory of Palaghaut, which had been an ancient appanage of his family.

During these varied operations, Fullarton maintained a constant communication with General Macleod, who had been liberated by the Mahratta pirates after a short captivity at Gheriah; and he also contrived to do so with Campbell at Mangalore, to whom he intimated his intention of approaching their coast, and his anxious desire for a combined movement of all their commands upon Seringapatam, and thus, perhaps, to end the war by one vigorous stroke.

For some reason not known now, the British residency at Tellicherry either could not, or would not, furnish the artillery and stores requisite for such an expedition; and Sir Edward Hughes, who was there with his fleet, was unwilling to detach a vessel with them to the river Paniany. On the other hand, General Macleod urged that, though he fully concurred in the views of Fullarton, being without bullocks, and other equipage, he could not get his troops on the line of march in less than two months. The enterprising colonel was forced, therefore, to relinquish the idea of marching by the sea-coast to Calicut, and took the route that led to Coimbatore by the Pass of Gujelhetty, which is commanded by a fort on the left bank of the Mayar.

In his march he was harassed by the cavalry and rocket-men of Tippoo, till the 26th November, when he broke ground before Coimbatore (or Kogmatura), a fort and town on high ground on the declivity of the Eastern Ghauts. Near it is the granite temple of Iswara, covered with a profusion of Hindoo carving, which was plundered of all its gold and jewels by Tippoo. In the fort, which surrendered to him before his batteries opened, he found great stores of grain and ammunition. Encouraged by the presence of Fullarton's force, every rajah now rose in arms, or promised to do so, for by the acquisition of Coimbatore he won great prestige, as it was a place sacred to the Hindoos, who loathed Tippoo for his desecration of their temples; and there the ancient gods of India had never been disturbed till the death of Hyder. So, between the Eastern Ghauts and the sea the whole

population were ready for revolt, and in the country beyond these Ghauts—the heart of Mysore. Nothing could surpass the brilliance of this campaign and its future prospects, especially when Macleod got in motion.

“A recent conspiracy,” relates the colonel, “had occurred in Seringapatam, menacing the release of the English prisoners, the exclusion of Tippoo’s family, and the re-establishment of the ancient Rana, or Gentoo sovereign of Mysore. In addition to this enumeration of advantages, we had every reason to rely on the Gentoo, or Canara, race, forming the great mass of the inhabitants in Mysore, who had unequivocal proofs of my earnest zeal to support their interests; while every circumstance of present situation or of future prospect seemed to mark this interesting moment as the crisis of the war.”*

The Rajah of Coorg, whose territories are mountainous, covered with forest and jungle, and whose people are a bold and active race, was actively asserting his independence, and invited the Bombay division to pass through Coorg. Thus General Macleod, who was strong in Europeans, native troops, and artillery, moving steadily onward, kept up the flames of war and revolt wherever he went; and now another enemy threatened Mysore in the person of General Jones, who was advancing through Cuddapah, a district usually governed by a nabob under the court of Delhi, but then forming a portion of the inland possessions of Tippoo, whose power seemed now on the point of crumbling away, for the army under Fullarton alone was the strongest belonging to Europeans that had ever been employed in India.

“The countries we had reduced,” says the colonel, “extended 200 miles in length, afforded provisions for 100,000 men, and yielded an annual revenue of £600,000, while every necessary arrangement had been made for the regular collection of these resources. The fort and pass of Palaghautcherry secured our western flank, and the intermediate position of General Macleod’s army between Palaghautcherry and Tippoo’s main army at Mangalore, together with the singular combination of ravines, rivers, and embankments that intersect the Malabar countries, and the mountains that divide them from Mysore (the passes through which were occupied by our friends, the discontented rajahs), rendered it almost impracticable for Tippoo to move in that direction against our new acquisitions.”

The Rajah of Coorg, whose frontier lay only thirty miles distant from Seringapatam, promised abundant supplies, and the young Zamorin of Calicut faith-

fully kept all his engagements. He also promised that all the western Hindoo chiefs should not only provide for our troops during the projected siege of Seringapatam, but that ample magazines would be formed on the mountains, and that we should be reinforced by at least 30,000 Nairs of Malabar, fired by hatred and the deep longing for a revenge for the cruelties perpetrated upon them by the Mohammedan conquerors.

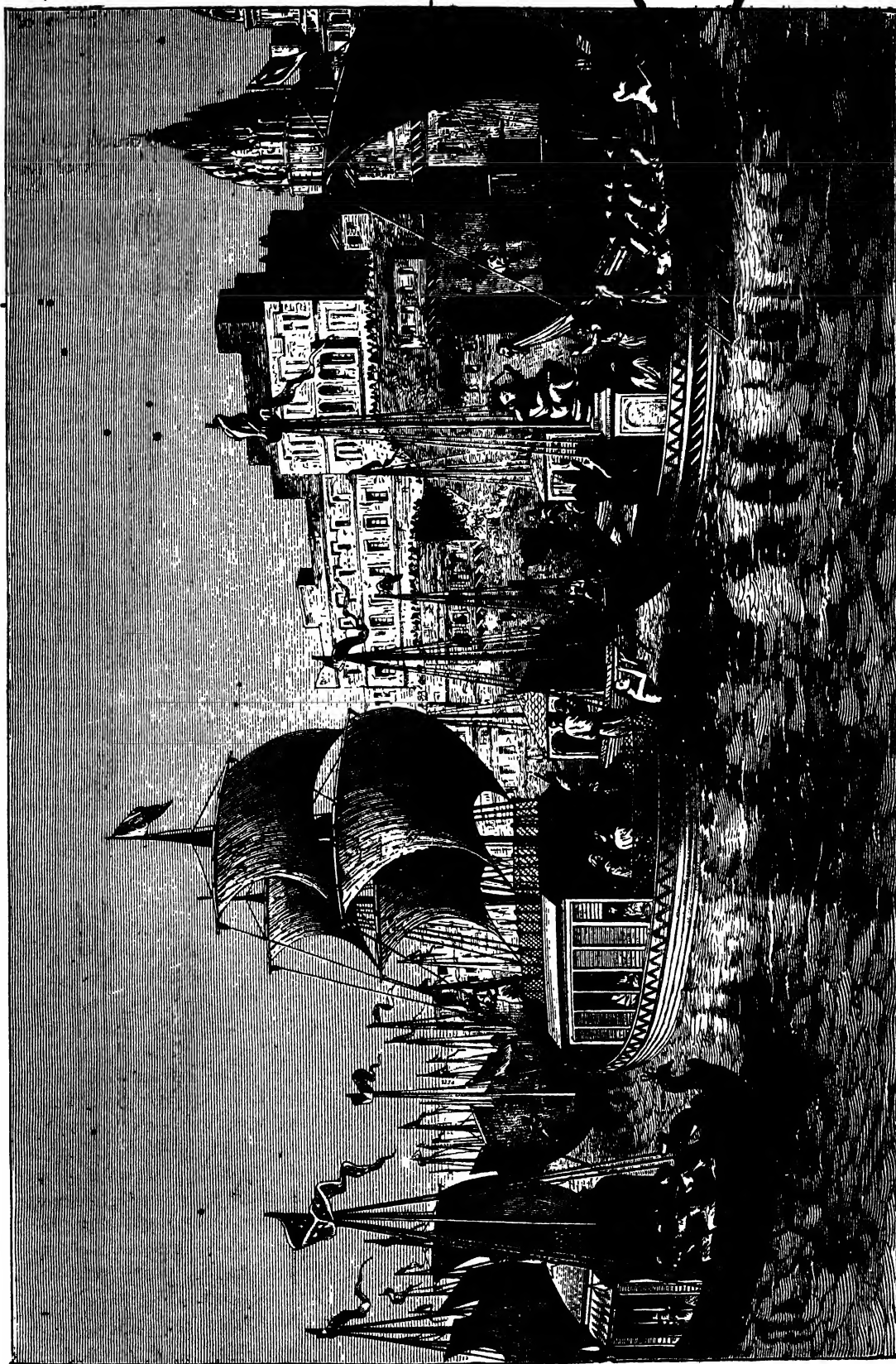
The gallant Fullarton, now full of enthusiasm at the prospect of the grand event, had provided his army with ten days’ food, repaired his carriages, and was ready to advance, when, on the 28th of November, he received a startling letter from Messrs. Staunton and Sadlier, the British commissioners, who were treating for peace at Tippoo’s durbar in the Mysorean camp at Arnee, and who, from the pusillanimous Council at Madras, had full power over the army, commanding him not only to suspend all operations, but to abandon his conquests, and retire within the limits originally occupied by the British on the 26th of July.

When this remarkable document reached him, he was in full possession of information that Tippoo had violated the armistice of Mangalore, and was still intent on the destruction of Campbell’s garrison; and thus he knew that the commissioners must have issued their order under a complete misapprehension. He resolved, therefore, to take a middle course, as he did not feel himself at liberty either to violate or obey it.

Thus, instead of advancing on Seringapatam, he halted at Coimbatore, and sent an officer to Madras, explaining his situation, and the continued investment of Mangalore; but, in the meanwhile, he employed every hour in the perfecting of his equipments, in amassing supplies in Dindigul, in procuring money from Tinnevely, and getting attack from Paniany. “No soldier,” says a writer, “could abandon such a scheme as he had formed, at the very moment when the prospect of success was brightest, without a bitter pang. Ten days of march, with little or no fighting—for there was no Mysorean army in the neighbourhood, except a few irregular cavalry—would have brought Fullarton under the walls of Seringapatam; at that time, ten days more would have sufficed for the reduction of that capital. The events of twenty-five years might have been anticipated; an inestimable amount of money and of blood might have been saved; the power of the British in the whole of the south of India might have been established; and a quarter of a century might have been won to the cause of order and tranquillity.”*

* “View of the English Interests in India,” &c.

* Knight.



RELIGIOUS FESTIVAL AT BENARES.

The Council at Madras, with their finances ruined, their credit broken, "and the Supreme Council not only withholding confidence, but supposed to be meditating suspension," for the desperate state of the Company's finances had fully occupied Parliament in May of the same year, when Sir Henry Fletcher brought forward his bill "for suspending the payments of the Company now due to the Royal Exchequer, and for enabling them to borrow the sum of £300,000 for their further relief" *—the Madras Government, we say, did not think it worth while to continue the war for the sake of a few Highlanders beleaguered in Mangalore, and on the 8th of December, 1783, they ordered Fullarton to make unqualified restitution of everything, and to fall back; and thus, to the terror of the poor Zamorin, and all the Hindoo chiefs who had committed themselves, at our instigation, with Tippoo, the Army of the South began its retrograde movement; but on the 26th of January, 1784, when Fullarton had quite reached his old boundaries, and got his weary troops into cantonments, he received another despatch from Madras, ordering him "not only to retain possession of Palaghaut, should that fort not have been delivered, but likewise to hold fast every inch of ground of which he was in possession," till he should receive further accounts of the result of the negotiations with Tippoo.

By this time the garrison of Palaghaut (or Palaghautcherry), which had been left in possession of the young Zamorin, had been attacked and driven out by the troops of the infuriated Tippoo, who sacrificed a number of venerable Brahmins, and placed their heads on poles; thus the place could only be regained by another siege, at a time when Tippoo was openly insulting alike the commissioners and the wavering Council of Madras.

While Fullarton, full of anger and bitterness, was collecting troops for this purpose, and was receiving reinforcements and heavy guns from Fort St. George and Tanjore, he received another letter from the commissioners, dated some days after Mangalore had fallen, which detailed the steady enmity of Tippoo, thus convincing him that a continuance of the war was unavoidable, an opinion in which he was confirmed by a letter from General Macleod, an officer who, in his hatred of Tippoo, had, in the old Highland fashion, challenged the sultan to mortal combat with a hundred of their bravest men on each side. Fullarton again began his march, not without hopes that it might eventually end at Seringapatam.

Fullarton had not proceeded far, when he

* T. A. Lloyd.

received intelligence that the preliminaries of a treaty of peace had actually been exchanged between Tippoo Sahib and the commissioners, and accordingly it was fully signed on the 7th of March, 1784.

With the first intelligence came orders to restore to Tippoo the fortresses and territories of Dara-pooram and Carroor, but to retain Dindigul with a strong garrison, until all the British prisoners in Seringapatam should be released from their loathsome and dreadful captivity.

At this crisis, every European in India knew the bloodshed, the devastation, and revenge that awaited the miserable Hindoos of Mysore, Coorg, and Canara; but peace had become a necessity, owing to the impoverished state of the Company's territories; and the negotiations for it were justified and enforced, by the tenor of instructions from the Ministry, from Leadenhall Street, and by the situation of political affairs in Europe.

With all that, even at this date, it is impossible not to regret that Colonel Fullarton's brilliant plan for capturing Seringapatam had not been carried out to the full. The tyrant would then have been crushed in his own blood-stained stronghold; uncounted murders would have been avenged, and others uncounted have been prevented. The reduction of Mysore would have enriched the Company, and the retention of the lands which Fullarton had conquered would, by their revenues, have paid the expenses of the next and inevitable campaign; for Tippoo, the scourge of his dusky race, when again made a tool of by France, was fated once more, and for the last time, to wage a destructive war with us in the years to come.

By the treaty of peace, both parties were to make a full restitution of all they had taken in war. But Tippoo could not restore our hapless officers and soldiers, the helpless prisoners who had died in fetters and torture in the damp dungeons of Seringapatam, who had been carried to Cabal Droog and poisoned, or taken into the woods and hacked to pieces. Of the wretched survivors, he surrendered 180 British officers, and 900 soldiers, with 1,600 sepoys; and the tales these men had to tell of all they had been compelled to endure, made the blood of the listeners boil, and excited such horror and indignation, that our soldiers alone, in the temper they were then in, rendered the duration of peace a great problem.

The following extract affords a sample of Tippoo's character. Four years after these events he paid a visit to Calicut, where the country people were dwelling in peace. "He compelled them to quit their habitations, and reside in villages of forty

houses each ; he issued proclamations, stating that they were a turbulent and rebellious people, that their women went shamelessly abroad with their faces uncovered, and committed other obscene offences ; and finally, that if they did not forsake these sinful practices, and live like the rest of his subjects, he would march them all off to Mysore and make Mussulmans of them, whether they would or not. The very next year he returned to the country with his whole army, destroying pagodas

and idols, and threatening to exterminate 'the infidels of Malabar.' Having surprised about 2,000 Nairs with their families, he gave them the alternative of a voluntary, or a forcible conversion to his faith, with immediate deportation from their native land. The poor prisoners chose the latter ; the rite of circumcision was forthwith performed on all the males, and the capricious tyrant finished the ceremony by compelling both sexes to eat beef, a monstrous act of impiety in Hindoo faith."

CHAPTER XLIX.

REBELLION AND MASSACRE AT BENARES.—ROUT, FLIGHT, AND DETHRONEMENT OF CHEYTE SING.

THE wars we have narrated had greatly extended our dominion in India, and India itself had been saved to us ; but the expense of those wars was now enormous. The difficulties of faction within the Supreme Council troubled Warren Hastings no more, but the financial embarrassments of the Company were great in the extreme, at home and abroad. The means had to be found by Hastings alike for the maintenance of the government in Bengal, and of making remittances to the shareholders in Leadenhall Street. No more could be done with the Mogul or the now enslaved Rohillas ; yet Hastings found that, imperatively, money must be got wherever it could be decently obtained ; so he now turned his eyes on Benares, the holy city of the Hindoos—the very soil of which is sacred to them, as that of Mecca is to the Mohammedans. To die there, is for a follower of Menou to conquer the pang of death ; and thither are brought the urns of those who have breathed their last at vast distances from the waters of "Holy Mother Ganga." At Benares, "it was commonly believed that half a million of human beings was crowded into that labyrinth of lofty alleys, rich with shrines and minarets, balconies, and carved cornices, to which the sacred apes clung by hundreds. The traveller could scarcely make his way through the press of holy mendicants, and not less holy bulls. The broad and stately flights of steps which descended from these swarming haunts to the bathing-places along the Ganges, were worn every day by the footsteps of an innumerable multitude of worshippers. The schools and temples drew crowds of pious Hindoos from

every province where the Brahminical faith was known. Hundreds of devotees came hither every month to die : for it was believed that a peculiarly happy fate awaited the man who should pass from the sacred city into the sacred river. Nor was superstition the only motive which allured strangers to that great metropolis. Commerce had as many pilgrims as religion. All along the shores of the venerable stream lay great fleets of vessels laden with rich merchandise."

Many of the neighbouring princes owed their political existence solely to the arms of Britain, and were known to possess treasure to a great amount ; and if they would not contribute voluntarily, it was resolved to put a judicious pressure upon them, and the first to whom this was to be applied was Cheyte Sing, the Rajah of wealthy Benares, who held his musnud entirely through Hastings. The three opponents of the latter had transferred Cheyte's dominions to the Nabob of Oude ; but Hastings had secured him in possession, on condition of his paying a fixed tribute to the Company.

This tribute, though Cheyte's life and throne must have perished had our enemies succeeded in the late war, he paid most grudgingly, and more than once pleaded poverty, particularly in 1779, to evade it entirely, though Macaulay asserts that it was paid "with strict punctuality." About £60,000 only had been obtained from him. In 1780, a demand was made upon him, not for money, but for troops—as many cavalry as could be spared from his service. This vague demand our resident at Benares fixed at 2,000 men ; but on the rajah asserting that he had but 1,300 troopers, who were

necessary, for the collection of his revenue, the demand was limited to 1,000. To comply with this request, Cheyte Sing collected the men from among the *budmashes* and other street vagabonds, 500 of whom he mounted on horses, and 500 more of whom he armed with old matchlocks, and sent Hastings word that they awaited his orders. At this time, so critical to himself, the traitor prince and false friend was discovered to be maintaining an insidious and dangerous correspondence with those who were then in arms against us, and an air of insolence and independence was observed in all he did and said. No answer was returned in the matter of the 1,000 men, for coercion had been resolved on, and the Governor-General said, "I am resolved to draw from his guilt the means of relief to the Company's distresses. In a word, I had determined to make him pay largely for his pardon, or to exact a severe vengeance for his past delinquency."*

On the 14th of August, 1781, Hastings arrived at Benares, and so little did he apprehend danger, that Mrs. Hastings accompanied him as far as Monghir, and he took with him only his usual body-guard and staff. The cunning Cheyte Sing came eastward as far as Buxar "to meet the Governor-General, and lay his turban upon his lap in token of entire submission," and they entered the holy city together; and then Cheyte, who in the narrative of this affair is styled "Rajah Cheit Sing, Zemindar or Renter of the Circars of Benares, Gauzipore, and Chunar," was taken to task, but replied evasively and insolently. Hastings then gave our resident, Mr. Markham (son of the Rev. Dr. William Markham, Archbishop of York, and formerly Bishop of Chester), orders to arrest him early on the following morning. Accordingly, that very evening, Cheyte found himself a prisoner in his own stately palace under two grenadier companies of Major Popham's native regiment, under Lieutenants Stalker, Scott, and Symes. The disgust of the rajah at this sudden proceeding was lost in his amazement at its boldness. Benares was fully 420 miles distant from Calcutta, and contained, as we have said, a population of about half a million. To these might be added all that were casual and migratory—pilgrims and holy mendicants—well-nigh insane with fanaticism, and many of them ferocious desperadoes, all provided with arms. Among all these, and the people generally, Cheyte was popular. Tidings of his arrest spread through the great city like wildfire, and a universal rush was made to the palace, led by fakirs and fanatics of all kinds.

This took place, not in the city, but at the

* Hastings' "Narrative."

present palace of its now nominal rajah, Ramnuggur, four miles distant on the opposite bank of the Ganges. Rumour went, that the two grenadier companies had come on their perilous duty without ammunition in their pouches, so a third was dispatched with it to support them. The sepoys who guarded the rajah were under arms in an enclosed square, which surrounded the apartment in which Cheyte was confined. When the third company approached, they found every avenue blocked up by yelling hordes of armed men, excited with rage, religious rancour, and too probably maddened by *bhang*. The fierce multitudes soon became inflamed to a dangerous pitch. A fire of all kinds, of pistols and matchlocks, opened on the sepoys within the square, who, having no ammunition, could make but a feeble resistance to the human surge that rolled in upon them armed with weapons of many sorts, and every man of the detachment was cut to pieces. "The officers were, it is supposed, the first victims; but they did not fall till they had made astonishing efforts of bravery, and involved a much superior number of assailants in their fate. Eighty-two men fell in this massacre, and ninety-two were wounded."*

During the *mêlée*, Cheyte effected his escape through a wicket, tied several turbans together, lowered himself down into a boat, and reached the other side of the river, followed by the rabble. The third company of sepoys, under Lieutenant Birrel, now came on, took possession of the palace, and with the bayonet ferreted out all the people of the rajah, but not without casualties—making a total loss of 205 killed and wounded. Had Cheyte's rescuers, instead of flying after him, suddenly fallen upon Warren Hastings, he says, "my blood and that of about thirty English gentlemen of my party would have been added to the recent carnage." On learning that Ramnuggur was deserted, Hastings did not deem its occupation prudent, as originally his whole force at hand consisted of only six companies of Popham's regiment from Buxar, and three of these had suffered as related.

Cheyte Sing, now that the first fury of the populace had evaporated, and though his early flight showed his fear of Hastings, knew that the situation of the latter and his handful of Britons in Benares was most critical. They were surrounded on all sides, and were without money or provisions for a single day. Thus Cheyte on one hand sent humble apologies for the slaughter committed, while on the other he began to arm all the men he could muster; and on the 18th of August, having recovered from his consternation, he sent 2,000 men, under one of

* "Narrative" (London, 1783).

his captains, to re-occupy Ramnuggur. The courage and decision of Hastings never deserted him for a moment. He disdained sending any replies to the apologies. He ordered Major Popham's detachment to march against Ramnuggur, and halt within a mile of it, for further orders. It consisted of four companies of sepoys (including Birrel's), one of artillery, and one of the French Rangers, under Captain Mayaffre. Colonel Blair's battalion of sepoys from Chunar was ordered to the same place, and when it came up the attack was to be made.

• Meantime, Hastings took measures to obtain succour from down country. "In order," says Macfarlane, "that his fleet messengers might get through the blockading rabble without losing their despatches, he wrote in the smallest hand, on small slips of paper, which were rolled up and put into quills. When Indians travel they are accustomed to lay aside their enormous gold earrings, and put quills into the orifices of the ears to prevent their closing up; thus no notice would be taken of the pieces of quills containing the Governor-General's earnest calls for immediate succour: for, so little had this storm been apprehended, that Mrs. Hastings and Sir Elijah Impey, the Chief Justice, and Lady Impey, were travelling up the country to join the Governor-General at Benares. . . . Upon receiving his quill, Impey made every exertion to send sepoys and friends to the rescue."

Ere they came, a rashness was committed at the palace of Ramnuggur. It is, says the "Narrative," "a vast pile of irregular massy buildings, constructed of stone, on the river-side. To its original strength, Cheyte Sing had added some bastions of stone and earth. The town round it was large, which rendered the approach to it suspicious; and the intricacy of the passages and apartments of the palace was such, that a cautious officer would hesitate, under almost any encouragement, to enter it." Though no orders had been issued to attack the place, Captain Mayaffre, anxious to distinguish himself, marched too close to it by some narrow and tortuous lanes, where, on the 20th of August, his party were attacked, defeated, and nearly annihilated. Captain Doxat and twenty-three Rangers were killed, and ten wounded. The battalion of the 6th Sepoys now came on, but was driven back with the loss of ninety-eight killed and wounded. Captain Blair covered the retreat with great bravery, and orders were sent to Lieutenant-Colonel Blair to push on the rest of the regiment from Chunar.

The result of this repulse was, that Hastings had to quit Benares with all his followers, as the fanatical multitude had gathered fresh courage;

and before daybreak, he had reached the strong fortress of Chunar, which occupies the summit and sides of a rock, thirteen miles from the holy city. It is surrounded by precipices on all sides, and the face, towards the Ganges, abuts boldly into the stream. On the very apex of the rock is a ruined Hindoo temple, and a slab overshadowed by a peepul-tree, on which the natives believe "the Almighty is seated personally, though invisibly, for nine hours every day, removing during the other three to Benares."*

The flight of Hastings gave great courage to the revolted; and we are told that hideous fakirs, smeared with ashes and ghee, spread the tidings everywhere. In the temples the bearded Brahmins harangued, the holy monkeys swung by their tails in the gilded pagodas, with grimaces prophetic of the downfall of the Unbeliever. The whole country rose in arms, and from Oude and Behar people came flocking, with vows to protect the rajah and his holy city. They spoke with confidence of driving the Feringhees out of that part of Hindostan at least, and soon an immense native force assembled between the rock of Chunar and Benares.

In an address he issued to neighbouring rajahs, he wrote, and with much show of truth, as comparing the state of the Company's territories with his own:—

"My fields are cultivated, my villages full of inhabitants, my country is a garden, and my subjects are happy. My capital is the resort of the principal merchants of India, from the security I have given to property. The treasures from the Mahrattas, the Jauts, the Sikhs, and the most distant parts of India, are deposited here. The widows and orphans convey here their property, and reside without fear of rapacity or avarice. The traveller from one end of my country to the other, lays down his burden and sleeps in security; but look at the provinces of the Company. There famine and misery stalk hand in hand through uncultivated fields and deserted villages. There you meet with nothing but aged men, who are unable to transport themselves away, or robbers watching to waylay the helpless. . . . Not contented with my treasures, they have thirsted after my honour also. They have demanded a sum of me which it is out of my power to pay. They want the plunder of my country; they demand my fort, the deposit of my honour and my family, whom they would turn helpless into the world. Arm yourselves, my friends; let us join to repel these rapacious strangers. It is the cause of all. When your honour

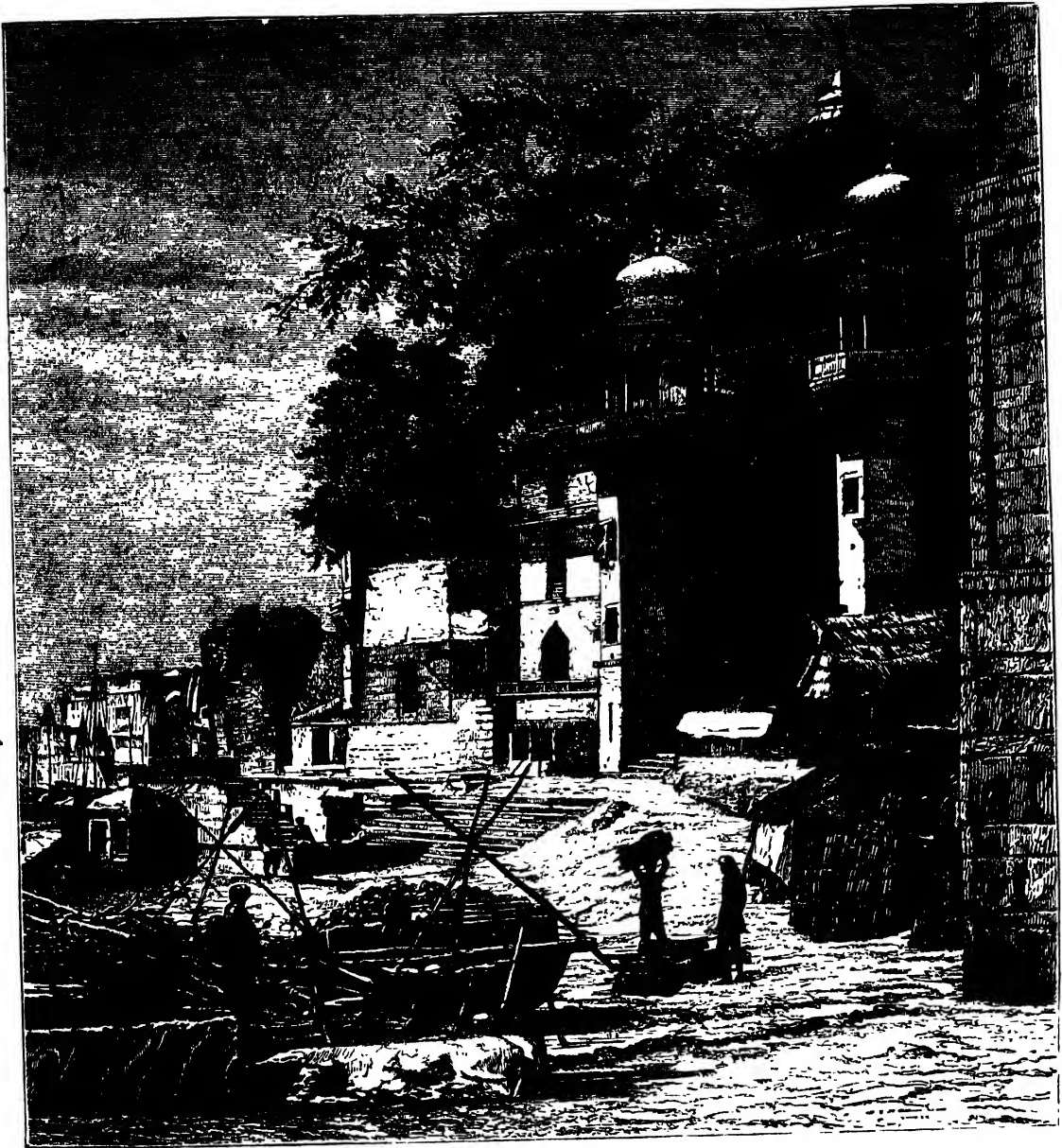
* Heber.



RESCUE OF CHEVTE SING: ATTACK ON THE SEPOYS.

is lost, of what value is life? Come, my friends, and join me! These plunderers have not yet so reduced me but I have support and provision for your troops."

had never been shown on any other occasion;" and, ere long, Hastings was at the head of a force that rendered resistance hopeless on the part of Cheyte, 30,000 of whose followers deserted him in



NEPAULESE PAGODA AT BENARES.

But the event proved that though Cheyte Sing could bluster and negotiate, he was no hero; and his courage fell as he heard of the rapid mustering of British troops, and how even the privates—who regarded Hastings with enthusiastic attachment, for had he not himself shouldered a musket?—"flew to his aid with an alacrity which, he boasted,

one day. By the 16th of September there were ready to cross the river two European companies under Captains Grant and Harrison; the European artillery under Captain Hill; the 7th, 19th, 30th, 35th, and 1st Battalions of the 6th Sepoys, respectively under Majors Crabb, Balfour, Roberts, Popham, and Captain Blair, with six

companies of the nabob's guards under Lieutenant Polhill.

Cheyte, after the river was crossed, fled at the first sound of our cannon, and in a few hours nothing could be seen of the great hordes he had mustered, and all his forts were taken with singular rapidity. He fled to Bidjeerghur, the chief fortress of the princes of Benares, fifty miles distant from that city, and there he deposited the most of his treasures, while Major Popham came on in hot pursuit. Poor Sing (*i.e.*, "lion"—but lion in name only) had not the courage to await his approach, but fled in the night to find an exile, from which he never returned, among the fastnesses of Bundelcund. In his haste he left behind him his wife, his mother, and all the women of his seraglio, who became the prisoners of Popham when, on the 10th November, he captured the castle, which was surrendered when about to be mined and stormed.

Hastings stated that the rajah carried off with him an immense sum in money, besides jewels; but £250,000 sterling in rupees were found in the old castle, and were appropriated by the troops, who, as usual, had been months in arrears of pay.

The following is the official despatch announcing to General Stibbert, Commander-in-chief in Bengal, the fall of the castle of Bidjeerghur:—

"Nov. 11th, 1781.

"Sir,—I have the honour to inform you of the surrender of this place, which was taken possession of last night by the European and native grenadiers, and light infantry, under Major Crawford.

"The Rhanny is allowed to reside in this province, or to follow her son, as she may choose; and if the last, will be escorted to our frontiers by a proper safeguard. She is allowed to have fifteen per cent. on the effects in the fort.

"The behaviour of the officers and troops has been such, upon the whole of the service, since

the breaking out of the war, that I hope it will, in some measure, be rewarded by the prizes from the effects within the fort. Had not the besieged surrendered, a mine would have been sprung immediately on their refusal, which would probably have given a practicable breach for the storm. I have the honour, &c.,

"W. POPHAM."

In the distribution of prize-money, Popham's share was £36,750 0 0

Each major 5,619 0 0

„ captain 3,970 15 0

„ subaltern 1,404 17 6

The soldiers shared in proportion, and of this distribution Hastings wrote thus to Major Scott:—

"Judge of my astonishment when I tell you that the distribution of the plunder was begun before I knew the place was in possession, and finished before I knew that it was begun." Refunding was found impossible; the unpaid troops rightly kept what they had got.

When 300 women, including the princesses, came out of the fort, they were all subjected to a rather degrading process of search for money or jewels—by four female searchers, says one authority; by the soldiers, says another—as it was feared that the old ranee might defraud them of their "loot" if this were not done. After the capitulation, she affirmed that the money found was not Cheyte's, but her own; that made no difference to the soldiers, and perhaps less to Hastings, after recent events; and he, considering some species of puppet rajah necessary in Benares, set up in Cheyte's place his nephew, a lad of eighteen, raising at the same time a tribute of forty lacs of rupees, and taking into his own hands the entire jurisdiction of the city and country.

Even the mint, the last vestige of sovereignty, was taken from the boy rajah, and placed under the control of our resident at Benares.

CHAPTER L.

THE BEGUMS OF OUDE.—THE GIFT TO HASTINGS.

By this—for the Company eventually—lucky revolution in Benares, though an addition of £200,000 per annum was made to the exchequer, yet ready money there was none; and to Hastings, and all concerned, it was but too evident that, unless it

were procured somehow or somewhere, the French, ever ready to take advantage of our necessities, would triumph in the Carnatic, and India might be lost after all.

The Governor-General therefore thought that

the screw could not be better applied than on Asoph-ud-Dowlah, the Nabob of Oude and Lord of Rohilcund, deemed then one of the most contemptible, debauched, and extravagant of Indian princes. He had been kept on his throne solely by the presence of a brigade of British troops quartered in his dominions; but as he squandered his treasure on favourites and pleasure, he soon complained of his inability to pay for this brigade, "the price of whose services had certainly been raised upon him year by year with little delicacy or justice."

Two years before this crisis, he alleged that he was without money to pay his cavalry, and that without the latter he could not collect his revenue; that he was without money for the payment of the debts of his father, or for the harem and all the children that his father had left behind him; still less had he money to pay for his own. The Governor-General admitted his alleged poverty; but urged that it was the result of his own excesses, adding that he could not defend himself for a day against the Rohillas and Mahrattas, and far less his own malcontents, were the brigade withdrawn; and he gave the luckless nabob to understand plainly that, whatever might have been the terms of the original treaty between them, the said brigade, and a considerable cavalry force, called the "Temporary Brigade," which somehow had been added thereto, should be kept in Oude so long as the Company chose; and that so long as these horse and foot remained there, he (the nabob) must find the means of paying them.

He pleaded the impossibility of doing so on one hand, while on the other it is alleged that the officers in command of these troops frequently received large sums from him in secret, by working on his nervous fears, while he indulged in every luxury peculiar to India, in a taste for the erection of costly palaces, till the cultivators of the soil and the traders, maddened by over-taxation, fled from Oude; and his arrears were so far accumulated that, at the time Hastings went to Benares, the nabob's debts to the Company, as charged in their books, amounted to a million sterling. It has been said that one of the chief objects of Warren Hastings, in making his journey up-country, was to obtain the liquidation of this heavy debt; and also, that had it never existed, a pressure of some kind would, at that time, have been put upon the nabob in some fashion: for though his exchequer might be empty of treasure, there were others in Oude who had it, and concealed it after the manner of the East.

On the adjustment of affairs at Benares, Hastings

would at once have set out for Lucknow, the capital of Oude; but this was unnecessary, as Asoph-ud-Dowlah, in his eagerness or anxiety to come to an understanding with the Company, presented himself at Chunar, where, shortly after his arrival, a treaty, taking its name from that castled rock, was concluded between Hastings and the nabob. The latter urged that if his payments for the two brigades had fallen into arrear, some of the forces might be dispensed with; so it was arranged that all who were deemed superfluous should be withdrawn, as it was evident that the Company gained nothing by keeping troops in Oude, to be paid for by themselves. A single regiment was to remain, as the body-guard of the resident.

In return for these concessions, the nabob was to rob (there is no other word for it) his mother and grandmother, and give the produce of that robbery to the East India Company; and the Governor-General knew that these ladies were the possessors of hoards of hidden treasure, "vast enough to achieve the salvation of the British empire in India." These hoards were estimated at £3,000,000 sterling, partially collected by the late Sujah Dowlah, who, as "a mark of affection to his mother, and the most beloved of his wives," bequeathed them also certain jaghires, which enabled them to live in great state and splendour. As the proceedings at Benares had resulted in the production of no ready money, and had, for the time, increased the financial difficulties of the Company, Hastings, in his desperation, agreed to the spoliation of the two Begums of Oude; thus the second article of the Treaty of Chunar provided for the resumption by the Company of the jaghires. It was said that doubts were entertained as to the validity of the testamentary bequests of Sujah Dowlah; that his will had never been produced, and that he could not alienate the jaghires from the state. It was proved, moreover, that the begums had promoted insurrectionary movements in Oude, had favoured the partizans of Cheyte Sing, after the massacre in the palace of Ramnuggur, and that their retainers had attacked small parties of the British troops. From the history of Hastings' trial, and the Memoirs of his friend Impey, it appears that these last-named facts were sworn to by British officers and other Europeans at the time, though they were denied in after years, when the names of the begums resounded in Westminster Hall.

On the 19th September, 1781, the Treaty of Chunar was signed, and therein it was definitely agreed between the Governor-General and the nabob, that the two old begums should be dispossessed of a portion of their great property; that

the nabob should retain their jaghires ; that their hidden treasures should be seized and handed over to the Company, in partial discharge of the debt of the nabob, who undertook to execute the process by which the treasure was to be got at.

He returned to Lucknow, from whence he went to Fyzabad, the ancient capital of Oude, in which the princesses resided. This was on the 8th of January, 1782. He was accompanied by a detachment of British troops, who, after three days' parley, got possession of the town quietly. With these the nabob then proceeded to the abode of the begums—"the Beautiful Residence"—a palace delightfully situated among hills and woods, through which flow pleasant streams. The troops took possession of the palace, on which the startled and shrieking begums shut themselves up in an inner apartment. But all negotiation with them proved unavailing ; so the nabob's next step was to operate on their feelings, through those of their confidential agents, two aged eunuchs, named Behar Ali Khan, and Jewar Ali Khan. They were seized, heavily ironed, and the usual processes, so common in the East for the discovery of money or any secret, were at once resorted to, "and the mind of Mr. Middleton, Englishman and English gentleman as he claimed to be, does not appear to have shrunk from their adoption." Hastings, we are glad to say, was not on the spot, when this "mode was found, of which, even at this distance of time, we cannot speak without shame and sorrow."

As it has always been held in the East that these unfortunate beings—who are estranged from all sympathy with their kind—are those whom princes may with safety trust, there was little doubt that they knew where the treasure was concealed, or, if they did not, that their sufferings would act upon the hearts of the begums and extract the secret. The sufferings of the old men, or perhaps their own, for they too were kept prisoners and almost starved, so far overcame the avarice of the Bhow Begum and younger widow, that before the 23rd of February, 1782, upwards of £500,000 had been paid by bond to Mr. Nathaniel Middleton. To raise the balance of what was demanded, they requested leave to go abroad, and seek the assistance of their friends ; but this was absolutely refused. After the two old eunuchs had been in confinement, their health gave way, and they "implored permission to take a little exercise in the garden of their prison." This the officer in charge of them wished they should have, and stated that if they desired to escape there was not the least chance of their being able to do so—heavily ironed and guarded as they were.

But the officer, says Macaulay, "did not understand the plan of his superiors. Their object in these inflictions was not security, but torture ; and all mitigation was refused ; yet this was not the worst. It was resolved by an English Government, that these two infirm old men should be delivered to the tormentors. For this purpose they were removed to Lucknow. What horrors their dungeon witnessed can only be guessed."

They were now put in the English prison—at least, their guards there were British troops in the service of the Honourable Company ; but in deference to the superior skill of the nabob's people in the modes of torture, that portion of the horrible work was left to the officials of Asophud-Dowlah. That scourging was a portion of their torture there can be little doubt, as the following letter, written by the assistant-resident to the officer in command, is among the records of the House of Commons :—

"Sir,—The nabob having determined to inflict corporal punishment upon the prisoners under your guard, this is to desire that his officers, when they shall come, may have free access to the prisoners, and be permitted to do with them as they shall see proper."

Every severity proving unavailing, a suspicion arose that the work of pillage was complete, or, if it was to be continued, lenient measures might attain it. The begums and their attendants, who had often been in danger of perishing from hunger (after, Macaulay says, £1,200,000 had been wrung out of them), were set free from restraint, and the eunuchs recovered their freedom. But the kind of treatment to which they had been subjected may be learned from the delight they expressed at their deliverance, as described by the officer commanding the sepoy guard at the time of their release. "In tears of joy Behar and Jewar Ali Khan expressed their sincere acknowledgments to the Governor-General, his Excellency the Nabob-Vizier, and to you, sir, for restoring them to that inestimable blessing—liberty ; for which they would ever retain the most grateful remembrance ; and, at their request, I transmit you the enclosed letters. I wish you had been present at the enlargement of the prisoners ; the quivering lips, with the tears of joy stealing down the poor men's cheeks, was a scene truly affecting. If the prayers of these poor men will avail, you will at the last trump be translated to the happiest regions in heaven."

The officer who wrote thus must have been either a very simple or a very servile man. Although the two begums and their eunuchs had but small

claim to public sympathy, from their alliance with Cheyte Sing, and other acts, the mode in which they were despoiled can by no means be justified; but, by the enemies of Warren Hastings, the whole proceedings were vividly exaggerated, for, twenty years after all the imprisonments and alleged tortures, in the year 1803, Arthur, Viscount Valentia, found at Lucknow the identical Ali Khan over whose sufferings the brilliant Burke had expended a torrent of eloquence. After all the cruelties he had undergone at the behest of the nabob, he was said to be worth half a million sterling. In his eightieth year he was still six feet in height, and stout in proportion, but then in his dotage, and the nabob still eyeing his property covetously. Bhow Begum had gone to her grave; but the mother of Asophud-Dowlah was in excellent health, and in possession of abundance of riches, notwithstanding all the lamentations that had been expressed over her fate in St. Stephen's and Westminster Hall.*

But for the money obtained in Oude, India would have been perilled; and every rupee of it went to defray the wars in the Carnatic, the operations on the Bombay side, and to keep quiet the ever-restless Mahrattas. During his visit to Chunar, the nabob had offered, and Hastings accepted, a present of ten lacs (or £100,000) not in specie, for he had none, but in bills on the great Souicars, or bankers of Oude. On the part of the Governor-General, the acceptance of these bills has been declared by some to have been altogether illegal, as by the Regulating Act, the servants of the Company were expressly prohibited from taking from the princes or powers of India, "any present, gift, donation, gratuity, or reward, pecuniary or otherwise;" though no such laws existed at the time of Clive's dealings with Meer Jaffier. Hastings and his friends seem to have maintained that he accepted the gift of the nabob, in order to have something in hand to apply to the public service. Thus, a good many months after, Hastings acknowledged the transaction to the Court of Directors; but an historian says, "the intention of concealing it should not be imputed to Mr. Hastings, unless so far as evidence appears; so in this case the disclosure cannot be imputed to him as a virtue, since no prudent man would have risked the chance

of discovery which the publicity of a banker's transactions implied."*

In a letter to the directors on the 20th December, 1782, Hastings begged their permission to retain the money, as he had saved but little, thus:—

"I accepted it (the gift) without hesitation, and gladly, being entirely destitute of means and credit, whether for your service or the relief of my own necessities. It was made, not in specie, but in bills. What I have received has been laid out in the public service; the rest shall be applied to the same account. The nominal sum is ten lacs, Oude currency. As soon as the whole is completed, I shall send you a faithful account of it, resigning the disposal of it to the pleasure of your honourable court. If you shall adjudge the disposal to me, I shall consider it as the most honourable appointment and reward of my labours, and I wish to owe my fortune to your bounty. I am now in my fiftieth year; I have passed thirty-one years in your service. My conscience allows me boldly to claim the merit of zeal and integrity, nor has fortune been unpropitious to their exertions. To these qualities I bound my pretensions. I shall not repine, if you shall deem otherwise of my services; nor ought your decision, however it may disappoint my hope of a retreat adequate to the consequence and elevation of the office which I now possess, to lessen my gratitude for having so long been permitted to hold it, since it has at least permitted me to lay up a provision with which I can be contented in a more humble station."

The £100,000 would not have been a bad sum to retire upon; but unfortunately Hastings asked it at a time when he was in extreme disfavour with the directors, and when the following resolution was moved in the House of Commons, on the 30th May, 1782:—

"Resolved that Warren Hastings, Esq., Governor General, and William Hornby, Esq., President of the Council of Bombay, having in sundry instances acted in a manner repugnant to the honour and policy of this nation, and thereby brought great calamities on India and enormous expenses on the Company, it is the duty of the directors to pursue all legal and effectual means for the removal of the said Governor-General and President from their respective offices, and recall them to Great Britain."

* Valentia's "Travels," &c.

* Mill.

CHAPTER LI.

FYZoola KHAN.—RESIGNATION OF WARREN HASTINGS, ETC.

IN the conferences at Chunar between Hastings and the nabob, the affairs of the last of the great Rohilla chiefs, who remained in Rohilcund, Fyzoola Khan, who had so nobly done battle for his country, and possessed the most extensive of all the jaghires there, came under discussion. By the treaty between Fyzoola and the Nabob of Oude—a document which the Company had guaranteed—he was to have quiet possession of a certain district near the Rohilla frontier, engaging to maintain 5,000 troops, with at least two-thirds of whom he was to assist the nabob in war. Whether true or false is doubtful now, but complaints had been made at the court of Oude, that the khan disregarded his military engagements, and was making himself dangerous in Rohilcund, though, among other sacrifices, he had bound himself to abandon all connection with the exiled chiefs of his country; yet, in the war with France, the khan, as bound by his treaty, sent some troops to join our ally, the nabob, and promised more.

Hastings and the Council—on the plea that “in the hurry of business, he and the other members of the board were deceived,” by some letter, “into the belief that 5,000 was the quota defined, and horse, though not expressed in the treaty, was distinctly understood”—proceeded now to put the usual screw upon the khan.

The latter urged, with truth, that the treaty stipulated no such thing; but that he should retain in his service never more than 5,000 men, and that whenever the nabob required aid, 3,000 of these should be at his disposal; he added, that all the cavalry he ever had did not exceed 2,000. On this, Hastings ordered that a deputation consisting partly of British officers and Oude officials, should wait upon the luckless khan, and instantly demand 3,000 horse, and if they were not forthcoming, to declare the treaty null and the guarantees also. Urging again and again the exact terms of that document, Fyzoola offered, if a little time were given him, to raise 2,000 cavalry and 1,000 infantry, and to pay down money in advance, enough to maintain these troops for a year. But the inexorable deputation, well aware that the greedy nabob was coveting the last fragment of Rohilcund, made a protest to the effect that the treaty was worth only so much waste paper.

Matters remained thus till the conferences took

place at Chunar, and in the new treaty made there with the nabob, Hastings, with singular harshness, inserted and signed an article which affirmed that Fyzoola Khan, by his breach of faith had forfeited the protection of the Honourable Company, and that, as his independent state was a source of political alarm to the nabob, the latter should be at liberty to resume possession of the jaghire, or territory of the khan.

Whether Hastings, under pressure of the moment, was sacrificing honour and justice, it is impossible to say; but he soon after informed the Council that he looked upon the whole affair as a mere blind to gratify the nabob for the present, and that no active measures would be taken for depriving Fyzoola Khan of his inheritance, and moreover, that our Government could always interfere to prevent it—words which mean nothing, if not very tortuous policy. Eventually Hastings induced Asoph-ud-Dowlah to give up the idea of invading the khan, or dispossessing him, for a handsome payment in bullion, and a British officer was actually sent to Fyzoola to demand from him fifteen lacs of rupees, promising that for that sum he was to be secured anew in his jaghire, which was to become perpetual and hereditary in his family. Fyzoola declared there was not so much money in all his country, and as none could be procured, Hastings, who felt that he was greatly to blame in the whole affair, firmly forbade all hostilities on the part of the nabob; thus Fyzoola Khan retained possession of the jaghire—the last remnant of his country held by a Rohilla—till his death in 1795, when he had attained to the age of a patriarch, and he left that corner of Rohilcund one of the most peaceful, prosperous, and thriving parts of Hindostan.

It is impossible to dismiss the ugly story of the two begums and the Treaty of Chunar, without some mention of the part played at this time by the Chief Justice of Bengal, Sir Elijah Impey, who certainly intruded himself into a business quite alien to his official duties. But some weeks after it had been agreed to punish the begums and arrest the old eunuchs, Sir Elijah, who happened to be on a tour of inspection among the minor courts of his province, Bengal, suddenly travelled to Lucknow, as fast as his palanquin-bearers could trot—at his own suggestion, according to Hastings—and

announced his intention to take the depositions of witnesses concerning the political offences of the ladies, their intrigues with Cheyte Sing, and so forth. It has been truly said by Macaulay that "under the charter of justice he had no more right to inquire into crimes committed by Asiatics in Oude, than the Lord President of the Court of Session of Scotland to hold an assize at Exeter." But now a host of witnesses—like those whom

He had evidently undertaken this long journey to countenance, in an irregular manner, legal proceedings in a place over which he had no jurisdiction whatever. He had so long and diligently studied the language of the country, and was so completely master of the Persian and Arabic tongues, that it has been averred that he would have been able both to question witnesses and master the affidavits, which he received in shoals,



HINDOO BANKERS OF THE NORTH-WEST PROVINCES.

Nuncomar had collected at Calcutta to swear away the life of Hastings—came pouring before Impey with affidavits in their hands, some of which he did not read, and some of which he was scarcely able to, as, says Macaulay, "they were in the dialects of Northern India, and no interpreter was employed. He administered the oath to the deponents," continues the essayist, "with all possible expedition, and asked not a single question, not even whether they had perused the statements to which they swore. This work performed, he got again into his palanquin, and posted back to Calcutta, to be in time for the opening of the term."

while the former mustered in jabbering hundreds; but "the evidence was collected in a hurry," wrote Hastings, "and on the suggestion of Sir Elijah Impey, who told me that facts of the most stamped notoriety here would be doubted at home, unless such means were taken to establish their reality." It is also said that even the depositions made in English, by a few of our officers who had taken service under the Nabob of Oude, were of the most vague and unsatisfactory nature, and their motives were not above suspicion; for one of them—Colonel Hannay, a Scotsman—was poor, and deeply in debt when he entered the service of

Asoph, and when he left it, five years later, he had realised—not without resorting at times to rough means—a fortune of £300,000. But the evidence the Chief Justice collected was all woven into the appendix of Hastings' narrative of the transactions concerning Cheyte Sing and the begums. Though why, or for what practical purpose the collection of verbose matter was made, is not very clear, after its transmission to the Court at Leadenhall Street.

"What applicability could it have to the guilt or punishment of the begums," asks a writer, "when the forfeiture of their jaghires and treasure had been decreed at Chunar weeks before any witness or affidavit had been seen; weeks before the Chief Justice reached Benares? Sir Elijah Impey, who retained the friendship and esteem of some of the best men in England, was assuredly not the man that Burke represented him to be; but his memory, like that of his friend and schoolfellow, must, in these matters, remain subjected to some dark imputations, lightened only by lame excuses, or the extreme difficulty and urgency of the cases, and the anomalous and undefined nature of the Company's relations with the native princes. And in reality, though Oude was nominally an independent kingdom, and not included in the Act or Acts which prescribed the limits of the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court of Calcutta, it was to all intents and purposes a conquered and dependent country. Even Sujah Dowlah, who wanted neither pride nor understanding, and who had kept together an army and a government far stronger than those of his contemptible son and successor, would have thought it an honour to have been called the Vizier of the King of England, and had actually offered to coin his money in the name, and with the effigy of George III. If the offer of sovereignty had been accepted; if the Company or nation had frankly declared themselves—what they were *de facto*—the lords and rulers of Oude and Benares, the mission of Sir Elijah Impey might have borne a somewhat different aspect."

On three years' notice, given at any time after the 25th of March, 1780, the great and exclusive privileges of the Company were to expire, and with a view to future arrangements, many communications passed between the Ministry and the directors. The chief points in debate were the claim of the Crown to the territories acquired by the Company, or the amount of payment which the latter should make to the public for their exclusive privileges. Lord North's Ministry, at this crisis, was in a somewhat precarious position, and thus gave the directors advantages of which they availed themselves to the full, and the Act was passed, leaving the most

important of these questions still open. Thus the Company were left in possession of all their former privileges, till three years' notice after the 1st of March, 1791, and a sum of £400,000 was accepted as full payment of the arrears due to the public under former arrangements; providing also, that in future, after payment of a dividend of eight per cent. out of the clear profits, the public should receive three-fourths of any surplus that might be found. And now two important boards were appointed; one was a select committee, for the examination of all proceedings relative to the administration of justice in Bengal; the other was a secret committee to inquire into the causes of the Carnatic war, and the state of the Company's coast possessions. Mr. Burke took the lead in one, and Henry Dundas, then Lord Advocate of Scotland, and afterwards Viscount Melville, was chairman of the other. From two to eighteen reports—twelve from the select and six from the secret committee—were received, containing a vast amount of important matter, still affording the best materials for a history of our Asiatic dominions during the interesting period referred to.

The last two years of his administration in India are said to have formed by far the happiest of the long and stirring public life of Warren Hastings. Our being at peace with France, enabled him to paralyse the power of the native princes, and get the whole country into a state of tranquillity such as it had never known before.

This interval of peace enabled Hastings to extend British influence in several new quarters, and to confirm it in others, at the very time when it was declining in the western hemisphere, where disasters attended our arms, and we were losing the American colonies. Though opposition against him had ceased in the Supreme Council publicly, in private, Francis and other vindictive enemies were preparing in London the means of his ruin and impeachment. On the reception of a letter from the directors, condemning his conduct at Benares, and declaring his treatment of Cheyte Sing alike impolitic and unwarrantable, he made a proposal of resigning, and while in a state of suspense as to whether this proposal would be accepted, and when a successor might arrive, he undertook a journey to Lucknow, though he must have foreseen that it would occupy several months.

For that city he set out on the 17th February, 1784, and reached it on the 27th of March; and as he passed through to Benares he had a good opportunity of beholding the result of the revolution effected there. Thither, from the confines of Buxar, he was followed by a multitude of clamorous

and discontented people, on whom a long-continued drought had brought distress and want. "Yet," he wrote, "I have reason to fear that the cause existed principally in a defective, if not corrupt, and oppressive administration." Devastation was apparent in every village, trade was discouraged, the revenue in danger from a violent appropriation of its means. When at Lucknow, he withdrew a detachment of our troops from the frontier of Oude, because the nabob complained that it ate up his revenues, and yielded by its services no equivalent return. While at Lucknow he was not indisposed to enter into some kind of treaty with the Mogul at Delhi, but as the idea was not encouraged by his colleagues, it was abandoned. Before undertaking this journey to Lucknow, he had sent Mrs. Hastings home, as her health was declining, and none who knew his affection for her could doubt that in this separation he had resolved to resign and follow her as soon as he possibly could. Thus he wrote to the directors informing them of his intended return home, and that, no successor having been appointed by them, his duties would be undertaken temporarily by Mr. Macpherson, the senior member of the Council.

Among his last duties was to further the erection of a monument to Mr. Augustus Cleveland, long a collector of revenue and administrator of justice in Bengal, who died a few days after embarking for England, in January, 1784; and on whose death his cousin, Sir John Shore, afterwards Lord Teignmouth, wrote a long monody, a few copies of which were printed in London in 1786, and again in his Memoirs in 1843.

As soon as it was known he was about to depart, he received complimentary addresses from all classes at Calcutta, to which he returned on the 4th of November, after an absence of nine months. As a benefactor to the people of Bengal, he had been, by them, ever regarded with affection and respect. The natives viewed him as a generous sovereign, and the civilians with respect and esteem; but among the troops this was blended with enthusiastic admiration, as he had ever treated them with honour, and reposed in them the most perfect confidence.

When about this time, Colonel Pearse's column, which performed the memorable march to Madras, returned, after four years' absence, to Calcutta, reduced from 5,000 to 2,000 bayonets, he heaped every distinction upon the survivors. He visited their cantonments, and conversed with the officers and soldiers, and made a lasting impression on the minds of them all, every favour being doubled by the manner in which it was conferred.

An officer of rank and distinction (Major-General Sir Henry Worsley) who, when a young subaltern, was an eyewitness of this scene, in a letter written years after to Sir John Malcolm, says: "Mr. Hastings, dressed in a plain blue coat, with his head uncovered, rode along the ranks. The troops had the most striking appearance of hardy veterans; they were all as black as ink, contrasted with the sleek, olive skins of our home corps. The sight of that day, and the feeling it excited, have never been absent from my mind; to it and to the affecting orders which Mr. Hastings issued, I am satisfied, I in a great degree owe whatever professional pride and emulation I have since possessed."* Colonel Thomas Deane Pearse died in 1789, at Dum-Dum, where a column was erected to his memory.

One of the last acts of Hastings in Calcutta, was to issue a general order to the Bengal army, expressing in the strongest terms his sense of its high military services, and thanking it for them. "The dark faces of the sepoys looked darker at his departure. Veterans, scarred with wounds, were seen weeping, and voices which meant to shout, broke down into a feeble note and wailing." Within three weeks of his return to Calcutta, he had written to the directors thus: "If the next regular advices should contain either the express acceptance of my resignation of the service, or your tacit acquiescence, I shall relinquish my office to the gentleman who stands next to me in the prescribed order of succession, and return to England as soon as the ship *Berrington* can be made ready to sail."

On the 1st of February, 1785, he formally delivered the keys of Fort William, and of the treasury, to Mr. Macpherson, the senior member of Council, and on the 8th he walked, a plain private gentleman, unostentatiously to the place of embarkation, his friends and admirers forming a long lane, down which he passed from the palace. Many boats and barges escorted him far down the Hooghley, and some sorrowful friends there were, who did not leave him till the dismal, black, and swampy Kedgerce was left behind, till the ship had rounded the Sand-heads, the pilot had left her, and she was ploughing the Bay of that Bengal which he was now quitting for ever.

On the homeward voyage he was accompanied by his friends, Anderson and Shore (afterwards Lord Teignmouth), who says he found him "a delightful companion, pouring forth the stores of his cultivated mind."†

* *E. I. U. S. Mag.*, 1834.

† "Life of Lord Teignmouth."

Though he might, it is said, have brought home a personal fortune, amounting to three millions sterling, he was content with less than £130,000—less than had been made by Mr. Barwell, and other councillors; much less than the amassings of many minor civilians, and greatly less than Sir Philip Francis had gleaned in six years, while Hastings had spent more than thirty years in India, and of these, thirteen as Governor-General. In June, he landed at Plymouth, and travelled post to London, confident of a warm reception by the king and people. Nor was he disappointed at first, at least; for it was acknowledged, says Macaulay, that our influence in the East had been extended, "nay, that Fort William and Fort St. George had not been occupied by hostile armies, was owing, if we may trust the general voice of the English in India, to the skill and resolution of Hastings. His internal administration, with all its blemishes, gives him a title to be considered as one of the most remarkable men in our history. He dissolved the double government; he transferred the direction of affairs to English hands. Out of a frightful anarchy, he educed at least a rude and imperfect order. The whole organisation by which justice was dispensed, revenue collected, peace maintained throughout a territory not inferior in population to the dominions of Lewis the Sixteenth, or the Emperor Joseph, was formed and superintended by him. . . . The just fame of Hastings rises still higher, when we reflect that he was not bred a statesman; that he was sent from school to a counting-house; and that he was employed during the prime of his manhood as a commercial agent, far from all intellectual society. Nor must we forget that all, or almost all, to whom, when placed at the head of affairs, he could apply for assistance, were persons who owed as little as himself, or less than himself, to education."

He and Mrs. Hastings were most graciously received by the king and queen, and in Leadenhall Street, the Court of Directors received him at a solemn sitting, when the chairman read a vote of thanks for his great services—a vote which had not one dissentient voice; but he knew that for years his old enemy, Francis, had been plotting and writing against him; and he knew that in the last session of Parliament, Edmund Burke, whom that gentleman had won completely over, had given notice of a motion that might prove fatal to his honour and future peace; yet, when Lord North, after scores of sounding speeches from Fox and Burke, had *not* been impeached for the loss of America, it did seem hard to Hastings that he should be impeached for saving India.

Though connected with the history of India, all that follows in this matter is somewhat apart from it, and thus we shall glance at it briefly.

In the next session of Parliament, the Commons resolved to impeach both Warren Hastings and Sir Elijah Impey, who had now been about a year in England. Francis, who was now in Parliament, had ever since his return from India devoted his whole energy, talent, and certainly extraordinary abilities, to attacking the administration of that country. "The ex-member of Council at Calcutta was impelled by ambition and revenge, two of the strongest of human passions, and both of them more violent and intense in the heart of Francis, than they are often found to be in English human nature. Francis's ambition was to become Governor-General of India, and to add to the great wealth which he had accumulated there."

He was spurred to hatred by the result of his duel with Hastings, and he cherished vengeance against Impey for having pronounced upon him, while resident in Calcutta, a sentence mulcting him in heavy damages, when once he became amenable to a civil prosecution. Impey defended himself at the bar of the House of Commons on the 4th of February, 1788, and fully exculpated himself in the matter of the trial and execution of Nuncomar, the first of six specific charges brought against him; but in spite of his acquittal, and that the other five charges were abandoned, the affair of Nuncomar (like the Rohilla war, the story of Cheyte Sing, and the oppression of the Begums of Oude), was pressed against Hastings.

His impeachment, and the votes for it, the examination of witnesses, the masses of documentary evidence, collected at a vast distance and at great expense, and the grand trial itself in Westminster Hall, were drawn out to the weary period of nine long years, till on the 17th of April, 1795, the great Warren Hastings was declared not guilty upon every charge; but so enormous were the expenses brought upon him by these vicious and most protracted proceedings, that for some time there seemed a chance of him ending his days in a debtor's prison. He was reduced to such distress that he could scarcely pay his weekly bills; but eventually an annuity of £4,000 per annum was settled upon him, and the Company for whom he had done so much, was allowed to lend him £50,000, to be repaid by instalments.

He survived his acquittal twenty-three years—time which he spent in that place which it had ever been the dearest wish of his heart to regain—Daylesford, which his forefathers had lost in the great Civil War. In 1813, he appeared for the last

time in public, when examined as a witness on some Indian affairs before Parliament, when the Commons received him with universal acclamations. A chair was set for the old man, and all rose and uncovered when he withdrew. The Lords received him with equal respect. The University of Oxford conferred upon him the degree of Doctor of Laws, and in the Sheldonian Theatre, the undergraduates welcomed him with the most tumultuous cheering. "These marks of public esteem, were soon followed by others of royal favour. Hastings was sworn of the Privy Council, and admitted to a long audience of the Prince Regent, who treated him very graciously. When the Emperor of Russia and the King of Prussia visited England, Hastings appeared in their train at Oxford and in the Guildhall of London, and though surrounded by a crowd of princes and great warriors,

was everywhere received with marks of respect and admiration. He was presented by the Prince Regent both to Alexander and to Frederick William; and his Royal Highness went so far as to declare in public that honours yet higher than a seat in the Privy Council were due and would soon be paid to the man who had saved the British dominions in Asia. Hastings now confidently expected a peerage, but from some unexplained cause, he was disappointed."

Peacefully and tranquilly he passed away on the 22nd of August, 1818, in the eighty-sixth year of his age, after so many troubles and so much unmerited obloquy. He was buried behind the chancel of Daylesford Church, in the grave of his forefathers, where "on that very spot probably, the little Warren, meanly clad and scantily fed, had played with the children of ploughmen."

CHAPTER LII.

MR. PITT'S BILL FOR INDIA.—ACQUISITION OF PENANG, ETC.

BEFORE the return of Warren Hastings to England, and even while he was sailing on the sea, various parliamentary proceedings, of which India was the subject, took place. Within the space of nine months, three statesmen of distinction aspired to legislate for that distant region. The first Bill had been proposed by Mr. Dundas so early as 1783; the second by Fox, but the third was brought forward by Mr. Pitt, who had now reached the summit of his popularity.

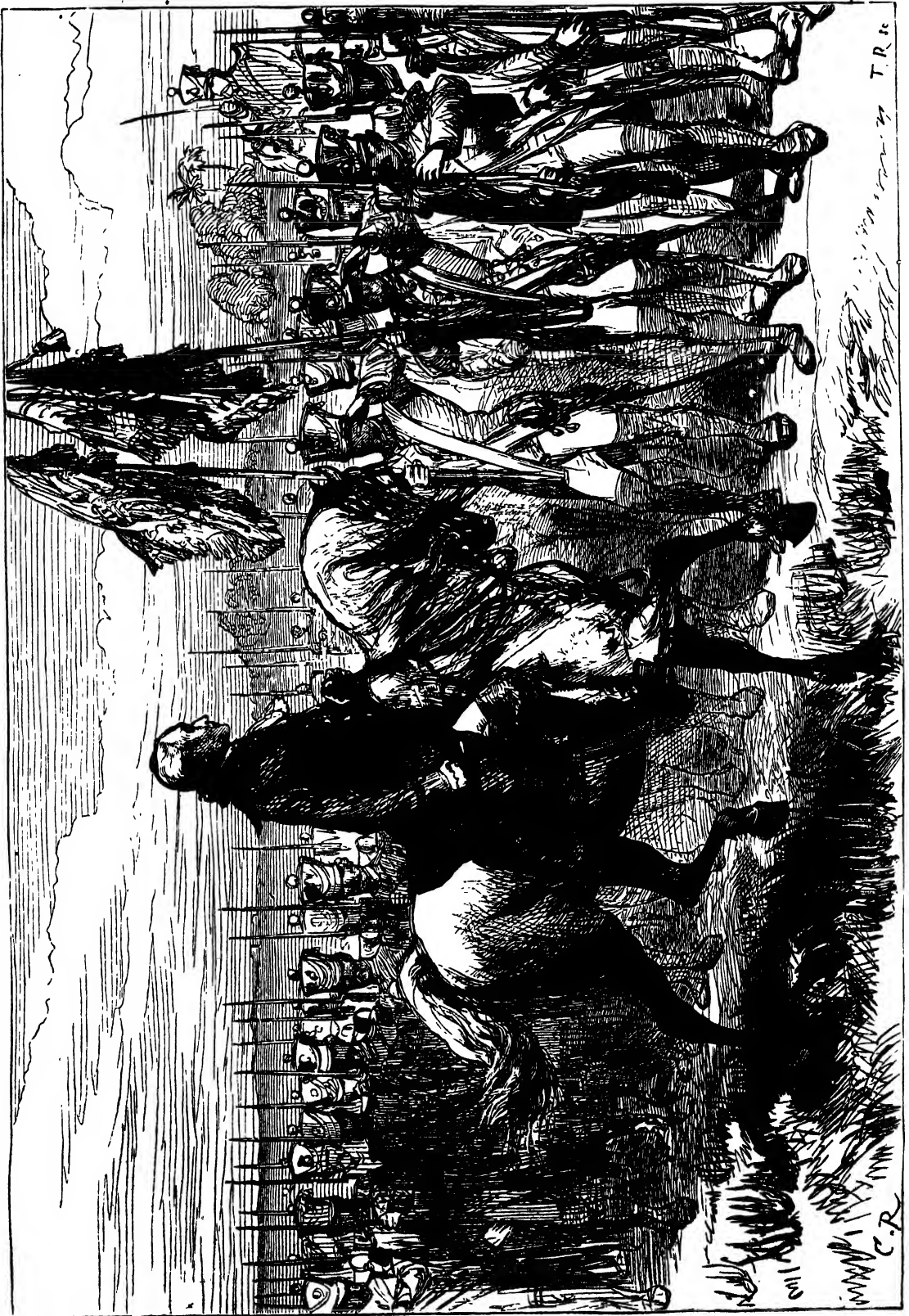
It was in the summer of 1784 that he again introduced that which was known as his great Bill for the future government of India. By this measure a Board of Control, composed of a certain number of commissioners, of the rank of Privy-Councillors, was established, the members of which were to be appointed by the king, and removable at his pleasure. This board was to check, superintend, and control the civil and military government, and the revenue of the Company. All despatches transmitted to the Court of Directors were previously to be submitted to the inspection of the board, to which the directors were to pay due obedience in all matters pertaining to the government and revenue of India.

In the case of orders not connected with these

points, the directors were to appeal to his Majesty in Council, whose decision would be final. The Bill also enacted that the appointment by the Court of Directors to the office of Governor-General, President, or Councillor to the different provinces, shall be subject to the approbation and recall of his Majesty. As to the zemindars, or great hereditary landholders of India, who had been violently dispossessed of their property, and who, according to a clause in Fox's Bill, were to have been instantly reinstated in their zemindaries, the Bill provided only, that an inquiry should be instituted for the restoration of those who had been unjustly deprived of their property.

Lastly, a high tribunal was created, for the trial of Indian delinquents. It was to consist of three judges, one from each court, four peers, and six members of the Lower House, who were authorised to judge without appeal; to award, in case of conviction, the punishment of fine or imprisonment, and to declare the party convicted incapable of serving the East India Company in any capacity.

These were the leading features of Mr. Pitt's Bill. His perpetual opponent, Fox, drew attention to its supposed weak points in one of his forcible speeches. "It established a weak government,



WARREN HASTINGS REVIEWING PEARCE'S COLUMN.

by dividing its powers," he observed. "To the one board belonged the privilege of ordering and contriving measures; to the other, that of carrying them into execution. It was a system of dark intrigue and delusive art. Theories which did not connect men with measures were not theories of this world; they were chimeras with which a recluse

could such a government be other than the constant victim of internal distraction? The appeal allowed from the Board of Control to the Privy Council, was only an appeal from the aggressor transformed into the character of a judge, and was therefore in the highest degree nugatory and ridiculous. The bill he had introduced exhibited,



LORD CORNWALLIS.

might divert his fancy, but they were not the principles on which a statesman would found his system. By the negative power vested in the commissioners, the chartered rights of the Company, on which such stress had been laid, were insidiously undermined and virtually annihilated. If it were right to vest such powers in a board of Privy Councillors, let it be done explicitly and openly, and show the Company and the world that what they dared to do, they dared to justify.

• "Founded on principles so heterogeneous, how

at the first blush, the features of openness, fairness, and responsibility. The present plan was full of darkness and disguise. In a covert and concealed mode, an immense patronage was transferred to the Crown, which, already possessing a dangerous and formidable ascendancy over the other branches of the legislature, could not but open a new door to every species of collusion, and in an alarming degree accelerate the progress of corruption. It was calculated to establish an Indian Government of the island of Great Britain. Against the clauses

of the Bill respecting the zemindars, he entered his strongest protest; the zemindars ought, in his opinion, to be rated by a fixed rule of past periods, and not of a vague and indefinite future inquiry. The new tribunal he stigmatised as a screen for delinquents; as a palpable and unconstitutional violation of the sacred right of a trial by jury. Since no man was to be tried but on the accusation of the Company or the Attorney-General, he had only to conciliate Government in order to his remaining in perfect security. It was a part of a general system of deception and delusion, and he would venture to pronounce it a bed of justice, where justice would for ever sleep."

Eventually so many amendments were made to the bill, that Sheridan remarked humorously, "that twenty-one new clauses were added to it, which were distinguished by the letters of the alphabet; and he begged some gentleman to suggest three more, in order to complete the hornbook of the present Ministry." On the motion of commitment the numbers were, Ayes, 276; Noes, 61; and it was carried in triumph to the House of Peers, where, after an opposition, vigorous in point of exertion, but feeble in regard of numbers, the bill passed into law on the 9th of August, 1784; it received the royal assent on the 13th, and now ranks in the statute book as 24 Geo. III., c. 25. Thus the new bill for the government of India had become an accomplished fact ten months before Warren Hastings again trod English soil.

On the latter quitting Bengal, without waiting for a regularly appointed successor, Mr. (afterwards Sir John) Macpherson, the same gentleman who in times past had been intriguing with the Ministry for the "Nabob of Arcot," as he was named, acted as Governor-General until the arrival of Lord Cornwallis; and in the interval the Mahrattas, under Mahadajee Scindia captured Agra, which remained in their possession until 1803.

About the same time the Bombay Government sent 200 European troops and 500 sepoys to take possession of the little isle of Diego Garcia, one of the Chagos Archipelago, in the Indian Ocean, an immense chain known to the Arabs as "the Eleven Thousand Islands." This islet lies about 200 leagues north-east of the Isle of Bourbon, and the Marquis de Bussy had permitted some French and negroes to settle there, merely to ascertain to whom it belonged. The British alleged that they required it as a watering place; but the French Ministry protested against this, supposing we might make it a lodgment for troops to attack the Isles of France and Bourbon. Eventually, it was used as a place of exile for the lepers of the Mauritius.

It was during the short administration of Macpherson that we obtained, in a somewhat singular manner, possession of Penang, or Prince of Wales Island, on the western coast of the Malay Peninsula, having an area of about 155 square miles, and now deemed one of the loveliest places in the eastern world. Yet a portion of the island is sterile and covered with a forest of tall trees. It consists chiefly of a central mountain range, exquisitely diversified with plains, valleys, and rivers, and having a delightful climate. "The mountainous cone which commands the island," says Doctor Yran, "is divided into climatic zones, with as much regularity as the scale of a thermometer. At the foot of this volcanic elevation you find the warm temperature of the oceanic regions; at its summit, the tonic freshness of Laguna or Salassy; a bracing climate which invigorates without the painful contractions occasioned by our sharp winter cold. This paradise came into possession of the British by having been given by the King of Keddah as a wedding dower to his daughter, who married an Englishman. The happy husband, with the consent of his consort, named it Prince of Wales Island, and presented it to his country; and since then it has become a place of resurrection for the bold conquerors of India. . . . The operation of the climate is infallible. The organisation, debilitated by the humid heat of Calcutta, Madras, or Bombay, recovers here, as well as at Cape Town or Teneriffe, the energy which has been lost for years."

The Englishman referred to was Captain Francis Light, of the Company's service. The Bengal Government, seeing that the isle—which also bears the name of Betel-nut Island—was peculiarly adapted as a mercantile station for vessels from all the Malay ports, Borneo, Celebes, and the Philippines, did not hesitate to accept the offer made by Captain Light, with permission of the King of Keddah, a small state on the coast of Malacca, and tributary to the Kings of Siam (to whom he yearly sends a little tree of gold) and on the 12th of August, 1786, the captain landed at the head of a body of the Company's troops, and formally took possession of the island in the name of his Majesty, and immediately commenced to clear the country, cut down the wood, and construct a fort for the protection of his soldiers against any attempts of the Malay chiefs, who might be instigated by the Dutch to cut them off. This he named, in honour of the coming Governor-General, Fort Cornwallis. It is at the north-east point of the island; and was originally badly constructed, and though large sums have been spent on it since, it is still almost incapable of defence.

The ships bound to China generally touch here, and load large quantities of canes, sago, pepper, and the betel-nut, which grows in abundance, and which is extensively used over all the East, as a stimulant, all other intoxicating things being deemed immoral, unclean, or irreligious; it has been for ages the delight and solace of many dusky millions of the human race; and it is reckoned by the Hindoos as the fifth amongst "the eight delights," which are, women, *adai* (said to be garments), jewels, food, *betel*, fragrance, singing, and flower-beds. A piece of the nut is folded up in the betel-leaf, on which a little plaster is spread like butter, and the whole is chewed together, thus producing a hot and red saliva; accordingly, says Bruce, a great many of the poorer classes in India, whom one meets there, seem to be squirting blood from their mouths; and to this plant the Hindoos assign a divine origin.

The myth tells us that one of the nymphs of heaven, having fallen in love with a handsome young man, invited him to meet her in her celestial abode. There, while visiting her, he saw and tasted of the betel, and felt all its alleged joy-giving virtues, for it was then a fruit peculiar to the soil of heaven; and before bidding his immortal mistress adieu, he secretly took a plant with him, and brought it to this lower world, where it has been abundantly propagated and enjoyed.*

It was also during Macpherson's government that two remarkable contributions were made to our then limited information concerning the mighty peninsula of which we were gradually becoming masters, country by country, and district after district, and these discoveries are mentioned by Auber. It would seem that in 1785, Mr. Malet (afterwards Sir Charles Warre Malet, Bart., of Wilbury, in Wiltshire), then of the Bombay Civil Service, was appointed resident at Poonah, and received orders to repair first to Calcutta, to acquaint himself with the politics of the Mahrattas. On this duty he proceeded by the way of Oojeen (or Oojain), a tract then almost unknown to Europeans, a distance of 479 miles. "After giving an account of the fort of Bheroodghur, about two miles distant from Oojeen, he proceeded a mile and a half further, when he discovered a very large and gloomy edifice of peculiar strength, and still in very good repair, erected on an artificial island, formed for the purpose by the stream of Sessera, and connected with the western bank by a bridge of sixteen arches. In the western stream, which he considered to be an artificial one, were a surprising

multitude of various apartments, constructed on a level with the water, and in the midst of it, the water being conveyed round them in various channels into reservoirs contrived for its reception, whence it was conveyed by proper inlets from the bed of the river, into which it was again discharged by little artificial cascades. It was stated to have been built by Sultan Nasic-ul-deen-Gighee, who ascended the throne of Malwa in the year of the Hijrah 905, and reigned eleven years. He was represented as cruel and oppressive; he had contracted an intolerable heat by his habit of eating fixed quicksilver, and found so much relief within these watery abodes, from their coolness, that he spent the whole of his time there, where he also carried on the business of his government."*

The other discovery, which the author just quoted records, is the canal cut from the Jumna, which includes the city and fort of Allahabad, and which Sujah Dowlah caused to be excavated.

Undoubtedly, much good was done in India during the short administration of Macpherson, to whom the Court of Directors awarded an unanimous vote of thanks, when he resigned his functions on the arrival of his successor, in whose diplomatic and military career many stirring events were fated to take place.

Credit was due to Macpherson for financial ability, the exertions he made to meet the pressure on the treasury, and his economy in effecting reductions wherever they were practicable. As a reward for these services, and partly, no doubt, for political services rendered at various times, this humble person, who had come from Skye as purser of a Company's ship, was, on the 10th of June, 1786, rewarded by a baronetcy, which is now extinct. His great stature and remarkable softness of manner, won him in India the sobriquet of "the Gentle Giant."

The Bengal Council was now ordered to consist of Earl Cornwallis, Messrs. Macpherson, Stables, and Stuart; and Mr. John Shore (afterwards Lord Teignmouth) was to succeed to the first vacancy in the Supreme Council.

Sir Archibald Campbell was appointed Governor and Commander-in-chief at Madras, with Messrs. Daniel, Davidson, and Casamajor, as Councillors; and by the Court of Directors, an annuity of £1,500 per annum was granted to Lord Macartney, "as a consideration for the unexampled integrity displayed by that nobleman during his administration at Fort St. George."

In this year there was circulated a strange

* "Scenes and Sights in the East."

* P. Auber, "Rise, &c., of the British Power in India."

rumour, which originated in Paris, that there was a plan for the partition of India between Britain and France, as the basis of a perpetual alliance between the two countries. "This is intended to

be at the expense of the Dutch ; and France supposes that England will accede to the proposal, from a resentment of the conduct of Holland in the late war."*

CHAPTER LIII.

CORNWALLIS AND HIS MEASURES.—THE KING'S AND COMPANY'S SERVICES, ETC.

CHARLES, VISCOUNT BROME, first Earl, and afterwards Marquis, of Cornwallis, was the second Governor-General of India, and the first who united his office with that of Commander-in-chief. He had been educated at Eton and the military school of Turin ; and after first joining the Guards, became a captain in the old 85th Regiment, which was disbanded in 1763, prior to which he had served under the Marquis of Granby, and became colonel of the 12th Foot, and afterwards of the 33rd. He was twice M.P. for the borough of Eye, in Suffolk ; and when he took his seat in the House of Lords, became a supporter of Whig, or what would now be termed Liberal, principles ; and he was ever opposed to the then fatal measures by which we lost our American colonies.

Notwithstanding the unfortunate manner in which the war in the United States ended in his hands, he was deemed so able an officer, that the Government thought themselves fully justified in trusting him with the supreme power in India ; and he landed at Calcutta on the 12th of September, 1786, and after taking the requisite oaths, assumed the office of Governor-General in the land where he was fated to die. "Lord Cornwallis," says a writer, "was high-minded, disinterested in money matters, mild and equitable in temper, anxious to do good and prevent evil, steady and persevering in his application to business, and particularly distinguished by his sincere desire to maintain peace, and promote the welfare of our Indian subjects. Both the Parliament and the Company had recommended that no more wars should be undertaken for the extension of territory, and that leagues and alliances with the restless native powers should be avoided. His lordship himself certainly went to the Ganges with the hope of avoiding wars of conquest, and of keeping the whole of British India, and the states dependent upon it, in a happy condition of undisturbed peace. It was a pleasant vision ; but it

soon vanished, and he found himself constrained to act in politics and war, and with reference to the native princes, in much the same manner as Mr. Hastings acted." The refusal of Lord Macartney to act as Governor-General of Bengal, except on such terms as the ministry deemed it inexpedient to grant, had kept that responsible office vacant till the earl accepted it, which he did with the full sanction of all interested in the welfare of India.

Pitt's India Bill of 1784 was now in full operation, and had been further aided and improved by other amending Acts passed in 1786. By these, several parts of the first bill were explained and improved, and the powers of the Governor-General were more enlarged and better defined than they were during the thirteen stormy years of Hastings' rule. He had the discretionary right of acting, in extraordinary cases, without reference to the Supreme Council ; thus, the jealousies and incessant opposition that had been the bane of Hastings' existence, and of his official career, and which more than once had jeopardised our Indian dominions, were obviated or done away with. Moreover, the noble rank and general character of Earl Cornwallis, "while they placed him above the Ministers of the Crown, or the fear of the Court of Directors, commanded a respect from the civil and military servants of the Company, which, added to the increased powers with which he was vested, freed him from every shadow of opposition. He was enabled, from the same causes, to stipulate to exertion, by the distinction which his personal favour bestowed, the first talents in India."

Three years of peace followed his first landing at Calcutta ; and during that time his government became consistent and consolidated before the coming of that fierce rupture, at the bottom of which was the old intriguing spirit of France. Promises of assistance which his predecessor, Sir

* *Gentleman's Magazine*, 1786.

John Macpherson, had somewhat unwisely made to the Mahrattas, placed him in a dilemma, from which there was a difficulty in escaping, without offending them or Tippoo Sahib, who, if such assistance had been given, would have deemed it infractious of the treaty with him; and Tippoo was a personage to take, and make most of, an affront.

This was the first troublesome matter with which Lord Cornwallis had to grapple—the treaty by which Sir John Macpherson bound the Company to furnish the Peishwa of the Mahrattas with a body of troops, in direct violation of their treaty with Tippoo, who was then engaged in hostilities with the Mahrattas—and this matter the earl had to take in hand within a fortnight after his arrival, with the express intention, as he wrote to Henry Dundas, President of the Board of Control, and afterwards Secretary of State for the Home Department, of getting out of the “foolish scrape” somehow, but without sending troops.* No less than three battalions of infantry had been promised to the Mahrattas; and to avoid the critical and dangerous situation, and avoid, alike, a quarrel either with Tippoo or the court of Poonah, advantage was taken of the change in the government to intimate to the latter, that a strict adherence to treaties then extant would not permit of the troops being supplied, as in all its future conduct, the new government of India resolved to act with a spirit of the strictest justice.

The Nana *Furnavese* (a term similar to Chancellor of the Exchequer), the Dewan, and other Mahratta ministers at Poonah, expressed bitter disappointment, and even advanced charges of double-dealing; but no rupture was the result, and, for the time, the storm blew over.

The financial affairs of the Company next engaged the attention of the earl, who took a rather gloomy view of them, and he expressed his fear that through monetary difficulties all might go to ruin in his hands; and, as the other presidencies were absorbing the produce of the revenues, he urged upon the directors fresh issues of paper. Many of the native princes, and other persons of exalted rank, now expressed a desire to visit Calcutta. Among others was the Nabob of Oude, who, though the pressure of his money affairs was greater than ever, proposed to come in person, but sent Hyder Bey Khan, his minister, instead; and with this official the earl had many interviews concerning the affairs of his master.

“The total mismanagement of Oude,” wrote the earl to Henry Dundas, “the confused manner of

stating accounts between the vizier and the Company, and the constant practice on one part of trumping up charges to extort every rupee that it is possible to get; and on the other, of making use of every art and evasion to defer payment, have rendered it very difficult to establish a fair open line between us.”

It was arranged, after many interviews of Hyder Bey with Cornwallis, that the Company should keep two brigades in Oude, and that, instead of seventy-four lacs which the Company had previously exacted, the nabob should pay in future, and in full of all demands against him, only fifty lacs. As the revenue of that province then exceeded two millions sterling yearly, the sum demanded—a fourth of the whole—was deemed a reasonable tribute, in return for the complete protection we afforded it. There were doubts, however, whether, having regard to the then condition of Oude, the money would ever be forthcoming. The nabob was spending every coin he could get in elephants, horses, cock-fighting, and every species of debauchery. In his stables alone were 1,000 horses, yet he never rode one. His ministers were as rapacious as himself; they cheated him, and then cheated each other. They charged seventy lacs per annum for troops to enforce the collections; but half the troops were “men of straw,” whose pay went into the purses of Hyder Bey Khan and Almass Ali Khan, a favoured and trusted eunuch.

But even in Calcutta, society must have been somewhat loose and strange at this time, if we are to judge from a letter addressed to the publisher of a Bengal paper of this same year, 1788. Entering an auction-room of Calcutta, “to my infinite astonishment, I heard announced for sale a creditable, well-looking young woman, apparently seventeen or eighteen years of age. It would be vain for me to attempt to describe the situation which this poor creature was reduced to, on perceiving herself thus publicly offered to the highest bidder, and held so low in estimation, as to render it necessary for the auctioneer to propose five rupees as a sum to commence the advances from. The pitiable object, exposed in this open manner for a purchaser, gained considerably on the susceptible minds of the people who were present, and was actually sold for the fourth of what is given for a well-bred English greyhound. But the anguish of her mind was strikingly evident from that true index, her countenance.”*

This must have been done in defiance of the law, passed in May, 1774, which we have already mentioned; and yet it is about this time that

* “Cornwallis Correspondence.”

* *Calcutta Chronicle*, 1788.

we find the celebrated Charles Grant, afterwards Chairman of the Board of Directors, repairing, at the personal expense of 10,000 rupees, the Protestant Church of Calcutta, named the Beth-Tepillah, or House of Prayer, which had become ruinous, and also rebuilding St. John's Church there, or, at least, largely contributing thereto.

A visit which was offered from Jewan Bukt Behauder Shah, the heir apparent of Shah Alum, was declined by Cornwallis, as it was impossible for him to countenance certain schemes which he had in view to better himself. His aged father had never been his own master since he quitted the Company's protection; but had become a passive tool, that passed from hand to hand, as each revolution succeeded the other at Delhi; until he fell into the clutches of Gholam Kadir Khan (son of the Rohilla Nabob of Taharunpore), who had rebelled against him, and who now put out one of his eyes with his own dagger; and with this terrible exception, his person had been constantly in the possession of the Mahrattas. Some time before his death by fever at Benares, his son, Jewan the Shazada, had the interview he had besought with Lord Cornwallis, who was then making a tour in the north. His urgent application for troops and money for the purpose of re-establishing the throne of his forefathers, was met with a firm refusal. As a last favour, the humbled and fallen heir of the Great Mogul then begged that he might have an asylum within the British territories, in the event of his having to fly from his enemies. Cornwallis granted the request, which was reduced to writing, and signed by himself and the Council.

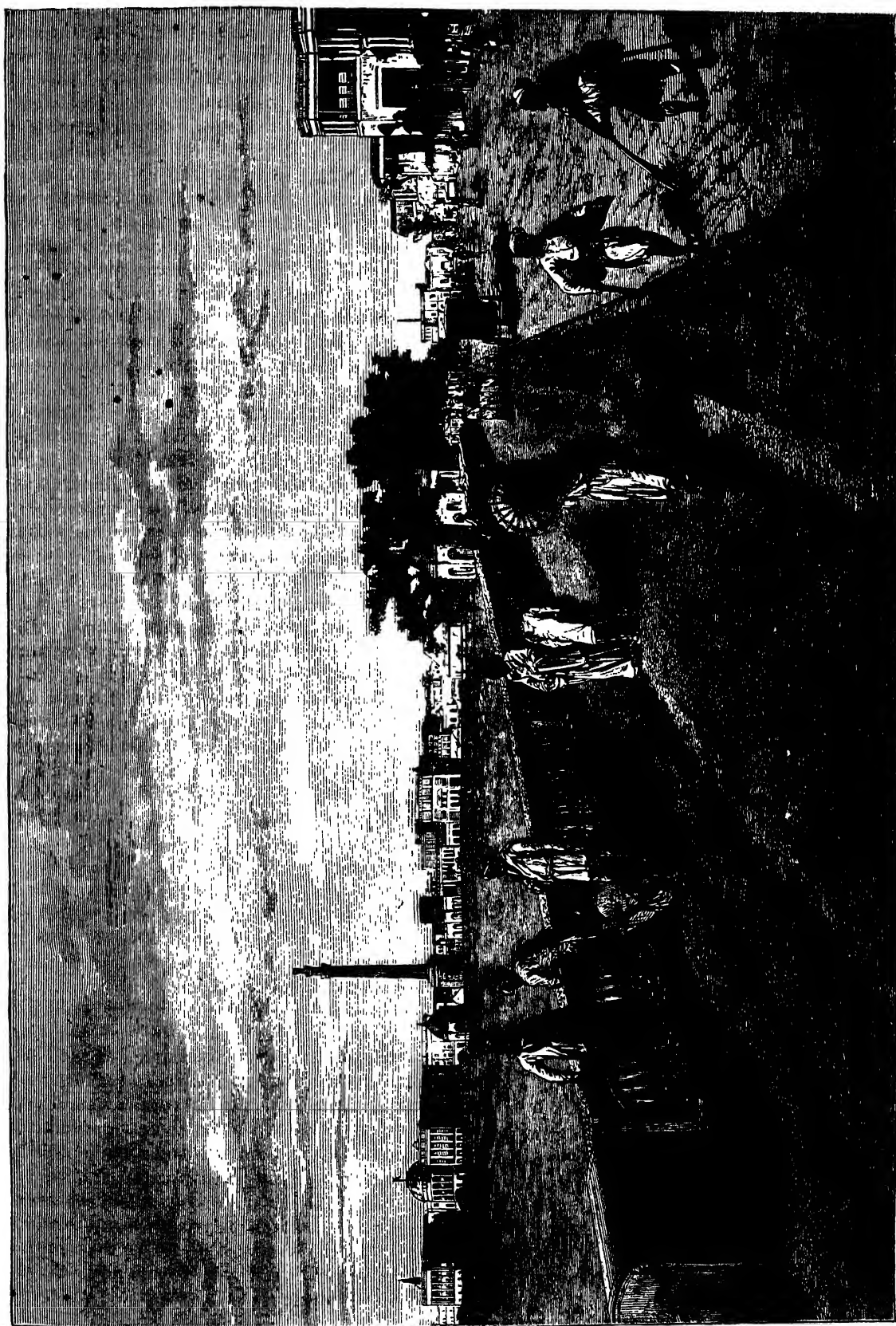
In the summer of 1789, Mr. John Shore, who had been acting chief of the Revenue Board till his return to Europe, in 1785, completed an arduous task which he had undertaken, and to which he had given every hour that he could spare from illness and official duty. This was the preparation of the Decennial, or, as it proved in the end, the Permanent Settlement of the Revenues of Bengal, Behar, and Orissa: "a measure affecting the property, and involving the multifarious and conflicting privileges of a population then amounting to nearly forty millions, including the inhabitants of the comparatively small portion of the territories in the Madras Presidency, to which it was subsequently extended. The extreme difficulty of effecting the proposed arrangement may be inferred from the failure of previous attempts to accomplish it, during the twenty-four years in which the revenues of the three provinces had been possessed by the East India Company; whilst it required practical knowledge, which was wanting to the Company's

servants, in consequence of their having been withdrawn by Mr. Hastings from the immediate collection of the revenues. The execution of it rested chiefly on Mr. Shore's abilities and experience; to which honourable testimony has been borne by Lord Cornwallis, and by the fifth Parliamentary Report on East Indian Affairs, which distinctly states that his 'ability and experience, in supplying the deficiency of the servants of the Company in the knowledge of the rights and usages of the different orders of the people connected with the revenues, enabled the Government to carry its measures into effect.' " *

The state of the Company's troops at this time—so different from its state in latter years—occupied much the attention of Cornwallis. He found their artillery what it has ever been, in splendid condition, but the European infantry had attained, in his estimation, but a low standard. At this time, he wrote, that "the Company's officers have no regiments or governments to look forward to (*i.e.*, neither high military commands nor good civil appointments). Few constitutions can stand this climate many years; if they cannot save some money, they must go home without rank or pay, condemned to disease and beggary." Then he found the material from whence their European recruits were drawn was bad. The battalions were under their proper strength, and that, such as it was, made up chiefly of foreigners, sailors, invalids, and men of unfitting stature. Among them, too, were some broken-down gentlemen, and even half-pay officers of the royal service, who enrolled to get a passage free to India, where, on landing, they always strove to procure a substitute. These substitutes were almost invariably sailors, who deserted on the first opportunity, and shipped for some other land; and to the redress of these abuses, and alteration of this state of things, he steadily applied himself; and it was well he did so, for war with the terrible Tippoo was at hand.

Another object he had in view—but in 1786—was an amalgamation of all the European troops in India, and to have them named and styled "the King's troops." By this means he thought to put an end to the jealousies and disputes about precedence then, and for several years after, the fruitful cause of many a quarrel and duel. But after long consideration, he had serious doubts of achieving this object; and he did not venture further than to urge that the East India Company should have the most ample means afforded them for securing good recruits at home, and that their officers should

* "Life of Lord Teignmouth," vol. i.



rank with those of our service, according to the dates of their commissions. Though fully conceded in the end, these two simple and just points were disapproved at home; and it was urged by Mr. Dundas, that the king would never "be brought to yield up the notion of his commission having a pre-eminence over one flowing from a commercial body of his own subjects."

In 1786, before these plans had been mooted, the Government had been resolving to send out to India four new European regiments belonging to the line, as there was rumour of a war with France, and the directors were quite pleased with the idea; but when the war proved a rumour only, they changed their views, objected to these regiments being sent out, and ungraciously refused to admit them on board of any of their Indiamen, or to furnish pay for them from their exchequer. This caused a direct collision between the directors and the Board of Control, with whom the Ministry were identified, and with whom they took part. At this time, part of the troops were already prepared for embarkation.* Thus was brought in and passed the Declaratory Bill of 1786, explaining the powers vested in the Board by the Act of 1784, and which ranks as 28 Geo. III., c. 8, and which met with bitter opposition from Colonel Barré (Barré, the friend of Wolfe) and others.

The Act proceeds on the preamble "that doubts had arisen whether the board of Commissioners, under Act 24 Geo. III., c. 25, were empowered to direct that the expense of troops necessary for the security of the British territories in India shall be

defrayed out of the revenues of these territories, 'unless such troops are sent out at the express requisition of the East India Company;' and removes the doubts by enacting and declaring that the board 'was and is, by the said Act, fully authorised and empowered to order and direct, that all the expenses incurred for raising, transporting, and maintaining such forces as shall be sent to India, for the security of the said territories and possessions, shall be paid, defrayed, and borne out of the revenues of the said possessions; and that nothing in the said Act contained, extended, or extends, or shall be construed to extend, to restrain, or to have restrained, the said commissioners from giving such orders or directions as aforesaid, with respect to the expense of raising, transporting, and maintaining any forces which may be sent to India for the security of the said possessions, in addition to the forces now there.' So far the victory remained with the board; but the directors also could boast of a victory, since the above power, instead of remaining absolute, is restricted by subsequent sections, limiting the number of royal troops that might be paid by the commissioners as above to 8,045, and of the Company's troops to 12,200 men, and prohibiting them from increasing salaries or bestowing gratuities beyond amounts proposed and specified in despatches from the directors."

And now, from this matter, which reads with all the dreary circumlocution of a legal document, we turn to the more stirring events of the war with Tippoo Sahib, or Sultan.

CHAPTER LIV.

SCHEMES OF TIPPOO.—THE LINES OF TRAVANCORE.—THEIR DEFENCE BY THE NAIRS.

By the year 1788—indeed, long before it—the Sultan Tippoo was aware that he was an object of jealousy and suspicion to the British, whose agents he insulted in his peevish and resentful fits. He could neither forget nor forgive the humiliations to which he had been subjected in the late war: thus he hated the British almost to the verge of madness; and to this rancour he had superadded religious fanaticism as insane as the hatred; for he imagined himself "the chosen servant of the prophet Mo-

* Lloyd, vol. i.

ammed, predestined, in the Eternal Book of Fate, to root out the Nazarenes from India, and cast them into the bottomless pits of Gehenna."

For this great end he sent a numerous embassy to Constantinople, to invite the aid of the Sultan, but his envoys all perished of the plague or on the long journey; and about the same time he invited the French Government to send 6,000 of their best troops into the Carnatic; and with these, and his Mysoreans, he undertook to crush for ever the power of Britain in Hindostan. His envoy to

Paris—M. Leger, who was by birth a Frenchman—met with a favourable reception, as any scheme that would cripple or ruin Britain was always a welcome idea in France; especially then, when every man, woman, and child in that kingdom or republic—it was becoming both about that time—loathed the name of England. Even some of the ministers of the luckless Louis XVI. were delighted with the prospect—all the more that Tippoo was ready to pay for the transport, equipment, and maintenance of any troops they might send, and promised to France greater advantages than Britain had ever enjoyed in India at any time.

As the coloured population of the French West Indies had become too suddenly and too savagely indoctrinated by ideas of the rights of man, and that gospel of Liberty, Equality, and Fraternity, over which all France was soon to go mad, rendering it necessary to send thither a considerable force, it was supposed that, without exciting the suspicions of the British Cabinet, under cover of this armament, a strong expedition might be sent to the coast of Coromandel, or that of Malabar. But against this movement King Louis had both fears and scruples; for he said to his ministers,—

“This resembles the affair of America, which I never think of without regret. At that time my youth was taken advantage of, and we are suffering for it now. The lesson is too severe to be forgotten.”*

It would seem that Tippoo had, in great secrecy, negotiated with M. de Fresne, governor of Pondicherry, who was living under the very shadow of our flag, and to whom we had restored that settlement, on conditions which France had never observed. These negotiations he had conducted through the means of M. Leger, civil administrator of France in India, who understood the Persian language, wrote the despatches dictated by Tippoo, and brought them to Paris himself; having, in order to conceal the real object of his journey, given out, some time before, that he was compelled by private affairs to return to France. He had with him presents for the king and queen; but the generosity of Tippoo had, in this instance, been meagre. King Louis' portion consisted of some gold gauze, some crimson silk stuffs flowered with gold, some Persian linen, partly plain and partly printed, an aigrette of bad diamonds, flat, yellow, and ill-set, with a clasp of the same kind. The queen's consisted of only three bottles, partially filled with essences, a box of perfumed powder-balls, some scented matches, and nothing more!

When Bertrand de Molleville presented these

shabby Eastern offerings, King Louis said to him, laughing:—

“What can I do with all this trumpery? It seems only fit to dress dolls! But you have little girls who may be pleased with such; give it all to them.”

“But the diamonds, sire?” urged Bertrand.

“Oh, they are mighty fine!” replied Louis, in the tone of mockery. “Perhaps you would like them placed among the jewels of the crown? But you may take them too, and wear them in your hat, if you like.”

Eventually the queen would accept from the baffled minister of state only a bottle of otto of roses, and some of the fine linen which had been sent for King Louis.*

In his fierce impatience, Tippoo did not wait for the result of his French embassy, but resolved to begin immediate operations by attacking our ally, the Rajah of Travancore. The latter district is a long and rather narrow tract of country, which forms the south-west corner of the peninsula of Hindostan, and terminates a little to the eastward of Cape Comorin. The government of this country would seem to have been always in the hands of a female till the early part of the eighteenth century, when one of these ladies not only resigned the power to her son, but enacted that, in future, the sovereignty should descend to the son of the senior Tamburetti, as in Malabar. The rajah thus chosen proved an ambitious and able chief. He employed a European officer to discipline his troops; he conquered six petty rajahs, and annexed their territories to his own. He conquered part of Cochin, and compelled the queen of that country to name him her successor; and though this growing kingdom was without fortresses, it was defended from Mysore to Tinnevely by a double line of works which had been formed. These consisted of a thick plantation, supported by a rampart with bastions; and these barriers were known as the Lines of Travancore. They were more formidable in aspect than in reality, yet the natives had a high opinion of their strength. Tippoo alleged that they had been formed on part of the territory of Cochin, whose rajah was his acknowledged tributary; and that the effect of them was to cut Cochin in two, and bar him from access to one part of it.

At first, this seemed plausible enough; but, after a careful investigation on the part of the Company, the assertion was found to be untrue; and it was plainly intimated to him that any attempt to force these lines would be deemed a declaration of war. But prior to the sword being unsheathed, Earl

* “Mémoires de Bertrand de Molleville.”

* Ibid., as quoted in Knight.

Cornwallis had an opportunity to devote some time to the adjustment of what was called "the Permanent Settlement," in conjunction with the distinguished Sir John Shore (in after years his successor); but the measures of these two eminent men required a long space of time to mature. The arrangements for civil judicature, magistracy, and police, which ultimately gave a great historical interest to the administration of Cornwallis, were fully discussed by him and the future Lord Teignmouth, and the foundation was laid for their development in the interval of peace which ensued, between the first symptoms of another contest with Tippoo and the war in which he was finally crushed.

Earl Cornwallis, though hopeful that the tyrant might not break the peace, did not close his eyes to the precautions necessary with a despot so faithless; and had he not been restrained by the legislature, this veteran of the days of Minden might have taken the initiative, and compelled him to declare himself. As it was, he could but wait in suspense; and Tippoo did not detain him long. The latter was but too anxious for war; and conceived he had such vast powers that he could arrest the career of a monsoon that once interfered with the march of his army. On his royal seal was inscribed, in Arabic, "I am the messenger of the true faith," and around this motto was inscribed in Persian:—

"From conquest, and the protection of the royal Hyder, came my title of Sultan; and the world, as under the sun and moon, is subject to my signet."

Moreover, Tippoo was the first Mohammedan prince in Hindostan who had dared to openly disclaim the hereditary authority of the Great Mogul.*

On the 24th of December, 1789, Tippoo encamped his army about six miles to the northward of the principal gate of the Lines of Travancore, at a time when Cornwallis was but indifferently provided with the means for protracted hostilities. On the other hand, Tippoo had been long preparing for them, and by the assistance of French and Italian engineer officers had been strengthening all the towns and forts in Mysore, but more particularly his capital, Seringapatam. Besides these officers, he had a great number of Europeans to train his native troops and artillery. These wretches, for the most part, were deserters from the Company's service, and thus, as the phrase is, "fought with halters round their necks." They had, in many instances, fled to escape punishment; and as the bigoted Tippoo was fond of conversion,

by force or conviction, they were all circumcised, and had become renegadoes. *

A portion of his regulars were clothed in uniforms like those of our sepoys, and were armed with French muskets. They were about 4,000 strong; but their discipline was far from perfect. The rest of his infantry, though brave and fierce, was a partially organised rabble, armed with very old firelocks, matchlocks, spears, and tulwars: but the undoubted flower of his force was his brilliantly-accounted and splendidly-mounted cavalry, who more than once had poured, like a living tide, through the mountain ghauts to lay waste the fertile Carnatic. In this force was a *corps d'élite*, 6,000 strong, who found their own horses and arms, and were all picked men and matchless riders. His artillery was sufficiently formidable; many of his guns were French, and of metal heavier than any we had in India at that time. Hence his boast, that in this arm he had left his masters, "the accursed Nazarenes," far behind him; but this was chiefly by the aid of Christian renegadoes. The heaviest of his guns and mortars were drawn by trained elephants, 400 in number; and in addition to these, he had immense teams of the finest bullocks that India could furnish.

It was after a tedious march through narrow, tortuous, and rugged ways, among jungles and woods, where the elephant, buffalo, tiger, and chetah are still abounding, that Tippoo's army, consisting of only 14,000 infantry and 500 pioneers, but picked troops, pitched their tents, on the morning of the day stated, at Sharapootamally, a steep and rugged hill near the Lines of Travancore; and at this crisis we take from the pen of an officer (the Deputy-Adjutant-General) then present, the state of our troops at the time.

"There were in India, in 1788, a regiment of British dragoons (old 10th), nine regiments of British and two of Hanoverian infantry—in all, about 8,000 European troops, in addition to the Company's establishments. Several of the first officers in the British service were in command in that country, and a system was established which, by joining the powers of Governor to those of Commander-in-chief, united every advantage which could give efficiency to the operations of war. The discipline which had been ordered by the king for establishing uniformity in his army was now equally practised by his Majesty's and the Company's forces in India. The field equipment was refitted and enlarged at the several presidencies, and every preparation made to act with the promptitude and effect which unforeseen exigencies might require. Public credit, increasing with the security afforded

* Rennell's "Memoir of Tippoo."

to the country, and also in consequence of the likeable arrangements in the conduct of the civil line of the government, the Company's funds rose daily in their value; and their affairs, as stated to Parliament by the minister at the head of the India Department, were not only retrieved from supposed ruin, but soon appeared to be in a state of decided and increasing prosperity." *

Much information concerning our troops then in India is given by Major Rennell, in a work published in 1792, entitled "The Marches of the British Armies in the Peninsula of Hindostan during the Campaigns of 1791-92."

On the night of the 28th of December, Tippoo issued his orders to force the lines, which were chiefly held by the Nairs, who, believing that the short distance between their post and Tippoo's camp was impenetrable, in consequence of natural obstacles, were lulled into a security most fatal to themselves. By daybreak on the 30th of December, the Mysorean infantry, unincumbered by cannon, had clambered over the brow of the rugged Sharapootamally mountain, and taking the lines which it terminated in flank, advanced from within them with terrible rapidity against the rear and centre of the enemy, among whom they bayoneted all who were opposed to them.

With a view to admit his whole army with ease, Tippoo now ordered his pioneers to hurl a portion of the rampart into the ditch, which was sixteen feet wide and twenty deep, and thus by filling it up to afford ample entrance. At the same time, some more of his troops advanced from the flanking mountain along the rampart to force the great gate, for the admission of certain columns of horse and foot that had been manœuvring in front of it. The pioneers, who, worn out with exertion, were doing their work very slowly, had made but little progress, when all the troops were seen rushing towards the half-formed gap, into which suddenly 800 Nairs, all resolute and gallant men, suddenly flung themselves to bar the way, and with their musketry and a six-pounder, well armed with grape, completely staggered and enraged the attacking Mysoreans.

In the van of the latter was a Chela battalion, which had become exhausted by fatigue and want of water, and so gave way. Another battalion took its place; but the Nairs, who by this time had been reinforced from Remissaram, stood shoulder

to shoulder, and four deep, poured a storm of shot through the breach. At the head of some chosen troops, the infuriated sultan pressed on, while the fierce Gentoos, on hearing the din of the battle, came rushing to the aid of their friends, and in the narrow space a dreadful combat ensued. Inflamed by patriotism and the memory of past wrongs, with Hindoo fanaticism and a just longing for vengeance, they fought with the most splendid courage. The Mysoreans gave way after 2,000 of them had fallen, and a dreadful slaughter was made in the pursuit, for the Nairs were merciless, and now betook them to their terrible war-hatchets. Mounted on a white horse, Tippoo, after witnessing the rout and disgrace of his troops, and after exerting every energy for the recovery of the field, had so to fly from it, that on his horse being shot, he had a narrow escape from being chopped to pieces.

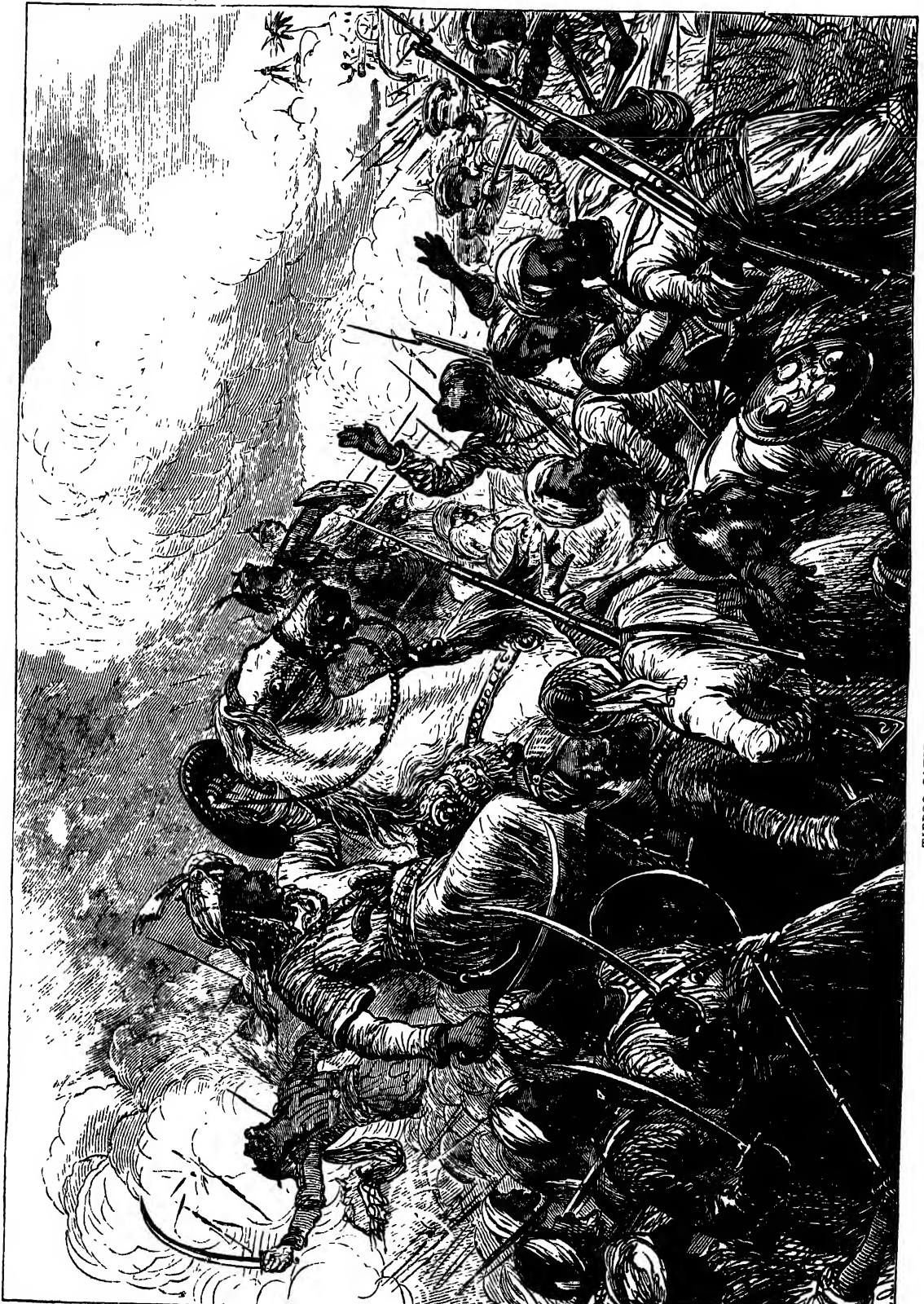
Two gaps, each about twenty feet wide, that had been cut through the lines on the advance of the main body, to admit their cannon, now served to some purpose in covering their retreat; but they had another fatal enemy to encounter. The cotton bales with which the pioneers had filled the ditch now took fire, and they had to fall back through the flames. This compelled many to fight to the last. Only forty of them were taken prisoners. Three men of noble rank were among the disfigured dead; and Tippoo did not escape scatheless. To avoid the flames, probably, he had been obliged to leap the rampart, and was severely bruised, losing his turban and the gold bangles off his wrists. His state palanquin was found at the edge of the ditch, and in it were several rare diamond rings, and other jewels, in a silver casket, his great seal, his fusil and pistols, with a diamond-hilted sword.

During these encounters, a body of British sepoy, led by Captain Knox, remained under arms; but simply looking on, as that officer had no power to act.

On reaching his camp, Tippoo, in a paroxysm of rage, swore by a terrible oath that he would never quit it till he had forced the Lines of Travancore; and thus he was thereby compelled to remain before them three months, during which he threw away the only chance he had of striking a decisive blow before we could make effectual preparations to oppose him in the field of battle. For eight whole days he shut himself up in his tent, and in one gust of rage, seized 2,000 young women, and gave them as a present to his army.*

* "Narrative of the Campaign, &c.," by Major Alexander Dirom, 52nd Foot.

* *London Gazette*, 1791.



TIPPOO SAHIB AT THE LINES OF TRAVANCORE.



MADRAS SEPOYS, 1791

CHAPTER LV.

THE FIRST CAMPAIGN AGAINST TIPPOO, INCLUDING THE SUCCESSES OF COLONELS STUART AND FLOYD.—BATTLE OF SHOWROOR.—CONQUEST OF MALABAR, ETC.

EARL CORNWALLIS, as soon as intelligence of this attempt to force the Lines of Travancore reached him, resolved to act on his already avowed intention, to hold it as a declaration of war. The intended system of neutrality was no longer tenable; he was left to his own dictates, and putting himself in communication with the Nizam and the Mah-ratta, formed a triple league against Tippoo. It was signed on the 4th of July, 1790; and for the purpose of effectually humbling the Sultan of Mysore, they were agreed to furnish each a contingent of troops to act in concert with our troops, as directed by the Company; they also agreed that they should act in concert with us, and that, at the conclusion of the war, there should be an equal division of all the territories of the British. However, were we to have the possession of all forts and

territories they might have the good fortune to reduce before the other allies took actual part in the war.

While he was making these arrangements, the Governor-General was not seconded at Madras. Instead of obeying the orders of the Supreme Council issued in conformity with the Regulating Act, Governor Holland acted as if he had a discretionary power, and ignoring instructions on one hand, was contumacious on the other. He certainly ordered a large body of troops to hold themselves ready for instant service; but he rendered the order nugatory by omitting to provide the necessary equipments of draught and carriage bullocks for their artillery and baggage. The consequence was that he was displaced, and succeeded by Colonel William Medows, of the 73rd Highlanders, formerly Governor of Bombay, and having the

local rank of major-general in India, an officer of high character and great ability, whose first business was, in a soldier-like way, to prepare all that was required for the field.

Meanwhile the Governor-General was busy in Bengal, from whence he quickly dispatched a large amount of specie, munition of war, and a battalion of foot artillery, chiefly gun-lascars, by sea. The high caste Brahmins had certain prejudices against conveyance by water, thus six battalions of sepoy marched under Colonel Cockerell, while, to make the resources of the Carnatic and Tanjore available, application was made to the nabob and the rajah for certain arrears from their revenues, which the Company were to collect during the war, and pay them and their families a sufficient subsistence out of them.

Meanwhile Tippoo was remaining idly before the lines which he had sworn to pass, waiting for heavier cannon and more forces, and the following somewhat prophetic letter was written from Amboor by Major-General Sir Thomas Munro (who must not be confounded with his clansman, Sir Hector, the Colonel of the Black Watch), concerning the Lines of Travancore, while war was pending :—

"A second attack is daily expected, and if the rajah is left alone, all his exertions against a force so superior can delay but for a very short time his ruin. The English battalions were behind the lines, but not at the place attacked; and it is said they have orders not to act, even on the defensive. If such be the case, the rajah ought to dismiss them with scorn. The distinction made between recent acquisitions and ancient territory, appears to be a subterfuge of Government to cloak their dread of war under a pretended love of peace; for Cranganore was a fair purchase of the Dutch from the Rajah of Cochin, subject to an annual tribute of thirty-five rupees. Before we can assemble an army to face the enemy, Tippoo may be in possession of Travancore. We have derived but little benefit from experience and misfortune. The year 1790 sees us as little prepared as that of 1780. We shall commence the war under the disadvantage of the want of magazines. The distresses and difficulties which we then encountered from them, have not cured us of the narrow policy of present saving, to a certain, though future great and essential advantage."*

While Tippoo held his ground, he drew up, and meanly antedated by fifteen days, a letter which he sent to Madras, purporting that while searching for fugitives, some of his Mysoreans had been fired

* "Rise, &c., of the British Power in India."

upon by the Nairs, and that he was compelled to retaliate and attack the lines. He further made hypocritical professions of a desire for peace, while working hard at regular approaches towards the lines, in which, after filling up the ditch, he made a clear breach of three-quarters of a mile in length, and bursting into Travancore with his whole army, the most dreadful devastations ensued. That fertile land, the cultivated districts of which abound in grain, sago, and sugar, plantains, coffee, and many aromatic drugs, was rapidly reduced to a desert; the people were hunted down like wild animals by the Mysorean horse, and immense numbers of them were carried off to a captivity worse than death. When Tippoo, after forcing the lines, laid siege to Cranganore—the seaport which the rajah had purchased from the Dutch—Colonel James Hartley, of the 75th Highlanders, had arrived from Bombay with one European (his own) and two sepoy regiments. These were joined by two other battalions—those referred to in the letter of Sir Thomas Munro—but the whole force being too small to act on the offensive, remained cooped up in Ayacotta, opposite Cranganore, but on the northern extremity of the island of Vipeen.

Major-General (afterwards Sir William) Medows, after forming a small encampment at Conjeveram, marched from thence on the 24th of May, to assume the command of the main army, which had been assembling on the plain of Trichinopoly, and which was formed in two European, and four native brigades. The 36th and 52nd Foot composed the first of these, under the command of Major Skelly of the 74th Highlanders, which, along with the 1st and 3rd Native Brigades, formed the left wing of the army under Colonel James Stuart of the 72nd Highlanders; the second brigade consisted of the 71st and 72nd Highland Regiments, and the 1st European Battalion of the Company. The horse were the 2nd and 5th Native Cavalry, with some companies of Bengal Artillery under Colonel Deare.*

This was called the great Southern Army, and mustered 16,700 men. By the 9th of the same month, Cranganore and another small fort had been stormed by Tippoo with little resistance.

On the same evening when Medows took the command, the line was drawn out, all his final arrangements made, and at two o'clock in the morning of the 26th, the army began its march, by Caroor, in the Coimbatore district, for Dindigul in the country of the enemy.†

Tippoo was now falling back, but before quitting

* "Hist. Rec. 52nd Regiment."

† *London Gazette*, 1791.

Travancore, he gratified his vanity by converting the destruction of the famous lines into a public ceremony. Parading without arms, the whole army of Mysore marched by divisions to their appointed stations. Tippoo, with a pickaxe, struck the first blow; the sirdirs and courtiers followed his example, and then the entire forces; all kinds of camp-followers took part in the work of destruction, which, in six days, was complete.

On the 15th of June our troops were before Caroor, a town forty-two miles distant from Trichinopoly, having a large temple and fort. The latter was taken, repaired, and strengthened, to render it a place for leaving stores and the sick; and about this task the engineers at once set to work, while Captain Parr was appointed commandant.*

The plan of the intended campaign, as adopted by General Meadows, was simple enough. His main body, after reducing Palaghaut and all the forts in the Coimbatore district, was to ascend to the table-land of Mysore by the Pass of Gijelhetty, while another force, composed chiefly of troops expected from Bengal, was to penetrate from the centre of Coromandel straight into the Baramahal. But so sickly and unfavourable was the season, that more than 1,200 men were sent back unfit for duty to the luckily-established hospital at Caroor, before a shot was fired by the main army.

On the 21st the latter had an *alerte* for the first time, when 300 of Tippoo's irregular horse fell suddenly upon some of our camp-followers, maiming and barbarously mutilating all whom they failed to slay. At nine a.m. the trumpets sounded; the cavalry pickets turned out, and advanced beyond the grand-guard, led by Colonel John Floyd of the (old) 19th Light Dragoons, an officer who had distinguished himself at the battle of Emsdorff, and died in 1816, a baronet and Governor of Tilbury Fort. He advanced with such spirit, that the enemy gave way; but he did not deem pursuit then prudent. These irregulars, distinguished by the name of Looties (from *loot*, the Indian word for military plunder), continued their sudden attacks for two or three days, till they were attacked and utterly dispersed by our cavalry, while, steel ringing on steel, cheers or Mohammedan yells, were heard to echo in the leafy tope; and their leader was taken, after a gallant hand-to-hand combat, by Cornet Forbes of the 3rd Native Horse: "Mr. Forbes received the first cut, in the hand, but soon brought down his antagonist, by two severe wounds in his face and arm. The swords of these people are long and of fine temper; but their horses are by no means good."†

* *London Gazette*, 1791.

† *Ibid.*

On the 10th July, the forces were at Darapooram near the Amaravati river. There they found the fort abandoned, but abundance of grain left, enough, indeed, to serve the army six weeks; so a garrison was put therein under Captain Swain, with the iron eighteen-pounders, and all the tents and heavy baggage. It had been expected to overtake Tippoo at Coimbatore, but he was already above the Ghauts.

On the 23rd of July, Colonel Stuart was detached to reduce Palaghaut, or Palaghautcherry, as it bears both names; but, unfortunately, in making this movement, the nature of the climate had not been considered. The south-west monsoon had set in, and when Colonel Stuart was only twenty miles to the west of his destination, he became so entangled between two mountain torrents, that he was compelled, with the utmost difficulty, to make his way back to headquarters; yet he had with him a fine force, the flower of whom were the 72nd Highlanders, "upwards of 1,000 of the men being healthy, seasoned to the climate, well-disciplined, and highly respectable in their moral conduct."*

The colonel's destination was therefore changed, and he was dispatched above 100 miles south-west to Dindigul, while a column under Colonel Oldham, of the Company's service, was selected for the capture of Erode, on the Cauvery, northward of Caroor, and on the best route from it to the Gijelhetty Pass. In the meantime, Colonel John Floyd, with all the cavalry of the army, including his own corps, H.M. 19th Light Dragoons, and a brigade of light infantry, had come in contact with a great force of Mysore cavalry, whom Tippoo, on leaving Coimbatore, had left under Seyed Sahib, with orders to harass the British troops.

It chanced that on the evening of the 16th August, the colonel, attended by four officers, and sixteen dragoons, when riding forward to reconnoitre, came suddenly upon a great body of Seyed Sahib's cavalry, who instantly formed to receive him. Without a moment's hesitation, the gallant Floyd, at the head of only twenty sabres, cut a passage right through them, killing twenty-five, taking nine horses, and three men prisoners. The colonel had but one man killed.† By a series of brilliant movements, Seyed Sahib was driven pell-mell, northward to the Bhowani, a river which flows eastwards from the Neilgherry Hills, and ultimately was pressed so closely, that for safety, he ascended the Ghauts, by this retreat leaving the whole country open to Colonel Stuart, who was enabled to reach Dindigul without firing a shot.

On the 17th of August, his troops were before

* General Stewart, vol. ii.

† *London Gazette*, 1791.

this place, which has been already described ; but within the preceding six years it had been strongly rebuilt on an improved plan, with fourteen additional guns and a mortar ; and as these improvements were unknown to the colonel, he had neither a requisite siege train nor ammunition, yet by the 21st he effected a species of breach. The storming party, consisting of the flank companies of the 52nd, and some native troops, led by Major Francis Skelly, 74th Highlanders, advanced to the attack in the dark ; but the attempt failed, the troops fell back, with the loss of thirty men killed and one officer mortally wounded.

Next morning, to the astonishment of all, the killedar held out a white flag and surrendered ; on this, the fortress was garrisoned by Colonel Stuart, who at once advanced against Palaghautcherry, which he invested on the 10th of September, 1791, and threw up two batteries within 500 yards of the walls, and on the same day a practicable breach was made. The *Gazette* states, that prior to this, General Medows, by a flag of truce, had informed "the killedar, that if he obliges us to open one gun against it, no terms would be given to him or his garrison, but that every one of them should be put to death." Whether or not this stern announcement influenced the Mysorean, it is impossible to say, but the assault was spared by a capitulation, and by his kind treatment of the natives, Colonel Stuart so won their affections, that his bazaar assumed the aspect of a provincial granary, and he was able to leave the new garrison provisions for six months, and take back with him a month's grain for the whole army, which he rejoined on the 15th of October near Coimbatore.

During these operations, Colonels Oldham and Floyd had not been idle. On the 6th of August, the former had effected the complete reduction of Erode (or Errouad), a fortified town (which had of old belonged to the Naiks of Madura) on the Coleroon river. The garrison, 200 strong, fired briskly on his force, till they were silenced by the fine practice with a brass eighteen-pounder, and capitulated.

The latter officer had made himself master of Satimangalam, a strong fortress and town with a temple of Vishnu ; and thus a line of forts was established from Caroor to the Gudelhetty Pass, through which General Medows hoped to march before the end of October, and the last of these was held by Colonel Floyd with a force of 2,000 men.*

Early in September, however, Tippoo, leaving his stores and baggage on the summit of the Ghaut,

* Hugh Murray's "India."

began to descend the Gudelhetty Pass at the head of his cavalry chiefly. Of this movement the active Floyd had early intelligence, and wrote instantly to General Medows announcing it, and suggesting a junction of all our forces, as these were considerably dispersed, a third being under the general at Coimbatore, another column under Colonel Stuart thirty miles in the rear, and the rest being with Floyd sixty miles in advance, he requested leave to fall back ; but as the descent of Tippoo was not believed, he was ordered to hold his ground.

"My corps," says the colonel, in his report to headquarters early in September, 1790, "was augmented after the forcing of Satimangalam, so that it consisted of the King's Regiment (19th Light Dragoons), and sixteen squadrons of native cavalry, H.M. 36th Regiment, and four battalions of native infantry, with eleven pieces of cannon served by the Bengal Artillery. One battalion garrisoned Satimangalam, and the rest of my corps was encamped near it, on the south side of the Bhowani."

Hearing that the enemy were certainly coming on, Colonel Floyd, as the country in front was intersected by almost impenetrable enclosures of prickly shrubs, early on the morning of the 13th September, sent forward three squadrons of our 19th, under Captain-Lieutenant W. G. Child, of that corps, with Major Darby's cavalry in support, to reconnoitre the fort of Poongur on the Bhowani. To this there were two roads—one winding by the stream, and the other more direct, at some distance from it. Child's troopers, after meeting a body of Tippoo's horse at the ford, beating and forcing them into the river, where many were slain or drowned, returned by the former road ; but Darby's cavalry took the latter, and had ridden along it but a few miles, when they were suddenly attacked by a strong force, and saw large bodies of the sultan's horse hovering, with lance and shield, in every direction. Nevertheless, Major Darby made a brave resistance, till Floyd came on with all the cavalry to his relief, on which the whole fell back, after killing 400 of the enemy.

This was but the prelude to tougher work.

A large column of Tippoo's troops began to descend the northern bank of the stream, while another came rapidly on from the west. Floyd had only time to change his front, and post his infantry where their flank could not be turned, when Tippoo opened a distant cannonade from fifteen (deserters said nineteen) of his light galloper guns, the fire of which was continued during the whole day, and caused many casualties. Among the killed were Colonel Dears, of the Bengal Artillery, and Lieutenant Kelly Armstrong, of the

36th Regiment. Two other officers were wounded, one of these, Dr. Morris, mortally. Floyd's artillery returned the fire, but "the axle-trees of two of my twelve-pounders soon gave way," he reported, "and a six-pounder was disabled; the rest were fired with excellent aim, but sparingly, as my stock of ammunition was not great. Our line stood on the shoulder of a rising ground to the right; on the summit it was stony, but free from bushes. The enemy was on strong ground among enclosures and villages, and at a considerable distance, so that most of the shot struck the ground short of our line, though some went an incredible distance beyond it. The cannonade was kept up until perfect dark; nothing on earth could exceed the bravery and firmness of every man in our whole line. When it was dark, I determined to join the commander-in-chief, and take the shortest route to Coimbatore." *

The sepoy loss was so severe that Colonel Floyd frequently rode along the line, expressing his regret to the native officers, and cheering them with the hope of revenge.

"We have eaten the Company's salt," replied these brave fellows, "and God forbid that we should mind a few casualties!" †

The moment night was fairly in, the retreat began. Captain Dallas, with some timber, repaired the disabled guns; the battalion was withdrawn from the fort, and the whole fell back in three columns, one of cavalry, one of infantry, and one of baggage; but the slaughter among the bullocks was so great that three guns were abandoned. The country became so jungly and woody about Owcará that the three columns had to take one line of march—the cavalry, oddly enough, leading, without covering the rear.

Tippoo came on in hot pursuit. By two p.m. his infantry were close enough up to be within range; but it was five before he could make a combined attack upon the troops of Floyd, at a time when they were greatly exhausted, and had been compelled to abandon all their guns but five six-pounders. Those of the enemy bore heavily on the line of march: their infantry poured in musketry and rockets, while their daring cavalry often dashed so close that they had to be hurled back by the bayonet. In this conflict, Captain William Hartley, of the Hertfordshire Regiment, when making a gallant attempt to capture one of Tippoo's guns, was slain.

As the troops, galled thus on every hand, with night before them, were struggling on to reach a village named Showroor, a cry was raised that

General Medows was at hand; for a troop that Floyd had sent out to feel the way had been mistaken for Medows' personal guard. Three hearty British cheers now rung upon the air; and, forming with their front to the rear, our troops rushed on with their bayonets at the charge. Then Tippoo, conceiving that Medows, with his whole force, was at hand, drew off, and Floyd's corps, without further molestation, after three days of fighting without food, reached Showroor at about seven p.m., and fired three signal guns towards Coimbatore. Next day they marched again before dawn, after having heard and returned three signal guns, and at Vellady were joined by General Medows, who had been vigorously pushing on to support them.

Floyd's total losses were 156 men and twenty-three horses killed, 227 men and eleven horses wounded.

In this conflict—called the battle of Showroor—a brother-in-law of Tippoo was killed, and a chief named Morai Rao was drawn, with his camel, into a rapid of the Bhowani and drowned. Shortly afterwards, by the arrival of Colonel Stuart's force from Palaghautcherry, the whole army, by the end of September, 1790, was united under the baton of General Medows at Coimbatore.

On the 1st of the preceding month, after a 1,200 miles' march, the troops sent overland by Earl Cornwallis from Calcutta halted at Conjeveram. They consisted of three regiments of European infantry, one of native cavalry, and a fine artillery train, mustering in all 9,500 men, under Colonel Hamilton Maxwell, of the 74th Highlanders, who had succeeded to the command by the death of Colonel Kelly on the 24th of September. The former was the second son of Sir William Maxwell, Bart., of Monreith, and was fated to find his last home in India.

In pursuance of the original plan of the campaign, he entered the Baramahal on the day Colonel Kelly died. The instant he heard of this movement, Tippoo set out at the head of three-fourths of his army to repel it, leaving the remainder, under Kummer-ud-Deen, to watch General Medows. Colonel Maxwell first menaced the rock-built fortress of Kistnagherry, of which he made a minute examination, with a view to its future reduction, and then established his headquarters at Cauverypatam.

On the 12th of the next month, the army of Tippoo appeared; but finding himself foiled in every attempt to make an advantageous attack, he resolved to draw off three days after, and in such a mood that he would have made short work with

* Despatches. † Colonel Wilks' "Historical Sketches."

any prisoners who fell into his merciless hands. General Medows, meanwhile, had been advancing from the south, and on the 15th—the day fixed by Tippoo for falling back—he encamped on the mountain range that overlooks the valley of the Baramahal, about twenty-five miles distant from Maxwell's post at Cauverypatam. When the advanced guard halted, they perceived some bodies of troops taking up their ground about six miles distant; and as nothing had been heard of Maxwell for three weeks, it was naturally concluded that these troops must be his column; so three signal guns were fired from an eminence to announce the fortunate junction. In a few minutes after this, every tent was struck in the distance, and heavy columns were seen pressing westward, when it became evident that this was not the force of Colonel Maxwell, but of Tippoo.

The junction with the former was effected by the 17th of November, and the whole army now encamped at Cauverypatam, about midway between the head and the southern extremity of the Pass of Tapoor, which is forty-six miles in length. Unwilling to be compelled to ascend the Ghaut, Tippoo had determined to fall back through this identical pass. On the 18th, Medows and he were in motion, and, all unconscious of each other's movements, were marching towards the same point. It has been said that General Medows, who in single actions fought with great skill, was unequal to the complications of a campaign in a country so great; and thus that by improper management, Tippoo, who ought to have been entangled and attacked in the pass, was permitted to escape without any serious loss.

Delighted with his good fortune, the sultan marched along the banks of the Cauvery, nor did he halt till he came in sight of Trichinopoly. Against that place his demonstrations proved of no avail; but he was able, before the arrival of Medows, who had been following him up quickly, to pillage and devastate the Isle of Seringham, so famous for its pagoda and temple with the thousand pillars.

The generally unsatisfactory character of the whole campaign—or rather, the result of it—made Lord Cornwallis resolve to assume the command in person.

Finding that nothing was to be effected at Trichinopoly, Tippoo hastened towards Coromandel, everywhere levying heavy contributions, and rapine and destruction everywhere marking his line of march. In six attempts to storm the fortress of Thiagur, where he expected to find great booty, he was six times repulsed by Captain Flint,

who in the past time so gallantly defended Wandiwash. After capturing Trinomalee, and treating the inhabitants with singular barbarity, he turned east, took Permacoil near Pondicherry, where he was fated to find that all his intrigues with Louis XVII., through Bertrand de Molleville and M. Leger, were likely to prove failures; while at the same time there came to him discouraging news from Malabar, where he had left Hossein Ali, at the head of 9,000 disciplined soldiers and 4,000 Moplas, in a strong position near Calicut. Hartley, of the 75th Highlanders, at the head of his own regiment and other troops, on the 10th of December, 1790, had utterly routed the enemy, with the loss of 1,900 men, killed, wounded, and taken; among the latter was Hossein himself. Hartley had only four Highlanders killed and forty-four native infantry wounded. In this and other successes were captured thirty-four stand of colours, sixty-eight pieces of cannon, and 5,000 stand of arms. Soon after, General Abercromby effected the entire conquest of Malabar.

The Polygars, Nairs, and Hindoos of the coast now took, upon the Mysoreans, the most bloody and awful reprisals for all that they had suffered at the hands of Tippoo's Mohammedan troops. The destruction and pollution of their ancient temples in particular drove them mad with fury. In one place, an officer of Tippoo's who wanted some iron, determined to supply himself from what he could find in a *Rut*—a holy shrine upon wheels, nearly all of carved wood, and so heavy as to require thousands to drag it; and concerning this sacrilege the widow of a chief whom, with his son, Tippoo had destroyed, told this tale, says Colonel Wikks, to one of our officers with savage glee.

As it had been too much trouble to extract the iron from the *Rut*, he had burned it in the square of the great temple. "On hearing of this abomination," said she, "I secretly collected my men; I entered the town by night, I seized and tied him to a stake, and (here the narrator burst into tears, and an agony of exultation), I burned the monster on the spot where he had wantonly insulted and consumed the sacred emblems of my religion."*

While amid such wild work the campaign of 1790 was closing, it is pleasant to read of a quiet meeting, held by Scotsmen in Calcutta, chiefly officers of the army, to collect subscriptions for the new University of Edinburgh; and at the head of the list appears the name of Earl Cornwallis for 3,000 *secca* rupees.†

* "Sketches of Southern India."

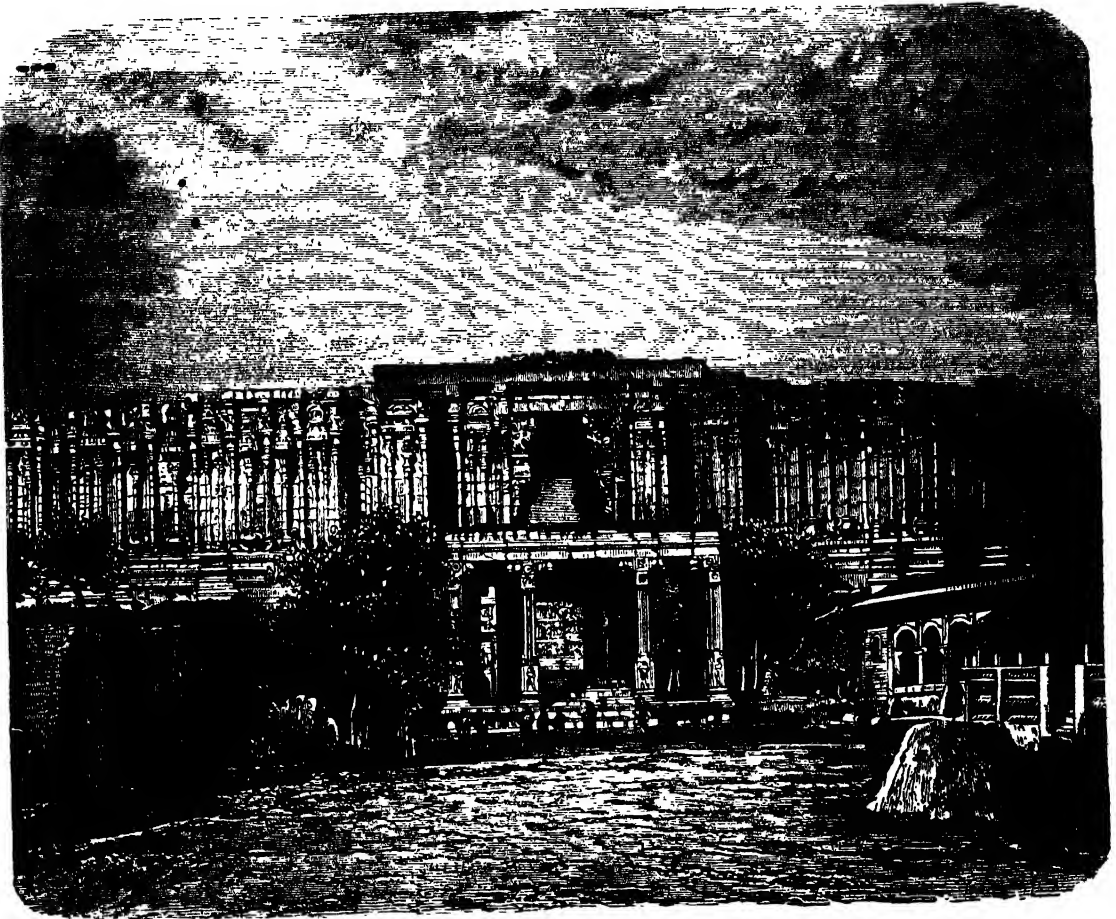
† *Scots Magazine*, 1791.

CHAPTER LVI.

THE SECOND CAMPAIGN AGAINST TIPPOO.—BANGALORE STORMED.—THE BATTLE OF CARIGAT.

EARL CORNWALLIS lost no time in assuming command of the army. In a letter to Mr. Grenville, dated Fort St. George, Madras, 28th of December, 1790, he says :—

reflection, I have resolved, instead of prosecuting the plan of the southern invasion, to penetrate by the passes that lead from the centre of the Carnatic, and to commence our operations with the



ENTRANCE TO THE TEMPLE OF SERINGHAM.

"In pursuance of the intention which I notified to you in my letter of November 15th, I left Calcutta on the 6th, to embark in the *Vestal*, frigate, at Diamond Harbour; and, after a very prosperous voyage, landed here on the 13th instant. My time has been partly employed in attending to several important points of the civil business of this presidency; but principally in acquiring minute information respecting the condition of the troops, of the magazines, of provisions, and of the nature of the different passes that lead to the Mysore country; and, after the most deliberate

sieges of Oussore and Bangalore, unless Tippoo should resolve to hazard an action, and its event shall render it expedient to take other measures."

In the mind of the native troops generally, there existed a strong religious prejudice against sea voyages. Hindoos of high caste were subject to great privations, especially in the ships of those days, when, from the necessities of caste, they were compelled to eat nothing but dried grain, and hence the serious mutiny of a battalion in 1780; but the wise and gentle conduct of Earl Cornwallis, together with his kindness and firmness,

surmounted these difficulties; and as other commanders in succession have imitated him, since the time referred to, sepoys have made long and arduous voyages without scruple.*

Thus Cornwallis brought with him a considerable reinforcement—six battalions of infantry, under Colonel Campbell—chiefly composed of Bengal grenadiers, who exceeded in appearance any sepoys that had ever taken the field. He also brought a considerable number of heavy guns, of horses, draught bullocks, and an ample military chest. At this period the Company's grenadiers wore a scarlet jacket and blue turban, having a gilt plate, and on the top a feather; epaulettes and cross-belts, with a plate in the centre, and short breeches, coming half way down the thigh, from whence the leg was bare to the sandal.†

On the 27th of January, 1791, Cornwallis joined the army, which he had instructed General Medows to concentrate near Velhaut, where the whole passed him in review order; the cannon, carriage and baggage animals were inspected. "The army being refreshed and equipped, commenced moving in a westerly direction, on the 5th of February, by Perambaucam and Sholingur, arriving on the 11th in the vicinity of Vellore. The troops were ordered into the fort, and on the 14th they marched to Chitapett, turning suddenly to the right by Chittoor, towards the Mugler Pass, where they arrived on the 17th of February. On the 18th the advance, followed by the artillery, ascended the Ghauts, the entire army encamping on the following day at Palamnair, in the Mysore territory, without having come in sight of the enemy."‡

This ground was attained by Cornwallis before Tippoo could offer any effectual resistance. The advance referred to, a brigade, had encamped on the table-land of Mysore, and ere four days were over, the whole force, including the battering-train, sixty-seven Bengal elephants, with forty-five days' provisions, were within the camp, and Bangalore, the first intended point of attack, was only ninety miles distant. To retaliate for the fearful devastations of the Mysorean army, the troops, but more especially the camp-followers, now proceeded to pillage and burn in every direction, until Cornwallis executed nine for the detriment of others, and issued the following:—

"GENERAL ORDERS.—Lord Cornwallis has too high an opinion of the zeal, honour, and public spirit of the officers of the army, to doubt for

* "Rise of the Bengal Infantry."

† Gold's "Oriental Drawings," 1806.

‡ "Rec. 5and Light Infantry."

a moment that every individual among them felt the same concern and indignation that he did himself, at the shocking and disgraceful outrages that were committed on the last march. His lordship now calls, in the most serious manner, for the active assistance of every officer in the army, and particularly those commanding flanking parties, advance and rear guards, to put a stop to these scenes of horror, which, if they should be suffered to continue, must defeat our hopes of success, and blast the British name with infamy."

On the 24th, the army marched for Colar, which was abandoned at its approach; and from thence to Ooscotta, which was immediately occupied by a battalion of sepoys. Our troops were now within ten miles of Bangalore, in which Tippoo had lodged his harem, after the safety of which he was intently looking. It is said that 500 horse could have done so, but he preferred to escort it with his whole army, at a time when the safety of Mysore demanded its presence in the field. On the 4th of March, some of his cavalry, clad in the glittering caps and shirts of steel such as had been worn for ages, and made them look like ancient Moors of Granada, made a dash to break through our columns and reach the baggage, then unwieldy beyond all parallel, in consequence of the immense quantities of stores requisite for the siege; and in one of these attacks, three Mysorean troopers, having previously drugged themselves with *bhang*, made a rush at Lord Cornwallis, who was watching the movements of Tippoo from an eminence.

Two of them were cut down, the third, who seemed stupefied, was taken prisoner; and two days after, there occurred an encounter, in which the gallant Floyd nearly perished. While, with some of his cavalry, rashly pursuing a body of horse, in the hope of cutting off a mass of the enemy's baggage on camels and elephants, he fell from his saddle, a musket-shot having perforated both cheeks, passing between the jaws. For a time, he was left on the ground for dead; but was brought off by his Light Dragoons after the loss of 71 men and 271 horses.

On the 5th of March, Lord Cornwallis was in position before Bangalore, which is situated on an undulating plateau 3,000 feet above the sea's level, in a central position possessing great natural advantages. The fort, two miles distant from the modern town, and in ruins now, had been entirely rebuilt by Tippoo and his father; it was nearly oval in form, with round towers at intervals, and fine strong cavaliers, was encompassed by a deep ditch cut in the solid rock, and by a broad

esplanade. Within its area was the original village of Bangalore, the walls of which are still to be traced, and the sultan's *mahal* or palace, now officers' quarters. It was entered by two barriers, one named the Delhi, and the other the Mysore Gate. The besiegers rapidly gained possession of the more modern town, with all its tortuous red-tiled streets, pagodas, mosques, and lines of cocoa-trees, and Tippoo, who was encamped six miles distant, made many efforts for its recovery but in vain. Its capture was a brave act.

It was surrounded by a mud wall and ditch, and had a massive Egyptian-looking gate, covered by a close thicket of Indian thorns. The attack was made without the approaches being properly reconnoitred; thus, both when advancing and endeavouring to force an entrance, the troops were exposed to a galling musketry fire, especially from some turrets on the wall. Colonel Moorhouse, one of the most accomplished officers in India, fell with four mortal wounds. At length the pioneers beat the gate nearly to pieces, when Lieutenant Aire, an officer of diminutive stature, forced a passage through it, sword in hand; and then Medows, who was always gay when in action, called out, "Well done!" adding to the grenadiers, "Now, Whiskers, try if you can follow and support the little gentleman."

The soldiers burst in, and rushed along the streets. Tippoo threw in a strong corps: but when the troops betook themselves to the bayonet, the Mysoreans were hurled out of the pettah, with the loss of 2,000 men, while ours was only 131. Moorhouse, who belonged to the artillery, and had risen from the ranks, was universally regretted. His body was taken to Madras, and publicly interred in the church of Fort St. George, where a monument was erected to his memory.

As Bangalore was not completely invested, and its garrison, 8,000 strong, was regularly relieved by fresh troops (like that of Sebastopol in later times), the siege was carried on under great difficulty. Moreover, the engineers had awkwardly thrown up their first battery without ascertaining the exact distance, nor were they made aware of the circumstance until they saw their shot falling short. Good progress, however, was made soon after, and by the 20th of March an early assault was anticipated. To prevent this, Tippoo on the following morning drew up his army in order of battle on the heights to the south-west of Bangalore, to protect the advance of a column, 5,000 strong, with heavy guns, which he intended to place upon an old embankment in such a manner that, by a flank fire, they must have scoured the trenches and destroyed

our sap, which was now pushed close to the crest of the glacis. Thus Lord Cornwallis felt himself compelled to attempt a storm that very night, as the breach was practicable.

At eleven o'clock the troops, with their supports, detailed for this arduous service, advanced in dead silence to the point of attack. The liquid brightness of a tropical moon shone over the towers and ramparts, the quaint pagodas and domed mosques of Bangalore, and on the yawning breach in the walls, which could be seen distinctly from our lines; and the Mysorean sentinels, who had not the least idea of what was coming, were visible as they paced to and fro upon their posts.

The attacking force was composed of all the European flank companies, and the 36th and 76th Regiments, with the 72nd Highlanders, led by Colonel Maxwell, and the flankers by Major Skelly, of the 74th Highlanders. The words of command were passed in whispers. Stealing along the covered way to the end of the works, the troops suddenly emerged at a rush, and with ringing cheers, to the assault; and the ladders of the forlorn hope were reared against the wall before the enemy knew their danger. The Mysorean drums beat to arms in the camp and fort alike. The killedar, with all the troops he could collect, rushed, sword in hand, to the point of danger; but the troops were already in possession of the rough, rugged breach, and were spreading along the walls to the right and left of it. A close and fierce contest ensued; but our troops "had learned from their chief the advantage in war of promptitude and celerity, and poured in, charging with the bayonet, and strewing their way with slaughtered enemies." In a short time we were completely masters of Bangalore, in the face of the whole army of Tippoo, and by a storming party that barely amounted to one-fourth of the ordinary garrison.

The advantages won may be estimated from the disasters that must have attended a failure. "Short as the duration of the siege had been, the forage and grain found in the pettah were all consumed. No supply could be obtained from the neighbouring villages, which had been completely destroyed; and the miserable resource of digging up the roots of grass had been used, till not a fibre remained within the limits of the pickets. The draught and carriage cattle were daily dying by hundreds, and those intended for the shambles were so wasted and diseased as to be almost unfit for food. Every necessary, including ammunition, was at the lowest ebb, and a retreat, after raising the siege, must have been full of disaster. The knowledge of these circumstances was undoubtedly our main induce-

ment to risk the assault when the success of it was, to say the least, very problematical."

Colonel Duff was appointed commandant of the captured fortress, into which the earl placed H.M. 76th Foot and three battalions of sepoys. The quantity of military stores found there was astonishing: of gunpowder alone, it was said, that there was more than we were likely to require during the war. There were taken 100 pieces of cannon, fifty of which were brass.

The unexpected loss of Bangalore, when, with his superior numbers, he was taking such means to relieve it, filled Tippoo with rage and despair, and for some time he was in a species of stupor; for the suddenness of Lord Cornwallis's movements disconcerted all his plans.

After seeing the breaches repaired, and the fort made secure under Colonel Duff against any sudden attack, Earl Cornwallis, on the 28th of March, began to move in a northerly direction, taking the route to Deonhully. Tippoo, who on the same day had struck his tents, moved in the direction of Great Balipoor, in a line diagonal to that pursued by the British; and the two armies meeting, crossed each other, not without a sharp skirmish; but the enemy, as if feeling their weakness, only manœuvred to avoid a general action. They defiled rapidly across our front, and wheeling into a road which ran parallel to that pursued by our troops, observed, without troubling themselves, our further movements. They were sometimes only three miles apart, and each army could see the glitter of the other's arms, and the clouds of dust that whirled around the marching columns.

Cornwallis had determined to penetrate into the heart of Mysore, and to dictate his own terms of peace at Seringapatam, the capital of Tippoo's country, and the strongest place which the brutal tyrant held; but, instead of advancing thither at that juncture, he was obliged to move northward to effect a junction with a corps of cavalry which Nizam Ali had agreed to furnish. This being accomplished on the 13th of April, the united forces moved south-east to meet a convoy which, escorted by 4,000 men, was moving by the passes near the castled rock of Amboor; and on its coming in, the whole army returned to Bangalore.

This march occupied fifteen days, and during that time Cornwallis had ample means to judge the value of Ali's cavalry. Nominally 15,000, they were only 10,000 all told, and tolerably mounted, but without discipline; and their appearance in our camp excited astonishment, disappointment, and sometimes laughter. No two men among them were accoutred exactly alike.

"It is probable that no national or private collection of ancient armour contains any arms or articles of personal equipment, which" might not be traced to this motley crowd. The Parthian bow and arrow, the iron club of Scythia, sabres of every age and nation, lances of every length and description, matchlocks of every form, and metallic helmets of every pattern. The total absence of every symptom of order or obedience, except groups collected round their respective flags, every individual an independent warrior, affecting to be the champion whose single arm was to achieve victory."* And yet in an artistic sense these wild horsemen must have seemed somewhat picturesque; but they had neither provender nor provisions of any kind: thus Cornwallis made them relieve the 19th and other light cavalry in outpost duty; yet this they neglected, and took to pillaging friends and foes with perfect impartiality, heedless alike of the orders of their leader, Tewant Sing, a Hindoo, and of his second in command, Asseid Ali.

For many reasons the Governor-General was now anxious to end the war as briefly as possible. In Europe the French Revolution was raging in all its fury, and none could foresee where or how its results were to end. The debts of the Company were rapidly accumulating on one hand, while the drain on their resources was enormous on the other. This, and the state of affairs in his own camp, made him resolve to advance without delay upon Seringapatam. Being without proper equipage, the march of his army, when it began on the 3rd of May, assumed a most singular aspect, for so many bullocks had perished before Bangalore that even a reinforcement of 10,000 was insufficient for the conveyance of the baggage, artillery, and stores. Thus soldiers, sutlers, and camp-followers were seen carrying cannon-balls and other ammunition; while at night the officers had to share their tents together. The troops of the Nizam alone conveyed on this painful march 5,800 lbs. of shot†

The terror and despair of Tippoo now assumed a savage and despicable form. Though he had often affirmed on oath that every British prisoner in his hands had been released, he still retained among his victims twenty English boys, the survivors of a much larger number, whom he had barbarously mutilated, and educated as singers and dancers. They were now, when tidings came of the advance of Cornwallis, handed over to the Abyssinian slaves, and horribly murdered by the slow dislocation of the vertebrae—the head being twisted one way, and the body another.

Tippoo now covered the walls of Seringapatam

* Wilks.

† Sir Thomas Munro.

with caricatures of the British, and, to bar the approach of the latter, demolished the bridge over the northern branch of the Cauvery. As a preparation for the abandonment of his capital, he removed his harem and his treasures to Chittledroog, a fortress situated on a rock, and girt by many walls in a rough and unhealthy district. There, his mother—the widow of the fierce Hyder—and several of his wives, upbraided him with his lack of spirit; and eventually, stung by their taunts, and hoping by sheer dint of numbers, to overwhelm the British in the field, he selected a strong position with good military judgment—guided perhaps by Lally and his European renegadoes—and drew up his army on a range of heights above the Cauvery, and in the species of island on which stood Seringapatam, and thus placing himself between his capital and his able opponent, prepared for the stern issue. “The British army marched over the barren heights above the valley of Millgotah, and then commanded a view of the mighty fortress of Seringapatam—the nest of hewn stone, formidable even in the eyes of the British soldier, where Tippoo had brooded over his ambitious designs, and his dreams of hatred, in visionary triumphs over the strangers who had so lately imposed a yoke on Asia. Nature and art combined to render its defences strong. An immense extended camp without the walls, held the flower of the sultan’s troops.” *

This was on the 13th of May, and three days after, it was resolved to attack him. Our troops were encamped with their front towards Seringapatam, their right resting on a ridge of small hills, and their left towards the Cauvery. Before the Mysorean army lay some swampy ground, which Tippoo had taken care to strengthen by redoubts mounted with cannon, while the approach of the British was somewhat hemmed in between the river and the ridge of hills, thus diminishing their frontage to not much more than a mile, or, at the utmost, a mile and a half.

Cornwallis having ascertained that it was possible, by crossing the ridge, to turn the Mysorean left wing, and by wheeling round, to get into its rear, determined to make the attempt, and with the greatest silence and secrecy, ordered six European regiments, and twelve of sepoys, to begin their march for this purpose, at eleven at night. The Nizam’s rabble horsemen moving at daylight, were to be the supports, while the rest of the troops remained to guard the camp.

Torrents of rain which fell, impeded the march, and the bullocks were so much exhausted by dragging the artillery, that day broke before the

appointed place was reached; but the intention of making an attack was by no means abandoned; though every corps had become bewildered. About half-past six a.m. our troops were in sight of the enemy, and, as the left flank and rear of the latter appeared to be commanded by a height—the hill of Carigat, which gave its name to the battle—and which abutted abruptly on the Cauvery, it was resolved to gain possession of it, although one of Tippoo’s redoubts crowned its summit. This hill had two spurs, one of which was occupied by the main body of Tippoo; the other—a strong ridge of rocks extending for nearly three miles to his left, opposite to this ridge, and separated from it by a ravine—was the post occupied by the army of Cornwallis.

So the hill of Carigat was the point on which the fate of the battle was to hang. A British column, composed of infantry and cavalry, with eight guns in front, moved rapidly to seize it at the time when a strong force sent by Tippoo anticipated the movement, and from the ridge its cannon opened by a plunging and searching fire, just as our people cleared the ravine, and thus they were enfiladed till shelter was found among some rocks, and a frontage was formed. While Tippoo’s detached column was occupied in seizing the point of attack, his main body had changed its front, and was advancing against us in line.

To meet these double movements, Cornwallis had to form his troops in two fronts of unequal length, but united at right angles. This strange, but necessary formation, had barely been achieved, when the enemy’s Stable Horse, or select cavalry, which had been concealed by the peculiar nature of the ground, dashed out on the spur, and made a spirited charge, in which many of them perished by bullet and bayonet. Then the smaller of our two fronts, which consisted of five battalions, including the 52nd Foot, the 71st Highlanders, and Major Langley’s brigade, the whole under Hamilton Maxwell of the 74th Highlanders, were ordered to carry the ridge from whence the obnoxious fire came.

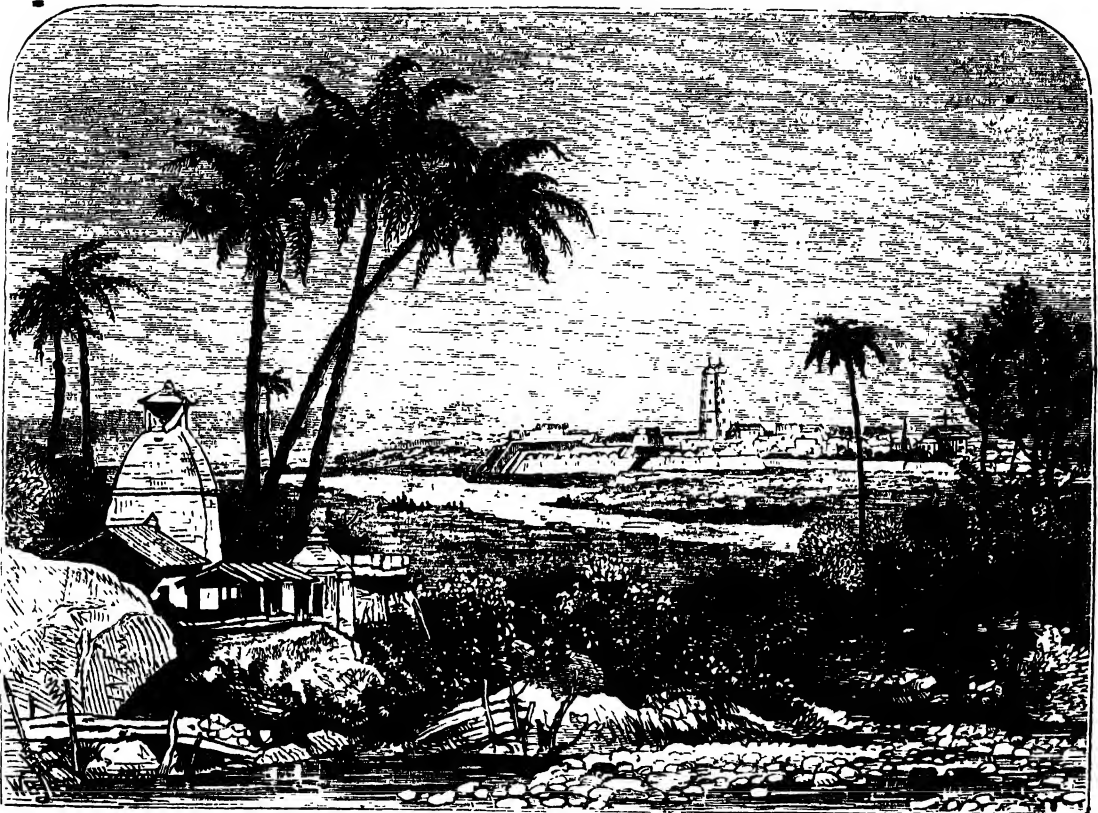
With splendid intrepidity, Maxwell’s division advanced for 500 yards, under a heavy cannonade and a biting fire of musketry. The Mysoreans stood firm till our troops were within a few yards of them; but ere the bayonets could be levelled for a charge, they broke, fled, and rushed down the back of the ridge, at the foot of which three of their guns were taken, many of the gunners being shot down in the drag-ropes, while striving to get them away. By this time, Cornwallis had advanced with his other front, under Medows, against the

* “Hist. Brit. Conquests in India,”



enemy's line, and the battle had become general ; both ridgés resounding with a roar of musketry, for Tippoo, now beginning to fear the issue, had given orders to retire his guns, and leave the battle to be contested by infantry only. While Medows was advancing, the 52nd and the Macleod Highlanders took ground to the left, so as to keep up a line of communication between that officer and Maxwell's division, which was driving the enemy from rock to rock as they advanced.

There seems to be no doubt that the main body of Tippoo's army stood its ground remarkably well, but was compelled, at last, to fall back on every hand, and to retreat for shelter under the guns of Seringapatam. In the afternoon, a detached fort was taken, and, on the summit of a hill, another was seen, which was manned by Tippoo's Europeans. Our losses in the battle of Carigat were about 530 killed and wounded ; among these were twenty-three officers and 109 Europeans.



VIEW OF SERINGAPATAM.

The ground was so broken and rugged, that, at times, the battle became a series of combats for the capture or retention of every rocky elevation ; but, amid showers of rockets of a very superior kind, and concentrated discharges of matchlocks and musketry, cheering each other with hearty hurrahs, our people pressed on, driving the enemy steadily back, and preserving every advantage they won.

Captain-Lieutenant Clark, of the 74th Highlanders, was struck on the breast by a spent ball, the force of which was so gone that he caught it in his hand.

Tippoo now retreated into the island of Seringapatam, into which he had previously conveyed his camp equipage and heavy baggage, our victorious troops encamping on the ground he had been compelled to abandon.

CHAPTER LVII.

JUNCTION WITH THE MAHRATTAS, AND THE RETREAT TO BANGALORE.

HAD the cavalry of the Nizam—these motley troops whom Colonel Wilks has described—followed up the retreating Mysoreans with proper vigour, the battle of Carigat would have been even more decisive than it was; but now that the fight was won, our prospects became more than ever gloomy. By this time the draught bullocks had perished in such numbers, that the tumbrils and wagons of the army were, in many instances, dragged by the troops, and such a state of matters could not last long under the sun and rains of India.

Thus Lord Cornwallis saw that the original scheme of the campaign must be abandoned; he made up his mind to fall back, and sent orders to General Abercromby, then within three days' march of Seringapatam, to retire with his column towards Malabar, and, meanwhile, made such preparations as the case seemed to require. The battering-train which, with such infinite labour, had been brought to the front, was destroyed. Thus three twenty-four and eight eighteen-pounders were burst, and the ammunition of them cast into wells; the twelve-pounders alone were reserved; the stores were committed to the flames, only a slender stock being retained.

General Abercromby obeyed his orders with great reluctance. He had, with some difficulty, brought his column, 8,000 strong, including the 77th Foot, a Highland brigade of the 73rd and 75th Regiments, with his battering-train, and a great supply of stores, over the rugged mountains and through the dense forests of the Ghauts. All this labour had been in vain, and now his troops, when hoping to make a dash at Seringapatam, had to retrace their steps amid the blinding rains of the monsoon. So, to march as light as possible, he too burst or spiked his guns, and left to the mercy of Tippoo his stores, including 1,000 bags of rice, for the starving troops of Cornwallis. After this, the Bombay column reached the coast in a sickly state, and destitute of cattle.

Before his tents were struck, Lord Cornwallis issued the following general order, thanking the soldiers:—

"So long as there were any hopes of reducing Seringapatam before the commencement of the rain, the Commander-in-chief thought himself happy in availing himself of their willing service; but the unexpected bad weather for

some time experienced, having rendered the attack of the enemy's capital impracticable until the conclusion of the ensuing monsoons, Lord Cornwallis thought he should make an ill return for the zeal and alacrity exhibited by the soldiers, if he desired them to draw the guns and stores back to a magazine where there remains an ample supply of both, which was captured by their valour; he did not hesitate to order the guns and stores, which were not wanted for field service, to be destroyed."

This explanation was given, doubtless, lest heart should be lost by the army, which began its laborious retreat to Bangalore on the 26th of May, 1791; and, according to the description of Major E. Dirom, of the 52nd, the ground, on which "the army had encamped but six days, was covered, in a circuit of several miles, with the carcasses of cattle and horses; and the last of the gun-carriages, carts, and stores of the battering-train left in flames, was a melancholy spectacle, which the troops passed as they quitted their deadly camp."

The army had barely proceeded six miles, when the bugles of the advanced guard sounded an alarm, and a body of some 2,000 horse suddenly appeared, as if about to menace the baggage; and preparations were at once made for a resistance. A solitary horseman now came galloping forward, and, hailing a staff officer, announced himself to be a Mahratta, and that those in sight were the advanced guard to two Mahratta armies, on the march to join Lord Cornwallis. The latter, who suspected that, notwithstanding treaties made, the Mahrattas had no intention of reinforcing him, had no idea that so near him now was the Poonah army under Hurry Punt, and another much more efficient one under Purseram Bhow, mustering in all 32,000 men, with thirty pieces of cannon. Of the approach of this large force he had been kept in total ignorance, by the active manner in which the regular communications had been interrupted by Tippoo's flying horsemen. This junction was a most fortunate event at that crisis, and some pedantic officer, in a letter to a print of the time, likens it to the appearance of Masinissa, the son of Gala, at the battle of Zama, in which Annibal was defeated.

The wants of the British army were now supplied by the Mahrattas, but at extravagant prices; and great was the joy of our troops, when they saw

rissala after rissala of these wild and hardy horsemen, come drifting up like clouds against the horizon, brandishing their swords, shaking their long lances, and caracoling their well-fed chargers. "The chiefs themselves, and, indeed, all the Mahrattas in their suite," says the deputy adjutant-general, "were remarkably plain, but neat in their appearance. Mild in their aspect, humane in their disposition, polite and unaffected in their address, they are distinguished by obedience to their chiefs, and attachment to their country. There were not to be seen among them those fantastic figures in armour, so common among the Mohammedans in the Nizam's, or, as they style themselves, the Mogul army; adventurers, collected from every quarter of the East, who, priding themselves on individual valour, think it beneath them to be useful but on the day of battle, and when that comes, prove only the inefficiency of numbers, unconnected with any general principle of union or discipline."*

For a description of the bazaar which they set up in the camp of our famished soldiers, we cannot do better than quote the words of another officer, Colonel Mark Wilks, who says that there were exhibited for sale the spoils of the East and the industry of the West—"from a web of English broad-cloth to a Birmingham penknife—from the shawls of Cashmere to the second-hand garment of a Hindoo—from diamonds of the first water to the silver ear-ring of a poor, plundered village maiden—from oxen, sheep, and poultry, to the dried salt fish of Concan—almost everything was to be seen, that could be presented by the best bazaars of the richest towns; but, above all, the tables of the money-changers, overspread with the coins of every country of the East, in the open air and public street of the camp, gave evidence of an extent of mercantile activity, utterly inconceivable in any camp, except that of systematic plunderers, by wholesale and retail. Every variety of trade appeared to be exercised, with a large competition and considerable diligence; and, among them, one, apparently the least adapted to a wandering life—the trade of a tanner—was practised with eminent success. A circular hole dug in the earth, a raw hide adapted to it at the bottom and sides, and secured above by a series of skewers, run through its edges into the earth, formed the tan-pit; on marching days the tan-pit, with its contents in the shape of a bag, formed one side of a load for a horse or bullock, and the liquid preparation was either emptied or preserved, according to the length or expected repetition of the march: the best tanning material (catechu) is equally accessible

and portable; and the English officers obtained from these ambulatory tan-pits what their own Indian capitals could not then produce except as European imports—excellent sword-belts."*

On the 27th, the day after the junction with the Mahrattas, Tippoo, who had now become anxious to negotiate, sent in a flag of truce accompanied by numerous officials, a bushel of fruit, and a letter in Persian; both of which were sent back next day, with a missive to the effect that the British would agree to no treaty of peace that did not include their allies; that if Tippoo meant to treat, he must first deliver up all British subjects who were prisoners in his hands; that the fruit was returned, not as an insult, but as a sign that all friendly intercourse was declined.†

A few days after this, at ten at night, a sudden fire of cannon and musketry in the camp of the Mahrattas, caused the whole British army to get under arms, in the supposition that an attack had been made by Tippoo; but it proved to be only the celebration of one of their festivals, in which they salute the new moon, on its first appearance. After an eight days' halt, they refused to march on the ninth, as they deemed it unlucky; thus Lord Cornwallis had to defer to another day his retrograde movement, which was made slowly towards Bangalore, which he reached on the 11th of July.

En route, plans of operation were arranged; a loan of £144,000 was requested, and this Cornwallis was enabled to advance on the part of the Company, by arresting in its transit an investment of money destined for China. Aided by a column of Bombay troops, Purseram Bhow was to march by Sera, then a town of Mysore, but now a mere collection of huts with a citadel, for the purpose of operating in the north-west. Hurry Punt, Meer Alum, and Tejewunt, were to remain with the Governor-General, the former as commander of the Mahrattas, and the two latter as the civic representatives of the Nizam. Each was to be attended by a body of cavalry, who were to take part in all operations against Tippoo.

The army of our ally, the Nizam, had begun to assemble at Hyderabad, fully twelve months before this time, and had been joined by two sepoy battalions, under a Major Montgomery. The cavalry were rather indifferent; but the infantry, disciplined and commanded by a French soldier of fortune named Raymond, were infinitely better, though imperfectly armed and accoutred. These forces had begun their southern march, and after many delays had arrived at Rachore—a town in

* "Historical Sketches of Southern India."

† Dirom's "Rev. of the Second Campaign."

* Dirom's "Narrative of the Campaign."

the province of Bejapoor, pleasantly situated on the Kistna; and having no fear of interruption, on learning that Tippoo was occupied about Coimbatore, on the 28th of October, they had invested Capool, about 100 miles distant from him. The infantry of Raymond and our artillery did good service here, but the blunders of the Nizam's general, or his ignorance of attacking a fortified place, caused the siege to be protracted till April, 1791, when the place fell by a capitulation.

Now that he was accompanied by the plenipotentiaries, Meer Alum and Tejewunt, and the Mahratta chief, Lord Cornwallis, provided the wounded and other prisoners were released, was by no means disinclined to treat with Tippoo, and even intimated—should that formidable personage desire it—that he would consent to a cessation of hostilities, as a preliminary; but, in proportion as the allies became conciliatory, the sultan waxed bold and more exacting; thus, after the Governor-General had actually conceded the point of written proposals and a conference of deputies at Bangalore, the former declined all terms, unless the British army was marched to the frontier. Tippoo, meanwhile, had secretly been making similar advances to the Mahrattas and the Nizam, in hopes, by stirring up

jealousy, to dissolve the alliance; so Lord Cornwallis saw that there was nothing to be done but to take the field at the earliest suitable season. He strained every nerve, says Mr. Gleig, to recruit the losses of his army, and to supply those deficiencies under which it had hitherto laboured; and was thus compelled to exercise an unusual but necessary control over the revenues of the Company. Through the agency of Captain Read, he opened a negotiation with the Brinjarries, a caste of ambulatory merchants, who supply the armies of the native princes with grain. He also directed that the China ships should be stripped of their treasures, elephants, cattle, and carriage, and that all should be forwarded to Madras. Nor were minor military operations forgotten; for he captured several forts, chiefly important in consequence of their situation as commanding the passes through the Ghauts, which had been previously closed; these were thus opened up; while the troops of the Mahrattas and Nizam, to straiten Tippoo, over-ran all the districts hitherto spared, cutting off such garrisons as they found themselves able to reduce.*

And in these operations, and preparations for a fresh attack on Tippoo, the summer of 1791 passed away.

CHAPTER LVIII.

THIRD CAMPAIGN AGAINST TIPPOO.—STORMING OF NUNDYDROOG, SAVANDROOG, ETC.—MR. FRANCIS'S MOTION IN PARLIAMENT LOST.

It was on the 15th of July, 1791, that Lord Cornwallis again took the field, after placing in the fort of Bangalore all his sick and one half the tumbrils belonging to his field-pieces. By this time he had got from the Brinjarries about 10,000 bullock-loads of rice and grain; half a million sterling had been voted for the military chest by the Company, and large reinforcements of troops and artillery were on their way out, round the Cape. The troops were in the highest spirits, and Cornwallis was so confident of victory that his enthusiasm spread through all ranks, as the troops began their march to Ossoor—a fortified place, which commanded the Pass of Palicodé. "This

fertility, and careful cultivation. Rich foliage crowned the knolls and hill tops, as the ground undulated or rose in bolder eminences. The elevation of the region gave coolness, yet it basked in all the glorious light of the Indian sun."

Detached from the main army, the 7th Brigade of Infantry, under Major Gowdie, H.E.I.C.S., advanced to Ossoor, which the enemy abandoned at his approach, after unsuccessfully attempting to blow up the works; thus a large store of grain and powder rewarded the march of the major, prior to whose arrival, the whole of the British prisoners in the place had been murdered in cold blood, by the express order of Tippoo, notwithstanding that

supplied in the Carnatic for the use of our army ; and this fact, with other indications that we were in earnest, though greatly alarming Tippoo, only added fear to his hate, and made him resolve to put all to the issue of the sword. During the autumn, our troops were employed in several directions, north-east of Bangalore, reducing various hill-forts, and thus destroying Tippoo's communications between the country and Seringapatam. The country of Mysore has many isolated rocks or hills, which, when fortified, are styled *droogs* (a term synonymous with the Celtic *dun*), and those are the natural bulwarks of the land. Of those, one of the chief was Nundydroog, thirty-one miles eastward of Bangalore.

It consisted of several lines of defence, occupying the summit of a granite mountain, 1,700 feet in height, overlooking a vast extent of almost level country, and fortified with such care as to make regular approaches necessary. Inaccessible on every point, except one, the rock was crowned by a double line of ramparts ; a third had been recently commenced, and an outwork covered the gate by a flanking fire. The general aspect of the whole place was most formidable. Yet Nundydroog, however high and steep, was still approachable ; but not without immense fatigue in dragging up guns, and the construction of batteries, on the face of the rocky mass. The command of this place had been entrusted to Lutif Ali Bey, a Mysorean officer of great merit and courage.

Major Gowdie, with his brigade and some battering-guns, after capturing the little town, attempted the reduction of the fort on the 27th of September ; while, to intimidate the garrison, Cornwallis encamped his whole army within four miles of the place. After fourteen days of incessant labour, batteries were got into operation, and in twenty-one days two practicable breaches were effected—one on the re-entering angle of the outwork, and another in the curtain of the outer wall. The inner was beyond reach of shot.

On the 19th of October the assault was ordered to take place that night, when both breaches were to be stormed. "The attack was to be led by Lieutenant Hugh Mackenzie, with twenty grenadiers of the 36th Regiment and 71st Highlanders, on the right ; and on the left by Lieutenant Moore, with twenty light company-men, and the Highland flank companies—the whole under Captain James Robertson (son of the Scottish historian), supported by Captain Robert (afterwards General) Burns, with the grenadiers, and Captain W. Hartley, with the light company of the 36th Regiment ; while General Medows by his presence and example

encouraged all. It is related that while the stormers were all waiting in anxious silence for the signal to advance, a soldier whispered something about "a mine." "To be sure there is," said the ready-witted Medows ; "but, my lads, it is a mine of gold !" an answer which produced its proper effect.*

On this night the moonlight was soft, clear, and brilliant ; thus every object was discernible as at noon. Hence, silently as the escalade crept on and upward, the gleam of their arms was distinctly seen by the Mysoreans, who, having beforehand carefully loosened enormous masses of granite, while uttering shrill yells, that rent the air, by the aid of levers sent these masses crashing, with the sound of thunder, down the mountain-side ; and by these huge boulders and musketry, as the stormers came swarming up, ninety men were swept away ere the breaches were won, and the enemy driven from the outer rocks, so pushed and wedged together as to be unable to barricade the gate of the inner rampart, and thirty more men were killed. The Europeans came on with such speed and fury, that the loss fell almost entirely on the native troops who were in support. Our wounded were 101 of all ranks. So thus fell into our hands that formidable Nundydroog, which the Mahrattas had defended for three years against all the power of Hyder Ali.

The next attempt was made on Kistnagherry—a fortress situated on a rock 700 feet in perpendicular height, 114 miles eastward of Seringapatam. On the 7th of November, Colonel H. Maxwell, of the 74th Highlanders, with a detachment, attempted its reduction. Sword in hand, he carried the lower fort by escalade, and attempted to reach the upper, by entering it along with the fugitives. So nearly were his soldiers succeeding that they tore down a standard that was flying on the gateway ; yet enormous masses of granite, showered down by a garrison that far out-numbered them, compelled a speedy retreat ; but in the following year, the place, with all the province, was ceded to Britain, when the fortifications were destroyed.

Lord Cornwallis, keeping steadily in view the ultimate capture of the sultan's capital, had resolved on the complete reduction of every intermediate stronghold that might intercept his own line of communications ; and by far the most formidable of these in Mysore was Savandroog, which is situated on the summit of an immense and almost inaccessible rock, and is surrounded by a thick jungly bamboo wood, which renders its locality very unhealthy.

* General Stewart, vol. ii.

On the 9th of December, Colonel James Stuart, of the 72nd Highlanders, with that regiment, the gallant 52nd, the 71st Highlanders, and the 14th and 26th Bengal Infantry, marched from Bangalore to capture the place. He had with him eight guns and two howitzers, under Major Montague. Some

guns had to be dragged, lifted, or slung up precipices almost perpendicular, ere they could be got into battery. So confident were the garrison in the strength of the place, that they looked disdainfully on, and scarcely interfered with him. By the 17th two batteries opened, one at 700 yards,



GROUP OF BRINJARRIES.

accounts say that Colonel Nisbett, of the 52nd, commanded; but the historical records of that corps distinctly say it was "Colonel Stuart who commanded the right wing of the army."

He pitched his camp within three miles of the rock, while Cornwallis took up a position five miles distant in his rear. Stuart's first operation was to cut a path for his guns through the bamboo wood to the foot of the rocky mountain; and then these

the other at 1,000, but owing to the enormous thickness of the walls, with little effect; yet two days later, a third was in operation at 250 yards. In two days more an open breach was effected, and on the 21st an assault was ordered in the early morning.

The nature of the work in hand may be gathered from the following extract from Captain Moorsom.

We are told that the soldiers "climbed a steep

hill, descended into a valley by so rugged and steep a path, that they had to let themselves down in many places by the branches of trees growing on the side of the rocks, and then to ascend a rock nearly 300 feet high, crawling on their hands and feet, and helping themselves up by tufts of grass, until they reached the summit, when they established themselves on a spot which overlooked the whole of the fortress, about 300 yards from the wall. . . .

At eleven o'clock on the morning of the 21st, the band of the latter regiment played, "Britons Strike Home!" and the pipes of the two Highland corps struck up; while, with cheers, the stormers, led by Nisbett, rushed to the assault up rocks so steep, that, says General Stewart, "after the service was over, the men were afraid to descend them." A strenuous resistance was anticipated, as a large body of the enemy had been seen closing in to defend



THE INDIAN BISON (*Bos Gaurus*).

The right attack was made by the light companies of the 71st and 72nd (Highlanders), supported by a battalion company of the latter corps; the left attack, by the flank companies of the 76th and the grenadiers of the 52nd; the centre attack, under Major Hugh Fraser, of the 72nd, by the grenadiers and two battalion companies of that regiment, two companies of the 52nd, the grenadiers of the 71st, and four companies of sepoy, supported by the 6th Battalion of Sepoy; the whole under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Colebrook Nisbett, of the 52nd Regiment.*

* "Hist. Rec. Oxford Light Infantry."

the breach, but the fury with which the stormers came on appalled them; they gave way, and Nisbett, with the loss of only five men, fought his way into the heart of the place.

In the same bold and rapid manner our troops captured Savangherry, Rahgaherry, Ootradroog, and other places, leaving the way open to Seringapatam; and, in the meantime, had no other enemy to contend with but the deadly climate.

Tippoo, who began to perceive the moral effect these rapid conquests were having among his people, thought to counteract them by an expedition southward, and made a sudden attack on Coim-

batore, compelling our garrison there to capitulate on honourable terms, which respected their liberty. These terms the brutal tyrant, as usual, violated, and sent the whole garrison prisoners to Seringapatam, subjecting them to every conceivable indignity and cruelty. Tippoo, it is supposed, "probably considered that, even if ultimately defeated, he might execute vengeance on such men as he could get into his power—the English, in the former war, having shown such indifference to the fate of the prisoners he had murdered when they came to terms of peace."

Before the preceding October had far advanced, supplies of men and money had come from Britain, including two companies of Royal Artillery, under Major David Scott, and 300 soldiers from St. Helena, who could endure the Indian climate better than those who came direct from Europe; while from Madras and Bengal the reinforcements and stores poured into Mysore from one side, those which came from home and Bombay were organised to ascend the Ghauts on the other.

Nothing now delayed our advance upon Seringapatam but the detention of the army of Nizam Ali before Goorumconda, the siege of which had been begun in September, and where little progress had been made until the breaching-guns from Nundydroog were sent thither. Still more would this siege have been protracted, had not Captain Andrew Reade, H.E.I.C.S., who commanded the British detachment, been permitted to take his own way, and storm the lower fort, by which access to the upper could alone be gained. In this he succeeded. The garrison were hemmed in, and the siege became a blockade. As a detachment sufficed for this, the main body of the Nizam's army was marched to join the Governor-General. It had not proceeded far, when tidings came that, in consequence of the rashness of Hafiz Jee, the officer left in command of the lower fort, that place had been recaptured. In a sally he had been suddenly overwhelmed by 12,000 cavalry and infantry, led by Tippoo's eldest son, Hyder Sahib; thus the army of the Nizam had again to retrace its steps, and resume the blockade of Goorumconda.

The monsoon was over now; the troops and their cattle had regained strength amid the full supplies of every kind brought in by the Brinjarries, and ultimately, the three armies of the confederates, or allies, united in the end of January, 1792, near Savandroog, to make the grand advance upon Seringapatam; but prior to detailing that movement, we must glance at events that were occurring elsewhere.

In the October of 1791, Commodore William

Cornwallis, brother of the earl—an officer who had distinguished himself as captain of the *Zion* in the battle off Grenada in 1779, in the following year at Monte Christo, and elsewhere—having received intelligence that some neutral ships, under French colours, were expected to arrive on the coast of Malabar, laden with guns and stores for Tippoo's army, dispatched the *Thomas*, *Vestal*, and *Minerva* frigates, with orders to examine strictly all vessels they might fall in with. The commodore joined them shortly after with the *Crown* (sixty-four), and the *Phoenix* (thirty-six), whose Captain, G. Anson Byron, was of the same family as the poet.

At six o'clock on the evening of the 23rd, when cruising northward of Tellicherry, while the *Phoenix* and *Atalanta* were at anchor in the roads, two French ships and a brig were discovered in the offing; and it being the *Atalanta's* guard, she got under weigh to overhaul them, followed by her consort; there was, however, little wind, and the Frenchman crept into Mahé Roads.

Captain Foot, of the former vessel, sent an officer on board; but they would not permit an examination, until our marines tore off the hatches, and the vessels were found to be laden only with merchandise. The next affair, however, proved more serious.

Early in November, the *Résolue*, French frigate, of thirty-two guns and 200 men, came into Mahé Roads, and at two a.m., on the 19th, sailed in company with two merchantmen. At daylight, the commodore, who was at anchor off Tellicherry, discovered them in the offing, and signalled to the *Phoenix* and *Perseverance* to weigh and pursue them. The *Phoenix* came up with them off Mangalore, where the French captain hailed them to know what was wanted. Sir Richard Strachan immediately replied that he had orders to board the two merchant ships, and that he would send an officer on board, in courtesy, to explain the reason.

While the boats were being hoisted out for this purpose, and also to board the two vessels, they were fired into by the *Résolue*, which next poured a broadside into the *Phoenix*. This, Sir Richard was not slow in returning, and a sharp engagement ensued, which lasted twenty-five minutes, when the enemy struck, after twenty-five of her men had been killed and forty wounded. Among the latter, was her captain, dangerously. The *Phoenix* had seventeen killed and wounded. Among the latter Lieutenant Finlay, of the marines, mortally. The commodore ordered the *Perseverance* to conduct the conquered ship into the Mahé Roads, and leave her there, as her officers refused to have anything

more to do with her, saying she had struck to the *Phoenix*.*

As we were not yet at war with France, this encounter caused some excitement at home, all the more so that the two merchantmen, on being closely searched, were found not to have any contraband of war on board.

And now, shortly after the Christmas recess, in 1791, Mr. Philip Francis, to the great delight of all demagogues, and those "Friends of the People," who were the bitterest enemies of their native country, took an opportunity to assail, with all his powers of venom and invective, the war in India; and had the effrontery to eulogise as an excellent, ill-used, and most amiable prince, Tippoo, Sultan of Mysore. "It was as impolitic as it was unjust," he asserted, "to think of extending our territories in Hindostan; that it was equally impolitic to embarrass ourselves with alliances among the native princes, who were eternally quarrelling among themselves, and attempting to destroy one another; that if such alliances were to be formed, Tippoo would be a much better ally for us than the Rajah of Travancore, the Mahrattas, and the Nizam of the Deccan, for Tippoo had an army of 150,000 men, an admirable train of artillery, and a well-filled treasury."

Mr. Francis then proceeded to move thirteen resolutions for the purpose of censuring the cause, and precluding a continuance of the war, which he asserted to have been declared without cause, conducted without skill, ruinous in its expenditure, and would never prove of the least advantage. To this view of matters, and these assertions, Pitt and Henry Dundas replied at length, and with vigour. They urged "that the Rajah of Travancore had an indisputable right to the territories which Tippoo had invaded; that the war had originated in the restless ambition of the Mysorean sultan, his hostility to the British, and his long premeditated design of subduing Travancore, which would open

to him an easy passage into the Carnatic, and thus enable him to attack Madras, and all our possessions in that part of India; that, under the circumstances, with Tippoo occupying and ravaging the territories of our ally, a war on our part was unavoidable, unless we wished to sacrifice all respect among the native powers of India."

The application which Tippoo had made to Louis XVI., through MM. Leger and de Molleville, could not then have been known to Parliament; but his past actions had proved him a barbarous and faithless monster in human form, whose mere name excited our troops to fury; so the great majority of the House of Commons had ample faith in the justice and moderation of Earl Cornwallis. Thus Philip Francis was compelled to abandon alike "his envenomed paradoxes," and let his thirteen resolutions drop without a division. A few days after this, Henry Dundas, doubtless with Pitt's approbation, moved three counter-resolutions. These were:—

"1. That it appeared to this House that the attacks made by Tippoo Sultan upon the Lines of Travancore, were unwarranted and unprovoked infractions of the Treaty of Mangalore, concluded with the British in 1784.

"2. That the conduct of the Governor-General, in determining to prosecute with vigour the war against Tippoo, in consequence of his attacks on the territories of the Rajah of Travancore, was highly meritorious.

"3. That the treaties entered into with the Nizam, and with the Mahrattas, were wisely calculated to add vigour to the operations of war, and to promote the future tranquillity of India; and that the faith of the British nation was pledged for the due performance of the engagements contained in the said treaties."

After some debate, but without a division, Dundas's three important resolutions were adopted by the House.

CHAPTER LIX.

THE RAJAH OF COORG.—THE BAD FEELING IN BRITAIN.—REVIEW OF THE ARMY, AND FINAL ADVANCE UPON SERINGAPATAM.

WHILE the three allied armies lay at Savandroog, a fourth was preparing to join them under General Abercromby, whose duties, as Governor of Bombay, requiring his presence there, had returned to Telli-

cherry early in November, and, having mustered his forces, amounting to 8,400 men, at the town of Cannanore, on the coast of Malabar, marched five miles northward to Iliacore.

The river on which this town is situated having

* Schomberg, "Nav. Chron."

been flooded, he crossed it by boats, and marched for twenty-five miles through a wild district, to the western end of the Pass of Pudicherrim, on the borders of Coorg, on the friendly aid of whose rajah full dependence was placed. The Rajahs of Coorg were independent princes during the sixteenth century, and the present family had reigned since 1632. They were of the Nair caste of Hindoos, and retained their independence, till domestic dissension gave Hyder an opportunity of subduing them, and the rajah died, a captive in the castle of Cudoor. His eldest son, the then rajah, having been forcibly circumcised, was burning for freedom and revenge; and having made his escape from his prison at Periapatam, succeeded in driving the troops of Tippoo out of his dominions, till Merkara was the only place then possessed by the sultan. When our war with Tippoo commenced, the value of having so gallant and resolute an ally, whose frontier lay within forty miles of Seringapatam, became at once apparent; and the Bombay Government gladly made a treaty with him for the mutual invasion of Mysore. He nobly performed all his engagements, though in one instance he certainly excited suspicion in the mind of General Abercromby.

When the latter entered Coorg, on his route to Periapatam, the rajah was blockading the fortified town of Merkara, some sixty miles distant from Seringapatam. The garrison was starving, and an early surrender expected. It was known that Tippoo had sent a great convoy for its relief, but the troops escorting the train had been surrounded, and could not escape; thus, great was the surprise of Abercromby, when the rajah rode to his camp in person, with tidings that he had permitted the convoy to enter Merkara, and its escort to get off free.

His somewhat singular explanation was, that Kadir Khan, commanding the escort, had in former times laid him under such obligations, that he had not the heart to treat him as an enemy. It would seem that when the rajah had been a captive in Periapatam, two of his sisters had been forcibly placed in Tippoo's harem, but Kadir had saved the honour of a third, the youngest, by enabling her to escape unharmed.

It was in return for this service that the rajah, after the convoy and its escort had been entirely surrounded by his troops, caused information to be given to Kadir Khan, that he wished to spare him disgrace or death. A conference between them actually took place, and with singular gratitude, the rajah, in the face of his whole army, allowed Merkara to be revictualled, and the convoy to return unmolested. By this, however, the rajah lost nothing, for the food was soon consumed, and

the garrison capitulated, after which Abercromby pushed on to Periapatam.

In one of Lord Teignmouth's letters, dated Bath, 31st December, 1791, we find the view taken at home of our Eastern affairs at this time.

"Hope and fear are now standing on the tip-toe of expectation for intelligence from India. Before the arrival of the late news, with an account of Lord Cornwallis's return to Bangalore, a general opinion prevailed that we should hear of the capture of Seringapatam. The unexpected success of his lordship's first operations against Tippoo excited hopes that were rather unreasonable; but the despondence of his return is still more so. In England, everything is a party concern, rather than a national one; and I firmly believe there are many public men who would hear that Lord Cornwallis had been compelled to return to the Carnatic, with more satisfaction than that he was in possession of Seringapatam, and master of Tippoo's fate. In the public papers, which are all under party influence, you will trace the sentiments of the parties they serve; and, if I am not mistaken, you will perceive an exultation at Lord Cornwallis's return which will disgust you. He has, and ever will have, my respect, esteem, and regard, to which I can only add my most sanguine wishes that his success may be speedy and decisive, and proportioned to his zeal and virtue. He appears already in caricature, 'upon an elephant, taking a peep at Seringapatam, with a dreadful monsoon blowing in his teeth.'"

On the 31st of January, 1792, the whole army got under arms, to be finally reviewed by Cornwallis, General Medows, the Nizam, the Mahratta chiefs, and the princes and sirdirs of our allies—all the latter of whom were received with due honours, on the right of the line. Many of these dignitaries were on magnificently-accounted elephants, and were preceded by *chobdars*, calling their titles aloud. "They had passed the sepoy's at rather a quick pace," wrote an officer who was present, "but went very slow opposite to the European corps. The troops were all in new clothing, their arms and accoutrements bright and glittering in the sun, and themselves as well dressed as they could have been for a review in time of peace: all order and silence, nothing heard or seen but the uniform sound and motion in presenting their arms, accompanied by the drums and music of the corps, chequered and separated by the parties of artillery extended at the drag-ropes of their guns. The sight was beautiful, even to those accustomed to military parade; while the contrast was no less

* Teignmouth's Memoirs, vol. i.

striking between the good sense of our generals on horseback, and the absurd state of the chiefs looking down from their elephants, than between the silence and order of the troops, and the noise and irregularity of the mob that accompanied the Eastern potentates. After passing the right wing, the road leading through some wood and broken ground, the chiefs on ascending a height, were not a little astonished to discover a still longer line than the two they had passed, and which, in this situation, they could see at once through its whole extent. But for the battering-train, which occupied a mile in the centre of this division, at which they looked with wonder; but for the difference of the dress and music of the Highland regiments, in the second European brigade, and the striking difference of size and dress of the Bengal sepoys in the right, and the Coast sepoys which they now saw in the left wing; but for these distinctions, which they remarked, such was the extent of ground which the army covered, and the apparent magnitude of its numbers, that the chiefs might have imagined a part of the same troops were only shown again upon another ground—an expedient not unusual among themselves."

On the 1st of February, the tents were struck, and the allies moved off, the British army marching in three columns. The battering-guns, tumbrils, and heavy carriages, advancing by the great road, formed the centre column; secondly, a line of infantry, with field-pieces, marched by a parallel road, about 100 yards distant; thirdly, the smaller store carts and baggage proceeded by another road; and beyond these were the camels, elephants, bullocks, coolies, and camp-followers of every description; the whole flanked by cavalry, which also formed the advanced and rear guards.

Through a country where every human dwelling, if not already consumed, was still in flames, our troops steadily continued their march upon the capital of Tippoo, whose horse were, but at a distance, hovering on their flanks, and who appeared disposed to dispute the passage of the river Muddoor. On this, Lord Cornwallis reinforced his advanced guard by a brigade of infantry, on which the Mysoreans, after a little show of resistance, fell back, laying waste the country as they retired. On ascending the high ground, above the Muddoor, the army had a magnificent view of a vast landscape, rich, fertile, and varied, but in many places sheeted with fire, or shrouded in the smoke of blazing villages and homesteads. Collaterally with our troops came on those hordes of the Nizam and the Mahrattas, who scarcely deserved the name of armies.

The last day's march was made on the 5th of February, along a route different from that which the army had before taken against the capital, over the barren hills that lie to the north-east of it, and from whence the valley beneath was often exposed to view, and beyond it, the proud city of Seringapatam, wherein so many British soldiers had languished in chains, and expired in torture and misery—the famous city of Hyder and of Tippoo, with all its far extent of embattled walls, above which rose the domes of its mosques, the cupolas of its palaces, and high over all, the lofty façades of three great square pagodas. Its ramparts were then bristling with cannon, and garrisoned by not less than 45,000 men.

Beneath the walls were seen ranged, in many lines, the tents of the sultan's troops. His irregular cavalry now harassed the advanced guard of Cornwallis at every step. It had frequently to halt, under fiery showers of rockets; but the army pushed steadily on, and reached their place of encampment, at the French Rocks,* where the quartermaster-general, his assistants and guards, were placed in the greatest peril while marking off the ground. The Mahratta and Nizam's forces were encamped in our rear, at such a distance as not to interfere with us. The first night the troops lay before Seringapatam they had hourly *alertes*, by the activity of Tippoo's cavalry; and the Deccan troops were much alarmed by flights of rockets, that came roaring and bursting among their tents. Our soldiers, however, often stole out in the dark, and from behind crags and stones, took quiet and steady shots at such of the foe as came within range.

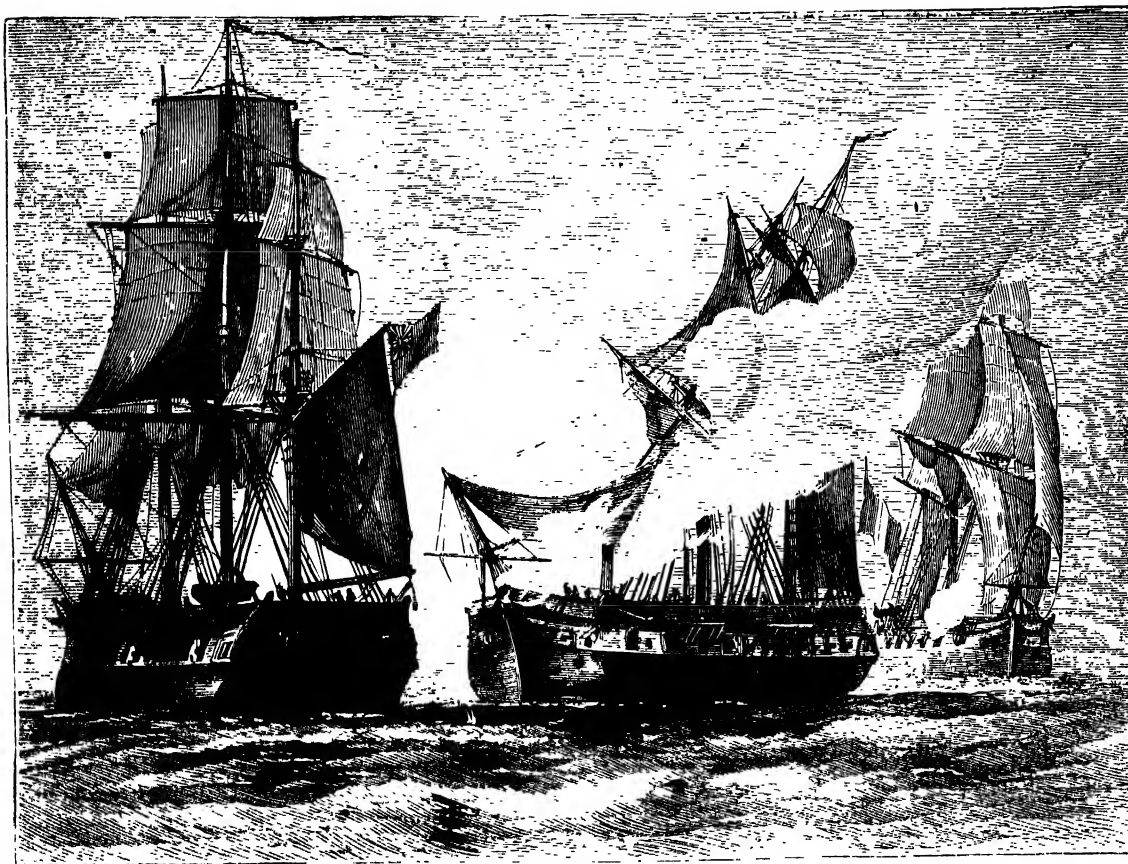
Great indeed was the stake that was now to be played for by those two hostile armies, beneath the walls of Seringapatam. If defeated, the allies would be compelled to begin a disastrous retreat, through a country wasted already by war, thus further ensuring their being cut to pieces in detail. At best, the British could but hope to reach Madras greatly diminished in numbers, and leaving in the hands of the enemy many wounded and other helpless ones, to undergo those tortures, with the stories of which our camps were ever ringing. On the other hand, if Tippoo lost the day, he lost all. He calculated, however, on having two chances in his favour—the great strength of his fortified camp, and the greater strength of the capital and fortress in its rear. Even if we stormed the former, our loss might be so severe as to incapacitate us from attempting the second, and he might then defeat us in the open field. His

* "Rec. 52nd Foot."

highest hope was, that after he had decimated us by his artillery, while his fine cavalry wore out and cut up the Mahrattas and the troops of the Nizam, the campaign, if sufficiently protracted, would end in his favour. Since the day of Plassey, the struggle and the issue were the most important that had taken place in India, and to the end all looked forward with anxiety and suspense.

Tippoo's fortified camp, though to all appear-

also, within the boundary, were seven formidable redoubts, constructed so as to support each other's fire; but a work commenced to the Carigat or Carighaut Hill was left unfinished. Lord Cornwallis, who feared that Tippoo would keep in the open field, and operate seriously on the communications of the besiegers, thought that a decisive blow should be struck by an immediate attack at eight o'clock on the evening of the 6th of February, in three columns.



ENGAGEMENT BETWEEN ENGLISH AND FRENCH CRUISERS.

ances under the walls of the city, was in reality six miles to the northward of it. His front line of defence was situated on the north side of the Cauvery, in rear of a strong bound-hedge, or wide belt of thorny plants, about 1,000 yards above the isle on which the city stands. This was defended by redoubts, armed with heavy cannon, and by his field-train, and troops posted to the best advantage. Altogether, there appeared on the works about 1,000 pieces of ordnance.*

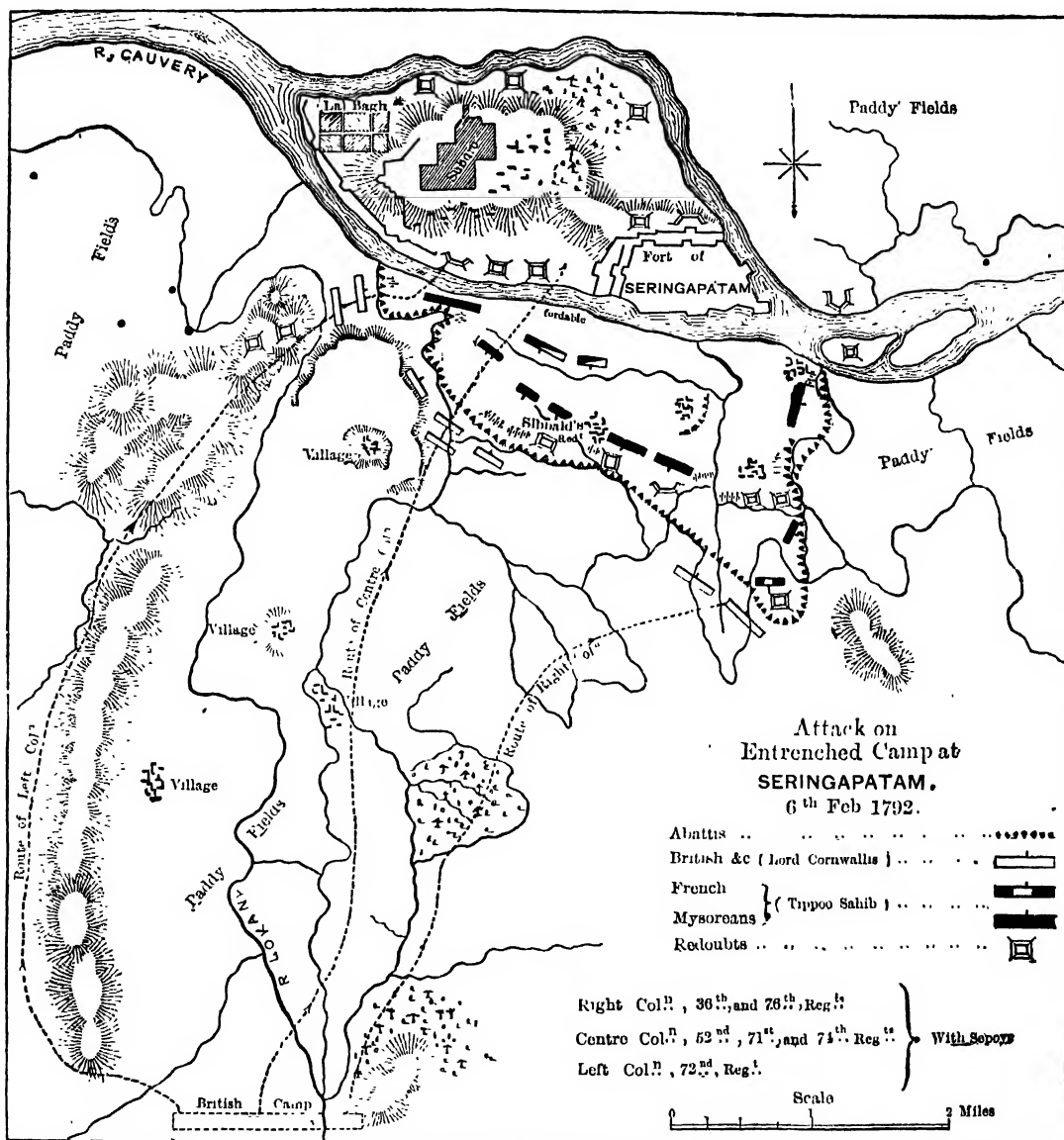
Within the enclosure, at its north-western extremity, says another account, was an eminence with a well-constructed redoubt, and at different parts

* *Ann. Rev.* 1792.

The right column he assigned to General Medows; the left to Lieutenant-Colonel Hamilton Maxwell; the centre he led in person, with Lieutenant-Colonels James Stuart and the Hon. John Knox (son of Lord Ranfurly), afterwards drowned near Jamaica when a major-general. Medows was to penetrate the enemy's left, and, while directing every effort towards the centre, was to endeavour to open and to preserve the communication with Lord Cornwallis's division. A part of the latter under Colonel Stuart, was to hew a passage through the centre of the enemy's camp, and from thence to menace the works on the island, while Colonel Maxwell, with the left wing, was to force the work:

on the Carigat Hill, from which he was to descend, turn the right of the main division, and unite with Colonel Stuart. If executed with success, it was confidently anticipated that these movements would completely overthrow the enemy. The corps com-

Bengal, and Captain Ross, or the Royal Artillery, with a detachment of two subalterns and fifty European artillerymen, with spikes and hammers from the park, accompanied the centre and smaller parties—the two other columns.



PLAN OF THE ATTACK ON SERINGAPATAM.

posing the centre were the 52nd, with two Highland regiments; the right consisted of the 36th and 76th; the left was composed of the 72nd Highlanders. The native troops were divided in equal proportions to each column.

"In addition to the troops detailed in the orders," wrote Cornwallis, in his *Report and General Orders of the Day*, "Major Montague, of the

"The troops had just been dismissed from the evening parade at six o'clock, when the above orders were communicated, upon which they were directed to fall in again with their arms and ammunition.

"By eight, the divisions were formed, and marched out in front of the camp, each in a column by half companies, with intervals in the order directed for their march.

"The number of fighting men was, at the utmost, 2,800 Europeans and 5,900 natives. The officers commanding divisions, on finding that their guides and scaling-ladders had arrived, and that every corps was in its proper place, proceeded, as appointed, at half an hour past eight o'clock.

"The evening was calm and serene; the troops moved on in determined silence, and the full moon, which had just risen, promised to light them to success.

"The right column was conducted by Captain Beatson of the Guides; the centre column by Captain Allen of the Guides, and Lieutenant

Macleod of the Intelligence Department; and *harcarrahs* (native spies), who had been within the enemy's lines, were sent both to these and the left column.

"Tippoo's pickets, having made no attempt to interrupt the reconnoitring parties in the forenoon, he probably did not expect so early a visit. The distance of our camp seemed a circumstance favourable to his security; and he did not, perhaps, imagine that Lord Cornwallis would attack his lines till strengthened by the armies commanded by General Abercromby and Purseram Bhow."

CHAPTER LX.

TIPPOO'S CAMP ATTACKED.—SERINGAPATAM BLOCKED UP.—TIPPOO ATTEMPTS TO NEGOCIATE.

WHEN the columns of attack began to move to the front, the tents were struck, and preparations were made to defend the camp in case of an attack. Our pickets, with the field-pieces, quarter, rear, and camp guards, were all under arms, with orders "to stand fast," and, prepared for any casualty, were drawn up in rear. Cornwallis kept his allies ignorant of his intentions until the last moment, and then they became filled with consternation at the idea of a small body of infantry only attacking the great camp of the terrible Tippoo, with all its guns and defences.

Onward went the three columns steadily, under the brilliant light of the moon, and between ten and eleven o'clock, the centre, led by Cornwallis, sword in hand, when within a mile of the prickly bound hedge, came upon a body of Tippoo's cavalry, with a brigade of rocketeers. The former, astonished to find themselves suddenly face to face with a column of infantry, wheeled round their horses, and galloped off to alarm the lines, leaving the rocket-men to defend themselves as they best could. They showered their fiery missiles, but they flashed high overhead like meteors, and fell in the rear of the column, which pressed steadily on, with the grenadiers of the 71st Highlanders, under Captain Lindsay, in the van.

At this time, our left column was seen ascending the Carigat Hill, which instantly became topped with a circle of flashing musketry. Inspired by this, the centre passed on with such extraordinary vigour

in pursuit of the retreating cavalry and dispersed rocketeers, that after twice crossing the Lockany, which covered the right wing of the enemy, it reached the camp in fifteen minutes after them. "Captain Lindsay, with the grenadiers of the 71st, attempted to push into the body of the place; but was prevented by the raising of a drawbridge a few minutes before he advanced. Here he was joined by some grenadiers and light infantry of the 52nd and 76th Regiments. With this united force he pushed into the Lal Baug (*Lal Bagh*, or Garden of Pearls), where he was fiercely attacked by a body of the enemy, whom he quickly drove back with the bayonet. His numbers were soon after increased by the grenadier company of the 74th Highlanders, when he attempted to force his way into the pettah, or town; but was opposed by such overwhelming numbers, that he did not succeed. He took post in a small redoubt, where he maintained himself till morning, when he moved to the north bank of the river, and joined Lieutenant-Colonels Knox and Baird, and the troops who formed the left attack."*

The right column, from the nature of the ground over which it had to advance, had been compelled to make a great circuit; thus it was unable to reach the hedge till long after eleven o'clock; nevertheless, it ultimately forced its way so much farther to the right than the plan of Cornwallis had contemplated, that the triple attack was far from

* General Stewart, vol. ii.

being simultaneous. Led by the resolute General Medows, it burst through the dense and prickly hedge, near where the centre column had entered, and, taking ground to the right, hurled its strength against the chief redoubt, on which the left of the Mysoreans relied greatly for their defence. The moon, at this juncture, seemed to shine out with greater brilliance, and the great marble dome of a white mosque that crowned a hill became, as it were, a kind of central beacon to our troops. The conflict was raging now from the left to the centre, and from thence to the right, where the Mysoreans, in the White Mosque Redoubt, were quite prepared for us, and threw into Medows' column a heavy fire of grape and musketry, which made it reel and stagger, for the dead and wounded were falling fast on every hand; and this steady fire revealed, with terrible distinctness, the outlines of the works to be attacked.

Some of our troops fought at a great disadvantage, having wetted their ammunition when fording the Cauvery. These were particularly some companies of H.M. 52nd and 14th Bengal Infantry.* General Martin Hunter, in his Journal, omits all mention of the brilliance of the moonlight, and says that the night was so dark, that the first intimation the 52nd had of being near the enemy "was the tom-toms, followed by cheering and a volley."

By daybreak, General Medows, with the right column, found himself master of the field; but being ignorant of the operations of the other two columns, he was unable to proceed. The main object of Cornwallis, with the centre, was to gain possession of the island, into which he intended to pass with the fugitives. After entering the lines, the van of this column soon dispersed the enemy, and passed the sultan's tent, which was empty, having been hastily abandoned. The 52nd and the two Highland regiments then pressed forward to the river in two great masses, and crossed, overpowering all who opposed them. At this moment, Captain Archdeacon, who commanded a battalion of Bengal sepoys, was killed. As he was greatly beloved by his men, they fell into disorder, and recoiled on the 71st Highlanders, at the very time when Major Stair Dalrymple was preparing to attack the Sultan's Redoubt, and thus impeded the movement. The redoubt, however, was attacked and carried, and the command of it given to Captain Hugh Sibbald, of the Macleod Highlanders, whose company led the attack. During the whole of that day's hard fighting he held it with only 100 Highlanders and fifty sepoys, "repulsing

thousands after thousands." He was killed in the work, the name of which, by order of Lord Cornwallis, was changed from the Sultan's to Sibbald's Redoubt. In the obstinate defence of it, his men consumed their ammunition, when, by a fortunate circumstance, two loaded bullocks of the enemy, frightened by the firing, broke loose from their drivers, and taking shelter in the ditch of this redoubt, afforded an ample and seasonable supply of cartridges.

The command of this important post was now assumed by Major Francis Skelly, of the 74th Highlanders. The sultan seemed determined to recover the redoubt, because it bore his own name, and sent his French corps, 350 strong, under M. Vigie, to attack it; but they met with no better success than their predecessors, and, notwithstanding their superior discipline, were signally repulsed. From that time, Tippoo, who connected possession of the post with the fate of the day, began to lose heart.

A strong body of the centre column, led by Colonel Monson, failing to force an entrance at the eastern gate of Seringapatam, proceeded through the island, to an extensive bazaar, where they made a slaughter of all they found. This party was speedily followed by another, of three companies, under Colonel Knox of the 36th Foot, who, instead of approaching the city, led it through the rajah's garden, and from thence proceeded to the capture of the Shah Ganjaum suburb, taking, as he went along, several batteries in reverse; he thus enabled Colonel Baird, with a few of the 71st Highlanders, who had discovered a practicable ford, to effect a solid lodgment on the enemy's side of the Cauvery. Another body of men, under Captain Morton Hunter of the 52nd, crossed the river and took post in the rajah's garden; but as soon as their position was discovered, they were attacked by the enemy in such force, that they were compelled to recross the river with precipitation, and rejoin Lord Cornwallis, who, by this time had headed more than one bayonet charge, and been wounded in the hand. By this time, General Medows, with his division, was seen in full possession of the Carigat Hill, to which his lordship at once repaired, and took up a position, where his small corps could not be surrounded.

As was anticipated, the attack over night had taken Tippoo completely by surprise. His gorgeous tent had been pitched in the rear of the centre of his position, and very near the path by which the head of the centre column entered, and he had just left the place, after taking his evening meal in the Sultan's Redoubt. On the

* Dirom's Narrative.

first alarm he leaped into his saddle, and by a mass of fugitives careering past, was first made aware that his centre was penetrated, and that by the advance of a column to the great ford, his retreat was about to be cut off. There was not a moment to be lost, and he had barely passed the ford when already the column was close upon it.

On reaching the shelter of the fort, he seated himself in a lozenge-shaped work at its north-east angle, where, while the fight went on around him, and the din of cannon and musketry rang on every side, he remained quietly issuing his orders till daylight. Then, on reckoning his losses in the morning, it was found that they amounted to the startling number of 23,000 men, killed, wounded, and missing. The latter was the heaviest item, for no less than 10,000 Chelas, or native Hindoos, whom he had forced to become military slaves, abandoned him in the confusion, and with their arms and accoutrements, fled to the wild forests of Coorg.

As yet, the only positions we actually possessed were the unfinished work on the Carigat Hill, the redoubt in the north-west corner of the bound hedge, Sibbald's Redoubt (midway between the mosque and the Carigat Hill), and a post held by Colonel Stuart, at the eastern extremity of the island. Tippoo, after the failure of several attempts to recover these two last, abandoned all the other redoubts within the enclosure, as if in a fit of sullen despair; and by this movement allowed the preliminary preparations for the siege to be begun forthwith.

Our losses during the whole of this hard day's fighting, amounted to only 535 killed, wounded, and missing. Tippoo's, as roughly stated, we have already given; but to these must be added eighty pieces of cannon, which fell into our hands;* thirty-six of these were brass. We also captured many standards, and a vast quantity of arms of every description.

The island on which the city and fortress stand, remained now to be the only theatre of contest. All else that belonged to Tippoo, even his magnificent gardens, were in our possession, and he was now shut up in the narrow limits of the citadel. Within the bound hedge, our troops found great stores of forage, with grain and pulse for the cattle; the *Lal Bagh*, or "Garden of Pearls," supplied all the timber necessary for the works of the siege; while the palace connected with it—a magnificent edifice, with all its colonnades and curiously carved arches—with the buildings of the fakirs, erected round the tomb of Hyder, were

used by Lord Cornwallis for the reception of his sick and wounded.

On its two principal sides, the city of Seringapatam was now fully invested; and from our camp, more especially the posts of the outlying pickets, its bold defences and stately edifices were distinctly seen in all their details. On all hands, the pioneers and working parties were busy; the tall, shady cypresses and rich fruit trees of the *Lal Bagh* were all hewn down, and sawn into gabions or twisted into fascines, and the once wonderful garden soon became a scene of desolation. Many of Tippoo's soldiers came into the camp of Cornwallis. "His sepoys threw down their arms in great numbers, and, taking advantage of the night, went off in every direction to the various countries where they had been impressed or enlisted; many came into our camp, and that continued to be the case during the siege. . . . Fifty-seven of the foreigners in Tippoo's service took advantage of the battle of the 6th and 7th of February, to quit his service and come over to our army. Among them were Monsieur Blevette, an old man, who was his chief artificer, or engineer, and Monsieur Lafolie, his French interpreter, both of whom had been long in his father's service. Monsieur Heron, who was taken at Bangalore, and released on his parole, to enable him to bring away his family, also took this opportunity to fulfil his promises: several other people of some note were likewise of the number; some of them were the artificers sent to Tippoo from France, when his ambassadors returned in 1789. Thirty of the foreigners, headed by Joseph Pedro, a Portuguese, who held the rank of captain in Tippoo's service, engaged immediately with the Mahrattas. The remains of the sultan's army, which had withdrawn in the course of the day and night of the 7th, were collected on the morning of the 8th, his infantry on the glacis, and within the outworks of the fort; his baggage and cavalry on the south side of the river towards Mysore. The crowd in and about the fort (? citadel) was very great; but his army never again encamped in order, or made any formidable appearance."*

Immediate preparations for the siege were made. Three European regiments and seven battalions of sepoys, with a great artillery force, at once environed the place, preventing alike ingress and egress; and on the 9th of February, couriers announced the arrival of the Bombay column (which Floyd's cavalry went out to meet), under Sir Robert Abercromby, with the 73rd and 75th Highland Regiments, the 77th, and some native troops—in all about 6,000 men—so that now there

* "Hist. Rec. 52nd Foot."

* Major Dymock.

were no less than five battalions in the kilt before Seringapatam. Some accounts, which seem to be erroneous, date the arrival of this column some days later in the month.

Tippoo, seeing the desperation of his position, once more attempted to negotiate, and, as a preliminary step, he determined to release Lieutenants Chalmers and Nash, who, with a handful of men, had surrendered to him at Coimbatore, on the express condition that they were to march to Palaghaut, a condition which Tippoo, as usual, shamelessly violated by casting them into his dungeons at Seringapatam. On the evening of the 8th of February, these officers were introduced to the sultan, whom they found in a small tent on the south glacis of the citadel, plainly attired, and with but few attendants. After acquainting them with the fact of their release, he asked Mr. Chalmers (whom he conceived to be a relative of Cornwallis, or at least an officer of higher than subaltern rank) if he would see the Governor-General on returning to the camp. On being answered in the affirmative, he put a letter into that officer's hands, saying it was on the subject of peace, and even begging Chalmers to assist him in obtaining it. The hypocrite affirmed solemnly that it had never been his wish to break with the British, and that, from the commencement of hostilities, he had been extremely anxious for the restoration of peace. He expressed a wish that Mr. Chalmers would return with the answer, and concluded by presenting him with two shawls and 500 rupees.*

The letter attempted to justify the capture of the little garrison of Coimbatore, on the plea that Kummer-ud-Deen, the officer who took that place,

"had not engaged to liberate them, but only promised to recommend their liberation." Earl Cornwallis asserted this to be a falsehood, and, while he upbraided Tippoo with the stern fact that the garrison were kept in chains, he agreed, with the concurrence of the Nizam and Mahrattas, to receive the envoy.

"By the Treaty of Mangalore, every European prisoner then in Mysore ought to have been delivered up, and yet it was perfectly well known that numbers of prisoners, whose release was thus stipulated for, were pining in its dungeons. Some, indeed, had been freed from misery by the atrocious assassinations already described; but others, including several whom Suffren, the French admiral, had infamously consigned to the tender mercies of Hyder, were still alive. The fact was indisputable; for not only had some, who had recently escaped from Chittledroog, revealed the horrors of the prison-house in which their companions were still detained, but in Shah Ganjaum, on its capture only two days before, besides a considerable portion of the garrison of Coimbatore, twenty-seven European captives, some of them Suffren's victims, had been discovered and set at liberty. Antecedent, therefore, to the least concession to such a faithless barbarian as Tippoo, he ought to have been made to understand that nothing but the instant release of every prisoner unlawfully detained, could avert or delay the ruin now impending over him."

One of Tippoo's most barbarous murders, was that of Dr. Alexander Home, of the 36th Regiment, whom he put to death in Nundydroog in January, 1792.*

CHAPTER LXI.

TIPPOO HUMBLLED.—SUES FOR PEACE.—SURRENDER OF THE HOSTAGES.—CLOSE OF THE WAR WITH MYSORE.

WHILE Tippoo was thus openly seeking to negotiate with Lord Cornwallis, he thought, by a masterstroke in policy, to end the war in another fashion, by compassing the destruction of that personage. On the very morning on which he had released Lieutenants Nash and Chalmers, he summoned the chief officers of his Stable Horse, or guards, and harangued

them on the expediency of the meditated assassination, by which they might have the glory of ending the war by a single stroke; and his hearers pledged themselves never to return till they had done the deed, and they retired in succession, after receiving each some betel from Tippoo's hand. On the same day and the following, small parties of his

* *Ann. Reg.*, 1792.

* *Scots Magazine*, 1793.

horsemen, after being duly drugged and maddened by *bhang*, to the requisite pitch of recklessness and daring, were observed to cross the Cauvery at the ford near Arikera, and by the morning of the 10th, a considerable body of them got round our left wing undiscovered, their destination being the tent of Lord Cornwallis, which was in rear of the Carigat Hill, and known by its distinguishing flag. The situation was so exposed, that it seemed quite possible to make a dash at it, and gain the head of the Governor-General to lay at the feet of Tippoo. These detached parties of horse did not, at first, attract much attention, as they were supposed to belong to the Nizam's army.

After riding about for some time, they drew near our park of artillery, and, with an affected, casual air, inquired of some gun-lascars which was the tent of the *Burra Sahib*. Supposing that they meant Colonel Duff, who commanded the artillery, the lascars indicated his tent; then they unsheathed their tulwars, put spurs to their horses, and dashed, with shouts, towards it. These actions excited the suspicions of some sepoy recruits, who were encamped in rear of the guns. They at once rushed to their muskets, and poured in a volley which prostrated many of Tippoo's cavalry, and compelled the rest to take to immediate and ignominious flight.* After this, Lord Cornwallis, who had hitherto contented himself with two sentries, native troopers of the body-guard, was compelled to have a captain's guard mounted over his tent every night.

On the 18th of February, Major Stair Dalrymple, with the 71st Highlanders and the 13th Bengal Infantry, crossed the Cauvery at nine p.m., and, to draw attention from our working parties who were about to break ground, fell suddenly upon Tippoo's cavalry camp. Captain James Robertson, with his company of the 71st, entered it "undiscovered, and with the bayonet killed upwards of 100 troopers and double that number of horses, and retired without molestation, and without the loss of a man."† The enemy rushed to arms, but Robertson fired into them several random volleys to increase their confusion. The effect of this in the citadel was instantaneous. Showers of red rockets soared high in the air; blue lights were burned, and all the bastions seemed ablaze, as a general assault was expected. Dalrymple returned to camp by four o'clock next morning. By this time the first trench was being opened within 800 yards of the walls, and by the 21st the traverses were finished, and the advances carried on with spirit and energy. Meanwhile the anger of Tippoo was expressed by

a continued discharge of cannon from the citadel, directed to the island, the redoubts, and every post and party of ours within range. Some of his shot reached the camp, and seemed as if aimed at the tent of Cornwallis; but, in most instances, the distance rendered his cannonade almost ineffectual.

On the 22nd, General Abercromby, with the Bombay army, conceiving it necessary to take possession of an evacuated redoubt and grove situated between his camp and the citadel, proceeded to capture them, but their possession was hotly disputed by a body of Mysoreans, consisting chiefly of dismounted cavalry; and though the British were in the end victorious, it was not until they had 104 men killed and wounded.

During the nights of the 22nd and 23rd February, new works were erected, and two breaching-batteries (one of twenty and the other of twelve guns), would have been ready to open by the 1st of March. Purseram Bhow's Mahratta force of 20,000 cavalry, several thousand infantry, and thirty guns, was expected daily, together with that of Major Cuppage from the neighbourhood of Coimbatore, consisting of 400 Europeans and three battalions of sepoys; and all this at a time when Tippoo had been compelled to send off to Mysore his cavalry, all his artificers and camp-followers. So now the British army was nobly supplied and in great strength, while the humbled Tippoo was in want of everything.

On the night of the 23rd, General Abercromby moved into a ravine, between the citadel and the grove so lately contested, and made a lodgment there. Near that point there was commenced a battery for throwing shells and red-hot shot into Seringapatam. By the following night, our batteries were armed with sixty guns and mortars. The weight of metal was sufficient for breaching, and the means for setting the whole place in flames were ample and certain.

The 24th of February was a day full of deep interest to the besieged and besiegers alike. The former crushed, drooping, and despondent, expected at an early period to hear the thunder of the breaching batteries, the crash of salvoes and falling masonry, and to see mosque and temple speedily sheeted with flame. The latter were full of hope, and eager to avenge the sufferings and murders of their countrymen, for many there were in the army, who, like Colonel Baird, had endured the horrors of captivity in Seringapatam. Many of the soldiers, too, were looking forward to enrichment by the pillage of the stormed city. Orders were now suddenly issued to cease working in the

* *Ann. Reg.*, 1792.

† *Ibid.*



CHARGE OF THE HIGHLANDERS AT SERINGAPATAM.

trenches, and to abstain from all acts of hostility. But at the same moment, "Tippoo, ever treacherous, even when treachery brought little advantage and much peril to himself," levelled every possible gun to bear upon the trenches; and this fire, with that of musketry from every available point, killed and wounded many of our officers and men.

This act was a direct contravention of the articles of armistice signed the night before. Cornwallis sent repeated flags of truce and angry remonstrances, but Tippoo continued to fire in this reckless manner till noon, his aim being to make his people believe that he had dictated the terms of peace. On the same day, Cornwallis, by a proclamation, announced the cessation of hostilities; but ordered that the same vigilance as heretofore was to be everywhere observed, so strong a suspicion had he of Tippoo's treachery.

On the night of the 23rd, the sultan had signed the preliminaries, accepting the terms dictated by the victor; and though severe, they were not more so than the character of the vanquished deserved. The contest between us and Tippoo was, at a later period, to be renewed on several disputes, of which the present treaty laid the foundation. Its terms were these:—

"1. One half of the dominions of which Tippoo Sultan was in possession before the war, to be ceded to the allies from the countries adjacent, according to their situation.

"2. Three crores and thirty lacs of rupees (£3,300,000) to be paid by Tippoo Sultan, either in gold mohurs, pagodas, or bullion.

"3. All prisoners of the four powers, from the time of Hyder Ali, to be unequivocally restored.

"4. Two of Tippoo Sultan's eldest sons to be given as hostages for a due performance of the treaty.

"5. When they shall arrive in camp with the articles of this treaty under the seal of the sultan, a counterpart shall be sent from the allies, hostilities shall cease, and terms of a treaty of alliance and perpetual friendship shall be adjusted."

On the 23rd, Tippoo had assembled the chief sirdirs and officers of his army, and sworn them on the Koran to afford him their undisguised advice as to whether there should be peace or war. Their voices were almost unanimously for "peace;" but the tidings of it excited the greatest indignation in the breasts of our soldiers, who loathed Tippoo with a hate and desire for vengeance which they longed to gratify. So strong was this feeling, that it was with difficulty they could be restrained from continuing their work in the trenches, though Cornwallis sought to soothe it by praising, in general

orders, the firmness and valour all ranks had exhibited. He also announced his intention "to take upon himself to order a handsome gratuity to be distributed to them in the same proportions as prize money, from the sum that Tippoo had bound himself to pay to the Company."

On the 26th, the young hostages left the fort, each mounted on a richly caparisoned elephant, and Indian history never before recorded a scene more touching and striking. The ramparts were crowded with soldiers and citizens, whose sympathies were deeply excited; while the grim Tippoo himself was on the bastion above the great entrance, when even he found a difficulty in concealing his profound emotion. As the elephants issued from the archway, the cannon of Seringapatam thundered forth a salute, and, as they approached the British lines, Duff's artillery fired twenty-one rounds. By our negociator, Captain Sir John Kennaway, Bart., and the vakeels of the Nizam and Mahrattas, and by a guard of honour, they were met near our outposts, and with all respect conveyed within the lines. Each was seated in a howdah of chased silver. *Harcarrahs*, or Brahmin messengers of trust, headed the procession, and seven standard-bearers, each carrying a small green bannerole displayed on a rocket-pole. After these marched 100 pikemen, whose weapons were inlaid with silver. Their escort was a squadron of horse, with 200 sepoys. They were received by the troops in line, with presented arms, drums beating, and officers in front saluting.

Attended by his staff and the colonels of regiments, Earl Cornwallis received them at the entrance of his tent, where, after they had descended from their howdahs, he embraced them, and led them in, taking each by the hand. Abdul Kalik, the eldest, was only ten years of age; the younger, Mooza-ud-Deen, was only two; but, having been educated with care, the spectators were surprised to find in these children all the reserve, the politeness, and attention of maturer years.*

When Cornwallis had placed one on each side of him as he sat, Gholaum Ali, the principal vakeel of Tippoo, surrendered them formally, saying:—

"These children were this morning the sons of my master, the sultan; their situation is now changed, and they must look up to your lordship as their father."

Cornwallis then assured the vakeel that his protection should be amply extended to his interesting hostages; and he spoke so kindly and cheerfully to the two little boys, that he at once won their confidence. They wore flowing robes of white muslin,

* Major Dirom, &c.

with red turbans, in which each had a spray of the richest pearls. Round their necks were strings of the same jewels, to which was suspended a pendant, consisting of an emerald and ruby of great size, surrounded by diamonds. To each prince, Lord Cornwallis gave a gold watch. In return, he was presented with a fine Persian sword; then betel-nut and otto of roses were distributed; a fuzee and pair of pistols were given to the elder child, after which they were conducted to their own tents, under a guard of honour.

Thus ended a war during which the British, with their allies, had wrested from the enemy seventy fortresses, 800 pieces of cannon, placed *hors de combat*, or dispersed at least 50,000 men, and obtained the cession of half of the sultan's dominions.

On the morning of the 28th, the cannon of Srirangapatam again thundered from the walls, as Tippoo fired a salute to announce his satisfaction at the treatment his sons received, though there was a strong suspicion that he had actually murdered many of his British prisoners, after the preliminary treaty of peace had been signed; and that others were still retained in secret dungeons. Ten sepoy prisoners, each with his right hand struck off, were sent back to our camp.

On the 19th of March, the young princes, at ten in the morning, delivered the definitive treaty to Lord Cornwallis; but the vakeels of the Nizam and Mahrattas, as if to show discourtesy to the fallen, were late in their attendance. "At length, on their coming, the eldest prince receiving two of the copies of the treaty, returned to him by Lord Cornwallis, delivered a copy to each of the vakeels of the other powers, which he did with great manliness; but evidently with more constraint and dissatisfaction than he had performed the first part of the ceremony. One of the vakeels (the Mahratta) afterwards muttering something on the subject, the boy asked him at what he grumbled, and without giving him time to answer, said, 'they might well be silent, as certainly their masters had no reason to be displeased.' These may not be the precise words, but something passed to that effect, which did great honour to the boy's manliness and spirit. The princes having completed the ceremony and delivered this final testimony of their father's submission, took their leave and returned to their tents; and thus ended the last scene of this important war." *

Nothing remained now but for the allied armies to begin each their homeward march, and leave Tippoo to brood over his disasters, and scheme

* Major Dirom's Narrative.

out future vengeance. On the 26th of March, the British troops, having with them the hostage princes, who were not to be given up till Tippoo's obligations under the treaty were performed, commenced moving towards Bangalore, from whence they proceeded to the Pednaigdurgum Pass, where the Bengal troops were ordered to their own presidency. In the beginning of May, the army descended the Ghauts (a word applied indiscriminately in India, to a ford, a ferry, or a defile), arriving soon after at Vellore, where the commander-in-chief arranged the cantonments of the troops, and proceeded to Madras, for the purpose of destroying, by one bold stroke, the remains of French influence in the Carnatic—war having been declared against France at home.

On his arrival there, he found, however, that the result he meditated had already been achieved; and that, throughout the whole of the vast peninsula of Hindostan, Britain alone, of all European nations, maintained an attitude of power. By the 11th of June, tidings had come of that war which was eventually to wrap all Europe in the flames of strife; and, already orders had been issued to take possession of Chandernagore, and all the French factories in the presidency of Bengal. These orders were obeyed with ease; but more trouble was anticipated at Madras, where Pondicherry had again been put in a state of complete defence; but before Cornwallis could reach the scene of operations, they were over.

On the 11th of July, 1793, Colonel Floyd arrived before the fortress, and, to blockade it on the land side, encamped in a thick wood, where the tigers were so numerous, that the natives were afraid to venture into it; while Admiral Cornwallis environed the place by sea. Eventually the command of the troops devolved upon Colonel John Braithwaite, who had only opened fire from his first batteries for a few hours, when the insubordination and licentiousness of the garrison, already corrupted by the vilest principles of democracy and irreligion, compelled the governor, General Charmont, to hoist the white flag on the 22nd of August. Even after it was hoisted, they fired some shells and killed several of our soldiers.

During the night they were guilty of every species of outrage. On the following morning, a number of them environed the house of General Charmont, and threatened to hang him before the door, when he made application to Colonel Braithwaite to save him from the Republicans.

Rushing in, our soldiers bayoneted them on every hand, rescued the governor, and preserved the inhabitants from further outrage; so thus, once

more was the British flag displayed on the walls of Pondicherry.*

The Nabob of the Carnatic, whose dominions were held by our troops, had proved very irregular in his subsidies during the war with Mysore; and hence Cornwallis, acting precisely as Hastings would have done, appointed his own officers to collect the revenue, and paid it into the treasury of the Company, who, but for this measure, could not have carried on the war to its termination. "The course of events, and absolute necessity, had forced the pacifically disposed Lord Cornwallis into the war with Tippoo Sultan, and into a series of measures very contrary to the wishes, the policy, and the system of non-interference and non-aggrandisement, of the British Legislature and Government. But it had been well remarked, that this self-evident necessity was not followed by the conclusion, that the same causes might again produce the same effects; and that a general impression was made in England, that his lordship had placed the affairs of the Company on the true footing of security and strength, which had been so long desired—that, for the future, nothing would be requisite, but mild, moderate, and conciliatory counsels in the Governor-General and the local authorities to secure the lasting tranquillity and prosperity of the British Empire in India."

All the really great efforts of Cornwallis, says Sir John Malcolm, had ever been made with extraordinary success. Though some of the smaller reforms which he essayed were perhaps failures, he left behind him among the native population a good and honourable name. In the military and civil establishments he effected many radical reforms; but then he had that unity of power, and that literal control over all the presidencies alike—that absolute authority, which the less fortunate Hastings had never possessed.

He devoted a few months to the settlement of certain civil affairs, in which the Nabob of the Carnatic and his creditors were concerned, after which, finding it necessary to return to Bengal, where Mr. (then Sir John) Shore had succeeded him as Governor-General, he set sail early in October, 1793, for England, quitting the shores of India, amid the regret of all ranks and classes of men. The reception that awaited him was fully commensurate with the great services he had performed to the Company and his country. He received the thanks of both Houses of Parliament, though the Opposition were never weary of extolling the virtues and deploring the misfortunes of the Tiger of Mysore. The king created him a marquis of Great Britain, and he was appointed Master-General of the Ordnance.

CHAPTER LXII.

SIR JOHN SHORE, AFTERWARDS LORD TEIGNMOUTH.—SEA-FIGHT WITH FRENCH CRUISERS.—MAHADAJEE SCINDIA DIES.—INVASION OF THE DECCAN BY THE MAHRATTAS.—BATTLE OF BEDER.—REBELLIONS IN THE DECCAN, ETC.

SIR JOHN SHORE, Bart. (afterwards Lord Teignmouth), the old friend of Warren Hastings, also the warm friend and future biographer of Sir William Jones, the learned and upright judge at Calcutta, was worthily chosen successor to the Marquis of Cornwallis as Governor-General of India. The appointment of the latter to that high office was the first in which a previous connection with the Company had been deemed unnecessary, and its success had gone far to confirm the idea, that all such appointments in future should be made upon the same principle: yet the king, in a letter to Mr. Henry Dundas on the 5th of

September, 1792, expressed his opinion that no more proper person to fill the office of Governor-General, or more likely to follow the policy of Cornwallis, could be found than Sir John Shore.

He possessed abundant local knowledge of India, and was particularly skilled in the revenue of that country. He was by nature industrious, pacific, and conciliatory, and inspired by a very high sense of religion. "It was laid down to him as a rule, that the dictates of justice, no less than those of economy, prescribed to the Company a system of non-interference with the internal affairs, or mutual differences of the native states; unless when interference should be required by the paramount duty

* "Rec. 52nd Foot."

of preserving the tranquillity and integrity of the Company's own dominions."

Like his friend, Warren Hastings, Sir John Shore had sprung from an old family of Cavalier principles, and, like Daylesford, their lands had been lost in the great civil war. The name of Shore, which is of considerable antiquity in Derby, appears among the gentry of that shire in the reign of Henry VI., and one represented Derby in Parliament so early as the time of Richard II.; but the immediate predecessor of the new Governor-General was John Shore of Snitterton, in the parish of Darley, near Matlock. "John Shore purchased of the Sacheverells, in the commencement of the reign of Elizabeth, 'the Manor of Snitterton, and several premises and lands in Snitterton, Wensley, and Darley,' and probably resided at Snitterton Hall, a venerable and most-girt mansion at the foot of Oker."*

His son, Sir John Shore, who was knighted by Charles II., entered his pedigree and arms at the time of Dugdale's visitation, and died in 1680. His great-grandson John, son of Thomas Shore of Melton in Suffolk, was born in 1751 in London, and educated at Harrow, where, among his class-fellows were Richard Brinsley Sheridan and Nathaniel Halked, destined, like himself, for future fame; and with the latter he renewed his intercourse in after years, both at home and in India. We are told that his diligence and keen perception of the beauties of the classics soon recommended him to Dr. Sumner at Harrow, where he mastered Virgil and Homer, Cicero, Horace, and Sophocles. He also acquired with success the French and Portuguese languages; and, being early destined for the Indian Civil Service, after being placed in an academy at Hoxton, where he became versed in book-keeping and merchants' accounts, he sailed for the land of his labours at the age of seventeen, and reached Madras on the 18th of May, 1769, from whence he proceeded to Bengal, and was soon appointed assistant to the Council at Moorshedabad. To his other acquirements he now proceeded to add a knowledge of the Oriental languages, and he gained that of Hindostan by colloquial intercourse.* After having acted as Persian translator and secretary to the Provincial Board at Moorshe-dabad, he was appointed fifth member of the Board at Calcutta in 1773, "and he at once exchanged the stillness and seclusion, in which his days had hitherto flowed peacefully along, for the angry contentions of the seat of unsettled and divided government." What these contentions were, we have already detailed in the history of the career of

Warren Hastings; but amid the distracted state of the presidency, Mr. Shore pursued an independent course, yet he was the firm friend of Hastings, was appointed second member of the Grand Council, and held the important post of acting chief of the Board of Revenue till his return to England in 1785.

The critical state of India having, as we have elsewhere told, attracted the attention of Parliament, and produced Pitt's famous Bill for the Regulation of Affairs in that country, Mr. Shore, after suggesting, at home, many valuable reforms in the administration, was appointed member of the Supreme Council at Fort William, and, though but recently married, in his zeal for the service, he once more sailed for India in company with Lord Cornwallis; and there, amid all the bustle incident to the reforms made by the latter, and the warlike measures against Tippoo, he arranged the permanent settlement of the revenues, and "soothed the weary hours of sickness by commencing and completing a poem, entitled, 'The Wanderer;' the plan of which was suggested by the painful circumstances of his separation from his country and kindred."*

The year 1789 saw him once more in England, when he was examined at the trial of Warren Hastings; a baronetcy was offered him, but he declined it, until 1792, when he received his diploma, and was presented to the king on his appointment as Governor-General, in succession to the victorious Cornwallis. From a paragraph in Wilberforce's correspondence, it appears that, having retired with a fortune of £25,000, he was "with difficulty compelled to accept the splendid and lucrative post of Governor-General; which Government, so creditably to themselves, absolutely forced upon him. He was living in retirement, not even keeping a carriage, in Somersetshire, with a sweet wife and two children."

On the 10th of March, 1793, Sir John Shore reached Calcutta, where he was welcomed by all classes, and found himself surrounded by his old friends and former domestics. He was not installed in his office till the 28th of October, 1793, as Lord Cornwallis retained the reins of government till that time. Major-General Sir Robert Abercromby received the appointment of commander-in-chief, for, as Sir John was not a military man, the severance of the two offices became a matter of necessity.

Though the successes of Cornwallis in war had been great, and great, too, the moral impression they made on all the native princes, the treachery and selfishness of the latter were such, that Britain could rely on no treaty with them, or on the personal

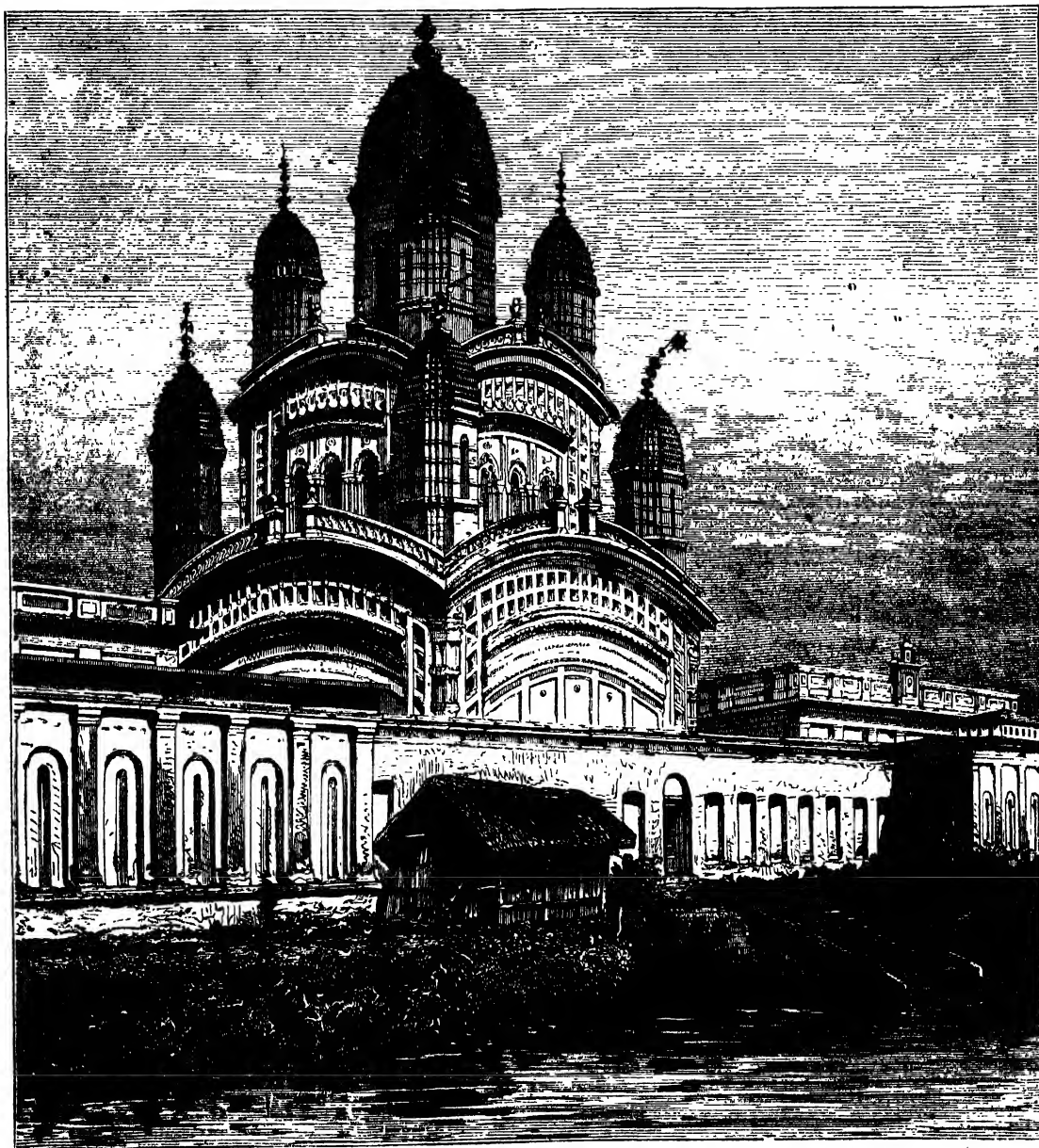
* "Life of Lord Teignmouth."

* Ibid.

disposition of any of them. French influence was again beginning to be felt. They formed a treaty with the Nizam of the Deccan, and by diplomatic means, gained such a power over him, that he took two French brigades, under M. Ray-

daughters, and was succeeded by the eldest of the former, who was solemnly proclaimed at Calcutta, on the 28th of September, 1793.

In this same year, died Sir William Jones, the eminent and learned judge at Calcutta, who was



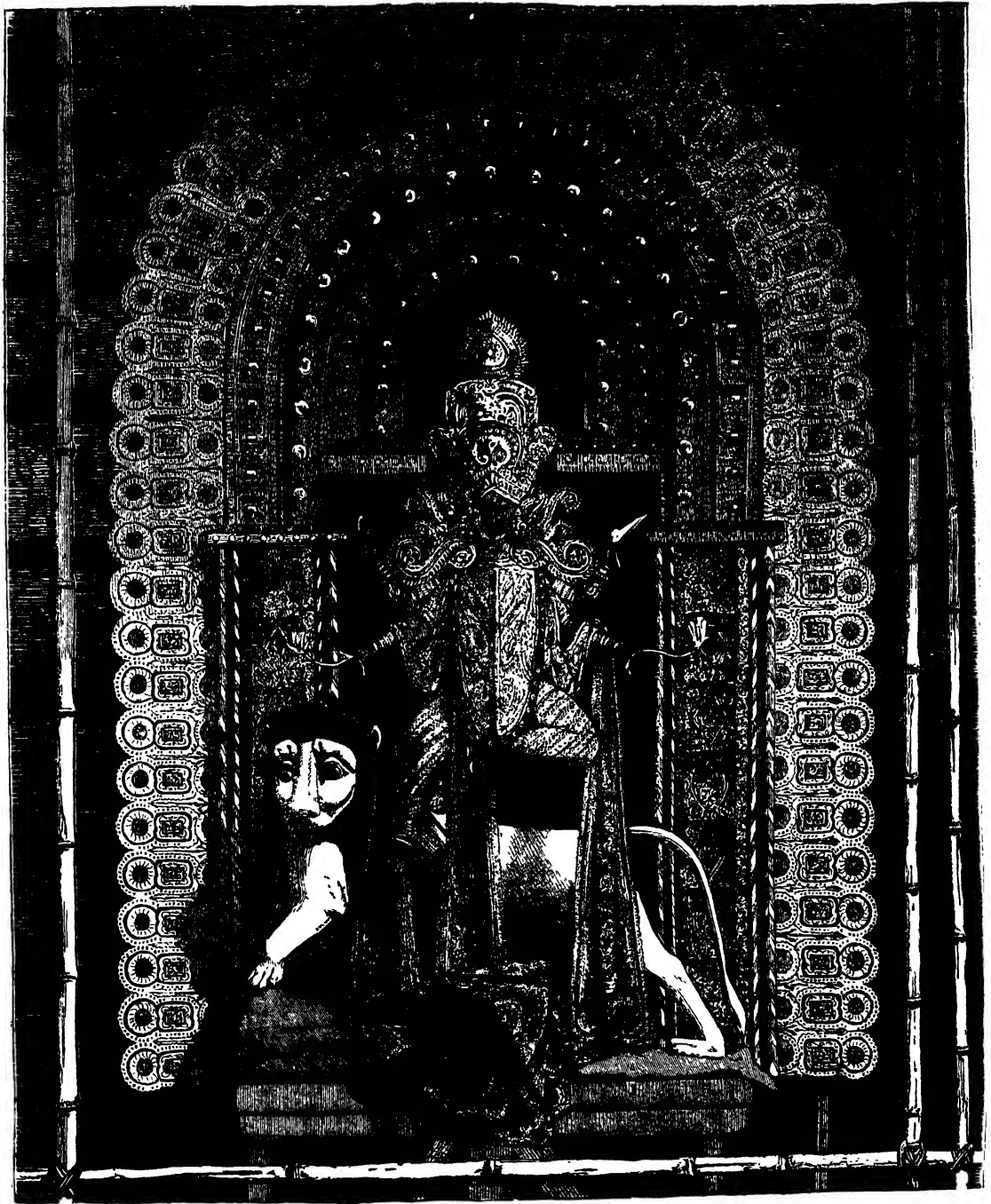
VIEW OF THE GREAT MOSQUE ON THE HOOHLEY, NEAR CALCUTTA.

mond, into his army ; and this at a time when the disturbances in Europe, consequent to the French Revolution, threatened seriously to affect our interests in India. About six months after Sir John Shore arrived in Calcutta, the Nabob of Bengal—its nominal sovereign—Mobarek-ud-Dowlah, died, leaving behind him twelve sons and thirteen

daughters, and was succeeded by the eldest of the former, who was solemnly proclaimed at Calcutta, on the 28th of September, 1793.

The Indian coast trade was now beginning to be seriously impeded by French cruisers, and no

effectual means were taken against them until | commanded by Captains Edward Pakenham and
considerable loss of life and property ensued; | Samuel Osborne, when cruising off the *Mauritius*,



THE GODDESS KALI, THE FAVOURITE DIVINITY OF THE PEOPLE OF CALCUTTA.

Admiral Cornwallis taking to sea for that purpose. | fell in with *La Guay Trouin*, a French ship of
On the 5th of May, 1793, H.M.S. *Orpheus*, thirty- | thirty-four guns and 400 men, which was taken by
two guns (Captain Newcome), in company with | the *Orpheus*, after a sharp conflict, in which the
the *Centurion* (fifty), and *Resistance* (forty-four), | enemy had eighty-one killed and wounded, while

we had only one midshipman killed, a mate, and eight seamen wounded.

On the 22nd of October, in the same year, the *Centurion* and *Diomedé*, when cruising off the same coast, discovered and gave chase to three ships and a brig; and at half-past three in the afternoon, they were within musket-shot of them. The relative strength was thus—British: *Centurion*, fifty guns, 300 men; *Diomedé*, forty-four guns, 200 men. French: *La Sybille*, forty guns, 400 men; *La Prudente*, thirty-six guns, 300 men; ship of twenty-six guns; brig of twelve.

The French commodore ran up the tricolour and opened fire, on which the battle began. At four o'clock he made sail, seeking to escape, and was followed by all his vessels except *La Sybille*, which fell away to leeward under a heavy fire, as a calm prevented her getting ahead. The whole of the enemy's fire was directed at the *Centurion*, whose masts, rigging, and sails were reduced to useless wreckage, which rendered her unable to keep her place in the action. At a quarter to six, the fore-topmast of the ship to leeward was shot away; but she bore up before the wind, and the ships ahead took her in tow. The *Centurion* and *Diomedé* wore after them, but the former had received so much damage aloft, that it was necessary to abandon the pursuit and put her head to the sea, to prevent what remained of her masts from going overboard. Thus, the enemy being close in on the coast of Mauritius, escaped into Port Louis, where the *Sybille*, being a complete wreck, was run on shore to prevent her from sinking.

Tippoo of Mysore, having performed all his obligations under the treaty made at Seringapatam, had his two sons restored to him on the 28th of March, 1794, though some objections were made thereto by the Nizam, on the ground that Tippoo was making claims upon him inconsistent with that treaty in respect to the district of Kurnoul. Strong suspicions were already entertained that Tippoo was preparing for fresh mischief, as he was already in correspondence with the blood-stained revolutionary government of France; and by a rigid economy, a skilful attention to all the resources of his now diminished kingdom, was supposed to be preparing for another trial of strength for the restoration of his prestige in Southern India, the moment the two royal hostages were surrendered to him.

Notwithstanding all this, the two princes were sent from Madras, under the care of Captain Doveton to Deonhully, in a plain near which Tippoo had pitched his tent and awaited them. On entering it with Captain Doveton, the boys

approached their father as if quite overawed, and placed their heads at his feet.* The stern Tippoo was, to all appearance, quite unmoved, and in silence touched their necks, on which they arose; and then he pointed to their seats. He then engaged in an animated conversation with Captain Doveton, and talked with singular ease and fluency on the marvels of the French Revolution, of Lord Macartney's embassy to China, and other events of the time. Whatever the wily Tippoo was plotting or scheming in secret, at all subsequent interviews with Doveton, he declared often that Cornwallis had been his best friend—that he would ever be governed by his advice, forget the bitter past, and cultivate the friendship of the British nation, as the primary objects of his policy.

Though no dependence could be placed upon the promises of Tippoo, and though Europe was rapidly becoming everywhere convulsed by sedition and war, there was, as yet, a prospect of peace in India, where the sovereignty was exercised conjointly, by ourselves, the Mahrattas, the Nizam, and Tippoo Sultan.

The Mahratta powers comprehended the Peishwa, Holkar, Scindia, and the Rajah of Berar, who had less interest than the others in their general politics, and carried on his administration independently of them, although he had received the confirmation of his succession, and the insignia of his investiture from the Peishwa as head elect of all the Mahratta powers. However, the Poonah government, with the two French brigades in their service, under a general named De Boigne, deemed itself sufficiently formidable now, without the adherence of the Rajah of Berar: and it was the nature of that government to be ambitious, grasping, and covetous, and never to omit, when occasion offered, an opportunity of increasing its wealth and power, without caring much whether the means were justifiable or not; and even at this time, after having completely humbled Tippoo, according to Auber, it was felt, that with regard to the different princes of Hindostan, our chief security was in our military strength.*

By all who knew the general temper of the fiery Mahrattas, whose strength years long afterwards was repressed, but not extinguished, and whose boast it was that they were the *Maha-rashtra* or "great people;" by all who knew the Mahrattas, we say, a long term of peace with them could never be expected, as they were essentially a nation of warriors, chiefly lightly-armed horsemen, who could march fifty miles a day, and feed their hardy steeds on the growing grain or the thatch of houses, if

* "Rise and Progress of British Power in India."

nothing better came in their way. At the time of Sir John Shore's* arrival we were undoubtedly strong in India. The din of our cannon at Seringapatam was fresh in the memory of all, and our chief ally, the Nizam of the Deccan, seemed true to his promises. But jealousies which broke out between him and the Mahrattas, even before the departure of Cornwallis, now seemed to threaten strife. On finding that they seemed about to invade him, the Nizam, in virtue of alliance, applied for aid to Sir John Shore.

This the latter was obliged to refuse, in accordance with the neutrality or non-interference system he had been advised to adopt, while, at the same time, he was loth to give offence to the Mahrattas, who viewed our growing strength and our successes in war with jealousy and alarm; yet, on the other hand, the Nizam was—so far as appearances went—a firm friend, who had rejoiced at the triumph of Cornwallis and the downfall of Tippoo. Now, the Poonah government began to perceive that the new Governor-General, in his desire for peace, would yield the Nizam no more aid than mediation and diplomacy, both of which they viewed with contempt, and thus they betook them to beating their war-drums, mustering their horsemen, and putting their lances and swords to the grindstone.

It was at this crisis that Mahadajee Scindia died—a chief who, to a certain extent, was the actual sovereign of Hindostan from the Sutlej to Agra. "He was," says Sir John Malcolm, "the nominal slave but the rigid master of the unfortunate Shah Alum, Emperor of Delhi; the pretended friend, but the designing rival of Holkar; the professed inferior in all matters of form, but the real superior and oppressor of the Rajpoot princes of Central India; the proclaimed soldier, but the actual plunderer of the family of the Peishwa."*

Scindia was the possessor of some of the finest provinces of the Deccan, and a great portion of Malwa, and had a regular army that mustered, at one time, sixteen regiments of sepoys, whom General de Boigne had disciplined for him, with 100,000 cavalry, and 500 brass and iron guns; but he who had given such an increase to the Mahratta power, died at this crisis, as we have said, without leaving any male issue. He had a brother, named Tookajee Scindia, who fell at the battle of Paniput, and left three sons. The elder of these had no sons, but the other two had; yet Scindia, without regard to the legal order of succession, had, prior to his death, repeatedly avowed his intention of adopting Dowlut Rao, the son of his youngest nephew, a youth of fifteen. Thus effect was given

to old Scindia's intention, and Dowlut entered peaceably into possession of the vast power to which he had fallen heir.

Young and daring, and anxious to distinguish himself in war, Dowlut Rao Scindia now hastened to assemble his army even from the most remote parts of Hindostan, with the double intention of obtaining an ascendancy in the alliance forming against the Nizam, and of giving additional strength to his own authority.

The people inhabiting the Deccan, or "Country of the South," remembered how Cornwallis had behaved when an ally of the Company had been assailed, and they could not believe that now the latter would abandon the cause of a friend so faithful; while it was the general belief of all who took an interest in Indian affairs, that we could not leave him to his fate, "without weakening that force of opinion which, more than arms, had made us what we were in India," when our stern defence of the Rajah of Travancore had won us a reputation for faith and firmness.

But Sir John Shore was trammelled by his pacific instructions from London. He felt himself compelled to decide that the British had no right to interfere, and supported this decision by a very ably-worded minute, to the effect "That, as the union of the three allies was the basis of the treaty, the continuance of that union or friendship is essential to the performance of the obligations imposed by it, and a war between two of the parties totally changes the relative situation of all."

Thus, as a necessary conclusion, he held that we were not called upon to interfere; yet Sir John Malcolm seems to have been of opinion that without going to war, a more decided or higher tone might have had a better effect, for so fresh were the victories of Cornwallis in the minds of all, that our influence might have intimidated the Mahrattas from their intended attack on the Nizam.*

In less than three weeks from the date of the minute we have just quoted, the Mahrattas had poured their army into the territories of the Nizam. In February, 1795, Dowlut Rao Scindia began his march with the advanced corps, and on the 11th of the following month a battle was fought at Beder, a frontier town of the Deccan, the walls and temples of which still retain some traces of ancient splendour.

M. Raymond, who had begun his military career in India at an early age under the Count de Lally, and who, ever since the new "peace-at-any-price" policy of the British had been suspected, had lent all his energies to perfecting the discipline of Nizam

* Malcolm's "Central India."

* "Political History of India."

Ali's infantry, was so successful that he had not the slightest doubt or hesitation in leading them to encounter the brigades of Scindia, which had been in an equal manner perfected by De Boigne. The battle was stoutly contested, and had every appearance of terminating in favour of Nizam Ali, when Raymond was bewildered on receiving from him, amid the hottest fire, an order to retreat. He had, as was usual with him, brought all the ladies of his zenana into the field, and one, who was for the time his chief favourite, became so terrified by the carnage around her, that she infected her seldom very courageous lord, and on her threatening, if he did not quit the field, to disgrace him by exposing herself to his soldiers, he sent the fatal order to Raymond, and fled by night to the little fort of Kurdlah, where he was immediately blocked up, till starved into a shameful capitulation at the end of some weeks, and agreed to cede to the enemy territory worth thirty-five lacs yearly, including Dowlutabad, or the "abode of prosperity," the key of the whole Deccan, supposed by Major Wilford to be the ancient *Tagara*, and also to deliver, as a hostage, Azeem-ul-Omrah, otherwise Meer Alum.

At this time two battalions of our troops were in the Deccan, and had they fought at Beder the rout of the Mahrattas had been sure. They might even have raised the investment of Kurdlah; but the officer commanding them had the express orders of the Governor-General not to stir a step. Thus, naturally, the Nizam on his return to Hyderabad, intimated pretty plainly that the Company had better recall their two useless battalions, as to pay and maintain troops who did not serve him was a profitless task; and accordingly they were soon after withdrawn. "The Nizam has dismissed our battalions," says Sir John Shore, in a letter to Henry Dundas, May 12, 1795; "they were employed in a disgraceful and delicate service; and I should have seen their removal with satisfaction if I had not been obliged to attribute it to the Mahrattas."*

The destruction of the power of Nizam Ali now seemed inevitable; yet there came to pass two events by which he was saved. One of these was the rebellion of Ali Jah, his son, in June, 1795, and the other was the death of the Peishwa Madhoo Rao, in October of the same year. General Raymond's troops at the battle of Beder amounted to twenty-three battalions of considerable strength; their value under fire had been fully proved, hence the Nizam resolved to add to their number, and for this purpose the revenues of Kurpa, an extensive

district around the town and fortress of Cuddapah, in the Balaghaut territory, were assigned for their subsistence. By its vicinity to the sea-coast, this locality afforded the Nizam many facilities for recruiting, for getting additional officers, and for forming a junction with certain European forces, which the French republicans were alleged to be preparing for the recovery of some of their old conquests in India.

But now Sir John Shore, who by his home instructions had left the Nizam no resource but to form this French alliance—complained of it, and threatened, if the corps of General Raymond were not withdrawn from Kurpa, to send a body of British troops to that quarter, though, since the days of the Marquis de Bussy, the Deccan had never been without some French officers and soldiers. The discussion respecting Raymond's post was ended by the rebellion of Ali Jah, against whom he was immediately dispatched, and whom he made prisoner, just as two battalions of our troops, under Captain James Dalrymple—the very troops that had been previously withdrawn—arrived for the same purpose. As these had been earnestly requested by the Nizam, the ready compliance of Sir John Shore served to make our relations with Nizam Ali of a more friendly nature in future, as our troops remained in the Deccan to assist in the restoration of order.

The death of Madhoo Rao led to fierce discontent among the Mahratta chiefs, who had hitherto been leagued. The Nana Furnavese was resolved to place upon the throne of the dead Peishwa an infant prince, in whose name he might rule as regent; but Dowlut Rao Scindia, animated by a spirit of opposition, asserted the claims of Bajee Rao, the son of Ragobah, who, according to that which was not recognised in the East—the law of primogeniture—would have been the proper heir to the *musnud*. The Nana being then at Poonah, the capital of the confederated Mahrattas, took the initiative in this affair. He liberated Azeem-ul-Omrah, the captive minister of Nizam Ali, rescinded the Treaty of Kurdlah, and surrendered all claim to territory and treasure which the Nizam, under that treaty, had been bound to give up. He concluded a new treaty with the latter; but ere it could take effect, young Scindia advanced upon Poonah with an army that Nana Furnavese was unable to oppose, and the son of the wanderer Ragobah was placed upon the throne.

This occasioned fresh negotiations with the chiefs, and Scindia, in order to prevent the Nizam from furthering the schemes of Nana Furnavese, agreed to be satisfied with a fourth of

* "Lord Teignmouth's Life and Letters."

the demands made upon the former under the Treaty of Kurlah.

Soon after his capture by Raymond, Ali Jah died, or was murdered, on which a new rebellion broke out, led by Durah Jah, a nephew of the Nizam. He collected some scattered forces, who were attacked with great spirit and utterly routed by Dalrymple's two battalions. The strong fortress of Rochore, which the insurgents had garrisoned, was next carried by storm. Nizam Ali expressed great gratitude to Sir John Shore for the aid thus rendered him by these troops; but he still dreaded, that if he were attacked again by Mahrattas, Sir John might not send him a sufficient force, and thus he still relied most on the battalions of General Raymond.

Aware how greatly he was respected and honoured by the Nizam, the Frenchman left nothing undone to bring the army to a state of perfection in order and discipline, and during this task was at no pains to conceal his animosity to Britain, and his plans of a future that even De Bussy had never imagined. The least of these, was our total expulsion from Hindostan, and its transference to the incompetent government of republican France. All his battalions now carried—not the flag of Nizam Ali, but the new tricolour of France; and the cap of liberty was borne on all their buttons and appointments; and, in the exuberance of their political fervour, his officers almost nightly sang the *Ça Ira*, and danced the Carmagnole in the marble palaces of Hyderabad. All this was harmless enough; but General Raymond went further. He, by secret agents, encouraged our sepoy to desert, and excited a partial mutiny in a battalion of the Madras army.

To counteract this French influence, Sir John Shore encouraged some British subjects to enter the service of the Nizam; but none of them had either the military or political address of their rivals, whose growing battalions at length became so formidable, that Nizam Ali was alarmed lest they might deprive him altogether of the Deccan, and he solicited Sir John Shore to make such military arrangements with him as would preclude the necessity for having such perilous friends to aid him against the Mahrattas, offering even to dismiss them all, the moment that British troops in sufficient strength were sent into his territories.

Though fully alive to the danger of French influence, Sir John Shore seems to have thought there was more danger incurred by giving offence to the great Mahratta confederacy, and chiefly the powerful Scindia—conceiving naturally, that if he marched an army into the Deccan, the act would be certain to provoke a Mahratta war, and would also be a departure from the system of strict neutrality which his orders from home desired him to maintain—and hence he took no decided steps in the matter.

Amid these tumults, Sir John, who felt a deep interest in all matters connected with religion, took measures for supplying the military stations with churches and chaplains, of which they had been destitute before, and had a place set apart for the celebration of Divine service in the fort at Calcutta, where none would seem to have existed hitherto. In his letters home, he complained much of the irreligion and infidelity prevalent among our people in Bengal, and seemed to have taken a lively interest in the apparently hopeless task of converting the vast population to Christianity.*

CHAPTER LXIII.

DEFEAT OF GHOLAUM MOHAMMED KHAN.—MARRIAGE OF VIZIER ALL.—THE DUTCH SETTLEMENTS REDUCED.—DISCONTENT IN THE ARMY, ETC.—END OF LORD TEIGNMOUTH'S ADMINISTRATION.

SIR JOHN SHORE, towards the end of the year 1794, "was engaged," as his son records, "in a brief but bloody sequel to that memorable Rohilla war, in the conduct of which Hastings had borne a principal and much censured part."

The circumstances were these:—The famous Rohilla (to whom we have more than once re-

ferred) Fyzoolla Khan, who held the jaghûe of Rampoorah, under the Nabob of Oude, in virtue of a treaty which the Company guaranteed, died in 1794, and then one of those tragedies so common in India occurred. He was barely succeeded by his eldest son, when the latter was basely

* "Life and Letters of Lord Teignmouth," by his son.

assassinated by his brother, Gholau Mohammed Khan, who took possession of the jaghire. Without delay, the murderer coolly applied to the nabob-vizier of Oude, who, when influenced by a handsome present, would no doubt have sanctioned the usurpation; but Sir Robert Abercromby, ere Sir John Shore could communicate with him on the subject, marched towards Rampoorah, and defeated the usurper in a battle in which the Rohillas—inspired, no doubt, by a longing for vengeance upon us—fought so well, that our line nearly gave way. Immediately after obtaining this victory, Sir Robert, on his own responsibility,

to join with you in regretting the loss of so many valuable and respectable lives. I shall be happy to learn that the submission of the Rohillas renders unnecessary any further exertion of that bravery which has ever distinguished the officers and troops of our armies in India. By some accident, a sheet of your letter was omitted. You will receive a public answer without delay. The valour of the Rohillas seems to have exceeded everything but that of our own troops;—this is, indeed, beyond all commendation.

“I have the honour to be, &c.,

“General Sir Robert Abercromby, K.B.”



VIEW OF DIAMOND HARBOUR AT THE EMBOUCHURE OF THE HOOGHLY.

with the consent of the nabob-vizier, restored the jaghire to Ahmed Ali Khan, the infant son of the murdered Mohammed.

Though for some reason the Governor-General, Sir John Shore, was not quite satisfied with Sir Robert Abercromby's rapid measures in this matter, he complimented him in the following reply to his official report:—

“Calcutta, Nov. 6th, 1794.

“My dear Sir,—I have this moment received your express, announcing your victory over the infatuated Rohillas, and their desperate chief, Gholau Mohammed Khan; I lose not a moment in offering you my sincere congratulation on your brilliant success. The moderation and humanity of your conduct preceding the action, add greatly to the honour which you have acquired by it, and I have only

Though Asoff-ud-Dowlah, the nabob-vizier, was complaining about this time that his finances and administration were both going to wreck, he was then proprietor of 20 palaces, 100 gardens, 1,200 elephants, 3,000 fine saddle-horses, 1,500 double-barreled guns, hundreds of costly mirrors, lustres, girandoles, and clocks set with jewels; and the account of the splendour displayed on the marriage of his son, Vizier Ali, at Lucknow, in 1795, surpasses anything of which we read in the “Arabian Nights.”

He had his tents pitched, says Forbes, on a plain near the city. Among these were two of great size, made of strong cotton, lined with different coloured stripes of the finest English broadcloth, with silken cords. Each of these pavilions cost about £60,000 sterling. Their walls were ten feet high, and latticed in part,

for the ladies of the seraglio to see through. On the marriage day, Asoff wore jewels to the value of two millions sterling. The *Shumceana* was illuminated by 200 magnificent European girandoles, 200 glass shades, and many hundreds of flambeaux. Then 100 dancing girls, richly-dressed, danced and sang in Hindoo-Persic. The bridegroom, then in his thirteenth year, so loaded

Forbes, "was inlaid with fireworks; at every step of the elephants, the earth burst before us, and threw up artificial stars, besides innumerable rockets, and many hundred wooden shells that burst in the air, and shot forth a thousand fiery serpents; these, winding through the atmosphere, illuminated the sky, and, aided by the light of the bamboo scenery, gave the dark night the



LORD TEIGNMOUTH.

with jewels that he could scarcely move, and the bride, in her tenth year, were conveyed, at seven p.m., on elephants to a wonderful garden, a mile distant. The procession included 1,200 richly-caparisoned elephants; of these, 100 bore silver castles, or howdahs. In the centre was the nabob, in a jewelled howdah of gold, on one of uncommon size, caparisoned in cloth of gold. On his right, sat our resident, Mr. George Johnstone; and on his left, the bridegroom.

"The ground from the tents to the garden, forming the road on which we moved," continues

appearance of a bright day. The whole of this grand scene was also lighted by 3,000 flambeaux carried by men. In this manner we moved in stately pomp to the garden, which we entered, after alighting from the elephants. It was illuminated by innumerable transparent paper lanterns of various colours, suspended from the branches of the trees. In the centre was a large edifice, to which we ascended, and were introduced into a grand saloon, adorned with girandoles and pendent lustres of English manufacture, lighted with wax candles. Here we had an elegant

collation of European and Indian dishes ; at the same time, about a hundred dancing girls sang their lively airs and performed their native dances. Thus passed the time until dawn, when we returned to our respective homes. . . . The whole expense of this marriage feast, which was repeated for three successive nights, cost upwards of £300,000.*

The effects of the great war now raging in Europe, began to be felt in India. The conquest of Holland by the French, and their treaty of alliance formed with that country on the 18th May, 1795, produced an entire change in the relations of the Dutch with Britain, the cabinet of which deemed itself justified in declaring war against Holland, and a portion of the operations consequent to this measure included the reduction of all the Dutch settlements in the East Indies.

For this purpose, an expedition was fitted out against Ceylon. The royal squadron in Indian waters at this time, was commanded by Commodore Peter Rainier. It consisted of nine sail (four being of the line), carrying 430 guns, and these were at once disposed in such a manner as to cut up the Dutch trade. The commodore, in conjunction with the presidency of Madras, resolved to secure the port of Trincomalee ; and for this purpose, a body of troops, including portions of the 52nd Foot and Macleod Highlanders, under Major-General James Stewart, embarked on board the ships at Madras with ammunition and stores. They sailed on the 21st July, and, at the same time, the commodore detached Captain Edward Pakenham, in the *Resistance* (forty-four guns), and the *Suffolk* (tender), with some troops for the reduction of Malacca.

On the 1st of August the squadron came to anchor in Back Bay. On the preceding day, Rainier had been joined by the *Heroine* (thirty-two guns), from Colombo, having on board Major Agnew, D.-A.-General, who had been sent to that place by Lord Hobart, Governor of Madras, to explain to the Governor of Ceylon the purpose of the expedition. In return, the major brought with him an order for the commandant of Trincomalee to admit peaceably 300 of his Britannic Majesty's troops into Fort Ostenburg ; which, on the plea that the order was informal, he refused to do.

After two days' delay, it was resolved to land the troops, and for this purpose, the vessels drew nearer the shore ; but, in doing so, the *Diomede* (forty-four guns), with a transport in tow, struck upon a sunken rock with such violence, that there was barely time to save her crew ere she went down with all her stores on board.

* "Oriental Memoirs."

Ten days elapsed before the whole of the troops, with their stores and equipage, disembarked, four miles north of the port of Trincomalee, in consequence of the dangerous surf, occasioned by a strong land wind. The ships of war were then disposed so as to cover the march of the troops, who had their batteries completed by the 18th of August, and these, by the 26th, had effected a practicable breach. The garrison was then summoned ; but the commandant required terms which were inadmissible, so hostilities were recommenced, and 300 seamen and marines, under Captain Smith, late of the *Diomede*, with four lieutenants, joined the storming party, whose approach the Dutch commander anticipated by displaying a white flag, in token of surrender. Fort Ostenburg also capitulated on the 31st. Our total losses were, of all ranks, 16 killed and 58 wounded ; among the latter, Captain Gorrie, of the Macleod Highlanders, most severely. The fort of Baticolo surrendered on the 18th of the following month, and the fort and island of Manaar, so famous for its breed of black cattle, off the north-west coast of Ceylon, likewise surrendered on the 5th of October.*

By February, next year, the reduction of the whole of the Dutch settlements in Ceylon was effected ; and as the people in the interior of the island had not been deprived of their independence by the Dutch, so long as they preserved a peaceful demeanour, they were not interfered with by the British.

The other Dutch settlements at Amboyna, in the Molucca group, and the mountainous isles of Banda, in the Eastern Archipelago, were also reduced ; and another armament, for a second conquest of Manilla, was prepared under Colonel the Hon. Arthur Wellesley, the future Wellington, when the extraordinary victories of the French in Italy caused it to be countermanded, under the belief that the troops composing it would be required for the defence of the British Isles.

The year 1795 saw serious discontents in the army of the East India Company, and in one of his letters, Sir John Shore says : "If you were to judge of its temper, from the conversation of individuals, you would conclude that the officers were in an actual state of mutiny." Some new regulations, forming part of a plan originally conceived by Lord Cornwallis, to transfer the Company's army to the king's service, were partly the cause of this. The whole organisation of the Indian army was changed. Instead of single battalions of 1,000 men, commanded by a captain, who was selected from the European regiments in

* "Naval Chron.," "Rec. 52nd Foot," &c.

the Company's service, with a subaltern to each company, they were formed into corps of two battalions, to which officers were appointed of the same rank and number as in the king's regiments; and "the good effects of this change, so far as related to the temper and attachment of the native army of Fort St. George, have been questioned," says Sir John Malcolm.*

Matters relating to promotion, pay, and allowances, added to the ferment. "Towards the close of 1795, the military discontents reached their crisis, and Government received accurate information of the proceedings of the disaffected. At one station in the upper provinces, the officers had determined upon treasonable measures if not satisfied with the regulations expected from England; contemplating the compulsory enlistment of the reluctant in their service, throwing off their allegiance to the Government, and seizing both the Governor-General and the Commander-in-chief. So great had been, at one time, the alarm excited by their desperate projects, that Sir John Murray, the commandant at Fort William, without communicating his precautionary proceeding to the Governor-General, placed that fortress in a state of defence, relying on the unshaken steadiness of the artillery."†

Sir John Shore ably succeeded in allaying these discontents, or at least avoiding the terrible consequences of a collision, till the promulgation of the long-delayed regulations from England restored discipline and good humour. Among the amendments were: increased allowance to the senior officers of the army; an addition to the staff of the native cavalry and infantry, as regarded their military and medical branches: an increase of furlough-pay to medical officers: and of passage-money to subalterns compelled to return home by ill-health, with addition to the pensions of European non-commissioned officers after certain periods of service.

The revision of the military system in British India was carried out by the directors in 1796, at an increased cost of £308,000 per annum; and two years afterwards, all their modifications and amendments were incorporated into the original plan, which has since been usually named, "The Company's Military Charter."

In 1797, the affairs of Oude occupied the attention of Sir John Shore. He had long been of opinion that while the administration of the extravagant and luxurious nabob remained on its present footing, we should never derive effective assistance from his troops, but might

expect to find enemies rather than allies in his dominions. Thus, in March, he paid a visit to Lucknow, where he found that one of the chief amusements of the nabob was to witness old women racing in sacks, a diversion suggested to him by an Englishman. It delighted beyond measure the nabob, "who declared that, although he spent a crore of rupees, or a million sterling, in procuring entertainment, he had never found one so pleasing to him."*

In addition to other improvements, Sir John succeeded in obtaining the office of minister for Tuffuzel Hussein Khan, who was believed to be a man of talent and probity. Soon after this, Asoff-ud-Dowlah departed this life, and was succeeded by his heir presumptive, that Vizier Ali whose marriage we have related. Though generally known to be of spurious birth—the son of a *fer-raush* (or household servant)—and that there were other claimants, who pleaded their legitimacy, Vizier Ali had a strong faction in Lucknow; and though his claim was formally acknowledged by our government in Calcutta, Sir John Shore's sense of justice had never been satisfied with the decision given in his favour; and therefore, after a second journey to Lucknow, on finding how miserably the government was conducted, he ordered Vizier Ali to be deposed, and the line of succession to be changed to that of Sujah-ud-Dowlah, whose surviving brother, Sadut Ali, resided at Benares.

On this second visit, Sir John had been met near Lucknow by the prime minister, who had assured him that Vizier Ali and all the other reputed sons of Asoff were spurious, and that the city was a scene of intrigue, perplexity, and profligacy. Sir John also found the cunning old begum, from whom Warren Hastings had obtained some of her treasure, recommending another claimant to the musnud. Hence it was that on the 21st of January, 1798, Sadut Ali was proclaimed sovereign of Oude, and Sir John sent Vizier Ali down to Benares, where he was to be kept under strict surveillance, and where he had a pension of about £25,000 yearly assigned him.

At Benares our resident, Mr. Cherry, was to make all the final arrangements for him, and invited him to breakfast. To this meal he came attended by a large armed retinue, intent on mischief. After complaining bitterly of his treatment by the Company, on a given signal his attendants drew their swords and hacked Mr. Cherry and Mr. Graham to pieces. They then proceeded to the house of a Mr. Davis, who, having heard of their approach and purpose, got his whole family on the roof, and

* "Rise, &c., of the Indian Army."

† "Life of Lord Teignmouth."

* Ibid.

posting himself at the summit of a narrow, circular stone staircase with a hog-spear, he slew several, and bravely defended himself till he was rescued by a party of troops. Vizier Ali then fled to the Rajah of Berar, who, aware of his own power, refused to give him up, unless under a promise that his life should be spared. This the Governor-General acceded to. He was brought to Calcutta, and placed in a room made to resemble an iron cage, in Fort William, where he died after an imprisonment of seventeen years.

When his successor, Sadut Ali, was raised to the throne, he was not in a position to resist any terms that were made with him. By treaty, the Company were vested with the entire defence of Oude, and the annual subsidy he had to pay was increased to seventy-six lacs of rupees. The number of the Company's troops was rated at 10,000 men; but, in the event of their exceeding 13,000, or falling under 8,000, the amount was to be proportionally increased or reduced; but the native force maintained in Oude was not to exceed 35,000 men. The nabob was to hold no communication with any foreign state, or admit any Europeans to serve in his army, but with the express consent of the Company. He was also to pay the pension of Vizier Ali, and to maintain all the reputed children of his brother. Every way, the pecuniary gain to the Company was considerable; and by the way in which he managed the whole change in the government of Oude, Sir John Shore received the full thanks of the Court of Directors and of the Board of Control.

By the general terms of this treaty, Sir John virtually extinguished the independence of Oude, reducing it to vassalage. One of the reasons assigned for the severe nature of his demands is alleged to have been the apprehension of an invasion of Hindostan from Cabul, by Zemaun Shah, grandson of the famous Ahmed Shah Abdalla. In 1796 he had marched with little opposition to Lahore, and seemed about to push his army on to Delhi, when the rebellion of a brother compelled him to return to his own dominions. His approach excited the wildest hopes among the Mohammedans of the restoration of the house of Timour, and no small consternation among the Mahratta chiefs, who were so weakened by their own feuds as to be unprepared for war, and were compelled to solicit our alliance against Zemaun, as a common enemy. In the upper provinces Sir John Shore mustered 15,000 troops to oppose him, when he fell back; but, as a repetition of his visit was expected, he deemed it thus necessary to bring Oude into such a state as would make all its resources fully avail-

able. So, happily for British India, at this time Zemaun Shah and the other Afghan chiefs continued to find occupation at home, or in other quarters far removed from the frontiers of Hindostan.

It was early in the next year that, at the express request of Sir John Shore, Lieutenant-Colonel Baillic, a learned Scottish officer, afterwards Professor of Arabic and Persian at Fort William, translated from the former language a copious digest of Mohammedan law, so as to comprise the whole of the Imanea code as applicable to secular matters.*

Sir John Shore, whose eminent services were rewarded on the 24th of October, 1797, by an Irish peerage, as Lord Teignmouth of Teignmouth, resigned the office of Governor-General, to which Lord Cornwallis had been reappointed, at a time when the services of the latter were required for the suppression of rebellion in Ireland; and thus, on the 18th of May, 1798, the Earl of Mornington accepted the vacant post.

On the 7th of March, 1798, Lord Teignmouth with his family sailed from Calcutta for Europe. Prior to his departure, the inhabitants of Calcutta, on the termination of his long and arduous services, delivered him an address conceived in affectionate and eulogistic terms; and on the morning of his embarkation he wrote a lengthy letter to his successor, stating the rules he had prescribed to himself during his official career, the principles which had guided his administration, and detailing the qualifications of the functionaries in the various departments of government, with the political relations of the British power in India.†

His Indian administration may be considered as having fully tested the system of strict neutrality laid down by the Legislature; but the manner in which the Government had thus crippled the powers of the Governor-General proved this: that while during six years of peace our power remained nearly stationary, the powers of our enemies had been steadily and perilously on the increase. This was the result of the neutral system, for which Lord Teignmouth was in no sense blamable.

"It was proved, from the events of this administration," says Sir John Malcolm, "that no ground of political advantage could be abandoned without being instantly occupied by an enemy; and that to resign influence was not merely to resign power, but to allow that power to pass into hands hostile to the British Government."‡

* *Asiatic Journal*.

† "Life of Lord Teignmouth," vol. i.

‡ "Polit. Hist. India."

Some there were at home who alleged that Lord Teignmouth's bold and able arrangement of the affairs of Oude, by deposing Vizier Ali, was as bad as anything that had been done by Warren Hastings; but he was supported by the Government, by Mr. Wilberforce, who had arrayed himself against Hastings, and by the whole strength of the religious world; and thus the general wisdom of his Indian administration was endorsed to the fullest extent.

The directors had previously borne testimony to the merits of Lord Teignmouth's administration in the following resolution:—

“That the thanks of the Court be given to the Right. Hon. Lord Teignmouth, for his long, able, and faithful services in India; and particularly for his distinguished merit and attention in the administration of every branch of the Company's affairs during the period in which he held the office of Governor-General.”

Of this his son says with justice, “The Directors of the East India Company might well be satisfied

with their late Governor-General, who, having devoted twenty-six years of his life, involving the sacrifice of his health, to their employment, never applied to them for that compensation to which he was justly entitled, and to which the moderate amount of his income afforded an additional claim; and they were only too ready to avail themselves of his well-known moderation to originate any other recognition of his eminent services than a recorded formal acknowledgment.”

Lord Teignmouth died at the age of eighty-two, in the year 1834; and on his tomb in Marylebone Church, in that spirit of humility and piety which seems to have characterised his whole life, according to his request, he was to be designated alone as “First President of the Bible Society;” but afterwards he gave permission that it might be added, he had held the office of “Governor-General of India;” and to the interest taken by himself and his family, in years after he had quitted it, we shall have occasion to refer in future portions of this work.

CHAPTER LXIV.

EARL OF MORNINGTON IN OFFICE.—INTRIGUES BETWEEN THE FRENCH AND TIPPPOO SULTAN.

LORD TEIGNMOUTH'S successor in the high and arduous post of Governor-General, was Richard Wellesley, Earl of Mornington, elder brother of the illustrious Wellington, who at that time had attained the rank of Colonel of the 33rd Regiment, which in the September of the same year, was placed upon the Madras establishment. The new governor, who was to achieve the capture of Seringapatam, the downfall of Tippoo, and the restoration of that Hindoo dynasty which Hyder Ali had displaced, had been educated at Eton, where he had been kindly superintended by Archbishop Cornwallis, with whom he usually passed his holidays, between 1771 and 1779, and thus became intimate with the Marquis of Cornwallis.

Lord Mornington, then in his thirty-eighth year, had early evinced a decided taste for the study of Asiatic history, and thus he applied himself with ardour to acquire all the knowledge necessary of the past government of India, and of those matters which, through the long trial of Warren Hastings, had so greatly occupied the attention of both

Houses of Parliament and the entire nation. In 1796, he was appointed Lord of the Treasury, and a member of the Board of Control, and in these official capacities, had excellent opportunities for adding to the practical knowledge he had already acquired. His manners were captivating and conciliating; his mind was energetic and active, and he possessed a facility for imparting much of his own activity and energy to his colleagues; and generally, all the Europeans in India hailed his appointment with extreme satisfaction. It is more probable that the idea of his succeeding Lord Teignmouth, may have been originally suggested by his intimacy with the Cornwallis family.

He arrived in Madras Roads, in the month of April, 1798; he landed on the 26th under a salute of nineteen guns, and remained for some time in that city, in order that he might acquaint himself with the internal condition of that presidency, and the affairs of the Carnatic generally, for the epoch was indeed a critical one. Consulting together, the Sikhs and Mahrattas were supposed to be

inimical to us ; while, under French influence, with Tippoo of Mysore, all India seemed ripe for a combined attack upon the British settlements.

At Madras, Lord Mornington's official duties may be said to have commenced with the adjustment of a disputed succession in Tanjore ; but the final decision was not at that time pronounced. On the 18th of May he arrived at Calcutta, after leaving behind him full preparations for any hostile movements on the part of Tippoo. Our Madras forces had been considerably reduced by the conquest and occupation of the Dutch settlements in Ceylon, Banda, Malacca, and Amboyna, and they were scattered in cantonments far apart, without bullocks for the conveyance of stores, and it was not till Lord Mornington had frequent consultations with General (afterwards Lord) Harris, then Colonel of the 76th Foot, and commander-in-chief at Madras, that the army was put in a condition to take the field at the shortest notice. Before we come to narrate the events in which this gallant old soldier, the hero of Seringapatam, won his peerage, a short notice of him may be desirable.

The son of a Kentish clergyman, who held the incumbency of Brasted, Harris was born in 1744 ; and after being an artillery cadet, he was gazetted to the 5th Foot, and in 1765, purchased a lieutenancy. He joined his regiment in Ireland, "where many adventures befell him, trying to his courage and prudence, but confirming those virtues in him." By the most severe self-denial on the part of his mother, he purchased a company, and, at its head, was severely wounded in the battle of Bunker's Hill. Soon after, he was again wounded, and was entrusted by Lord Cornwallis with a letter to Washington, and was gazetted Major of the 5th, in October, 1779. At this time, another soldier to be famed in Indian wars, William Medows, was its lieutenant-colonel, and the full colonel was Hugh, Earl Percy. While covering the embarkation of our troops at Philadelphia, he made the friendship of the famous Admiral Lord Howe, and in October,

1778, he served under General Medows, on the secret expedition to St. Lucia, when 1,700 British troops attacked and routed 5,000 French.

After this, he embarked on a Dutch ship for England, but was captured by a French privateer. After being released, he married, in England, Miss Dixon, of Bath, and rejoined his regiment at Barbadoes. In 1780, he was persuaded by his old comrade, General Medows, to accompany him to Bombay as military secretary, and as such he served in the campaigns against Tippoo Sahib, in 1790 ; thus Lord Mornington found in him an able coadjutor, who knew well the resources, the country, and the sovereign of Mysore. General Harris returned to England after the campaigns of Cornwallis, but, in October, 1794, was again in

India, when he was appointed commander-in-chief at Madras.

The Earl of Mornington was determined to grapple with all the dangers and difficulties that were likely to menace his government. With this view he laid down a plan of action, and sent it as a secret despatch to Lieutenant-General



LOW-CASTE BENGAL NATIVES.

Harris, and recommended his brother to devote his skill and energy to the task of bringing the troops in the various cantonments to a state of efficiency.

At this time, the strength of the Mysore army was never less than 70,000 men ; while that of Madras mustered only 14,000, of whom about 4,000 were Europeans.

To strengthen the ties of alliance, and extend our political influence, the Indian Government endeavoured to negotiate with some of the native powers. Raymond, the French general, who commanded the army of the Nizam, had become every day a greater favourite, since the rebellion of Ali Jah was crushed. In the style of his domestic life, he collected around him every luxury and elegance within the reach of a European in the heart of India, and affected, particularly in all that related to military parade, the magnificence of a prince. Raymond had now increased his drilled

troops to 15,000, including a complete train of artillery, possessing in his own right all the guns and military equipage belonging to it, with 600 horses and 6,000 bullocks, besides elephants and camels.*

Fortunately for us, the pride and insolence of Raymond and his Frenchmen eventually estranged

the army, or the great men of the Deccan. Thus Lord Mornington soon concluded with the prince an arrangement by which four more of our battalions were to enter the Deccan; that he was to pay annually 2,417,100 rupees for all our sepoys in his employment; that he was to disband all the French corps, and to deliver up all their



NATIVES OF HYDERABAD.

the Nizam, who found that they disposed of nearly all the resources of his country; and thus his minister, Azeem-ul-Omrah, declaring that this French preponderance was intolerable, assented to negotiations for disbanding the French corps, and increasing our subsidiary forces in the Nizam; while these were pending, the active Raymond died at Hyderabad, and M. Perron (or Piron), who succeeded him, was very inferior to him in talent, and destitute of influence either over the Nizam,

* *Asiatic Reg.*, 1799.

officers to the British Government; for most necessary it was, at this time, that French influence should be destroyed in the East, as Bonaparte had already landed an army in Egypt, and had put himself in open communication with Tippoo—circumstances menacing enough to give great disquiet to our Indian Government.

By the 1st of September, the treaty was concluded, but the Nizam lacked strength or courage to put it in force, though it provided that a contingent of 6,000 British troops, with cannon in

proportion, were to serve in the army of the Deccan. In pursuance of this arrangement, Lieutenant-Colonel Roberts, with the contingent, reached Hyderabad on the 10th of October. In silence and secrecy all the arrangements were made, and Colonel Roberts, on being joined by some of the Nizam's cavalry, surrounded the French cantonments, into which a proclamation was sent in the name of the Nizam, "to inform the troops under the French officers, that their lawful sovereign had dismissed those officers from his service; that they were released from obedience to them, and all who attempted to support them would be punished as traitors."

Though the force under Colonel Roberts was greatly inferior in strength to that which occupied the cantonments, in number and in guns, so little had the French adventurers conciliated the men of their various battalions, that they were under apprehension of being massacred by them. They therefore promptly surrendered to Colonel Roberts, who brought off all the Frenchmen without shedding a drop of blood, for which, and for the humanity he displayed, he was publicly thanked by the Governor-General in Orders.*

The French officers had barely found shelter in the British camp, when the troops of the Nizam mutinied about their arrears of pay; but they were promptly surrounded and disarmed by Colonel Roberts' infantry, aided by some of the Nizam's horse, under Captain (afterwards Sir John) Malcolm, who narrowly escaped death among the mutineers, but was saved by some men who four years before had belonged to his company of the 29th Native Infantry, and had deserted.

Negotiations with the Mahrattas were carried on at the same time as with the Nizam, as M. Perron was at the head of a disciplined force in their territories, and his officers formed the nucleus of another French power in India, and the Peishwa, or rather Scindia, who acted for him, would neither disband these troops, nor permit us to mediate between the Mahrattas and the sovereign of the Deccan. To make matters look darker still, the Peishwa was receiving ambassadors from Tippoo, and it soon became apparent that we would have to proceed against that troublesome potentate single-handed. Scindia seemed inclined to draw his sword for the enemy, and it was but too certain that M. Perron, with his French officers and well-disciplined battalions, would endeavour to form a junction with their countrymen who were in the service of Tippoo, more especially if a French armament from the Mauritius, or by the way of the

Red Sea, from Egypt (for the conquest of which the republican flag was already unfurled), should effect a landing on the shores of India.

Then, indeed, from Tippoo's position and power, his savage temper, religious rancour, and ambitious views, we should have the worst to fear. A great variety of important documents relative to the war against him, together with authentic copies of his correspondence with Zemaun Shah, the governor of the Mauritius, and others, all of which were laid before the India House in May, 1799, develop the design which Tippoo had fully planned, so far back as the year 1792, for the complete extirpation of the British in India, for the total destruction of the Mahratta States, and the Hindoo governments, and, finally, for establishing a vast Mohammedan empire, of which he should be the head, and which should extend from Cape Comorin to the mountains of Tartary and Thibet, and from the wall of China to the bank of the Indus—a vast scheme of ambition which the diplomacy of Mornington and the soldiers of Harris were to destroy and defeat.

Tippoo had evinced—ever since the Treaty of Seringapatam had humbled his pride and dismembered the empire Hyder's sword had won—a temper more than usually sullen and vindictive, and he only waited an opportunity for renewing the war with some prospect of victory. Wherever Britain had an enemy, there were his envoys to be found; in Persia; among the mountains of Cabul; at the court of Abdul Hamet IV., of Turkey; in Paris; and, lastly, the Isle of France; but much of this became known to Lord Mornington before he had been a month in India.

By 1790, the 107th and 108th Regiments of the French line, forming the garrison in the Isle of France, had, in common with the rabble, embraced the sentiments of the revolutionists, adopted the tricoloured cockade, and betaken them to every outrage in the name of Liberty and Equality, even to the barbarous murder of M. de Macnamara, commandant of the French marine in the Indian seas; but in June, 1792, M. de Malartie arrived as governor-general from Paris, while Colonel de Cossigny commanded in the Isle of Bourbon. Through these officials Tippoo was informed of the successes achieved by France in the revolutionary war, and was assured of direct assistance in any struggle with Britain. While his hopes were rising with these promises, it chanced that a French privateer, in want of repairs, put into Mangalore, when her captain, who was named Ripaud, in a conversation with Gholam Ali, the *Meer-e-Zem*, or High Admiral, said that he was high in office at the Mauritius, and had by special order touched at

* *Asiatic Annual*, 1799.

Mangalore to learn the wishes of Tippoo with regard to certain forces now ready to sail and co-operate with him against the British—their common enemy. After this, Ripaud had several interviews with the sultan at Seringapatam, and though the latter suspected his visitor to be an impostor, nevertheless he thought it possible to turn him to good account by purchasing his ship and sending it laden with merchandise to the Isle of France, with messengers on board to ascertain the truth of his statements. Tippoo's councillors openly distrusted Ripaud, but replying to them with his invariable remark, "Whatever is the will of God, *that* will be accomplished," he took his own course.

Ripaud he retained at Seringapatam as French ambassador at his court. The privateer was purchased for 17,000 rupees, and under a French captain, named Pernore (or Pernaude), she was to sail for her destination, with certain persons as ambassadors on board, but in the character of Eastern merchants. Two of these were to return with the expected land and sea forces; the others were to proceed to the Executive Directory at Paris, as the envoys of the sultan. The night after they reached Mangalore to embark, Pernore, who had the 17,000 rupees, absconded with three of the envoys in a boat, and was never more heard of. The vessel was now put in charge of Ripaud, and with two envoys—Hussein Ali and Sheikh-Ibrahim—he sailed in October, 1797, and the instant he was fairly at sea he mustered the Europeans of his crew, and compelled the envoys to open the *kerectahs*, or silken cases which held their letters addressed to the authorities at the Mauritius; and on learning that he had nothing to fear from their contents, though he treated the envoys with great barbarity, by placing them among the lascars, robbing them, and threatening to take them a six months' cruise, he landed them safely at Port Louis on the 19th of January, 1798; and there—"the Refuge of the World," according to their own report—they were received with great honour by General Malartie, and conducted to his house under the salute of 150 pieces of cannon. •

Their despatches contained the terms of a treaty between Tippoo and the government of Mauritius. They seemed to assume that an army of some 10,000 Europeans, and perhaps 30,000 Africans, was ready to sail, and proposed to join it with 60,000 Mysoreans. Goa was to be taken from the Portuguese, Bombay from the British and given to France, Madras was to be razed to the ground, and then Bengal, the Mahrattas, and the Deccan were to be conquered. The envoys, after unfold-

ing this brilliant scheme, were somewhat disconcerted to find that the representations of Ripaud were false—that *no* such armament existed, or was even expected, in Indian waters. However, Count de Malartie resolved to dispatch two frigates with duplicates of the letter to the Directory, requesting succour, and meantime to beat up for volunteers. Against this the luckless envoys remonstrated, declaring that, when expected to return with a large force, they dared not do so with a small one. In spite of this, he issued the following proclamation, which occurs in French in the *Asiatic Register* for 1799, and of which a translation is printed among the papers of his predecessor, Baron Grant, who died there in 1784, in the service of Louis XVI.:—

"Liberty! The French Republic, one and indivisible. Equality!

"*Proclamation* by Anne Joseph Hippolyte Malartie, Commander-in-chief and Governor-General of the Isles of France and Réunion (Bourbon), and of all the French settlements eastward of the Cape of Good Hope.

"Citizens! Having for several years known your zeal and attachment to the interest and glory of our Republic, we are very anxious, and feel it a duty, to make you acquainted with the propositions which have been made to us by Tippoo Sultaun, who has sent two ambassadors to us. This prince has written letters to the Colonial Assembly, as well as to all generals employed under this government, and has addressed a packet to us for the Executive Directory.

"He desires to form an offensive and defensive alliance with the French, and proposes to maintain, at his charge, as long as the war shall last in India, the troops which may be sent to him. He promises to furnish every necessary for carrying on the war, wine and brandy excepted, with which he is wholly unprovided. He declares that he has made every preparation to receive the succours which may be sent him, and that, on the arrival of the troops, the commanders will find everything necessary for engaging in a war to which Europeans are but little accustomed.

"In a word, he waits the moment when the French shall come to his assistance, to declare war against the British, whom he ardently desires to expel from India. As it is impossible for us to reduce the number of the 107th and 108th Regiments and of the regular guard of the port of *Fraternité*, on account of the succours we have furnished to our allies the Dutch, we invite the citizens who may be disposed to enter as volun-

teers, to enrol themselves in their respective municipalities, and to serve under the banners of Tippoo. This prince desires also to be assisted by free citizens of colour: we therefore invite all such who are willing to serve under his flag to enrol themselves.

"We ensure all citizens who shall enrol, that Tippoo will allow them an advantageous rate of pay, the terms of which will be fixed with his ambassadors, who will further engage, in the name of their sovereign, that all Frenchmen who may enter into his armies shall never be detained after they have expressed a wish to return to their own country.

"Done' at Port North-west, the 30th January, 1798.

"MALARTIL."

After resisting the publication of this document, the envoys acquiesced in it, and personally encouraged all to accompany them, and flatteringly assured them that the standard of the Republic had been set up in Lally's camp at Seringapatam, and saluted by three thousand guns.* Soon after this, H.M.S. *Brave* captured *La Surprise*, national corvette, bound for Europe, having on board General de Brie and two envoys of Tippoo from the Isle of France.

In all this affair the conduct of the Count de Malartie was full of absurdity. He was aware that Tippoo's envoys had visited him through false information; that for this reason secrecy was necessary, but his measures rendered it impossible. Then, as if he supposed our Indian Government could be kept ignorant of his proclamation, he wrote Tippoo announcing that he had laid an embargo on all vessels in Port Louis, until the departure of the two envoys with the forces, the entire strength of which amounted to ninety-nine, officers included; and with these Hussein Ali and Sheikh-Ibrahim landed from a French frigate at Mangalore on the 27th of April, 1798, one day after the Earl of Mornington landed at Madras.

Had Tippoo possessed the cunning or wisdom of old Hyder, he might have postponed his rupture with Britain, by disavowing the proceedings of the count, the envoys, and their "forces;" but, instead of this, he committed himself more hopelessly. The moment the French rabble reached Seringapatam they proceeded to organise a Jacobin club, the members of which swore "hatred to tyranny, love of liberty, and the destruction of all kings and sovereigns, except the good and faithful ally of the French republic, Citizen Sultaun Tippoo."

The standard of this absurd community—"the

* "History of Mauritius," p. 536, but surely a mistake.

national colours of the sister republic"—on being hoisted was saluted by every gun in Seringapatam, and a tree of liberty was planted. "Of any comprehension of the purport or tendency of these proceedings, the sultan was so entirely innocent that he fancied himself to be consolidating one of those associations devoted to his own aggrandisement, by which his imagination had lately been captivated in the history of the Arabian Wahabees."* Of the grotesque situation into which he had been lured, he became conscious, when some time after, a French naval captain, named Dubuc, who claimed to be commander of the sea forces, went with two of his envoys as joint representatives to the Executive Directory in Paris, and with reference to the promised aid, Tippoo received the following letter from Napoleon, forwarded through the Sheriff of Mecca:—

"Liberty! Equality!—Bonaparte, member of the National Convention, General-in-chief, to the most magnificent Sultaun, our greatest friend, Tippoo Saib. Head-quarters at Cairo, 7th Pluviôse, 7th year of the Republic, one and indivisible.

"You have already been informed of my arrival on the borders of the Red Sea, with an innumerable and invincible army, full of the desire of relieving you from the iron yoke of England. I eagerly embrace this opportunity of testifying to you the desire I have of being informed by you, by the way of Muscat and Mocha, as to your political situation.

"I would even wish you could send some intelligent person to Suez or Cairo, possessing your confidence, with whom I might confer.

"BONAPARTE."†

One account says this letter was intercepted; but another states that a translation only of it, and that to the Sheriff of Mecca, "was communicated to Captain Wilson, at Mocha, and that translations were by him transmitted to the Governor and Council at Bombay.‡

The Earl of Mornington received intelligence, about the end of October, of the glorious battle of the Nile and the total destruction of the French fleet by Nelson. But there was no Suez Canal then, and it was not upon that fleet the French could have depended for their passage down the Red Sea and through the Indian Ocean; so, notwithstanding the victory, the earl did not relax any of the preparations he had begun to make for war. He was uncertain as to the strength and movements of the French army in Egypt, where it held its ground

* Colonel Wilks.

† Grant's "Mauritius."

‡ Ibid.

for three consecutive years, despite the loss of the fleet and all the efforts made by Britain, the Turks, and the Mamelukes to drive it out. The earl knew, however, that though the French could not proceed from Egypt to India, or reach the latter round the Cape, they would still derive every advantage from entangling us in a war with Tippoo. Moreover, it could not be known what number of men Malartie, by exerting himself, might send from Mauritius to Seringapatam. The facts which were perfectly well known to the earl were these :—

“The Mahrattas were faithless, and eager for conquest or plunder. M. Perron, with his numerous disciplined troops, was every day gaining strength in the Mahratta country, and was looking forward for those chances and combinations which might enable him to re-establish French supremacy in India. Every one felt that with, or without, the arrival of a French armament on the coast, the implacable Mysorean had ample means for making himself dangerous, and would never cease caballing and agitating the country against the British.”

CHAPTER LXV.

PREPARATIONS FOR THE FINAL WAR WITH TIPPoo.—THE BATTLE OF MALAVELLY.

HAVING due regard to our position with Tippoo, the Earl of Mornington, in a minute lodged on the 12th of August, 1798, within three months from the commencement of his administration, after giving a full detail of all the proceedings we have narrated, came to the conclusion that the soundest maxims of policy and justice required immediate war to frustrate the unprovoked and frantic schemes of Tippoo for ambition and revenge.

The proposed operations were thus enumerated in his own words :—

“1. To seize the whole maritime territory remaining in his possession below the Ghauts on the coast of Malabar, in order to preclude him from all future communication by sea with his French allies. 2. By marching the army from the coast directly upon his capital, to compel him to purchase peace by a formal cession of the territory seized on the coast of Malabar. 3. To compel him to defray our whole expense in the war, and thus to secure the double advantage of indemnifying us for the expense occasioned by his aggression, and of reducing his resources with a view to our future security. 4. To compel him to admit permanent residents at his court from us and our allies; a measure which would enable us at all times to check his operations and treachery. 5. That the expulsion of all the natives of France now in his service, and the perpetual exclusion of all Frenchmen, both from his army and dominions, should be made conditions of any treaty of peace with him.”

With the intention of carrying all this into effect, on the 20th of June, 1798, he gave orders for the army

upon the coasts of Coromandel, Bombay, and Malabar, to assemble, as he expected that one campaign would suffice for the crushing of Tippoo; but as it was found that several radical defects existed among our garrisons along the coast of Coromandel, that, in the opinion of Colonel Close, its adjutant-general, the Madras army was scarcely capable of even defending the Company's territory—and for any purpose would be unable to move before the spring of the following year, an opinion in which General Harris fully concurred—the mode intended in the minute of the earl was entirely changed. The plan he had first proposed, was simply a military expedition of brief duration, with a resolution to throw the whole expense thereof on the enemy who had caused it. But now it appeared that he could not hope to achieve any of his desired objects without the expense and tedium of a long war; and hence negotiations with the native powers, the Nizam, and the Mahrattas.

It was not until the beginning of November that the army was concentrated; and till it was ready for the field, it would have been impolitic to threaten Tippoo, or attempt to remonstrate with him. When all was in readiness, explanations were sought of him, as to his purposes; but these he declined to give. Quitting Calcutta, the Governor-General now came to Madras, in order to be nearer the scene of the forthcoming operations. But then came messengers from Tippoo, asserting that he was anxious for peace, and that he had never entertained intentions hostile to Britain; but he positively declined to receive Major Doveton as an

envoy from the earl, who wrote to him, recapitulating all the proceedings of the embassy to the Mauritius, the proclamation of the Count de Malartie, and the other causes for hostility which the sultan had given to Britain; adding, that by his conduct for years past, he had now compelled her and her allies to seek relief from anxiety in open war; that they would no longer permit his constant preparations for it, or those intrigues and hostile negotiations with their enemies; and, in

giving splendour to the universe, the firmament of glory and power, the sultan of the sea and the land, the King of Roum (be his empire perpetual!) addressed to me, which reached you through the British envoy, and which you transmitted, has arrived. Being frequently disposed to make excursions and hunt, I am accordingly proceeding on a hunting excursion. You will be pleased to dispatch Major Doveton (about whose coming your friendly pen has repeatedly written) slightly attended."



THE EARL OF MORNINGTON, AFTERWARDS MARQUIS OF WELLESLEY.

conclusion, the earl again besought the sultan to receive Major Doveton. This letter was dispatched on the 9th of January, 1799, and on the 24th of that month it was put into the hands of Tippoo. No reply came from him—as probably he was only seeking to gain time and to prepare—till the 13th of February, when there arrived a short and somewhat insolent letter from him, acknowledging the receipt of his lordship's two friendly letters, and one from the Sultan of Turkey, dissuading him from further connection with France. Tippoo stated that he fully understood their contents. "The letter of the prince, in station like Jeemsheid, with angels as his guards," he wrote, "with troops numerous as the sun illuminating the world, the heaven of empire and dominion, the luminary

Ten days before this sneering epistle reached him, the Earl of Mornington had put his troops in motion, as it became but too obvious that Tippoo's design had been to procrastinate, till the favourable season for attacking Seringapatam was past; and in the interval, it was ascertained beyond a doubt that he had dispatched envoys to the French, announcing that he was ready for war, and urging them to hasten the promised armament by sea and land. But misfortune again attended them, as they were captured in *La Preneuse*, French frigate, on board of which were found the articles ratified between him and the Count de Malartie, and M. de Sercey, commander of the French naval forces, wherein it was agreed that France should send to his assistance officers of the land and sea

services. The monthly pay of the latter to be, for a captain, 2,000 rupees monthly; each lieutenant, 500; each naval ensign, 200.

On the 3rd of February, the earl had directed the British army under General Harris, and that of the Nizam, under Meer Alum, to advance into Mysore.

According to the field-state of the former, drawn up by Major-General John Braithwaite, for the

10,000 infantry, lately the corps of General Perron, now commanded by British officers, and about 20,000 horse; the whole under Meer Alum. He was accompanied by Colonel Roberts' column, which consisted of six battalions of native infantry, and twenty-four field-pieces (twenty-four pounders), making a force of 6,536 men.

General Harris's field-train consisted of sixty pieces, with forty heavy siege guns. In addition to



VIEW AT MALABAR HILL, NEAR BOMBAY.

Adjutant-General's Office, the strength of our troops was as follows:—

Cavalry: including H.M. 19th and 25th Light Dragoons; the 1st, 2nd, 3rd, and 4th Native Cavalry—total, 2,635 sabres. Artillery: Two companies of the Bengal Artillery; 1st and 2nd Battalions of Artillery, 608. European Infantry: H.M. 12th Foot; 33rd, ditto; 73rd and 74th Highland Regiments; Scots Brigade, 1st Battalion; the Swiss Regiment, 4,381. Native Infantry: Eight battalions, with three regiments of Bengal Volunteers, 10,695. Gun Lascars and Pioneers, 2,483. Grand total, 20,802.

* The army of the Nizam consisted of about

these forces, which were assembled in the vicinity of Vellore, General James Stuart was advancing from the Malabar coast with 6,100 fighting men; another force under Colonels Read and Brown was gathering in the pleasant valley of the Baramahal to menace Tippoo's flank, and to push on supplies for the grand army through the Pass of Cauvery-pooram, while our fleet, under Admiral Rainier, swept the sea-coast.

Many officers destined to attain the highest distinction in future wars were at this period serving in the army of Lord Harris. Among these, at the head of the 33rd Regiment, was Arthur Wellesley; Floyd led the 19th Light Dragoons, and at the

head of the 25th rode Stapleton Cotton, the future Lord Combermere, one of the splendid soldiers of the Peninsula war. Alexander Campbell, afterwards a general, and commander-in-chief at Madras, led the 74th Highlanders; and David Baird, the comrade and successor of Moore at Corunna, the old Macleod Highlanders; nor should the brilliant Sir John Malcolm, the conqueror of Holkar, and the victor of Maheidpore, be forgotten.

The army of the Nizam was commanded but nominally by Meer Alum; its real leader was Colonel Wellesley, whose regiment was attached to it. Though drilled by the French, this force is described by an officer as being a horde of barbarians, clothed in stuffed cotton jackets, covered with chain armour, capable of resisting a musket-ball. The horse pranced over the country in every direction, brandishing their long lances, and managing their steeds with dexterity and ease—sometimes casting their lances, and then, at full gallop, bending so low under the horse as to recover them when lying flat on the sand. They strengthened our numerical force, but in a military point of view, the advantage was dubious; as they frequently disconcerted the movements of the regulars, by dashing between the columns on the line of march, and, being mistaken for Tippoo's horse, were fired on pretty freely at times. Many brave fellows among them perished in this profitless manner; and it was really to protect them from destruction, that Wellesley's 33rd, the famous old 1st Yorkshire, now called "The Duke of Wellington's Own," were attached to them by order of Lord Harris, during the advance upon Seringapatam.

The whole of the combined forces began their march south-west of Carimangulum, which was reached on the 28th of February. From thence, they proceeded up the Pass of Palicod, and on the 4th of March were at Rayacottah on the Mysore frontier, which they crossed without opposition, and on the 9th encamped, about eighty miles east of the capital at Kelamungulam.

The nearest road to the stronghold of Tippoo lay through a pass that had not yet been examined, so General Harris advanced northwards, past the town of Anicul, which stands about eighteen miles southward of Bangalore.

Parties of the Mysorean horse were now seen hovering in all directions, setting the villages in flames, and destroying forage. On the 14th, the main body of our army was encamped at the village of Cullagnapettah within sight of Bangalore. Tippoo was hourly expected to appear in force;

but he was employed elsewhere. It chanced that on the 6th of March, when the right brigade of the Bombay army, composed of three sepoy battalions, under Lieutenant-Colonel Montessor, of the 77th Regiment, had reached Sedaseer, the remaining brigades being distant eight and twelve miles respectively, Tippoo suddenly made his appearance, in high hope to destroy the whole Bombay force in detail, and so far as Montessor's column was concerned, he very nearly did so. Moving secretly and expeditiously through the jungles, he attacked the isolated brigade, in front and rear, almost at the same moment, with his infantry. These were clad in a dress of purple woollen stuff, lozenged with white, called a *tiger-jacket*; with a red muslin turban, and waist-cloth, sandal slippers, with black leather cross-belts. They had French firelocks, with a leather cover for the lock, known then, in our service, as "a hammer-stall."

Montessor was, in fact, completely surrounded, and his men were only saved from annihilation by the bravery with which they maintained an unequal struggle, until reinforced by the rest of the division, under the leader of the whole, General James Stuart, who first came on with all the speed he could make, with the flank companies of the 74th Highlanders, and the whole of the 77th Regiment, with whom he opened fire upon the enemy, who had possessed themselves of the great road leading to Sedaseer. In this direction a column, 5,000 strong, under Baber Jung, completely barred the way of Montessor. Ultimately the Mysoreans were driven off with the loss of 1,500 men. Thus were 11,800 of Tippoo's best troops defeated by only 2,000 British soldiers, whose loss, as the "field-state" shows, amounted to, of all ranks, killed, wounded, and missing, 143. Among the first and last, were two officers, Captains Thomson and Shott, of the 2nd Native Infantry.*

Quitting Periapattam, Tippoo arrived at Seringapatam on the 14th of March, and at once moved to encounter General Harris, who had continued steadily to advance, and on the 26th had halted five miles east of Malavelly, about thirty from the capital; and Harris's spies reported that he was to be attacked as soon as his troops began to debouch from the jungles, information which was supposed to be correct, for his advanced patrols, with some elephants and fifteen pieces of cannon, could be distinctly discerned on a distant ridge.

Despite these arrangements, at three p.m. on the 27th of March, the right wing of our invading army began to move from the camp along a heavy, sandy

* General Stuart's despatch, 8th March.

road, the nature of which seriously impeded the ponderous siege train, each forty-two pounder being drawn by from thirty to fifty bullocks; but so deep was the sand, that in some places the carriages sank to their axles, and then the aid of the elephants became necessary; and we are told, by one who was present, that "these sagacious animals would twine their trunks, or probosces, round the nave, and between the spokes of the wheel, and thus lift gun and carriage from the difficulty, while the bullocks were being goaded and whipped with leather thongs." Clouds of *looties*, or predatory horsemen, were hovering on the right flank of our line of march, and these incessantly fired as we advanced, and when a stoppage occurred to extricate the guns, they would come swooping down to slay the artillerymen, maim the cattle, and slash through the harness; and all this went on beneath a fierce sun, under which many Europeans fell dead from *coups-de-soleil*.

The advanced guard was formed of five cavalry regiments under General Floyd, who, on nearing the mud-walled fort and village of Malavelly, discovered a numerous body of the enemy's cavalry on their right flank, and the infantry on the heights beyond. This was evidently the army of Tippoo; but as it was at too great a distance to be brought to action, the quartermaster-general was ordered to mark out a new encampment; and some heavy cavalry skirmishing went on the while.

In this work, the famous native soldier, Cawder Beg, of the 4th Regiment, and then but the orderly soubahdar of General Floyd, who presented him with a sword, greatly distinguished himself, and was the hero of the following episode. "Cawder Beg," says Sir John Malcolm, "with two or three of his relations from the native cavalry, and a select body of infantry, were placed under my orders. I was then political representative with the army of the Soubah of the Deccan, and commanded a considerable body of the troops of that prince. I had applied for Cawder Beg on account of his reputation, and prevailed upon Meer Alum to place a corps of 2,000 of his best regular horse under the soubahdar's orders. Two days after the corps was formed, an orderly came to tell me that Cawder Beg was engaged with some of the enemy's horsemen. I hastened to the spot with some alarm for the result, determined, if Cawder Beg was victor, to reprove him severely for conduct unsuited to the station in which he was placed. The fears I entertained for his safety were soon dispelled, as I saw him advancing on foot with two swords in his hand, which he hastened

to present to me, begging me at the same time to restrain my indignation till I heard his reasons; then speaking to me aside, he said, 'Though the general of the Nizam's army was convinced by your statement of my competence for the high command you have entrusted me with, I observed that the high-born and high-titled leaders of the horse he placed under my orders, looked with contempt at my close jacket, straight pantaloons, and European boots, and thought themselves disgraced by being told to obey me. I was therefore tempted, on seeing a well-mounted horseman of Tippoo's, to challenge their whole line to accept a combat, which they declined. I promised not to use firearms, and succeeded in cutting him down. A relation came to avenge his death; I wounded him, and have brought him prisoner. You will,' he added, 'hear a good account of me at the durbar of Meer Alum; the service will go on the better for what has passed, and I promise most sacredly to fight no more single combats.'"

The new camp was scarcely marked off, when fourteen pieces of cannon opened upon our troops at the distance of nearly 2,000 yards; these were answered by such of our field-guns as could be got up, and, ere long, the action became general along the whole line, and the lascars, who had been pitching the tents for the weary troops, on finding the cannon-balls bounding among them, fled to the rear. A British detachment, led by Captain Macpherson, of the 12th Native Infantry, pushing on towards the enemy's left flank with two twelve-pound galloper guns, rendered the action brisk in that quarter, having ensconced themselves in a wood where they were secure from Tippoo's hordes of charging cavalry, whom they dosed repeatedly with showers of grape. In the meantime, the right wing of the British army—Baird's brigade, consisting of the 12th, 74th Highlanders, and the Scots Brigade—formed in contiguous close columns of regiments on the ground of the intended camp near the fort of Malavelly, was cautiously advancing towards an eminence in front, and as they drew near it, fearing nothing so much (from past experience) as the capture of his artillery, Tippoo began to withdraw it, till ultimately the guns disappeared. The moment the crest of the eminence was reached, the columns halted, deployed quickly into line, and then was seen the whole army of Tippoo, in order of battle, on the level ground beyond, with wood covering both flanks, and horsemen by tens of thousands. Some of these falling on our line of skirmishers, drove them back upon their respective regiments. "This body of horse," says an officer of the 12th,

* "Rise, &c., of the Native Army."

"of about 1,500, was formed in a compact, wedge-like shape, with the front angle headed by two enormous elephants (saddled with howdahs, filled with distinguished officers) having each a huge iron chain dangling from the proboscis, which they whirled about with great rapidity, and a blow from which would have destroyed half a company of infantry."

By a blunder, this body would seem at one time to have been mistaken for some of the Nizam's army, till the discharge of their pistols and carbines proved who they were, and they were driven off by a volley from the 12th, followed by rapid file-firing; and on the smoke clearing away, a literal rampart of men and horses was seen encumbering the earth, many of them rolling about in agony; while the elephants, maddened by their many bullet wounds, shuffled frantically to the rear, treading dead and dying under foot, and swinging their chains right and left among the flying cavalry. "The howdahs from which the leading chiefs had directed the charge were dashed to atoms, and several of these brave men's heads hung from the backs of the enraged animals; horses rearing and crushing their riders to death—other loose and wounded horses scouring the plain on all sides—the scene was terrific."

After several repulses, a column of the enemy, 2,000 strong, with shouts of *Feringhee bon chute* ("Rascally English"), now hurled all its strength against the 33rd Regiment, at another part of the line. The future hero of a hundred battles kept the line with the muskets at "the recover" (the fashion of those days, and for thirty years after) till the foe was within sixty yards, and then the deadly volley was poured in with dreadful effect. The regiment advanced, and the Mysoreans gave way.

Darting forward then, at the head of his cavalry—the old 19th (whilome, in 1781, Burgoyne's Dragoons) leading the way—the flying foe were slashed and cut down on every hand, maddened though most of Tippoo's horsemen were by bhang and opium.

His loss was 1,000 killed and wounded, while ours was very trifling—only sixty-six in all. Such was the result of the battle of Malavelly, by which he thought to bar our way to Seringapatam, and which elicited the following brief order from General Harris, signed by Colonel Barry Close:—

"Camp, Malleville (*sic*), 27th March, 1799.

"G.O.—Parole, *Malleville*. The Commander-in-chief congratulates the army on the happy result of this day's action, during which he had various opportunities of witnessing their gallantry, coolness, and steady attention to orders.

"(Signed) B. CLOSE, Adjutant-General."

During the march to this point, little or no food or forage could be procured (as Tippoo had everywhere destroyed the villages), to add to the stock conveyed with the army on the backs of bullocks. According to one account, every tank and pool of water was impregnated with poison of the milk-hedge, large quantities of the branches of which the enemy had treacherously thrown in, so that many horses, bullocks, and in some instances soldiers and camp-followers, fell victims to the deleterious infusion.

The efficient state of Tippoo's Mysore gun-cattle on one hand, and the miserable condition of our Carnatic bullocks on the other, precluded all thought of an immediate and successful pursuit, beyond what our light cavalry could effect.

CHAPTER LXVI.

CHARACTER, ETC., OF TIPPOO.—LAST SIEGE OF SERINGAPATAM, AND DEATH OF THE SULTAN.

As the "Tiger" fell back, about twenty British stragglers were captured by his troops: all of them were put to a cruel death, including even a little drummer-boy of the old 94th, or Scots Brigade. Even his French mercenaries were beginning to execrate his savage nature, and the useless hardships to which he subjected them.* According, chiefly,

* *Asiatic Ann. Reg.*

to an account of him taken from information given by one of his officers, written in 1790, and translated from the Persian by Captain James Kirkpatrick, this personage, who figured so prominently in the history of India, was from five feet eight to nine inches in height, rather inclined to obesity, his face round, with large, full eyes, and there was much of animation in his countenance. He was

very active, and wont to take much exercise. He had eleven children, of whom only two were legitimate. That his disposition was cruel, his temper passionate and revengeful, has been amply shown. He was prone to obscene abuse, and to falsehood and hypocrisy when such suited the ends he had in view. He professed himself Naib to the Twelve Prophets, whom Mohammedans believe are yet to come, and he was a savage persecutor of all other creeds and castes. Hyder discriminated merit and punished guilt; but Tippoo gave neither encouragement nor reward, and punished with awful cruelty when inflamed by passion or prejudice. Hyder was liberal to his soldiers; but Tippoo often retained their pay for months, and spent it on his own wanton luxuries. Yet his revenue regulations were framed with great ability, and seemed well calculated to enrich both him and his people; but were frustrated in their operation by his shifting and shallow policy.*

On the conclusion of his first war with us, he took an inventory of all his property, which was then valued at twenty crores of pagodas, with five crores of Bahaudry pagodas in the treasury, and fifteen crores in jewels and rich clothes. He also possessed an incredible quantity of other property, including 700 elephants, 170,000 camels and horses, 500,000 buffaloes, bullocks, and cows, with 600,000 sheep; 600,000 firelocks and matchlocks; 200,000 swords and pistols, with 2,000 pieces of cannon, in his kingdom. For his troops the words of command were issued in Persian. Hitherto they had been given in English and in French, probably through the influence of Lally's party, which consisted in all of about 630 Europeans and half-breeds. He kept in his pay 300 *hircarrahs*, or spies, at three pagodas each monthly. His father despised, in some sense, the pageantry of Eastern courts; but Tippoo maintained a crowded zenana, amid all the pomp of voluptuous despotism. Tippoo was, though able in many ways, not wise as a general or statesman. He possessed some prudence, and was not without promptitude in action; but he was deficient in comprehension, and knew not in what true greatness consisted. Selfish, cunning, and rapacious in government as well as war, he ever acted on the narrowest principles. He constantly wore a ruby ring, the most valuable jewel in his treasury. His turban was always adorned with precious stones of great price, and a rosary of pearls was the constant ornament of his person. The pearls of which it consisted had been the collection of many years, and they were his chief pride. Whenever he could procure, by any means, a pearl of extraordinary

size, he made it supply, on this famous rosary, the place of another inferior in form or beauty.

His amassed jewels were kept in large, dark rooms, strongly secured behind one of the durbars, and were deposited in coffer. In the same manner were preserved all his silver, gold, and filigree plate. He had several elephant-howdahs entirely of silver, and many enormous dishes of gold, studded with precious stones. These were all supposed to be the plunder of the hapless Mysore family, and other rajahs whom Tippoo or his father had conquered. His desire of hoarding was insatiable, and he passed the greater part of his leisure time in reviewing the varied assemblage of his riches. With all this avarice and tyranny of nature, it was singular to find that Tippoo possessed a very large and curious library. The volumes were kept in chests, each having a separate cover. Some were richly adorned and illuminated, after the manner of antique Roman missals.* But the British drums were echoing along the banks of the Cauvery, and—to Tippoo—the end of all things was coming now!

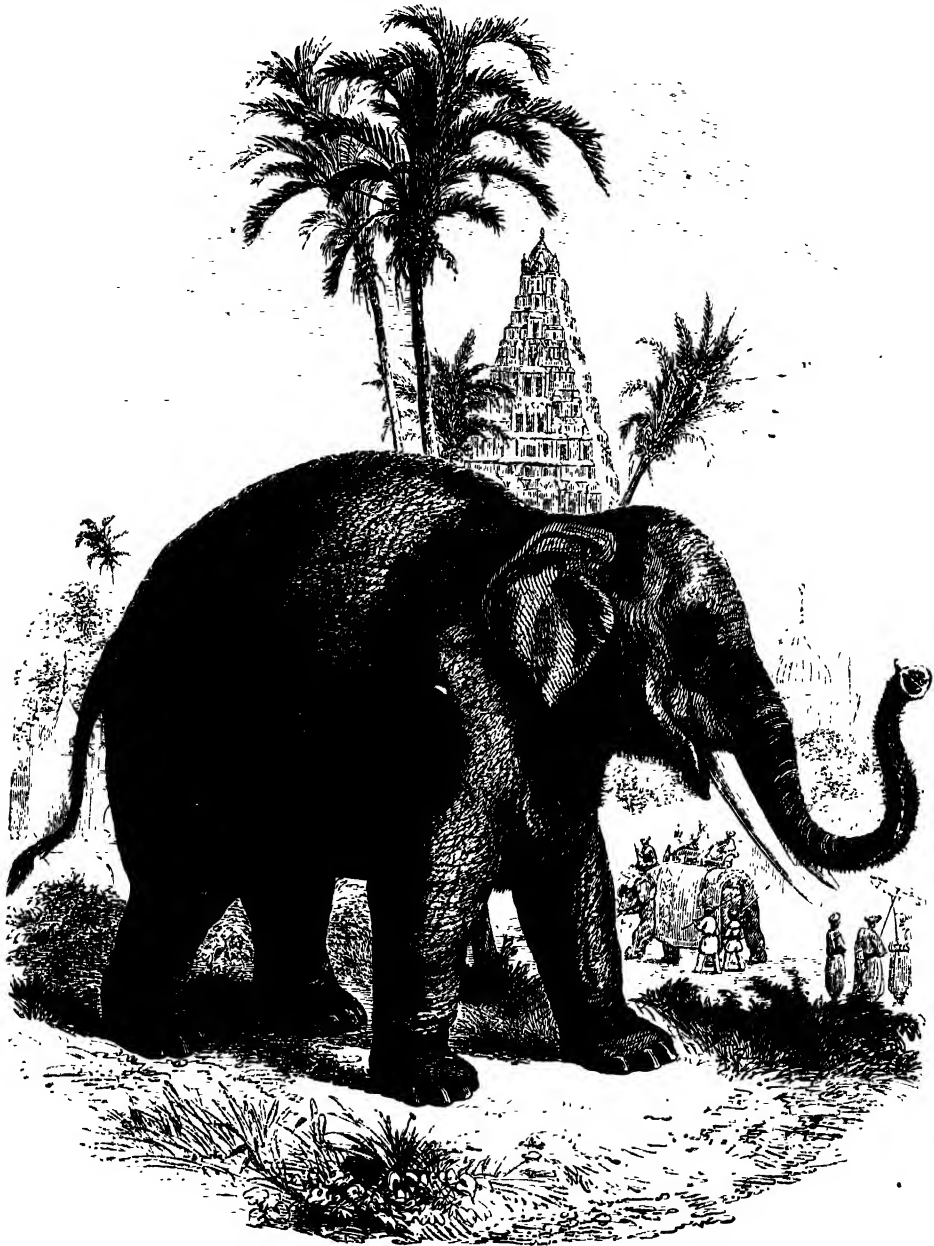
On the 28th of March our army advanced south-westward towards Sosilla, where the Cauvery was easily fordable. As Tippoo had not anticipated this, he had not ordered it to be devastated, and hence all the villages and open fields afforded large supplies of forage at a crisis when, according to the work just quoted, "the evil most to be dreaded was famine. . . . The whole of our draught and carriage bullocks and horses died, and rice had risen to three rupees a pound, on the day the city was stormed." Sosilla was found to contain a vast quantity of grain, and some 15,000 head of cattle, besides sheep and goats—the property of fugitives. Our right wing, with the cavalry and Colonel Wellesley's division, remained encamped on the north side of the Cauvery, while the rest of the army crossed it into a land untouched by war, and on the resources of which Tippoo relied for the use of his own army. This movement, moreover, facilitated a junction with the coming Bombay army, and rendered useless all those defensive operations made by the enemy under the very natural impression that the new attack would be made, like that of Cornwallis in 1792, from the northern side of the river. On the 30th the remainder of the army crossed, and the whole advanced without interruption, and on the 5th of April the scarlet columns once more took ground before the famous and far-stretching city of Seringapatam, at the distance of two miles from the walls.

* "Reminiscences of Mysore, &c.," by James Grant, 1797.

* *Asiatic Ann. Reg.*

It is said that when Tippoo found that all his elaborate preparations to receive the foe on the old ground were foiled, he fell into an utter despondency, from which neither his wives nor astro-

the island at the ford of Arikera, to give him battle there, and conquer or die. With this view, Tippoo posted his whole army on strong ground at Chendgal to await the British, but, to his bitter mortifica-



THE ELEPHANT OF INDIA.

jogers could arouse him. Summoning his principal sirdirs he said briefly, "We have arrived at our last stage—what is your determination?"

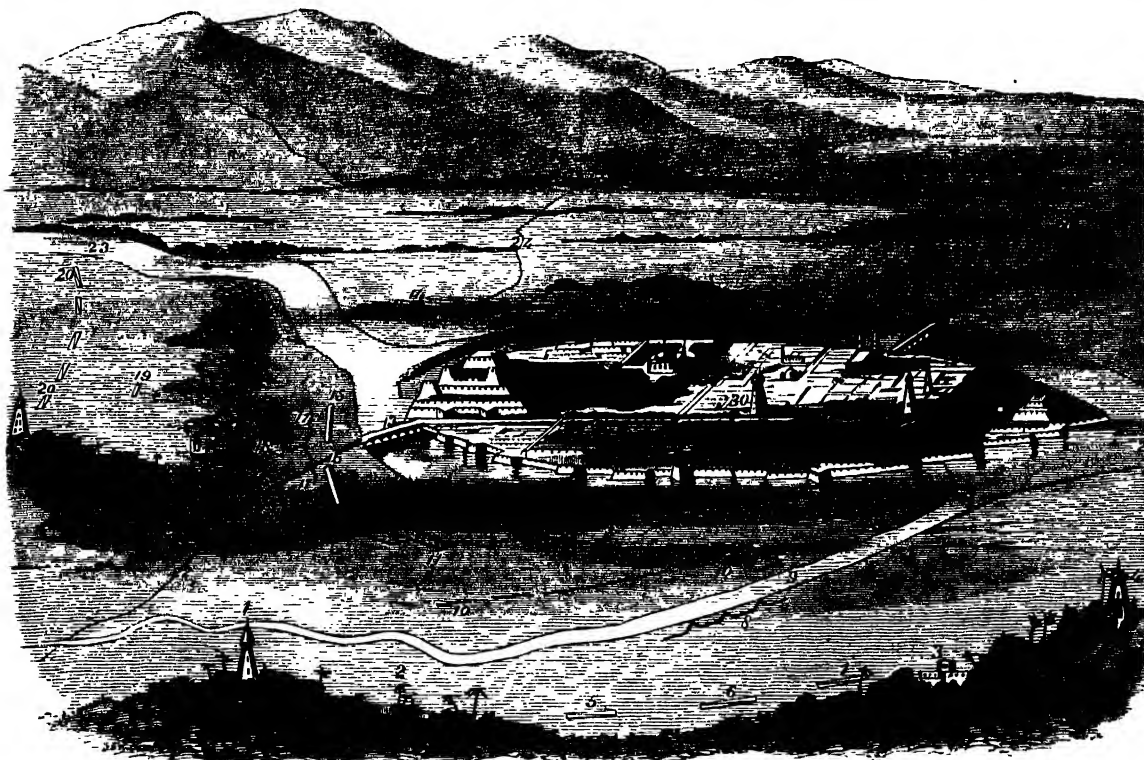
"To die along with you," was the response.

Gloomy was the council that ensued; but it was resolved, in the belief that Harris would cross into

tion, instead of taking ground to their right to reach the ford, he saw them defiling with bayonets gleaming and colours flying, wheeling to the left to avoid the low intermediate grounds, and passing on at a distance of three miles from him, while he was totally unable to prevent their movements.

Between the camping-place of the besiegers and the walls of Seringapatam, stretched a considerable portion of broken ground, interspersed with jungly bushes, with granite rocks, and ruined hamlets, affording excellent cover to the enemy for annoying our lines with rockets and musketry. At the extremity of this, and distant one mile from the city, was a grove of betel trees, named "the Sultan Pettah Tope," from whence rockets were thrown among our tents, thus endangering the artillery

dage to a native soldier—were left considerably in the rear; the consequence of which was that Colonel Wellesley found himself close upon the enemy, and his regiment unsupported. The moment was critical, but fortunately the sultan's troops neglected to take advantage of it, and allowed the 33rd to remain halted and unmolested, when the charge was more judiciously made and the object of it effected. When the 10th came up Colonel Wellesley laughed, and said, "This won't



1. Caricatta Pagoda; 2. Tinnan Village; 3. Chargumaum Village; 4. Pagoda; 5. Maxwell; 6. Cornwallis; 7. Meadows; 8. English Batteries; 9. River; 10. Tippoo's Camp (1792); 11. Eighteen Guns; 12. Ford; 13. Gate and Bridge; 14. Agra Village; 15, 16. Storming Parties; 17. Batteries; 18. Parallels; 19. Wellesley's Attack; 20. English Camp; 21. Nizam; 22. To Mysore; 23. River; 24. To Agra; 25. To Bangalore; 26. Pagoda; 27. Ford; 28. River; 29. Lal Bagh; 30. Temples; 31. Avenue; 32. Hyder Ali's Palace; 33. Citadel; 34. Canal.

PERSPECTIVE PLAN OF SERINGAPATAM, INDICATING SEVERALLY THE BRITISH POSITIONS IN 1792 AND 1799.

stores. On the night of the 4th of May, General Baird had orders to scour this grove, which he did with success, but next morning Tippoo's troops were seen in possession of it again; then Harris, who was resolved that we should possess it, sent forward Colonel Wellesley with the 33rd, and the 10th Native Infantry, under Colonel Ludovic Grant, with a detachment under Colonel Shawe as a support. "With an ardour and impetuosity which were then marks of his professional character," says a Memoir of General Sir John W. Adams, "he dashed on so vehemently with the 33rd that the 10th Sepoys, who were laden with knapsacks—that stupid and annoying appen-

do—I was much to blame; we must be more careful another time."*

The flints were taken out and the tope cleared by the bayonet; and this was the famous affair of which so much has been said under various colourings, and which has been described as the first prominent military service of the Duke of Wellington. Of this affair no two accounts are alike. Some aver that Colonel Wellesley failed, though the tope was cleared, and in consequence a connected line of strong posts was established from thence to the river for nearly three miles, blocking up the city on its south-western quarter. The result so greatly

* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1837.

impressed Tippoo that, on the 9th he wrote thus to General Harris :—"The Governor-General, Lord Mornington Bahauder, sent me a letter, copy of which is enclosed ; you will understand it. I have adhered firmly to my treaties ; what then is the meaning of the advance of the English armies, and the occurrence of hostilities ? Inform me ? What need I say more ?"

"Your letter," replied the general, "enclosing copies of the Governor-General's letter, has been received. For the advance of the British and allied armies, and for the occurrence of hostilities, I refer you to the several letters of the Governor-General, which are sufficiently explanatory on the subject. •What need I say more ?"

Three days before this laconic correspondence, General Floyd, with four regiments of cavalry, six of infantry, and twenty guns, with some of the Nizam's horse, had left the lines for Periapatam, to assist the junction of Stuart's Bombay army. He was quickly followed by Kummer-ud-Deen, with the whole of the Mysorean cavalry and a great body of infantry, with orders to frustrate this movement ; but the latter had no opportunity of making the least impression, and by the 14th of April both generals were in the lines before Srirangapatam, the *final* siege of which was by that time in full progress.

The commanding engineer suggested two plans of attack ; an assault at the south-west, and another at the north-west. In the former case it would be made by land, and in the latter from the north bank of the river, and as that was the point at which the attack was expected by Tippoo, he had many thousand men at work, throwing up a line of works there, and opening many new embrasures in the southern face of the fortress. But again he was deceived and mortified, for when, on the 15th of April, the Bombay army took post on the north bank of the Cauvery, so as to enfilade the face that was really to be attacked, he then saw that what he deemed at first was but a feint, was really a permanent occupation.

The siege had barely been inaugurated, when it was found there was grain in store for only thirty days, or perhaps even less, and in his journal, General Harris recorded his apprehensions at this condition of things. The ever defective commissariat of our service was, as usual, to blame. Harris, though evidently painstaking, and aware how much depended on the necessary supplies, was less able to provision than to handle his army. Colonel Wellesley surpassed every officer before the city in this valuable requisite for a leader, but the state of the stores

was such that General Harris believed it necessary, against the usage of war, to push on the assault, and to run any risk rather than have to retreat with a famished army before the furious Tippoo. On the 19th, General Stewart reported that he had only two days' provisions for the Bombay army ! The general's journal (published afterwards by his son-in-law, the Right Hon. S. Rumbold Lushington) betrays at this time by its entries, his intense anxiety and feverish fear lest the inadequacy of the supplies might cause utter failure ; and yet this fear is always expressed collaterally with a trust in, and deference to, the will of God. Seeing that the siege works were making steady progress, Tippoo attempted again to negotiate, and somewhat humbly asked the general what was his pleasure. This was on the 20th of April.

General Harris sent him back a preliminary treaty, stating that if its demands were not complied with in four and twenty hours, the allies would demand, for security, the entire fortress of Srirangapatam. The leading demands were that Tippoo should once more cede the half of his dominions, or what remained of them ; pay two millions sterling, and deliver four of his sons, and four of his chief sirdirs as hostages. On this, Tippoo burst into one of his usual fits of impotent raving, and vowed that he would die like a soldier, rather than live a dependant on the infidels in the list of their pensioned princes.

A fiery and well-led sortie from the garrison against our advanced works on the northern bank, on the 22nd, was vigorously repulsed, but not before we had lost 700 men. On the 23rd the batteries of the northern and southern attacks dismantled, or otherwise silenced, every gun opposed to them, and so perfectly raked the curtains by a flank fire as to render them no longer tenable, and on the 26th and 27th the Mysoreans were completely beaten out of their last external entrenchment, though it was only 380 yards distant from the walls, and under cover of their guns, musketry, and rockets. On this occasion Colonel Wellesley commanded in the trenches, with the Scots Brigade, the 73rd Highlanders, and a battalion of the 3rd Coast Sepoys. To hold this point was Tippoo's last effort of bravery, prior to the final, and for him fatal, assault. By capturing this ground we achieved the post for the breaching batteries, and the event is thus recorded by Mr. Lushington, the general's private secretary :—

"At the hour proposed, the guns from our batteries commenced a heavy fire of grape, which was the signal for attack. The Europeans then moved out, followed by the native troops. The enemy,

seeing this movement, began an active fire from behind the breastwork; guns from almost every part of the fort opened on our troops with great effect, and by the time they had quitted the trenches the fire of cannon and small arms was general. The companies from the 73rd Regiment and Scots Brigade then pushed on with great rapidity to the enemy's works, who seeing the determined spirit of the British troops, fled from their posts in confusion and great dismay; but many fell by the bayonet, while endeavouring to escape. The relief from the trenches, which was this evening commanded by Colonel Sherbrooke, had by this time arrived; a part of the 74th (Highland) Regiment, and the Regiment de Meuron, composed the Europeans of that relief, and were ordered immediately to support the rest. These pushed on to the right of the attack. A heavy fire was continued from the ramparts, and by those of the enemy who had fled from the part of their entrenchment first attacked, and taken post behind the traverses more to the right; several made a desperate stand, and fell by the bayonet; the Europeans dashed in, forcing the traverses in succession, until they extended as far as the turn of the nullah towards the stone bridge. At this turn there is a redoubt, open to the south-east angle of the fort, but which flanked a watercourse running parallel and close to the entrenchment that was carried."

This redoubt was stormed and retained by the Highlanders, under Colonel Alexander Campbell, who, with a small party of that corps with the Swiss of Colonel Meuron Bayard, pushed forward along the intrenchments and the road till he came to the bridge leading over the Cauvery. Colonel Wallace, at the same time, was advancing more to the right, till, fearful of risking too much in the dark, he fell back and took possession of the enemy's post at the bridge. Campbell had, in the meanwhile, crossed it, and actually advanced some distance into the island; but it was necessary to fall back immediately from a situation so dangerous that nothing but the darkness of the night and the consternation of the enemy, could have given them the most slender chance of escape. "They returned under a heavy fire on all sides," continues Mr. Lushington, "and made their way back to the redoubt where Lieutenant-Colonel Wallace had taken post with the few of the 74th Regiment who had remained with him, and the rest of the troops whom he had placed to the left along the watercourse, and in this situation they remained all night, exposed to grape from the fort, and galled by musketry from the ground on the right flank, and

from the post at the stone bridge, which took them in the rear. The enemy continued firing grape and musketry at intervals the whole night; at length the daylight appeared, and discovered to us and to them the critical state of our men. Lieutenant-Colonel Campbell having been crippled the preceding night by being barefooted during his excursion across the bridge, was obliged to return to camp, and Lieutenant Colonel Wallace being next in command (of the 74th Highlanders), he was sent to inform Colonel Sherbrooke of their situation, and request further support, as the enemy were collecting in great force on the right flank, and at the post they occupied near the stone bridge, from which they galled our people in the rear to a great degree. Colonel Sherbrooke, on receiving this report, instantly ordered all the Europeans who had remained in the trenches, to advance to Colonel Wallace's post, and each man to take with him a pickaxe and *momitie*,"—this latter being an Indian spade of peculiar form. Colonel W. Wallace, in the meanwhile, seeing the necessity of driving the enemy from the bridge, ordered Major Gordon Skelly to do so with some of the Scots Brigade, and a single company of the latter took possession of it. This secured the rear of all the rest, and when a company of the 74th Highlanders came in, it was impregnable. But our loss was great; two officers and sixty soldiers were killed; ten officers and 216 soldiers were wounded, and nineteen were missing. Sherbrooke was afterwards well known as General Sir John Coape Sherbrooke, G.C.B., Colonel of the 33rd in 1813.

On the 28th, Tippoo, beginning to smother his hate, or rather disdain, made a last attempt to negotiate, and offered to send envoys, but General Harris replied that he had already made his demands in conformity with the orders of his superiors, and could not receive them. As the offered terms had not been accepted, the allies would be justified in making them still more severe; but an acceptance might still be received, if it came properly signed before three o'clock next afternoon. Ere this attempt at negotiation had been renewed, Tippoo had recourse to every means that fear, religion, and superstition could suggest to avert his coming doom. In the mosque his presence was frequent, and to all his prayers he entreated the fervent "Amen" of his courtiers. He even—in his now abject spirit—bribed the priests of the Hindoos, whose faith he had persecuted and whose caste he had defiled, to pray for him before the very idols he had so often mocked and defaced. Nor was astrology forgotten; planetary influences were consulted and omens

accepted. But meanwhile the booming of the British artillery came nearer and more near.

A dogged despair now settled on the tyrant's heart; to him further resistance began to seem useless: thus, when the progress of our works showed clearly that the salient angle of the north-west corner of the fortress was the point where the breach for the grand assault would certainly be made, he declined to have an inner intrenchment cut, when urged to do so by the most eminent of his sirdirs; he became remiss in his inspections, and seemed to wish to close his eyes on the coming ruin. On the night of the 28th of April a breaching battery was thrown up, and on the morning of the 30th it poured its strength against the angle of the walls referred to; by the 1st of May the point was partly beaten down, and the whole rampart shaken; but concealing the true point of attack till the last possible moment, the besiegers on the 2nd began to effect a breach about sixty yards wide, immediately to the south of the bastion in the north-west angle. On that day Tippoo's garrison made some daring attempts to close the first breach, which in some degree they were enabled to do, because our working parties, who were preparing a way for the assault, were in such a position as to prevent our guns being turned upon the enemy. On the 3rd, the breach was reported practicable, and the subsequent day was decided for the attack, when the following troops composed the storming party:—

"Ten flank companies taken from those regiments necessarily left to guard our camp and outposts, followed by the 12th, 33rd, 73rd, and 74th Regiments, and three corps of grenadier sepoys taken from the troops of the three presidencies, with 200 of his Highness the Nizam's troops, formed the party for the assault, accompanied by 100 of the artillery and the corps of pioneers; supported in the trenches by the battalion companies of the Regiment de Meuron and four battalions of Madras sepoys. Colonel Coape Sherbrooke, and Lieutenant-Colonels Dunlop, Dalrymple, Gardiner and Mignan, commanded the several flank corps, and Major-General Baird was entrusted with the direction of this important service." *

Before daybreak all these men, 4,376 in number, were in the advanced trenches under Baird, who had volunteered for the honour of leading them; he had won a kind of prescriptive right to the post, as, for nearly four years after Baillie's detachment was destroyed at Perambaucam, he had been a fettered prisoner in Seringapatam, and there had often been compelled to turn the water-wheel of a

well, for the amusement of the sultan and his ladies; and had, even when in fetters, been compelled to cut out and sew his own shirts, one of which he kept as a memento, till it was lost, with his baggage, on the retreat to Corunna.*

Formed in two columns, one under Sherbrooke and the other under Dunlop, all waited in silence and darkness the word to advance. Their orders were, after issuing together from the trenches, on surmounting the breach, to wheel respectively to the right and left and scour the ramparts, and after carrying such works as might be expedient, to meet on their eastern face. To elude all suspicion and observation, the men were placed early in the trenches, as it was resolved not to make the assault till one o'clock, at which time the garrison usually took refreshment or repose, and would be less prepared for resistance. Under Colonel Wellesley—he who in future years was to capture Badajoz and Ciudad Rodrigo—a powerful reserve was at hand to support Baird.

We are told that before the hour came, General Harris sat in his tent alone, full of deep thought and anxious suspense, amid which he was found by Captain (afterwards Sir John) Malcolm, who came to him on duty. Seeing the mingled doubt and sternness in the face of the general, Malcolm rallied him playfully by asking, "Why, *my lord*, so thoughtful?" referring to his chief's chances of a peerage. "Malcolm," replied the latter, "this is no time for such compliments; we have serious work on hand. Don't you see that European sentry over my tent is so weak from want of food and from exhaustion, that a sepoy could push him down? We must take the fort, or perish in the attempt. I have ordered General Baird to persevere in his attack to the last extremity. If he is beaten off, Wellesley is to proceed with the troops from the trenches; and if he also should not succeed, I shall put myself at the head of the remainder of the army, for success is necessary to our existence."†

Precisely at one in the afternoon, the tall figure of David Baird was seen to issue from the trenches.

"Come, my brave fellows," he exclaimed, brandishing his sword, "follow me, and prove yourselves worthy the name of British soldiers!"

In an instant both columns rushed from the parallels with ringing cheers, and crossing the rocky bed of the Cauvery, rushed, under a fire of cannon, musketry, and wall-pieces, towards the breach, which at once became full of armed men. Many fell, but in six or seven minutes the stormers—like a scarlet cloud, half seen, half lost in smoke

* T. Hooke's "Life of Sir D. Baird."

† Lushington's "Life, &c., of Lord Harris."

* Despatch of General Harris.

and fire—were swarming on the summit of the breach. Half-way up the rough ascent of battered masonry, Colonel Dunlop engaged a Mysorean sirdir hand to hand, and mortally wounded him; but, with the last energies of life or instinct, the latter nearly hewed off the head of Dunlop, and falling back was instantly bayoneted. So many reliefs were shot under the colours in that brief time, that they were finally borne by a Scotch sergeant of the Bombay Europeans, named Graham, who planted them on the summit, and waved his hat, crying, "Success to Lieutenant Graham!" when at that moment a ball pierced his brain.

The stormers cleared the breach, wheeled off to the right and left, and the supports poured in. The garrison was taken by surprise. So little was Tippoo anticipating it, that he was quietly seated at his mid-day repast. After a feeble resistance, the Mysoreans abandoned their strongest posts, and thought only of safety and flight. Thus, in their mad terror, many flung themselves from the lofty ramparts, and were dashed to death in the rocky bed of the river below. The right column had anticipated a desperate struggle, as many formidable bastions were known to lie in its way; but in less than an hour the men of it had fought their way along the ramparts to the point of meeting on the eastern face. The north-west bastion was soon gained, but all along its northern face a great force of the enemy—led, it is averred, by the sultan in person—was posted behind the traverses, to which they retreated in succession, kept up a disastrous fire, and more than once compelled our troops to pause in their advance. Reinforcements came; on the traverses a flank fire was opened, and a rush made towards the north-east angle of the walls. Then the retiring enemy, on discovering the approach of the right column, fell into hopeless confusion, and perished in thousands under the bayonet in their frantic efforts to escape.

As soon as the ramparts were cleared of all but the dead and wounded, and the firing had ceased, the troops, on finding themselves before the palace, were keen to assault it, believing that Tippoo was there, and being eager to release some European prisoners who were alleged to be in it. Upon authority that seemed worthy of credence, a report had now been spread that Tippoo had murdered them; but before this could be verified, a dangerous thirst for vengeance filled the hearts of our soldiers. Within the beautiful palace—in the zenana of which alone were 650 women—the greatest confusion and consternation reigned; while its killedar was paralysed in his actions by a report that Tippoo, who had been shot, was lying dead under one of the

gateways. General Baird now desired Major (afterwards Sir Alexander) Allan to proceed with a flag of truce to the palace—before which Major Shee was posted, with the 33rd, panting for bloodshed and revenge—to offer protection to Tippoo and all its inmates, but only on condition of immediate surrender; at the same time threatening to put to death every man in the place if the least resistance was made. Major Allan, who spoke Hindustani fluently, having gained admission with some difficulty, bearing a white handkerchief on a sergeant's pike, and even taking off his sword in token of peace, was received by two of Tippoo's younger sons, who, amid a crowd of scowling armed men, informed him solemnly that their father was not within. This General Baird utterly discredited, and threatened to search the inmost recesses of the palace.

The princes were meanwhile brought away by the light company of the 33rd to the camp, under assurances of protection. Baird placed a guard on the zenana to prevent the escape of Tippoo if he was in it, and taking with him the light company of the 74th Highlanders, he proceeded to search other parts of the palace in person, threatening, it is said, if certain reports he heard were true, he would hand over Tippoo, if found alive, to the grenadiers of the 33rd, to be handled as they might think fit. The killedar, on being sternly menaced, informed Baird that Tippoo had been wounded during the assault, and was lying under a gateway in the northern face of the fort. As night had now closed in, torches were procured, and, accompanied by Colonel Wellesley, Major Allan, and the Highlanders, Baird went to the place, and the information of the killedar proved correct. There lay the terrible Tippoo, not merely wounded, but dead. As his horse was found shot near him, and also his palanquin, he had probably fallen in the act of escaping. The archway exhibited a dreadful spectacle. Suffocated, trod down, and trampled out of all shape, lay the dead in gory heaps; and amid these, the corpse of Tippoo was recognised by the killedar, put into the palanquin, and borne to the palace, after General Baird had taken off his right arm a magic amulet in Arabic and Persian characters.*

"The body was so warm," says Major Allan (as quoted in Muir's "Mohammed"), "that for some moments Colonel Wellesley and myself were doubtful whether he was not alive. On feeling his pulse and heart, that doubt was removed. He had four wounds—three in the body and one in the temple, the ball having entered a little above the right ear.

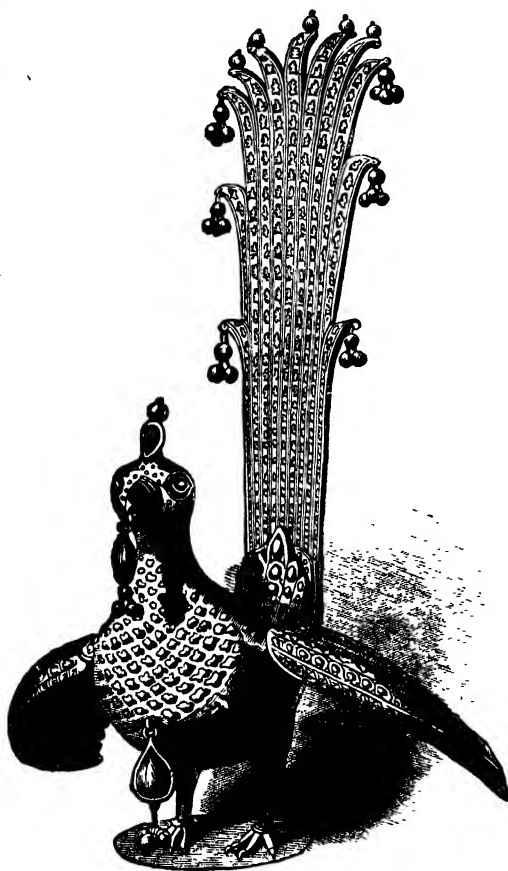
* *Asiatic Annual*, 1799.

and lodged in the cheek. His dress consisted of a jacket of fine linen, loose drawers of flowered chintz, with a crimson cloth of silk and cotton round his waist; a handsome pouch, with a red and green silk belt, hung across his shoulder; his head was uncovered, his turban having fallen off in the confusion of his fall; he had an amulet on his arm; but no ornament whatever."

The ball in the head was said to have been given him by a soldier, whom he had endeavoured to sabre while depriving him of his richly-ornamented sword-belt. His second son, who had commanded on the southern ramparts, escaped, but on surrendering next day, was sent to the palace with his two younger brothers. On beholding his father's remains, his bearing was very different from theirs: he looked on with brutal apathy, and with a smile heard their utterances of natural grief. Among those who fell into our hands was the sultana, who is thus described in the papers of Baron Grant, 1801:—

"This lady is delicately formed, and the lines of her face are so regular and placid, that a physiognomist would have little difficulty to pronounce her of a tranquil and amiable temper; her dress was generally a robe of white muslin, spotted with silver, and round her neck rows of beautiful pearls, from which hung a pastagon, consisting of an emerald and ruby of considerable size, surrounded with a profusion of brilliants. She is about twenty years of age, and for a complete form and captivating appearance, rivalled all Mysore. Among the poor prisoners who had suffered long confinement in a dark dungeon, was a descendant of the Hindoo King of Mysore, whom Hyder Ali had dethroned.

. . . . The standard of Mysore was sent by General Harris to Fort William. 'It is a light green silk, with a red hand in the middle, and was never hoisted but on the palace of Seringapatam.'"



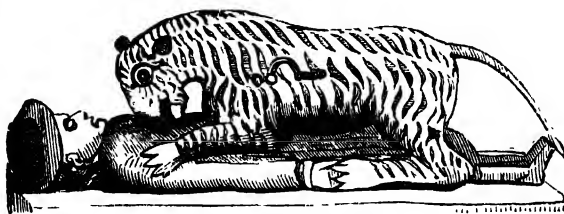
TIPPOO'S HUMMA, OR PEACOCK.

Between long lines of British troops, the remains of Tippoo, with all royal and military honours, were conveyed to Hyder's grave, in the magnificent Lal Bagh, where their superb mausoleum still stands. The funeral was as splendid as Mohammedan rites and European military parade could make it. On this occasion, in that district so notorious for its storms, there burst one so terrific that the peals of thunder drowned even the salvos of artillery, as if even the demons of air were rejoicing over the downfall of Tippoo, the Tiger of Mysore. By the lightning, on this occasion, many Europeans and natives were killed.

"Owing to the want of education," says Beveridge, "his faculties had never been improved nor his manners refined, and he remained to the end of

his life a clever but heartless barbarian. Tippoo, less talented than his father, surpassed him only in his vices, and was even notorious for some which

his father cannot be charged with. To a cruel and vindictive temper, he added a fierce and relentless bigotry, which was repeatedly displayed in the devastation of whole provinces, and the extermination of



TIPPOO'S TOY TIGER.

their inhabitants, merely because they resented his forcible conversions. In the eyes of Europeans, the deepest stain on his memory is the inhuman treatment of his prisoners, the horrid dungeons in which he confined them, the heavy chains with which he loaded them, and the lingering

* "History of the Mauritius."



LIEUTENANT GRAHAM PLANTING THE STANDARD.

or excruciating deaths by which he cut them off when he felt them grow cumbersome, or feared the revelations they might make after he had been compelled to set them free. In this horrid butchery he had been engaged only a short time before his capital was stormed; and the knowledge of the fact, when first made known to the British soldiers, had so exasperated them, that they were with difficulty restrained from taking a fearful vengeance on all the members of his family and the inmates of his palace."

It was found that M. Chapuy, and all other French officers taken, bore commissions under the Republic; but we are told nothing of Lally.

The conquest of Seringapatam was complete, and the glory of Mysore was gone for ever. The whole number of troops engaged in the defence was 21,839. Of these, more than 8,000 were intrenched on the island formed by the Cauvery, and this shows that 13,000 only were in the fortress, where fully two-thirds of them fell. In the assault, the European killed, wounded, and missing amounted to only 337 of all ranks, while the native casualties were merely forty-nine. There were eight officers killed and fifteen wounded; but the entire casualties from the 4th of April to the 4th of May amounted to 1,164. There were taken 929 pieces of cannon, including mortars and howitzers, 424,000 iron balls, 520,000 lbs. of powder, and 99,000 stand of arms; while in the magazines and foundries was found all manner of warlike munition in the same proportion.

About seven lacs of pagodas-worth of jewels were taken in the treasury (near the door of which was chained an enormous tiger), with muslin shawls and rich cloths enough to load 500 camels. The footstool of the throne of Tippoo is now preserved in Windsor Castle, and is the golden head of a tiger—the emblem of his empire. Though conventional in treatment, it is striking in detail; but the legs and paws are well modelled. The eyes and teeth are of crystal; the markings on the head are of burnished gold. A letter from Seringapatam* states that the throne itself, being too unwieldy, was broken up. It was a howdah upon a tiger, covered with cloth of gold: the ascent to it was by silver-gilt steps having silver nails, and all the other fastenings were of the same metal. The canopy was superb. Every inch of the howdah contained an Arabic sentence, chiefly from the Koran, and the pearl fringes alone of the canopy were valued at 10,000 pagodas. The apex of this canopy was a bird, said by some to represent a peacock; but Colonel Wilks says that it was

intended to represent the *humma*, a fabulous bird, whose shadow will bring a crown to the head on which it falls—a bird that flies always in the air, and never touches the earth. The neck of this singular relic is entirely composed of emeralds, and the body of diamonds, with three bands of rubies. The beak is a large emerald tipped with gold; an emerald and pearl are the crest to the head. The tail and wings are rows of rubies and diamonds, all so closely set, that the gold of which the bird is composed is scarcely visible. That the throne must have been of enormous value there can be little doubt, though it would be difficult, perhaps impossible, to exactly estimate its worth.

A number of tigers found in the palace yard were ordered to be shot, for fear of accidents. In one apartment was the large and singular toy, which was invented for the amusement of Tippoo, and is now in London. It is a rude automaton of a tiger, killing, and about to devour, a British soldier, who lies prostrate under its claws. In the interior is a kind of organ, turned by a handle, and producing notes which are intended to represent the growls of the tiger and the moans of the dying victim. There were found near the palace the recently buried bodies of his last European prisoners—one of whom was recognised as a grenadier of the 33rd Regiment. They had all been murdered at night, by twos and threes, and the mode of killing them was by twisting their heads round their shoulders, and thus breaking their necks; and when our soldiers looked on these remains, such a spirit was roused, that made it well for Tippoo that with him the game of life was over, and he was lying in his grave at the Lal Bagh.

There was found a book in M.S., entitled "The King of Histories," in which the Highland challenge of General Macleod, offering to fight Tippoo on the sea-shore, with 100 men a side, was alluded to; and the pretended answer of Tippoo was inserted. After calling Macleod a Nazarene, and adding that all Nazarenes were idolaters, and addicted to every vice, it continued thus:—"If thou hast any doubt of all this, descend, as thou hast written, from thy ships, with thy forces, and taste the flavour of the blows inflicted by the hands of holy warriors, and behold the terrors of the religion of Mohammed." And the story concludes with the immediate flight of Macleod and his men.*

On the morning after the capture, General Baird resigned the charge of Seringapatam to Colonel Wellesley. It has been said, "that no officer better qualified for the post could have been

* *Asiatic Ann. Reg.*, 1799.

* Wilks' "Southern India."

selected; but it may be suspected, without any great breach of charity, that when the appointment was made, his great merits did not weigh so much as his relationship to the Governor-General." Baird, who made no secret of his dissatisfaction, certainly had a prior claim, as the actual captor of the city, and the appointment gave rise to some discussion at the time; but when once installed in office, the good effects of his successor's management soon became visible. The disorders incident to a town taken by storm were vigorously suppressed; the fugitive inhabitants, who had sought refuge in adjacent fields, woods, and villages, returned on confidence being restored; business and life flowed into their usual channels; and in three days after Colonel Wellesley's appointment, the main street of Seringapatam had all the appearance of a vast fair, rather than that of a town that had undergone the horrors of an assault.*

Among those who had suffered most miserably in the dungeons of Tippoo was the famous native

cavalry officer, Seyd Ibrahim, whose memory was so revered, that the Governor-General in Council, in 1801, passed a resolution, of which the following is a portion:—

"In order to manifest his respect for the long services, the exemplary virtue, and impregnable valour of Seyd Ibrahim, the Governor-General in Council is pleased to order and direct that the amount of his pay, being fifty-two pagodas and twenty-one fanams per month, shall be conferred as a pension for life on his sister, who left her home in the Carnatic to share his misfortune in captivity, and who was subsequently wounded in the storm of Seringapatam.

"In order, also, to perpetuate his lordship's sense of the Seyd's truth and attachment to the Company's service, the Governor in Council has ordered a tomb to be erected to his memory at Cowley Droog, with an establishment of two lamps and a fakir for the service of the tomb, according to the rites of his religion."*

CHAPTER LXVII.

THE FIGHT IN BALASORE ROADS.—PARTITION OF MYSORE.—RESTORATION OF THE ANCIENT HINDOO DYNASTY.

To give coherency to the narrative of Tippoo's downfall, we have omitted to mention in its place, chronologically, a spirited sea-fight that took place in Indian waters early in the same year.

Captain Edward Cooke, of H.M.S. *La Sybille*, of forty guns and 280 men (including a company of the Scots Brigade, who served as marines), while at Madras, having received intelligence that *La Forte*, a French fifty-four gun ship, with 700 men, was cruising in the Bay of Bengal, notwithstanding the vast disparity of force, put to sea in quest of her, and on the 28th of February, 1799, at nightfall, discovered four sail to windward, and by midnight had got the weather-gauge of them all. It was then perceived that one was a very large ship, with two stern lights; and for this ship, which proved to be *La Forte*, Captain de Serce (a pupil of Suffren), *La Sybille* at once bore down, when she was in the roads of Balasore, a sea-port of Orissa, where the Calcutta pilots usually wait the arrival of vessels. At a quarter past twelve, when the ships were about three cables'

length (360 fathoms) apart, the enemy presented his broadside, fired, and bore up before the wind.

In ten minutes, *La Sybille*, having got within two cables' length, luffed to the wind on the star-board tack, raked her fore and aft, and after this discharge, edging down before the wind, came fairly alongside, and a furious contest, often within pistol-shot, went on in the dark. Captain Cooke soon discovered that, although *La Forte* seemed well disposed to the conflict, his own fire was so superior as to render it probable that the matter would soon be ended. By half-past one the enemy's fire was considerably diminished, while that of *La Sybille* had become more close and rapid. About twenty minutes to two, *La Forte* ceased firing; but upon being hailed to know whether she had struck, her guns opened again. About ten minutes to two her lights were put out, her men were seen swarming into the shrouds as if about to board, and again she ceased firing. *La Sybille* also ceased, and hailed, but received no answer. Puzzled by this conduct. Captain

* Col. Beatson's "View of the War with Tippoo," &c.

* *Madras Gazette*, June 28, 1800.

Cooke, who had been severely wounded, opened on her again, when her three masts and bowsprit went by the board. Three hearty cheers were given by the crew of *La Sybille*, and Captain Cooke, to prevent any separation, at once let go his anchor, and the moment day dawned, ordered out his boats and took possession of the prize. *La Sybille's* standing and running rigging were completely cut to pieces: not a rope was left standing on the mainmast, which, with the main and top-sail yards, was splintered and shot in various places. She had three men killed and nineteen wounded; and Captain Davis, a staff-officer who served as a volunteer, was among the first who fell.

But the scene exhibited by the decks of *La Forte* was shocking: she had 150 men killed, and about 80 wounded. Her captain, and most of the officers, fell early in the action. She had thirty 24-pounders on her main deck, fourteen 12, and eight 36-pound carronades upon her quarter-deck and fore-castle, besides brass swivels; while the metal of *La Sybille* was twenty-eight 18-pounders on the gun-deck, ten 12, and ten 32-pound carronades, fore and aft. Captain Cooke's wounds were severe: he was struck in the arm and ribs; but one, made by a swivel ball, was a dreadful one, and occasioned such symptoms that it was supposed to have penetrated the lungs. He expired on the 23rd of May. His body was preserved in spirits, and buried, with military honours, at Diamond Harbour, by H.M. 76th Regiment, and the Directors of the Company voted a monument to be erected to his memory at Calcutta.

The fall of Seringapatam was followed by the entire submission of all Mysore. On the 14th of May, Kummer-ud-Deen, Futtch Hyder, and Purneah, waited on General Harris, who received them with the honours due to their rank, and to whom they submitted, without any other condition than that they should be preserved in their lives, estates, and titles. The whole army under their command imitated their example, and peace and order were thus easily established everywhere throughout Mysore. The settlement of its future government on the principles of equity and good policy, became now the task of the Governor-General, who, with the concurrence of Nizam Ali, appointed General Harris, Colonel Arthur Wellesley, his brother, the Honourable Henry Wellesley, afterwards Lord Cowley, and Colonel Barry Close, "commissioners for the affairs of Mysore." Captains Malcolm and Monro were appointed their joint secretaries, and as such, had to take an oath binding them not to disclose the instructions they

might receive, and not to accept gifts or presents, directly or indirectly.

In his secret instructions to this commission, the Earl of Mornington announced his intention of restoring the representative of the ancient Rajahs of Mysore, accompanied with such a partition of territory between the allies as might also please the Mahrattas.

The empire which old Hyder had founded with his sword was now about to be finally rent asunder. Parliamentary restrictions, and orders from home, forbidding wars of conquest, so trammelled the earl, that he could not, as he might have done, have assumed immediate authority over the conquered kingdom; he therefore proposed to partition it; to retain those districts which lay along the coast, or interrupted communication between provinces already in our possession; to make over a certain district to the Nizam of the Deccan; to offer the Mahrattas another, on certain conditions; and to raise to the government of the fourth, or remaining portion, as stated, the heir of the ancient family which Hyder had dispossessed.

Thus the territory of Canara, with its fortresses and posts at the head of the different passes which lead into Mysore, together with the city of Seringapatam, were assigned to Britain, or the Company, "in full right and sovereignty for ever." The tract of country which bordered on the Deccan was given to the Nizam; and Harponelly (with its fortified town), a district bounded by the Toombudra river, was made over to the Peishwa; but as that leading chief failed to comply with certain stipulations, it was left to form the basis of a new treaty, and in the meantime was to remain in the hands of the Company.

Maharajah Krishna Oudraver, a child, the lineal heir of the old rajahs, was raised to the throne of the fragment that remained, but which was, in reality, neither less nor more than his forefathers reigned over before the days of Hyder; and the entire superintendence of his affairs was committed to the Brahmin Purneah, who had been Tippoo's chief minister of finance, and was known to be a man of ability. Beatson gives the age of the infant rajah at five years; Sir John Malcolm at three. Various members of his family were still surviving, including his maternal grandfather and his paternal grandmother, who was in her ninety-sixth year, and consequently must have lived in the days of Queen Anne.

Summoned suddenly from obscurity to a throne, they were filled with gratitude and joy; and the old ranee, second wife of the old rajah, who lived at the time of Hyder's usurnation. and another

lady, who was maternal aunt of the new one, wrote thus to General Harris and the commissioners :—

“Your having conferred on our child the government of Mysore, Nuggar, and Chittledroog, with their dependencies, and appointed Purneah to the dewan, has afforded us the greatest happiness. Forty years have elapsed since our government ceased. Now you have favoured our boy with the government of this country, and nominated Purneah to be his dewan, we shall, while the sun and moon continue, commit no offence against your government. We shall at all times consider ourselves as under your protection and orders. Your having established us, must for ever be fresh in the memory of our posterity from one generation to another.”

The yearly revenues from the territory assigned to the little rajah were equal to £412,222 sterling; and it was to be held by tenure. He was to abstain from interference in the affairs of all foreign states, and not to permit the residence of Europeans without the consent of the Company—in whom, in short, the real government of his territories was entirely vested. As they had appropriated Seringapatam, a new residence for the rajah was selected, and Mysore, the ancient capital, was fixed upon. In 1787, Tippoo, wishing to obliterate all trace and memorial of the ancient Hindoo dynasty, ordered this town and fort, which crowned a lofty hill, nine miles from Seringapatam, to be levelled to the ground, and the materials to be used for the construction of a castle called Nuzerhar, while the people were driven away. All the materials were now brought back to construct a palace for the young rajah, and on the 30th of June the ceremony of placing him on the musnud was performed by General Harris, in presence of the commissioners, a great concourse of Hindoos, who rent the air with yells of acclamation, while volleys of musketry were given by H.M. 12th Foot, and the batteries of Seringapatam gave a royal salute in the distance.* Colonel Barry Close obtained the post of resident at the new court, for which he was every way qualified.

Under a strong military escort, the sons of Tippoo were sent to Vellore, where, though kept under necessary surveillance, they lived in ease and splendour, and were treated with every courtesy. Their income was four lacs of pagodas, or £160,000 yearly. Policy forbade the re-elevation, in any way, of the race of old Hyder. Educated, as they had been, in rancorous hatred of the British, they could not be expected to think with calmness now of those

Colonel Beatson.

to whom they owed their downfall from mighty power and royal independence; and it was by no means unreasonable to suppose that, if an opportunity offered, the heir of Tippoo might, as the Earl of Mornington wrote, seek “the recovery of that vast and powerful empire which, for many years, had rendered his ancestors the scourge of the Carnatic, and the terror of this quarter of India.”*

The territory now annexed by the Company exceeded 20,000 square miles in dimensions. The revenue obtained, therefore, was great, and drawn chiefly from vast and fertile districts, that only required peace and leisure to be able to liquidate with ease the demands now made upon them.

Consistency, as the Earl of Mornington had foreseen, was now given to our acquisitions in Southern India, together with a degree of military strength and security we had never possessed before. Colonel Alexander Beatson tells us that there were no less than sixty great passes through the mountains, most of which were practicable for armies, and two-thirds of which were open to the descent of cavalry.† By the possession of these Ghauts now, we were secure from those desolating invasions which had occurred during the wars with Hyder and Tippoo, and all the level country was equally safe along the coast of Malabar. Under good and wise government, the people of the new territory, from being our bitter enemies, became our firmest friends, and many of the bravest men of Mysore were to be found in the ranks of the Company's army.

The Earl of Mornington's proposed cession of some territory to the Peishwa of the Mahrattas was an act of considerable generosity. In 1798, when the treaty was concluded with the Nizam, the Governor-General offered to conclude one of a similar nature with the Peishwa; but after some diplomacy on the subject had been wasted, the latter dropped it, and said he “would faithfully execute subsisting engagements.” One of these was to join us in arms against Tippoo, in the event of his making war on any of the parties to the triple alliance formed by Marquis Cornwallis; hence, when Tippoo's intrigues with the French Republic were naturally deemed by us equal to a declaration of hostilities, the Peishwa promised that he would send a contingent to the field under Purseram Bhow, and a body of our troops was held in readiness to join that leader. Nana Furnavese, who was again chief minister at Poonah, and favourable to our interests, urged Bajec Rao to fulfil his promise; but such was the influence of Dowlut Rao Scindia,

* Wellesley's “India Despatches.”

† “View of the War with Tippoo,” &c.

who was averse to the alliance, that no Mahratta contingent ever appeared against Tippoo. The rapidity, success, and triumphant end of the war rather disconcerted the Peishwa, who, to keep matters pleasant, affected the utmost satisfaction on hearing of the fall of Seringapatam; and this was the state of matters when a considerable tract of the conquered country, lying contiguous to that of the Mahrattas, was offered them, conditionally, for annexation. A protracted discussion ensued. The conditions were declined; so the reserved territory was divided equally between the Nizam and the Company.

In July, 1799, General Harris left Seringapatam for Pondicherry, and, in accordance with orders received from the Governor-General, he surrendered to Colonel Wellesley the civil and military government of Mysore; and there are few instances which discover a more conscientious and competent performance of duty than his rule in the conquered kingdom. "He displayed a capacity for detail, for intricate accounts, for laborious public business, for judging of men in civil and military situations, for discerning the native character, for penetrating and unravelling native intrigue, such as has seldom in the world's history been seen in so young a man. His laborious toil for the public good, while his health was really delicate, showed a devotion to duty which became characteristic of the man, and enabled him to set an example to the people of the British Isles which has not been lost."

A letter from General Harris to a friend, after leaving Mysore, contains the following passage:—

"In seven months' absence from Madras, we not only took the capital of the enemy—who, as you observe, should never have been left the power of being troublesome—but marched to the northern extremity of his empire, and left it in so settled a state, that I journeyed from the banks of the

Toombudra river, 300 miles across, in my palanquin, without a single soldier as escort—except, indeed, at many places, the polygars and peons, who insisted on being my guard through their respective districts. This was a kind of triumphal journey I did not dream of when setting off. A conquest so complete in all its effects has seldom been known." *

As a reward for his great services, the general, on the 11th of August, 1815, was raised to a British peerage, as Baron Harris, of Seringapatam and Mysore, and of Belmont, in the county of Kent.



COOLIE OF THE MATHERAN RANGE, WESTERN GHATS.

CHAPTER LXVIII.

"THE KING OF THE TWO WORLDS" DEFEATED AND SLAIN.

THE Earl of Mornington, having handed over the management of Mysore to his able brother, now turned his attention to the affairs of the Deccan,

the half imbecile ruler of which was, at any time, liable to become the dangerous instrument of the Peishwa, or any prince more subtle and ambitious than himself. Our forces within his territory had hitherto been paid by a monthly subsidy, the payments of which were extremely irregular, and always liable to stoppage by the treachery or waste of the Hyderabad court; and it now became the object

* "Life of General Lord Harris."

of the earl to have this subsidy commuted in the form of jaghires or districts—a mode which the Nizam had adopted with regard to those Frenchmen who had disciplined the troops of the Deccan; and without this system they never could have done so, as the payments otherwise would have been so unequal and irregular.

By a general revision of the terms of our alliance, the earl also wished to render the Nizam of the Deccan more dependent upon the Company, and to check that spirit of rapacity and misgovernment which kept the ryots and artisans poor, when he knew they might be opulent and prosperous; and by his decision and address Lord Mornington effected a satisfactory change. The Nizam of the Deccan, by a treaty dated the 12th of October, 1800, ceded to the British all the territory he had acquired by the Marquis Cornwallis' pacification in 1792, and by arrangements subsequent to the fall of Seringapatam. In exchange he received a discharge from the monthly payments, with an increase to the horse and foot previously lent him, and assurances of protection from all enemies whatever.

Soon after all was quiet at Seringapatam, the district of Bednore, in the north-western portion of Mysore, was disturbed by a desperate adventurer, named Dhoondia Waugh, who was in arms at the

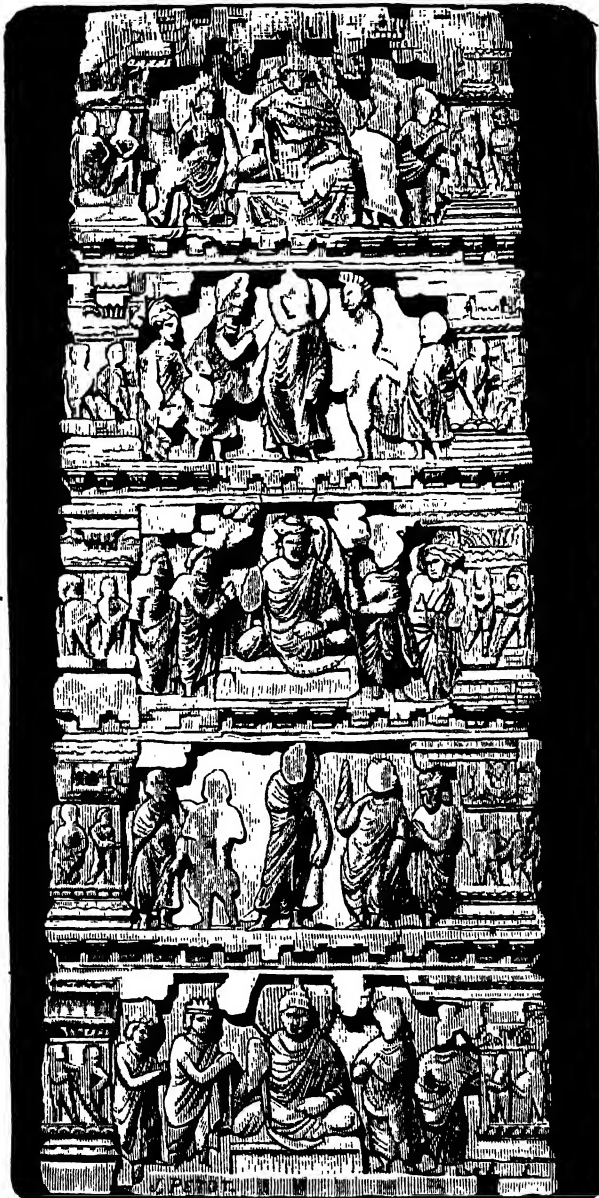
head of a great force. This man was a Patan or Mahratta by birth, who had deserted from the Mysore army during the war against Marquis Cornwallis, and placed himself at the head of a

ferocious and numerous body of freebooters, in the wild country near the river Toombudra. He had plundered Tippoo and the Mahrattas alike, with perfect impartiality; and when opposed by either, he retired into his woody fastnesses, where his cunning or judicious conduct kept him safe till he could issue forth to maraud again. At length Tippoo, weary of the perpetual trouble this man gave him, had recourse to stratagem, and wrote him, expressing admiration of his courage and daring, adding his regret to behold a man, who seemed born to command large armies, acting like a petty robber; that he perfectly forgave him all he had done, and would, if he entered his service again, give him a considerable military appointment, with the title of "General of the Ten Thousand Horse."

Thus cajoled, Dhoondia gave him-

self up; on which Tippoo, after having him, in his usual way, forcibly converted, immured him in one of the dungeons of Seringapatam, and chained him to the wall like a wild beast.

In this condition he was found, after the assault, by some of our Highlanders, who, in ignorance of his history, and pitying all the tyrant's prisoners,



BAS-RELIEF FROM AN INDIAN TEMPLE.

set him free; and returning to his old haunts and practices, he was soon again at the head of a great force, variously stated as ranging from 5,000 to more than 20,000 men. On being joined by some of Tippoo's disbanded cavalry, he set up his standard in the vicinity of Bednore, and gave himself the strange title of "King of the World, and of the Two Worlds." By the treachery of the killedars, many of the strong places of the district fell into his hands; and had he had a weak enemy to contend with, as was the case with Hyder, he might eventually have become the founder of a royal dynasty. But his destruction became absolutely necessary for the tranquillity of Mysore. In the July of the preceding year, Colonel Dalrymple had found no small trouble in driving him out of the country and among the Mahrattas, where he could always find a temporary asylum. On the 21st of July, with a light corps of cavalry and some native infantry, he marched against him from Chittledroog, and having overtaken a party of his handitti, nearly exterminated it, refusing quarter, for the purpose of making a strong example. Proceeding westward, Dhoondia crossed the Toombudra, and was followed by Colonel Dalrymple, who, on the 30th of July, took Hurryhur, on the eastern bank of that stream. Meanwhile Colonel Stevenson, with a light corps, advancing from another direction, took Simoya by storm on the 8th of August. Both corps having now effected a junction, Colonel Stevenson assumed the command, as senior officer. Dhoondia, who had encamped in a strong position near the fort of Thikarpur, was routed, and driven with loss across the river; and after the fort was taken by assault, he retreated beyond the Mahratta frontier. He might have been overtaken and destroyed; but Stevenson's instructions expressly prohibited him from affronting the Mahrattas by entering their territories.

Soon after this, Dhoondia was attacked by the Rajah of Gokla, a Mahratta chief, who deprived him of his elephants, camels, bullocks, and cannon; but he was destined yet to give further trouble. He entered the service of the Rajah of Kolapore, who was then at war with the Peishwa; but soon became his own master, and resumed his old depredations. As "King of the Two Worlds," he once more re-appeared on the frontiers of Mysore; and the Madras Government instructed Colonel Wellesley to follow him "wherever he could be found, and hang him on the first tree." Though the service was not one in which laurels were to be gathered, it was not without its perils.

His brother, the Governor-General, authorised him to enter the Mahratta territory, as it was evident

that the Peishwa was either unable or unwilling to put down this great freebooter, whose followers were now alleged to be 20,000 strong. Some of our troops in Mysore were already collected on the Toombudra, and towards the end of June, 1800, Colonel Wellesley joined them, and crossing the river, advanced against the great army of thieves, most of whom were well mounted. Certain Mahratta chiefs, instead of resenting our appearance beyond their frontier, took up arms to co-operate with Wellesley; and one, being too eager in his pursuit, was defeated and slain by Dhoondia.

On the 29th of June the latter engaged and completely routed a body of the Peishwa's troops, under Punt Gokla, who was slain. Dhoondia had vowed vengeance against him, swearing that he would dye his moustache in the heart's blood of Punt Gokla; and this ferocious vow he is said to have literally fulfilled, by lying in ambush in a wood, and watching his opportunity. The routed Mahrattas fled for refuge under the walls of our fort of Hullyhull; and "the King of the Two Worlds" came so near in pursuit, that it was necessary to open the guns upon him. So rambling were the operations against him, that the petty campaign was said to resemble a hunting match, though the London papers of the date give the strength of Dhoondia's force at 29,000 men—doubtless an exaggeration. Colonel Wellesley followed them across the river Werdah, and many other streams, through wild woods and over rocky mountains. He drove them round every point of the compass. He took by surprise some of their camps, and by storm some of the forts in which they had deposited their plunder and prisoners; but weeks, and even months, elapsed before he could come up with these fleet marauders.

On the 9th of September, Dhoondia Waugh found himself in an awkward position, by permitting Colonel Wellesley, who had left the infantry, and was pursuing with the cavalry alone, to come too near him. As the horses were exhausted, the attack was deferred till next day; and the event is thus recorded in the colonel's despatch, dated from his camp at Yepulpur, the 10th of September, 1800:—

"After a most anxious night, I marched in the morning, and met the 'King of the World,' with his army, about 5,000 horse, at a village called Conahgull, about six miles from hence. He had not known of my being so near him in the night, and had thought that I was at Chinoor. He was marching to the westward, with the intention of passing between the Mahratta and Mogul cavalry and me. He drew up, however, in a very strong

position, as soon as he perceived me; and the 'victorious army' stood for some time with apparent firmness. I charged them with the 19th and 25th Dragoons and the 1st and 2nd Regiments of (Native) Cavalry, and drove them before me, till they dispersed, and were scattered over the face of the country. I then returned and attacked the royal camp, and got possession of the elephants, camels, baggage, &c. &c., which were still upon the ground. The Mogul and Mahratta cavalry came up about eleven o'clock, and they have been employed ever since in the pursuit and destruction of the scattered fragments of the rebellious army. Thus has ended this warfare, and I shall commence my march in a day or two towards my own country. • An honest killedar of Chinoor had written to the 'King of the World,' by a regular tappal, established for the purpose of giving him intelligence, that I was to be at Nowly on the 8th, and at Chinoor on the 9th. His Majesty was misled by this information, and was nearer to me than he expected. The honest killedar did all he could to detain me at Chinoor, but I was not to be prevailed upon to stop; and even went so far as to threaten to hang a great man sent to show me the road, who manifested an inclination to show me a good road to a different place.* Dhoondia's body was brought into camp on one of the guns attached to the 19th Light Dragoons. Among the baggage was found Salabut Khan, the son of Dhoondia, an infant of about four years old. He was borne to Colonel Wellesley's tent, and was afterwards kindly and liberally taken care of by him. Sir Arthur, on his departure from India, left some hundred pounds, for the use of the orphan boy, in the hands of Colonel J. H. Symons, the collector at Seringapatam. When Symons retired from the service, the Hon. A. Cole, Resident at Mysore, placed him in the service of the rajah. He was a fine, handsome, and intelligent youth; but died of cholera in 1822.†

The remnants of Dhoondia's band were cut up and destroyed by Colonel Stevenson, and save an occasional murder and robbery by Thugs or Dacoits, tranquillity was restored to the whole Mysore and Malabar country; but there was, doubtless, truth in the jocular remark of Major (afterwards Sir Thomas) Monro to Wellesley, "Had you and your regicide army been out of the way, Dhoondia would undoubtedly have become an independent and powerful prince, and the founder of a new dynasty of cruel and treacherous sultans."

* "Wellington Despatches."

† Note to Gurwood's "Selections from the Wellington Despatches."

During the last year of the eighteenth century several treaties were effected with the Rajah of Tanjore, and various other Indian princes, all having for their main object the removal from place and political power of those officials who were unlikely to act wisely, or to act against the interests of Britain. In these states the whole administration of the revenue and government became vested in the Company, and without causing the least discontent among the natives, who were rather happy, from the rapacity of their own princes. In a letter to Major Monro, dated from his camp at Hoobly, 20th August, 1800, Colonel Wellesley has the following pithy sentences:—

"Upon all questions of increase of territory, those considerations have much weight with me, and I am in general inclined to think that we have enough; as much, at least, if not more, than we can defend.

"As for the wishes of the people particularly in this country, I put them out of the question. They are the only philosophers about their governors that ever I met with, if indifference constitutes that character."*

But the indifference referred to by the great captain, sprung from that total want of nationality which is a point of the Indian character.

"The great soldier and administrator might have added," says a writer, "that in every instance the people were great gainers by the change, being no longer oppressed by irregular taxation—the worst taxation of all—no longer harassed by internal feuds and civil wars, and being seldom exposed even to the chance of foreign invasion. In many of these districts a few English civilians, unsupported by any military force, and often at a great distance from any fort or garrison town, ruled the tranquil natives, and were held in reverence by them."

It was the flourishing state of Mysore, under our rule, and the facility with which its great resources were procured for the use of our armies, that soon after enabled Lake and Wellesley to act with such spirit and success in the great war against Scindia. The province of Bullam, near the Western Ghauts, would not have been conquered, perhaps, by Wellesley had Tippoo still reigned in Mysore, and the presence of an army there for the collection of the revenue would have prevented its services being useful in the field elsewhere.

When the college of Fort William was founded in 1800 by the Governor-General, John Borthwick Gilchrist, LL.D., a native of Edinburgh, a most

* "Wellington Despatches."

eminent orientalist, was by him appointed Professor of the Hindostanee and Persian languages—the first that had ever been in India. In the following year he published his “Theory, &c., of Persian Verbs,” which was succeeded by many other works on Eastern languages; and it was chiefly owing to his labours that such progress was afterwards made in the knowledge of the literary antiquities and philology of India, as his example and writings gave an impetus to the study of the Hindoo language and history that had not existed before.*

The following letter from the marquis to his predecessor in office, Lord Teignmouth, draws his attention to the institution of the college for the education of the civil servants of the East India Company:—

“Fort William, Aug. 18, 1800.

“MY LORD,—I have the honour to transmit to your lordship the copy of a regulation which I have lately passed in Council for the improvement of the Civil Service of the East India Company. The object of this law being of the utmost public importance, I feel a proportionate anxiety for the success of the Institution which I have deemed it to be my duty to found. I have requested the Chairman of the Court of Directors to communicate to your lordship my private notes, explanatory of the general plan of the Institution. If your lordship should concur with my opinion on this interesting subject, your support will be given to the Institution in England in the most effectual manner, by a public declaration of your sentiments, addressed to the Chairman or to the Court.

“No man can be better qualified to estimate the merits of an Institution calculated to remove the existing disadvantages and difficulties of the early stages of this service, than he who has surmounted them with eminent distinction and honour. Your lordship’s judgment on the law, which I have

taken the liberty to enclose, will therefore be most important in my consideration. I have the honour to be, &c.”*

The events of 1800 closed with two spirited sea-fights in Eastern waters.

On the 9th of October, the *Kent*, East India-man, being off the Sand Heads of the Hooghley, fell in with and was attacked by *Le Confiance*, a French privateer of 26 guns and 250 men, commanded by Captain Surcoff. By Captain Rivington, the battle was maintained with great bravery for an hour and forty minutes, during which time the ships were frequently alongside each other. At length, by the great superiority which the enemy possessed in men and musketry, the *Kent* was carried by boarding. Captain Rivington, with twelve of the crew, fell, and forty-two were wounded. “So dreadful a carnage was attributed to Captain Surcoff having made most of his crew drunk, and a promise of one hour’s plunder if they should succeed; the consequence was, that the savages gave no quarter, putting to death all who came in their way, with or without arms, and extended their brutal rage even to stab the sick in their beds.”† In consequence of this capture, the Company’s ships were, in the next year, ordered to be provided with boarding nettings, and it was also suggested that they should carry a few 42-pound carronades, to clear their decks with grape, if necessary.

The other affair was a spirited action, fought near Muscat, by the Company’s dhow, *Intrepid*, commanded by Captain Hall, and a French privateer ship of greatly superior force. After a severe and bloody conflict, the latter was compelled to sheer off, leaving the *Intrepid* too much crippled to follow, and the captain lying on her deck mortally wounded. The other casualties were twenty-five, including two lieutenants, Best and Smee, who were severely injured.

CHAPTER LXIX.

ACQUISITIONS IN THE CARNATIC, OUDE, AND FERRUCKABAD.—THE ARMY OF EGYPT.—
ANNEXATION OF SURAT.

ON the 1st of August, 1800, Lieutenant-General Gerard Lake was appointed Commander-in-chief by the Court of Directors, in succession to Sir

Alured Clarke, and Colonel Stevenson was appointed to command in Malabar and the Carnatic,

* “Scottish Biographical Dictionary,” 1842.

* “Life of Lord Teignmouth,” vol. ii.

† Captain Schomberg.

under Colonel Wellesley, soon after made Major-General.

In the early part of 1801, letters patent were issued by the Crown, appointing the Earl of Mornington (who, in December, 1799, had been elevated to the Irish Marquisate of Wellesley) Captain-General in India; the differences of opinion, in rank and so forth, between the Royal and Company's officers having rendered this step most necessary. It would seem that officers who were commissioned by George III. often resented being called upon to serve under those who held their rank from the Company, and occasions there were when they were unwise enough to refuse obedience. The letters patent thus vested the Marquis of Wellesley with full power over all military forces employed within the limits of the Company's exclusive trade. They also required his lordship's exclusive obedience to all orders, directions, and instructions from the First Commissioners for the affairs of India, or from any of the principal Secretaries of State.

The affairs of the Nabob of the Carnatic now occupied the attention of the Marquis of Wellesley. By the information contained in eighteen documents, which were laid before the House of Commons in September, 1802, it would appear that Omdut-ul-Omrah had been violating his alliance with the Company, and had maintained a secret intercourse with the late Tippoo Sultan, our determined enemy, founded on principles, and directed to objects, utterly subversive of the alliance between the nabob and the Company. The appendix to these documents contained copies of the correspondence with Tippoo, and the key to a cypher found among the records of Seringapatam. These papers were laid before the House in explanation, or defence of, certain measures which, in the year before, the earl had deemed it necessary to take in the Carnatic.

On the early discovery of the intrigue that had been on foot, the Governor-General, instead of summarily deposing the nabob, as he might have done, rather compounded the matter with him, by negotiating for the purpose of obtaining a complete resignation of the civil and military government of the Carnatic into the hands of the Company. If the consent of the nabob could be got, no mention was to be made of the papers discovered, and he was to be handsomely pensioned off, as an old and trusty friend. It was only in the event of his declining these unexpected negotiations and proposals that the guilty correspondence was to be turned to profitable account; and the ultimate end of the whole proceedings was to secure the wished-for objects by means that were not very worthy.

Ere the earl's final instructions on this matter reached Madras, Omdut-ul-Omrah was on his death bed, and past all worldly negotiation. On the 15th July, 1801, he died; but before that event came to pass, his last moments were disturbed by such intrigues for the throne among the different members of his family, that military possession of his palace was taken by the Governor of Madras, the son of the hero of Plassey, Edward, Lord Clive, afterwards Earl of Powis. This was to prevent the treasury being pillaged.

Among the claimants, the Governor-General selected two—one, Ali Hussein, reputed son of the nabob, and the other, Azeem-ud-Dowlah, his nephew. To the former, and in the event of refusal, to the latter, the throne was to be offered, on the condition of being pensioned, and holding only nominal royal rank. But the late nabob had, by will, declared that Ali Hussein, then in his eighteenth year, was to be his heir, with Mohammed Nijeeb Khan and Tookey Ali Khan as his guardians; and with these two, but a few hours after the death, Mr. Webbe and Colonel Barry Close, as commissioners, held a consultation, which was continued for days, and ended by the guardians indignantly declining the terms proposed. Messrs. Webbe and Close then referred to the heir himself; but he, in turn, referred them back to his guardians, saying that his counsels and theirs could never be separated.

As the matter could not end here, the commissioners stated that Lord Clive desired a personal interview with the guardians, in the tent of the officer commanding our troops which held possession of the palace. When they retired to get their equipages, Hussein Ali whispered to the commissioners that they had deceived him, and during an interview with Lord Clive, he made the same statement against the two khans, and declaring his wish to take the throne as offered by the Marquis of Wellesley. Lord Clive supposed the whole affair was now accomplished; but to his surprise, next day, Hussein retracted everything he had said, and eventually he asserted that he would brave every danger rather than subscribe to conditions so degrading.

Greatly irritated, Lord Clive withdrew, after informing the prince that he had forfeited all claim for consideration, and must await those measures which his conduct had rendered unavoidable. While sedulously secluding the other competitor, the guardians privately placed Ali Hussein on the throne, and prepared to do so publicly next day, when Lord Clive occupied the whole palace with British troops, turned out the

late nabob's guards, and released from prison Azeem-ud-Dowlah. The sudden change from enforced privacy to a throne proved too great a temptation to him; and, accepting all the terms, on the 25th July, 1801, he was proclaimed Nabob of the Carnatic, with a pension of one-fifth of the annual revenues, while the Company became vested with the whole civil and military government of his kingdom.

On the 10th of November, in the same year, by skilful diplomacy, a treaty was signed in Oude, in which, by a stroke of the pen, one-half of that great territory was handed over to the Company, and the other half so imperfectly guaranteed to the nabob, that the Company could never, at any time, be at a loss for a pretext to seize the whole. "It is not unworthy of notice," comments a writer on this, "that the cession made to the Company included nearly the whole of the territories which the Nabob's father, Sujah-ud-Dowlah, had acquired, partly from the Company, and partly by their aid, at the cost of about a million sterling.

By a singular reverse of circumstances, the Company are able, after having pocketed the price, to seize the territories, and thus obtain possession both of price and subject."

Immediately after the ratification of this treaty, the marquis provided for the settlement of the new acquisition, by establishing a board of commissioners, composed of three servants of the Company, presided over by his brother, Mr. Henry Wellesley, as Lieutenant-Governor.

When the treaty was sent to him for ratification, the marquis was at Benares, on a tour to the north. In an early part of his journey, he had received a letter from Mr. Wellesley, to the effect that the

nabob had expressed some thoughts of recruiting his exchequer by plundering the old begum, his grandmother. As Warren Hastings had countenanced a similar measure, and greatly enriched himself by it, the Nabob of Oude, who had not a vestige of scruple on the subject, never doubted obtaining the consent of the Governor-General. But the begum's suspicions of her grandson had

been, by some means, aroused, and she thought to avert his undutiful schemes by soliciting the protection of the British Government, and by constituting the Company her heir. While quite admitting the legacy might be accepted, the earl desired his secretary to write to the nabob an indignant letter, declining all sanction to the proposed disgraceful and unwarranted plunder of the begum.

The Nabob of Ferruckabad, who was a tributary of Oude, had now, by our territorial acquisitions, become a tributary of the Company. His nabobship was a fertile tract of the Doab, a Sanscrit word, signifying any land that lies between two waters, and it ex-



WINDOW OF THE MÂN MUNDER, BENARES.

tended for 150 miles along the right bank of the Ganges, yielding a revenue of £100,000 sterling. While under Oude, the nabob had enjoyed the protection of the Company, and now thought that under British rule his position would be improved and strengthened. He had succeeded in consequence of the murder of his father by his eldest son, and being too young to undertake the government, a regent had been appointed. Of this official the young nabob had an especial dislike, and hoped, as he was now approaching manhood, to have the administration in his own hands. With a view to have this brought about, he and the regent visited Mr. Henry Wellesley,



BOATS AND BOATMEN OF THE GANGES.

who had taken up his residence at Bareilly. As the regent arrived first, he made use of the opportunity to blacken the character of the young nabob, and in this villainy he was unfortunately aided, unconsciously, by the Governor-General, who had adopted a policy which he had resolved to follow whenever it was found practicable. This was to pension off the native ruler, and place his whole government, civil and military, in the hands of the Company.

This proposition was put in writing, and laid before the young nabob, who, not unnaturally, remonstrated in these terms:—"I am totally at a loss what to do. If I deliver over the country to the British government, all my relations, my neighbours, and all the nobility of Hindostan, will say that I have been found so unfit by the British government, that they did not think it proper to entrust me with the management of such a country, and I shall never escape for many generations from the sneers of the people. If, on the contrary, I say anything in disobedience to your orders, it will be against all the rules of submission and propriety."

In his helplessness, he suggested that the Company should make one of its servants superintend his revenue; but, acting under orders from Calcutta, Mr. Wellesley declined all half-measures, and compelled the poor young nabob to submit to the disgrace he deplored, by ceding all his territory in perpetuity to the Company, receiving no return. But before the settlement of all the territorial acquisitions in Oude was complete, it was found necessary to have recourse to arms for the reduction of a refractory and warlike zemindar, Bagwunt Sing, who had an army of 20,000 horse and foot, and held two strongholds round Bijighur and Sasni, the former a fort on a very lofty mountain, the first approach to which was by a lofty arched gate between two massive round towers. Both places are in the province of Agra. A premature assault upon Sasni was repulsed; but both were captured when the campaign against Bagwunt was opened by the Commander-in-chief in person; and in March, 1802, the whole settlement being complete, the board of commissioners was dissolved, and Mr. Henry Wellesley returned to England, and in 1828 was created Lord Cowley.

One of the new measures taken by the Marquis of Wellesley to give additional strength to the government of India, was the diplomatic mission undertaken by Captain John Malcolm to Persia, whither no such official, as an ambassador, had been since the reign of Queen Elizabeth. The

object was to enter into political and commercial treaties with the Shah, by which the general interests of Britain might be promoted, and at the same time lure him to make such a diversion in Cabul as would give Zemaun Shah sufficient occupation to relinquish his plans for conquest in India. This mission the distinguished soldier and diplomat conducted with his usual ability; and Malcolm has left to the literary world an account of his mission, which has acquired considerable celebrity. He returned to Bombay in 1801, and was appointed private secretary to the Governor-General, who stated to the Secret Committee that "he had succeeded in establishing a connection with the actual government of the Persian empire, which promised to British natives in India political advantages of the most important description." In January, 1802, Sir John Malcolm was promoted to the rank of major, and on the death of the Persian ambassador, who was accidentally shot at Bombay, he was again sent to Persia, to make the necessary arrangements for the removal of the embassy.*

The operations of the French in Egypt induced the Governor-General to form a treaty with the Portuguese Viceroy of Goa, and as a result of which 1,100 British infantry were added to the garrison of that place, under Major-General Sir William Clarke, Bart., a distinguished Indian officer, who died at Seringapatam in 1808.

One of the foreign measures projected by the Marquis of Wellesley, was an expedition against the Mauritius, where the French privateers had always found a safe asylum since the commencement of the war. With this view an armament was fitted out in 1800, and reached the harbour of Trincomalee, in Ceylon, where the British troops were then under the command of General Macdowall, who was drowned at sea eight years afterwards when on his way home. There Wellesley had orders to await the coming of Admiral Rainier, commanding our squadron, twenty sail, in the Indian Seas; but a strange crotchet on the part of that officer frustrated the expedition. He conceived that without the express orders of the king, the Marquis of Wellesley had no right to engage in it. He refused all co-operation, and ere his scruples could be overcome, the troops designed for the Mauritius were required elsewhere. This was the famous expedition from Bombay to Egypt, to co-operate with the British army, then warring victoriously with the French in that country.

On reading the despatch which contained the orders for this movement, Arthur Wellesley, aware

* "Scottish Biographical Dictionary."

that his was the only disposable force in India, without orders or instructions, proceeded with his usual promptitude, to remove the troops under his command from Ceylon to Bombay, where they would be some thousand miles nearer Egypt and the Red Sea; but on arriving at Bombay he found that the expedition was to be entrusted to a senior officer, Major-General Sir David Baird, to whom he frankly gave a copy of certain suggestive memoranda on the operations to be pursued for the purpose of getting possession of the forts and ports possessed by the French on the shores of the Red Sea, and for the encouragement of the Arabs and Mamelukes, &c.*

The troops embarked were in a high state of discipline, and consisted of H.M. 10th and 61st Regiments, with strong detachments from the 80th, 86th, and 88th Regiments; the 1st Battalion of the 1st Bombay Europeans; and the 2nd Battalion of the 7th Native Infantry, with a portion of the Bengal Volunteers; in all, only 5,227 rank and file, exclusive of Lascars and camp-followers. The French were still at Cairo, and held Gaza, with other strong places. They had landed in Egypt, full of hope to push on and expel us from India, and thus little expected that British troops would come from that quarter of the world to aid in driving them back to Europe.

Some time prior to this event, an overland despatch had reached Admiral Rainier, informing him that the French, for the invasion of India, intended setting up the frames of ships of war at Suez, previously prepared in France; to investigate the truth of this, the *Centurion*, 50 guns, Captain J. S. Rainier, was sent to that point with the brig *Albatross*. These were the first British vessels of war that had ever visited the head of the Red Sea. On returning, Captain Rainier found Admiral Blanket at Mocha with the *Leopard* of 50 guns, the *Dædalus*, 32, and the *Orestes* of 18; and much local knowledge having been gained by this voyage, the admiral was sent to convey the Indian army under Sir David Baird, who arrived with it at Jedda, on the east coast of the Red Sea, on the 18th of May, 1801. The death of Admiral Blanket left the direction of the naval forces to the able management of Sir Home Popham, but the squadron was no less than three months in working up to Suez.† At Jedda, Sir David was joined by about 2,000 men from the Cape, and the united force proceeded northwards to Cosseir, in Upper Egypt, a town almost destitute of water. Intelligence had been received that hostilities were still

raging, and that Sir Ralph Abercromby had been victorious, but at the loss of his own life. Baird now commenced his march across the desert (that lies between the Red Sea and the Nile), the surface of which is covered with fine sand, composed of quartz and limestone, agate and flint. The Connaught Rangers "formed the van of Sir David Baird's army, preceding the rest of the troops a day's march, and were thus the first British regiment to tread this dangerous route." * Captain Brenton says that many soldiers perished of thirst in the desert; but without serious loss the march was accomplished to Kenna, where the whole force, after being taken down the Nile in boats, assembled, on the 27th of August, at the Isle of Rhonda, in full expectation to participate in the capture of Alexandria.

We are told that our Hindoo sepoys, on beholding the ancient temples and sculptures of Egypt, were forcibly struck by the many traits of resemblance the effigies thereon bore to themselves; for, after an interval of 3,000 years, they fancied that they were in some respects like the Egyptians had been.

On reaching Rosetta, intelligence came that General Menou, who, on Bonaparte's departure assumed the chief command of the French army, had capitulated to Lord Hutchinson. Hostilities consequently ceased in Egypt, and shortly afterwards the brief Peace of Amiens was proclaimed. The Indian army had thus no opportunity of gaining any laurels in the field; but the expedition itself, and the march across the desert, are well entitled to commemoration in Indian history. The troops returned under the command of Sir David Baird, all save the 88th Regiment, which was sent, with a view to its reduction, to Portsmouth.†

In 1801, the Body Guard of the Governor of Madras, a very select corps of men, led by Captain James Grant, was actively employed against the Polygars, a warlike race, who inhabit the southern part of the Madras territory. "There are, indeed," says Sir John Malcolm, "few examples of a more desperate and successful charge than was made during that service by this small corps, upon a phalanx of resolute pikemen more than double its own numbers." Captain Grant, when the service was over, erected tombs over some of his bravest men who had fallen. "A constant lamp is kept in them, which is supported by a trifling monthly donation from every man in the Body Guard, and

* "Rec. 88th Regiment."

† Wilson and Walsh: "Histories of the Expedition to Egypt;" "Memoires," &c., of L. A. Comte de Noe, then a Lieutenant in H.M. 10th Foot.

* "Wellington Despatches," 9th April, 1801.

† Brenton's "Naval History."

the noble spirit of the corps is perpetuated by the contemplation of these regimental shrines—for such they may be termed—of heroic valour.”*

Though the Red Sea expedition had cost considerable exertion and expense, the Marquis of Wellesley found means for sending other troops to Ceylon, where their presence was very much wanted, as the Cingalese, in the heart of the island, the Kandyans, and a race among them called the Vedahs, who live in the inaccessible forests of Bintan, behind Baticolo, were in fact, masters of the country, save some strips along the sea-coast, and frequently proved desperate and dangerous enemies to all British settlers. For a time those settlements which the Dutch had taken from the Portuguese, and we, in turn, from the Dutch, were allowed to form an appendage of the Madras Presidency, and the Company had resolved that they were to exert the same right of sovereignty over Ceylon as they did in India; but the government of Mr. Pitt placed the island under the direct administration of the Crown. Great discontent was felt at this by the Anglo-Indians, as Ceylon is only separated from the Coromandel coast by a narrow strip of sea, as a close intercourse, of necessity, existed between the island and Madras, and as the troops of the Company had been chiefly occupied in the reduction of it. While the government of the peninsula of Hindostan was left to the Company, the annexation of Ceylon to the Crown seemed to the Marquis of Wellesley to be dividing and confusing powers that were already confused and divided enough; and on this subject he wrote thus to Henry Dundas, on the 10th of May, 1801:—

“Whatever may be the nature of the government which the wisdom of Parliament may permanently establish for India, I hold two principles to be indispensable for its permanent efficiency and vigour: First, that every part of the empire in India, insular as well as continental, shall be subject to the general control of our undivided authority, which shall possess energy in peace to maintain order, connection, and harmony between all the dispersed branches of our numerous and various subjects; and in war to direct every spring of action to similar and corresponding movements, to concentrate every resource in an united effort, and, by systematic subordination, to diffuse such a spirit of alacrity and promptitude to the remotest extremities of the empire, as shall secure the co-operation of every part in any exigency, which may demand the collective strength of the whole. Secondly, the constitution

of every branch of the empire should be similar and uniform, and, above all, that no subordinate part be so constituted as in any respect to hold a rivalry of dignity, even in form, with the supreme power.”*

Maintaining that Ceylon—the ancient name of which means the “Country of Lions,” though none have ever been seen there in modern times—was manifestly a dependency on our Indian empire, the marquis vehemently urged, that as Parliament had vested in him and the Council, subject to the Board of Control, the sole power of making war against any of the native powers, he should possess the same privilege with regard to Ceylon; that Parliament had undoubtedly contemplated a unity of government in India for the purposes of peace or war; and that under this new constitution for that island, the system established for the general government of India had been interfered with, as the Royal governor of Ceylon had the power of signing treaties and conducting all the military organisation of Ceylon, without having that requisite for furnishing either men or money, beyond the fixed establishment of the island.

But all the representations of the marquis to the home government were made in vain, and that island, one of the most beautiful in the Indian seas, famed alike for its pearl fishery and its wonderful fertility, continued to be separated, and to be often very indifferently governed. The wars against the Cingalese were ill-conducted; and more than once severe reverses were sustained by our troops, on occasions to be related in their place.

The Nabob of Surat—that large and populous city in Goojerat, from whence the Mohammedan pilgrims were often conveyed to Mecca at the expense of our government—had long owed his political existence to the presidency of Bombay, which had garrisoned his castle of Surat, and had, by men and money, sustained and defended him. Even before Wellesley assumed the government of India, the arrears of the debt of this personage, Nazim-ud-Deen, had assumed such a magnitude that the Court of Directors angrily demanded that he should disband his mutinous and undisciplined troops, and assign to the Company a subsidy to maintain their battalions of regular sepoys. Before any settlement was made, Nazim died, leaving an infant son, Nazir-ud-Deen, who died a few weeks after. On this, there arose a fierce dispute among many claimants for the succession, and, but for our troops in the castle, a civil war would have ensued. Under the mixed rule of the nabob and the

* “Narrative of the Native Army.”

* “Wellesley’s Indian Despatches.”

Company, the country had been kept in a poor and helpless condition, and the people had often called loudly for the protection of the latter against their native rulers, for the security of trade and property. Though sunk from its ancient magnificence, and the strength it possessed in the days of the Mogul Emperor Ackbar, Surat was still one of the most populous of Indian cities. It was inhabited by Mussulmans, Hindoos, Jews, Armenians, and Parsees, who had settled there in great numbers when driven from Persia in the seventh century. There they intermarry only with each other, and retain all their ancient customs and prejudices—the repugnance to extinguish fire, and the exposure of their dead in the Towers of Silence, to be eaten by the birds.

To check the fanatical ebullitions of creeds and castes so varied, had far exceeded the power of the nabob, and for years Surat had been the centre of religious hates, anarchy, and assassination. In 1795, the Mohammedans and Hindoos waged a bloody strife with each other in the streets, committing the while every possible atrocity upon their more peaceful fellow-citizens, on whose trade the prosperity of Surat mainly depended. There were neither taxes levied nor port duties collected; there were neither police nor law; so, to finally end this state of matters, on the 10th of March, 1800, the best of the claimants was set aside, with an annual pension of £12,500, the revenues of Surat were assumed by the Company, and the change was felt to be universally a blessing to the people. Under judicious management the adjacent country, which had been overrun by a ferocious banditti, was cleared and quieted; and although the city, owing to the rivalry of Bombay, can never attain its former splendour, still it is a rich place, and of great political consequence. Law and police were fully established, “and now the Hindoo performs his religious rites, and kneels in his pagoda; the Mussulman calls to prayers from

the minaret, and prays in his mosque; the Parsee—the disciple of Zoroaster—worships the Almighty power in the rising and the setting sun, without shedding each other's blood. The Borus—a mysterious sect, supposed by some to be a remnant of the old tribe of Assassins, of whom, and its chief, the Old Man of the Mountain, so much was heard in Europe during the Crusades—and the Parsees, who had been the most obnoxious of all other sects, and most frequently persecuted, are now the most thriving people in the country, and possess between them the proprietorship of most of the houses in Surat.”

The last shots in the war that was ended by the Treaty of Amiens, were fired in the Indian Archipelago.

Ignorant of that event, Captain (afterwards Sir G. R.) Collier, in the *Victor* sloop of war, when cruising off the Isle of Diego Garcia, in September, 1801, fell in with the French corvette, *La Flèche*, and, like a true British sailor, brought her at once to close action. The enemy sailed better than the *Victor* on a wind, but not so well when going large, and having disabled the rigging of the latter, obtained a favourable position and escaped. Captain Collier determined not to quit his foe; judging that she must be bound for the Mahé Islands, he steered for them, and there came in sight of her, as she lay in a secure and intricate anchorage. The officers of the *Victor* sounded the channel, even under the fire of the French corvette, and Captain Collier, having ascertained the true depth of water, worked his ship in under a raking fire, until he came near enough to anchor with springs upon his cable, by which he brought his whole broadside to bear; and in two hours and a half he sunk *La Flèche* at her anchors, without having a single man killed or wounded, a result which could hardly have been anticipated. The corvette carried 20 guns, with 172 men; but the *Victor* was a vessel of very inferior form.*

CHAPTER LXX.

A NEW MAHRATTA WAR.—THE BATTLE OF ASSAYE.—TRUCE WITH SCINDIA.

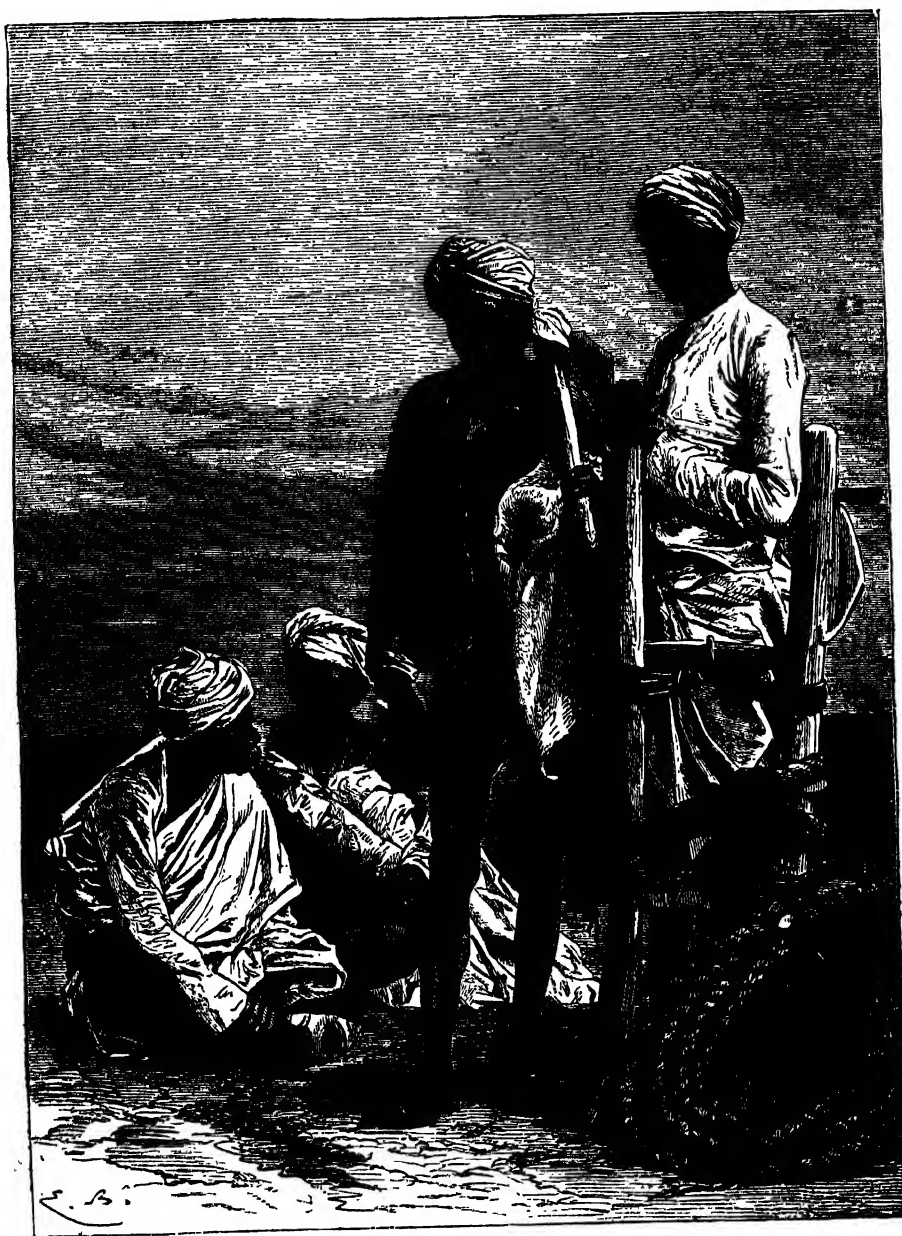
THE troubles with the Polygars, in the districts ceded to us by the Nizam, extended into 1802. They were serious in Adoni, in that portion of the Balaghaut territories on the southern side of the Toombudra river.

A strong garrison of these occupied the fort of Kurnal, capital of a district of the same name southward of the river. In December, 1801, it was attacked by our troops, under Major-General Dugald

* Brenton.

Campbell, who brought from Gutti, in addition to his light field-guns, only three pieces of cannon, 12 and 9-pounders, which the garrison of that place brought down for him, with incredible exertion,

place on the last day of December, and a practicable breach was effected in the lower wall by those with the 73rd Highlanders, worked under a Lieutenant Fitcher. Another was effected by Captain Crosdill



PEASANTS OF THE DOAB.

from the summit of the steep rock which it crowns—a rock encircled by fourteen gradations of walls, and reducible only by force or treachery. The Polygars in Kurnal had murdered some Brahmin collectors—a crime of additional magnitude, from the circumstance that the latter were sacred characters. The guns were all in battery, and opened against the

of the Artillery, wide enough for the admission of a whole company, so, about three in the afternoon, the stormers were ordered out. Those for the north-west breach, under Lieutenant-Colonel Davis, seconded by Major Strachan, consisted of four companies of the 73rd Highlanders, a company of the 4th Regiment, and four of the 12th Native

Infantry, supported by forty dismounted Volunteers of H.M. 25th Dragoons, under Lieutenant Maclean. Those for the eastern breach were under Captain Robert Munro, and consisted of three companies of the 73rd Highlanders, the flank companies of the 4th, and two of the 15th Native Infantry.

At a quarter before four o'clock the troops were ordered to advance, and did so with such rapidity, that in thirty minutes they were masters of the place.

wounded. There were sixty-five casualties in the 73rd Highlanders, exclusive of Major Macdonald and Lieutenant Thomson, wounded.*

On January 1, 1802, the Governor-General addressed a letter to the Court of Directors, intimating an intention of resigning at the close of the year. He gave no reasons; but it has been supposed that he was chiefly influenced by some secret misunderstanding between the Directors and



HINDOO TEMPLES IN POONAH.

"The rebels," reported General Campbell, "have quitted the works and retreated to their well-built houses, where they for some time individually defended themselves; most of them, however, were killed, and of those who fled, but very few, if any, escaped the cavalry who surrounded the fort. To the honour of the troops, I must beg leave to add that every woman and child was spared; only two of the former, and none of the latter, having fallen, even from accidental shot."

The killedar of the fort was hanged, and Adoni rendered tranquil; but in the attack on this place, and on Billory, many were killed and

himself, though all the earlier acts of his administration, especially the conquest of Mysore, had met with their utmost applause. The marquis did not state openly his reasons for wishing to resign; but in a letter to Mr. Henry Addington (afterwards Viscount Sidmouth), then Secretary of State, he privately gave a list of some of his grievances. It would seem that some of his appointments to office had been commented on and even rescinded; that of his brother Henry to be commissioner at Mysore, had been considered inconsistent with the parliamentary Act, which reserved all such offices to the

* *London Gazette*, 1802.

covenanted servants of the Company; while the emoluments allowed to his other brother, Colonel Wellesley, as governor of the conquered province, were cut down as extravagant; and even his erection of the college at Fort William—a project on which he had long set his heart—failed to meet with perfect approval. Though differing from him on some material points, the Court of Directors were well aware how difficult it might be to supply his place. They eventually expressed their high sense of all he had done for their interests, of the talents which he had displayed, and concluded by begging him to remain in office for at least another year; and with this request he complied, influenced, not so much by the flattering nature of it, as by the menacing aspect our affairs were fast assuming in India.

By their spies and agents, the French ministry were well aware of all the Governor-General did in India, and with what suspicions he viewed them. They knew of the Persian embassy, the treaty with the Viceroy of Goa, of the good understanding with the Pasha of Bagdad; and the great delay manifested by the French in signing the definitive treaty of peace (which was not done until the 27th of March, 1802), confirmed the British in India, as well as at home, in the conviction, that the terms of that famous document of Amiens would come to nothing ere long; and their suspicions were but too well grounded. In October, Bonaparte, then elected First Consul for life, addressed the Helvetic Republic in terms there could be no mistaking, and which were sufficiently alarming to us. "The First Consul plainly desired to control the Swiss nation in the exercise of its independent rights, and indicated that the system of propagandism and aggression, which the French had professed to give up, was still their policy." Lord Hawkesbury wrote to the French ambassador, M. Otto, that the British Government would not surrender such conquests as might have passed to France and Holland under the articles of the late treaty of peace, of which the conduct of the First Consul to the Helvetic Republic was considered a violation. Lord Hawkesbury also sent instructions to the Marquis of Wellesley, in accordance with his communication to M. Otto; and on receipt of this intelligence, the Governor-General regulated all his proceedings upon the assumed certainty of a war with France and Holland."

Moreover, ever since his arrival in India, the imminence of a Mahratta war had been but too apparent to him. By the aid of France they had attained a degree of efficiency in arms, and a height of military power, incompatible with the

tranquil existence of other states, and which we would soon have found fraught with peril to ourselves, could Bonaparte, by any means, have sent an armament to India; and that did not seem an impossible event, until the memorable day when Nelson destroyed the fleets of France and Spain off Trafalgar.

Having marked the Nizam for their prey, the Mahratta chiefs were alike disappointed and offended by the treaty, which dissolved all his relations with their French friends, and placed him entirely under the protection of the Company; and still more were they offended, when they found that treaty followed by another, in October, 1800, which established an absolute identity of interest between the contracting parties, and made the Nizam less the ally, than the positive vassal of the Company.

Scindia, the great Mahratta chief, rejecting all our offers of friendship, kept his sovereign, the Peishwa, in a state of almost bondage, through the power he possessed in the military force disciplined by General Perron. Not satisfied with the vast local power he had attained, Scindia made war upon the Peishwa, and aided by Perron's battalions and a great park of artillery, drove him out of Poonah. Escaping to the coast, the dethroned sovereign applied to the British for assistance, and placed himself under their protection; and the Governor-General found that now the time had come for breaking the great military confederation of the Mahratta chiefs.

In view he had three chief objects: to restore to his throne the peacefully-disposed and somewhat friendly Peishwa; to disperse or drive out of India Perron's battalions, with all their French officers; and to dissipate Scindia's high hopes and great plans of future power and aggrandisement, which bade fair to disturb all Hindostan. From Malwa and elsewhere great bodies of robbers, and all kinds of broken and lawless men, had been pouring into Poonah, for enrolment under Scindia's banners, and to them he was liberal in his promises of pay and plunder. As it was certain that these mustering hordes would not limit their operations to the circuit of the Mahratta States, but would soon, by want on the one hand and ambition on the other, be lured or impelled to invade British territories, or those of our allies, policy required a perfect readiness for the coming war. The Rajah of Berar, to add to the future peril, united his numerous forces to those of Scindia, with whom the other Hindoo chiefs prepared to make common cause, and all this conduced to bring French intrigue upon the scene, and invite the hostile

influence of Bonaparte, as the Peace of Amiens permitted the French to visit India, and renew their old connections with our enemies.

Aware that the hollow peace would be of brief duration, and would but serve to mature French plans for giving trouble in India, the Marquis of Wellesley resolved to be ready for the worst. "If Scindia were allowed to establish a complete ascendancy over the Mahratta empire, from the banks of the Ganges to the Sea of Malabar—and this he would have done, had he been left unmolested—there could be little doubt in the mind of any man acquainted with the constitution of the army of that chief, and the influence and authority of the French officers by whom it was commanded, that the French nation might in a very few years aid him in the consolidation of a military power which would have struck at the very existence of the British government in India. Scindia, and his father before him, had owed their power to French officers, to French arms, and to French counsels. The present ruler was so familiarised to their systems, manners, and feelings, as to be almost half a Frenchman himself."

The Marquis of Wellesley lost no time in making the preparations necessary to re-establish the Peishwa at Poonah. When entreating our assistance, the latter had engaged to receive a subsidiary British force, and to assign for its subsistence, territories that yielded an annual value of twenty-six lacs of rupees. At the same time, he engaged to identify all his interests with ours, and to conclude an alliance, offensive and defensive, on the basis of the Treaty of Hyderabad, concluded between the Governor-General and the Nizam of the Deccan.

On the 31st of December, 1802, the Treaty of Bassein was finally concluded with the Peishwa, who, after his flight from Poonah to Rewadunda, had been landed there by a British ship. By that document, he renounced all claims to Surat and to other districts in Goojerat, which had been annexed by the Company; he agreed to abide by the arbitration of the latter, in all its, as yet, unsettled disputes with the Nizam; he agreed to dismiss from his service all Europeans who were hostile to British interests, or who were discovered carrying on political intrigues. In return for all this, he was to be furnished, as stipulated with Colonel Barry Close, with six battalions of native infantry, and the necessary complement of field-pieces, to be served by European gunners. These troops were "to be at all times ready for such services as the due correction of his Highness's subjects and dependants, and the overawing and chastising of

rebels, or excitors of disturbance;" but the Company were "to have no concern with any of his Highness's children, relatives, subjects, or servants; with respect to whom his Highness is absolute." This treaty was confirmed by the marquis on the 11th February, 1803.

As, by the Treaty of Amiens, Pondicherry had been again most unwisely restored to the French, the officers of that nation soon made it the centre and hot-bed of political intrigue, and in their vanity they betrayed alike their own wishes and the intentions of the ruler. These were fully developed in a work published by M. Lefebvre, an officer on the staff at Pondicherry, who indicated the possibility of a French army reaching India by the way of Egypt and the Red Sea; and his scheme is not without interest, even at the present day. "While the British would be directing all their attention to defeat the advance of this armament from the west, one secret expedition could be prepared to proceed from Spain, by the way of Mexico, to Manilla; and another secret expedition, to be provided by the Dutch, could proceed, by the Cape of Good Hope, to the Spanish islands in the Indian Ocean, and from thence to Trincomalee in Ceylon, a port of the greatest importance to the British navy. It was calculated that these three joint expeditions, aided by the Mahrattas and other native powers inimical to us, must inflict an irreparable blow on the interests of Great Britain in India; and that, if these interests were once destroyed, the invasion and conquest of England would be easy achievements. According to M. Lefebvre's project, the French and their auxiliaries, on arriving in Hindostan, were to declare that they came to give liberty and independence to the native princes, to liberate the Great Mogul from thralldom, and reconstruct the once magnificent empire of Timour." A copy of M. Lefebvre's work was placed in the hands of the Marquis of Wellesley.

As the first movement towards dissipating all these grand visions, immediately after the ratification of the Treaty of Bassein, on the 25th of March, 1803, Colonel Stevenson, at the head of the Nizam's subsidiary force and two regiments of native cavalry—in all only 8,000 men—accompanied by 15,000 of the troops of the Deccan, took up a position at Parinda, on the Peishwa's frontier, about a hundred miles eastward of Poonah, while, at the same time, Arthur Wellesley, now a Major-General, arrived on the northern frontier of Mysore, at the head of 8,000 infantry and 1,700 horse.

On reaching the Kistna he was joined by several

Mahratta jaghiredars, who were in the interest of the Mahrattas, and began his march for Poonah; from which the troops of Jeswunt Rao Holkar fell back quickly at his approach. But learning that the latter had left a detachment there with orders to burn the city, Wellesley dashed forward at the head of the cavalry on the 20th of April, and took it without opposition, thus initiating the new Mahratta war. The rapid mode in which "the Great Duke" of future fields moved his troops from place to place, was a new feature in Indian campaigns.

"We marched to Poonah from Seringapatam," he wrote, "the distance being nearly 600 miles, in the worst season of the year, through a country which had been destroyed by Holkar's army, with heavy guns, at the rate, upon an average, of 13½ miles a day; and, if the twelve days which we halted on the Toombudra for orders be excluded, we arrived at Poonah in two months from the time we marched. On this march we lost no draught-cattle. I remained in the neighbourhood of Poonah, in a country which deserves the name of a desert, for six weeks, and then marched again, with the train in the same state, as to numbers, as when it left Seringapatam, and the troops and cattle were in the field during the monsoon."*

Colonel Stevenson, whose co-operation was no longer required, now moved towards the Godavery to protect the country from Holkar's marauding parties; and on the 13th of May, the Peishwa entered Poonah, and was again seated on the throne, amid general rejoicings. Though the professions of Scindia, who was then encamped on the Nizam's frontier at Boorhanpoor, were still friendly, he protested, through his ministers, on the advance of the British to Poonah, and was busily engaged with Ragojee Bhonsla, of Berar, in preparing for war against us. It was now distinctly understood that he had made overtures to Holkar, with a view to strengthening the general Mahratta confederacy. He was, therefore, requested to retire from the menacing position he had assumed on the Nizam's frontier, or give some proof of friendly intentions; but, as the most effectual means of solving all this, General Wellesley marched to the northward of Poonah, so as to have daily communication with him, and, if necessary, to form a junction with the column of Colonel Stevenson. The terms of the Treaty of Bassein were laid before Scindia, by our Resident at his court, on the 27th of May, and when pressed as to his intentions, he declined all explanation, and closed the conference by saying, haughtily, "After my interview with the Rajah of

Berar you shall be informed whether it shall be peace or war."

As the latter seemed inevitable now, the Governor-General vested General Wellesley and General Lord Lake, the commanders of the armies of the Deccan and of Hindostan, with ample military, political, and civil powers. The former was, if possible, to negotiate with Scindia and Ragojee Bhonsla, with a view to breaking up or weakening the confederation. Should they decline, he was to draw the sword at once, and never sheathe it till the hostile chiefs were rendered incapable of further mischief. The instructions for Lord Lake were, that if war ensued, he was to complete the destruction of the power which the French were establishing in Hindostan by means of Scindia's brigades under General Perron, and to occupy the whole of the Doab and of Bundelcund, capturing Delhi and Agra, and establishing a chain of fortified posts on the right bank of the Jumna. As in the past days of Warren Hastings, vast tracts of country were to be traversed by our troops; but combined movements were to be executed with greater precision and rapidity, while their leaders, untrammelled, could fight, or use diplomacy, as they chose.

On the 14th of July, General Wellesley wrote to Scindia, drawing the attention of that chief to the friendly tenor of the Treaty of Bassein, and to the hostile intentions displayed openly by the Mahratta leaders. He concluded by requesting him to withdraw his forces from those of the Rajah of Berar, and re-cross the Nerbudda. On this being done, the British troops would fall back to their former posts; but, on the 18th, Wellesley was made aware of the powers conferred on himself and Lord Lake by the marquis. These he communicated at once to Scindia, who seemed at first disposed to yield, but, after a final conference with the rajah, he wrote to say, that they were within their own territories, and would promise neither to pass the Adjuntah Hills nor march to Bonah; adding, that they had no intention of interfering with the arrangements made under the Treaty of Bassein.

Dissatisfied with all this, General Wellesley prepared to commence hostilities by an attack on Ahmednuggur, a city and fortress in the province of Aurungabad, situated in an extensive plain watered by the Soona, and which had been seized by the Mahrattas, after the death of Aurungzebe. The pettah, which had a lofty wall flanked with towers, but without battlements, was garrisoned by a body of Arabs, supported by one of Scindia's regular battalions of infantry, while a column of horse lay between it and the fortress. "It is, in fact," wrote General Wellesley, "the strongest fort I have

* "Wellington Despatches."

seen, excepting Vellore in the Carnatic, has an excellent ditch, and cannot be surprised. It covers Poonah and the Nizam's frontier south of the Godavery; the possession of it gives us an excellent depôt, cuts Scindia off from all connection with the southern chiefs, and has given us possession of all his territories south of the Godavery." *

On the night of the 9th of June, he broke ground before it; a vigorous resistance was offered by the enemy, who, after the wall was forced, retired into the houses, from whence they kept up a destructive fire. • However, it was taken in a few hours. On the following day a four-gun battery was formed at 400 yards distance from the fort. At daylight in the morning, it was opened with such sharp effect, that the killedar* offered to capitulate, on the garrison being permitted to march off with all their property; which was acceded to. The possession of this place proved of great importance, from its position, and the facilities it afforded as a basis for future operations. Scindia, when writing of this exploit, remarked:—"The English are, truly, a wonderful people, and their general is a wonderful general. They came, looked at the pettah, walked over it, slew the garrison, and returned to breakfast. Who can withstand them?"

Scindia, who had an immense force of irregular cavalry, and whose infantry were very lightly equipped, carried no magazines with him, as these troops lived only by plunder. Dreading alike the name of Wellesley and the high discipline of his small army, he thought only of maintaining a predatory warfare, and wearing out ours by incessant marches and desultory attacks.

General Wellesley now crossed the Godavery on the 24th of August, while Colonel Stevenson moved in the direction of Aurungabad. Scindia and the Rajah of Berar were also in motion. Issuing through the Adjuntah Pass, they marched eastward and seized Jaulna in the Deccan; but finding that Wellesley had reached Aurungabad, within forty miles of them, on the 29th, they wheeled suddenly to the south-east, as if intending to make a dash at the city of Hyderabad, when the death of Nizam Ali, on the 6th of September, and the succession of his son, Secunder Jah, were supposed to favour the expedition. To prevent this, to bring them to a general action, or force them to retreat, Wellesley followed closely, and compelled them to take up a position at Jaulna, the fortress of which had been reduced on the 2nd by Colonel Stevenson.

On the 21st, the whole Mahratta army was encamped in the neighbourhood of Jafferabad, twenty-two miles south of Jaulna, while Wellesley

and Stevenson had formed a junction ten miles to the westward at Budnapore: thus a decisive battle was confidently anticipated. Wellesley's plan was to move in two divisions, and to make a united attack upon the enemy on the morning of the 24th. Two days before this they separated, Wellesley taking the eastern route, and the colonel the western. On the 23rd, when about to encamp at Naulnye, the former learned from his *harcarrahs*, or spies, that the Mahrattas were within six miles of him, on the banks of the Kaitna, a river in the province of Berar. The resolution of Wellesley was instantly taken. He feared that in another day they might send off their infantry, and leave their cavalry to protract the usual desultory warfare; and as he was anxious to avoid this, he pushed on, at the head of his own division, to force them to battle, without waiting for Colonel Stevenson, though the disparity in numbers was rendered greater by the necessity for leaving a strong baggage guard at Naulnye.

At the head of the advanced pickets, Wellesley rode out to reconnoitre, and, on ascending an eminence, he saw the army of the Mahrattas extended along the north bank of the Kaitna (or Kailna), in rear of the rapid, and, as it was supposed to be, unfordable stream, within the delta formed by its junction with the Juah. Their right, posted westward, near the village of Bokerdun, consisted entirely of cavalry, and was protected by the lofty and rocky bank of the river, which, save in one or two places, was impassable for guns; their left, consisting of the infantry and artillery, was placed more immediately within the delta, and close to the fortified village of Assaye, the name of which was given to the battle that ensued. The keen Wellesley saw, that, though the position was admirably calculated for resistance, it left, if forced, no means of retreat, and hence his confident exclamation, after his reconnaissance, "They cannot escape me!" As his troops had previously marched fourteen miles to Naulnye, and when they were still six miles distant from the enemy, it was one o'clock in the afternoon before they could get into position.

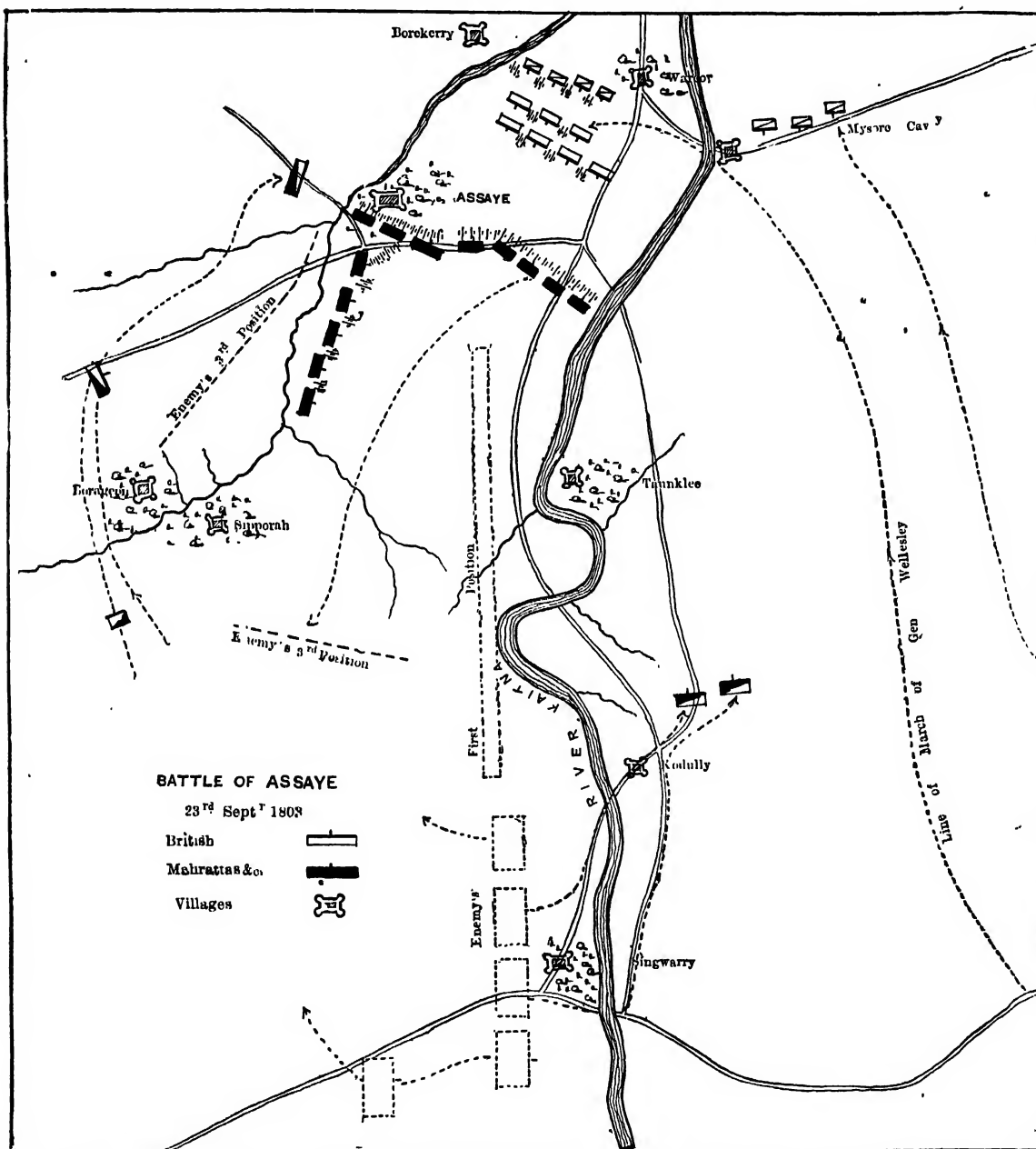
The Mahratta forces at Assaye have been estimated variously. Thorn states them thus:—Pohlman's division of sixteen infantry battalions, 6,000 strong; the brigade of Dupont, 2,500; the four battalions of the Begum Sumroo (a dancing girl, who married the infamous perpetrator of the Patna massacre) amounting to 2,000. The irregular infantry of Scindia and Ragojee Bhonsla, are supposed to have been as many more. The cavalry were 30,000 strong, and there were 100

* "Wellington Despatches."

pieces of cannon, served by gunners disciplined on the French system.*

The force under Wellesley, as given by the same authority, was 1,200 cavalry, European and native ;

The total strength of the enemy is supposed to have been 55,000 men. When the British arrived on the position, they were on the south side of the river, and on the enemy's right. To have attacked



2,000 sepoys, and 1,300 European infantry, consisting of the 74th and 78th Highland Regiments, with the artillery, constituting a force of only 4,500. The cavalry of the restored Peishwa and of the Rajah of Mysore were 3,000 strong.

* Thorn.

them from this point would have been to encounter their cavalry alone, while the great object of Wellesley was the capture or destruction of the infantry and guns. Moving eastward, till beyond the enemy's left, the general leading the way at the head of the two Highland regiments, boldly forded the Kaitna,

near the village of Pepalgaon, and thus possessing himself of the acute angle of the delta, drew up his troops in two lines, with the cavalry in rear as a reserve. Those of the Peishwa and Mysore were on the left, to check the movements of the Mahratta horse, who had followed the British while taking ground to the east. Wellesley had received secret intelligence that the Peishwa's cavalry intended to desert to Scindia: thus he placed them where they could do least mischief.

His first line consisted of the advanced pickets to the right, two battalions of sepoy, and the 78th Highlanders; the second consisted of the 74th

Assaye westward, along the south bank of the Juah.*

Under cover of their artillery, only **seventeen** pieces, the troops pushed on, but owing to the tremendous cannonade of the enemy, who poured in grape and shell, the loss in men and bullocks was such that the guns were left behind, and, at the head of the first line, Wellesley led the way against the Mahrattas, who became appalled on beholding the resolute steadiness of the little band about to charge their masses. We are told that shame rather than courage made them hold their ground till the bayonets came flashing down for the charge; but



VIEW OF BARODA.

Highlanders and two battalions of sepoy; in rear were H.M. 19th Light Dragoons, with three equally slender regiments of native cavalry. General Welsh states, that the Mahrattas had hoped to have attacked and defeated the divisions of Wellesley and Stevenson in succession; but when they saw only one coming to assail them, they thought the British mad.*

The battle began by the latter being cannonaded as they crossed the Kaitna. Previous to this movement, the guns and infantry of the Mahrattas had been posted along the river's northern bank; but as soon as it was found that their left was the point to be assailed they changed their front. One line was formed from south to north between the river, so as to face the advancing British, and another *en potence* to it, at right angles from

the effect of that was irresistible. The enemy's first line gave way, and, closely pursued, fell back on the second line placed along the Juah. During the struggle, the 74th Highlanders had been so much thinned by the artillery fire from Assaye, that a great column of Mahratta horse ventured to charge, but paid dearly for their presumption. They were met by a counter charge of the 19th Dragoons, led by Colonel P. Maxwell, who drove them into the river with dreadful slaughter. Elsewhere the unfailing bayonets were at work, and the second line of the enemy gave way more rapidly than the first. Dashing through the Juah, our little force of cavalry was following the fugitives, slashing them down on every hand; the infantry were also in eager pursuit, when suddenly a cannonade was heard in their rear.

* "Mil. Reminiscences of Thirty Years."

* Hough's "Mil. Exploits."

Many of the artillerymen of the enemy's first line had flung themselves under their guns, feigning death, no unusual artifice in Asiatic war, and starting up, when passed, opened a fire upon the pursuing British, and with some of the British cannon also. Before this mistake could be retrieved, some of the enemy's battalions, which had been retreating in tolerable order, faced about, while several bodies of their cavalry kept hovering within less than musket-shot. It seemed as if the battle was about to be fought over again, till Wellesley, who, as General Welsh says, "was everywhere," put himself at the head of the Ross-shire Highlanders and 7th Native Cavalry, and cut off the *Mahrattas*, who had seized the guns. He succeeded, but not without a bloody contest. "At length we drove them off," he reported, "and have taken about sixty pieces of cannon, nearly all brass and of the largest calibre. Their infantry, of which there were three campoos, fought well, and stood by their guns to the last. Their execution, however, was principally by their cannon. Colonel Wallace, Colonel Harness, and I, had horses killed under us. I lost two horses, one piked and one shot, and the staff-officers have lost one or two each." *

In charging the infantry, Colonel Maxwell lost his life. On receiving a musket-ball, which inflicted a mortal wound, in his agony he threw up his arms, and his horse halted. The 19th supposing this to be a signal to fall back, wheeled to the right, and galloped along the line of the enemy's fire. On the mistake being discovered, the squadrons re-formed, and, anxious to redeem their honour, made one of the most desperate cavalry charges ever witnessed, and this ended the conflict; "although, about half-past five, a body of 10,000 cavalry came in sight, and made some demonstrations, but dared not charge, and at eight in the evening they entirely disappeared." †

The battle lasted upwards of three hours. Our total casualties were 1,566, more than a third of all the troops engaged; the enemy left 1,200 dead on the field, and the whole country was covered with

their wounded. Though in his first hasty despatch the victor wrote of only sixty guns, we captured ninety-eight, with seven standards, the camp equipage, bullocks, camels, and a vast quantity of stores. In memory of this victory, the 74th and 78th Highland Regiments have the word "*Assaye*," with an elephant, on their colours.

On the evening of the next day, the 24th September, Colonel Stevenson came in with his division; he was at once dispatched in pursuit of the enemy, who had fled in the direction of the Adjuntah Pass. On the 8th of the next month there came to General Wellesley a letter from Balajee Khoonjur, one of Scindia's ministers, purporting to be written by that chief's authority, requesting that their envoy might be sent to his camp for the negotiation of a peace. But though the writer had no authority to show for this communication, it was not left unanswered; and the general declared his readiness to receive, in his own camp, with every honour, any duly-authorized envoy who came there.

The confederate chiefs, with their defeated army, marched westward, along the bank of the Tapti, with the apparent intention of turning off towards Poonah, and Wellesley resolved to regulate his movements by theirs. The moral influence of the late victory was great. It enabled Colonel Stevenson to capture Boorhanpore with ease, and also the strong fortress of Aseerghur, which yielded the moment his guns opened on it, on the 21st of October.

The latter was the last place possessed by Scindia in the Deccan. His prospects were becoming gloomy now; thus he was impelled to profess a desire for peace, and for that purpose sent vakeels to the British camp. It is said that General Wellesley was perfectly aware that Scindia only sought to gain time, and with it, strength. He received his envoys with honour, and on the 23rd November a truce was agreed to, of which the principal condition was—"that Scindia should occupy a position forty miles east of Ellichpoor, and that the British should not advance further into his dominions." As the Rajah of Berar was not included in this truce, it was equivalent to a dissolution of the confederacy.

* "Wellington Despatches—Selections."

† Gen. Welsh's "*Reminiscences*."

CHAPTER LXXI.

THE PROVINCES OF GOOJERAT AND CUTTACK REDUCED.—ALLYGHUR STORMED.—BATTLE OF DELHI.—THE GREAT GUN OF AGRA.—BATTLE OF LASWAREE.

As an event so important as this truce with the great Scindia, could scarcely have been produced alone by the short campaign in the Deccan, it will be necessary to account for it by a brief notice of certain military operations, which had been successfully carried on against the confederates elsewhere.

When a war with the Mahrattas had become inevitable, the Governor-General prepared for it on a very extensive scale, and had ready for the field a British force of about 55,000 men. To concentrate in one quarter all this force, so as to enable it to act as one army, was impossible; thus it was broken up, and had to act in separate corps in the Deccan, Hindostan, Goojerat, and Cuttack. We have detailed the operations carried on in the first-named quarter of India, by Wellesley and Stevenson, with about 18,500 men, against the Mahrattas, till the truce with Scindia; and now we shall turn to those which were a species of appendage to that campaign, as the chief command of the whole belonged to Arthur Wellesley.

In Goojerat, the army corps amounted to a few more than 7,000 men, under Colonel Murray, furnished by Bombay. After providing for the safety of Surat, the Guicowar's capital, Baroda, and some other places, its strength was reduced to 4,281, formed in two small brigades. One, consisting of 2,187 men, held its ground in front of Baroda; the other, 2,094 strong, was posted between Surat and Sonaghur. Under Colonel Woodington, the former marched, on the 21st of August, against Barsach, a pergunnah of Goojerat, situated in a fertile district, and maintaining still a considerable commerce with Bombay and Surat by the Nerbudda, on which it is situated, some thirty miles above its mouth in the Gulf of Cambay.

The pettah was taken on the 24th; two days later a breaching battery was opened, and an aperture in the wall was declared practicable on the 29th. The assault was delayed till three in the afternoon, for the co-operation of a gun-boat, which, however, was unable, from the shallowness of the water, to approach; yet, after a vigorous resistance from an Arab garrison, the place was stormed, and fell into our possession, with all the district, which yielded a revenue of £110,000 per annum. Colonel Woodington next reduced Champanir, a town almost entirely composed of silk-weavers,

and situated on the brow of a hill in Goojerat. He then summoned the adjacent fortress of Powanghur, which consisted of a lower and upper fort, crowning the summit of an immense hill of rugged rock, the north side of which is alone accessible. On the lower works being breached, the killedar lost courage, and capitulated; thus, before the end of September, Scindia had lost the whole province of Goojerat.

On the other side of India, in Orissa, our operations against the Rajah of Berar were equally successful. "Though the whole of Orissa had been included in the grant of the dewanee of it obtained by Clive, the Company had been obliged to rest satisfied with only a portion of it. The district of Cuttack was held by the Mahrattas, who, fully aware of its importance, refused to part with it. Had the Company possessed it, they would have had a continuous line of coast, stretching from the mouths of the Ganges to Madras. The value of such a communication had been long recognised, and negotiations had been repeatedly entered into for the purpose of acquiring it, either by exchange or purchase. The war into which the Rajah of Berar had rashly entered, seemed to afford an opportunity of acquiring it by conquest, and it was accordingly determined to wrest it from him. With this view, the Governor-General, in fixing the localities which were to be the seat of war, allotted an important detachment for Cuttack, which, when held by the enemy, not only enabled him to cut off the land communication with Madras, but brought him into dangerous proximity to Bengal."

The force for this service consisted of 573 Europeans of the Madras army, with a detachment of H.M. 22nd Regiment, together with the following native troops:—1st Battalion, 19th Regiment, Madras Native Infantry, 950; 2nd Battalion, 17th Regiment, 378; 1st Battalion, 20th Regiment, 290; 1st Battalion, 9th Regiment, 665; amounting to about 2,383 men, together with some cavalry and artillery.

There were also 500 Bengal Volunteers, with a battering train of four 18-pounders, four 12-pounders, and two howitzers, all of which were landed at Ganjam, forty-five miles southward of Cuttack, in support of the main division, under

Lieutenant-Colonel Campbell, of the 74th Highlanders. Under Captain Morgan, another detachment of the same strength took possession of the port of Balasore, twenty-five miles from the Subanreeka river, which then formed the boundary between British territory and Cuttack. In the town of Jelasore another detachment of 720 sepoys, with eighty-four of the Governor-General's Body-guard, were assembled, under the command of Colonel Fergusson, to form a junction with our troops in Balasore; and all these advanced corps were to be further supported by a reserve of 400 sepoys, 500 Native Bengal Volunteers, with artillery, assembled at Midnapore. The severe illness of Colonel Campbell caused him to resign the command to Lieutenant-Colonel Harcourt, of the 12th Regiment, who, on the 14th September, took possession of Mannickpatam, and sent a letter to the principal Brahmins of Juggernaut, recommending them to place that famous sanctuary under the protection of his Majesty's forces, a proposal to which they at once assented, and received a guard of Hindoo sepoys.

The severity of the weather added much to the difficulties the troops had to encounter when on the march, while the enemy hovered in great force on their flanks and rear. Colonel Harcourt continued steadily to advance till the beginning of October, when he found himself before the fort of Barahuttee, and within a mile of Cuttack. The former, a heap of ruins now, was built of red stone, girt by a ditch, thirty feet deep, crossed by a narrow bridge before its only entrance. It was breached and stormed on the 14th by parties from the 22nd Regiment, the Madras Europeans, and native troops, and fully captured, with the loss of only six killed and forty-seven wounded. The reduction of this fort was followed by the entire submission of the province of Cuttack to the British Government. Troops were left to garrison the country, the zemindars of which gave every proof of their loyalty to the Company.

The military operations in Hindostan proper were, in some respects, the most important during the war. Under the command of General Lake, the main army assembled in the Doab, 10,500 strong, exclusive of 3,500 in Allahabad, intended for the invasion of Bundelcund; but the first, if not the chief, object of Lake was to break up General Perron's regularly disciplined battalions, which, though nominally in the service of Scindia, were yet apart and wholly devoted to the interests of France. They did not receive pay periodically from him, but had assigned to them a valuable territory for maintenance, "and, as if they had

been absolute sovereigns, not only ruled it with despotic sway, but were extending their influence on every side, by means of treaties, offensive and defensive, with the neighbouring chiefs."

According to the account given by Mr. Stuart, a Scottish officer, who resigned Scindia's service at the commencement of the war, Perron's brigades mustered in all 43,650 men, with 464 guns. The portion of these with Scindia in the Deccan was given as 23,650, leaving somewhere about 20,000 to oppose Lake, exclusive of those in garrison.

General Lake, who was yet to win his peerage in these wars, advanced from Cawnpore on the 7th of August, 1803. General St. John led the infantry, and Colonel St. Leger the cavalry. Among the latter were the 8th Light Dragoons, all mounted on snow-white horses, given to them by the Nabob of Lucknow.* By the 12th, the troops had halted and encamped on the right bank of the Ganges, on the plains of Aroul. On the 26th, General Lake received despatches from the Marquis of Wellesley, when at Secundra, authorising him to attack Scindia, Perron, and all their allies. Reinforced by a detachment from Futtehpore, under General Ware, the army encamped on the Mahratta frontier, in sight of the great Mosque of Coel in Agra, where Perron's forces were seen in position near the fortress of Allyghur. At four o'clock on the morning of the 29th, the army moved forward in order of battle against the French soldier of fortune, who brought the whole of his horse, mustering 20,000 sabres, of whom 4,000 were regular cavalry, into the plain, where he took up a strong position.

On his right was the fortress of Allyghur, a place of great strength, having a morass in its front, flanked by two villages. One of these, on Perron's left, being evidently the weakest point, was chosen by Lake as the point of attack; and so, in exact proportion as our troops advanced, those of the enemy began and continued a retrograde movement, and ultimately quitted the field without hazarding a battle. Leaving a good force in Allyghur under M. Pedron, Perron retired towards Agra. The fort was quadrangular, with corner bastions and a wet ditch 25 feet wide. The walls were without embrasures, and the guns were fought *en barbette*.

On taking possession of the village of Coel, General Lake encamped on the north side of it, and summoned Pedron to surrender the fort, which that officer had orders to defend to the last extremity, and in these terms he replied. So the morning of the 4th of September was fixed upon for an attack, which was to be led by the Honourable

* "Records Royal Irish Hussars."

Colonel William Monson (son of the second peer of that name). Two batteries of four 18-pounders had been formed on the previous night, to cover the advance of the stormers, who left the camp in the dark, at three a.m., and after making a circuit, came within 400 yards of the gateway unseen. On the signal to advance being given, they rushed on under a heavy cannonade till within 100 yards of the gate, before which they found a recently-erected traverse armed with three guns, which were captured ere they could be discharged, and then Monson dashed on with the grenadiers and light company of the 76th, hoping to enter the gate with the fugitives from the traverse.

On coming close, he found the first gate closed, and its approaches swept by showers of grape from two guns. The scaling-ladders were planted, the stormers swarmed up, climbing with one hand and combating with the other; but a firm row of pikemen made it impossible to gain the crest of the wall. A 12-pounder was now brought up to blow open the gate, but twenty minutes elapsed ere this was done; and during that perilous time the almost helpless storming party stood in the narrow way under a heavy fire of grape and musketry. Monson fell wounded by a pike, and here was our heaviest loss. On the outer gate being blown to pieces, the now furious stormers rushed along a narrow circular road, defended by a round tower loopholed for musketry, while showers of grape came crashing down from an adjacent bastion. A second and a third gate were in succession blown in; but at length there appeared a fourth, which the 12-pounder, after some fatal delay in dragging it forward, over, or among the killed and wounded, failed to force; yet an entrance was achieved by a wicket. Our people, more infuriated than ever by the resistance encountered, passed in through it, and scoured the ramparts in every direction. Within an hour we were masters of Allyghur, with a total loss of 223, while that of the enemy, most of whom were killed, not in combat, but in seeking to escape, amounted to more than 2,000 men. Among the prisoners was M. Pedron. As this fortress had been the chief dépôt of these French adventurers in the Doab, it contained nearly all their military stores. The number of guns taken amounted to 281. "Its site on an elevated plain surrounded by swamps made it perfectly inaccessible in the rainy season, and everything that the skill of French engineers could devise had been employed to add to its natural strength. One serious mistake they had made, in allowing the entrance by a causeway to remain. Had they joined the two sides of the

ditch by cutting it across, it could never have been taken by assault without regular approaches."

Some relics of that day's strife yet remain at Allyghur. Near the racecourse are the remains of a tomb erected to the memory of six officers of the 76th, Cameron, Fleming, Brown, St. Aubin, and Campbell, who fell in the assault; and within the cantonment burial-ground is, or was, an obelisk to the memory of Lieutenant Turton, 4th Native Infantry, who also fell—the erection of a friend, whose modesty does not permit him to record his own name.

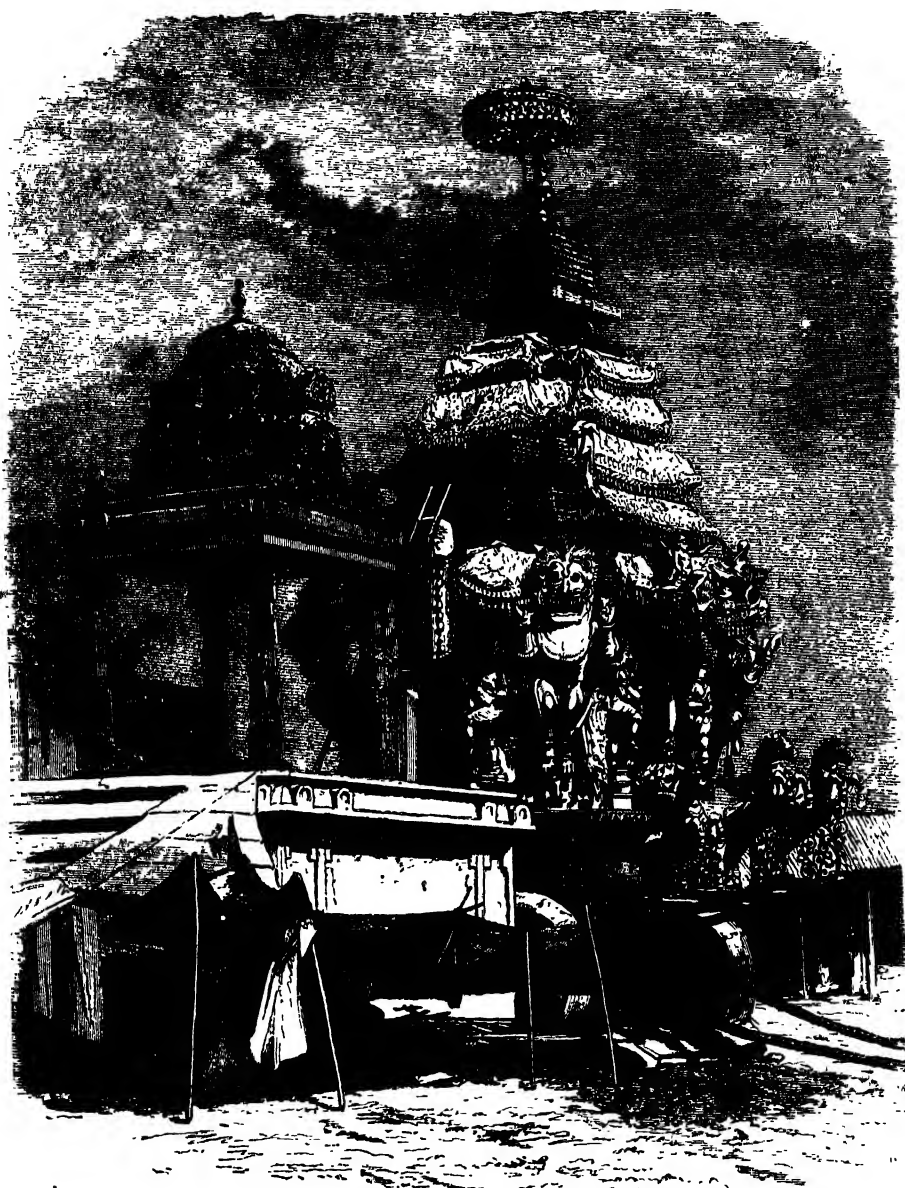
After taking measures to secure Allyghur, the army marched on the 7th of September for Delhi. On that day General Lake received a letter from M. Perron, announcing that he had for ever quitted the service of Scindia, and requesting permission to travel with his family to Lucknow, escorted either by British troops or his own body-guard. Both escorts were courteously accorded to the fallen general, who ultimately resided in the French settlement of Chandernagore. Doubtless he had despaired of Scindia's eventual success. The effect produced by the fall of Allyghur was such, that many other places which might have made a resolute defence, were surrendered as our troops approached them; but in his movement upon Delhi, the general was informed that the mass of the troops which had belonged to Perron were now commanded by another Frenchman, Louis Bourquien, and had crossed the Jumna for the purpose of giving him battle in that lovely region, which is so beautifully wooded by the peepul, the neelin, and the palm, and where every tree is full of birds, where the antelope springs, and the panther and hyena may be seen escaping to their dens.

Lake's troops were fatigued by a long march, and oppressed by the excessive heat of the weather, when they reached their camping-ground at the Jehna Nullah, within six miles of the stately city of Delhi, the walls of which are washed on one side by the broad waters of the Jumna, which the French had crossed in the night, to fight a battle in defence of the capital of the Moguls, but these were now little better than the prison of the feeble Shah Alum; and the tents of our people were scarcely pitched ere they were attacked by the enemy in great strength.

Bourquien had under his orders about 19,000 men (only 6,000 of whom were infantry). He had posted his main body on a rising ground, so flanked by swamps that it could only be attacked from the front, and that he defended by a line of entrenchments, armed with nearly 100 pieces of cannon. In rear was his cavalry.

Lake's force was only about 4,500 men. On making himself sufficiently acquainted with the strength and ground held by the enemy, whom he reconnoitred at the head of all his cavalry—three slender regiments—he ordered up the infantry and

was made to lure the enemy from their trenches by a feint. The cavalry were ordered to retire into the plain, with the double object of drawing out the foe and covering the future advance of our infantry. The plan succeeded perfectly. Con-



THE CAR OF JUGGERNAUT.

artillery. As these were two miles in the rear, an hour elapsed ere the junction was made, and in that time many men and horses perished under the enemy's cannonade. Lake had a horse shot under him, and later in the day his son, Major Lake (afterwards a distinguished officer) had his also killed. As an attack in front seemed doubtful, an attempt

ceiving that the retrogression of the cavalry was the commencement of a retreat, they came rushing from their position with tumultuous shouts. Then suddenly our cavalry wheeled off at a gallop to the right and left, uncovering a solid and impenetrable line of British infantry.

"Forward!" was now the cry that rang along it,

and placing himself at the head of the 76th Regiment, General Lake led on the line, which advanced firing steadily. The ranks of the enemy broke, and they fled in rear of their guns. Our troops, under a dreadful fire of musketry, round, grape, and chain shot, continued to advance till within 100 yards; then the officers brandished their swords and colours

and decisive one—was fought within sight of the magnificent marble palace of Delhi, and takes its name from it; and was immediately followed by our occupation of the city, from which the Frenchified garrison fled.

On the 14th of September, Louis Bourquien and four other French officers surrendered as prisoners



SIR DAVID OCHTERLONY. (*From a Miniature.*)

aloft, the bayonets were brought to the charge, and the whole line of intrenchments was carried by one wild and triumphant rush. Seized by a general panic, the enemy fled in all directions, pursued by our cavalry and light galloper-guns, and many in their terror flung themselves into the Jumna. Our loss was 409 in killed and wounded; that of the enemy was about 3,000. We captured sixty-eight guns, two tumbrils laden with treasure, and thirty-seven laden with ammunition, while twenty-four were blown up. The battle—a short, sharp,

of war in the British camp, and two days later General Lake paid a visit to Shah Alum—the same monarch who had come upon the stormy stage of Indian politics, war, and intrigue, in the days of the great Robert Clive, and who was now aged, blind, and miserably poor. He received Lake as his deliverer, and gave him all that he could give, a series of sounding titles, such as "The Sword of the State; the Hero of the Lord; the Lord of the Age, and Victorious in War." *

* Major Thorn.

The descendant of the Moguls had no small reason to rejoice in finding himself under the general's protection, for Scindia had tyrannised over him barbarously, and before that chief obtained possession of his person, another named Gholauum Khadir had, as already related, pricked out one of his eyes with the point of his own dagger. He was now in his eighty-third year. In 1806 he died, and was succeeded by the heir apparent, Prince Mirza Akbar Shah, who ascended the throne without molestation, a circumstance almost without parallel in the history of Hindostan.*

Little could Mirza Akbar foresee where he, in old age, was to end his days, after deeds yet to be related.

Leaving Colonel (afterwards Sir David) Ochterlony, one of the most famous officers in the Indian army, whose name is still borne by the 55th and 56th Bengal Infantry, in command at Delhi, with only one regiment and some recruits, on the 24th of September, 1803, General Lake began his march along the right bank of the Jumna, against Agra, which was held by some of Scindia's forces. By the 7th of October he had invested the place, and two days after concluded a friendly treaty with the Rajah of Bhurtpore, who reinforced him by 5,000 cavalry. The garrison of Agra—a stately and fortified city, which is one of the keys of Western India—had, previous to the war, been commanded by British officers in Scindia's service; but these were all now prisoners, and retained in confinement. So completely was the garrison demoralised by the want of leaders, that when Lake's summons arrived, no answer was returned. A resolute defence had been resolved on.

Of Scindia's infantry, seven regular battalions were encamped on the glacis, and held the city and some deep sandy ravines on the south and western faces of the fort, and the dislodgment of these troops was necessary before approaches could be made. They were accordingly attacked on the morning of the 10th, and, after a fierce conflict, completely defeated, and the city, with twenty-six beautiful brass guns and as many tumbrils of ammunition, fell into our possession. The survivors of the troops outside the fort, 2,500 strong, surrendered, and after that event, the siege made rapid progress.

On the 17th, a battery of eight 18-pounders was brought into play, and a breach would soon have been practicable, but, on the 18th, under the influence of a British officer within, the garrison surrendered, asking only permission to retain their clothing. The Mahrattas, 5,500 strong, marched

out prisoners of war. Treasure, equal to the value of £220,000, was found in the treasury, and this money General Perron had the coolness to claim as his personal property, a claim which was rejected by Colonel Hessian, the governor, who affirmed that the money was the property of the State.

There were taken 164 pieces of cannon. "Among these," says Major Thorn, "was one enormous brass gun, which, for magnitude and beauty, stands unrivalled. Its length was 14 feet 2 inches, its calibre 23 inches, the weight of its ball, when of cast iron, 1,500 lbs., its whole weight 96,600 lbs., or little above 38 tons."*

It was the intention of General Lake to have sent this gun to London, but proving too heavy for the raft on which it was to be transported to Calcutta, it, unfortunately, sunk in the river.

Agra is now the provincial seat of a government. By the Hindoos it is called *Parasu Rama*, and is held by them in great veneration, as the place of the avatar, or incarnation of Vishnu. It is also famous as the birthplace of Abu Fayal, the prime minister of the Emperor Ackbar. By its capture the navigation of the Jumna was secured to us, and all obstacles to the alliance and co-operation of the independent chiefs in that quarter were removed. But, at an early stage of the campaign, it would seem that Scindia had detached seven of his disciplined battalions from the Deccan under Dudernaigue, a French officer, who was then joined by three of those of Louis Bourquien, which had not been engaged at Delhi. There was also another battalion made up of fugitives from the field and Agra. His whole force amounted to 9,000 infantry and 1,500 excellent cavalry, with a fine train of artillery. All these trained soldiers, with their officers, had their existence and pay to fight for, and were not likely to be dispersed without some trouble, as every hour increased their number.

Dudernaigue, however, lost heart, and surrendered to Lord Lake. He was succeeded by a Mahratta leader, under whom, during the siege of Agra, they had hovered about thirty miles distant from our outposts. On ascertaining that they intended to drive Ochterlony out of Delhi, and recapture that place, General Lake commenced his march against them on the 27th of September.

He advanced in a south-westerly direction to Futtehpore, a town once famous for the resort of Mohammedan pilgrims and for an amphitheatre, having high towers, constructed by Ackbar for elephant fights and the game of Chowgong, now all a heap of deserted ruins. There he left his heavy guns and baggage, under care of two battalions of

* Major Thorn.

* "Mem. of the War in India."

native infantry. On the 31st of October, after wheeling to the westward, he reached Cutumbo, from which the enemy had fallen back on the preceding evening; but, as he was close upon their track, he was determined not to permit them to escape, and pursued them with his cavalry, now consisting of eight regiments, three of which were Europeans—the 8th Royal Irish, 27th and 29th Light Dragoons.

Setting out at eleven at night, and leaving orders for the infantry to push on next morning at three, after riding twenty-five miles over rough ways, in about six hours, on the 1st of November, he came up with the enemy, now mustering 5,000 cavalry and 9,000 infantry, with 72 pieces of cannon. They appeared to be in order of retreat, thus, without waiting for the infantry, General Lake daringly resolved to attack them with the sabre alone. The enemy, by cutting a large tank, had so greatly impeded the progress of his troopers, that the former had time to halt, face about, and take up a position at the village of Laswaree, forty miles westward of Bhurtpore.

Their right flank lay in front of the place, and in their rear was a rivulet, having steep and rugged banks. Their left rested on the village of Mohulpore, and their centre, partly concealed by high grass, was defended by a formidable line of cannon, chained together, the more effectually to prevent the penetration of cavalry. In taking up this position, their movements had been somewhat concealed by the dense clouds of dust raised by the hoofs of Lake's approaching cavalry, till, suddenly, the latter came upon them and beheld the dark columns in their wild Mahratta costumes, their horses and cannon showing darkly in the grey morning and through the eddying dust. "Thus, moving somewhat in the dark, General Lake ordered the 1st brigade of cavalry to push upon a point where the enemy had previously been seen in motion, while the rest of the cavalry were ordered to follow up the attack in succession as fast as they could form after crossing the rivulet. The point thus attacked had, in consequence of their change of position, become their left, and the resistance proved so obstinate that the commander found it necessary, after a heavy loss, to wait the arrival of the infantry."

General Lake posted a portion of his cavalry to watch the movements of the enemy, while the rest were to support the columns of attack. What were wont to be named galloper-guns in those days (pieces of small calibre), were so planted as to cover the advance of the latter. Ere our lines were well in position, the Mahratta leader, already disconcerted,

thought of retiring with the loss only of his chained ordnance, and actually made an offer to surrender them, on certain conditions, which were granted, on the proviso that he fulfilled them within an hour. Meanwhile our troops remained steadily on their ground as the morning came in. The 76th Regiment and six battalions of sepoy were close to the village of Laswaree in two brigades; the first formed the right wing, under General Ware; the second formed the left, under General St. John. The hour, which was full of fate to many, having expired, the infantry began to move along the bank of the rivulet nearly at right angles with the position of the enemy, with the object of turning their right flank.

Lake headed one column in person. The sepoy came up confusedly, slowly, and evinced much disposition to leave all the fighting to the Europeans, while the cannonade now opened upon them was coolly and rapidly poured in. "The effect of this fire, which was terrible in the extreme, was felt with peculiar severity by the 76th Regiment, which fine body, by heading the attack, as usual, became the object of direct destruction. So great, indeed, was the loss of this corps, and such was the furious fire of the enemy, that the commander-in-chief deemed it more advisable to hasten the attack with that regiment (and the Native Infantry, consisting of the 2nd Regiment, 12th and 6th Companies of the 2nd Battalion of the 16th Regiment, which had closed to the front), than to wait till the remainder of the column should be formed, whose advance had been delayed by unavoidable impediment."

At the head of the 76th, Lake led the way, sword in hand, through the tall feathery grass, which greatly hampered every movement, till the ranks began to waver under the showers of cannister-shot which tore through them, and the Mahratta horse attempted to charge, but were gallantly repulsed; and then Lake ordered ours to charge in turn. This service was splendidly performed by the 29th Light Dragoons, who cut a passage through both lines of the enemy's infantry, wheeled round upon their cavalry, drove them from the field in a confused herd, and then attacked the rear of their second line.

Meantime, the first had been hurled back upon the latter by Lake's steady advance. Both lines were thus huddled together and attacked in front and rear; but on this occasion, Scindia's trained brigades showed themselves worthy of the high reputation they had won under Perron and Bourquien, and, scornful to yield, continued the conflict with resolute valour, till—with the exception of about 2,000 who were broken up and captured—

all died where they stood, with their weapons in their hands.

The right attack—where the 76th, then a Scotch regiment, was—secured the victory ; but Lake's loss was heavy. "In killed and wounded it amounted to 1,006," says Major Hough ; "of these the cavalry lost 528, H.M. 76th Regiment 213, the 2nd Battalion, 12, and a company of the 16th lost 188, leaving the remainder—sixty-five—to be divided among all the other corps, and 553 horses killed, wounded, and missing. The guns captured were seventy-one in number." *

Of the enemy, 7,000 lay dead upon the field ; their bazaars, equipage, elephants and camels were taken, together with 1,500 bullocks, 5,000 stand of arms, forty-four standards, three tumbrils laden with treasure, and sixty-four with ammunition, fifty-seven carts with stores ; and the effect of this victory was to give us undisputed possession of all Scindia's territories north of the Chumbul.

Writing of the destroyed battalions—the famous "Deccan Invincibles," as they boasted themselves—General Lake affirmed that they were "uncommonly well appointed, had a most numerous artillery, as well served as they could possibly be, the gunners standing to their guns until killed by the bayonet ; all the sepoys of the enemy behaved exceedingly well, and if they had (still) been commanded by French officers, the event would have been, I fear, extremely doubtful. I never was in so severe a business in my life, and pray to God I may never be in such a situation again. Their

army is better appointed than ours ; no expense is spared whatever. They have three times the number of men to a gun that we have ; their bullocks—of which they have many more than we have—are of a very superior sort ; all their knapsacks and baggage are carried upon camels, by which means they can march double the distance." Lake took into the British service all Scindia's gunners who were willing to enlist, so greatly did he appreciate their conduct at Laswaree. Among the most distinguished officers who fell here, was Lieutenant-Colonel T. Pakenham Vandeleur, of the 8th Royal Irish. This field, called by the natives the battle of Putpurgunj, was long remembered with triumph, and is thus referred to in the spirited old "Song of the Soubahdar :"—

"But Agra, Delhi, Allyghur, and Coel's deeds were vain,
Without the crowning victory upon Laswaree's plain ;
The flower of Scindia's chivalry—the Invincible Brigade—
To make one furious struggle yet, were for the strife arrayed.

"Upon our rear they hung, and watched our gallant chief's
success,
In hope some chance of war might rise, their bold designs
to bless ;
The royal city we had won they hungered to retake,
But they little knew the prompt resolve—the active mind of
Lake !

* * * * *

"Of Holkar and his false allies—their treachery, intrigue,
How retribution reached them soon, before the walls of Deeg ;
How, with every kindly wish, and prayer of every heart,
Our loved old leader, Lake, was doomed at last from us to
part."

CHAPTER LXXII.

CONQUEST OF BUNDELCUND.—BATTLE OF ARGAEON.—STORMING OF GAWILGHUR, AND END OF THE WAR.

THE atmosphere about Laswaree having become tainted by the number of dead, the army, on the 8th of November, began to retrace its route eastward in the direction of Agra, to which city the sick, wounded, and captured guns were sent on the 14th, while the troops halted at Paiashur, where a fortnight was passed by General Lake in receiving various native princes, whom the event of the 1st of November had considerably impressed.

Among those with whom he formed treaties of

* "Hist. of Mil. Exploits and Pol. Events in India."

alliance were the Rajah of Macherry, in the principality of Alvar ; the Rajah of Jeypore, a powerful Rajpoot ; and the Rajah of Jodpore, in the district called the Marwar ; and also with the widow, the Begum Sumroo. Among other ambassadors came one from the blind Emperor of Delhi, clad in a *khelat*, or gorgeous dress of honour, to congratulate the victor of Laswaree, who received him with the highest military honours.*

After this the army marched on the 27th, and

* Major Thorn, 25th Light Dragoons.

took up a position at Biana, a town situated at the base of a hill, fifty-four miles distant from Agra, whereon are the ruins of the former town of the same name, which was the capital of a province in the days of the Emperor Baber.

The conquest of Bundelcund was now the object in view. It is a mountainous, and was, then, an imperfectly-cultivated country, lying between the 24th and 26th degrees of northern latitude, and though frequently over-run by the Mohammedans, it is easily defended. It took its name from its inhabitants, the Bundela race, and though nominally belonging to the Peishwa, in virtue of a treaty made with him in August, 1803, he had ceded the greater part of his claim to it to the Company, receiving in lieu Savanore, and Benkapore, in the South Mahratta country, and some lands in the neighbourhood of Surat. As usual, the Company were the gainers: the territories ceded yielded them upwards of thirty-six lacs of rupees; those given in exchange barely yielded nineteen lacs. The treaty was finally concluded on the 16th of December, 1803, and was deemed but a supplement to that of Bassein.

Now it came to pass that, not unnaturally, the Bundela chiefs resented this assignment of their lands and persons. Among these was Shamsheer Bahadur, who claimed—by lineal descent from Bajee Rao, the first Peishwa, and by grants made to his ancestors—the lands he owned, and resolved to defend them by the sword against all comers. The Marquis of Wellesley was equally determined to enforce the treaty; thus war became inevitable.

On the 6th of September, 1803, Colonel Powell, at the head of a body of troops, marched from Allahabad into Bundelcund, where his small force was joined by a Bundela chief, named Hemmat Bahadur, with 8,000 irregular foot, 4,000 horse, three sepoy battalions, and twenty-five guns. Hemmat was a *Gosain*, or a religious character, and was also a somewhat reckless military adventurer, who had deserted the cause of his own country and given his adhesion to the British Government.

On the 23rd of the month they reached the Ken or Caw, which comes from the Vindhya Mountains, and the bed of which teems with fine agates and jasper; and, at a point where it flows past Kallinger, a stone fortress which crowns the summit of a lofty mountain, and is so ancient that Mahmoud of Ghizni vainly besieged it in 1024, they found Shamsheer Bahadur strongly posted on the opposite bank. After capturing several fortlets in his vicinity, on the 10th of October they crossed the river, and after a toilsome six hours' march through a wild and mountainous country, they came upon the forces of Shamsheer drawn up in

battle array. After showing a resolute front for a short space, they gave way, and Shamsheer's men being well mounted, escaped with little loss; and seeing, perhaps, the futility of resistance, he began to negotiate for peace, but after procrastinating for two months, he suddenly took the field again.

On this the colonel resumed the offensive, and laid siege to Calpee, on the right bank of the Jumna. The fort occupies a strong position, and commands the passage of the river; but Powell captured it on the 4th December. Then the luckless Shamsheer threw himself on the mercy of the colonel, to whom several other Bundela chiefs now gave their enforced adherence, and who treated them with generosity.

Among these, the most important was Ambajee Inglia, who had acted as Scindia's minister, and under him held vast territories, including those of the Rana of Gohud. In the October of 1803, he offered to renounce Scindia, and become a tributary of the Company, on certain conditions; and by the 16th December a treaty was concluded with him, by which he resigned to them the great fortress of Gwalior and all his territories north of it, and was recognised as independent sovereign of all the rest, save those of the Rana of Gohud, to whom a previous treaty had guaranteed them. But when Colonel White, on the 21st December, arrived at the head of a force, with General Lake's orders to take possession, the killedar of Gwalior declined to obey either him or Ambajee, until the place was breached, and about to be stormed, when the garrison capitulated.

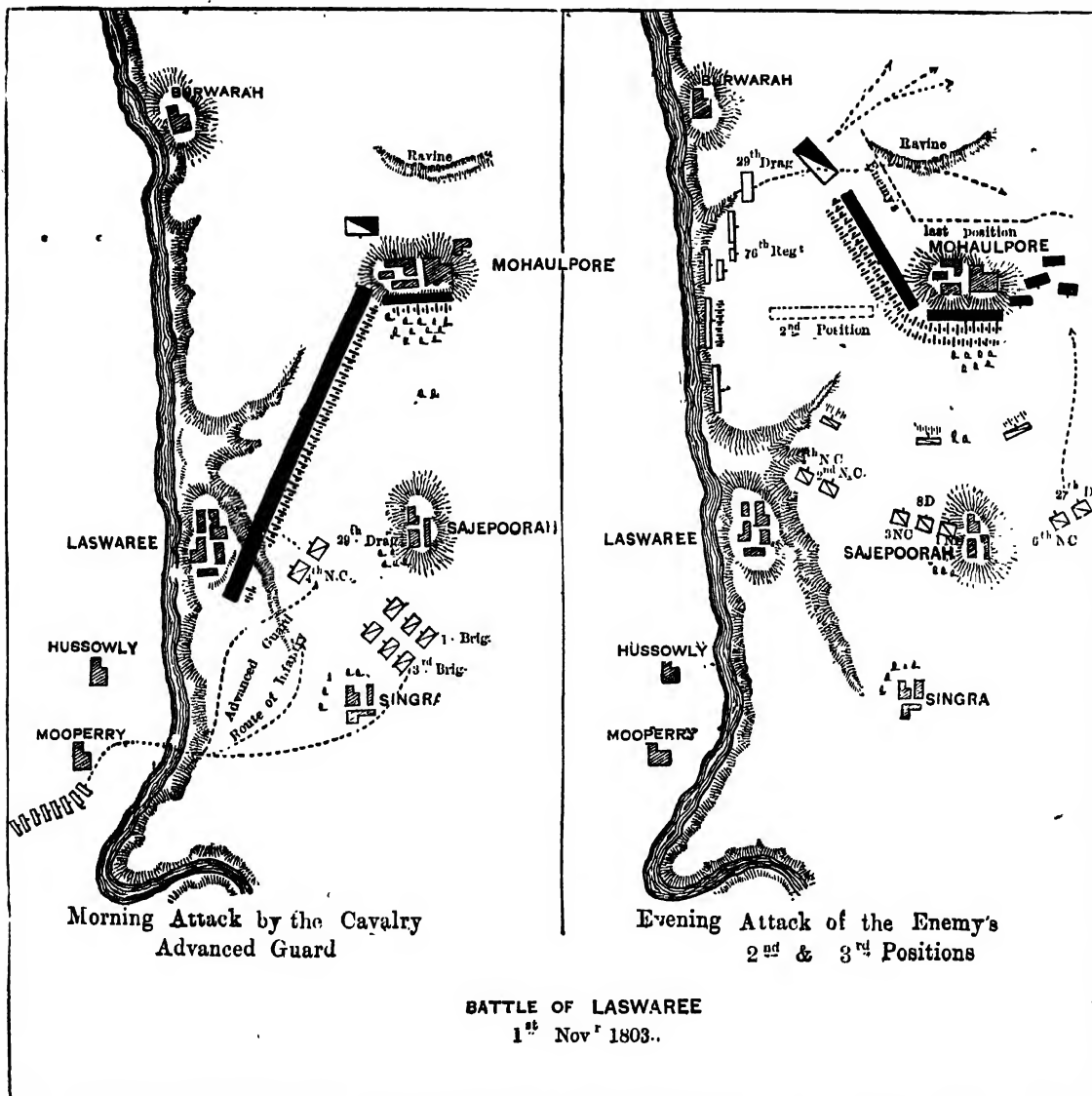
In its place we have narrated the dissolution of the alliance between Scindia and Ragojee Bhonsla of Berar, when General Wellesley's truce deprived the latter of any participation or benefit in the armistice, and left him to contend with us single-handed. Scindia had stipulated to march his forces eastward of Ellichpore, yet on the 28th of November, three days after, a great force of his cavalry was seen united with those of the Rajah of Berar, and acting in concert with the latter's infantry and artillery.

Viewing this as a direct violation of truce, General Wellesley was prompt in action, and despite the remonstrances of Scindia's vakeel, who was still in our camp, resolved to attack them all. He accordingly marched with his division of the army, and after pursuing a long and fatiguing route, came up with them near the little village of Argaoon, in the province of Berar, thirty-five miles distant from Ellichpore.

General Wellesley, in his report to the Governor-

General, states, that as the troops had marched a great distance in a very hot day, he did not think it proper to pursue some of the enemy who fled before him at Parterly; but during the 28th of November, our allies, the Mysore cavalry, skirmished

Although the day was far advanced, he immediately resolved to attack this army, towards which he marched in one great column; the British cavalry leading in a direction nearly parallel to that of the enemy's line, the rear and left covered by



with bodies of horse which appeared in front, "and when I went out to push forward the pickets of the infantry, support the Mysore cavalry, and to take up the ground for our encampment, I could distinctly perceive a long line of infantry, cavalry, and artillery, regularly drawn up, on the plains of Argaor, immediately in front of the village, and about six miles from this place (Parterly), at which I intended to encamp."

the Mogul and Mysore cavalry. The enemy's infantry and guns were posted on the left of their centre, with a body of cavalry on their left. Scindia's army, consisting of a great body of cavalry, was on the right, flanked by Pindarees and other light troops. The line was five miles in extent, and in its rear lay the village of Argaon, with many gardens, thickets, and enclosures. In front spread the green plain cut up by many watercourses.



Wellesley formed his army in two lines. The infantry were in the first; the cavalry in the second, and supporting the right; while those of Mysore and the Mogul were on the left, and parallel with that of the enemy, with their right advanced to press the left of the latter. The moment the lines were formed, the whole advanced into action with steadiness and ardour; and those heroes of Assaye, the 74th and Seaforth Highlanders, were among the first to distinguish themselves. The general writes thus:—"The 74th and 78th Regiments were attacked by a large body (supposed to be Persians), and all these were destroyed."*

Scindia's cavalry, some wearing steel skull-caps with plumes and check-plates, and chain-mail to the knees, charged the 1st Battalion of the 6th Regiment, which was on the left of our whole line, and which signally repulsed them. On this, the whole front of the enemy wavered, broke up, and gave way in disorder, leaving thirty-eight pieces of cannon, with all their ammunition, in our hands, together with elephants and baggage.

Our cavalry pursued them for several miles, and cut down great numbers. The Mogul and Mysore cavalry joined in the pursuit, and added greatly to the slaughter, under a brilliant moonlight. "The troops conducted themselves with their usual bravery," says General Wellesley; "the 74th and 78th Highland Regiments had a particular opportunity of distinguishing themselves, and they have deserved, and received, my thanks." On this day Major Campbell led the Scots Brigade (old 94th), Captain Beauman the artillery, and Captain Burke the guns of the subsidiary force.

Our loss in killed and wounded was only 346; but that of the enemy was great, and never fully ascertained. Vithel Punt, who led the cavalry of Berar, was killed; and Gopal Bhow, who led those of Scindia, was wounded. "If we had had daylight an hour more, not a man would have escaped."†

Wellesley now proposed to besiege the loftily-situated and grand-looking fortress of Gawilghur, in the hilly district of Berar, and from the high round tower of which, above the Putteah Gate, can be seen the vast extent of country traversed by the windings of the Purna and Tapti. It crowns a stupendous rock, and consists of a complete inner fort fronting the south, where the rock is most steep, and an outer fort covers this work to the north and westward. Its garrison now consisted of 5,000 hardy Rajpoots and Gosains. The ascent to the southern gate is steep and difficult; that to the

northern gate was extremely narrow and everywhere exposed to musketry; yet it was preferred to the other. Colonel Stevenson, who had equipped his corps at Aseerghur for the purpose, was to push the siege, while Wellesley was to cover it. By the 12th of December, 1803, after having heavy ordnance and stores dragged laboriously over mountains and through ravines, the colonel had two batteries ready to divert the attention of the garrison, by breaching the wall near the southern gate. By the evening of the following day the breaches in the walls of the outer fort were reported practicable, and the escalade was then detailed for the next day, at ten o'clock a.m.

The 74th Highlanders, with five companies of the Seaforth, and the 1st Battalion of the 8th, under the orders of Colonel Wallace; five companies of the Seaforth, with the 1st Battalion of the 10th, under Colonel Chalmers, were told off for this service; and seventy pioneers, with crowbars, hatchets, and saws, were to accompany each detachment.

The stormers were to consist of the Scots Brigade in three divisions, under Colonels Kenny, Desse, and Major Campbell; while the advanced party was to consist of one sergeant and twelve select volunteers from that regiment so memorable in war since the days of James VI. of Scotland.

At the appointed hour, the stormers flowed upward, like a human surge, against the rugged breaches, and, under Captain Campbell, the light company of the Scots Brigade planted ladders against the wall at another point, fought their way, and burst open the gate to admit the supports, while the walls were being taken elsewhere. The garrison, which consisted of regular infantry that had escaped from the battle of Argaoon, and were all armed with the Company's new muskets and bayonets, fought with vain but resolute valour, for the capture of the great mountain castle was completely effected, with the loss of only 126. In it were found seventy-two pieces of ordnance, 2,000 stand of British arms, and 150 wall-pieces, that threw balls varying in weight from eight to sixteen ounces.*

Benny Sing, the killedar, was found dead under a heap of slain in one of the gateways, and everywhere were seen the corpses of women and girls, for the garrison had put all their wives and daughters to death before advancing to meet their own fate.

Some fine architectural remains are still within the walls, but all are overgrown now with jungle grass and rank weeds of gigantic growth; and the

* "Despatches—Gurwood's Selections."

† Ibid.

* "Wellington Despatches," &c.

hills around it have for ages been the favourite retreat of that extraordinary sect, the Thains, whose temples are situated upon the precipitous bank of a mountain torrent, a little to the north-west of the crumbling fortress.

Throughout the whole of this campaign, the operations of the British were eminently successful, and had the war continued, we must, eventually, have destroyed for ever the power of the Mahrattas; but now they began to sue for peace. Our truce made with Scindia, on the 23rd of November, was supposed to be still in existence: thus the Rajah of Berar, as the chief in more immediate danger, and sorely humbled by his successive reverses, was the first to make amicable overtures. On the fall of Gawilghur his vakeel arrived in the camp of Wellesley, who dictated his terms under the guns of the fallen fortress. The negotiation was commenced on the 16th of December, and so resolute was our general, that it was concluded on the following day; and Scindia was forthwith informed that the truce with him would expire in ten days more. As he had no desire to encounter fresh disasters single-handed, his ambassadors came speedily, and a general treaty of peace was concluded on the 23rd December. "This war, one of the shortest, was also one of the most decisive on record. In the short period of four months, four general battles had been fought, eight fortresses besieged and captured, and whole provinces subdued. The disparity of force added greatly to the lustre of these achievements. The whole British army never exceeded 55,000 men; that of the enemy averaged at least 250,000, exclusive of a corps of 40,000 formed into regular brigades, disciplined by French officers, and obviously intended, if this war had not prematurely destroyed them, to form the nucleus of a larger army, by which the French would have

attempted once more to gain the ascendancy in India."

Under the treaty concluded on the 17th of December, 1803, the Rajah of Berar ceded to us Cuttack, Balasore, and the whole of his territories west of the Wurda, and south of the hills where now stands the ruin of Gawilghur; while by the other treaty with him, Dowlut Rao Scindia ceded all his territories in the Doab, and all those north of the Rajpoot principalities of Jodpore, Jeypore, and Gohud, the forts of Ahmednuggur and Barsach, with these districts, and all his possessions between the Adjuntah Ghaut and the Godavery River. Still further to humble and control him, six battalions of sepoy were to be stationed in his territories; or in a convenient frontier fort belonging to the Company. Of all this Arthur Wellesley wrote truly:—

"The British Government has been left by the late war in a most glorious situation. They are sovereigns of a great part of India, the protectors of the principal powers, the mediators, by treaty, of the disputes of all. The sovereignty they possess is greater, and their power is settled upon more permanent foundations, than any before known in India; all it wants is the popularity which, from the nature of the institutions, and the justice of the proceedings of government, it is likely to obtain, and which it must obtain, after a short period of tranquillity shall have given the people time and opportunity to feel the happiness and security which they now enjoy." *

For their great military services, General Wellesley received the ribbon of the Bath, and his commander was raised, on the 1st September, 1804, to the peerage of Britain, as Baron Lake, of Delhi, Laswaree, and of Ashton-Clinton, Bucks. He was made a viscount in 1807, and died in the following year.

CHAPTER LXXIII.

SEA-FIGHT OFF PULO AOR.—THE HOUSE OF HOLKAR.—WAR.—MONSON'S DISASTROUS RETREAT.

THE year following the peace with Scindia, in the early part of 1804, some gallant exploits were done in Indian waters; but we shall only notice two.

The French Admiral Linois, having received official despatches from Europe, conveying news of the war and orders to commence hostilities, sailed

from the Isle of France to the eastern seas, where he attacked our settlement at Bencoolen, took three valuable prizes, and burned all he found on sea or land with comparative impunity; but, when cruising near the Straits of Malacca, he fell in with

* "Wellington Despatches."

the homeward-bound fleet, consisting of sixteen East Indiamen, under Captain Dance of the *Camden*.

Together with this valuable squadron were eleven country ships, and the whole came close to the enemy when off Pulo Aor, a small island eastward of Malacca. It is high, covered with trees, and is the point of departure for ships bound to Canton, and for which vessels generally steer on the homeward voyage.

Captain Dance, a good seaman, put his ships' heads towards the squadron of Linois, which consisted of the *Marengo* and *Belle Poule* (seventy-fours), the *Suffisante* (forty-four), a corvette and brig, of twenty-eight and eighteen guns each respectively. Four of our best Indiamen he sent on to reconnoitre, and then formed his line of battle in close order, under easy sail. As soon as Linois' squadron could fetch the wake of ours, they put about, and by sunset were close astern of the India fleet; but no attack was made, as when night fell Linois hauled his wind. Lieutenant Fowler, of the Royal Navy, who was a passenger with Captain Dance, volunteered to go in a fast-sailing vessel and keep the country ships on the lee-bow of the fleet; which, by this judicious arrangement, remained between them and the enemy. Lieutenant Fowler, having executed this duty, returned, bringing with him a number of volunteers from the country ships to serve at the guns: "a noble proof," says Captain Brenton, "of the public spirit of our sailors."

The Indiamen lay to, in line of battle, all night, with cannon shotted and the crews at their quarters.

By daylight on the 15th, they hoisted their colours and offered battle, which the enemy did not accept; but by nine a.m., the former filled and stood towards them bravely. At one p.m., Captain Dance, perceiving that Linois intended to attack and cut off his rear, signalled for the whole to tack and engage in succession. The *Royal George*, Captain Timmins, led, followed by the *Ganges* and *Camden*, all under a press of sail. Formed in a very close line, the French opened their fire on the headmost ships, which did not return a shot till they were as near as they could get, for the French—even their two seventy-fours—had a great advantage in superior sailing. The *Royal George* bore the entire brunt of the action, but before the whole squadron could engage, Linois hauled his wind, and bore away eastward, under all the sail he could spread. Captain Dance threw out the signal for a general chase, which was continued for two hours, till finding that the foe was leaving him far astern, he desisted.

The conduct of the Company's officers and men

on this occasion displayed an admirable instance of the British naval character. "To say that Linois was deceived by the warlike appearance of our Indiamen, and the blue swallow-tail flags, 'pavillon à queue bleu,' worn by the three largest ships, may save his courage at the expense of his judgment. 'An Indiaman,' says the Count de Dumas, 'has often been mistaken for a ship of the line;' but when did the Count de Dumas ever hear of three British ships of the line lying to, to await the attack of a force so much inferior?"*

Captain Nathaniel Dance was knighted, and received from the Bombay Insurance Society £5,000, with a sword valued at 100 guineas, and swords of similar value were given to Captains Timmins and Moffat.

Not long after this, Captain Henry Lambert, when in command of the *Wilhelmina*, an old Dutch-built frigate of thirty-two guns, and of a most unwarlike aspect, when off the east side of Ceylon, fell in with a large frigate-built French privateer, whom he engaged with equal fury and obstinacy for more than three hours, when both ships were so utterly disabled that they separated; nor was Lambert, a very young but brave officer, able to renew the conflict, as he was inferior to the privateer in point of sailing.

But greater events than these were, ere long, to be inaugurated on shore, for notwithstanding the decisive victories of Sir Arthur Wellesley and Lord Lake, a new war again broke out. Jeswunt Rao Holkar, during the late contest, had not only promised to join the confederacy against the British, but had concluded a treaty, through the Rajah of Berar, with Scindia; yet, though Holkar had promised everything, he performed nothing, for we are told that truth never abode in the palace or under the tent of a Mahratta chief. By the tide of recent events, Holkar had been violently expelled from Poonah, and, as yet, no friendly arrangements had been made with him.

There is reason to believe that he secretly rejoiced at the vicissitudes which had befallen the other two confederates, by whose weakness he thought now to augment his own power. He had greatly strengthened himself while they had been courting their own destruction, and now he suddenly assumed an attitude calculated to excite alike suspicion and alarm.

The rise and progress of his family were curious features in the Indian history of the eighteenth century. They were sudras of the Dungar (or Dhoongur) shepherd tribe, and took their name from their native village of Hohl, on the river Nura,

* "Naval History," vol. iii.

about fifty miles from Poonah. Mulhar Rao Holkar was the first of the race who rose to distinction. When at the age of five years he was left an orphan, and in 1698 was taken to Candeish, where he was employed by his maternal uncle as a shepherd, it is related that one day, as he lay asleep in a field, a cobra-da-capello was seen to interpose its crest between him and the sunshine; this was deemed such an omen of future greatness, that he was sent to serve as a horseman under Kuddeem Bandee, a noted Mahratta chief. He soon won notice, favour, and then wealth, by marriage with his cousin Golama Bae, and on entering the service of the Peishwa Bajee Rao, he received the command of 500 horse. Accompanying Chinnajee, the brother of the Peishwa, into the Concan, he aided in taking Bassein from the Portuguese; and before 1731 he had obtained a jaghire, containing eighty-two districts north of the Nerbudda.

After Malwa was conquered in 1750, though the ancient landholders, called Grassias, retained, and still retain, possession of some of the hill-forts, nearly the whole of it was divided between Holkar and Scindia, the former receiving a revenue of £745,000 yearly. Mulhar Rao Holkar now fixed his capital at Indore, which, thereafter, assumed the importance of a capital. Mulhar Rao was one of the few Mahratta chiefs who left the field of Paniput without a wound; and it has been alleged that he drew off all his horse and matchlock-men, because the Mahratta commander-in-chief, when urged by him to delay giving battle for a day or two, mockingly asked him—"Who wants advice from a goat-herd?" Renowned for courage as a soldier, and skill as a diplomat, he died at the age of seventy-six, and was succeeded by his grandson, Mallee Rao, a man of sensitive or weak intellect, who died in a paroxysm of madness for having unjustly put an innocent prisoner to death.

His mother, Ahalya Bae, a woman famous for her talents, now conducted the government for thirty years, and selected Tookajee Holkar, of the same tribe, as her commander-in-chief. To him she left the succession, but being older than herself, he could not be adopted as her son; thus by her command, he was, oddly enough, styled Tookajee, son of Mulhar Rao Holkar. He left two legitimate sons, Casee Rao and Mulhar Rao, and two who were illegitimate, Jeswunt Rao and Etojee. Casee being of weak intellect and deformed body, was incapable of reigning, while his brother Mulhar was brave and ambitious, and each brother soon began to plot against the life of the other. Casee Rao courted the protection of Dowlut Rao Scindia,

and his brother that of Nana Furnavese, and hence internal dissension rent the dominions of the house of Holkar.

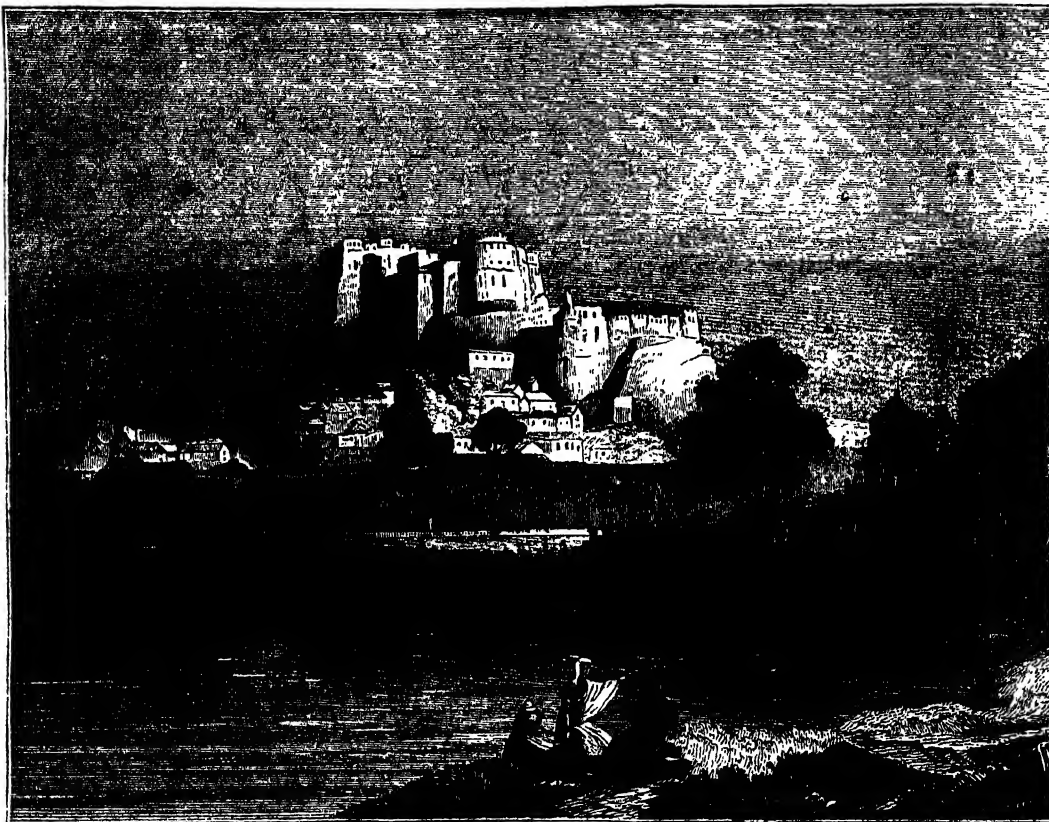
An insincere reconciliation took place between the brothers, and in the course of the subsequent evening, Scindia's disciplined brigades surrounded the camp of Mulhar Rao, and in the confusion he was slain; but among those who escaped was the illegitimate son of Jeswunt Rao, who found shelter at Nagpore, the capital of the Rajah of Berar. The latter, in the hope either of conciliating Scindia or extorting from the fugitive some jewels which he was reported to possess, threw him into a dungeon, from which he made his escape, after eighteen months of captivity, and reached Dharanuggur, in the province of Malwa, where he was warmly welcomed by Anund Rao, head of the Mahratta family of Puar.

The latter was now threatened by Scindia; so, to spare him, Jeswunt Rao Holkar set forth to push his fortunes with a small sum of money and 150 ill-armed men. At their head he surprised and cut to pieces a body of his half-brother Casee Rao's best troops. Other victories followed; but being well aware that if he made war in his own name, his illegitimacy would prevent the great mass of the Holkar adherents from joining him, he pretended to espouse the cause of Kunder Rao, the infant son of Mulhar, who, since Casee's incapacity made him a cypher in the grasp of Scindia, was, he proclaimed, the true heir.

To support the latter he now collected a great army of Mahrattas, Pindarees, Bheels, Afghans, Rajpoots, and all kinds of adventurers, and entered into a treaty with Ameer Khan, a predatory Musulman chief, then encamped, with 1,500 men, at Bhopal, on the northern slope of the Vindhya Mountains, the terms of which bound them to unite their fortunes, for good and evil, for conquest and plunder. At the pillaging of Mhysir, Jeswunt lost an eye by the explosion of a musket; and soon after at Saugor, in the highest part of the tableland of central Hindostan, they obtained enormous booty. With Scindia many well-contested battles were fought, and one near Oojain, in 1799, was won, but chiefly by the skill and valour of Jeswunt. He had bitter reverses after this; but adopted a system of predatory warfare, by which his coffers were always well filled, and he became so formidable, that Scindia would gladly have made peace with him, almost on his own terms; and the Peishwa would have used his great influence as a counterpoise to that of Scindia, had not an act of dreadful barbarity rendered this well-nigh impossible. During the distractions at Poonah, consequent to all

this fighting, Etojee, the only brother of Jeswunt, was taken prisoner, at the head of some insurgent horse. Considering the services his father had rendered, some mercy might have been shown him; but Bajee Rao was remorseless, and remembered only that the father, Tookajee, had leagued with Nana Furnavese against him. "Having seated himself, with his favourite wife, at a window of his palace, he ordered Etojee to be brought out and tied to the foot of an elephant.

raised; but Jeswunt was inexorable. He pillaged and burned the territories of Scindia and the Peishwa without mercy, spread consternation by marching on Poonah, and compelling the Peishwa to make overtures to the British; and finally, at a decisive battle near Poonah, he drove Scindia from the field, with the loss of all his guns, stores, and baggage; while the wretched Peishwa, who had left his palace to take part in the field, on hearing the noise of the cannon, turned and fled. Repairing



VIEW OF JEYPORE.

The unhappy victim cried for mercy, but the Peishwa, turning a deaf ear to his supplications, looked on with composure, while the elephant dragged him forth from the palace-yard to crush him to death in the public street. Besides glutting his revenge, he meant by this barbarous proceeding to please Scindia, who had him completely in his power. In this he may have succeeded, but he appears to have forgotten that he was at the same time provoking the just vengeance of a formidable enemy. Jeswunt loved his brother, and vowed not to rest till he had retaliated on those whom he held to be his murderers."

The Peishwa was a coward, who would gladly have averted the storm of wrath and hate he had

to Savendroog, he finally embarked at Rewa-dunda, as related, in a British ship, which took him to Bassein, where that treaty, on which so much hinged, was concluded with Colonel Close in 1802.

Such was the warrior with whom we now had to deal, and whose attitude had become so threatening. He continued, in the early part of 1804, to declare that he only wished for peace, and even professed a great friendship for the British Government; but his conduct served strongly to indicate other designs, as he kept his great and predatory army in close proximity to our frontiers. Thus the Governor-General instructed Lord Lake to negotiate with him in any way that might lead to an early

the addition of his intentions, and relieve the Company from the expense of watching the hordes of freebooters he had collected from all quarters.

With this object, on the 29th of January, 1804,

After considerable delay, Holkar's *vakeels* brought to Lord Lake the following proposals:—that more free-lances and flying troops had joined his standard. That he should be permitted to levy *chakitt* (black



VIEW IN THE GARDENS OF THE MOGUL'S PALACE, DELHI.

Lake addressed Holkar, stating the terms on which the British Government would leave him in the unmolested exercise of his own authority; but demanding as a pledge of amicable intentions that he would withdraw into his own territories, and cease to menace the Rajah of Jeypore, now our ally.

mail, like the Scottish clans on the Highland border), "agreeably to the custom of his ancestors;" that twelve of the finest districts in the Doab and the country of Hurriana, formerly in possession of Holkar, should be delivered up to him, and fully guaranteed to him. These demands were at once rejected as extravagant. He then

strove to excite our tributaries to revolt against us, and wrote an arrogant and insulting letter to General Lake, which concluded by threatening, "that countries of many hundred *oss* (a measurement of two miles), shall be over-run and plundered. Lord Lake shall not have leisure to breathe for a moment; and calamities will fall on lacs of human beings, in continual war, by the attacks of my army, which overwhelms like the waves of the sea."*

Not satisfied with these threats, he openly solicited the alliance of Scindia, and to anticipate war, commenced to plunder the territories of the Rajah of Jeypore. Papers laid before the House of Commons, prior to our army taking the field, state that—

"The predatory course of proceedings adopted by Holkar, pending a negotiation, was such as to have imposed on the British Government in that quarter, the necessity of using force for the reduction of his usurped power. There appears to have been a great deal of treachery on the part of Holkar; and his hostile disposition before the open rupture took place was on some occasions marked with the most sanguinary and murderous traits.

"Captains Vickers, Todd, and Ryan, British officers in his service, were, in a moment of profound peace, cruelly murdered by him, because they had expressed their determination to return to the British service. The heads of these unfortunate gentlemen were severed from their bodies, exposed on pikes, and the bodies forbid to be buried, on pretence that Captain Todd had carried on a traitorous correspondence with General Lake, which the latter declares was never the case. The Marquis of Wellesley considers that, under all these circumstances, it would be creditable to the justice and honour of the British Government to restore the injured relative of Holkar to his hereditary rights; and, at all events, that the enterprising spirit and perfidious views of the usurper render the reduction of his power a desirable object, with reference to the complete establishment of tranquillity in India."

So far as numbers constituted strength, Holkar, at this time, could bring into the field nearly 50,000 cavalry and 20,000 infantry, with 100 pieces of cannon. His fortresses were numerous; and among them Gaunah and Chandore, amid high and barren hills, at the termination of the Western Ghauts, and ranked among the strongest places in India.

After the savage murders referred to, the ferocious Mahratta chief retired up the valley of

the Jumna, and then a combined movement of our troops took place against him. Colonel Murray, commanding in Goojerat, was ordered to prosecute hostilities in the direction of Indore, the capital; our troops stationed above the Ghauts prepared to operate against his possessions in the Deccan; while Lake began his march westward through the pass of Ballakeera towards the borders of Jeypore.

On the 28th of April he was at Tonk, a town which stands in a triangular hollow, not far from the city of the former name, and which is overlooked by a steep and conical mountain of rock. On the 10th May a detachment, under Colonel Don, was dispatched against Tonk Rampoor, a fort held by Holkar's Rajpoots, about sixty miles southward of Jeypore, and, though strong, it was suddenly reduced five days afterwards. The garrison consisted of 1,100 men, of whom fifty were slain. In some places the walls were forty feet thick and twenty feet high.* On losing this, his only fortress north of the Chumbul, Holkar crossed the river, closely followed by three battalions of native infantry, which Lord Lake had sent forward, under Colonel Monson, together with the troops of the Jeypore Rajah, to press him on one flank, while Colonel Murray, from the direction of Goojerat, was to act upon another.

Deeming these two columns sufficient to keep Holkar in check, Lord Lake retired to Agra, as the troops were suffering fearfully from the hot winds, which destroyed all pasture, so that the cattle perished by scores daily. On halting at Hindown on the 28th of May, tidings reached him that a party of British troops had been cut up in Bundelcund, where Colonel Fawcett had detached seven companies to reduce a fort five miles distant from his position at Koonch. The killedar promised to surrender next day if the firing ceased. To these terms the officer in command agreed; but, meanwhile, the treacherous killedar invited the intervention of Ameer Khan, then in the vicinity at the head of 7,000 horse, who fell suddenly upon the trenches and cut down to a man two companies of sepoys and fifty gunners, and carried off five pieces of cannon. The remaining five companies effected their retreat with the utmost difficulty.

The disastrous march of Lake continued, and daily men perished under the dreadful hot wind—"the Devil's breath." We are told that young men who began the route in the morning full of spirits and in vigorous health, fell dead when they halted; "and many were smitten on the road by the overpowering force of the sun, especially when at meridian, the rays darting downwards like a torrent

* "Malcolm's Pol. Hist. India."

* *Calcutta Gazette.*

of fire;" while, to add to the misery of want of water, hordes of robbers hovered about, pillaging and murdering every straggler, till the troops reached Agra, on the 5th of June.*

Colonel Monson's force consisted of five battalions of infantry and 3,000 irregular cavalry, and with these, hoping to co-operate effectively with Murray, he penetrated into Holkar's territory by the Mokundra Pass, and sent forward a detachment, under Major James Sinclair, to redeem the hill fort of Hinglaisghur, which stands on a height, surrounded by walls and a deep ravine 200 yards in breadth, crossed by three artificial causeways, and deemed, of course, impregnable. On Sinclair's arrival within a mile of this place, he learned that Holkar, with the most of his forces and guns, was within a short distance; but as the rains were at hand, there was no time to be lost, and he at once led his troops to the attack, under a heavy cannonade, which the admirable fire of his artillery silenced in an hour. He then took by storm the fort, which was garrisoned by 800 foot and 300 horse. The killedar escaped, with many others, by a sally port, but they perished miserably in the adjacent jungles.

Colonel Monson had marched fifty miles beyond the pass in the direction of Chumbul, when he heard that Holkar was advancing with his whole army. This was on the 7th of July. The gallant Monson hastened to anticipate the meeting, but found it prudent to desist, as Sinclair's detachment had not yet rejoined him, and another was absent in search of grain. The startling intelligence also came that Colonel Murray was intending to fall back on the river Mhye. He was thus compelled to send off his baggage and stores to Sonara; and at four o'clock on the morning of the 8th of July, 1804, to begin a retreat towards the Mokundra Pass, leaving the irregular cavalry, under Lieutenant Lucan, to cover the movement, and in half an hour after bring him intelligence of Holkar. But he had not proceeded twelve miles when he heard that the latter had cut off Lucan's force, and made him prisoner. On the 9th Monson was in the pass, and on the following day the Mahratta cavalry covered all the slopes of it, and Holkar demanded the surrender of our guns and small arms. This was, of course, refused, and both sides prepared for battle.

Dividing his cavalry into three columns, Holkar charged the detachment, in front and on both flanks, but was always repulsed with great loss, and drew off till his artillery and infantry came up.

* Major Thorn, &c.

Accordingly Colonel Monson, certain that he could not with success resist long in the field, retired upon Kotah, a fortified town on the east bank of the Chumbul; and after two marches, though dreadfully harassed by the enemy, by want of food, and the rains, he succeeded in reaching it, to find its gates closed upon him by the Rajpoot Rajah, and his toil-worn and desperate troops were compelled to turn their weary steps towards the Gaumuch ford on the river. It lay but seven miles distant, but so soft was the soil, and so much was the country now under water, that a whole day was spent ere the ford was reached, only to be found impassable — impassable, and a fierce enemy coming on!

After a brief halt to procure some food, the guns were abandoned amid the mud in which they sank hopelessly; so they were spiked, and the troops pushed on to the Chumbulee, a rivulet, now swollen by the rains to a red and roaring river. On the 17th, the troops began to cross on elephants and rafts, but ten days elapsed ere the whole of them were over, and, in the meantime, their privations nearly drove the men mad. Many of the wives and children of the soldiers, who had been unwisely left to the last on the opposite side, were murdered by the barbarous Bheels, under the eyes of their husbands and fathers, who were unable to yield them the slightest protection.

On reaching Rampoor, a succouring force of cavalry and infantry, with four field-pieces and two howitzers, sent by Lord Lake, now came up on the 29th July, and the retreat was continued towards Kooshalghur. Monson's force, now reduced to five battalions and six companies of sepoy, reached the Bunass on the 22nd of August, but that river was found so-swollen as to be unfordable, yet some boats were procured, and in these the treasure was sent across, under six companies of the 21st Regiment, with orders to lodge it in Kooshalghur.

Early on the following morning, in great strength, the cavalry of Holkar appeared, and pitched their tents at the distance of four miles. On the 24th the waters subsided, and four regiments, most of the baggage, and a howitzer, were sent across by Colonel Monson; but Holkar's cavalry also crossed in great force on both flanks of our position, and at four in the afternoon, their infantry and guns opened a cannonade on the solitary battalion and pickets left on the south bank to protect the passage of the camp-followers, that necessary appendage, and yet curse to all Indian armies. The officer in command of this force, Lieutenant Jones, 2nd Infantry, in a letter dated Agra, September

the 24th, 1804, thus details what ensued to a brother-officer :—

"We were now completely cut off from communication with the army encamped on the other side. Our battalion had only four hundred able to bear arms, and the pickets of the 9th and 12th, and with this small force we had to combat the strength of Holkar's army—nearly 20,000 horse and twenty-eight guns, with four battalions of sepoys, called Alliards, extremely despicable, and without matchlocks. The enemy, perceiving the situation I have described, did not fail to take advantage of it, and immediately posted his guns in a commanding situation, very close to us. The action began by his attacking my picket, only eighty men strong, which was advanced closer to his posts than any other. He continued to bring guns to bear upon me, and with such effect that, in spite of my endeavours to secure myself, I lost upwards of fifty men out of the eighty in ten minutes—all by grape-shot. Monson, the brigadier, seeing that I could not stand, advanced to my support, when a terrible and destructive fire commenced, which unfortunately did too much execution, and the alternative was, either to perish on the spot or endeavour to take his guns. Accordingly our battalion, in the most brave manner, succeeded in securing seven; but the whole of our ammunition being expended, and no possibility of support or means of making use of the enemy's guns appearing—they having had the precaution to run away with the sponge staves—we were under the necessity of retreating. The moment the order was given, and our backs turned, the whole of the enemy rushed in, sword in hand, but for some time were checked by the powerful use of the bayonet. The troops, however, were able to effect their retreat to the river, spent with fatigue, and mostly all wounded—your son included. Everything now, of course, went to wreck, and the officers, as well as the men, consulted their own safety by throwing themselves into the river with the utmost precipitation; and here the final destruction of our battalion ensued.

"Such was the strength of the current, that those who could swim were carried down for miles before they could effect a landing, and in this sad place your unfortunate son was buried. He and his young chum, Walker, perished together—both wounded, and weak with loss of blood. Those who escaped the waves were instantly cut to pieces on their landing on the beach. The enemy showed no quarter to Europeans in particular. I escaped by being put by some faithful sepoys on an elephant, prior to the retreat of the battalion."*

* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, vol. viii.

The attacking foe, led by Holkar in person, nearly annihilated this luckless rear-guard. Colonel Monson was obliged to abandon the baggage, to facilitate his retreat to Kooshalghur, which he reached on the night of the 25th of August, and where he discovered that Sedasheo Bhow Bhaskur, an officer of Scindia's, whom he had expected to join him with six battalions and twenty guns, had declared himself an enemy, and begun to levy contributions in the territory of Jeypore, demanding the surrender of the elephants, treasure, and baggage which had arrived there with the escort of the 12th, under Captain Nicholl, and had actually cannonaded the fort of Kooshalghur, but without effect.

Our loss of officers in this retreat was twenty-two, including Major James Sinclair, who was killed, and many drowned. The prisoners were treated with great inhumanity by Holkar, who cut off the right hand of most of them.

On the morning of the 26th, after his arrival at Kooshalghur, Colonel Monson found himself surrounded by the whole of Holkar's cavalry, between whom and some of his native officers he detected a secret and dangerous correspondence, in consequence of which two companies of sepoys, and many of the Hindostani Horse, went openly over to the enemy. At seven in the evening the colonel moved again, with his troops formed in an oblong square, into which the enemy's charging horsemen strove in vain to hew a passage; and on the following night he reached the ruined and deserted fort of Hindown, from whence, after a few hours' halt, he resumed his most disastrous retreat, at one o'clock in the morning; but was no sooner clear of some rugged ravines, than the yelling and charging hordes of steel-shirted Mahratta horse came thundering down in three divisions. Coolly and bravely the toil-worn infantry reserved their fire till the horses' breasts were almost at the bayonet's point, and then it was poured in with terrible effect.

By sunset on the 28th, sinking with starvation and fatigue, the troops reached the Biana Pass—fifty-four miles south-west of Agra—where it was Monson's intention to halt for the night. But now Holkar's artillery came up and opened fire; confusion ensued; the ranks were broken, and the troops taking fairly to flight, made their way, thinned, disordered, and demoralised, to Agra, pursued as far as Futtehpore by flying parties of the enemy's cavalry.* Of this disastrous affair, Sir Arthur Wellesley wrote thus to Colonel Wallace:—

"In the first place, it appears that Colonel Monson's corps was never so strong as to be able to

* Major Thorn.

engage Holkar's army, if that chief should collect it; at least, the colonel was of that opinion. Secondly, it appears it had not any stock of provisions. Thirdly, that it depended for provisions upon certain rajahs, who urged its advance. Fourthly, that no measures whatever were taken by British officers to collect provisions, either at Boondy or Kotah, or even at Rampoor, a fort belonging to us, in which we had a British garrison. Fifthly, that the detachment was advanced to such a distance, over so many almost impassable rivers and nullahs, without any boats collected, or posts upon those rivers; and, in fact, that the detachment owes its

safety to the Rajah of Kotah, who supplied them with his boats. The result of these facts is an opinion, in my mind, that the detachment must have been lost, even if Holkar had not attacked them with his infantry and artillery." *

While all these horrors had been in progress, Colonel Murray, instead of retreating, as Monson was led to suppose, had been steadily, at the head of the Goojerat division, marching into the heart of Holkar's dominions; and on the 24th of August, the very day that Monson had in desperation abandoned his baggage, took possession of the capital city of Indore, almost without opposition.

CHAPTER LXXIV.

THE WAR WITH HOLKAR.—OCHTERLONY'S DEFENCE OF DELHI.—OUR VICTORIES AT FERRUCKABAD AND DEEG.

THOUGH the rain was pouring down in blinding torrents, and the river and paddy-fields were everywhere full of water, the topes and jungles emitting thick and pestiferous mists, Lord Lake resolved to take the field without delay against the daring Holkar. The cantonments were quitted, and our forces assembled, on the 27th of September, on the right bank of the Jumna, between Agra and Secundra. The army of the now exultant and triumphant Holkar amounted to 92,000 men, of whom 66,000 were cavalry, 19,000 were infantry, and 7,000 were gunners, with 192 pieces of cannon.* By general orders, issued on the 25th, commanding officers were to see that the bayonets and swords of their respective corps be well sharpened.†

Advancing to Mathura (or Muttra), only thirty-five miles distant from Agra, it was abandoned on the approach of this overwhelming force. It is a place venerated as the birth-place of Krishna, and hence the peacocks, parrots, and fish of the territory are regarded as sacred by the Hindoos. The population fled from Mathura, and consternation spread fast over the country.

The British army began its march northward on the 1st of October, and two days after encamped within a mile of Mathura, which Holkar abandoned. Monson's shattered force hailed Lake's appearance in the field with joy, and soon recovered their

discipline; but rage inflamed the troops, as daily there came into camp Holkar's prisoners, mutilated, with their noses and right hands cut off, because they had refused to enter his service. Some of the Mahratta horse, when scouring the country, had fallen in with some convalescent sepoys, with a convoy of a hundred camels, laden with grain for the troops, and captured the whole. The camp of Holkar was at Aurung, on the Deeg road, westward of Mathura, and in that direction Lord Lake marched on the 7th, with the view of attacking him.

A surprise was intended; but though the troops reached the enemy's outposts before daylight, the Mahrattas were all in their saddles, and kept so far aloof, that a charge was impossible with due effect. A second attempt to bring on an action failed; and while Lord Lake was menacing thus before Aurung, Holkar, by a quick movement with his brigades and guns on Delhi, nearly secured the person of the Mogul; but his plan, though well conceived, was frustrated by the Resident, the gallant Colonel (afterward Sir David) Ochterlony, who, on the first tidings of his approach, had mustered all the troops on whom he could rely in the neighbourhood:—Two battalions of sepoys, a company of artillery, and a corps of Burkundazees of Scindia's. This famous Indian officer, who died a baronet, K.C.B., and general of the Bengal army, was a cadet of the family of Pitforth, formerly styled of Ochterlony,

* Malcolm's "Central India."

† "Account of the 15th B. N. Infantry," 1834.

* "Wellington Despatches," 12th September, 1804.

which for two centuries held lands in the shires of Aberdeen and Forfar.*

To the colonel, the possibility of defending Delhi seemed extremely doubtful. On the morning of the 7th, when Holkar's glittering horsemen made their appearance, the infantry were ordered to the walls, which were ancient and ruinous; in some places the ramparts had fallen, in others the bastions were weak and small. Ochterlony intended to employ the irregular cavalry outside; but they were

—the remains of ancient Delhi—his troops were able to approach and effect a breach in the curtain wall, between the Ajmere and Turcoman gates; but they failed to avail themselves of this success, as by the 12th Ochterlony contrived most effectually, by counter works, to cut off all communication, through the breach, with the city; and during the following day not a shot was fired. This silence was, as the wary colonel conjectured, only the prelude to the most serious attack, which was made



VIEW OF MUTTRA.

so few in number that they refused to act, and melted away. Next morning Holkar's foot and artillery appeared, and a heavy cannonade was opened against the south-west portion of the city wall. Forty feet of the parapet fell, and next morning partial breaches were made. Under the inspiring influence of Ochterlony, the defenders repaired the damage, and making a sortie on the 10th, spiked the guns of a battery, and cut down those who manned it. Holkar now addressed his efforts to the southern face; and under cover of the beautiful gardens and great numbers of ruins of ancient temples and tombs which lie in that direction

* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1839.

at daybreak next morning, when a large column of infantry, moving parallel with the line of the Royal Canal, bearing scaling-ladders, attacked the Lahore Gate, about a mile to the left of the breach, where they were met with such a storm of cannon and musket shot, that they flung down their ladders and fled; and by the morning of the 15th, clouds of dust and the glitter of steel announced the approach of Lord Lake, while, at the same time, Holkar's army was seen retreating in the distance; so Delhi was saved by Ochterlony, whose name is still borne by one of the bastions, close by the Turcoman Gate.

On the same day that the army raised the siege

of Delhi, Lord Lake passed through the town of Khoosee, where, a few days before, Holkar had celebrated a grand Nautch, during which the head of a European soldier—a straggler—was brought to him. He gave the bearer twelve rupees, placed the ghastly trophy on a spear, and made the nautch-

and with all the cavalry, Lord Lake pushed on in pursuit. On the 31st of October, he forded the Jumna three miles from Delhi, advancing as swiftly as possible, without a single encumbrance, every fighting man receiving a supply of six pounds of flour, which was to last him for six days. Lake's



INDIAN DANCING GIRL: THE EGG DANCE.

girls dance around it. Entering Delhi on the 18th, Lake encamped in two lines; we are told, between it and the Jumna. This must have been on the ground, between the present bridge of boats and the Cashmere Gate. Meanwhile, Holkar, having crossed the river opposite to Paniput, began to devastate the Doab with fire and sword.

Leaving Fraser in command of the troops, with a reserve brigade of infantry under Colonel Don,

force, thus lightly equipped, arrived on the 3rd of November at Shamli (fifty-two miles north of Delhi), a town in which Colonel Burn had been shut up suddenly by some of Holkar's forces when marching to Saharunpore, and whose troops were now reduced to the direst distress, his Hindoo soldiers refusing to eat beef, and hence remaining without food for several days. As the scarcity of rice was alleged to be caused by the inhabitants

who favoured Holkar, Shamli was given up to plunder; after which Lord Lake, on the 5th, pushed on to Suddanah, the residence of the Begum Sumroo (whom, in an excess of policy, Lord Lake kissed after the engagement at Delhi, in presence of a dinner party), in search of Holkar, who was suspected of seeking her alliance and the aid of her well-disciplined troops, consisting of five regiments, with forty guns, all led by European officers.

Though Holkar was far in advance of his pursuers, busy in the work of devastation, as flames by night and columns of smoke by day served to indicate, his cavalry hovered at times about Lake's line of march. On the 15th of November, he was at Ferruckabad, one of the richest cities of Upper India, where a number of European residents owed their lives on this day to Lord Lake's rapid movements, who, as he was spurring on, received the pleasant news of our victorious encounter at Deeg, to be detailed presently.

The dawn of the 17th was just brightening the minarets of Ferruckabad, when the head of our column reached the Mahratta camp in front of it. Their horses were picketed; and the troopers lay by them in sleep, till some plunging rounds of grape from our galloper guns, made it the last long sleep of many, and roused the rest to arms; then on dashed our cavalry, charging and cutting them down in all directions.

The 8th Royal Irish were the first among them, spreading terror and havoc. At the head of a body of horse, Holkar mounted a favourite charger and fled; while his troops scattered in all directions, leaving their horses tied to the picket-ropes. A few of Holkar's bands attempted to form and offer some resistance; but they were charged, broken, dispersed, and a fearful carnage took place, for our soldiers remembered their mutilated comrades. One small party of the Royal Irish plunged into the dense masses of the Allygole Musketeers, and soon covered the whole ground with their corpses. After continuing the pursuit for a considerable distance, the trumpets sounded to "retire," having, with six galloper guns, under Captain Clement Browne, traversed about seventy miles in twenty-four hours; the men and horses were so exhausted that they were allowed two days of rest.* Singular to say, the fiery Holkar had been among the first to fly, and, with all the cavalry he could mount, never drew bridle till he had crossed the Calin River, at a ford eighteen miles distant from the field.

The fury and distance of the pursuit, after a long and harassing march of 350 miles, extending over a

* "Records, 8th Hussars."

fortnight, is, perhaps, says Major Thorn, "unparalleled in the annals of military history."* The smallness of our loss, only two killed and twenty wounded, seems incredible when contrasted to that of the enemy, which was estimated at 3,000 slain on the field; the cavalry of Holkar, 60,000 lances and sabres with which he had entered Hindostan, was now reduced to half that number.

On this same day, the 17th of November, three royal salutes, fired in succession, awoke the echoes of the walls of Ferruckabad: one for the victory there; a second for the capture of Chandore, the stronghold of Holkar's family in the Deccan, by Colonel Wallace; and a third for the victory of Deeg.

Shortly after Lord Lake marched in pursuit of Holkar's cavalry, Major-General Fraser set out in search of his other forces, which were known to be within the Bhurtpore territory, and on the 12th of November he came upon them in the neighbourhood of Deeg, a town and fortress, defended by extensive embankments from the hill torrents, and now containing the ruins of many handsome edifices. The enemy were seen encamped between a deep tank and an extensive morass, their left resting on the fort of Deeg, and their right covered by a fortified village; while their whole position was strengthened by ranges of redoubts, which they deemed impregnable. Their works were under the immediate protection of the fire from the ramparts of the same fort which had defied Nujeef Khan in 1776. "The most remarkable object it contained," wrote an officer who served under Fraser, "was an iron gun, mounted on the bastion which overlooked the field of the 13th November: it was large and heavy, its ball being upwards of seventy pounds in weight; and yet so accurately was it poised upon its carriage, or rather, pivot, that a child might have pointed it. Its range, too, was very great, for a day or two after the engagement it sent a shot over the quarter-guard of the European Regiment, through the tent of an officer, then lying desperately wounded. The distance, estimated by the engineer, was at least two and a half miles, or 4,400 yards. How often the piece could be loaded, and in a given time, I failed to ascertain."†

In spite of the strength of the place, Major-General Fraser, on the evening of the 12th November, resolved to attack the position on the following day. Two battalions of sepoys and the irregular cavalry having been left in charge of the baggage, the force that advanced into the field consisted of H.M. 76th Regiment, the Company's European Regiment, and four battalions of sepoys.

* "Memoir of the War." † "Mil. Autobiog.," 1834.

General Fraser having selected the enemy's right as the point to be assailed, the column, after making a *détour* to avoid the marshes, arrived about dawn at the fortified village, and from marching order, wheeled into two lines: the 76th and two battalions forming the first; the rest of the troops the second.

In Deeg, the enemy are said to have had twenty-four battalions, a considerable body of horse, and 160 guns, including thirteen lost by Colonel Monson on his retreat, and thirty-two given to the Mahrattas by Lord Cornwallis at Seringapatam. The 76th Regiment—a Scottish corps raised in 1787—carried the fortified village by the bayonet alone, and then rushing tumultuously down hill, charged the first line of guns under a literal tempest of round, grape, and chain shot; but the guns were abandoned, and their defenders fled to the next line of works, which were nearly two miles distant, and immediately under the walls of Deeg, from which our troops were compelled to fall back.

During their advance, the enemy's horse retook the first line of guns, and wheeled them round upon our troops; but Captain Henry Norfield, of the 76th, with only twenty-eight men of that gallant regiment, actually retook them and drove the enemy off, but fell in doing so. At the lower end of the morass was a dense column of Holkar's infantry, with many heavy guns; but during the whole action both were kept in check by Major Hammond, with two battalions and three six-pounders. In the furious advance, General Fraser had his leg smashed by a cannon-shot and was borne to the rear, when the command devolved upon Colonel Monson; but the valiant Fraser, says Lord Lake, in his despatch, continued to encourage the troops "long after he had fallen, and his voice impelled them, till a complete and glorious victory crowned and rewarded his exertions." Elsewhere he says, "his plan for attacking the enemy, in the glorious battle of Deeg, evinces the highest judgment and sagacity, and his conduct at the head of the army proves the most deliberate courage and determined resolution."

The second line of works yielded like the first; redoubt after redoubt was taken, till the enemy sought safety in flight. Many flung themselves wildly into the morass and perished miserably, while a few found shelter under the guns of the fort. Our loss was 643 killed and wounded, among whom were twenty-three British officers; but of the enemy more than 2,000 were killed or drowned; eighty-seven pieces of cannon, all of European make, were captured, and Holkar's twenty-four battalions were broken up and scattered.*

* Major Thorn, &c.

General Fraser expired after his leg had been amputated, and he was interred on the evening of the 25th at Mathura, with military honours. "In lamenting the loss of this brave officer," wrote Lord Lake, "I have the consoling reflection, that his memory will remain dear in the breast of every soldier; that his splendid example will animate to future deeds of heroism; and that his fame and glory will be consecrated and preserved by a grateful and admiring country."*

One of his seven sons was by his side when he received his death-wound.†

Holkar, after his rout at Ferruckabad, had hastened off to Deeg, where the remnants of his defeated cavalry and infantry had found shelter in the fort. This place belonged to the Rajah of Bhurtpore, with whom, in 1803, Lord Lake had made a treaty, offensive and defensive; but as he, like most of the native princes, proved false, Lake resolved to punish him; thus, his fort and citadel were stormed after an obstinate defence; and by the 25th of December, 1804, we were in possession of all the remaining artillery of Holkar's army and of the stores in Deeg, including two lacs of rupees found in the treasury. The attacking force was formed in three columns, the whole moving off so as to reach the different points of attack before midnight. The right column, under Captain Kelly, and the left, under Major Radcliffe, were destined to carry the batteries and trenches on the right and left of the town: a service which they performed with the most heroic gallantry. The centre column, under Colonel Macrae, composing the storming party, under an appalling fire of cannon and musketry on their flanks, and over very broken ground, rushed to the breach, and won the walls with a glorious spirit and ardour that must have ensured success, in spite of any opposition; fifty-nine pieces of cannon were taken in the town and fort.

In the capture, we had twenty-eight Europeans killed, and seventy-eight wounded; of natives, 101 killed, 106 wounded, and five missing. Among the casualties were fifteen European officers.‡

Following up the track of Holkar, on the 28th, Lord Lake crossed the Jumna by a bridge of boats at Mathura, and rejoined his infantry, which were then encamped about three miles to the westward. During the month's separation, one account says, his cavalry had ridden upwards of 500 miles.

The reduction of Chandore in Candeish, the strongest place held by Holkar on the side of the Deccan, had been schemed out by General

* Despatches, *Gazette*, &c. † *Scots Magazine*, 1805.

‡ Lake's Despatch.

Wellesley; and the troops detailed for that service consisted of some of the Company's subsidiary forces serving with the Nizam and the Peishwa, together with contingents furnished by these princes. The whole were commanded by Colonels Wallace and Haliburton, who, through General Wellesley's care were amply supplied with money and provisions. After a long march, early in October, Wallace succeeded in capturing the fort of Lassen-gong, twelve miles from the strong pass which Chandore commands. An easy march then brought him before the latter, and, from its past reputation in war, a resolute defence was expected; but the batteries of Wallace were no sooner ready to open, than Holkar's killedar displayed the white flag, and surrendered, upon condition that the garrison should be allowed to carry off all baggage, and that private property should be respected. The fall of Chandore led to the surrender of many small dependent forts, and thus Holkar lost all his possessions south of the Tapti River.

In the same month, an expedition to Khurda, the rajah of which, Muckund Deo, had rebelled, closed the military operations of the year 1804. Situated in Orissa, with the exception of a few isolated hills,

this province is flat, and towards the south is still covered by an impervious forest, and the only avenues to the interior are through strongly-fortified defiles. The Khurda Rajah was always invested with sovereign authority, and was the sole fountain of honour in Cuttack. He was also hereditary high-priest of Juggernaut, and keeper of the idol's wardrobe.

Against this personage, who had taken up arms, Captain Hickland marched, on the 19th of October, with 120 of the 5th Native Infantry, and a six-pounder, and attacked him at Dillory, where he was posted with 1,000 infantry, besides horse, all of whom he put to flight. Detachments of five other Madras corps entered Khurda in three directions; and, driven from all his fortresses, the rajah took refuge in the jungles, where he was captured and shut up in the fort of Midnapore. Government kept the country; but in three years permitted him to proceed to Paoree, on a salary of 200 rupees monthly, to serve as high-priest in the celebrated temple of Juggernaut. His descendant has been acknowledged only as a landholder, his territory being under the entire management of British officials.

CHAPTER LXXV.

THE FOUR FATAL ASSAULTS ON BHURTPORE.—AMEER KHAN.—END OF THE BLOCKADE.

THE next object to be undertaken by Lord Lake was the siege of Bhurtpore, situated about twenty miles S.S.E. of Deeg, on a plain amidst lakes and jungles. By the capture of the former place the war against Holkar would have been ended, had it not been for his alliance with Runjeet Sing, the Rajah of Bhurtpore, whose cavalry had served with those of Holkar at Deeg; and by whose artillery in that fortress we had suffered our greatest losses. Moreover, after the battle, his fortress had received as many of the fugitive Mahrattas as could escape into it; therefore, it was resolved to carry the war into the heart of Runjeet's territories, to reduce all his forts, and capture Bhurtpore, his capital.

On the 1st of January, 1805, Lord Lake began his march against this well-defended place, with his troops eager for battle, and all in the highest spirits. The country was clear of the enemy, and they

pursued their march without trouble or precaution. Hunting parties were frequent, and as wild hogs and deer abounded, there was a good deal of sport, and game was a frequent dish at many of our camp tables. After a successful day's hunting or shooting (says an officer who was present), the etiquette was, particularly with those who knew how to make it subservient to their own private views, to send the head of a hog, or a haunch of venison, to headquarters, and to make their appearance at the breakfast or dinner-table, where a large party assembled daily.*

Lord Lake was before Bhurtpore on the 2nd of January, and immediately began to break ground. Its condition he describes thus, in his despatch to the Governor-General. "A mud wall of great height and thickness, and a very wide and deep ditch everywhere around it. The fort is situated

* "Mil. Autobiog.," 1834.

at its eastern extremity, and is of a square figure. One side of that square overlooks the country; the remaining three sides are within the town. It occupies a situation which seems more elevated than the town, and its walls are said to be higher, and of greater width and deepness. The circumference of both the town and fort is upwards of eight miles, and their walls in all that extent are flanked with bastions at short distances, on which are mounted a very numerous artillery."

Encamping on the south side of the town, Lord Lake seized a grove in advance to facilitate his approaches; but this was not done without difficulty; and on the evening of the 5th a breaching battery, armed with only six eighteen-pounders, was erected, which opened fire next day, in unison with another battery, having eight mortars, throwing shells. The fire was continued, without intermission, till the morning of the 9th, when a breach in the western curtain, not far from the south-west angle, was reported to the general. Previous breaches had been made, but these were successfully stockaded by the enemy; and to prevent them doing so in this instance, it was resolved at once to assault.

At seven o'clock in the evening the stormers moved off in three columns: one to assault a gateway on the left of the breach, another to carry some advanced guns of the enemy on the right, while the third, or central column, led by Lieutenant-Colonel Maitland, of the 75th Highlanders, consisting of 500 Europeans and a battalion of sepoys, was to carry the breach.

By eight o'clock they issued from the head of the trenches, and immediately were assailed by a terrific fire of cannon and musketry, as they rushed furiously to the three points of attack. Lord Lake had hoped that Maitland's column would take the enemy by surprise; but in this it failed, owing to the darkness of the night, the irregularity of the intervening ground, which was broken up by swamps and pools, and, as the general reported, the great depth of water in the ditch. Surmounting this difficulty, the gallant Maitland, though losing men on every hand—some in the confusion following the right column, and some the left—led the stormers up the breach, which proved so imperfect, that all attempts to gain the summit were made in vain, and there was a horde of the enemy, clad in yellow garments, brandishing their glittering tulwars.

The booming of the great guns and the roar of the flashing musketry filled the whole air, together with hurrahs, and the somewhat unusual accompaniment of the drums and fifes, playing "The

British Grenadiers," near the foot of the breach. Finding the latter impracticable, Colonel Maitland resolved to lead his column somewhat to the left, and sent an officer, Lieutenant J. L. Stuart, to order a company in the trenches to cease firing. "I shall never forget," says the writer already quoted, who commanded that company, "the martial appearance which Stuart's fine tall figure made, as he stood upon the parapet of the trenches, illumined by the blaze of cannon, and the musketry flashing in every direction. He wore an unsheathed sword—the scabbard had been dispensed with—hanging from a waist-belt, in which he had secured a pair of double-barreled pistols; over one shoulder was slung a powder-horn, over the other a dirk, accompanied by a flask of Highland comfort; and to complete the equipment, he had a well-poised hog-spear, a weapon which, wielded by his powerful arm, was seldom known to miss the object against which it was directed."

The firing at this point consequently ceased. The flank companies of H.M. 22nd (Cheshire) had got far up into the breach, but being reduced to only twenty-three men, Lieutenant George Mansergh made them crouch down to avoid the dreadful fire from the guns they were unable to capture. By this time, Colonel Maitland, after receiving several severe wounds, fell, shot through the head. Every account of this affair is most confused.

"Although we unfortunately failed in gaining possession of the place, we were not wholly unsuccessful; a flanking column on the right, under the orders of Major Hawkes, gained possession of the enemy's battery, and succeeded in spiking and disabling their guns, and in destroying the greatest part of the enemy who were opposed to them."*

Eventually, the whole attempt proved a lamentable failure, and our troops retired with a loss of eighty-five killed, 371 wounded, and one missing—Ensign Hatfield, 75th Highlanders. Among those in the first, were thirty-two officers; the enemy butchered in cold blood all the wounded who fell in the ditch or beyond the other wall, and thus several of Lake's best officers perished.

The enemy stockaded the breach, so fresh batteries were thrown up. On the 18th of January, Major-General Smith arrived in camp, with three battalions of sepoys, belonging to the garrison of Agra, and 100 European convalescents, who, by a circuitous route, had performed a fifty miles' march in twenty-four hours. At the same time, Ismael Beg deserted from Holkar and joined the British, with 500 horse; but, lured by a present of six lacs of rupees and the tempting prospect of plunder,

* Despatch, 10th January, 1805.

Ameer Khan, an adventurer of Afghan descent, who was then pillaging in Bundelcund, marched with all his forces to Bhurtpore, to assist Runjeet, the rajah.

To breach the walls a little more to the right, two twenty-four, and four eighteen-pounders, with

and easily raised or depressed by means of levers, were provided, and it was resolved to ascertain the exact features of the locality to be attacked.

"To learn the breadth and depth of the ditch, a havildar, and two troopers of the 3rd Native Cavalry, volunteered their services. Dressed like natives of



COLONEL MAITLAND AT BHURTPORE.

several twelve-pounders to sweep the parapets, opened with such admirable effect, that a new gap was effected, and though the enemy stockaded it, the palisades were knocked to pieces, and a breach left in their work; and for five days the battery rained its iron shower, till the assault was deemed practicable. The late rough lesson had inculcated caution; and, under an idea that the ditch was not fordable, three broad ladders, covered with laths,

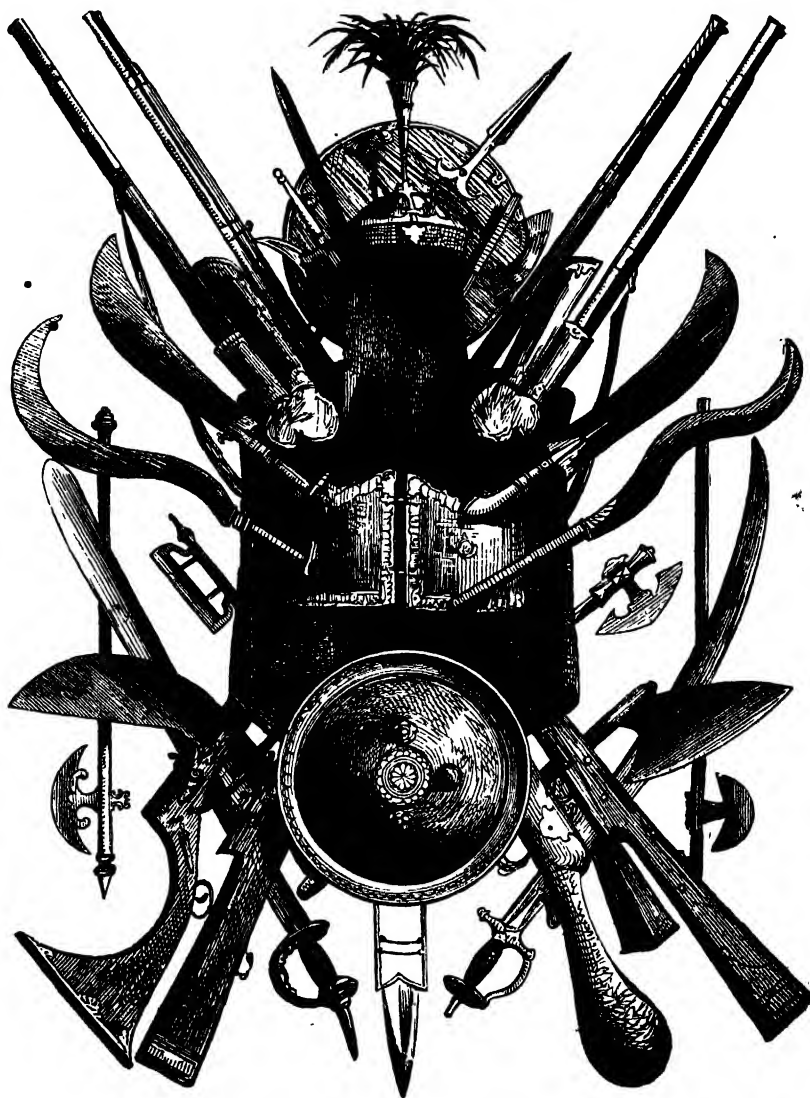
the country, and pursued by men, as if deserters, they got to the ditch by the stratagem of pretending to be enemies of the British, and wishing to enter the fort, by which plan they passed along the ditch to a gateway, saw the breach, and then galloped back to the army."†

They were promoted, and rewarded by £50 each. Though the information they gave was but loose

* Major Thorn.

to be acted on, another assault was fixed for the following day, the 21st of January. The stormers consisted of 150 men of the 76th, 120 of the 75th Highlanders, 100 of the 1st Europeans, and fifty survivors of the 22nd Flankers, the last led by E. Lindsay, their senior captain.

counter a new and insurmountable obstacle. By damming up the ditch at a certain point, and sending in a large body of water from another, the depth and width of the ditch now rendered it impassable, and the portable bridges useless—though a few brave and reckless fellows plunged in and



GROUP OF INDIAN WEAPONS OF WAR.

Picked men bore the portable bridges, which they had been trained to handle. The advance was to be supported by the remainder of the regiments named, and by battalions of the 9th, 15th, and 22nd Native Infantry. The command of the whole escalade was entrusted to a veteran Highlander, Colonel Kenneth Macrae, of the 76th Regiment, who served at the storming of Deeg.

Covered by the fire of the batteries, the stormers issued from the trenches only to en-

swam across, reaching the breach only to leave their corpses there. The enemy had, silently and grimly, allowed our people to advance, without a single matchlock-man showing himself upon the wall, till Macrae's escalade was within half musket-shot of the place. Then they rose by word of command, and opened a heavy rolling fire from the parapets, and this continued, without a moment's intermission, so long as our people were within range. The column was attended by a

number of camels, carrying fascines and sand-bags to assist in filling up the ditch ; the first effect of the matchlock fire was to scare these animals away, and add to the confusion of this, our second futile attack. Colonel Macrae now ordered the column to retire, and in doing so it had to run a gauntlet of destructive fire, which killed and wounded 591. Among these were eighteen officers, including Captain Lindsay, of the 22nd; wounded for the third time.

It would seem that, notwithstanding his successful resistance, the rajah proposed terms of surrender ; but they were such as met with refusal. He was required by us to pay the expenses of the war against him, and give three lacs to the troops. These conditions he declined ; and, having collected in the fort the women, children, and treasure, vowed that he would bury them all, and himself, too, under the ruins, rather than consent either to these terms or an unconditional surrender.

The mode of attacking Bhurtpore was now changed. The army encamped on fresh ground to the north and east of the town, and operations were renewed by regular approaches and batteries, not as before, at 700 yards from the wall, but at 400. On the 11th February, two batteries, armed with six 18-pounders and eight mortars, opened at this distance, while another, to enfilade the defences of the right bastion, was in progress. By the 20th, the approaches had reached the brink of the ditch, and a mine was intended to be sunk, for the purpose of blowing up the counterscarp and giving a sloping access thereto.

For a third assault all things were now in readiness, and the stormers were ordered into the trenches, so as to be ready for the attack at an early hour, or the moment the repairs made by the enemy over-night in the breach were destroyed ; but so much had the enemy been encouraged by their past success, that on the same night Lake issued these orders they made a sally, and actually crept into the approach unperceived ; there they demolished the preparations which had been made for the mine, and carried off the trenching tools.

The storming party had just entered the parallels, when another sally, composed partly of those who were lurking in the approach and of men from the town, rushed upon them, and were not driven in without considerable loss. As a trench in the advanced breach was still held by the enemy, it was proposed to drive them out, and follow them into the body of the place ; but frequent repulses had caused the troops to lose heart, and the 75th Highlanders and 76th Foot actually refused to advance.

The few survivors of the flank companies of the 22nd were rushing forward, but as they could achieve nothing alone, they were recalled ; and now the 12th and 15th Native Infantry were ordered to head the column. The ditch near the breach proved again impassable ; but a bastion near it, though of formidable aspect, was surmounted by some sepoys of the 12th, who planted their regimental colours on it ; and eventually the troops were repulsed a third time, with the loss of 894 men.

Lord Lake, having seen the activity with which the men of the 12th had got upon the bastion, conceived that a little battering would render it easier of ascent, and resolved to make it the point of a new attack ; and on parade addressed the men of the 75th and 76th, expressing his sorrow for their lost laurels, and invited volunteers to retrieve their reputation. On this, both regiments stepped to the front as one man. Meanwhile, the batteries had been breaching the bastion, in which an enormous gap soon yawned, and once again the stormers went forward when their pouches were nearly destitute of ammunition.

They embraced the whole of the European troops (the 65th, 75th, 76th, and 86th Royal County Down), two battalions of Bengal Infantry, and the flank companies of the 3rd Bombay Regiment : the whole led by Brigadier Monson, of the 76th. No plan of a proper assault seemed to have been formed, and in a blundering way, these brave men were sent again to fight their way up the wall, or what remained of it, as best they could ; yet they cheered heartily as they rushed past Lord Lake, with the resolution to conquer or die.

"The bastion to be attacked was extremely steep," says Major Hough, "and there was no possibility of getting up to the summit. Several soldiers drove their bayonets into the wall, and endeavoured by these steps to reach the top ; but were knocked down by logs of wood, and other missiles, from above. The enemy from the next bastion kept up a destructive fire. Several efforts were made against the curtain, and the enemy's grape told with fatal effect. The people on the walls threw down upon the heads of the troops ponderous pieces of timber, and flaming packs of cotton, previously dipped in oil, followed by pots filled with gunpowder and other terrible combustibles, the explosion of which had dreadful effect. The struggle was carried on with the most determined resolution on both sides. Brigadier Monson strained himself to the utmost in maintaining the unequal struggle ; but after two hours' arduous exertion, he was

reluctantly compelled to relinquish the attempt, and return to the trenches."*

Major Thorn tells us that many of the stormers had striven to get up by the holes made by cannon-shot; "but as only two at most could advance in this dangerous way, they who ventured were easily killed, and when one man fell, he brought down with him those who were immediately beneath." Prodigies of valour were performed; Lieutenant Templeton fell, just as he planted the British colours near the summit of the fatal bastion, and Major Menzies who followed him, was also slain, in the act of cheering on his men. The enemy's guns were well served by some Frenchmen, and others, trained to war under M. Perron.

We fell back, with a loss of 987 killed and wounded, which, added to previous losses, gives an aggregate of 3,203 men. This number is irrespective of the many who died in camp of diseases incident to the climate and the campaign. Considering the reduction of the fortress by the sword as impracticable, the siege was turned into a blockade. The breaching guns had become un-serviceable, and all were blown in the touch-hole; and as large foraging parties had to be sent out for the collection of supplies, the position of the whole army became critical, especially when Lord Lake, while taking up new camping ground, north-east of the city, met with severe interruptions from the enemy's cavalry, at a time when our own was on service elsewhere.

We have mentioned that the Rajah of Bhurtpore had sought to strengthen himself by an alliance with Ameer Khan, then ravaging in Bundelcund, and our cavalry, under Major-General Smith, were detached in quest of this famous marauder. Ameer had attempted to cut off a convoy of 12,000 bullocks, and had nearly succeeded in doing so, by attacking, with 8,000 men, the escort, which only amounted to 1,400 in all. A reinforcement from our camp fortunately arrived in time, and he was repulsed, with a loss of 600 men and forty stand of colours. His rout was so complete that he was compelled to change his showy costume and mingle with the fugitives; but during the conflict many laden bullocks strayed away and were never seen again.

On the 27th of January, Ameer Khan had the hardihood to make an attempt upon another convoy coming from Agra. It consisted of 50,000 bullocks laden with grain, and some 800 hackeries carrying ammunition and stores, including 8,000 rounds for the siege 18-pounders, and six lacs of rupees, escorted by H.M. 29th Light Dragoons,

two corps of native cavalry, and three battalions of sepoys.

Hoping to make spoil of this valuable convoy, midway between Agra and Bhurtpore, the rajah and his allies, Holkar, Ameer Khan, and Bapoojee Scindia, united all their powers in the field; but they were again baffled, and handled more severely than before, while the whole convoy came in without the slightest loss.

The four confederates now began to quarrel and blame each other as being the cause of their reverses; and the rajah, in particular, came to regard his allies as expensive encumbrances, till Ameer Khan set out to other districts in search of plunder. With this view he sought Rohilcund, his native country, and was joined by a large body of the robber Pindarees, of whom we shall have much more to record at a future time.

Believing that our troops were fully occupied before Bhurtpore, he crossed the Jumna on the 7th of February, 1805, in full expectation of a large booty; but in this he was disappointed, as on the following day General Smith, with the 8th Royal Irish, the 27th and 29th Light Dragoons, the Horse Artillery, and three regiments of native cavalry, was following sharply on his track. Crossing the Jumna at Mathura by a pontoon bridge, they encamped three miles beyond the river; and after much marching and counter-marching, in pursuit of Ameer Khan, whose rapid and erratic movements were little known, at Allyghur they were joined on the 11th by a strong force, under Colonel Grueber, who, on hearing of Ameer's arrival in the Doab, had abandoned the siege of Comona, a fort held by some rebels.

A hot pursuit was now made northward, as far as Comandanaghaut, on the Ganges, when it was learned, with certainty, that Ameer Khan had only the day before entered Rohilcund. On ascertaining that the river was only breast-high, our cavalry plunged in and swam across, at a point where it was a mile from bank to bank.* Passing Moradabad, and then Rampoor, in view of the stupendous ranges of the snow-capped Himalayas, they reached Sheerghur, only to learn that Ameer was further north among the mountains, where, for the present, he could not be easily followed.

On the 1st of March, when our cavalry were near Badalle, the still smoking ruins of several villages afforded proof that Ameer was not far off. General Smith had soon distinct tidings that he was only nine miles distant; and leaving his baggage with the rear guard and 3rd Cavalry, he hastened on the spur with his remaining troops, 1,400 regulars and

* Hough's "Exploits, &c., in India."

* "Records, 8th Hussars."

Skinner's Horse. At two in the afternoon he came upon the enemy, near Afzulghur, close under the Kumaon Hills, drawn up as if in expectation of an attack.

The 27th and 29th Dragoons formed line to the front; the Royal Irish and 6th Native Cavalry formed in support; but, as the squadrons advanced, their progress was suddenly arrested by a deep ravine, in which a body of Allygoles were concealed. These sprang up and attacked the first line in so daring a manner, that some confusion followed, till the rear squadron of the 8th, led by Captain George Dean, on hearing the sound of steel meeting steel behind him, gave the words, "Threes about—gallop!" At the head of his men, Skinner followed his example, and the two squadrons rushed to the rescue, at the moment when the Allygoles were sabreing the Bengal Horse Artillerymen, who had hardly time to unlimber ere the enemy were among the guns and wagons.*

This movement struck terror into Ameer Khan's cavalry, who fled in dismay; but his infantry, which consisted of newly-levied Patans and Pindarees, fought boldly, and perished to a man. We captured thirty stand of colours. Among these "were two golden standards which were carried by the *Yekus*, Ameer Khan's chosen body-guard."†

When entering Moradabad on the 5th, General Smith learned that Ameer Khan, with his cavalry, by taking a circuitous route, after his defeat, had passed near that place on the preceding day. As it was supposed that his object was still to plunder in Southern Rohilcund, it was resolved to anticipate his arrival, and this movement compelled him to double westward towards Sumbul; and now an interesting incident occurred, with reference to Captain Skinner and his younger brother, who, at the head of 500 horse, had been detached across the Ganges, and when near Sumbul, was suddenly attacked by a greater force, led by Ameer Khan, now breathing only revenge and slaughter. Young Skinner's troops "took shelter in a caravansary, which was gallantly defended for several days, though, from the vast superiority of the enemy's numbers, and still more from a want of provisions, an early surrender seemed inevitable. Captain Skinner, made aware of his brother's position, and of the impossibility of relieving him, had recourse to the following stratagem:—Having written a letter to his brother, desiring him to hold out, as the main body of the British cavalry would be with him in a few hours, he dispatched it with a messenger, with instructions to throw himself in Ameer Khan's way,

and give up the letter to him. The moment it was read, Ameer Khan took flight and decamped, leaving young Skinner and his detachment overjoyed at a deliverance, for which, till the matter was explained, they were wholly unable to account."

On the dispersion of Ameer Khan's forces, the cavalry returned to Bhurtpore, where they arrived on the 23rd of March, after having traversed 700 miles in rather more than five weeks.*

In the preceding month, Rampoor (or Rampurah), a large and populous town, the capital of the jaghire of the celebrated Fyzoola Khan, was captured, and thus the whole of Holkar's possessions on the left bank of the Chumbul fell into our hands. Colonel Murray commanded on this occasion, with the 2nd Battalion of the 2nd and the 86th Regiments. After firing a few shots, the garrison retired to a neighbouring hill, and the place was taken without loss on our side.†

Finding that he was left almost single-handed to contend with Lord Lake, and seeing the vast quantities of stores arriving to continue the blockade of Bhurtpore, the rajah began to lose heart, and wrote to the general, intimating a desire for peace. The overture was favourably received; his vakeels arrived in the British camp; the negotiations began, but proceeded slowly; and meanwhile some important events occurred elsewhere.

As Holkar had re-appeared with the remains of his forces, and was encamped about eight miles westward of Bhurtpore, the general resolved to attack him by surprise, as soon as the cavalry were rested and refreshed. Accordingly, at two in the morning of the 29th of March, without sound of trumpet, they moved silently out of the lines, accompanied by an infantry column, under Colonel Don. Holkar had timely information of what was intended, and was prepared for instant retreat. He suffered some loss from the firelocks of the infantry; 200 of his men were cut down by the cavalry in a single charge, and a great quantity of his baggage, with two elephants, 100 horses, and fifty camels, captured.‡

On the 1st of April, Lord Lake, learning that Holkar had again assembled the greater part of his troops in position sixteen miles from Bhurtpore, with his cavalry, the reserve and flying artillery, again moved silently off at midnight, and suddenly fell upon him, by an attack in front and on both flanks at once. Great numbers were slain on the spot, and many more in the pursuit, which was continued for eight miles. The whole of the bazaars were captured, and large bodies of troops,

* "Major Kennedy's (B.H.A.) Narrative."

† "Hist. Rec. 8th Hussars."

* "Hist. Rec. 8th Hussars." † *Calcutta Gaz.*, Feb. 21st, 1805.

‡ *London Gaz.*, Oct. 8th.

considering Holkar's cause as desperate, abandoned it. In this *alerte* 1,000 of his men perished, while we had only two killed and a few wounded.*

At the head of 8,000 cavalry and 5,000 foot, with about thirty guns, the miserable remains of his once vast army, he fled across the Chumbul River, while several of his chiefs with their followers came over to the British camp. Some who were advancing to his succour were cut to pieces by a British detachment from Agra; and then Holkar, disguised, it is said, as a fakir, fled to Scindia, who, undeterred by the rough chastisement he had received from General Wellesley, and the treaty he had concluded in 1803, was actually contemplating renewal of the war with Britain.

On the 8th of April, our army before Bhurtpore took ground more to the south-east, and his indication of active operations compelled the rajah to think honestly and seriously of peace. Thus, on the 10th, the preliminaries were signed; and on the 11th his third son came into camp, as a hostage for the due fulfilment of the actual terms, which were these:—

1. The fortress of Deeg was to remain in British hands till we were assured of the rajah's fidelity, he pledging himself never to have connection more with any of our enemies, nor to employ, without the sanction of the Company, any Europeans in his service.

2. He was to pay the Company, by instalments, twenty lacs of Ferruckabad rupees, and to give up some territories which the Company had formerly annexed to his dominions.

3. He was to deliver up one of his sons as a hostage for the due execution of these terms, to reside with British officers, either at Delhi or Agra.

When happier times came, Lord Lake went to visit the humbled rajah, mounted on an elephant of immense size—the same venerable animal on

which the Prince of Wales made his entry into Agra in 1876.

On receiving the first instalment of the money and the young hostage, our troops broke up from before Bhurtpore, where they had been for three months and twenty days in open trenches. They began their march on the 21st of April, for Poonah, from whence the cavalry took up their quarters for the rainy season in the tomb of the great Emperor Akbar at Secundra, seven miles from Agra. During this campaign they had traversed, independently of their long march from Cawnpore to Delhi, 500 miles in pursuit of Holkar, and 700 in pursuit of Ameer Khan—thus undergoing an extent of toil and privation unknown in European warfare.*

"Two regiments of British Dragoons," says a writer, "found comfortable lodgings in the immense mausoleum of Akbar, sheltering their horses in the once magnificent garden, and eating, and sleeping, and pursuing their trooper sport among the white marble tombs of the potentate and his family, and of the Mogul Omrahs. The men were rough dragoons, without any of those pretensions to taste and reverence for works of art and antiquity, which were at this time set up by, or for, the armies of Bonaparte; but they had the English feeling of respect for the dead, and they offered no violence to the sanctity of the tombs, though they were rumoured to contain gold and jewels, and they left the marble slabs and the ornamented Saracenic arches, the sculptures, the carvings, and the mosaic pavements, in as good order as they found them. To the honour of our troops, let this conduct be contrasted with that of the French in the sepulchral abbey of Batalha, in Portugal, and the numerous other edifices devoted to the ashes of the illustrious dead and to the services of the Christian religion."†

CHAPTER LXXVI.

CORNWALLIS AGAIN GOVERNOR-GENERAL.—HIS DEATH AND TOMB.

PEACE had barely been made at Bhurtpore, when some disputes with Scindia led to the fear that another Mahratta war might ensue. His

* *London Gazette*, Oct. 8th.

sympathies had ever been with Holkar, and doubt alone of the final issue made him hesitate to cast his lot with him in arms. In March he

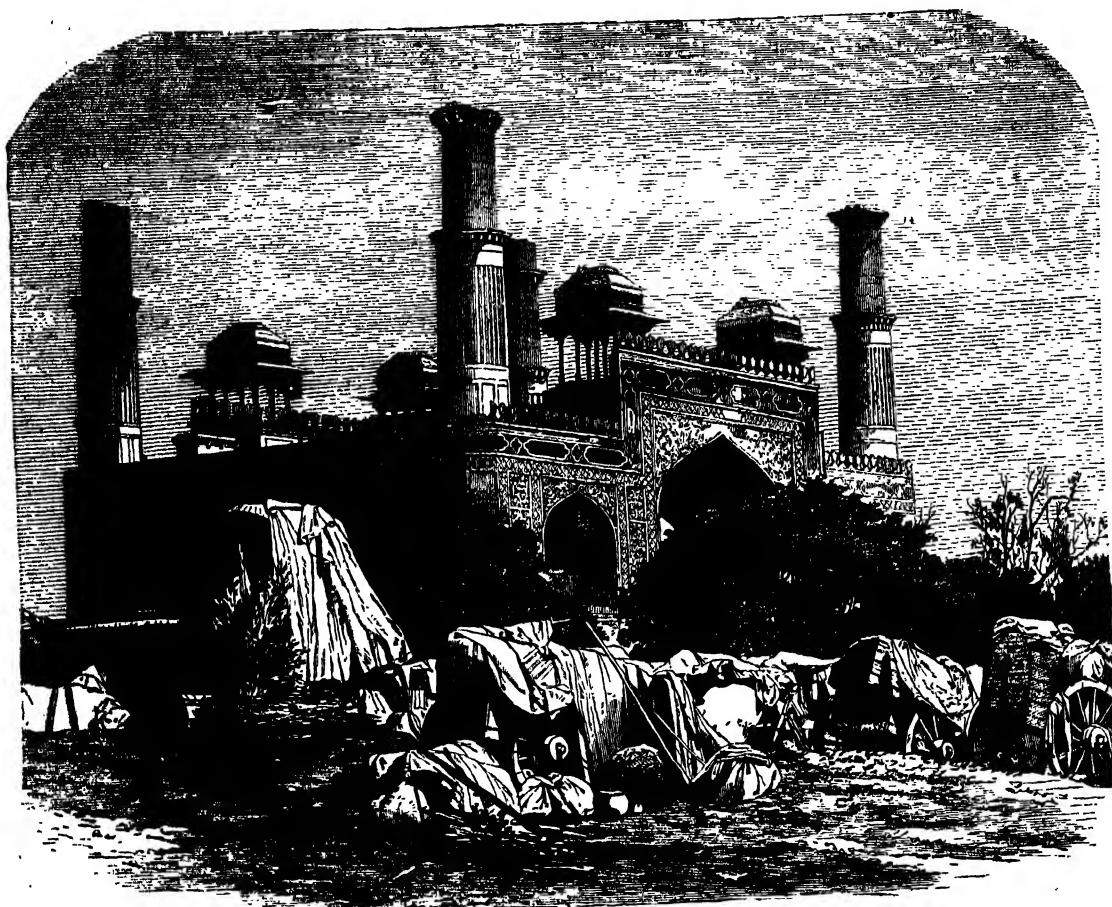
* "Rec. 8th Hussars."

† Macfarlane.

had intimated to Mr. Jenkins, our Resident, his intention of marching to Bhurtpore, with the pretended object of mediating between the British government and the rajah, and requested that officers in command of posts and detachments should receive him as a friend. But to this preposterous request the Governor-General declined to accede; and there was little doubt

baggage, quitted the camp on the 23rd of January, 1805.

He was soon overtaken by a messenger, who prevailed upon him to return, and on doing so, he left his baggage in a grove near Scindia's regular brigade, and while detained by a durbar till evening, he learned that his escort had been attacked by a large force of Pindarees, who had wounded the



AN ENCAMPMENT AT SECUNDRÁ.

about Scindia's ultimate designs, as he soon showed leanings in favour of Holkar. He had begun a movement north-east, in the direction of Bundelcund, where Ameer Khan was at that time waging war as the ally of Holkar, and on his march made aggressions which were a violation of his treaty with us, first on the Nabob of Bhopal, and next on the Peishwa himself. In addition to these overt acts of hostility, he had entered into open communication with Ameer Khan, and other friends of Holkar, and gave such decided proofs of sympathy with his cause, that Mr. Jenkins applied for his passports, and with his suite and

officer in command, the surgeon, several soldiers, and carried off all his property. It is but too probable that this was done with the knowledge of Scindia, who, although he affected great indignation at the outrage, made no effort to punish it, as it perfectly suited his purpose in preventing the departure of Mr. Jenkins, who from thenceforward became a species of prisoner in the camp.

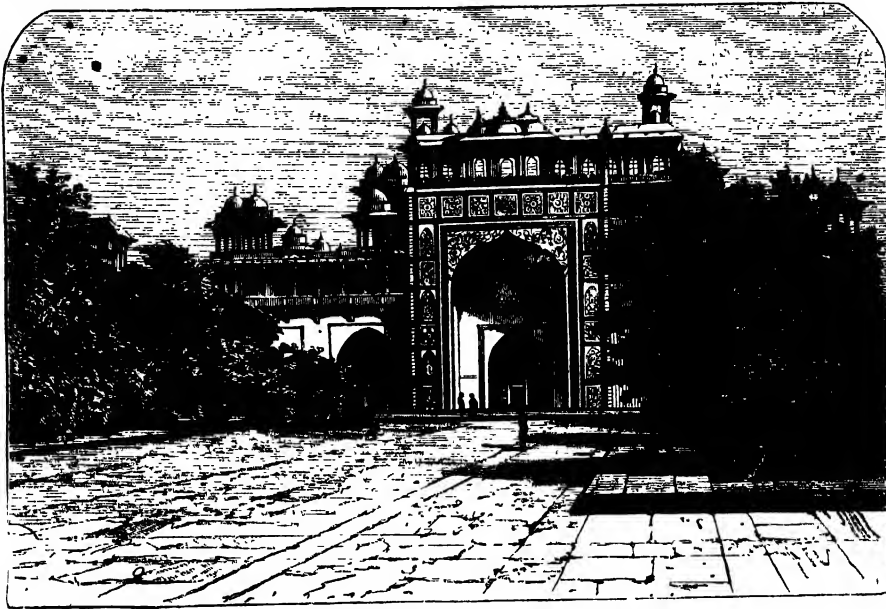
In addition to these, Scindia manifested many other hostile designs, which were frustrated in April by the peace at Bhurtpore; but as the Governor-General had no doubt concerning them, he proceeded with his usual vigour to crush

them. Colonel Close was invested with powers similar to those bestowed upon General Wellesley, now on the eve of quitting India to begin that glorious career of triumph which ended at the gates of Paris; and Lord Lake was instructed not to permit Scindia to violate a fraction of the treaty, and if he attempted to march on Bhurtpore, to repel him by force.

In consequence of the altered relations produced by the treaty of peace, Scindia became less arrogant in tone, and pacifically offered to atone for the outrage committed on the escort of Mr. Jenkins. The offer was accepted by the Marquis of Wellesley; but meanwhile the intercourse with Holkar was

half must be given to me.' Such was the compact; and it was immediately executed by seizing Ambajee, and torturing him till he purchased his deliverance by giving up thirty-eight, or, according to some, fifty lacs. This was, in some respects, a fortunate robbery for the Company, as it made Ambajee the irreconcilable enemy of Holkar, and thus disposed him to use all his influence in preventing the new Mahratta confederacy, which was on the point of being formed, from acquiring any degree of stability."

When, as related, Lord Lake began his homeward march from Bhurtpore, on the 21st of April, he proceeded south, towards the Chumbul, on the



VIEW OF THE MAUSOLEUM OF AKBAR, AT SECUNDRA.

still maintained, and when at last the latter and Ameer Khan, with all the men they could keep together arrived, the three forces formed virtually one united camp, and the closeness of their union was soon evinced in the following characteristic manner:—

"Ambajee Ingliā, now in the service of Scindia, was in possession of a large amount of treasure, while both his master and Holkar were very much in want of it. The two chiefs combined to enrich themselves by robbing the servant of one of them. Ameer Khan, who was employed by Holkar to do the robbery, states that the suggestion proceeded from Scindia, who observed, 'Ambajee Ingliā, who professes to be my servant, and has lacs of rupees in ready money, will give no aid. If you can contrive any way of extorting the money from him, you have my permission; but the

banks of which Scindia and Holkar were encamped. Scared by the rumour of his approach, and not caring to risk the consequences of his arrival, the confederates broke up their confused camp, and hastened up the right bank of the river, in the direction of Sheopore, but the roughness of the road, the intensity of the heat, and the precipitation of the movement made it a disastrous one, and great numbers of their men perished by the wayside. After a brief halt, they pushed on to Kotah, thus placing fifty miles between them and Lord Lake, and compelled the unfortunate Mr. Jenkins to accompany them; though Lord Lake had distinctly ordered him to quit the Mahratta camp, and intimated to Scindia that he would hold him responsible, in his own person, for the safe conveyance of the Resident and all his attendants to the nearest British camp.

Week after week passed on, and there was no appearance of Mr. Jenkins being released. On the 17th of June Lord Lake sent a species of ultimatum to Scindia, declaring that "if in ten days the Resident was not allowed to quit the camp, it would be held equivalent to a dissolution of all friendly relations between the two governments."

Fresh evasions on the one hand, with hollow professions on the other, followed fast; but the Resident was still a prisoner in the Mahratta camp, when, on the 30th of July, 1805, the Marquis of Wellesley's powers, as Governor-General of India, ceased, and he was succeeded by the Marquis of Cornwallis.

The alleged demerits of Wellesley's administration were that, from the day he landed in India he had been constantly engaged in the schemes of conquest and the extension of dominion. On the eastern and western coasts the latter had been achieved indirectly, by depriving independent princes of their royal rights, or by force wresting from them territories for annexation to the already vast possessions of the Company. On the other hand, it has been urged that Wellesley's policy was wiser than the line to which the legislature restricted him, for the system of neutrality had ever proved fallacious in India.

The marquis knew that to stand still was to recede, and he saw too, clearly, that British India had advanced too far for that. "The idea of becoming stationary was an absurdity. If they did not advance, they must lay their account with being driven back. If they repudiated the empire placed within their reach, some other power would certainly seize it. Marquis Wellesley saw this from the first, and having made his choice in favour of dominion, pursued it on system with consummate ability and brilliant success."

On the 28th of July, 1805, the Marquis of Cornwallis landed once more at Calcutta, and for the second time undertook the arduous and responsible task of governing British India. Though he had recently spent his years of peace at home, disease, the effect rather of hard service than of age, had begun to undermine his constitution. At the time the veteran was summoned once more to take the lead in Indian affairs, notwithstanding Wellesley's brilliant administration, the latter had given umbrage to a majority of the Court of Directors, who reprobated as unnecessary the wars waged for existence and the amount of territory acquired thereby; and a cry had been raised that the pacific policy, on the maintenance of which the prosperity of British India must ever depend, had been wantonly abandoned, and that the revenues of the

country had been reduced to a state of depression, out of which it would be extremely difficult to raise them. But the veteran was now in his sixty-seventh year, and neither the condition of his body, or the state of his mind—lighted up though it was at times by flashes of his former vigour—were adequate to a charge so laborious; nor, indeed, did he long survive the harassing and incessant toil to which his new post subjected him in wielding the destinies of India.

On the 29th July, though his predecessor was still present, he was sworn into office at Calcutta, and holding as he did the united offices of Governor-General and Commander-in-chief, he resolved to lose no time in carrying out his plans, or rather the instructions of the Court of Directors. To Lord Lake, who now became his second in command, he wrote instantly, expressing his desire that an end should be put to the present "most unprofitable and ruinous war," and this document was so unlike in tone the Cornwallis of other days, that Lake was surprised on receiving it; but it was speedily followed by another, acquainting him with the terms on which it was proposed to make peace with Scindia.

"I am aware of the disadvantage of immediately relinquishing, or even of compromising [the demand] which has been so repeatedly and so urgently made for the release of the British Resident; but I deem it proper to apprise your lordship that, as a mere point of honour, I am disposed to compromise, or even to abandon that demand, if it should ultimately prove to be the only obstacle to a satisfactory adjustment of affairs with Dowlut Rao Scindia; and I have hitherto been induced to support it by the apprehension that the motives of such a concession might be misinterpreted, and that it might lead to demands on the part of Scindia with which we could not comply without a sacrifice of dignity and interest, incompatible with our security, and thereby render more difficult of attainment the desirable object of a general pacification."

To make concessions to the arrogant Scindia, who had violated a solemn treaty, and permitted an ambassador to be robbed, maltreated, and finally detained as a prisoner—the occupant of one shabby and meagre tent in his camp—was certainly pandering too much to the "peace-at-any-price" ideas of the home directors; they failed to see that security could not have been won by truckling to Scindia, who would assuredly mistake all the misplaced concessions, and, encouraged by them, would become more arrogant, and eventually hostile, the moment he felt himself strong enough to become aggressive.

Through the politic conduct of Lord Lake, we were spared the disgrace of making any concessions. He skilfully contrived to draw the first overtures from Scindia, and induced him to release Mr. Jenkins, by assuring him that, until this was done, his overtures could not be received.

Cornwallis was in very indifferent health when he landed at Calcutta, but plunged at once into his arduous duties; and a week afterwards he was on his way to the upper provinces, to put himself at the head of the army, and effect a final peace between the Company and the restless Mahrattas, for his old friend, Lake, was so averse to his pacific measures, that he threatened to resign.

Perplexities increased his indisposition, and when, on the 25th of September, he reached Buxar, he was deemed by his attendants beyond the hope of recovery. He still continued his voyage up the Ganges, till he reached Ghazipore, near Benares, when, after lying nine days in a state of insensibility, relieved by short and occasional intervals of consciousness, he expired on the 5th of October, 1805.

"However questionable the policy of some of the last acts of this nobleman may be to many," says Sir John Malcolm, "or whatever be their

speculations upon the causes which produced such an apparent deviation from the high and unyielding spirit of his former administration, no man can doubt the exalted purity of the motives which led him to revisit that country. Loaded with years, as he was with honour, he desired that his life should terminate as it had commenced; and he died as he had lived—in the active service of his country."

At home, the House of Commons voted him a statue in St. Paul's; Bombay, Madras, and Calcutta, which had each a statue in his honour, now gave him each a cenotaph, and the Court of Directors voted £40,000 to his family. Over his remains at Ghazipore, a mausoleum was erected by public subscription. It stands about 600 paces from the bank of the Ganges, a little to the rear of the right flank of the infantry barracks, and in the centre of a circular enclosure, about 130 paces in diameter, guarded by a handsome railing. Its chief features are twelve Doric pillars, supporting an elegant entablature, and it bears a long and elaborate inscription. On the reverse side is a shield, emblazoned with the Company's arms, and having, as supporters, a British Grenadier and a Sepoy, resting on their arms reversed. Below is another inscription, but in the Persian character.

CHAPTER LXXVII.

TREATY WITH SCINDIA.—PURSUIT OF HOLKAR.—TRAGIC END OF SIRJEE RAO.—THE MUTINY AT VELLORE.

SIR GEORGE HILARO BARLOW, Bart., K.C.B., an old and distinguished civil servant of the Company, was now appointed Governor-General, and as such, seemed disposed to adopt the policy of his predecessor by abandoning all intriguing with the petty states, and generally with the territory westward of the Jumna; while Lord Lake, as senior officer, again became commander-in-chief. Sir George had been chief secretary to government during the whole of Lord Teignmouth's administration, and the earlier portion of that of the Marquis of Wellesley. His plans were to terminate the war as speedily as possible by concluding amicable treaties with Scindia and Holkar, and to bound the British territory by a line nowhere exceeding ten miles from the Jumna.

On the other hand, Lord Lake was decidedly of

opinion that until both Holkar and Scindia were driven to some point far beyond the Indus, our possessions and those of our allies would never be secure from the Mahrattas; and that such was also the opinion of General Wellesley, we find in one of his letters, dated 29th January, 1805:—"I consider Holkar to be the chief of all the freebooters and vagrants scattered about all parts of India, every man of whom is the declared enemy of the British Government. So long as Holkar exists and is in any strength, we cannot consider the territories of our allies in security; and we must protect them with our troops, as they have no troops of their own to protect themselves."*

Despite the expression of opinions such as these, Sir George Barlow, taking up the negotiation with

* "Wellington Despatches."

Scindia on the basis which Cornwallis had adopted, concluded a treaty with that ally of Holkar on the 23rd of November, 1805. Its principal articles were, that a previous treaty of Surjee Ajengaom should remain in force, save in so far as altered: "That the Company, from mere considerations of friendship, would cede to Scindia the fortress of Gwalior and certain parts of Gohud; that Scindia would abandon all claim to the pensions payable by the Company to certain officers of his court, the Company, however, paying the arrears upon these pensions up to the 31st of December, 1805, and the balance due upon some territorial revenues, but only under deduction of certain claims, one of which was the plunder of the British Residency; that the Chumbul, between Kotah on the west and the eastern frontiers of Gohud, should form the boundary between the two states, Scindia having no claim to any territory between these two points to the north of the river, and the Company, in like manner, and within the same limits, having no claim to any territory south of the river; that the Company would pay to Scindia annually the sum of four lacs, besides granting two jaghires of their territories in Hindostan—one of two lacs to Scindia's wife, and the other of one lac to his daughter."

The Company further engaged, in the event of their making peace with Holkar, they would not restore to him any possessions of the Holkar family in Malwa, taken by Scindia, who was at liberty to arrange with that chief as he chose. Colonel Sir John Malcolm negociated this treaty, which did not receive the entire approval of Sir George Barlow, who, in the spirit of his intended policy, was averse to fixing the Chumbul as a boundary which implied that the petty states north of the river were to be under British protection: thus he appended to the treaty declaratory articles, by which these states were left to defend themselves as they best could. Lord Lake was averse to this measure, and though Barlow failed to answer his arguments, he persisted in the course which he knew the Court of Directors expected of him; and in the February of the following year, 1806, our new Resident, Mr. Graeme Mercer (of Mavisbank, in Lothian), an eminent civilian, arrived at the court of Dowlut Rao Scindia, escorted by two companies of infantry, under Colonel J. D. Broughton, author of "The Mahratta Letters," &c.

While these negotiations with Scindia were pending, Lord Lake was in pursuit of Holkar, who had proceeded northward into the Punjaub, in the hope of winning aid from the Sikhs, and even from the King of Cabul. He had with him a horde of desperadoes from the country north-west of Delhi,

now mustering several thousands, with horses, spears, and some light galloper guns. As he continued to elude both Major-General Jones and Colonel Ball, who had marched from different points to intercept him, Lord Lake was induced to pursue him in person to the last extremity the moment the season permitted him to take the field.

On the 10th of October, 1805, he set forth, with the 8th Royal Irish, the 24th and 25th Dragoons (late 27th and 29th), and 3rd Cavalry, under Brigadier Wood; H.M. 22nd Foot, a Company's European regiment, and two battalions of sepoys, under Brigadier Mercer; and a park of Horse Artillery, under Captains Pennington and Brown.

Driving Holkar before him, and compelling him to cross the Sutlej, Lord Lake with these two brigades advanced towards the country of the Sikhs, whose chiefs assured him their intentions were pacific; but they would not have been long so had Holkar obtained time or leisure. Our troops halted for a day at Paniput (on the right bank of the Jumna), a place celebrated as the scene of two of the greatest battles recorded in the history of Hindostan: one fought in 1525 by the Mogul Baber against the Afghans and Hindoos, under the Emperor Ibrahim Lodi, who was defeated and slain; and the second in the year 1761, between the Afghans, under Ahmed Shah of Cabul, and the combined Mahrattas, who were totally routed, with the loss of 200 guns and their field equipage. It is recorded that of 500,000 souls—men, women, and children, and camp-followers who came with the Mahrattas, very few escaped alive on that terrible day. The bigoted Afghans slew all their prisoners in cold blood, alleging that the women of their country had urged them, whenever they should defeat the unbelievers, to kill a few for them on their account, that they also might gain favour in the sight of God and the Prophet. "As the Afghans cut off the heads of the Mahrattas, they piled them up before the doors of their tents. The son of the Peishwa of that day fell in the battle. His body was found, and carried to the tent of the King of Cabul. The Afghans cried out, 'This is the body of the King of the Unbelievers! We will have it dried and stuffed that it may be carried home with us to Cabul!' His Afghan Majesty was, however, induced to prevent this barbarity, and to order the body to be burned."

From Paniput, Lord Lake pushed on to Kurnaul, and from thence to Ameerghur, on the 27th of October, "pursuing nearly the same route which was taken by the celebrated Tamerlane, on the skirts of the great sandy desert which stretches from the Indus to within a hundred miles of Delhi; and

driving Holkar before them, the British forces arrived on the 9th of December, on the banks of the Hyphasis.*

Prior to reaching this point the army suffered great privations. When at Ameerghur, on their left flank, says Major Thorn, there appeared an endless waste of sandhills in vast succession, like the waves of the sea, desolate, dreary, and deceptive to the eye by the illusions of the mirage. These, he continues, "exhibited to us the representations of spacious lakes and rivers, with trees and other objects, in such a lively manner as almost to cheat the senses of persons familiarly acquainted with the phenomenon; while they who were oppressed by excessive heat and parched with thirst, cheered themselves with the hope of being soon refreshed with water from the friendly tank or cooling stream, of which they thought they had so clear a prospect. Often were we thus agitated between expectancy and disappointment, flattering our imagination with a speedy indulgence, when just as the delightful vision appeared on the point of being realised, like the cup of Tantalus, the whole vanished, and left us nothing but the arid plains of glittering and burning sands."

On the shore of that Hyphasis, where Alexander the Great raised his stately altars, the British colours were now waving in the wind, and the British drums waking the same echoes that, more than two thousand years before, had replied to the trumpets of the Macedonians. Thorn tells us that the scenery around our troops was as sublime as the memories it recalled. Far in the distance to the north and east was seen the mighty snow-clad ridge of the classic Imaus, a part of the Himalayan range. Nearer, in middle distance, were rugged rocks and pine-clad hills, covered with vegetation, and dotted by villages, temples, tombs, and tall pagodas; and amid these was the noble Indus, rolling on its way to the ocean. On its opposite bank vast numbers of the natives assembled peacefully to watch, with wonder, our troops on the march.

"During their progress," says Thorn, "the most scrupulous regard was paid to the property of the inhabitants, as well that which was exposed as that which they had in their dwellings; and when any injury happened unavoidably to be committed, a liberal compensation in money soon prevented complaint or restored confidence. Thus our route through this remote part of India, and amongst a people naturally fierce and jealous, was pursued not only without opposition, but with cordiality on both sides.†

* "Records, Royal Irish Hussars."

† "Memoir of the War."

Holkar at this time was encamped on the bank of the Ravi, the Hydaspes River of Alexander's days, which is fordable in most places during eight months of the year. In a few hours, by rapid marching, Lord Lake would have been upon him, sword in hand; but ere this could be done, Sir George Barlow, having concluded his peaceful treaty with Scindia, sent instructions to Lord Lake to treat with Holkar, and grant him the most favourable terms he could; and the chief of Lahore, and the heads of the Sikh confederacy, having agreed to withhold all succour from Holkar, and to interpose as mediators, as the most pleasant means of getting rid of him and his pursuers, sent a vakeel to Lord Lake on the 19th of December, 1805.

The terms were easily adjusted, as Holkar was in no position either to linger or to dictate. The conditions offered for his acceptance gave him back all his territories, with some small exceptions; he was, however, to renounce all claim to places situated north of the Chumbul, to Kooch and Bundercund; and, generally, all claims whatever on the British and their allies. Chandore, Gaulnah, and his other forts in the Deccan, were to be restored to him in eighteen months if his conduct proved peaceful. But in the treaty with him and that with Scindia, they were expressly prohibited from taking into their trust or service the father-in-law of the latter, Sirjee Rao Ghatka.

This man was cruel, worthless, unscrupulous, and had, in his hatred of the British, been the instigator of the plunder of the Residency; but Sir George Barlow carried his peaceful policy so far as to permit him to resume his place and malign influences at the court of Scindia, where, four years after, he came to a tragic end.

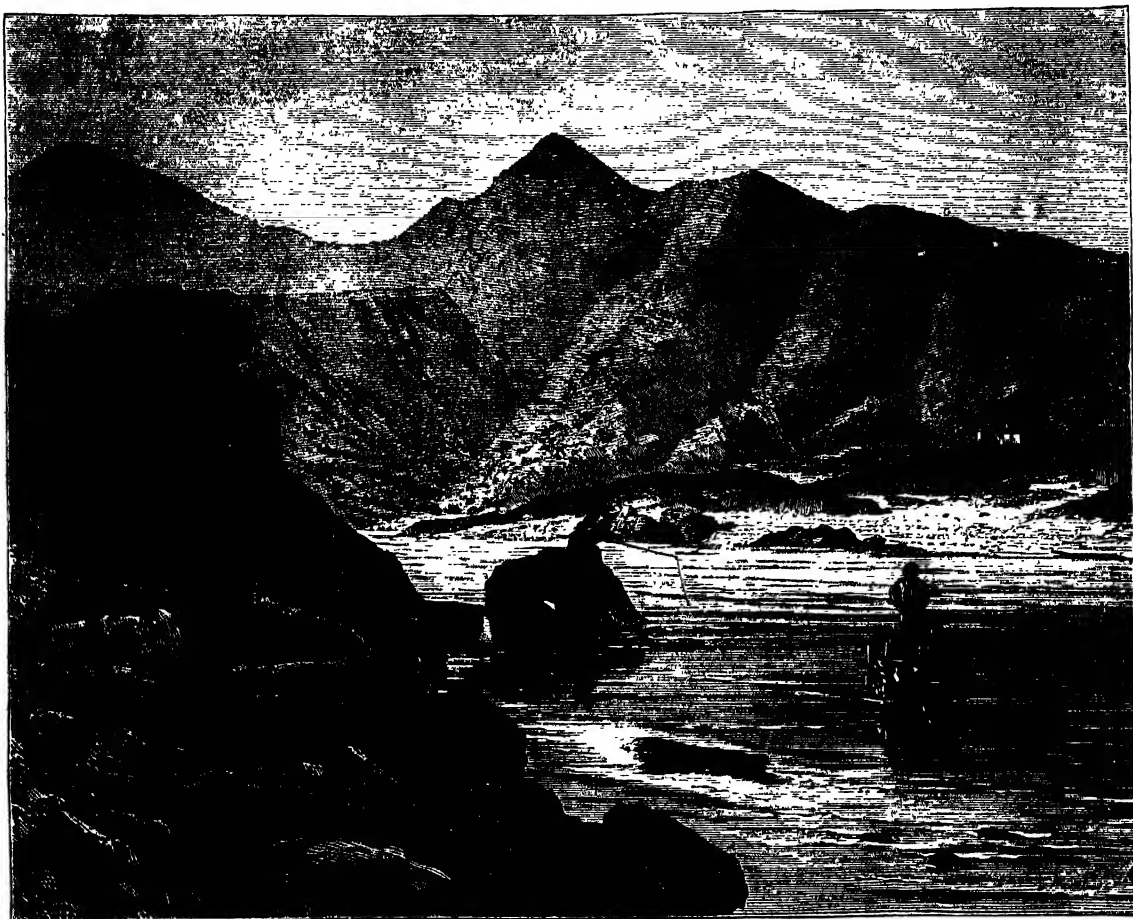
When pressing some request upon Scindia, who was impatient to attend an elephant fight, Sirjee Rao was rash enough to seize his dress and detain him forcibly on his seat in the open durbar. Scindia ordered his instant arrest; a scuffle ensued, and drawing his sabre, Sirjee cut a passage to his own tent. Scindia's attendants, not unwilling to rid themselves of an obnoxious minister, slashed through the ropes, disarmed Sirjee Rao, and dragged him into the public streets, where they hewed him to pieces.

There is no doubt that the article in the treaty with Holkar, which bound him to renounce certain territory north of the river Chumbul, was not in accordance with the "few policy," but was sanctioned by Sir George Barlow, who was not without hopes that Tonk Rampoorah would be accepted by Scindia as an equivalent for the pension of four lacs which we had agreed to pay him; but

with some meanness of spirit, on finding that Tonk would not be accepted by Scindia, even as a gratuity, lest it should bring him into collision with his old friend Holkar, Sir George made a gift of it to the latter, and left our allies again at his mercy, though amply forewarned of what those luckless allies might expect.

And now, while engaged in making these vacil-

whole garrison, and it speedily became known that the sepoys, headed by their native officers, were in open revolt against all European authority. Assembling in secret, they attacked the guards and sentinels on a concerted signal. The garrison consisted of only four companies of H.M. 69th (or South Lincolnshire Regiment), 370 strong, while the natives mustered 1,500 bayonets. A native soldier, named



VIEW OF THE INDUS, NEAR ATTOCK.

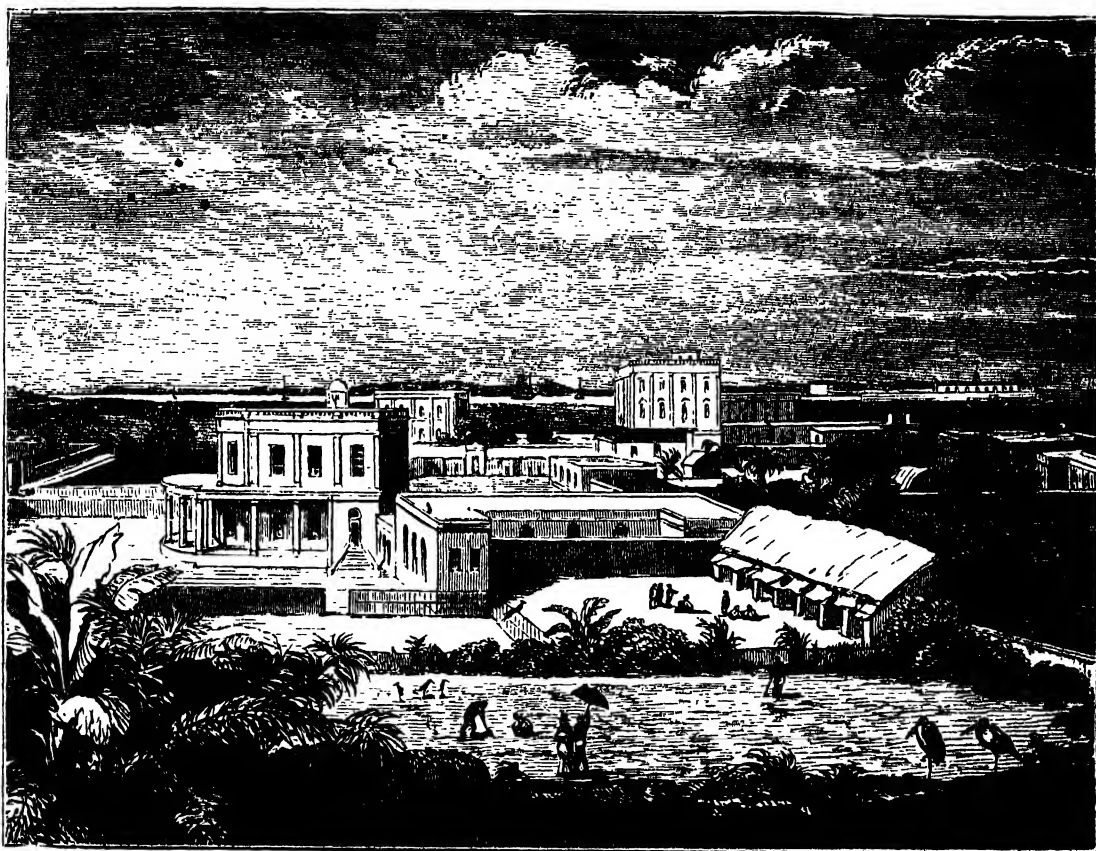
lating arrangements, a furious outbreak occurred in a very unexpected quarter, on the 10th of July, 1806, in the fort of Vellore, the place to which the family of Tippoo had been removed, after the downfall of Seringapatam. A conspiracy among the Mohammedans of Southern India had been set on foot to overturn the British Government, on the plea, industriously urged by dervishes and fakirs, that a forcible conversion to Christianity was in contemplation, and as the first element of this, the sepoys were informed that the gun-screws which had been issued to them were, in reality, crosses. At three in the morning a loud discharge of musketry roused the

Mustapha Bey, had previously given the authorities information of what was likely to occur; but, though his statement was disbelieved as the result of a hallucination, it hastened the revolt.

Having set guards over the officers' quarters to prevent egress, and beset the European barracks, by planting a six-pounder under the gateway, pointed inwards, they commenced rapid file-firing through the windows, while the soldiers, roused thus from sleep, being without ammunition, could not return a shot, and had to shelter themselves as best they could under or behind beds and furniture. At an early hour, a few officers who had successfully

defended themselves in an adjacent dwelling, cut a passage sword in hand into the barracks, where they found that already eighty-two privates of the 69th had been killed, and ninety-one were wounded. Colonel Fancourt, the commandant of Vellore, had fallen, mortally wounded; Colonel McKerras was shot dead as he was hurrying to the parade-ground; thirteen officers were massacred, with every European they could lay hands on. "No quarter

These were the survivors, headed by the officers who had cut a passage into the barracks, and with them taken post in a cavalier of the works. They made their way to the magazine; but being unable to get any ammunition, were obliged to seek shelter above the mainguard gate, and as all these movements were made under incessant musketry, every officer was soon disabled, and many more men were killed.



VIEW IN CALCUTTA.

was given, no pity shown. Comrades in arms, who had fought by their sides, and perhaps rescued them from peril, were murdered in their sleep, or cut down, or shot, as they rushed forth, undressed, to seek the cause of alarm. There was a scorching eagerness for blood on the part of these men, as only Mussulmans can show. . . . All Europeans, civil and military, must have perished, had not some awoke in time, and made a most gallant and desperate defence. The soldiers fought with discipline and courage when all their officers were killed or wounded. They charged the revolvers in line with the bayonet, and performed prodigies of valour."

In his narrative of the mutiny, Captain J. Young, of H.M. 19th Dragoons, then stationed at Arcot, sixteen miles distant, states that the report of cannon at Vellore was heard at the former barracks all the morning. Instantly on learning what had taken place, Colonel Rollo Gillespie, who was then in command, went off on the spur with a squadron of the 19th, and a troop of native cavalry, leaving orders for the rest of the horse and the galloper-guns to follow with all speed, and by eight a.m., he was in front of Vellore.

"No time was lost in marshalling the squadron," says Captain Young, "after which Colonel Gillespie gave the word to charge, and away we went—'full

tear'—for the gates, Colonel Gillespie leading with one troop, and I supporting him with the other. In passing the north-east cavalier, we perceived a party of the 69th Regiment waving their caps to us, which we acknowledged by an enthusiastic cheer; at the same time urging our horses to the utmost, we soon cleared the first and second gates of the drawbridge which was situated between them and us, and thinking now that everything was in our favour, we were congratulating ourselves upon the success which had hitherto attended us, when, to our great disappointment, we found that the third gate was too strongly secured to admit of our forcing it; fortunately, however, we perceived on the ramparts over the gate, where they had taken up a position, Doctors Dean and Jones, of the Company's service, as also Sergeant Brady (Brodie?) and some men of H.M. 69th Regiment, who told us that they were most critically situated, having exhausted the whole of their ammunition. We immediately desired Sergeant Brady to open the gates, when he, without hesitation or demur, descended by a rope, unbarred the gate, and let us in." *

Sergeant Brodie, who had served under Gillespie at St. Domingo, when he recognised him galloping at the head of his troop, exclaimed, "If Colonel Gillespie be alive, here he is at the head of the 19th Dragoons, and God Almighty has sent him from the West Indies to save our lives in the East."

A fourth, and last gate, had yet to be forced, and all this while our handful of dragoons were maddened by the din of musketry, and dying shrieks and yells within the fort, as some wretched European was dragged forth from concealment to be destroyed. In the defence of the ramparts, Captain C. J. Barrow, of the 69th, with sixty men of that regiment, greatly distinguished himself, till he fell, desperately wounded. The last gate was soon blown to pieces by the currie guns, and Rollo Gillespie dashed in at the head of his dragoons, who charged close to the ramparts, and up to the steps of the cavalier, cutting down the miscreants on every side.

"The scene that presented itself," says Captain Young, "after all was over, no pen can depict—no language describe; it was one sheet of blood; and never do I wish to see the human form so mangled and mutilated. It was indeed a pitiable sight to see the European women and children who had fallen victims to the diabolical vengeance of the brutal Sipahs—who spared neither age nor sex—lying about in every direction; and so exasperated were the 19th Dragoons, that they became perfectly unmanageable, so that it was with the utmost

difficulty they could be prevented from putting to death the Mysore princes, whom they knew full well have been the root of all the evil that occurred. . . . The fact of our having been fired upon from the palace, while engaged in rescuing the fort, proves this; added to which, we discovered, in the princes' apartments, fifty Sipahs, armed and in full uniform."

These men were instantly shot—some being blown from the guns; 400 of the mutineers were slain, and the whole affair was over in ten minutes after Rollo Gillespie got through the fourth gate. By this time a flag, which once belonged to Tippoo and bore his arms—a central sun, with tiger stripes on a green field—was flying on the flagstaff; and but for the decisive measures taken here, at Wallajahabad, Hyderabad, and some other places, the Mysore princes would, in a few days, have been joined by 50,000 men. They were therefore removed to Calcutta, and 600 sepoy prisoners were turned out of the service.

In his paper on the Indian Army, Sir John Malcolm boasts that, at Vellore, "the fidelity of the native cavalry did not shrink from the severe trial, and after the gates of the fortress were blown open, their sabres were as deeply stained as those of the British dragoons with the blood of their misguided and guilty countrymen." *

In addition to what has been stated, the alarm of the sepoys had been excited by some attempts to assimilate their appearance to that of the European troops. They were ordered to shave their chins, clip their moustaches to a certain pattern, relinquish ear-rings and the painted marks, which indicated the caste they belonged to. Their turbans were also made to give place to a head-dress resembling the hideous European hat, deemed the distinctive mark of a Christian. Indeed, two months before the revolt of Vellore, discontent had been manifested there by the 2nd Battalion of the 4th Madras Infantry, a regiment which had served at Assaye. The grenadier company flatly refused to wear the new head-dress, deeming it a disgrace; and for this nineteen of them were tried at Madras. Two received 900 lashes each, and the remainder, who were to have received 500, were pardoned on expressing contrition. These strong prejudices need not excite surprise, when we find that but a few years before, soldiers of the 42nd, and other Highland regiments, resented to the death some supposed alterations or innovations upon their national costume. "It was for some time believed," says a writer, "that the mutiny at Vellore had extensive ramifications, and was, in fact, only part of

* *Delhi Gazette*, Feb. 1, 1837.

* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, vol. iii.; "The Plain Englishman," &c.

a general conspiracy to massacre all the Europeans in India, and thereby for ever extinguish British rule. The events of our own day give to this hypothesis a degree of plausibility which it did not previously possess; but still it does not seem to be borne out by facts."

In short, it now began to be but too apparent that by too strictly and suddenly enforcing the home orders for retrenchment and economy, Sir George Barlow was spreading discontent throughout the whole Indian army, European and native, officers and men; and it has been alleged by one eminent writer, that our Eastern Empire was never in greater danger than during the "pacific" administration of Sir George Barlow; some of the evil influences of which were severely felt by his successor in office; * but many changes now took place about the end of 1806.

Sir George Barlow, having vacated the government at Bengal, was nominated to that of Madras. There Mr. Petrie had previously succeeded Lord

William Bentinck in the chair, but had immediately to encounter the most extraordinary opposition from Sir Henry Gwillim, one of the puisne judges, whose language against him and the government, so shocked the British judicial mind, that he was recalled home, and, on Sir George's appointment, Mr. Petrie resumed his former place as member of council.

Lieutenant-General Hay Macdowall succeeded General Cradock as the commander-in-chief at Madras; and in February, 1807, Lord Lake quitted his command in India, where he left behind him a high and well-merited reputation, as possessor of the best qualities which distinguish the gentleman and the British officer. He died in his 64th year, in February, 1808, a few months after he had heard of "the death of his beloved and affectionate son and brave companion in arms, Colonel George Lake, who, after sharing in the toils and dangers of his father's brilliant Indian campaigns, fell in Portugal, at the battle of Roliça."

CHAPTER LXXVIII.

THE EARL OF MINTO GOVERNOR-GENERAL.—TRAGIC STORY OF LAKSHMAN THE ROBBER.—
COMONAH EXPEDITION.—AMEER KHAN AND OTHER ROBBER CHIEFS.

THE appointment of a successor to Sir George Barlow was preceded by a dispute in London, which ended in a singular kind of compromise. The Ministry gave up James, Earl of Lauderdale, whom they wished to force upon the Company, while the Court of Directors gave up Sir George, whom they wished to retain; and, by mutual consent, another Scottish noble, Gilbert, first Lord Minto, then President of the Board of Control, was named Governor-General of India, in July, 1806, though he did not reach the East for a year after.

The eldest son of Sir Gilbert Elliot, of Minto—a Scotsman of high political and literary abilities—Lord Minto, after being educated at Oxford, was, in 1774, elected M.P. for Morpeth; and, on the breaking out of the French Revolution, he, with many of his friends, warmly supported the Government. In 1793, after being created a D.C.L. of Oxford, he acted as Commissioner for the Royalists at Toulon; and in the following year was appointed Governor of Corsica, the laws of which he

* Prof. H. H. Wilson's "Continuation of Mill."

assimilated to those of Great Britain. On the French party gaining strength, and the isle being abandoned to them, Sir Gilbert returned in 1797, and was raised to a British peerage, as Baron Minto, of Minto, in Roxburgh, with the power of quartering the arms of the Elliots and Murrays with those of Corsica.

In 1799, he was appointed envoy extraordinary to Vienna, and in 1806, President of the Board of Control. He had been one of the bitterest political enemies of Warren Hastings, and had taken an active part in his impeachment and vexatious prosecution: thus, like some of his predecessors, he set sail for India fully impressed with the idea that our true policy was non-interference, that no attempt should be made to extend either our possessions or our connections with the native powers; and no man in Britain had inveighed more warmly than Lord Minto had done, on the wrongs of the Indian princes, the ambition and the encroaching and aggrandising spirit of Warren Hastings. Hence his leaning was decidedly in favour of the restrictive

system of policy ; and his desire to keep on good terms with the directors and proprietors, who had so strongly declared their approval of that policy, must have confirmed him in the resolution to adhere to it ; but he could not be blind to some of its inconveniences, nor was he so obstinate as to be unable to relinquish it when it threatened to do mischief.

Thus we are told that "his lordship had not been many days on the banks of the Hooghley, ere he confessed that the security of our empire depended on the actual superiority of our power, upon the sense which the natives entertained of that power, and the submissiveness of our neighbours."

On the 3rd of July, 1807, he reached Calcutta, and one of the first objects he had to attend to was the condition of Bundelcund, which, on the principle of non-interference, was being permitted to fall into a state of anarchy. Our Resident there was Colonel John Baillie, a native of Inverness, one of the most learned and distinguished of Indian officers.* On the invasion of the province by Ameer Khan, the Governor-General in Council stated "that the British authority in Bundelcund was alone preserved by his fortitude, ability, and influence."†

Now the petty rajahs there, having been left to self-management, were involved in feuds with each other, while armed marauders roamed the province in every direction.

Thus Lord Minto, with all his pacific intentions, was resolved to put an end to this state of disorder, and announced that when mild measures failed force would be employed. Even by this firm announcement, many disputes were ended amicably. The marauders, who knew no law but that of the sword, would yield to nothing but stern compulsion : it was resolved, therefore, to expel them, and capture the principal strongholds of those chiefs who leagued with, or protected them.

Of these, the most formidable was one named Lakshman Dawa, who, himself originally a captain of robbers, had succeeded in possessing himself of the fort of Ajagehr, occupying the plateau of a great oblong mountain of rock, and celebrated for its strength. To this place he had no title, save what his sword and spear gave him ; yet, when it

became British territory, he had been permitted to retain it, with the adjacent district, on payment of tribute. He was, however, to give up the fort in 1808 ; but as he had never paid the tribute, a body of troops, under Colonel Martindale, was sent against him, and he made such preparations to defend himself that a regular siege had to be undertaken.

On the castle wall being breached, he capitulated, and was permitted, with his family, to whom he was tenderly attached, to repair upon his parole to Naoshehr, when, after finding all chance of getting back the stronghold was hopeless, he disappeared. No trace of him could be found till, some time after, he suddenly turned up in Calcutta ; where, in a petition, he prayed to be restored to his former position or blown from a gun, as life without reputation was valueless. Proving unsuccessful with Lord Minto, he attempted to return to Bundelcund, but was overtaken, and brought back to Calcutta, where he remained in captivity till he died.

It would seem that on his disappearance at first, his family, as hostages, were all ordered back to the fort of Ajagehr by Mr. Richardson, our Resident, who promised them the kindest treatment ; and the charge of them, in their old family residence, was to be committed to Bajee Rao, the father-in-law of Lakshman Dawa, who, on his first joining them, remained so long within their rooms that the officer in charge of the intended escort, went thither to ascertain the cause of the delay. At the door of an inner apartment he saw old Bajee Rao standing, with a drawn sword in his hand, and his visage sternly grim ; and he abruptly closed the door as the officer approached.

The latter had it forced, and then a sorrowful spectacle was seen.

Dead on the floor, and drenched in blood, lay the mother, the wife, and infant son of the absent Lakshman Dawa, and four female attendants, murdered by Bajee Rao, and with their own consent, apparently, as no cry or sound had been heard ; and the moment the door gave way, Bajee furiously inflicted a mortal wound upon himself, and ended this gory tragedy, which, with the reduction of Comonah, inaugurated the government of Lord Minto. All the chiefs of Bundelcund declared that, had the case been theirs, they would have done the same thing. The disturbances there were far from being quelled by the example made of Lakshman Dawa.

The fort of Comonah was situated in the Allyghur district, and was the residence of Doondia Khan, a native chief, who had other strongholds in the

* In 1876, Mr. John B. Baillie, of Leys, presented to the University of Edinburgh a fine collection of Persian, Arabic, and Sanscrit manuscripts, formed by his grandfather, Colonel John Baillie, who wished them made heirlooms of his estate of Leys. His representatives, however, being desirous that they should be placed in some public institution, handed them over to the University of Edinburgh, under certain conditions, one of which is that they are to be kept separate, as the "Leys Collection."

† Anderson's "Scot. Biog. Dict."

neighbourhood. This zemindar, presuming on the peaceful policy of the government, began to treat it with such contempt and menace, that a force of about 6,000 men was sent against him. Among these were five companies of H.M. 17th Regiment, a battalion of Grenadiers, five other native battalions, 220 pioneers, six squadrons of light cavalry, fifty European and 250 native gunners; the whole under the command of Major-General Dickens.

On the 12th of October, 1807, the fort was invested; a breach was reported practicable, and an assault ordered on the 18th of November. Lieutenant-Colonels F. Hardyman, of the 17th, and Duff, H.E.I.C.S., led the stormers, who were repulsed, and the last-named officer was slain. Though the assault was a failure, so resolute had it been that the defenders lost heart, and fled the fort in the night, to strengthen the garrison of another chief, named Gunourie. On the morning of the 19th, General Dickens took quiet possession of the place. Where the remains of Colonel Duff and others who fell with him were interred is unknown; but in the burial-ground of Allyghur there may still be seen the half-obliterated tombs of Captain Robertson, Lieutenants Livingstone and Jones, "who fell before Comonah, November 14th, A.D. 1807."

Before he had been many months in India, Lord Minto found himself under the necessity of interfering in the internal affairs of our ally, the Nizam of the Deccan, whom he soon reduced to a species of cypher in his own capital. When the Nizam's minister, Meer Alum, died, he wished to appoint Moonir-ul-Mulk his successor, but the government of Bengal preferred a certain Rajah Chunda Loll, whom they knew to be favourably disposed to British interests, and was, moreover, an amicable Hindoo; so by virtue of our military force at Hyderabad, Chunda was appointed, and from that moment, in fretful indignation, the Nizam ceased to take active interest in public affairs.

Meanwhile, Chunda Loll, as dewan, acquiesced implicitly in all that our Resident proposed, as to appointment of officers and pay of the troops—for now a regular army had sprung up in the Deccan, disciplined by British officers and subordinate to British interests. Thus Chunda was amply protected in his office and uncontrolled in his government, which was not, however, productive of good. "The prosperity of the country," says Sir John Malcolm, "began to decline under a system which had no object but revenue, and under which, neither regard for rank nor desire for popularity existing, the nobles were degraded and the people oppressed. The prince (of whose sanity

doubts had often been entertained) lapsed into a state of gloomy discontent; and while the dewan, his relations, a few favourites, and money-brokers flourished, the good name of the British nation suffered; for it was said, and with justice, that our support of the actual administration freed the minister and his executive officers from those salutary fears, which act as a restraint on the most despotic rulers." *

In another direction Lord Minto found the necessity of departing from the non-interference system; and though he declined more extensive engagements, he was compelled to assist the Peishwa, with whom our relations were not, just then, on a very satisfactory footing.

No sooner had Bajee Rao, by the Treaty of Bassein, bartered his independence for personal security, than he repented, and would gladly have availed himself of any confusion or course of events which might have led to his becoming again the real head of the Mahratta confederacy; but the general turn of affairs, after the late war, having made our alliance necessary for his existence, he had wisdom or cunning enough to conceal his aversion. In that war, many of his feudatories, named the Southern Jaghirdars, had done us good military service, and were thus deemed under British protection.

Jealous of this, Bajee Rao stretched over them his powers as lord paramount so strictly that he seemed to aim at their destruction; and when, to aid in this, and compel the recognition of his title, he applied for a subsidiary force, and that force was refused, he did not disguise his intense dissatisfaction. On the attention of Lord Minto being drawn to this troublesome matter, he lodged a minute, in which, "while admitting that the Treaty of Bassein entitled the Peishwa to the aid which he asked, provided the justice of his claims could not be impugned, he approved of a compromise, which the Resident at Poonah had suggested, and by which the Jaghirdars, while acknowledging themselves to be the Peishwa's feudatories, and relinquishing all acknowledged usurpations, were guaranteed in possession of their lands."

To these half measures the Peishwa was fain to submit, but he did so sullenly, and in a manner which evinced that, sooner or later, open hostility might display itself.

Holkar, of whom we have heard so much, had now become for some time past addicted to deep intoxication and every species of unrestrained indulgence; and by way of making himself more completely head of the house of Holkar, he

* "Memoir of Central India."

murdered a brother and poisoned his nephew. But conscience—an uncommon element in the mind of an Indian prince—stung him so deeply that reason fled, and eventually he sank into utter fatuity. After being for three years fed like an infant, he died in October, 1811.

Such was the wretched end of the once warlike and ambitious Jeswunt Rao Holkar. His affairs had been managed for some time by his favourite mistress, Toolasi Bhai, and her puppet minister,

Ameer Khan, who had so long shared the varied fortunes of Holkar, and given so much trouble to Lord Lake and his cavalry, might have been expected to make profit, in some way, out of the insanity of his former chief, in whose service he had risen from being a private horseman to the rank of sirdir, or general. At first a handsome bribe from Balaram Seit, induced him to give his support to the Bhai; but as he had a large body of troops of his own, and no means of supporting



INDIAN TRAVELLING WAGONS.

Balaram Seit, in whose feeble hands his country became the scene of anarchy, confusion, and murder, amid which, many leaders, all aiming at pillage and independence, took the field against each other. The most formidable of these was Mahipat Rao Holkar, first cousin of the deceased Jeswunt Rao, who was proclaimed his successor, and might have remained as such peacefully, had his adherents not ridden with horse and spear, fire and sword, into the territories of our allies, the Peishwa and Nizam, whose subsidiary forces—one advancing from Poonah, under Colonel Wallace, and the other from Jaulna, under Colonel Doveton—defeated him in two battles and utterly ruined his cause. But in this we are anticipating.

them, he took his departure to invade some one's territory. His forces, amounting almost to an army, consisted of Patans, Mahrattas, Jauts, and Pindarees, at the head of whom he overran the whole of Berar, and began to press upon the Company's territories.

One passage in the life of Ameer Khan, as given by Sir John Malcolm, will sufficiently serve to indicate his character. Having been hired to murder a rajah, named Sevace Sing, by Maun Sing, a potentate, who was his rival, he found the commission so suited to his temperament that he went about it in the following manner:—

“Sevace Sing had been persuaded to promise a visit to Ameer Khan, and when the hour came, the

Rajpoot chief, who probably had received some intelligence of the designs against his life, hesitated. Ameer Khan, when he learnt his irresolution, mounted, and proceeded with a few followers to the shrine of a Mohammedan saint, close to the

dressess, and even turbans—a pledge of brotherhood—were exchanged, and Ameer Khan swore at the tomb of the saint to be faithful to his new ally, who was persuaded to go next day to his camp, where splendid preparations were made for his



MUSSULMAN WOMAN OF BHOPAL.

walls of Nagore. He was here joined by Sevace Sing, whom he reproached for his fears, and asked him if he thought it possible that a man who cherished such evil designs could show such confidence as he had that day done, by placing himself in the power of the person he meant to betray. Sevace Sing confessed his error. Presents,

reception, and a number of chiefs appointed to meet him.

"The troops were under arms, some under the pretext of doing honour to the visitor, others apparently at exercise. The guns were loaded with grape, and pointed at the quarters prepared for the rajah, who, with his principal

adherents, to the number of 200, were seated in a large tent, when it was let fall upon them at a concerted signal; and while the officers of Ameer Khan saved themselves, all the Rajpoots were inhumanly massacred by showers of grape and musketry from every direction. Of 700 horse that accompanied Sevac Sing, and continued mounted near the tent, only 200 escaped; the rest were slain, and a number of Ameer Khan's people, among whom was one of his own relations, fell under the promiscuous fire of the cannon. Sevac Sing had been killed by the grape; but his head was cut off and sent to Maun Sing, who rewarded Ameer Khan with a jaghire, and a large sum of money.*

Prior to breaking into Berar, Ameer had thoroughly pillaged the Rajpoots; and finding their territories exhausted, there was nothing for him but to serve Ragojee Bhonsla in the same fashion, making, as a pretext for doing so, the accusation, that when Holkar, during the disasters of his early career, had sought a shelter at Nagore, the rajah had plundered him of many valuable jewels.

Acting in the name of the then fatuous Holkar, Ameer boldly demanded their restoration in money, value, or kind; and, on the refusal of the rajah, burst into his territories, at the head of 40,000 horse and 24,000 robber Pindarees, armed in every fashion; and meeting with but slender opposition, made himself master of Jubbulpore, a strong fortress, and all the adjacent district.

Our relations with the invaded Rajah or Berar were peculiar. He had no subsidiary alliance with Britain, nor was there any treaty under which he could distinctly claim our friendship; and on the timid and selfish "peace at any price" principle, he should have been left to the tender mercy of Ameer Khan and his 64,000 robbers; but some technical abstracts had to be obviated before we could aid him. He artfully professed to be acting in Holkar's name, "and in this character could plead that any assistance given by the British Government to the rajah would be a violation of the treaty by which they had engaged not to interfere, in any way, with Holkar's affairs, nor with the exaction of claims on any state with which they themselves were not actually in alliance."

These statements were troublesome to answer.

The pretext of Ameer Khan being in the service of Holkar might have been thrown easily aside, but for the professed peaceful policy of the Indian Government, as inculcated at Leadenhall Street. Yet Lord Minto, aware of the gross inconsistency of the whole situation, had too much spirit and

too much common sense to be thus fettered in action, and in a minute lodged by him, on the 10th of October, 1809, he wrote thus:—

"The question was not whether it was just and expedient to aid the rajah in the defence and recovery of his dominions (although, in point of policy, the essential change in the political state of India which would have occasioned the extinction of one of the substantive powers of the Deccan, might warrant and require our interference), but whether an interfering and ambitious Mussulman chief, at the head of a numerous army, irresistible by any power but that of the Company, should be permitted to establish his authority on the ruins of the rajah's dominions, over territories contiguous to our ally, the Nizam."

Moreover, there was another moving cause. The trammelled Nizam was not without secret projects of his own for the subversion of British dominion in India; and it was therefore decided by Lord Minto to repel Ameer Khan by force of arms. With this view, a body of troops, under Colonel Barry Close, assembled on the eastern frontier of Berar, while another stationed in Bundelcund, under Colonel Martindale, prepared to support him; and their aid was thankfully accepted by the rajah, all the more readily that he had not asked for it, and that no recompense was expected for it.

When Colonel Close was ready to move, Lord Minto wrote to both Holkar, or his representative, and to Ameer Khan, demanding of the former whether the invasion of Berar was by his order; and to the latter, bluntly requiring him to withdraw. Ameer scornfully denied the right of the British to interfere with him, and threatened to invade them, if troubled more on the subject. Meanwhile, the rajah, encouraged by Lord Minto's countenance, had mustered troops, attacked Ameer Khan, and compelled him to seek refuge in the town of Bhopal, which is surrounded by a stone wall, and is in Malwah. On being reinforced there, he re-entered Berar, but met with a second repulse, and then the approach of Close's column left him no alternative but flight. He retreated to Seronge, in Malwah. This was his own capital, and is a large open town, situated in a fertile country, and has long been celebrated for its manufacture of chintzes.

On being followed up by Colonel Close—who deemed his destruction as necessary as that of Dhoondia Waugh by Sir Arthur Wellesley—and on being abandoned by his disorderly forces, he next fled to Indore, on which Lord Minto ordered the British troops to be recalled; and, to prevent a recurrence of such an invasion of Berar, it was

* "Central India."

agreed to furnish the rajah with a subsidiary force ; but as the rajah dreaded to have any such arm, with its influences and necessities, within his territories, the negotiation came to nothing ; and Lord Minto, with all his peaceful plans, next found himself embroiled in the district called Kotra.

The town and district of this name are in Bundelcund, and situated eighty-four miles distant from Gwalior, on the right bank of the Betwa, a river which rises in Gundwana, and after a course of 350 miles, falls into the Jumna.

A chief named Gopal Sing had usurped this place, though the legal heir, Rajah Bukht Sing, had been formally recognised by Sir George Barlow, "but more in mockery than in good faith, since on the principles of non-interference, he was denied the assistance necessary to make it effectual." Acting in a bolder spirit, Lord Minto sent a body of troops, to put him in possession, and Gopal Sing dared not resist them ; yet he was too fearless a spirit to

remain tranquil under dispossession, and retiring to the neighbouring hills began a predatory warfare on every hand, all the more successfully that the removal of Colonel Martindale's forces to menace Ameer Khan left him at liberty to lay the whole country in flames.

Several detachments of troops were marched against him ; but after long eluding them and carrying off enormous quantities of plunder, he was suddenly surrounded in an intrenched post among the mountains. Cutting a way out, he escaped to renew his predatory strife, which he continued with such valour and success that, eventually, he was able to make terms with us ; and instead of being hanged or blown from a gun, received a full pardon for four years of massacre and pillage, with a jag hire of eighteen villages as a reward !

Policy of this kind, in such a land, could but lead to further depredations and outrages by armed outlaws.

CHAPTER LXXIX.

NAVAL AFFAIRS IN THE INDIAN SEAS, 1807 TO 1809.

IN 1806, Rear-Admiral Sir Edward Pellew having assumed the chief command in the Indian Ocean, Rear-Admiral Sir Thomas Trowbridge was directed to proceed to the Cape of Good Hope as commander-in-chief. His flagship was the *Blenheim* (seventy-four), a second-rate once, but cut down and utterly worn out. Early in 1806 she had gone ashore in the Straits of Malacca, where she received so much injury as to unfit her for crossing the Bay of Bengal ; but having patched her up at Pulo Penang, Sir Thomas—a fine old seaman, and one of the heroes of the Nile—whose pride it was to conquer difficulties, rigged her with jury-masts, and took her safely to Madras.

Then the defects of the old *Blenheim* became alarmingly apparent : her back was broken in an extraordinary manner ; she seemed to be literally falling to pieces, and the whole labour of the crew at the pumps barely sufficed to keep her from sinking at her anchors. Captain Austin Bissett, a gallant officer, who captured the *Lodi*, and fought some brilliant actions off Cuba and San Domingo, commanded the *Blenheim*. He represented her perilous state to Sir Thomas, who persisted in his

purpose, and sailed for the Cape, taking with him several passengers. This was on the 12th January, 1807.

The *Java* (thirty-six), (an old Dutch prize), under Captain George Pigot, and the *Harrier* (eighteen-gun brig), Captain Finlay, accompanied him. On the 1st of February, when near the south-east end of Madagascar, the three ships were compelled to lay to in a tremendous gale of wind. In the evening, the *Java* bore up, to close with the *Blenheim*, both ships having signals of distress flying. The officers of the *Harrier* observed that the luckless old seventy-four had settled considerably down in the water, and the brig in attempting to give some succour, by running foul, is supposed to have accelerated her destruction. As night came on the brig bore away for the Cape, and from that hour nothing was ever heard either of the *Blenheim* or the *Java*.

On receiving Captain Finlay's alarming report, Sir Edward Pellew, hoping that Sir Thomas might have put into some port for repairs, ordered his son, Captain Edward Trowbridge, then commanding the *Greyhound* (thirty-two), to go in search of

the missing ships. His orders were to proceed first to the Isle of Roderigue, then to the Mauritius, and to send in flags of truce for that information which, even in war time, would not be refused by a generous enemy.

The gallant and unhappy young officer, says Captain Brenton, commenced his melancholy search, pursuing the course marked out by his admiral. At the Isle of France, General de Caen sent him every information which it had been in his power to collect from the different French stations, together with the description of certain pieces of wreck ; but nothing gave a clue to the lost ships.

Thus perished the famous and gallant old Trow-bridge, of the *Culloden*, so famed in naval annals ; and among those who perished with him were Captain Charles Elphinstone, son of the Chairman of the East India Company, and George, Lord Rosehill, in his sixteenth year, son of the Scottish Earl of Northesk, who had been third in command at Trafalgar. In the two vessels exactly 1,000 men went down, and it is remarkable that the little brig, *Harrier*, which rode out the gale, foundered in the same place, in the following year.

In January, Captain Rainier, in the *Caroline* (thirty-six guns), when cruising in the Straits of St. Bernardine, captured the Spanish register-ship of sixteen guns and ninety-seven men, of whom twenty-seven were killed and wounded in her defence. She had on board a valuable cargo, including 1,700 quintals of copper and half a million of dollars in specie.

As singular and bloody a conflict as any in our naval annals occurred in the April of this year. H.M. sloop, *Victor*, Captain George Bell, captured four of the enemy's brigs in Batavia Roads, and when off Cheribon, a little to the eastward of that coast, brought-to three prows, under Dutch colours. Out of two of these were taken 120 prisoners, over whom a strong guard was placed, under Lieutenant Wemyss. Meanwhile, Lieutenant Parsons, R.N., found it impracticable to get the crew of the third prow up from below ; on which Captain Bell fired a carronade into her, and also opened with musketry. To this they replied by throwing spears and firing pistols. As she was hauled close under the quarter of the *Victor*, he ran a gun out of one of the stern ports and fired again into her.

Some of the sparks reached some powder which had been carelessly taken out of the captured prows, and blew up the after part of the *Victor*. On this, the guard over the prisoners relinquished their arms and ran to extinguish the fire. The prisoners instantly seized these weapons, together with spears and daggers which had been hurled on board, and

attacked the crew of the smoking *Victor*, on the deck of which a furious conflict now ensued while the fire was being got under, and the prows cut adrift.

For more than half an hour the close combat continued, till eighty of the enemy "lay dead and in a most mangled state," and all the rest—save those who had been blown up—were driven overboard into the sea ; but, ere this was achieved, Captain Bell had thirty-one officers and men killed and wounded—among the latter, nine mortally. Nothing short of the most determined valour and perfect coolness could have saved the ship and crew from the complication of perils in which they were involved.

In May, Sir Edward Pellew sailed from Malacca with the *Culloden* (seventy-four), and eight other vessels, having on board a body of troops. With these he arrived off Griesse, where a Dutch naval force was assembled, and sent in a flag of truce to demand its instant surrender, which was granted ; thus the *Resolute* and *Pluto* (seventy guns each), the *Rutkoff* (forty), with a sheer hulk, were given up and committed to the flames.

Captain George N. Hardinge, a gallant young officer (brother of the future Lord Hardinge), when cruising off the coast of Ceylon in the *St. Firenzo*, of forty-four guns, fell in with the *Piedmontaise*, a French ship of very superior qualities, both in construction and equipment. This was on the evening of the 7th of March. He showed his colours and threw out a private signal, which was unanswered. At twenty minutes to midnight, under a clear sky, Hardinge, running on the larboard tack, ranged alongside the *Piedmontaise*, and received her broadside. After only ten minutes' fighting she made off under a cloud of canvas ; but Hardinge chased her so closely that, when day broke, the French captain, finding that battle was unavoidable, laid his mainsail to the wind, clewed up his courses, and lay to ; and at twenty minutes past six the action began at the distance of half a mile, which Hardinge diminished till a quarter past eight, when the Frenchman let fall his courses, filled his canvas to the yard heads, and bore away, leaving the *St. Firenzo* sorely disabled aloft.

Captain Epron, her commander, had a crew of 566 Frenchmen and lascars on board. Hardinge had much fewer, yet he repaired his damages, resumed the chase, and on the morning of the 8th, when the *Piedmontaise* made no attempt to avoid him, he bore down upon her under a press of sail, and resumed the bloody contest. At the second broadside a grape-shot struck young Hardinge in the neck and killed him on the instant ; and after an hour and a half of close fighting, the enemy

surrendered to Lieutenant George Dawson, whose losses were thirty-eight, while those of the enemy were 150. Dawson was posted, and a monument in St. Paul's Cathedral still commemorates the valour of Hardinge.

As a portion of the penalty for leaguings with France, the Dutch were now to receive one of the most severe blows experienced by their commerce in the Indian seas. Sir Edward Pellew having obtained information of a naval force being in some port of the Isle of Java, took with him a squadron, consisting of his flagship, the *Culloden* (seventy-four); the *Russell* and *Powerful* (also seventy-fours), commanded respectively by Captains William and Plampin; the *Bellegueux* (sixty-four), Captain Byng (afterwards Lord Torrington), the *Sir Francis Drake* (thirty-eight), *Psyche* (thirty-six), *Terpsichore* (thirty-two), under Captains Harris, Pellew, and Bathurst, with the *Seaflower* brig under Lieutenant Owen.

In sailing through the Straits of Sunda, they captured the armed Dutch ship, *Wilhelmina*, and on the following morning were off Java, then boasted by the Dutch as "the Queen of the East." Sending a frigate and the brig into the roadstead, Sir Edward took a more circuitous route between Java and the Isle of Ormuz, to capture the enemy's squadron. The latter, on perceiving the coming attack, cut their cables and ran on shore, and our ships of the line were unable to approach them, as the water shoaled. The *Sir Francis Drake* and *Terpsichore* covered with their guns the boats of the fleet which ran in, and the men, led by Captain Fleetwood Pellew, boarded and set on flames every vessel in the roadstead, undeterred by the heavy fire of the great shore batteries.

The whole merchant shipping, to the number of twenty sail, perished there, and with them nine vessels of war, carrying 160 guns and 688 men; while we had only one man killed and four wounded. Similar destruction overtook another Dutch squadron off Samarang, when five sail of armed vessels were sunk, or taken, by Captain Pellew, in the month of September.*

During the year 1808, the naval operations of the enemy in the East were confined to predatory excursions of the frigates and privateers. Captain J. C. Woolcomb, with the *Laurel*, of twenty-two guns, when cruising off the Isle of France, fell in with *La Canonnière*, a fully-manned vessel of thirty-eight guns, and having no wish to engage at such disadvantage, he declined the action, but was compelled to fight for an hour and half, after which, the *Laurel* being disabled, had to surrender.

* "Naval Hist.," vol. iv.

"Her damage was confined to her masts and rigging," says Captain Brenton; "to these the fire of the enemy had been chiefly directed, and in this he completely attained his object; while, on the other hand, the fire of the *Laurel* being directed to the hull, the French frigate had five men killed and nineteen wounded. The character of Captain Woolcomb received no blemish from this misfortune, a court-martial having honourably acquitted him. In his mode of fighting he appears to have adhered to the old English maxim of firing at the tier of guns. In a case of this sort, it might have been better to have directed the whole fire at the mainmast-head: that fallen, the ship might have become an easy prey to the *Laurel*."

In the following year, 1809, our naval squadron in the East was commanded by Rear-Admiral William O'Brien Drury, who dispatched two frigates and nine Company's cruisers, under Captain John Wainwright, of *La Chiffone* (thirty-six), into the Persian Gulf to punish the pirates there; and we are told, that "the manner in which that gallant officer executed his orders, and supported the interests of his country and the honour of her flag in that distant region, should render his memory dear to Britain."

He had with him a detachment of troops, under Colonel Smith. On the afternoon of the 11th of November he was at Ras-al-Khyma, the stronghold of the pirates; but the water shoaled too much, and prevented even the smaller vessels approaching the town nearer than two miles; and to increase the impatience of all, a British ship, called the *Minerva*, which the pirates had captured, was seen helplessly in flames that evening.

On the following day our gun-boats and smaller craft crept inshore, and bombarded the town for three hours. This was continued on the 13th, while Lieutenant Leslie of the *Chiffone*, with two gun-boats and a party of soldiers, made a false attack on the north; but the principal attempt was to be essayed on the opposite side.

There Colonel Smith, with the rest of the troops, and Captain Wainwright, with all the seamen and marines that could be spared, landed, entered the town at the point of the bayonet, and drove out the enemy, whose rout was completed by a grape-shot fire from the gunboats. By four in the afternoon, every vessel in the harbour, and all the store-houses, were enveloped in sheets of flame. Captain Gordon, of the *Caroline* (thirty-six guns), aided Captain Wainwright in this service. All the towns of the pirates along the coast were destroyed, after which the squadron proceeded to Luft, near the island of Kishmee (at the entrance of

the Persian Gulf), which is governed by a sheikh under the Imaum of Muscat, who pays 1,000 tomans yearly to the governor of Shiraz.

After assembling his whole forces, Captain Wainwright endeavoured for twenty-four hours to bring the inhabitants to terms in vain. He anchored off the town, within musket-shot, and landed the troops, seamen, and marines. In attempting to force the gate of the fort, they encountered a most destructive fire from the enemy ;

both to shipping and the repair of ships of war and privateers, had enabled several active French officers to do serious injury to our East Indian commerce ; and the successes of De Sercy, Linois, Bergeret, and Du Perrée, were owing to the facilities these islands afforded them. The state of politics in India, and the almost perfect subjection of the native princes, enabled Lord Minto to spare such a body of troops as would, when properly seconded by our vessels of war, ensure us a



THE ATTACK ON ST. PAUL'S, BOURBON.

after which the sloops of war and gunboats bombarded it with such severity, that the governor agreed to surrender it to us next day, but in favour of the Imaum of Muscat.

Meanwhile, the seamen in the gun-boats burned eleven piratical vessels that lay in the harbour, and having thus completely chastised and crippled these ferocious freebooters, Captain Wainwright received from the admiral the highest marks of his approbation.

All that now remained to France, eastward of the Cape of Good Hope, were the Isles of France and Bourbon. The resources possessed by the first of these islands, and the shelter afforded by

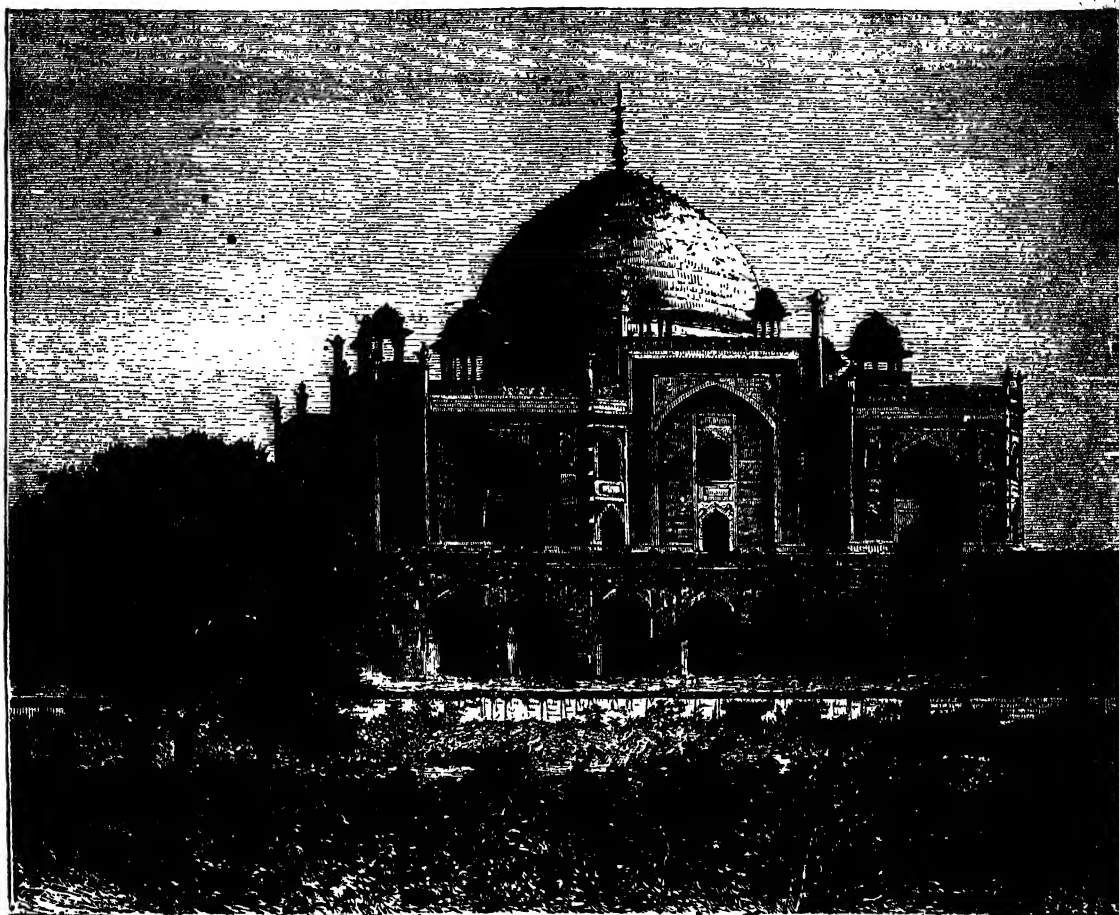
footing on these islands, and thus deprive the French cruisers of their usual basis of operations ; for by the year 1809, their depredations had exceeded all bounds, and our navy, though triumphant, failed to destroy the evil, either by blockade or bringing their ships to action.

As a preparatory step to the intended measures, Vice-Admiral Bertie, commanding at the Cape of Good Hope, was ordered to enforce a vigorous blockade ; and Captain (afterwards Sir Josias) Rowley was entrusted with the performance of this duty.

Colonel Keating, who commanded a strong body of troops on the Isle of Diego-Ruys, or Roërigue,

having been informed that Bourbon might be captured if the troops combined with the navy, readily joined in the enterprise. The harbour of St. Paul, one of the chief towns in Bourbon, had long been the chief rendezvous of the French cruisers with their prizes; and Captain Corbett, of the *Sirius*, had made himself so well acquainted with the defences of that island, where Colonel

The men were landed in the Bay of St. Paul's; the batteries were stormed, and their guns turned on the French ships in the roadstead. Our squadron at the same time opened its fire, and by nine next morning the whole of the forts; the shipping, and the town were in our possession. In this service the naval brigade were under the command of Captains Willoughby and Corbett.



VIEW OF THE MAUSOLEUM OF THE EMPEROR HOUMAYOUN, IN THE PLAIN OF DELHI.

Suzanne, a brave French officer, commanded, that Captain Rowley sent him, with the *Otter* and *Sapphire*, to bring the troops from Roderigue. H.M.S. *Boadicea* blockaded Port Louis, in the Isle of France; and the commodore, in the *Raisonné* (sixty-four guns), assembled the squadron to windward of the island.

As soon as the arrangements were complete, the troops under Colonel Keating, consisting of only 368 Europeans and sepoys, to whom were added a body of seamen and marines, making in all 604 small-arm men, with the squadron, joined by the *Sirius*, drew near the shore after dark.

With her stern within pistol-shot of the beach, the *Sirius* came to anchor, and had bravely sustained the fire of the batteries, a frigate, two Indiamen, and a brig. Not a shot was returned till both her anchors were let go and her courses clewed up, and then she covered the advance of the troops, who rushed on with such fury, that in twenty minutes every French flag was struck.

In hissing showers, the grape of the *Sirius* reached the most distant ships of the enemy, and so severely and so well was her fire maintained, that even the enemy expressed their admiration.

Her gunners used no wads, which enabled them to load more quickly.

La Caroline, a French frigate, on seeing the *Sirius* taking a raking position ahead of her, surrendered. This vessel in May had captured, off the Nicobar Islands, in the Bay of Bengal, the *Streatham* and *Europe*, two richly-laden East Indianmen, in the face of other three, who were so ill-manned as to be unable to assist them. The French captain conducted his prizes to St. Paul's, and they had not been long there when they were thus retaken, himself and his frigate at the same time falling into our hands—an event which overpowered his mind, and led him to commit suicide.

•All the vessels in the place were brought away. Captain Willoughby spiked the guns and mortars, burned the carriages, blew up the magazine, and returned to the ships with trivial loss.

Under Colonel Suzanne, the French began to collect in force upon some heights above the town of St. Denis, on the 22nd of August, at a time when the surf was boiling with such fury as to preclude much intercourse between the squadron and the shore, and when the commanders had determined to destroy the government stores there,

Captain Willoughby was again selected for this service, which he ably performed at the head of the naval brigade, and set a large magazine in flames.

On the following day, when he was about to land again, the enemy sent proposals to capitulate, which being accepted, the town of St. Paul's was placed under British protection during an armistice of three weeks. The cargoes of the Indianmen were re-shipped, their captains and crews put on board, and they proceeded on their homeward voyage. The number lost on our side was only twenty-five killed and wounded. Among the latter were three lieutenants.

A small reverse occurred in November, when *La Bellone*, a French forty-four-gun frigate, commanded by Captain du Perrée, captured, off the Sandheads, near the mouth of the Ganges, our sloop the *Victor* (already mentioned), then commanded by Captain Stopford, who valiantly defended her for more than half an hour, and attempted to board the enemy; but failing in that, and being completely disabled by the overpowering fire of the *Bellone*, to which he could only oppose eight guns a side, he was compelled to strike his colours.*

CHAPTER LXXX.

CAPTURE OF KALLINGER.—“THE IRISH RAJAH.”—TREATY WITH RUNJEET SING.—THE EMBASSY TO CABUL.

AFTER quieting Ameer Khan, Lord Minto had now to turn his attention to another chief, who remained sullenly and haughtily in his fort, which was deemed, as usual, by the Bundelas impregnable.

His name was Dariao Sing, and his stronghold was Kallinger, in Bundelcund, 112 miles distant from Allahabad. It figures much in the early history of India; in 1024, it was ineffectually besieged by Mahmoud of Ghizni, and in 1545, Shu Shah, the Afghan, lost his life in attempting to take it; and the Mahrattas had frequently striven in vain to capture it. The whole of its buildings bear the impress of vast antiquity, even for India, and its fabled sanctity still attracts numerous pilgrims. It crowns a long, flat, and isolated hill, which rises to the height of 900 feet above a marshy plain, and has a plateau four miles in circuit, on all sides deemed safe from escalade, as the lower base of

the slope is covered by an impenetrable jungle, and the upper is naked precipice. In many parts now the walls are in ruins, from the foundations of the ramparts giving way. It is in the centre of a mountainous territory, which, however, produces iron, ebony, and cotton.

The whole area of the plateau was enclosed by an ancient wall, loopholed below and crenelated above; and the only ascent thereto was by a tortuous path, winding along its eastern face, and defended by seven successive fortified gates. Confident that this famous old stronghold could not be taken by force, Dariao Sing openly defied the British Government, and gave hearty protection to all marauders who sought it. Thus it became a focus or nucleus for disturbance, the existence of which had been tacitly ignored by Sir George

* Brenton's "Nav. Hist.," &c.

Barlow, till Colonel Martindale advanced against it with a considerable force from Banda, and came before it on the 26th of January, 1812.

After great toil in cutting a path through the primeval jungle, four eighteen-pounders and two mortars were, by main force, dragged to the summit of an opposing height, called Kallingari, which rises about 800 yards distant from the fort.

Lower down two other batteries were raised and armed. These opened fire on the 28th, and by the 1st of February the breach was reported practicable. With great difficulty, the stormers came within fifty yards of it, about sunrise; and after a brief pause, under shelter of a fragment of ruin, they rushed to the foot of the parapet, where a most unexpected obstacle met them. Ere the breach could be reached, it was necessary to surmount the face of a precipitous rock, which was crowned by the demolished rampart; and as fast as our men swarmed up the scaling-ladders they were shot down by dense ranks of matchlock-men, or hurled over the steep by ponderous stones.

The contest was most unequal, yet it was valiantly maintained by the stormers for more than half an hour, ere they were recalled by sound of bugle. The bravery shown, and the loss endured, were not without a due effect. Dariao Sing began to fear that his fort was not impregnable, and rather than endure a second assault he capitulated. After being used for a short time as a military post by a battalion of native infantry and some European artillery, it was dismantled and abandoned. The famous diamond mines of Punnah (supposed to be the *Panassa* of Ptolemy) lie among the mountains twenty miles south of Kallinger. After the reduction of the latter, Lord Minto completed the tranquillity of Bundelcund by compelling the Rajah of Rewah (now a protected state in the province of Allahabad) to enter into a treaty which, while it guaranteed his own territory, restrained him from disturbing the possessions of his neighbours.

Necessity compelled Lord Minto to interfere by force in another quarter to procure peace and rule. This was in that district of Hindostan named Hurriana, which lies westward of Delhi, and the capital of which is Paniput. Its name signifies the "Green Country," though on the verge of the sandy desert of Ajmere. Its Jaut inhabitants, having thrown off their allegiance to the Mogul, became divided into a number of petty tribes, which, though at times uniting against any common foe, were incapable of a long, combined struggle for freedom, and they became the prey of any military adventurer.

The most enterprising of these was George

Thomas, commonly known as the "Irish Rajah," whose marvellous adventures with the Begum Sumroo, form a singular episode in our Indian history. He was a native of Tipperary, who deserted our sea service at Madras in 1781; and after being among the Polygars, proceeded to Delhi, the heart of Central India, in 1787. He obtained a commission in the brigade of the Begum Sumroo, and by his plausibility rose high in her favour, till supplanted by another adventurer; on which, in 1792, he took service under one of Scindia's discarded officers, who had succeeded in establishing an independent state near Delhi. On his death, in 1797, it was on the point of falling to pieces, when George Thomas boldly declared himself the rajah thereof; and for four years he made Hansi his capital, and reigned over a territory 100 miles long by seventy-five miles broad, containing ten pergunnahs; but the canals had long been choked up, and the cultivation of the soil was entirely dependent on the monsoon.*

While pursuing his conquests in Hindostan, Scindia sent General Perron to blockade him in Hansi, when he surrendered, on condition of being conducted safely to the British territory. In January, 1802, he was on his way to Calcutta to embark for his native land, when an illness overtook him and he died at Berhampore.

During the war with Scindia, Hurriana passed to the British, and then into the possession of several chiefs; but remained in an unsettled and turbulent state, till Lord Minto, aware of its value, sent in troops, who, after a short contest with its people, reduced them to subjection. They became peaceful agriculturists.

The boldest step Lord Minto had taken was one on which he ventured now. The famous Sikh, Runjeet Sing, having gained an ascendancy over all the Sikh territory on the left, or east bank of the Sutlej—the natives of which, at the end of the Mahratta war, had professed to us a submission which was never distinctly defined—now conceived the tempting idea of pushing his power beyond it, along the right bank of that celebrated river; but he did not venture to cross, until he had the plea of an invitation from some one. And this soon came to pass.

The Rajah of Naba quarrelled with the Rajah of Pattialah, a small Sikh principality, 130 miles north-west of Delhi, having a capital of the same name, surrounded by a ditch and mud wall; in the centre stands the citadel, containing the tombs of many Sikh saints. The former asked his aid against the latter. This Runjeet gladly granted;

* Captain Franklin (1803), &c.

and, in October, 1806, he marched across the Sutlej, at the head of a body of horse, and compelled both rajahs to submit to his dictation; and he was not long in turning to account the influence thus won, when, in the following year, a quarrel broke out in the household of the Rajah of Pattialah.

His wife being refused an assignment of revenue for her son, that lady was unwise enough to summon Runjeet to her aid; so once again he crossed the Sutlej, at the head of his forces, spreading consternation among those chiefs who considered themselves British subjects, and, as such, sought from our Resident at Delhi protection against him. Their request was forwarded to Lord Minto; but ere he could act, the quarrel of the Pattialah family was over, and Runjeet's departure purchased by several presents, including a famous brass cannon.

As a farewell warning to the chiefs, on his homeward way, he demolished their forts and ravaged their lands. This led to the muster of British troops on the banks of the Jumna. He wrote a remonstrance to Lord Minto, who, instead of replying, resolved to send an envoy to Lahore, of which Runjeet had long since declared himself king. Mr. Metcalfe (afterwards Sir Charles Metcalfe, Governor-General of Jamaica) set out on the mission to Runjeet Sing, whom he found encamped at Kusoor. On learning that our government would not accept the Jumna as the boundary of their territories, Runjeet daringly crossed the Sutlej, and, with Metcalfe in his train, proceeded to exercise all regal rights within the intermediate lands which we claimed; and on being distinctly informed that he must resign all authority over the conquests he had made on the left bank of the Sutlej since the period when the Sikhs had been taken under British protection, he seemed so resolved to put all to the issue of the sword, that a column, under Lieutenant-Colonel Ochterlony, crossed the Jumna into Loodiana, while a greater force, under General St. Leger, prepared to support that officer.

Convinced now that Lord Minto would not be trifled with, the King of Lahore abandoned all ideas of war; and on the 25th of April, 1809, there was concluded with him a treaty, by which he "agreed not to maintain more troops on the left bank of the Sutlej than were necessary for the internal management of the territories then acknowledged to belong to him, nor to make any encroachment on the protected Sikh rajahs; and the British agreed not to interfere in any way with his territories on the north of the river." The

whole country of Lahore could at this time have sent 100,000 horse into the field; yet Runjeet was glad to conclude the treaty, and accept a European carriage and pair of horses "to cement harmony."

This matter had barely been adjusted in peace, when a serious disturbance occurred in Delhi.

When old Shah Alum died, in 1806, his eldest son took the title of Akbar II.; and not unnaturally, while repining at the fallen fortunes of his house, made several futile efforts to break the bonds his British masters had forged for him; yet only on one occasion did Lord Minto find a necessity for stringent interference.

Akbar II. had several sons; but ignoring the eldest born, the mother of his third son, Mirza Jehangir, intrigued so successfully in his behalf as to induce the weak monarch, who seemed a plaything in her hands, to take such steps as showed plainly his intention of altering the proper mode of succession. The moment the Governor-General interfered, Mirza Jehangir began to take his own measures, and by a body of armed men kept the palace of the Moguls in a state of ferment.

With the consent of Akbar, a company of our sepoys was now ordered to mount guard on the palace gates, within which the adherents of the prince took up a hostile position; and when Mr. Seton, our Resident, approached to expostulate, he was fired on, and narrowly escaped death. On this our officers resorted to the bayonet; the inner gates were forced, their holders expelled, and Mirza Jehangir was sent, a prisoner for life, to Allahabad. From that moment the Shah Akbar II. bowed to the fate imposed upon him; and his pension of 76,500 rupees per month, which had been promised only conditionally by the Marquis of Wellesley, was now confirmed by Lord Minto.

The renewed alarm about Bonaparte's designs upon our Eastern empire had doubtless facilitated the treaty concluded with Runjeet of Lahore, and forced Lord Minto into many embassies and a great extension of diplomatic relations; but now, for the first time, our Indian Government courted a close connection with the Afghans and the Ameers of Scinde. Before the end of 1807, it was confidently asserted that France had, for the time, destroyed our influence at the capitals of Russia, Turkey, and Persia, and, with the co-operation of those countries, conceived the design of invading India. Though a mere chimera this, the apprehensions it excited lasted long; and the idea that the French would enter India by the north-western route through Afghanistan was the bugbear of politicians at Calcutta.

Zemaun Shah, who had excited the apprehensions

of successive Governors-General, and twice invaded Upper India, had been betrayed by his own family, dethroned, and had his eyesight extinguished by Prince Mahmoud. Sujah-ul-Mulk, uncle of the latter barbarian, had made war upon him, driven him out of Cabul, and had placed himself upon the throne. His success in achieving this revolution was chiefly owing to the circumstance of his brother, Zemaun, having placed in his care all the jewels and other property of the crown.

Other civil wars and revolutions had taken place before 1809; but when our envoy, the Hon. Mountstuart Elphinstone (son of John, Lord Elphinstone), with his splendid suite, arrived, Sujah-ul-Mulk was in occupation of the throne, and then in the thirtieth year of his age. "The expression of his countenance," wrote Elphinstone, who was afterwards Governor of Bombay, "was dignified and pleasing, his voice clear, and his address princely. We thought that he had an armour of jewels; but, on close inspection, we found this to be a mistake, and his real dress to consist of a green tunic, with large flowers in gold and precious stones, over which were a large breastplate of diamonds shaped like two flattened fleurs-de-lis, an ornament of the same kind on each thigh, large emerald bracelets on the arms (above the elbow); and many other jewels in different places. In one of the bracelets was the *Koh-i-noor*, known to be one of the largest diamonds in the world."*

The embassy was received at Peshawur, and not at Cabul, as a civil war was raging among the Afghan tribes (who in many respects resemble closely the clans of the Scottish Highlands), and all the country, from Cabul to Candahar, was in a state of convulsion. Notwithstanding the jewelled dress of Sujah-ul-Mulk, it was but too apparent to Mr. Elphinstone that the meanness of the crumbling monarchy was only equalled by the rapacity of the Afghan courtiers, of which he gives us some amusing instances. "Lord Minto," he mentions, "had sent many splendid presents to the king. The Afghan officers who received charge of the presents kept the camels on which some of these were sent, and even seized four riding-camels which had entered the palace by mistake. They stripped Mr. Elphinstone's elephant-drivers of their livery, and gravely insisted that two English footmen, who were sent to put up the chandeliers, were part of the Governor-General's present to their shah."† The latter took a strong fancy to the silk stockings worn by the suite, and begged that some might

be given him by Elphinstone, who, by his skill and diplomacy, achieved the purpose for which he came, and in June, 1809, he concluded a treaty with the mountain potentate, in which the co-operation of his hardy and warlike Afghans was fully promised against the French, who were declared in the treaty to have entered into a confederacy against the kingdom of Cabul, with ulterior designs on Hindostan. Britain bound herself to pay for this co-operation, and to provide for any expense to which our new ally might be put in preventing the French (of whom and whose locality he must have been in perfect ignorance) from entering India.

As he was about to take the field against some rebels, with a large and disorderly army, Elphinstone thought it well to hasten his departure; and, on the 14th of June, he commenced the homeward journey towards the Indus, but had barely proceeded four miles from Peshawur, when he was attacked by robbers, and deprived of a mule, laden with rich shawls, and rupees to the value of £1,000 sterling. On the 20th of June he crossed the Indus at Attock, where, he says, the river in that month is 260 yards broad, and was violent in its current. As the embassy passed in boats, they saw many of the country people floating on the water, astride on the inflated skins of oxen. This mode is also in use on the Oxus, and was a practice of the natives of those regions as far back as the days of Alexander the Great, as described by Arrian, in his "Expedition Alexandri."

Three marches from the far-famed river brought the embassy to the beautiful valley of Hussein Abdaul, in a district frequently the object of contention between the Sikhs and Afghans, and the favourite halting-place of the Moguls in their yearly journeys to the vale of Cashmere. There Mr. Elphinstone was disposed to linger, but received orders to return immediately to British territory. Ere he could do this, it was necessary to obtain from Sujah-ul-Mulk a letter, and also to adjust with the Sikhs a promise of a passage through their territories, which, at first, the Ameers flatly refused to accord. So the embassy had a ten days' halt in the valley, which nature has made so charming, with its rose-trees, its sheets of violets and lilies, its streams and cascades.

With the permission of the Ameers, Elphinstone was just about to resume his journey when the flying harem of the shah came close to his camp. The former had been defeated in a mountain pass, and compelled to fly before a partisan of Prince Mahmoud. Another battle, in which the latter was present, was fought soon after; the shah was again

* "Account of the Kingdom of Cabul," &c.

† Ibid.

defeated, and fled to the mountains with only thirty horsemen; while Mahmoud seated himself again upon the throne at Cabul.

Aided by the Soubahdar of Cashmere, and also by the mountain clans, Shah Sujah once more advanced against his nephew, only to receive a third defeat, after which he shut himself up in the fortress of Attock; after this he returned

of its women was the aged, blind, and helpless Zemaun Shah. "Had he gone over all Asia," adds Elphinstone, "he could scarcely have discovered a more remarkable instance of the mutability of fortune than he himself presented: blind, dethroned, and exiled, in a country which he had twice subdued."

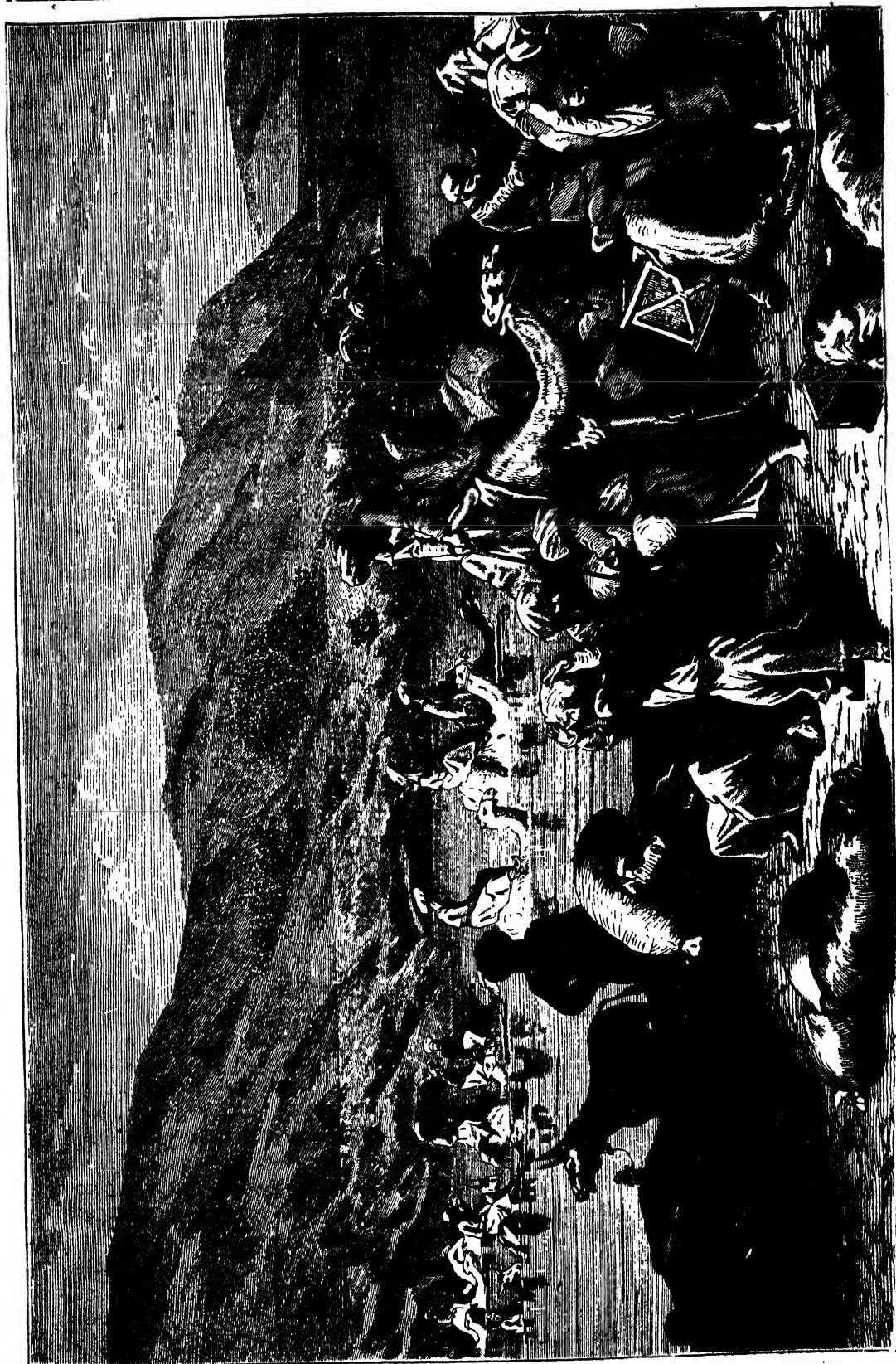
A pecuniary grant, which Shah Sujah solicited



MOUNTAINEERS OF AFGHANISTAN.

to Peshawur, and re-established his authority over the western portion of those vast regions which are the heritage of the Afghan race. The treaty made was certainly valueless; but the embassy added greatly to our knowledge of that rugged land, and the wild clans who people it. When travelling through the Sikh country, Mr. Elphinstone again met the harem of Sujah-ul-Mulk, and in the train

in his need, and which Mr. Elphinstone strongly recommended, might have enabled him to regain the ascendancy over all his enemies; but, by that time, the reverses of Napoleon, and the victories of Wellington, removed all fear of French influence in the East; the grant was refused, and alliances with the Afghan clans were courted no more.



MERCHANTS CROSSING THE INDUS.

CHAPTER LXXXI.

THE EMBASSIES TO PERSIA AND SCINDE, 1809.—FIGHTING IN TRAVANCORE.

OCCASIONED by the same not quite groundless panic of an invasion, Lord Minto, about the same time, sent embassies to Persia and Scinde. Sir John Malcolm, who had won a high reputation when envoy on a previous occasion to the Shah, was again invested with plenipotentiary powers in Persia, to counteract the influence which France was supposed to have attained at the Persian court. Bonaparte was then, after being driven out of Egypt, conceiving the idea of injuring us by the way of Persia; for, on the 10th of September, 1807, a French mission for Teheran left Constantinople, consisting of Gardanne, as ambassador, his brother, a man of letters, six engineer and two artillery officers, with a dozen other Frenchmen. These men industriously represented the British as the tyrants of the earth and sea, the French as the friends of peace and liberty; and, in short, Gardanne and his companions, while surveying the country, examining its resources, and casting cannon for the Shah, were carrying all before them. Sir John Malcolm arrived, and so important was the object in view, that the Ministry, about the same time, dispatched on the same errand Sir Harford Jones—a double embassy which was unfortunate, and against which Lord Minto protested. Ere the latter arrived, "General Gardanne and his Frenchmen had gained such ground in the Persian court that the Scottish Elchee saw no chance of succeeding; and being wisely of opinion that it would do mischief rather than good to remain at Bushire, or to proceed to the capital in a humiliating condition, or without the certainty of being honourably received, Malcolm hastened back to Calcutta, and proposed to the Governor-General a bold plan for overawing the impotent Persian court, and for procuring the speedy dismissal of Gardanne."

This plan was to seize the Isle of Kismis, in the Persian Gulf, and immediately make it an emporium for commerce, a dépôt for military stores, and the basis of future operations. Lord Minto grasped at the project, and the gallant Malcolm was ready to sail from Bombay, at the head of 2,000 men, for the Persian Gulf, when tidings came of Jones' arrival at the former place, en route to Teheran, with presents worth many thousands of pounds, from George III. to the Shah. The fame of all these riches preceded him, and the khans, when beholding the presents, exclaimed, "Mashallah!

the British are not ruined; but the French are the fathers of lies, and made us eat dirt!"

Malcolm also went to Persia a third time, by his presence and advice to perfect the negotiations—Sir Harford Jones having concluded a preliminary treaty. He reached Teheran in June, 1810, but quitted it without accomplishing anything, on being made acquainted with the approach of Sir Gore Ouseley, Bart., as ambassador extraordinary from Britain.

Malcolm's reception, however, had been most gracious; and on his departure the Shah conferred upon him the order of the Lion and Sun, presented him with a valuable sword, and made him a Khan and Sepahdar of the empire.* He is said to have introduced the potato into Persia, where it is known as "Malcolm's plum."†

The embassy to Scinde was sent professedly with a view to commercial privileges, and to establish friendly relations with Hyderabad, its capital. Mr. Hankey Smith was Lord Minto's envoy to the Ameers, whose country was in a state as lawless and turbulent as Afghanistan. A treaty or amicable arrangement was concluded with them on the 9th of August, 1809, "the Ameers pledging themselves to permit no enemy of the British to cross their frontiers, and to exclude the tribe of the French from settling in their country."

Gholaum Ali, the most powerful of those warlike chiefs, wished the British to assist him in conquering the adjacent country of Cutch; but he was told that Britain had no desire to extend its dominions in any direction, or to aid any power in aims of conquest. On hearing this the Ameers scorned the treaty, and prepared to conquer Cutch alone.

A dispute with Travancore was the next important affair in Lord Minto's government. On the conclusion of the war with Tippoo, two treaties had been signed between the Company and the rajah. The first guaranteed his territories, but bound him to furnish, when wanted, all the troops he was able to muster. Another (1805) bound him to pay for a certain subsidiary force. By the end of the third year the subsidy was in arrears, and on payment being demanded, the rajah declared the

* "Scot. Biog. Dict.," 1842.

† It is interesting to note that his name—one of great antiquity in Scotland—is borne by Mirza Malkam (Malcolm) Khan, the ambassador of the Shah at the Court of Queen Victoria (1876).

second treaty had been thrust upon him, and that the payment of four battalions, for which it stipulated, was more than his exchequer could stand. On the other hand, our Resident, Colonel Macaulay, urged that delay in paying the subsidy was owing to the money spent upon a useless body of troops called the Carnatic Brigade. Hence the dispute took this form—whether the subsidiary force or the brigade should be reduced.

The dewan, or premier, of Travancore, Vailoo Tambi, was blamed by Macaulay for permitting the subsidy to fall into arrear; and the colonel urged his removal. This was, to all appearance, acceded to; but the dewan, while pretending to hold office only till the nomination of a successor, organised in secret a conspiracy of the Nairs, induced the dewan of the Rajah of Cochin to join him, and gave encouragement to some French adventurers who landed on the coast. Moreover, he sought to inflame the neighbouring rajahs by rumours that their religion was in danger; thus Colonel Macaulay applied for reinforcements.

On the 28th of December, 1808, the dewan intimated his intention of resigning, and departing to Calicut. On that very night Macaulay's house was surrounded and broken into by armed men, intent on murdering him. Concealing himself, he contrived to escape in the morning, and reach a vessel, which proved to be a British transport, with part of the expected reinforcements on board. Under Colonel Chalmers, the subsidiary force was cantoned at Quilon, after advancing from which place he was compelled to return again, as 40,000 Nairs or Travancorians were alleged to be in arms.

Early in January, 1809, he was joined at Quilon by four companies of H.M. 12th Regiment, from Cannanore, on the Malabar coast, under Lieutenant-Colonel John Picton, uncle of the famous Sir Thomas, who fell at Waterloo. The disparity of force was very great, for Vailoo Tambi was now advancing, at the head of 30,000 men, led in many instances by French, Dutch, and German officers, and with a park of eighteen guns. He commenced the attack, but after a five hours' conflict he was defeated with very great loss. Colonel Picton died a general in 1811.

After this repulse at Quilon, breathing wrath and revenge, he hastened off to Cochin, known as "the morass" by the Portuguese, which was held by Major Hewitt, with only two companies of the 12th and six of native infantry. That officer was attacked by the Travancorians in three great masses, which he repulsed with signal bravery; but meanwhile succours were arriving. Colonel John Cuppage, who commanded in Malabar,

entered the province of Cochin at the head of H.M. 80th, or Staffordshire Volunteers, and two battalions of sepoys; from Trichinopoly, Colonel the Hon. Arthur St. Leger (son of Lord Doneraile) was coming on with H.M. 69th Foot, a regiment of native cavalry, three of sepoys, and some of the Royal Artillery, while a Kaffre regiment was to join him from Ceylon. He directed his march through the province of Tinnevely, across the great mountain range by the western Ghauts that end at Cape Comorin. As the most practicable passes are far to the south, he had to turn his march as much as possible in that direction.

The route he selected was through the pass of Arambuli, which leads westward across the mountains by the highway from Palamacottah, a town in the Tinnevely district. This pass was defended by formidable works, a portion of the famous Lines of Travancore; and as Colonel St. Leger had no train of battering guns, to force them was a task of no small difficulty.

On the 8th of February the Lines were surveyed by Major Welsh and Lieutenant Gore, and on the following day an attack was made. According to St. Leger's despatch to the Madras Government, the escalade consisted of two companies of our 69th Regiment, commanded by Captain W. Syms, with some native companies, and it was eminently successful after Major Welsh won possession of a redoubt which enfiladed the whole line to be attacked. "In the lists of gallant fellows which accompany this despatch, I have to lament the fate of Captain Cunningham, whose wound, I fear, is mortal, which deprives his country of a brave and valuable officer. When Major Welsh had once effected his security in that commanding position, I dispatched to his assistance, by the same arduous route, a company of H.M. 69th Regiment, and three companies of the 1st and 2nd Battalions of the 13th Regiment, under Captain Hodgson, to reinforce and add confidence to his party. As soon as this addition was perceived, a detachment from his party stormed the main lines, and by dint of persevering bravery carried them entirely, and the northern redoubt was abandoned by the panic-struck enemy, who fled in confusion in every direction, leaving me in possession of their strongest lines; and I am now encamped in a convenient position, two miles interior of the (*sic*) Arambooly Gate."

A great number of cannon, many of them brass, and of beautiful workmanship, fell into our hands.

On the 17th of February the troops began to move in the direction of Trivandapatam, an

extensive place, which contains the summer palace of the Rajah of Travancore, built in European fashion.

From an opposite point, Colonel Chalmers was also advancing upon it; while Colonel Cuppage, having crossed the northern frontier, was pushing on southward without opposition.

Our soldiers were filled with the blindest fury against the rajah, the dewan, and all their followers, in consequence of the brutal murder of Mr. Hume, a Scottish surgeon, to whose professional services the dewan had been more than once indebted; and in consequence also of what was known by them as the "Massacre of Aleppi," when he put to a horrible death Sergeant-Major Tilsby and thirty-four soldiers of the 12th whom he had entrapped. An officer of the 12th thus relates the diabolical deed:—"The soldiers had escaped the fury of the hurricane, and anchored off Aleppi, a sea-port about forty miles from Cochin, mistaking this place for Quilon; and, canoes pushing off from the shore, they landed without hesitation or suspicion, rejoiced to be so speedily relieved from their miserable and dangerous confinement. On reaching the bazaar, they were informed that the British force was only five miles distant. After depositing their arms in a large room pointed out as the temporary barracks for the Europeans, they afterwards strolled about the town, and the inhabitants supplying them with arrack free of all expense, the poor fellows soon became intoxicated, and extended in the streets in a completely inanimate state, incapable of the least resistance, and were thus easily secured by the Travancorians, who first cruelly broke both wrists of each soldier with a heavy iron bar, smashing the bones to atoms; then tightly tying their hands behind them, and neck and knees together, they barbarously precipitated them into a deep loathsome dungeon. In this choking condition they remained four days and nights, without water or food. The agonising groans of the miserable men were mimicked and derided by these barbarians. On the fifth morning they were taken out separately, in a state of extreme exhaustion, and conveyed to the Backwater, three miles distant, surrounded by the exulting populace. Heavy stones were then attached to the neck of each helpless wretch, and thus they were plunged into the water, amidst the barbarous shouts and mimics of the natives! The sergeant-major, who had been overpowered, was the last victim of this unprecedented tragedy; he repeatedly called for a sword, that he might die like a soldier, but all in vain; he was also precipitated, in spite of cries

and struggles, into the watery grave already shared by his comrades in misfortune. These particulars were communicated by a cook-boy who had accompanied the detachment, and had been an eye-witness of the whole inhuman transaction. Aleppi is thirty miles from Quilon. This massacre was commanded by the collector of pepper, a man named Popinapilly." Moreover, Vailoo Tambi was accused of having put to death in cold blood 3,000 native Christians, charged with no crime but their religion.

As our troops marched on, intent on vengeance, all resistance seemed to have ceased, and it only remained for their leaders to dictate to the rajah such terms as would at least prevent a recurrence of an insurrection so savage in its features.

The guilty dewan had fled, and being abandoned by his master—who, to convince the conquerors of his zeal, was base enough to send several armed parties in search of him—took refuge, in his terror and despair, in the pagoda of Bhagwadi. Though this place was venerated as a holy sanctuary, his Hindoo pursuers had no hesitation in violating it, and Vailoo Tambi was found expiring with self-inflicted wounds. His brother, who was taken with him, was conveyed to Quilon and hanged.

His dead body was stripped, taken to Trivandapatam, and exposed upon a gibbet. "This proceeding, though said to have been the act of the rajah, was strongly censured by the Governor-General, who held that the Resident had made himself responsible, by neither preventing the exposure nor proclaiming his disapprobation. The ends of justice were served when the dewan ceased to exist; and the attempt to carry punishment further was, as his lordship remarked, repugnant to humanity and the principles of civilised government."

Long ere this retribution came to pass, Captain Foote, of H.M.S. *Piedmontaise* (a French prize), had destroyed indiscriminately every vessel, of whatever size or description, at Quilon, among which there were doubtless many belonging to the Arabs.

The pacification of Travancore seemed to be complete, yet scarcely two years elapsed ere the new dewan was suspected of following in the footsteps of the wretched Vailoo Tambi. The subsidy was not forthcoming, but indications of a new plot for war and bloodshed were found; hence, Lord Minto resolved to enforce a clause of the treaty of 1805, by which it was provided, that on the failure of any portion of the conditions by the Travancorians, the British Government had the right of assuming the

management of their country ; and the necessity for this had become so apparent, that the rajah himself is supposed to have secretly requested it.

Similar treatment was applied to the Rajah of Cochin, whose government is still a sort of feudal despotism, such as prevailed in the other states into which the western coast of the peninsula was divided, before the invasion and conquest by Tip-poo. The rajah had few privileges beyond those of the *Nazirs*, or nobles, except the right of calling on them for military service in time of war, and collecting some trifling tolls and duties.

The Dewan of Cochin was undoubtedly implicated in the Travancore insurrection, and the same security against the recurrence of such conduct became necessary. The whole expenses of the late

war were levied from the two rajahs, in the proportion of two-thirds from Travancore and one-third from Cochin. It has been supposed that the union of these two rajahs, or rather that of their dewans, in an insurrection, which both must have known to be, eventually, hopeless and desperate, must have had some secret and strong provocation, unknown now, and that the rigid extortion of payment for troops which these two princes held to be unnecessary, and which both alleged to be an intolerable burden, was equally a violation of justice and of good policy.

And now, during the fighting in Travancore, the troubles of Lord Minto were greatly increased by the remarkable quarrels which took place among the officials at Madras.

CHAPTER LXXXII.

THE DISSENSIONS AT MADRAS.—MUTINY OF THE ARMY.—ITS CAUSES AND CONCLUSION.

SIR GEORGE BARLOW, who, as Governor-General, had carried his system of economy, with regard to the army, somewhat too far, was now, as Governor of Madras, still more intent upon mean and unwise saving and reduction among all classes of the Company's servants. Sir John Cradock, having been recalled after the mutiny at Vellore, was succeeded as commander-in-chief by General Hay Macdowall, a fiery and impetuous Celt, who, in 1776, had been a subaltern in the Fraser Highlanders, and, in 1779, a captain in the Black Watch, during the war in America. Sir John Cradock had held a seat at council. Both offices became vacant by his recall ; but the Directors thought proper to confer only one on his successor ; and Macdowall was the last man in India to submit tamely to what he deemed an insult and injustice ; and having failed in his appeal to the Directors, he wrote to Sir George Barlow, asserting that their conduct had placed him in a position so extraordinary, so unexampled and degrading, that the most painful emotions had been excited ; and now, embittered by his own grievance, when the officers under his command became loud in their complaints of the sordid retrenchments to which they were subjected, he encouraged, rather than repressed, them ; so a mutinous spirit began fast to pervade all ranks.

Colonel John Munro, the quartermaster-general, had been directed to draw up a report (during the government of Lord William Bentinck) upon the eligibility of abolishing a monthly allowance, which had been granted to officers commanding native corps, known as "tentage," for the provision of camp equipage. In his report on this subject, the colonel expressed an opinion advocating the abolition of this allowance, which he described as a system that "placed the interest and duty of the officers in direct opposition to each other ;" and after the transmission of this report to Calcutta, in obedience to instructions from the Supreme Court there, Sir George Barlow, to whom they were most congenial, abolished "the tent contract" by a general order, in May, 1808.

A copy of the quartermaster-general's memorial became in some way public, and all officers who had enjoyed this necessary perquisite were so indignant, that they presented a formal charge against him to General Macdowall, accusing him of "conduct unbecoming the character of an officer and gentleman, for having, in his proposed plan for the abolition of the tent contract, lately held by officers commanding native corps, made use of false and infamous insinuations, thereby (such were the words) tending to injure our characters as officers, and otherwise injurious to our reputations as gentlemen."

Twenty-four officers signed this charge, and upon these grounds, General Macdowall placed Colonel Munro under arrest. The latter addressed a letter to the Chief Secretary of Government, which, as in duty bound, he enclosed under cover to the commander-in-chief, who refused to forward the appeal, saying that it was a question purely military, and which rested on his own judgment, and that he would not compromise the position in which he was placed.

"The present attempt to make a reference to a civil governor was unexampled," he said, "and could not be sufficiently reprobated, as striking a blow at the root of military authority. He had the uncontrolled and inalienable right of judging of the conduct of every officer under his command, and could not but view the present application as extremely indelicate and disrespectful."

Upon this, Munro appealed to the government direct, saying that he should never have taken this step had the subject been purely military, as the commander-in-chief was pleased to state. He was, however, placed under arrest. The Madras Government ordered his release; and with all his rage and reluctance, the general did not venture to disobey; but in returning the colonel his sword, he did so under protest, and took the only revenge in his power, of issuing a general order, in which, on the 25th of January, 1809, he took leave of the Madras army, and appended thereto—on the very day he put to sea—a severe reprimand, which could only be read when he was far from the spot.*

This document stated that the conduct of Colonel Munro, in making a direct appeal to the civil power, "being destructive of subordination, subversive of military discipline, a violation of the sacred rights of the commander-in-chief, and holding out a most dangerous example to the service, Lieutenant-General Macdowall, in support of the dignity of the profession, and his own station and character, felt it incumbent on him to express his strong disapprobation of Lieutenant-Colonel Munro's unexampled proceedings, and considered it a solemn duty upon him to reprimand Lieutenant-Colonel Munro, in General Orders."

General Macdowall had not yet resigned the command—it is supposed for the purpose of discharging this Parthian shot; and it was generally understood that he meant to send his resignation from Negapatam or from Ceylon: but as soon as this act of defiance to the civil government was made known to Sir George Barlow, he caused

* *Edinburgh Ann. Reg.*, 1810; "Disturbances at Madras," by Rob. Southey.

signals to be made to recall the vessels, with the intention of instantly removing the angry general from command; but the signals were unseen, or unheeded, and the ships bore away into the Indian Sea, and Macdowall was doomed never to learn the censure that was intended him; for the *Lady Dundas*, Indiaman, in which he sailed, with several other officers, perished, with six ships in her company, in a violent hurricane off the Mauritius.*

The deputy-adjutant-general, Major Boles, in absence of his senior, was in duty bound to disseminate the order, and did so, for which he was, unjustly, suspended by the governor. On this Colonel Cuppage, the adjutant-general, honourably informed the latter that he, and not Major Boles, was the responsible person; whereupon Sir George Barlow, without removing the suspension of the major, immediately suspended the colonel—adding blunder to blunder. The pernicious effect of all this was, that Major Boles was regarded by his brother officers as a persecuted man, and from that time a struggle between the government and the army became inevitable, and could only be terminated by one or other giving way; though there is but little doubt that the troops, had they chosen, might have dictated their own terms.

A number of officers of the Madras army drew up and circulated for signatures a memorial to Lord Minto, repeating their grievances, and condemning the treatment which their commander-in-chief had received from the civil authorities. They also drew up a flattering address to the suspended adjutant-general. This was deemed downright mutiny by the Madras Government; and on the 1st of May, 1809, another general order was issued, censuring the circulators of the offensive documents, removing some from their particular commands, and suspending others altogether.

At the head of those suspended was Viscount Doneraile's son, the Hon. Colonel St. Leger, who had recently terminated the war in Travancore, but who died a major-general in 1823; Colonels Cuppage and Chalmers; Majors Thomas Boles and John De Morgan; Captains James Grant and Josiah Marshall; all—or most of them—to proceed to Britain.

Major Conway was appointed adjutant-general, *vice* Cuppage; Captain P. Vans Agnew to be his deputy, *vice* Boles; Lieutenant Patullo was to command the Body-guard, *vice* Captain Grant; Major Sir John Sinclair, Bart. (of Dunbeath), to have charge of the arsenal at Fort St. George; and Lieutenant-Colonel Henry Couron, of his Majesty's Royal Regiment to command the garrison. These

* *Scots Mag.*, 1809.

orders were signed by Major-General Gowdie, commanding the army.

What made all these measures more unjustifiable was, that the officers punished were made acquainted at the same moment with the charge and sentence; they were not brought to a court-martial, and those who maintained their innocence were not permitted to prove it.

In other ways the personal vindictiveness of Barlow was shown. Major Boles had never made

Towards Lieutenant-Colonel Martin the same malevolence was displayed. He came to Madras in December, and took his passage in a ship which was expected to sail on the 29th of January; but he was ordered not to leave India, as the Judge-Advocate-General requested Sir George Barlow to detain him, as his evidence was required against Colonel Munro. Barlow, in his vacillation, told him that if he would sign an apology he would be permitted to sail; but the officer received the



THE SACRED COW OF INDIA.

his injuries a subject of reference to the army, or to any part of it; he had never provoked the addresses, nor asked the relief they offered; yet the alleged offence of the rest was unjustly visited on him. From Madras he was banished to Bengal, entailing upon him, as he alleged, great and inevitable expense, when all his allowances were taken from him. Though in Bengal he continued to live in the same retired and inoffensive manner as at Madras, he was removed, per order, to the Danish settlement of Serampore, on the western bank of the Hooghley, to prevent him having any intercourse with his brother-officers; and there he remained until finally ordered to Britain.

message with contempt and scorn. Sir George Barlow withdrew the prohibition, and expressing regret for the inconvenience to which Colonel Martin had been subjected, ordered that he should be reimbursed for the loss of his passage; and that officer was got rid of for 1,000 star pagodas, paid out of the public treasury.

"In this instance," continues Southey,* "the Government showed a sense of justice in which it was wanting to Major Boles. But the vindictive disposition which it manifested every day received fresh provocations; for when the discontented officers perceived that in one instance the civil

* *Edin. Ann. Reg.*, 1810.

authority had been evidently in the wrong, they were enabled to deceive themselves, and give to the mutinous career in which they had embarked a semblance of just and honourable proceedings. Colonel Munro being the chief object of their dislike, they shunned his society with the most studied marks of contempt. Captain Marshall, the secretary of the military board, who had frequent occasion to meet him on duty, avoided him upon all other occasions, as a man with whom it was disgraceful to hold communion: he was, therefore, dismissed from his situation, and ordered to Nizagapatam, 500 miles distant. The intentional insult could not be mistaken; but there was an arbitrary character in the punishment which, though legal upon military principles, made it, nevertheless, an odious act when it proceeded from the civil government. It was, however, apparent this time that the army were determined to try their strength against the governor, hoping either to induce the Court of Directors to supersede him, or that they themselves, by repeated insults, should compel him to resign. Their hatred of Colonel Munro had now extended to Sir George Barlow, and they began, as the phrase is, to 'send him to Coventry' also. His invitations were uniformly refused; and an officer belonging to an institution formed for the instruction of young officers was expelled from the society of his fellows, because he had attended an entertainment given at the Government House. An outrage like this could not be passed over; they were informed that, if they did not immediately amend their conduct, they would be ordered to quit the institution and join their corps. They replied that the regulations of the service allowed to officers, in common with other gentlemen, the privilege of making choice of companions for their private society; and, as they did not choose to hold any further acquaintance with the gentleman in question, they held themselves justified in the measures they had taken. In consequence of this they were ordered to join their corps, because of their irregular conduct.

"One corps was ordered to Vellore, because Major Boles had dined at their mess, before he knew that his appearance there was offensive. Another, it was said, was threatened by General Gowdie, the new commander-in-chief, that they should be sent to one of the most distant stations, because the officers refused to dine with Sir George Barlow. These facts may have received their colouring from the heat or malice of party; but the impression which results from a dispassionate perusal of the statements of both parties is, that there was a mutinous

disposition on one side, and an arbitrary one on the other."

Sir George Barlow committed a serious blunder. In ignorance of the exact nature of the disaffection, and the extent to which it had spread, the subsidiary force at Hyderabad was complimented at the expense of the rest of the army, for not taking any part in the movement against the civil authorities; but no sooner did this general order reach that garrison, than the compliment was resented as an insult, and a circular letter was addressed to the other officers of the Company's service, assuring them, that they were not divested of those feelings which had been excited throughout the service, adding, in a memorial to the governor, this sentence—"Under these impressions we feel compelled to make some efforts to avert the evil we see impending, or what may be the possible and probable consequences—the separation of the civil and military authorities, the destruction of all discipline and subordination among the native troops, the ultimate loss of so large a portion of the British possessions in India, and the dreadful blow it will inflict on the mother country."

One hundred and fifty-eight officers of the Jaulnah and Hyderabad forces, signed this document, and "the possible and probable consequences," so darkly hinted at, were not without having a startling effect. Through Colonel Montessor, commanding at Hyderabad, they demanded the repeal of the government order of the 1st May, the immediate restoration of the officers punished by it, the removal from the staff of all who had advised the late measures, and a general amnesty for all past proceedings.

This was deemed the signal for rebellion, and committees of correspondence were immediately appointed at the different military stations, for the purpose of organising one great plan of resolute resistance; while a deputation was actually sent from the Bombay army, offering co-operation "against the tyrannical and oppressive conduct of the Governor of Madras and his advisers."

At this alarming juncture, Lord Minto assured Sir George Barlow of his approval and firm support.

The first act of open mutiny was committed at the seaport of Masulipatam, in the Northern Circars. The Madras European Regiment stationed there had, for some time, evinced a very mutinous spirit; hence Lieutenant-Colonel Innes, an officer of a resolute character, was appointed to take charge of it and command of the garrison; and the conduct of some of the officers on the evening

of his arrival was so obnoxious, that he applied for their removal, a measure openly resented by the rest.

Three companies being ordered to do marine duty on board of our war ships in the Bay of Bengal, they refused to embark, the officers having persuaded their men that this was but a preliminary step to breaking up the regiment and turning it into the navy. Colonel Innes was seized, placed under arrest, and Major Storey assumed the command, on the plea that he did so to prevent worse consequences; and a managing committee of the officers, to communicate further with the disaffected elsewhere, was formed. Sir John Malcolm was dispatched to Masulipatam; after various attempts to restore subordination, he returned to report that "the only means of allaying the most dreadful calamities were to modify the orders of May 1st, restore all the officers who had been suspended, and inform the army that its claim to the Bengal allowance would be laid before the Court of Directors."

This advice, if acted on, would have destroyed the civil power in India. Matters fast grew darker, and it was evident that the officers were bent on armed rebellion. A battalion at Hyderabad, when under orders for Goa, refused to march, on the plea, as they plainly told Colonel Montessor, that their services might soon be wanted elsewhere. At this painful juncture the king's troops remained faithful and firm. In order to ascertain who among the Company's officers could be depended on, it was resolved to apply a test, in the form of a document, copies of which were sent to the commanders of stations, with instructions to require the signatures of all to it. Those who refused to sign were to be removed from their regiments to stations on the coast, there to remain till better times might allow of their being employed again; while the sepoys were to be instructed that the dispute was purely a personal and not a general affair. The royal troops were stationed so as to be a check upon those of the Company; but the test was not very successful, and was openly declined by many of whose loyalty there could be no doubt. Out of 1,300 officers, then on the strength of the Madras army, it was signed by only 150.

The officers commanding in Travancore, Malabar, and Canara, hesitated at first, from dread of the consequences, to offer it; and when Colonel Davis attempted to do so at Seringapatam, the European officers revolted at once. After driving the king's troops out of the fort, they seized the treasury, drew up the bridges, loaded the guns,

formed a committee of safety, sent out a detachment, which captured the sum of 30,000 pagodas on its way to the paymaster, and summoned to their assistance two battalions from Chitteldroog.

There was nothing for it but fighting now.

A squadron of H.M. 25th Dragoons, a native regiment of cavalry, and another of infantry, under Colonel Gibbs, set out from Bangalore for Seringapatam, to which place the two Chitteldroog battalions, under the command of Captain Macintosh, were on the march, which they continued till they came in sight of the citadel, when, on beholding Gibbs' cavalry, they were seized with a panic, and breaking, dispersed. The revolted in the citadel having made a demonstration in their favour, they all got in, save 200 or more, who were sabred on the spot. During the night Gibbs' camp was cannonaded, and a sortie was made upon him, but repulsed; after which, Colonel Davis, though labouring under severe indisposition, took command of the loyal troops, and, aided by our Resident at the court of the Rajah, the Hon. Arthur Cole (son of Lord Enniskillen), acted fearlessly. This act of hostility at Seringapatam was almost the last on which the disaffected officers ventured, and doubting their chances of success, they made their submission; for the government, to crush the rebellion, had determined to form an army of 12,000 men, of whom more than one-third should be European, and place it under Colonel Barry Close. That officer arrived at Hyderabad on the 3rd August (before these troops were mustered), where an obstinate resistance was expected. With some difficulty he made his way into the cantonments, but becoming apprehensive of being made a prisoner, he withdrew to the residency.

As soon as he did so, the committee of officers sent for the divisions at Jaulnah and in the Northern Circars. "The troops at the former place, at once obeying the summons, made two marches in advance, and those in the Circars were preparing to take the field, when the views of the officers at Hyderabad underwent a change, which they themselves, in a penitential letter to the Governor-General, attributed to a kind of sudden conversion, though there is much reason to suspect that they were influenced as much by fear as by genuine repentance. . . . They signed the test, and began to preach submission, by sending to the different stations of the army a circular, in which they entreated their brother-officers to lose no time in following their example."

When Lord Minto reached Madras, on the 11th September, 1809, he found the rebellion subdued,

and he had only to take measures for punishing those who had taken a prominent part in it. Lieutenant-Colonels Bell and Doveton, and Major Storey, were ordered for trial, with eighteen other officers, whose names were struck out of the amnesty. Colonel Bell was cashiered, and declared incapable of serving in any military capacity whatever. The same sentence was passed on Major Storey; and though he was recommended to mercy, it was confirmed.

Colonel Doveton, in defence, maintained that he had only marched with the mutinous troops for the purpose of preventing greater evils, and was, therefore, honourably acquitted. Major Boles was restored to the service, but, without special permission, was never more to set foot in India.

With reference to these startling affairs at Madras, papers were called for in the House of Commons; but no motion was founded on them. The conduct of Sir George Barlow in the Court of Directors, was generally approved of, with two important exceptions—the one was the unjust suspension of Major Boles for circulating the order of his superior officer, General Macdowall; and the other, the

unwise suspension of a number of officers, in an arbitrary manner, upon secret information, to which he should never have listened. In appointing a new commander-in-chief, his exclusion from the council—the express grievance of the deceased Macdowall—was so strongly recognised, that one of the civil members was removed to make way for him.

A motion for the recall of Sir George Barlow—though negatived in July, 1811—was renewed and carried at the end of the following year.

The most clear, terse, and best of all comments on these remarkable disturbances will be found among the “Wellington Despatches,” in a letter written to Sir John Malcolm by the Great Duke, dated from Badajoz, on the 3rd of December, 1809.

Notwithstanding the local disturbances which have been related, the general peace of British India was not interrupted during the administration of Lord Minto, though many stirring and brilliant achievements took place in relation thereto. These were chiefly naval exploits, and expeditions for the reduction of the enemy's settlements.

CHAPTER LXXXIII.

CAPTURE OF GOA, MACAO, ISLE OF FRANCE.—THE MOLUCCAS.

WHEN Portugal was occupied by the invading armies of France, in accordance with instructions received from the Ministry, Lord Minto ordered possession to be taken of her settlements in the East, a measure somewhat unnecessary with regard to Goa, where an arrangement, reserving the civil administration to the Portuguese, and assigning the military authority to Britain, had been previously made.

To effect a similar arrangement at Macao, an expedition sailed from Calcutta and Madras in the month of July, and arrived off that place on the 11th of September, 1809. The Governor of Macao saw it with astonishment, and as he was without instructions from Lisbon, refused to receive the sanction of the Viceroy of Goa for giving up the colony to Britain. Force was therefore employed, and our troops took possession, thus very nearly provoking a war with the Chinese, who thought they had some right to be consulted in this matter, which led to a complete stoppage of our trade with China.

The month of May, in the following year, 1810, found the Isle of France blockaded by Captain Pym in the *Sirius*, with the *Magicienne*, *Iphigenia*, and the *Nereide*, under his orders. The last was a forty-four gun ship, commanded by Captain Willoughby, who landed at Point du Diable, attacked Port Jacotel, where he stormed two strong batteries, followed by Lieutenant Deacon and a hundred blue-jackets from the *Nereide*, who burned the signal-post, spiked the guns, destroyed the carriages, and carried off the field-pieces and military stores. He distributed among the inhabitants certain proclamations, issued by Governor Farquhar, of the Isle of Roderigue, which sought to undermine their loyalty to the Emperor of France, after which he embarked, having suffered small loss; but had he been taken with the proclamations on his person, he ran the risk of a death of ignominy.

It was now determined to make a conquest of the Isle of France, and the expedition, to which each of the three presidencies contributed, anchored

on the 29th of November, 1810, in Grand Baye, near the north-east extremity of the isle, and about fifteen miles from its capital, Port Louis.

The troops were commanded by Major-General Abercrombie, and the fleet by Admiral Bertie, whose squadron consisted of eighteen sail, armed with 604 guns; making up, with transports and other vessels, seventy sail in all. The troops, marines, seamen, and gunners, to the number of 11,000 men, were landed on the same day without loss or delay, and the advance at once began into the interior of that beautiful isle, with the description of which the delightful romance of Bernardin St. Pierre has made most readers so familiar.

The French governor was able only to muster about 2,000 Europeans, and some bands of undisciplined and half-armed creoles and slaves. The troops immediately commenced active operations, while the squadron watched their movements, and landed all supplies when necessary. General de Caen ventured to make a stand in an advantageous position from the capital, and was not driven from it till he had inflicted some loss. Preparations were then made to assault the town by land, while Admiral Bertie should bombard it by sea; but the governor offered to capitulate, and, owing to the advanced state of the season, obtained favourable terms.

The strength of the isle had been greatly overrated, and the conquest of it was made by a force so overpowering, that, if the honour was small the profit was great. It became a British colony, and as such has ever since remained.

With the island, there fell into our hands an immense quantity of stores and valuable merchandise, six large frigates, and thirty-one sail of other vessels, with 200 pieces of ordnance in battery. The peculiarly favourable position of the Isle of France placed it, beyond all question, as a valuable acquisition to Britain. If properly defended, it is almost impregnable, save to such a combined force by land and sea as no power could bring against it in secret. It possesses the only harbour refuge within a vast extent of ocean, embracing the whole range of the African continent, Ceylon, and India, sweeping round by Borneo, the Eastern Archipelago and New Holland, and finishing the compass with the illimitable Southern Sea, situated in a direct line homeward from India and China, and with but a slight deviation from the colonies in New Holland. Thus its position must ever be deemed extremely valuable for the facilities which its harbourage offers for the repair of damages to shipping. It was confirmed to Britain by the Treaty of Paris in 1814.*

* Grant's "Mauritius," Pridham's "Colonial Empire," &c.

The settlements of the Dutch, who, by compulsion rather than desire, had become the allies of Napoleon in Europe, were the next objects of attack by Lord Minto.

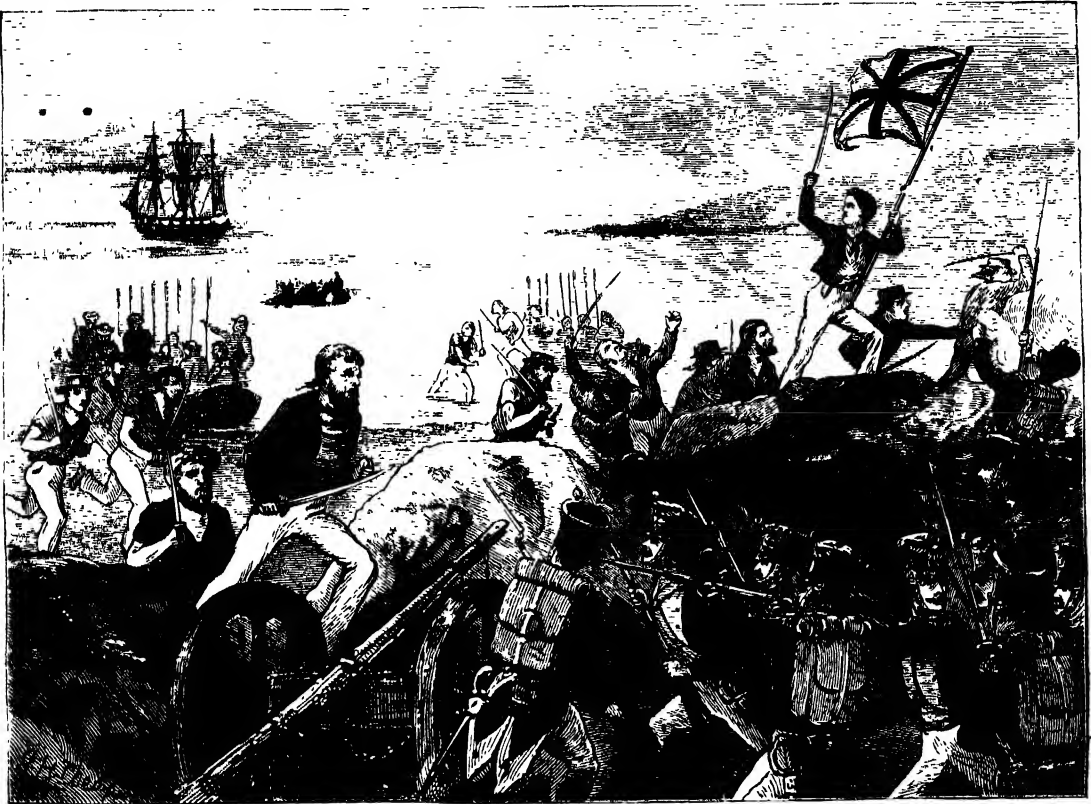
Our naval commander-in-chief in the East Indies having been directed to put the island of Java and all the enemy's ports in the Moluccas under strict blockade, ordered Captain Edward Tucker, in the *Dover* (forty-four guns), to proceed to Amboyna, where he was joined by the *Cornwallis* (seventy-four) and the Dutch sloop-of-war, *Mandarine*, which she had taken in battle. With these ships, and a body of the Madras Europeans, he succeeded in taking the island by surprise. Having all his boats launched with the troops in them, he kept them at the sides of the ships most remote from the enemy, and getting under weigh, pretended to stand out to sea; but by skilfully keeping the sails lifting, he managed that the ships should drift into the very place where he intended to make the landing. On passing this, within two cables' length, he suddenly cast off the boats, which were crowded with soldiers, seamen, and marines, under Captains Court and Philips, who pulled steadily inshore, while the ships opened upon the batteries a cannonade, which lasted for two hours and a half.

Meanwhile, the small-arm men advancing, stormed the heights commanding Portuguese Bay, into which the squadron immediately proceeded and came to anchor. Next morning the guns of the batteries captured on the heights were turned upon the town, when the governor, intimidated by the bombardment on the one hand, and the vigour of the attack on the other, capitulated, with 1,300 Dutch and Malay soldiers. Thus, on the 17th of February, 1810, was Amboyna again under the British flag, and the massacre perpetrated there, as related in the earlier annals of the Company, in some measure was avenged. The Dutch soldiers were sent to Java—a very strange policy, as we were about to attack it—but the Governor of Amboyna was brought before a court-martial, and paid the penalty of his treason, or timidity, with his life. The Malays were enlisted into the Company's service. Amboyna was the residence of the Dutch governor of the Moluccas; and with the island, were taken or destroyed, seven vessels of war and forty-three sail of other kinds; while the boats of the *Dover*, up to the 22nd of January, captured no less than twenty Dutch gunboats, with from eight guns and sixty men on board to one gun and five men. The Bandas, Ternate and other isles of the group were speedily taken, till the only settlement that remained to the Dutch in the Eastern Archipelago was Java.

Ternate was taken by Captain Tucker, with the Madras Europeans, his marines, and the newly-enlisted Amboyna corps.

On the 25th of August he arrived off the island of Ternate, which is only about ten miles in diameter, and contains a volcanic peak nearly 6,000 feet in height, which often discharges flames, and on the warm slopes of which cotton, rice, and tobacco are cultivated. The winds were light and baffling, and thus he was unable to

cut down and piled across it. Turning to the right, they followed the course of a rivulet which led to the beach, and brought them, about ten o'clock, within 800 yards of the fort before they were discovered. Disregarding a smart fire of grape and musketry, they rushed forward, escaladed the walls, and carried the fort. On the following morning, the combined operations of the detachment and frigate overpowered the other defences of the bay, and by evening the town and island



ATTACK OF THE BLUE-JACKETS ON PORT JACOTEL.

land till the 28th, when 170 men were sent ashore in the night to surprise the forts which guarded a bay; but they were re-embarked, as the difficulties of the approach frustrated the scheme. "Early in the morning they were again put on shore, and while a frigate engrossed the attention of the enemy, they proceeded unobserved to an eminence supposed to command the fort of Kayomaira, the principal Dutch post. They arrived on the hill at noon, but, to their great vexation, they found the fort was screened from their view by an intervening forest. They then endeavoured to proceed by an inland route, but after incessant exertion throughout the day, it was found impossible to disencumber the path of the immense trees that had been

surrendered. Few casualties impaired the exultation of the victors."

Captain W. A. Montague, in the *Cornwallis*, attacked, with success, the fort of Boolo Combo, in the fine isle of Celebes, the mountain ridges of which, when viewed from the sea, present, in many quarters, so bold an outline, as they tower above the rich grassy plains below. He spiked the guns, drove out the troops with pike and bayonet; after which three of his boats, under Lieutenant Vidal, boarded and cut out a brig from under the guns of the Dutch fort of Matappa, and she was found to be laden with turtle, fruit, and sago, all of which were greatly needed by his ship's company. On

* Mill.

the 2nd of March, 1810, Lieutenant Peachy (afterwards Viscount Selsey), of the same ship, captured with her boats a Dutch fourteen-gun brig, with the loss of only four men wounded, while that of the enemy was one officer killed and twenty men wounded.

In June, Captain Tucker approached the Dutch fort of Goronolotto, in the bay of Tommine, on the north side of Celebes, where coffee is extensively cultivated. The colours of Holland were flying on the ramparts, but no Dutch officer was present; and he found that the whole settlement was held by the native sultan, and his two sons, who bore commissions under the Dutch, with whom the former consented to dissolve all connec-

without dishonour," as the place was strongly fortified, defended by 700 men in commanding batteries, well armed with artillery.

Night was chosen for the attack, and at a time when the howling of the wind and the hiss of the falling rain united to conceal the sounds of an approach. The landing was effected within a hundred yards of a ten-gun battery, which was stormed in reverse by Captain Keenah and Lieutenant Carew, without once snapping a flint. The garrison being made prisoners and secured, the party, with the assistance of a guide, pushed on to capture the castle of Belgica, where, through the gloom, and on the gusty wind, a bugle was heard rousing the troops to arms.



TYPE OF MALAY.



TYPE OF JAVANESE.

tion, and quietly acknowledge the supremacy of the King of Great Britain; the whole trade of the island, which is estimated at 75,000 square miles in extent, was thrown open to British shipping.

Manado (with Fort Amsterdam), the most northern settlement on the isle, where opium, Bengal stuffs, and steel were exchanged for gold, was given up in the same manner; and Captain (afterwards Sir Christopher) Cole, in the *Caroline* (thirty-six), with all the disposable men of the Madras European Infantry, was dispatched to assist Captain Tucker, whose operations in the Moluccas had now become so extensive as to require support. The *Piedmontaise*, frigate, Captain Foote, and the *Barracouta*, eighteen-gun brig, Captain Keenah, were under his orders; and with less than 250 men, he landed and reduced Bandaneira, the chief of the Spice Islands, "a conquest achieved under difficulties from which many might have retreated

The scaling-ladders were reared against the walls, and the outer pentagon was won. Then the Dutch, hurrying to the walls, opened fire; but unchecked and undaunted, our small-arm men captured the outworks in such rapid succession, that the enemy had not time given them to fire a single cannon. The darkness, the storm, and the suddenness of the assault, multiplied the force and number of the attacking foe; and the garrison of the castle fled through the gateway in terror and precipitation, leaving the commandant and ten dead men behind them, with two officers and thirty men prisoners.

When day dawned, the Union Jack was floating over Belgica, and other sea-fences were visible far down below, at the feet of the stormers. The Dutch tricolour fluttered out on Fort Nassau, and its guns opened on our shipping. Then, leaving a guard in Belgica, Captain Cole descended with his

ladders to storm it, on which the governor capitulated, giving up 700 troops, besides militia, as prisoners of war, with 120 pieces of cannon. The capture of this island was another heavy blow to the commerce of the enemy; and its reduction, under such circumstances, justly won for Captain Cole the Order of the Bath.*

Nothing in Lord Minto's career as Governor-General won him so much *éclat* as the conquest of the Moluccas and of Java, which became subject

to France, when Holland was overrun by the French.

"An empire," says Auber, using the words of Lord Minto, "which for two centuries had contributed to the power, prosperity, and grandeur of one of the principal and most respected states of Europe, was wrested from the short usurpation of the French crown, and converted, from a seat of hostile machinations and commercial competition, into an augmentation of British power and prosperity."*

CHAPTER LXXXIV.

CONQUEST OF JAVA AND ITS DEPENDENCIES.

WHILE the armament for Java was in preparation, some fighting took place at sea in the summer of 1811.

Three French frigates, well officered, manned, and equipped, and crowded with troops, had sailed from Brest, on the 2nd of February, with the view of supporting the French settlements in the Mauritius, off which they arrived on the 7th of May, only to find the British colours flying on all the forts. At this crisis, they were in great distress for want of water, after their long voyage, and in search of this necessary, the Commodore Roquefort bore away for Madagascar.

Off the high bold headland of Marofototro, the extreme southern point of that island, he was met, on the 20th, by Captain C. M. Schomberg, in the *Astrea* (thirty-six), having under his orders Captain Hillyer, with the *Phæbe* (thirty-six), Captain Losack, with the *Galatea* (thirty-two), and Captain de Rippe, with the *Racehorse*, eighteen-gun sloop.

The winds being so light and baffling as often to make the loose canvas flap against the masts, the ships could not come within range of each other till late in the afternoon; and in the action which ensued, the *Galatea* and *Phæbe* suffered greatly from their accidental position with regard to the enemy.

One of their ships lay on the larboard-quarter of the former and abreast of the latter, which was astern of the *Phæbe*. The other two were on each quarter of the *Galatea*; and the fight was maintained thus, till the *Astrea* and *Racehorse* caught a breeze, which brought them into action. By this time the *Galatea* was so cut up as to be quite

unmanageable, with her fore and mizen-topmasts hanging over her side; and with her the action ceased about eight in the evening. Schomberg, supported vigorously by the *Phæbe* and *Racehorse*, followed up their advantages, and soon compelled M. Roquefort to surrender; and a second frigate which came to his aid soon ceased firing, and as darkness had set in, hung out a light in token of submission; but perceiving the disabled state of the *Galatea*, the other ships could not give immediate chase, she set all sail and escaped.

Till two in the morning she was chased by the *Astrea* and *Phæbe*, when Captain Schomberg, on considering that the *Galatea* had signalled for assistance and required it much, and that the captured flagship (having only two officers and five men as a prize crew on board) might escape, he returned to secure her. She proved to be *La Renommée*, of forty eighteen-pounders, having on board 470 men, 200 of whom were soldiers. Her losses were heavy, but never ascertained. The *Galatea* had seventy-eight shots in her hull, many of them under water; and though short of her complement, had more killed and wounded than all our other ships together. The total casualties were 110.

Captain Schomberg now dispatched Captain de Rippe, in the *Racehorse*, to summon the settlement of Tamatave, a town surrounded by palisades, on the east coast of Madagascar, which the French had recently taken from Britain. On arriving off the port, he found in it *La Nereide*, one of the ships with which the squadron had so recently fought.

* Brenton's "Nav. Hist.," &c.

* "Rise and Progress of British Power in India."

Reporting this circumstance to Captain Schomberg, that officer came off the port on the 24th of May, and found the enemy prepared for resistance. The shoals with which the port is surrounded being numerous and intricate, and having no one on board who could act as pilot, he prudently summoned the ship and garrison to surrender, and by granting them liberal terms, the demand was complied with.

He also received over a detachment of H.M. 22nd Regiment, which had garrisoned the place previous to its sudden capture. Captain Schomberg, having thus captured two out of the three frigates with which his little squadron had been engaged, and retaken a British settlement, returned to his station at the Isle of France.

By this time the Java expedition was ready, and at sea; for Lord Minto, having resolved to superintend the operations in person, caused delay. The naval commanders found several difficulties to be overcome, and a considerable want of alertness was shown by them at Mauritius, Amboyna, Ternate, and elsewhere; thus it seemed not improbable that, but for the intelligence of Mr. (afterwards Sir Stamford) Raffles, and the determination of Lord Minto not to be impeded by the doubts of the admirals, the undertaking might have been deferred till the following year—perhaps for ever—as the French and Dutch would make the greatest efforts to pour in reinforcements and supplies for the garrisons already there.

In pursuance of his great object, Lord Minto had proceeded to Madras on the 9th of March, 1811.

The military forces destined for this service were placed under the command of Sir Samuel Achmuty; and the fleet, under Rear-Admiral the Hon. R. Stopford, assembled in Madras Roads. It consisted of four line-of-battle ships, fourteen frigates, seven sloops of war, eight Company's cruisers, with fifty-seven transports and some gunboats, making one hundred sail in all.

The first division of troops destined for this conquest (of which an elaborate account was written by Major William Thorn, the Deputy Quarter-master-General), under Colonel Rollo Gillespie, sailed on the 18th of April, with the convoy of Captain Cole, in the *Caroline*, thirty-six guns. The second division followed in a week after, under the command of Major-General Wetherall, conducted by the Hon. Captain Pellew, in the *Phaeton*, thirty-eight guns.

On the day after their departure, a hurricane drove on shore the *Dover*, and every other vessel that remained with her in Madras Roads. These

two divisions suffered only from the skirts of the tempest, and on the 18th of May reached the harbour of Pulo-Penang, in Prince of Wales's Island.

Lieutenant-General Achmuty had arrived in the *Akbar* frigate on the 13th, and sailed for Molucca, to which place Lord Minto was conveyed in the *Modeste* frigate, commanded by his son, the Hon. Captain Elliot (afterwards Rear-Admiral, and General of the Scottish Mint), and on the 24th the whole fleet sailed for Molucca, where they found the Bengal troops already encamped on the shore.

One of the first acts of Lord Minto, after his arrival, was to cause the instruments of torture which had been used by the Dutch to be publicly burned. Among them were the rack, the wheel, and many other instruments of torture, but too well known to the unhappy people whom they governed.

The possession of Molucca has ever been found of the first importance to our Indian and China trade, the straits being only sixteen miles wide, and the best channel of intercourse between the Bay of Bengal, the Chinese seas, and the Eastern Archipelago.

The lateness of the period at which the expedition reached Molucca was the source of some anxiety, as the favourable monsoon was nearly over; and a question arose as to which of two passages should be followed in the voyage towards Java. Immediate determination was necessary. The choice lay between the northern course, round Borneo, which, from the little known of the navigation of those seas, was deemed the only practicable one for a fleet; but how the dangers of the Bartolore passage—where only one ship could pass at a time—were to be avoided, no one could suggest. Mr. Raffles strongly recommended the south-west passage, between Caramata and Borneo, staking his reputation on the success that must attend it.

To this the naval authorities were opposed; but Lord Minto had such perfect faith in the local knowledge and good judgment of Mr. Raffles, that he embarked again in his son's ship, the *Modeste*, and led the way on Raffles' sole responsibility, and the result was entirely successful, though once the fleet was in imminent danger, from a sudden squall of wind and rain, which drove many of the ships into shoal water, where some of them struck the ground in a heavy sea; but the bottom being soft and muddy, they escaped without damage, and at two p.m., on Sunday, the 4th of August, the expedition came to anchor in the Bay of Batavia. When at Molucca the military force was reported thus:—

	Officers.	Native officers.	N.C.O. & privates.	Total.
European forces ...	200	—	5,144	5,344
Native forces ...	124	123	5,530	5,777
	324	123	10,674	11,121
Pioneers and Lascars	839

The total strength was 11,960.* Of these 1,200 were left behind sick, and 1,500 more became ill on landing at Java, where the troops went ashore, on the evening of their arrival, at the village of Chillingching, a spot which the enemy had left unguarded, and which lies ten miles eastward of the city of Batavia.

The European troops were H.M. 14th, 59th, 69th, 78th (Highland), 89th Regiments, and the Madras Engineers.

Colonel Gillespie, with the advanced brigade, moved forward towards the enemy's cantonments at Weltevredin, from which they retired to a strong position two miles in front of Cornelis. Every hour the men were falling sick; the cause of this was not the climate of Java, but the disgusting quarters afforded to them on board the hired transports; and yet Java has been called "the storehouse of disease," and justly so, for Sir Stamford Raffles tells us that in twenty-two years the mortality was more than a million of souls.† Yet, as they marched on, our soldiers were struck by the wonderful luxuriance of nature in the land they had come to conquer. There innumerable flowers bloom in perpetual succession throughout the year, filling the air with delicious fragrance. The myrtle and the rose, and a great variety of flowering trees and shrubs, then unknown to botanists, were growing wild; and in the mountainous tracts the raspberry, peaches, and Chinese pears, were seen growing wild also. And in the groves were also observed clusters of the great bat of Java, hanging from the branches head downwards, or taking wing at times, with their young ones clinging to their breasts.

From where the troops halted, the eye could roam over an uninterrupted range of lofty mountains, varying in their elevation above the level of the sea, from five thousand to twelve thousand feet, and all more or less of volcanic origin, and in many places covered with magnificent forests of teak, and groves of cocoa palm.

On the 7th of August the advanced guard crossed the Augale river by a bridge of boats and halted. The pipes which supplied the city of Batavia with fresh water were cut, the bridge over the river was destroyed, and the store-houses, full of spices had been set on fire by the retreating

* Thorn's "Conquest of Java."

† "History of Java."

enemy. Batavia was then summoned, and as such of the inhabitants as the French had not driven away were eager to surrender, there was no difficulty in taking quiet possession of the city.

As it was fully expected that the French and Dutch, under General Jansens—to whom Napoleon had specially entrusted the defence of Java—would make a resolute stand at Weltevredin, the army began its march against that place on the 10th, and from thence towards Cornelis, their second position, which was one of great strength, and covered by two villages. It was also defended by an abatis of felled trees, and manned by 3,000 of their best troops, with four horse artillery guns, under General Jumelle.

He received Gillespie's advance with showers of grape and musketry, and set the villages in flames when he found himself compelled to fall back, on our brigadier turning his left flank, a movement in which a detachment of the 89th, and the grenadiers of the Ross-shire Highlanders, greatly distinguished themselves. Charging with the bayonet through smoke and flame, they drove out the Dutch infantry and captured the cannon. The whole brigade then pushed on, and the enemy were compelled to fly for shelter under the cannon of Cornelis. Our loss was trifling; but that of the enemy was 500 men, including Brigadier Alberti, who was dangerously wounded.

In the arsenal at Weltevredin were found 300 pieces of cannon, and a vast amount of the munition of war.

The time between the 10th and 20th of August was occupied in the preparation of batteries against Cornelis. This work was a level parallelogram, of 1,600 yards in length and 900 in breadth, having a broad and deep river running on one side, with ditches dug round the other three. The older fort of Cornelis stood also on the bank of the river, and to it General Daendels, the predecessor of Jansens, had added six strong redoubts (mounted with guns), which commanded and supported each other. The space within was defended by traverses and parapets, intended as a cover for the musketry while the great guns fired over them. The whole was defended by 5,000 men. Besides the outward ditches, small canals had been cut in different directions, within this fortified position, which General Jansens confidently supposed would defy the whole strength of Lord Minto, till the rainy season would render it impossible to occupy either camps or trenches, and cause such sickness as to compel a retreat.

Jansens also held an entrenched camp, the flanks of which were protected by the Sloken and Batavia

river. The former was fordable, but with difficulty, and was defended by powerful batteries and redoubts; and there was a strong work on the British side of that river to protect the only bridge left standing. Between the two rivers, the trenches were protected by strong redoubts, and the inequalities of the ground concealed their actual strength. In front and rear this camp was protected both by art and nature. The circumference of the lines was nearly five miles, and they were armed with 280 pieces of cannon. Seldom in the annals of their wars had the British found a more troublesome place to attack; and the season did not permit of regular approaches.

"To carry the works by assault was the alternative, and on that I decided," says Sir Samuel Achmuty, in his despatch to Lord Minto. "In aid of this measure, I erected some batteries to disable the principal redoubts, and for two days kept up a heavy fire from twenty eighteen-pounders, and eight mortars and howitzers. Their execution was great; and I had the pleasure to find that though answered at the commencement of each day by a far more numerous artillery, we daily silenced their nearest batteries, considerably disturbed every part of their position, and were evidently superior in our fire." *

At dawn, on the 26th, the assault was to be made, under the guidance of the gallant Rollo Gillespie. Late on the preceding night, he mustered the column of attack in silence. He had with him the infantry of the advance, the grenadier companies of all the line regiments, and was supported by Colonel Gibbs, with the 59th, and the 4th Battalion of Bengal Volunteers. With these troops he was to surprise the redoubt beyond the Sloken, to cross the bridge over the stream with the fugitives, and then assault the redoubts within the lines; Gillespie attacking those on the right and Colonel Gibbs those on the left, while Lieutenant-Colonel Macleod, with six companies of the 69th, was to possess himself of a redoubt on the enemy's extreme left, and Major Tule, with the flank corps of the reserve, four horse artillery guns, two companies of the 69th, and the grenadiers of the reserve, was to attack the enemy at Camporg Maylays. The remainder of the army, under Major-General Wetherall, was at the batteries, where a column, under Colonel Wood, consisting of the 78th Highlanders (then 1,000 strong), and the 5th Volunteer battalion, was to advance against the enemy in front, force a passage in, and, if practicable, "open the position for the line."

Such was Achmuty's plan of the attack, for which

* Despatches.

General Jansens was every way prepared, and was among the redoubts when it commenced. The promptitude and celerity of our troops gave full effect to their valour. Led by their colonel, William Campbell, who fell mortally wounded, the 78th Highlanders, without entering the redoubt, carried the bridge over the Sloken by their bayonets; Gillespie crossed with them, and without firing a shot to lose time, "with a rapidity never surpassed, under a heavy fire of grape and musketry, possessed himself of redoubt No. 3." It stood within the lines, and commanded the passage of the bridge. These works were all armed with eighteen, twenty-four, and thirty-two pounders.

Gibbs followed closely, and while Gillespie was storming to the right, led the 59th and other troops against the works to the left, and carried them by the bayonet. It was barely taken when a tremendous explosion took place within it.

In rage and fury, a Dutch officer fired the magazine, causing terrible havoc and loss of life. He perished, with many gallant officers and men, chiefly of the 14th Regiment. Many of the enemy were also blown up, as the event occurred before they were quite out of the redoubt.

Another was successfully carried by Colonel Macleod, who fell in the moment of victory. A passage was thus fought into the intrenched camp, and our troops poured along the bridge with wild impetuosity, and, spreading in every direction, Cornelis was entered and the foe hurled out. "The whole of this work was performed in the dim grey light of early dawn; but by the time it was accomplished the sun was above the horizon, and both armies were presented to one another in full view."

The enemy were dispersed, broken, or bayoneted in the trenches; the British mustering in order, and undisputed victors of the position. The enemy had strong reserves in rear of it. These were drawn up on a plain in front of the barracks and lesser fort, the guns of which protected them. They consisted of several battalions of infantry and a considerable body of cavalry, with heavy guns in position and twenty horse artillery guns in line. Thus there was every prospect of another engagement; but on the approach of our 59th Regiment alone, the masses broke shamefully and fled.

The 59th thus possessed themselves of the fort and barracks, while Rollo Gillespie, with the cavalry and flying artillery, pursued the fugitives for ten miles.

Passing between the different corps with the former, he cut them down on every hand, unless when their wild cries for quarter stayed the uplifted

sabres. A regiment of Voltigeurs, fresh from France, laid down their arms, and surrendered at discretion.

"In the action of the 26th," says Sir Samuel Achmuty, "the numbers killed were immense; but it has been impossible to form any accurate statement of the amount. About 1,000 have been buried in the works, multitudes were cut down in the retreat, the rivers choked with dead, and the huts and woods filled with the wounded, who have since expired. We have taken nearly 5,000

The British loss was eighty-five officers and 800 men killed; among these were seventy-three seamen and marines. On the 27th, after this bloody conflict, the learned and warm-hearted Scottish poet, Dr. John Leyden, the friend and companion of Sir Walter Scott, expired of fever in the arms of his bosom friend, Sir Stamford Raffles, and was buried at Weltevredin. He had caught his death by throwing himself into the surf, boasting that "the first Briton who trod the soil of Java



JAVANESE DANCING GIRLS—FÊTE DAY IN THE FOREST.

prisoners, among whom are three general officers, thirty-four field officers, seventy captains, and 150 subalterns. General Jansens made his escape with difficulty during the action, and reached Buitenzorg, a distance of thirty miles, with a few cavalry, the sole remains of an army of 10,000 men. This place he has since evacuated, and fled to the eastward. A detachment of our troops is in possession of it.*

There were taken on the various works and in the field, between the 10th and 26th of August, not less than 209 brass guns, thirty-five brass mortars, nineteen brass howitzers, 504 iron guns, 145 brass and iron cannon and mortars.

* Despatches.

should be a Scotsman!" Southey, in his account of the conquest, wished "that Java had remained in the hands of the enemy, so that Leyden were alive;" and Scott notes his death thus, in "The Lord of the Isles:"—

"Scenes sung by him who sings no more,
His brief and bright career is o'er,
And mute his tuneful strains.
Quenched is his lamp of varied lore,
That loved the light of song to pour.
A distant and a deadly shore
Has Leyden's cold remains."

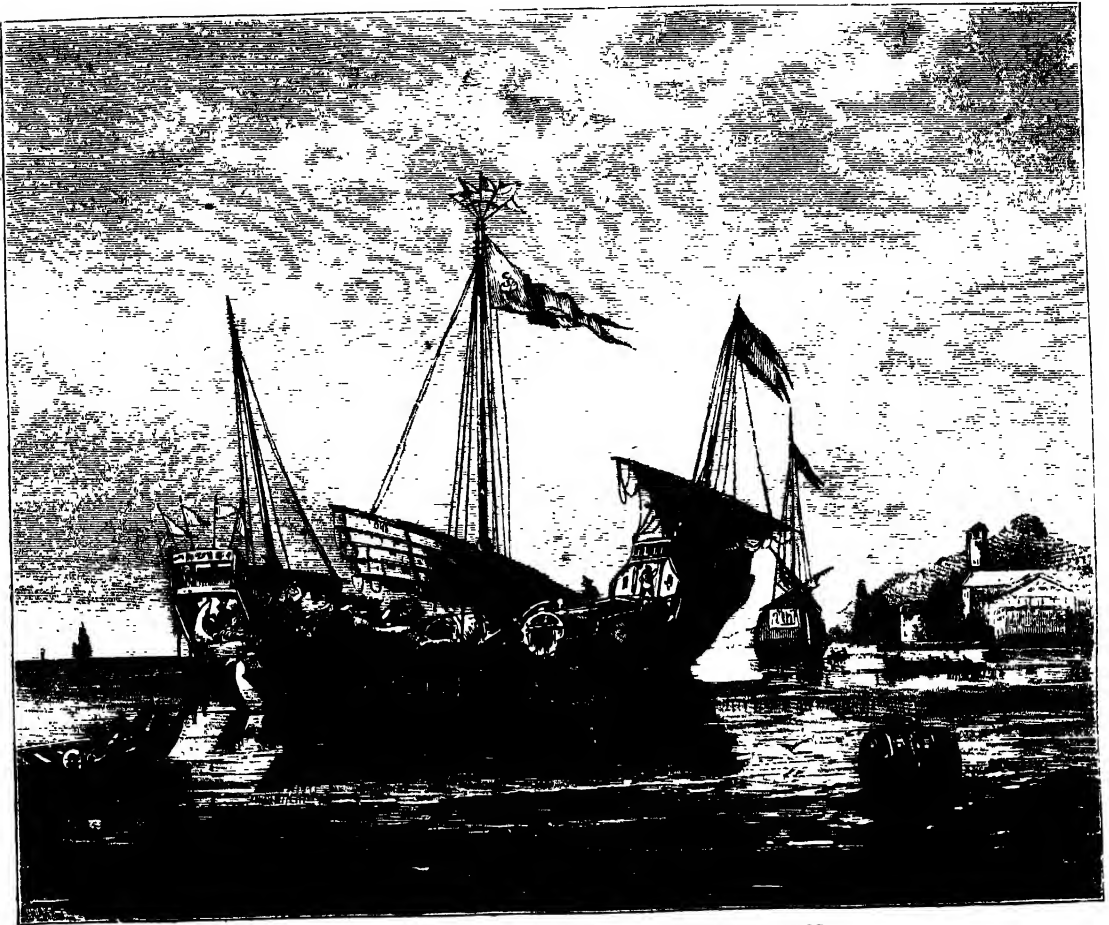
While Sir Samuel Achmuty went in pursuit of Jansens, a naval expedition, consisting of the frigates

Sir Francis Drake and *Phaeton*, under Captain George Harris, a mere youth, captured the island of Madura, off the north-east coast of Java, and which is seventy miles long. A few French officers had landed there, and having hoisted the tricolour, deemed the island their own, till driven out of it by Harris.

Jansens now collected a force of native cavalry at Jater, six miles from the half Chinese town of

slopes, by which they could ascend and descend with ease; thus, the moment the pioneers began to break ground, the Java troopers took to flight, and left their guns behind them; and seeing the futility of further resistance, General Jansens, by a treaty signed on the 18th of September, 1811, at Oonarang, surrendered the island to Great Britain, with all troops yet in arms as prisoners of war.*

The conquest of Java and the Moluccas led to



VIEW OFF SINGAPORE—CHINESE JUNK LYING AT ANCHOR.

Samarang, where Achmuty landed. On this the inhabitants fled, and he marched at once in quest of the enemy's camp, which was formed on a range of hills, difficult of access and covered by sharp and broken crags. The occupants of the place were chiefly natives, about 8,000 strong, with twenty pieces of cannon. Achmuty had with him only 1,000 bayonets, but all Europeans, with some pioneers and six light field-pieces. The summit of the range was level, grassy, and well adapted for the motions of cavalry, of which Jansens' force was almost wholly composed, and there were some

the promotion of the Governor-General in the peerage: he was created Viscount Melgund and Earl of Minto in 1813; and Mr. Stamford Raffles was knighted, and made Lieutenant-Governor of Java and its dependencies; while Rollo Gillespie remained as commander of the forces, and in this capacity, though a gallant and highly distinguished officer, he manifested a strangely hostile feeling to Sir Stamford, with whom he could regard no subject in the same light. He was anxious to occupy Java with numerous forces; this the governor,

* *London Gaz. Extraordinary*, 21st Jan., 1812.

urging motives of economy, declared to be unnecessary. Gillespie, resenting his views, brought so many and such serious charges against Sir Stamford, who was a philosopher, a statesman, and an erudite scholar, that it became necessary for the Governor-General to institute an official inquiry, which ended in the honourable acquittal of Raffles and the recall of Gillespie to Hindostan.

Prior to this, the colonel's services had been actively required in various ways to preserve order in the territory he had so valiantly done his part to win. The French and Dutch left nothing undone to stir up the natives against us. On returning from Sumatra, in 1812, whither he had been sent to punish them for the annihilation of the Dutch colonies, he found a confederacy of native princes menacing British authority. He proceeded against the refractory Sultan of Djoejocarta, whose fortified place, defended by one hundred pieces of cannon, was captured by storm, under circumstances that reflected lustre on our arms. The sultan was made prisoner, and exiled to Penang. He had been at the head of no less than 100,000 men; but their weapons and discipline were so inferior, that they failed to defend themselves even against a few thousand Europeans. For these services Gillespie was made a major-general, and after his quarrel with Raffles was sent to take command at Meerut.*

At this time, the slaves in Java amounted to about 30,000, and were procured from the slave dealers from the neighbouring islands, but chiefly from Celebes and Bali.

Upon our conquest of the island, says Sir Stamford Raffles, "the condition of this class of its subjects excited the attention of Government; and though we could not, consistently with the rights of property, which are admitted by the laws that we professed to administer, emancipate them from servitude, we enacted regulations, so far as we were authorised, to ameliorate their present lot, and lead to their ultimate freedom. Steps were immediately taken to check further importation; and as soon as it was known that the horrid traffic in slaves was declared a felony by the British Parliament, it was not permitted for an instant to disgrace a region to which British authority extended. The folly and perfect uselessness of slavery in Java has often been pointed out by Dutch commissioners and Dutch authors."†

Java remained in quiet possession of Britain until 1815, when the native officers and privates of

a regiment of Bengal Light Infantry conspired to murder their European officers, and all other white men they could lay hands on; to desert, subvert the British authority, and join the Javanese in effecting a revolution. The real source of this dark combination lay in a breach of faith committed by the Government.

The conspirators were volunteers, who, contrary to the prejudices of caste, had joined the expedition under Sir Samuel Achmuty, on condition of being restored to their country at the end of three years' service. This bargain was tyrannically and scandalously violated. The regiment was left in Java by the Indian authorities; and the sepoys, despairing of ever again seeing their country and the temples of their gods, gave way, under a sense of wrong, to those vindictive passions which characterise the Bengalese, and the easily excited hatred of all Christians.

"It is remarkable," says a writer, "how the sepoy has ever proved himself the same sanguinary monster, whether at Vellore, or Java, or Cawnpore. It is equally remarkable, that after such decided proofs of their readiness, men and officers, to assassinate their comrades and defenceless Europeans upon any provocation from the Government, that both the Government and British officers continued to trust them, until the mutiny of 1857, and the horrid butcheries of Cawnpore."

The authorities were to blame for the intended revolt of the sepoys in Java; but when the plot was discovered, some of the criminals were executed, and the rest drafted into battalions returning home to India.

Sir Stamford Raffles, under whose government the island rose to great prosperity (its revenue having risen from 818,128 rupees yearly to 2,800,000), could not foresee how soon we were to restore to Holland our splendid conquests in the Eastern Archipelago, and with them Java, which he styled "the other India."

In 1816 it was given back to the Dutch. The overthrow of Napoleon at Waterloo, led to a general re-arrangement among the European Governments, all of whom evinced much jealousy of Britain, on whom the brunt of the long war by land and sea had fallen. The subsequent abandonment of Borneo—though a most injurious step to our interests, and despite the expressed desire of bankers, merchants, and manufacturers at home, as well as those of Singapore and India—was not so purblind an act as the surrender of prosperous Java—the Queen of the Eastern Isles—a measure for which even the native authorities manifested the greatest reluctance.

* "Records, 9th Hussars."

† Raffles' "Hist. of Java."

The change once more effected in this island, from the *ryot* tenure of land, introduced under the British Government, to the old system of prescribed cultivation and forced deliveries, excited an

insurrection, in which, according to the testimony of M. Van den Bosch, more than 30,000 men on the side of the Dutch, and 200,000 Javanese, were sacrificed.

CHAPTER LXXXV.

THE MUCHS.—THE NEPAULESE AND GHOORKAS.—DEATH OF THE EARL OF MINTO.

OUR disputes with the King of Ava, which had continued for many years, in consequence of the immigration of the Mughs to British India, broke out with considerable violence in 1811. Sixteen years before, three criminals having fled across the border, the Burmese did not hesitate to violate our territory in pursuit of them; but the invasion was promptly repelled; and now the protection we afforded the Mughs proved the next source of discord. The tyranny exercised by the Burmese governor of Arracan drove multitudes of these people to seek an asylum within our possessions; and so early as the year 1799, two-thirds of the Mughs of Arracan are supposed to have exchanged the habitations of their fathers for a home and settlement under British protection.

Jealous of these proceedings, a Burmese force of 4,000 men broke into the province of Chittagong, which had been ceded to us by the Soubahdar of Bengal in 1760; but they fell back across the frontier. It was now, somewhat imprudently, resolved to settle the refugees permanently in the district between the Ramoo river and the Nauf, in the immediate presence of their enemies. The situation seemed favourable to people of their habits; for they are a muscular and hardy race, and make good pedlars and mechanics, and the territory seemed to belong to no one. But the consequences were, that the Mughs formed themselves into bands of marauders, and kept up a system of incessant predatory incursions against their hereditary enemies in Arracan.

In the early part of 1811, a native of the latter province, named King Berring, whose ancestors, as well as himself, possessed extensive lands there, in consequence of having incurred the displeasure and being exposed to the resentment of the King of Ava, took refuge, with many followers, in our province of Chittagong. There he conceived the design of adding his adherents to the exiled Mughs; and in the month of May, great numbers

of them joined his standard, inspired by vengeance against their conquerors, the Burmese, and probably with the hope to restore their ancient Buddhist kingdom—the history of which, according to native annals, begins in A.D. 701, and continues through a series of 120 native princes, to 1783.

Partly owing to the secrecy and caution with which King Berring carried it into effect, and partly to the negligence of the *darogas* (or native magistrates) of the Thannas, on the frontier, his proceedings were unknown to our magistrates at Chittagong until he had marched across the Nauf river, which forms the boundary of the two countries.

It would appear, from another authority, that King Berring's plan of an organised attack on Arracan was known to the local chief magistrate, but he displayed such culpable negligence, that he really seemed to connive at the intended inroad of the Mughs; and now a war with Ava became imminent, when two years before we had been on the point of establishing friendly relations with its court. In 1809, a French ship having wantonly attacked a small island of the Burmese, the king, not knowing any difference between French and British, sent an angry remonstrance to Calcutta, on which Lord Minto sent Lieutenant Canning as an ambassador; but now the diplomatic intercourse about to ensue was dissipated by the raid of King Berring, who our ambassador had promised should receive no shelter in British territory. This pledge was not fulfilled; and Captain W. White, in his account of the disputes with Burmah, actually alleges that the promise was made to delude, and that neither Lieutenant Canning nor the Government were sincere in this matter.*

The result of the Mugh invasion was, that King Berring was soon deserted by his followers and became a fugitive, with many more of the inhabitants

* "Political History of Burmese War," &c.

of Arracan, without our territory; and to prevent any incursions of the Burmese troops in pursuit, the magistrates instructed the officer commanding our troops at Chittagong to take post on the frontier.

Accordingly, early in 1812, the troops assembled at Ramoo, the head-quarters of Colonel Morgan, who seized all the passes, at the time that the Burmese forces, under the Rajah of Arracan, advanced to their boundary, the Nauf. The rajah demanded the surrender of the two principal leaders of the late invasion. The civil magistrate referred the matter to Calcutta; but, as a reply did not come soon enough, the rajah sent another demand, couched in imperious and very different language, requiring the surrender of all fugitives, and of a Scotsman, named Dr. McRae, whom he alleged to have assisted the invaders; while at the same time, "the King of the World and Lord of the White Elephant" was threatening to march, at the head of 40,000 soldier pilgrims, from Ava to Benares.

The magistrate replied that the ringleaders would be secured, and the Mughls prevented from doing further mischief. The matter, he added, would be settled by the King of Ava's Viceroy, at Rangoon, and he warned the rajah against the violation of our territory, to the frontier of which more troops were pushed up, while a sloop of twenty guns arrived to take away our envoy in case of shots being exchanged.

In spite of all this, the Burmese crossed the frontier early in 1812, and began to stockade themselves in British territory, while dispatching parties in different directions to seize the fugitives, or all who were supposed to be so. The Rajah of Arracan, at the same time, sent vakeels to our camp to negotiate; but our commander insisted that prior to any arrangement being made, the Burmese should fall back beyond their own borders.

As Lieutenant Canning had to confer, not with the King of Ava, but with his viceroy at Rangoon, the negotiations there were tedious and circuitous. Thus the difficulties deepened, and Canning's situation became painfully perilous. Plans were laid to kidnap him and destroy our shipping; but these, however, were frustrated by the vigilance of the British, and ere long matters were left pretty much as they were before. Canning withdrew; the Burmese troops departed; ours returned to their cantonments; and Lord Minto published a manifesto, to the effect that if the King of Ava had any redress to demand, he should send a vakeel to Calcutta.

This peaceful state of affairs became suddenly clouded by the abrupt re-appearance of King

Berring, who, collecting a great force of Mughls, burst into Arracan on the 4th of June, 1812; but he was defeated and had once more to seek shelter in British territory. The troops of Ava did not pursue him; but the Viceroy at Rangoon treated with marked scorn the pacific allegations of Canning, whose recall was revoked by Lord Minto.

The month of October saw King Berring still in arms, and in full possession of all the frontier hills and jungles. Our troops were compelled to take the field against him to disperse his marauding parties, and this was not effected without considerable bloodshed.

By the end of the year, King Berring, for the third time, broke into Arracan, with the same luckless results as before; though his dauntless intrepidity and wonderful perseverance were fully equalled by the courage and hardihood of his adherents. The troubles along the frontier of Ansar continued during the whole remaining period of Lord Minto's government, and the relations between it and the court of Ava were far from satisfactory.

During the years 1812 and 1813, Goojerat was visited by a dreadful famine,* and, as usual, ignorance of the true art of agriculture, and that habit of yielding to fate on the least touch of misfortune common to Orientals, made matters worse; for the Indian believes that good or bad crops are born of destiny, and he is never likely to learn that "the gods help those who help themselves."

In the latter year, we had disputes along the frontier of Nepaul, somewhat similar to those in Arracan.

In 1806, about 1,600 of the subjects of the rajah fled from his oppressive and merciless despotism to the dominions of the Company, and two years after an angry dispute ensued between him and the latter, about their respective frontiers. Lord Minto being prevented from making war by the usual instructions from home, and believing that at any time he could soundly chastise the Nepaulese, did nothing for the present. But the rajah began to grow bolder, and in 1810, he ventured to seize upon some territories belonging to the Zemindar of Bimnughur, a subject of the Company. On this he was warned that arms would be resorted to unless he made immediate restitution; but nothing was done even then.

It happened that about this time the Ghoorkas were conquering some portions of Nepaul, and waging a destructive war among the mountain chiefs whose possessions lay near the Jumna and the Sutlej; after which they began to encroach upon the Sikh chieftains, who lived south of the latter river, and were under British protection.

* "Transactions, Bombay Lit. Soc.," 1819.

In 1811, these fierce and warlike Ghorkas continued to advance, as they did so erecting forts, stockades, and strong lines of posts, to secure possession of the lands they won, till they overran the district of Kyndunughur, in the province of Berar, and, close to the great road to Benares, had the hardihood to erect a fortress on British territory.

As it was impossible to submit tamely to an encroachment so daring, Lord Minto informed the Court of Directors that it was hopeless to expect restitution from either the Nepaulese or the Ghorkas, save by force of arms, and thus, by the end of the year, troops were sent to drive the invaders back; and in May, 1813, Major Bradshaw was directed by the Company to settle the dispute about the frontiers. But only a precarious arrangement was made, while the confidence and insolence of the Ghorkas convinced Lord Minto that, sooner or later, our unwise pacific system would give place to a fierce and energetic war; and, even while Major Bradshaw was using all his diplomacy at Bootwul with the commissioners of the Nepaulese, fresh encroachments upon us were made by those bold and daring mountaineers.

Lord Minto resigned his office, and took his passage for Europe towards the close of 1813. He had expressed a wish to resign in January, 1814, but the Ministry had changed, and he anticipated the time of the Earl of Moira being appointed his successor. "It is said that when he returned from India, he frankly confessed that his notions about the first and greatest of our Governors-General were very different from what they had been a quarter of a century before, when he harangued in the House of Commons, or sat with the managers of Hastings' impeachment in Westminster Hall. More than this, his lordship recommended carrying out the system of aggrandisement, connection, and supremacy, which Hastings had been the first to adopt; and he confessed that without this supremacy, by conquest, or by connection, our empire in the East could not stand; and that the timid neutrality and non-interference system, which had now been so long cherished by the British Legis-

lature and Government, and by the Court of Directors, was altogether inapplicable to our situation in India."

In financial arrangements the administration of the Earl of Minto was eminently successful. The surplus in his last year of office amounted to £1,500,000 sterling; and among the personal merits of his lordship, we must not forget the interest he took in Indian literature, and the liberal patronage he extended to all who cultivated it. So far as the narrow restrictions of the home government permitted him, he endeavoured to carry out the view of the Marquis of Wellesley with regard to the College of Fort William, and he proposed a plan for the foundation of native colleges at Tirhoot and Nadiya, which was to have been followed by the establishment of Mohammedan colleges in other parts of Hindostan.

The new honours bestowed upon him by the Crown he was not permitted long to enjoy. He landed in England in May, 1814; after receiving the thanks of Parliament for his eminent services, and after a short residence in London, alarming symptoms of a decline began to show themselves, and they increased so rapidly as to baffle medical skill. His chief anxiety was to get home to die in Scotland, but he expired on his way thither, at Stevenage, in Hertfordshire, on the 21st of June.*

He was in his sixty-third year. Lord Minto's manners were mild and pleasant; his conversation was naturally playful, but he could make it serious and instructive. Both in writing and speaking he displayed great purity of language, and an uncommon degree of perspicuity in his mode of relation and expression. He was an elegant scholar, a good linguist, and well versed in ancient and modern history. As usual with his countrymen, he was warmly attached to his family, and anxiety for their happiness, and a wish to promote their welfare, were great objects with him through life; and his amiable qualities were fully appreciated by all who enjoyed his friendship.†

* "Scottish Biog. Dict.," &c.

† *Gentleman's Magazine*, 1814.

CHAPTER LXXXVI.

THE EARL OF MOIRA GOVERNOR-GENERAL.—THE NEPAULESE WAR.

G. A. FRANCIS, Lord Rawdon and Earl of Moira, K.G., a gallant officer, distinguished senator, and popular statesman, the representative of an ancient Irish baronial family, succeeded the Earl of Minto as Governor-General of India.

“Portman Square, Feb. 10th, 1812.

“My Lord,—At a period when endeavours were made to alarm the public, by representations of the dangers to be apprehended attending any attempts to impart to the natives of Hindostan the



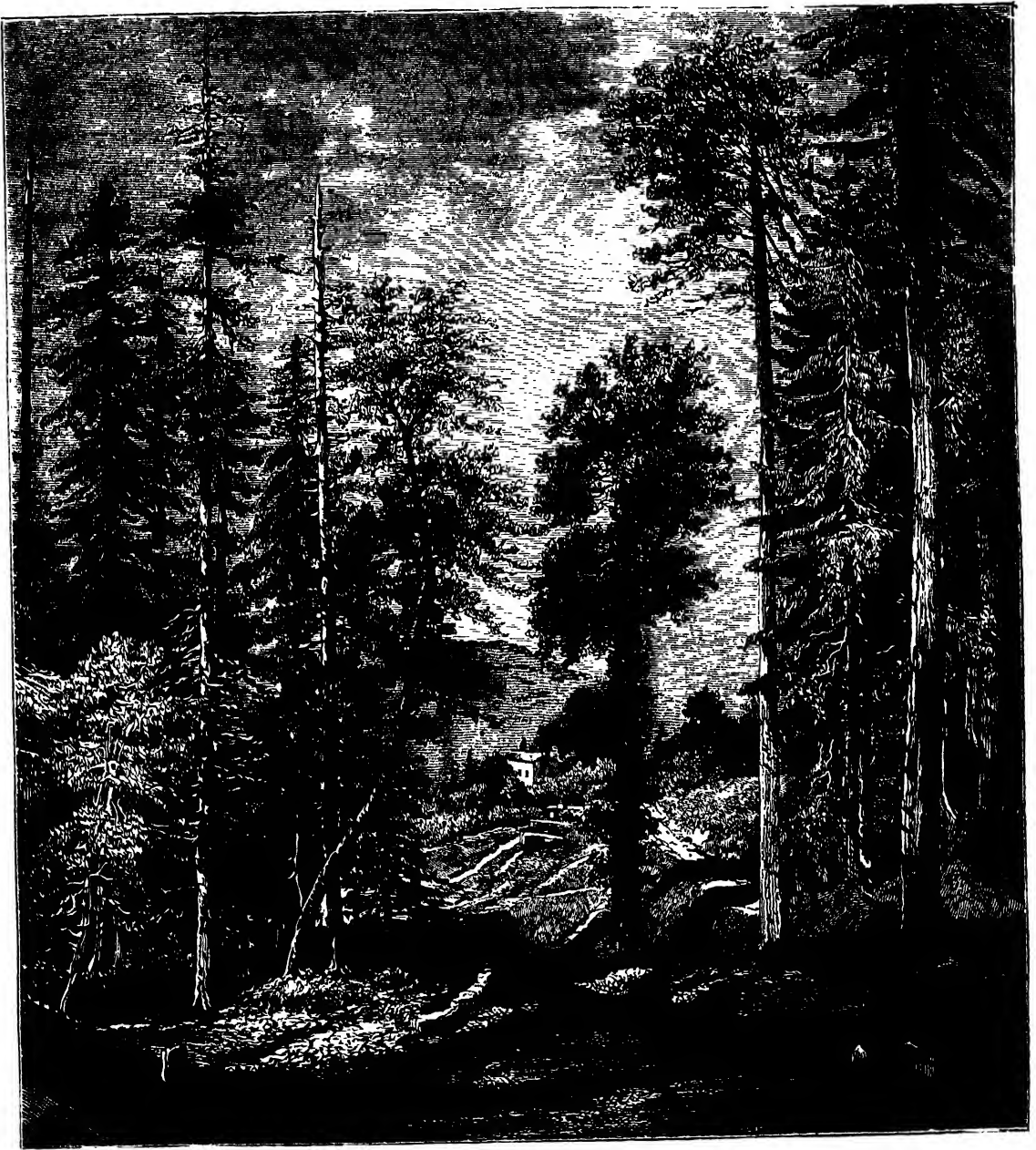
A BURMESE PADDY (RICE OR COUNTRY) CART. *From an Original Sketch.*

The earl was a trained soldier, having been a captain in the 63rd Foot, in 1775, during the war in America, and was long—as a general—a popular Commander-in-chief of the troops in Scotland, where, in 1804, he married Flora Campbell, Countess of Loudon, and where his daughter, an accomplished poetess, the famous and ill-fated Lady Flora Hastings, was born at Edinburgh, in 1806. Prior to his departure for India, he received the following letter from his distinguished predecessor in office, Lord Teignmouth, concerning that which the latter had never ceased to take a deep interest in—Christianity in India.

doctrines of Christianity, I deemed it my particular duty to publish the result of my own observation and experience on this important subject. The publication—though avowed by me (it was anonymous; as I conceived there might be an impropriety in its bearing the name of a Member of the Board of Control as its author)—I now submit to your lordship, with a request that you will honour me by the acceptance of it. The state of affairs on your lordship's arrival in India will enable you to judge how far my reasoning, in 1808, was well founded. Allow me to avail myself of this opportunity in expressing my cordial gratification that a country,

in the prosperity of which I must ever feel a deep interest, has been placed under your lordship's administration; and my sincere wish is that your

The Company's commercial monopoly had long been a fruitful source of complaint and jealousy to many of the mercantile interests in Great



VIEW IN THE HIMALAYAS.

voyage to it may be prosperous, and that the climate may prove propitious to your health." *

On the 4th of October, 1814, the Earl of Moira formally assumed office at Calcutta, and found the position of affairs by no means smooth or pleasant.

* "Life of Lord Teignmouth," vol. ii.

Britain; and at every renewal of the East India Charter, vigorous efforts had been made to throw open some portions of the Eastern trade. Many merchants of London, Glasgow, Liverpool, and other great ports—without reflecting or caring that the trade in India had been won by the Company through conquest and dominion, without which the

trade would never have existed at all—had for years contended that they, and the three kingdoms at large, had a right to participate in trading openly with India and China; but the first great inroad on the Company's ancient privileges did not take place until 1813.

On the 22nd of February in that year, the Company, well aware that plans were in preparation for the destruction of their long monopoly, urged by petition to Parliament, that without their special commercial privileges they could neither maintain their political position nor their territorial possessions; and their commercial monopoly was but an instrument necessary for those ends.

The Ministry had, however, resolved on a modification of the system; and hence, before the session closed, a bill (Act of the 53rd George III., chapter 155) was carried through both houses; and the trade with India—but not with China—was thrown open to all ships of not less than 350 tons of registered measurement. The resort of individuals to India, for commercial or other purposes, was placed under certain regulations—European residents having to apply for permission from the Court of Directors, who should either grant permission for residence, or, in the event of refusal, transmit the application, within one month of the receipt of it, to the Board of Control. Hence there was introduced a divided authority in matters of commerce, as there had previously been in politics; and it was enacted, that the accounts of the East India Company should be kept under the two separate heads of “commerce” and “territory.”

Through the Board of Control, a general authority was given to H.M. Government, over the appropriation of the territorial revenues, and those surplus commercial profits which might remain, after a strict examination of the appropriation clauses, and the claims of the Company's creditors; and from this time, in future, no Governor-General, local governor, or commander-in-chief, was to be appointed by the Company, without the express approval of the king; and no dismissed or suspended official of the Company was to be restored without the consent of the Board of Control.

The bounty of the Court of Directors was also restricted; and without the consent of the former, they could not grant a gratuity of more than £600; and, moreover, the board was to hold and exercise authority over the Company's college and seminary at Haileybury and Addiscombe, in England.

The Earl of Moira bade fair to become popular in his new office. “If not, a consistent politician, he was a nobleman of the most honest intentions,

sincerely attached to his sovereign, high-minded beyond most of his contemporaries, and liberal and generous in the extreme. He had also a grace and dignity in his manners, which will not be forgotten by those who ever saw him,” says a writer, “and which could not be without their effect, in a country like India.”

The expense of Lord Minto's foreign embassies, and foreign conquests in Java, the Moluccas, and elsewhere, had trenched deeply on the Company's exchequer, and the Earl of Moira found a considerable amount of financial embarrassment before him. To meet the calls for retrenchment, the army had been, as usual, most injudiciously reduced, and to a degree which the necessary requirements of the service did not warrant; and the consequent result was discontent among all ranks, and considerable laxity of discipline; and all this at a time when our relations with neighbouring states were far from satisfactory, while with Nepaul hostilities seemed all but inevitable.

Years had not chilled the Irish ardour of Lord Moira, who was still every inch a soldier; and quitting Calcutta, in June, to make a military tour of inspection, he began to concert measures for the coming campaign, and to make defensive arrangements against the marauding Pindarees, who were now menacing our northern frontiers.

According to the limits claimed for them at this crisis, the territories of Nepaul skirted the northern British border, together with that of Oude, for about 700 miles from north-west to south-east, and extended backwards, with an average breadth of 130 miles, across the ascending slopes of the Himalaya range, to the region of eternal snow. The lowest belt of the Nepaulese dominions is part of the great plain of Hindostan. In a few spots, the British districts reach now to the base of the Himalayas; but in most parts the Ghooorka possessions stretch about twenty miles into the plain. Bounding this low country on the north, is a region nearly of the same width, consisting of small hills, which rise gradually towards the north, and are watered by numerous streams. In several places these low hills are separated by fine *doons* (or what in Scotland would be called *straths*), many of which are well cultivated, and produce enormous bamboos, pine-apples, sugar-canes, oats, and barley. The mountains of the inhabited valleys are narrow, and in many instances 6,000 feet in height. Several rivers that rise in Thibet pass between the peaks of the snowy Alpine ranges, but amid such enormous precipices, that their openings are in general quite impracticable.*

* Fullarton's *Gaz.*, vol. x.

A more forbidding theatre in which to carry on offensive warfare could not well be imagined ; and this, perhaps, was one of the reasons why so many Governors-General had submitted to the insults and encroachments of the inhabitants.

Nepaul Proper, though the ancient history of it is very obscure, was originally confined to a single valley among the mountains, but of no great extent, commencing on the edge of one of the lower ranges of the chain, and continued in length through the Ghauts—which were traversable only during a few of the summer months—to the tableland of Thibet. The primeval inhabitants spring from the old race of that district, but their origin is lost in the mists of antiquity, and complete ascendancy was established among them when Hindoo colonists, led by Rajpoot chiefs, arrived, and absorbed or reduced them to subjection.

So lately as 1765, the valley of Nepaul was held by the Hindoo Rajahs of Khatmandoo, Bhaigaon, and Lalita-patan. They quarrelled among themselves, and this discord proved their destruction. Prithri Narrain, Rajah of the Mountain Ghoorkas, subdued them in detail in 1768, and in the following year they came into collision with the British, under Captain Kinloch, who had penetrated as far as Sederoly, but did not prosecute the enterprise. The sovereignty Prithri won was transmitted to his descendants, and the name of Ghoorkas was applied to all the people they ruled.

When next attempted by the Company, the intercourse with Nepaul was of a pacific nature ; and when, in 1792, the Emperor of China marched 70,000 men against the Ghoorkas, in order to avenge some indignities they had offered to the Thibet Lama, and extort a nominal submission from them, their rajah applied to us for military aid, and, in consequence, Captain Kirkpatrick was sent on a mission to Khatmandoo, where he obtained much new and interesting information respecting a country then to us unknown. In 1795, Rana Bahadur assumed the government, on attaining his majority, and one of his first acts was to put to death his uncle, as a punishment for the state of subjection in which he had kept him while his guardian. His life was one of great dissipation ; his cruelty was ferocious ; his people revolted ; and then he was induced, in 1800, from superstition,

personal apprehension, or caprice, to resign in favour of an infant son, and retire to Benares.

While there, his debauchery and profusion involved him in pecuniary difficulties, from which he was relieved by the Company, and an arrangement was made for the repayment of the debt thus contracted—to facilitate the execution of which it was agreed that a British Resident should be established at Khatmandoo. Captain Knox accordingly proceeded thither in 1802, accompanied by another enterprising Scotsman, Dr. Francis Hamilton, author of a “ History of Nepaul,” and “ The House of Gorkha.” Their mission, however, proved abortive. The high-born and high-spirited wife of Rana Bahadur contrived to return to Nepaul, where she found means to supplant a low-born regent, to whom the affairs of their infant son were entrusted ; and entertaining a shrewd jealousy, not altogether groundless, that the British mission was, as usual in India, “ the thin end of the wedge,” she treated her two visitors with coldness so marked that they were glad to return to the dominions of the Company.

The princess was soon followed by her husband, who assumed the government as regent for his son ; but his old habits returned with him, and provoked a conspiracy of the principal Ghoorka chiefs, who assassinated him in open council, and placed his half-brother, Shir Bahadur, upon the throne. A civil war ensued, and the ascendancy was won by a chief named Bisa Shah, who placed an illegitimate son of Rana Bahadur upon the musnud, and conducted the government with such ability, that the Ghoorka territories were much extended, and reached so far to the west as to threaten a quarrel with Runjeet Sing, and their encroachments on British territory were such that forbearance was no longer possible, though the Ghoorkas alleged, and with considerable truth, that the tracts they were beginning to overrun belonged of old to them ; but as some had never done so, there were right and wrong on both sides, and the dispute bade fair to be a bitter one.

The Ghoorkas were ignorant of Britain’s real strength, and had a great confidence in their own, and believed that while in possession of a plant—unknown in Europe—named *Bish* or *Bikh*, they were secure from any enemy.



RUNJEET SING.
(From a Portrait by a Native.)

"This dreadful root," says Dr. Hamilton, "of which large quantities are annually imported, is equally fatal when taken into the stomach or applied to wounds, and is in universal use throughout India for poisoning arrows, and, there is too much reason to suspect, for the worst of purposes.

. . . . The Ghoorkalese pretend that it is one of their principal securities against invasion from the low countries, and they could so infect all the waters on the route by which an enemy was advancing, as to occasion his certain destruction. In case of such an attempt, the invaders ought, no doubt, to be upon their guard; but the country abounds so in springs that might soon be cleared, so as to render such a means of defence totally ineffectual, were the enemy aware of the circumstance.*

At the time the Earl of Moira entered on his government, all hopes of an amicable arrangement with Nepal had utterly failed. As a last effort, he addressed a letter to the rajah, in which he repeated all the arguments and remonstrances that had been employed by the Earl of Minto, and urged him to acquiesce in the peaceable occupation of the disputed territories by the British Government.

The mountain prince scornfully refused, so they were at once entered and taken possession of by our troops. The Ghoorkas, as if their final intentions were scarcely yet known, retired without offering resistance, though fully aware that the time had come when they must strike a final blow, or forfeit their honour.

In an assembly of the leading chiefs, the question of peace or war was fully discussed, and they concluded—but not unanimously—for the latter. The peace party urged procrastination, as they feared that some of the mountain chiefs might prove treacherous, and leave the passes undefended to an enemy whom they knew to be brave. "Hitherto," said they, "we have only hunted deer; but in this war we must prepare to fight with tigers!"

The war party appealed to the past glories of their arms; their mountains, which had never been conquered, though overrun by the Chinese; and they remembered that the British had been baffled before Bhurtpore. That fort was but the work of man, yet the British had failed there. "What likelihood, then, was there that they would be able to storm the mountain fastnesses, constructed by the hand of God?" The decision of the rajah to try the fortune of war was responded to without delay by the Governor-General, who was then on a tour in the northern provinces. On the 1st of November, 1814, he issued a manifesto from Lucknow,

* "Account of the Kingdom of Nepal," p. 99.

addressed to the friends and allies of the Company, detailing the causes which made war inevitable with the Ghoorkas.

The Earl of Moira ordered a division of the army, 6,000 strong, to march from Loodiana into Hindur, on the western extremity of the frontier. It was under the famous Sir David Ochterlony, who was thus to menace Ameer Sing, who was the Hannibal of Nepal, and was viceroy and commander of all the Ghoorka forces between the Sutlej and the Gogra.

Major-General Morley, with 8,000 men, was to move from Dinapore against Khatmandoo, the Nepaulesc capital. Major-General Wood, with 4,500 men, was to penetrate into the enemy's country by the way of Bootwul; Colonel Jasper Nicolls was to command the division which invaded Kumaon; and Major-General Rollo Gillespie, proceeding from Saharunpore, was to march his column into Sirmoor.*

Captain Latter was placed on the south-west frontier, with the local battalion of Rungpore and a regular battalion of native infantry, to act aggressively or defensively, as circumstances required; and altogether the force marching against Nepal mustered about 30,000 men, with sixty pieces of cannon.

The Ghoorkas had at this time 12,000 fighting men, clad, armed, and disciplined in imitation of the Company's sepoy. They were active, robust, and courageous; and in addition to their muskets and bayonets, every man carried the national weapon, a *kookeree*, or heavy knife, curved outwards both back and front, ending in a point, and bent at the handle. The edge is so keen, and the blade thickens so much towards the back, which is about a quarter of an inch thick, that a single blow will cut the vertebre of a buffalo. This weapon is fifteen inches long, three at the broadest part of the leaf-shaped blade, and is worn in the frog of a waist-belt.

The deadly plant described by Dr. Hamilton was now resorted to, and as our troops advanced, the Ghoorka officers ordered the wells and tanks to be poisoned. "But this is a threat which has often been used, and has never been carried extensively into practice."

On the 19th of October, 1814, the advanced guard of General Gillespie's division, under Colonel Carpenter, proceeding by the Timbee Pass, entered the valley of Dehra Doon.

Three days after, the main body came, under Colonel Mawbey, who occupied the town of Dehra, and continued to follow the Ghoorkas, who were

* "Life of Ochterlony," *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1839.

retiring before him in the direction of Kalunga or Nalapuni, about five miles further off to the north-east. It is a small but strong fort, situated on the extremity of the flat summit of a detached hill, the steep sides of which were covered with jungle.

The fort consisted of a quadrangular stone building, to which access had been rendered difficult by means of stockades. It was garrisoned by 600 men, under Balbhudra Sing, a Ghoorka captain of courage and ability. On halting before the place, Colonel Mawbey received a defiance in answer to his summons, so preparations for a siege began forthwith; and the battering guns were got into position on the summit of the hill, but their fire proving abortive, Mawbey waited for further orders.

Gillespie's column was at this time divided into three commands: Colonel Mawbey led the infantry, Colonel Westenra the cavalry, and Major Pennington the artillery.

Though no breach had been made, it was resolved to storm the fort on the 31st of October. There were four columns of attack, three of which had to make a considerable détour, and thus did not hear the signal gun which was to indicate the simultaneous assault. The enemy made a sortie, which was repulsed, and the general conceiving that, by a hot pursuit, the stormers might enter with them, ordered all at his disposal to the attempt, which failed, as the Ghoorkas closed the gates, which proved too strong to be forced.

As usual in too many British assaults, the scaling-ladders proved too short, and the fiery Gillespie furiously urged his soldiers to accomplish impossibilities; and in this wild attempt against stone walls, he was shot through the heart, when leading on his old regiment, the Royal Irish Dragoons, dismounted, with their swords and pistols.

The matchlock-balls flew thick as hail about the stormers, on whom an avalanche of stones, trunks of trees, and cannon balls were hurled down.

"Although it lasted but a few minutes," wrote a private of H.M. 53rd, who was present, "the sight was horrible; the masses of rock and heavy logs of timber came crashing down towards us, bounding from one uneven place to another, or tearing up or carrying before them, the low brushwood with which the hill was covered. These dreadful missiles were close upon us, ready, as it were, to crush us instantly to death, and sweeping all before them. Some of the men threw themselves flat upon their bellies, in the hope that the ponderous articles would bound over them. The plan was a wise one, for nearly all that did so escaped unscathed, while others were thrown down, bruised, mangled, and perhaps killed. The thought of throwing myself down had not

struck me soon enough for me to avail myself of it, for in the instant I received a blow on the head, which stretched me senseless on the ground." *

Disheartened by the fall of Gillespie, the troops fell back, and their retreat was covered by one of the three stray columns which came up. On the 25th November, Kalunga was again attacked, and breaching batteries were opened. By noon on the 27th a gap was practicable, and the stormers advanced with unloaded muskets. The breach was found to be impassable, as it was defended by spearmen and matchlock-men intermingled.

The British, unable to return a shot, fell back, with the loss of 680 men; and it is said, that owing to the obvious incapacity of some of the officers, the troops had made that fatal attack with great unwillingness. Though it was known that the garrison obtained its supply of water from a well beyond the fort, it did not occur to any of our officers to have it cut off; so now a bombardment was resorted to. The bare stone walls of the fort gave no shelter to the gallant mountaineers who manned them, and they suffered so dreadfully, that in the course of three days there were surviving only seventy of the original 600. With such a feeble band, breathing an air that was rendered pestilential by the number of unburied dead, a longer defence would have been madness. The few survivors stole out in the night, but were overtaken and cut to pieces, with the loss of their standards; the Ghoorka chief, Balbhudra Sing, effected his escape.

The interior of the fort presented a shocking spectacle, when our troops entered it by daylight. It was everywhere strewed with the bodies of the dead, the dying, and the wounded.

"The latter were piteously crying, and entreating our sepoys to give them water wherewith to cool their parched lips. Many were dying of thirst, not a drop of water had they tasted for the three preceding days. Assistance was immediately afforded to the wretched creatures; those whose wounds were susceptible of cure were removed to our hospitals, and attended with as much care as if they had been our own people; eighty-five of the Ghoorkas recovered under the hands of our surgeons. In the evening immense funeral piles were erected by the sepoys, on which the dead bodies were burnt." †

Kalunga was destroyed, but the Ghoorkas were greatly encouraged by the slaughter of the British before its walls, and began to despise them as antagonists. The Earl of Moira was mortified and disappointed by such an untoward opening of the

* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1837.

† *Ibid*.



DEATH OF ROLLO GILLESPIE.

campaign, and feeling it necessary to augment the army of operation, as well as recruit extensively the whole of the Bengal forces, he ordered Colonel

Mawbey, who had succeeded to the command on the fall of Rollo Gillespie, to form a junction with the division of Sir David Ochterlony.

CHAPTER LXXXVII.

WAR WITH THE GHOORKAS.—VALOUR AND SUCCESS OF OCHTERLONY. — OPERATIONS OF GENERAL WOOD.—CONQUEST OF KUMAON AND GURWIAL, ETC.

THE commencement of the war before the walls of Kalunga was ominous of evil. The position of the combatants was changed, our loss was great, and the prestige remained with the Ghoorkas. The invading troops, from their superiority in numbers and in discipline, had promised themselves an easy and early conquest; and now they began to doubt whether they should be able to grapple with these hardy mountaineers, or do aught but experience a series of disasters. On the other hand, the Ghoorkas were full of ardour and elation,

and were daily joined by other mountain tribes, which had hitherto held aloof. Thus a new character was given to the war, and there was every prospect of its being a protracted one.

Colonel Mawbey detached Colonel Carpenter, with a division, to a position on the Jumna, where, by taking possession of certain fords, the enemy's communications between the east and west would be cut off, and whereby the hill chiefs, who were disposed to throw off allegiance to Nepaul, would be encouraged to do so.

A revolt among the people of Isunsar, excited by this movement, so greatly alarmed the Ghoorka rajah that, without waiting to be attacked, he abandoned in haste the strong fort of Burat. After the fall of Kalunga, Colonel Mawbey marched westward into the valley of Kurda, with the intention of co-operating with the division of Sir David Ochterlony.

On the 20th of December, 1814, he was superseded in command by Major-General Sir Gabriel Martindale, K. C. B., who, after occupying Nahan, advanced to the foot of a mountain range, on the highest summit of which — perched among the clouds, to all appearance — stands the fortress of Jytak, 5,000 feet above the level of the sea.

In the pettah of Jytak, lower down, and to the southward of the stronghold, Ranjoor Sing Thapa, son of Ameer Sing, had his headquarters, with a strong Ghoorka force. Jytak was very powerfully situated, in an angle where two mountain ridges met. The approach was rugged, and full of natural obstacles, including a steep ascent and several stony ravines. Sir Gabriel reconnoitred the position, and conceived that his first and best plan would be to cut off the supply of water received by the garrison from certain springs below the fort, and for this purpose the capture of a stockaded post, a mile to the westward, was necessary.

The troops advanced in two columns to the attack; the sepoys, in doing so, evincing much reluctance and want of spirit. The result was that we were beaten at every point, and Martindale fell back with the loss of 500 men and officers *hors de combat*, thus adding to the contempt with which

the affair of Kalunga had inspired the Ghoorkas. Martindale now waited for reinforcements.

Meanwhile, the division of Ochterlony, whose sphere of action lay to the westward of General Martindale, encountered difficulties which were equally great, but were less disastrous, because he was a leader of skill and decision. He was well aware of the character of the Ghoorka warriors, and of the advantage they might take of their mountain fastnesses, and hence he proceeded with circumspection to open up his way in regions that were unknown. The small strongholds of Nillaghur and Tarraghur, which guarded the savage pass into Hindur, had

been regularly invested in November, 1814. The former offered every possible resistance until it was breached, and only capitulated before being stormed. The other surrendered; the garrisons in both doing so on the singular enough conditions, that they should neither be compelled to return to Ameer Sing, nor forced to work in fetters on the Honourable Company's roads.

Preceded by the reserve, under Lieutenant-



A SIKH SOLDIER.

Colonel W. A. Thompson, the army now plunged into the gloomy defiles leading to the first range of stockades and fortifications, with 1,100 Ghoorkas prowling on its flank, to fall upon any weary straggler, whom error or accident might expose to the blades of their deadly *kookerees*; and on the 8th of November, Thompson established his bivouac on a hill, opposite the centre of a long range of posts that ran from the fort of Ramghur (on a mountain summit 4,600 feet high) on the west, to that of Kot-Katiba on the east. These two places formed respectively the Ghoorka right and left. The intervening heights, varying in elevation and difficulty of access, stretching over three miles, bristled with stockades, manned by armed mountaineers—the flower of the men of Nepal.

The position was too strong to be forced; and General Ochterlony, now face to face with the redoubted Amcer Sing, for a time disappointed, and even lost the confidence, of many officers of rank, because he did not hurl his strength against the enemy, as Gillespie did so fatally at Kalunga.

Amcer Sing, whose proper head-quarters were at Arkee, thirty miles eastward of Maloun, had hurried forward, at the head of 3,000 men, on hearing of the advance of Ochterlony, who now determined to turn the strong position, and assail it in rear. With this view, he took ground to the north-east, till he obtained possession of a hill seven miles distant from Ramghur, from whence he had a commanding view of the whole Ghoorka lines, and, finding a point from which to assail them, began to prepare a battery.

Notwithstanding the united efforts of the pioneers and elephants, the guns following the infantry took twenty days in being transported to the required point, so terrible was the nature of the ground to be traversed; and, after the cannonade opened, it was found to be so distant as to be useless. To repair this blunder, Lieutenant Peter Lawtie, of the Engineers, was detached with a small party to select nearer ground; and after doing so, he was returning to camp, when the Ghoorkas, who had been watching him, rushed in great strength from their heights, and drove him into a stone enclosure, where he and his soldiers defended themselves till their last cartridge was expended, after which they had to run for their lives along the whole range of the Ghoorka fire.

Some supports, sent out by Ochterlony, joined in their flight, and, as many fell, this affair was magnified by the Ghoorkas into another victory, and inspired more confidence and exultation among them; and, dreading a more universal rising of

the whole country, the major-general deemed it prudent to relinquish the offensive until he was joined by more troops. Meanwhile, he carefully explored several localities, made roads for the conveyance of artillery and stores, disciplined the irregulars of the army, and, on the 26th of December, after a month had been devoted to these labours, the reinforcements came; but they consisted only of a battalion of the 7th Native Infantry and a levy of Sikhs.

The major-general now instantly resumed the offensive, by sending a detachment along the Ghoorka rear, threatening their communication with Arkee and Bilaspore. Alarmed by this, Amcer Sing hastened to frustrate it, and in the attempt sustained a severe repulse, which is thus described in the Memoir of General Ochterlony:—

“The reserve, strengthened by the new regiment, being pushed forward during the night of the 26th December, gained the summit unperceived, and returned, after sustaining an ineffectual fire. Colonel Thompson, an intrepid officer, who did not think discretion the better part of valour, though strictly enjoined, was said not to take every desirable precaution to guard against surprise in the post he had won. The Kadji, hearing with alarm of the success of this movement, and next of guns being taken up on the backs of elephants, being about to open on Mungukedar (a large stockade in the centre of the range), ordered the commandant of it to dislodge the British troops, whatever it might cost. Before dawn on the 28th, a loud uproar began, in which the sound of horns predominated, within the stockade, and when objects became visible, several thousand men were seen shouting and flourishing their swords, while rushing towards Colonel Thompson's post, like a pack of hounds in full cry. Two six-pounders raked their advance for a mile or more; but in a manner pronounced miraculous, ball after ball rebounded from the rocks amid the hurrying crowd, without injuring one of them. No out-pickets interrupting this onset, the enemy reached the foot of the acclivity leading to the camp, almost out of breath; and fortunately, the ascent, except on one narrow point, was steep. On this point, where the access was easy, a lucky accident, and an act of individual bravery, arrested them for an instant. Four courageous fellows, guiding their comrades along it, dashed through a file of sepoy getting under arms, and were moving onward, when the foremost was shot by Lieutenant Armstrong, of the Pioneers. The other three fell back, while Captain Charles Hamilton and Lieutenant Culley, bringing up their companies of the old 6th and 7th Regiments,

deterred the rest from renewing the attempt to enter by what was called 'the neck of land.' Meanwhile the opposite flank of the assailants received a fatal check. Colonel Thompson himself, having gone to a projecting eminence to survey the field, perceived the Ghoorkas struggling up the hill in dense masses under him. Dispatching orderlies, and using voice and gesture to summon his *babas*, as he styled the sepoys of the old 3rd Regiment, they, and part of the light infantry battalion, soon began an irregular fire, which told heavily on the mountaineers. Between thirty and forty rolled dead among their companions, and more than a hundred besides being wounded, the Ghoorkas slowly and sullenly retreated, under the discharge of both artillery and musketry."*

Ameer Sing now fell back on his post at Ramghur; Ochterlony, following out his own plans, left Colonel (afterwards Major-General Sir John) Arnold, his second in command, with a division to watch the movements of the army, while he proceeded with his main body towards a mountain ridge, the occupation of which would place him between the Sutlej and the Ghoorka fort of Maloun. At the same time he sent forward 2,000 men, belonging to the Rajah of Hindur, who had joined him early, and done good service. These irregulars, under Captain Robert Ross, took possession of some heights above Bilaspore, between the Rajah of which and that of Hindur there existed a bitter feud; and the success of Ochterlony's movements was soon apparent.

Ameer Sing conceiving that his position, thus turned, was no longer tenable, left a garrison in the fort of Ramghur, and with his disposable force fell back to the ridge on which Maloun stands. Meanwhile, the genius of Lawtie, of the Engineers, whose services in this campaign can never be over-rated, by breaching the forts of Ramghur, Jurjura, Tarra-ghur, and Chumba, dislodged, without having sufficient force to surround, the garrisons of these human eyries. They consequently retired to augment the numbers preparing to make a last stand on the ridge of Maloun.†

Thus, by a series of skilful movements, and without any very direct encounter with the enemy, he compelled them to fall back and abandon their posts, till only one place of strength remained to them. Brave, but prudent, he had the fire without the rashness of Gillespie, and yet both were men of the Scottish race. Even Maloun was held by a very precarious tenure, and by the 1st of April, 1815, it

was completely invested; and pending the account of its reduction, we must attend to the operations of two other columns of our army in Nepaul.

The division under Major-General Sullivan Wood (formerly of the 8th Royal Irish Dragoons) was unable to take the field before the middle of December, 1814. Marching from Goruckpore, the capital of a district ceded to us by the Nabob of Oude, in 1801, he moved northwards in the direction of Palpah, a mountainous and unproductive principality, one of the many subject to Nepaul, and situated about 100 miles westward of the capital of the latter, Khatmandoo. To reach it by the direct route, Wood would have to traverse a deep and difficult pass, which he understood to be strongly stockaded; but, learning that it might be out-flanked by taking another path, he marched on the 3rd of January, 1815, to attack the stockade at Jetpore, at the base of the Majkati Hills, about a mile westward of Botwul, or Bhotwal, as it would be necessary to force it to proceed.

He accordingly advanced to attack it in front, with twenty-one companies of infantry, while Major Comyn, with seven companies, moved towards its left flank. His information having been erroneous, he encountered a resistance so resolute that he despaired of success too early in the attempt.

Hence, relinquishing all offensive operations, he ordered a retreat, and resolved to restrict himself to merely preventing the Ghoorkas from violating our frontier; but even in this he failed, for the enemy found many opportunities of eluding him, of breaking through and committing serious ravages. He endeavoured to retaliate, but it was chiefly on the unoffending people who dwelt on either side of the boundary line between Nepaul and British India; and this petty strife continued till the climate began seriously to affect the health of his harassed troops, and they were ordered back to their old cantonments at Goruckpore.

Of all the four divisions of the army, now led by Ochterlony, Wood, Nicolls, and Major-General Marley, the latter was deemed the strongest and the one from which most was expected, as its destination was to be Khatmandoo, the capital of the Ghoorkas. On the 23rd of November he began his march from Dinapore, and moved towards Bettiah. Clearing the way for him was an advanced guard under Bradsfaw, who, on the following day, surprised Parsuram Thapa, the native governor of the district, who, with 400 Ghoorka warriors, was encamped on the bank of the Bhagmate in Tirhoot. Thapa was among the

* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1830, Calcutta.

† *Ibid*

slain; his whole force was put to flight; all other frontier posts fell without opposition; and the whole of the low and swampy tract known as the Tirai, which lies on the southern slopes of the Himalaya range, was formally annexed to the British empire.

Had Major-General Marley properly followed up this stroke of success in that wonderful region, where in many places the almost impenetrable forests teem with animal life, it would have led to others of more importance; but having been ordered to leave his guns in the rear, he had now to wait for them; and the first alarm caused by Thapa's death and discomfiture passed away, and the Ghoorkas were encouraged to attempt an enterprise, which at the very beginning impeded all the future operations of Brigadier Marley.

To secure the new annexation before any attempt could be made to reconquer it, Major Bradshaw posted three small detachments of troops, about twenty miles apart from each other; the central one at Baragheri, the right at Samanpore, and the left at Parsa; while Marley, encamping at Lautun, two miles in rear of the centre, took no care of supporting the flanking outposts. Hence, on the New Year's Day, 1815, Samanpore was suddenly attacked, and the troops cut to pieces. Parsa was next menaced, and the detachment fell back on head-quarters, under cover of a supporting party.

In this affair no officer distinguished himself more than Lieutenant P. Grant Mathison, of the artillery, whom the major-general thanked in orders, for "his gallant conduct in defending his gun, until every man, European and native, fell around it, and all the ammunition was expended." On this occasion a gunner captured the Silver Spear of the Ghoorkas, a trophy that long remained with the Horse Artillery.*

A number of desertions which now occurred among the sepoys, so greatly alarmed this somewhat incompetent leader, that he began a retrograde movement upon Bettiah, to cover his depôt there; but, "his terrors preceded him, and nothing was talked of at Goruckpore and Tirhoot, but the approaching invasion of an overwhelming Ghoorka force; and nothing but the weakness of the enemy," says a writer, severely, "prevented the catastrophe which cowardice thus predicted."

Nearly the whole of the Tirai was re-conquered; from thence the Ghoorkas were enabled to carry the war into British territory; and General Marley was superseded by the Earl of Moira. Before a successor, General Wood, could arrive, he took

the unprecedented measure of suddenly disappearing from the camp of his army, without giving the troops, or the officer next in seniority, the least notification of a desertion so singular and imbecile. Such a leader was no loss; reinforcements came up, and the strength was estimated at 13,000 men.

Colonel Dick assumed the command for the time being, and while he held it, there occurred an encounter which threw the Ghoorkas into great alarm, and caused them considerable loss. A subaltern, named Pickersgill, with a small escort, was suddenly fallen upon by 400 Ghoorkas, who issued from the cover of a forest, and followed him with all speed towards the camp. On hearing the sound of musketry in front, Colonel Dick, suspecting the reason, sent forward one hundred irregular horse, and followed with all the inlying pickets. The Ghoorkas were thus surrounded, and fought only to escape. A hundred, including their leader, were shot down; many were drowned in a mountain stream, and the remainder were taken or put to flight.

The result of this petty affair caused such alarm among the Ghoorkas that the whole line of their posts fell back, and our troops again took possession, but peacefully, of the Tirai.

General Wood, whose operations in the vicinity of the Majkati Hills were but a poor recommendation to a fresh command, reached the division in February, 1815; and, as the rainy season was a month distant, there was still time for a little fighting. Instead of that, Wood contented himself with marching and countermarching through the already abandoned Tirai till the unhealthy season came on, and the troops were compelled to retire to cantonments; and Khatmandoo, the reduction of which was the object for which the division originally left Dinapore, was left unmolested.

Fortunately for the credit of the British arms, there were other places where more activity was displayed. With a small force, Captain Latter, stationed on the bank of the Coosy, drove the Ghoorkas from all their posts, gained possession of Moorang, and entered into an alliance with the Rajah of Sikhim, whose territory lies among those ranges of the Himalayas that start abruptly from the vast plains of Bengal, and which have been described as "the snowed spurs of far higher unsnowed land behind;"* and on the final conquest of Nepaul this state was taken under our protection.

When Latter advanced, the Rajah of Kumaon—Bam Sak Chautra by name—had been compelled to yield it to the Ghoorkas, under whose yoke the

* *Delhi Gazette*, 1835.

* Hooker.

people pined; and now he was ready to embrace any opportunity for freedom. The people of the state of Gurwhal, on the north-east, were in a similar condition, and it was resolved to turn this state of matters to the best account. Colonel Gardner, at the head of 3,000 irregulars, began to ascend the hills on the 15th of February, 1815. He marched in the direction of the capital of Kumaon, Almorah. Under Captain Hearsay, another column of irregulars advanced to his support, and the Ghoorkas, driven back on every hand, were compelled to concentrate on the ridge where stands Almorah—an elevation, 5,400 feet above the sea, and backed by an immense snowy range of mountains, higher than the Andes, one of which, Rance, is 26,000 feet in altitude.

It is a clean and well-built town; the shops, all of stone, are below, and the houses, all of wood, are above; and by Bishop Heber, in this respect, it has been likened to Chester. While Gardner was pushing on, Captain Hearsay, after beginning with every prospect of success, and having captured Chumpawut, the original capital of Kumaon, and, like Almorah, subject to yearly earthquakes, he was suddenly attacked and made prisoner while investing a hill fort.

The great importance of these operations in Kumaon being now fully recognised, Colonel Jasper Nicolls, of H.M. 14th Regiment, was

dispatched thither, with 2,000 regular troops and some guns. On the 8th of April he assumed the command, and sent Captain Paton, with a detachment, against those who had defeated Captain Hearsay, and placed him in Almorah. Spirited was the encounter that took place; but after a protracted conflict, and after losing their commander, the Ghoorkas were put to flight, and all their stockades in front of Almorah were carried by storm.

Paton lost not a moment in getting his guns and mortars into action against the capital, with terrible effect, chiefly against the fort, which crowns the summit of a ridge, the gradual ascent of which is covered with gardens. Bam Sak, its commander, had rejected indignantly several secret attempts that were made to shake his fidelity; but the bombardment proved a heavy argument, for soon after the guns were opened a flag of truce was displayed, and deserters came pouring into our camp. The terms given were, that the Ghoorkas should be permitted to retire across the river Kalce, with their arms and baggage; and that the entire provinces of Kumaon and Gurwhal be ceded for ever to Great Britain—the most triumphant result the Ghoorka war had yielded us as yet.

Sir Gabriel Martindale was still before Jytak, in hopes to starve its garrison, under Runjoor Sing, into a capitulation; and Sir David Ochterlony was still actively in the field.

CHAPTER LXXXVIII.

THE HEIGHTS OF MALOUN CAPTURED.—THE SECOND CAMPAIGN IN NEPAUL, UNDER OCHTERLONY.—ITS VICTORIOUS CONCLUSION.

AFTER capturing all the outposts of the enemy, and confining them to the heights of Maloun, Ochterlony determined to burst through that line of defences.

The grand object to be attained first was a lodgment upon these heights, from which Maloun might be breached or approached. A Ghoorka officer betrayed a position called Ryla, of which Major Innes, with a battalion of grenadiers, instantly took possession. It stood between the posts named Senj and Surajghur; and the presence of Innes there prevented the troops in those places from taking a part in the subsequent conflict.

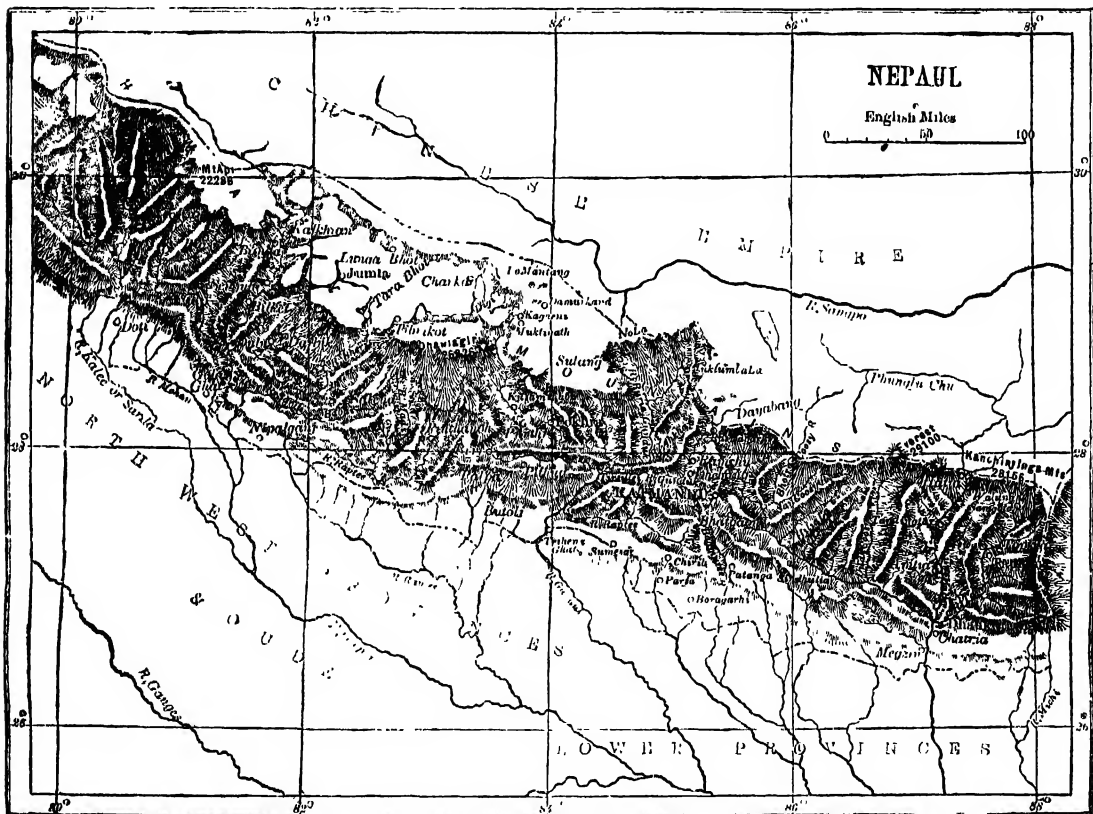
Before daybreak on the 14th of April, 1815, all

the disposable force of Ochterlony was formed in columns for attacking the heights of Maloun. At the head of the reserve still, Colonel Thompson marched from Butto to the nearest part of the opposite ridge. Major Lowry, with his own corps, skirted the mountains along the Gamera, and wheeling upward, joined Thompson above the village of Deothul, half a mile eastward of the fort of Maloun; while two other columns from Ratan-ghur menaced the enemy's cantonments, and had orders, while making a diversion in favour of the reserve, that their chief effort was to be the occupation of any outworks that circumstances might render easy of acquisition.

One of these parties, led by a Captain Showers, after crossing the hollow which separates the two forts, was about to pass a small redoubt to the south of the Ghoorka defences, when the men stationed there sallied furiously out, and brandished their swords, as if inviting the soldiers to meet them. Their leader advanced in front of them defiantly, and invited Captain Showers to single combat. He was not slow in accepting the challenge of the Ghoorka, whose sharp keen weapon, for all he knew, might be poisoned; and after a

Major Lowry to defend Deothul, which he strengthened with two field guns, and a company of pioneers to stockade it, advanced with a battalion of light infantry to seize a position within breaching distance of Maloun; and this desired spot was the last of three eminences that crowned the bare ridge of the mountain.

A corps of Hindurians, 800 strong, were now ordered to scour the jungle, and cover his flanks on the right and left. Thompson led the light infantry gallantly onward, under a heavy fire from



MAP OF NEPAUL.

few passes he slew him midway between the hostile lines.

Captain Showers had scarcely achieved this act of chivalry, when he was shot dead; and his sepoy, without waiting to be charged, turned and fled, only to be overtaken by the merciless Ghoorkas, who did not desist from slaughter till the guns of Ratanghur were opened on them.

The other detachment, under Captain Boyer, made good its ground so far as to be able to remain on the defensive till evening. When the din of firing echoing among the hills to the westward, first gave intimation of the advance of Showers and Boyer, Colonel Thompson, leaving

foes that were concealed amid the matted greenery and interwoven jungle of years; but on nearing the place he meant to occupy, he experienced a rough check. The Ghoorkas, who had hitherto lurked in concealment, now grasped their matchlocks with the left hand, and drawing their deadly swords with the right, rushed like a herd of infuriated tigers on the panic-stricken sepoy. Pouring out of the underwood in unknown numbers, they came yelling on in a form "that might be fancied to resemble a wedge or triangle, the vertex of which far preceded the base. When about to be charged, an isolated group was seen standing round each officer, whilst the tide instantly began to roll back where there

were none. But retrogression—nay, unequivocal flight—soon became universal among the men, some of whom abandoned their arms so precipitately that the Hindurians, still watching on the flanks, had time to dash in, and make a prize of the brown-barrelled muskets, then used by light infantry (only), before the pursuers came up.

firing that lasted till the action was seriously renewed next morning.

Till Ameer Sing saw Thompson's stockade rising on Deothul, he believed himself the victor of the day; and then he sent expresses to the posts at Surajghur and Senj, with orders to elude Captain Innes and join him after dark at every hazard; and to Bukhti Thapa, an officer famed for his



VIEW OF A MONASTERY IN THE HIMALAYAS.

The sepoys, already much exhausted, got but slowly over the rough ground, and were overtaken by the keen weapons of the fleet and ferocious enemy, ere, in headlong disorder, they could plunge into the hollow that lay between the western ridge and Deothul; but at this crisis, when the Ghoorkas, yelling in wild triumph, and thirsting for blood, were rushing in closer pursuit, a sudden storm of musketry swept the bare hill side, as Major Lowry poured the concentrated fire of two battalions into the tumultuous mass with the most dreadful effect. Falling, reeling, rolling, they rushed away to cover, and left the hill clear of all but the prostrate, and then, from their hiding-places, continued a desultory

valour, he promised to assign the honour of attacking the British troops. Bukhti made his own dispositions, and vowed to return victorious or die on the field. He took a tender farewell of his family, and begged that, if he fell, General Ochterlony should be asked to permit his two favourite wives to burn themselves alive with his dead body.

Daybreak was to be the signal for the recommencement of the battle, which, as the reckless Ghoorka soldier told his comrades truly, must decide the fate of Nepal.

Ameer Sing and his younger son, Ram Das, were at the scene of operations about midnight, while Bukhti was pushing forward his trained troops till they formed a kind of semi circle in front, and

* "Life of Ochterlony"

partly on the flanks of Deothul. Access to it would have been comparatively easy from the side towards the Gameraora; but the bank of that Himalayan stream was defended by 1,000 Hindurians, in a redoubt thrown up for the purpose. The Ghoorkas seemed so crowded together, that when the firing began the whole mountain slope, until hidden by smoke, seemed one sheet of sputtering flame, with all its points spouting towards the stockade. Our guns commanded the only points by which swordsmen in any strength could attempt an assault. A strong body of these, with trumpets pealing above their hideous war cries, came rushing at one point, when a six-pounder, pouring grape in quick successive rounds, together with a storm of musketry, swept them down in such numbers, that the survivors fled.

A second and a third band came rushing on, only to perish or recoil in the same manner. Bukhti, full of valour, and undismayed by the dreadful slaughter, now proposed to attack Deothul on the opposite side, where there were no cannon; but, as he led the way, he fell dead by a musket-ball. The event cooled the ardour of the gallant Ghoorkas, and Colonel Thompson, burning to avenge the events of the past hours, ordered a sortie at the point of the bayonet. When he led the troops out at a rush, the enemy took to flight pursued by the raging Hindurians, who burst out of their redoubt to wreak vengeance on the violators of their women and the devastators of their country.

But ere the defeat was quite achieved, the walls of the stockade, having been hastily formed of stakes, earth, and stones, came down on each side of the embrasures, in consequence of the concussion produced by the cannon, burying killed and wounded in the débris; and then through the open breaches thus made, the Nepaulesc matchlocks opened such a fire upon the European gunners, that only one escaped unhurt.

When the strife was over, and the foe had fallen back, Sir David Ochterlony ordered the body of Bukhti Thapa to be wrapped in a Cashmere shawl as a token of respect, and to be sent to Ameer Sing, with a message, granting him a truce for the removal of the dead, and their disposal after the manner of their race and religion; and for two days after, the heights of Maloun were all ablaze with vast funeral pyres. Among these the *suttee*, or self-immolation of Bukhti's widows amid the flames that consumed his remains, could be distinctly seen by the British troops.

The Kadji Ameer Sing was now so completely humbled, that he offered little opposition to the

subsequent operations for crushing him. On the 8th of May a heavy gun battery opened on Maloun, and preparations for the assault were in progress, when the most of the garrison, finding that they could neither induce Ameer Sing to surrender or attempt to bear a vigorous siege, left the fortress without arms, and capitulated as prisoners of war to the nearest British post. With the few that still adhered to him, Ameer Sing still resisted, but feebly, until the destructive effects of the battery on the 10th convinced him that further opposition to fate was useless, and he sent forth his son to make terms with Ochterlony.

At a convention it was stipulated that the fallen conqueror should surrender all the mountain territory which he had added to his country between the Gogra and the Sutlej, extending in its greatest breadth from the plains of Plassia to the frontier of Tartary. He ceded all on the single condition that he, with his family and the garrisons of Maloun and Jytak, should have safe escort back to Nepaul. His soldiers, however, preferred to enter the British service, and were formed into battalions for duty in the highland districts.

Of the provinces thus relinquished by the Kadji, Sirmoor, under the immediate government of his son Runjoor, had successfully resisted the British arms; and in Kumaon some places still held out, without having formally submitted, though Sir Jasper Nicolls had defeated the army of Hasti Dal, and all who opposed him in the field.

The government of Nepaul saw the necessity of suing for peace, and for this purpose Bam Sak Chautra communicated with our commissioner at Kumaon; and a Brahmin, Gaj Raj Misr, the *gooroo*, or spiritual adviser of the late Rajah Rana Bahadoor, was summoned from his retirement at Benares, and dispatched as envoy to Lieutenant-Colonel Paris Bradshaw, whom the Governor-General had empowered to conclude a peace on terms, taken thus verbatim from the extract of a despatch, dated Calcutta, 10th December, 1815:—

“The Ghoorkas cede to the British in perpetuity the whole of the country acquired during the late campaign, and likewise the whole of the lowlands, known by the name of *Terrae (sic)* situate to the westward of their range of frontier hills; a great portion of the latter territory to the Nabob Vizier (of Oude); and the British Government in India guarantee to pay the pensions of several whose stipends are on his Highness's treasury, in return for the two crores of rupees subscribed by him to the Government six per cent. loan of last year. This stroke of policy throws the burden of the expense of the late war on our ally.

"By the late treaty with Nepaul, not only the province of Kumaon, but the greater part of all the territory between the Rapti and Gunduch (*sic*) is ceded to Great Britain, as well as that part of the districts between the Gunduch and the Coosy, which has been occupied by the British forces. The fortress of Nagree is also put in our possession, and other important stipulations have been assented to by the Nepaulese Government." *

For his services in this campaign, Ochterlony was created a baronet, and the Court of Directors gave him a pension of £1,000 per annum for life.

The terms sounded very well when read on paper, but the affair was not yet ended, for the Nepaulese were adepts in the wiles of diplomacy. Every disputed point seemed to be arranged, and on the 2nd of December, 1815, the treaty was duly executed at Segoulee by our agents, the commissioners of Nepaul, who promised that the final ratification would arrive from Khatmandoo—the capital—in fifteen days; and the Earl of Moira, pleased that a war of which he was weary had ended, ratified the treaty on the 9th of December.

The Rajah of Nepaul was in no such haste, and instead of the signed treaty, wrote a letter to his commissioners, coolly stating that, under the influence of the Kadji Ameer Sing Thapa, the war party was again in the ascendant. Thus, the negotiation seemed at an end, and there was nothing left for Britain but to draw the sword again. Loth to do this, the Earl of Moira unwisely permitted his agent almost to solicit the ratification, by holding out a hope that, if it were signed, the terms of the treaty might not be too strictly enforced, and, perhaps, a present might be made to them of the Tirai, which had been the whole cause of the war.

His moderation was mistaken for timidity or conscious weakness, and the court of Khatmandoo, which so recently had been suing for peace on any terms, now began to despise it, and to spin out the time till the proper season for stern operations had passed away; and this conviction having become impressed on the mind of the Earl of Moira, he ordered the field to be taken at once.

Sir David Ochterlony hastened from Dinapore, armed with full powers to assume the entire political and military authority in Nepaul in the first days of February, 1816, and took the field with an army 17,000 strong, which he formed in four brigades. The artillery was strong and under Major George Mason; Captain Watson was assistant adjutant-general, and Lieutenant Joshua Pickersgill was assistant quartermaster-general and head of the

Intelligence Department. The forces consisted of 6,000 native infantry, and three regiments of the line. The brigadiers were Lieutenant-Colonels W. Kelly, Charles Nicoll, and Francis W. Miller, who had respectively each his own corps—H.M. 24th, 66th, and 87th Royal Irish Fusiliers—and Brigadier Dick, who commanded three battalions of sepoys.

Sir David soon settled his preliminary movements. Kelly, with the 1st Brigade, moved on Bugwanpore; Nicoll, with the 2nd, on Ramnuggur; while the 3rd and 4th Brigades, including the Irish Fusiliers, remained with the general, who, on the 10th of February marched from a place called Semulabassie (but in no two accounts of this campaign are the local names spelt alike). He penetrated into the great forest which the Nepaulese flattered themselves was an impassable boundary, and which the *Devas* had raised to protect their country from invasion by the lowlanders. It is a dreary, gloomy, and miasmatic wilderness, eleven miles in breadth; uninhabited by any living thing above an insect in the scale of existence; and the troops uttered cheers of joy when, on emerging from the monotony of the mighty dingles, and the noxious shadow of the tall, damp trees, they marched into the sunshine and breathed fresh air, near the bed of the Bichacore river. A brick mansion and a *serai* for travellers was now immediately stockaded, and made one of the depôts between the head-quarters and Betrah in the Tirai, where supplies for the whole force were collected.

Thus far no difficulties had occurred, and the work of Colonel Kirkpatrick gave a correct account of the frequented roads into Nepaul, over the Chiriaghati Pass, through the first range of hills; but the way was too strongly fortified and defended "to be carried," says a writer, "without a sacrifice of human life which Ochterlony would have shuddered at, and reckoned evidence of deficiency in military science. He accordingly sent forth his quartermaster-general to discover a way where none was known to exist, by which the Ghoorka posts might be turned, and an undefended passage found to the interior."

Lieutenant Pickersgill, an intelligent officer (and author of a now forgotten novel, entitled "The Three Brothers"), explored a succession of water-courses and the dry beds of ancient torrents; and, by the aid of some smugglers, he found a route across the mountains unknown to any servant of the state of Nepaul. It was a deep ravine, with rugged and precipitous sides, covered with overhanging trees that nearly excluded the light.

On the night of the 14th of February, 1816, Sir

* London Gazette, 11th May, 1816.

David Ochterlony, leaving the 4th Brigade at the mouth of the ravine, began to ascend with the 3rd, himself leading at the head of the Royal Irish Fusiliers, by a path so narrow as seldom to afford room for more than a single file. In some places the trees were interlaced over the long straggling column; in others, the clear moonlight gleamed coldly on the vast cliffs that towered above the zig-zag way. After proceeding for some distance, the ground became more open, till a water-course was entered, and found to lead to the base of an acclivity 300 feet in height.

This, at first, seemed insurmountable, especially as the brigade was accompanied by elephants, carrying two six-pounders and some small howitzers.

"The road," says an officer of the 50th Native Infantry, "lay through beds of rivulets and nullahs, and at times was so narrow and precipitous, that a single company would have been sufficient to have annihilated a whole brigade. Fortunately, no enemy appeared, and the only difficulties they had to contend with were those of nature; and these were so many and so great, that Sir David at one time, on reaching an almost perpendicular ledge of rock, which seemed to bar all further progress, is said to have angrily charged Lieutenant Pickersgill with having deceived him, and risked the destruction of his army. Sir David was hoisted up this rock by the sashes of the European and native officers, and soon became convinced of the injustice he had done Lieutenant Pickersgill, an officer to whom much praise is due for his intelligence and activity. The accurate information he procured regarding this unfrequented pass added greatly to the success of the expedition. The anxiety of mind suffered by the general could only be equalled by the patient exertions of his gallant troops. It having been found impossible to bring on the elephants, provisions were extremely scarce, and the privations, as well as fatigue, that all underwent, are described as having been excessive. The entire novelty of the service to the native troops entitles them to great praise. Accustomed only to the diminutive hills of their own country, it seemed to them (I have heard old sepoys say), in approaching these tremendous precipices, as if they had reached the entrance to *Patal*—the infernal regions of the Hindoo. But they went cheerfully and gaily on, with full confidence in their leader, and by the evening of the 15th the brigade reached the extremity of the pass; when pushing on a few miles, they bivouacked for the night near Bulwaks, Sir David sharing with his men in the general bivouac, neither tents nor baggage having arrived. The sepoys had been provided at the commencement of the last campaign with

bill-hooks and hatchets (twenty per company), which they now found useful in cutting down branches of trees and erecting temporary shelter for themselves and officers. Tents and supplies were at length brought up; the pass by which the brigade advanced having, with great difficulty, been made practicable for elephants." *

Meanwhile, the Ghoorkas, defending the great pass of Chiriaghati at their stockades, on which the guns of Dick had opened, heard with astonishment and consternation that the British head-quarter column, having turned their flank by a route never heard of before, was about to fall on their defenceless rear and cut off their retreat to Mukwanpore; they abandoned all their formidable positions in the greatest dismay.

The direct road being thus open, Dick's brigade pushed on and joined the general, who had arrived on the 25th at Hetaunda, otherwise called Hethaura, eighteen miles distant from Khatmandoo, and situated close to the Rapti, one of the most beautiful rivers in India. Its northern bank, a mountainous descent, broken by the deep track of many foaming rivulets, is clothed from base to summit with luxuriant coppice, amid the greenery of which the red blossoms of the cotton-tree give variety to the masses of the verdure.

Its chief edifice there—a great store-house, elaborately ornamented with disgusting figures carved in wood—became at once one of our depôts. On the 27th, Ochterlony marched for Mukwanpore with the two brigades, and he who had reduced the fortified peaks of Ramghur and Maloun, could see but little to appal him now. In front of our camp rose a low range of hills, having the fort of Mukwanpore and a large stockade to the east, with a village on its western extremity. This village, which was named Seekur Khutree, seemed pretty strongly occupied at first, but was abandoned by its commander and proprietor, Kesuree Sing, and then taken possession of by the companies of the 50th Native Infantry, and forty men of the 87th Regiment; while Lieutenant Pickersgill, with an escort from both these corps, under Lieutenant Thomas Lee of the latter, proceeded to ascend the heights, for the purpose of reconnoitring the enemy's position.

"The Nepaulesc general at Mukwanpore," says the writer before quoted, "could easily distinguish our movements through a telescope; and being at length aware of the importance of the village that had been so hastily abandoned the night before, he determined on driving back the reconnoitring party, and acquiring possession of it. The party sent to execute this order was led by Shumsher

* "Records of the 50th Reg. Native Infantry," 1836.

Rana, the same sirdir who commanded the attack on Parsa in the preceding year. He came down with such overwhelming numbers and impetuosity, that Lieutenants Pickersgill and Lee, being unable to resist the attack, were compelled, with their small detachment, to make a precipitate retreat; and, unfortunately, having gone considerably to the eastward of the village, they were obliged to retire to head-quarters, instead of joining Lieutenant Terral's party, upon which the enemy now advanced in great force."*

The attack was made with the greatest spirit. Lieutenant Terral and the soubahdar of his party were killed; but the village was gallantly defended by Lieutenant Kerr and Ensign Impey (son of Sir F. Impey), till the arrival of the light company of the 87th Fusiliers and the remainder of the 50th Native Infantry. Obstinate did the Ghoorkas continue the attack; but fresh troops were poured down from Mukwanpore, while Sir David Ochterlony successively detached to the defenders the second battalion of the 12th and the 22nd Native Infantry, two more companies of the Irish Fusiliers, and two six-pounders on elephants, under the commanding officer of the brigade, Colonel W. F. Miller.

Despite these reinforcements, the enemy kept up a galling fire from the ridges of the hills, particularly on the 12th Regiment; but, as evening was approaching, it was determined that they should be dislodged from these positions ere night fell; and about five o'clock the second battalion of the 8th Native Infantry having arrived, it was directed by Colonel Miller to clear the heights on the road leading to Mukwanpore. This order was promptly obeyed by Major Nation, its commander. After a gallant charge, the enemy were driven off in utter confusion, and abandoning a gun and some stores, fled to Mukwanpore, amid a storm of rain and thunder which came on about sunset. This decided the fate of Seekur Khutree, the proprietor of which, Kesuree Sing, was killed, with several sirdirs of rank, whose bodies were found in the village. In this affair the Ghoorka loss was 800 killed and wounded; ours was 222 of all ranks.

Among the killed was Lieutenant Terral, of the 50th, whose soldiers made desperate attempts to rescue him after he fell mortally wounded. In this action, the light company of the 50th particularly distinguished themselves with their double-barrelled rifles, under Lieutenant Adoniah Smith, an officer reputed then as the best shot in India.

On the day after this encounter Nicoll's brigade arrived. It had ascended the valley by a pass

northward of Ramnuggur, and then marched unopposed to the Rapti. The second brigade, under Colonel Kelly, was also advancing. By selecting a mountain pass, it had reached the fort of Harikarpore, which was not stockaded, and took up a commanding position, from which the Ghoorkas endeavoured in vain to dislodge Kelly. On this the garrison lost heart, and quitted the fort without a struggle.

The views of the Nepaulese changed now, and once more the peace party predominated; and just as Sir David Ochterlony was preparing to lay siege to Mukwanpore, its commandant, who was brother of the Regent of Nepaul, sent a messenger to intimate that he had received the ratified treaty, and now requested permission to send it to him by an envoy, to arrange a peace.

"Peace!" exclaimed Ochterlony, sternly; "has your master the effrontery to offer me peace, when he has nothing to give but what I choose to leave him?" After some more had passed, Sir David said, "Your master deserves to have Khatmandoo burned to the ground for his insolence; but fall down and ask mercy in his name, as the Ghoorka ambassador asks favours of the Emperor of China."

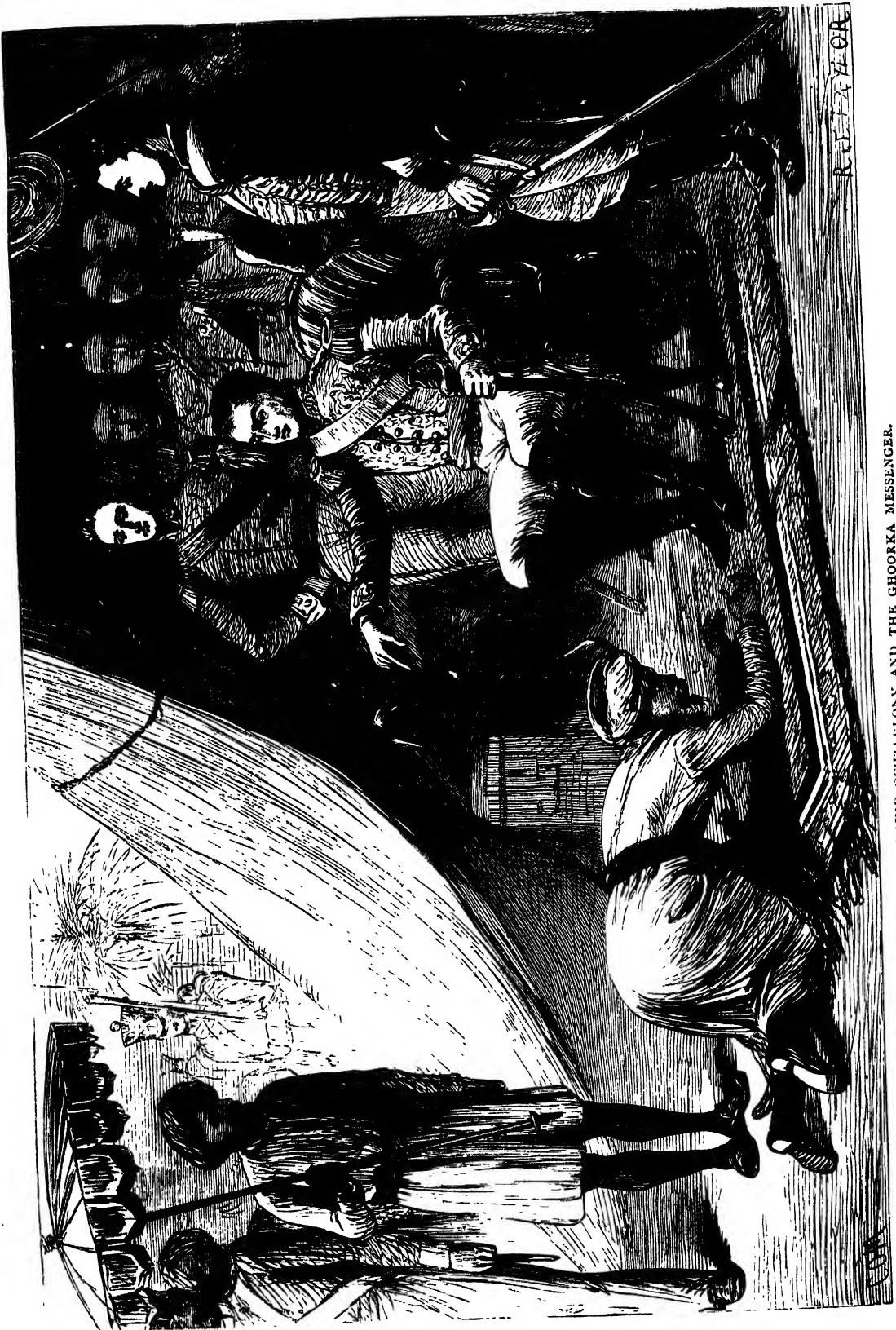
Then the representative of his Nepaulese Majesty knelt in abject prostration, repeating his sovereign's professions of penitence. It would seem that this scene had been arranged by Ochterlony to humble his visitor in true Oriental style.*

The final agent arrived on the 3rd of March, and as the document was duly signed, hostilities, of course, ceased; but not, however, till consent had been given to an additional article, which stipulated the ceded territory should include the valley of the Rapti, and all that had been conquered during the campaign. When the cession of the Tirai had been first demanded by us, the objection that it would leave many of the jaghirdars without the means of support had been met by the Earl of Moira proposing to grant them pensions—an offer which was accepted with much reluctance, as it was not unnaturally supposed that the chiefs thus pensioned would be more likely to favour the interests of the Company than those of the Rajah of Nepaul.

Hence much satisfaction was experienced when the Hon. Mr. Gardner, our new Resident at Khatmandoo, was authorised by the earl to state that the pensions should be commuted for a grant of land. The arrangement was at once entered into, and the Nepaulese, who had previously been gratuitously reinstated in the Tirai, could henceforth boast that, after all the disasters of the past strife,

* "Records of the 50th Reg. Native Infantry."

* "Life of Sir D. Ochterlony."



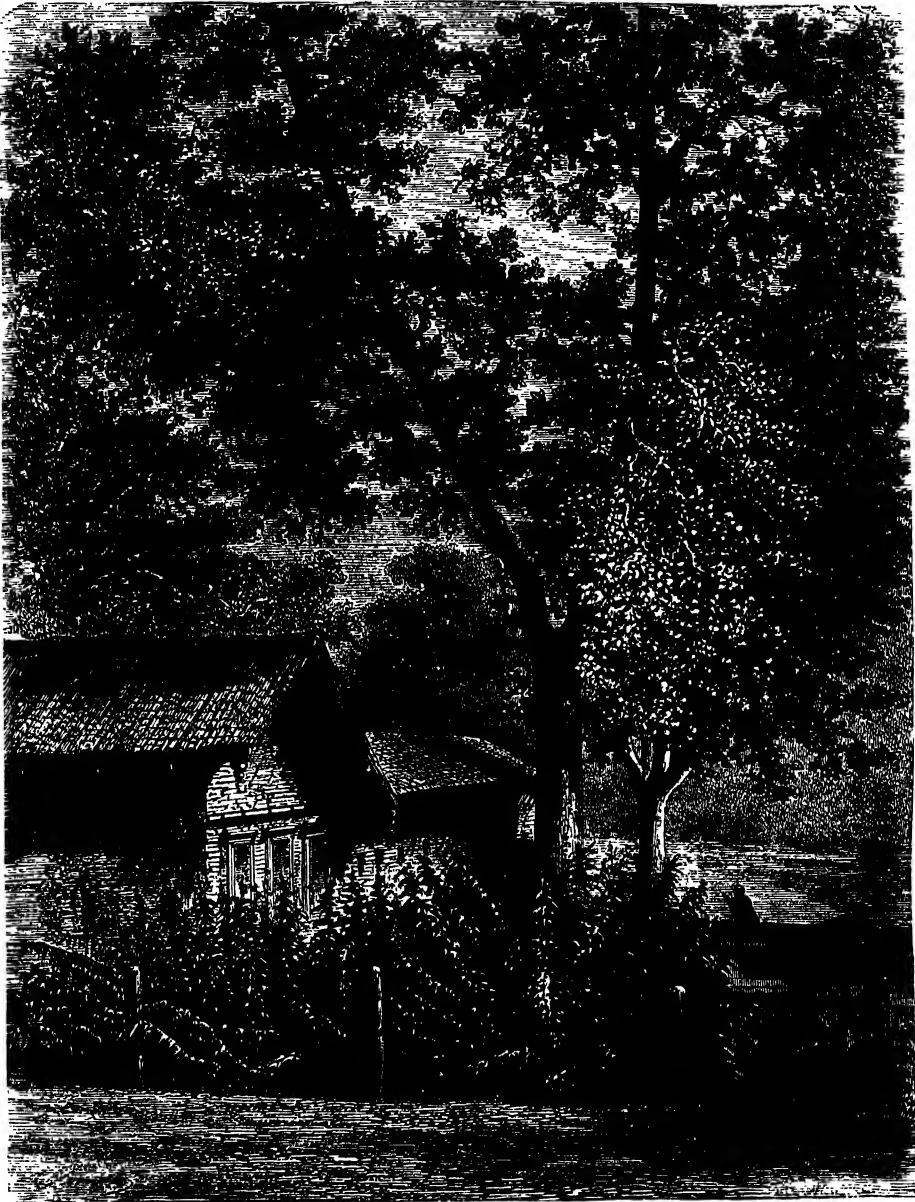
SIR DAVID OCHTERLONY AND THE GHOORKA MESSENGER.

they remained at the end of it in possession of a portion of those very lands which it was the avowed object of that strife to wrest from them.

By the seventh article of the treaty, the Rajah

maternal surname of "Hastings," in addition to, and after, that of Rawdon.

For his services in Nepaul, Sir David Ochterlony obtained the thanks of Parliament, and the first



VIEW OF THE "HOUSE OF FAKIRS," BARODA.

of Nepaul bound himself "never to take or retain in his service any British subject, nor the subject of any European or American state, without the consent of the British Government." *

The Governor-General, on the 7th December, 1816, was made Viscount Loudon, in Scotland, and Marquis of Hastings, assuming at the same time his

Cross of the Bath ever bestowed upon a Company's officer. In addition to the old armorial bearings borne by the Ochterlonys since the time of Robert III. of Scotland, the Prince Regent granted him an honourable augmentation, "containing two banners, inscribed 'Nepaul' and 'Delhi,' with the motto '*Prudentia et animo*,' suggested by Canning." *

* *Gov. Gaz. Ex.*, March 15th, 1816.

* "Life of Ochterlony."

Nor did the troops go unrewarded, for they were granted a medal, on which was represented a stockaded fort among the mountains of Nepaul, with a Persian inscription, to the effect that it was given by "the Governor-General Bahadoor," for valour shown "during the victorious warfare among the hills of Nepaul, in the years of the Hegira, 1229 and 1230."*

CHAPTER LXXXIX.

INTRIGUES OF THE GHOORKAS.—CUTCH SUBDUED.—OPPOSITION OF THE HINDOOS TO TAXATION.—THE SIEGE OF HATRASS, AND FLIGHT OF DYARAM.

THE result of Ochterlony's victories was the cession of great territories to the Company. The magnificent provinces of Ghurwal and Kumaon, the former comprehending 9,000 square miles, the most fertile portion of which is Dehra Doon, and having within it the principal scenes of Hindoo mythology; and the latter most important as commanding some of the best passes across the Himalaya range, and containing mines of copper, and probably other metals. Kumaon comprehends the whole tract of country between the Alaknanda head-stream of the Ganges on the west, and the Kallee on the east, from the Tirai or swampy plains, to the highest pinnacles of the Himalayas, attaining there an altitude of 26,000 feet above the level of the sea.

At the same time when these provinces were added to the growing empire, several mountain rajahs—though left nominally independent—were placed under certain restrictions, which rendered all their military resources available for British purposes. The treaty with the Rajah of Sikhim was another excellent measure, as it interposed a barrier between Nepaul and the Bhotanese, thus rendering it next to impossible for these two states to go to war, as they ceased to be contiguous, and could not meet each other in battle without violating territory which belonged to the Company or its ally; and it is supposed that, but for this, the Ghoorkas would have compensated themselves for the loss of Ghurwal and Kumaon by subjugating the Bhotanese.

The war had been confined to the mountains of Nepaul; but the Ghoorkas had never abandoned the hope, while it lasted, of being joined by some powerful auxiliary. A correspondence between them and Scindia had been intercepted. The wild and lawless Pindarees were also applied to, and they sought to tempt the alliance of Runjeet Sing, by offering him, as a gift, the fort of Maloun, with

a large sum in treasure; and during the first petty reverses of our arms, owing to the incompetence of our leaders, the Ghoorkas were not without hopes of exciting a general rising of all Hindostan against Britain.

Their diplomatic ambition extended far beyond India, as they sent vakeels to the Emperor of China, and the Golden Foot at Ava, seeking to enlist them in the quarrel. They had, in a past time, been compelled to acknowledge themselves the vassals of the emperor; and on this ground, but still more on the false allegation that the British made war upon them because they had been refused a passage into the Chinese empire, did they seek assistance, either by money or arms.

The Chinese were, perhaps, better informed that we had no such intentions; but their suspicions were so far excited that they sent an army to the frontier, where it arrived to find that the fighting was over in Nepaul, and that the Ghoorkas had stated falsehoods. Had China actually taken up the Ghoorka quarrel, we might have had a longer war to record; for at this very time the Company was involved in a dispute with that vast country, or rather with the Viceroy at Canton and the Committee of Supercargoes, concerning an alleged violation of the neutral rights of the Chinese by *H.M.S. Doris*, and several other matters, which ultimately led to Lord Amherst's mission to China in the following year. But the Celestial army, after lying for some time on its own side of the Himalayas, marched back to Pekin.†

During our war with the Ghoorkas, the people of Cutch—an extensive district, bounded on the north by the sandy desert of Ajmere, on the west by Goojerat, on the east by the province of Scinde, and on the south by the sea—had committed

* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1837.

† H. T. Prinsep's "Narrative of British India."

depredations in the territories of our allies, the Peishwa and the Guicowar of Baroda. It was possessed by various independent chiefs, whose boast it was that they had never been conquered; for which, perhaps, they were more indebted to the sterility and strength of their woody country than native prowess, as the inhabitants were originally Hindoos; and those upon the sea-coast had long been addicted to piracy, and when they took a ship, generally massacred all on board.

Cutch, at this juncture, was nominally under a ruler who bore the title of Rao Raidhan; but had actually become the prey of two bold adventurers, the one named Hans Raj, a Hindoo merchant, the other, Futteh Mohammed, commander of a body of Arab mercenaries. In their contest for supremacy, they each sought the aid of the British Government, which interposed only so far as seemed requisite to protect the territories of the Guicowar from their raids and robberies.

The death of Hans Raj left his competitor in undisputed ascendancy; but in 1813 the confusion in Cutch waxed greater. In that year, the Rao Raidhan and Futteh Mohammed both died, thus leaving behind them the usual curse of an Indian province—a disputed succession. The Rao had become Mohammedan, and, by a wife of that creed, left a son named Bharmalji, whose legitimacy the Jhaneja Rajpoots—of whom the deceased Rao was head—doubting, gave their allegiance to Lakpati, his nephew. The civil war which now ensued between the Hindoo and Moslem populations became of such a savage character that all order and government disappeared.

The chiefs of Cutch, being all in arms, were by no means disposed to limit their operations to the narrow space of their peninsula; and crossing, on foot, the extensive salt marsh known as the Runn of Cutch, and then the gulf in boats, they carried fire and sword into the territories of the Guicowar, burning the villages, murdering his people, and carrying off their cattle. As that prince was our ally, and under British protection, after remonstrances had failed, it became necessary to march a body of troops against Bhooj, the capital, which occupies rising ground about twenty-five miles distant from the seaport of Muddi, and where both the rivals for the throne resided. They had patched up their quarrel by a species of compromise, which left the sovereignty with Bharmalji; but the armed anarchy had become worse than ever, for he, so far from attempting to suppress the marauders, made common cause with them against every one, and even fomented disturbances in Goojerat, on the opposite

side of the Gulf of Cutch. He ordered the British Resident at Bhooj to withdraw; and having lured some of our people in Kattiwar into rebellion, was about to march a large body of Arabs to their assistance, when tidings came to him that the rising had been crushed. But this insolence and state of matters could no longer be tolerated.

Accordingly, Colonel East, with a body of troops, took the field in Cutch, and crossing the Runn in December, 1815, marched towards the fortress of Anjar, which was held by a son of the deceased Futteh Mohammed, who made friendly propositions to the colonel, while secretly ordering every well and tank along his route to be poisoned. To punish this act of genuine Oriental treachery, East got his guns into position against Anjar, and ~~after~~ breaching it, compelled the traitor to save his head by surrendering the fort, and ceding with it the port of Juner, on the Bay of Cutch, to Great Britain.

Deterred by this, the first event of the campaign which he had brought upon himself, the Rao agreed to give compensation for the damages done to our allies, and so far to yield to Britain, as to acknowledge himself a tributary prince, by the annual payment of a tribute of £7,000.

On the other hand, the British were solemnly bound not to outrage the religious feelings of his robber-subjects by killing bullocks, or eating the flesh of the sacred cow. The inevitable course of events, or the natural course of expansion, was gradually, yet quickly, pushing the Company's frontier towards the mouths of the mighty Indus. "In the year 1800, when Surat was assumed, it was stated and believed that the Tapti river would be our *ne plus ultra* in this direction; but now, in 1816, we got beyond the Gulf of Cutch, and close upon the Runn, by possessing ourselves of Anjar, which place was not more than two geographical degrees from the Koree, or most southern mouth of the Indus."

After making all quiet in Cutch, Colonel East returned to Kattiwar, in Goojerat, and there took most effectual means for repressing the odious piracy for which the Gulf of Cutch had been so long infamous, by dispossessing the whole of the chiefs along its southern coast, and reducing their harbours and forts to British rule. Among the places he captured on this service was Dwaraka, a town at the north-west extremity of the Kattiwar peninsula, situated on a flat shore, and possessing a famous temple, fabled as the abode of Krishna, at whose shrine some 15,000 pilgrims pay their devotions yearly. This place had long been the greatest nest of pirates in the gulf.

Among the minor events of this year was a dreadful riot at Berhampore, between the 87th Royal Irish Fusiliers and a great part of the Hon. Company's European Regiment. Much jealousy and ill-will had, by some means, been excited between the corps, and it had been arranged by the military authorities to separate them; but ere this could be done, a great force of the Royal Irish, armed with drawn bayonets, attacked their European comrades, and a deadly conflict ensued; and before the officers could separate them, sword in hand, many were dangerously wounded.

During the war with Nepal there were some other matters which gave much trouble to the Government of the Marquis of Hastings; these were chiefly the opposition of the Hindoo population to a new species of taxation, and a revolt at Bareilly, which grew out of it.

The inhabitants of India dread nothing so much as innovation, and generally, wherever the Europeans went, they had plenty of it; but they resented nothing so much as taxation, especially when it came in a novel form; for the invariable extortions they had undergone from their native rulers made them sensitive and suspicious, as they knew, by old experience, how often a small assessment, imposed for some temporary purpose, had been converted into a permanent and grinding burden.

The land had usually been the chief source of revenue, and a share in the produce thereof, when demanded by the government, had rarely been opposed, as it was deemed a kind of tribute exacted by the law of nature and of nations; but with a new imposition the case was altogether different; and thus, when the Governor-General, in 1813, endeavoured to recruit the Company's exchequer by a house-tax, so resolute was the opposition, that nothing short of total repeal would allay the agitation. "At Benares, in particular, the inhabitants desisted from their ordinary employments, shut their shops, and encamping in the open fields at a short distance from the city, sent a petition to the magistrate, in which they declared that they would never return to their homes till the tax was removed. This passive resistance was more effectual than any outbreak could have been in convincing the government of the necessity of yielding, and the idea of increasing the revenue by a house-tax was abandoned."

Though defeated, the Marquis of Hastings shrunk from admitting it, and endeavoured to establish in the following year a tax upon the principle of the same house assessment, by confining it to police purposes, and giving it a kind of voluntary form by permitting the people of the

different districts to assess themselves, by means of committees of their own selection.

The attempt was first made with Patna, Moorshedabad, and Dacca; and so soon as the precedent seemed to have taken root, its sphere of operation was extended to the Lower Provinces, embracing, in addition to these, Benares and Bareilly. The former, though expressing great dissatisfaction, consented to pay its quota; but in the latter city, where the people were Mohammedans, and Rohilla Afghans, with strong leanings to their original predatory habits, the opposition was not so easily overcome.

Situated nearly in the centre of the Rohilla country, and containing among its inhabitants—who are, and were, chiefly, manufacturers of carpets, brocade, gold and silver work, arrows, saddlery, and porcelain—not a few families who had sunk from rank and wealth into insignificance, and who bitterly deduced their reverse of fortune from Warren Hastings' treaty with the Nabob of Oude, they were but too ready to grasp at any grievance, real or fanciful, as a plea for anger and revenge. The mayor, or *kotwal*, was obnoxious to the Mussulmans because he was a Hindoo, and was detested for his overbearing conduct, which keenly offended the high-born native families; hence the materials for a local flame were all at hand.

It was no novelty in Bareilly, a small police assessment for the protection of property, but the increase to it was strongly resented, especially by the reduced families alluded to; all the more that they had still contrived, on shorn means, to keep about them a great number of armed and useless retainers, to dismiss whom was degradation, and to support whom, under the increased taxation, became well-nigh impossible; and an insurrection followed in this manner.

The attempt to enforce the tax entirely failed; the *kotwal* threatened the upper classes with chains, and the lower with the stocks; the ferment spread, and a police peon amidst it wounded a woman. The populace, though neither chivalrous nor humane by nature, resolved to make the most of this. They placed her on a *charpoy*, or bed, and bore her through the streets to the Mufti Mohammed Arwaz, whose sanctity was venerated throughout all Rohilcund, and he advised that she should be taken to the house of the magistrate. Mobs now assembled in the streets, and the appearance they assumed about the abode of the mufti was so alarming, that to disperse them became necessary; and when the magistrate appeared at the head of some horse and foot, it was supposed

that he meant to arrest the holy mufti. This the people were determined not to permit; blows and shots were exchanged, some lives were lost, and the mufti made his escape.

The sacred green banner of the Prophet was unfurled on the shrine in which the mufti had sought sanctuary as a signal to the faithful in Barcilly that their religion was in peril, and hordes of fanatics began to flock in from neighbouring towns. Of these, 6,000 men appeared in arms. On the other hand, the British officials were not idle; and with 450 bayonets and two guns were pushing on, by forced marches, from Mooradabad. A parley then ensued, and the luckless mufti would gladly have escaped from the storm he had conducted to raise; but all had gone too far now.

The people next declared that they would fight to the last if the tax were not abolished, the *kotwal* given up to their vengeance, and a general amnesty proclaimed. Finding that their terms would not be acceded to, the rioters at once proceeded to outrage by shooting down a harmless youth, son of a judge of the circuit court, as he was passing, unarmed, from one military post to another, and then making a sudden attack on the troops in Bareilly before reinforcements could arrive; but the issue soon came. After a brief resistance, the revolted gave way and fled, leaving behind 400 of their number shot or bayoneted. This defeat was deemed "most opportune, as there cannot be a doubt that a first success on the part of the populace would have been followed by a general rising. The mufti and other ringleaders, escaping beyond the Company's bounds, were not sought after, and the few trials which took place terminated without conviction, either from want of evidence, or because leniency seemed preferable to severity."

Another disturbance, resulting in an important siege, took place in the Doab, or "Land of the Two Waters." During the confusion which prevailed there, certain *talookdars* had contrived to possess themselves of large tracts of land, to which they had no legal claim, and exercised over the inhabitants a kind of jurisdiction, which converted themselves into petty monarchs. They proceeded still further by increasing their military retainers among those warlike adventurers of every caste and creed, then roving about India, and erected forts, which, in defiance of all authority, they held as their own; and thus the greatest anarchy and oppression ensued.

Against these new over-lords the people continued to appeal in vain, until it became evident that without the reduction of their strongholds the oppressors would never be put down.

As a forcible example was necessary, the Marquis of Hastings resolved to begin with one named Dyaram, the Talookdar of Hatrass and other properties, who was both the most powerful and most refractory. His fort and town of Hatrass stand in the province of Agra. The former is an oblong square, perched on an eminence of about 1,600 yards in extent, with twenty large bastions, and a dry ditch, eighty feet deep and 120 feet wide, with a good glacis. It contains a citadel, or inner fort, with a palace (which towers above the whole), and other great buildings. The town is about 800 yards distant, and is still surrounded by a mud rampart and dry ditch.

Here Dyaram reigned with a force consisting of 3,500 cavalry and 4,500 infantry, and plenty of guns. He made a profession of obedience to the British Government; but when called upon to disband these useless forces he intimated pretty plainly that nothing short of compulsion would make him do so. In consequence of this, Major-General Sir Dyson Marshall, K.C.B., was ordered to advance against him, with 10,000 men, formed in three columns. His own, composed of H.M. 24th, and three battalions of native infantry, with their battalion guns, marching from Mynpoorie, encamped two miles eastward of the fort. Donkin's Brigade, consisting of two regiments of native cavalry, 1,500 of Roberts' and Cunningham's Irregular Horse, three battalions of sepoys, with four six-pounders, marching from Muttra, took ground about the same distance; while the Meerut column, consisting of two troops of Horse Artillery, H.M. 8th Royal Irish Dragoons, the 11th Native Infantry, and two six-pounders, halted one mile south of Hatrass.

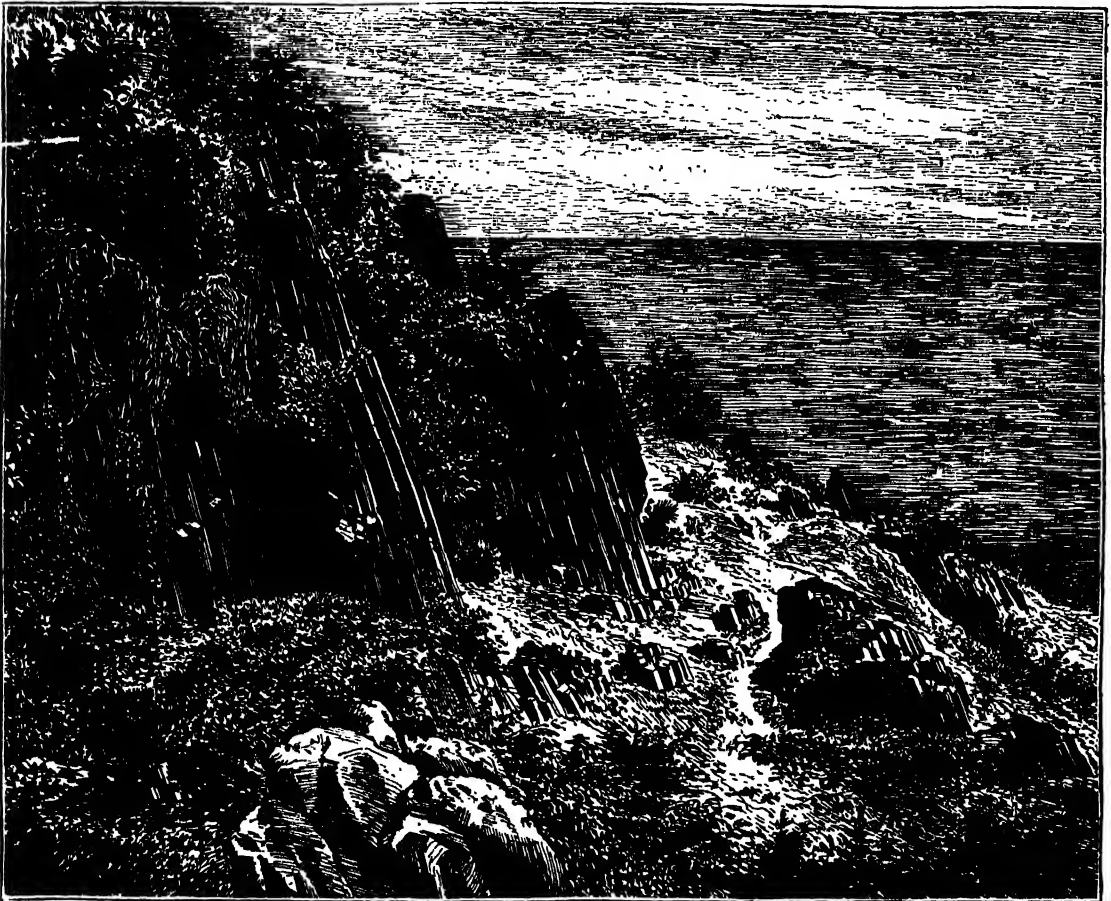
This was on the 12th of February, when the weather was foggy and wet. Dyaram pretended to negotiate for some days, merely to gain time, till on the 16th cannon-shots were fired at the fort as a declaration of hostilities; and on the 20th, the train from Cawnpore, under Major-General Sir John Horsford, came into camp. It consisted of five companies of European artillery, four of Golandazees, H.M. 14th, and the 87th Royal Irish Fusiliers, and two battalions of the 15th Native Infantry. By the 23rd, after 3,870 rounds of shot and shell, with 178 rockets, had been thrown into the town, and its walls were breached, Dyaram found himself compelled to retreat into the fort, against which powerful batteries were erected, and the siege was pressed with numerous mortars and heavy breaching-guns. So destructive was their effect, that Dyaram, with all his rashness and valour, began to see the folly of further resistance

—a conviction hastened by a tremendous explosion, caused by a shell blowing up his powder magazine.

On the night of the 2nd of March, with his two sons and fifty horsemen, all cased in chain armour, with back and breast-plates and long gauntlets of steel, he issued from the fort, cut his way through the squadrons of the Royal Irish, who pursued him for some distance, and whose swords proved use-

the explosion; 200 more were killed during the day and night; 700 were made prisoners, and the rest effected their escape.*

Near each other, in the burial-ground at Cawnpore, there are (or were) to be seen the tombstones of Sir Dyson Marshall and of Sir John Horsford, a gallant old soldier, who had raised himself from a humble rank in the Bengal Artillery, and died a month after these events, as the inscription bore,



VIEW OF THE NORTH SIDE OF THE ISLAND OF SALSETTE, BOMBAY.

less on the panoply of his followers, who fled with him across the Jumna to Deeg, from whence they were compelled to seek refuge in the kingdom of Lahore. All the female part of his family had escaped in disguise at different periods. Prior to the bombardment of the fort and town, in which, altogether, 7,579 shot and shell were expended, an offer was made to allow them to pass unmolested, provided they carried no treasure or jewels; but to this he made no reply.

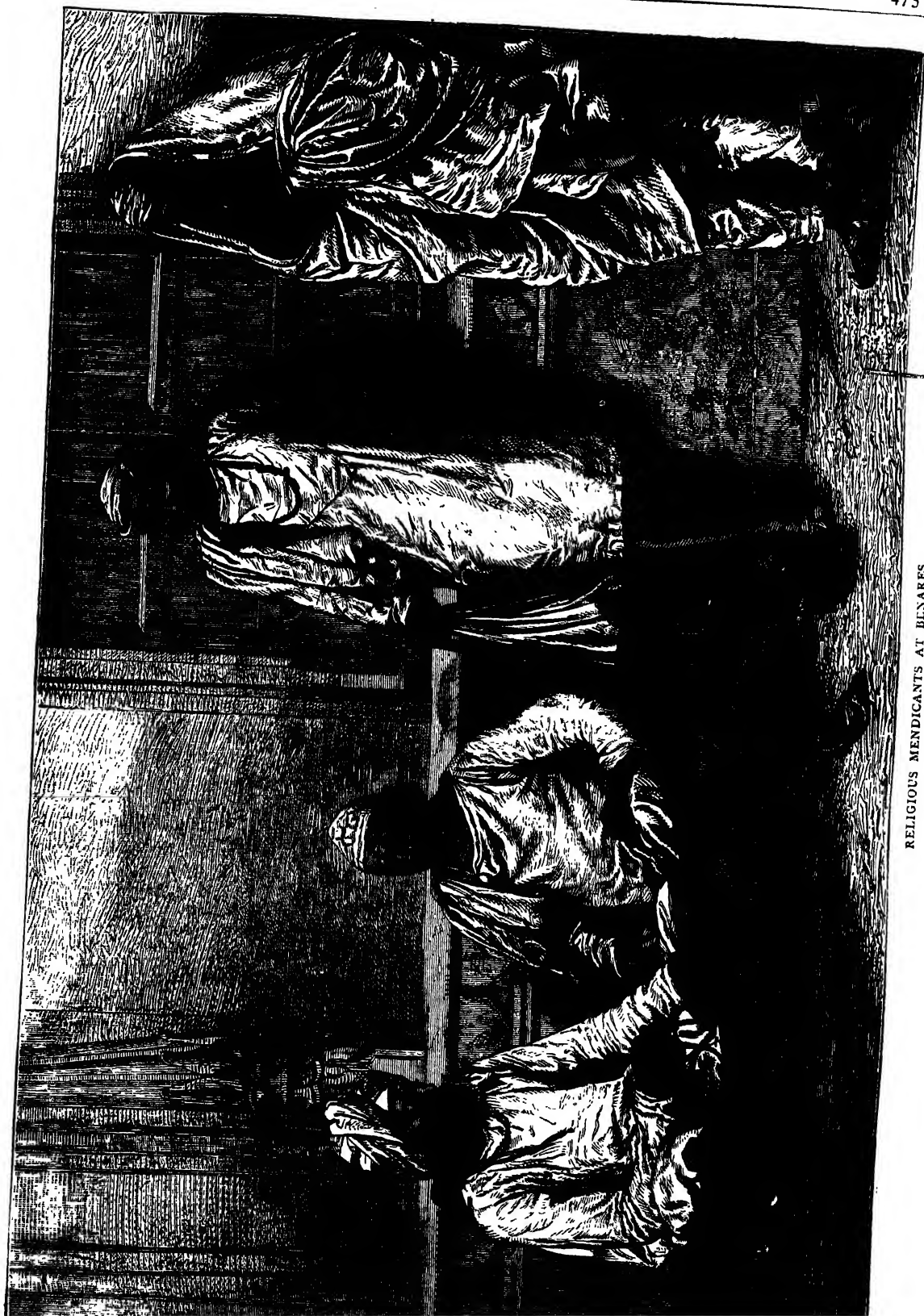
Of 1,450 men who were in the fort when our guns opened, 200, with eighty horses, perished in

of all he had undergone amid severe weather, "at the siege and capture of Hatrass."

After Dyaram's flight, his fortress was partly demolished, and this produced such an effect on the other talookdars, that they lost no time in making their submission to the Governor-General.

While all these events had been in progress, the Mahratta court at Poonah had been guilty of many violations of the Treaty of Bassein. The Peishwa had given his entire confidence to a man named Trimbukjee Danglia, who had commenced life as a

* "Journal of the Siege of the Kutterah and Fort of Hatrass."



RELIGIOUS MENDICANTS AT BENARES.

courier and spy, and had risen rapidly in favour by ministering to the sensual pleasures of his master, who then began to neglect, or cease to consult, his minister, Munkaseir. Trimbukjee was a man of violent character, and a bitter hater of the British, who, no doubt, had laboured hard to introduce something like law and order in the country of the Peishwa.

To stir up mischief, Trimbukjee committed several outrages along the frontier of our ally, the Guicowar, who thereupon dispatched an ambassador or vakeel named Gungadhur, the Shastree (on account of his familiarity with the Shastras, or Sanscrit writings), to remonstrate with the Peishwa on the conduct of his favourite. The Peishwa referred the Shastree to Trimbukjee, who barbarously murdered him as he left a Hindoo temple. He was struck from behind with what seemed only a twisted cloth, but which, in reality, concealed a sword-blade. Others followed up the blow, and he was cut to pieces.

The people of the Shastree had literally to search for these "pieces;" and, as he was a Brahmin of the highest caste, and enjoyed a great reputation for pure sanctity and much learning, the assassination excited the horror of the Mahrattas, who, though lawless, were brave, and detested such a mode of death. Every way the crime seemed dreadful in their eyes, from the character of the victim and the sanctity of the place where he perished; and they loudly predicted that the vengeance of their gods would speedily fall upon Trimbukjee, and that the ruin of their Peishwa would date from the day of the deed.

The Honourable Mountstuart Elphinstone, our Resident at Poonah, lost no time, after communicating with the Marquis of Hastings, in putting our subsidiary force at Seroor in motion.

This intimidated the Peishwa, who found himself compelled to surrender Trimbukjee, who was thrown into the strong fortress of Thanna, on the island of Salsette, near Bombay.

There his captivity proved a brief one. It chanced that a Mahratta groom, having a good character to recommend him, offered his services to the British officer commanding in the fort. He was forthwith employed; and as the stable where he attended his master's horse was directly under the window of Trimbukjee's prison, it was remarked that when attending to the commandant's horse, and while currying and cleaning it, he was always singing snatches of wild Mahratta songs.

At length, one night in December, 1816, Trimbukjee was found to have vanished from his prison, together with the horse and groom from the stable below. It was generally believed that Trimbukjee fled straight to his infatuated prince at Poonah. If so, the latter concealed him, and assured the British authorities, with great solemnity, that he knew nothing about him.

The assassin's hate for the British had certainly not been lessened by the imprisonment he had undergone among them; and wherever he was lurking, there was little doubt that he urged the Peishwa to avenge himself for the humiliation of his surrender, by entering more keenly than ever into those intrigues by which he hoped to place himself at the head of a new and conquering Mahratta confederacy; to throw the whole Treaty of Bassein to the winds; and to begin that career which ended so fatally for himself and all his followers.

We shall have to return, in its place, to the intrigues of Trimbukjee; but, meanwhile, our armies had to take the field against a more lawless foe than even the Mahrattas.

CHAPTER XC.

THE PINDAREES, AND WHAT LED TO A WAR WITH THEM.

THE new contest has often been designated the second Mahratta war, as it began in hostilities with the Pindarees, but ended in a general war with the associated chiefs of the great Mahratta confederation.

The Pindarees were not a race apart from others in India, but a great community of people, who

differed in blood, descent, religion, and habits, but who were all associated together in one common pursuit—robbery; and the most popular etymology of the name *Pindaree* is, that they derived it from their intemperate habits, which led them constantly to those shops where intoxicating liquors were sold; and Kureem Khan, the greatest of all their leaders

—who surrendered himself to Sir John Malcolm—told him that he never heard any other origin assigned to it.

The name of Pindaree, says a writer,* may be found in Indian history at the commencement of the last century; several bands of these freebooters followed the Mahratta armies in their earlier wars in Hindostan; and they are mentioned by Ferishta as having fought against Zulfeccar Khan and the other generals of Aurungzebe. One of their most daring captains "was named Ponapah, who ravaged the Carnatic, and took Vellore early in the reign of Sahoojee. This chief is said to have been succeeded by Chingaly and Hool Sewar, who commanded 15,000 horse at the battle of Paniput."

Under him the Pindaree system began to assume an organised form. They were divided into *Durrahs*, or tribes, led by chiefs, who enrolled any man—possession of a sharp sword and good horse being the only qualifications for admission. Common interest kept them united, and renown in the Mahratta wars was won by their chiefs, who seized upon lands, retained them by the sword, and transmitted them to their descendants.

Two, named Heeroo and Durran are subsequently mentioned as Pindaree leaders; and in order to distinguish the followers of Tookoojee Holkar from those of Mohadajee Scindia, they were henceforward denominated the Scindia Shahee and the Holkar Shahee.

Dost Mohammed Khan and Ryan Khan, the sons of Heeroo, were both powerful chiefs in 1820; but, in an association which was daily augmented by the admittance of strangers, it may naturally be supposed that the influence of hereditary claims was lessened, and that men of superior genius or daring rose to the chief command. Thus, in time, Chcetoo, or Seetoo, became the most powerful of the Pindaree leaders, and his followers began to be looked upon, in the time of the Marquis of Hastings, as a kind of independent power, which, if properly combined under an able commander, could seriously disturb the peace and arrest the prosperity of India.

By 1814 their actual military strength amounted to no less than 40,000 horse. Their leaders were all men of reckless courage and tried valour, under whom they rode on distant expeditions for the purpose of plundering peaceful countries, moving in bodies of 2,000 or 3,000 strong, holding an undeviating course until they reached their destination, when they at once split into small parties, to collect plunder, and destroy all that they failed to remove. They were guilty of the most inhuman barbarities;

their progress was marked by the ruins of burning towns and villages, the shrieks of wretched women, and the groans of their mutilated husbands were heard wherever the Pindarees went; and their horses, which were trained to undergo the same privations as their masters, often received, like them, a stimulus of opium, when impelled to uncommon exertion.

From many of their sudden expeditions they returned home laden with spoil, to the mountainous country which borders the Nerbudda to the north, where they found protection for themselves in those great forts which belonged to them, or to those with whom they were openly or secretly in league. The fame of these exploits drew to their ranks many deserters from the loose cavalry establishments of Scindia and Holkar. Plunder being the sole object of the Pindarees, they constituted their force for that purpose only; and, as light cavalry, trained themselves to hard marching and extreme celerity of movement. With this view, it was their custom, till the monsoon should close and the rivers be fordable, to exercise the horses, and prepare them for long marches and hard work.

When the time for marching came, they were carefully shod, and the expedition of many thousand hardened ruffians set forth. Out of every 1,000 about 400 were better mounted than the rest. Their favourite weapon was a bamboo spear, varying from twelve to eighteen feet in length; every fifteenth or twentieth man carried a matchlock. They were always accompanied by an irregular train of attendant slaves and camp-followers, poorly mounted on wild horses, and who kept up with the general mass as well as they could. Moving with a rapidity that defied all pursuit, they could spread their devastations over hundreds of miles without being interrupted or overtaken.

"As it was impossible for them to remain more than a few hours on the same spot," says Henry T. Princep,* "the utmost dispatch was necessary in rifling any towns or villages into which they could force an entrance; every one whose appearance indicated the probability of his possessing money, was immediately put to the most horrid torture, till he either pointed out his hoard or died under the infliction. Nothing was safe from the pursuit of Pindaree lust or avarice; it was their common practice to burn and destroy what could not be carried away, and in the wantonness of barbarity to outrage and murder women and children under the eyes of their husbands and parents."

"Their chief strength," says Sir John Malcolm, "lay in their being intangible. If pursued, they

* "Origin of the Pindarees."

* "Narrative of Pol. and Mil. Transactions in India, 1813-18."

frequently made extraordinary marches of sixty miles in length, by ways impracticable for regular troops. If overtaken, they dispersed, to re-assemble at an appointed rendezvous; and if followed to the country from whence they issued, they broke into small parties." *

The common modes of torture, when property was supposed to be concealed, was to tie a bag of hot ashes about the victim's head, and he was suffocated by being compelled to inhale the fumes. Others were thrown on their back, had a heavy beam placed across their chest, while a stout Pindaree sat at each end, pressing it down, at the same time inflicting blows on the helpless creature below.

Boiling oil and burning straw were also common, because convenient, materials for torture; and often children were torn from their mothers' arms, dashed on the ground, flung into wells, or tossed in the air, to be received, when falling, on the point of a spear.

In 1809 and 1812 they penetrated into British territory, and retreated with abundance of spoil. In 1815, they dared to make another invasion, when 8,000 of them crossed the Nerbudda, and moved northwards, after suffering a trifling loss from Major Fraser, with 400 horse and foot only, they reached the banks of the Kistna, which luckily proved impassable; hence the Madras Presidency, which lay on the other side, was secure from devastation.

Marching eastward, these freebooters proceeded to plunder all the fertile and populous districts along the banks of the stream for many miles, committing their usual enormities. Returning northward, along the line of the Godavery and Wurdah, they escaped, with immense booty and perfect impunity; and their complete success in this expedition encouraged them to attempt others.

Thus, in February, 1815, under different leaders, they crossed the Nerbudda, to the number of 10,000 horse; and on the 10th of March appeared on the western frontier of Masulipatam. On a march of only thirty-eight miles next day, they destroyed ninety-two villages, committing the most dreadful cruelties on the unarmed inhabitants. The next day's march was also thirty-eight miles, and in the course of it, fifty-four villages perished. The third day's march extended to fifty-two miles, and though pursued by our troops, under Colonel Doveton, the whole achieved the passage of the Nerbudda, with enormous booty and without loss; and it was soon after ascertained that, during the twelve days this horde had been in our territories, 182 persons

had been put to the most cruel deaths, 505 were severely wounded, and 3,603 put to the most barbarous kinds of torture.

The attention of Government was now seriously directed to this state of affairs, and to the prevention of further outrages. The Marquis of Hastings, who had brought the Nepaul war to a successful conclusion at the very time when the Pindarees and Mahrattas were confidently hoping for its protraction and to make profit out of it mutually, was now eager to employ all the strength of his unemployed troops in the task of extirpating this atrocious army of robbers.

For this purpose, as a temporary expedient, a chain of defensive outposts was established along the bank of the Nerbudda river. These extended across the country for about 150 miles, but were too meagrely supplied with troops to afford a very effectual defence, as, in one instance, two of the posts were ninety miles apart; and it soon became evident, that in a purely defensive war, a lightly-armed assailant has all the advantages, and may always, by judiciously choosing the point for attack, penetrate the line of defence where weakest. Thus our line of outposts was passed by the Pindarees, and the country ravaged as usual; and though, in this instance, some of them were overtaken and severely handled by the British troops, it was more owing to fortunate chances than any previously well-concerted scheme.

The Marquis of Hastings now resolved to commence offensive war, and, not resting satisfied with the mere line of posts, to pursue the Pindarees to their most remote haunts and fastnesses; yet, at this very time, despite the outrages committed, and the indignation they had excited in British India, the timid counsels of the home authorities tended greatly to hamper the Governor-General; and in his instructions from Mr. Canning, President of the Board of Control in 1816, he found the following remarks, with reference to the hostile aspect of the Mahrattas and the Pindaree invasions:—

"We are unwilling to incur a general war for the uncertain purpose of extirpating the Pindarees. Extended political and military combinations we cannot sanction or approve. . . . We entertain a strong hope that the dangers which arise from both these causes, and which must, perhaps, always exist in a greater or less degree, may, by a judicious management of our existing relations, be prevented from coming upon us in any very formidable force; while, on the other hand, any attempt, at this moment, to establish a new system of policy, tending to a wider diffusion of our power, must necessarily

* "Memoir of Central India."

* Princep, &c.

interfere with those economical regulations which it is more than ever incumbent on us to recommend as indispensable to the maintenance of our present ascendancy, and by exciting the jealousy and suspicion of other states, may too probably produce or mature those very projects of hostile confederacy which constitute the chief object of your apprehension."

To the pusillanimous policy thus suggested the Marquis wrote a very indignant reply concerning the Pindarees, and saying, "I am roused to the fear that we have been culpably deficient in pointing out to the authorities at home the brutal and atrocious qualities of those wretches. Had we not failed to describe sufficiently the horror and execration in which the Pindarees are justly held, I am satisfied that nothing could have been more repugnant to the feelings of the Honourable Committee, than the notion that this Government should be soiled by a procedure which was to bear the colour of confidential intercourse—of a common cause with any of these gangs."

This outburst referred to a suggestion made by Mr. Canning, that the marquis should endeavour to split up the confederacy by taking advantage of some dissensions then existing among the Pindarees.

For long, the home Government became convinced that nothing but the sword would crush them, and counselled that which was necessary—a bolder policy—to the Marquis of Hastings, who lost no time in acting on their injunctions; and, preparatory to taking the field, he sought to strengthen himself by the co-operation of several of the native powers, while a large part of the Bengal army was kept in advanced cantonments, ready to act at an hour's notice.

Hastings had undoubted information that the Peishwa, Scindia, and other Mahratta princes, were in close and secret correspondence with the Pindaree leaders, and that some great and combined movement was in view; but, fortunately, at this crisis, the interests of Britain were greatly furthered by the death of two of her greatest enemies—the Nabob of Bhopal, and Ragojee Bhonsla, the Rajah of Nagpore, both of whom expired in the March of 1816.

As usual, the musnuds of these potentates became the subjects of dire dispute between selfish claimants; and the two who proved successful, feeling their seats insecure, were glad to purchase British aid by the conclusion of treaties favourable to our interests.

Apa Sahib, who was installed at Nagpore, accepted a subsidiary force of six battalions of native

infantry and a corps of native cavalry, for which he was to pay seven and a half lacs of rupees per annum; while at the same time binding himself to keep on foot a contingent force of his own, consisting of 5,000 men, who were to co-operate with the British in putting down the Pindarees.

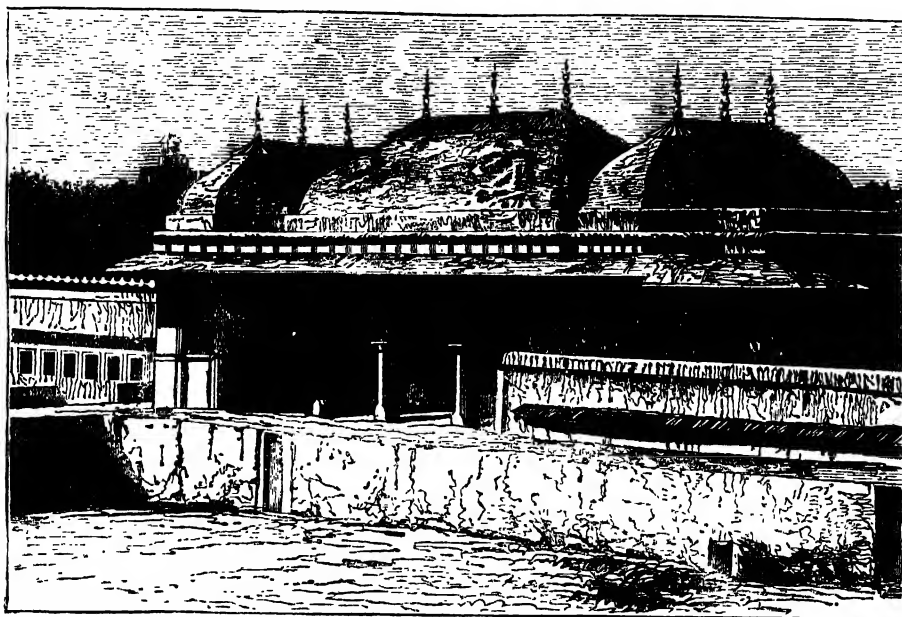
While these negotiations were in progress, others were carried on with the Rajah of Jeypore, a once powerful Rajpoot state, famous for the manufacture of its rich stuffs, swords, and matchlocks, whose alliance had been declined by Sir George Barlow in 1806. Since then, the rajah's territories had been desolated again and again by the Mahrattas and Patans; and, by the end of 1815, in his very despair, he implored the Governor-General to take him under his protection.

Though many members of the Supreme Council were strongly and strangely averse to this measure, the marquis resolved to extend the protection of the British flag to one who had been its old and faithful ally in times past, believing that, by so doing, it would aid in his great plan for the suppression of the Pindarees; though, apart from that, the measure in itself was good, as it would reduce the resources of their predatory powers, and save a noble territory (with an area of 14,900 square miles) from ruin and devastation.*

Thus, a subsidiary treaty was offered to the rajah at the very time his capital was beleaguered by Meer Khan and the Patans. So long as the blockade lasted, the rajah seemed most willing to comply with all the terms of the proffered document, and with all the requisitions made by Mr. Metcalfe, our Resident at Delhi, to whom the negotiation had been confided; but when the siege was raised, and the Patans were bought off by a round sum in treasure, the rajah then gave ear to some of his haughty Rajpoot chiefs, who disdained the British alliance, as destructive of their national independence, and their own feudal, or rather, local power. After this, his vakeels at Delhi raised so many doubts and difficulties concerning the alliance, that Mr. Metcalfe dismissed them, and broke off all negotiations. But now the people of Jeypore, who preferred peace and security, under British protection, to plunder and war, under the ministers of the rajah, began to murmur so loudly, that he found himself under the unpleasant necessity of sending his vakeels back to Delhi to renew the negotiations.

The vakeels, however, were indignantly dismissed again by Mr. Metcalfe, as they made propositions to which Britain could never accede; asked large pensions for themselves, and for British aid to

* Princep's "Narrative."



VIEW OF A PAVILION IN THE PALACE OF JEYPORE.

enable the rajah to crush some of his enemies ; and now the troops which had been collected to march to Nagpore in order to support the Rajah Apa Sahib, were dispatched to the Nerbudda, to be employed against the Pindarees ; and, left to his fate, the Rajah of Jeypore, the slave to an infatuated attachment for a beautiful Mohammedan na'itch girl, preserved only a portion of his hereditary possessions by the sufferance of Meer Khan.

We have said that the Pindarees pierced with ease the extended line of the British outposts on the southern bank of the Nerbudda. The first appearance of the red-coats in the valley of that great river spread such consternation among them, that Cheetoo quitted the northern bank, and prepared to cross the mountain Malwa. But on finding that our troops, who were commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Walker, did not pass the stream, he recovered confidence ; and thus it was, that on the 4th of November, 1816, he resolved to push between his posts.

A party of Pindarees consequently crossed the river, and, dividing in two *luhburs*, or bands, rode in different directions. Colonel Walker, while actively attempting to intercept one detachment of these robbers, fell suddenly, by accident, on the other, as it was bivouacking in a jungle. He inflicted some loss upon them ; but the nimble *mārauders* were soon in their saddles, and had left the Nerbudda far behind them.

On the 13th of the same month all their *Durras*,

or commands, were in motion. By this time Cheetoo had discovered that Walker's cavalry were all posted on his extreme left ; thus, he threw forward 5,000 of his bravest and best-mounted men to turn that officer's right flank. This column of thieves, which was followed by others, crossed the Nerbudda in sight of one of our posts on the right flank, and dashed on with a speed which left Walker's infantry not the slightest hope or chance of arresting their progress.

After rendezvousing on the southern bank of the river, the Pindarees, as usual, split into two great bodies. One rode due east, through forests and over mountains, and burst unexpectedly into the Company's district of Ganjam, the northern frontier of the five Circars, with the full intention of proceeding to Cuttack and Juggernaut, to plunder that great and rich temple of Hindoo superstition, and carry off all the precious idols, the votive offerings, and almost priceless donations of pilgrims and devotees.

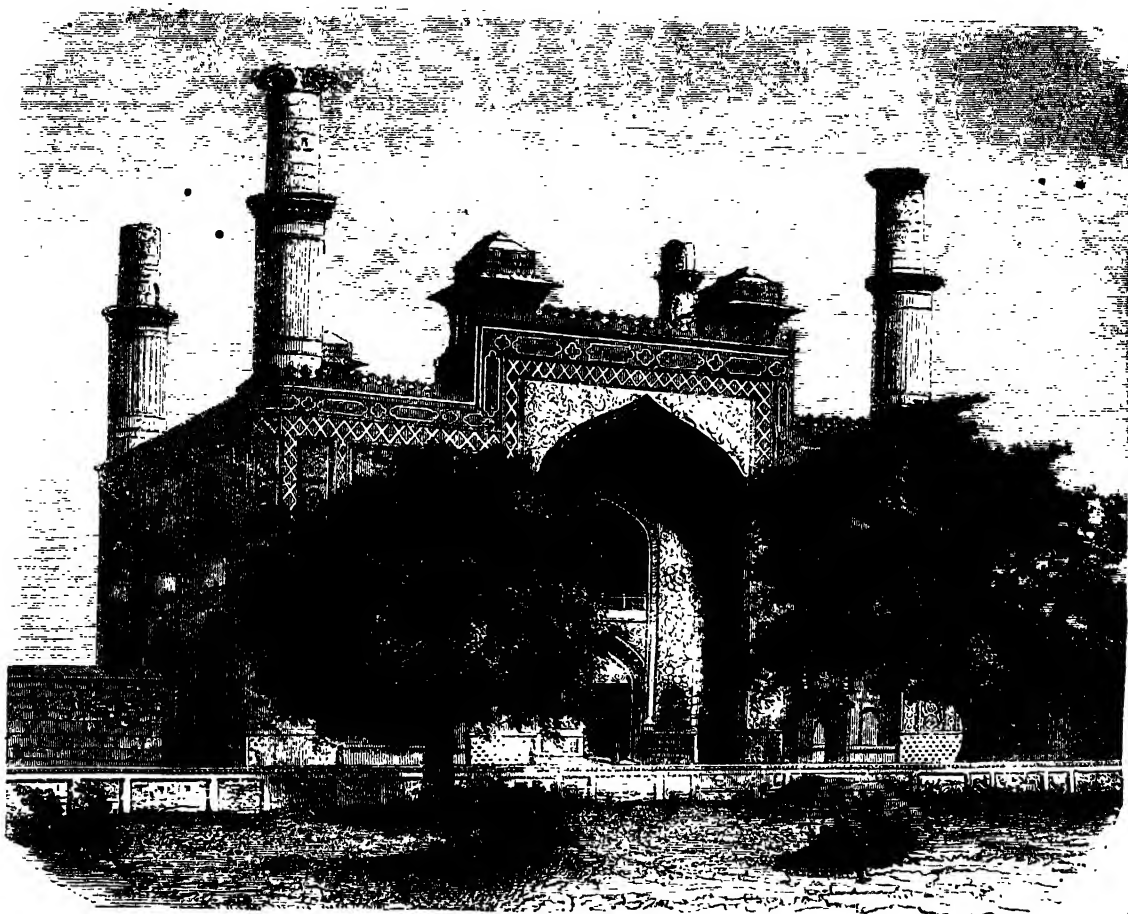
This *luhbur*, however, was met by a body of the Company's troops almost as soon as it entered Ganjam, and was repulsed with loss. The other band, which had ridden into the Nizam's territory before Colonel Doveton could overtake it, then proceeded leisurely on its march, pillaging and destroying till it came to Beder, a town in the Deccan (seventy-three miles from Hyderabad), where the Pindarees halted, as they were divided in their counsels as to the route to be pursued.

While they were in this state of indecision, Major Macdowall, who had been detached from the capital, came suddenly upon them in the night with the advanced guard of his light troops; and though the band mustered 6,000 spears and matchlocks, and the attacking force but a handful of dragoons, the robbers abandoned nearly all their horses, the greater part of their ill-gotten plunder,

in the Deccan, were the only band that met with any success at that season.

The only loss the band sustained from our troops was on its return to the Nerbudda in the subsequent March.

There, when Sheikh Dulloo found himself and his wild followers within but a few miles of safety and home, where the tents of Cheetoo



VIEW OF THE GATE OF THE GARDEN OF SECUNDRA.

and, thinking only of their personal safety, and of placing the Nerbudda between them and the foe, fled in every direction.

It chanced, however, that one of their leaders, named the Sheikh Dulloo, had abandoned this party some days before Macdowall's attack, and gone off, at the head of 500 Pindarees, to pillage on his own account. Spurring across the territories of the Peishwa, and rushing into the Concan, they actually ravaged the western coast of India between the 17th and 21st degrees of north latitude; and returning by the valley of the Tapti, and the way of Booranpore (or Burranpur), the capital of Candeish

stood, they found the only ford by which they could hope to cross held by a small party of British soldiers; several, in attempting to pass, were shot down, but the sheikh himself, with the main body, who proved the best-mounted men, making a circuit, plunged into the river lower down, and boldly swam across, yet not without a considerable loss of men and horses.

Those who rode the worst animals, or possessed the least amount of courage, fled into the jungle on the British side of the stream, and were murdered in detail by the people of the country. About 150 of those who followed the Sheikh Dulloo perished;

but the rest, with a rich booty strapped to their horses, reached the cantonment of Cheetoo.*

Two or three smaller bands contrived to cross the Nerbudda, but only to encounter ruin. One was destroyed by the 4th Madras Light Cavalry, under Major Lushington, and another on its homeward march perished in the same fashion. However great their number, they were almost invariably beaten by our troops in every encounter; but many of our officers were invalided in consequence of the serious fatigues incident to such hot and fierce pursuits; yet few of our soldiers fell, though in Lushington's affair one officer was killed by the

long bamboo lance of a Pindaree. As their operations, during the early part of 1817, had covered a greater extent of territory than they had hitherto invaded, extending actually, in some instances, to the seas on both sides of the Indian peninsula, including many provinces they had left untouched during the year 1816, it had become perfectly evident that the mere chain of outposts along the banks of the Nerbudda would never prevent them crossing for pillage and rapine in our territories; the Marquis of Hastings accordingly resolved to lose no further time in throwing a sufficient force across that stream, to crush them for ever.

CHAPTER XCI.

DETAIL OF THE ARMIES OF HINDOSTAN AND THE DECCAN.—SCINDIA'S TREATY AND CONTINGENT.—
MOUNTSTUART ELPHINSTONE AND THE PEISHWA, ETC.

"THE whole of Central India," observes Princep, "was, at the present, the arena of a general scramble for dominion;" and among other movements and measures, the Governor-General saw the stern necessity of ending this scene of constant distraction and disturbance, by binding the whole elements into a league, or fixing a definitive basis, to end the rage for predatory adventure, which was corrupting the Indian population and ruining the peace of the country; "and nothing short of that inflexible rigour of control and irresistible power of enforcing obedience to its sword, which the British Government alone could exercise, could possibly impose a due degree of restraint on the passions and ambition of a host of greedy pretenders, aspiring, by right of birth or by the sword, to the territorial sovereignties of this wide expanse."†

And now, having obtained the tardy consent of the home Government to the necessity for crushing what was called the predatory system, the Marquis of Hastings lost no time in perfecting his general arrangements.

Two strong armies were organised to advance in concert from the north and south, so as not only to cover the usual haunts of the Pindarees, but to overawe all native chiefs who might seem to favour them, more especially the Mahrattas, of whose princes they held themselves to be, to a certain extent, the subjects. "Besides, the whole of the

* Princep's "Narrative."

† Henry T. Princep.

Mahratta chiefs were bitterly hostile to the British; and the abrogation, or modifications amounting to an abrogation, of the treaties with Lord Wellesley by Lord Cornwallis, followed up by a policy in the same direction by Sir George Barlow and Lord Minto, so elated them, that they calculated upon the instability of British treaties, whether for or against them, and presumed upon ultimate impunity."

But the time was at hand when they were to be taught a different lesson.

The army of Hindostan was formed into four divisions. The right division, mustered at Agra, under Major-General Donkin, consisted of two regiments of cavalry, one being the 8th Royal Irish Light Dragoons, H.M. 14th Foot, and three battalions of sepoys, with eighteen pieces of cannon.

The left division, assembled at Kallinger, in Bundelcund, under General Marshall, consisted of one corps of native cavalry, two of irregular horse, and five battalions of sepoys, with twenty-four pieces of cannon.

The centre division, stationed at Secundra, a once magnificent city on the left bank of the Jumna, thirty miles distant from Cawnpore, commanded by General Brown, consisted of three corps of cavalry, one being H.M. 24th Light Dragoons, the 87th Royal Irish Fusiliers, and eight battalions of sepoys, with fifty-four pieces of cannon. Long since disbanded, the 24th Dragoons bore on their standards

an elephant, with the motto "Hindustan," in commemoration of their bravery at Allyghur and Delhi, in 1803. With this division was the Governor-General as commander-in-chief. It was 12,500 strong.

The fourth, a reserve division, under Sir David Ochterlony, was stationed at Rewaree, fifty miles south-west of Delhi, and consisted of a regiment of native cavalry, two corps of Skinner's Horse, H.M. 67th (or Hampshire) Regiment, and five battalions of sepoy, with twenty-two pieces of cannon. To each of these four columns several irregular corps were attached, while many detachments were posted eastward and westward to support where required, and keep up the communication. The whole force mustered 63,000 bayonets and sabres.

Under Sir Thomas Hislop, Bart., Commander-in-chief of Madras, the army of the Deccan was formed in five divisions. The first of these, the head-quarters, consisted of two troops of H.M. 22nd (now disbanded), two regiments of native cavalry, the grenadiers, and light infantry of the 1st Royal Scots, and six battalions of sepoy, with a field-train. The second division, under Colonel Doveton, intended to move on the Mahratta province of Berar, consisted of a regiment of native cavalry, the remainder of the Royal Scots (2nd battalion), six battalions of sepoy, and the brigades of Berar and Hyderabad.

Under Sir John Malcolm (who was also to act as political agent), the third division, which was to form the advanced corps, consisted of a regiment of native cavalry, five companies of sepoy, Russell's Brigade, the Ellichpore Brigade, and 5,000 auxiliary Mysorean Horse. The fourth division, under Colonel Smith, and intended to operate in Candeish, consisted of one regiment of native cavalry, H.M. 65th, or 2nd Yorkshire Regiment, six battalions of sepoy, and a body of Reformed Poonah Horse, under British officers.

The fifth division, comprising the Nagpore subsidiary force, under Colonel Adams, consisted of two regiments of native cavalry, a body of Rohilla Horse, the contingent of the Nabob of Bhopal, and six battalions of sepoy.

Under Lieutenant-Colonel Theophilus Pritzler, of H.M. 22nd Dragoons, the reserve division was formed of brigades left in Poonah, Nagpore, and Hyderabad. In addition, a formidable force was assembled in Goojerat, under Sir William Keir Grant, K.C.B. (afterwards Colonel of the Scots Greys), and the two armies together made up a strength of 13,000 men, with 300 pieces of cannon; so that the Pindarees might well tremble in their fastnesses beyond the Nerbudda river.

On the 8th of July, 1817, the Governor-General embarked at Calcutta, and sailed up the Ganges; and after a brief stay at Patna, to receive a complimentary deputation from Khatmandoo, on the 16th of October he arrived at Secundra, and took the field in person; and, after reviewing the troops there, crossed the Jumna at their head, ten days after. General Donkin advanced at the same time from Agra, and both columns began their march upon Gwalior; the centre one by the way of Jaloun and Seonda, on the river Sindh, and the other by the town of Dholapore, on the north bank of the Chumbul.

The reason of these movements was to menace the powerful Scindia.

"Residing at Gwalior," wrote the marquis, "the latter was in the heart of the richest part of his dominions; but, independently of this objection, that those territories were separated only from our territory by the Jumna, there was a military defect in the situation, to which it must be supposed the Maharajah had never adverted. About twenty miles south of Gwalior, a ridge of very abrupt hills, covered with tangled wood peculiar to India, extends from the Little Sindh to the Chumbul, which rivers form the flank boundaries of the Gwalior district and its dependencies. There are two long routes by which carriages, and perhaps cavalry, can pass that chain, one along the Little Sindh, and another not far from the Chumbul. By my seizing, with the centre, a position which would bar any movement along the Little Sindh, and placing Major-General Donkin's division at the back of the other pass, Scindia was reduced to the dilemma of subscribing the treaty which I offered him, or of crossing the hills through by-paths, attended by a few followers who might be able to accompany him, sacrificing his splendid train of artillery (above 100 brass guns), with all its appendages, and abandoning at once to us his most valuable possessions."

Scindia's repeated acts of perfidy fully justified the Marquis of Hastings in imposing upon him the new treaty in question; for while openly professing a readiness to co-operate with us in the reduction of the Pindarees, like other Mahratta chiefs, he had been promising them protection in secret, and was in hope of sharing their plunder. In secret, he had never ceased to labour for the formation of a great Mahratta league to root the British out of Hindostan; and his correspondence with the Nepaulese—which had been accidentally discovered—was deemed by the Governor-General the crowning act of all his late offences.

By the treaty concluded with him on the 5th of

November, 1817, Dowlut Rao Scindia agreed to admit British garrisons into his forts of Hindur and Aseerghur, and to co-operate with the British Government for the subversion of the Pindarees and all such freebooters; and for this purpose to place under British officers 5,000 cavalry, to be employed with the divisions of the British army. For the payment of these troops he agreed to relinquish for three years the sums which he himself, and the members of his family, received from the British Government, and for two years the sums which he was to levy from the Rajpoot states, any surplus of either amount, in excess of the pay of the troops, to be afterwards accounted for to his highness.

Such was the origin of what was called "Scindia's Reformed Contingent."

Major Valentine Blacker and Captain Fielding were the officers appointed to organise these cavalry when transferred by the durbar. The former officer, who had the general superintendence, reported on the 1st of February, 1818, that though acting to the fullest extent of Lord Hastings' intentions of not being particular as to the quality of Scindia's troops, he found at the inspection at Autree, on the 4th of January, that so many of the worst description of foraging Tattoos, mounted by syces and grass-cutters, were brought forward for service, that he was obliged to reject them, and that those to whom they belonged refused to march with the remainder of their horse unless some arrangement was made for the rejected, since they were struck off Scindia's rolls without being admitted upon ours. It was not very well understood that an arrangement had been made with Scindia for these rejected men; but it was supposed they were paid out of the allowance of those retained, which was reported to be at the rate of eight annas for each trooper.

The measures taken, whatever they were, produced such satisfaction, that Major Blacker was able, on the 19th of February, to march from Autree to Kolarus, and make his first muster, which showed 3,302 horse. Captain Fielding reported, on the 2nd February, 1818, from Agra, that he had raised 1,900 horse, to form the second corps of the contingent, and they marched, about the end of the month, towards Desree, in the Kotah territory, a place possessing great advantages for grain, forage, and water.

With the exception of the contingent co-operating with our army, all others belonging to Scindia were to remain stationary at the posts assigned them by the British Government in this remarkable treaty. By the eighth article of the treaty, concluded in November, 1805, the British Government pledged

itself to confine its alliances with other native states within certain limits. This article, as interfering with the alliances necessary to our strength in this sudden war, was superseded by a new article, giving full permission to form alliances with the Rajpoot states of Jeypore, Jodpore, and Oodeypore, or any others on the left bank of the Chumbul; always, however, subject to the tribute which those states were bound to pay Scindia, and the payment of which we guaranteed to him, on the condition that, for the future, he was not to interfere in their affairs. But prior to detailing the movements of "the Grand Army," under the Marquis of Hastings, and "the Army of the Deccan," under Hislop, we have to glance at certain diplomatic relations with different states. •

Immediately upon the conclusion of this treaty with Scindia, it was followed by another with Meer, or Ameer Khan, who had now begun to see the ruin that hostilities with us would bring upon him, and therefore engaged, on our guaranteeing to him all the territories he then possessed under grants from Holkar, to disband his horde of Patans, and give up his artillery, on receiving five lacs of rupees as its estimated value; and, as a hostage for this treaty—which must have proved a source of relief to the Rajah of Jeypore—the son and heir of Ameer Khan was to reside at Delhi.

While all these matters were being negotiated, the British had a final rupture with the son of the dead Ragobah, Bajee Rao, the Peishwa of the Mahrattas, and hostilities commenced.

Apa Sahib, whom—as stated in the preceding chapter—we had placed upon the throne at Nagpore, was neither a grateful nor a creditable ally, as he disgraced it by crime and bloodshed, and had the hardihood to send emissaries to Holkar, Scindia, and all the Mahratta chiefs, to solicit their assistance for the expulsion of the British. This, perhaps, it was which encouraged to a quarrel Bajee Rao, who, when he signed the Bassein treaty with us, had, with more courage than craft, declared that it was wrenched from him by compulsion; hence, there could be little doubt that, on the first opportunity, he would trample on it.

Affecting to be filled with shame at the degradation to which the event had subjected him, he secluded himself from his people, withdrew from Poonah, and, on various pretences, remained absent from it till the month of September, but during the whole of the subsequent month he was collecting troops in every direction, and urging his jaghirdars to prepare their armed followers; and the middle of October came before our Resident, Mount Stuart Elphinstone, was merely and coolly informed "that

the Peishwa would take a part in the Pindaree war to the extent of his means."

The Resident, an able, energetic, and accomplished man, soon ascertained that, notwithstanding his solemn assurances to the contrary, the Peishwa was still under the secret guidance of the invisible villain, Trimbukjee; that troops were quietly collected among the hills south-eastward of Poonah; that others were being levied at a distance; that the forts were being placed on the war establishment; and that emissaries, with money, had been sent to Malwa to recruit all to do battle with us. Elphinstone demanded that this state of preparation should cease; that the Mahratta troops must not encamp so close to the British cantonments; that the members of Trimbukjee's family should be placed under restraint, and the murderer himself given up to justice. But the crafty Peishwa, in reply to all this—though he affected to put some of Trimbukjee's family under arrest—declared that the troops among the hills were only some desperadoes, armed at the expense of that person, whom he would put to death the moment he caught him.

These pretences were too shallow to deceive Mr. Elphinstone, and after bringing the subsidiary force to Poonah, and thus feeling his hand strengthened, he plainly told the Peishwa, who was preparing to join Trimbukjee, that he must not quit the city. He then detached a portion of the troops to the Mahadeo Hills, where they fell upon and dispersed the pretended insurgent army, though it was 20,000 strong. The other portion he cantoned near Poonah, in which the Peishwa had 7,000 infantry, a great body of cavalry, and a strongly-fortified palace.

Elphinstone's first ideas were to demand hostages for the surrender of Trimbukjee, and for the most ample fulfilment of the Treaty of Bassein, and, in case of refusal, to storm the palace at the point of the sword, and make prisoner the Peishwa; but he humanely shrunk from a measure that would plunge in carnage and ruin the more peaceful of the inhabitants by a war in the streets; he, therefore, waited the course of events, in the hope "that the Peishwa would throw off the unaccountable spell which that low ruffian, Trimbukjee, had cast upon him, and would listen to the advice of better counsellors, and to the wishes of the majority of his subjects, for the continuance of peace with the Company."

But while Mr. Elphinstone waited, numerous attempts were made to tamper with the fidelity of the sepoys of his brigade; the Mahratta troops, as they crowded into the city, encamped so as to enclose our cantonments; and, finally, Trimbukjee took

possession of all the Peishwa's forts, and stopped the post in Cuttack and other places, thus cutting off all communication with the Marquis of Hastings and the Supreme Council at Calcutta.

At this trying and perilous crisis, Mr. Elphinstone was destitute of instructions, and could rely on nothing but his own judgment; and his conduct at this time won him the greatest admiration. He knew that if the Peishwa should make a retreat to Ryeghur, among the mountains of the Concan, it would be impracticable to follow him till after the torrents of the rainy season were over; and once in those fastnesses, he might make them the basis of extensive and protracted operations, and there concentrate all the Mahratta chiefs who were bent on strife with Britain.

Resolving to wait no longer, he concentrated all the troops he could collect round Poonah, and demanded that within twenty-four hours the Peishwa should solemnly pledge himself to deliver up the mischievous Trimbukjee within one month, and place his strongholds of Singhur, Ryeghur, and Poorondhur in possession of the British troops till that promise was fulfilled. Bajee Rao lingered in doing this; but the aspect of our troops on the one hand, and of his people on the other, so alarmed him, that within the specified time he accepted the conditions, and placed the forts in our hands; but, steady to no line of action, save his faith to Trimbukjee, he instantly repented of what he had done, and sought evasion. Finding that too perilous with Elphinstone, whose Scottish patience was now utterly exhausted, he offered a reward for Trimbukjee, dead or alive; confiscated his property and that of twelve of his adherents openly; and, at the same time, secretly took means to provide for his safety and concealment by a remittance of treasure.

On the 13th of June, as if to remove all further doubts and difficulties, Bajee Rao signed a treaty offered to him by Mr. Elphinstone. By this document he bound himself to relinquish all negotiations with powers hostile to British interests; to renounce his supremacy over our ally, the Guicowar, and all right and pretensions to Bundelcund, Goojerat, and every part and portion of Hindostan proper; to surrender to the Company, in perpetuity, the great fort of Ahmednuggur; to dissolve the great confederation of the Mahrattas, abandon all connection with them, and thus virtually to resign his position as their Peishwa, or head.

In addition to these bitter and humiliating terms, he was compelled to agree to an important alteration in the Treaty of Bassein. In that, he was bound to furnish the Company with 8,000 troops,



DANCING GIRLS OF BOMBAY.

and guns in proportion ; this was now exchanged for an engagement to furnish them with the means of paying an equal force, thus ceding a revenue estimated at thirty-four lacs of rupees. This treaty was ratified by the Governor-General within a month, or on the 5th of July, 1817, three days before the latter embarked to put himself at the head of the army.

It has been alleged, with truth, that the perfidy

heart, and the murderer fled to the wild jungles in the vale of Nerbudda, where he could put himself in communication with Cheetoo and the Pindarees.

Trimbukjee found means to do this also with the Peishwa, who, at the same time that our troops were about to cross the Nerbudda to attack the Pindarees, cast to the winds the treaty of June ; ordered his great kettle-drum to be beaten at Poonah, and the Mahratta horse began to menace



PORTRAIT OF THE MARQUIS OF HASTINGS.

of the Peishwa, and his preparations for joining the most bitter of our enemies when we were about to enter on a combined campaign against the Pindarees, deserved a more severe humiliation than that inflicted upon him by Elphinstone. In the Concan, to which district he would have retreated, if he could, some of his chiefs resisted the British troops, but were speedily crushed by Colonels Doveton and Scott. In Candeish, the former officer routed and dispersed the followers of Trimbukjee ; and the latter, lashing his tent-poles together to make scaling-ladders, bravely carried by storm the strong fort of Dorana. After the loss of this place, the followers of Trimbukjee lost all

our cantonments there. The site of these, on the north-east side of the city, had been well chosen for the purpose of defence against any attack from without ; but it now became very insecure when threatened by one from without and from within also. Thus it became necessary to remove to a stronger position, and Mr. Elphinstone, though still reluctant to precipitate an open rupture, saw that it was coming fast ; hence, on the 31st of October (while the Marquis of Hastings was in Scinde), he gave orders that the stores of the brigade should be transported to Kirkee, and that the brigade should march there immediately after. The site of the old cantonments is described by a writer thus :—

"The Moota, from the south-west, meeting the Moola from the north-east, forms with it the Moota-Moola, which takes an intermediate direction, and flows east. On the right bank, in the angle made by the Moota and the Moola, lies the town of Poonah, enclosed by the rivers towards the west and north, but quite open towards the south and east, in which latter direction the subsidiary force had its cantonments. On the opposite, or left, bank of the Moota, at the point of junction with the Moola, stood the British residency, which had thus the disadvantage of being entirely separated from the cantonments—a river, and the whole breadth of the city, intervening between them. It was to get rid of this disadvantage, and escape from the danger of being surrounded by the troops which were pouring into the city, that the British brigade removed, on the 1st of November, to the village of Kirkee, situated rather more than two miles to the north, in an angle formed by an abrupt bend of the Moola, and affording peculiar advantages for defence. The brigade, consisting of a Bombay European regiment, which had just arrived, and three native battalions, under Colonel Burr, seemed quite able to maintain its new position till succours should arrive; but it was deemed prudent to send to Seroor for a light battalion that had been left there to meet contingencies, and a corps of 1,000 auxiliary horse that had just been raised in the same quarter."

The stupid Peishwa now took it into his head that the British had confessed their fears of his power by quitting the city, though Mountstuart Elphinstone remained, as usual, at the residency.

The Seroor reinforcements started from Seroor on the 5th of November, and in the forenoon of that day, the over-confident Bajee Rao began to push forward his confused hordes, with a view to surrounding our new camp at Kirkee. Gokla, a Mahratta chief, who had always been at the head of the war party, pushed round a battalion till it took up a position between the village and the residency,

evidently with the view of cutting off the communication between the two. On Mr. Elphinstone demanding the reason of this hostile movement, he was told by a Mahratta officer that the Peishwa had heard of the advance of troops from Seroor and elsewhere; that he had only anticipated the hostile measures of the British, and would no longer be the victim of his own irresolution.

He demanded that the newly-arrived Europeans should be sent back to Bombay; that the Poonah brigade should be reduced to its usual strength, and be cantoned wherever he should appoint. A direct answer being required, Mr. Elphinstone replied that if the Peishwa joined his army he would join the brigade, and that if the Mahratta forces moved towards the latter they would be attacked.

Bajee Rao seems to have been in such impatience for an answer, that the instant he dispatched his messenger he mounted his horse, and joined his army at the Parbutec Hill, a little to the south-west of his capital. He then advanced towards the residency with such speed, that Mr. Elphinstone and his suite had barely time to mount their horses and ford the Moola, when the Mahrattas took possession of the European houses, from which there had not been time to remove anything. All was plundered in a few minutes, and then the buildings were set in flames. While Mr. Elphinstone and his suite were hastening up the left bank of the river to cross it again by a bridge that led to Kirkee, he could see the smoke and flame amid which his property perished, the most irreparable loss being his valuable manuscripts and library.

The view from Kirkee is one of considerable beauty, and there could be seen the hill of Parbutec, with its temple; the walls of Poonah, with its temples and palace; the Moota, wandering among clumps of mango-trees, till it joined the Moola, amid fields of waving corn; the garden of the Heerah Bagh, and its beautiful lake, with lofty trees drooping in the waters, and surrounded by every description of fruit and gorgeous flowers.*

CHAPTER XCII.

THE BATTLE OF KIRKEE.—REVOLT OF APA SAHIB.—THE BATTLES OF THE SEETABULDEE HILLS AND NAGPORE.—COMBAT OF JUBULPORE, ETC.

MR. ELPHINSTONE was received with all honour in the camp, and the moment he was safely there, it was resolved not to await the arrival of the troops who were coming on from Seroor, but to recross the river, and attack the Mahrattas without delay.

Accordingly, Lieutenant-Colonel Burr, leaving a

* "Recollections of the Deccan," 1836.

small party in Kirkee, advanced, and formed line, with the Europeans in the centre. The troops of the Peishwa were also formed in line, with the right flank towards Poonah, their left towards a branch of the river, and, as they faced Kirkee, the Bombay road lay along their rear. The *surree pulkah*, the golden pennon or grand standard of the Mahrattas, which was borne by Mozo Dickshut, was unfurled on this occasion. Dickshut was a chief of tried valour, who fell in defence of it; and this circumstance being deemed ominous by the soldiers, they were thus deprived of confidence ere the battle was well begun.

Major Forde, who, with two battalions of the Poonah Contingent, was cantoned at Dhapoorah, far on the British right, marched fast to take his share in the glory of the day, but was so much impeded by a body of horse sent to intercept him, that he was obliged to fight every foot of the way, and did not reach the field before the action had commenced with vigour.

Colonel Burr's brigade mustered only 2,800 bayonets, including the Bombay European Regiment. The Mahrattas were 25,000 men, with many guns; but the Peishwa was a noted coward, and the mass of his troops were an undisciplined rabble. They began the battle, or combat rather, in the afternoon by a distant but heavy cannonade in front, while attempting to push bodies of horse round the British flanks. In this they partly succeeded; but on being repulsed, with loss, did not again attempt to come to close quarters.

Before nightfall it was ended by the flight of the Mahrattas, who either threw themselves into Poonah, or a fortified camp near the city. They left 500 killed on the field, while our total loss was only eighteen killed and fifty-seven wounded. During the conflict, Mr. Elphinstone—as “generally the civil servants of the Company were ambidextrous, or capable of wielding with the same hand as well the sword as the pen”—remained on the field in order to give Colonel Burr the advantage of his very great local knowledge.*

On the following morning, the 6th of November, the light battalion and the irregular horse from Sirmoor joined Colonel Burr; the Mahrattas hastened to draw up in order of battle: but they did nothing save mutilate, in a ferocious and abominable manner, some poor women and dependants of the

Company's Brigade, whom they had found in the cantonment; these unfortunate creatures were then turned loose to find their way to the new camp. In other instances, between the 5th and 6th of November, as if to make reconciliation impossible, and impart a savage character to the war, they committed other outrages. Two of our officers, Captain Vaughan and his brother, when travelling with a small escort, were surrounded, and induced to surrender on a promise of quarter, but were both hanged. Ensign Ennis, of the Bombay Engineers, who was found surveying some miles from Poonah, was shot; and Lieutenants Morison and Hunter, of the Madras Cavalry, were attacked when marching towards the city, all unconscious of the sudden rupture.

As the numbers of the enemy seemed to increase, and as the city, with the old cantonments facing the river, when occupied, presented a formidable line for defence, Mr. Elphinstone and Colonel Burr resolved to await the arrival of Brigadier-General Lionel Smith, of H.M. 65th Regiment, who, suspecting the state of affairs at Poonah, from the interruption of his communications, was hastening on from the Godavery. That officer, who had very few horse (and no regular cavalry) with him, was molested during every mile of his march by hordes of wild Mahrattas, all well mounted, who succeeded in cutting off much of his baggage.

On the 8th of November he was at Ahmednuggur, and after he passed Seroor, the enemy appeared in such numbers that he was surrounded on every side; but forcing his way on, he reached Poonah on the 13th, and then the time for retribution seemed to have come. In consequence of some unexpected difficulties, however, the British did not advance against the city till the 16th. A large Mahratta force, which endeavoured to dispute the attack, was routed; in this we lost one officer and sixty soldiers. In the course of the ensuing night the Peishwa fled; and when our troops marched up to his advanced camp at daylight on the 17th, it was found with all the tents standing, but deserted by the enemy. Smith now got his guns into position, and threatened to bombard Poonah; but the only troops in it now were a few Arabs, whom the people compelled to give way. The gates were flung open; our troops quietly took possession, and the standard of Britain was unfurled on the capital of the Mahrattas. In these changes the people of Poonah saw only the direct vengeance of heaven for the horrid and sacrilegious crime committed in the murder of Gungadhur Shastree within the precincts of one of their most holy temples; and

* When the Prince of Wales was at Poonah, in November, 1875, he ascended the steep hill of Parbutee (or Parivati), on the summit of which stands a famous temple; and he contemplated the view from the same window from which the cowardly Bajee Rao, the last Peishwa of the Mahrattas, overlooked the—to him—fatal conflict of Kirkee. A rough staircase leads to the temple, in which is a sacred shrine, attended still by priests.

on the 19th, Brigadier Smith, on being joined by the Madras Cavalry, under Lieutenant-Colonel Colebrooke, started in pursuit of the Peishwa; and in the course of the day, Captain Turner, of the light troops, succeeded in capturing eighteen guns, with their limbers and ammunition. But the fugitive Peishwa and his flying forces moved too rapidly to be overtaken.

He reached the wild and elevated district of the Western Ghauts, where the Krishna (or Kistna) takes its rise, and he led a lurking and a wandering life, eluding all pursuit till the following year.

During our discussions and subsequent dissensions with the Peishwa, a great change had come over Apa Sahib, the Regent of Nagpore. He had become so conscious of his dependence upon us, as to leave his capital and take up his residence in the cantonments of the subsidiary force; but his naturally restless disposition did not permit him to remain quiet there long, and he soon began to intrigue with the very party which had most strenuously opposed his appointment to power.

The post of regent failed to satisfy his ambition: he was anxious not only to wield the power, but to bear the title of rajah; and, as there was no obstacle between him and the throne, save the half-imbecile Pursajee, the usual Indian means were taken to remove it: and on the 1st of February, 1817, Pursajee was found dead in his bed. Thus Apa Sahib was proclaimed Rajah of Nagpore; and when it was afterwards distinctly ascertained that his predecessor had been assassinated, the vague rumours of the fact passed unheeded at the time; and no sooner was he, as he thought, firmly seated on the musnud, than he lost no time in effecting the changes that were nearest his heart.

Nerayun Punt, who had been the chief channel of communication with the British Government, and by whose advice the subsidiary alliance was supposed to be effected, was dismissed from office, and Purseram Rao, a notorious enemy of Britain, was appointed in his place. On the remonstrance of Mr. Jenkins, our Resident (afterwards M.P. and a Director of the Company), he revoked this change, but gave the command of his private or Raj troops to Ramchundur Waugh, a personage more objectionable still, and all his official appointments in the state were made in the same spirit.

Matters at Nagpore remained very doubtful for some time; but no sooner was it known that the Peishwa had unfurled his standard, than Apa Sahib determined to cast in his lot with him. He did not, however, immediately declare himself, but his designs were only too apparent by the extent and

activity of his warlike preparations; thus, by the middle of November, appearances became so menacing that, by request of the Resident, a brigade of the division of Colonel (afterwards General Sir John Whittington) Adams halted south of the Nerbudda, and he was ready to detach one battalion, with three troops of cavalry, to reinforce the Nagpore Brigade, the ranks of which were thinned by sickness. Burr's victory at Kirkee, the capture of Poonah, and flight of the Peishwa, certainly did disconcert Apa Sahib, but seemed to make no change in his purpose, as the levying of troops went on more briskly than ever.

On the night of the 24th November he made his first open declaration of defiance, when Ramchundur Waugh wrote to Mr. Jenkins, intimating that the rajah had received a *kelat*, or dress of honour, from Poonah, and intended next day to visit his camp in state, that he might be invested with it when formally assuming the post of *sena-patee*, or commander-in-chief, and Mr. Jenkins was invited to assist at this ceremony.

The latter pointed out the absurdity of all this, as the Peishwa was our avowed enemy, while the rajah was our professed friend, and was yet about to declare allegiance to him. Apa Sahib was resolved on hostilities, and at once proceeded to extremes by planting his troops in menacing positions; and the force to oppose was small, consisting of only two battalions of native infantry, three troops of native cavalry, two companies forming the Resident's personal escort, and a detachment of artillery, with four six-pounders. Colonel Scott commanded the whole, and the chief point to defend was the residency, a large flat-roofed house, together with the bungalows of the officers attached to the suite and escort, which were situated within an oblong square compound, 600 yards in length by 300 yards in breadth.

Immediately in front of this compound, and contiguous to its eastern face, are the Seetabuldee heights, consisting of two distinct hills, 300 feet in height, connected by a low rocky ridge, 300 yards in length. At eight o'clock in the evening of the 25th November, Colonel Scott found it necessary to get his troops into position, the enemy being in motion in many directions. On the northern hill, which is conical in form, he posted 300 men, with two six-pounders, under Captain Sadleir. The remainder of this battalion and the whole of the other, with part of the escort and artillery, he posted on the southern hill, which formed his right, and was crowned by a Mohammedan burial-place, full of stone tombs. The residency, hastily fitted up for defence, was occupied by the rest of the

escort, while the three troops of cavalry and a few sharpshooters kept the ground in front of it.

The Mahratta army lay to the eastward of the city, stretching round from east to south, three miles distant from the Seetabuldee Hills. It was estimated at 12,000 horse and 8,000 foot, 3,000 of whom were Arabs. On the 26th of November, though the rajah's cavalry, under Gunpant Rao, were seen moving in heavy squadrons towards the western plain before the residency, and his infantry and guns were taking up positions that menaced the Seetabuldee Hills, he kept artfully sending pacific messages to Mr. Jenkins, who knew their full value.

He got his guns advanced to enfilade the British position, masked behind the mud walls of the village of Seetabuldee, and numerous bodies of his matchlock men were seen crowding into the Huna Baie bazaar and contiguous huts; and these hostile indications continued for the whole day, almost within pistol-shot; so close, indeed, that when Colonel Scott, about sunset, was personally posting his line of advanced sentinels at the base of the position, the Mahrattas peremptorily ordered him to retire and withdraw them, and his natural refusal soon brought matters to an issue, for the enemy at once opened with cannon and musketry, and to these, the British—fighting for their lives against such vast odds—were not slow in responding, while the Bengal Cavalry, who could take no part in the strife, could only sit impatiently in their saddles, “distinctly hearing the noisy din of the battle; and, as the shades of night darkened, the flash of the guns and of the fusillade became more apparent, while the heavy fall of an occasional twelve-pound spent shot amongst the troopers—although sometimes fatal to a man or horse—tended, when innocuous, to create a laugh of derision among old soldiers.”

The fighting on both sides continued with great spirit. Just as the moon rose at ten o'clock, according to the account of an officer,* an explosion took place on the larger hill. A tumbril of one of our guns had exploded, and set fire to a Fakir's hut. At that moment, a confused mass of Mahrattas and Arabs, thinking to profit by the confusion, rushed from the huts in front, and charged up-hill in a tumultuous manner, with loud cries. The British fire seemed then to become one continuous roll, garlanding the heights with fire; and the enemy were seen flying back to their defences, while the shouts of the sepoys announced that they were completely baffled.

At two in the morning an intermission of some

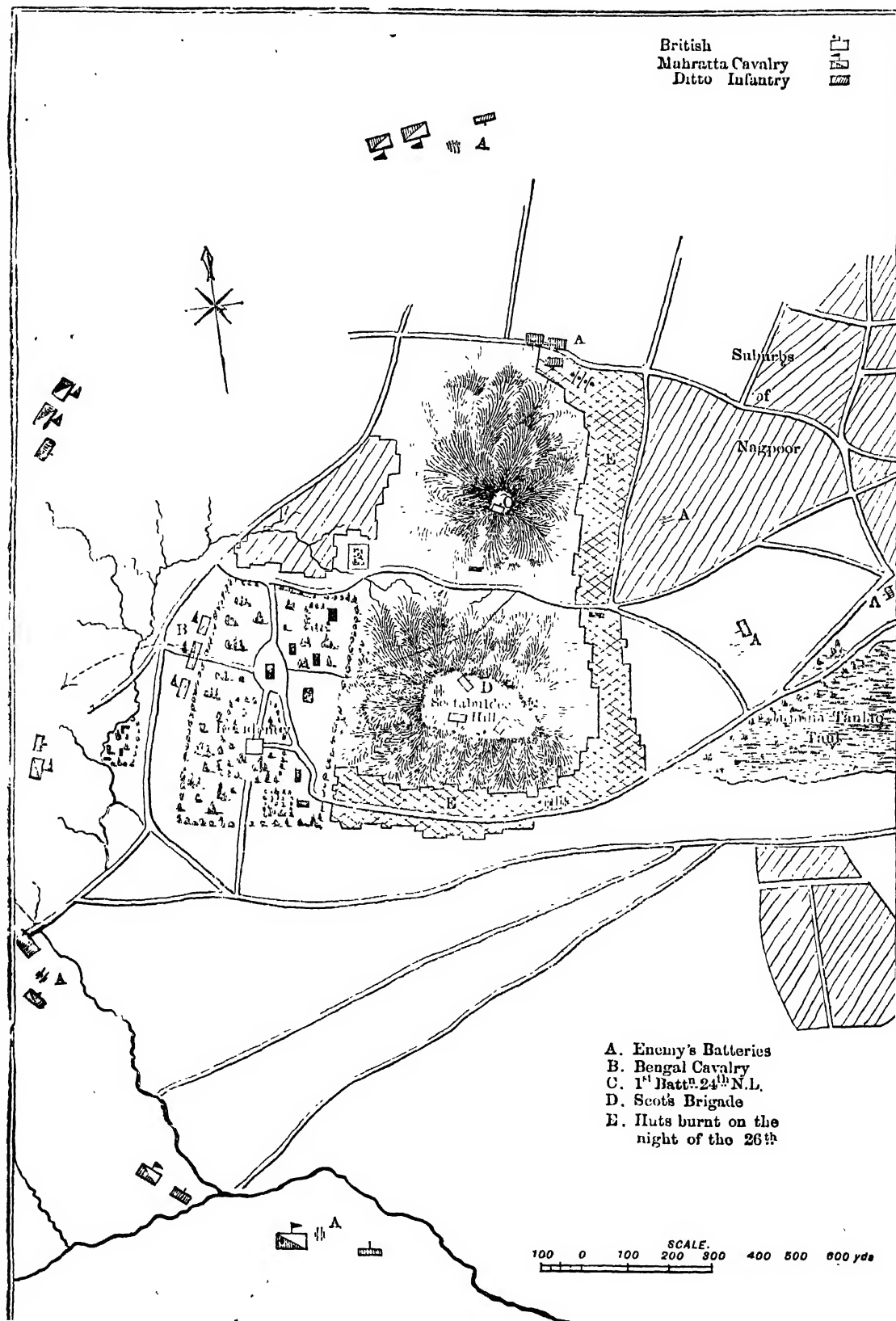
* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1834.

hours took place, and the British availed themselves of it to make fresh cartridges, and to place along the front of their position several sacks of grain and flour, and everything else that would serve for cover. As yet, the foe had made no impression; but the aspect of affairs was very gloomy. On the northern hill, against which the attack had been more especially directed, a heavy loss had been sustained, and Captain Sadleir had been killed; Captain Charlesworth, the next in command, was wounded; and so much were the defenders cut up and exhausted, that it became necessary to relieve them; and it became painfully apparent to all, that if the enemy persisted in the attack, and poured on fresh assailants, the troops would be overcome by mere exhaustion, and then a general massacre would ensue.

“At daybreak,” says Mr. Princep, “the fire recommenced with more fury than before, additional guns having been brought to bear in the night. The enemy fought, too, with unceasing confidence, and closed in upon us during the forenoon. The Arabs in the rajah's service were particularly conspicuous for their courage and resolution, and to them the assault of the smaller hill had been allotted. Gales of horse also showed themselves to the west and north, as well as to the south of the residency grounds, so as to compel Captain Fitzgerald, who commanded the cavalry, to retire further within them, in order to prevent any sudden *coup de main* in that quarter.”*

About ten a.m., the screw of a gun, on the smaller hill, became so injured (Princep says by the explosion of the tumbril) as to render it for some time unserviceable. “The Arabs saw their opportunity, and rushed forward, with loud cries, to storm the hill. Our men were disconcerted; and the smallness of the total force having made it impossible to hold a support in readiness for such an extremity, the hill was carried before the gun and the wounded could be brought off; the latter were all put to the sword. The Arabs immediately turned the gun against our post on the larger hill, and with it, and two more guns of their own which they brought up, opened a most destructive (flank) fire on the whole of our remaining position. The first shot from the captured gun killed two officers; Dr. Niven, the surgeon, and Lieutenant Clarke, of the 20th; the second, a round of grape, was fatal to the Resident's first assistant, Mr. George Sotheby. The fire from the smaller hill was so destructive as greatly to distress the troops on the larger, which it completely commanded. The Arabs, too, flushed with their late success, were seen advancing in

* “Narrative of British India.”



PLAN OF THE DEFENCE OF SEETABULDEE HILL.



FITZGERALD'S CHARGE.

great numbers along the ridge, as if with the design of attacking that remaining point, while the attention of our small party was divided between them on one side, and the main body of the enemy in the plain to the south, who were also closing in fast. The prospect was most discouraging; and, to add to the difficulty of the crisis, an alarm had been spread among the followers and families of the sepoys, whose lines were to the west of the smaller hill, now occupied by the Arabs; and the shrieks of the women and children contributed not a little to damp the courage of the native troops. They would scarcely have sustained a general assault, which the enemy seemed to meditate."

But now a gallant exploit saved the position. Captain Fitzgerald, with his three troops of Bengal Cavalry, had orders to keep off the enemy's horse, but not to advance into the plain against them. Thus he had remained at his post by the residency until they hemmed him in on every side, and at last brought two guns to bear on him; and he chose rather to forget his orders than submit to the havoc made among his troopers, who were clamouring to be led into the plain, that they might there die, sword in hand.

"We'll charge them, by Heaven!" exclaimed Fitzgerald, to his officers; and then the Hindoos, taking a handful of earth from the Syces, threw it over their heads, while the Mussulmans shouted "Deen! Deen!" thus indicating their intention to conquer or die. As the cavalry fronted to the rear, the word was given, "Threes right!" so that, by counter-marching to the left, the troops would advance right in front. Spurring on at their head, the gallant Irishman drove the masses of the Mahratta horse headlong before him, captured the two guns, and turned them on the enemy, whom he mowed down in heaps, and their leader was pistoled by Lieutenant Harsey. This unexpected and most successful charge so animated the defenders on the ridge, that they attacked the Arabs, who had already planted their standards on it, and forced them to give way.

At this moment another tumbril blew up on the northern hill, and the sepoys rushing on, re-took the latter at the point of the bayonet, which the Arabs could not withstand. The guns they had brought up were all taken. In this charge, a desperate one, Captain Lloyd and Lieutenant Grant greatly distinguished themselves. Grant was thrice wounded, and the third wound proved mortal. Around the guns the Arabs lay thick among the gashed and gory British and sepoys they had butchered.

The tide of battle was completely turned now,

and on every hand the Mahrattas gave way. The Arabs, who still showed in some force, having been dispersed by another onslaught from Fitzgerald, the infantry moved down and cleared the houses and huts of the enemy, capturing all the guns not previously carried off. Apa Sahib, though well aware that the British troops were worn out, that themselves and their ammunition were exhausted, was too much intimidated to tempt the issue of another conflict; and Colonel Scott had good reason to congratulate himself on this cowardly conduct, as he had lost, in killed and wounded, nearly the fourth of his whole force.

As soon as the battle was decided, Apa Sahib, as if to play even unto the end his strange double game, sent vakeels to Mr. Jenkins, to express his grief for "the untoward event," and asserted that his troops acted without his sanction or knowledge, and that he was anxious to renew the former friendship. He also employed the women of his family as intercessors for pardon. Mr. Jenkins replied that the ultimatum lay with the Governor-General; but consented to a suspension of hostilities, on the withdrawal of the rajah's army to the eastern portion of Nagpore. To this temporary arrangement the Resident consented, all the more readily that he knew reinforcements would soon come pouring in. Indeed, on the 29th, two days after the conflict, Colonel Gahan arrived, with three additional troops of cavalry and a battalion of sepoys, with two galloper guns; another detachment, under Major Robert Pitman, arrived on the 5th of December; and on the 12th and 13th, Brigadier Doveton encamped at Seetabuldee, with the whole second division of the army of the Deccan.

The following terms were now proposed to the rajah:—"That he should acknowledge having, by his defection, placed his territories at the mercy of the British Government; that he should give up all his artillery; that he should disband the Arabs and other mercenary troops, sending them off in certain specified directions, so as to leave Nagpore and its fort in British occupation; that he himself should come to the British residency, and remain there as a hostage for performance."

He was further informed that, on the acceptance of these terms, the old friendship, if such it could be called, would be restored; but that we should require the cession of as much territory as would meet the expenses of the subsidiary force, and a provision for such a degree of internal control as would prevent any future bloodshed; and he was given till four a.m. next day to declare his acceptance. In the event of refusing, he would be instantly attacked.

He strove hard to obtain a respite, and urged that he was most willing to accept the terms, but could no longer control his troops, who prevented him from coming to the residency; so time passed on till nine in the morning, when Brigadier Doveton began to advance on the city, after putting his troops in the following order:—

Two regiments of native cavalry and six horse artillery guns were on the height; on its left was Lieutenant-Colonel Norman Macleod's brigade, composed of a wing of his own regiment (the 1st Royal Scots), four battalions of native infantry, and the flank companies of another sepoy corps; Lieutenant Colonel Neil McKellar's brigade, consisting of a division of his regiment (1st Royal Scots), a battalion of sepoys, and four horse artillery guns; on its left, Colonel Scott's brigade, another division of the Royal Scots, a battalion of Sepoys, with foot artillery, sappers, miners, and two guns.

In rear of Macleod's brigade was the principal battery of artillery. On the left of the position was an enclosed garden; beyond it was the Nayah Nudder; a small river ran from thence past the enemy's right, and three parallel ravines terminating in the bed of the river crossed the space between the infantry and the enemy, but in front of the cavalry; and on their right the country was open. The enemy's position was masked by irregularities of the ground and clusters of houses and huts, by a thick plantation of trees, with ravines and a large reservoir.

On this ground the rajah had formed an army of 21,000 men, 14,000 of whom were horse, with seventy-five guns. Such was the locality on which the battle of Nagpore was fought. Beyond the river lay the city, from the walls of which the movement of both armies could be perceived.*

Doveton's advance, in the order described, thoroughly intimidated the rajah, who rode with a few attendants to the residency; but the affair was not yet ended, as the guns were yet to be given up. Apa Sahib pleaded for delay; but, as there was every reason to apprehend their clandestine removal in the interval, it was bluntly refused. Ultimately it was arranged that his troops should be withdrawn and their artillery abandoned to us by noon. Ramchundur Waugh, who had come to expedite the affair, reported that all necessary steps had been taken; but Brigadier Doveton, instead of sending in a detachment only to receive over the guns, suspecting some deception, continued to advance steadily with his whole line on the 16th of December.

After taking possession of thirty-six guns in the arsenal south of the city, leaving Scott's brigade to

take charge of them, he was advancing south-east towards the Sakoo Duree Gardens, where he knew there were several batteries, when a heavy cannonade and sharp musketry fire was suddenly opened on his front and right flank.

The columns deployed at the double, and the brigades of Macleod and McKellar carried battery after battery with great valour; the supporting troops were routed, the enemy was driven from all his positions, and pursued to a distance of five miles. The camp equipage, with forty elephants and seventy-five guns, was captured, but not until 142 of our men had fallen.

The blame of all this would seem not to have rested with Apa Sahib, but rather with his Arabs, who were determined to make the best terms they could for themselves. Accordingly, uniting with another body of mercenary Hindostanees, to the number of 5,000, they retired into the city and occupied the fortress, within which were the rajah's palace and other strong buildings; and there they resolved to defend themselves to the last. There was no alternative now but a siege, and it was begun immediately.

On the 23rd of December a breach was made at the Jumma Durwazza Gate, and an assault was at once resolved on. One company of the Royal Scots, under Lieutenant Thomas Bell, with five of native infantry and due proportion of sappers and miners, were detailed for this service; and two other companies of the Royal Scots, under Captain Henry C. Cowell, were destined to attack the city at another gate, and the remaining five Scottish companies were kept for the protection of the batteries.

At half-past eight a.m., on the 24th of December, the bugles sounded the "advance," when the stormers, led by Bell, sword in hand, rushed from the trenches and gained the breach, but were instantly assailed by such a heavy matchlock fire from adjacent buildings, that they reeled, for they could neither return it nor come to close quarters. Sheltered closely behind walls, the Arabs, with fatal aim and perfect impunity, marked each his destined victim; and the fire of their heavy matchlocks was destructive at a distance beyond that which European musketry could then reach. Lieutenant Bell, who, though a young officer, was a Peninsula veteran, fell dead in the breach, which was found untenable; so the troops fell back, while the stormers at the other point were also compelled to retire, with a total loss of ninety killed and 179 wounded.

On the following day the stubborn Arabs renewed their offer to surrender, and their terms

* "Records, 1st Royal Scots."

being acceded to, they marched out of the city on New Year's Day, 1818, with permission to go where they pleased except Asseerghur. In the breach of Nagpore, the Royal Scots, who were more immediately under the command of Major Fraser (his seniors having brigades), lost sixty men, including Lieutenant Bell; and to their 2nd battalion was accorded permission to bear the word "Nagpore" on its colours.

Manifestations of hostility in other parts of the State followed the revolt at Nagpore, and these assumed such formidable proportions in the eastern part of the Nerbudda Valley and in the extensive district of Gundwana, the country of the Gonds—mountainous, woody, and unhealthy, but famous for its diamond mines—that several small British detachments deemed it prudent to concentrate at Hoshungabad on the 20th December. At this time, Colonel Hardyman, quartered in Rewa, received orders from the Marquis of Hastings to enter the Nerbudda Valley; and accordingly he marched thither, at the head of a regiment of native cavalry, and another of European infantry, with four guns. On the 19th he halted at Jubulpore, a fortress in the province of Berar, where he found the Mahratta Governor ready to give him battle, at the head of 3,000 horse and foot.

These had taken post on some strong ground, having a rocky eminence on the right, and Jubulpore, with a large tank, on the left. Opening the combat by a cannonade, Hardyman led a charge of bayonets, swept away the enemy's left wing, and soon cleared the whole field, inflicting a severe loss on the foe. He now turned his guns on the fort and town, both of which surrendered. He was about to continue his course southward, when a despatch from Mr. Jenkins intimated to him that his services were no longer required in that direction; therefore he established his head-quarters in Jubulpore.

Throughout the State of Nagpore, hostilities being now ended, all that remained to be done was to settle our future relations with Apa Sahib on some solid basis. The proposals laid before him by Mr. Jenkins, and the faith on which he claimed to have yielded, had already defined them to a certain extent. Though he had permitted the guaranteed time to expire, and a battle to be fought, ere his guns were given up or his troops dispersed, still, as his capitulation had been accepted, and his subsequent conduct had been satisfactory, to have dethroned him would have been, perhaps, a harsh measure.

Mr. Jenkins therefore, on his own responsibility, prepared the draft of a treaty, by which Apa Sahib,

while being permitted to retain his royal rank and state, was to cede large territories, and to submit to British control in every department of his administration at home and abroad—in short, to become a tributary vassal. But before this treaty could be definitely arranged, the instructions of the Governor-General, which had been delayed in transmission, arrived, and were found to differ very materially from the views of the Resident. All reconciliation with the rajah was peremptorily forbidden, and his musnud was to be conferred on a grandson of Ragojee Bhonsla, by a daughter. As he was an infant, a regency of British selection was to have the administration of affairs; but feeling sensible that he was committed too far to give effect to instructions so severe, Mr. Jenkins entered into a treaty, the terms of which were to be subject to the approval of the Marquis of Hastings.

By this treaty, Apa Sahib was to retain his throne, but engaged that his native ministry should be solely of British selection; that the introduction of British garrisons into his forts should be discretionary, besides giving up the Seetabuldee Hills, and a portion of the adjacent ground, for the erection of a fortress and bazaar; to pay all arrears of subsidy; to reside in his capital, under our protection; and to cede districts yielding yearly twenty-four lacs of rupees for the subsidiary force; and so ended a treaty that reduced him to a mere puppet. It would, however, appear that the scheme of placing Ragojee Bhonsla's grandson on the throne could not have been carried out, as the child, together with his father Gooja Apa, had, previous to the arrival of Brigadier Doveton, been forcibly dispatched to the strong fort of Chanda in Gundwana.

The new arrangement with Apa Sahib proved to be of brief continuance; but before proceeding to narrate in detail the other events of the Pindaree and Mahratta war in 1818, it may be proper to glance—but briefly—at the important mission which took place in the two preceding years.

Lord Amherst was sent as our ambassador to China; but his embassy was not more successful, in attempting to change the exclusive policy of that strange country for more than 1,000 years, than had been that of Lord Macartney, or the Russian embassy of Count Golowkin.

On the 8th February, 1816, Lord Amherst sailed on board the *Alceste* frigate (Captain Maxwell); and in July the embassy was off the coast of China, and proceeded up the Yellow Sea, having been joined by Sir George Staunton (who had accompanied Lord Macartney to China), a message having arrived to announce that the new embassy would be received

with every attention. On the 9th of August, Lord Amherst disembarked safely in the Gulf of Pe Chili, not far from the capital. During his journey thither every effort was made by the Mandarins to compel him to comply with the Tartar ceremony of *Ka-ton*, which he resisted.

This degrading ceremony of kneeling and "knocking the head" (the literal Chinese expression) nine times against the ground, is not only demanded from the ambassadors of all tributary kings (as all the sovereigns in the world are called), but likewise on receiving any message from the emperor, and on broken victuals being sent to them from his table; and these humiliations were submitted to by the Dutch in 1795. The Chinese were extremely anxious to extort the performance of this absurdity from Lord Amherst, but in vain; hence the embassy, probably, was useless. The emperor, a man of impetuous and capricious disposition, which his intemperate habits materially affected, seemed in his cooler moments to regret the mode in which the embassy was treated, and even to fear the consequences of its abrupt dismissal, as appeared by his sending after it to request some exchange of presents, and expressing himself satisfied with the respectful duty of the King of Britain, who had sent so far to pay him homage, attributing all the errors to the ambassador who refused to "knock-head."

The delivery of the emperor's letter for the Prince Regent into the hands of the ambassador, terminated the official intercourse of the latter with the viceroy at Canton, and with all the other officials of the Chinese Government.*

The *Alceste*, which had brought out the ambassador, was lying at anchor among the Indiamen, to carry him to Britain, and on the 21st of January, 1817, she got under weigh to commence her homeward voyage. As the impertinent opposition, which was made by the Chinese, to the frigate ascending the river, with the gallant manner in which it was punished by Captain (afterwards Sir Murray) Maxwell, forms an interesting feature in the story of this futile embassy, we can scarcely omit a brief reference to the transaction.

The banks of the river on which Canton is situated are high and strongly fortified; more than 800 pieces of cannon were mounted on the different

batteries, and when the *Alceste* passed them, they were garrisoned by about 1,200 men. A messenger came from the Mandarins in command, to inform Captain Maxwell that if he attempted to pass their batteries he would be sunk. To this intimation, Captain Maxwell replied calmly, "I shall first pass the batteries, and then hang you at the yard-arm for daring to bring on board a British man-of-war so impudent a message!" The messenger was forthwith made a prisoner, and then the war-junks, with which the *Alceste* was now surrounded, commenced firing; but a single shot, fired by Maxwell's own hand, quickly silenced them, and all continued quiet, while the frigate, from the want of wind, lay at anchor.

But the moment she resumed her upward course, the junks beat their gongs, fired guns, and threw up sky-rockets, and in an instant the batteries were completely illuminated, displaying lanterns as large as moderately-sized balloons—the finest of all marks for the guns of the *Alceste*, while those of the enemy opened a hot but ill-directed fire from both sides of the river. Steering a steady course, the ship maintained a slow but regular cannonade; and when she got abreast of the largest battery, she poured in a broadside of thirty-two pounders, and as the crew gave three cheers, they could hear the stones of the works crashing about the terrified Chinese.

After this, all opposition ended; the Mandarins, with their usual dissimulation, announcing that the affair at the river's mouth was only a friendly salute; and thus, on her return downward, the frigate was saluted—but without shot—by all the batteries in succession.*

In the Straits of Gaspar she struck upon a sunken rock, on the 18th February; after which, Lord Amherst and his suite had to proceed in the barge to Batavia, a distance of 200 miles; and in the interval the wreck was attacked and burned to the water's edge by sixty piratical proas. Maxwell, with his crew, kept a fortified hill on the coast, and after many daring and romantic adventures, the whole were rescued by the *Ternate*, Company's cruiser. Captain Maxwell, a native of Leith, died in 1831, Lieutenant-Governor of Prince Edward's Island; and of Lord Amherst we shall have more to record in future chapters.

* "Narrative of a Journey to China, 1816-17," by Clarke Abel.

* "Macleod's Narrative of the *Alceste's* Voyage."

CHAPTER XCIII.

BATTLE OF MAHEIDPORE.—CHOLERA MORBUS.—LEGEND CONCERNING IT.—PROGRESS OF THE
PINDAREE WAR.

THE Court of Holkar, during the insanity of Jeswunt Rao, and still more after his death, became so distracted by factions that no regular policy | disgust, and her cruelty hatred. With her minister, Gunpant Rao, she carried on an intrigue, the immorality of which might have been overlooked, had



VIEW OF THE MAUSOLEUM OF MOHAMMED GHOSE, GWALIOR.

could be pursued. His favourite mistress, Toolasi Bae, who had been originally a singing-giri, had attained such an ascendancy over him, especially during the time of second infancy that preceded his death, as to secure the succession to a boy named Mulhar Rao. He was a son of Jeswunt, and Toolasi, having no child of her own, had adopted him, and thus contrived to continue in possession of the regency; she was a woman of great personal attractions and winning manners, and with considerable tact and talent, the position might have been secure enough, had not her profligacy excited

there not been those who wished to make political profit out of it.

One of the first moves in this matter was the suggestion to form a new Mahratta Confederacy, with the usual view of overthrowing the British.

Doubtful, by past experience, of its success, her advisers were careful not to commit themselves too much, and sent a vakeel to Mr. Metcalfe, our Resident at Delhi, to assure him of the friendly disposition of the regent, and a treaty similar to that which had been concluded with Scindia was proposed; for, by this time, Toolasi and her lover had

become convinced that, without British support—much as they hated it—they could not make head long against a mutinous army, led by discontented chiefs.

The latter, who were opposed to her and British intervention, no sooner discovered the unexpected course the negotiation was taking, than they resolved to resort to strong measures; thus, on the morning of the 20th December, 1817, young Mulhar Rao was artfully enticed from a tent in which he was playing, and carried off. At the

a junction, and having a two days' halt at Oojain, had advanced, on the 14th December, towards the Holkar camp. On approaching Maheidpore, on the 21st December, the very day subsequent to the assassination, Hislop's column, when marching along the right bank of the river, where now the headless body of the regent was the sport of the current, saw the enemy drawn up in line, as if about to dispute the passage of the Seepra at the only practicable ford.

Their right was protected by a deep ravine, their



GROUP OF MAHRATTAS, 1818.

same time, a guard was placed over Toolasi Bae; and, suspecting that she was to be put to death, she refused all sustenance. This process proved too slow for her enemies, who thrust her into a palanquin, bore her to the bank of the Seepra, cut off her head, and tossed it, with her body, into the river.

The Patan chiefs, and all opposed to British interests, having now the whole power in their hands, clamoured to be led to battle against us, and lost no time in preparing to meet the columns under Sir Thomas Hislop and Sir John Malcolm; who, thinking to further and strengthen their negotiations with the regent, Toolasi Bae, after forming

left by a bend of the river and an abandoned village. The bed of the Seepra afforded some cover for our troops; and, as their flanks were all but impregnable, it was resolved to attack the enemy generally in front. Sir John Malcolm advanced, with two brigades of infantry, to attack their left, and a ruined village, which was situated on an eminence near their centre. No sooner had these troops crossed the ford and begun to emerge from the cover of the bank beyond and a ravine, than they were received by a dreadful cannonade from two double batteries, armed by seventy pieces of cannon. In the face of these, though men fell, torn to pieces, every

moment, our troops advanced, and formed to the front with unflinching steadiness. The Royal Scots led the van of the attack upon the village; but the enemy's left was brought forward in anticipation of the movement, and then the enemy's gunners resorted to grape. Encouraged, however, by the example of Sir John Malcolm and of Colonel McGregor Murray, Deputy Adjutant-General, who joined the flank companies of the Royal Scots, "they rushed forward in the face of this tremendous fire; the enemy's infantry were driven from their position, and the village and batteries carried at the point of the bayonet: the enemy's artillerymen were resolute, and stood their ground until they were bayoneted. While the Royal Scots were victorious at their point of attack, the enemy's right was overpowered; his centre gave way on the appearance of a brigade ascending [from] the river, and his troops, occupying a position where his camp stood, also fled on the advance of a British force to attack them."*

When the Mahrattas began to retire, a charge of cavalry turned their retreat into a total rout. Major (afterwards General Sir James Low) Lushington and Lieutenant-Colonel Russell commanded the two lines of cavalry in the final onslaught and pursuit, which was continued till darkness fell by Sir John Malcolm and Captain Grant along both banks of the Seepra, where they gleaned an enormous booty, including many elephants and camels. The British losses were great, amounting to 788. Among these were many of the Royal Scots, who are thus specially referred to in the General Order of the Commander-in-Chief, 23rd December, 1817:—

"The undaunted heroism displayed by the flank companies of the Royal Scots in storming and carrying, at the point of the bayonet, the enemy's guns on the right of Lieutenant-Colonel Scott's Brigade, was worthy of the high name and reputation of that regiment. Lieutenant Donald Macleod fell gloriously in the charge; and the conduct of Captains Hume and McGregor, and of every officer and man belonging to it, entitles them to His Excellency's most favourable report and warmest commendation."

The losses of the enemy were estimated at 3,000.

Seated in a howdah, on an elephant's back, young Holkar was present at the battle of Maheidpore, and is said to have wept on beholding the defeat and flight of his troops. He was conveyed to Allote, and placed under the tutelage of Kesaria Bæe, his mother, as regent, who appointed Tantia Jog her minister; but notwithstanding their rout by the waters of the Seepra, so many of Holkar's

troops still kept the field, that a column, under Sir John Malcolm, marched to finally disperse them. Meanwhile, the negotiation originally opened up by the unfortunate Toolasi Bæe, was resumed to a certain extent, and decided proposals for peace were accelerated by the rapid concentration of the army of the Deccan, and the junction of Sir William K. Grant's corps from Goojerat; hence, on the 6th of January, 1818, a definitive treaty was concluded. "It confirmed Ameer Khan in the territories guaranteed to him by the British; ceded to Zalim Sing Raj, Rajah of Kotah, in property, certain districts held by him from Holkar only on lease; renounced all right to lands north of the Bhoonda Hills; and ceded all claims to territory, or revenue, within and south of the Satpoora range, together with all claims of tribute on the Rajpoot princes. The territories of Holkar were guaranteed in their integrity, as now curtailed, free from all claims of any kind on the part of the Peishwa, and the subsidiary force was to be kept up at the Company's expense; but a contingent, fixed at 3,000 horse, was to be maintained by Holkar in a state of complete efficiency, so as to be ready at all times to co-operate with the British troops."

By this treaty, Holkar, who had contended on equal terms with the British Government for royal supremacy, was reduced, like every other native power with whom they came in contact, to a species of vassal.

The operations of the Grand Army against the predatory Pindarees had been seriously hampered by the insurrections at Poonah, Nagpore, and, latterly, by that conflict which ended on the banks of the Seepra; but now the most formidable enemy we had ever encountered was taking the field against us.

This was the terrible epidemic called the "Cholera Morbus," which, though known in India from time immemorial, having hitherto been confined to particular localities and seasons, had not attracted much attention; thus Princep details all the symptoms of it as if it were something almost novel.* It attacked, with remarkable virulence, that division of the army which was under the immediate command of the Marquis of Hastings.

The season had been one of scarcity, and, consequently, the grain used by the troops had been collected with difficulty, and was of very inferior quality. That part of Bundelcund in which they were encamped was low, notoriously unhealthy, and indifferently supplied with water. These circumstances, with the usually crowded state of an Indian camp, gave a singular violence to the ravages of

* "War Office Rec., 1st Foot."

* "Narrative of British India."

this scourge, which always attacks the finest and most healthy of the sepoys; and a wild legend is attached by them to the visitation it made to the army of Lord Hastings.

The part of the country where it encamped was formerly under the rule of a noted chief, named Lalla Hurdee, who was poisoned under extraordinary circumstances; and every year his spirit visits his former residence with an army of unearthly beings. Our troops crossed their path, and, by the sepoys it was said, the disease was produced by their influence. Since that period, Lalla Hurdee is applied to and his wrath deprecated in times of cholera. His worshippers make small clay figures of horses, and offer them at his shrine. Heaps of these are often to be seen lying round some temporary altar on the outskirts of the villages in Hindostan.*

For ten days the fatal scourge reigned with mortal violence in the camp of Lord Hastings, and in that time 764 fighting men and 8,000 camp followers perished. These losses, together with the desertions produced by fear, were thinning fast the ranks, so a change of locality was resolved on. The Marquis of Hastings accordingly struck his tents, and marched south-east from the Sindh towards the Betwa, and crossing that river, encamped at Erich, an ancient town on the right bank, and situated on dry and lofty ground. There the disease disappeared, and the central division prepared to take the field against the Pindarees.

These freebooters had been perfectly well aware of the extensive operations schemed out by the Marquis of Hastings for their complete suppression, if possible, and during the rainy season of 1817 they had been preparing for the worst, while encamped in three *durras*. Under Cheetoo, the first of these was situated at Ashta, on the Parbuttee, some forty miles distant from Bhopal; under Kureem Khan, a second was formed north of that town, near Bairsa; and a third, under Wasil Mohammed (who, by the death of his brother, the Dost Mohammed, had succeeded to the entire command), was near Garspoor, thirty-five miles westward of Saugur. Between Cheetoo and Kureem there existed a feud so rancorous as to preclude them from concerting any common course of action, even for their own general good; and the native princes who were disposed to favour them feared our power so much, that they dared do no more than indulge in expressions of good-will; and thus the fore-doomed Pindarees had been thrown entirely on their own resources when the monsoon ended.

Sir Dyson Marshall, commanding the left column of the main army, had advanced from the south-west to Huttah, on the Sonar, where he halted on the 28th of October. While this movement was being made, Wasil Mohammed abruptly left Garspoor, and by means of a secluded pass, westward of Marshall's route, burst into Bundelcund, part of which he succeeded in ravaging before the troops came up in sufficient strength to drive him back. Continuing his march, General Marshall reached Rylee on the Saugur, by the 8th of November, and opened a communication with Colonel J. Whittington Adams at Hoshungabad.

The effect of this course was to compel Wasil Mohammed to strike his tents at Garspoor, and retreat westward; but as Sir John Malcolm had already reached the Vale of the Nerbudda, and as General Donkin was marching with the right column of the main army in a south-westerly direction, to keep the left bank of the Chumbul, and the Marquis of Hastings, with the centre column, had taken up a position barring all escape to the north and east, it seemed an inevitable result that the great army of freebooters would be destroyed. But this was delayed, in consequence of Sir Thomas Hislop having fallen back towards Poonah, on hearing of those hostilities there, which we have related in their place, leaving only Malcolm and Adams, with the third and fifth divisions of the Army of the Deccan, to press on the Pindaree war.

En route towards Poonah, his march was arrested by a despatch from the Marquis, stating the insurrection there had been sufficiently provided for, and that the original plan of the campaign must be carried out. Foolishly for themselves, the Pindarees had omitted to take the least advantage of his temporary absence; and by the combined operations of Sir Dyson Marshall, Sir John Malcolm, and Colonel Adams, they were driven out of their usual retreats, and Wasil Mohammed, after uniting with Kureem Khan, fell back in a northerly direction towards Gwalior, while Cheetoo's horde moved west towards Holkar's army, which had taken the field for that campaign which ended so rapidly at Maheidpore.

The Governor-General was at Erich, to which the cholera had driven him, when he heard of the Pindaree approach to Gwalior: thus he was compelled to make a counter-march to the Sindh. On reaching the Sonaree ford, twenty-eight miles from the town, he threw his advanced guard across the river, under Colonel Philpot, thus cutting off the communication between the Pindarees and Gwalior, compelling them to seek a passage in another direction.

* "Hist. Rec. 50th Nat. Inf.," foot-note, 1836.

For some time they halted, in a state of bewilderment and consternation, at some distance to the south-west, among the jungles and thickets, near the town of Shahabad, and in utter perplexity what to do. To advance on Gwalior was impossible while Philpot's guns and bayonets barred the way; to move southward was equally so, for Marshall and Adams held those points from whence interception was easy; and the only passages open were, one by the line of the Chumbul into Jeypore, and another by Hurastee into the Rajahship of Kotah: and they selected the latter, because Zalim Sing, its ruler, had been long one of their warmest friends.

But the number of British troops marching in all directions had influenced his views so much, that he deemed it necessary to occupy all the passes through which his plundering friends might hope to force a way. Stern necessity and despair endued the Pindarees with more than usual courage, and in spite of all the opposition offered by Zalim Sing, they hewed out a passage for themselves, but obtained only a short respite, as Sir Dyson Marshall, on the 14th December, 1817, attempted to take them by surprise. In this he failed; Kureem Khan and Wasil Mohammed, with all their followers, effected an escape, but in doing so were compelled to abandon many loads of grain and much baggage, including the pillage of several months.

A worse surprise was now awaiting them, for General Donkin was advancing from the west, so secretly and swiftly that they were unaware of his approach till, sword in hand, he fell suddenly upon their advanced guard in the night, at a place some thirty miles north-east of Kotah, when the favourite wife of Kureem Khan was captured, with all his state elephants, his standards, and other trophies. Kureem, with the main body, was six miles distant; but had only time, after hearing what had happened, to commit his tents and baggage to the flames, and desire his followers to disperse in all directions. These fugitives were nearly all destroyed at different times, by various parties of cavalry and infantry, or were murdered by villagers in revenge for all they had suffered at their merciless hands; but the two chiefs, at the head of 4,000 of their best-mounted men, took a swift circuit to the south, and passed unseen the left flank of Adams, while he was on the right bank of the Parbuttee river.

The band led by Cheetoo was now the only formidable one of Pindarees existing. He had retired into Mewar, a mountainous and Rajpoot principality, or Oodeypore, the capital of it, which

is surrounded by an amphitheatre of hills, and can be approached only by three defiles, so narrow that each would barely admit a carriage; but Sir John Malcolm, himself a mountaineer, determined to lose no time in tracking him to his stronghold.

With this intention, he marched by Sarangpore, in Malwa, near the right bank of the Kalee-Sindh, to Agur, from whence, in consequence of warlike manifestations made in the camp of Holkar, he was induced to fall back to reinforce Sir Thomas Hislop; and as the Pindarees had encamped close to the Mahrattas, many of Cheetoo's horde, as well as those of the two other leaders, had a share in the battle of Maheidpore, after which Cheetoo betook himself to the western bank of the Seepra, and ascended to the sources of the Chumbul.

From thence, with Kureem Khan, Wasil Mohammed, and the remnants of their three *durras*, he moved north to Jawud, in the province of Ajmere, a town consisting of about 500 houses, surrounded by a stone rampart. There dwelt a chief named Jeswunt Rao Bhao, who, though he held under Scindia, offered them a refuge; but the advance of our troops in that direction overawed him, and he compelled the now luckless Pindarees to depart from his little capital.

In desperation, and knowing not whither to turn, they rode northwards to Chittore, and then separated, each to seek fortune or vengeance, as the chance might be. Wasil Mohammed led his *durra* towards Malwa, with that of Kureem Khan, while Cheetoo sought the frontier of Goojerat.

After many wanderings and doublings, enduring the while incredible hardships from the barren and savage nature of the locality, and the still more savage, but natural, hostility of the Bheels and other wild mountaineers, the Pindarees of Cheetoo, on finding the passes of Goojerat so strongly guarded that to attempt to penetrate them was hopeless, fell back, and, as a last resource, strove to regain their old abode in the upper valley of the Nerbudda, which has its source in the side of a great mountain in Gundwana. To avoid the various posts occupied by our troops, Cheetoo took a most laborious and circuitous route; and, on the 24th of January, 1818, his toilworn horsemen, with their long bamboo spears, were seen ascending the Pass of Kanode.

Within twenty-five miles of that place a detachment of our troops was in Hindia, a populous town with a fort in Candeish. Major Heath, who was in command, at once issued forth in pursuit, and attacking Cheetoo just as night was darkening the mountains, completely dispersed his band, after shooting and bayoneting many. Irrepressible,

however, Cheetoo succeeded in assembling some of his dispersed followers, who, feeding themselves with their swords, continued to infest Malwa, till at last he conceived the idea of making peace with those he hated most on earth—the British; and with this intention sought the intercession of the Rajah of Bhopal, through whom he actually proposed to enter the service of the East India Company, with a body of followers, provided he received a jaghire for their support.

But the Marquis of Hastings would grant him nothing more than simple pardon for the past, and provision for the future in some remote part of Hindostan. Cheetoo disdained such terms as these, and setting off once more with horse and spear, made his way into Candeish and the Deccan, and shared the desperate fortunes of some disorganised bands that had originally followed the banner of the Peishwa, and ere long we shall hear of him again.

The Pindarees of Kureem Khan and Wasil Mohammed had penetrated in three great bands into Malwa, the largest of these being under the command of Kureem's nephew, Namdar Khan. The latter with his force, on the 12th of January, 1818, were bivouacking at Kotra, a village on the bank of the Kalee Sindh, and had no idea of immediate danger; but tidings of their whereabouts reached Sir John Whittington Adams, whose division was named "the Pindarees' direst foe."

According to a memoir of him, by Captain McNaghten of the Bengal Army, "they scarcely ever escaped his detachments, and if they did escape from actual contact with us, it was only to be dispersed, harassed, and destroyed by the inhabitants in detail. The exertions of his troops, especially his Light Brigade, composed of the 5th Cavalry and a Light Infantry battalion, were incessant, and in some respects unparalleled. On one occasion, I remember, that division marched nearly sixty miles in about twenty-two hours, without any kind of food for officers, men, or horses, for nearly two whole days; and on another occasion, Colonel Adams himself, with the heavier part of his force, sustained a pursuit of the enemy for several days, at an average rate of from eighteen to twenty miles per diem."

He now detached a body of Light Cavalry, under Major Clarke, against Namdar Khan. Before day broke on the 13th of January, the major found himself close on the bivouac of the Pindarees, who were either unconscious of danger, or so toil-worn as to be heedless of it. All were sunk in sleep, each man beside his horse, with spear or matchlock. Clarke, resolving to make more sure of success

when dawn came, divided his force in two—one to make the attack, the other to intercept the fugitives in that direction by which he foresaw they would attempt to escape after the attack began. His plan succeeded; the cavalry burst suddenly among them with sword and pistol. They fought and fled, only to have to halt and fight again; and of the whole *durra*, consisting of 1,500 men, barely a third escaped with life.

The men of Wasil Mohammed were, for nine consecutive days, chased from place to place, till, in starvation and despair, they reached, with numbers sorely thinned, the frontier of Bhopal, when an intimation was made to them, through the nabob or rajah of that place, that if they laid down their arms and cast themselves upon the mercy of the Governor-General, their lives would be spared, and their leaders placed in districts at a distance from their usual haunts. Of this offer Namdar Khan hastened to avail himself, and was permitted to settle in Bhopal, the nabob of which became surety for his peaceful behaviour. Wasil Mohammed fled to Gwalior, where he was concealed and protected for a time by Scindia. "The Resident, on ascertaining the fact, called upon Scindia to apprehend him. He refused, as a point of honour, to do so, and wished the Resident to undertake the ungrateful task, but was ultimately compelled to execute it; the Governor-General insisting not only that he should do it himself, but do it in broad day, in order that all India might see that an enemy of the British Government could nowhere find an asylum."

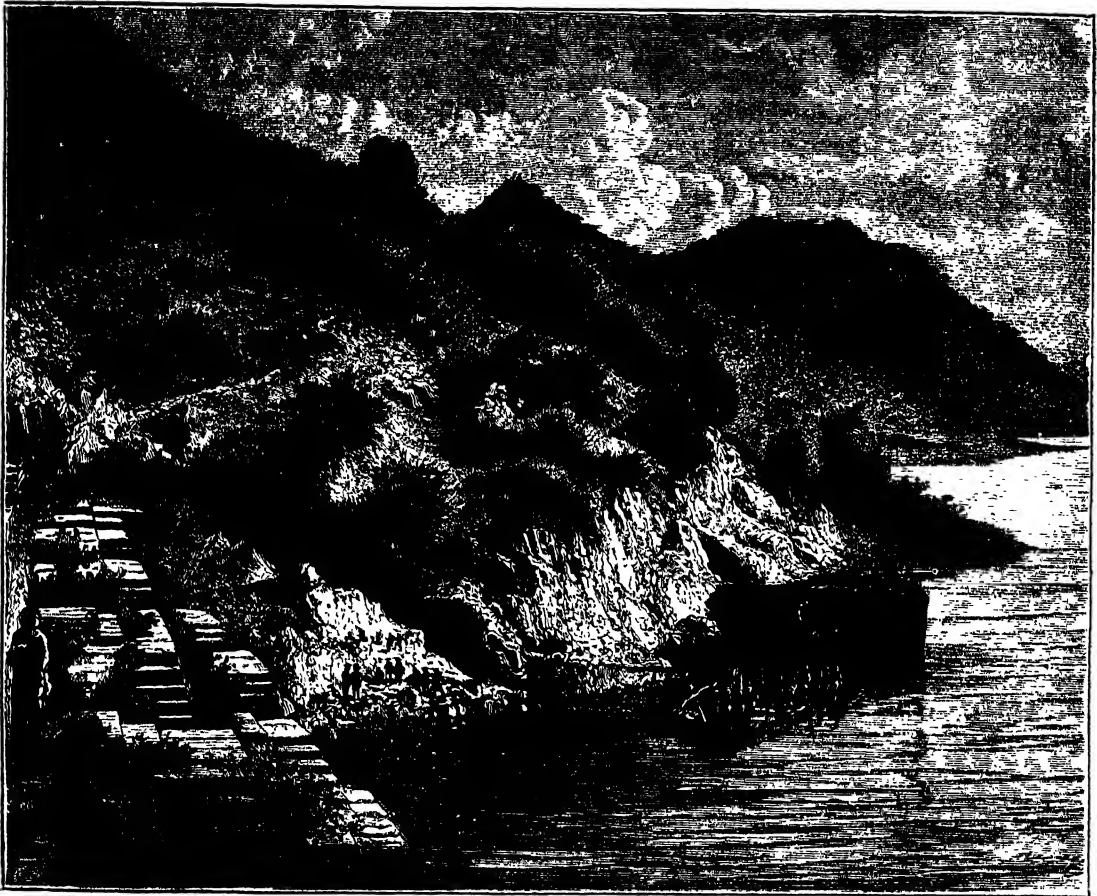
When his *durra* had broken into Malwa, under his nephew Namdar Khan, old Kureem Khan had remained quietly at Jawud, under the protection of Jeswunt Rao Bhao, who was actually in command of a *gole* or division of Scindia's army, which was to co-operate with ours against the Pindarees. Captain Caulfield (afterwards Major-General and C.B.), who had been sent to direct this contingent, was received with the highest honours at Jawud, but soon discovered that its petty rajah was much more disposed to co-operate with the Pindarees than against them. On this being duly reported to the Marquis of Hastings, he ordered him to be proceeded against as an enemy to the State, which was done by a body of troops, under General Brown, before the order reached Jawud.

Captain Caulfield, having in vain demanded the surrender of Kureem Khan and some other Pindaree leaders whom he discovered to be concealed there, repaired at once to the camp of General Brown; and on the 28th of January a squadron of cavalry, which had been sent by that

officer to occupy a pass by which it was suspected that Kureem and others might escape from Jawud, was fired upon from the town wall and the camp of Jeswunt Rao Bhao. This mad act brought matters to a crisis, and Brown ordered his whole line out to attack the enemy's two posts. He blew open the gate of the town by a twelve-pound shot, and then carried it by storm, while Jeswunt Rao Bhao escaped on his fleetest horse; and some places

annum; and we are told that he passed the last years of his stirring life as a peaceful and industrious farmer.

Very different were the fates of Wasil Mohammed and of Cheetoo. The former was placed at Ghazepore on the Ganges; but, in abhorrence of a life so tame, poisoned himself; and the Pindaree war might be considered now at an end, though Cheetoo was still at large.



VIEW OF THE LAKE OF BURDI TALAO, NEAR OODEYPORE.

which he had taken from Oodeypore were now returned to the rana of that place, who was our friend. Among these was Kumulner, one of the strongest hill forts in India.

Disguised and on foot, the wretched Kureem Khan, who was lurking in Jawud during the hurly-burly of the storm, succeeded in escaping unseen to the jungles, where he lived in continual peril from wild animals, till he yielded to his melancholy fate by giving himself up, in his misery, to Sir John Malcolm. By the Governor he was finally settled in Gorrukpoore, on the western frontier, on a jaghire which yielded him about £1,600 per

When flying in hopeless misery before our troops, he was often advised by his followers to capitulate and trust to our mercy; but the free mountain robber was haunted by the obnoxious idea that he would be fettered and transported beyond the seas, and to him this seemed a fate **more** dreadful than death; and his followers, who in succession abandoned him, when they came in and obtained pardon, were wont to relate that in his brief and snatched hours of sleep Cheetoo used continually to murmur, "Kala-pawnee! Kala-pawnee!" ('The Black Sea!')

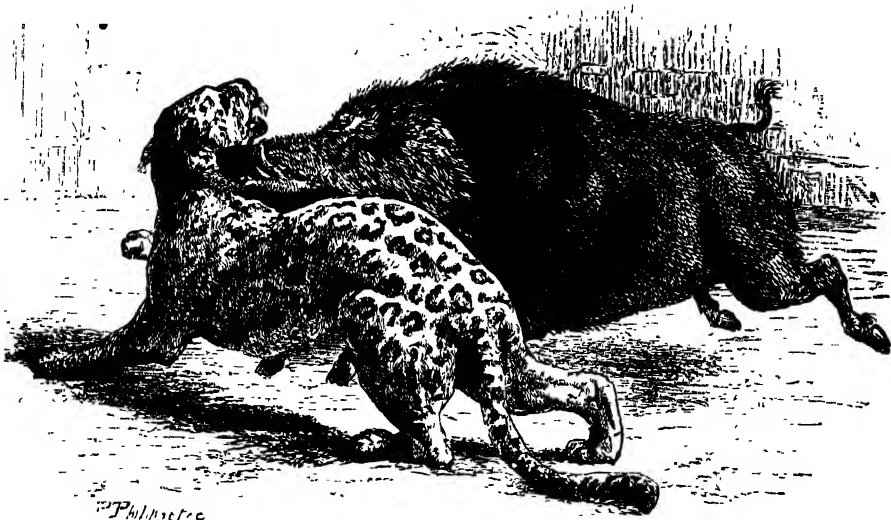
When his offered capitulation through the Nabob of Bhopal failed, there would seem to have been a

plot to seize him in the night ; but for this he was too well prepared, and as he had always horses constantly saddled, and men sleeping with the bridles in their hands, he fled on the spur. He was pursued by some of the nabob's people and by some of Sir John Malcolm's parties, till his distress became such that Rajun, one of his most faithful adherents, abandoned him and submitted to the General.

Yet he subsequently found his way into Candeish and the Deccan, and made common cause with the marauding Arabs and others of the Peishwa's routed army, with whom he became assimilated,

which seemed to fix the identity of the horse's late master.

These circumstances, combined with the known resort of ferocious tigers to that jungle, caused a search to be made for the body, when, at no great distance, some clothes clotted with blood, further on some gnawed fragments of bone, and at last the robber's head entire, with the features in a state to be recognised, were discovered in succession. "The chief's mangled remains," says Princep, "were given to his son for interment, and the miserable fate of one who so shortly before had ridden at the head of twenty thousand horse,



PANTHER AND WILD BOAR.

receiving occasional protection from the Killedar of Aseerghur. His troop was now completely destroyed, yet nothing could crush the spirit of Cheetoo, or induce him to surrender.

But his end, which approached, was a terrible one. Having joined Apa Sahib, he passed the rainy season of 1818 on the high mountains of the Mahadeo range, and on the expulsion of that chief, in the February of the following year, accompanied him to Aseerghur. On being refused admittance there, he took shelter in the adjacent jungle, alone and on horseback. For some days after he was missed, but no one knew what had become of the once-dreaded Pindaree. His horse was at last discovered grazing near the verge of the forest, saddled, bridled, and exactly as it had been when Cheetoo had last ridden it. Upon a search being made, a bag containing 250 rupees was found in the saddle, with some letters of Apa Sahib,

gave an awful lesson of the uncertainty of fortune, and drew pity even from those who had been the victims of his barbarity when living.*

Thus did the last of the Pindaree chiefs outlive even the terrible association to which he belonged.

"There now remains not a spot in India that a Pindaree can call his home," wrote Sir John Malcolm, the chief agent in the destruction of these robbers. "They have been hunted like wild beasts; numbers have been killed; all ruined. Those who adopted their cause have fallen. They were, early in the contest, shunned like a contagion; and even the timid villagers, whom they so recently oppressed, were among the foremost to attack them. Their principal leaders have either died, submitted, or been made captives; while their followers, with the exception of a few whom the liberality and consideration of the British Government have aided

* "Narrative of British India."

to become industrious, are lost in that population from whose dross they originally issued. A minute investigation can only discover these once formidable disturbers, concealed as they now are among the lowest classes, where they are making amends for past atrocities by the benefit which is derived from their labour in restoring trade and cultivation. These freebooters had none of the prejudices of caste, for they belonged to all tribes.

They never had either the pride of soldiers, of family, or of country, so that they were bound by none of those ties which, among many of the communities in India, assume a most indestructible character. Other plunderers may arise from dis-tempered times; but, as a body, the Pindarees are so effectually destroyed that their name is already almost forgotten, though not five years are passed since it spread terror and dismay over all India.*

CHAPTER XCIV.

THE BATTLE OF KOREIGAUM.—CONTINUED FLIGHT OF THE PEISHWA, ETC.

AFTER his defeat at Poonah, on the 16th November, 1817, the Peishwa fled to southern districts, followed up by General Smith, who conceived that he meant to shut himself up in one of his strong hill-forts and then withstand a siege. But, aware that all the petty rajahs of his dominions were ready to take arms in his behalf, he had a very different object in view.

Suspecting, moreover, the Governor-General's intention of supplanting his authority by that of the rajah, who had long been detained as a merc pageant in the fortress of Wusota, not far from Sattarah, he resolved to anticipate the attempt, by dispatching a party to carry him off, with all his family; he thus possessed, and had completely in his power, the persons whose legal claim, being better than his own, might have become formidable in the hands of the Marquis of Hastings. Bajee Rao then turned his steps westward to Pundupoor, in the province of Bejapore.

After garrisoning Poonah, under Colonel Burr, General Smith began his pursuit, and on the 29th of November had to force the Salpa Pass, leading to the table-land in which the Kistna has its source. This pass, Gokla, one of the Peishwa's bravest officers but most evil advisers, attempted to defend; but he was beaten, the pass cleared with ease, and the British troops pressed on. No fighting, but rapid and toilsome marches, ensued, the army of the Peishwa flying in a kind of zig-zag route, while he always kept two long marches in advance. With 5,000 of his best horse, Gokla was hovering near Smith's flanks to seize any advantage that might occur.

On the 6th of December, Bajee Rao was forced

to quit Pundupoor finally, and succeeded in getting round the flank of the pursuing force. Passing mid-way between Seroor and Poonah, he continued his flight northward to Wattoo, on the Nassik road, where he was joined by his long-lost favourite, Trimbukjee Danglia, who brought him a considerable reinforcement of horse and foot.

Nassik seemed to be the point for which he was making. It is a populous city and the chief seat of Brahminical learning in Western India, having temples that are all picturesque and almost innumerable; but the Peishwa lost his opportunity by lingering at Wattoo for General Smith, who, in continuing the pursuit, marched considerably to the east, and proceeded so far on the 26th of December, that when the Peishwa was still at Wattoo, he was to the north-east of him, and advancing in a line, by which his further progress by the Nassik road would certainly be interrupted.

The Peishwa therefore, after wheeling to the north of Wattoo, returned to it, and on the 28th turned suddenly to the south, and retraced his steps to Poonah. Colonel Burr, who commanded in that city, apprehending an attack, solicited a reinforcement from Seroor. Accordingly, Captain Staunton (afterwards Colonel F. F. Staunton, C.B.), of the Bombay army, was detached at six in the evening of the 31st December, with the 2nd battalion of the 1st Bombay Native Infantry, mustering 600 bayonets, twenty-six artillerymen under Lieutenant Chisholm, of the Madras Artillery, and 300 auxiliary horse, under Lieutenant Swanston.

At ten o'clock in the morning of New Year's Day, 1818, Captain Staunton's force, when

* "Memoirs of Central India."

marching along the heights above Koreigaum village, in Bejapore, seventeen miles north-east of Poonah, and situated on the Bima river, saw the army of the Peishwa, consisting of 2,000 horse and 8,000 foot, covering the plain below. The latter portion of the force, being mostly Arabs, were therefore greatly superior to the ordinary Indian infantry. Captain Staunton immediately endeavoured to gain possession of the village, the walls around which would render it inaccessible to cavalry, more especially as it was bounded on the south by the bed of the Bima; and there he hoped to defend himself with his slender force—only 926 men in all—till succour came.

Aware of his intention, the Mahrattas sought to defeat it by pushing forward their infantry. Both parties entered the village about the same time, and a desperate struggle instantly ensued for the possession of it, and this actually continued from noon till sunset. Our troops were the first assailants in their attempts to expel the Arabs, but, failing to achieve this, they were compelled to defend what they had won; while the Arabs kept up a galling matchlock fire from a little fort of which they had possessed themselves, and from the terraced roofs of the houses at the same time, ever and anon rushing on, with the headlong courage of their race, upon the levelled bayonets of the sepoys, and also in the face of showers of grape from two guns, admirably served under Lieutenant Chisholm.

During this most desperate and protracted conflict, our troops, weary with their night march from Seroor, had to encounter, in endless succession, fresh parties of the enemy, whose vast superiority in numbers enabled them to send on large detachments; and, moreover, they had to fight for bare existence the live-long day, without food or water, and ere evening drew nigh their position was perilous in the extreme.

Of their eight officers, Lieutenant Chisholm had fallen; Lieutenants Swanston, Conellan, and Pattinson, with Assistant-Surgeon Wingate, were wounded, so that only Captain Staunton, Lieutenant Innes, and Dr. Wylie remained effective. A great number of the gunners had been killed or wounded, and all who remained untouched were sinking with fatigue. The three last-named officers led more than one desperate charge, and re-captured a gun which the Arabs had taken, and slaughtered them in heaps. Every man fought then with the knowledge that there was nothing left for him to choose except victory or torture and death. Thus the surgeons had to do the duty of combatants.

"The medical officers," said the Division Orders of General Smith, "also led the sepoys to charges

with the bayonet, the nature of the contest not admitting of their attending to their professional duties; and, in such a struggle, the presence of a single European was of the utmost consequence, and seemed to inspire the native soldiers with the usual confidence of success."*

When evening came the chance of success seemed remote indeed. The enemy succeeded in capturing a choultry, in which many of the wounded had been deposited, and a horrid butchery of these ensued. Doctor Wingate was literally chopped into fragments, and a similar fate awaited the other wounded officers, when the building was recovered by a sudden onset, and every Arab in it was put to death. The re-capture of the gun is thus related by Duff:—

"Lieutenant Thomas Pattinson, adjutant of the battalion, lying mortally wounded, being shot through the body, no sooner heard that the gun was taken, than getting up, he called to the grenadiers once more to follow him, and seizing a musket by the muzzle, rushed into the middle of the Arabs, striking them down right and left, until a second ball through his body completely disabled him. Lieutenant Pattinson had been nobly seconded; the sepoys thus led were irresistible; the gun was re-taken, and the dead Arabs, literally lying above each other, proved how desperately it had been defended."†

Near it lay Lieutenant Chisholm, headless; on seeing this, Captain Staunton pointed to the corpse, and told his men that this fate awaited all who fell, dead or alive, into the hands of the enemy; and many who had been talking about surrendering now declared that they would fight to the last. Some water was procured about this time, and most grateful it proved to all, especially to the sepoys, whose lips were baked and dry through biting cartridges the entire day. The enemy now began to relax their efforts, and by nine in the evening had evacuated the village.

Captain Staunton and his brave little band passed the night undisturbed; and when day dawned, the Mahratta army was still in sight, but drawing off towards Poonah. No other attack was made on Koreigaum; for when the gallant, if ferocious, Arabs had failed, it would have been a useless task for the Mahrattas to have made any attempt. They were preparing for a general flight, in consequence of hearing that General Smith was approaching. Unaware of this circumstance, Captain Staunton believed that they were simply taking up a position to intercept his advance on

* *F. I. Military Calendar.*

† "History of the Mahrattas."

Poonah, and therefore he resolved to retrace his steps to Seroor.

In the dark, on the night of the 2nd of January, he sacrificed much of his baggage to provide means for bringing off his wounded, whom he brought away with his guns, and with them reached Seroor by nine a.m. on the morning of the 3rd. Save a little water, the troops had received no food or refreshment since they began their advance on the 31st December. He had lost a third of the battalion and of the artillery in killed and wounded—175 in all; and a third of the auxiliary horse were *hors de combat*, or missing. Among his wounded was the gallant Lieutenant Pattinson, a very powerful man, of six feet seven inches in height, who expired on reaching Seroor; and, during his last moments, was in the deepest distress, from a belief that his favourite regiment had been defeated.*

The Mahratta loss at Koreigaum was above 600 men. Both Gokla and Trimbukjee Danglia were present in directing the attacks; and once the latter fought his way into the heart of the village. While the carnage went on, the cowardly Bajee Rao viewed it safely from a rising ground two miles distant, on the opposite bank of the Bima. There he frequently taunted his officers by asking them, impatiently, where were now their vaunts of cutting up the British, if they were baffled by one battalion. The Rajah of Sattarah, who sat by his side, having put up an *astabgeer* as a shade from the sun, the Peishwa, in great alarm, requested him to put it down, lest the British should send a cannon-ball through it. When the battle was fairly lost, and the advance of Smith became certain, he started off for the south, and never drew bridle till he reached the banks of the Gatpurba river.

The gallant conduct of Captain Staunton and his slender force was much lauded in India and Great Britain. The East India Company voted him a purse of 500 guineas and a splendid sword of honour, with an inscription panegyrising his courage, skill, and devotion to duty; but the rewards bestowed on his brave soldiers bore not the least proportion to their merits.

The place where our slain were buried, near the pretty village of Koreigaum, was long unmarked. The native dead were thrown into an old dry well, and a covering of earth was strewed over them. Chisholm, Wingate, and the Europeans were buried on the bank of the Bima, near the village; and now a handsome pillar of polished granite marks the spot. It is seventy feet in height, and bears, in English, Persian, and Mahratta, the names of the

brave fellows who died at Koreigaum on New Year's Day, 1818.

Greatly to the surprise of the fugitive Peishwa, on reaching the Gatpurba, he found the country thereabout, which he believed to be friendly, already in possession of the inevitable British. General Munro (afterwards Sir Thomas Munro, Bart.), who had been sent from Madras to quiet those districts of the Carnatic which had been ceded in 1817 by the treaty of Poonah, had produced this sudden change by mustering a few regulars, in addition to his own escort, and taking advantage of all the population who were disaffected to the sway of the Mahrattas.

Few officers in India at this time won greater reputation than Munro. The son of a Glasgow merchant, who had been ruined by the revolt of the American colonies, he had joined the Madras Infantry in 1779, and through the Mysore and other wars had fought his way up to the highest commands.* Invested by the Marquis of Hastings, at the crisis referred to, with the rank of Brigadier-General, he had reduced all the fortresses and over-run all the districts to which the Peishwa had now fled; and of the services he rendered his country then, we have a *résumé* in the speech of Mr. Canning, when moving, on the 4th March, in the following year, the vote of thanks in the House of Commons:—"To give some notion of the extent of country over which these actions were distributed, the distance between the most northern and most southern of the captured fortresses is not less than 700 miles. At the southern extremity of this long line of operations, and in a part of the campaign carried on in a district far from public gaze, and without opportunities of early and special notice, was employed a man whose name I should have been sorry to have passed over in silence. I allude to Colonel Thomas Munro, a gentleman whose rare qualifications the House of Commons acknowledged when he was examined at their bar on the renewal of the East India Company's Charter, and than whom Britain never produced a more accomplished statesman, nor India, fertile as it is in heroes, a more skilful soldier. This gentleman, whose occupations for some time past have rather been of a civil and administrative than of a military nature, was called, early in the war, to exercise abilities which, though dormant, had not rusted from disuse. He went into the field with not more than from 500 to 600 men, of whom a very small proportion were Europeans, and marched into the Mahratta territories to take possession of the country which had

* Captain Duff—Princep—*East India Calendar*, &c.

* "Scot. Biog. Dict."

been ceded to us by the treaty of Poonah. The population which he subdued by arms he managed with such address, equity, and wisdom, that he established an empire over their hearts and feelings. Nine forts were surrendered to him, or taken by assault on his way; and at the end of a silent and scarcely observed progress, he emerged from a territory heretofore hostile to the British interest, with an accession instead of a diminution of forces, leaving everything secure and tranquil behind him."

So swift and secret had been the operations of Munro, that the bewildered Peishwa, on reaching the Gatpurba, found himself in quiet British territory, with our standard flying on all the forts. Alarmed by the approach of a column, under Brigadier Theophilus Pritzler (of the 22nd Light Dragoons), he now turned about, and fled northward to the vicinity of Muraj; but the brigadier was close upon his trail, and Gokla sustained considerable loss in a close engagement into which he was forced when covering the retreat of the poltroon, his master. Smith, advancing from the north, precluded the progress of the latter in that direction, and on the junction of the two forces, he again fled south.

Our troops were much exhausted by this harassing pursuit, which resembled a species of hunt, without producing the least advantage; thus Mr. Mountstuart Elphinstone had the merit of recommending another mode of operating. This was to reduce all the strong places of the country, to garrison them, if necessary, then deprive the Peishwa of all means of subsistence, and to reduce Sattarah.

This district forms a part of the table-land of the Deccan, between the parallels of $15^{\circ} 40'$ and $18^{\circ} 13'$, and has a coast-line of twenty miles northward of Goa. Its capital, of the same name, consists of a few houses and huts, grouped together under a range of scarped hills, on the western extremity of which stands its strong fort. It was also a portion of Elphinstone's plan to reinstate Purbah Sing as a protected rajah over Sattarah, the nominal capital of the Mahratta empire.

The fortress surrendered to General Smith, when summoned on the 10th of February; and other places were in progress of reduction, when the Peishwa, maddened by the instalment of the Rajah of Sattarah as an independent sovereign, and the complete extinction of his own rule by the annexation of his territories to those of the Company, made some rash movements, which enabled General Smith, on the 20th of February, 1818, to fall upon him at Ashta, in the province of Bejapore, at the head of the 2nd and 7th Madras Cavalry and two squadrons of H.M.'s. 22nd Light Dragoons.

The dastardly Bajee Rao leaped from his palanquin the moment he heard the first shot, threw himself into the saddle, and fled; but Gokla, his general—a man of better heart—seeing that he must either fight or lose the baggage, made a bold stand, outflanked Smith's slender force, and at one moment threatened its rear by an entire *gole*, or column, of Mahratta horse; but the two British squadrons went "threes about," and charged through and through, cutting down Gokla in the encounter. He fell from his saddle, dead. From that moment all was wild confusion. Every mass of Mahratta cavalry dispersed, or seemed to melt away, as our cavalry approached them. A sham resistance was offered at the camp, but our troopers went slashing on; the Mahrattas were put to flight and great booty captured, including twelve elephants and fifty-seven camels.

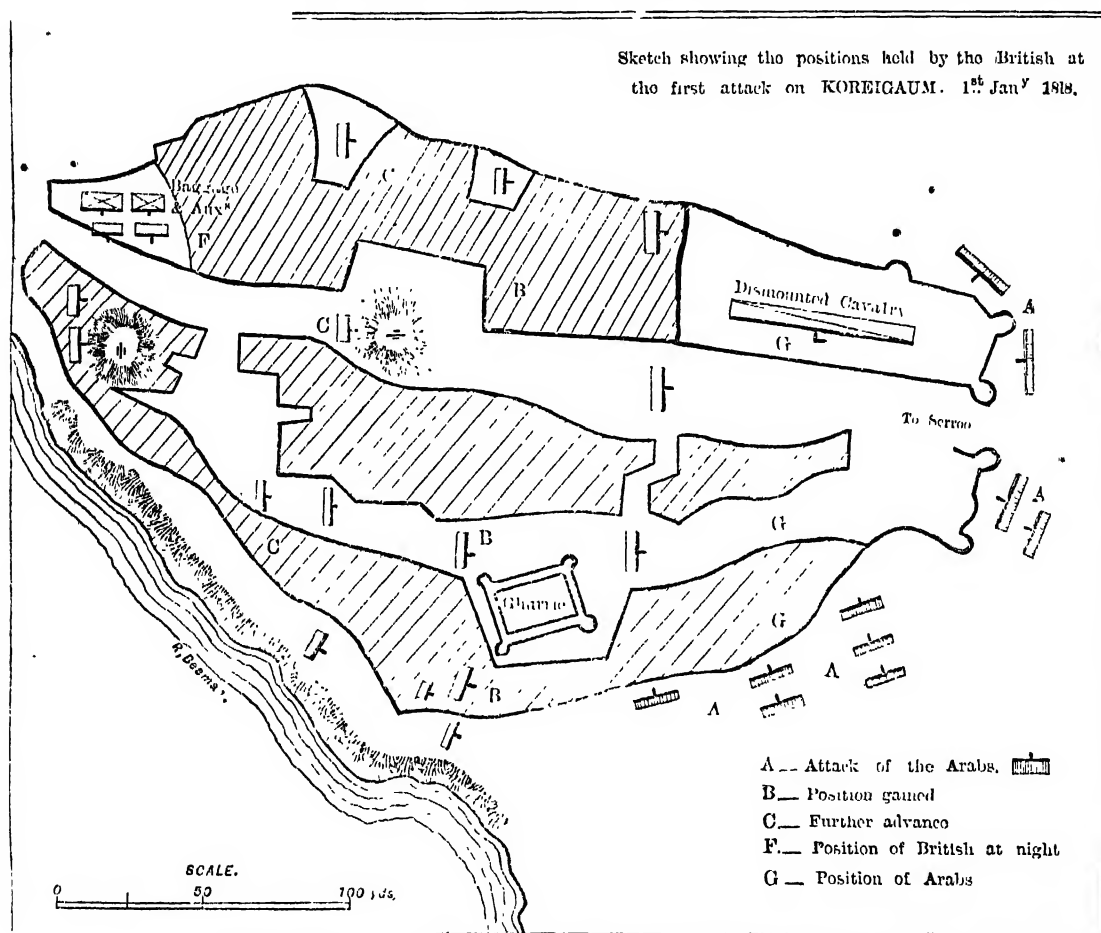
General Smith was wounded in the head, and Lieutenant R. Warrand, of the 22nd Dragoons, had a sabre-cut from Gokla, who fought desperately in the *mêlée*, and wounded many of our men before he was cut down. Our casualties were only eighteen. The remnant of the Peishwa's army now fled northward; but his people were losing all hope, and daily desertions thinned his toil-worn ranks. The ease with which he eluded us now made our officers conceive that there was something wrong or defective in their mode of pursuit; and, at the recommendation of Mr. Elphinstone, who had been appointed commissioner, with full powers to settle all the territory that had formerly belonged to the Peishwa, it was resolved to distribute the troops anew, to employ the infantry and artillery in the reduction of the forts, and the cavalry, with the galloper guns, for the pursuit alone.

With the former force, Brigadier Pritzler captured in quick succession the strongholds of Vizierghur, Singhur, and Poorundhur, with many minor places; while Colonel Prother, who had advanced with a division from Bombay, took all the forts in the Southern Concan, and General Munro, who had already possessed himself of all the country southward from the Malpurba, which rises in the Western Ghauts, and is deemed the southern boundary of the Deccan, captured the forts of Badamy and of Bhagulkote; and then, in consequence of a succession of conquests so unprecedented, all the chief jaghirdars of the Mahrattas, made their submission to Great Britain.

General Smith, after remaining a few days with Mr. Elphinstone for the complete instalment of the rajah at Sattarah, now renewed the pursuit of the Peishwa, with his flying column, eastward beyond the Bima as far as Sholapore. He set out on the

13th of February, and on the 19th he reached Yellapur. There he learned that the Peishwa was turning westward, and might be intercepted somewhere about Punderpore, in the well-wooded country on the left bank of the Bima. Accordingly he made a forced night march in that direction, but only to find that the Peishwa had suddenly changed his plans, and had gone twenty miles

Adams had with him only one regiment of native cavalry and some horse artillery, according to one account; "two brigades of horse artillery, six-pounders, two regiments of cavalry, a corps of irregular horse, and a light infantry battalion," according to the memoir of him by Captain McNaghten. The scene of the encounter was hilly, jungly, and stony, and therefore ill-adapted



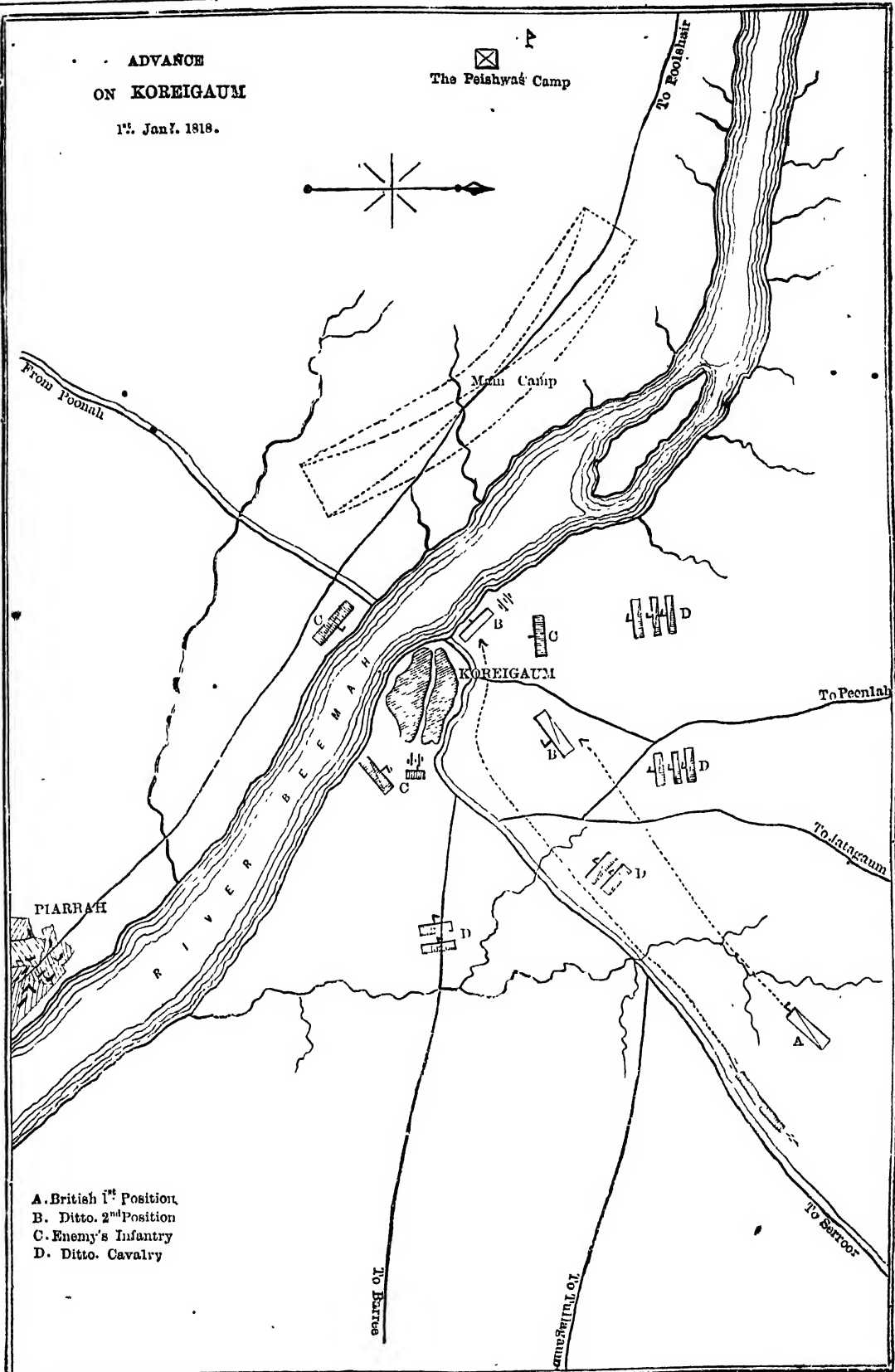
PLAN OF BRITISH POSITIONS AT THE FIRST ATTACK ON KOREIGAUM.

north to Ashta, where he had halted, all unconscious of the vicinity of any British troops.

In his wanderings the now wretched Peishwa, on the 1st April, appeared on the banks of the Werda; but as his van was crossing that river, it was driven back by a detachment under Colonel Scott. In great alarm and perplexity, Bajee Rao now tried to cross at another point, but there he was met by Colonel Adams, who, without waiting for Brigadier Doveton, with whom he was co-operating, followed the Mahrattas with all speed, and came up with them near Soonee (or Sewanee), in the province of Berar, on the 17th of April.

to the operations of cavalry. Adams formed his troops in order of attack, while the horse artillery opened fire with great effect, covered by the light battalion, under a fusillade of matchlocks.

Observing that the strongest column of the enemy was beginning to reel under the fire of grape, he charged it, at the head of the 5th Cavalry, and though its strength was great, the fury of the charge decided the fate of the day. Though the Mahrattas recoiled before that handful of men, their retreat was for some time neither continual nor general; but ultimately they gave way on all sides, and fled through the jungles, leaving



PLAN OF THE ADVANCE ON KOREIGAUM.

the Peishwa's sorely-diminished treasure, three elephants, 200 camels, and the last five guns he possessed there, with 1,000 dead on the field; while the loss of Adams was only two men. As usual, on the first sign of fighting, Bajee Rao had mounted his horse and fled he scarcely knew whither. The elephants, known to be those on which his treasure was usually conveyed, were expected to yield a rich booty; but some one had anticipated the captors in the confusion, as only 11,000 rupees were found. General Doveton, who was only twelve miles distant, and could hear the noise of the cannon, immediately took up the pursuit. Dividing his force into two brigades, for five consecutive days and nights he continued upon the track of the Mahratta army, and during that time famine and fatigue did more than the sword to cut up the troops of the Peishwa, so that soon after he had little more than a third left of those who encamped with him at Soonee.

In his camp, on the 17th of April, Adams complimented, in General Orders, the division under his command on "the severe blow which was given to the Peishwa's whole force," adding that, had the country been favourable for the movements of cavalry, a most decided close of the contest must have been the result.

While the pursuit of the Peishwa was in progress, the restless Apa Sahib was working mischief elsewhere.

Though not sure of the sound policy of what he did, the Marquis of Hastings had ratified the treaty by which that prince had been restored to the throne of Nagpore. It might have been supposed that the narrow escape he had of deposition would have led him to avoid all future collision with Britain, and that if he were without gratitude, he might have had at least a sense of his own selfish interests. He seemed to possess neither. He never recalled the secret orders he had issued to the rajahs among the mountains, whom he had desired to summon their armed retinues, and throw every obstacle in the way of our troops; but after Lord Hastings had signed the treaty, he actually ordered the commanders of the various forts and districts which had been ceded to us to defy every summons to surrender them.

Thus, on the 18th January, 1818, little more than a week after Apa had returned to his palace, he instructed the Killedar of Chanda to beat up for recruits, and to enlist Arabs, in direct defiance of a clause in the treaty; and a little later, it was discovered that when Gunpoot Rao joined the Peishwa, he was accompanied by a vakeel, who was authorised to invite a mutual confederation

against the British power. As India is ever full of treachery, the Resident, when once his suspicions were aroused, obtained with ease all necessary evidence, not only from Ramchundur Waugh and Nagoo Punt, the ministers, but from the blundering rajah himself, partly through them, to prove that he had sought for, and even expected, assistance from the Peishwa Bajee Rao.

Although such an expectation was somewhat delusive, certain movements of the Peishwa at that time (and when his affairs had not become so desperate) in the direction of Chanda—which was Apa Sahib's most powerful stronghold, and to which he seemed about to repair from Nagpore—so startled Mr. Jenkins that, acting upon his own responsibility, he arrested him together with his two favourite ministers. After this, the proofs of their intended revolt rapidly grew on every hand; and among other crimes, it now appeared that Pursajee Bhonsla, the late rajah, instead of dying a natural death, as was pretended, had perished under the hands of Apa Sahib's hired assassins.

So while this false prince, on whose alliance he had counted, was a prisoner, the Peishwa was continuing his flight from place to place. We have mentioned the restoration of his victim, the Rajah of Sattarah. The fortress in which he was detained prisoner was deemed one of the strongest places in India, and certainly must have been so, prior to the invention of artillery; the latter now rendered that strength unavailing, as the walls were commanded by a hill, named Old Wusota. It had been attacked on the 31st March, 1818; the guns, when placed on this height, opened with such effect that one day's cannonading enforced a surrender, and valuables to the amount of three lacs were found in the fortress and restored to the rajah, to whose family they had belonged.

Two British officers, who had been taken prisoners in Poonah at the first commencement of hostilities, were released here. They were Lieutenants Hunter and Morrison, who were discovered in a dreary dungeon, clad only in dresses of coarse unbleached cotton, made in a fashion neither European nor Indian, but partaking of the nature of both. Their beards had grown, says Captain Duff, and their appearance was, as may be imagined, pitiable and extraordinary; they had been kept in perfect ignorance of the advance of their countrymen and the progress of the war. The noise of the firing, and driving in the outposts round Wusota, had been represented by the guard as an attack by some insurgents, and it was only when they heard the roar of the shells bursting

overhead, "the most joyful sound that had reached their ears for five dreary months," that they began to suspect the hour of deliverance was at hand.*

It was on the 11th of April, shortly after the fall of this place, that the rajah was seated on his throne, and then Smith pursued the Peishwa as far as Sholapore.

Several who have written on India have, with some justice, questioned the policy of the Marquis of Hastings in erecting, in the person of the rajah, a new Mahratta power, after he had crushed that of the Peishwa. "Had it been what it professed to be," says one, "a real sovereignty, it might have excited expectations which it was never meant to gratify, and kept alive recollections which it would have been safer to suppress. As it was only a nominal sovereignty, the rajah continued to be, as formerly, little better than a pageant."

Captain James Grant Duff was the officer selected by Mr. Elphinstone to arrange the form, and as agent to exercise the powers, of the newly-erected government. He had thus the most ample opportunity of weighing well the event, and the issue of it; and though he wrote with reserve in his Mahratta history, his tone indicates an opinion far from favourable. Pturbah Sing, the restored rajah, was in his twenty-seventh year, and was of a good disposition, and naturally intelligent; he was, however, "bred amongst intrigue, surrounded by men of profligate character, and ignorant of everything but the etiquette and parade of a court. His whole family entertained the most extravagant ideas of their own consequence, and their expectations were proportionate; so that, for a time, the bounty which they experienced was not duly appreciated."

Eventually the rajah was bound by a treaty to hold his territories in subordinate co-operation with the British Government. These extended between the Wurna and the Neera, from the Syadree mountains, a range of the Western Ghats on the west, to Punderpoor, on the frontier of the Deccan, and yielded a revenue estimated at thirteen lacs, 75,000 rupees, or £137,500 sterling, together with three lacs permanently alienated, and three more granted in jaghiren, making a total aggregate of £200,000, from lands, all of which, in the event of direct heirs failing, were to become an integral portion of the fast-growing British Empire in India.

On the 13th of April, Brigadier Pritzler, after reducing the forts north of Poonah, placed himself under General Munro, thus enabling that officer to accomplish a design which he had in view for some

time—to attack some infantry and guns which the Peishwa, in order to accelerate his flight, had been compelled to leave behind him at Sholapore, the capital of a district, part of which belonged to the Nizam and part to the Mahrattas, and the whole of which lies between the Kistna and the Bima.

Situated on the bank of the former stream, the town—once a place of considerable wealth, and when taken by the army of Aurungzebe from the King of Bejapore, deemed the strongest bulwark of the capital towards Ahmednuggur—was well fortified when Pritzler's columns came before it, on the 9th of May.

The pettah of Sholapore was of irregular form, but measured about 1,200 yards each way, and had twenty-four circular bastions. In its south-west angle stood the fort, also of irregular form, measuring about 350 yards each way, and armed with sixteen round bastions. Its gate opened on the north towards the pettah, and a great marsh or tank lay on its south. The road from Poonah entered it on the west, bordered by rows of trees, and several topes or thickets gave a beauty to the vicinity of the decaying town, which was strongly garrisoned by Arabs in the service of the Peishwa.

In addition to these, when our troops came before it on the 9th of May, a body of his infantry, with eleven field-pieces, were posted in rear of the fort, and to the south of the tank.

These formed eight columns in four divisions, which ultimately advanced, and by a considerable circuit took post with their guns in front, on the north-eastward of the pettah, as if to menace the left flank of Sir Thomas Munro, who threw forward his reserve of cavalry and infantry to hold them in check.

The attacking force, formed in two columns, advanced against the northern face of the pettah, one by the road which leads to Toliapore, and the other on its left, collaterally, both with bayonets fixed, making a rush straight against the walls. On the 10th the latter were taken by storm, and Sir Thomas Munro, perceiving that the Mahrattas were stealing off in small parties from the camp, detached Pritzler after them, with three troops of his own regiment, the 22nd Dragoons, and 400 other horse, who overtook them at the distance of three miles, when marching in close column. At his approach they broke, threw aside their arms, and dispersed—all, at least, save the Arabs among them, who fought manfully to the last, and perished in great numbers under the sabres of our cavalry.

After undergoing one day's cannonade, the fort surrendered on the 15th of May, and with it there fell into our hands thirty-seven pieces of cannon, the

* "Hist. of the Mahrattas," 3 vols., 1826.

whole of the artillery that remained of the Peishwa's armament. Our losses in these operations were ninety-seven killed and wounded, while those of the enemy were more than 800 killed alone.

And now, about this time, Colonel Whittington Adams, on learning that Generals Smith and

Doveton were in close pursuit of the Peishwa, with every prospect of being successful without his aid, marched eastward with his column, and on the 9th of May sat down before the fortress of Chanda, the chief stronghold of the erring Apa, the Rajah of Nagpore.

CHAPTER XCV.

CAPTURE OF CHANDA AND RIAGHUR.—THE KILLEDAR OF TALNERE.

THE district of Chanda, in Gundwana, is a level and sandy tract, about eighty miles in length by sixty in breadth; and its chief town, frequently called Turk-Chanda, stands five miles from the confluence of the Wurda and Paingunga rivers. It is six miles in circumference, and surrounded by a cut freestone wall, from fifteen to twenty feet in height, flanked at intervals with round towers of sufficient size and strength to carry the heaviest guns of those days. In 1803 it contained 5,000 mansions, but about four years after the siege only 2,500. In the centre towered the citadel, on the summit of a commanding height.

The poisoning of the wells along his line of march served to show Colonel Adams that the commander of Chanda would hold out to the last, with his garrison of 3,000 men. He appeared before it in the burning month of May; but as the guns at his disposal consisted of only three eighteen-pounders, he deemed it advisable to send a summons of surrender, embracing very serviceable terms to the garrison, who, as their prince Apa Sahib was a prisoner now, would be permitted to march out with their arms and private property. The killedar had the cruel hardihood to seize the hircarah who bore the terms, and had him blown from the mouth of a cannon. This atrocity was dearly visited upon the city in the end.

Colonel Adams was not a man to suffer feelings of personal indignation to hurry him into measures wanting in military precision, and knowing the smallness of his means in proportion to the end they had to accomplish, he resolved to proceed carefully and circumspectly. Thus, the day after his arrival he spent in reconnoitring, and for this purpose set out accompanied by a battalion of light infantry, a squadron of the 5th Cavalry, and Captain Rodber's troop of horse artillery.

He found that access to Chanda was rendered difficult on the north by a large and dense jungle, and in other directions by the Jurputi and Erace, two affluents of the Wurda, which run along its eastern and western fronts, and meet at the distance of 400 yards to the south. Colonel Adams took up his position in this last direction, selecting the south-east angle as the point to be attacked. In the course of the first day's reconnoissance he had a smart skirmish close to the walls, at a point where he found it necessary to approach for the purpose of having a view in detail. "We were close enough to draw the countenances of the enemy as they looked over the parapet," wrote an officer who was present, "and kept a brisk matchlock fire on us, varied with rockets, which last weapon they did not, however, very skilfully direct; and when, after awhile, the colonel ordered the light infantry to take cover (seeing that the enemy were endeavouring to get a gun to bear), he was almost the only individual advanced who remained perfectly exposed to the fire throughout,—making his observations with perfect coolness and leisure, and narrowly escaping at least one hostile bullet, as I can testify."*

Next day, Adams made another reconnoissance, and took with him a Madras battalion in lieu of the Bengal Light Infantry. Several were killed or wounded on this day. Among the former was Dr. Anderson, of the 10th Native Infantry, through whose body a cannon-ball passed, after killing two or three sepoys in its way; and Adams had a narrow escape from another. Having selected a point for breaching, opposite a little village called Lall Pet, at 400 yards distance from the walls, the whole force was judiciously encamped, and the light battalion, under Captain Doveton, was ordered to keep possession,

* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1837.

of the village, which it held for eight days and nights, enduring meanwhile the greatest fatigue.

The season was one of insufferable heat; the only shelter proved to be some half-ruined huts; neither officers nor men could take off their accoutrements for a moment, and provisions could be cooked for but a few at a time. Day and night they were assailed by the fire of the besieged, roused by alarms of sallies, and by sudden outbursts of blue lights that shed a ghastly glare over everything—the walls, the towers, the jungle, and the two streams. Major Goreham, of the Madras Artillery, who commanded at the battery, died from the mere effects of the sun. The guns were ultimately placed at 250 yards from the walls, and effected a breach.

On the morning of the 20th of May it was resolved to assault the place. The stormers were formed in two columns, one of Bengal, the other of Madras troops, and the whole were commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Scott, who volunteered for this service, and led them on in splendid order. The space between the village of Lall Pet and the foot of the breach was composed of loose dry soil, and the smallness of the artillery resources having rendered it impossible to cripple the defences fully, the columns were enfiladed during their necessarily slow progress through the heavy sand.

The balls from the three eighteen-pounders, passing about a yard over the heads of the stormers, kept the breach clear till the ladders were planted; and as they were then out of the enfilading fire, there was a pause for a few moments in the roar of the musketry. Colonel Adams, who stood in the breaching battery to oversee the attack, was wounded, but never left his post; and he was not kept long in anxiety, "for soon the deadly struggle at the breach commenced," says Captain McNaghten; "the sharp short clang of the musket and matchlock now mingled with the boom of the well-served cannon; the summit was attained after a fierce resistance, but with some serious loss on our side both of officers and men."

In a few minutes Adams saw the British colours waving on the walls, and the columns, after swarming up the breach, diverging to the right and left, with their bayonets flashing in the morning sunshine. The garrison defended every tower and bastion to the last; and the killedar knowing that, if taken alive, he would be hanged for his outrage on the flag of truce, fought with desperate resolution till he was shot down. On his fall the garrison capitulated. The town was then given up to plunder, and a vast number of its defenders were put to the sword—one account says 500. On

the walls of Chanda were found sixty pieces of cannon (some of enormous calibre), and numerous jingalls. For its capture the troops received six months' batta.

In a private letter to Colonel Adams, the Governor-General observed:—"That your campaign has closed so brilliantly by the capture of Chanda, is a matter of true gratification to me. You have merited every triumph by the activity and judgment of your exertions throughout the campaign, and this last event occurred fitly to claim the tribute of applause for you."

The General Order of Government, on the 18th of June, 1818, stated that "the skill with which Lieutenant-Colonel Adams made a scanty supply of heavy ordnance suffice for the capture of a strong fortress, powerfully garrisoned, fitly crowns the conduct that had distinguished him during antecedent operations."*

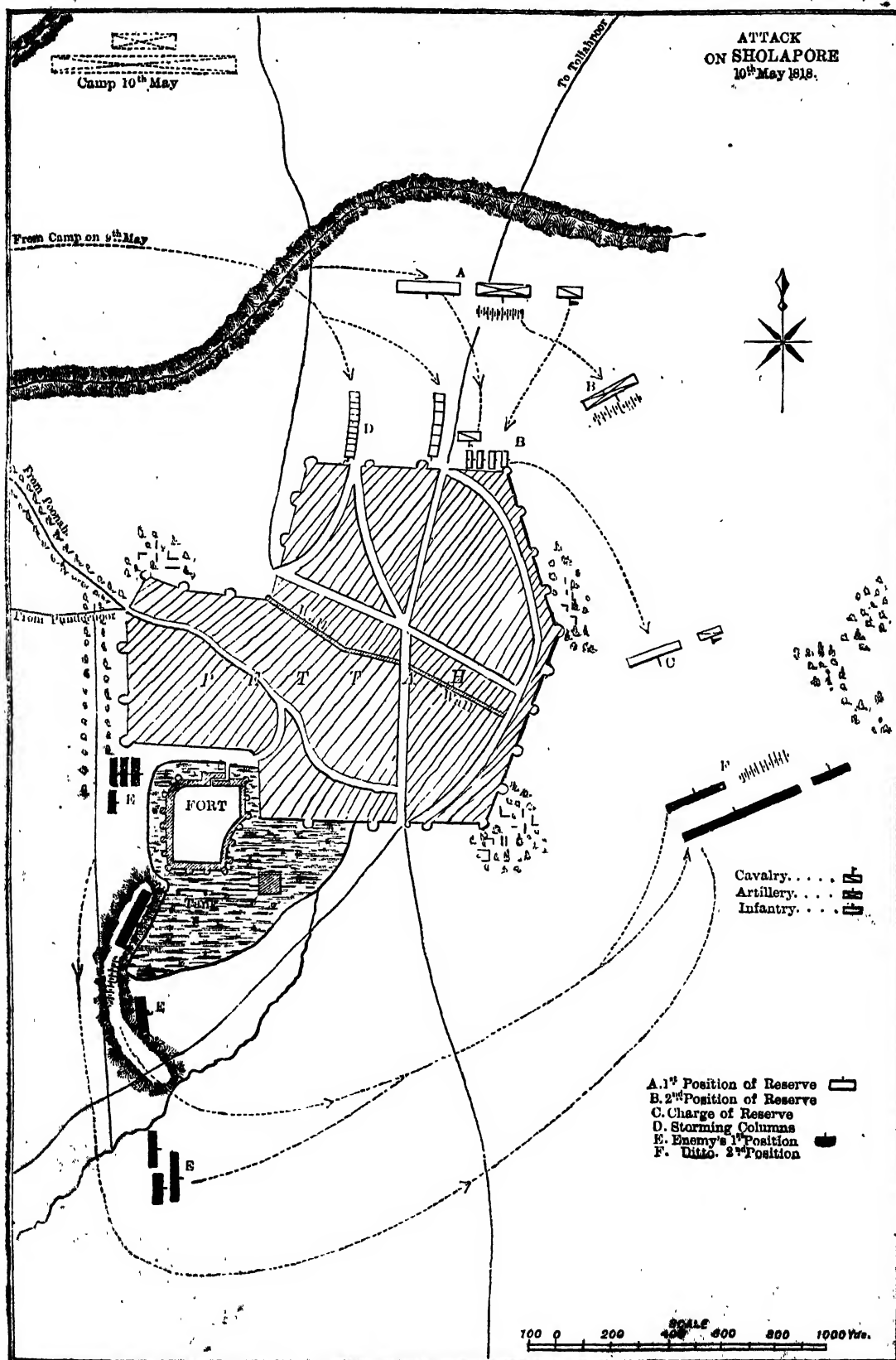
After the fall of Chanda, Colonel Adams was returning to the cantonment of Hoshungabad, when the deadly cholera broke out among his troops, and in a few days he lost more men by it than by all the operations of the war; but the scourge was now raging all over India, from Cape Comorin to the snowy Himalayas.

In the Concan, and the adjacent country, both below and above the Ghauts, Colonel Prother, at the head of some Bombay troops, reduced several strongholds. One of these, named Raighur, enjoyed among the Mahrattas the usual reputation of being impregnable. It stood among the mountains, thirty-two miles distant from Poonah, and had been selected by the Peishwas as the chief place for depositing their treasures. When Colonel Prother appeared before it, in April, 1818, it was the residence of Varanessé Bhai, the wife of the fugitive Peishwa, who had chosen it as the most secure place in his dominions, and placed in it a garrison of 1,000 picked Arabs.

The pettah was captured on the 24th of April, after Prother got his guns and mortars into position, but with great difficulty, and then the bombardment of the fortress began. Prior to doing so, he had offered a safe-conduct to the Bhai and all her women; but the killedar concealed this from her, and the shells continued to be thrown in, with such destructive effect, for fourteen days, that the whole place was ruined. At last, one set fire to the palace of the Bhai, who insisted on a surrender. Then the garrison capitulated, and were permitted to depart with their arms and private property.

Flitting from place to place, the Peishwa was still

* *London Gazette*, 3rd Aug., 1818.



uncaptured ; but as the chief objects of the campaign had been accomplished, the Governor-General resolved to reduce his great armaments. Accordingly, the army of the Deccan was first broken up ; and so early as the middle of January, 1818, Sir Thomas Hislop began his southward march with the first division, after reinforcing the third, which was to remain with Sir John Malcolm

was instantly sent to the killedar, warning him that, if resistance were offered, he and his garrison, as acting in defiance to the orders of his sovereign, who had ceded the fort and district, and in defiance of the British Government, to which it now belonged, would be treated as rebels.

The killedar refused to receive Sir Thomas Hislop's letter, but the contents of it were com-



VIEW OF THE "DUKE'S NOSE" IN THE GHATS, NEAR KHANDALLAH.

in Malwa. After traversing the country between the Nerbudda and the Tapti, on the 27th of February he arrived at Talner, a town and fortress belonging to Holkar, and formerly the capital of the Sultans of the Adil Shahy dynasty in the fifteenth century.

As it was one of the places which Holkar had ceded by treaty, no difficulty was anticipated in obtaining possession of it ; and the baggage, preceding the division, advanced into the plain without any danger being suspected, till a cannon-shot was fired at it from the fort, which is all of stone, with great bastions of considerable height. A summons

communicated to him verbally ; he seemed, however, blindly bent on a stubborn resistance, and of this he gave undoubted proof by commencing a match-lock fire, which killed and wounded many British soldiers.

The message to the killedar had been sent about seven in the morning ; and it was intimated to him that the order of Holkar for the surrender of the fort was in possession of Sir Thomas Hislop, who would show it to any person whom he might send to examine it. The messenger was detained ; and noon having passed without any reply coming, Hislop got his guns into position, and opened fire

on Talnere, at the same time instructing the Deputy Adjutant-General, Colonel Alexander McGregor Murray, "that nothing less than an unconditional surrender would be received; that the lives of the garrison should be guaranteed; that no promise whatever could be given the killedar for his, but that he would be held personally answerable for his acts."

At three in the afternoon a messenger came from the fortress to ask whether terms could be given. Colonel Murray replied according to his instructions; and an hour having passed without any appearance of a surrender, the detachments selected for the assault moved to the front. These consisted of the flank companies of the 1st Royal Scots and of the Madras European Regiment, under Major John P. Gordon, of the former corps, who had with him two six-pounders to blow open the outer gate. This was unnecessary, as the wall about the gate was so ruinous that the stormers had a ready access.

They found a second gate open, and were rushing at a third, when a number of unarmed persons, who were apparently attempting to escape, issued from a wicket, and were made prisoners. At a third and fourth Gordon met no resistance; but he came upon a fifth, the wicket of which was open, with 300 Arabs, under arms, behind it. There some kind of parley took place, the Arabs demanding certain terms, and the assailants insisting on an unconditional surrender, but with an assurance that their lives would be spared. It has been considered probable that the parties could not understand each other; but Colonel Murray and Major Gordon, conceiving that the surrender was acquiesced in, passed through the wicket, attended by three grenadiers of the Royal Scots. No sooner were they within it than, from some cause never explained—some attributing it to Indian treachery, some to misconception, and others to a rash attempt to disarm the Arab guard—Major Gordon and the three grenadiers were instantly slain, and Colonel Murray fell towards the wicket, covered with wounds.

The enemy attempted to close it, but were prevented by a grenadier of the Royal Scots, who thrust his musket into the aperture. Lieutenant-Colonel Macintosh and Captain McCraith, by main strength of arm, forced the wicket open, and it was held so while the latter, with one hand, dragged Murray through, and kept the Arabs at bay with his sword by the other. A fire was then poured through the wicket, which cleared the way sufficiently for the now infuriated Scots Grenadiers, under Captain McGregor, who led the stormers, to

enter, when the fort was carried by assault. The captain was killed, and his brother, Lieutenant John McGregor, received a severe wound when defending his dead body. Every man in the place was put to the sword, and the killedar was hanged from one of the bastions on the same evening.*

The storming party, in making this general massacre, were actuated by the idea that they had encountered treachery, and had their fallen comrades to avenge; but the legal right to hang the killedar as a rebel to George III. was questioned, and actually excited some sensation in London, where it was severely commented upon in the Court of Directors, and by both Houses of Parliament, when passing votes of thanks to Sir Thomas Hislop and the army of the Deccan; and an explanation of the circumstance was required at his hands.

This he gave in a long despatch to the Governor-General on the 10th September in the following year, which details but briefly the evidence on which the sentence rested:—"At the investigation I attended, and was assisted by your lordship's political agent (Captain Briggs) and the Adjutant-General (Colonel Conway). Evidence was taken, in the killedar's presence, by which it appeared that my communication sent to him in the morning had been delivered, and understood by him and several others in the fort; that he was perfectly aware of the cession by Holkar, and that it was publicly known; that he was entreated by several persons not to resist in such a cause, but that he was resolved to do so, till death; his resistance and exposing himself to an assault was therefore regulated by his own free will; he was sensible of his guilt, and had nothing to urge in his favour. The result of the inquiry was the unanimous opinion (after the witnesses had been heard, and the killedar had been asked what he had to say in his defence, to which he replied, 'Nothing') that the whole of his proceedings became subject to capital punishment, which every consideration of justice and humanity demanded should be inflicted on the spot."

Beveridge, a Scottish advocate, in his *Indian History*, considers it legally impossible to justify the act. "The killedar," says he, "was not implicated in the supposed treachery of the garrison at the fifth gate, for he had previously surrendered, or been made prisoner; nor could he be said in strict truth to have stood an assault, as he had laid aside his arms and become a prisoner before the storming party encountered any real opposition.

* "Hist. Rec. 1st Royal Scots," p. 224.

The only grounds, therefore, on which the sentence admits of any plausible vindication are, that his original resistance was rebellion, and that, in order to prevent that rebellion from spreading, it was necessary to strike terror by making a signal example. Now, it is not to be denied that the killedar, in resisting the orders of his sovereign to deliver up the fort, was technically a rebel; but, in order to fix the amount of guilt which he thus incurred, it is necessary to remember that at this period Holkar himself was merely a child, and the whole powers of government were in the hands of contending factions. The killedar, who was a man of rank, the uncle of Balaram Seit, the late prime minister of Toolasi Baee, belonged to one of those factions, which had long possessed the ascendant, had only lately lost it, and were in hopes of being able to regain it. In these circumstances, rebellion, in the ordinary sense of the term, was impossible. The order to surrender the fort, though it bore the name of Holkar, must have been viewed by the killedar as only the order of the faction to which he was opposed; and it was, therefore, preposterous in the extreme for a third party to step in and inflict the punishment of rebellion on a leader of one of the factions for refusing to recognise, and yield implicit obedience to, the orders issued by another. The sentence being thus unjust cannot have been politic, and hence the other ground of vindication—the expediency of making an example—hardly requires to be discussed. It may be true, as Sir Thomas Hislop alleged, that other killedars, from whom resistance might have been anticipated, immediately yielded up their forts; but any advantage thus obtained must have been more than counterbalanced by the opinion which prevailed among the native troops and people generally, that the killedar had suffered wrongfully, and that the British Government, in sanctioning his execution, had stained their reputation for moderation and justice."

Be all this as it may, human life, always of little account in European wars, is still held even less so in India; and, no doubt, the terrible example made at Talnere led to the submission, upon the first summons, of the commanders of Gaulnah, Chandore,

and other much stronger forts, as soon as they were shown Holkar's orders—or those in his name—to admit the British troops.*

Among other places taken from the Peishwa by Sir Thomas Munro was Belgaum. The town stands on an eminence, and about that time contained 1,400 houses, substantially built of the ochrey gravel which abounds in that part of Bejapore. The fort was of great strength, an irregular oval, about a mile and a half in circumference, situated in the plain, and surrounded by a granite wall, the height of which varied from thirty-five to sixty feet. Outside this was a broad wet ditch, cut to a great depth in the solid rock; and in its interior on the cavaliers are—or were—mounted enormous Mahratta guns, built of iron, bars and rings. It had three handsome gateways, all strongly defended.

The garrison consisted of 1,600 men, with thirty-six guns on the works, and a great store of all the munitions of war; but they surrendered after twenty days of open trenches, and after only twenty of them had been killed and fifty wounded. Munro's force consisted of seven troops of cavalry, nineteen companies of infantry and pioneers, with eight heavy guns. His casualties were twenty-three killed and wounded. The immediate cause of the surrender was singular.

The killedar, though an old Mahratta warrior, had never seen operations by sapping, and being unable to comprehend its nature, inquired of a native officer, whom he had taken prisoner, "What was the meaning of that moving wall?" The reply was that the British troops were digging a mine. "You saw them some days since a long way off," added the prisoner; "they are now gradually approaching the crest of the glacis; and in three days more you will see them suddenly rise up in the centre of the fort, under your very feet, to blow you to the devil."

The old man credited the story, and surrendered at discretion. It was considered fortunate that he did so, as the place could not have been reduced without a serious loss of life.

* Col. Blacker's "Mem. Operations of the Army in India." Lake's "Sieges of the Madras Army," &c.

CHAPTER XCVI.

OPERATIONS IN CANDEISH.—FALL OF MALLIGAUM.—APA SAHIB MADE PRISONER, BUT ESCAPES.—
SURRENDER OF THE LAST PEISHWA OF THE MAHRATTAS, ETC.

WHILE the first division of the army of the Deccan was thus occupied, the second had been withdrawn from Nagpore, and on the 22nd of January had marched towards Ellichpore. In the early part of February detachments from it captured the strong hill forts of Gawelghur (the scene of Wellesley's great exploit in 1803) and of Narunullah, a town and stronghold in the province of Berar. The latter were very defensible, built of stone, and crowning the summit of a hill. The division afterwards encamped at Ootran. In March it proceeded to Copergaum, and on the 17th of that month encamped on the left bank of the noble Godavery, near Fooltuniba, and then resumed its former designation of the Hyderabad division.*

It was now to take a part in the pursuit of the ubiquitous Peishwa. Information having been received of an intended attack by him on the cantonments of Jaulnah, the division proceeded seventy-two miles, in two forced marches; but before the remaining thirty miles were accomplished, the Peishwa had ridden in another direction. After a short halt, the division proceeded in pursuit of the flying enemy, encountering many difficulties while traversing parts of the country which had never before seen a British army, and using such indefatigable exertions, that at night it often occupied the same ground which Bajee Rao had left on the preceding day.

After a circuitous route, having performed forty-one marches in forty days, at the hottest period of the year, during which time the division had only two halts, the troops returned for supplies to Jaulnah, where they encamped on the 11th of May. In this arduous service the Europeans performed their marches cheerfully, and their only complaint was their inability to overtake the flying enemy. After a two days' halt, the pursuit of the Peishwa was resumed.†

Meanwhile, some troops which had been left at Fooltumba, including two companies of 1st Royal Scots, under Lieutenant James Bland, marched, under the command of Colonel McDowall, H.E.I.C.S., into the Candeish country, and captured the hill fort of Unki, which crowns a pre-

cipitous rock, 200 feet in height, on the summit of the Candeish Ghauts; also the forts of Rajdeir and Inderye.

The column was next engaged in the reduction of the strong fort of Trimbuk, in the province of Aurungabad, near the source of the Godavery, which rises in the Bala Ghaut. After being bombarded, it surrendered on the 25th April, 1818, and this event was followed by the capitulation of seventeen other forts.

It was in Candeish, the scene of McDowall's operations, that the bands of Arab mercenaries, belonging to the different armies of the Mahratta confederation, had congregated; occupying such strongholds as they could possess themselves of. It was in vain to expect, from their warlike and predatory habits, that these brave but reckless men would ever settle down to peaceful lives, and to the cultivation of industrious habits; so there was nothing for it but to have them driven out of the district; and, as a part of this intention, Colonel McDowall, leaving Chandore on the 13th of May, marched northward, and two days after found himself before Malligaum, a strong fortress situated on a circular bend of the Moasum, near its confluence with the Gima. There the Arabs were concentrated in considerable force, and resolved to make a fierce resistance.

Malligaum consisted, as usual, of a fort and pettah. The latter was square, protected by the river, which flowed close to its outworks, on the south and north, and was enclosed by a triple wall, with a troublesome ditch, twenty-five feet deep by fifteen feet wide, between the first and second. The former was lofty, and built of solid masonry, with towers at the angles. The entrance was by intricate passages, leading through no less than nine gates, furnished with massive bomb-proofs.

On its eastern side stood the pettah, enclosed by a rampart, ancient and dilapidated, but sufficient for defence in many ways. The means possessed by Colonel McDowall were quite inadequate—as he had only with him 950 bayonets, 270 pioneers, and some light European artillery—to the attack of such a place, defended as it was by a garrison consisting of the resolute Arabs who had capitulated to Brigadier Doveton at Nagpore.

* "Hist. Rec. 1st Royal Scots."

† Ibid.

On the 18th of May the garrison made a sortie, which was repulsed, and on the 19th two batteries opened their fire on Malligaum, of which Captain Briggs (who acted as agent for Mr. Elphinstone) was convinced we should make an easy capture, as he had established an understanding with part of the garrison, through Rajah Bahadur, who had held the place as a jaghire till dispossessed or made prisoner by this roving band of Arabs. But ere long it was found that the rajah could achieve nothing, and that science and resolute bravery alone could ensure success.

A breach having been effected, the 1st Royal Scots were ordered to furnish the stormers; accordingly, fifty rank and file of that regiment volunteered on the perilous duty, under Lieutenant Bland, for the principal attack, and twenty-five more, under Lieutenant William Orrock, as part of the column, to make an attack on another point; but success was found impracticable; and the forlorn hope which was led by Ensign Nattes, of the Engineers, after arriving at the outer wall, found the internal ditch beyond. While standing on the verge, and shouting the word "Impracticable," the brave lad was shot dead, and then the stormers were withdrawn.

Simultaneously with the attack on the breach, another was made on the pettah, which was gallantly carried, sword in hand, by Colonel Stewart; but was abandoned, in consequence of the failure elsewhere. McDowall, now convinced of the weakness of his force, and finding that ammunition was becoming scarce, turned the siege into a blockade, and awaited reinforcements.

On the 9th of June, these, consisting of a few European companies, a sepoy battalion, and a train of artillery stores, under Major Watson, came into camp from Ahmednuggur. The failure of the double assault induced McDowall to change his plan of operations, and attempt to carry the fortress on the northern and eastern sides. He sent the main body of his troops across the river, dug mines, threw up a battery, and armed it with five heavy mortars and four howitzers. At dawn on the 11th June these opened on Malligaum, and in the course of that day threw 300 shells in that direction, where the principal magazine was known to be situated; and ere long a dreadful explosion, a mountain of smoke, dust, and stones, that seemed to start skyward, announced that perseverance had been rewarded, and thirty feet of the east curtain were blown outwards into the ditch, killing and wounding many of the garrison, and burying corpses and cannon all in one horrible *débris*.

Once more the excited stormers began to muster

for the assault, when Abdool Kader, the Arab commander, anticipated their visit by offering to surrender. McDowall insisted on it unconditionally. Abdool did not decline the terms, but dreading a repetition of the Talnere tragedy, pressed for a written assurance that their lives should be spared, and that their treatment should be good; and now ensued a curious episode, which showed the importance of a knowledge of the native languages.

The Mahratta Moonshee, who drew up the terms of the capitulation, used expressions that went far beyond the verbal assents of the colonel, whom he made to engage to do "whatever was most advantageous for the garrison; that letters should be written concerning their pay; that the British Government should be at the entire expense of feeding and recovering the sick; that the Arabs should want nothing till they reached the places where they wished to go,"—a palpable mistake for "where it was intended to send them."

So, with this comforting letter in his pocket, old Abdool Kader on the 14th of June, 1818, marched out at the head of his Arab garrison, now reduced to 300 matchlock-men and sixty Hindostanees. Captain Briggs was the first to discover the mistake into which Colonel McDowall had fallen by signing a document written in a language he did not understand; and, after some dispute, it was ordered by Mr. Elphinstone that they should be immediately released, their arrears to be paid them from the Government treasury, with safe-conducts to the homes of their own choice.

After the fall of Malligaum, the whole of the Hyderabad division expected to take up their monsoon quarters in Jaulnah; but as too many would be under canvas there in the rains, on the 7th August they began their march for Nagpore; and almost immediately the dreaded season set in. The roads became impassable; the baggage was unable to keep up with the troops, who, when they halted for the night, found the tents were far in the rear, and consequently they were frequently exposed for twenty-four hours to incessant wet; no shelter could be procured in the villages, and every comfort was wanting. Exposed to these calamities, the troops arrived at Ellichpore in such a state as to be unfit to proceed any farther.*

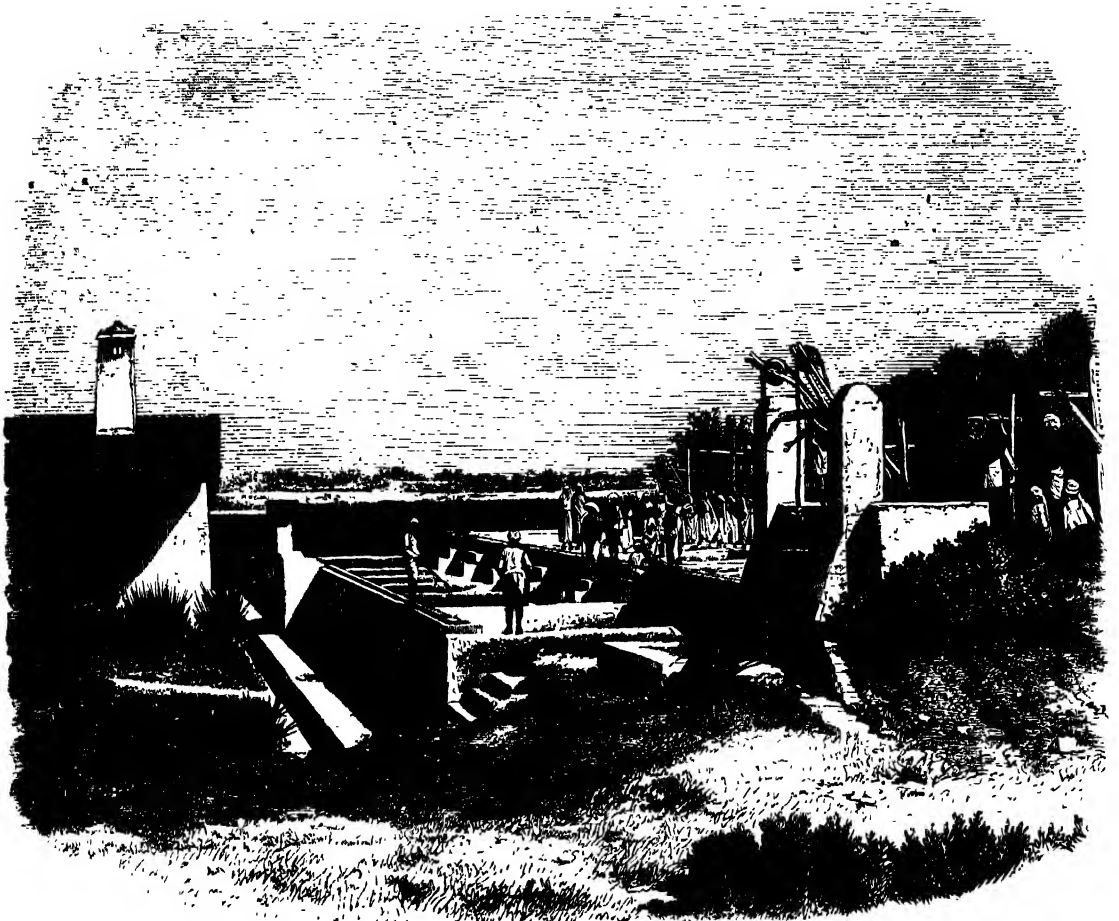
We have said that Apa Sahib and his two chief ministers had been arrested, in consequence of their known intrigues with the Peishwa. A grandson of the murdered Ragojee Bhonsla having been placed on the throne, the government was to

* "Hist. Rec. 1st Royal Scots."

be conducted in his name, during his minority, by the British Resident ; consequently it now became necessary to dispose finally of Apa Sahib and his two companions.

The ancient palace of the Mogul, within the strong fort at Allahabad, was selected for the residence of the deposed prince, with whom Captain Browne set out on the 3rd of May, 1818, escorting

of rescuing a Hindoo of the sacred race of Sevajee, and enforcing the suggestion with large pecuniary bribes, a plot was formed. Thus, a suit of sepoy uniform was introduced into the tent of Apa early on the morning of the 13th ; and having substituted it for his own, he joined the guard which was placed over his tent, and got out of the camp undiscovered. Six sepoys and one native officer deserted with him.



NATIVES WORKING ON A FACTORY NEAR ALLAHABAD.

him with a wing of the 22nd Bengal Infantry and the 8th Cavalry from Nagpore. The captain, from the latter place, marched northward to Jubulpore, where the three prisoners were to be handed over to another escort ; and he had arrived at Raichore (or Rochore), within a day's march of it, when Apa Sahib was found to have effected his escape.

This episode is supposed to have been planned by a Brahmin, who accompanied the party from Nagpore for a few marches, and left it on the 12th of May, the day before the escape took place. By secretly urging on some of the sepoys the merit

To delay any pursuit, every precaution was taken by the conspirators. In the prince's tent all looked as usual, and when, at four in the morning, the officer on duty looked into it to ascertain that Apa was there, he found the attendants, whose task it was to shampoo their master's feet, engaged to all appearance in this operation, and reported that all was right, little suspecting that they were artfully manipulating the pillows of the empty bed. Hence, when the escape was discovered, he had got so far away that pursuit was unavailing.

It was long before it could be ascertained whither he had gone. It was then learned that he had fled



VIEW OF THE SACRED ISLE OF DEVINATH, ON THE GANGES.

to Herace, and found shelter among the Gonds, in the fastnesses of the Mahadeo Hills; and such was the faith of these people that they nobly resisted the temptation of £20,000, and a jaghire worth £1,000 per annum, to betray him.

Elsewhere, his luckless compatriot Bajee Rao, the once-powerful Peishwa, had been a fugitive for more than six months; but his harassing career was now drawing to a close. North, south, east, and west, his further flight was barred by horse, foot, and flying artillery blocking up every point of the compass. As he was now more sorely pressed than ever, he made a last desperate attempt to pass into Malwah, with a view of reaching the camp of Scindia; but Sir John Malcolm, who was at Mhow, a large town and cantonment in that province, had so stationed some troops, under Lieutenant-Colonels Russell and Corsellis, as to render the attempt utterly impracticable. He was then reduced to despair. On the evening of the 25th of May, 1818, Sir John Malcolm learned that a vakeel from him had reached a place on the Nerbudda, some forty miles from Mhow. There Sir John went to meet him on the 27th, and this ambassador assured him that the Peishwa meant to surrender, and trust to the generosity and the friendship of Malcolm, to whom a short time before he had sent a letter full of the grossest flattery.

Sir John, who had been informed, in confidence, of the plan which had been framed by the Governor-General and Mountstuart Elphinstone for dispossessing of the Peishwa by a pension and a handsome residence, sent the vakeel back to that prince, who held a good position on the slope of a hill, to let him know the conditions and the good treatment in store for him; but Bajee Rao remained for several days irresolute, and during that time Brigadier Doveton's column and other troops got close in the vicinity of his band of fugitives. Thus influenced by fear, on the evening of the 1st of June, escorted by 2,500 men, he came down to a village in the plain, and met Sir John Malcolm, who just about that time had heard of the escape of Apa Sahib.

At this important interview the Peishwa seemed unable to make up his mind about the terms which had been offered him in his own camp by Lieutenants Low and Macdonald, the first and second political assistants of Malcolm, who, on the departure of Sir Thomas Hislop, had been left in command of all the troops of the Madras Army north of the Tapti.

Bajee Rao thought that he would, at least, be permitted to retain his rank and title of Peishwa, with a residence at Poonah; but on finding that such was not to be the case, he proposed a meeting

next day. This Sir John Malcolm positively refused, as he knew that the Peishwa had just placed the whole of his property—or what remained of it—in the strong fortress of Aseerghur, and suspected that he was about to follow it in person; thus, to shorten the issue, he sent the following schedule of an agreement, for the instant signature of the fallen prince:—

"1. That Bajee Rao shall resign, for himself and his successors, all right, title, and claim over the Government of Poonah, or to any sovereign power whatever.

"2. That Bajee Rao shall immediately come, with his family, and a small number of his adherents and attendants, to the camp of Brigadier-General Malcolm, where he shall be received with honour and respect, and be escorted safe to the city of Benares, or any other sacred place in Hindostan that the Governor-General may, at his request, fix for his residence.

"3. On account of the peace of the Deccan, and the advanced state of the season, Bajee Rao must proceed to Hindostan without one day's delay; but General Malcolm engages that any part of his family that may be left behind shall be sent to him as early as possible, and every facility given to render their journey speedy and convenient.

"4. That Bajee Rao shall, on his voluntarily agreeing to this arrangement, receive a liberal pension from the Company's Government, for the support of himself and family. The amount of this pension will be fixed by the Governor-General; but Brigadier Malcolm takes upon himself to engage that it shall not be less than eight lacs of rupees per annum.

"5. If Bajee Rao, by a complete and ready fulfilment of this agreement, shows that he reposes entire confidence in the British Government, his requests in favour of his principal jaghirdars and old adherents, who have been ruined by their attachment to him, will meet with liberal attention. His representations also in favour of Brahmins of remarkable character, and of religious establishments founded or supported by his family, shall be treated with regard.

"6. The above propositions must not only be accepted by Bajee Rao, but he must personally come into Brigadier-General Malcolm's camp within twenty-four hours of this period, or else hostilities will be recommenced, and no further negotiation will be entered into with him."

During the interview, before these terms were tendered, Sir John Malcolm had demanded the immediate surrender of Trimbukjee Danglia. Bajee Rao declared that it was not in his power

to give up that personage, who had a camp and an army of his own, and who was stronger than he, his master, was. "Then," said Malcolm, "I will attack him forthwith." "Success attend you!" replied the Peishwa. The events of this visit are thus described by Auber:—"He appeared low and dejected, and retired for a private interview, when he said that he had been involved in a war he never intended; that he was treated as an enemy by the State which had supported his family for two generations, and was at that moment in a position that demanded consideration, and believed that he had a real friend in Sir John Malcolm. The latter replied that every moment of delay was one of danger, and that he should either throw himself upon the British Government or determine on further resistance. 'How can I resist now?' he exclaimed; 'I am surrounded!' Sir John Malcolm replied that he was, but he could not complain; that he still had the power of escape as much as ever, if he wished to become a freebooter and wanderer, and not accept the liberal provision designed for him. He replied, with the flattery of which he was master, 'I have found you, who are my only friend, and will never leave you; would a shipwrecked mariner, after having reached the port he desired, form a wish to leave it?' Still, upon the plea of a religious ceremony, and that it was an unlucky day, he wished to postpone till the next day surrendering himself up and accepting the propositions."

General Malcolm, to quicken his decision, had recourse to the device of allowing one of his writers to give the vakeels of the two leading Mahratta chiefs still adhering to Bajee Rao, a copy of the preliminary treaty submitted to him, and by this means informed them of the consideration *they* should receive in the event of a quiet settlement. This quickened their zeal in the matter; while the main body of Malcolm's troops, advancing towards Khairee, the village where the important interview had taken place, was followed by the distinct intimation to Bajee Rao, that if he did not immediately accept the terms, his last chance would be lost.

Thus, thoroughly intimidated—after trying one shuffle more—he saw the futility of evasion. His troops began to move down the hill, slowly and reluctantly, towards the British camp, and at eleven o'clock on the morning of the 3rd of June, 1818, the Peishwa delivered himself up, with his family, and 5,000 horse and 3,000 infantry, 2,000 of whom were Arabs. The Supreme Government at Calcutta, taking a narrow and mercantile view of the matter,

* "Rise and Prog. Brit. Power in India."

thought that too much had been granted by Sir John Malcolm; but the latter, like most of his Indian military cotemporaries, was a man of a large and generous heart; and none knew better than he the demerits on the one hand, and the helplessness on the other, of the fallen Peishwa of the once great Mahratta Confederation.

When Malcolm, taking with him the latter, began his march towards the Nerbudda, he remonstrated more than once with him on the imprudence of keeping together 8,000 armed men, the majority of whom were certain, from the turn his affairs had taken, to be discontented. However, all remained quiet for five days, when the 2,000 Arabs suddenly demanded their arrears of pay, urging that they had been enlisted by the irrepressible Trimbukjee Danglia, but had been only a short time with the Peishwa, who offered to pay them for that precise period; but they insisted upon having their arrears from the first day they had taken service under the favourite. A whole day passed in angry and unseemly discussions; and Bajee Rao, fearing that his life was in danger among these fierce mercenaries, in his timidity and confusion, sent the most contradictory messages to Sir John Malcolm, calling for aid, and then urging it should not be sent, lest the first appearance of red-coats might prove the signal for his being cut to pieces.

His terrors were not altogether groundless. The armed Arabs had environed his tents, and might, had they chosen, not only have destroyed him, but all his women and children; by the clever management of Sir John Malcolm, however, the disturbance was quelled, and an award pronounced which satisfied all; and after this alarm Bajee Rao gladly consented to his train being diminished to 700 horse and 200 foot; and, moreover, he complied in every other point with the wishes of Sir John Malcolm. It was while on this march that Sir John, no doubt to his annoyance, found that Government was dissatisfied with the terms given to his prisoner after he had been completely surrounded, and that his cause was hopeless.

"But, after all," says Sir John, in his account of this affair, "Bajee Rao was not in our power. He had the means, by going into Aseerghur, of protracting the war for five or six months, and keeping all India disturbed and unsettled during that period."*

Such being the case—and none could know the probabilities of it better than the acute Malcolm—the pension he offered, as a bribe to end the strife, was not an extravagant one; and that view was taken of it by the Court of Directors at home.

* "Political History of India."

They thought it possible that Bajee Rao "might have been compelled to surrender unconditionally, had no terms been offered to him; but it does appear to us," they added, "that he still had some chance of escape, and that by throwing himself into Aseerghur he might, at all events for a considerable period of time, have deprived us of the important advantages which resulted from his early surrender; and in this view of the subject, we are disposed to think that these advantages justified the terms which were granted him."

The Marquis of Hastings fixed the residence of the ex-Peishwa at Bithoor, on the right bank of the Ganges, a sacred spot, where Brahma is supposed to have completed the act of creating the world and all therein by the sacrifice of a horse; but rendered more familiar to us, in later years, as the abode of the atrocious Nana Sahib.

His progress through Rajpootana and the Doab to the scene of his exile excited scarcely any sensation among the people. When settled at Bithoor, he resigned himself to spending his £80,000 per annum in a life of luxury. He bathed daily in the waters of the Ganges, indulged in the highest living of a Brahmin, maintained three sets of dancing-girls, and troops of low buffoons and parasites. The great rallying-point of the Mahratta Confederacy—the banner of the Peishwa—had sunk for ever in the dust; but it was not so easy to change the character of that singular people, or to introduce peaceful habits among them; yet their power of working military mischief, if not quite crushed, was greatly reduced.

After his surrender, the most leading of his adherents sought to make terms for themselves; among them, Cheetoo the Pindarce, and Trimbukjee Danglia. The tragic fate of the former we have already related; the latter concealed himself for some time in the neighbourhood of Nassik, in Aurungabad, where he fell into the hands of Mountstuart Elphinstone, being taken prisoner by Major Swanston.* He was first remanded to Tannah, the place of his former imprisonment; but ultimately, for greater security, was sent round to Bengal, and lodged in the mountain fortress of Chunar, which we have described in a former chapter; and there he was visited by Bishop Heber, on the 11th September, 1824, and the prelate's account of that noted disturber of the peace is very interesting.

"He is confined with great strictness, having a European as well as a sepoy guard, and never being trusted out of sight of the sentries. Even his bed-chamber has three grated windows opening

into the verandah, which serves as a guard-room; in other respects he is well treated, has two large and very airy apartments, a small building fitted up as a pagoda, and a little garden shaded by peepul-trees, which he has planted very prettily with balsams and other flowers. Four of his own servants are allowed to attend him, but they are always searched before they quit or return to the fort, and must be always there at night. He is a little, lively, irritable-looking man, dressed when I saw him in a dirty cotton mantle, with a broad red border, thrown carelessly over his head and shoulders. I was introduced to him by Colonel Alexander, and he received me courteously, observing that he himself was a priest, and in token of his brotherly regard, plucking some of his prettiest flowers. . . . He has now been, I believe, five years in prison, and seems likely to remain there during life, or till the death of his patron and tool, the Peishwa, may lessen his power of doing mischief. He has often offered to give security to any amount for his good behaviour, and to become a warmer friend to the Company than he has ever been their enemy, but his applications have been made in vain. He attributes their failure to Mr. Elphinstone, the Governor of Bombay, who is, he says, 'his best friend and worst enemy,' the faithful trustee of his estate, treating his children with parental kindness, and interesting himself, in the first instance, to save his life, but resolutely fixed on keeping him in prison, and urging the Supreme Court to distrust all his protestations. His life must now be dismally monotonous and wearisome. Though a Brahmin of high caste, so long a minister of state and the commander of armies, he can neither write nor read, and his whole amusement consists in the ceremony of his idolatry, his garden, and the gossip which his servants pick up for him in the town of Chunar. Avarice seems at present his ruling passion. He is a very severe inspector of his weekly accounts, and one day set the whole garrison in an uproar about some ghee, which he accused his khansaman, or steward, of embezzling; in short, he seems less interested with the favourable reports which he from time to time receives of his family than by the banking accounts by which they are accompanied. Much as he is said to have deserved his fate, as a murderer, an extortioner, and a grossly perjured man, I hope," adds the good bishop, "that I may be allowed to pity him."*

But from this period Trimbukjee Danglia passes out of Indian history.

* Auber.

* "Narrative of a Journey," &c., vol. i.

CHAPTER XCVII.

OF THE BHEELS AND GONDS, ETC.—APA SAHIB AGAIN IN ARMS.—HIS FLIGHT.

WHILE the Peishwa was being conducted to his prison at Bithoor, Apa Sahib, the ex-Rajah of Nagpore, was safe with the Gonds, among the Mahadeo Hills, where he was harboured and concealed by that singular race, who have—unlike other natives of India—broad flat noses, thick lips, and not unfrequently woolly hair, like the people of Africa; yet they are supposed to be a portion of the aboriginal race of the country, who, long before the irruption of the Hindoo hordes, made great advances in civilisation; and to this race, of which so little is known, are attributed the remains of many works of art, fortified buildings, and monuments, in every part of India; and thus the Hindoos themselves refer the erection of vast temples, and the excavation of wonderfully carved caverns, to the vague period of the aboriginal kings.

General Briggs—who, when a captain, prosecuted with success the settlements of the Bheels in Candeish—in his lectures, asserts that this race must have entered India at a very remote period, occupying it—as mankind spread elsewhere in successive hordes—under different leaders; and one portion, he conceives, must have preceded the other: “because, in the first place, there always has been, and still continues, an inveterate hostility between two branches of the same race; and because the latter certainly occupied and cleared the land, and established principalities; while the former mainly subsisted on the chase, and followed a much less civilised life.”

The more barbarous tribes of India, supposed to be descendants of the aboriginal natives who fled from the plains before their Brahminical conquerors, are to be found among those two mountain ranges which are on both sides of the Nerbudda, and lie nearly parallel with its course—the Satpoora on the south, and the Vindhya on the north. Towards the east and west they form, at each extremity, a vast mountain barrier, all but impenetrable from jungles and primeval forests. Towards the western extremity, where these mountains separate Malwah from Candeish, the inhabitants are designated Bheels, who, according to Bishop Heber, were unquestionably the original inhabitants of Rajpootana, who had been driven to these fastnesses, and to a desperate mode of existence; but who, wherever

they have come from, profess the religion of Brahma. This the Rajpoots themselves allow, by admitting in their traditional history that most of their principal cities and fortresses were founded by Bheel chiefs, “and conquered from them by the Children of the Sun.”*

Professor Wilson states that the Bheels, and other hill-tribes, are constantly accused by Sanscrit writers of the eleventh and twelfth centuries, of being addicted to the sanguinary worship of Aghori, which required human sacrifices.†

The Bheels excite the horror of the high-class Hindoos by eating not only the flesh of buffaloes, but of cows, an abomination which places them only above the shoemakers, who feed on dead carcasses, and must dwell without the precincts of the villages. Sir John Malcolm divides the Bheels into three distinct classes. “The first of these consists of a few who, from chance or ancient residence, have become dwellers in the villages on the plains—though usually near the hills—of which they are the watchmen, and incorporated as a portion of the community; the agricultural Bheels are those who have continued their peaceful avocations after their leaders were destroyed, or forced by invaders to become freebooters; while the wild, or mountain Bheels, comprise all that portion of the tribe who, preferring savage freedom to order and industry, have lived by lawless plunder.”‡

The Bheels, though prompt enough to shed blood, without the smallest scruple, in the way of regular feud or foray, are neither vindictive nor inhospitable; and thus British officers have frequently fished and hunted safely in their country, and without other guide or escort than these poor mountaineers have themselves furnished cheerfully for a bottle of brandy. At all times formidable, the Bheels became the terror of Central India under Nadir Sing. Their chiefs exercised absolute power, and their orders to commit the most atrocious crimes were rigidly executed; but on the banishment of Nadir Sing for a murder of more than ordinary cruelty, his son, who had been carefully educated at the head-quarters of Sir John Malcolm, on succeeding to his authority established such

* “Narrative of a Journey,” &c.

† “Asiatic Researches,” vol. xvii.

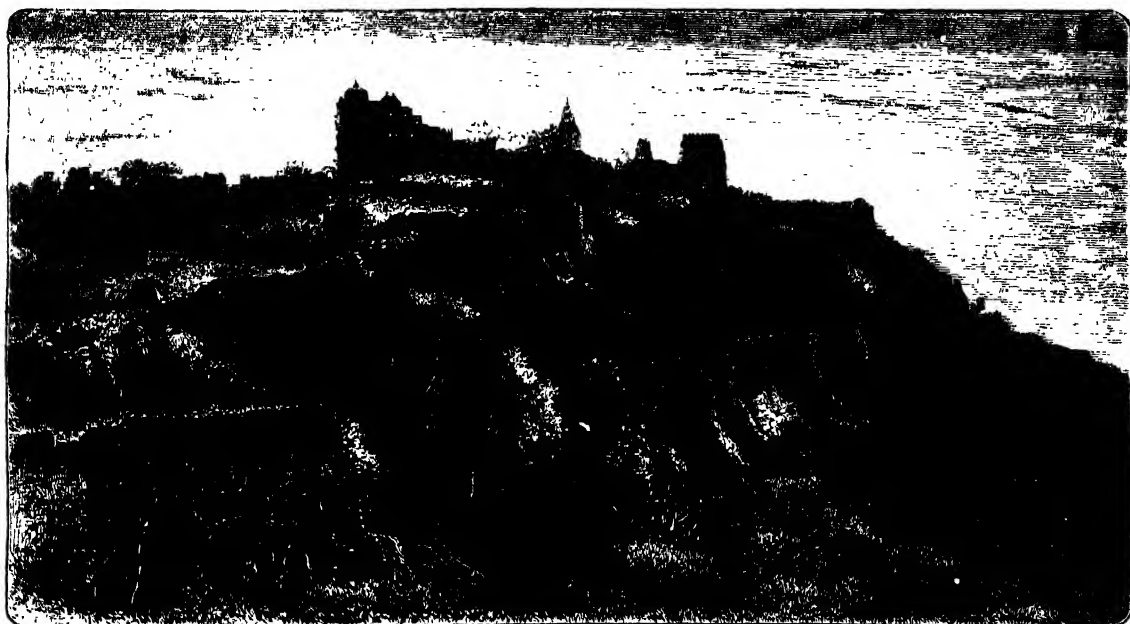
‡ “Memoir of Central India.”

order, that there was soon after no part of the country where life and property were safer than among the once-dreaded Bheels.

Bishop Heber describes their district as being like what "Rob Roy's country" was in the last century, but adds that "these poor Bheels are far less formidable enemies than the old MacGregors." This ancient race are expert in the use of the bow, and have a curious mode of shooting from the long grass, among which they lie concealed, holding the bow with their feet. Besides their prey on the earth and in the air, they use the bow and arrow against fish in the rivers, and shoot them with great

to his camp, where their shrill calls from one to another were heard all night.

The name of Bheel is now no longer confined to the original race, but, in consequence of their inter-marriages, and the adoption of many of their usages and modes of life by other classes of the community, is applied to all plunderers dwelling in the mountains, and in the woody parts of Western India. During a period when we ceased to interfere with them, the Bheels of the plains lost the little civilisation they had attained, and joined those of the same race in the mountains in their depredations; but, in the suppression of these,



VIEW OF THE THAKOUR'S CASTLE AT TINTONI, IN THE BHEEL COUNTRY.

dexterity. Their bows are formed of split bamboo; the arrows are of the same, with a barbed iron head. Those used against fish have a long line attached to them, exactly on the principle of the harpoon. As Heber advanced into the country infested by the Bheels, he met caravans of Brinjarries, a wandering race, who spend their whole lives in the conveyance of grain, escorted by armed Bheels, paid for the purpose.

The bishop had a strong escort of Bheels, who led him safely through a most perilous country, abounding with ravines and rugged spots, overgrown with jungle (the most favourable of places for the spring of a tiger, or the poisoned arrows of an ambush; where, shortly before, a man had been carried off from an artillery-train on the march); but they conducted him across the rapid Mhye, and on his arrival at Wasnud, acted as watchmen

successful efforts were made by Captain (afterwards General) Briggs, our political agent in Candeish, and by Sir John Malcolm, in Malwah, who raised a corps of Bheels, disciplined and commanded by British officers and by their own chiefs; "and before these robbers had been a month in the service," says the latter, "I placed them as a guard over treasure, which had a surprising effect, both in elevating them in their own minds, and in those of other parts of the community."

Sir John did more; to inspire greater confidence, and exalt these bold and hardy men in their own estimation, he actually took, as his personal attendants, some of the most desperate of the plundering chiefs. Elsewhere, towards the eastern extremity of the mountain ranges referred to, and where the ranges that separate Bengal and Orissa from Berar attain their greatest height, are various ancient and

predatory races, such as the Koles and Khands, to whom we may have to refer at another period ; but the Gonds, who sheltered Apa Sahib, are by far the most numerous of these, and spread from the

but still retaining their primitive habits, under their indigenous chiefs. Some adhere to the laws of Menou ; but others there are who have no aversion to the flesh of the cow and buffalo. The Gonds



GROUP OF GONDS OR GOUNDS.

southern and western limits of Behar into Berar, and away westward, along the valley of the Nerbudda ; but the fiercest families of the race are to be found in Vasateri.

They gave their name to Gondwana (or Gundannah), a district comprising 70,000 square miles, and containing a vast population, differing in physiognomy and religion from the Hindoos,

are strongly and handsomely made, for Orientals ; their complexion varies from deep to light copper colour, and the expression of their features shows acuteness and resolution. They are still expert in the use of the bow and sling, and handle sharp battle-axes. Agriculture is in a prosperous condition among them, and they are equally good tillers of the soil as they are warriors in the field.

Their dress consists of a cloth bound round the middle, and hanging down like a short skirt; but their war costume is more elaborate.

Though fierce, they are full of hospitality, and no stranger can appear in a Gond village without being invited to enter. A guest can never be excluded, and he is treated as if he were one of the family; and even though known to be a murderer, his life is held sacred. In special cases, such as those connected with human sacrifice, there is periodically manifested among them a savage ferocity, exceeding that of the old American Indians; and to this must be added the habit of pillage in most, and of drunkenness in all. "At the season of periodical intoxication—the blowing of the *maw* flower, of which their favourite spirit is made—the country is literally covered with frantic and senseless groups of men. And though, usually, the women share more sparingly in the liquor-cup, they yet on public occasions partake in every form of social enjoyment—food, drink, extemporary song, recitations, and dancing, mingling freely and without shame with the other sex, both married and unmarried, in more than saturnalian licence and revelry, which often terminate in gross and nameless excesses, and, as the guests are armed, not unfrequently in sanguinary brawls."*

It was not until 1836 that the British authorities at Ganjam and Vizianagur first became aware that the Gonds were in the habit of offering up human sacrifices, and that victims were freely supplied to them by their neighbours of the plains, from whom they purchased or kidnapped children. Many plans were proposed for the repression of this horrible custom, and some of our officers strove, but with only partial success, to reason the chiefs into the abandonment of human sacrifices; and in some instances the victims were rescued by our soldiers at the point of the bayonet, while some of the kidnappers that supplied this dreadful market were tried for the offence.

One who had undertaken to furnish a victim, and had provided one, whom the authorities rescued, was compelled to substitute his own daughter, and the girl was barbarously sacrificed. Captain Macpherson, an energetic and humane officer, who resided in the Gond country, under the orders of the Supreme Government, displayed a singular ability and courage, in combating with this cruel practice by alternate persuasion and force. Some of the chiefs seemed to have honestly conformed to his wishes; but others temporised and deceived him as occasion offered, and the dreadful sacrifices went on in secret.

* Captain Macpherson.

It was no sooner known that Apa Sahib had taken refuge among this remarkable community, than he was joined by various Gond chiefs, as professed adherents of the Rajah of Berar, and by many wandering bands of Pindarees, Mahrattas, Arabs, and other outlaws, whom the course of events had cast forth to feed themselves by pillage and the sword. The whole strength of them amounted to 20,000 men, and these, breaking into parties of somewhere about 2,000 each, commenced a furious war of outposts upon the British detachments cantoned or encamped in different places. Apa's chief protector among the Gonds was Chain Shah, who had usurped the rights of his nephew, chief of Harai, and by extending his authority over many districts, had his stronghold among the Mahadeo Hills, on the east of the road between Hoshungabad and Nagpore.

As no regular campaign could be begun at the season of the year when this remarkable muster took place, it was necessary to confine the depredations of Apa's people to as narrow limits as possible, and also to prevent any general revolt in his favour; and for this double purpose, bodies of troops from Nagpore, Hoshungabad, and Saugur, were posted in various parts of the Nerbudda Valley, adjacent to the hills. Despite this, a body of Arabs, descending from the head of the Tapti, boldly took possession of the town of Maisdi, near the source of the Purna, and situated in Gondwana. With orders to dislodge them, Captain Sparkes, with two companies of the 10th Bengal Native Infantry, but only 107 bayonets in all, on the 18th July, 1818, pushed on from Hoshungabad to Baitool, a large fortified town in Gondwana, the whole of which country being a succession of the wildest mountains, ravines, rivers, and jungles, was admirably adapted for a desultory and protracted warfare. Stronger detachments followed him on the 20th; but Sparkes, an ardent and courageous officer, pushed on without waiting for them, and quickly encountered a body of horse, which retreated before him. Following rashly, he suddenly found himself confronted by 2,000 cavalry, and 1,500 infantry.

There was nothing for the little party of British and sepoys now but to fight and die where they stood. Captain Sparkes took up the first position that presented itself, at the edge of a ravine, and notwithstanding the extreme disparity of numbers, maintained his ground for some hours, till he lost half his men, and had expended nearly every cartridge. He then displayed a white flag, but it was disregarded. Indeed, it was vain to hope for truce with, or quarter from, such foes; and he had

to make up his mind to die sword in hand. He was shot ~~down~~ while in the act of leading somewhere about fifty men to a charge, in the wild hope of cutting a passage through, or avenging those who had fallen.

The Arabs closed round them like a living flood, and every man of the party was hacked to pieces, save nine, who had been left in the rear to guard the baggage. In the strong country, eastward of Nagpore, a powerful chief openly declared for the deposed Apa, and other jungle chiefs followed his example, but they were reduced to obedience, and punished by a detachment of our troops, under Major Wilson; yet in the Baitool Valley the Arabs levied heavy contributions in the name of Apa Sahib, and succeeded in destroying another detachment of troops on outpost duty; and now the name of Apa was beginning to become as formidable as those of Cheetoo and Trimbukjee had been.

To avert the consequences that were likely to ensue, a great reward was offered for his apprehension, while troops were advanced simultaneously from Hoshungabad, Jubbulpore, Nagpore, and Jaulnah; but the inclemency of the weather and the wretched state of the roads retarded their progress so much, that the enemy won new successes. Early in August they had gained possession of the town of Moultee, by the connivance of the civil magistrates; and after capturing several other places, planted their colours within forty miles of Nagpore.

Great alarm prevailed there, all the more so, that a conspiracy against the young rajah had been discovered; but the impediments to our troops on the march having been surmounted, the work of retaliation began. The disorderly hordes were driven from all their posts on the plain, were followed into the mountains, and made to pay dearly for all their aggressions; and before the close of the year, Lieutenant-Colonel J. Whittington Adams

had matured a plan for the invasion of the Mahadeo Hills,* and established posts of infantry and cavalry round the whole district occupied by Chain Shah.

In the month of February, 1819, Adams opened the campaign in a regular manner, and began to penetrate into the mountains from the Valley of the Nerbudda, advancing in three separate columns, from which parties were detached to penetrate into every recess and place of refuge. Thus Chain Shah was soon taken prisoner, and the headquarters of Apa Sahib were suddenly beaten up. At the head of a few well-mounted men, he anticipated the movement, by flying on the spur in the direction of Aseerghur, where he hoped to find shelter and protection. A bold attempt was made to intercept him, but he dashed down a deep ravine, where in the darkness of the night our cavalry could not follow him, and ere long found himself before its gates. He must have been taken by the soldiers of Sir John Malcolm, had he not been admitted by the garrison of matchlock-men, who excluded, as we have elsewhere stated, Cheetoo the Pindaree, and left him to his miserable fate.

In according this shelter, Jeswunt Rao Lar, the killedar, was actuated by friendship for Apa, whom he wished to save, and though in the service of Scindia, their ally, by his hatred of the British.

But now, either because Jeswunt was personally afraid to harbour him, or because Apa expected soon to hear the din of the British cannon against Aseerghur, he fled again, in the safe disguise of a religious mendicant, to Boorhanpore, and from thence through Malwah to Gwalior. Yet Scindia was afraid to protect him, though well disposed to do so; and the deposed prince could find no shelter till he passed into the Punjaub, and was rescued in a friendly manner by Runjeet Sing, the King of Lahore.

At a subsequent period, the Rajah of Jodpore, on becoming responsible for his peaceable conduct, was permitted to afford him an asylum.

CHAPTER XCIII.

PREPARATIONS AGAINST ASEERGHUR.—ITS SIEGE AND CAPTURE.—CLOSE OF THE WAR AND ITS RESULTS.

ASEERGHUR, known among our troops as "the Gibraltar of the East," was now before them. The expectation that Apa Sahib might seek a shelter there had early occurred to the Governor-General;

and Scindia, who, previous to the war, had engaged to yield it up to us for temporary occupation, was now called upon to do so. He complied with apparent

* "Mem. of Adams," *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1837.

readiness, but sent to Jeswunt Rao Lar a secret message to hold out to the last, and at the same time an order to Sir John Malcolm, or rather an authority to receive over the fortress, and then retired to Gwalior, to wait the issue of events. In consequence of Scindia's scheme, his killedar, by artful evasions, spun out the time of handing over the fortress till Apa Sahib had actually been within its gates and permitted to escape. By the former act—the latter event was unknown as yet—but still more by his firing on our troops when in pursuit of Cheetoo, it became evident that by dint of cannon-shot alone he would be induced to yield up the fortress; and then Sir John Malcolm and General Doveton were instructed to employ the troops under their command in reducing it. Accordingly they marched to its vicinity, and took up their ground, the former on the north and the latter on the south of it, in the first days of March, 1819.

The stronghold consisted of an upper and lower fort, and of a partially-walled pettah to the westward. The upper fort crowned the summit of an isolated rock of the Satpoora range, fully 750 feet in height, and having an area measuring 1,100 yards in extreme length by 600 in width. Within this area were two natural hollows or basins, which held water for the supply of the garrison. "As we approached Aseerghur," wrote an officer of the (Old) 15th Bengal Infantry, "it looked uninvitingly down upon us, on a detached hill 700 feet in height, having at the foot of its walls a precipice of mural rock, varying from 80 to 120 feet in depth, unbroken, except in two places, to protect which all that native ingenuity could do was done. The fortress was garrisoned, too, by Arabs, who generally make a stubborn defence, and we all concluded that to plant the British flag on the frowning battlements above us would prove no bloodless achievement."

The rock was so carefully scarped as to render access impossible, save at the two points referred to, and the protections there were strong. The one to the north, the more difficult of the two, was defended by an outer rampart, containing four casemates, with embrasures eighteen feet high and the same in thickness, and 190 feet in length, across the approach. The other point, the easier and, consequently, more used avenue, after ascending from the pettah to the lower fort, which was defended by a rampart thirty feet high, flanked with towers, was continued by a steep flight of stone steps, traversed by five successive gateways, all of them as most solid masonry. All the guns arming the fort on this great hill fortress were of the most

enormous calibre; and there was one, in particular, which carried a ball of 380 pounds weight, and was supposed by the natives to be capable of sending it to Boorhanpore, fourteen miles distant. Another, made of brass, was a 144-pounder.

Active operations were commenced on the 18th of March. On the preceding night, at twelve o'clock, five companies of the 1st Royal Scots, under Captain George A. Wetherall, with the flank companies of H.M.'s 30th and 67th, and the Madras Europeans, with five companies of native infantry and a detachment of Sappers and Miners (all forming a portion of the Hyderabad division), the whole commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Fraser, of the 1st Royal Scots, began their march from Neembolah, seven miles from Aseerghur, to attack the pettah of that place, in conjunction with another party sent out from the division of Sir John Malcolm.

By two on the morning of the 18th, the column was struggling up a stony nullah, the bed of a nearly dry river, and getting, unobserved, within 500 yards of the walls, rushed at the gate with the greatest spirit, Fraser, with his Royal Scots, leading the way. Taken completely by surprise, the Arabs in the pettah, after firing a few rounds of grape, retired into the lower fort without making further opposition. The Royals then forced the gates, and in proceeding up the main street encountered a picket of the enemy, who retired to the fort, firing into the head of the column as they did so.

Major Charles MacLeod, H.E.I.C.S., Deputy Quartermaster-General, acted as guide on this occasion, and by his direction the leading files of the Royal Scots pursued the enemy close under the walls of the fortress, from whence an incessant fire of artillery and matchlocks blazed out on the dark morning sky, and a few ill-directed rockets were also discharged.

"The leading sections of the Royal Scots, which had pursued the enemy up-hill, were joined by one or two files of the 30th and 67th Regiments, the whole amounting to about twenty-five or thirty men; and as soon as the enemy saw the small force before which they had so precipitately fled, they immediately rallied and came down the hill, with augmented numbers, to attack this party, but were repulsed by a spirited charge with the bayonet, which, with a few rounds of musketry, obliged them to retreat within the works, some of which were within fifty or sixty yards of this handful of men, leaving their chief, who was shot by a soldier of the Royal Scots, and several men on the ground." The pettah was won, and with trifling

loss to that regiment alone, one soldier was killed, Major MacLeod, a subaltern, and eleven soldiers were wounded. The remainder of the column was without a casualty, the men being protected from the enemy's fire by the houses in which they had taken shelter.*

The assaulting party maintained its post in the town till nightfall, when it was relieved by fresh troops, and the five Scots companies marched back to their tents at Neembolah, but Colonel Fraser remained in the pettah to command the troops. He ordered some houses between it and the fort to be occupied. This proximity excited the alarm of the enemy, who, on the evening of the 19th, made a dash at the post and were beaten back, but not before they had succeeded in setting some of the houses on fire. •

A battery to bombard the fort having now been thrown up within the town, by the 20th its wall was breached; and on that the enemy made another ferocious sally, and so sudden was their rush along the main street, that many of our officers were still in the houses, past which the yelling Arabs ran, in their headlong career, with sabre and matchlock. Though thrown into disorder at first, the troops soon drove them back; but Lieutenant-Colonel Fraser fell in the act of leading on his men. A ball pierced his head. His remains were sent to Neembolah, and buried there with military honours.

On the 21st of March, the five companies of the Royal Scots were again on duty in the pettah. That day, a magazine in rear of the breaching battery, containing 130 barrels of powder, exploded, killing a native officer and thirty-four sepoy, and wounding another native officer and sixty-five rank and file. Immediately on this taking place, the Arabs were seen rushing down the hill to profit by the confusion; but the battery re-commenced its fire, and they were deterred from coming on. On the 30th, the lower fort was taken possession of by Sir John Malcolm, and on the 31st, General Watson arrived from Saugur, with a brigade; and as our batteries were pressed closer to the fort, the troops suffered much from the enemy's matchlocks and wall-pieces, till opposed by some selected marksmen.

By the end of April the ammunition was so much expended that General Malcolm offered a reward for every cannon-ball that was brought him, and some of the Madras camp-followers madly risked their lives to carry off those that lay at the foot of the walls. By the 7th, these were crumbling fast under our artillery. Next morning, all our batteries kept up an unceasing roar of guns and mortars

from dawn till eight a.m., when orders came to suspend firing; and all that followed is thus related by one who was present (for the killedar, fearing the fate of his comrade at Talnere, had begged for a parley):—

"About eleven o'clock p.m. of the 8th, the 1st battalion of the 15th Regiment was ordered to march, and join H.M. 67th Regiment at a point near the pettah. At four a.m. of the 9th, we understood that the fort would be surrendered, and at five, we learned that the garrison was marching out with their arms. Shortly afterwards, the British flag was hoisted on the western tower, under a royal salute from all our batteries, quite deafening. I was ordered up with our Right (company) Grenadiers to take duty at the upper gates, from whence I had a fine view of a scene of some solemnity—General Doyeton receiving the submission of the killedar, Jeswunt Rao Lar, and his garrison. A square was formed by Sir John Malcolm's division, within which our late opponents passed in bodies of varying numbers, each conducted by its respective sirdir. As one group arrived before the general, it halted, grounded its matchlocks, and the men were then told they might keep their shields and daggers, that private property would be respected, and subsistence and a secure escort furnished. The surrendering party salaamed, and marched off to make way for another body, which performed the same ceremony. The whole number of those that filed through the square amounted to 1,300. The Arab will resist to death any attempt to tear his arms from him, but he will quietly ground them, as the consequence of a formal capitulation. His dagger he considers invaluable: it is handed down as an heirloom from father to son. The loss of the enemy during the siege was 120 killed and wounded; while we had eleven European officers, four native officers, and 308 non-commissioned and rank and file killed and wounded. . . . Troops from the three presidencies were collected at Aseerghur, against which we brought 100 pieces of ordnance. Within the lower and upper fort we found, altogether, 119 pieces of ordnance."* Among these were the two great guns already referred to.

The writer mentions that the chief luxury of the troops during the hot April, under the sun of the Deccan, was the delicious grape of Boorhanpore. The fortress, with a small surrounding tract of jungle, has been retained by the British ever since, though, according to agreement, they were only entitled to temporary occupation of it; but, apart from not finding Apa Sahib within its walls—which

* "War Office Records, 1st Royals."

* "Some Account of the 15th B. N. I." 1835.

Sir John Malcolm was confident he should do—a somewhat unexpected discovery rendered our never parting with it necessary.

It was known that Bajee Rao, the now captive Peishwa, had deposited valuable jewels in Aseerghur. Jeswunt Rao Lar, on being ordered to produce them, declared that they had been returned. This was disbelieved, on which he offered to show the receipt of the Peishwa for them. This document an officer who was present discovered to be in the handwriting of Scindia. On this, Jeswunt Rao Lar betrayed such manifest confusion, that the casket from which he drew it was seized, and its contents inspected; and the pretended receipt, which he probably supposed they were unable to read, proved to be Scindia's distinct orders to the killedar to obey all commands he might receive from the Peishwa, and to refuse to deliver up the fort to the British. When Scindia was charged with this double dealing, he did not in any way venture to deny it, but attempted a lame species of apology, to the effect that any messages sent to the killedar were mere matters of course, as it was well-known that that officer "would only do what was pleasing to himself!"

Further, to give some colouring to this explanation, he admitted having invited the Peishwa to Gwalior, merely because the cordon of our troops rendered it impossible for him to go there; but perhaps his best justification of all this double-dealing was his candid remark: "How natural it was for a man, seeing a friend struggling in the water and crying for help, to stretch out the hand and speak words of comfort, though aware that he could give him no assistance."

In consequence of this, we retained Aseerghur, which has always been considered a place of high importance, in a military point of view, as it commands one of the great passes of the Deccan into Hindostan; and by its possession we were fully enabled to restrain the excesses of the Bheels among the adjacent mountains. When taken in the campaigns of Wellesley and Lake, it had been unwisely restored to Scindia, though, in addition to its other advantages, it was well situated as a great *dépôt*.

While these events had been in progress at Aseerghur, the Gonds had been severely chastised; and, after his capture, the chief, Chain Shah, was deposed, and placed a prisoner in the Company's fortress of Chanda, where he died in 1820. As the best means of protecting the country on the Nerbudda, part of his territories were seized by the Company, and some forts and new posts were permanently occupied by troops, who levied a tax

on all pilgrims bound to the shrine of the Mahadeo Temple, and in all the passes that led to it. This had formerly been a source of revenue to the Gond chiefs, and it fluctuated according to the pressure that could be brought to bear upon the pilgrims.

The British now fixed it at a regular rate, and divided the money among the chiefs; and the permanent occupation of the district led to a vast improvement among its savage denizens. The capture of Aseerghur was the closing operation of the Pindaree-Mahratta war, during which there occurred a remarkable number of sieges, of forced marches by day and night, with every toil and privation to the troops, to which were added the terror of a new and dreadful enemy—the cholera. We had captured more than thirty hill fortresses, with most defective engineering appliances; and so deficient was the army in artillery and engineer officers, that there was never enough of them to afford any relief when employed in the same siege. Hence, at Aseerghur, the officers of the Madras Artillery, as we are told by Lieutenant Edward Lake, of the Engineers, lived night and day in the batteries.*

One of the great results of this war was, as Princep states, "the complete deliverance of a portion of Hindostan and of the Deccan, comprehending a space of nearly forty geographical degrees, from the most destructive form of military insolence."

The military preparations made by the Marquis of Hastings for the struggle may seem too great for the occasion, which was the suppression of a vast number of well-armed, reckless, and predatory military hordes, who, though mustering by tens of thousands, would never venture on one pitched battle; but to achieve the end in view, there was a great extent of hostile territory to cover, and, as we have shown, many forts, mostly garrisoned by resolute Arabs, to reduce. The Pindarees, though restless and destructive, were by no means formidable alone; but if well supported, might, as a nucleus, have become dangerous indeed. As it was, three of the Mahratta powers took the field against us; had he not been anticipated and checkmated in his movements by the sudden and judicious advance of Lord Hastings, Scindia too would have drawn the sword; but by the powerful armies brought forth, the chiefs of the confederation were overawed, compelled to consult their own safety, and one by one were beaten in detail.

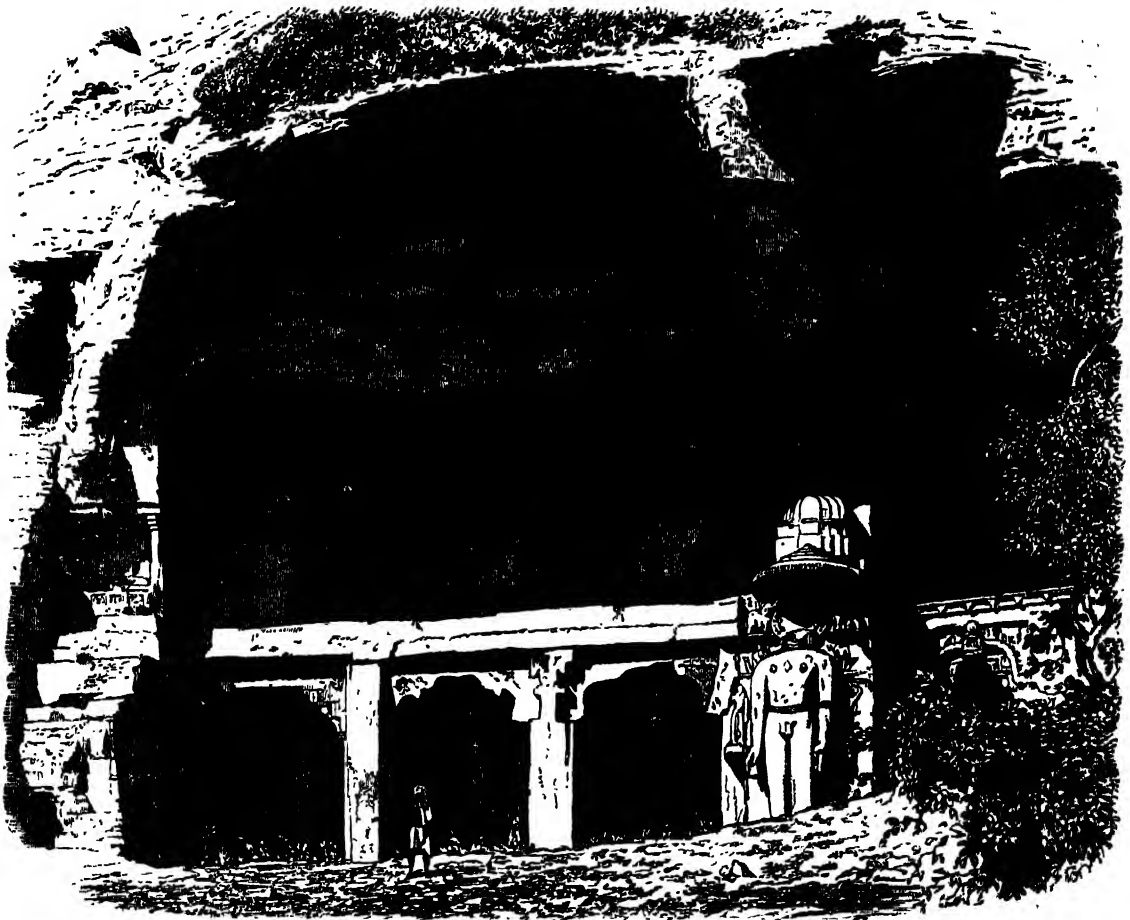
"The total annihilation of the Pindarees," says Princep, "and of other predatory associations, would alone have been sufficient for the purpose; but the

* "Journals of the Sieges of the Madras Army," 1825.

finishing hand has been put to that useful and necessary work, by erecting a barrier against all manner of usurpation from henceforward, whether by mere adventurers and soldiers of fortune, or by one legitimate chief upon his less powerful neighbour. A solid and permanent form of government, good or bad, will have been set over this vast space, which, for half a century, has been the area of continued anarchy and devastation; such a

like to that which has just been subverted. The first step will have been secured by the universal establishment of regular authority, and by the measures adopted for the maintenance of order and tranquillity in every quarter. For thus much, those under whose administration this advance has been effected will, at any rate, have a claim upon the lasting gratitude of the human race."*

To Sir John Malcolm finally fell the arduous



VIEW OF THE CAVERN OF TIRTHANKARS, NEAR GWALIOR.

government as will secure its subjects, at least, from all external violence; and the example of the territory occupied by the Bundela chiefs and by the Sikhs, to say nothing of the Mysore dominions, is abundantly sufficient to show that this alone will ensure the revival of agriculture and commerce, and restore the tract to a condition of high, if not complete, prosperity. The first step is always the most difficult to take. Give but the impulse requisite to set the machine of improvement once in motion, and its own progressive power and tendency will, of itself, effect the rest, unless counteracted by the active opposition of unthrifty military despotism,

task of achieving all this in much of Central India.

Up to the time of this Pindaree-Mahratta war, the non-interference system had been substituted for vigorous policy, in what a writer describes as the vain and selfish expectation that we might increase our own security by leaving the native states to waste themselves by plying upon each other; thus we had permitted a general anarchy to prevail, and could not be roused to a sense of the true position we were called upon to maintain, till we began to count the cost, and discovered that in

* Princep's "Narrative of British India," 1820.

order to exclude the growing anarchy from our own boundaries; we were incurring as much, if not more, expense than if we boldly drew the sword to suppress it, and by war enforced peace. Lord Hastings, by his judicious muster of great forces, showed Britain's actual power in India, and from that period her Government was recognised as the umpire in all quarrels between native states of sovereign rank, and hence an appeal to her decision began to replace the invariable recourse to arms.

No grand battle was fought in this singular Pindaree-Mahratta war; yet great was the revolution effected, and many were the instances in which the superiority of British skill and courage was made manifest, and also, how greatly the capacity of that combined action which perfect discipline gives, is superior to the bravest, but desultory, efforts of irregular troops. Holkar, once so formidable in arms as to be able to defy our power, was left in possession of little more than half his original possessions, and these so trammelled and dismembered as to be incapable of acting in concert; Scindia so crushed and crippled, that he could no longer even countenance those to whom he had once proffered armed support; Apa of Nagpore deposed, deprived of half his territories, a fugitive while another occupied his throne; the last of the Peishwas abolished, a pensioner on our bounty, and his once warlike country made an integral part of British India. In other places we had made many accessions, and many alliances as valuable as territory won. Among the latter were the treaties formed with the Rajahs of Jodpore, Jeypore, Jesselmer, and Bikaner, and with the lesser chiefs of Dungepore, Pertabghur, Banswara, Siroki, Krishnaghur, Kerauli, Bundi, and Kotah. With all of these we contracted formal engagements, on the general basis of subordinate co-operation and acknowledged supremacy, thus carrying out the whole scheme of policy originated by the Marquis of Wellesley.

In the achievement of this great end, Colonel Valentine Blacker states that the number of British officers killed and wounded amounted to 134, and the number of inferior ranks to 3,042; while the series of campaigns lasted from the 5th of November, 1817, to the 13th of May, 1819.*

This vast extension of territory and influence was not contemplated when Lord Hastings first took the field for the suppression of what was simply known as the predatory system; for when

* "Operations of the British Army in India."

the Pindarees were expelled, or driven back to their old haunts, the recovered territories were not retained as lawful conquests, but restored to those to whom they originally belonged. So far as the Mahratta princes were concerned, by their secret treacheries and open hostilities, they drew the war upon themselves, and courted their own ruin; and after having to fight them as we did at Koriegaum, the Seetabuldee Hills, and Maheidpore, no alternative was left us but to break up their confederation and crush their power for ever. Though humiliated, both Scindia and Holkar, by the tranquillity enforced in their territories, gained more in revenue than they drew before those territories were curtailed; and concerning the indirect advantages secured to the former, Sir John Malcolm, when contrasting Central India in 1817 and 1821, says:—"The saving in actual expenditure, from reductions alone, cannot be less than twenty lacs of rupees per annum; and it is difficult to calculate the amount of money and tranquillity gained by the extinction of men such as Bapoo Scindia and Jeswunt Rao Bhao, and other leaders who commanded those bodies of his army which were at once the most useless and expensive. In 1817, there was not one district belonging to Scindia in Central India that was not, more or less, in a disturbed state; in 1821 there existed not one enemy to the public peace. The progress of improvement in his territories differs in every part; but it is general."*

After the fall of Aseerghur, the armies of Bengal, Bombay, and Madras, returned to their several stations throughout these three presidencies; and all those vast regions which had been traversed in every direction by such masses of armed men, by British and native troops, in pursuit of the Mahrattas of the Peishwa, Holkar, Scindia, and Nagpore, of Arabs, Patans, Pindarees, and Gonds, became quieter and happier than they had ever been since India was inhabited by the human race. For more than thirty years previous, the province of Malwah and the whole of Central India had been pillaged, oppressed, and devastated by the Mahrattas of every tribe, by Pindarees, and the Rajpoot princes; these different powers acted sometimes in concert, but more frequently against each other; but all were alike cruel and rapacious, in carrying off spoil and women; and no power but that of Britain could save the oppressed and overburdened people, whose greatest calamity was the incessant change of masters.

* Malcolm's "Central India."

CHAPTER XCIX.

BRITISH RULE IN CENTRAL INDIA.—THE KANDYAN WAR AND CONQUEST OF CEYLON.

To the great Sir John Malcolm, who had so ably assisted "in subduing the sanguinary anarchists," and expelling the Pindarees, the Governor-General assigned the difficult task of restoring order out of the chaos which had been produced by the long years of war and pillage. He was appointed to the civil and military command of Malwah, which had suffered more than any other part of India, and the soil of which is extremely fertile, producing cotton, opium, sugar, indigo, and tobacco, together with rich pasture for numerous flocks and herds. Like Bengal, and some other provinces, Malwah has two harvests, and the whole soil is well watered by affluents of the Ganges. Of this noble district, Sir John Malcolm wrote in terms more flattering than of those of Scindia.

"The revenues of Holkar from his possessions in Malwah and Nemaar were, in 1817, 441,679 rupees (£44,167); in 1819-20, they were 1,696,183 rupees (£169,618). The expenses of the collection were, four years ago, from thirty-five to forty per cent.; they do not now exceed fifteen per cent.; there being, in fact, hardly any *sebandy*, or revenue corps, kept up. The proximity of British troops, with the knowledge of the support and protection which that Government affords to the Holkar territories, has hitherto continued to preserve them in tranquillity."

Such were the indirect advantages which accrued to our old enemy by our interference in the affairs of Central India. Prior to the appointment of Malcolm, the land was full of ruined or deserted villages; the ferocious tigers of the jungles possessed the whole country, and fought with the famished inhabitants returning to their fields and roofless homes. In Malwah alone, out of 3,701 villages, only 2,038 were inhabited; 1,663 were "without lamp"—wholly deserted; but under Malcolm's rule they were speedily restored and re-peopled, and in less than five years from the time when our troops garrisoned the district, he boasted, with honest pride, that Malwah in particular, and Central India in general, were fast progressing in population and prosperity. "It may be asserted," says he, "that history affords few examples where a change in the political condition of a country has been attended with such an aggregate of increased happiness to its inhabitants, as that which was effected within four years in Central India; and it is pleasing to think

that, with the exception of suppressing a few Bhool robbers, peace was restored, and has hitherto been maintained without one musket being fired."

So long had the hapless people been accustomed to turbulence and arbitrary rule, that, on finding British troops among them, they were naturally first inspired by doubt and alarm, and a fear of outrage and insult. But these emotions soon passed away, when the strict discipline and gentle bearing of the troops became apparent, and they were welcomed everywhere as friends and protectors; while for the general organisation of the country, well-educated and intelligent British officials were sent to all parts of it, with the happiest results.

"These agents, within their respective circles, have not only by their direct intercourse with all classes established great influence, but spread a knowledge of our character and intentions, which has increased respect and confidence; and they have almost in all cases succeeded, by arbitration of differences and the settlement of local disputes, in preserving the peace of the country *without troops*. The most exact observance of certain principles is required from these officers, and their line is very carefully and distinctly prescribed. The object has been to escape every interference with the internal administration of the country beyond what the preservation of the public peace demanded."*

Elsewhere, the people were conscious of the happiness that became their lot by the conquest of the Mahrattas and the extirpation of the roving Pindarees. Bishop Heber tells us that, in 1824, he overheard some villagers, who were comparing the peaceful times of British rule with those when Ameer Khan and Scindia, with their mounted spearmen, "spoiled all the land, smote the people, and burned all the cities through Mewar and Marwar, till thou comest unto the salt wilderness." He also heard them expatiate exultingly on the cheapness of grain; "and, when such have been the effects of British supremacy," adds the good Bishop of Calcutta, "who will refuse to every the continuance of our empire?"†

The Puar States of Dhar and Dewass—the former 400 miles in extent, and the latter a province of Malwah, which had suffered so much from depredations of the Loandies as to be almost

* "Memoir of Central India."

† "Narrative of a Journey through the Upper Provinces."

depopulated—commenced a new career of hitherto unknown prosperity when that war terminated, which was, says Malcolm, “not an attack upon a state, or upon a body of men, but upon a system. It was order contending against anarchy. . . . The victory gained was slight, comparatively speaking, over armies to what it was over mind. The universal distress which a series of revolutions must ever generate, had gone its circle, and reached all ranks and classes. The most barbarous of those who subsisted on plunder had found that a condition of continued uncertainty and alarm could not be one of enjoyment.”

All that Scindia lost by the war was, principally, the fortress of Aseerghur, as all the provinces taken from him by the Pindarees were restored by us; and the wilder portion of his territories became prosperous immediately after his useless and marauding army was broken up. British bayonets, at Maheidpore, had scattered for ever the overgrown army of Holkar, whose battalions were not re-embodied, and he was left with but 200 men to guard his palace. A few light guns, and 3,000 horse, sufficed for the police duties of his dominions.

In Malwah, within three years, Indore arose from its desolation, and became a populous and flourishing capital. Everywhere new villages sprang up; lands were drained and tilled; forests, long abandoned to the tiger and other wild animals, or deemed impenetrable, were cleared, and the timber sold with profit. In addition to the Bheels and Gonds, the Grassias, who held all the hill forts, and the Sondwarrees, were speedily suppressed. It is recorded that, when our armies first entered Central India, the country along the banks of the Nerbudda, and in the Vindhya Mountains, which run from Behar to Goojerat, was not safe even for troops to pass; and, till the end of 1818, when a British force was first cantoned at Mhow, the banditti of the hills continued their depredations. But Malcolm proceeded resolutely and perseveringly; and ultimately, industry, prosperity, and good order, were introduced, from the territories of Bhopal to those of Goojerat on the right bank of the river, and from Hindia to Burwannee on the left.

By the treaty with the Guicowar, and by arrangements made with some minor princes, a continuous and uninterrupted dominion was obtained from Bombay to Calcutta, and from Madras to Bombay, thus completing the communication between the three presidencies.*

In 1819, Mr. Mountstuart Elphinstone, who had
* Colonel Blacker's "Operations of the Brit. Army," 1817-19.

continued to act as commissioner at Calcutta, became Governor of Bombay, on the resignation of Sir Evan Nepean, Bart., who died three years after. On leaving Poonah, Mr. Elphinstone sent to the Supreme Government at Calcutta a comprehensive report on the affairs of that district, relating all he had done for the establishment of good order, and suggesting much that there yet remained to do. He also drew a contrast between the condition of the people under the present rule of the Company and that which they had endured under their Peishwas.

“No servant of that Company,” says a writer on India, “no Governor or Governor-General that had yet visited the shores of India, was so well qualified as Mr. Elphinstone to govern the natives, or so full of truly liberal and lofty principles of government. He went to India a stripling, and he never once quitted the country (except to go into Afghanistan) for the long space of thirty years, during the whole of which time he had been constantly and successfully employed, either in public business or in adding to his store of knowledge. Nor was there, we believe, in all that time, a single individual that approached him, native or European, but was impressed with a sense of his humanity, generosity, and most manly honesty and integrity.”

The veteran Marquis of Hastings made little money by the great offices he enjoyed in India, as Governor-General and Commander-in-chief, as he spent the emoluments in support of their dignity, and in the reward of merit wherever he found it, especially in those whose circumstances were straitened; but, as some acknowledgment for the fortunate climax of the late war, the Directors of the Company voted him £60,000 to purchase an estate; and he it was who influenced the Home Government in procuring the extension of the Order of the Bath to the officers of their service, who had hitherto been excluded from it. Before even the conclusion of the war, fifteen of their most distinguished had received the Cross of Knight-Commander. The first, then, as we have stated, was the veteran David Ochterlony, who had been more than forty years in India, and had served under Colonel Pearse, Sir Eyre Coote, and the gallant Popham.

It was in the camp at Terwah that the marquis had the pleasure of investing Sir David, with his own hand, on the 20th March, 1818, when he said:—

“Sir David Ochterlony, you have obliterated a distinction painful for the officers of the Honourable Company, and you have opened the doors for your brothers in arms to a reward which their recent display of exalted spirit and invincible intrepidity

show, could not be more deservedly extended to the officers of any army on earth." *

The marquis was always kind and considerate to the native army, and he knew well how to flatter the self-esteem of the sepoys. When he took the field against the Mahrattas, a report reached some of his staff that assassins had been hired by those powers for his destruction, and as they feared that such people might gain admittance to his tent at night through the negligence or, it might be, the treachery of his native guards, European patrols were established round it.

These were heard by the marquis, and on learning the cause of them, he ordered their discontinuance; and, assembling the native company on duty as his guard, he told them that he had done so, adding, that his trust in *them* was implicit, that nowhere could he consider himself safer than with them around him. His lordship might, and probably did after this, retire to rest with a firm conviction, that the hearts and watchful eyes not only of the little band to whom he had addressed himself, but also of those of their comrades at large, would be devoted to him.

During his tenor of office, he did not send so many embassies as the Earl of Minto had done; yet he dispatched, as envoy to Cochun China and Siam, Mr. John Crawford, a learned Scottish medical man, formerly an assistant-surgeon of the Bengal army; and though, like preceding missions, it produced little commercial good, the results were some able and rare volumes of travels, which added greatly to our knowledge of those remote parts of Asia.

We have related how, in the close of the eighteenth century, we had dispossessed the Dutch of all their maritime settlements in Ceylon. There is a part of that wonderfully fertile isle occupied by a somewhat savage race, named the Vedas, who lived in a free and independent state in the inaccessible mountains and forests of Bintan, behind Baticolo. They seek their food in those deep jungles where the elephants abound, with buffaloes, wild hogs, elks, and antelopes, and they cautiously avoid all connection with the rest of the islanders, except for the purpose of bartering, with those who dwell on the border of their forests, ivory, deer-skin, dried flesh, and honey, for salt, arrows, cloth, and a few other articles. They are a robust and hardy race, courageous and resolute, but cruel and treacherous. Their language is a dialect of the Cingalese, and any notion they have of religion approaches near to Brahminism.

There were other portions of Ceylon than that

occupied by the Vedas in which our occupancy was scarcely discernible; but roughly, it was supposed, in 1800, that the British territories formed 12,000 square miles, in a broad belt, and that the dominions of the King of Kandy, which were included within that belt, covered the same number of square miles.

The island was thus pretty nearly divided between us and this potentate; and it soon became evident that a kingdom within a kingdom—a wild district, occupied by barbarians, entirely surrounded by civilised Europeans—could not be permitted to exist; hence, from the day we drove out the Dutch, and occupied the coasts and the great belt between it and the hills, the absorption of the Kandyan dominion into ours became an inevitable necessity. The influence of the Dutch had died rapidly, and at the present time their number is under 1,000; and, with the exception of a few families, they have been reduced to indigence since we captured Ceylon.

"Kandy," in the native language, means a mountain, and the term "Kandyan country," in a physical sense, is synonymous with highlands. As the heart of the island is mountainous and very woody, and every way inaccessible, the Kandyans, who were very ingenious in their mode of stockading the passes, had been able to defend their country for nearly three hundred years against Portuguese, Dutch, and all other invaders. The king was a despotic sovereign; the lives and property of his subjects were totally at his disposal; and the leading features of the government seem to have been the preservation of power by the exercise of cruelty. After the departure of the Dutch, the difficulties of invading the Kandyans were as great as ever—even greater; for by that time they had attained a knowledge of gunpowder, were armed with excellent muskets, and were more fierce and hardy than the natives of continental India.

Quarrels, always attended with bloodshed, were of constant recurrence between our people and the Kandyans, till the death of the king gave rise to a disputed succession, when some of the adigars, or chiefs, courted the intervention of Britain. The spring of 1802 saw a new monarch on the throne, and he instantly made preparations for war. Every man capable of bearing arms was ordered to be in readiness to take the field, and a party of coast merchants, British subjects, who had gone up country to purchase areca-nuts, were savagely attacked and plundered.

On this, the Hon. Frederick North (son of the Earl of Guildford), then Governor of Ceylon, sent 3,000 troops to occupy the mountain capital, and place upon

* *Ceylon Gov. Gazette.*



BURGHIERS OF CEYLON.

the throne a king more favourably disposed to us. Major-General Macdowall and Colonel Barbut, who led them, penetrated the jungles, seized the town of Kandy, which stands embosomed in an amphitheatre of rocky hills, densely wooded to their very summits, and which they found deserted by its inhabitants. Macdowall crowned the pretender in the palace, with all the ceremonies used among the people, save the non-recognition of his rank by the adigars. But the general soon discovered that the newly-made king was totally without adherents in the land, and that every night our sentinels and others were killed or wounded by the bullets of ambushed marksmen, or cruelly butchered by savages, who crept upon them, knife in hand, unawares.

In some instances detachments of our troops were lured by pretended guides into secret ambuscades, and there utterly cut to pieces. Our officers and Mr. North began to feel that we had invaded a fierce and fighting race with means far from sufficient for ensuring success, when a very singular compromise was made. The general was ordered to take back to the coast the man whom he had hailed as king in Kandy, and to invest another chief, who had some adherents, with the royal name, on condition of his ceding certain districts

to Britain and of peace being instantly proclaimed. Then, on the faith of this treaty, made with an ambitious traitor, Macdowall marched from Kandy to the coast, leaving behind him a garrison of 700 Malays and 300 Europeans in the barbarous little capital (which even now consists of only two streets), together with a number of sick and wounded men. As no measures had been taken to secure them provisions or stores of any kind, starvation speedily stared them in the face; and to make matters worse, Major Davie, the officer in command, was without military skill, and almost destitute of simple courage.

Thus, in three months, the new king starved the troops out of Kandy. The Malays deserted, and with their arms joined the enemy *en masse*; our sick and wounded, 120 in number, were butchered as they lay in the hospital, incapable of resistance; while Davie, in seeking to make a retreat down country, instead of fighting his way through, madly capitulated in the jungles, and every man he had with him—save one corporal, who escaped by a miracle—was put to death by torture, beaten with clubs, or butchered with knives. Davie's own life was spared, but he showed himself at headquarters no more. He spent the remainder of it in



MOORISH CLOTH-SELLER OF CEYLON.

Kandy, adopting the dress and habits of the natives. Captain Edward H. Maitland, of the 50th Regiment, who held a small fort, acted very differently, and at the head of his party, fought a passage to Trincomalee; while Ensign Grant, a very young officer, with a handful of invalids, defended his post bravely, and at the last extremity was relieved by a detachment from Colombo. In short, "wherever care had been taken of the commissariat, and wherever common sense and common British courage were displayed, the Kandians were foiled; but wherever our officers were insane enough to trust to a treaty or truce with them, torture and murder followed, and hardly a man escaped with life."

During the months of August and September, 1802, the Kandians, flushed with success and longing for more slaughter, issuing from their woody mountains, came pouring down towards Colombo, and after capturing several forts, and carrying havoc and slaughter wherever they went, halted within fifteen miles of that town; but on the arrival of reinforcements from Bengal and the Cape of Good Hope, they fell back among their mountains and deep gloomy forests. To punish this invasion, detachments of troops were sent into the Kandian territory, with orders to lay it waste wherever they went, and everywhere to destroy the houses, gardens, and stores.



BUDDHIST PRIESTS OF CEYLON.

Again, in 1804, war was carried into the heart of that mountain country by a detachment under Captain Johnston, who published an account of its operations in London. He began his petty invasion without being properly supported, and had to fight his way back to Trincomalee, with the loss of two officers and fourteen European soldiers, seven Malays, fifty-four Bengal sepoys, and a great number of coolies, who perished in the leafy wilderness. For months now the desultory war went on, and was conducted with considerable barbarity, even on our side. Many were the villages given to the flames, and large were the tracts of country that were devastated; for our troops were infuriated by the fate of Davie's detachment, and by all the details of the massacre; and instead of restraining this sentiment, the officers are said to have encouraged it.

After they had once more invaded our territory, in 1805, and been driven back with loss from all the maritime districts, in the month of July, in that year, a more able governor than Mr. North came, in the person of the Hon. Sir Thomas Maitland, a veteran officer, who had served in Lord Aberdour's Scottish Light Horse during the Seven Years' War. At this crisis civil war had broken out in the interior, and, for some years, the Kandians employed their weapons on each other. During



MALDIVIAN ISLANDERS.

this interval, Sir Thomas applied all his talent to undo the mischief done by his predecessor, and to improve the condition of our coast settlements. Sir James Mackintosh, the celebrated lawyer, statesman, and historian, when on his way home from Bombay (retiring from the office of recorder), visited Ceylon in 1810, and in his diary he records his admiration of General Maitland's mode of administering the affairs of the island. "By the cheerful decision of his character, and by his perfect knowledge of men, he has become universally popular amidst severe retrenchments. In an island where there was in one year a deficit of £700,000, he has reduced the expenses to the level of the revenue; and with his small army of 5,000 men, he has twice, in the same year, given effectual aid to the great government of Madras, which has an army of 70,000 men."

Leaving the Kandyan mountaineers to waste their strength on each other, he sought only—instead of attempts at conquest—to consolidate a system of government in the possessions we had acquired, to raise their value, and form laws suitable to the Cingalese.

In 1812, General (afterwards Sir Robert) Brownrigg, Bart., G.C.B., and Colonel of the 9th Regiment, succeeded Sir Thomas Maitland as governor. Just about the time he landed, a war of a singularly revolting nature, in the interior, came to an end. It had been waged between the King of Kandy and his minister, a powerful adigar. After nearly causing the prince to be assassinated, he was betrayed, taken prisoner, and, together with his nephew, beheaded, while six other adigars were impaled alive. Another nephew of the rebellious minister, named Eheglapola, having succeeded to his office in 1815, was suspected of renewing his uncle's designs upon the throne. An armed band was sent against him, and on being defeated, he fled to one of our posts, and was transmitted to Colombo; but all the members of his family, whom he had left in Kandy, were put to death by the king. Among these were his wife and children, and his brother and his brother's wife. The males were beheaded, and the females, according to the usage of the country, were drowned, while all his adherents were impaled, or flogged nigh unto death, by the shore of the lovely artificial lake on which Kandy is situated, to gratify the vengeance of the potentate who bore the name of Raja Tri Wikrama Raja Singa.

Meanwhile, to the lonely Eheglapola was assigned a house near the fort of Colombo, with a pension from General Brownrigg. Longing only for a dreadful revenge upon his uncle, promising adherents

and co-operation, he passionately urged again and again upon the governor that he would agree to any terms if he were only lent some troops to aid him in the destruction of those at whose hands his family and friends had perished. Loth to meddle with such barbarians, General Brownrigg declined to afford him even an audience on the subject: the more so, as he was in daily expectation of hearing that the king was coming from his fastnesses to avenge the shelter given to a rebel; but matters were coming to a speedy issue.

Tidings came that ten cloth-merchants, who were Cingalese, but British subjects, had been seized among the hills and taken to Kandy, where they were savagely mutilated, by having their noses, ears, and right arms cut off, by the express order of the king. Seven of them expired on the spot; but the other three reached Colombo in a dreadful condition.

In the November of the same year a small column of troops, organised for service in the hilly country, took the field, under Major Lionel Hook, of the 2nd Ceylon Regiment, a corps long before disbanded. Crossing the boundary river, he began his march on the 11th of January, 1816, up country. At the passage of another stream the Kandyans attempted to dispute his progress; but a few well-directed shots from a six-pound field-piece sent them flying in confusion. Proclamations in the Cingalese language were now distributed, setting forth the cause of hostility, and explaining that we made war to secure "the permanent tranquillity of our settlements, and in vindication of the honour of the British name; for the deliverance of the Kandyan people from their oppressors; in fine, for the submission of the Malabar dominion, which, during three generations, has tyrannised over the country."

In those expeditions against the Kandyans, our troops in the jungles often found, to their cost, how excellent a preservative against wet and damp were the giant leaves of the great talipot-tree of Ceylon, which imbibes no humidity, however much rain may fall upon it. Each of the enemy's musketeers were furnished with one talipot leaf, by means of which they kept their arms and powder perfectly dry, and thus could fire upon the invading forces, who neglected to adopt the same precaution, and had their arms and ammunition often rendered quite unserviceable by the rain and other moisture in the woods and thickets. "This beautiful tree," says a writer, "which grows in the heart of the forests, may be classed among the tallest of trees, and becomes still higher when on the point of bursting forth from its leafy summit. The sheath

which then envelops the flower is very large, and, when it bursts, makes an explosion like the report of a cannon.*

Disgusted by the savage and suspicious temper of their king, many of the adigars remained sullenly aloof, while some assisted Major Hook, in order to co-operate with whom, seven other columns of troops, advancing from different parts of the coast, began to concentrate round Kandy. The entire strength was only 3,000 men; but this force was sufficient to make it appear that the sanguinary Raja Tri Wikrama Raja Singa had nothing to hope for now.

On all sides he was hedged in by bayonets. By the 2nd of February the second brigade from Colombo was far up in the country, and had formed its camp on some important heights, where it was joined by General Brownrigg, who halted for some days to let the rest of the troops close up.

There he received tidings that the king had quitted Kandy; then a general advance began, and on the 14th of February, Brownrigg took possession of the native capital, which was found quite deserted; but it soon became known that the fugitive king was concealed in a lonely house not far distant. On this, measures were at once taken to secure his person, and five days subsequently he was made prisoner, together with his aged mother, four wives, all his children, and some followers who adhered to his falling fortunes.

He expected that he, and all with him, would be instantly butchered like the family and friends of Eheglapola, and when assured that their lives would all be spared, and their treatment would be good and tender, the bewildered savages became suddenly contented and were happy. In charge of Major Hook, the whole of the prisoners were, under a strong escort, conveyed down to Colombo; and so indifferent had the people become to the fate of their king, that not a shot was fired, nor a bow drawn in his defence.

On the 6th of March he reached the European island capital, and instead of being placed in the fortress, which is insulated by the sea and a lake, he was, to his surprise, placed in a handsome and well-furnished house, where he exclaimed: "As I am no longer permitted to be a king, I am thankful for all this kindness." By this time our unequivocal right of conquest was admitted by all the adigars, and on the 2nd of March the British flag was hoisted over the palace at Kandy, and a salute of twenty-one guns announced that George III. was king of the island of Ceylon.

His deposed predecessor remained at Colombo

* Thornberg.

until the 24th of January, 1816. He was heard more than once to assert, that until he was made prisoner by the British, he had lived in perpetual dread of assassination, so dreadful had been his cruelties and excesses, which were said to be the result of fits of intemperance; and as a vast quantity of cherry-brandy bottles were found in the palace at Kandy, he is supposed to have been very fond of that liqueur.

"Your British governors," said he to Major Hook, "have an advantage over us in Kandy; they have about them counsellors who never allow them to do anything in a passion, and that is the reason you have so few executions; but, unfortunately for us, the offender is dead before our resentment has subsided."*

On the date above given, the ex-king, and 100 other persons, were conveyed as state prisoners to continental India, and after tarrying for a time at Madras, were placed in Vellore, where the former died in 1832. Two years after his incarceration there, a dangerous insurrection broke out in the central provinces of Ceylon, and lasted till the end of 1819, when, after several encounters in the woods, it was finally suppressed by the lieutenant-governor, General Brownrigg, who, for his eminent services there, had been created a baronet in March, 1816, when the king granted him an augmentation to his armorial bearings, representing in chief, the sword, sceptre, and crown of Kandy, with a demi-Kandyan as a crest.

Since 1819, nearly uninterrupted peace has prevailed in Ceylon, and various improvements, fiscal, judicial, and commercial, have been fully carried out. The Kandyan provinces are separately administered by the governor, without the assistance of his council. There is no doubt that, of old, the possession of this fertile isle was turned to good account by the Portuguese and Dutch; although, until lately, writes a statistician in 1850, a vote of supply was annually made for the support of our Cingalese establishment. It is not in a commercial point of view alone that we are to estimate the value of this conquest, which is one, says M. Bartolacci, that, "in the event of a great reverse of fortune in India, would still afford us a most commanding position, invulnerable by the Indian powers in the peninsula, and yet so situated as to give us the greatest facility for regaining the sovereignty of that country. . . . The harbour of Trincomalee is open to the largest fleets in every season of the year, when the storms of the south-west and north-east monsoons render impracticable, or very dangerous, the approach to other ports in India. This circumstance alone

* Dr. Marshall's "Ceylon," &c.

ought to fix our attention to that spot as peculiarly adapted to be made a strong military depôt and a place of great mercantile resort, if a generally free trade becomes effectually established from India to other parts of the world. It ought further to be observed, that the narrowness of the channel which separates the island from the continent of India, and position of Adam's Bridge, which checks the violence of the monsoons, leaves, on either side of it, a calm sea, and facilitates a passage to the opposite

coast at all times of the year. A respectable European force stationed at Colombo, Jaffnapatam, or Trincomalee, can, in a very few days or hours, be landed on the Malabar and Coromandel provinces."

To the present day, the best account of the interior and of the people is that given by Captain Robert Knox, a merchant-mariner, who was taken prisoner on the coast, or kidnapped, and carried off by the king in 1659, and was there a captive for nineteen years.

CHAPTER C.

THE AFFAIRS OF CUTCH.—QUARREL WITH THE AMEERS OF SCINDE.—INSURRECTION IN GOOJERAT.—
AFFAIRS OF OUDE AND THE DECCAN.—CASE OF PALMER AND CO.

It was during the administration of the Marquis of Hastings that, as we have told, Java was so unwisely restored to the Dutch, thus giving them the keys of the Straits of Malacca and the Straits of Sunda. But now we shall proceed to record some miscellaneous occurrences, for which no exact place has hitherto occurred in our narrative; and the chief of these were, perhaps, the affairs of Cutch.

The rajah of that country, Rao Barmaljee (or Bharmalji), after concluding a peaceful treaty with the British Government, had surrounded himself with reckless parasites and dissolute companions, among whom he gave loose to such intemperate habits as to impair his powers of reason; and his career now became that of a cruel and sanguinary tyrant. By his express orders Lakhpati, or Ladhupa, the young prince who had competed with him for the throne, was murdered with great barbarity; and his widow, who had been left pregnant, and afterwards bore a son, would have shared his fate but for British interference.

Candid and friendly relations with a prince of a temper so brutal could not be of long duration; thus, he foolishly began to make open military preparations against us. Forewarned by these, the British sent an additional battalion to reinforce their troops in Anjar. On this, Barmaljee, fearing to attack them, turned his troops against Kallian Sing, the father of the prince's widow, and one of the Jhareja chiefs under British protection. As it was impossible to pass over such an infringement of the treaty as this, or to omit giving the rajah a rough lesson, our troops marched against him, and at their approach he made a hasty retreat.

Pushing on, the 24th of March, 1819, saw them in front of Bhooj, the capital of Cutch, having a fort on the bank of a small river. After repulsing some heavy bodies of horse and foot, which ventured to attack them, they carried the fort by storm; and Barmaljee, on discovering the futility of further resistance, surrendered to the mercy of the British commander. The latter, acting in concert with certain Jhareja chiefs, deposed him, and the administration of Cutch was to be carried on in the name of Desal Rao, his infant son, under the direction of a British Resident and the guarantee of the Government at Calcutta.

These matters had scarcely been arranged when Cutch became the scene of one of the most dreadful earthquakes ever known in India. A vast tract of country sank down and was submerged by the invading sea, while, adjoined to it, an enormous mound of sand and earth, many miles in extent, was heaved up to a considerable height. In Bhooj, 7,000 houses were shaken to ruins, under which 1,140 persons were buried. At Anjar, 3,000 houses were destroyed, and the fort was shaken into a mere heap of stones. Many other places suffered, and simultaneous shocks were felt in other parts of India.

By the treaty concluded at Bhooj, the crime of female infanticide, which prevailed to a vast and horrible extent among the Jharejas, was to be suppressed; but now the political arrangement with Cutch gave great offence to the Ameers of Scinde, who had long had an eye to the conquest of it, and were inspired with rage and disappointment on finding themselves anticipated; and other

circumstances concurred to add to their antagonism to the British Government. The Khosas, and other predatory hordes who dwell on the skirts of the desert of Scinde, had been pillaging on the borders of Cutch and Goojerat. To suppress these robbers, the co-operation of the Ameers had been asked, and they had dispatched a body of their troops to act with a British detachment, which, under the orders of Colonel Barclay, marched from the northern frontier of Goojerat. The auxiliaries from Scinde, instead of acting against the invading Khosas, allowed them quietly to encamp in their neighbourhood, and when Barclay attacked and dispersed them, complained, oddly enough, that they themselves had been also the object of his attack.

Another ground of offence was, that in pursuing the Khosas, Colonel Barclay had violated Scindian territory. In short, the Ameers were determined on having a quarrel, and without even asking for an explanation, or making the slightest effort to have an amicable settlement, they at once took the means for redress into their own hands, and, at the head of a body of troops, burst into Cutch, which they wasted with fire and sword to within fifty miles of Bhooj, and captured the town of Loona.

Scinde is a province 300 miles long by eighty broad. Its government was a military despotism, under Ameers, who belonged to the Mohammedan sect of the Sheas. The inhabitants are also Mohammedan, and consist of forty-two tribes, which at that time could bring 36,000 horse into the field, all hardy and warlike men, who can also fight on foot. "The Scindians," says Mrs. Postans, "are a grave, sad people, and the sound of dancing, or the voice of music, is seldom heard among them. It would be strange, however, were it otherwise, where life is held as nought, when its loss may contribute to the rulers' pastime; when the ground, which should yield corn to the husbandman and fruit to the planter, is over-run with rank weeds and thorny bushes, to shelter wild and dangerous beasts; and when the villager tills the field with his sword by his side, and the grain-seller stands with his matchlock in his hand, in the market-place, to guard his property from robbery by the prince's followers."

Such was the character of the people with whom we now seemed on the eve of a dangerous quarrel. After taking Loona, on the advance of our troops towards them, they fell back; but the Bombay Government declined to overlook the bold aggression, and threatened to send a column of their army into Scinde; on this, the Ameers, who were not yet quite ready to do battle with Britain, sent

apologies to Bombay and to Bhooj, and disowned the proceedings of their troops. Indisposed to engage in a new war, which promised no useful result, the Marquis of Hastings accepted the pretended explanation, and concluded with the Ameers a treaty which stipulated that they should procure the liberation of all captives carried off by the Khosas, and, moreover, should restrain the latter, and all other marauders in their quarter, from raids into the territories of Britain and her allies.

Goojerat was the next source of trouble to the Governor-General. Anand Rao, its imbecile sovereign, held possession of the throne, while the government was nominally administered by his brother, Futteh Sing, under the surveillance of a British Resident. On the death of Futteh, in 1818, a younger brother, named Syajee Rao, nineteen years of age, took his place as a kind of regent, and matters continued thus till the following year, when Anand Rao died. On this occurring, Syajee became Guicowar. A youth somewhat fiery by nature, he was indisposed to forego any of his royal rights to Britain or any other power, and stated, with some truth, "That since he had been considered fit to conduct the government as regent to his predecessor, he must surely be capable of conducting it now that the sole right of sovereignty was legally vested in himself. There was no longer any occasion for the controlling presence of a British Resident."

While it was impossible not to acknowledge the justice of what the young prince so plausibly advanced, it was easily foreseen at Calcutta how perilous to British interests and the prosperity of the country would be his uncontrolled exercise of royal and independent authority. Thus, the new Governor of Bombay, Mountstuart Elphinstone, deemed it necessary and proper to visit Baroda, for the purpose of adjusting the terms of future intercourse.

The Guicowar had derived many advantages of great importance by the abolition of the Peishwa. By that event he had won much territory, and been released from heavy monetary demands; and as the British Government had undertaken the entire defence of his country, it was only deemed just that the insufficient quantity of territory ceded for subsidiary forces should be considerably increased. It was confidently supposed that the exchequer was in such a prosperous state as to be well able to bear the proposed additional tract; but much was Elphinstone's bewilderment to learn that it was in a state of extreme embarrassment.

One million sterling of debt remained undis-

charged, while the expenditure of the last two years had far exceeded the receipts, and the troops were all in arrears of pay; partly from bad crops, but still more from severe exactions, the tributaries were all in the utmost distress; hence, under such calamitous circumstances, the idea of abandoning all control over Syajee Rao and his mode of administering was at once abandoned, and after arranging for the discharge of his debts, by loans, raised at a moderate rate of interest on the security of assignments of his revenue, and a British guarantee, a final conclusion was come to thus, in 1820:—

"The British Government should have the exclusive management of foreign affairs, and the Guicowar, so long as he fulfilled his engagements, should conduct the internal affairs, subject, however, to the following provisoes:—That he should consult with the British Government in the appointment of his minister, and that the Resident should have free access at all times to inspect the public accounts; be apprised of all financial measures at the commencement of each year; and be consulted before any expense of magnitude was incurred."

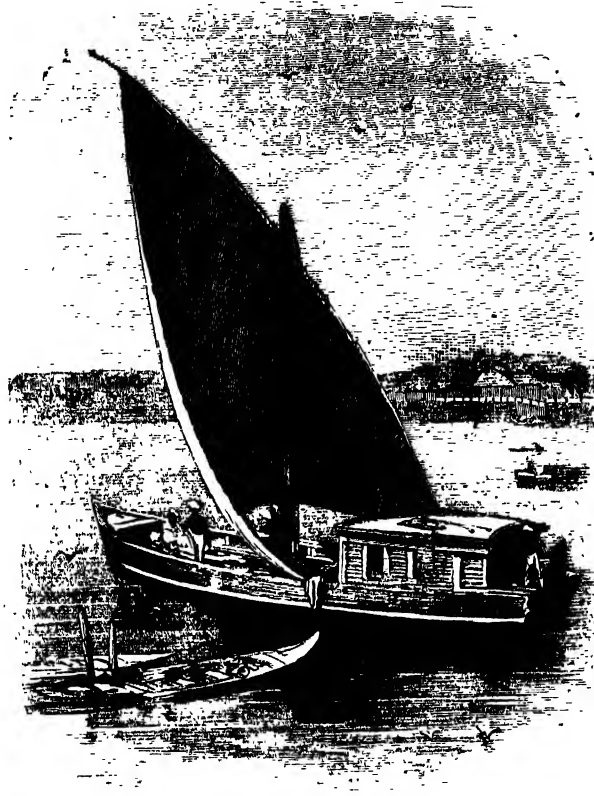
The sea-coast of Goojerat, from the Gulf of Cambay to the river Indus, is full of creeks and inlets; these are occupied by different independent chiefs, who were generally addicted to piracy, but are now kept in awe by British naval superiority; while the north, north-western, and even central quarters of the province, were until very late years unexplored, and were over-run or occupied by numerous hordes of armed banditti, who were thieves not so much by profession as by nation; and against these an expedition was undertaken in 1820.

Tempted by the withdrawal of our troops for

the war against the Pindarees and Mahrattas, the Wagars of Okamandel, a Goojerat district, about thirty miles in length by fifteen in breadth, surprised Dwaraka, its principal town, and another named Beyt; and as there was no force to oppose them, made themselves masters of all the adjacent country. For several months they had been in undisputed possession, when the Hon. Colonel Leicester F. Stanhope, C.B., and Quartermaster-General in India, a son of the Earl of Harrington,

also a distinguished officer, who had served at Buenos Ayres and throughout the Mahratta war, was sent against them by sea, at the head of an expedition, consisting of H.M. 65th Regiment, two regiments of native infantry, the 1st Light Cavalry, and a requisite train of guns.

This force arrived off Dwaraka, famous alike then as a nest of pirates and as a resort for pilgrims to the shrine of Krishna, and landed on the 26th of November, 1820. The garrison, consisting of Arabs and natives of Scinde, retired into the great temple, the shrine of which was a source of abundant wealth to the Brahmins, and the



BOMBAY RUNDER BOAT.

solid walls of which seemed to mock all ordinary means of attack. Over the roof of an adjoining house an entrance was effected by the bayonet, the 65th (or 2nd Yorkshire) leading the way, and of 500 armed men who garrisoned the place, and were driven out, only 100 escaped death. This punishment, by its extreme severity, so intimidated the rest, who, with their chiefs, were posted in a neighbouring thicket, that they surrendered at discretion. The robbers who garrisoned Beyt also surrendered, and thus the piratical insurrection in Goojerat was completely crushed.

Between the Nabob of Oude, Sadut Ali, and Major Baillie, the Resident at his court during the time Lord Minto was in office, there had been

several discussions and disputes, which, after being put an end to, began anew on the arrival of his successor. Their chief source of contention was, the amount of interference which the major was entitled to have in the internal government of Oude. The Earl of Minto had decided in favour of the Resident; but before any steps could be taken in accordance with that decision, he had sailed for Europe. The death of the nabob, on the 11th July, 1814, ended their jealousies. Throughout his life he had been avaricious, and now his treasure almost amounted to thirteen millions sterling.

Ghazee-ud-Deen Hyder, his eldest son, succeeded him; and that prince, being aware that he was greatly indebted to Major Baillie for the ease with which he did so, was facile enough to consult him in the choice of his dewan and other ministers, and to agree to much of the internal reformation which that officer had urged in vain upon his father. But all this was too pleasant a state of matters to be of long continuance.

Some of the reforms, made at the suggestion of the major, were opposed to native prejudice, and the nabob began to repent that, like his father, he had not taken his own way; and, while full of this conviction, he paid a visit to the Governor-General, then Earl of Moira, who had come to Cawnpore during our war with Nepaul, and on that occasion Ghazee-ud-Deen offered a million sterling as a free gift to the Company. Moira declined it as a gift, but accepted it as a loan, to bear interest at the government rate of six per cent.

That all this was meant as a bribe was evident; for at the time the nabob made his handsome offer, he delivered to the earl a document, which, though expressing the greatest personal regard for Major Baillie, hinted pretty plainly at a desire to be less controlled by him. Having, by some means, discovered that the sentiments of the young nabob in this matter were much stronger than he had

ventured to express on paper, to arrive at the perfect truth he avoided personal intercourse with him, but allowed members of his staff to do so, and through them he was informed—at second-hand—that the nabob was not treated by Major Baillie with the deference due to his royal rank. He therefore gave the former instructions to treat the latter, “on all public occasions, as an independent prince; to be strict in the observance of all public ceremonies; and to confine advice or remonstrance upon any mismanagement in the nabob’s adminis-

tration to such occasions as might endanger British interests.”

These instructions had not been long issued when the major was desired to obtain another million sterling from the nabob, as a supply in season for the war in Nepaul. He gave the money, but with unconcealed constraint and annoyance; and he felt more than ever irritated at Baillie, as being the medium or instrument through whom it was exacted. He became more than ever hostile to the Resident, turned a deaf ear to his suggestions, and removed from his court and councils all persons who favoured him.

Aware of all this, and somewhat irritated by

the course the Governor-General had pursued, the major forwarded to him a letter, in which he gave free utterance to all he felt on the subject. A rupture was the consequence; Major Baillie was removed, and the nabob was left uncontrolled in the internal administration of Oude. In May, 1816, the loan of the second million was discharged by a treaty, which commuted it for a piece of territory which belonged to Britain, but was situated to the north-west of Oude, on the Nepaulese frontier; and now, encouraged by the apparent cordiality subsisting between the two governments, the Earl of Moira ventured to recommend a change of title, which would give Oude more the character of an independent kingdom.

The nabobs of that country (properly called



NAUTCH-GIRL OF BARODA.

Ayodhya), since its conquest by the Mohammedan kings of Delhi in the thirteenth century, had been content with the title of Nabob-Vizier, thereby intimating that they held themselves to be only the hereditary viziers, or prime ministers, of the Great Mogul, and, as such, the servants, but not the equals, of the King of Delhi.

Ghazee-ud-Deen, whose ambition was fired, and whose pride was flattered by the suggestion of the Governor-General, lost no time in acting upon it; and thus, in 1819, greatly to the indignation of the court of Delhi, and to the extreme dissatisfaction of the Mohammedan population of India, he issued a proclamation, announcing that, in all time coming, his designation was to be, *Abu Muzufar, Maiz-ud-Deen, Shah-i-Zaman, Ghazee-ud-Deen, Hyder Shah, Padishah-i-Awadh*, meaning, "the Victorious—the Upholder of the Faith—the King of the Aya, Ghazee-ud-Deen Hyder Shah, King of Oude."

In all this the Marquis of Hastings committed a mistake: so far as concerned the condition of Oude, which did not justify the flattering pictures that he drew of the consequences resulting from the uncontrolled internal management of the nabobking. The absence of Major Baillie began to be speedily felt, and British troops were repeatedly called out to assist in the reduction of refractory zemindars. Thus, in 1822, a British column was compelled, in the neighbourhood of Sultanpore alone, to capture and dismantle the forts of seventy of those landholders; while bands of Dacoits, and other armed robbers, countenanced by them and connived at by the police, infested the topes and jungles, and often crossed the frontier to pillage in British territory.

Of the weakness of the King of Oude's character there are several anecdotes in the "Journal" of Bishop Heber, who records that, "like his father, he has already taken to drink spirits. We passed one evening the royal *suwarree* of a coach, several elephants, and some horse guards, waiting to convey him back from one of his summer palaces, where he had been dining. On returning from our drive we found these going away without him, and learned that he had resolved to sleep there. I thought nothing of the circumstance at the time," adds the bishop, "but on mentioning it to one of the persons best acquainted with his habits, he said, 'Ay; that means that his Majesty was not in a fit state to offer himself to the eyes of his subjects.'"

When the Marquis of Hastings returned home in the *Glasgow* frigate, in 1823, he brought with him presents from the King of Oude to George IV., valued at £300,000. Among them were a sword

and belt studded with diamonds, with a sword-knot, to which was appended an emerald, said, by the London papers of the time, "to be the largest extant, and nearly the size of an egg." In the same ship was brought home a bird of paradise, alleged to be the first that ever reached Europe alive.

During the official reign of the Marquis of Hastings, some events took place in the Deccan, which require at least a brief notice.

The administration of the government, nominally, was in the hands of the Nizam's favourite, Moonir-ul-Moolk; but the executive power was really wielded by the Hindoo, Chandoo Lal, in concert with the British Resident. Indignant to find himself deprived of all control, the Nizam allowed all things to take their own course; and whenever his opinion was asked by the ministers or Resident, he was wont to reply, sullenly, that it was useless to give it, as he had no interest in anything that occurred. Chandoo Lal was keen-witted and active, but aware that his post was precarious, in consequence of the hostility that existed against him at court, made such friends as he could there by a liberal distribution of treasure to all who possessed influence, or could yield him useful intelligence by acting as his spies.

So magnificent were those bribes, that a portion of them are said to have found a way into the pockets of the Nizam himself; and it was alleged that every one of the latter's servants, and even his mother-in-law, were in the pay of Chandoo Lal, to whom she sent a daily report of all that occurred in the inmost chambers of the palace. To uphold this singular mode of retaining office, a vast expenditure was requisite, and this Chandoo strove to meet, partly by rapacious exactions, and partly by loans, at enormous interest, from bankers in Hyderabad. The revenues of the Deccan he let to the highest bidders; and those who contracted for them—intent on great profit alone—employed so much cruel violence and heartless extortion, that the tillers of the soil abandoned their fields in despair, and the revenue and the population rapidly diminished together.

And now, about this time—1816—occurred that which made some noise at the period, and was known as the case of William Palmer and Co. When Chandoo Lal became seriously and financially embarrassed, he had formed a connection with a mercantile house of that name in Hyderabad; and on the recommendation of Mr. Russell, then our Resident there, he succeeded in obtaining—as minister of the Nizam—considerable advances from it in 1814.

But in 1816, William Palmer and Co. began to

doubt whether such transactions with the minister of the Nizam were not at variance with the Act 37, George III., c. 142. The 28th section of that Act, proceeding on the preamble, that the practice of British subjects lending money to the native powers of India, or borrowing from them, has been productive of much extortion and usury, enacted, that, from the 1st of December, 1797, "no British subject shall, by himself, or by any other person, directly or indirectly employed by him, lend any money, or other valuable thing, to any native prince in India, by whatever name or description such native prince shall be called; nor shall any British subject be concerned, either by himself, or by any other person, either directly or indirectly, in raising or procuring any money for such native prince, or as being security for such loan or money; nor shall any British subject lend any money or other valuable thing to any other person for the purpose of being lent to any such native prince; nor shall any British subject, by himself, or by any other person, either directly or indirectly, for his use or benefit, take, receive, hold, enjoy, or be concerned in any bond, note, or other security or assignment, granted, or to be granted, after the 1st day of December next, for the loan, or for the re-payment of money or other valuable thing."

The violation of this law was to be treated as a misdemeanour, and all security given for money so lent was declared to be null and void.

William Palmer and Co., on referring to this Act, were somewhat anxious about the moneys advanced, and for their safety in future; but, as British influence had placed Chandoo Lal in power, the Supreme Government felt themselves responsible for all his acts and transactions. If the first dealings of Palmer and Co. with him were illegal, it is difficult to see how any that were subsequent could be less so; yet the mercantile firm succeeded on application in obtaining, in virtue of a reserve clause in the Act, the consent of the Governor-General in council, subject only to the condition that the Resident at Hyderabad should have ample permission to satisfy himself, at any time, as to the nature of the transactions in which Palmer and Co. might engage, in consequence of the permission then given to them.

On finding that they were thus countenanced by the Governor-General and Supreme Council, they extended their monetary transactions with Chandoo Lal; and, with the full cognisance of the powers at Calcutta, undertook to provide for the pay of the troops in Berar and Aurungabad. The regular pay of those reformed forces being a necessity to their

efficiency, the sanction of those in authority was the more easily gained, on the assertion that the Hyderabad bankers would not advance the funds on the security offered—the assignments of the revenue.

On finding how readily all their wishes were complied with by the Supreme Government, Palmer and Co. waxed bold, and entered into a negotiation for a loan to Chandoo Lal of £600,000 sterling; and their application for sanction was recommended at Calcutta by the Resident, Mr. Russell, on the ground that such advantageous terms could be got through no other agency. Chandoo Lal, on his part, urged that the money was to be spent in paying arrears that were due to public establishments, reducing incumbrances held to native bankers, and advancing to the ryots the means of tilling the soil.

Chandoo Lal's proposed modes of applying the loan were excellent; but as suspicion had now been kindled, the vote to sanction it was opposed by two members of council, but was carried by the casting vote of the Governor-General. "This was particularly unfortunate, as one of the leading members of the firm of William Palmer and Co. had married a ward whom the Governor-General had brought up in his family and loved like a daughter; and persons were uncharitable enough to suggest that the relation thus established had clouded his judgment, and gained his consent to an arrangement of which he would otherwise have been the first to perceive the impropriety."

The sanction of the executive at Calcutta to the new loan had barely been given, in 1820, when a despatch arrived from Leadenhall Street, disapproving, in vehement terms, of all the transactions relating to the mercantile firm at Hyderabad, "and enjoining, both that the consent which had been given with the view of legalising their proceedings should be withdrawn, and that, in the event of any discussion as to the claims of the firm on the Nizam, the British Government should not interfere to enforce them."

Thus the firm was interdicted from all future transactions with the Nizam or Chandoo Lal; and the result of the whole affair is thus summed up briefly by Beveridge* from several authorities:—

"Had William Palmer and Co. been acting in an honourable and straightforward manner, they might have complained, with justice, of the severity of this sudden interdict and the ruin in which it might involve them; but when the real state of the case was investigated, their explanations were considered shuffling and evasive, and the so-called

* "Comprehensive History of India."

loan of sixty lacs proved little better than a fiction and a fraud. Like Chandoo Lal, they had represented the loan as entirely a new advance for specific purposes, whereas Sir Charles Metcalfe, who had become Resident at Hyderabad, had little difficulty in discovering, notwithstanding the mysterious manner in which the accounts were stated, that there had been no real advance; and that the loan of sixty lacs was nothing more than the transfer of a previous debt of that amount, claimed by the firm of the Nizam, to a new account. They had

thus obtained the sanction of the Supreme Government by false pretences. As soon as the real facts were discovered, the Governor-General became fully alive to the gross imposition which had been practised upon him, and characterised it as it deserved. For a moment, imputations affecting the Governor-General's personal integrity were whispered in some quarters; but another dissipated them; and the worst that could be said was, that from not exercising due caution he had allowed his confidence to be abused."

CHAPTER CL.

THE PIRATES OF THE GULF.—THEIR ORIGIN AND PROGRESS.—END OF LORD HASTINGS' ADMINISTRATION.

THE year 1821 witnessed the final destruction of those sea robbers who had so long infested the Gulf of Persia. All British commerce in these waters, says Captain Mignan, H.E.I.C.S., in his account of the Joassamee pirates, was, until a late period, at their mercy. In atrocity they surpassed the corsairs of Algiers, and were a race of Arabs descended from the people of Nujjeed, an extensive tract of Arabia. They once possessed the principality of Seer, in the country of Oman, and from the earliest ages had been an independent tribe; but Oman contained many others, including the Zobairy, Kohasmi, Beni-Kutib, and Beni-Nain. For many years the latter was the most powerful tribe, but the anarchy and strife which followed the death of Nadir Shah, compelled Moolah-Ali, the Governor of Ormus, Gambaroon, and Mina, to solicit the aid of certain Arabs to resist the unjust levy of tribute made by every claimant to the throne of Persia, heedless that it had already been collected by his predecessor. He therefore fixed on Rashid Ben Cassim, with whom he formed an alliance by marriage, and by the war-vessels under his command could render himself formidable by sea, whenever necessary.

The Cassimees, or, as they were afterwards named, the Joassamees, retained the vessels occasionally sent to them, and having many opportunities for obtaining arms and ammunition, they soon acquired sufficient power to take possession of several towns upon the coast of the Persian Gulf, and to extend their conquests through the territories

of Moolah Ali, till their career was checked by the Sheik Abdallah, who re-took Ormus and Gambaroon from Moolah Hassan, and Kishom and Luft from the Joassamees.

In the year 1772, the Sheik Rashid of Ras-el-Khyma, who had succeeded his father, Sheik Moolah, co-operated with the Sheik of Muscat, and destroyed two Persian vessels off Bunderabbas, with a magazine formed for the Persian troops at Linga. Three years subsequently, Sheik Rashid, who was fast becoming formidable, and was at feud with the Imaum of Muscat, captured some vessels belonging to Bushire, on the pretence that their cargoes were the property of the Imaum. After this, he resigned the Sheikdom to his son, Suggester, who espoused a daughter of Abdallah; and thus ended all their dissensions.

The Joassamees now went forth ostensibly as traders, and by their undoubted activity carried on a very lucrative commerce; but their inborn treachery of character was constantly manifesting itself, and leading to hot disputes among themselves and their neighbours. The Persian influence being on the decline along the coast, the Ras-el-Khyma fleet caused every petty chief to fit out armed boats, manned by lawless crews, whose dependence was on plunder alone—a state of affairs that arose entirely out of the quarrels between Ras-el-Khyma and Muscat.

The Joassamees remained tolerably quiet till 1796, and took no part in the quarrels that ensued between the Turkish Government and the Montfice

Arabs; but in May, 1797, they had the hardihood to capture a British vessel, charged with public despatches. In a few days after they released her. In the October of the same year, the Company's cruiser, *Viper*, while at anchor in the roadstead of Bushire, was attacked by them. The armed dhows of the Joassamees had arrived a few days before the *Viper*. They were under the banner of Sheik Sallah, and their object was to attack the Sooree Arabs, who were at Bussorah. On the day the *Viper* came to anchor near them, the Sheik obtained an interview with our Resident, and, after many professions of friendship, he begged that official "not to protect the Sooree dhows, nor ship any Company's property on board of them, adding, that if he did so, it would, of course, be held sacred." Ere retiring, he requested to be supplied with some ammunition from the magazine of the *Viper*. This he no sooner received, than he at once attacked her with guns and matchlocks, but was repulsed. On being remonstrated with by the Resident, he had the effrontery to assert that the *Viper* had first fired on him.

Towards the end of 1798, after many disputes that arose from the unsettled state of the Muscat Government, the Imaum threatened to blockade Bussorah, on account of some ancient claims against the Pacha of Bagdad. The more effectually to execute his hostile intentions, he negotiated a peace with his most formidable enemies, the Joassamees. The latter, however, were completely kept in check by the Wahabees, who, by the middle of 1802, had reduced to nominal submission the whole coast from Bussorah to Deba, their own territory included. Towards the close of 1804, the Joassamees were in close alliance with the Uttobees; and it was in a battle with these two tribes that the Imaum was slain.

From this time we may date the period when the Joassamees began their regular system of piratical expeditions, and when the attention of the Bombay Government was directed to the necessity for crushing the robber spirit which began to be manifest among those lawless dwellers on the coast of the Persian Gulf.

The contention for the Imaumship had excited the greatest confusion among them; and the Joassamees, taking advantage of it, captured two vessels belonging to Mr. Manesty, the British Resident at Bussorah, which were charged with public despatches; and their officers were treated with the greatest cruelty. The Company's cruiser, *Mornington*, was surrounded by their fleet of dhows, which fired into her, till a few broadsides knocked one half of them to pieces and compelled the rest to sheer off.

In their successful co-operations with Moolah Hassan, of Kishom, against Gambaroon, they hoped to check the advance of Beder, who had succeeded to the Imaumship, and was projecting a plan with the Uttobees for the annihilation of the Joassamees, against whom, at this time, operations were actively prosecuted by the Bombay Government, in conjunction with that of Muscat. The combined forces sailed for Kishom, where they blockaded a Joassamee fleet, and reduced it to such distress that they were compelled to sue for peace. The British declared that, in becoming a party to any peace, it should extend throughout the whole Persian Gulf, and that they should have full indemnification for all the losses sustained. These terms could not have been enforced without having recourse to measures which must have embroiled the Company in a general warfare with the whole gulf; it was, therefore, deemed more prudent to enter into certain agreements with the Joassamees, who affected to be anxious to resume their former mercantile pursuits.

This was in 1806. Precluded now from piracies in the gulf, when urged on by the Wahabees, they extended them to India, and early in 1808 they appeared as corsairs in the Indian Ocean, along the northern part of the coast beyond Bombay. During one cruise in this year, they captured twenty large native craft, which so elated them, that they determined on sending a fleet of fifty sail to Cutch; and ere the year was out, they attacked and captured, in the Gulf of Persia, the cruiser *Sylph*, which was subsequently re-taken by H.M.S. *Nereide*.

After the vigorous attack upon them, in 1809, by Sir Lionel Smith and Captain Wainwright, of H.M.S. *Chiffone*, it was generally supposed that the Joassamees were deprived of all power for committing further depredations by sea. Our Resident at Bussorah confirmed this opinion, but added, that such was the vindictive spirit of the Wahabees, and of the inhabitants of the Arabian coast generally, that they would wreak their vengeance on any defenceless British ship that fell into their power; and, to prevent them building boats, Mr. Manesty suggested that—as these countries did not produce material for boat-building—the exportation of timber should be prohibited; yet the corsairs were as busy as ever in 1812.

At this time, an Arab chief, named Rahma Ben Jaubir, was the most daring and successful pirate in the gulf. He fell in with a large fleet belonging to Bushire and other places, and, with a few exceptions, captured the whole, including a large ship, and innumerable minor craft. He put every man on board to death, and made spoil of everything.

He was Governor of Khore-Hassein, and his followers, who numbered many thousands, were as prodigal of their own lives as of the lives of others; but, as yet, they had carefully respected the British

from the time it was first put on. No trousers covered his lank legs; a large abba encircled his meagre trunk, and a ragged keffiah was thrown loosely over his head. His body was pierced by

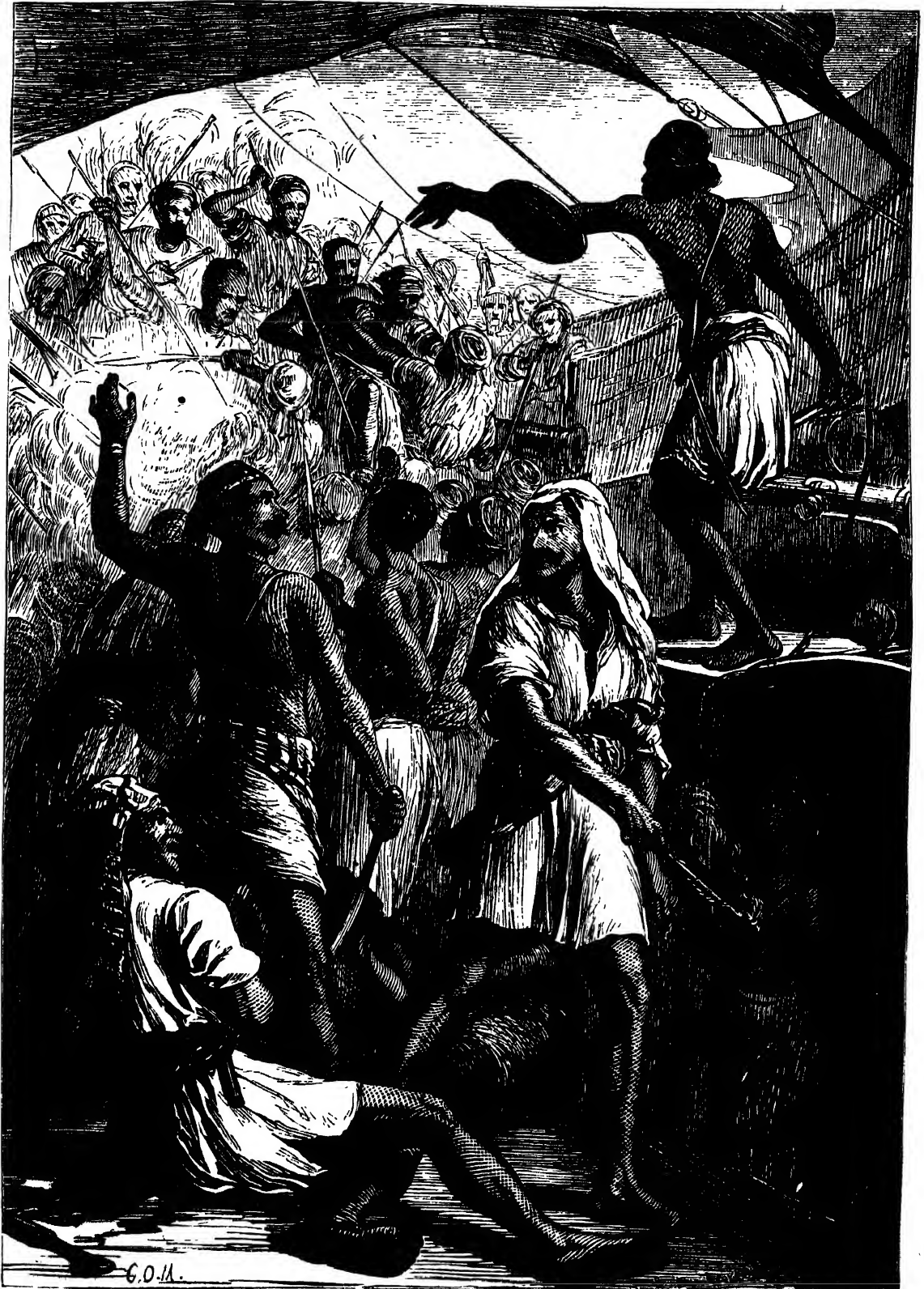


VIEW OF A HINDOO TEMPLE, BOMBAY.

flag. Captain Mignan says that he was present at the last interview this chief ever had with our authorities.

"It was at the British residence, in the presence of that accomplished man, Colonel Stannus, and a more ferocious barbarian I never beheld. His dress was disgustingly simple. It consisted of a shirt, which did not appear to have been taken off

innumerable bullet-wounds; and his face was fearfully distorted by several scars and by the loss of an eye. His left arm had been severely wounded by a grape-shot, and the bone between the elbow and shoulder being shattered to pieces, the fragments worked themselves out, exhibiting the singular appearance of the arm and elbow adhering to the shoulder by flesh and tendons alone.



DEATH OF THE ARAB PIRATE.

Notwithstanding this, he prided himself on being able to use the *yimbeah* with great effect; and it was one of his favourite remarks, that he desired nothing better than the cutting of as many throats as he could open with his boneless arm."

No corner of the Gulf of Persia was safe from this remarkable barbarian. From shore to shore, and isle to isle, he swept along like a gloomy spirit bearing death and destruction; till one day, in rashly attempting to board a large vessel called a *bughalah*, he was overpowered by superior force. Hastily he demanded of his crew whether they would perish now, or after, at the hands of the enemy: he rushed below, threw a match into the magazine, and re-appeared on deck, with his only son in his arms. The vessels were at that moment fixed together with grappling irons. The magazine exploded; both were blown "into a thousand atoms, and hurled into the air, in the midst of a volcano of flames and blazing timbers; and when the terrific explosion subsided, the bodies of the combatants were washed by the waves on the coast of Bahrim." This man had been the terror of the gulf for five and twenty years.

Notwithstanding many remonstrances sent to Hussein Ben Rahma, the chief commanding in Ras-el-Khyma, British vessels, and others having British protection, were assailed, or taken from time to time, and the commander of the Resident's boat, which had been sent to that place, returned in a deplorable condition after an attack from the Joassamees. This was followed by their capturing a large vessel belonging to the Imaum of Muscat, which was at anchor in Mogoo Bay, with a remount of Arabian horses for H.M. 17th Light Dragoons, and also laden with government stores. Six other vessels were subsequently captured at Sind and Kurrachee. These successes encouraged various other chiefs to put to sea, assured that piracy was the speediest mode of acquiring wealth.

In 1816, a ship belonging to Bombay was captured by the Joassamees off Muscat; a few of her crew were ransomed, but the rest were put to death. They next nearly achieved the capture of the *Caroline*, of thirty-two guns; and their audacity increased to such an extent, that they attacked the *Aurora* cruiser, and fired upon the American ship *Persian*; and so great was the dread entertained of them at last, that our Resident in the gulf could not obtain a vessel to send with his usually useless letters of remonstrance to the head chief at Ras-el-Khyma.

Three Surat vessels were next taken; their crews were butchered, and property taken on board to the value of a crore of rupees. Many other captures

followed fast, and all attended with great atrocities; and to another remonstrance sent to Ras-el-Khyma, we are told, that "the Joassamees explicitly and boldly asserted that they would respect the sect of chieftains, and their property, but none other. They added, that they did not consider any part of Western India as belonging to the British, except Bombay and Mangalore, and that if we interfered in favour of the Hindoos and other unbelievers of India, we might just as well grasp at all Arabia, when nothing would be left for them to plunder."

A squadron of Joassamee dhows came off the island of Bushab, burned all the villages, carried away the cattle, and slew hundreds of the people. In the close of the same year they took five large vessels in the harbour of Assooloo, valued at three lacs of rupees, and murdered every man on board. The inhabitants of Bushire were greatly alarmed, as the Joassamees contemplated an attack on the city of Bussorah, and the inhabitants began to fly into the interior. Their fleet remained twelve days at Assooloo, and then bore northward to Zaice, where they landed and destroyed everything, even the date-groves, but were eventually repulsed by the inhabitants. Then, apprehending an attack by the Turkish troops, the Joassamee chief sent a number of people from Ras-el-Khyma to build a fort at Bassadore, on the western end of the island of Kishom, which they meant to garrison.

It was evident that the lesson given to the pirates of the gulf by Colonel Smith and Captain Wainwright, in 1809, had been utterly without avail; hence, in 1819, the Government of Bombay resolved to fit out an expedition for their complete destruction. Major-General Sir William Keir Grant had command of the troops destined for this service, while Captain Francis Augustus Collier, of H.M.S. *Liverpool*, conducted the naval part of the operations, with the *Eden* and *Curlew*, two sloops of war, some Bombay marines, and transports.*

The latter, twelve sail in all, under the convoy of the *Liverpool*, after a ten days' run, reached Muscat, where they were joined by some naval forces of the Imaum, and in ten more days came in sight of Ras-el-Khyma. *Ras* is an Arabic word, signifying "cape," or point; hence this place occupies a sandy peninsula, the isthmus of which is defended by a battery, while the sea-line is, or was, fortified for about a mile and a quarter by strong works at regular intervals.

The vessels in the van lay to until all the rest hove in sight, when the *Liverpool* signalled the rendezvous at a particular spot, within a moderate distance of the fortress. It was evening when all

* Brenton's "Nav. Hist."

the ships joined, but two days elapsed before preparations for landing were complete.

Meanwhile, the Arabs were mustering in great force, and were seen strengthening their works in anticipation of the coming attack. Early on the third morning the troops, in the greatest enthusiasm, began to disembark, and the grenadier and light companies of H.M. 47th and 65th Regiments advanced in skirmishing order to clear the ground, while Captain Collier sent parties of his seamen to assist in loading the guns, and erecting batteries at those points selected by Sir W. Keir Grant. By evening, one armed, but with only four guns, was ready; and the beach being sandy supplied ample materials with which to fill the bags and fascine baskets. When night fell, the pickets were thrown out, and the troops bivouacked beside their arms, under the starry Arabian sky. At a time when all was still, save the occasional cry of "All's well" from the advanced sentinels—about midnight, when the sky had become dark, a few shots and wild cries were heard. These brought all the troops under arms. The Arab pirates had surprised the camp, and there ensued a confused encounter, during which it was difficult to distinguish friend from foe. The Arabs had stolen upon the pickets by creeping on all fours. The contest lasted for nearly an hour ere they were all driven out. The troops were then mustered, and remained under arms till daylight, when the losses were found to be considerable. "No less than eight of our company," wrote a private of the Bombay Artillery, "lay stretched in their gore. Five of them had evidently been killed before they had time to shake off the lethargy of slumber; but the other three lay with their swords in their hands, which bore indubitable marks of having been steeped in the blood of their enemies. One of them, a remarkably fine lad, lay on his antagonist, his bloody fingers grasping the throat of the Arab, his sword through the Arab's body, while the Islamite's weapon, stained with red, showed what arm had inflicted the death-wound on poor D.'s head."

This unexpected *alerte* was a fierce spur to the exertions of the troops, though it showed the daring of the antagonists with whom they had to deal. With dawn the guns opened on the batteries of the Joassamees, and two of the curtains were breached. They replied by a vigorous fire, and one of their first shots killed Major (Brevet Lieut.-Colonel) Byse Molesworth, of the 47th Regiment. By next morning a mortar battery laid completely open the principal towers, and General Grant ordered the stormers to advance. The ramparts were soon cleared, and the British standard planted

on them. The town was then captured and pretty freely pillaged, against the orders from headquarters. The fortifications were dismantled, all the dhows and other piratical vessels in the docks and harbour were burned, and the Joassamee chiefs were compelled to agree to certain obligations involving the future cessation of piracy. After this, Sir W. Keir Grant left a small corps of observation on the Island of Kishme, or Djessen, at the entrance of the Persian Gulf, noted for its fertility and stoneless grapes, and on which was built a square fort of European structure. After this, the remainder of the expedition returned to Bombay. These operations lasted from October, 1819, till April, 1820.

Captain Thompson, our political agent at Kishme, had, ere long, to co-operate with the Imaum of Muscat against the Arab tribe of Beni Boo Ali, otherwise called Wahabees. In this expedition he took with him six companies of sepoys and eight pieces of artillery. These troops were attacked so furiously by the sword alone that the bayonet utterly failed: the sepoys were routed, and the guns taken. In order to punish them, and to assist the Imaum, an expedition from Bombay was fitted out for the Red Sea, in the spring of 1821, under Major-General Smith; and his operations against the Beni Boo Ali Arabs, though successful, were not so without some severe losses.

In an attack made upon his force in the night, Captain Parr, of the Bombay Regiment, was killed, while Lieutenant-Colonel Cox and Lieutenants Watkins and Burnett, of the same corps, were wounded. A decisive action ensued early in March at Aden, when our troops gained possession of the whole fortified position before sunset. The right brigade, composed of 600 rank and file of H.M. 65th Regiment and 300 of the 7th Native Infantry, sustained the brunt of the action, with a heavy loss. Of the Arabs 500 were killed and 236 captured, together with all the guns they had taken from Captain Thompson's detachment.* After some of the attacks made by these natives of the desert, as the fallen lay unburied on the sands, Arab women, who had assisted in the defence, were found among the dead. So devoted, indeed, were these poor creatures, that after the surrender of the place they were seen staunching the wounds of their husbands and sons—who refused all assistance from the British; and, ere long, flocks of vultures came down on the slain around the works.

The piratical tribe of Beni Boo Ali was thus completely put down, and the British factory

* *London Gazette*, November, 1821.

was placed on a more satisfactory footing than it had ever been before. Six regiments of the Bombay army had "Beni Boo Ali" inscribed on their colours. Among these were the 1st Europeans, now 103rd Regiment of the Line.

The unfortunate affair of William Palmer and Co., together with the disapproval expressed by the Directors thereon, brought the administration of the Marquis of Hastings to a close sooner than he intended. Deeply mortified by the want of confidence which the instructions issued concerning it implied, he tendered his resignation in 1821, and finally quitted India on the 1st of January, 1823. It was on his passage home that he drew up the summary of his administration, and on his arrival in London there ensued many debates in the India House, after which notable rewards were conferred upon the marquis and his successors in the title.

Among many other things, he achieved considerable financial reform in the presidency of Bengal, where it was greatly wanted. "In Bengal," says Beveridge, "no *fundamental* alteration could be made. The permanent settlement had been finally and irrevocably adopted, and the utmost that could be done was to enact regulations for the correction of previous errors, or to provide for altered circumstances. Among the regulations thus adopted under the permanent settlement, notice is due to those who checked fraud and precipitancy in the sale of land for arrears of revenue, and still more to those which gave the ryot a protection which he had never enjoyed before, at least, under the permanent settlement of Bengal. By an extraordinary oversight, or deliberate perpetration of injustice, the sale of a zemindary abolished all sub-tenures, and the purchaser was entitled, if he chose, to oust and order off any occupant he found upon it. Instead of this iniquitous and tyrannical law, it was now enacted that tenants and cultivators having an hereditary or prescriptive right of occupancy could not be dispossessed, so long as they paid their customary rents, and that those rents would not be increased, except in specified circumstances."*

During his administration the revenue of India was augmented by nearly £6,000,000 sterling: the amount in 1813-14 being £17,228,000, and in 1823, £23,120,000. The only part of this which could be considered as permanent was the revenue derived from land newly acquired, and the increased productiveness of the older territories; hence much of the increase was fluctuating. In 1823 the receipts exceeded the expenditure by nearly three millions and a half, but an addition

of nearly two and a half was made to the public debt, that bearing interest being, in 1813-14, £27,002,000, and in 1823, £29,382,000.

Though the political changes effected by the marquis are the leading and most meritorious features of his active administration, he introduced many minor reforms into several branches of the civil and military services; but some of these were the adopted suggestions of others, such as Mountstuart Elphinstone, Sir Thomas Munro, Sir John Malcolm, Sir David Ochterlony, and others. Though a professional soldier, he also effected many reforms in the cumbrous procedure of the law.

In the judicial departments of India the accumulation of cases unheard and undecided, the undue multiplication of absurd forms, and that protracted system of litigation by which the Anglo-Norman law of England contrasts so strongly with the simple old civil law of Rome, had become a crying evil—all the more so that the number of judges was far too few for the work allotted to them.

Under the administration of the marquis a considerable diminution of this intolerable evil was obtained by curtailing and simplifying the process in those cases where a speedy decision was quite as important as its accuracy, and by increasing the number and the salaries of the native judges, and also the circle of their jurisdiction.

Moonsiffs, who were at first restricted to hearing cases valued at fifty rupees, were made competent to deal with those of 150, and Sudder Ameers, also limited at first to suits of fifty, could give judgment in cases of 500 rupees. Courts of arbitration were also encouraged, and decisions therein were unchallengeable, save on corruption being asserted or proved.

In criminal judicature the principal changes were an abandonment of the rule, laid down by Lord Cornwallis, that the offices of collector and magistrate should never be combined. The old Indian rule was the reverse of this, and by a recurrence to it many criminal cases were quickly decided by judges of approved impartiality, while their duties as collectors were not interfered with.

We have recorded how the high merits of the Marquis of Hastings were acknowledged publicly at the termination of the war with Nepal, by his earldom being made a marquissate, and, at the close of the varied strife with the Pindarees, by his receiving a free grant from the Company of £60,000. Thus it was simply his talents as a soldier that were rewarded and honoured; but, as yet, there had been no acknowledgment of that grand policy which had made the authority of Britain supreme and paramount

* "Comprehensive History of India."

in India. Nor was this act of gratitude and tardy justice done until, when stung to the quick by the suspicion which the expressions of some of the Directors seemed to insinuate in the affair of Palmer and Co.,* he intimated his intention of resigning.

Then it was that the Court of Directors and body of proprietors concurred in a resolution, setting forth their regret at his resignation, and expressing, in warm terms, their thanks for that zeal which had been unremitting in their service, and for that eminent ability which he had for nearly nine years displayed in his capacity of Governor-General. This resolution, notwithstanding the complimentary terms in which it was couched, was deemed by his friends somewhat cold; and hence, on the 3rd of March, 1824, the subject was again brought before the India House.

A motion was then tabled, urging the Court of Directors to make the marquis such a pecuniary grant as his services seemed to merit; but it was met by another, which proposed that all the correspondence and other documents in the public records, regarding his administration, should be printed, to enable them to judge whether such further pecuniary reward was necessary. The

latter was carried; but so much time elapsed, that it was not until the 11th of February, 1825, that the matter was revived; and at a meeting of the General Court "it was moved that there was nothing in the papers relating to the transactions of William Palmer and Co., which in the slightest degree affected the personal character and integrity of the late Governor-General."

By an amendment the Directors, however, censured the indirect countenance which had been given to that firm, and after a seven days' discussion that amendment was carried. "Here the matter rested; and a simple error in judgment (for it is now admitted on all hands to be nothing more) was held sufficient to justify the withholding of a pecuniary reward, which otherwise would have been bestowed without a dissentient voice, and which, if ever due to a Governor-General, certainly ought not to have been denied to the Marquis of Hastings." A vote of £20,000 was, however, given to his son, the Earl of Rawdon.

He died in 1836; and the marchioness, overcome by grief for the death of her daughter, Lady Flora Hastings, in 1839, died in the following year, and was interred by her side in the family vault at Loudon, in Ayrshire.

CHAPTER CII.

GEORGE CANNING, APPOINTED GOVERNOR-GENERAL, RESIGNS; LORD AMHERST APPOINTED.—
MR. JOHN ADAMS, IN THE INTERIM, CONDUCTS THE ADMINISTRATION, ETC.

ON the resignation of the Marquis of Hastings being received, the Right Honourable George Canning was nominated Governor-General. This was the spontaneous act of the Directors, in consequence of the talented and conciliatory manner in which he had managed the Board of Control, of which he was then president. The official career of George Canning belongs to the history of Britain, especially to that period of it when he was Secretary for Foreign Affairs. At the time when the Ministry, at the instigation of George IV., committed themselves—but with undoubted reluctance—to that public scandal, the trial of *Queen Caroline, Mr. Canning had openly avowed his resolution not to take any part in it; and therefore, on the 24th of June, 1820, when—in consequence of the queen's spirited refusal to submit to the degradation of a

compromise, which the majority of the Lower House urged upon her, and it was then seen that the trial must inexorably proceed—he tendered his resignation as President of the Board of Control, George IV. declined to accept it, and thus left it possible for him to retain his office, while at liberty to follow his own views with regard to the inquisition about to be made on the alleged misconduct of the unfortunate queen. In all its phases this unhappy affair greatly agitated the public mind; and Mr. Canning, though still retaining office, went to the Continent, and did not return until the Bill of Pains and Penalties had been withdrawn.

He then seemed to become keenly conscious of the inconsistency of remaining a member of a Ministry with whom he could not act in a matter



VIEW OF A STREET IN MAZAGON, BOMBAY.

of such moment to the nation, and again he surrendered his office, and on its being accepted, he went abroad again. But in March, 1822, on the resignation of the Marquis of Hastings arriving, he consented to succeed him as Governor-General of India.

This arrangement, however, was doomed to be unfulfilled, for the melancholy fate of the Marquis of Londonderry led to a reconstruction of parties, and at the very time when Canning was preparing for his long voyage, the doors of the Cabinet were again thrown open to him, and he resigned his Indian appointment to accept the seals of the Foreign Office.

Two candidates were now brought forward for the office of Governor-General—Lord William Bentinck, who had been somewhat summarily dismissed from the government of Madras, for reasons which had since been deemed insufficient and gave him a claim on the Court of Directors for further honour; and William Pitt, Lord Amherst, who, by his conduct during his difficult embassy to China,

had won the entire approbation of the Court of Directors: and thus, eventually, the latter had the preference.

He derived his title from his uncle, the first Lord Amherst, who, from subaltern rank, acquired high reputation as commander-in-chief of the army in America from 1758 to 1764, and gained a marshal's *bâton*, with a peerage as Lord Amherst, of Holmesdale, in the county of Kent. After being appointed, the new Governor-General did not reach India for several months after the departure of the marquis, his predecessor; and in the interval, the administration devolved on Mr. John Adams, as the senior member of Council. Though much could not be done during a tenure of office so brief and uncertain, Mr. Adams, while he held it for seven months, contrived to obtain much odium, but, luckily, more praise. A few of his measures were calculated to be beneficial to India, but were unfortunate; and some, though well meant, were most unfavourably received. But none were of much importance.



PORTRAIT OF THE RIGHT HON. GEORGE CANNING.

He had from the first been a strenuous objector to the encouragement given to Messrs. Palmer and Co., and therefore he now lost no time in following out all the instructions transmitted by the Court of Directors on this unlucky subject.

The debt due to Palmer and Co. by the Nizam was then discharged, by an advance of the Company on the security of that tribute, which they were bound to pay him for the Northern Circars; and to preclude the chance of any such monetary troubles for the future, all such dealings with the Nizam were strictly interdicted. These measures brought about the bankruptcy of Palmer and Co., and the ruin of others who had no share in their errors, and who now complained bitterly that, had less precipitation and severity been used, and the

firm permitted time to wind up its affairs gradually, their loss in the end would have been greatly lessened; but they were answered that Mr. Adams had acted in obedience to orders, and had no option but to obey.

Several administrations in India had turned their attention to the public press, and to the difficulty of leaving it free and untrammelled while the government was absolute; nevertheless, it had, from time to time, been subjected to restrictions more or less stringent. A censorship of a regular nature was at last established: no newspaper was allowed to be published without being first scrutinised by Government authority, authorised for that purpose; and the penalty of offending was instant embarkation for Europe.

This inquisition applied at first to newspapers alone; but during the administration of the Earl of Minto there was an increased vigilance, and it would appear, that not only they, but "notices, handbills, and all ephemeral publications," were sent to the Chief Secretary for revision; the titles of all works intended for publication were transmitted to the same official, who had the power of demanding the work itself for examination. These somewhat intolerable restrictions are applauded by Sir John Malcolm, and yet he tells us, "that from the time the office of censor was established—though there were never less than five newspapers published at Calcutta, in which every kind of European intelligence and all matters of general and local interest were inserted—there did not occur, from 1801 till 1820, a period of twenty years, one occasion on which Government was compelled even to threaten to send any individual to England."*

The Marquis of Hastings abolished the office of censor in 1818; and in reply to an address from the inhabitants of Madras, he said, with regard to the freedom of the press:—"If our motives of action are worthy, it must be wise to render them intelligible throughout an empire, our hold on which is opinion. Further, it is salutary for supreme authority, even when its actions are most pure, to look to the control of public scrutiny; while conscious of rectitude, that authority can lose nothing of its strength by its exposure to general comment."

With all this apparent candour, the marquis showed that, like the politicians and soldiers of his time, he was not without a dread of an untrammelled press; and thus the editors of newspapers were publicly prohibited publishing certain things; among these were: "1. Animadversions on the measures and proceedings of the Honourable Court of Directors, or other public authorities in England connected with the Government in India; or disquisitions on political transactions of the local administration; or offensive remarks levelled at the public conduct of the members of Council, of the judges of the Supreme Court, or of the Lord Bishop of Calcutta. 2. Discussions having a tendency to create alarm or suspicion among the native population of any interference with their religious opinions. 3. The re-publication from English, or other newspapers, of passages coming under any of the above heads, or otherwise calculated to affect the British power or reputation in India. 4. Private scandal and personal remarks on individuals, tending to excite dissension in society." By this, the whole onus of what was published fell on the editors;

but, at all events, the invidious office of censor was swept away.

Soon after that event, the celebrated James Silk Buckingham (subsequently author of "Travels in Mesopotamia," &c.) started a paper, entitled *The Calcutta Journal*, of which he was both editor and proprietor, and which he conducted with great talent, but so little prudence, that—from the nature of the articles appearing in its columns—he was repeatedly warned that his journal would be suppressed, and himself shipped off to Europe. The Marquis of Hastings had never put these threats in execution; but Mr. Adams, who had fewer scruples on the subject, went roughly to war with the press.

Short though his tenure of temporary authority, without venturing to restore the censorship, he compelled every printer to obtain a licence before he could put in type a newspaper, or any other work whatever, and gave a startling proof of how he meant to use his power, by forcibly shipping off Mr. J. S. Buckingham to Europe.

By this act he incurred much censure, as it was generally felt that the offence was small, and consisted in the insertion of a paragraph, inspired by a somewhat narrow and provincial spirit, ridiculing the appointment of a Scottish clergyman to the office of Clerk to the Committee of Stationery. Mr. Buckingham brought his case before the Court of Directors repeatedly, and before the Privy Council, but he failed to obtain any redress; yet he never allowed the subject to be forgotten, and ultimately obtained, in the form of an annuity, a little compensation for his loss.

His offence was scarcely one which required to be put so roughly down as by expulsion from India; and it was thought that Mr. Adams would have acted more judiciously if, during his short term of office, he had refrained from displaying that which he never cared to conceal—his known hostility to the Indian press—and left the proprietor of the *Calcutta Journal* to be dealt with by the new Governor-General, Lord Amherst.

On the 1st of August, 1823, the latter reached Calcutta, and was barely installed in his chair of office when he found himself involved in a war with a new and almost untried enemy, beyond the proper bounds of India—the Burmese, who, for many years, had menaced the frontiers of Assam and Arracan.

This quarrel, a formidable one, was a serious impediment to Lord Amherst's civil administration; especially as his government was much opposed by the friends of the Marquis of Hastings, and he was personally antagonistic to some of his lordship's

* "Political History of India."

proceedings, more particularly in the affairs of Calcutta and the province of Bengal.

"It is almost impossible," says Lieutenant White, "to imagine the arduous, difficult, and perplexing situation in which Lord Amherst stood. For, besides the important duties he had to perform as Governor-General, he had a most formidable opposition to contend against in the council chamber. This was produced by *the change of men* in the change of Governors-General. Lord Hastings had usually left much to his council or his favourites, who were men certainly not of the most brilliant talent. Lord Amherst, not wishing to imitate the example of the noble marquis, determined to judge for himself, and not by proxy. There were other causes, too, which tended to create difficulty, and render his lordship unpopular. These were unfortunate circumstances had they happened at any time, but more particularly so at that particular period; because they all tended not only to embarrass the mind of his lordship, which required the utmost tranquillity, but to impede the progress and welfare of the operations of Government."

This officer, the author of one or two now forgotten works on India, was a partizan of the new Governor-General, and hence the somewhat invidious tone of his remarks.

The more immediate causes of hostility with Burmah were the rival claims concerning the muddy island of Shuparee, situated at the entrance of the Nauf river—a place which had long been possessed by the British as belonging to Chittagong. The Burmese contended that the island had been theirs for centuries before Britain was ever heard of in the East; but their demand was only a pretext for war.

It chanced that, in January, 1823, a Mugh boat, laden with grain, when sailing near the island, was stopped by the Burmese, who shot the helmsman. Their intention was, by this outrage, to deter the ryots from cultivating the island; and when our magistrate at Chittagong heard of the event, he placed a sergeant's guard of sepoy upon Shuparee, after which the Burmese began to assemble an armed force upon their bank of the Nauf. The British magistrate thereupon increased the strength of the guard on the island to fifty men; and, early in May, the Burmese authorities at Arracan made a formal demand to those at Chittagong for the removal of these troops, and threatened war.

Later in the same month the demand was renewed, in strong and stern language that would bear no misconstruction. The magistrate replied, "That the island had belonged to the British for a lengthened period; but if the King of Ava had a

claim, it would be negotiated at Calcutta, in conformity with justice and the friendship of the two nations; but that force would be repelled by force."

To another demand, made at Chittagong, on the 3rd August, the Governor-General replied, asserting the right of the Bengal Government to the island, but offering to send an officer of rank to negotiate, and, if possible, bring matters to a friendly conclusion. The Burmese urged that they had no faith in the British, from their repeated violation of pledges in former disputes, and that they would put the matter to the issue of the sword.

Accordingly, on the night of the 24th September, 1823, 1,000 Burmese landed on the island, and routed the sepoy guard, with the loss of several men, killed or wounded. They then evacuated Shuparee, to which another guard was sent; while Lord Amherst, anxious for the maintenance of peace, affected to treat the outrage as one committed by the Governor of Arracan, without the authority of the king, his master. In this spirit, a ship from Calcutta brought a letter to Rangoon, expostulating against the invasion of the island, and requesting that the act should be disavowed. To the Governor of Arracan a letter was also sent, expressive of astonishment and indignation.

"The island was never under the authority either of the Moors or British," replied that official; "the stockade thereon has consequently been destroyed, in pursuance of the commands of the Great Lord of the Seas and Earth. If you want tranquillity, be quiet; but if you re-build a stockade at Shein-ma-bu, I will cause to be taken, by force, the cities of Dacca and Moorshedabad, which originally belonged to the great Arracan Rajah, whose chokies and pagodas were there."

He further informed the bearer of the letter that, if the British Government attempted to recover Shuparee, the Burmese would invade Bengal by the way of Assam and Goalpara, and enter Chittagong by the mountains from Goorjeeneea up to Tipperah; adding, that the mighty King of Ava had armies ready for the British dominions at every point, and that, by his express command, the sepoys had been driven out of Shuparee.*

From this it became evident that the Burmese, who had been long preparing for war, had all their plans for it laid. On the 11th November, the Company's agent on the north-eastern frontier informed Government that a large Burmese force from the province of Assam had begun its march for the conquest of the mountainous and jungly province of Cachar, which bordered on the Company's province of Sylhet. In 1774, the latter had

* "Pol. Hist. of Events which led to the Burmese War," &c.

made a tributary convention with the Cachars, who were quiet and industrious people; and in virtue of this, the Government demanded now, that the Burmese troops should make no offensive demonstrations against the 'protected' territories. They, however, not unnaturally, asserted an old prescriptive claim to a similar connection, and were therefore threatened with a rupture of connection, and be permitted. On that point no incursion would be permitted. On the south-eastern frontier of Chittagong, large armies were being mustered for the purpose of invading us in that quarter; and it became no longer a question of who should hold the straggled island of Shuparee, but whose power could be supreme in India.

In consequence of the unhealthiness of the situation, in January, 1824, the detachment of sepoy^s was withdrawn from the island, which the Rajah of Arracan now proposed to recognise as neutral territory; but he accompanied his offer with insulting threats of invasion in case of non-compliance. Hence Lord Amherst declined to accept any proposal that was couched in such terms.

On the 15th of the same month, four Burmese nobles of high rank crossed over to the island, and hoisted upon it the standard of the empire. They then sent invitations to the officers in command of the Company's troops and of the vessels in the river, to visit them, that matters might be adjusted by a friendly interview.

Attended by two lascars, the officers of the pilot schooner *Sophia* were foolish enough to accept this invitation, and were all seized and sent prisoners into the interior of Arracan. The officers commanding two companies of H.M. 20th Regiment, occupying a stockade on the island, were more wary, and declined the invitation which ended so perfidiously; and the people along the Chittagong frontier became so alarmed by the event, that they fled with their families, fearing that they might be carried into slavery.

Lord Amherst demanded the release of the captured officers and lascars, with reparation for this fresh outrage ; but the demand was treated with silent contempt. So the British authorities betook them to writing and negotiating, when they should have drawn the sword at once and thus avoided the vast expense and loss of life that ultimately ensued ; for by the end of January, 1824, the Rajah of Arracan refused, in the name of the emperor, to deliver up the prisoners, and at the same time two Burmese armies invaded Cachar.

The British still met these demonstrations by some well-written remonstrances, which, however, only excited the laughter and contempt of the

Burmese, whose general wrote one in reply, concluding thus, with reference to the two kings or emperors at Ava—the temporal and ecclesiastical:—"We have eyes and ears, and have the interest of our sovereigns at heart."

It happened that at this time the provinces of Assam and Cachar were agitated by opposing factions, whose hostility to each other was made use of by the Burmese to promote their own purposes ; while, on the other hand, the British resolved to make these intestine contentions instrumental in checking the invaders. Accordingly, on the 18th of January, the officer commanding on the frontier, learning that a united Burmese and Assamese force had entered Cachar at the foot of the Birtea Pass, and were stockading themselves at Birkampore, resolved also to enter the country of Cachar. But on the preceding day the first blood had been drawn in the new war, when the Burmese opened fire from a stockade upon a detachment of our troops, under Major Newton, who gallantly carried it by storm, and put 175 Burmese to the bayonet.

His force was too feeble to follow up this advantage, and on its retiring the two Burmese columns, amounting in all to 6,000 men, formed a junction, advanced on Jatrapore, and began to form stockades on both banks of the Surma river, and pushed along its northern side till within 1,000 yards of our post at Bhadrapore. Captain Johnstone, the officer commanding there, immediately attacked them, and carried all their stockades in succession at the point of the bayonet, while the major's force was compelled to linger within the borders of Assam.

The British wrote letters and sent messengers again, requesting the Burmese to abstain from their hostile movements ; but to these absurd and timid expostulations they replied by flaming and bombastic manifestoes, and while stockading themselves more strongly along our frontier, demanded that Major Newton and his soldiers should be delivered over to their vengeance.

It seemed difficult to foresee how long arguments would be substituted for arms, had the course of events not driven our authorities to action, and compelled Lord Amherst to declare war against Burmah. As usual, there was a party at home ready to denounce this proceeding; but a defence of the war was thus given, in a work written by the gallant Sir Henry Havelock :—

"Previous to this invasion of our little island territory, the question of the direct invasion of Bengal had been discussed in the hall of the Lotoo, or Grand Council of State, and the king,

though a man of mild disposition, and not caring much to encounter a war with the governors of India, had yielded to the arguments of his councillors, and, amidst the applause of the assembly, had sanctioned the invasion of Bengal. At that Grand Council the Bandoola, with vows and vehement gestures, announced that from that moment Bengal was taken from under the British dominion: his words being, 'Henceforth it has become in fact what it has ever been in right—a province of the Golden King. The Bandoola has said and sworn it!'"

"Hence," continued Havelock, "it was a war undertaken for the vindication of the national honour, insulted and imperilled by the aggressions and encroachments of a barbarous neighbour—a war for the security of the peaceable inhabitants of the districts of Chittagong, Moorshedabad, Rungpore, Sylhet, Tipperah—menaced with the repetition of the atrocities perpetrated the year before in Assam. That would indeed have been a parental government that should have consented to have abandoned its subjects to the tender mercies of Bundoola and the Maha Silwa."*

While fighting had commenced in the north, it was about also to begin in Arracan, the Rajah of which had received explicit orders to expel us from Shuparee, at whatever cost, and Maha Bandoola, the most famous general of Burmah, was appointed the chief of the force destined for this purpose. Hence, Lord Amherst's declaration of war, issued on the 24th of February, 1824, which charged the Court of Ava with grossly and wantonly violating the friendly relations between the two states, and with having "compelled the British Government to take up arms, not less in self defence, than for the assertion of its rights and the vindication of its insulted dignity and honour. . . . Anxious, however, to avert the calamities of war, and retaining an unfeigned desire to avail itself of any proper opening which may arise from an accommodation of differences with the King of Ava, before hostilities shall have been pushed to an extreme length, the British Government will be prepared even yet, to listen to pacific overtures on the part of his Burmese Majesty, provided they are accompanied with the tender of an adequate apology, and involve the concession of such terms as are indispensable to the future security and tranquillity of the eastern frontier of Bengal."

It became most necessary, in forming the plan of the intended military operations against these remarkable people, to take into consideration the nature of their country and the mode of warfare

they practised. It was almost a continuous tract of forests, where the elephant and tiger roamed, and in which the marshes were completely inundated at certain seasons, and at all times were teeming with noxious vapours that rendered the air full of pestilence and death. Among the windings of the lofty hills and wild crags were almost innumerable lakes, many of them sufficiently large to deserve the name of inland seas, the haunts of vast flights of aquatic birds, and abounding in various species of fish.

The low and marshy coast was indented by numerous bays and arms of the sea; but there are only three harbours now belonging to Burmah, namely, those of Bassein, Martaban, and Rangoon, at that time a place of refuge for the outlaws and runaways of all that part of Asia, where robbery and murder were incessant, and scarcely a night passed without houses being broken open and goods stolen.*

The military force of Burmah depended much upon the perseverance and tact with which it could be kept together; and the fidelity of the army was, and is, secured in a mode which evinces the tyranny of Oriental despotism. The wives and children of the soldiers are detained as hostages, and should the latter desert or display cowardice—a very usual event—the former were publicly burned alive! During the epoch of the first and second war with the Burmese, their whole force was supposed not to exceed 50,000 men. The arms of the infantry are bows, muskets, and sabres, but, save the Body Guards, they are neither uniformly clad nor well armed.

The bow and arrow, with a short sword or dagger, called a *dah*, with a blade eighteen inches long, are their favourite weapons. Their war-boats are generally from sixty to 120 feet in length, narrow, and rowed by men who paddle two abreast. Each is formed of the hollowed trunk of a single teak-tree, and carries about sixty men, armed with swords and lances, and thirty musketeers. On the prow, which is flat and solid, a large gun is mounted; but these war-boats (usually estimated at 500 in number), being low in the water, are easily run down.†

In Lord Amherst's time, so little was known of the geography of Burmah that, save a few narrow belts of land along the low flat coast, or the banks of the navigable rivers, it was unexplored by Europeans; hence, to lead an army through such a country, even had its people been friendly, would have proved a task of no small difficulty; but to fight a passage through it, when every available

* Judson's "Mission to the Burmese Empire," &c.

† "Asiatic Researches," &c.

* Owen's "Memoir of Sir H. Havelock, K.C.B."

route and pass was occupied by a treacherous, cruel, and ferocious enemy, skilful in the formation of stockades, may serve in some way to explain the extreme reluctance of Lord Amherst and some of his predecessors to engage in a war with the ignorant and vainglorious Burmese.

The Prince of Tharawadee, a brother of the King of Ava, when warned that the Burmese soldiers could never cope with the British, replied, "We are skilled in making trenches and stockades, which the barbarians do not understand;" and there is no doubt that to this local skill they were indebted for any success they had during the war. Every soldier, in addition to his musket, bow, &c., carried a spade and hoe, as part of his equipment. With these, as the line advanced, he dug a hole, from which he fired away under cover till a nearer approach, perhaps with the bayonet, dislodged him. He then retired into the nearest stockade. "These usually formed complete enclosures, of a square or oblong shape, varying in height from ten to twenty feet, constructed sometimes of bamboos and young wood in a green state. The whole, firmly and closely planted into the ground, and bound together at the top by transverse beams, with no more openings than were necessary for embrasures and loopholes, formed a defensive work which did not yield readily to an ordinary cannonade, and was most effectually assailed by shells and rockets. Within the interior platforms were fixed, or embankments thrown up, on which gingals, or small guns, carrying a ball of six or twelve ounces, were planted; and occasionally, to increase the difficulty of access to the main work, it had the additional protection of outer and inner ditches, and of minor stockades, abattis, and similar outworks."

To reach the interior by water routes, and avoid as much as possible the tedium and trouble of those by land, was deemed the most advisable plan of entering on the campaign, against troops pursuing such a system of tactics as the Burmese; and no doubt was entertained of the perfect practicability

of the former mode. The capital, and other great cities, of the yet almost unknown empire, were situated on the Irawaddi, which, rising in Thibet, near the sources of the Brahmapootra, runs in a southerly direction throughout the entire length of the Burmese dominions to the Gulf of Martaban, and which, if a proper season were chosen, might be ascended by a flotilla conveying troops, for a distance of 500 miles in about six weeks, as at Manchi this river is eighty yards broad, and can be forded at its ordinary level, and at Amarapura, where it flows with gentle current through a rich plain, it is two miles broad. Below Ava it is four, and reaches the sea through fourteen different mouths.

By the Irawaddi, therefore, it was determined that the chief effort should be made, and that, in the meanwhile, little else should be done in other quarters than to keep the foe in check. This plan, though adopted by the Supreme Government in absence of the commander-in-chief, General the Hon. Sir Edward Paget, G.C.B. (a veteran of the wars in Holland and Flanders, Egypt, and Spain, and who, singularly enough, served in the battle of Cape St. Vincent, in 1797), was approved of by him fully, before any steps were taken.

Writing in his name, the adjutant-general says:—

"The commander-in-chief can hardly persuade himself that if we place our frontier in even a tolerable state of defence, any serious attempt will be made by the Burmese to pass it; but should he be mistaken in this opinion, he is inclined to hope that our military operations on the eastern frontier will be confined to their expulsion from our territories, and to the re-establishment of those states along the line of frontier which have been overrun and captured by the Burmese. Any military attempt beyond this, upon the internal dominions of the King of Ava, he is inclined to deprecate; as in place of armies, fortresses, and cities, he is led to believe we should find nothing but jungle, pestilence, and famine. It appears to the commander-in-chief that the only effectual mode of punishing this power is by maritime means."

CHAPTER CIII.

THE FIRST BURMESE WAR.—CAPTURE OF RANGOON.—THE EUROPEAN PRISONERS.—MORTALITY AMONG THE TROOPS, ETC.

TIPPOO SAHIB used to say, "I have no fear of what I see of the British; but it is what I *cannot see that alarms me!*" He never could understand the apparently endless resources of those distant

isles, which replaced general by general, and regiment by regiment, with such rapidity and perseverance; and now the King of Ava was to be taught something of the same vague sense of terror.

Bengal could but imperfectly perform its part of supplying troops for the war, in consequence of the well-known aversion of the sepoys to those sea voyages, which interfered with the purity and preservation of caste; and as it was wisely deemed inexpedient to attempt coercion, the province furnished only H.M. 13th Light Infantry, and 38th Regiment, two companies of Artillery, and the 40th Bengal Native Infantry. Among the Madras sepoys the sea-going objection did not prevail so

Maclean that of Madras. The sloops of war, *Lorne* and *Sophia*, with certain of the Honourable Company's cruisers, convoying the transports, which consisted of several sail, formed the naval force, together with a flotilla of twenty gun-brigs, and twenty war-boats, each carrying a heavy bow gun.

With this armament went the *Diana*, a tiny steam vessel, but the first that had ever been seen in the Bay of Bengal: hence she was a source of



VIEW OF RANGOON.

much, or much of it had been subdued or obviated by the great popularity of the governor, Sir Thomas Monro; so from thence came H.M. 41st (Welsh) and 89th Regiments, the Madras European Battalion, and seven corps of native infantry, with the requisite detachments of artillery and pioneers.

The whole force, which amounted to 11,475 men — nearly one-half being Europeans — was placed under the command of Major-General Sir Archibald Campbell, G.C.B., an officer who had performed great and distinguished services in the East Indies, and had served at the battles of Albuera, Vittoria, Pyrenees, and in the south of France. Under him, Colonel McCreagh commanded the Bengal contingent, and Colonel

mingled wonder and terror to the natives, "when they saw her, without sails or oars, moving against wind and tide by some mysterious agency." As political agent and joint commissioner, Captain Canning accompanied the expedition, the rendezvous of which was Port Cornwallis, near the north-eastern extremity of the Great Andaman Island.

There the Bengal and Madras forces formed a junction in the end of April, 1824, and on being joined by Commodore Grant, the naval commander-in-chief in the Indian seas, in the *Liffey* frigate, the whole set sail on the 5th of May, and four days after appeared off the spacious mouth of the Irawaddi, to the great consternation of the

Burmese, who never contemplated an attack in that quarter.

Standing boldly up the river, before reaching Rangoon, detachments were landed to seize the islands of Negrais and Cheduba. "The Court of Ava," says Lieutenant Laurie, of the Madras Artillery,* "had never dreamed of the sudden blow about to be aimed at the southern provinces, and maritime commercial capital of the Burmese empire. At this time there was no actual governor (*Myo-woon*) in Rangoon; a subordinate officer, styled *Rewoon*, exercising the chief authority in the town. On receiving intelligence of the arrival of a large fleet of ships at the mouth of the Rangoon river—ships of unusual size, and belonging to the British—this unfortunate barbarian became almost beside himself with wonder, consternation, and rage. His first order ran thus:—'English ships have brought foreign soldiers to the mouth of the river. They are my prisoners; cut me some thousand spans of rope to bind them!' He next ordered the seizure of all the British residents in Rangoon. The order extending to all 'those who wore the English hat,' American missionaries, American merchants, and other foreign adventurers, were confined in the same building with five British merchants, a ship-builder, and two pilots. They were immediately loaded with fetters, and otherwise cruelly treated."

In his scarce "Memoir," which is little known in England, as it was published at Serhampore, Sir Henry Havelock, then a lieutenant with H.M. 13th Regiment, and serving as deputy adjutant-general of the army, further tells us that these unfortunate people had been dragged from their homes under every species of brutal indignity; their clothes had been torn off, their arms tied behind them with ropes, tightened until they became instruments of torture rather than means of security. The *Rewoon* had commanded that, if a cannonade should be "opened against the town of Rangoon, every prisoner should be put to death. The first gun was to be the signal for their decapitation. Instantly the gaolers commenced their preparations: some spread over the floor of the *Taik-dau* a quantity of sand to imbibe the blood of the victims; others began to sharpen their knives with surprising diligence; others brandished their weapons with gestures and expressions of sanguinary joy. Some seizing them, and baring their necks, applied their fingers to the spine with an air of scientific examination. The Burmese, coerced for ages by dint of tortures and frightful punishments, have acquired a kind of national taste for

executions. The imagination cannot picture a situation more dreadful than that of these foreigners, placed at the mercy of such fiends. These prisoners, who were subsequently brought nearer to death, were at length set free by the entry of the British troops.*

The enemy heard the roar of the cannonade which covered the landing of our troops, and enveloped the flat shore of the *Irawaddi* with clouds of smoke, while cannon-shot bowled through the streets in every direction. Abandoning himself to his terror, the *Rewoon* fled on horseback through the eastern gate into the country, followed by all the armed rabble he had collected.

When the prisoners were released it was found that the reason of four of them had quite given way. Major Robert Sale, of H.M. 13th Infantry, the future hero of Jellalabad, found Mrs. Anne Judson, wife of the famous missionary, tied to a tree, from which he instantly released her.

The defences of Rangoon consisted of only a stockade about twelve feet high, which enclosed it on every side, and of a twelve-gun battery, situated on a wharf at the river side; and these Commodore Grant, by a few well-directed shots from the *Liffey*, soon silenced. On the troops landing, the prisoners were the only people they found in Rangoon, as the whole population had been ordered to retire into the adjacent forests, and none dared to disobey the *Rewoon*. Like that of all Burmese towns, the appearance of Rangoon is by no means imposing; according to Lieutenant Alexander, of the 13th Light Dragoons, "the wooden buildings along the banks of the river, as seen from it, resemble ancient barns, behind which is the stockade. In the background towers the Great *Shwe-dagon*, in the midst of its subordinate spires; for near a great national pagoda it is usual for every Burman, when he has acquired a competency, to erect a smaller pagoda on the model of the huge one. These vary much in size, and in value and splendour; but as it is more meritorious to build a new one than to repair an old one, the sight of these temples in ruins is very common. Bells are attached to each pagoda, and tinkle as moved by each breeze, the effect of which is particularly soft, composing, and conducive to that quiet and holy state of abstraction which the Burman considers as the supreme good. Mr. Alexander took up his quarters in a gilded temple, surrounded with lofty pagodas, and after the crowd of a transport, and the tumult of the sea, found the soft influence of the bells especially delightful. The ornaments which the British had placed there were not exactly in unison with the

* "The Burmese War," 1853.

* Havelock's "Campaigns in Ava."

rest of the scene—a breastwork, and two long twelve-pounders.”*

The troops which landed were capable of doing all that men might do, and of going everywhere; but their power was crippled by the defective state of the commissariat—the old and invariable complaint of British armies everywhere. This total desertion of Rangoon was an event on which the commanders had never calculated, and no provision had been made for such a contingency. Aware that Pegu—the province in which it is situated—had only been lately conquered by the King of Ava, with whose rule the people were far from satisfied, they had expected to be greeted as friends and deliverers, and to have all the resources of a fertile country placed at their disposal; instead of which, they had to depend for subsistence entirely upon themselves.

Without provisions, either to advance or to remain was almost impracticable. To take advantage of the Irawaddi being in full flood they had arrived at the very beginning of the rainy season, when a great part of the country would soon be under water, and thus, instead of carrying on a decisive campaign, they would be compelled to shut themselves up in Rangoon, or confine their operations to the miasmatic swamps in its vicinity. “Considerations which had been previously overlooked now forced themselves into view, and it became impossible not to admit that, in the arrangement of the campaign, serious blunders had been committed. The attack by sea, if advisable at all, was ill-timed. An attempt to ascend the river in incommodious boats during the tropical rains, without native boatmen to guide them, and while both banks were in possession of the enemy, would only be to invite destruction; and yet to remain cooped up among the swamps of the delta, was to expose the troops to a mortality which, while it gave none of the triumphs of actual warfare, could hardly fail to be more destructive. No choice, however, remained, and it was resolved to place the troops under cover, and use all despatch in obtaining the necessary provisions and supplies from India.”

For many days after the disembarkation of the troops (says Major Snodgrass), a hope was entertained that the people of Rangoon, confiding in the invitations and promises of protection that were circulated about the country, would return to their homes, and thus afford some prospect of local supplies during the period we were doomed to remain inert: but the removal of the people from their houses was only the preliminary to a concerted

plan for laying waste the whole district in our front, in the hope that starvation would drive us into the sea: a system long and rigidly adhered to, with an unrelenting indifference to the awful sufferings of the luckless poor, which clearly evinced to what terrible extremes the government of Ava and its chiefs were capable of proceeding in defence of their empire.*

Such was the effect of all this on our troops, that in three months half the army were dead or in hospital.

The rains continued during the whole month of September, and the sickness reached an alarming height. An epidemic fever made its appearance among the troops (continues the writer just quoted), which left all those whom it attacked and failed to slay in a deplorable state of weakness and debility, accompanied with pains and cramps in the limbs. Soldiers discharged from the hospitals were long in repairing their strength, and too frequently indulged in limes, pine-apples, and other fruit, with which the forests of Rangoon abound, bringing on dysentery, which, in their exhausted state, usually ended in death.

The detached corps of Campbell's army were, in the matter of disease, not more fortunate than his main body.

Prior to this deplorable state of affairs, the more commodious and substantial edifices in Rangoon had been appropriated for the head-quarters, staff, and accommodation of stores. On an artificial mound, about thirty feet in height, two miles north of Rangoon, stood a famous Buddhist temple, called the Shwe-dagon, or Golden Pagoda. It was substantially built of brick, on an octagonal base, richly coated with gilding, decorated with elaborate mouldings, and rising in the form of a bell-shaped cone, gradually tapering to a spire three hundred feet in height.

This temple being abandoned, like every other edifice there, was taken possession of by our 69th Regiment and the Madras Artillery, while the rest of the troops were cantoned in a number of smaller temples and priests' houses, that lined two roads leading from the northern gateway of Rangoon to the Golden Pagoda.

Meanwhile, detached parties of observation explored the neighbourhood, and others proceeded up the Irawaddi in boats for the same purpose, and to destroy all defences and fire-rafts they could discover. One of these parties came upon a partially-finished stockade at Kemmendine, and landing, carried it by storm, driving out a very superior force, but not without some loss. On the same

* “Narrative of the Burmese War,” 1824-26, by Major Snodgrass.

* “Travels: India to England,” 1825-26.

day, a considerable detachment, when advancing into the interior, fell suddenly in with the late governor of Rangoon, who fled into the forest without firing a shot. While these petty successes gave our troops good reason to suspect that the personal courage of the Burmese was rather of a low standard, there were several indications of plans for a greater struggle being in preparation, and their resolution not to allow the invaders to remain long quiet in their swampy cantonments, where, when the May rains set in, the country became one vast sheet of water, and brought on the calamitous state of affairs described by Major Snodgrass.

While the main expedition, under Campbell, was proceeding to Rangoon, a body of troops was collected, under Brigadier McMorine, at Goalparah, on the southern bank of the Brahmapootra, near the Assamese frontier, at a point where no European is permitted to pass without a signed permission from the governor, and a sepoy guard held the line of demarcation. On the 13th of March, 1824, the brigadier began to move to Gowhatty, a well-fortified town in Lower Assam (which was taken in 1663 by the Mogul troops of Aurungzebe), and where now the Burmese had thrown up stockades, which, however, they had not the courage to defend, but abandoned as the British troops drew near.

To the latter the peasantry, who had been barbarously treated by the Burmese, evinced the most friendly disposition, but they were too poor to furnish such supplies as were necessary, and the transport of these in such a country became a work of the greatest difficulty. Hence, instead of advancing with his whole force, the brigadier sent forward a detachment, under Colonel Richards, C.B., to Nowgong, to meet Mr. Scott, the commissioner, who had halted there with his escort. From thence Colonel Richards marched to Kaliabar, and onward to Maura Mukh, where the Governor of Assam had stockaded himself, at the head of 1,000 men; but the rainy season came, and the colonel was compelled to fall back on Gowhatty, without—as he intended—striking the blow that would have liberated the whole province of Upper Assam.

Two months subsequently, the Burmese, who in the beginning of the year had evacuated Cachar, returned with a force 8,000 strong, and began a series of raids from Muni-pore, stockading themselves on the heights of Jatrapore, Deedpatlee, and Talain; while our troops were foiled in an attempt to dislodge them from the latter place, as the number we had left in Sylhet proved too few for the purpose. They were compelled to retreat; and the Burmese, elated with their petty success,

remained undisputed masters of Cachar, till the cessation of the rains permitted the campaign to be re-opened.

The Burmese appear to have made their chief effort against us in Arracan, the original seat of the strife; and in May, at the very time when Campbell was capturing Rangoon by surprise, they appeared, to the number of 10,000 men, under Maha Bandoola, on the frontiers of Chittagong.

To resist the invasion of this province, our forces were wholly inadequate; and though the Bengal Government were made fully aware of the coming danger, they did not attempt to avert it. From whatever cause this gross negligence sprang, it met with severe punishment. Colonel Shapland, who commanded in Chittagong, threw forward to Ramoo five companies of the 45th Native Infantry, with two guns, a Mugh levy, and the Chittagong Provincial Battalion, the whole under the command of Captain Noton: his strength being only 1,050 bayonets, of whom 650 were irregulars, on whom not the slightest dependence could be placed.

Against that officer the Burmese, after crossing the Nauf, advanced with great rapidity, and with their whole strength, and on the 13th of the month reached a stream which flows past Ramoo. Noton's well-served guns prevented their passage for a time, but at last they forced it and hurried to attack him. His slender force he posted in rear of a bank that encircled his camp; his front was formed by the sepoys of the 45th, with his two six-pounders, protected by a tank, at which a strong picket was stationed. The river covered his right flank, and another tank his rear, with the Provincials and Mugh levy; and in this order he prepared to give battle to the noisy warriors of Maha Bandoola.

The contest that ensued was a short one. The Provincials covering the rear broke; the Burmese forced their way in, sword in hand; the position was no longer tenable, and Captain Noton sounded a retreat. This movement was conducted with some regularity at first, but ultimately, under pressure of the overwhelming force of the enemy, the soldiers madly threw down their arms and rushed into the water. Yet the loss was less than might have been expected: only 250 were missing; but as most of these were conveyed prisoners to Ava, the court there began really to conceive that its soldiers were invincible; while, on the other hand, an absurd panic was communicated to Chittagong, and from thence to Dacca, whence it reached Calcutta, "and it was deemed not incredible that a body of adventurous Burmese might penetrate the Sonderbunds into the British Indian metropolis."

Had the Burmese known how to improve the occasion, they might have over-run and pillaged with impunity a vast tract of our territory; but they spent the time, luckily, in foolish exultation, till the falling rains precluded further operations; and meanwhile Chittagong was reinforced. Moreover, the expedition up the Irawaddi was beginning to produce its expected effect; and the Golden Foot, becoming alarmed for the safety of his capital, gave orders that all available troops should be collected for its defence. The army of Arracan was thus recalled, and the only occasion on which the Burmese could have inflicted a severe blow upon us was lost for ever.

Writing from Madras to Lord Amherst, Sir Thomas Monro had early urged strenuously the advance of General Campbell upon the capital of Ava by the waters of the Great Water; but the councils of the British at Calcutta, as at Madras and Rangoon, were long perplexed by the questions of organised transport and of systematic supplies of food and stores.

When at last, by enormous trouble and expense, Sir Archibald obtained such munitions of war and ambulance as enabled him to move, he prepared to take the field against the enemy. Prior to this, he had various skirmishes with them, as they had formed a cordon round Rangoon to hem the British in, constructed stockades in every direction to prevent access to the interior, and by sending parties through the jungle, harassed the pickets and cut off stragglers. In these petty affairs the Burmese fought with more obstinacy than the sepoys; but their stockades and huts were usually forced in the end, and carried by the bayonet, while an efficient fire of musketry was ever a good answer to the matchlocks and gingsals of the Burmese, who now began to send fire-rafts blazing down the river before wind and tide, for the purpose of burning our flotilla off Rangoon.

On the 28th of May, Sir Archibald Campbell, at the head of 400 Europeans and 250 sepoys, with a field-piece and howitzer, advanced to make a personal reconnoissance. The route was through a dense forest, where the natural impediments were increased by those of art, but ultimately he reached rice-fields and plains that were knee-deep in water. Ground of this nature rendered the conveyance of the two cannon impossible; hence they were sent back, under the escort of the sepoys, while the Europeans continued to advance alone till, about eight miles from Rangoon, they came in sight of the enemy, some 7,000 strong, intrenched in rear of a great stockade.

Campbell instantly attacked and routed them,

with such slaughter, that the main body was too intimidated to support them, and the detachment fell back on head-quarters without further molestation; and two days subsequently another stockade near the great Golden Pagoda was stormed.

These events did not deter the Burmese from the prosecution of a plan by which they hoped to leave our troops no alternative but to surrender at discretion or perish amid the swamps of Rangoon; and with this view, a series of extensive works had been constructed at Kemmendine. These, it was resolved, should be attacked both by land and water, and with this view three columns of attack were detailed against the northern and eastern faces of the stockades, while Sir Archibald Campbell, with 300 of H.M. 41st Regiment, ascended the Irawaddi in three Company's cruisers; but the works of the Burmese proved stronger than was anticipated, and though they were actually entered, a retrograde movement became necessary.

On the 10th of June, 1824, the attack was renewed by a force of 3,000 men, with four eighteen-pounders, and four howitzers; but, before Kemmendine could be reached, it was necessary to storm a strong stockade, which had been erected between that place and the pagoda. One side of it was protected by a sheet of water; on the other three sides was the forest; and the importance attached to this post was evinced by the number of Burmese placed within it.

A cannonade commenced the attack. One face was breached, and the troops rushed to the storm in front, while another column got over the palisades in rear. Assailed thus on two points, and unable to escape, the defenders, expecting only such mercy as they would have given if victorious, fought with desperation; but the unfailing British bayonet soon made dreadful havoc among them. Our guns now opened on the works of Kemmendine, but from these there was no response, and they were found to be abandoned. In fact, the vain-glorious Burmese were already becoming less confident, and were withdrawing to a greater distance from Rangoon.

At Donabew, fifty miles above that place, they began to concentrate their forces. As yet, the campaign had made but little progress, and such were the effects of the climate and the unwholesome food, that barely 3,000 were fit for active duty. Towards the end of June great numbers of enemy were observed passing from Dalla, on the right bank of the Irawaddi, to the left bank, at Kemmendine; and on the 1st of July, when the dense green forests in front were filled with three columns—each 1,000 strong, with many

umbrellas glittering in the sunshine—took ground to the right, as if to interpose between that part of our cantonments and Rangoon. By Campbell's orders they were attacked and dispersed, but on the following day began in greater force to march upon Dacca. They were again repulsed, and as the town had been deserted by all its inhabitants, it was set in flames, lest it might be used as a cover for other operations.

Thekia Wungyee, the Burmese general, was now

The latter—the strongest and greatest—was connected with the other three by intrenched works, and the whole were manned by about 10,000 Burmese. To attack Thamba Wungyee, General Campbell ascended the river on the 8th of July, with the *Lorne*, two of the Company's cruisers, and other vessels, having all the troops that could be spared on board, and after silencing the fire of the enemy by the guns of the shipping, he carried three of the stockades that were accessible from the water.

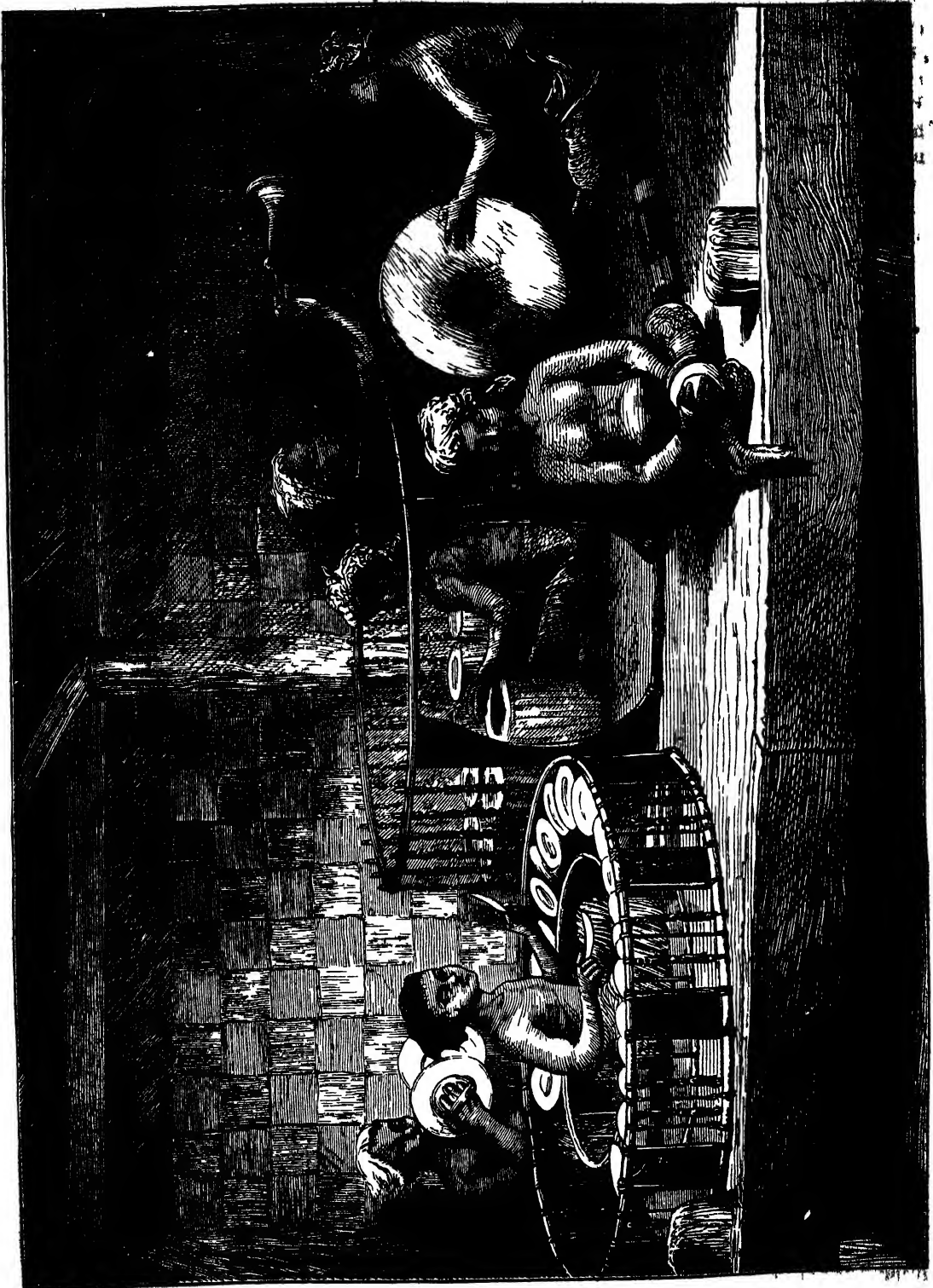


GROUP OF BURMESE NOBLES.

superseded by another, named Thamba Wungyee, as the Golden Foot, who had been in daily expectation of hearing that his invaders had been cut to pieces, began to be impatient of the slow progress of events. Thamba, knowing how much would be expected of him, made a wonderful display of activity, and gave our outposts so much annoyance that it was resolved to drive him back. At a point, six miles above Rangoon, where a stream called the Lye joins the Irawaddi, he had planted four stockades: one at the delta, a second below it, half a mile down the main river, a third on the bank opposite it, and a fourth at Kamaroot, a mile and a half above the confluence.

Against the fourth, that could only be reached by land, Colonel Maclean marched, with a detachment from the great pagoda, but, from the nature of the ground, was compelled to send back his guns and retain his howitzers alone. The stockades at Kamaroot were now found to consist of seven, strongly garrisoned, and armed with thirty pieces of cannon; yet, within ten minutes after our troops opened fire, the first stockade was stormed, and the second too, but after a greater resistance; the other five made little or no defence.

Thus, by the bayonet, were those works, which Thamba thought impregnable, wrested from 10,000 of his warriors by a mere handful of British troops.



A BURMESE BAND

Among the episodes at Kamaroot was a single combat, in which Major Sale, of the 13th Regiment, slew a Burman of high rank. Within the stockades lay 800 of the enemy killed, and among them Thamba Wungyee, expiring of his wounds. These events struck terror into the Burmese, who began to doubt their hitherto boasted invincibility.

In the beginning of August, General Campbell advanced against Syriam, the ancient capital of Pegu, which occupies high ground, with a great pagoda, near the junction of the Pegu river with the Irrawaddi. Among its edifices was a factory, built of old by the Portuguese, in the days when that adventurous people were seeking to spread their dominion over the East, and from within its walls the Burmese matchlock-men, as if determined to stand a siege, opened a heavy fire, but took to flight the moment our troops advanced to the assault.

These events were not without some influence on the inhabitants of Rangoon, many of whom began to return; while the inhabitants of Pegu—whose country had been subdued, and their king put to death in 1757, by the celebrated Alompra, the Burman—generally evinced so much dissatisfaction with their masters, that they might easily have been induced to throw off the yoke under which they had writhed for sixty-seven years. But, as yet, it was deemed inexpedient to encourage any desire for revolt or national independence, as no prince who was set upon their throne could have maintained it without permanent British aid. "The restraint thus exercised," says a writer, "was, at all events, cautious; but it may be questioned if it was well judged, as it made the Peguers, if not jealous of our success, indifferent to it, and thus tended to protract the war. This seems to have been the view ultimately taken by the Supreme Government,

as they afterwards gave the encouragement which they now refused, and offered to recognise the independence of any chief whom the Peguers might appoint to rule over them."

During these desultory operations about Rangoon, a naval expedition sailed for the Tenasserim provinces, a district of Trans-Gangetic India, lying between Siam on the east and Pegu on the west, comprising Martaban, Ye, Tavoy, and Mergue—a territory bounded by a lofty range of mountains, branching from the table-land of Yunnan, and clothed in many places with dense forests. The towns of Tavoy and Mergue were speedily reduced, the inhabitants cordially assisting our forces, and after making their Burmese governor a prisoner, surrendered to us voluntarily. The resistance in Ye, or Amherst, as it is now named, was chiefly confined to the town of Martaban, situated on a bay of the same name, which was completely reduced by our land and sea forces; and the importance of these unexpected conquests was speedily felt by our expedition at Rangoon, into which supplies of fresh provisions were poured in great quantities.

Having a great faith in astrology, the Burmese troops were accompanied by a horde of bigots and impostors; and not the least singular portion of their paste-board helmeted army was their corps of Invulnerables. When excited by opium and fired by superstition, these men certainly did evince a marked contempt of danger. Some of them exhibited a war dance of defiance upon the most exposed parts of defences; and to this corps—headed by leaders, one of whom was said to be a female, and all of whom had, as they conceived, made themselves invulnerable by means of charms and amulets—was confided the perilous task of attacking Maclean's post in the Great Pagoda.

CHAPTER CIV.

THE WAR WITH BURMAH.—ATTACK ON THE GREAT PAGODA AT RANGOON.—OPERATIONS IN ASSAM, ARRACAN, ETC.

At midnight, says Major Snodgrass, the attempt was made by the Invulnerables, armed with swords and muskets, rushing in a compact body from the temple near the pagoda. A slender picket, thrown out in our front, retiring slowly and steadily,

skirmished with the head of the advancing column, until it reached the great flight of stairs leading up to the pagoda. On the summit of these the troops were drawn up, silently waiting the approach of these Invulnerables, whose number the gloom of

the moonless night concealed, and it could only be guessed at by the dreadful noise and clamour of their threats and imprecations upon the sacrilegious occupants of their holy edifice, whom they threatened with the most dreadful deaths if they did not quit the temple; and, guided by a few lanterns that glimmered weirdly and dimly in their front, they rushed in a dense and undefinable multitude along a narrow pathway that led to the northern gate.

Suddenly the flashing of musketry and the boom of the thundering cannon broke from the hitherto silent summit of the vast temple. Then the wild tumult of the advancing masses grew still, "while showers of grape and successive volleys of musketry fell with dreadful havoc among their crowded ranks, against which the imaginary shield of self-deceit and imposition was found of no avail, leaving the unfortunate Invulnerables scarcely a choice between destruction and inglorious flight. Nor did they hesitate long upon the alternative; a few devoted enthusiasts may have despised to fly, but as they all belonged to the same high-favoured caste, and had brought none of their less-favoured countrymen to witness their disgrace, the great body of them soon sought for safety in the jungle, where they, no doubt, invented a plausible account of their night's adventure, which, however effectual it may have proved in saving their credit, prevented them in future from volunteering upon such desperate enterprises, and contributed in some degree to protect the troops from being so frequently deprived of their night's rest."*

In October, 1824, information having been received that the enemy were in strong force at a place named Kaikloo, fourteen miles from Rangoon, it was resolved to dislodge them; and as the Madras contingent had been expressing some mortification at the subordinate part assigned them on previous occasions, to it alone was the task assigned by General Campbell.

On the 4th, Colonel Smith marched on this service, taking with him the 3rd and 34th Madras Native Infantry, only 800 strong, and two howitzers. Evening was falling when he found himself before a Burmese intrenchment, which he failed to escalate, though he carried it by shelling. Yet the Burmese trenches are usually only a succession of holes capable of containing two men each, so excavated as to afford shelter from the weather, and even from bombs, so far as each could, at most, kill but two men by explosion.

As the failure of the escalade seemed ominous, and the preparations at Kaikloo were averred to be great, Colonel Smith applied for some Europeans;

but General Campbell, influenced by some feeling which might be more easily explained than justified, told off for the service only 300 more Madras Sepoys, with two field-pieces. With these reinforcements, on the forenoon of the 7th of October, Colonel Smith found himself before Kaikloo. The first obstacles encountered were a series of breastworks, which he had to storm. Hence it was five in the evening before the principal stockade was reached.

Its right flank rested on a height crowned by a pagoda. Colonel Smith formed his troops in three columns of attack: the first to assail the work in front, the second to attack its right flank, and the third as a support and reserve.

Till within sixty yards the first was allowed to approach the stockade, over which the gilded umbrellas of the leaders were visible at times, when suddenly it was assailed by a terrible fire of matchlocks and grape. Major Wahab, who led it, with many officers and men, fell killed or wounded, while the rest threw themselves on their faces to avoid the murderous fire which swept over them. The attack by the flanking column failed; it gave way, and was pursued. The other column, unable to penetrate a thicket in its front, was now falling back without having achieved anything. Under all these adverse circumstances, Colonel Smith could but order the bugles to sound a retreat, which he effected, in tolerable order, with the loss of eighty-eight of all ranks killed or wounded.

This affair—magnified, of course—caused the greatest exultation at the Court of Ava; but Campbell lost no time in attempting to retrieve Smith's disaster.

On the 17th of October, 420 Europeans and 350 native infantry, with three guns, advanced against Kaikloo, on reaching which they had their wrath and indignation fired on beholding the bodies of those who fell ten days before stripped and hung from the trees in horrid states of mutilation. They dashed on, intent to take vengeance, but found the works abandoned, and had to return to Rangoon without firing a shot.

About this time, Kye Wungyee, a leading Burman noble, was defeated. He had taken post at Shantabain, on the river Lyne, with fourteen war-boats, each carrying a large gun. These he had moored near three breastworks, in rear of which stood his principal stockade, constructed of solid timber, fifteen feet in height, with an inner platform, armed with small iron and wooden guns, which overlooked the heavy gunboats that were in battery below. Strong as these works appeared, a very small party of soldiers and sailors

stormed one part of them with such speed and fury that terror was struck in the defenders elsewhere, and they speedily abandoned it at every point.

Now the sickness had become so great that little more than 1,300 Europeans remained fit for duty, and the native troops were reduced in proportion; yet the prospect of active operations, with triumphs to be won, was hailed with joy by all. But in the circumstances under which Campbell's little force found themselves, these prospects might have damped the boldest spirits; for, according to the last reports that had reached Rangoon, the Golden Foot had mustered every soldier he could find, and was resolved, by one grand effort, to destroy his invaders, or convey all whom he could capture in chains to the interior, where ignominy, torture, and death should await them.

From Arracan, Maha Bandoola had come, with his so-called veterans, and, at the head of 60,000 men, was advancing on Rangoon, in the vicinity of which he actually made his appearance early in December. Flanked on the right by a flotilla of war-boats and fire-rafts, his army extended from the river in a semi-circle, opposite Dalla, past Kemmendine and the Golden Pagoda, till it rested with its left on Puzendoon Creek, half a mile eastward of Rangoon.

Dense jungles, for the most part, covered his front; and where it was open, breastworks and stockades protected it.

The key of our position, the great Shwe-dagon, or Golden Pagoda, was occupied by 300 of H.M. 38th, or 1st Staffordshire, Regiment, with twenty guns, while the 28th Madras Infantry were posted below it. H.M. 13th Light Infantry, with some guns, held the high ground that lay between the pagoda and the town. In front of the lines an old Buddhist convent was held by 200 of the Madras Europeans and some sepoy, while the stockade at Kemmendine, which covered the left of the position, was occupied by the 26th Madras Native Infantry and a few of the Madras Europeans. The remainder of our troops were placed in communication with Rangoon, which, as well as Kemmendine, was supported by the shipping in the river.

Great were the exertions of Maha Bandoola during the first week of December, 1824. His troops were employed, without an hour's cessation, in pushing forward his works and attacks on the stockade at Kemmendine, every movement being accompanied by a profusion of banners, flags, and gilt umbrellas, which were always encouraged by the sight of our videttes and sentries, who were deemed by them a sign of watchful fear.*

* Snodgrass—"Appendix."

To repulse them seemed to have no effect in dislodging them, as the moment our troops retired they returned, and resumed their fighting and trenching tools. By this pertinacity they made so much progress, and annoyed Commodore Grant's flotilla by their perilous fire-rafts and incessant matchlock firing, that a general attack was now resolved on.

With this view, while our gun-boats advanced to Puzendoon Creek to take the Burmese in flank, two columns of infantry, one 1,100 strong, under Major Robert Sale, and the other of 600, under Major Walker, moved against their left, and bursting through the intrenchments, drove in the whole of that flank, with a heavy loss of men, guns, and munition of war. But as Maha Bandoola seemed disposed to hold firm with his right and centre, another attack was made on the 7th of December.

In four columns our troops advanced, and completely discomfited the hordes of Burmah, which, without waiting to be attacked, fled from their works in disorder. After this, all remained quiet for a week, till a conflagration, which was too evidently the result of design, broke out in Rangoon, laying several quarters of the town in ashes; and on the same night, tidings came that 20,000 men had taken post only five miles distant, at Kokim, where they had begun to throw up strong works.

As General Campbell was determined not to tolerate this close vicinity, he marched in person, with two columns, one of 800 and the other of 600 men. Brief though the time, the works at Kokim were cast up so rapidly, that they embraced a circuit of three miles; and consisted of six circular intrenchments, flanked by two strong stockades.

Campbell made his attack in front and rear simultaneously. Hemmed completely in, the Burmese, while fighting only to escape, suffered terrible loss; while the *Diana* steamer, the men-of-war launches, and the gun-boats, destroyed all the enemy's war-prows and fire-rafts. But though the army of Maha Bandoola seemed somehow to have evaporated, before achieving the destruction or capture of ours, he was not a man to despair; but organised a new one, which he proceeded to intrench in works greater and stronger than had yet been attempted, at Donabew. But prior to relating the attack on that place, it will be necessary to glance at the war in Assam.

The retrograde movement of Colonel Richards from his advanced position in that province to Gowhatty, caused the Burmese to return and renew their inroads and devastations; hence it was necessary that, so soon as he obtained reinforcements

and supplies, he should once more take the field against them. But, as the state of the weather rendered the advance of his whole force—only 3,000 men—impossible, he was only able, towards the close of October, to send off two detachments to check their depredations, and these did not march, but proceeded by water.

One of these parties, led by Major Waters, after routing a party of the enemy at Raha Chowki, proceeded to Nowgong, where the Governor of Assam and the Boora Rajah had posted themselves, with 1,300 men, who, notwithstanding their superior number, retired with precipitation, and left him in undisputed possession of their works. Under Major Cooper, the other detachment marched to Kaliabar, which he found evacuated; and Colonel Richards, having thus secured two advanced positions, began a march of toil, with the rest of his little force, while his baggage was tediously dragged in boats against the current of the Brahmapootra—a river which is ever teeming with alligators—till the 6th of January, 1825, when he halted at Maura Mukh, about 130 miles beyond Gowhatty.

The 29th saw him at Rangpoor, in Upper Assam, the fort of which was built of solid stone, was square in form, and armed with 100 pieces of cannon. Access to it was rendered difficult by two swamps and a wet ditch. Its garrison consisted of Burmese and Assamese—a people, by nature and habit, weak, intemperate, idle, timid, and addicted to drinking arrack and chewing opium; yet, the combined force was capable of a vigorous defence. Luckily for Colonel Richards, violent dissensions prevailed among the leaders; and he had no sooner stormed a stockade which barred his approach, and got his breaching-guns into position, than he received a proposal for capitulation, by which he permitted the Burmese to retire to their own country, or remain peaceably in Assam, according to their choice. At first, 9,000 persons—men, women, and children—began the homeward pilgrimage; but many changed their minds, and returned. With the fall of Rangpoor the fighting ended in Assam, which from that time became an integral portion of the British empire; with the exception of the Sudiya district, which was given up to the Rajah Poorunder Sing, in 1833, for a tribute of 50,000 rupees yearly.

Two forces were directed to proceed overland against Ava, on the obstacles which menaced the success of Sir Archibald Campbell's expedition becoming known at Calcutta. One column was to penetrate through Cachar and Manipore into the valley of the Ningtee, an affluent of the Irawaddi; while the other, from Chittagong, was to march

across the hilly range between Arracan and Ava, to form a junction with the troops at Rangoon. The former force, 7,000 strong, under Colonel Shuldham, mustered on the border of Sylhet, towards the close of 1824; and as the Burmese had abandoned Cachar, and had their hands fully occupied in Pegu, no immediate opposition was expected. But the natural obstacles to be surmounted were very considerable.

Ere the first march could be achieved, the pioneers had to make a road from Bhadupore to Bauskandy, and the distance to Manipore was still ninety miles, over a most rough and savage tract of country, exhibiting lofty mountains, deep water-courses, dense forests, and pathless morasses; and after cutting a footway for nearly forty miles, the toil-worn pioneers had abandoned the work as futile; and by the month of March, 1825, the obstacles were pronounced by the staff insurmountable, and the advance on Burmah, by the way of Cachar, was abandoned.

Under Brigadier Morrison, the Arracan force, 11,000 strong, mustered at Chittagong. In consequence of the aversion of the Bengal sepoys to sea voyages, it was resolved that the expedition should proceed by the more tedious and difficult land route; but so many desertions took place, that it became pretty evident to the officers that their men had also an aversion to fighting the Burmese, whom they regarded with superstitious terror, as a species of magicians who could render themselves proof to lead and steel; thus innumerable prettexts were made to avoid joining the head-quarters in Arracan. Three native regiments—the 26th, 47th, and 62nd Bengal Infantry—then cantoned at Barrackpore, were under orders to join Morrison at Arracan, when loud murmurs, complaints, and factious opposition were exhibited by the three corps. Among other things, the sepoys declared that they were without the proper means of transport for a distance so great.

In addition to his knapsack and its contents, each had to carry sixty rounds of ball-cartridge, and for the due preservation of caste, all his own culinary articles—including a plate, a water-pot, frying-pan, a boiler, and a *lotah*, all of brass, and weighing about twenty-two pounds. This toil was thrown upon himself as a religious necessity, and was usually borne without grumbling; but in the present instance, as the distance of the duty rendered the case an exception, the sepoys, not without some show of reason, averred that the commissariat should provide and convey these things. All the available cattle had already been taken from Bengal, and none could be obtained

by the luckless sepoys, save at rates far beyond their means.

Thus, when the 47th—which regiment was ordered to march—were informed that they must move in the usual manner, mutinous meetings were held within the lines, and the sepoys mutually bound themselves by the most solemn oaths not to quit their quarters until their pay was increased or carriage provided. Colonel Cartwright, then in command, purchased bullocks at his own expense, and the Government actually offered to advance money; but still the sepoys, anxious beyond everything to evade service in Burmah, still refused to part with the new pet grievance; and, in short, the spirit of insubordination had already reached a point beyond repression.

The colonel, finding that the regiment was nearly in a state of open mutiny, reported the circumstance to General Dalzell, commanding at Barrackpore, who proceeded to Calcutta to consult with the commander-in-chief, Sir Edward Paget. On the 1st of November, 1824, the general gave orders for the 47th Regiment to parade in heavy marching order. On that day a third of the battalion obeyed, but the rest mustered tumultuously within the lines, and threatened to fire if the others attempted to quit the cantonments; and every effort made by General Dalzell, Colonel Cartwright, and other officers, to bring these mutineers to a sense of duty was met only by noisy clamour and open defiance. During all that day, and the following night, this alarming state of matters continued, till the arrival of Sir Edward Paget, to whom they sent a petition, which was translated by a Captain Macan, of H.M. 16th Lancers, who averred that it was barbarous and unintelligible, and without spelling or grammar.

It would seem, however, to have omitted all mention of the alleged grievance—the want of bullocks; and stated, that the soubahdar-major and havildar-major having informed the regiment that it was to proceed to Rangoon by ship, each sepoy had sworn by the waters of the Ganges and the sacred basil not to put a foot on board, lest he should forfeit caste; adding, “And every gentleman knows, that when a Hindoo takes Ganges water and basil in his hand, he will sacrifice his life.”

Now, you are master of our lives; what you order, we will do; but we will not go on board ship, nor will we march for that purpose. Formerly our name was good, but it is now become bad; our wish is, therefore, that our names be effaced, and that every man may return to his

They were told by Sir Edward Paget that it had never been intended to send them by sea; but now, as there could be no treating with mutineers, they must lay down their arms unconditionally. As it was well known that the other two regiments were disaffected, and hence, unwilling to aid repressing this mutiny, the 2nd battalion of the 1st Royal Scots, the 47th (Lancashire) Regiment, a battery of Horse Artillery, and a troop of the Body Guard, were brought to Barrackpore for that necessary, but unpleasant, purpose.

The early dawn of the 2nd November beheld these troops drawn up opposite the lines of the disaffected. The artillery were in rear. The mutinous 47th was under arms in front of the lines; and in their left rear were the 26th and 62nd—the two other Bengal regiments under orders for Arracan and Burmah. Twenty sepoys of the former, and more than a hundred of the latter corps, had rashly joined the 47th to share its fate, whatever that might be.

Before giving the fatal order that would lead to death and slaughter, Sir Edward Paget directed the Quartermaster-General, Colonel Galloway, C.B., Colonel Cartwright, and Captain Macan, to make the mutineers fully aware of the awful position in which they stood; for now even their native officers had deserted the cause, and stood apart from them. Expostulations were only met with clamorous uproar; and thus they were finally informed that their fate depended upon their obedience to orders issued by the adjutant-general.

“Order arms,” was the command, which was instantly obeyed. “Ground arms,” was the second, which was met by uproar, and one man alone obeyed. In an instant the Horse Artillery poured a volley of grape, piling the killed and wounded over each other in the cantonment; and the mutineers, instead of firing, as they had threatened, though each man had forty rounds in his pouch, flung down their arms, broke, and fled wildly across the square, or parade-ground, under an infantry fire, which was followed up by a charge of the Body Guard. And many perished in the scattered pursuit, or in the river Hooghley, which skirts the level plain near Barrackpore.

Many who were made prisoners were tried by native courts-martial and hanged, or condemned to hard labour for life; but after a time the latter were forgiven and set at liberty; and a new 47th Bengal Infantry Regiment, dating from 1824, was embodied, and called “Volunteers,” which did good service at Moodkee, Ferozeshah, Aliwal, and Sobraon.



VICTORIA, QUEEN OF ENGLAND AND EMPRESS OF INDIA.

Frontispiece.

CASSELL'S

ILLUSTRATED

HISTORY OF INDIA.

BY

JAMES GRANT,

Author of "British Battles on Land and Sea," &c.



CASSELL, PETTER, GALPIN. & CO.:

LONDON, PARIS & NEW YORK.

CONTENTS.

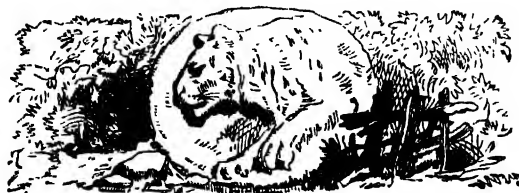
CHAPTER	PAGE
I.—The War with Burmah.—The Arracan Column.—Operations of Generals Campbell, Cotton, and Major Sale, &c.	4
II.—War with Burmah.—The Battle of Prome.—The Affair of Melloonc.—Battle of Paganhew.—Peace with the King of Ava	6
III.—Death of Charles Grant.—The Ghurry of Koonja.—The Petail of Oomraiz.—The Chiefs of Kittoor.—The Rajah of Kolapore.—Death of General Ochterlony	11
IV.—The Siege of Bhutpore.—Durjan Sal Captured.—The Rajah Restored	20
V.—The Succession of Alvar.—Close of Lord Amherst's Administration	24
VI.—The Jugglers and Snake-Charmers of British India.—The Gypsies.—Kangjars and Chamars.—Nautch Girls and Tumbling Women, &c.	29
VII.—Lord William Bentinck Governor-General.—The Batta Dispute.—Financial and other Reforms.—The Opium Trade	35
VIII.—Abolition of Suttee.—Suppression of the Thugs and Dacoits.—The Overland Route Established	39
IX.—Collision between the Government and Supreme Court at Bombay.—The Fanatics of Seyd Ahmed.—Insurrection among the Koles, &c.	45
X.—The Revolution in Coorg.—Burnes' Embassy to Cabul.—Lord Bentinck's Measures in regard to the Native States	51
XI.—Alteration of the Charter.—Extinction of the Company's Monopoly	58
XII.—Provisional Government of Sir Charles Metcalfe.—The Rajah of Goomsur.—Lord Auckland Governor-General.—Legal Changes.—Disturbances in Oude and Sattarah	62
XIII.—The Sikhs.—The Rise of Runjeet Sing.—Origin of the Fatal Afghan War	68
XIV.—The Army of the Indus.—Coercion and Unjust Treatment of the Ameers of Scinde	75
XV.—The Bolan Pass.—The March to Candahar.—The Storming of Ghuznee.—Capture of Cabul, and Restoration of the Shah	80
XVI.—Dissolution of the Army of the Indus.—Capture of Khelat—Revolt of the Ghiljies.—The Candahar Conspiracy.—Nott and the Shah's Officials, &c.	88
XVII.—Capture of Aden.—Disturbances in Afghanistan.—The March of Sale's Brigade, &c.	95
XVIII.—Insurrection at Cabul.—Murder of Sir A. Burnes.—Incompetence of the Officials.—Blunder upon Blunder at the Cantonments	99

CHAPTER	PAGE
XIX.—Mohammed Shureef's Fort Re-captured.—Evacuation of the Balahissar.—Treaty with the Afghans.—	
Murder of the Envoy, &c.	107
XX.—Destruction of the Army in the Khyber Passes	112
XXI.—Sale's Brigade in Jelalabad.—Colonel Dennie Killed.—Ackbar Defeated.—Advance of General Pollock.	
—Combat of Urghandaub	116
XXII.—Attempt to Re-capture Candahar.—Lord Ellenborough Governor-General.—General England Defeated	
in the Kojuck Pass	122
XXIII.—Fate of Shah Sujah.—Nott takes the Field.—The March of Pollock.—Cabul Re-captured and Partially	
Destroyed	126
XXIV.—The Capture of Canton.—Relations with Scinde.—The Perfidy of Ali Morad.—Emaumghur Destroyed.	
—Battle of Mcanee	135
XXV.—Victory at Dubba.—Conquest and Annexation of Scinde.—The Mahrattas of Gwalior.—Battle of	
Maharajahpore, &c.	140
XXVI.—Sir Henry Hardinge, Governor-General.—The Sikh War.—Army of the Sutlej.—Battles of Moodkee	
and Ferozeshah.—The 62nd Regiment	146
XXVII.—Combat at Buddiwal.—Battles of Aliwal and Sobraon.—The Punjaub entered.—Its Settlement, &c.	152
XXVIII.—Our Rule in Scinde.—War with the Hill Tribes.—Female Infanticide, &c.	159
XXIX.—Revolt at Moultan.—The Operations of Lieutenant Edwardes.—The Battle of Kineyree.—Siege and	
Capture of Moultan	164
XXX.—The Second Sikh War.—The Battles of Ramnuggur, Sadoolapore, and Chillianwalla	171
XXXI.—Defeat of the Sikhs at Goojerat.—Gilbert's Pursuit.—Annexation of the Punjaub.—Sir Charles Napier as	
Commander-in-Chief	176
XXXII.—Roads and Canals.—The Case of Jotee Persaud.—The Affairs of Madras	183
XXXIII.—Of the Portuguese, Dutch, and Danes in India	186
XXXIV.—Second Burmese War.—Operations at Rangoon.—Capture of Martaban and Bassein, Promé and Pegu.	
—Annexation of the Latter	192
XXXV.—The Annexations of Sattara, Nagpore, and Jhansi.—The Affairs of Hyderabad (Deccan)	198
XXXVI.—Lord Dalhousie's Administration.—Annexation of Oude	203
XXXVII.—Lord Dalhousie's Administrative Reforms.—Revenue.—Postal Reform.—Ganges Canal.—Railroads.—	
Telegraphs, &c.	208
XXXVIII.—The Persian War.—What Led Thereto.—The Army of Persia Detailed.—Battle of Khoosh-ab	212
XXXIX.—The War in Persia.—Expedition to Mohammerah on the Euphrates.—The Affair of Akwaz.—Peace with	
Persia.—Resignation of Lord Dalhousie	218
XL.—Christianity in India.—A Brief Notice of Its Progress	228
XLI.—Lord Canning Governor-General.—Of the Sepoys and Indian Army generally	236
XLII.—The Enfield Rifle in the Bengal Army.—The Spirit of Mutiny at Berhampore, &c.—Disbanding of the	
19th Bengal Native Infantry.—Revolt at Meerut	241
XLIII.—The Atrocities at Delhi.—Vigorous Measures in the Punjaub.—Progress of the Mutiny	249
XLIV.—Affairs in Peshawur.—Acts of Disarming.—Mutinies in the Doab, at Bareilly, and Elsewhere	254

CHAPTER

XLV.—The Mutiny in Oude.—Siege of Lucknow.—Combat of Chinhutt.—Massacres at Cawnpore	261
XLVI.—Preparations for the Recovery of Delhi.—Victory of Badulee Ke Serai.—The Corps of Guides.—The Siege of Delhi.—Combat of Nujufghur, and Arrival of the Siege Train	267
XLVII.—The Batteries Open.—The Assault and Capture of Delhi.—The Princes Shot by Captain Hodson, &c.	275
XLVIII.—The March of Havelock.—Victory at Futtehpoore.—Combat at Aherwa.—The Third Massacre at Cawnpore.—Bithoor Destroyed.—Sir Colin Campbell Commander-in-Chief, &c.	279
XLIX.—State of Lucknow.—Relieved by Havelock and Outram	293
L.—Maun Sing's Proposal.—The March of Sir Colin Campbell.—Second Relief of Lucknow, and Death of Havelock	301
LI.—Mutinies at Mhow and Indore.—Murder of Sir Norman Leslie.—Battle of Cawnpore, won by Sir Colin Campbell, General Franks, &c.	306
LII.—Oude Entered.—Lucknow Attacked and Taken.—The Subsequent Campaign	314
LIII.—The Campaign in Central India	320
LXIV.—The Government of India.—A Proposed Change.—The India Bill.—Extinction of the Company.—Proclamation of the Queen	326
LV.—The Movements of Lord Clyde and Sir Hope Grant in Oude.—The Escape of Bene Madhoo.—The Durbar at Cawnpore.—Amalgamation of the Forces	333
LVI.—Third War with China	339
LVII.—Fall of the Takoo Forts.—Chan-Chia-Wan.—Parkes and Others Taken.—Pa-le-Chiao.—Advance on Peking.—Summer Palace Taken.—Fate of the Prisoners.—Peking Taken.—Peace with China	351
LVIII.—The Star of India.—Lord Elgin, Governor-General, Dies.—Sir John Lawrence Succeeds.—The War in Bhotan	362
LIX.—End of the Contest in Bhotan.—Famine in Orissa.—Affairs of Mysore	370
LX.—The Isles of British India	375
LXI.—Earl of Mayo Viceroy.—Shere Ali.—The Revenue of India.—The Feudatory Princes.—The Lushai War	380
LXII.—Lushai War.—The Right Column, &c.—Lalboora Destroyed, and Peace Enforced	387
LXIII.—Lord Mayo's Foreign Policy.—Retrenchment.—The Ex-King of Oude.—Income-Tax and Salt Duty.—Railways	394
LXIV.—Canals and Canal Cess.—Education.—Agriculture and Minerals	401
LXV.—Prison Discipline.—The White Pariahs.—The Convict Colony.—Assassination of Lord Mayo	408
LXVI.—The Interim-Viceroy.—Lord Northbrook Viceroy.—The Affair of Khiva.—The Famine in Bengal and Behar	415
LXVII.—The Hindoos of British India.—Brief <i>Résumé</i> of Their Habits and Character	423
LXVIII.—Of the Coolie System.—Trial of the Guicowar of Baroda.—Supposed Capture of Nana Sahib	440
LXIX.—War with the Malays.—Revolt of Ismail and Zela.—Operations of the Troops.—Defeat and Surrender of Ismail	446
LXX.—The Nagas Expedition.—The Suez Canal	453
LXXI.—Murder of Mr. Margary at Manwyne.—Attack on Colonel Browne's Mission.—Correspondence Thereupon	455

CHAPTER	PAGE
LXXII.—Russian Aggression in Central Asia.—Annexation of Khokand.—Departure of the Prince of Wales for India	461
LXXIII.—Some Statistics of Indian Social Life in the Present Day	466
LXXIV.—The Prince of Wales at Bombay, Poonah, Baroda, Ceylon, and Trichinopoly	474
LXXV.—The Prince of Wales at Madras and Calcutta	485
LXXVI.—Resignation of Lord Northbrook.—Artillery Experiments at Delhi.—Poor Europeans in India.—The Prince of Wales at Benares, &c.	490
LXXVII.—The Prince of Wales at Agra, Gwalior, Jeypore, and the Terai of Nepaul, &c.	497
LXXVIII.—The Indian "Abstract," 1873-74.—Lord Napier Resigns the Command of the Army.—Lord Northbrook's Administration	507
LXXIX.—Lord Lytton Viceroy.—The Kokat Pass.—"The Royal Titles Bill."—The Queen Empress of India	513
LXXX.—Our Indian Policy.—Missions in China.—Death of Sir James Weir Hogg, &c.	518
LXXXI.—The Mohammedans of India on "The Eastern Question"	522
LXXXII.—The Great Cyclone of 1876	525
LXXXIII.—Progress of the Viceroy.—The Indian Tea Trade.—Navigation of the Oxus.—The Nawab Nizam.—Madras Affairs.—Famine Threatened	530
LXXXIV.—Infant Mortality in Calcutta.—"The Model State."—A Mock Ambassador.—Story of Narandra Rao Bahadoor	537
LXXXV.—The Viceroy at Delhi	543
LXXXVI.—Proclamation of the Queen as Empress of India.—Honours Conferred.—The Durbar	548
LXXXVII.—The Viceroy at Puttiala and Allyghur.—The Afreedies.—The Indian Famine of 1877	555
LXXXVIII.—The Jail Delivery.—The North-Western Frontiers, &c.—Death of Jung Bahadoor	561
LXXXIX.—Concluding Remarks	567



LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

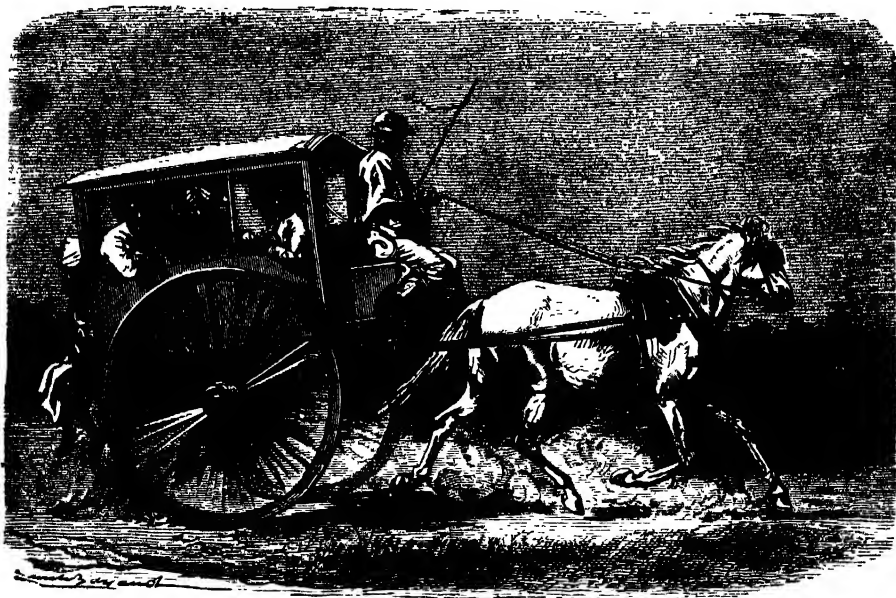
	PAGE		PAGE
Portrait of Her Imperial Majesty the Empress of India	1	Well in the Hyrcanian Desert	108
<i>Frontispiece</i>		Map of Afghanistan	109
Illustrated Front Page	1	View of Cabul	115
Negotiations for Peace: Meeting of the British and		Portrait of Lady Sale	120
Burmese Commissioners	7	Portrait of Lord Ellenborough	127
Burmese Toy-Girl	12	Mountaineers of the Western Himalayas	132
Hand-to-Hand Combat between Mr. Shore and the		Portrait of Sir Charles Napier	133
Goojur	13	Plan of the Battle of Meanee	139
View of the Principal Gate of the Palace of the		Plan of the Battle of Dubba	144
Padishahs, Delhi	19	Plan of the Battle Order of the British Army at	
Hindoo Jugglers	25	Ferozeshah	145
The Cobra di Capello	30	The Battle of Ferozeshah	150
Bayadere of Mewât	31	Plan of the Battle of Aliwal	151
Nautch-Girl of Ulwar	36	Plan of the Battle of Sobraon	156
Water-Carriers of Calcutta	37	Portrait of Sir Henry Hardinge	157
Thugs in the Gaol of Aurungabad	43	View of the Suttee Chaora-Ghat, or Broad Staircase	
Fakirs Wounding Themselves	48	of Funerals, on the Ganges at Cawnpore	163
View of Simla, Western Himalayas	49	View of the Port of Calcutta	168
Portrait of Dost Mohammed	54	Portrait of Sir Herbert Edwardes	169
View of the Tower of Koutub, in the Plain of Delhi	55	The Surrender of Moolraj	175
Rajahs and Zemindars of the Northern Provinces of		View of Fort Rhotas, near Chillianwalla	180
Hindustan	61	View of the Quay of Benares	181
View of the Martinière, or Palace of Claude Martin,		Hindoo Funeral Rites in Calcutta	187
Lucknow	67	The "Bund" or Dam of the Lake of Barwa, Jhansi	198
View of the Pavilion of Lanka in the Kaiserbagh,		The Royal Necropolis at Golconda, Hyderabad (Deccan)	199
Lucknow	67	View of a Planter's House at Allahabad	204
View in Afghanistan	73	Dyers of Lucknow	205
View of the Palace of Lahore	79	The Chopaya, or Hindoo Travelling-Carriage	211
Tomb of Runjeet Sing, Lahore	84	View of the Fort of Bushire	217
On the River Swat, a Tributary of the Cabul	85	A Street in Bagdad	222
Interior of a Turcoman Tent	90	View of Bagdad	222
View of the Hindoo Coosh Mountains	91	Portrait of Nasser-ed-Deen, Shah of Persia	223
Portrait of Aekbar Khan	96	The Indian Silenus	229
Sir Robert Sale	97	View of the Temple of Kali at Kijraha	234
Assassination of Sir Alexander Burnes	103	The Façade of the Temple of Kali at Kijraha	235

	PAGE		PAGE
Great Hall of the Dewan Khās in the Palace of Delhi	241	Indian Nobles	373
Non-Commissioned Officers of Native Bengal Infantry	246	Portrait of the Earl of Mayo	378
Native Officers of the Bengal Irregular Cavalry	247	A Court of Justice in the Jungle	379
Portrait of Lord Canning	252	View of the Lake of Ulwar	384
Courtyard of the Palace of Govindghur	253	Scene on the River Barack, near Cachar	385
Flight of Europeans from the Mutineers	258	Portrait of Mary Winchester, the Captive of the Lushais	390
View of the Great Imambara, Lucknow	259	The Grave of a Lushai Chief	391
View of Cawnpore	265	An Indian Mail-Cart	396
Portrait of Nana Sahib	270	View of the Salt Mountains of Rawal Pindi, Himalayas	397
Plan of the Entrenchment at Cawnpore, June, 1857	271	Railway Travelling in India	402
The Iron Column of the King Dhava, Koutub, Delhi	276	Passage of an Indian River	403
Captain Hodson Arresting the King of Delhi	277	A Gundwana Talookdar	408
Plan of the Battle of Futtehpore	281	Rice and Corn Merchants of Patna	409
Plan of the Affair at Aong	282	Assassination of Lord Mayo	414
Plan of the Affair at Pandoo Nuddee	283	Ploughing in Turkestan	415
Plan of the Battle of Aherwa	284	View of the Mausoleum of the Etmaddowlah, Agra	420
Plan of Havelock's March	288	Group of Sôntals, Natives of the Rajmahal Mountains (Bengal)	421
Portrait of Sir Henry Havelock	289	Hindoo Jeweller	426
Plan of the Battle of Bithoor	291	View of the Mosque of Aurungezebe and Madhoray Ghat (Quay), Benares	427
View of Gwalior	294	Buddhist Funeral Urn, from the Tôpe of Sanchi	432
Plan of Lucknow	295	Idol of Mandar, near Bhagulpore	432
The Attack on the Alumbagh	300	View of the Subterranean Temple of Mahadeva, Oudghiry	433
Ruins of the Residency, Lucknow	301	Horsemen of the Guicowar's Bodyguard at Baroda	438
Portrait of Captain Peel	306	The Court of the Guicowar of Baroda	439
Scene at the Relief of Lucknow	307	View of the Tomb of Allum Sayed, Baroda	444
Plan of Cawnpore	312	View of the Summer Palace in the Garden of Pearls, Baroda	444
Jung Bahadoor	313	A Bungalow at Ahmedabad, near Baroda	445
View of the Ghât of Daceswamedh, Benares	318	Blue Jackets and Marines Poling the British Expedition up the Perak River	451
Mountaineers of the North-West Firing on the British	319	A Mandarin	456
An Escort Encamped	324	Triumphal Arch in the Gardens of the Palace, Pekin	456
Necropolis of the Rajahs of Jhansi	325	Chinese Palanquin-Bearers	457
Tantia Topee	327	View in Pekin	462
Portrait of Sir James Outram	330	Members of the Council for Foreign Affairs in the Pavilion of Reception, Tsungli-Yamen, Pekin	463
The Gardens of the Taj, Agra	331	A Tiger-Hunt in the Kymores	468
The Memorial at Cawnpore	336	Tiger-Hunting with Elephants	469
Portrait of Lord Clyde	337	The Bhists, or Water-Carrier	474
A Chinese Junk	342	The Maharajah of Oodeypore and the British Resident	475
Chinese Mountaineers	343	View of the Lion's Cave, Elephanta	480
View of Hong-Kong	348	Portrait of H. R. H. the Prince of Wales	481
A Tartar Horse-Soldier	349	View of the Jumna Musjid, Delhi	486
Chinese Artillerists	354	The Maharajah of Rewah and Court	487
Portrait of General Montauban (afterwards Count Palikao)	355	View of the Mosque of the Emperor Altamsh, near Delhi	492
Scene in a Street in Pekin	360	View of the Tôpe or Temple of Dhameh, near Benares	493
Portrait of Sir Hope Grant	361		
Portrait of Lord Elgin	363		
Chinaman Selling the <i>Pekin Gazette</i>	366		
View of the British Consulate, Canton	367		
and Merchants of Calcutta	372		

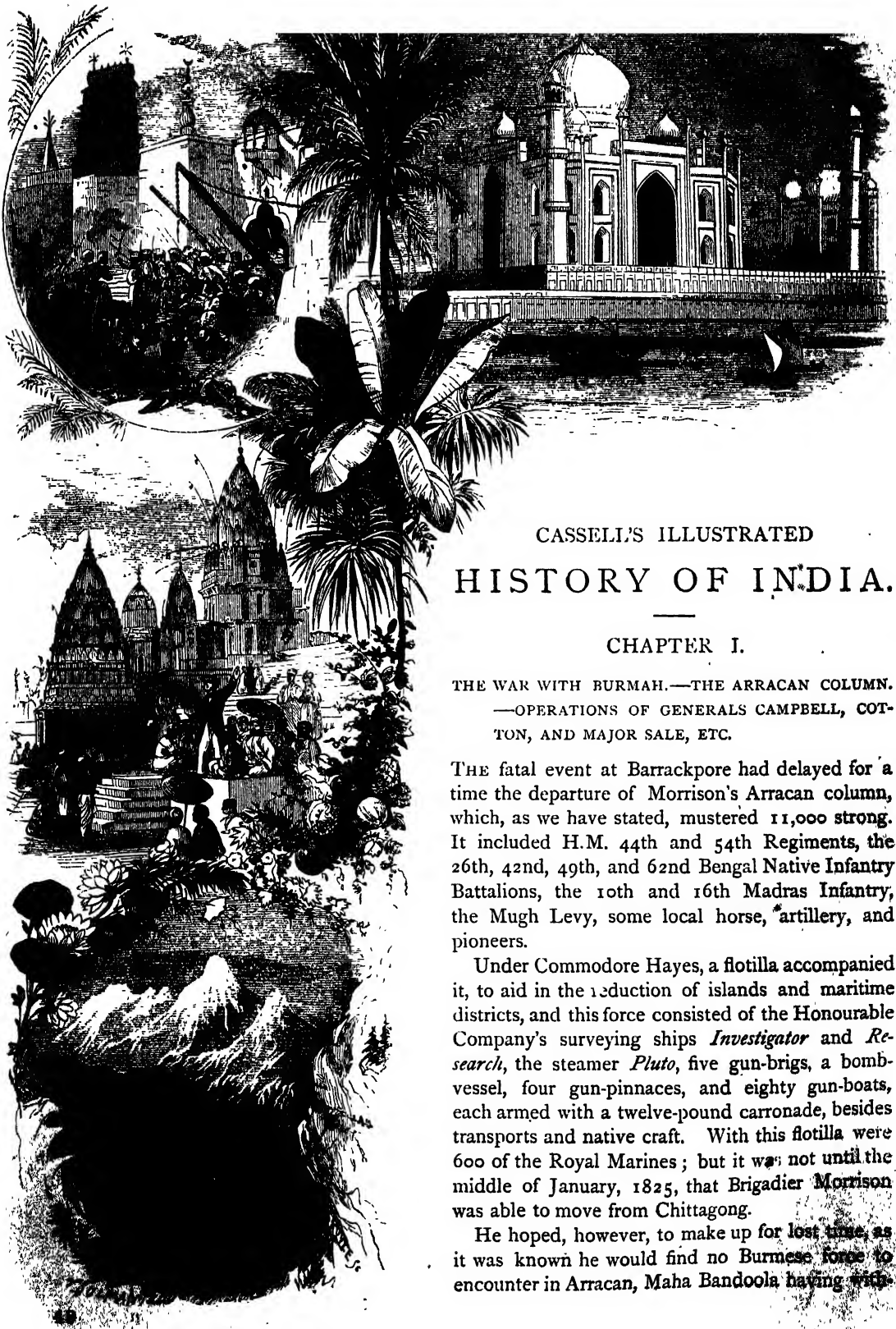
LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

xi

	PAGE		PAGE
Illuminations at Benares in Honour of the Prince of Wales	498	Reception by a Maharajah	540
View of the Pyramidal Hill, Ulwar	499	View of the Tomb of Altamah, Koutub, near Delhi	541
Portrait of the Maharajah of Dholepore	504	Portrait of Sheodan Sing, Maharao Rajah of Ulwar	546
View in Lucknow : Hooseinabad Imambara	505	View of the Mausoleum of the Emperor Togluek, at Togluckabad	547
On Board the <i>Serapis</i> : The Pony and Thibet Mastiff	510	The Rajah of Pannah and his Sons	552
The Dak-Ghasi, or Post-Chaise	511	View of the Court of the Palace of Oodeypore	553
A Caravan	516	Portrait of the Rajah of Nagore	558
Travelling By Road	516	A Hill Tribe on the March	559
Side-Wall of the Pál Palace, Gwalior	517	Portrait of H.R.H. the Princess of Wales	564
River View in China	522	Example of Hindoo Architecture : North Gate of the Temple of Sanchi	565
Portrait of Lord Lytton	523	A Cashmere Widow	570
Cyclone at Calcutta	528	Cavalcade Setting Out on a Tiger-Hunt	571
The Djangâl, a Savage of the Sirgonja	529	"Salaam"	576
View of the English Church, Lahore	534		
Infanticide on the Banks of the Jumna	535		



TRAVELLING IN MADRAS.



CASELL'S ILLUSTRATED HISTORY OF INDIA.

CHAPTER I.

THE WAR WITH BURMAH.—THE ARRACAN COLUMN.
—OPERATIONS OF GENERALS CAMPBELL, COT-
TON, AND MAJOR SALE, ETC.

THE fatal event at Barrackpore had delayed for a time the departure of Morrison's Arracan column, which, as we have stated, mustered 11,000 strong. It included H.M. 44th and 54th Regiments, the 26th, 42nd, 49th, and 62nd Bengal Native Infantry Battalions, the 10th and 16th Madras Infantry, the Mugh Levy, some local horse, artillery, and pioneers.

Under Commodore Hayes, a flotilla accompanied it, to aid in the reduction of islands and maritime districts, and this force consisted of the Honourable Company's surveying ships *Investigator* and *Research*, the steamer *Pluto*, five gun-brigs, a bomb-vessel, four gun-pinnaces, and eighty gun-boats, each armed with a twelve-pound carronade, besides transports and native craft. With this flotilla were 600 of the Royal Marines; but it was not until the middle of January, 1825, that Brigadier Morrison was able to move from Chittagong.

He hoped, however, to make up for lost time, as it was known he would find no Burmese force to encounter in Arracan, Maha Bandoola having with-

drawn all his troops for the purpose of hemming up Campbell in Rangoon; but a more terrible enemy than Burmah could send forth was to be met on his disastrous march.

The total length of the province of Arracan is 250 miles, its greatest breadth is 105, though in some parts it is little more than ten miles. On the north it is separated from the Chittagong district by the river Nauf. A range of mountains, named the Yeomandong, whose height varies from 2,000 to 8,000 feet, running parallel to, and in some places approaching very near the coast, separates it from the Burmese empire. No fewer than twenty-two passes exist in this chain between Arracan and Ava; of these, the principal, the Pass of Aeng, at its summit, attains an altitude of 4,664 feet; but these passes are generally little more than mere foot-tracks, traversable only by bullocks or mountain ponies. The sea-coast is bordered by numerous isles, the largest of which is Cheduba, and has a line of dangerous shoals, and is torn and indented by creeks, the formation of the fierce torrents that are for ever pouring from the Yeomandong. The interior presents only a succession of rugged heights, with deep ravines and marshy flats between.

Towering forests and impervious jungle render every route one of extreme difficulty, and poison the atmosphere so much that, at the commencement and cessation of the rainfalls, it becomes quite pestilential. In the town of Arracan, fifteen inches of rain have been known to fall in one day. In 1825, the year of Morrison's march, out of 16,500 square miles, the Mughs, its inhabitants, had only 400 under cultivation.

In order to avoid the serious obstacles which he was aware would beset him, General Morrison resolved to march as near the coast as possible, to the end that he might avail himself of the assistance of Commodore Hayes for the conveyance of the troops and stores across the mouths of rivers. On the 1st of February, 1825, he reached the mouth of the Nauf, and threw a detachment across it to take possession of Mangdoo, but twelve days elapsed ere the whole of his troops had crossed; and, as many of his baggage animals had not yet come up, he was compelled to leave there many of his stores, under a guard, while he pushed on to the mouth of the Myoo, a stream there more than three miles in width.

So varied and unforeseen were the causes of delay, that a whole month elapsed ere the last man was across, after which the army encamped at the town of Chittagong, near a tributary of the Kaladyne, which was navigable even to deeply-laden boats, to within a few miles of Arracan, the capital of the

province, to capture which, with its population of about 10,000 souls, was now the chief object of the brigadier.

Commodore Hayes having entered the river with his shipping towards the end of February, found his progress obstructed by the guns of a stockade, which he failed to force; but when the troops reached the same point on the 20th of the subsequent month, it was found to be abandoned. Morrison's force had now marched 150 miles from Chittagong.

On the 26th of March, after storming two stockades, it continued to advance, without further opposition, till, on the 29th, it halted at the base of a hilly range, about 400 feet in height, that overlooks Arracan, the houses of which are all built on piles, above the mud and ooze which the river deposits around them. On the summit of these hills, 9,000 Burmese troops were found strongly stockaded, and Morrison ordered an instant assault.

Up this steep ascent our soldiers rushed to the attack, but were met by a dreadful matchlock fire, accompanied by volleys of enormous stones which were rolled down upon them, and after suffering considerable loss, they were compelled to fall back, and acknowledge themselves beaten. On the 30th, he brought up his battering-guns, which opened briskly on the stockade, while next evening a detachment, by a circuitous route, attacked it in rear; the Burmese, finding themselves assailed on two points at once, lost all presence of mind, and fled. Arracan was captured, and the whole province was subjugated; and by the Treaty of Yandaboo—yet to be narrated—was ceded to Great Britain.

So far all had gone well with Morrison's column; but there, in one of the most unhealthy places between the tropics, he put his troops into cantonments, while he halted to complete the occupation of a country where there was nothing to subdue. In the month of May the rains of the monsoon set in, fever began to appear, and it continued to augment daily and nightly, amid the horrid miasmatic atmosphere of Arracan, till scarcely a soldier remained fit for duty, and even the baggage animals drooped and died. The horses, bullocks, and elephants, perished by hundreds; and the mortality was so great in the ranks of the two king's regiments that, together, they did not muster 1,004 men.

Three-fifths of the whole force found their graves in Arracan during the course of eight months; and the rest became utterly inefficient, as the Europeans suffered quite as much as the British soldiers. And all this came to pass from Morrison's abandoning the original plan for co-operating with the army of

the Irawaddi, and the ignorance of his staff as to the geography of the country. The perfectly practicable Pass of Aeng, by which an extensive trade was carried on between Burmah and Arracan, was overlooked, and the army, supposing there was no further outlet, instead of aiding Campbell, was left in the latter place to pine away and perish by disease.

Yet that the road by the Aeng Pass, though steep, was a perfectly open one, ample and practicable proofs were given to the public, when, in the March of the following year, Captain David Ross tells us that he marched homeward with the 18th Madras Infantry, fifty pioneers, and all the elephants of the army, from Yandaboo on the Irawaddi, across the Arracan mountains, by that route, on an excellent road—a march extending over only nineteen days.*

After the successes of our troops at Kokim on the 15th of the preceding December, the condition of our Rangoon expedition was greatly ameliorated. The return of the healthy season had lessened disease, and reinforcements had arrived, including, among other European regiments, the second battalion of the Royal Scots, under Colonel Armstrong; but prior to commencing more active operations, a new policy was inaugurated, by offering independence to the Peguers, that confidence might be given to the returning inhabitants of Rangoon. To this end, Sir Archibald Campbell issued a proclamation, showing the folly of resisting the British arms, and reminding the Peguers of the oppression and tyranny they had so long endured, drawing a contrast between their degraded state and the happiness now enjoyed by the freed people of Tenasserim under the British flag, concluding with the recommendation to choose from among themselves a chief, and he would acknowledge him. The ancient dynasty of Pegu was extinct: there was none to choose from; and before there was any prospect of a candidate appearing, the policy of Great Britain had adopted a new phase, and it was deemed unsafe, amid eventualities, to encourage a spirit of national independence in the people of Pegu.

When General Campbell began a new line of operations, he led the first division in person. It consisted of only 2,400 men, and by way of distinction was called the Land Column. It was composed of H.M. 38th, 41st, and 47th Regiments, all very weak, with three native battalions, a troop of Bengal Horse Artillery, and a rocket troop.

The second division was under Brigadier-General Cotton, and consisted of H.M. 89th Regiment, the

1st Madras Europeans, and 250 of the 18th Madras Native Infantry, some foot artillery, and a few of the rocket troop, but mustering only 1,200 men in all.

The third division—if such slender formations can be so called—consisted only of H.M. 13th Regiment, the 12th Madras Native Infantry, and a few artillery, but only 600 men in all, under the gallant Robert Sale, then holding the rank of major.

Campbell's division was to proceed by land to Prome, on the Irawaddi, while Cotton, by water, would form a junction with him at the same point, for the purpose of reducing the enemy's works at Panlang and Donabew. With Cotton were to come fifty-two gunboats, under Captain Alexander, R.N. Sale's small force was to operate by sea; in pursuance of which order it proceeded to Cape Negrais, and after destroying the batteries there, had orders to advance to Bassein.*

The latter must not be confounded with the place of the same name in Bombay, as it is a district, town, and river of Burmah, in the province of Pegu. Sale was most successful; and after destroying the enemy's works, ascended the river to the town of Bassein, from which the enemy retired, leaving it in flames. Being without means of transport, Sale was unable to follow them up, and thus had no alternative but to re-embark at Bassein, and sail back to Rangoon to await fresh orders.

Meanwhile, Cotton's division advanced to Yougan-Chena, where the Rangoon branch separates from the Irawaddi. When Panlang, on the former, was reached, on the 19th February, Cotton found the flat reedy banks on both sides strongly stockaded; these were ultimately, with difficulty, shelled, after which the enemy took to flight before a shower of rockets. Leaving a detachment of Madras Infantry at this point, the flotilla proceeded on its way, and on the 6th of March appeared off Donabew.

There, the works were on the right bank of the stream; they were of great strength, and commanded the whole breadth of the current. The chief work, as described by an officer of the staff, "a parallelogram of 1,000 by 700 yards, stood on a bank withdrawn from the bed of the river in the dry season, and rising above it. Two others, one a square of 200 yards, with a pagoda in the centre, and the other an irregular work, 400 yards from it, stood lower down the river, forming outworks to the principal stockade, commanded and supported by its batteries. All three were constructed of squared beams of timber, provided with platforms,

* "Two Years in Ava." By an Officer of the Staff.

* Wilson, &c.

and pierced for cannon; and each had an exterior ditch, the outer edge of which was guarded with sharp-pointed bamboos, and a thick abatis of felled trees and brushwood. One hundred and forty guns of various calibres, and a greater number of jingals, were mounted on the parapets, and the garrison consisted of 12,000 men, commanded by [Maha Bandoola] the most celebrated general in the service of Ava."

Having left part of a native regiment at Panlang, and some of his Europeans to guard the gunboats and stores, the whole available force of Cotton did not amount to much beyond 600 bayonets—a strength manifestly inadequate to storming Donabew; but Cotton having only unconditional orders to attack the place, had no alternative but to obey them.

Accordingly, on the 7th of March, he formed two little columns of attack, consisting of 500 men in all. These advanced against the smaller stockade, covered by the fire of two field-pieces and a rocket battery. They carried it successfully, and then an attempt was made against the second intrenchment. A rush was made at it by 200 gallant fellows; but numbers overwhelmed them, and they were driven back with loss. It was a gross blunder of General Campbell to send Brigadier Cotton with such inadequate means on such a service; and it was an equal blunder on Cotton's part to assault Donabew, after a reconnaissance must have proved to him the enormous strength of the place.

Disparity of force rendered the attempt criminal and absurd. The brigadier was compelled to relinquish it, and re-embarking, to drop down the river to Yung-Yung, and there await fresh instructions from the general in command.

As has been too often the case in British military expeditions, it was now painfully evident that the force sent to Rangoon was too weak, and that the government at Calcutta had formed no correct idea of the task it had undertaken; and Cotton, while waiting for orders, learned that Campbell, finding himself also too weak to achieve anything at Prome, was falling back.

His division had started on the 13th of February; with the grenadiers and light infantry of the 1st Royal Scots as his advance-guard, he had proceeded along a difficult path, tending obliquely towards the Irawaddi river. He marched through the provinces of Lyng and Sarrawah, or Tharawa, till he reached a place called Mophi; when about 2,000 Burmese, under Maha Silwah, abandoned an old Peguan fort, which they at first seemed disposed to defend, and dispersed in the jungle. From

Mophi, Campbell continued his progress uninterrupted by the enemy, and forded the Lyng at Thaboon, on the 1st of March. The whole inhabitants of the country through which his column marched viewed the expulsion of the Burmese with much satisfaction, and assisted the troops in making roads, and in procuring supplies of rice and buffaloes.*

During these arduous operations, the troops were well-nigh maddened by clouds of mosquitoes. These issued from the jungle and high reeds by the river banks, and tortured the poor Europeans by biting them through every kind of clothing. "A cavalry officer," says Lieutenant (afterwards General Sir James Edward) Alexander, "affirmed that he found no protection in a pair of leather breeches; an infantry soldier declared that they bit him through his breast-plate; an artilleryman, to crown the joke, asserted that he could not secure his head by thrusting it into a mortar."†

On the 2nd March, Campbell's division reached that point on the Irawaddi where its junction with the Water Column had been intended, only to learn that it had fallen back from Donabew. Campbell was thus compelled to retrace his steps, and concentrate his force for the reduction of that formidable place, if possible. He accordingly crossed the Irawaddi by means of canoes and rafts, which, owing to the insufficiency of these craft, caused the movement to last five days.

After halting two days at Henzada, a large town, where there were many temples and wooden bridges, the column, cutting a path through jungle and thicket, pursued its march along the right bank of the river, and arrived before Donabew on the 25th of March. Two days after, a communication was opened with the Water Column, under Cotton, and both leaders now prepared to co-operate for the reduction of the place. Campbell had halted above Donabew, while the flotilla, under Cotton, was below it. Thus, ere they could act together, the latter had to take advantage of a fair wind, before which he sailed up against the current, gallantly running the gauntlet of every gun the enemy could bring to bear upon him.

Batteries were now constructed without delay, and to retard their progress Bandoola threw out many spirited sorties. One of these was headed by seventeen elephants, each carrying six men, armed with jingals or matchlocks, supported by horse and dense masses of infantry; but a well-directed fire of grape and musketry threw them all into confusion. Torn with bloody wounds the

* "Hist. Records 1st Royal Scots."

† "Journey from India to England," &c.

huge elephants became wild and unmanageable, and, trampling the foot soldiers to death, fled to the nearest thickets, followed by the horsemen, while the infantry took flight to their stockades. In their subsequent operations, neither skill nor courage was shown by the besieged; against whom Campbell opened his batteries on the 3rd of April, when, to the surprise of all, there came no response from the vast works of the Burmese. It was then found that the latter had abandoned the place, and for some time had been in full retreat through the friendly jungle.

The works were then at once taken possession of. Maha Bandoola, the only leader in whom the Burmese had confidence, had been slain by a shell, and his body was stripped of his armour, which is now preserved in the Tower of London. The suit consists of a mixture of plate and quilting; the former having a circular breast defence, and all the pieces ornamented with a richly-gilded arabesque bordering; the latter composed of crimson velvet, with small metal studs. His spear-shaft, which is also preserved, is all of chased silver. It was rumoured in the camp, that before his death this leader had begun to evince some tendencies to Christianity. When the reporter of this interesting fact—a Mugh from Chittagong—was questioned to explain what these symptoms were, he replied, that Bandoola was of his "master's caste"—having acquired a relish for beef, pork, and brandy! Our total loss was thirty killed, and 134 wounded.

All the guns and stores of every description now fell into the hands of our troops, who then resumed their progress towards the heights of Prome.

On the 8th of April, Campbell was joined by Brigadier M'Creagh, with the eight battalion companies of the 1st Royal Scots, the 28th Madras Native Infantry, and a good supply of draught cattle and elephants. The Prince of Tharawaddi, brother of the king, was now at the head of the Burmese army, which fell back to defend Prome, a town on the left bank of the Irawaddi, a mile and a half in circumference, enclosed by a brick wall and stockade, near which are hills covered by pleasant groves of tamarind and palmyra trees. But instead of fighting, the prince continued to retire, step by step, as Campbell advanced, till the latter was within thirty miles of Prome; when one of our soldiers, who had been taken prisoner, came into camp with a letter addressed to the general by two of the royal councillors.

This document attributed the war to the conduct "of a certain paltry chief," and suggested that a negotiation should be opened for the restoration of peace and the ancient friendship of the two states.

To this Sir Archibald Campbell replied, that when the British army was at Prome he would then listen to overtures for peace. And on the 25th of April he entered that place without the least opposition, although, according to his own opinion, it was strong enough by art and nature to have been held by one thousand men against ten times their number.

Though the Burmese would seem to have begun to despair of success at this time, they gathered courage and made fresh levies of troops, till they had 52,000 under arms. Of these, 20,000 were assembled at Meaday, on the Irawaddi, forty miles north of Prome, under a half-brother of the king; 12,000 were at Tongho, eighty miles distant; and the remaining 20,000 were about Melloone and elsewhere; while to oppose all these, Campbell had only five thousand, the half of whom were native troops, with his head-quarters at Prome, and 1,500 more from Rangoon had orders to join him. An armistice was agreed upon, to extend from the 17th of September to the 17th of October, in order to enable the British agents and Burmese vakeels to come to terms of peace. In September, Sir James Brisbane, Commander-in-chief of the British Navy in the Indian Seas, joined the army.

The Kye Wungyee and Lamain Woon met these two leaders on the 2nd of October, to form the terms of a definitive treaty, on the plain of Narenzik, when it soon became obvious that our demands were deemed arrogant by the Burmese. On first meeting in the hall of audience there was much appearance of friendship. "Shaking of hands, and every demonstration of amicable feeling having passed," says Major Snodgrass, "the parties entered the house, and sat down on two rows of chairs, fronting each other; the Wungyees and their suite, in all fifteen chiefs, each bearing the chain of nobility, and dressed in their splendid court dresses, evidently doing grievous penance in seats they were never accustomed to, that no difference might appear, even in the most trifling particular, between the parties; and so observing and tenacious were they on this point, that scarcely a movement could be made without a corresponding one on their side."*

But the business in hand soon disconcerted them, for General Campbell's conditions were these:—"The court of Ava was expected to desist from all interference with Assam and Cachar, and to recognise the independence of Manipore, Arracan, with its dependencies, was to be given up to the British, and an indemnity of two crores of rupees (£2,000,000) was to be paid for the expenses

* "Narrative of the Burmese War."

of the war, until the discharge of which sum Rangoon, Martaban, and the Tenasserim provinces were to be held in pledge. A Resident was to be received at Ava, and a commercial treaty to be concluded, by which trade with Rangoon should be relieved from the exactions by which it had hitherto been repressed." *

It was soon evident that the Burmese would never concede to all this without another struggle; and thus, a few days before the expiration of the armistice, a letter arrived from the Burmese commissioners, intimating the final resolution of the Golden Foot in these terms:—

"If you sincerely want peace, and our former friendship re-established according to Burmese custom, empty your hands of what you have, and then, if you ask it, we will be on friendly terms with

you, and send our petition for the release of your British prisoners, and send them down to you. However, after the termination of the armistice between us, if you show any inclination to renew your demands for your expenses, or any territory from us, you are to consider our friendship at an end. This is Burman custom."

As soon as the Burmese had thus, with undisguised indignation, rejected the terms proposed by Sir Archibald Campbell, they lost not an hour in preparing for the resumption of hostilities, and began to advance upon Prome.

A considerable body of them took post at Watigaon, about twenty miles from that place, and by commanding the country on Campbell's right flank, threatened to give his army the greatest annoyance.

CHAPTER II.

WAR WITH BURMAH.—THE BATTLE OF PROME.—THE AFFAIR OF MELLOONE.—BATTLE OF PAGAMHEW.—PEACE WITH THE KING OF AVA.

To dislodge this advanced party of Burmese, on the 15th of November, 1825, Brigadier McDowall marched in the evening, with five slender regiments of native infantry, formed in three divisions; but the ground, which was found to be flooded and swampy, did not admit of the conveyance of field-pieces, and no heavy guns had been brought. Ignorance of the position led to confusion in the attack, which proved a failure, and McDowall was repulsed, with the loss of nine officers wounded—one mortally—and 216 rank and file killed or wounded. The Burmese, who had never shown much apprehension of the sepoys, for a considerable time after this spoke of them with exulting contempt.

They were now encouraged to make an attempt upon our lines at Prome, by advancing and intrenching themselves within a few miles of that place, under Maha Nemiow, 8,000 of whose *corps d'armée* were Shans, who had not yet come in contact with our troops, and were expected to fight with more courage and resolution than those who had already encountered us. These new levies were accompanied by three young and handsome women of high rank, who were supposed to be

* Wilson.

endued with the gifts of prophecy and of turning aside the bullets of the British.

On the 30th November arrangements were made to attack the enemy next morning, beginning with the left, and taking the divisions in which the Burmese troops were formed in rapid detail. Commodore Brisbane, with the flotilla, was to cannonade the enemy's post upon both banks of the Irawaddi at daylight, and a body of native infantry was to advance at the same time along the margin of the river upon the position of Kye Wungyee, drive his advanced posts back on the main body, drawing the enemy's whole attention to his right and centre, while the columns were marching for the real attack upon his left at Simbike.

Leaving four regiments of sepoys in garrison, at dawn on the 1st December, the rest of the force assembled in two columns of attack at a short distance in front of Prome. One, under Brigadier Cotton, advanced by the straight road that led to Simbike; the other, led by General Campbell, crossed the river Nawine, and moved along its right bank to get into the enemy's rear, and cut off his retreat upon the division of Kye Wungyee.

"The columns," says Major Snodgrass, "had



NEGOTIATIONS FOR PEACE: MEETING OF THE BRITISH AND BURMESE COMMISSIONERS.

scarcely moved off, when a furious cannonade upon our left announced the commencement of operations on the river, and so completely deceived the enemy, that we found the pickets of his left withdrawn, and the position at Simbike exposed to a sudden and unexpected attack. Brigadier Cotton's column first reached the enemy's line, consisting of a succession of stockades erected across an open space in the centre of the jungle, where the villages of Simbike and Kyalaz had stood, having the Nawine River in rear, a thick wood on either flank, and available only by the open space in front, defended by cross-fires from the zig-zagging formation of the works." *

Cotton's plans were soon matured. With the 1st Welsh in front, and the flank companies of the Royal Scots and 89th Regiment, with the 18th Madras Native Infantry, in flank, he advanced with great intrepidity. Encouraged by the presence of the aged Kye Wungyee, who was borne from place to place in a gilded litter, and cheered by the example of the three beautiful Amazons, the Shans certainly fought well; but no sooner was a lodgment effected in the interior of their densely-crowded works than confusion ensued, and they were unable to contend with, or check the progress of, the fast-forming line of disciplined soldiers who formed up to the front as they poured in, and from whose destructive file-firing there was no escape.

The strongly-built enclosures everywhere prevented flight, and in a few minutes the narrow outlets were choked up by the dead and dying. Horses and men rushed wildly to and fro; in some places groups were seen trying to tear down the stockades, in others, offering a feeble resistance to their conquerors. "The grey-headed *Chobwas* (princes) of the Shans, in particular, showed a noble example to their men, sword in hand, singly maintaining the unequal contest; nor could any signs or gestures of good treatment induce them to forbearance; attacking all who offered to approach them with humane or friendly feelings, they only sought the death which too many of them found."

Maha Nemiow fell, with all his litter-bearers, and his body, with his sword, Kye Wungyee's chain, and other insignia, were found among the dead. One of the Amazons received a mortal wound in her breast, and expired in the hands of our soldiers.

Elsewhere, Campbell's column was pushing forward in rear of these stockades, and met the panic-stricken in the act of emerging from the jungle. The Horse Artillery now unlimbered, and opened a crashing fire upon the flying mobs.

Narrative of the Burmese War."

Another of the Shan ladies was then seen galloping on horseback into the Nawine River; but before she could reach the protection of the forest beyond it, a shrapnel exploded over her head, and she fell from her saddle; but whether she was killed or merely terrified was never known, as the Shans bore her away.

The rout of the Burmese army was complete, with enormous losses; ours were three officers killed and two wounded—one mortally—twenty-five soldiers killed, and 121 wounded.

On the 19th of December the army reached Meaday, accompanied by the flotilla, when a flag of truce came to the naval commander, offering to negotiate. Lieutenant-Colonel Tidy and Lieutenant Smith, R.N., had conducted previous negotiations, and these officers were deputed to meet the Burmese. Nevertheless, Sir Archibald Campbell was resolved neither to be deceived nor obstructed by delays under the guise of negotiations, and he continued to advance with the armaments till they arrived at Patanagoh, opposite to Melloone, on the 29th of December.

Next day the negociators undertook to have an interview in a boat in the centre of the river. The general, the commodore, Mr. T. C. Robertson, the civil commissioner, and their suites, went on board, and found five great officials of Ava ready to receive them. The demands of the British were repeated, and met by the old expostulations on the part of the Burmese; who, at last, gave way, by consenting to a surrender of territory, but protesting against the payment of any indemnity, though the British reduced the latter to one million sterling.

On the 3rd of January, 1826, a definitive treaty was executed, and an armistice settled, to extend to the 18th of that month. On the 17th an extension of time was asked, and General Campbell, perceiving that they only meant to delude him, demanded that the Burmese should evacuate the fortified camp of Melloone by sunrise on the 20th, or expect an attack; and on that day, as no ratification of the treaty arrived, the troops advanced against Melloone.

By the 19th Campbell had lined the bank of the river with his batteries; one of eighteen-pounders and heavy mortars was opposed to the centre of the greatest stockade; another, of lighter guns, was ready to batter a pagoda to the southward. The guns and howitzers of the Horse Artillery were in battery to the left of the central work. "By eleven o'clock," says Sir Henry Havlock, "twenty-eight mouths of fire were ready to open on Melloone, and the whole strength of the rocket

brigade was posted near the right of the central battery."

Campbell, in person, gave the word. The roar of the first combined salvo shook the ground, and seemed to rend the air. It reverberated amid the rocks and woods of Melloone, and died away in rumbling echoes among the distant hills. Shots followed each other in deafening peals; and they were seen dashing the works to pieces, and raising clouds of whirling dust and splinters from the stockades. "Shells hit sometimes a few paces from the parapet, behind which the garrison was crouching, bursting among their ranks; sometimes upon the huts of the troops and marked points of the pagodas. The rockets flew in the truest path. Many fell upon the barbarians; many shaped their course direct into the pavilions of the chiefs. Partial fires were soon seen to break out at Melloone. Twice the line of the barbarians which manned the eastern face was seen to give way under the dreadful fire; twice they were rallied by their chiefs. The storm of fire, of shells, and bullets continued, without intermission, for an hour and a quarter. Fifteen minutes before one, the boats of the flotilla began to move from a point 200 yards above the light battery. The first brigade had been embarked on board the leading vessels."*

The flank companies of the Royal Irish Fusiliers—the 41st and the 89th—with some strong sepoy detachments, found themselves at the same moment afloat in the remainder of the flotilla, under the orders of Brigadier Cotton, with whom were Lieutenant-Colonels Henry Godwin, one of the heroes of Barossa, B. B. Parlbly, C.B., and Hunter Blair, C.B., who had been severely wounded at Waterloo. This force was to gain the right bank a little above the great work, and operate against its northern face, then being fearfully enfiladed by the Horse Artillery guns.

As one of its columns was intended to intercept the retreat of the Burmese, the whole body ought to have been put in motion before the first brigade; but the attempt which was made to render the advance of both simultaneous, ended by an inversion of the order of their operations. Thus the first brigade came too soon, and the turning columns too late, in contact with the enemy.

The boats of the first brigade began to fall rapidly down the stream. Colonel Sale, says Havelock, was seen in the leading man-of-war boat, far ahead of the heavier vessels, moving to attack the south-east (Snodgrass says the south-west) angle of the great work; thus he had to receive the fire

of the whole eastern front of the fortification, and every matchlock and jingall opened the moment the first boat was abreast of the place. The force of the stream swept the British, to within half-musket range of their numerous enemies, who, relieved from the severity of our cannonade, caused by the approach of our boats, had full leisure to pour their fire upon them. "It caused a sensation of nervous tremor amongst the unoccupied spectators on the right bank, to see these two old tried corps (the 13th and 38th) thus silently enduring the storm of barbarian vengeance. A dense cloud of smoke from the Burmese musketry began to envelop the boats. Now and then, by the flash of a nine-pounder from one of the gun-vessels, she was seen to present her bows for an instant to the line, and direct a piercing shot against the works. The headmost boat was seen to touch the sand. A body of troops sprang ashore. They formed themselves, with the alacrity of practised *tirailleurs*, under the slope of the bank. They were part of the 38th; they began to answer and check the fire of the Burmese bastion near them. The vessels followed as rapidly as possible; but all seemed too slow for the wishes of those who looked upon the animating scene. They felt the inexpressible desire to urge on, by the power, as it were, of imagination, to press forward, to impel to the point, the headmost boats, which, though dropping quickly, yet seemed, to the eyes of impatience, to lag. More soldiers leaped upon the dry land, with a cheer; others followed. The spectators looked for the leader of the brigade. They did not know that a ball had struck him—the gallant Sale—between the shoulder and the breast, and that he lay swooning from loss of blood in the bottom of the boat."

Lieutenant-Colonel Frith then assumed the command, and conducted the assault, which was made with a steadiness and regularity that must have struck awe into the enemy. In an incredibly short time our soldiers entered by escalade, and established themselves in the interior of the works.

A prouder, or more gratifying sight, wrote another actor in the scene, has seldom been witnessed, than this mere handful of gallant fellows driving a dense multitude of from ten to fifteen thousand armed men before them, from works of such strength, that even Memiabor, their general, contrary to all custom, did not think it necessary to quit until the troops were in the act of carrying them. The other brigades, cutting in upon the enemy's retreat, as they were rushing in headlong flight across the open ground, completed their

destruction, and the capture of the whole of their artillery and military stores.*

But these stern examples were yet insufficient to overcome the obstinacy of the Burmese.

On the 8th of February our army approached within five miles of Pagamhew, an ancient town on the left bank of the Irawaddi, 260 miles above Rangoon. It consists of numerous mouldering pagodas and other ruins, covering some seven miles of ground along the bank of the stream, and extending for three miles inland. For many centuries it was the capital of the Burmese empire, and was regarded as a holy city. There the Burmese seemed resolved to make another stand, as it is solidly built and capable of defence; so Sir Archibald Campbell lost no time in attacking the enemy, though mustering 16,000 warriors, under a leader named the "King of Hell and Prince of Sunset."

The British advanced along a narrow road bordered by a species of plum-tree, above which rose the clouds of dust their marching raised from the dry sandy soil. Instead of defending Pagamhew, the Prince of Sunset, despising all tactics that savoured of timidity, or even throwing up the inevitable Burmese stockades, drew up his army on open ground to which this narrow roadway led, and along which Campbell was marching, with only 1,300 men.

The Burmans fired the first shot; the advance of their right opened a random fusillade, out of all range, at the head of the 43rd, and then fell back. The leading troops, in a moment after, became engaged with the advance of the Burmese, posted at a place called Loganunda, and drove it in, though they had come on with great fury, with frantic gestures and hideous shouts. The whole 13th Light Infantry were thrown forward in skirmishing order, and in this formation actually dashed among the Burmese, overthrew them, and, by bayonet and bullet, strewed the plum-thickets with their bodies. In their flight the Burmese were hotly pursued and thundered upon by the Horse Artillery guns, and cut down by the sowars wherever they could be overtaken.

The rest of the force found a difficulty in seconding this manœuvre, as it could not debouch with sufficient rapidity from the narrow path into which the troops were wedged, with the carriages of the foot artillery, the tumbrils, and rocket-tubes. The heat was overpowering, and two of the weak battalions had been harassed by a night march; the skirmishers of the 13th, thrown out along a considerable space, became closely en-

gaged with formidable masses before they could be adequately supported.

"The barbarian general took advantage of this with laudable adroitness," says Havelock. "He promptly moved up large bodies of horse and foot to the aid of his worsted advance; he caused a mass to debouch from his extreme left, menacing the right flank of the British, and another to press down from his centre, to cut off their vanguard from the road. The ground was a succession of hillocks planted with the jujube. Many of the little summits were covered with the ruins of pagodas; others with monuments less worn by time. Thus the adverse lines were scarcely aware how closely they approached each other. . . . The major-general, accompanied by the principal officers of his staff, was in the very centre of the attack of the vanguard. His person must have been distinctly seen by the barbarians. Large bodies advanced within a few yards of him; their shouts seemed already to announce a victory. The situation of the major-general was for many minutes critical. He had with him only fourteen men of the 13th, sixteen sowars of the Body Guard, and two field-pieces of the Horse Artillery."

The fire of the latter disconcerted the enemy, who fell back, and General Campbell recalled the 13th by sound of bugle, at a time when our guns and howitzers were got into position on the plateau of a ridge, where a ruinous brickwork formed a species of rampart. At its foot stood the enemy in immense force, their infantry supported by squadrons of Cassay horse. Campbell surveyed them steadily for a time through his telescope, and then said calmly, as the troops re-formed:—

"I have here the 13th and Body Guard, so the whole Burmese army shall not drive me from this hill."

Nevertheless, he was full of anxiety; there was no intelligence yet of the movements on the left, and detachments of the enemy filled all the thickets on both flanks, and even penetrated to the rear; but, at length, the 89th Regiment came up, and took its position in support, and the British once more prepared to attack the "King of Hell"—as his name of *Nee Woon Breen* has been translated—when it was perceived that he had diminished the frontage of his force, in consequence of his right flank and his communications with Pagamhew being menaced. When the troops advanced, with loud cheers, the Burmese were driven from position to position, from pagoda to pagoda, in total rout. All their standards were captured, and Campbell and his staff rode triumphantly into Pagamhew by its eastern gate; and we are told, that the boom

* Major Snodgrass.

of the last cannon-shot had scarcely ceased to echo among the pagodas of the ruined city, when his sentiments were thus conveyed to the troops in general orders :—

“Providence has once more blessed with success the British arms in this country; and in the decisive defeat of the imposing force posted under and within the walls of Pagamhew, the major-general recognises a fresh display of the military virtues which have characterised his troops from the commencement of the war.”

The defeated commander left the field of battle with such rapidity, that he was the first to bear to Ava the tidings of his own disaster. The object of this, we are told, was to solicit a new army with which to expel the presumptuous invaders; but the courtiers, or the king, thought they had had enough of him. He was expelled from the royal presence with ignominy, and put to death the same evening. The employment of “the King of Hell and Prince of Sunset” had been the last effort of desperation; and it soon became evident that the resources of the empire were incapable of preventing a mere “handful” of British troops from penetrating 500 miles into the interior of the country, and compelling its capital to surrender at discretion.

After a five days’ halt at Pagamhew, Sir Archibald Campbell resumed his march, and arrived at Yandaboo, within sixty-three miles of Ava. It is a town in the Mranma, on the left bank of the great Irawaddi, and there negotiators met him, in the persons of two Burmese ministers and two American missionaries, the Messrs. Price and Judson. As a proof of the sincerity of the now thoroughly humbled court of Ava, they were accompanied by a number of released captives, and brought with them twenty-five lacs of rupees (£250,000) as the first pecuniary instalment.

The terms had been previously arranged, so nothing remained but to give effect to them by a regular treaty, which was concluded, without giving rise to much discussion, on the 24th of February, 1826, and ratified without any unnecessary delay; and of this treaty we may quote the following five articles out of the eleven of which it consisted :—

Art. II. His Majesty the King of Ava renounces all claims upon, and will abstain from all further interference with, the principality of Assam and its dependencies, and also with the contiguous states of Cachar and Jynteca.

Art. III. To prevent all disputes respecting the boundary-line between the two great nations, the British Government will retain the conquered provinces of Arracan, including the four divisions of Arracan, Bamar, Cheduba, and Sandowey, and his

Majesty the King of Ava cedes all right thereto. The Arracan Mountains will henceforth form the boundary between the two great nations on that side. Any doubts regarding the said line of demarcation will be settled by commissioners appointed by the respective Governments for that purpose, such commissioners to be of suitable and corresponding rank.

Art. IV. His Majesty the King of Ava cedes to the British Government the conquered provinces of Ye, Tavoy, Mergue, and Tenasserim, with the islands and dependencies thereunto belonging, taking the Saluen river as the line of demarcation on that frontier. Any doubts regarding their boundaries will be settled as specified in the concluding part of Article III.

Art. V. In consequence of the sincere disposition of the Burmese Government to maintain the relations of peace and amity between the two nations, and as part indemnification to the British Government for the expenses of the war, the King of Ava agrees to pay the sum of one crore (£1,250,000) of rupees.

Art. VII. In order to cultivate and improve the relations of amity and peace hereby established between the two Governments, it is agreed that accredited ministers, retaining an escort of fifty men from each, shall reside at the durbar of the other, who shall be permitted to purchase or build a suitable place of residence of permanent materials; and a commercial treaty, upon principles of reciprocal advantage, will be entered into by the two high contracting parties.

So ended the war with Burmah, which proved one of the most costly waged in the East. Various writers estimate it at fourteen millions sterling; and the loss from all causes—in the field and garrison, along the frontier of Assam, in Arracan, and upon the pestiferous banks of the Irawaddi—at twenty thousand men. Our European troops, especially the officers, perished in much greater proportion than the sepoys, and, more especially, than the Mugh levies, among whom the loss of life was not great.

It has been asserted by some writers, that the Burmese war was never cordially sanctioned at home. Be that as it may, the court of Ava was resolutely bent on war, and every concession we might have made would have been followed by some new and degrading demand; and ultimately, the Burmese did, in fact, lay claim to districts lying within the ancient and recognised frontier of Bengal. “A Burmese war, therefore, however little to be desired on its own account, was, sooner or later, inevitable; and the Indian Government,



BURMESE TOY-GIRL.

which undertook it, have a sufficient vindication in the fact that they only yielded to a necessity which was laid upon them. For the mode of conducting the war, they, and the commander to whom they entrusted it, were strictly responsible; and it is here that the blame lies. They carried it on without any regular plan, committed gross blunders, from which careful inquiry, previously made, would have saved them; and incurred enormous expense and loss of life by scattering their forces, instead of concentrating them, and engaging in wild expeditions, without any reasonable prospect of an adequate result."

When peace was fully concluded, Sir Archibald Campbell, deeming it justly of the highest importance that the inlet from Arracan to the heart of Ava should be fully known to us, in case of future wars, dispatched Captain Trant, with a battalion of sepoy and the elephants of the army, to explore the best route across the mountains from Sembew-

ghewn, on the Irawaddi, in north latitude $20^{\circ} 40'$, to Aeng, in Arracan, in north latitude $19^{\circ} 53'$. Captain Trant found "a superb road"—the same described by Captain David Ross*—which had been executed by the Burmese Government some years before to facilitate intercourse between Arracan and Ava; and which, as it was the channel of so great an inland trade as to be annually traversed by 40,000 persons, ought to have been as well known to our authorities in India as the high road from Calcutta to Cawnpore.

For his past services, and those in this war, Sir Archibald Campbell was created a baronet in 1831, with an augmentation to his ancient clan arms, in chief "a mount *vert*, inscribed *Ava* in gold letters, surmounted by a Burmese stockade;" and for a crest, a Burmese warrior, armed and on horseback.

He died at Edinburgh, when colonel of the 62nd Regiment, in 1843.

* "Two Years in Ava."



HAND-TO-HAND COMBAT BETWEEN MR. SHORE AND THE GOOJUE.

CHAPTER III.

DEATH OF CHARLES GRANT.—THE GHURRY OF KOONJA.—THE POTAIL OF OOMRAIZ.—THE CHIEFS OF KITTOOR.—THE RAJAH OF KOLAPORE.—DEATH OF GENERAL OCHTERLONY.

To preserve continuously the narrative of the Burmese war, we have made no reference to events occurring in other parts of the East, or connected therewith, during that time.

In 1823, Mr. Charles Grant, long one of the most brilliant and able of the Company's civil servants, and one of their most zealous and powerful supporters in the House of Commons, the originator also of the College at Haileybury, died on the 31st of October, in his seventy-seventh year. An active member of the British and Foreign Bible Society, and connected with the Church Missionary, and other bodies, religious and charitable, he was for years the coadjutor and bosom friend of Lord Teignmouth, whose letters contain several references to his grief for the loss he sustained personally by his death. In one, to Lady Teignmouth, dated from Portman Square, 5th November, 1823, he says:—"My thoughts turn perpetually to the melancholy family in Russell Square. I have just received your letter of yesterday, in which you express the feelings which have overwhelmed me. Yes, I do hope and believe that the death of our dear and beloved friend will prove a blessing to us, and to many. Why should he be taken and I left? Was he more ripe for the harvest, and am I spared that I may ripen? God grant that it may be so! Such deaths do indeed preach home to our hearts and consciences most impressively."

Three days after, he wrote:—"I am just returned from the melancholy solemnity of depositing the last remains of my loved and respected friend It will be long, very long, before the events of this day, and that which caused them, will be erased from my recollection—nor do I wish it. On the contrary, I hope that the impression which they have made upon me will be deep and salutary. We think too little of death, forgetting the consequences of it."*

In the month subsequent to his death, at a General Court held in the India House, a motion was carried for the erection of a monument to his memory in the church of St. George, Bloomsbury, at the expense of the Company, in whose service, during a long career, dating from the year 1773, he had won and secured to himself the familiar sobriquet of "Honest Charles Grant."

* "Life of Lord Teignmouth," vol. ii.

Three years subsequent to this time, Lord Teignmouth had a source of keener grief in his own household, by the death of his second son, Henry Dundas Shore, who died in India, when serving with the 11th Light Dragoons.

At the close of the Burmese war the whole of the East was swarming with reckless military adventurers—the relics of defeated armies, or of mercenary corps which had served under the British colours as irregular cavalry. Hence there were many men ready to join us against any power—native or foreign—or join it against us. "On the whole," says a writer, "they were more willing to serve against, than for, the prevailing power. Notwithstanding that Bengal and Central India had been subjected to them, the British were in the predicted condition of the Arabs—their hand was against every man, and every man's hand was against them. While yet the Burmese war exhausted the exchequer and drained the garrisons of India of European troops, war was waged elsewhere."

On the 2nd of October, 1824, an express reached Deyrah from Mr. Grindall, the local magistrate of Saharunpore, stating that part of the district had risen in rebellion, that upwards of 800 men, principally Goojurs, headed by a notorious freebooter, named Kower, had taken possession of the Ghurry of Koonja, in that neighbourhood, and was committing every species of atrocity. He announced his advent as Kali, the last of the Hindoo avatars, for the purpose of putting an end to the reign of foreigners. Mr. Grindall solicited the aid of 200 rank and file of the Sirmoor Battalion, which had been formed of disbanded Nepaulese in 1815; and this detachment instantly marched, under Captain Young (commanding the corps), accompanied by the Hon. Frederick Shore, of the Bengal Civil Service, "who, with his accustomed zeal and love of enterprise, marched with the little band. Mr. Grindall joined the detachment at Secunderpore, with 150 men of the Sirmoor Battalion, attended by Lieutenant Debude, of the Engineers, and Dr. Royle, as volunteers."*

After a forced march of thirty-six miles, these forces reached the scene of action in the Deyrah Doon, a valley through which the Ganges flows in the form of a stream, full of green islets, and

* "Services of the Sirmoor Battalion," 1824.

fordable with difficulty, and where the forests abound with elephants, tigers, leopards, black bears, and striped hyænas.

The rebels were found drawn up outside the fort and along the skirts of the village of Koonja in fighting order, and they instantly opened fire upon the advancing column, which was quickly led to the attack by Captain Young, and after a short conflict they were routed, broken, and driven into the ghurry, or fort, in their rear. Lest they might make their escape, it was resolved to attack this place; but, as the walls were high and in excellent repair, escalade was impossible, as there were neither ladders with the detachment nor the means of making them.

Without a gun to blow open the gate there appeared little prospect of forcing an entrance; the walls were well protected by matchlocks; and a determined band of well-armed ruffians, hopeless of mercy, and treble the number of their assailants, was not likely to prove an easy or bloodless conquest.

The only question was how to get at them. On the suggestion of Mr. Shore, a large tree was cut down, and its branches were lopped off by the sharp *kookeries* of the Ghoorkas; ropes were obtained, and after being tied along it at equal distances, were manned by these active little mountaineers—the two front ropes being held by Mr. Shore and Lieutenant Debude. As the holders of this impromptu battering-ram approached the gate, a fire was opened from the ramparts; several of the Ghoorkas fell under it, but Captain Young led his men in skirmishing order to the edge of the ditch to cover their movements, and then long spears were thrust through openings in the iron-bound gate at the bearers of the tree. At the fifth shock a portion of the gate gave way, making an aperture, but only large enough to admit of entrance in a stooping posture.

Attended by two Ghoorkas, Young dashed through the opening, closely followed by Shore and others. "As he rushed on, without having time to look about him, a man sprang from a corner in the rear, and aimed a desperate blow at the back of his neck, and would assuredly have killed him, but the quick eye of Shore, who had just reared his tall form after bursting through the aperture, saw his friend's danger, and with the full swing of his sword sent the lifeless trunk of the Goojur bounding past Young. The tulwar, however, descended where it had been aimed, but the arm which impelled it was already paralysed and nerveless from Shore's mortal blow, and a blue mark on Young's neck was the only consequence of the murderous attempt."*

* "Services of the Sirmoor Battalion," 1834.

The bayonet and the kookerie decided the contest rapidly within the fort, where 150 were slain, and Shore's sowars cut up all who attempted to escape on the outside; but the writer we have quoted details at some length a gallant single combat between the young civilian (who had already slain seven of the enemy) and an athletic and gigantic *pehlwan* on the flat roof of a house adjoining the ramparts, some of the details of which are picturesque.

The Indian was perfectly naked, with the exception of a middle cloth, and he was gaily and fantastically painted "for this, his last battle." He was armed with a sword and shield, and scornfully addressed Shore as they advanced towards each other:—"What! you too have turned sipahee, and come to fight the Goojurs?" The next moment their swords were seen flashing in the setting sun; but, in the combat, Shore fought at a great disadvantage, his shield having been rendered nearly useless by the loss of its corded handle, and he could only grasp the two rings to which the latter had been attached. At this time Captain Young reached the place where the two were fighting, and levelled his "Joe Manton" at the Goojur's breast; the first barrel flashed in the pan, but a ball from the second pierced his chest just as he was making a desperate cut. The sharp blade swept under Shore's unsteady shield, and gashed his side at the moment his antagonist fell back dead.

The loss of the detachment was thirty-seven killed and wounded. In his thanks to Captain Young, Sir Thomas Reynell, commanding the division, says:—"Mr. Shore has been wounded by sabre-cuts on both breasts, after performing feats of valour and displaying exertions in the course of it, which entitle him to the applause of those who have the power of bestowing it."

The rebel Kower was afterwards caught and hanged at Saharunpore; but in memory of the affair at Koonja, Mr. Shore presented to the Sirmoor Battalion of Ghoorkas a magnificent battering-ram, constructed upon scientific principles, the head and horns covered with a thick plate of brass. This stood in front of the Quarter Guard, and on occasions of festivity is still gaily festooned with flowers.*

His originally robust constitution never recovered the wounds received at Koonja, though he survived till 1837, when he died at Calcutta, in his thirty-eighth year.†

During the greater part of 1825, the whole of the Deccan was in a very disturbed state, particularly

* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1834.

† "Life of Lord Teignmouth," vol. ii.

in February, partly from a scarcity of food, amounting almost to a famine, and partly from the number of armed freebooters scattered over the country, encouraged by the presence of whom the Potail of a village called Oomraiz refused to pay his accustomed *kist*, or rent, to the government, adding, that he cared nothing for force, and would fight us if we chose. Orders were then sent to the officer commanding at Sholapore to take immediate measures to punish the refractory Potail, and capture his fort at Oomraiz, "lest it should become a nucleus for the many discontented spirits that were roaming throughout the land, and its seizure be attended with great difficulty."

So severe had been the drain upon the troops during the Burmese war, that only two corps, one of cavalry and another of infantry, without a single gunner, formed the garrison of Sholapore, where there was only one field-piece, a six-pounder, with abundance of twelve-pound shot, but only twenty-four for the field-piece. A squadron of cavalry, and 300 infantry, with a few extemporised artillerymen to handle the six-pounder, marched to Oomraiz, under the brigadier commanding at the station, who anticipated some resistance, as the Potail was a resolute man, who had once held Oomraiz for three months against all the power of the Peishwa's army.

As the advance-guard wound up the opposite bank, through a low ravine a mile beyond Oomraiz, dawn broke, and the glitter of arms told the Potail of our approach. Then the great gong in the fort was heard resounding, and the walls were seen crowded with armed men. The cavalry made a *détour* so as to prevent any attempt at escape, and while the infantry, with the field-piece, marched straight for the gate; one dragoon, a dashing fellow, galloped up the glacis to the edge of the ditch, reconnoitred it, and returned untouched amid a shower of balls.

The ghurry of Oomraiz was a square of sixty yards, divided into two distinct courts, enclosed by a curtain wall twenty-five feet in height, with circular bastions at the four corners, on which were mounted long jingalls, and some cannon of very small calibre. The whole was surrounded by a wide dry ditch, in which were the huts of the respectable ryots. On the north flowed a river, 500 yards broad, parallel with which was the outer line of three successive outworks. In each of these walls was a gate, and in the centre of the curtain was a fourth gate, guarded by a low, circular, machicolated wall, which precluded the possibility of its being blown open by a gun. It was further protected by bastions on both sides.

Such was the ghurry of Oomraiz; and to a force unprovided with shells or a battering-gun, and to whom the simple mode of blowing open gates by powder-bags was as yet unknown, it presented means of determined opposition.

Under cover of some huts on the glacis, one company took ground to the left, to keep down the fire that was certain to open on the attacking party, which marched direct for the outer gate. After shouting some warnings, the explosion of a few matchlocks followed. This was answered by the covering party, while the six-pounder was run up with all speed. A line of fire now garlanded the whole work, while the first shot from the gun blew open the gate. It proved too narrow to admit the field-piece, so, by two shots the door-posts were blown away; still it could not be brought to bear upon the second gate; and meanwhile, shot, logs, lighted combustibles, and great stones were showered from above on the troops, wounding many, and nearly disabling the field-piece, from which five shots were now fired; one-half of the second gate came thundering down, but by falling across the passage became wedged, leaving an entrance about four feet square.

Through this aperture, amid the smoke and dust, three officers and twelve soldiers sprang, and flung themselves against the third gate, which the retreating enemy had just time to fasten. Other soldiers now rushed to a traverse; but the smoke and dust having cleared away, they were left exposed to the whole fire of a bastion. Their commanding officer was shot dead; and so fast and true was the fire, that every soldier with him was either killed or wounded. The small party within strove in vain to burst open the third gate, and many were wounded, as no shelter could be found; while the fire from the bastion at the second gate precluded all possibility of their being supported. So the refractory Potail seemed likely to be victorious in the end; and he permitted them to creep forth, with the loss of fifty-eight officers and men killed or wounded.

It was now ten a.m.; the troops had been under arms since eleven p.m. the night before, had marched since then, been exposed for three hours to a hot fire and a burning sun without food or water. By great exertion the gun was extricated, and the detachment, with their wounded, followed by the derisive cheers of the Potail's band, encamped, out of gunshot, on the bank of the stream, while reinforcements were sent for from Sholapore.

About noon two Brahmins, who had long been detained as prisoners by the Potail, came to the officer in command, offering an immediate sur-

render, on the part of the garrison, if he would guarantee the safety of their persons; but he would listen to no terms, save an unconditional surrender. All night a huge gong was thundered on the ramparts, where an enormous fire was kept blazing, to delude our troops as to the movements of the garrison, all of whom effected their escape unnoticed; a few remaining only till the last moment, as guard over three men and two women, who were found chained to a large ring, and with the two Brahmins, had been compelled to beat the gong and feed the watch-fire.

In the fort was found a great store of grain, and from a well were taken several jingalls, an ancient Spanish wall-piece, some long Mahratta spears, seventy swords, including a superb Andrea Ferrara, some breastplates, chain armour, and more than 300 matchlocks, some of which were beautifully mounted in gold and silver. The fort was demolished, as a den of thieves and marauders; the village was resumed by the British Government; the Potail of Oomraiz became a mendicant and a wanderer in the Deccan, and, though a large reward was offered for his apprehension, he was never betrayed or given up.*

At this time a strange impression prevailed in the upper provinces of India that the British were preparing to evacuate the whole country; and Bishop Heber tells us, that those with whom the Hon. Mr. Shore had to deal pled this "to justify their rebellion, or, at least, to account for their temerity."

At some distance to the south-west, on the borders of Rajpootana, and even in the vicinity of Delhi, the Bhattas and Mewattees, and other plunderers, taking advantage of the withdrawal of those troops by whom they had been so long overawed, resumed their predatory habits, and carried their outrages to such an extent, that for some time all communication with the city of the Mogul was interrupted; nor was order restored till an increase of military force was obtained.

The Mewattees were an ambiguous race—half Hindoo and half Mohammedan—and who, according to Sir John Malcolm, were not only robbers and assassins, but the most desperate rogues in all India. Even in the time of Bishop Heber, they had been, in a great measure, so reclaimed that he could travel amid the scenes of their ferocious crimes with perfect safety. "This neighbourhood," says he, speaking of the province of Delhi, "is still badly cultivated; but fifteen years ago it was as wild as the Terai, as full of tigers, and with no human inhabitants but banditti. Cattle-stealing

still prevails to a considerable extent; but the Mewattees are now, most of them, subject either to the British Government or that of Bhurtpore, and the security of life and property afforded them by the former has induced many of the tribes to abandon their fortresses, to seat themselves in the plain, and cultivate the ground like honest men and good subjects."*

At Calpee, on the Jumna, about fifty miles west of Cawnpore, a refractory jaghirdar of the Rajah of Jaloun, a province in the Bundelcund, suddenly appeared in 1824, with a considerable body of horse and foot, and after an unsuccessful attempt to seize the fort, containing a vast amount of public treasure, he plundered and set the town of Jaloun on fire; and so current became the rumour at Malwah that the British were about to abandon, at least, Central India, that in one locality a rising of the people was actually organised; and in the vicinity of Boorhanpore, among those wild jungles which cover the country north of the Tapi, between Aseerghur and Ellichpore, an old Pindaree leader, named Sheikh Dalla, mustered a strong body of horse and foot, and committed many outrages before he was effectually checked.

The Bheels, of whom we have already written, began again to grow troublesome, and were with some difficulty restrained from resuming their habits of outrage and robbery.

And now a Mahratta disturbance took place at Kittoor, a town and district in the province of Bejapore, which belonged of old to the Peishwa, and yielded a revenue of five lacs of rupees yearly. On the death of the chief, without heirs, in September, 1824, the grant he held under the Company was supposed to have lapsed; but certain natives, who had previously been intrusted with the management of the district, being most unwilling to relinquish the profits they made out of it, endeavoured to keep it still in their hands, by alleging that the chief, on his death-bed, had authorised his wife and mother to adopt an heir to him; and in accordance with this pretended injunction, a youth, but distantly related to the family, was brought forward at Kittoor, and hailed as the successor of the dead man.

This was, according to Indian usage and custom, informal; as the adoption, to be valid, should have taken place in the chief's life-time; and, at all events, nothing should have been done subsequently without the permission of Lord Amherst. On these double grounds, and because that he believed the real object of the proceedings at Kittoor was to favour the ambition and avarice of a faction, whose

* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1836.

* Heber's "Narrative of a Journey," &c.

object was to carry off the amassed wealth of the late chief, to the injury of his widow, Mr. Thackeray, the British collector, declined to recognise the new arrangements, and meantime, while awaiting instructions from Bombay, assumed the management of Kittoor, and took possession of the treasure, to prevent the chance of which being carried off clandestinely, it was sealed up and placed within the fort, with a guard over it.

Outside this stronghold Mr. Thackeray, with his two assistants, was encamped, with an escort, consisting of two native companies—one composed of horse artillery and the other of infantry; and on the morning of the 23rd October, on sending a new guard to relieve the old, as usual, over the treasure, he was astonished to learn that the gates had been closed and all admittance refused. He ordered an entrance to be forced, and the attempt proved disastrous. The collector and two British officers were killed, one officer was wounded, and the two assistant collectors were taken prisoners, and detained in the fort as hostages.

Trivial as this revolt seemed, it acquired importance from the high excitement it occasioned, and the active sympathy of the adjacent people with the isolated insurgents. Hence it became necessary to lose no time in crushing the rebellious spirit with a firm hand. Accordingly, a strong body of troops, under Colonel Deacon, marched against Kittoor; and, though the garrison of that small place must have known from the first that their case was desperate, they refused to yield until the colonel's guns had breached the walls.

Then came disturbances at Kolapore in the same year, 1824. This was the capital of another Mahratta district among the Western Ghauts, the rajah of which boasted a direct descent from Sevajee, the founder of the Mahratta empire; thus he had a high idea of his own importance, and thought himself entitled, without consulting any other power or potentate in India, to take his own way of displaying it. In this spirit he made a claim to supremacy over Kagal, a possession of Hindoo Rao, brother-in-law of Scindia; and when the claim was disputed, he marched in, with a body of Raj troops, and took military possession of it.

Offended by this rough treatment of his relative, Scindia applied to Lord Amherst, complaining, with some show of justice, "that while his own hands were tied up by a treaty which did not permit him to interfere, the Rajah of Kolapore was allowed to deprive others of rights which were as good as his own, and thus virtually to set the paramount power at defiance." And now the non-interference system

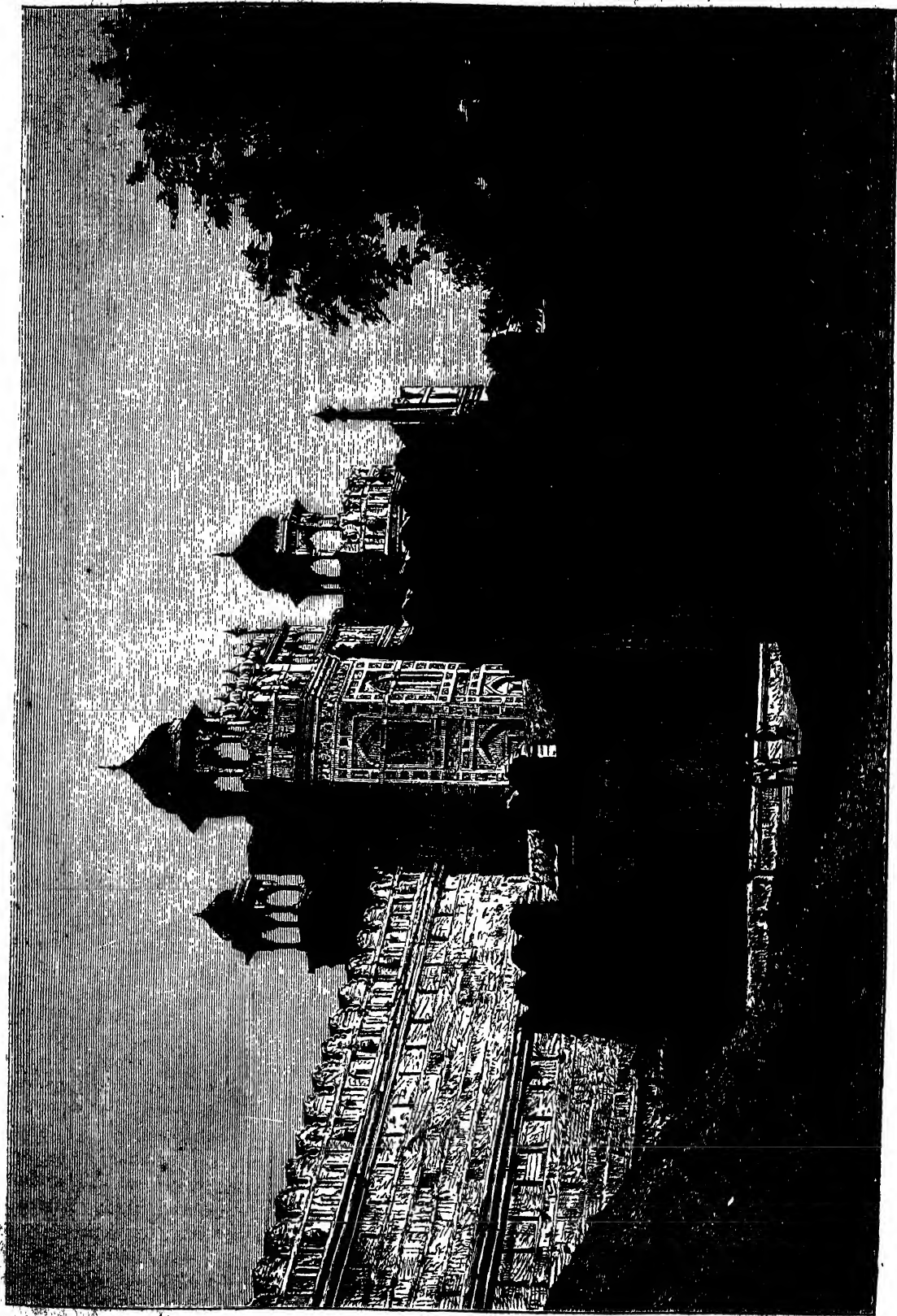
on the part of the British Government produced its usual baleful effect.

The Rajah of Kolapore, finding his first encroachment unheeded, next attacked a landholder, who held his fief partly under the Bombay Presidency and partly of the Rajah of Sattarah. Growing bolder, he next appeared, at the head of 6,000 horse and foot, with a brigade of guns, pillaging and levying tribute in all directions; till the Bombay authorities, who had displayed the greatest reluctance to interfere, were at last compelled to do so, and sent a body of troops against him, and then his cowardice became as manifest as his arrogance. He submitted at once, and made a treaty, by which "he renounced all claim to the territories which he had seized, agreed to pay compensation for the depredations he had committed, and became restricted to the employment of a limited number of troops."

The moment, however, that the forces left his vicinity he began to pursue his old course, on which it became necessary to curb him more stringently. Thus, British garrisons were placed in his forts of Kolapore and Panala, by which means he was deprived of the last semblance of independent sovereignty.

Towards the end of 1826, disturbances which took place in Cutch were encouraged by the Ameers of Scinde, who were ever on the watch for meditated conquest; but the dispatch of a strong force from Bombay, under Colonel Napier, and the brilliant close of the Burmese war, convinced the Ameers that, for the present, their views were hopeless; yet, in another quarter, there was a disturbance not so easily quelled, and which was ultimately to lead to results of the highest importance in history. The treaty which had been made with the Rajah of Bhurtpore, after Lord Lake had failed in four attempts, as we have related, to storm his capital, had been faithfully observed on both sides, and the relations between the two governments had long been of the most friendly description, though our disasters before that place had ever been a taunt to us by surly Mussulmans and sly Hindoos, as the well-known Indian anecdote records. "Is that the way to Hansi?" asked one of our officers of a Jaut agriculturist, a few years before the capture of the great fortress, yet to be recorded. "I cannot tell you," replied the Jaut, pointing in an opposite direction; "but that is *your* way to Bhurtpore."

In 1824, the reigning Rajah, Baldeo Sing, finding his health failing, was anxious to secure the possession to his son, Bulwunt Sing, whose legitimacy was indisputable, but whose chances of succession were rendered precarious by the well-



VIEW OF THE PRINCIPAL GATE OF THE PALACE OF THE PADISHAHS, DELHI.

known ambitious designs of his cousin, Durjan Sal. Hence, it occurred to the old rajah that the most effectual mode of preventing disputes was to place his son under the protection of the British Government.

To Sir David Ochterlony, the British Resident at Delhi, he applied with this view, and induced him to invest Bulwunt Sing with a *khelat*, or dress of honour, in recognition of his being the heir-apparent, and this ceremony was performed early in 1824; and about a year after, the question of the succession was opened up by the death of the old rajah. Bulwunt Sing, then in his sixth year, was immediately recognised as rajah, while his maternal uncle, Ram Ratan Sing, was to act as regent, and conduct the affairs of Bhurtpore. But this arrangement had not been in existence a month, when Durjan Sal fully justified all the suspicions of the late rajah, by suborning the state troops, at the head of whom he forced a passage into the citadel, slew the unoffending regent, and seized the person of the boy-rajah.

Resolute old Sir David Ochterlony held these proceedings to be equivalent to an usurpation of the supreme authority, and he instantly issued a proclamation to the Jauts, denouncing Durjan Sal as an usurper, and summoning all to support their lawful prince, whom he meant to uphold at the head of a British force. His firmness was effectual so far, that Durjan Sal, who fully intended to murder the boy-rajah, asserted that he had no

other object than to hold the regency during his minority. However plausible, this explanation was deemed unsatisfactory; and on his declining either to visit the British cantonments or send thither the young rajah, Sir David Ochterlony assembled a considerable force for the purpose of marching against Bhurtpore; but his movements were suddenly arrested by a mandate from Lord Amherst, condemning them in terms so severe and undeserved, that the veteran, who had served India so long, so faithfully, and so well, had no alternative but to resign.

Cut to the heart by the harsh and ungracious terms in which he was addressed, his health gave way, and he died at Meerut, on the 25th of July, 1825. He had served the Company for fifty years; and in their service there was no grander or more distinguished old soldier. Manifestations of regret and respect became strong and universal. Minute guns were fired from the batteries of Fort William, and in the official gazette a becoming acknowledgment announced the merits of the valued servant whom the state had lost. Lord Amherst, besides, in his private capacity, contributed a handsome sum to a subscription for a public testimonial to his memory.

The inhabitants of Calcutta subsequently did themselves and Sir David Ochterlony honour by erecting in their city the column which bears his name, and testifies the worth of the Hero of Maloun, as he has been appropriately named.

CHAPTER IV.

THE SIEGE OF BHURTPORE.—DURJAN SAL CAPTURED.—THE RAJAH RESTORED.

THE time soon came when that very same government which so ungraciously condemned the military preparations and the policy of the veteran Ochterlony, and gave him such unwarranted censure, had now to adopt the very measures they had condemned. Ochterlony had only resolved to draw the sword when all efforts at peaceful negotiation failed. Durjan Sal, while professedly aiming only at the regency, affected to be willing to bind himself by massive to retire so soon as the boy-rajah attained his majority; but there were many secret contingencies against that event ever taking place. The removal of an heir was never a difficult matter in India.

But Durjan's modest demand was supposed to be a mere pretence, as he was in high favour with all the leading chiefs among the Jauts, and a short time sufficed to give the case at Bhurtpore an aspect entirely new, as the moment that Durjan Sal learned that the military preparations against him had been abandoned, by order of Lord Amherst, he threw off the mask, ridiculed the position of regent, and claimed the throne of Bhurtpore as legal heir, asserting that he had been adopted by a previous rajah, and had a title preferable to the boy, Bulwunt Sing.

While putting forth this claim he showed plainly that he was prepared to enforce it by the sword.

and to Bhurtpore, military adventurers began to flock from all quarters to take service under his standard; but the apparent unanimity which at one time prevailed among the Jauts—a people whom Tod has foolishly endeavoured to identify with the ancient *Geta* and with the Jutes, the progenitors of the English*—had been destroyed by this time; for Madhoo Sing, a younger brother of Durjan Sal, suddenly unfurled a banner of his own, and made himself master of Deeg; and it now became obvious to Lord Amherst that the alternative lay between armed intervention and looking quietly on that congenial state of anarchy which would speedily extend to other states.

The question was submitted to Sir Charles Metcalfe, who had succeeded Sir David Ochterlony as Political Resident at Delhi, and has been described as “one of that band of able diplomatists who had received their first training under the Marquis of Wellesley, and had ever since been strenuous supporters of the Indian policy which that great statesman inaugurated;” and it was soon shown that his opinions coincided in the main with those of the ill-used Ochterlony.

“We are not bound by any positive engagement to the Bhurtpore state, nor by any claim on her part, but by our duty as supreme guardians of general tranquillity, law, and right, to maintain the right of Rajah Bulwunt Sing to the raj of Bhurtpore, and we cannot acknowledge any other pretender. This duty seems to me so imperative, that I do not attach any importance to the investiture of the young rajah in the presence of Sir David Ochterlony. We should have been equally bound without that ceremony, which, if we had not been under a pre-existing obligation to maintain the rightful succession, would not have pledged us to anything beyond acknowledgment.”

And now the same views were adopted by the Governor-General, who asserted his belief that, without direct interference on our part, there was a probability of very extended disturbances in the upper provinces, and that he was fully prepared to maintain, by force of arms, if necessary, the succession of young Bulwunt Sing to the raj of Bhurtpore; but in the first place, he resolved in Council, “that authority be conveyed to Sir Charles Theophilus Metcalfe to accomplish the above object by expostulation and remonstrance, and should these fail, by a resort to measures of force.”

By the 25th of November, 1825, Sir Charles Metcalfe, finding all expostulation vain, issued a proclamation, denouncing Durjan Sal as an usurper, and declaring the resolution of the British Govern-

ment to maintain the lawful prince by the presence of an army.

The command of the latter was assigned to the new leader of the forces in India, Lieutenant-General Lord (afterwards Viscount) Combermere, G.C.B., who, as Sir Stapleton Cotton, had seen a long career of brilliant services from the time when he accompanied the 6th Dragoon Guards to Flanders in 1793. After being at the Cape of Good Hope, under Sir Thomas Craig, he had fought in the memorable campaigns of 1797 and 1798 against Tippoo Sultan, at Malavelly and Seringapatam; and afterwards through the glorious war in the Peninsula, where he distinguished himself at the head of the cavalry on every occasion that presented itself, from the operations against Oporto to the crowning victory by the hill of Toulouse.

He now prepared to move against Bhurtpore, at the head of a force including two European regiments and six of native cavalry, three regiments of European and sixteen of native infantry, with strong brigades of horse and foot artillery and pioneers—in all 35,500 men of all ranks—with a train consisting of 160 pieces of cannon and mortars. Of these, fifty were for service in the field. Among the former the heaviest guns were only 24-pounders.

In Bhurtpore the garrison—chiefly Jauts, Rajpoots, and Afghans—was supposed to be quite equal in numbers to the army of Lord Combermere, which assembled in two columns at Agra and Madura (or Muttra); the former under Major-General Sir Jasper Nicolls, K.C.B., a veteran of the battles of Arguum and Corunna, of the Nepaulese and Pindaree wars; and the latter under Major-General Sir Thomas Reynell, Batt., who had served in Egypt, Flanders, and been wounded at Waterloo.

These columns began their march on the 7th and 10th of December respectively, and soon left the frontiers of Bhurtpore in their rear. On the 10th, Reynell, moving towards the north-west, kept considerably to the north of the fort, and concealed from view by an intervening forest, arrived in the vicinity of the Mottee Jheel, from which the wet ditch around the fort derived its supply of water. During the siege conducted by Lord Lake, the great ditches had been all filled by this extensive piece of water; and to prevent this being so again, detachments of our troops opened the sluices, while others cut the embankments—operations of exceeding difficulty, but of the first importance, as the great ditch continued dry. The extent of the fortress was so great that it could not be completely invested, but posts were placed all round it.

* “History of Rajasthan.”

As we have already referred elsewhere—in the account of Lord Lake's campaign—to the defences of Bhurtpore, it will suffice to remind the reader that it stands in a plain, the ground of which is somewhat broken towards the west; that it covered an area of five miles in circuit, was enclosed by a broad and deep ditch, from the inner side of which towered up a thick and lofty wall, constructed, according to Major Hough,* of clay hardened in the sun, flanked by thirty-five turreted bastions. High above the rest of the town rose the citadel, on a rocky height, girt by an enormous ditch, dug, with vast labour, to the depth of fifty, and width of 150 feet.

The first division of the army took up ground which, resting on the Mottee Jheel to the north-west, extended along the northern face; while the second division, connecting itself with the left of the former, was opposed to the eastern front. Unfortunately, thus the southern and western faces were left nearly open, but the chain of posts referred to, prevented alike the escape or reinforcement of the garrison. The points chosen for attack were a ravelin near the principal gateway on the north-eastern face, and a work on the eastern side, abutting out from the ramparts by a narrow neck, thus named the Long-necked Bastion.

On the 23rd December ground was broken, and eight eighteen-pounders and twenty mortars were got into position during the night, though under a heavy and well-directed fire from the enemy; and on the following day another battery for mortars was formed at Buldeo Sing's garden, and opened at dawn.

"I went down to the garden," wrote an officer of the Sirmoor Battalion, "to see the guns open, and never witnessed such an interesting scene in my life. The place was full of troops, and upwards of 2,000 men, in various uniforms, as busy as bees, were digging and filling baskets for the batteries. Engineers taking observations—guns roaring—shot flying all around and over us—all bustle, activity, and gaiety—the soldiers laughing and cracking their jokes, and running about quite in their element."

While the garrison fired briskly, their cavalry and infantry made many desultory attempts to interrupt the progress of the siege; but in proportion as the batteries were advanced, and established a fire that was overpowering, the enemy's guns were withdrawn from the outer works, and the besiegers suffered but little interruption, while for several days they rained a destructive shower of shot and shrapnel-shell from forty-eight battering-guns and thirty-six mortars.

* "Hist. of Brit. Mil. Exploits in India."

Some of these works were pushed so close to the walls that the enemy could be heard talking behind them. The mortar practice was splendid; and the officer quoted says:—"It was a beautiful sight to see them fall like so many stars at night, and then they exploded in the very centre of the fort."

On the 28th, an European deserter was seen working at the enemy's guns on the wall. On Christmas night, the fort was set on fire in several places, and the red flames were seen to shoot up from the very spots where the shells burst. On the night of the 30th December, the enemy conceived an idea that the town was about to be assaulted, and for about twenty minutes, 5,000 matchlockmen poured their fire over the walls at random, while ghastly blue lights were blazing in every direction. The night was one of intense darkness, yet all Bhurtpore and the sky above it appeared in flames. It was on fire in three places at once, and our shells were falling into it five or six at a time. Though our soldiers were determined to punish the garrison severely when they got in—many in memory of what Lord Lake's wounded suffered in the same place—the frightful shrieks and cries of the women and children, when our shells burst in the streets, excited much commiseration.*

One of our soldiers, who fell into the hands of Durjan Sal's people, was used with unnameable barbarity; and another wrote thus of it:—"The 14th and 59th are worked up to a pitch of perfect frenzy by the shocking spectacle of their unfortunate comrade who was so dreadfully mangled in the wood the other night, and have sworn to kill man, woman, and child, when they get inside. What a scene it will be! I dread it."†

The effect of the breaching-guns was unsatisfactory: the clay ramparts were so tough that they resisted the dint of cannon shot better than if they had been built of solid masonry, and though considerable breaches had been made, the engineers were unable to report them practicable; consequently, mining was resorted to. By the 8th of January, 1826, four mines were sprung, one of them under the cavalier and curtain of the north-eastern angle; and though the effect produced was far short of what had been anticipated, still the dilapidation showed what other efforts might achieve. On the 11th, 12th, and 16th, other mines were sprung—the last containing no less than 2,000 pounds of gunpowder—with terrific effect.

The garrison had made some attempts to countermine, and also to repair the vast breaches that yawned in their defences; but so tremendous was

* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1835.

† "Journal of the Siege."

the fire of the batteries that every effort proved vain, and the assault was fixed for the 18th—the signal for it to be the explosion of a mine under the north-east cavalier, charged with nearly a ton of powder.

The attacking columns were led by Major-Generals Reynell and Nicolls against the breaches, while the Jaugina gate was stormed by a column, under Lieutenant-Colonel Delanami, the whole assailing force being 11,000 bayonets. After a momentary pause and the tremendous explosion of the mine, which seemed to shoot a mountain of earth and stones heavenward, darkening all the air, with loud cheers the stormers rushed simultaneously to the points of attack, and in an incredibly short space of time, the colours of H.M.'s 14th and 59th Regiments were seen flying in two of the breaches, while the attack on the gate was equally successful. The enemy made a resolute defence, but it was unavailing. The gholandazees fell, nearly to a man, under the bayonets of our soldiers, defending their guns to the last desperate extremity.

Of the garrison, 14,000 were killed or wounded, including every chief of note. During the storm, great bodies of horse and foot attempted to escape by the western gates, but all were cut to pieces or captured by our cavalry. Among the latter was Durjan Sal, who, with his wife and two sons, were sent prisoners to Allahabad.

The British losses were 103 men and officers killed, and 466 wounded. The prize-money taken amounted to forty-eight lacs of rupees. The fall of Bhurtpore was hailed with joy at home, as contrasted with the failure of Lord Lake, in 1805; and for his exploit there, Lord Combermere was created a Viscount.

The total number of cannon-shot, case-shot, and shrapnel-shell fired at Bhurtpore, amounted to 61,446 rounds. Of the operations, an officer wrote thus:—"We find a great similarity of object between this siege and those of Hattrass and Antwerp, conducted by the trench. Both were citadels or forts, with strong garrisons, and both were well fortified after the modes of the several countries; for Hattrass had a good glacis and a ditch. It was required to occupy them, in both cases, with as much certainty of result as could be commanded, and with as little sacrifice of human life as could be obtained; and in neither case was the time taken at all an object if this could be secured by it. On both occasions, bombardment was chiefly depended upon, and in both cases the bombardment was, in fact, efficient in the success. For the siege of Antwerp there were 145 siege-pieces, viz.: fifty-nine guns, and eighty-six

mortars and howitzers. At the siege of Hattrass there was about half this number only, thus showing that the train there was not equal to that used for the attack of a secondary fortress in Europe." *

Among the guns found at Bhurtpore was one of great calibre and destructive power, popularly known among the besiegers by the absurd name of "sweet lips," taken by H.M. 14th, at the point of the bayonet. Another was an antique Scottish brass cannon, inscribed, "JACOBUS MENTEITH ME FECIT, EDINBURGH, ANNO DOM. 1642." It was found on the ramparts by Captain (afterwards Colonel) Lewis Carmichael, a Peninsular officer, then serving as aide-de-camp to Sir Jasper Nicolls, who, on the day before the storm, with six grenadiers of the 59th and four Ghoorkas, made a gallant dash into one of the breaches to reconnoitre it for the deadly work of the next day. The old Scottish cannon was given to him by the Governor-General and Council of India, and is now in the Museum of Antiquities at Edinburgh.

On the 19th of January Lord Combermere and Sir Charles Metcalfe entered the citadel, and on the 20th the young rajah was placed on his throne. The chief widow of the late rajah was nominated regent, and intrusted with the custody of the person of his young successor; while the government was given to two ministers, who were to rule under the control of a British Resident, specially appointed to reside at Bhurtpore. Durjan Sal's brother, Madhoo Sing, made his submission; surrendered Deeg, and retired into the British territories, there to live on a liberal pension.

Among many interesting objects taken at Bhurtpore, one of the most remarkable is the silver howdah of Durjan Sal, now in the museum of the East India Company. "It is made of thin plates of silver, very beautifully wrought, fixed on the exterior of a wooden framing. The bottom of the howdah is of open cane-work, and the sides are covered with crimson silk, of which material, also, are made the cushions. The canopy is of extremely ungainly form, but is very curious, from being in the shape of a crested bird with outstretched wings. The body, head, and outside of the wings are covered with silver, the underside of the latter being lined with flowered crimson silk." †

The capture of Bhurtpore put an end to those taunts in which the natives had been prone to indulge since the failure of Lord Lake, and its impregnability, so fondly believed in, was extinguished; but, as it was quite possible that it might

* "Journal of Artillery Operations before Bhurtpore," 1834.
† Beveridge's "India."

become a focus for discontented spirits at a future time, its fortifications were completely dismantled. "The expediency of this proceeding cannot be questioned; but since the British Government were professedly acting, not for themselves but for an ally, it sounds rather strange to hear that one of the first things they did, after reinstating him in his capital, was to render it incapable of defence."

CHAPTER V.

THE SUCCESSION OF ALVAR.—CLOSE OF LORD AMHERST'S ADMINISTRATION.

ALL was quiet now at Bhurtpore, but there was another quarter in which disturbances were likely to ensue. The Rajah of Alvar—a province of Upper Hindostan, some 3,000 square miles in extent, and comprising two districts, Mewat and Macheny—having died, left an illegitimate son and a nephew, both minors; and as usual, his succession was disputed by different partisans.

As neither seemed to have any decided sign of success, a compromise was effected. By this, Benec Sing, the nephew, became nominally rajah, while Bulwunt Sing, the son, was to be minister on attaining his majority, until which period a neighbouring nabob, Ahmed Buksh Khan, then under our protection, was to hold the office of guardian; but as the youths approached manhood, ambition fired them both, and civil war began to rage, for the inhabitants of the Mewat district are fierce in disposition, and even predatory in their habits.

In 1824, the nephew, Benec Sing, gained so decided an ascendancy that he became the real ruler; while the son, Bulwunt Sing, retired upon a jaghire. Soon after this a wanton attempt was made to murder Ahmed Buksh Khan; but, on the seizure of the assassin, the latter confessed that he had been secretly prompted to the deed by Mulha, the rajah's dewan and favourite, and other leading people at Alvar. Ahmed was, by his protection treaty, prohibited from resorting to arms, even for his own protection; hence he applied to the British authorities, who required that the guilty persons should be sent, under guard, to Delhi for trial.

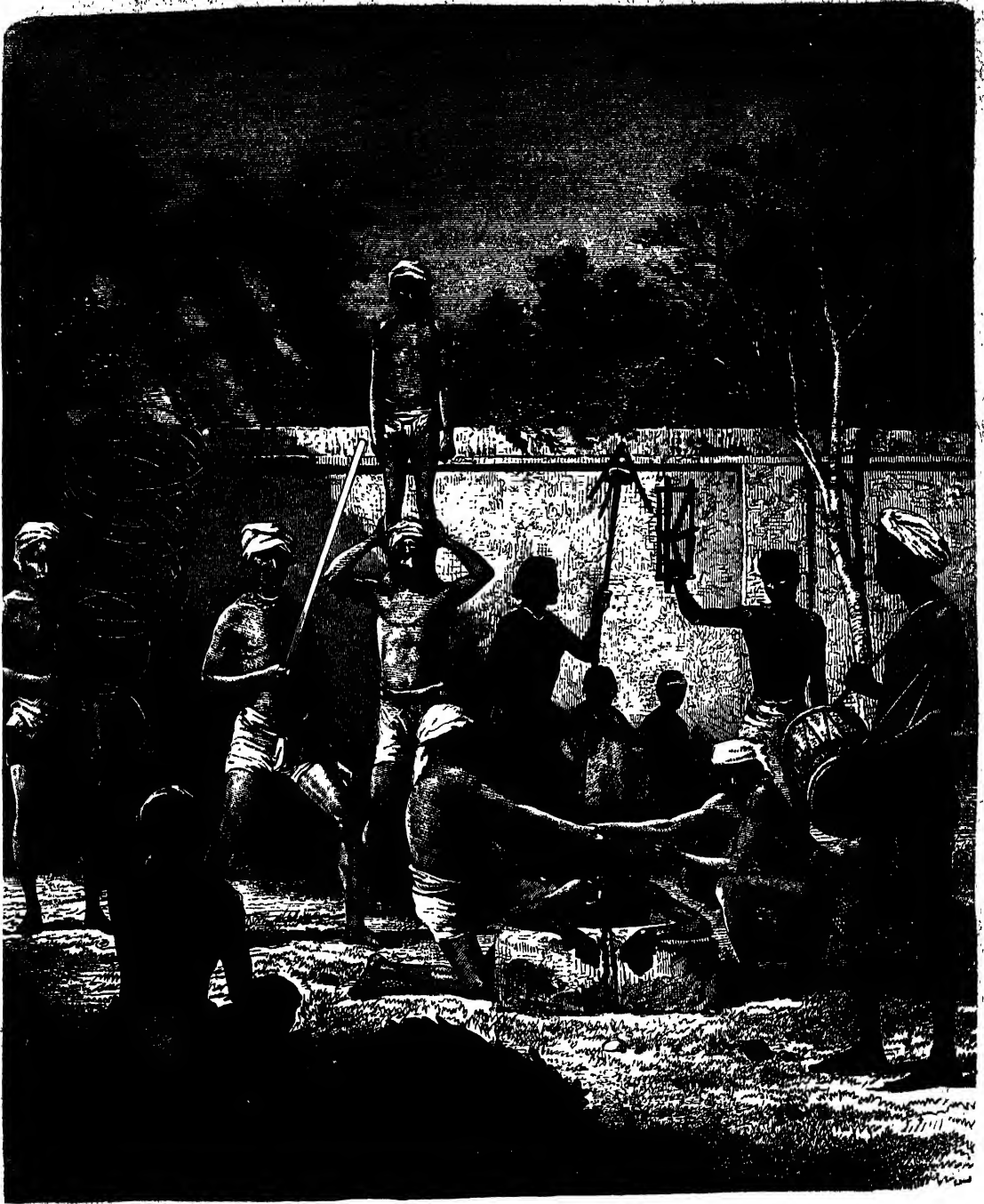
Bulwunt pretended to make them prisoners, but after a time he displayed his real views by taking Mulha into greater favour than ever; and when our Resident at Delhi remonstrated with him, he replied, not unnaturally, "That, as an independent prince, he alone was entitled to try his subjects for any crimes alleged to have been committed by them."

To show that he was determined to assert his independence, he proceeded to strengthen the fortifications of Alvar, his capital, which stands at the base of a steep hill, 1,200 feet in height, commanded by a strong fortress thereon. He also began to muster troops and enter into communication with all who were disaffected to British rule, and more especially with Durjan Sal, of Bhurtpore; till the fall of the latter, and the flight and captivity of its master, filled him with terror; and the instant he heard that Lord Amherst was about to dispatch troops against him, he made submission, by giving up the parties accused of attempting to murder the khan, for trial at Delhi, by releasing Bulwunt Sing from a prison into which he had cast him, and by ceding to him a large amount of territory.

Earl Amherst, finding all India quiet, now intimated his intention of resigning. "The progress of the British," says Auber, "had now reached a point when campaigns could no longer be required within the limits of India. Powerful enemies they had none. In 1827, all the chiefs of Malwa, with the Mahratta princes, sent missions to the government which they had once dreamed of destroying. Holkar was dead, and Scindia died in the following March, leaving no wreck of the dominion which had formerly spread over the largest provinces of Hindostan, and bearing no malice against the stately power which had deprived him of it. In the same year, also, the crown of Delhi was, in name, as it had long been in reality, transferred to the Company; while the title of the king, acknowledged until now, was extinguished. The British put an end to the folly of acknowledging themselves vassals to a man who had lost every attribute of power, except its rapacity and pride."*

In the beginning of August, 1826, the Governor-General set forth on a tour through the upper provinces.

* "British Power in India," vol. ii.



HINDOO JUGGLERS.

On reaching Cawnpore, on the 16th of November, he was visited by several native princes, and among them was Ghazee-ud-deen Hyder, the King of Oude, to return whose visit he went to Lucknow. During the friendly intercourse that now ensued, the king complained, in strong terms, of the extent

to which his royal authority was usurped by the British Resident, and added, that there was nothing in the affairs of Oude to justify it. The turbulence of some refractory lords on the frontiers had led to certain disturbances, but the whole kingdom was in a most prosperous condition, and the people were

contented and happy. The complaint of the king, if just, derived much additional importance from the fact that he was without court favourites of any kind, that he always fulfilled all his agreements, and had repeatedly, by liberal loans and advances, relieved the Calcutta treasury in times of serious embarrassment; but, notwithstanding all this, there was no change in the administration of Oude when he died in the October of 1827, and was succeeded by his eldest son, under the title of Nazir-ud-deen Hyder.

Earl Amherst, after visiting Agra and the young Rajah of Bhurtpore, proceeded to Delhi, where the envoys of the Rajpoot States met him; and he found himself obliged to discuss certain questions concerning precedence with the Mogul, who, in the midst of the humiliation related by Auber, would fain have exacted from the Governor-General of British India that homage which he claimed from him as his vassal. "The time for such mummery had passed away; and before the visit terminated, the King of Delhi was made perfectly aware that he must henceforth be contented to regard himself as only a stipendiary of the Company."

From the city of the Mogul, Earl Amherst travelled northward to Simla, in the protected Sikh territory, between the Sutlej and the Jumna, which thus, for the first time, became "the court sanatorium of Bengal," and a residence for the Governors-General of India; and while there, he established the most friendly relations with Runjeet Sing, the King of Lahore; and in the end of June, set out for Calcutta, on his homeward way.

On the 6th of July, the government of India lost one of its most distinguished servants in the person of old Sir Thomas Munro, the governor of Madras. The Burmese war prevented him from retiring from India so early as he wished; and sacrificing his personal wishes and convenience to the public service, he retained his office till its conclusion. At length, in 1827, he made every arrangement for returning to enjoy his well-earned honours, and what remained to him of life, among the mountains of his native land; and before his departure, he proceeded to pay a farewell visit to the people of the ceded districts, in whom he continued to feel a strong interest, but was attacked on the 5th of July with cholera, and expired on the following day at Puteecoodah, near Gooti, where he lies interred. An equestrian statue, by Chantrey, has been erected to his memory at Madras.

In 1827, by a general order, issued by Lord

* Ganga "Life of Sir T. Munro," 3 vols.

Combermere, all native soldiers who underwent the degrading punishment of flogging were to be discharged from the Company's service; but it was not intended that this order should extend to Christian drummers, and caused some mistakes and military disputes in 1836.

On the death of Dowlut Rao Scindia, in March, 1827, without any heir of his own body, and without having appointed a successor, in accordance with what was supposed to be his wish, a boy of eleven years of age, and distantly related to his family, was, with the sanction of Amherst's government, placed upon the throne, under the guardianship of Scindia's favourite wife, Baiza Bae, as regent; but in the September of the same year, it was resolved to expel from Gwalior, Maun Sing Rao Patunker (the governor of Powaghur), who had established himself there, and was in opposition to the government. Accordingly, Major Fielding was instructed by the Resident, Colonel Stewart, to march the whole of the late Scindia's Reformed Contingent for that purpose to Gwalior, to which we have already referred as one of the most famous of Indian forts.

A lofty rock starts suddenly out of the thickly-wooded valley of Gwalior, to the height of some hundred feet, surrounded by battlements a mile and a half in length, by about 300 yards in breadth, and overlooks the surrounding country. Early in December, Major Fielding was before this place, which Patunker was prepared to defend, at the head of 2,000 men, though the major acquainted him with the instructions he had received.

The order for a preconcerted attack, before three and four p.m. on the 11th, was issued by Fielding, who conducted that on the south-east in person. It consisted of two battalions of infantry, and 600 of the Contingent Cavalry, dismounted, and led by two native officers, named Churanajee and the Rissaldar Jour Buksh Rao, who dashed on in gallant style, and drove in the outposts of Patunker till they got close to the wall, under which they placed themselves. The battalions then advanced, and also effected a lodgment about dark.

The second column, led by Captain Stubbs, consisted of 400 of the contingent, two battalions, with their guns, and about 600 matchlock-men; the order to Stubbs was to dispossess Patunker of the substantial houses in the Sharaffa, and occupy them himself; but that officer was wounded while leading on a party of the British levy, and although the house against which he advanced was carried, the rest remained in possession of the enemy.

It was Major Fielding's intention to carry on ulterior operations from the west; thus, the troops

were established in their several positions, and arrangements were made for battering the inner wall through the outer, which was so completely taken in reverse as to be untenable. When everything around him was in Major Fielding's possession, and batteries were erected against his western wall to breach it, Patunker sent to request a cessation of hostilities, which was granted, the major saying: "I have only to advert to the nature of the dispute to account for my exercising a degree of forbearance which, in a mere military point of view, would be quite ridiculous."

Eventually, Maun Sing Rao, with his son and their followers, were permitted to evacuate Gwalior on the 15th of December, and theirs were the last shots fired during Lord Amherst's tenure of office.

In his report to Colonel Stewart, Major Fielding says:—"I have great pleasure in stating that the conduct of the contingent, both British levy and Mahrattas, was most gallant, and I should have derived great assistance from Captain Stubbs' intrepidity, had he not unfortunately been disabled at the very beginning. My loss, I am happy to say, is smaller than was expected from the nature of that service. There are fourteen of the contingent killed, and twenty-five wounded; and from what I have heard—not having yet a detailed report—the loss of the rest of the force falls short of 100 killed and wounded. Of Patunker's people, seventy-five were killed, including sixteen persons of consideration, and a proportionate number were wounded."*

But Maun Sing Patunker was to be the cause of fresh troubles in the following year.

The year 1827 was remarkable for the ravages committed by tigers in the province or kingdom of Hyderabad. Within twelve months, about three hundred persons, together with a vast number of cattle, sheep, and goats were devoured in the circle of seven villages, near Doongul. There is a great uniformity in the detail of these occurrences; but we may select one or two.†

A poor bunniah, or shopkeeper, when returning to Doongul from Hyderabad, whither he had gone to obtain some money that was owing him, when a little way beyond the cantonment of Secundrabad, overtook an armed peon, who was apparently a traveller in the same direction. After mutual inquiries, the peon told the bunniah that he was going to the same place; and, as the trader was glad to have a companion in a district of so much peril, he gave him a share of his food, and, as

they mutually spoke of their affairs, he was unwise enough to mention the object of his visit to Hyderabad, and the sum he had collected. This roused the cupidity of the peon, who made up his mind to kill the bunniah at a certain place, and possess himself of his money.

They proceeded together till they came to a spot where the ravages of one of those tigers were notorious, and then he attacked him. While they were struggling together, and the peon was endeavouring to draw his sword, the savage quadruped sprang from the jungle upon him, and carried him off bodily, "leaving his sword and shield, which the bunniah carried to Doongul as trophies of retributive justice in his favour. If such instances of retribution were frequent and regular, it would deter us from those crimes which are often committed in defiance of every real or fictitious terror with which our minds are inculcated. The next was a Brinjarra and his wife, who were lying together under a tree, when a tiger sprang up, and seized the woman by the head. The man, from mere impulse to save his wife, held her by the legs, and a struggle ensued between them, the tiger pulling her by the head and the man by the feet, until the issue, which could not be doubted, when the tiger carried off the woman. The man devoted himself to revenge her death, forsook his cattle and property, resigned them to his brother, offered his services to the tiger-killing party, and strayed about the jungles till he was heard of no more. A camel-driver, who had just been married, was bringing home his bride, when a tiger followed, and had them in view for a great part of the way to seize one of them. The bride having occasion to alight on the road, was instantly seized, and borne off by the tiger."*

The internal administration of Lord Amherst in India does not require any lengthened notice. A feeling averse to him had arisen in Britain, in consequence of the slow progress of the Burmese war, and the serious loss of life connected with it; but for this he was not alone to blame, as the officials of the Company at Calcutta have been reprehended, even by their warmest adherents, for a culpable ignorance of everything connected with the kingdom of Ava, its geography, and the habits of its people. Still, says a writer, it must be pleaded on their behalf, "the vast empire of which they were in charge, and the rapid revolutions and terrible wars which they had to assist in directing and bringing to a fortunate close. Lord Amherst was a diligent governor, a just and brave man. He dealt with good faith to native chiefs, with dignity and

* *Origin, &c., of Scindia's Contingent*; E. J. U. S. *Journal*, 1827, &c.

† *East Indian Government Gazette*, 1827.

* *Ibid.*

leniency to open enemies, with sagacity and caution to false friends. He watched over the prosperity of the army, and rewarded merit. He served his king, his country, and the East India Company with fidelity, and ruled numerous nations with an honest, intelligent, and benevolent concern for their good; but the government of this nobleman never received its due meed of praise."

In Bengal, which was more immediately under his superintendence, the different departments of state he left in pretty much the same condition as he found them; while in Madras and Bombay, the most important improvements are due to Mountstuart Elphinstone and Sir Thomas Munro. The leading objects of these distinguished Scotsmen were the adaptation of their reforms to the sentiments and feelings of the native population; and, in particular, to the employment of native agency wherever, with safety, it could be made honestly available, rather having it as a mere auxiliary to that of the Europeans.

The strife with Ava had greatly injured the finances of India, and more than ten millions sterling had been added to her debt. At the same time, when demands increased the revenues diminished, so as to leave, in 1827-28, a local deficit of more than a million.

"The account," says Beveridge, "comparing the close of Lord Amherst's administration with its commencement, stood as follows:—In 1822-23, revenue, £23,118,000; charge, £18,406,000. In 1827-28, revenue, £22,863,000; charge, £21,974,000. In 1822-23, debt, £29,888,000. In 1827-28, debt, £39,606,000. In financial prospect this was rather alarming; but, as the increased expenditure had been occasioned by wars that were happily terminated, there was ground to hope that, by careful economy the temporary embarrassment which had been produced would disappear."

It is certain, that but for the aid of the Madras Presidency, under Sir Thomas Munro, the Government of Bengal would never have carried on the war along the eastern shores of the bay and up the waters of the Irawaddi with success, whatever the fate of the strife might have been on the plains of Assam and in Arracan.

We have shown how many minor difficulties there were, arising out of local aversion to British rule or intervention, prevailing in Hindostan, the solution of which tested, and required, all the firmness and decision of Lord Amherst, and the speedy adjustment of which was not sufficiently observed. Petty wars and quarrels took place at

Molapore and elsewhere, which, if not promptly crushed, might have set all India in a flame.

"Lord Hastings," says Miss Martineau, "left the Company's revenue increased by £6,000,000 a year; and a considerable part of the increase was from the land, indicating the improved condition of the people who held it. He was succeeded by Lord Amherst, who had the Burmese war to manage, in the first instance; and the Mahratta and Pindaree wars had left behind them the difficulty dreaded by every pacific Governor-General—an unsettled and unorganised population of soldiers, whom it was scarcely possible to deal with, so as to satisfy at once themselves and their neighbours. The reforms already conceived, and even begun, had not yet checked abuses or remedied grievances; and there were real causes of disaffection, in the new provinces especially, which gave a most mischievous power to a marauding soldiery at the moment of finding its occupation gone. A vigorous rule was therefore necessary, and almost as much military demonstration as in warlike times. The improved revenue did not meet these calls, and much less the cost of the Burmese war; and a new loan and increased taxation marked the close of Lord Amherst's term. He left the territory in a peaceful state, with not a single fort standing out so long as Bhurtpore did against British authority, while the Company's territories were largely increased by the Burmese forfeitures. He won not a little European popularity by ascertaining the fate of the expedition of *La Perouse*, which had been as much a mystery as that of our Franklin Expedition ever was; and he came home in 1828, full of confidence that the reforms inaugurated by his predecessor, and promoted by himself, would retrieve all financial difficulties if they were duly taken in hand by his successor. For such an object the very best choice was made. If our raj were really over, as the deluded sepoys now suppose, and the last Briton were to leave India for ever, tradition would preserve the memory of Lord William Bentinck in the gratitude of the native population for centuries to come, though he over-ruled whatever was intolerably mischievous in their notions."*

In February, 1828, Earl Amherst, owing to the illness of a member of his family, sailed for Europe, in H.M.S. *Herald*, without waiting for the arrival of a successor; and in the interval, the government was administered by Mr. Butterworth Bayley, who succeeded to it as senior member of Council.

* "British India," 285.

CHAPTER VI.

THE JUGGLERS AND SNAKE-CHARMERS OF BRITISH INDIA.—THE GYPSIES.—KANGJARS AND CHAMARS.—
NAUTCH GIRLS AND TUMBLING WOMEN, ETC.

THE most startling feats and tricks in the world are those performed by the numerous professional jugglers of India; and these have been unvaried since the days of Baber, the descendant of Timour, in the sixteenth century. "I was frequently amused at the public wells and halting-places," says Forbes, "by the vanjarrahs and their families, and especially by the jugglers, who generally found out the encampments of these travelling merchants. There they spread their carpets, and performed feats of legerdemain superior to any I have seen in England; the most conspicuous was generally one of those women mentioned by Dr. Fryer, who hold nine gilded balls in play with their hands and feet, and the muscles of the arms and legs, for a long time together without letting them fall.*

Dr. Fryer saw a juggler "who swallowed a chain, such as our jacks have, and made it clink in his stomach; but on pulling it out it was not so pleasant to the ladies, for whose diversion it was brought. I was promised to see a fellow cast up his entrails by his mouth, stomach and all, showing them to the beholders; but this we excused." In his stead was brought a juggler who, by sheer dint of suction, so contracted the lower portion of his belly, that it had nothing left to support it, but fell on his loins, the midriff being forced into the thorax, "and the muscles of the abdomen as clearly marked out by the stiff tenons of the *linea alba* as by the most accurate dissection could be made apparent; he moving each row, like living columns, by turns."

The well-known sword feat is described at great length by Forbes. Seating himself, the juggler took the sword, which had a straight blade, about twenty-six inches in length and one in breadth, with edges and point blunted, and after oiling it, he introduced the point into his mouth, and pushed it gently down his throat until the hand of Forbes, who held the hilt, came in contact with his lips. "He then made a sign to me," says the narrator, "with one of his hands, to feel the point of the instrument between his breast and navel, which I could plainly do by bending him a little more backwards, and pressing my fingers on his stomach, he being a very thin and lean fellow."

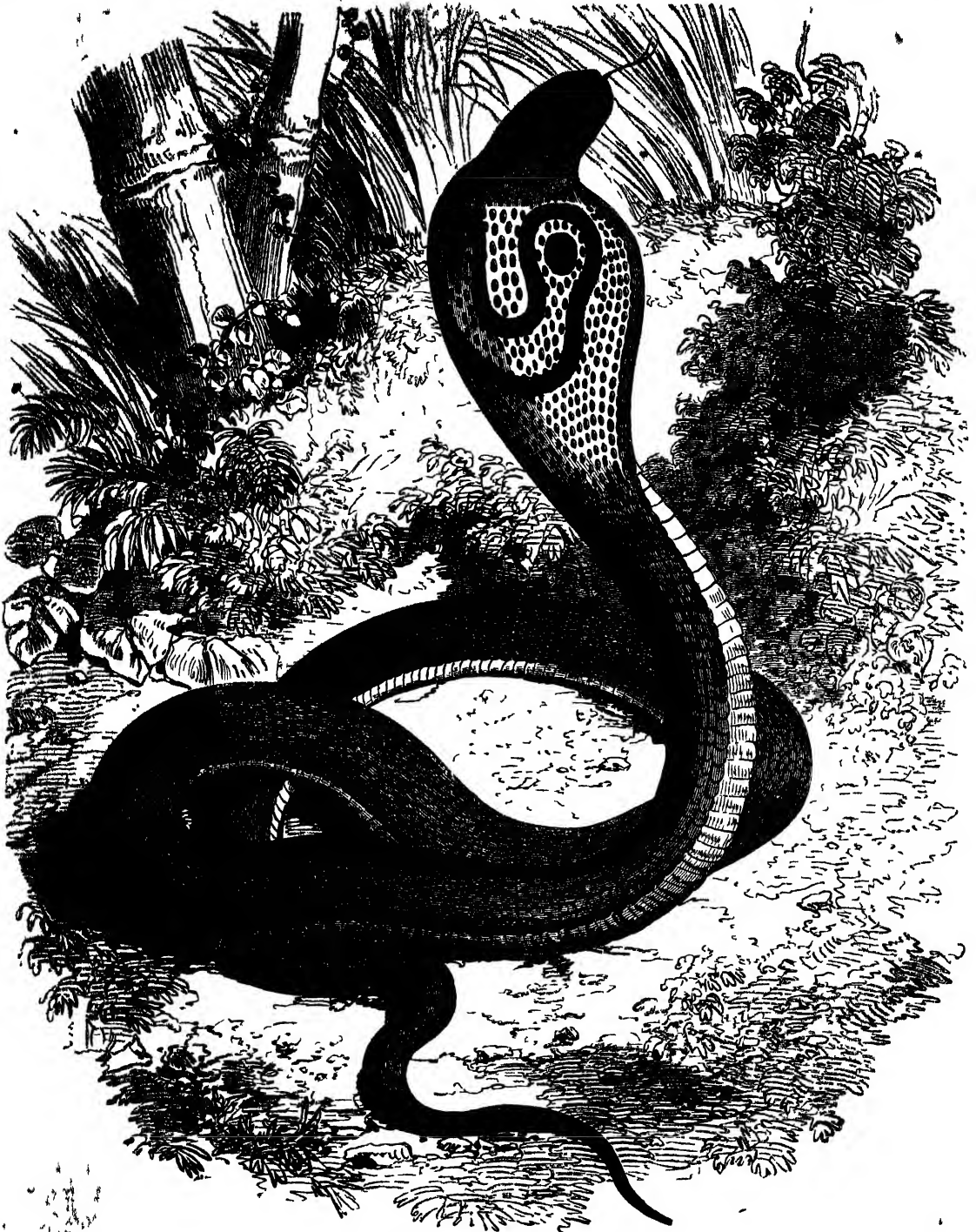
On taking his hand from the hilt, the juggler

* "Oriental Memoirs."

fixed to it a little machine, from which a firework that emitted blue flames encircled his head, and imparted a diabolical aspect to his brown face; and on withdrawing the blade, blood was seen on some parts of it, showing that its introduction was not effected without violence. To this feat he had been accustomed from his earliest years, having from the first been taught to introduce elastic instruments, till he came at last to swallow the iron sword in question. Forbes considers that "the great flexibility of their joints, the laxness of their fibres, and their temperate mode of life, render them capable of having considerable violence done to the fleshy parts of their bodies without any danger of the inflammation and other bad effects which would be produced in the irritable bodies of Europeans: witness their being whirled round on the point of a pole, suspended by a hook thrust into the fleshy part of their backs, without experiencing any fatal consequences. There is, therefore, no great wonder if, by long habit in stretching up their necks, they are able to bring the windings of the stomach into a straight line, or nearly so, and thereby slide down the sword into the latter organ without so much difficulty."

What is called the "bamboo-trick" is thus narrated by Dr. Norman Macleod:—

"While the tom-tom was beating and the pipe playing, the jugglers were singing all the time in low accents, smoothing a place in the gravel, three or four yards before us. Having thus prepared a bed for the plant to grow in, he took a basket and placed it over the prepared spot, and covered it with a thin blanket. The man did not wear a thread of clothing, except a strip round the loins. The time seemed to have come for the detective's eye. So, just as he was becoming earnest in his song, and while the tom-tom beat and the pipes shrilled more loudly, I stepped forward with becoming dignity, and begged him to bring it to me. The juggler cheerfully complied. I examined the basket; it was made of wicker-work. I then examined the cloth covering; it was thin—almost transparent—and certainly there was nothing concealed in it. I then fixed my eyes on his strip of clothing with such intentness that it was not possible it could have been touched without discovery, and I bade him go on. I felt perfectly sure, that the



THE COBRA DI CAIFLLO

trick could not succeed. Sitting down, he stretched his naked arms under the basket, singing and smiling as he did so; he then lifted the basket from off the ground, and behold, a green plant about a foot high!

Satisfied with our applause, he went on with his incantations. After having sat a little, to give his plant time to grow, he again lifted the basket, and the plant was two feet high. He asked us to stay a little longer, that we might taste the fruit. But on being assured by those who had

seen the trick performed before, that this result would be obtained, I confessed myself done, without the slightest notion how. I examined the ground, and found it was smooth and unturned. Apparently delighted with my surprise, the juggler stood up, laughing. One of his companions then chucked a pebble to him, which he put into his mouth. Immediately the same companion, walking backwards, drew forth a cord of silk, twenty yards or so in length. But this was not all the discharge; for the juggler, with his hands behind his back, threw forth from his mouth two decanter-stoppers, two shells, a spinning-top, and several other things, and followed by a long jet of fire."

Bruce tells us that at Madras he had seen a female juggler who, in his own house, had frequently converted a stone into a mango-tree. Taking a plain round pebble from the seashore, it was placed by her in an earthenware dish filled with earth, which was then watered and covered by a cloth. Those spirits by whose aid such wonders can be wrought are then invoked; the cloth was lifted, and a tiny green plant was seen just emerging from the earth. The latter was again watered, again covered, and the spirits were invoked anew. On the cloth being removed a second time, the little tree was found to be grown, and well-stocked with bright-coloured mangoes—the whole process occupying only a quarter of an hour; but it is nevertheless true, adds Bruce, that an English juggler can fry pancakes in any man's hat.*

The magical mango, or orange-tree, is one of the stock tricks of the Indian juggler; and Dr. Francis Buchanan tells us that in Canara, Mysore, and Malabar, this miracle may be witnessed any day

for twopence English; though, oddly, he does not seem to credit it himself.*

Another set of singular tricksters are the snake-charmers, who, according to Johnson, are low caste Hindoos, wonderfully clever in catching snakes, as well as in the practice of the art of legendmain. They pretend to draw them from their holes by a song, or the dull music of an instrument like an Irish bag-pipe, but he tells us this is all done

to deceive; for if ever a snake comes forth at the sounds given, it is certain to be a tame one, deprived of its venomous teeth, and put there for the purpose. These snake-charmers are very expert in the first branch of the trade—that of catching the snakes. They can discover the hole of the reptile with equal ease and certainty, and by digging into it, can seize the animal by the tail by one hand, and draw the body through the other with extreme rapidity, till the finger and thumb close round the neck. The venomous fangs are then extracted, and the creature has to commence its mysterious course of instruction.

The so-called

charmer is always provided with hot iron to sear the flesh in case of being bitten. "A man," says Johnson, "exhibited one of his dancing *cobra-dicapello*s before a large party. A boy about sixteen years old was teasing the reptile to make it bite him, which it actually did, and to some purpose, for in an hour after he died of the bite. The father of the boy was astonished, and protested that it could not be from the bite; that the snake had no venomous teeth, and that he and the boy had often been bitten by it before, without any bad effect. On examining the snake, it was found that the former fangs were replaced by new ones, then



BAYADRE OI MEWÂI.

* "Scenes and Sights in the East."

* "Tour through the South of India."

not far out of the jaw, but sufficient to bite the boy. The old man said he never saw or heard of such a circumstance before." *

There are several passages in Scripture, particularly in the 58th Psalm and the 8th chapter of Jeremiah, which allude to the commonly-received Indian idea that these reptiles may be rendered docile by certain charms; and Dr. Shaw tells us that the same idea prevails yet in Barbary. This serpent-charming may be but a remnant of that ancient form of serpent-worship, which once existed in many parts of the world, from some dim tradition of the serpents of Eden and Aaron's rod, which, as the *jormugandr* of Scandinavia, formed the emblem of eternity, as a circle, and is one of the wildest fictions of the Edda—

"That sea-snake, tremendous curled,
Whose monstrous circle guards the world."

A superstition, a remnant of which was the *Glain Neidr*, or adder-gem of the Welsh Druids, and is still to be found in Scotland, in the form of the knot-work on Celtic crosses and Highland dirk-hilts; while among the Romans, the circle was the emblem of eternity, and hence the rings bestowed to this day upon bishops and brides; and from this ancient, and once prevalent idea, it is that so many instances of serpent-worship are to be found in India, especially among the Nagas, on the south-eastern hills of Assam, who are the most savage of Indian tribes, and whose name is derived from *nag*, the Hindoo word for a serpent, being descendants of a Scythian horde called the Nagshuk, or snake-born race. They are athletic savages, whose faces and bodies are tattooed in a frightful manner, by pricking the juice of the belan-ut into the skin in a variety of fantastic and snakey figures. Negapatam, on the Malabar coast, still signifies the city of the serpents, which abound there; and Nieuhoff tells us that in his time the natives deemed it an inexpressible crime to kill one.

Almost every European stranger in India is still entertained by an exhibition of dancing snakes. The cobra-di-capello, or hooded serpent, is a beautiful reptile in appearance, but one of the most venomous of the coluber class, as its bite proves mortal in less than an hour. Near the head it has a curious hood, which it expands or contracts at pleasure, hence it is named the hooded snake; and of this genus are those which are carried in baskets throughout Hindostan, and thus procure a maintenance for a set of wanderers who play a few notes on a flageolet, to which the snakes are skilfully trained to keep time by a graceful motion

* "Sketches of Indian Field Sports."

of the head, erecting it about half their length from the ground, and apparently following the music with gentle curves, like the undulations of a swan's neck. At times, twenty of these reptiles may be seen dancing thus, with hundreds of natives looking on in admiration. When the music ceases, the snakes become motionless, and are instantly consigned to their baskets, on the plea that they might become perilous to the spectators. In Turkey, Arabs make the same exhibition of dancing snakes, but there are no cobras, such as those shown by the snake-charmers of British India.

Another wandering class in this remarkable land are the gipsies, who exist in considerable numbers, with all the characteristics which belong to that wild and singular race in every part of the world where they are to be found. "The affinity, nay, almost the identity of language, proves that the dark-eyed wanderers who frequent the lanes, commons, and heaths of England, sprang originally from Hindostan, and ought long since to have settled the dispute about their origin. Of course, the language of the English gipsy is much mixed and corrupted, but any one familiar with Hindostanee can converse with them in that idiom."

The gipsies of India are continually moving from place to place, following all kinds of avocations, save those which require hard labour. They seldom have houses or fixed habitations of any kind, and have but vague ideas of honesty. There are different varieties of the class in India, but the two principal divisions are the black and white gipsies—a difference which does not arise so much from complexion as from certain differences in their habits and pursuits.

Two other classes of the vagrant tribe are the Kangjars and Chamars. The former, says Montgomery Martin, prey upon birds of every kind, which they catch with a spike fastened to a long rod. They reject beef, but eat crocodiles, or whatever else comes in their way. The men gather peacocks' feathers for sale, and make ropes of the grass called sabe, which seem to be the principal exertions they make for procuring food. Their women are the only persons who tattoo the female Hindoos. They worship, he continues, a goddess called Bibi (a Persian word for lady), and a god named Porandhami. They offer sacrifices, and their priesthood is hereditary. They usually sleep in portable sheds, but in Patna they have a few shops, where they sell feathers and the grass ropes; the owners have some little capital, and employ their brethren to collect.*

* "Eastern India."

The latter tribe, the Chamars, usually frequent deserted caravanserais or old ruins, and are the lowest class of Hindoos. They are the preparers of leather, and as such are pariahs, outcasts under ban, and never permitted to abide in towns or villages. Yet they are too numerous to be all occupied in the preparation of leather, hence they act as porters and labourers more than any other class; but they cannot serve as soldiers. They eat curious and all kinds of unclean and unwholesome food, and have a degraded and inferior aspect. In the south of India they are generally regarded as a great fragment of the aboriginal race; but in the north, where they are less numerous, they do not betray so much personal inferiority, and when in good circumstances are personally quite equal to other Hindoos. Some of these northern Chamars have made good soldiers, and they fought well in the war against Tippoo; but no virtue, no bravery, no merit, can induce the higher or purer castes to associate with them.

"None are to pray, to sacrifice, to read, or to speak to the hapless men," says Forbes; "none are to be allied by friendship or by marriage, none to eat or drink with them; they are to be for ever excluded from all social connections, to wander over the earth, or to dwell at a distance from the pure, deserted by all good men and trusted by none; never to be received with affection nor trusted with kindness; but to be branded with infamy and shame, the curse of heaven, and the scorn and hatred of all men of pure caste."*

The Nautch girls of India, who, though called dancers, are rather pantomimists and posture-makers, form a distinct body in society, and have rights and immunities which are fully recognised and protected by the law. A Nautch is an indispensable part of every entertainment, and of the modesty of it accounts vary very much.

According to the missionary Rhenius, in 1817, he found the dancing of the girls at the yearly festival in Conjeveram indecent; but Mrs. Ellwood says nothing of this in her account of a Nautch at Bombay. "The girls," she says, "were magnificently but not tastefully dressed, in trowsers and petticoats so immensely full, that they would far exceed those of the most fashionable lady of the present day. . . . They were for a long time employed in coquettishly arranging their costume and in playing with their ankle ornaments. At length they began, not to dance, but to move gracefully and slowly, throwing their arms about, and waving their drapery, which they twisted around them or let fall in becoming folds,

whilst the musicians behind made a tremendous, though not inharmonious, noise with their *vinas*, which are like a guitar, consisting of a long board, on which are placed strings of iron, with hollow gourds at each end as sounding-boards, and their tom-toms, or small drums, beaten with the hand."

Many of these dancing girls are extremely delicate in their persons, soft in feature, and symmetrical in form; dedicated from childhood to this profession, they preserve in general a modesty and decency in their demeanour, and their dances require the utmost attention, from the dancers' ankles being hung with bells attached to their gold or silver anklets, which ring in concert with the music. Their motions are meant to express, with the song or music, love, hope, jealousy, and other passions, which can all be understood, even by those who are ignorant of Hindostanee. Another class of dancing girls, quite apart from these, are those who are dedicated to the Hindoo temples. These are supplied by their parents, who are taught that the presentation of a beautiful daughter to the Deity is highly acceptable. All these dancing girls, of every kind, are generally gorgeously attired, and their persons are redolent of perfume. They scent their long black hair with oil of cloves, attar of roses, and the like, and they frequently wear strongly-scented flowers.*

They are permitted to eat meat of every kind, except beef; they may even drink of spirituous liquors, and they frequently have accompanied Asiatic armies to the field. No ceremony or festival of any kind is considered complete without their presence, and every great temple has its own set of dancers attached to it. Dr. Buchanan tells us that there were 100 of these girls in Conjeveram in 1809. Their most graceful measure is one called "The Kite Dance," the air for which is slow, and to which they imitate the gestures of a person flying a kite. The attitudes incident to this are favourable to Oriental grace, while the upward direction of the eyes displays the finest features of the Nautch girls to the best advantage.

The tumbling women of India—a land where all kinds of professions have been carefully separated from each other since time immemorial—form a class quite distinct from the dancers. "The dancing girl, so long as she continues in the temple," says Bruce, "is professionally devoted to unchastity by religious sanction, for with the Hindoo race, whether they do well or do evil or whatever they do, they do all for the glory of their gods. On the other hand, the tumbling woman, so long as she continues one, is bound

* "Oriental Memoirs."

* Forbes.

to vestal purity. According to learned Indian authorities, the tumbling girl belongs to a distinct caste of her own." She is in a state of probation previously to becoming a dancer, and purity is strictly enjoined till their places can be supplied by other girls. Thus, says the writer before quoted, one of these females, in the course of a brief life, may pass through three conditions in the fulfilment of her mission: first, professional purity as a tumbler; religiously enjoined impurity while a dancer at the temple; and, thirdly, virtue again, when she becomes a wife, for (he adds) there is no instance on record of a dancing girl ever breaking her marriage vows.*

Before quitting this subject, we may here refer to the Fakirs, Dervishes, and other devotees of British India. It was about the year 1320 that many pious Hindoos, who lived upon charity, obtained a reputation for sanctity by the length of their pilgrimages and the severity of their penances. Among these were the Fakirs, who, through various means, of which cunning was not the least, held, and still hold, over the people, an almost unlimited influence. Those of the Senessee tribe are a set of mendicant philosophers, who live on the charity of all the other Hindoos. They are entirely nude, and many of them are robust and handsome men. They admit proselytes from other tribes, especially youths of intelligence, whom they take great pains to initiate in their mysteries. They often unite in large armed bodies, for pilgrimages to holy rivers and sacred temples; but as the provinces through which these assembled saints marched were always laid under contribution by them, they have often caused infinite trouble, and once put to rout the army of Aurungzebe; and we have related in its place how an army of these fell on Bengal in the days of Warren Hastings. They reside in holes or caves, or under banyan trees near the temples, and imagine that the expiation of their own sins and those of others consists in the most rigorous penances and mortifications. Some make a solemn vow to remain for life in one position; others undertake to drag heavy chains or cannon balls, or to crawl on their hands and knees for years upon years; while some will roll their bodies naked from the banks of the Indus to those of the Ganges, to collect money to build a temple, or to atone for sin.

Some will swing for life before a slow fire, with an Indian sun blazing daily overhead. "I have seen a man," says a writer, "who had made a vow to hold up his arms in a particular manner above his head, and never to suspend them until he had totally lost the power of using them. He was one

of the Gymnosophists, who wear no kind of covering, and seemed more like a wild beast than a man; his arms, from having been so long in one posture, were become withered and dried up, while his outstretched fingers, with nails of twenty years' growth, had the appearance of extraordinary horns; his hair, full of dust and never combed, hung over him in a savage manner, and, except in his erect position, there was nothing human about him.

I saw another of these devotees, who was one of the Phali worshippers of Siva, who, not content with wearing or adorning the symbol of that deity, had made a vow to fix every year a large iron ring into the most tender part of his body, and thereto to suspend a heavy chain, many yards long, to drag on the ground. I saw this extraordinary saint in the seventh year of his penance, when he had just put in the seventh ring, and the wound was then so tender and painful that he was obliged to carry the chain upon his shoulder till the orifice became more callous."

Stavorinus describes them as going entirely naked, and carrying a thick club, the end of which is wound round with rags of various colours, adding that they strew their hair, and often besmear their whole body with ashes, and are not allowed to marry. He saw a Fakir at Surat, who had imposed upon himself a silence of twelve years, ten of which had elapsed. He was covered with a white dust, made from the ordure of the sacred cow, and in his hut was a niche, containing a four-armed idol, carved out of black shining stone.* Tavernier mentions that some lay fire on their heads, and burn the scalp to the bone; and that some will bury themselves in a ditch for nine days, without tasting food or water. D'Herbelot reckons that in his time there were 800,000 Mohammedan Dervishes or Fakirs, and 1,200,000 idolatrous ones in India. The terrible exhibitions of self-torture are yearly becoming less: in many places they have disappeared. Hence devotees, stripped to the skin, are no longer seen rolling on the earth, even from Trichinopoly to the great hill temple of Pylna, a distance of a hundred miles; and we no more encounter the revolting spectacle of female devotees lying by the highway, covered with self-inflicted wounds; and the armed Senessee and other fanatical vagabonds, who were wont to traverse the country in perilous bands, varying from hundreds to thousands, adding assassination and pillage to every other conceivable crime, are now, thanks to British rule, to our numerous garrisons and well-ordered native police, only to be found in the history of the past.

* "Scenes and Sights in the East."

* "Voyage to the East Indies," vol. I.

CHAPTER VII.

LORD WILLIAM BENTINCK GOVERNOR-GENERAL.—THE BATTÀ DISPUTE.—FINANCIAL AND OTHER REFORMS.—THE OPIUM TRADE.

LORD AMHERST'S successor in the administration of India was Lieutenant-General William Cavendish Bentinck, G.C.B., Colonel of the 11th Light Dragoons, second son of William, Duke of Portland, during whose tenure of office the dreadful society known as the Thugs was suppressed, and the odious act of suttee was abolished. His former Indian career, as Governor of Madras, had not been a fortunate one, as he had been abruptly deprived of that office in 1807 by the Directors, whose resolution declared that, "although the zeal and integrity of the present governor, Lord William Bentinck, are deserving of the Court's approbation, yet, when they consider the unhappy events which have taken place at Vellore, and also other parts of his lordship's administration, which have come before them, the Court are of opinion that it is expedient, for the restoration of confidence in the Company's government, that Lord William Bentinck should be removed."

Of this measure he complained bitterly at the time, asserting the Vellore mutiny could in no way, directly or indirectly, be imputed to him. "I have been severely injured in my character and feelings," he continued. "For these injuries I ask reparation—if, indeed, any reparation can atone for feelings so deeply aggrieved, and a character so unjustly compromised in the eyes of the world. In complying with my demands, you will discharge, if I may venture to say so, what is due no less to your own honour than to mine."

The Court only responded by platitudes and verbose resolutions about the violation of caste, and ultimately by an apology which was by no means satisfactory; and though for some years afterwards he was employed by the king in the cabinet and field, his thoughts were ever turned to India, and his ambition was to tread its soil once more, with a higher office than that of which he had been deprived. In 1809, amid the operations incident to the battle of Corunna, at the head of the 42nd Highlanders and the 50th Regiment, he bore the brunt of the action on the right; in 1812 he commanded, with honour, the British army in Sicily, and in 1814 reduced Genoa. When the Marquis of Hastings retired he became a candidate for the office of Governor-General; and on the preference of Lord Amherst he did not allow his

claims to be forgotten, and when the office became again vacant he succeeded in obtaining it.

"The appointment was, in itself, a great triumph to Lord William Bentinck, as it was impossible to resist the inference that if he was fit to be Governor-General he ought not to have been dismissed as unfit to be Governor of Madras; but for a time it seemed doubtful if the appointment would prove more than a barren honour." He was appointed in July, 1827. In the following month the death of Canning caused a change of ministry. The latter might, had they chosen, have annulled the appointment, and put in force the royal right of recall; but they adopted the nobler course, and Lord William Bentinck was permitted to sail in February, 1828, and on the 4th of July assumed the government, on his arrival at Calcutta.

Though all kind of warfare had ceased, and the vast peninsula was—for the first time, perhaps, in its history—tranquil, Lord Bentinck found that he had to face circumstances calculated alike to test his nerve and judgment, in confirming the systems of reform already initiated in the government of India, when, on his arrival, the provisional authority, which had been exercised by Mr. Bayley, of course ceased. A large addition had been made to the debt of the country (the revenue of which was more than a million short of its expenditure), the result of the Burmese and Bhurtpore wars. In short, in the three years previous to his arrival, the public debt of India had swelled to £13,007,823 sterling,* and a policy of retrenchment became absolutely necessary. The Directors assumed that the scale of expenditure in 1823-24 was a fair standard, and Lord Bentinck was prepared to give practical effect to their view; and this he did to an extent calculated to excite the greatest discontent among all parts of the community, but more particularly the army. Hence murmurs were heard on all sides. More than one Governor-General had been instructed by the Court of Directors to abolish several military allowances, known as "batta," "half-batta," "tentage," and so forth; but all had shrunk from the odium and probable peril of doing so.

Lord Bentinck resolved to obey his orders, and those for "half-batta" were issued on the 9th of

* Finance Report, 1832.

November, 1828, under circumstances which must have made him doubt their expedience, as the rupees saved were not worth the good spirit which was sacrificed, and which some men think has never yet been properly recovered, while others are of opinion that the discontent culminated at last in the then remote Mutiny. Viscount Combermere, the Commander-in-chief, protested as strongly as he possibly could against it, and resigned office rather than enforce the order.

The two civil members of the Council, Sir Charles Metcalfe and Mr. W. B. Bayley, both men of ability and of ample Indian experience, were of opinion that the interests of the Company, and of the British empire there, could neither be saved nor served by means of petty savings.

The chief command of the Anglo-Indian army now devolved upon Major-General Sir Edward Barnes, who, in Spain, in France, and the field of Waterloo, had borne his part as a gallant soldier and able leader, and who, as Governor of Ceylon, had displayed considerable powers as a diplomatist; but when he resigned, in 1833, on the Government of Earl Grey and the Reform party seeming firmly established, Lord William Bentinck added the functions of Commander-in-chief to those of Governor-General.

Sir Charles Metcalfe requested that his sentiments concerning the half-batta should be recorded, in hope that the order might be rescinded. This eminent civilian gave it as his opinion, founded on twenty-eight years' experience, "that the allowances of officers on full batta are barely sufficient for their proper support in their several ranks, and do not admit of any reduction without great suffering." The whole amount of the actual saving, which excited such clamour and discontent, fell short of £20,000, and this could only be gained by curtailing the incomes of junior officers, whose

allowances were notoriously unequal to their support, and breaking what was called "the compact of 1801," which gave full batta as a compensation for those quarters which officers had been obliged to procure at their own expense, build, or purchase at a sale. The hardship of all this was laid before the Governor-General, who could but plead that he was acting in obedience to orders from Leadenhall Street; but the gentlemen there took higher ground, and after denouncing the tone

and tenor of the memorials as inconsistent with military subordination, ended the subject, so far as they were concerned, by declaring their resolution to have the order enforced. "No one was so great a sufferer by it as the Governor-General himself, since it subjected him, at the very commencement of his administration, to a degree of unpopularity of which he was never able afterwards to disencumber himself. The prejudice with which he had thus to struggle was not more unfortunate than it was unjust, since he had acted only ministerially in the matter, and rather in opposition to his own opinion than in accordance with it."

The only stations to which it was first made applicable were Dum-Dum, the great artillery barrack near Calcutta, Berhampore, Dinapore, Barrackpore, and Ghazipore. A much wider application was at first intended, and would have been applied; but the home authorities had a wholesome fear of that discontent which was spreading fast through the entire army.

Still further to carry out their views of retrenchment, Lord William Bentinck, soon after his arrival, appointed two committees, a civil and a military, each consisting of three members, one from each presidency, to sit at Calcutta, for the institution of a complete inquiry into every branch of the Indian service, in order to secure efficiency combined with economy. The military committee found that their work had already been done by



NAUCH GORI OF ULWAR.

the great reductions that had been made in the number of troops and their allowances, by means of which retrenchment had been made to the extent of more than a million sterling; but the civil committee succeeded, yet only after some years of assiduous labour, in effecting reductions to the amount of about half that sum—the total aggregate being £1,553,991.

While diminishing expenditure on one hand, it was equally necessary to obtain some positive increase of revenue on the other; and some of the methods employed were as follows:—

Under native Indian rule, officials in public establishments frequently obtained the privilege of exemption for their estates, or certain portions thereof, from government assessment. In most of these instances, the exemption was declared to be perpetual, but in actual practice it was never so, as one sovereign arbitrarily recalled or quietly disregarded the gifts or grants of his predecessor; and such was more particularly the case while the Mogul Government was in its zenith. When it became dismembered, exemptions were given by those who had no right to grant them, and, in many instances, forged documents were resorted to.

Thus, when the British Government first began to assess the land, as it gradually fell under their care and dominion, being quite in the dark and disposed to be lavishly liberal, they had laid it down as a rule of policy to recognise as valid, all exemptions of a date prior to their obtaining the *dewanee*; and thus many a grant, unsupported by a sufficient title, was admitted as valid, and this led to a vast increase of forged documents to evade the taxes; but for a time only. The concoction of these fictitious titles soon became so

apparent that the collectors were ordered to investigate them and decide upon their validity for being rent-free.

"If the decision was adverse, and confirmed by the Board of Revenue, the land was forthwith assessed at the usual rate, reserving to the proprietor a right of appeal to the ordinary court; but this enactment proved an imperfect remedy, and even caused some injustice.

The accumulation of undecided cases in the courts of law led to almost interminable delay, while a per-centage, allowed to the collectors on every case of resumption, converted them into interested parties, and so far deprived them of the character of impartial judges. To remedy these defects, a new regulation was made shortly before the arrival of Lord William Bentinck, and was afterwards carried into full effect with his concurrence. It empowered the Governor-General to appoint special commissioners to decide on all cases of appeal from the decision of the collectors in regard to exemptions, and removed from the collectors themselves the temptation

to partiality, by depriving them of the per-centage on resumption. Under this last enactment a considerable addition was made to the public revenue by the assessment of lands which had previously escaped."

The revenue derivable from opium was another means of adding to the government finances. The production of this drug in Bengal was a perfect monopoly, as no cultivator was permitted to grow it, save on account of the government, which made advances in anticipation of the crop, the whole of which was thus taken at a fixed rate per pound weight, and being afterwards sold at a high profit, caused a great increase to the revenue. During



WATER-CARRIERS OF CALCUTTA.

the turmoil in Central India, consequent on the Pindaree and Mahratta wars, the Bengal monopoly was not subjected to much competition from native states; yet when, in consequence of perfect peace, it became practicable, not only to raise opium with success throughout Malwah for home consumption, but to realise great profits by the transmission of the surplus to Kurrachee in Scinde, and from thence to the Portuguese settlements for final shipment to China, various measures were suggested to recover the diminished opium profits of the Company.

To prohibit the culture of the poppy in all districts, except those where the Company's monopoly was fully established, seemed the most effectual remedy, but the enforcement of such an enactment was impossible; hence a virtual monopoly could only be secured by coming into the market as purchasers, and thus buying so largely as to leave none in the hands of native dealers, save that which was necessary for home consumption. But, as might easily have been foreseen, the effect of this absurd arrangement was only to raise the price and increase the demand, while enlarging the area of cultivation; so the next device was to give the rulers of native states an interest in the repression of the opium traffic. With this view, the Company succeeded in binding most of them by treaty to restrict the culture of the poppy, in consideration of an annual sum paid them; which only led to opium smugglers moving about in well-armed bands, till the opium treaties became such a fertile source of disquietude as to make the British supremacy detested on one hand, while, on the other, they failed to accomplish the intended object. Holkar, and most of the lesser Rajahs of Malwah, tempted by the annual subsidy, entered into these treaties; but Scindia, and the Rajahs of Jeypore and Jodpore, flatly declined to do so. Thus there were vast tracts of country where the opium plant was freely cultivated, and where dealers in it could traffic without interruption; and the futility of all restriction is evinced by the fact that, while the export of opium from the Portuguese settlement of Damaun did not exceed 600 chests in 1821, in 1828 it exceeded 4,000.

Lord Amherst had early seen the expedience of rescinding treaties which proved only inoperative and oppressive. Mr. Bayley, during his brief tenure of office, proposed their abandonment, and to this option Lord William Bentinck gave effect after his arrival. To provide for the anticipated defalcation of revenue, it was proposed to return to the old negative plan of buying up the surplus produce; but a far wiser one was suggested by the

able Sir John Malcolm, when Governor of Bombay, and it was finally adopted by Lord William in Council, in July, 1830. "The transit of Malwah opium to Kurrachee, through a country, great part of which is absolutely a desert, was at once circuitous and expensive, whereas the transit to Bombay was short and easy. Founded on this difference, the new plan simply was to leave the culture of the poppy in Malwah free from all restrictions, except those which the native princes might be pleased to impose for their own benefit, and allow the opium to be transmitted for sale or export to Bombay, subject only to a payment per chest calculated not to exceed the additional expense which must have been incurred before it could have been conveyed to Kurrachee, and finally shipped at Damaun. This plan, which, if such a traffic is to be carried on at all, is the least objectionable that could be devised, is still in force."

In 1831 the opium passes gave a revenue of only £16,642; the following year it rose to £125,230, and it has been increasing every year since in the same proportion.

In one matter of proposed military reform the Governor-General caused unintended discontent about the end of his administration. By a general order he abolished flogging in the native army, though, in this matter, his powers did not extend to the royal troops: but this, however, he did not do until on the eve of leaving India. Doubts were entertained, even by those who were no advocates of this brutal and degrading punishment (which was first introduced into the British armies by William of Orange), and who reprobated the excess to which it was carried in those days, whether the entire mass of the Indian army, European as well as native, was not seriously injured by this regulation and distinction. For confinement, it has been said, the sepoys cared little, or for any other punishment which was substituted for the lash, in a land where cruelty and torture had long been a science: but the British soldier felt himself doubly degraded when he saw that, while he was amenable to such an expiation, the black soldier was sacred from it; and the frequent acts of insubordination that were shown in subsequent years, even before the great revolt of 1857, were not without creating a painful alarm in Britain, as well as in India; and these were attributed in good part to this one-sided reform of Lord William Bentinck.

In 1827, before Lord Amherst quitted India, nearly all the civil suits instituted throughout the Bengal provinces were decided by native judges. In consequence of this, Lord William Bentinck

extended the experiment which he has generally received the credit of having originated. By law, all British subjects were competent to serve on juries in India; custom had pronounced, however, that half-bloods were not British subjects, and law sanctioned the anomalous decision. It was for Lord Amherst to redress this grievance; and in 1826 it was decreed that "all good and sufficient residents" were competent to serve as jurors, with the restriction that Christian jurors alone could try Christians. The object of Lord William Bentinck was not so much to increase the number of native judges as to enlarge their jurisdiction, and improve their position by the augmentation of their salaries, thus adding to their respectability and affording some guarantee for their integrity.

In October, 1828, the conduct of Maun Sing Rao Patunker, whom we have mentioned before, called for the services of Scindia's Reformed Contingent. This restless individual was no sooner expelled from one place than he established himself in another; and now, instead of proceeding, as had been stipulated, to the Deccan, he had taken possession of Oojem, and set the Government at defiance. The contingent was ordered to assemble there, with the Gwalior detachment, the whole being under the command of Captain Stubbs, with some field and battering-guns. Maun Sing Rao was to be allowed a reasonable time to accept the terms offered to him, after which Captain Stubbs was to drive him out of Oojem. On the 20th of October he took up a position against that place, while posting parties about it to repress the plunderings of Patunker, which were carried on in a very atrocious manner, and the fighting began on the 28th by the

latter attacking some of these parties, who repulsed him. On the following day, Captain Stubbs gained possession of several large houses and a gateway that led to Patunker's position or residence, which was captured. On the 2nd of November, Captain Stubbs pushed forward his batteries, and harried Patunker so closely in Scindia's palace, that he was compelled to abandon it in the evening, and encamp on the opposite side of the river. In achieving this, the losses of Stubbs were 159 men. Patunker had pillaged the people of Oojem to the extent of one lac and 20,000 rupees, which he was now compelled to refund, and to surrender his fort of Powahghur; after which, Captain Stubbs, who received a gratuity of 25,000 rupees, marched his troops back to Gwalior and their former stations.*

The year 1829 saw Lord William Bentinck actively employed in visiting the eastern provinces of Bengal, and those along the eastern shore of the bay. This resulted in the abrogation of the separate government of Prince of Wales' Island, which, with its dependencies, was annexed to the government of Bengal. In this year he invited native gentlemen of all degrees to meet him, and make known their ideas on the condition of India; and this invitation was also extended to all European residents. He invited the suggestions of all who had any ideas to urge for the promotion of native industry, for the improvement of commerce by land and water, for the amendment of defects in existing establishments, the encouragement of education and diffusion of knowledge; in short, for the advancement of the general prosperity of the British empire in India.

CHAPTER VIII.

ABOLITION OF SUTTEE.—SUPPRESSION OF THE THUGS AND DACOITS.—THE OVERLAND ROUTE ESTABLISHED.

THE Court of Directors had long been anxious for the abolition of suttee—that revolting custom, practised by widows, of burning themselves alive with the bodies of their deceased husbands; and in 1824 they had declared their conviction of the practicability of putting down the barbarous superstition, "or at least of the safety with which it might be prohibited;" and to the firmness and humanity of Lord William Bentinck—in spite of the timidity and religious indifference of those

around him—this great reform must be attributed; yet one of the sources of the dreadful revolt of 1857 is to be found in the resentment which the abolition of the ancient custom awakened in the mind of heathen India, which never forgave this interposition on the side of humanity; and the Brahmin women, in whose interest it was made, never pardoned it.

They still believe that their condition is less

* "Services, &c., of Scindia's Contingent," 1839.

honourable since the abolition of suttee, and they have inculcated hostility and bitterness in consequence to their sons. When the laws of Menou were framed, this custom was unknown; for by them, it is expressly stated, the king is to be the guardian of all widows and unmarried women. Hence the suttee, though a very prevalent practice, was never universal, and the victim generally acted of her own free will, and often in opposition to the wishes of her relatives. But this was not always the case, especially among families of rank and great Brahmins, who were sometimes desirous of enhancing the solemnity of funeral rites by the fires of a suttee. This horrible rite, called so from *Suti*, the Sanscrit word for good, is described by the Greek writers, in the days of Alexander the Great, as an ancient custom in their time; and Diodorus Siculus relates an instance of one which occurred in the army of Eumenes, 300 years before the Christian era, and ascribes the zeal for this kind of immolation to the infamy which attached to those widows who refused to conform to the custom of burning themselves with the bodies of their dead husbands.

The Emperor Ackbar made a law to protect women from a fate so horrible, and personally saved the life of one lady, by riding some hundred miles to arrest the sacrifice. She was the daughter-in-law of the Rajah of Jodpore, who demanded of the reluctant widow this awful proof of her affection for his son; but the opportune arrival of Ackbar prevented the fire being kindled, to the joy and gratitude of the widow, and the disappointment of the rajah and the priests, who deemed that he had baffled an act of merit and holiness.

It is stated that, in the year 1817, no less than 705 widows underwent self-immolation in the Bengal Presidency alone. In 1821, during the administration of Hastings, a bold blow was struck at suttee, by arresting and trying for murder, before a British court of justice, a man who had assisted at one. The most minute account of a suttee is that given by the Dutch admiral Stavorinus, on the banks of the Ganges, in 1768. "What surprised me most," he says, "was the tranquillity of the woman, and the joy expressed by her relations and the spectators. The wretched victim, who beheld these preparations making for her cruel death, seemed to be less affected by it than we Europeans who were present." Colonel Wilks, and some others, though humane men, have treated the suppression of widow-burying as a direct interference with Hindoo religious liberty; and even Bishop Heber seems to have felt something of this.

* "Voyage to the East Indies."

Opinion, at first, was much divided on the subject, and the utmost length to which our highest authorities in India were disposed to go, was to make some experiment in the conquered and ceded provinces, where the practice was still rare, and, in the meantime, not to interfere with Bengal, where hundreds perished in the funeral pyres annually. Lord Amherst, while asserting that only a dread of evils infinitely greater should make us tolerate the barbarity for a single day, could only "recommend our trusting to the progress now making in the diffusion of knowledge among the natives for the gradual suppression of this detestable superstition."

His adherence to these views deprived him of the honour won by Lord William Bentinck, who, despising the alarm and clamour of those who upheld this abomination as meritorious and holy, had a regulation passed in Council on the 4th December, 1829, in which it was expressly declared that, after its promulgation, "all persons convicted of aiding and abetting in the sacrifice of a Hindoo widow, by burning or burying her alive, whether the sacrifice be voluntary on her part or not, shall be deemed guilty of culpable homicide, and shall be liable to punishment by fine or imprisonment, at the discretion of the Court of Circuit, according to the nature and circumstances of the case, and the degree of guilt established against the offender; nor shall it be held to be any plea in justification, that he or she was desired by the party sacrificed to assist in putting her to death."

None of the evils dreaded followed the proclamation of the new law, which, when the temper and nature of the Hindoos are considered, ought ever to be deemed an act of the highest moral courage. Even Sir Charles Metcalfe openly expressed his apprehensions of inflaming the fanaticism and passions of the multitude; and though the forebodings of all were gloomy, the opposition of the Hindoos only took the form of petitions, which were poured in upon the Governor-General and, as he proved inflexible, the petitioners carried their complaints before the Privy Council. "Here the singular spectacle was presented of Hindoo natives appearing as appellants in support of an abominable superstition, while the Court of Directors appeared as respondents. After a full discussion, the Privy Council set the question as to the legality of the abolition of suttee at rest by dismissing the appeal. Humanity thus gained a decided victory over blind superstition, and a lesson was furnished which, if succeeding Indian administrations had duly profited by it, would have been followed by many similar triumphs."

The abolition of female infanticide—a later reform,

to be treated of in its place—caused an equally great opposition to European rule on the part of the women of heathen India. The removal, by murder, of a portion of the females of a family, left a larger marriage-portion to the survivors than can now be afforded. Hence the women, forgetting that they might have perished but for the abolition of the atrocious custom, regard the British as having, by an intrusive philanthropy, deprived them of fortune, and impaired the social condition of the Hindoo people.

It was during the administration of Lord William Bentinck that Thuggee and Dacoitee were suppressed by the strong arm of British law; and in treating of the first of these, we open a page in the history of the world fearful beyond all the ordinary records of crime; but the doings and characteristics of this dreadful community will be best illustrated by a few authentic anecdotes concerning them.

The date of the rise of this secret society of stranglers cannot be assigned with accuracy. Originally they were Hindoos, and of one caste, by whom Mohammedans were first admitted as proselytes, after which, restrictions were removed in succession, till all castes, even the lowest Chandala, was admissible as a Thug. They traced their origin back to the time when gods dwelt on earth, and adduced the sculptures in the rock-hewn temples of Ellora—believed by them to have been the work of demons who knew the secrets of all the trades on earth—as evidences of their antiquity. There, they said, all the dread secrets of Thuggee are depicted; the inveigler sitting on the same mat with the unconscious traveller, worming out his secrets and winning his confidence—stranglers and their victim; then the body being dragged to the grave which the sexton Thug is digging with the holy pick-axe. These wretches believed that they pleased and propitiated heaven by the murder of their fellow-creatures and the appropriation of their goods. Their existence was quite unknown to our Government in the first years of the present century; but between 1826 and 1835, no less than 1,562 of them were apprehended and executed in different parts of British India. Many became approvers, and by their aid our officers were enabled to seize or break up the various bands.*

The legend of Thuggee is as follows:—In remote ages, a gigantic demon infested the world, devouring mankind. The goddess Kali, to rescue the entire human race from destruction, attacked the demon and cut him down; but from the blood that dropped there arose other demons, whereupon the goddess created two men, whom she provided

with handkerchiefs, and taught to strangle the brood of demons without shedding a drop of their blood. This being achieved, she then bade them to strangle men as they had strangled the demons. Hence the order of Thugs, who were at first aided by Kali in person, as she undertook to remove the bodies of the victims if her operations were not observed. A novice, however, on looking back, saw her devouring one of the corpses, which so displeased her, that, henceforth, they were left to dispose of the victims themselves.

So totally ignorant were our authorities of the existence of the Thugs, that when—soon after the storming of Seringapatam—a whole band were captured near Bangalore, they were punished as Dacoits, and no suspicion arose that they were anything else. The profession was hereditary, though strangers were from time to time initiated with great caution. After the process, in which *goor*, or coarse sugar, was used as a kind of sacrament—an embodiment of Kali herself—the beginner was allowed to try his “prentice hand” on the throat of some sleeping traveller. “Let any one taste that sugar!” exclaimed one, when about to die, “and he will be a Thug, though he know all the trades and have all the wealth in the land!” “My father made me taste that fatal *goor*,” said another, “when I was yet a mere boy, and were I to live a thousand years, I should never be able to follow any other trade.” A *roomal*, or handkerchief, properly noosed, was received with reverence by the assassin from the hands of the *guree*, or priest, who was entitled to the coin found in the pockets of the first victim, and a feast of comfits followed.

The implement of interment, a pick-axe, was an object of profound veneration among the Thugs; it was fabricated with care, and consecrated with many ceremonies. Assassinations were carried on thus:—They waited at the caravanserais, or lingered about the roads in quest of travellers. Emissaries were employed to collect information of their movements; children, and even handsome women, were initiated into their horrid practices, the object being to gain the confidence of the unwary to join their party, and then a favourable opportunity was taken to murder them. On a sudden, a strip of cloth, or an unfolded turban, was thrown round the neck of the unsuspecting stranger, and tightened till he was suffocated. Every one of his companions would be murdered in the same way, and the bodies, after being plundered, were carefully buried. Possessing the most ample means for gaining extensive information, they contrived to murder, in general, only those who were not likely to be inquired for or soon missed, and whose disappearance might

* “Illustration of the Hist. and Practice of the Thugs,” 1838.

be accounted for by voluntary flight. There was one soldier was a safe victim, as absence from his regiment would be attributed to desertion. A servant entrusted with money was another, the conclusion being, when no trace was found of him, that he had betrayed his trust and run away.

After death was complete, the sacred pick-axe was called into play. A hole, about three feet deep, received the unfortunate, who was then buried with his face downwards, his corpse being first mingled, to expedite decomposition and prevent its inflation, which, by causing fissures in the earth, might attract wild animals and reveal the body. If haste or alarm did not permit interment, it was flung into the nearest well or tank. An effusion of blood was avoided, and an impenetrable veil of darkness was thrown over all their atrocities.*

During the attack every possible precaution was taken to guard against surprise, scouts were placed in every direction, and should any one approach without being previously seen, the nearest of these would throw himself on the ground in a pretended fit, and thus attract attention till the body was concealed. If this failed, it was covered with a cloth, and the murderers feigned to be lamenting the death of a friend. They have been known to travel for days with the person they purposed to murder, till a sufficiently favourable opportunity occurred. If the booty obtained was not equal to their expectations, they often vented their rage in shamefully outraging the corpse. In some districts, where wells are numerous in the fields, the discovery of bodies—such as when, in 1810, thirty were found thus—led to the detection of several bands of Thugs, who never scrupled in the end to cut down or stab any one who escaped—which was but seldom—the grasp of the stranglers.

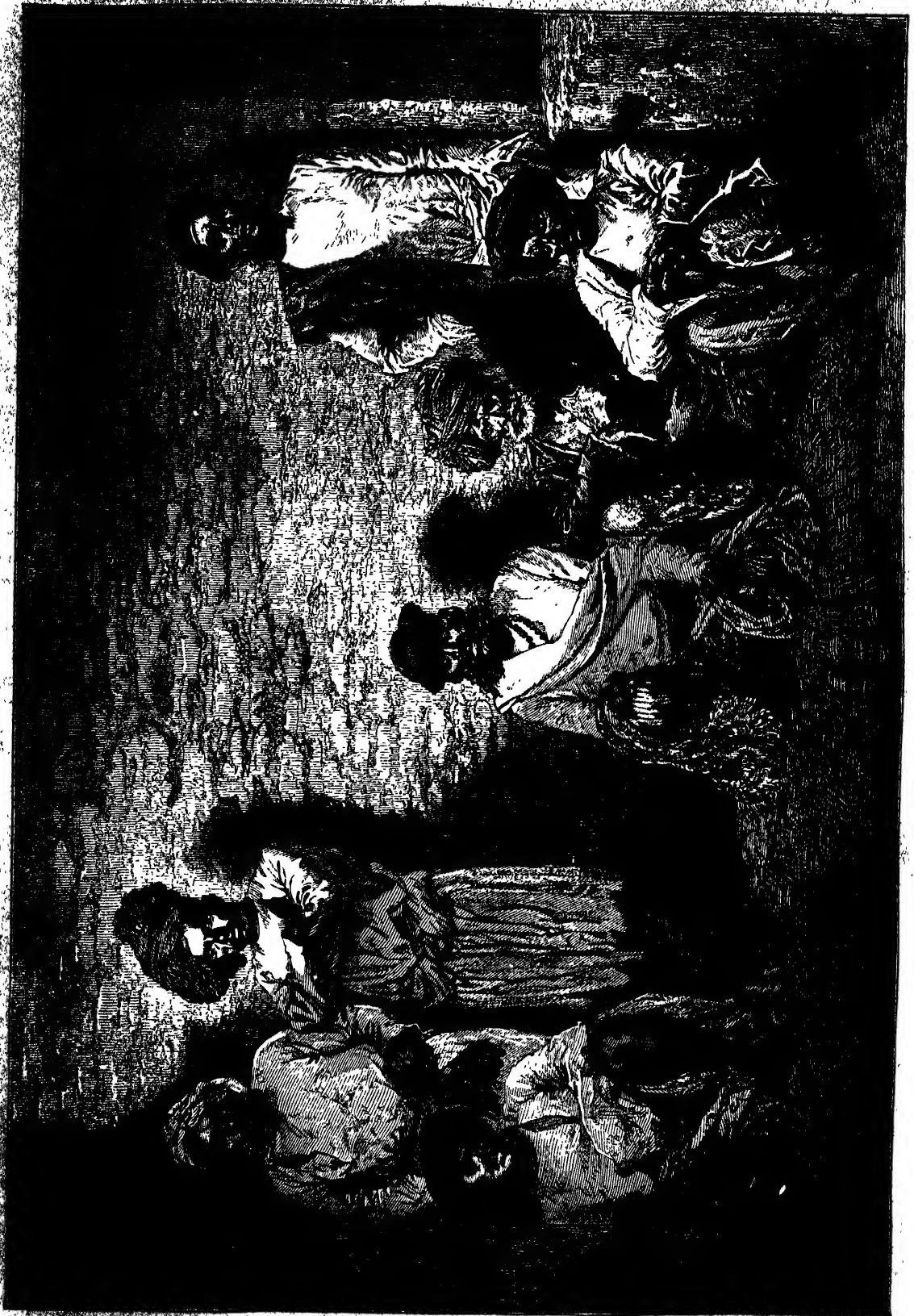
Though murder was the creed of these wretches, indiscriminate slaughter had some curious restrictions, and they deemed it unlucky to kill certain classes and castes; washerwomen and poets, oil vendors, musicians, smiths, carpenters, and Ganges boatmen, were among the protected classes, and as a rule, the Thugs never took the life of a woman, even with the temptation of great booty, and a Mussulman was procured to commit the deed. One, who turned informer, tells that the wife of temptation resisted by the aid of her cousin and I were with a gang of 150 Thugs, on an expedition through Rajpootana, thirteen years ago, when we met with a handmaid of the Rajah, Rajee Rao, on her way from Poonah to Cawnpore. We intended to kill her

and her followers, but we found her very beautiful; and after having her and her party three days within our grasp, and knowing that they had with them property to the value of a lac and a half of rupees, we let them all go. We had talked with her, and felt love towards her, for she was very beautiful." The booty gained was sometimes considerable, for cases are recorded in which sometimes twenty thousand rupees were taken by the extermination of a whole caravan of merchants. No estimate can be formed of victims who, during successive ages, fell by the hands of these secret murderers. We have said that, between the years 1826 and 1835, 1,562 Thugs were discovered and tried. "Taking the average time during which each of these Thugs had been employed in murdering to have been twenty years, and supposing that each man of a gang killed one victim a year, which is far below the truth, probably, the conclusion we must arrive at is that 1,000 to 1,500 people annually lost their lives by Thuggee."

Besides those who murdered on the roads or in Thug villages, where all the inhabitants were children of Kali, there was a separate branch of the same dreadful order, who plied their avocation on the principal rivers. They assumed the garb of boatmen, and had always the cleanest and most inviting passenger barges at the principal ghauts. Some of the gang, well dressed, and passing for respectable travellers, took to the adjacent roads, and drew customers to their confederates' boats, pretending to be going up or down the river, and begging those whom they met to join them in a boat and share the expense. Then the traveller might put off in a boat apparently well filled with passengers, every man of whom was a Thug!

When the boat had proceeded some distance, they would fall upon him, strangle him, break the spine to guard against resuscitation, and, after stripping the body, throw it into the water, and continue then course to the next ghaut as if nothing had happened. A cow was always a protection to a traveller, but this superstitious impediment was sometimes removed by artifice. A party of Thugs projected the murder of fourteen persons, some of whom were women; but the victims had with them a cow. They were persuaded to sell it to the Thugs, who bought and presented it to a Brahmin, and within a few days after, the whole party were strangled in quick succession. All these operations were facilitated by the adoption of words and signs taken from those of Masonry, and yet peculiar to that order. In Western India the subordinate Thugs and accomplices not only connived at these crimes, but assisted in

* "Illustration of the Hist. and Practice of the Thugs"



THUGS IN THE GAOL OF AUGSBURG.

the spoils; and even native bankers in Bombay and elsewhere did not scruple to make advances on the security of the pillage which they knew could be obtained only by murder, and some merchants regularly paid their visits to Thug villages, when the gangs engaged on distant expeditions were expected to return. The occupation of the Thug came to him, generally, by descent; and hence the domestic hearth of each was a school for murder. Yet, according to Dr. Spry, the eminent Scottish phrenologist, who examined many of their skulls, the alleged organ of destructiveness was not a predominant one among them.

To Captain Sleeman was assigned the task of punishing and suppressing these gangs as fast as they could be discovered. That officer organised a body of sepoy, as a detective police, at Saugor, the head-quarters of the commission. Arrests were then made; others were invited to turn approvers; link after link was added to the chain of evidence. The whole of the ghastly network was exposed, and amid the gangs the work of retributive death went on unsparingly; and in many instances they hanged themselves.* And now, happily, Thuggee, as an organised fraternity of assassins, no longer exists in British India.

Dacoitee, another form of crime that somewhat resembled it, and only less atrocious as simple robbery alone was contemplated, was, about the same time, nearly suppressed. The Dacoits formed an organised fraternity, and belonged to certain castes who deemed pillage their hereditary privilege and destiny, and to this they trained their children. When, after a number of imaginary religious observances, they deemed the omens were propitious, they set forth in gangs, variously disguised. Their principal weapon was a spear, the head of which they carried about them concealed, while they used the shaft as an ordinary walking-staff. Their object of attack was less travellers than some rich mansion, or perhaps a whole village, where, by previous inquiry, it was known that a rich booty might be won.

On arriving near it, they separated for a time to lift all suspicions; but night beheld them all together at some appointed rendezvous, from whence they would suddenly rush forth, with spears glittering and torches blazing. So well were their measures concerted that resistance was seldom possible, and thus the work of plunder went on with speed and without interruption. If any luckless victim attempted concealment, he only drew torture on himself. These midnight raids, com-

mitted as it were in defiance of the Government, could not remain unknown; but from the corruption of the native officials, who shared in the spoil, conviction could seldom be obtained, till, under the pressure of British rule, Dacoitee was compelled to succumb at last. Though it was understood to be sparing of bloodshed, it was at one time carried on with dreadful barbarity; and after tortures of the most excruciating kind had been employed, the victims were often hewn to fragments, and these were hung as bloody trophies on the nearest trees.

"Whether from natural temper or habit, cruelty in its most savage form does not seem to be viewed by the Hindoo with any great degree of abhorrence," says a writer. "When he cannot be charged as an actual participator in the crime, he speaks of it in a way which shows that he is neither indignant against him who commits it, nor feels much pity for him who suffers by it. The doctrine of fate, carried to its absurdest extreme, destroys all moral distinctions, and reconciles him to every abomination as soon as he gives it the name of destiny. With this for an excuse, the Dacoit robbed and the Thug murdered without any feeling of compunction. Human life, too, was regarded with comparative indifference, and the loss of it, therefore, did not seem an evil of any great magnitude. If extinguished by natural causes, there was little occasion for survivors to lament it; if taken away by violence, it was viewed as an expiation which some god had appointed; and thus the crime of murder was palliated by the imagination of some other crime of which it was presumed to be the just punishment. Suicide was, in the same way, not only justified, but deemed meritorious; and the wife who lost her husband was deluded into the belief that she could not survive him without dishonour."

In addition to suppressing these dreadful crimes against society—Suttee, Thuggee, and Dacoitee—Lord William Bentinck was a great friend to the diffusion of knowledge among the Hindoos, and under his auspices many schools were instituted in various parts of India, where the pupils were provided with translations of British works on history, geography, mechanics, and branches of useful knowledge; but in the year 1835 it was resolved that the English language should be the medium of instruction throughout the country; and since that time it has been studied at the more remote courts of Hindostan, and English tutors have been engaged to educate the sons of some of the rajahs. Runjeet Sing consented to the establishment of an English school at his

capital, Lahore, and many of the princes of Rajpootana followed his example.

One of the great events of the Bentinck administration was the successful application of steam to the voyage between Europe and India, and the subsequent establishment of the regular route by Egypt. A vessel called the *Enterprise*, under steam and canvas, had made the first trial voyage round the Cape of Good Hope, but not satisfactorily. She left Falmouth on the 16th of August, 1825, and did not reach Diamond Harbour, in the Hooghley, till the 7th of December. A route by the Euphrates to the Persian Gulf was then attempted, after which it was ascertained that the ancient line across the Isthmus of Suez, from the Mediterranean to the Red Sea, was entitled to the

preference; and an old work, written by Colonel James Capper, H.E.I.C.S.,* tells us that it was the most frequented route to India in ancient times, but after the discovery of the way round the Cape, was neglected by most European nations. The first steam voyage by this line was made by the *Hugh Lindsay*, which left Bombay on the 20th of March, 1830, and arrived at Suez on the 22nd of April, an interval of thirty-two days. In her next voyage she reduced the period to twenty-two days, and in 1836, the Government of Bombay congratulated the Court of Directors on the arrival of despatches from London in sixty-four days, and since then as is universally known, the distance has been performed in less than half of that time.

CHAPTER IX.

COLLISION BETWEEN THE GOVERNMENT AND SUPREME COURT AT BOMBAY—THE FANATICS OF SEYD AHMED—INSURRECTION AMONG THE KOLES, &c.

MANY of the improvements which had been so wisely introduced into the public departments of Bengal had been imitated at Bombay, the chief merit of which was due to Mountstuart Elphinstone, but it was singular that, under the able government of Sir John Malcolm, an attempt had been made to retrograde rather than advance. The blame of this lay neither with him nor his council, but with the judges of the Supreme Court, who entertained extravagant views of their jurisdiction, and sought to stretch it, as had been done at Calcutta in the days of Sir Elijah Impey.

At Bombay the law of England was then administered by a single judge, called a recorder, who performed his duties efficiently enough, but, as the supreme courts of the two other presidencies had each three judges, it was thought, for the sake of uniformity—other reason there was none—that Bombay should have an equal number. Hence, in 1823, the recorder's court was abolished, and a supreme one formed, to consist of a chief justice and two puisne justices. The jurisdiction possessed by this new court was precisely the same as that of the other two, and its powers were expressly restricted to British subjects in Bombay and its dependencies, or to natives who were in the service of the Company, or others who had agreed

in writing to refer their disputes to this tribunal. But now Sir Edward West, lately recorder, appointed chief justice, early manifested a resolution to make the most of his promotion, and with the concurrence of his colleagues, who were animated by the same ambition, advanced claims to a jurisdiction which Sir John Malcolm had to resist.

While admitting that their powers over the natives were limited by the Crown, they managed to discover flaws that gave them more extensive influence, particularly in one clause, by which they were to "have such jurisdiction and authority as our justices of the Court of King's Bench have, and lawfully exercise, within that part of Great Britain called England, as far as circumstances will admit." This they interpreted, or stretched, as meaning a jurisdiction over all the king's subjects, native or British, without distinction, and without reference to territorial limitation; and cases to test the validity of this occurred ere long.

A young Mahratta of distinction, named Moro Ragonath, had been left under the guardianship of his grand uncle, Pandurang Ramchunder, who resided at Poonah, and was a kinsman of Bajce Rao, the late Peishwa. Moro was married, and the relatives of his wife, for reasons of their

* "Observations on the Passage to India," 174.

own, were anxious to keep possession of his person, he, being but a youth, presented a petition to the new Supreme Court, setting forth that his life was in peril, and praying for a writ of *habeas corpus*. The three judges at this time were Sir Edward West, Sir Charles Harcourt Chambers, and Sir John Peter Grant, and they issued a writ to bring up Moro Ragonath from Poonah to Bombay; but, singularly enough, the first-named judge died on the 18th of August, 1828, the second on the 13th of the following October, and Sir John Peter Grant occupied the bench alone.

As the last who had taken his seat upon it, he might have pleaded the novelty of his position for avoiding a collision with those in power; but so far from complying with a request from the governor to delay, Grant (a Scottish advocate, and somewhat obstinate man) denounced this request as an interference with the course of justice, and actually made it the chief ground of a petition to the Crown, praying the king "to give such commands concerning the same as to your Majesty's royal wisdom shall seem meet, for the due vindication and protection of the dignity and lawful authority of your Majesty's Supreme Court of Judicature at Bombay."

The government had already declined to execute the writ of *habeas corpus*, on the ground that neither the grand-uncle nor the nephew were amenable to the Bombay Court, and had subsequently intimated their resolution not to permit writs of that nature to be issued in such instances, adding this: "The grounds upon which we act have exclusive reference to considerations of civil government and of state policy; but as our resolution cannot be altered until we receive the commands of those high authorities to which we are subject, we inform you of them; and we do most anxiously hope that the considerations we have stated may lead you to limit yourselves to those protests and appeals against our conduct, in the cases specified, that you may consider it your duty to make; as any other conduct must, for reasons already stated, prove deeply injurious to the public interests, and can, under the resolution taken and avowed by government, produce no result favourable to the immediate or the future establishment of the extended jurisdiction you have claimed."

So far from appeasing Sir John Peter Grant, this letter would seem simply to have exasperated him; and being now left to his own judgment, he adopted the extraordinary course of closing the court on the plea that it was useless to keep it open while he was powerless to enforce his decisions. On this, the governor immediately issued a

proclamation, announcing his resolution to protect the property and persons of the inhabitants of Bombay, and summoning all classes to assist him in alleviating the evils consequent to the act of Sir John Peter Grant. The latter now shrunk from the effects of his own impetuosity, and reopened the court, after keeping it closed from the 21st of April to the 17th of June, 1829. After an appeal had been made to the Privy Council, it was authoritatively and finally determined that the Supreme Court of Bombay had entirely mistaken the limits of its jurisdiction, "and with equal rashness and ignorance endeavoured to substitute mere tyranny for law."

About this time the government of Lord William Bentinck was troubled by the proceedings of a fanatical sect near Calcutta. It chanced that a Mohammedan, named Seyd Ahmed, formerly a sowar, or trooper, in the service of Ameer Khan, assumed the character of a religious reformer, and avowed his resolution to purge the religion of the Prophet from all the errors that had been engrafted on it by the followers of Ali. He gained many adherents, though a very illiterate man, and soon became strong enough in the Punjaub to excite the alarm of the Sikhs. He made a pilgrimage to Mecca, and on returning to the upper provinces by the way of Calcutta, proclaimed a holy war, and so many Mohammedans flocked to his standard from Delhi, Lucknow, and elsewhere, that he speedily found himself at the head of 40,000 men; but Runjeet Sing, at the head of his Sikhs, overthrew and slew him in battle in 1831. But the sect he had formed took deep root; and having lost none of its fanaticism by his death, soon rendered itself obnoxious to Mussulmans and Hindoos alike, stigmatising them both as impure. Fierce quarrels were provoked, and bloodshed ensued; and at a place called Baraset, near Calcutta, a colony of the sect fell into deadly feud with the rest of the inhabitants, and an open rupture took place.

In the quarrel the zemindars had taken part against these followers of Seyd Ahmed, and were charged before our magistrates with partiality; but too impatient to wait for justice being done, under the leadership of a fanatic, named Titoo Miya, they commenced a war against the Hindoos. Having polluted a temple by smearing it with the blood of the sacred cow, they proceeded to commit what were deemed more dreadful enormities, by maltreating the Brahmins, and forcing morsels of beef down their throats. After this they became bolder than ever; villages were pillaged and burned down, and all who resisted were mercilessly put to death, till two battalions of sepoy and some light

cavalry came up with them on a plain near the Hooghley.

There they had set up a stockade, behind which, after being driven from the field, they retired, and fought with desperate courage, till about 100 of them were shot down and 250 taken prisoners. The rest fled; and though they made several attempts to rally, they were too thoroughly intimidated to hazard a new conflict. To this day, however, the fanatics of Seyd Ahmed are numerous, among even the more educated Mohammedans in India; and would, had they the power, propagate their creed by force of arms.

In the end of the same year, 1829, serious disturbances occurred in Assam and those districts which had been recently conquered from the Burmese. A body of mountaineers, named the Singphos, having crossed the hills on the north-east, entered Assam early in 1830, to the number of 3,000, and before they could be checked, committed great outrages. According to Captain Neufville,* these Singphos are divided into twelve classes, which are named under their respective chiefs. They are a warlike people of Indo-China, occupying a tract of country 2,800 square miles in extent. Their religion appears to be a mixture of all the various idolatries and superstitions of the natives with whom they have intercourse. They have no fixed principles common to the whole tribe. Their ostensible worship is that of Gaudama, whose temples and priests are to be found in all their villages. They have nothing approaching to what we call government, each chief being independent. They are people of a tawny complexion, with a cunning expression of countenance, long lean bodies and short legs, and in disposition are cruel, implacable, and treacherous, practising polygamy without restraint.

On bursting into Assam, their chief objects seemed to be the acquisition of plunder and Assamese slaves, but when once stoutly encountered they were incapable of offering much resistance, being the merest savages and very rudely armed; their presence, however, gave encouragement to other disaffected tribes, and an attempt was made to surprise our station, at Rungpore, an extensive fortress, the ancient capital of Assam, situated on an island in the Dikhs. The bridge by which it is approached, and which was built ages ago, is a monument of the skill of the artificers who constructed it. The attempt did not succeed; but the frequent repetition of incursions at last induced government to attempt a more effectual remedy, by removing an ex-rajah in part of his territory, on

condition of his keeping peace in the district and paying us tribute.

Still further to the south, among the Kasya Hills, a revolt, accompanied by elements of dreadful outrage, developed itself. Nungklow, a place situated midway between Assam and Sylhet, had been obtained by the Company through an amicable treaty with Tirat Sing, who was said to be chief of the Kasyas. The intention was to convert it into a sanatory station, for which its climate and elevation—fully 5,000 feet above the level of the sea—seemed to adapt it well; and with this view, and to open up a communication between Sylhet and Assam, a series of roads were commenced across the mountains. The inhabitants, who began to have fears for their independence, resented these operations, and alleged that Tirat Sing, who was only one of many chiefs, had disposed of their common territory without authority to do so. The mountaineers resolved to regain by force the district we had acquired, and accordingly, in April, 1829, a large body of them, led by Tirat Sing (who acted, perhaps, under compulsion) and other chiefs, suddenly appeared in arms before Nungklow.

Lieutenants Beddington and Burlton, with a Mr. Bowman and four sepoy, who were the only persons of the Company's service there, having been invited to a conference, the first-named officer went without suspicion, but was barbarously murdered the moment he arrived; his companions, after gallantly defending themselves in a house they occupied, shared his fate, with the exception of one sepoy who effected his escape. There now ensued a desultory warfare, which lasted, with but little interruption, till the end of 1832, when the chiefs submitted, and Tirat Sing was sent as a prisoner of state to Dacca. In Genuah and Caçhar some of the native rulers attempted to revolt, but were more completely crushed; and in the Tenasserim provinces, some of the ousted Burmese governors, incited by the slenderness of the forces placed there for their protection, conspired to seize Tavoy and other towns, and were at first successful.

At Tavoy, a town celebrated for the manufacture of Burmese musical instruments, Mung-da, its former governor, appeared suddenly, at the head of 500 men, and driving out a detachment of the Madras Infantry, obtained possession of the town. At Mergue, possession was gained more easily, as an officer there, with fifty men, gave way without opposition. Reinforcements soon came, and all the places were re-taken; but tranquillity was doubtful, as the Governor of Martaban was known to be

at the bottom of their movements, and were with difficulty prevented from doubt have renewed them, and in fact, the capital which stands on the east bank of the Mahanuddy, and contains a fort and several Hindoo temples. Their weapons consisted



FAKIRS WOUNDING THEMSELVES

The next source of annoyance was an insurrection among the Koles. Towards the end of 1829, the people of that tribe inhabiting the district of Summerville, in the Gundwana—a place, though swampy, yet rich in rice, cotton, diamonds, and gold—were dissatisfied with their ranee, who had rendered herself unpopular by dismissing from office all the relatives of her late husband and conferring their places upon her own kindred, rose in

of bows, arrows, and battle-axes, with spears and swords, and a few matchlocks. In this petty campaign. Wheeler, afterwards a famous general in the catastrophe of the great Mutiny, served as a captain with the 34th B. N. Infantry.

Peace was, however, restored by the interference of the British agent and the deposition of the ranee, who had been so devoid of prudence; but this was barely achieved when a revolt, as much



VIEW OF SIMLA, WESTERN HIMALAYAS.

more formidable character, broke out among several small tributaries of the Company, occupying a wild district lying between the sources of the Nerbudda on the west, and the tracts of Burdwan and Midnapore on the east, usually known collectively as Chota Nagpore. Its aboriginal inhabitants consisted chiefly of wild Koles and Dangas, mere savages, whose subsistence was the chase, though, in some of the lower districts, agriculture was practised by a few of the native inhabitants, but more generally by some few settlers, brought by the zemindars of Bengal and Behar. Naturally enough, the latter were viewed with jealousy by the Koles, many of whom had been dispossessed of the soil to make way for them; and the more regular form of government which the Company was introducing was viewed with equal mistrust by the chiefs, who found their old wild freedom of action impaired thereby; thus, a universal revolt of all classes took place, and on the emigrants fell the first brunt of its fury. A thousand of them were barbarously murdered, their goods were pillaged, their villages burned, and fields laid waste.

The insurgents were in arms in thousands before any strong measures were taken to crush them; and this was the more regretted, because they were ultimately put down with ease.

In Madras there were also serious disturbances. It had been considered questionable policy in the Marquis of Wellesley re-establishing the ancient kingdom of Mysore; but the evils apprehended took no solid form while the administration was conducted by Purnea, under whom the country attained undoubted prosperity; but on his retirement in 1811, a change took place, and the rajah, determined to be his own master, conferred the office of dewan on Linga Raj, a creature of his own, but destitute of either influence or talent. Large sums from the revenue were now bestowed on the Brahmins, who took every advantage of his superstitious veneration for them; and, otherwise, the treasures which the thrift of Purnea had accumulated, were squandered on worthless parasites. Foreseeing the consequences of this, the Madras

Council repeatedly remonstrated with the rajah; and to enforce reform, Sir Thomas Munro paid him a visit in 1825. Great promises were made, but the moment he took his departure, the misgovernment became worse than ever.

The collectors, persisting in their over-exactions, were resisted, and sometimes murdered by the infuriated ryots; a spirit of insurrection was thus spreading fast, and this, while the rajah looked helplessly on, threatened to carry mischief into British territory.

Revolt took an organised form in the district of Bednore, on the east side of the Western Ghauts, where Ram Rao, one of the rajah's creatures, had been guilty of the greatest oppression. By 1830 the rising was general, and after various attempts at accommodation had failed, an appeal to the musket became necessary. The Mysore troops were marched to Bednore in force, accompanied by three battalions of Madras Infantry and two companies of H.M. 62nd Regiment, with a squadron of native cavalry.

The ryots seemed well-disposed to return to their homes, on the promise of having their grievances redressed; but a new element of strife appeared in the form of a rival rajah, who, though a pretender, declared himself to be the lineal descendant of the ancient princes of Bednore. Encouraged thus, the revolt became so formidable, that Colonel Evans, the officer in command of the troops sent for its suppression, was compelled to fall back on Sheemoga. He advanced again, with better success; and after large arrears of revenue had been remitted, and other necessary concessions made, peace was fully restored. But such had been the extent of the danger, that it was necessary to take precautions for the future; and under a clause of the treaty of 1799, which empowered the Company in certain emergencies to assume the government, the luckless rajah was deprived of all political power, and converted into a mere pensioner; while the administration of Mysore was placed completely under a British Commission and four assistants.

CHAPTER X.

THE REVOLUTION IN COORG.—BURNES' EMBASSY TO CABUL.—LORD BENTINCK'S MEASURES IN REGARD TO THE NATIVE STATES.

THE Rajah of Coorg at this time, Vira Sing Rajendra by name, was a somewhat degenerate descendant of that prince who had so heroically maintained his independence against Hyder and Tippoo. By some, Vira Rajendra has justly been called a mere barbarian; yet a writer from Bangalore, in 1815, tells us that he was extremely fond of the English, was hospitable, that he had brought the manufacture of swords and fire-arms to the greatest perfection, and that a "Joe Manton," made by him at Coorg, equalled in perfection anything turned out by the celebrated gunsmith of that name.* He was accustomed to give way to fits of blind fury; thus, often the officers of his army and the members of his court were ordered off for summary execution. Even his own kindred were not spared; and out of one pit, in a jungle (when, at a subsequent period, his atrocities were inquired into), there were dug the bodies of seventeen of his victims, among whom were his own aunt, the child of his sister, and the brother of her husband.

To this cruelty he added other passions equally detestable; and his sister, Dewah Amajee, escaping with difficulty from his brutality, took refuge with her husband in British territory. Prior to all this he had been augmenting his troops, and manifesting such decided hostility to the Company, that, on the latter protecting the two fugitives, he threw off all restraint, and bluntly refused to listen to any proposal for the peaceful adjustment of certain misunderstandings produced by his misconduct, unless these two unhappy creatures were surrendered, that he might put them to death. As this terrible demand could not be complied with, in the April of 1834 Lord William Bentinck issued a proclamation, declaring that the conduct of the Rajah of Coorg had rendered him alike unworthy of our friendship and protection; that he had received and encouraged our enemies; assumed an attitude of hostility; addressed to the Council at Fort St. George and the Governor-General letters replete with insult and invective; for which, and for many other reasons, he was no longer to be considered Rajah of Coorg; and that the army which was about to march against him "would respect the property and persons of all who were peaceably disposed; and such a system of government would

be established as might seem best calculated to secure the happiness of the people."

The whole plan of the intended campaign was framed by Major Steele, who had been Quarter-master-General of the Madras troops in Ava, and it was most judicious. The main body was to attack in two columns, one led by Brigadier Lindsay, the other under Colonel Stuart; Colonel Foulis was to attack from the westward, Colonel Waugh from the north, and Colonel Jackson was to make a reconnaissance from the north-west. The head-quarters assembled at Periapatam, and the rapidity of their movements was such that the rajah sent flags of truce to all the columns, and thought of nothing but giving in.*

The obstacles presented by the nature of the country were more formidable than the weapons of the enemy, and in more than one instance, where proper advantage was taken of them, the invaders were not only unable to advance, but were compelled to fall back; and this was more particularly the case with the divisions advancing from the north and west. In one of these affairs, a brave and noble old officer, Lieutenant-Colonel Mill, of H.M. 55th Foot, was slain; and a mistake was made by attacking in front a stockade at Bukh, which was ultimately carried by a more powerful assaulting force, under Major Bird, of the 31st Native Light Infantry, but not without loss. An officer who was present thus details the attack:—

"Heriot, about this time, received his first wound: being shot through the right leg, he fell, and was carried to the rear by his own men on their shoulders, when he received a ball through his left arm, which was laying across his breast. Colonel Mill was, towards the termination of the combat, shot through his lungs, the ball passing clean through his body. He sunk his head on his chest, called for two or three of his officers by name, spoke to them, and died. Young Babington, of the 31st Light Infantry, who during the day had displayed the highest zeal and intrepidity, was shot near the barrier-gate by a jingall ball entering his breast and passing through his body. He fell, mortally wounded, near to his commanding officer, Major Bird, with whom he held some conversation, grasped his hand, and panting for breath, said,

* *Scots Mag.*, 1816.

* *Bengal Hurkaru*, 1834.

'Farewell ; I am dying !' He expired in a few minutes."

By this time there was a roar of musketry all round the stockade, which was a magnificently-constructed work of great strength, having a deep ditch and powerful barrier-gate. "How the major himself escaped," continues the narrative, "is almost miraculous, exposed as he was to the whole brunt of this murderous fire. Surrounded by the dying and the dead, he had for nearly four hours escaped unhurt ; at length he received a severe blow on the forehead, which knocked him over—happily, it was a spent ball, and occasioned him no material injury. Lieutenant Robertson, who commanded the grenadiers of the 55th, received a charge of small pieces of iron in his right hip. Captain Warren, of the 55th, was wounded in the leg ; ball extracted. The unexampled loss of H.M. 55th was distressing : thirty-one killed and sixty-eight wounded, out of 250 who were engaged. The loss of our own corps, the (31st) Light Infantry, was also considerable."*

On the 6th of April, Brigadier Lindsay's column took possession of the town and fortress of Mercara, with the palace of the rajah, who in four days surrendered unconditionally, and, after a short imprisonment, received better terms than he merited, and was sent to Benares, in possession of an ample pension. Linga, the dewan, was found in a jungle, hanging by the neck from a tree. In establishing the future government, the heads of villages were assembled at Mercara, and invited by Brigadier Lindsay to give free utterance to their wishes ; though there could have been little sincerity in this apparently frank proceeding, as the complete annexation of Coorg had been previously determined on. The formal assent of the village chiefs was easily won, and Coorg has ever since remained an integral portion of the British Empire, conformably to a minute drawn up at Bangalore.

Prior to these events, Lord William Bentinck made a tour of the upper provinces. Leaving Simla in October, 1831, he entered the territories of the protected Sikhs, and halted at Raopur, on the banks of the Sutlej, where that river quits the mountains and takes its winding way through the plains of Hindostan. There he was met by Maharajah Runjeet Sing, the Lion of Lahore, as he was named, who made professions of the greatest friendship, "having then a fresh and lively recollection of the great English dray-horses and other presents which Lieutenant Burnes had carried to him a short time before" from his Majesty King William IV.

* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1834.

The Governor-General had with him, in addition to his body guard, two squadrons of H.M. 16th Lancers, under Major Cureton, two of Skinner's Horse, H.M. 31st Foot, and two battalions of sepoys. In Runjeet's camp were 16,000 of his best soldiers ; and he presented ours with 11,000 rupees.* The adventurous Scotsman, Burnes, during a recent stay at Simla, and this ill-omened meeting, contributed not a little to the frightful events in Afghanistan, with which his name will ever be associated. He had ascended the Indus from its mouth, between Cutch and Scinde, as far as Lahore, and though he had ascertained that, for the extent of 1,000 miles from the sea to Runjeet's capital there might be uninterrupted navigation, and that, by the agency of steam, that noble river might become commercially most valuable—if the fierce Ameers of Scinde, who held its banks, and held them in anarchy, could be reclaimed ; and if the countries to which the Indus gave access could become the abodes of peaceful and industrious races, whose wants could be supplied by the markets of European commerce. Lieutenant Burnes, however, being somewhat vain of the unusual voyage he had performed, supposed that by merely dispatching a few steam-vessels, or forming a treaty or so with some of the warlike but poor barbarians who dwelt upon the banks, a profitable trade would soon follow ; and that rather than lose the chance of this, the Company ought to incur any risk. The ardent mind of this young officer was filled with brilliant visions of the large additions that would be made to our influence, wealth, and geographical knowledge ; and, judging from the remarks in the preface to his travels,† these hopes seem to have soared far beyond the waters of the Indus and those of the Punjaub, among the savage passes and pastoral hills of the fierce Afghans and savage Khyberees, even to the wilds and deserts that lie between India and the Caspian Sea ; and he records that his schemes were warmly encouraged by Lord William Bentinck.

Influenced thus, Burnes, with a small party, descended the Sutlej, and crossed the ancient Hyphasis, near the spot where Alexander the Macedonian halted, and where Lord Lake encamped, and then by Peshawur and the pass of Luta-Bund, he proceeded to the mountain city of Cabul, in the great Balahissar of which, Dost Mohammed Khan reigned without a competitor—the same Dost whom it was afterwards the destiny of Burnes to depose. He received him with great hospitality ; and it was during his stay in Cabul,

* "Hist. Rec. 16th Lancers."

† "Travels in Bokhara," 3 vols., Lieut. Alex. Burnes.

and his travels in the adjacent country, that he contracted his rather unsound plans for the management of the fiery clans of Afghanistan. By giant mountain ranges, over broad rivers, and through wild deserts, by Balkh, among the Turcomans, by Bokhara, or Usbekistan, Kurshee, Shurrukhs, and Astrabad, the persevering Scot proceeded, till he reached Teheran, the capital of Persia; and as he and his little party had succeeded—by means of the friendly assistance of the chiefs of the different nations through which they passed, and by joining various caravans—in crossing the waste deserts of Tartary, he, perhaps, not unnaturally concluded, that the combined Russian and Persian armies might overcome these difficulties with greater ease, and by the mountain passes of Afghanistan reach the plains of British India.

In consequence of all this, Lord William Bentinck sent Colonel Pottinger to effect a treaty with the Ameers of Scinde. These men were little better than the chiefs of the Pindarees had been. They gladly accepted the presents and promises given them, and concluded with the colonel a treaty, by which the Indus was to be open to our trading-vessels if trade could be found, for certainly none existed then. Thus we were brought into direct communication with the lawless and rapacious Ameers of Scinde; the consequence was only to rouse the jealousy and alarm of Runjeet Sing, of Lahore.

In regard to some of the native states, confusion began to be developed, for the avowed British system of non-interference, while professed in theory, was frequently relinquished in practice. The course thus pursued by us was neither steady nor consistent; and with good reason, native princes complained that, on one hand, they were not permitted to manage their own affairs, and on the other, were never furnished with the means of reform when necessary; hence the condition of certain Mohammedan, Mahratta, and Rajpoot states became somewhat restless and unsettled. To take them *seriatim*, we shall begin with the dissatisfaction of the King of Delhi.

There, the representative of the Great Mogul still endeavoured to display a shadowy kind of royalty, and to complain in bitterness of heart concerning the encroachments that were yearly made upon it. While, on one hand, taking ground on the subject of regal rank, on the other, he had to sue as a petitioner on the bounty of the Company, for an increased allowance. The rentals of certain lands had been assigned to him; and as the value of those estates increased by improvement, he naturally enough supposed that his income would

be increased in proportion. The Company would willingly, perhaps, have given him the surplus, but wished him to receive his allowance, not as a royal right, but as the fee to a pensioner. Smarting under this new humiliation, he resolved to ignore the Governor-General; and appealing to the authorities at home, sent to Britain Rammohun Roy, a celebrated Brahmin of the highest caste, who had, however, lost it by throwing aside the superstitions of Hindooism, and in 1814 had endeavoured to extend among his people the knowledge of one true God; but by accepting that form of Christianity known as Unitarianism, he was never successful as a religious teacher. His appointment as envoy of the King of Delhi was kept in profound secrecy from the knowledge of Lord William Bentinck and his Council; hence, on his arrival in London in 1831, on presenting his letters of authority, they were declared insufficient to justify his recognition as the envoy of the Mogul's heir. From the new and enlarged views he was supposed to have adopted, he received much attention from some parties; but he never returned to India, as he died of fever at Bristol in 1833.

The King of Delhi did not advance his interests in any way by this secret move, but gave deep umbrage to Lord William Bentinck, who, when making a tour through the upper provinces, made the king fully aware of this, by declining all interchange of compliments or visits. And now his capital became the arena of a shocking crime. The Nabob of Ferozepore, Ahmed Buksh Khan, on his death, left the succession to his eldest son, Shumsud-deen-Khan, setting apart the district of Loharoo for two younger sons. The eldest objected to this curtailment of his inheritance, and the Governor-General rather unwisely forgot the usual policy so far as to decide that he should have Loharoo when allotting pensions to his brothers. Aware that this decision was opposed to the system of non-interference, Mr. Fraser, our commissioner at Delhi, had it postponed—a measure which so greatly enraged Shumsud-deen-Khan, that he had that unfortunate gentleman shot dead in the streets of Delhi.

The assassin and the nabob were both brought to trial: the guilt of both was fully proved, and both were executed as common malefactors; but so deep was the disaffection to British rule, that they were viewed as martyrs by the whole Mohammedan population.

Meanwhile, the complaints of misgovernment in Oude were becoming louder than ever. In the reign of the last nabob, Ghazee-ud-deen Hyder, the favourite dewan had been Aga Mir; but the

influence he possessed over the former procured him the secret hatred of the heir-apparent; and the nabob foreseeing the ruin that, in the event of his own death, would overtake the favourite minister, endeavoured to effect a conciliation between him and his son, by inducing the Governor-General to guarantee the former safety in his person and property. By the opportune offer of a loan of a million sterling to the Company in perpetuity, at five per cent. interest, the desired guarantee was obtained; and, at the same time, the nabob arranged that the interest should be paid to his dependents, among whom Aga Mir was regularly to draw one-half of the whole, or £25,000 yearly.

When the nabob died, his son, Nasir-ud-Deen, seemed to have forgotten his hate for Aga Mir, whom he continued in office and treated with kindness; but this was all dissimulation, as his cherished enmity was keener than ever. Aware that the policy of non-interference had been again inaugurated, he despised the guaranteed safety, and suddenly throwing off the mask, dismissed Aga Mir, and accused him of defrauding the treasury. No doubt the ex-minister would have forfeited his life to Nasir-ud-Deen; but the latter had the mortification to see him placed safely beyond his reach, by being conducted, in October, 1830, under a British escort, to Calcutta.

The nabob now resolved to be—that for which his ignorance and dissolute habits quite unfitted him—his own minister; and soon the power of the state passed into the hands of worthless and vicious men whom the Resident was instructed not to recognise, till a reputable dewan was appointed; and the nabob, ere long, foreseeing the danger of venturing on a struggle with the Company, recalled the Hakim, Mehedi Ali Khan, whom Aga Mir had originally replaced. Sums squandered on favourites were now reduced, corrupt practices were reformed, and instead of being farmed to rapacious extortionists, the revenue was levied by paid collectors. Yet, so thoroughly was Lord William Bentinck imbued with a fear that the ruin of Oude would come in the hands of such a prince, that in April, 1831, during his tour, he visited him at Lucknow, “and plainly intimated to him, both orally and in writing, that if he did not immediately begin to govern on better principles, the course which had been adopted in the cases of

the Carnatic and Tanjore would be followed in regard to Oude, and it would be necessary for him to exchange his position of king for that of pensioner;” and nothing could prevent this threat from being carried out but an immediate compliance with the reforms his lordship demanded.

Many obstacles had to be surmounted; and after his threats, the Governor-General gave Hakim Mehedi no assistance to carry out his requisitions; so the dewan, finding it impossible to uphold his position, retired into private life again, and left Nasir-ud-Deen entirely in the hands of worthless favourites of both sexes, under whose influence the career of misgovernment went so rapidly on, that five inmates of the harem alone drew, for jaghires assigned to them, £192,000 per annum.

In the dominions of the Nizam, where Nazim-ud-Dowlah had succeeded on the death of his father, prodigal expenditure and tyrannical extortion went hand in hand, as in Oude, and the old affair of William Palmer and Co. added to the monetary troubles of the state; while in another part of India, in the territories of the Guicowar, matters wore an aspect far from pleasing.

When Sevajee Rao succeeded his imbecile predecessor, great hopes were entertained of him, as he had always, as regent, co-operated with our Resident; but now, his increase of power

was not accompanied by increase of prosperity, and he began to disregard certain obligations, of which, with his own consent, the British Government had become the guarantees. He refused to pay his debts when he dared not plead poverty, and only sought to gratify a passion for hoarding, and in five years had deposited in his coffers a surplus revenue of £600,000, which, by express stipulation, belonged to his creditors; till at last the interference and restraint of the Company became absolutely necessary for the government of his affairs.

Holkar's dominions, in 1833, became the bitter scene of a disputed succession, on the death of Mulhar Rao, and a civil war seemed imminent, till Haree Holkar was placed on the musnud, under a guard of our troops, though destitute of any qualification for the position thus assigned him; and this he evinced by placing himself entirely in the hands of a worthless and incompetent minister, named Revajee Phausia, who soon involved the country in such disorder and distress, as to make

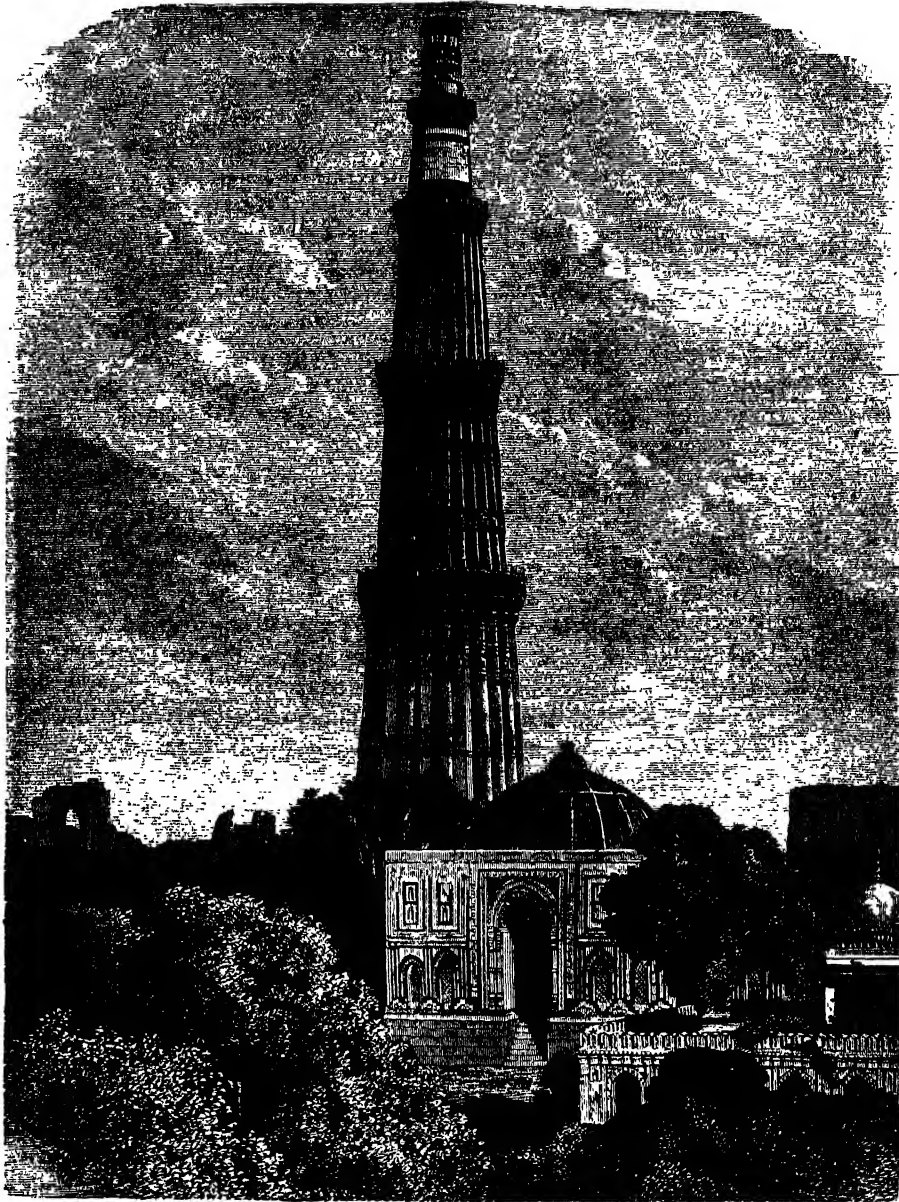


PORTRAIT OF DOST MOHAMMED.

Lord Bentinck seriously in doubt whether to undertake the administration, and depose Haree Holkar with a pension.

There were also troubles in Scinde, where, after,

him a prisoner in his own palace. Escaping, he took refuge with our Resident, to whom he declared that his life was in danger; and during a visit he paid to Gwalior, Lord William Bentinck was im-



VIEW OF THE TOWER OF KOUTUB, IN THE PLAIN OF DELHI.

the death of Dowlut Rao Scindia (to whom we have had so often to refer), in March, 1827, effect was given to his desire, that his favourite wife, Baiza Bai, should adopt as his successor a little boy, named Janakajee, under whom she was to govern as regent; but as her ambition was to govern for life, after some matrimonial intrigues had failed, she resolved to have the boy set aside, and made

portuned by both parties to aid them; but, acting for the nonce on the neutral system, he left them to settle their disputes as they pleased.

On the 10th of July, 1833, some of the disciplined battalions of Gwalior espoused the cause of Janakajee, beset the palace, freed him, and put the regent to flight, after which she retired on a liberal pension to a jaghire in the south of India;

but the government did not improve under the rule of Janakajee; and during all this time a feverish excitement was kept up in some of the Rajpoot States, and particularly in Kotah, by new successions and the inconsistencies produced by the profession of British non-interference, and the frequently-recurring necessity for acting in direct violation of it. A steady course of action was thus but seldom pursued or depended upon.

The state of Boondee (or Bundi), a principality in Rajasthan, and possessing a magnificent capital with many stately buildings, was seriously disturbed about 1830. Ram Sing, the rajah, was a minor, and his mother, the ranee, desirous of retaining her powers as regent, kept him in profound ignorance and encouraged him in gross vice, to the end that, while thus unfit to govern, he might have no wish to do so. Though young, Ram Sing was married to a daughter of the Rajah of Jodpore, and this singular mother made it part of her policy to estrange him from his wife, which she found the less difficulty in doing that she was ten years his senior. The princess, fully aware of her position, resented this state of affairs, and sought the aid of her father, who represented the case to our Resident, and urged his interference on behalf of the young ranee; but, acting to the letter of his instructions, that official declined to do so. On this, the old rajah took the matter into his own hands, and sent a deputation, accompanied by 300 soldiers, to Boondee, to demand back the princess, and escort her to her former home at Jodpore; and now ensued a tragedy of the usual Indian kind.

The troops pitched their tents outside the town while the deputation rode into it, and sent a message to the durbar. Their pretended object was to ask when it would be convenient to receive them, but a murder was their intention; for the messenger, without waiting for an answer, plunged his sword into the heart of Deva Krishan Rao, the chief minister of Boondee; and for this outrage, the whole deputation would have been slaughtered on the spot but for the intervention of Mr. Trevelyan, our Kotah Resident, who protected them all, save three, who were put to death. Although there was no doubt that Maun Sing, the Rajah of Jodpore, was the instigator of this assassination, he denied it, and avowed his intention of avenging the slaughter of his three men at Boondee.

In the olden time, the feud thus raised would have led to a bitter war, which might have spread like a flame over all Rajasthan; but the Governor-General interfered with promptitude and decision, and, after some stormy correspondence, a mutual

oblivion of injuries was agreed to. Our relations with the Jodpore rajah, about the epoch of these events, were far from friendly, and at one time seemed likely to lead to blows. Inspired by superstitious veneration for certain religious mendicants, known as the Yogis-fakirs, he made them his spiritual guides, allotted them the fifth of his revenue, and intrusted them with the whole power of the state; and believing that at their hands he enjoyed a supernatural protection from earthly evil, when remonstrated with, he replied by sullen and defiant answers. He insultingly declined to visit the Governor-General when the latter visited Ajmere, in 1831; and it was known that he was in league with robber tribes in the desert of Parkur, a district consisting of sandy plains and porphyritic hills, that lie between the Runn of Cutch and the Thurr, or Indian desert, and that, on one occasion, when they had been dispersed, he gave shelter to one of their leaders. So many complaints were made against him, that by the end of the monsoon, in 1834, a force was assembled at Ajmere, under Brigadier Stevenson, to move against him; but it only ended in what was then known as "the Jodpore counter-march," as Maun Sing made every concession that was required of him.

On the 31st of May in the preceding year, the Indian service suffered a severe loss by the death, in London, of the great and brilliant Sir John Malcolm. Monuments were raised to him and his brother, Sir Pulteney Malcolm, in Westminster Abbey and St. Paul's Cathedral, and also to them in their native village of Langholm, in Dumfriesshire, that to the former being an obelisk a hundred feet in height.

The elements of discord now burst loose in the state of Jeypore, in Rajasthan, giving rise to complications which culminated in atrocity. The mother of the young rajah, acting under the influence of a man named Jota Ram, endeavoured to lengthen her regency, but was strenuously opposed by the *thackoors*, as the leading chiefs are named; and the contending parties appealed to Lord William Bentinck, each hoping to obtain his decision against the other. The ambitious ranee died early in 1834, thus ending her claims for the regency, and the rajah was approaching his majority. Nevertheless, Jota Ram continued to maintain his authority, and more bitter than ever became the strife, till the British troops began to assemble at Ajmere. This was Brigadier Stevenson's force, which was ostensibly to operate against Maun Sing, but could easily do so at the same time against Jeypore, when the factions deemed it prudent to suspend their contentions for a time.

Submission in Jodpore having rendered an advance in that direction unnecessary, it was resolved on to employ a portion of the forces in an expedition against the robber hordes of the Shekhawatee country, which lies between Jeypore and Bicaner, whose chiefs were independent and utterly lawless. Without sparing the territories of Britain or others, these chiefs had carried on their depredations on every hand, and it was strongly suspected that Jota Ram shared in the pillage; but on hearing of the projected expedition, under Brigadier Stevenson, he expostulated against it as unnecessary; and after it had taken place, and the Shekhawatee country had been placed under British rule, he protested against that measure, as a violation of the rights of Jeypore.

Under Brigadier Stevenson, C.B., the troops which assembled at Ajmere consisted of H.M. 11th Light Dragoons, and five regiments of native cavalry; H.M. Cameronian Regiment, and eleven battalions of native infantry; with a field and siege-train, consisting of thirty-six pieces of cannon. The cavalry formed two brigades, and the infantry four. H.M. 26th (Cameronians) had made a considerable movement *en avant*, but returned instantly upon the summons of the brigadier. The corps stayed a few days at Delhi when on its march to the westward. The effect of its presence in the city is thus described by the Delhi journalist:—

“His Majesty's 26th Regiment, the Cameronians afforded a fine spectacle to the natives of Delhi on Monday morning. Having landed at the ghat below Dariogunge, they entered the city at the Delhi gate, moved down in close column to the imperial palace, and after passing in front of it, ascended through the dense crowd of spectators up the street of Chandni Chowk to their encamping ground before the Lahore gate, with colours displayed and bagpipes playing. The novel sight of nearly 700 Europeans under arms, and their stirring music, had a grand effect on the people. As the Cameronians were passing, we fell in with a group of learned Moulvees, who were led, either from reading or conversing on the subject, to ask our editorial wisdom why the men, being Scots, or as our friends said, *Escot ka log*, did not wear the checked mantle (or plaid), and march with naked limbs? Our fellow-citizens had been misinformed, we suspect, in regard to this gallant and distinguished corps. It never consisted of Highlanders, nor had any connection with Lochiel of poetical fame, or the clan Cameron. The regiment, we understand, was originally formed of a religious and warlike sect in the western counties of the lowlands of Scotland in the persecuting days of Charles II. They took their name from their leader, Richard Cameron,

one of the many ministers of religion who, in that reign, died in arms for the civil and religious liberties of their country.”

The Shekhawatee campaign, as it was named, consisted more of arduous marching than fighting, and it was said in India that the troops returned from it covered with scars, “but from the brambles only.” At one place on the Kallianoo river, the whole country was found to be under water by the bursting of a canal, the tree-tops alone being visible. The first stage in Shekhawatee proper brought the troops to the summer residence of Seekur Raja, a fort situated on a steep rock, 900 feet in height. The heat was intense; and, at some places, the pressure around the wells or tanks was so great, that men were thrust in and drowned. The fort of Taieen, with four bastions, each thirty feet in height, was taken by mining; and in it was discovered an ancient armoury, the doorway of which had been bricked up. By the 20th of December the force reached the town of Pahtun, a miserable collection of houses. Its fort, only strong by position, was on a hill, 1,000 feet in height. About midway up was the chief palace of the rajah, whose revenue was 45,000 rupees, with a tribute of 12,000 to Jeypore.* Hence the violation of rights alleged by Jota Ram.

Shortly after this, the Rajah of Jeypore died, and it was confidently suspected that Jota Ram, and a female named Rupa, who was his accomplice, had murdered the prince, in order to prolong their power as custodians of his infant son. But in this they were baffled. Major Alves, who had accompanied the troops in the Shekhawatee campaign, and was our commissioner at Jeypore, undertook the guardianship, and formed a new administration, from which Jota Ram and his female friend were excluded: the former being removed to Dersar, thirty miles from the capital, and the latter to a house within it, with a guard of sepoys to prevent her from being torn in pieces by the people; and, to preserve unity of detail, we shall give the story of what followed, though it goes beyond the close of Lord William Bentinck's tenure of office.

It chanced that, on the 4th of June, 1835, Major Alves, after having an interview with the ranee and her thackoors, was quitting the palace, accompanied by Mr. Blake, his assistant, Lieutenant Ludlow, and Captain Macnaghten, when he was wounded by a man who rushed upon him with a drawn sword. Though severe, the wound was not mortal, and the major was conveyed to the residency, while the would-be assassin was made a prisoner in the palace. Out of this building Mr. Blake came, holding in

* *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1835.

his hand the blood-stained sword with which the wound had been given. He had no sooner got into the howdah of his elephant than a fierce attack was made upon him by the assembled populace, and seeing escape impossible, he took shelter in a temple, the door of which was shut, but with the assistance of his mahout (or driver) and a chuprasi, he gained access by a window, and, by two other persons who were within, he was secreted in a small apartment, where—with what feelings may be imagined—he heard the yells and outcries of those who were thirsting for his blood.

They soon forced their way in, barbarously

murdered him, and threw his body into the street. Investigation traced out Jōta Ram as the instigator of this atrocity. All who had been accessory to the outrage were seized and executed. Sentence of death was also recorded against Jōta Ram and his brother, but it was commuted to imprisonment for life within the British territory.

In the month of March, 1835, prior to these events, Lord William Bentinck, whose health had been failing, resigned the office of Governor-General, and quitted Calcutta for Europe. He did not long survive his return from India, as he died in 1839, in the fifty-sixth year of his age.

CHAPTER XI.

ALTERATION OF THE CHARTER.—EXTINCTION OF THE COMPANY'S MONOPOLY.

THOSE who were best acquainted with Indian affairs foresaw, pretty generally, that even at the time it was passed, the Act of 1813, which made the first great inroad into the exclusive commercial monopoly of the East India Company, would effect far more extensive changes than had yet been made in their charter. The clamourers for free trade had never been silent from that period down to 1833, and there had been a succession of regulations and enactments all subversive of the ancient privileges.

Parliament appointed committees in 1820, to inquire into the foreign trade of the nation, and to consult on the means of its extension; and in both Houses, and in the country generally, a strong sense prevailed that the monopoly of the China trade, so long enjoyed by the Company, was injurious to the interests of commerce in general; though many who had this idea felt how difficult it might be for any body of men, less experienced and organised, to trade, without quarrelling, with a people so strange as the Chinese.

Mr. Canning, when President of the Board of Control, in 1820, had urged upon the Directors the expedience of establishing an *entrepôt* in the Eastern Archipelago, where our ships might take in tea for Europe; and he recommended the allotment of a portion of their tonnage to China for the free use of the public; but the Court of Directors alleged, that without a monopoly of the China trade, they could neither maintain their power in India nor pay their dividends in Britain, and declined to make any

change, expressing, at the same time, a wish that the Act of 1813 should remain intact.

In July, 1821, the committee of the House of Commons stated that they could not concur in the apprehensions excited by this partial relaxation of the Company's Chinese monopoly, while, at the same time, acknowledging that it was of the utmost importance to its prosperity. But so loud were the demands for free trade and political economy, that ere the year was out, British ships were permitted to carry on trade to every port within the limits of the charter, and with all ports belonging to countries in amity with Britain; while the Company also found itself compelled to relinquish the restriction of shipping engaged in the India trade. Though newspapers, magazines, reviews, and pamphlets, kept up an incessant war on the subject, no legislative alterations were made from that time down to 1827. In May that year, shortly after Mr. Canning became Premier and Chancellor of the Exchequer, Mr. Whitmore moved in the Commons for a select committee to inquire into the Indian trade, and he did not hesitate to urge the entire dissolution of the Chinese monopoly at all hazards.

Mr. Canning was a friend of free trade, and a large proportion of his supporters shared his opinions and enmity to monopolies of all kinds; while the unfortunate Mr. Huskisson, the Colonial Secretary, was then the oracle of the political economists. Nevertheless, Mr. Whitmore's motion was opposed, on the ground that the time was drawing near for a re-consideration of the Company's

charter and entire system of trade. In the month of August Mr. Canning died, and the Goderich Ministry fell to pieces soon after. Mr. Huskisson resigned, and the Duke of Wellington became Premier in January, 1828. In the May of the year following, the former presented a powerful petition from the merchants of Liverpool, praying for the abolition of all restrictions on free trade with India and China; and then, in February, 1830, Lord Ellenborough moved for a select committee in the House of Lords to inquire into the state of the East India Company's affairs, and of the trade between Great Britain and the East generally. His lordship said, "that the Company had afforded all the aid in their power to increase the facilities given to the external and internal trade of India; that the most important questions for Parliament now to decide were:—1. Whether it would be possible to conduct the government of India, directly or indirectly, without the assistance of the Company? 2. Whether the assistance of the Company should be afforded in the manner in which it had hitherto been, or in some other way?"

Acting in conjunction, on the same day, Mr. Secretary Peel moved in the Commons for a committee on the same subject, stating "that he proposed its appointment with the plain and honest view of having a full and unreserved investigation of the affairs of the Company, and not for the purpose of ratifying any charter or engagement previously existing between the Government and the Company."

The reports of both committees proved unfavourable to the latter, whose evidence was fully taken.

On the 23rd of July, 1830, Parliament was prorogued, and dissolved on the following day. The new Parliament assembled on the 26th of October, and on the 22nd of November, Earl Grey was made First Lord of the Treasury; while, as head of the Board of Control, Lord Ellenborough was succeeded by Charles Grant (afterwards Lord Glenelg), whose younger brother, the Right Hon. Sir Robert Grant, was then Governor of Bombay. This gentleman (the son of a Director), and most of his family, had been closely connected with the Company, and to the Indian service owed alike their fortune and prosperity; but these considerations did not prevent him from acting in unison with his colleagues. Accordingly, on the 4th of February, 1831, Charles Grant moved for the re-appointment of the committee on Indian affairs; but it had scarcely met ere Parliament was again dissolved. On the assembling of the new one, on the 16th of June, he lost no time in moving again for the committee, and the motion was readily carried.

The Ministry complained, while the debate was in progress, that no petition had come from the Company for a renewal of their charter; but the Directors would seem to have thought it their most prudent course, ere doing so, to leave those whom they deemed enemies of the Company to make out their case against it. Meanwhile, the tables of the House of Commons were literally piled up with petitions from merchants and corporations against any renewal of the charter on its former terms, while some went further; and Mr. Langton, of Liverpool, boldly impugned the veracity of the Company's accounts, but he failed to make good his statements. "This was, in fact, the only remaining point," says Mr. Peter Auber, "and had it proved vulnerable, the public might have proposed their own terms, and have placed the Company at the entire mercy of Parliament, without any apparent plea of justice to rest upon in support of the interests of the proprietors."*

On the 27th of January, 1832, Charles Grant, still President of the Board of Control, moved for the re-appointment of the Select Committee, whose labours, when laid before Parliament in August, covered 14,000 closely-printed folio pages, and their reports were every way to the honour of the Company.

"It was admitted," says a writer, "that the whole system, which had united commerce with government, and allowed of the trade monopoly, had not been unattended with advantages; that without that system our vast empire in the East could not have been created—could never have been enlarged—as it had been during seasons of depression and disgrace, and bad or weak government at home; that the finances of India had derived advantage from their existing connections with the commerce of the Company, through the direct application of surplus commercial profits, and by the rates of exchange at which the Board of Control decided that the territorial advances from commerce in Britain should be repaid to commerce in India. But our empire in the East was formed, and seemed to be so firmly established, as to defy every attack; and our free traders and political economists again, forgetting that we must have the one to secure the other—that, without our sovereignty, the wealth and resources of India would be absorbed in a maelstrom of anarchy—were incessantly declaring that free trade with India and China was worth more than our entire empire."

Unable longer to stand aloof in negotiating the matter of their charter with the Government, the

* "Rise and Prog. of the British Power in India."

Directors sent their chairman and deputy-chairman to confer with Earl Grey and Mr. Grant on the subject. A long correspondence followed their interview; the great change proposed by the Ministry was, that the Company should cease to trade, and devote its energies to the duty of governing, in conjunction with the Board of Control, our vast empire in the East; while, with respect to the competence of India to meet all demands on her finances, Mr. Grant maintained that no rational doubt could exist, as her revenue had been steadily progressing for the previous twenty years, and had now reached the amount of £22,000,000 sterling yearly, and promised still to increase. She had a territory of mighty extent, a rich and fertile soil, suited to every kind of natural produce, and a vast population, who were patient, laborious, industrious, and capable of improvement. All these, Grant urged, were more than sufficient pledges that, under wise guardianship, our Eastern exchequer would be always adequate to meet any current expenditure.

After considerable demur, the Court of Directors demanded a guarantee, or some collateral security, for the payment of the dividends, and ultimately—should such a contingency arise—for the capital to the proprietors of East India stock. The Duke of Wellington and Lord Ellenborough had told them, in 1830, that they had full security for both in the commercial assets and in their fixed property in India, which appertained to the Company in its commercial capacity; and now Mr. Grant further assured the Court of Directors that his Majesty's Government was anxious to strengthen the interests of stock-holders by a collateral security, in the form of a sinking fund, made by the investment of a portion of the trading assets in the national stocks; and the sum he proposed as sufficient was £1,200,000.

But the Court demanded that this guarantee fund should not be less than £2,000,000 sterling, and would not give their assent to the ministerial plans without the sanction of the Court of Proprietors; and ultimately, on the 3rd of May, 1833, it was decided, in a General Court, by 447 votes against 52, that, provided the guarantee fund were raised to £2,000,000, and certain other monetary conditions complied with, the plan of the Ministry should be accepted, and the Company cease to be one for trading purposes. "The attendance," says Auber, "in this General Court was thin, if we consider the magnitude of the question."*

On the 27th of May, Mr. Grant announced the satisfaction with which the Ministry of William IV.

* "Rise and Prog. of the British Power in India."

had learned the result of the appeal to the ballot at the India House, and that the guarantee fund had been increased to the sum desired. The Court of Directors had conceived that Government, through the Board of Control, meant to claim and exercise a veto on the recall of Governors-General, &c., as exercised by the Court; but Mr. Grant announced that it was not the intention of his Majesty's ministers to act upon that suggestion, or to insist upon it.

The resolutions were fully adopted by Parliament, when, on the 13th of June, 1833, Mr. Charles Grant, after a long explanatory speech, moved as follows:—"1. That it is expedient that all his Majesty's subjects shall be at liberty to repair to the ports of the empire of China, and to trade in tea and all the other productions of the said empire, subject to such regulations as Parliament shall enact for the protection of the commercial and political interests of this country. 2. That it is expedient that, in case the East India Company should transfer to the Crown, on behalf of the Indian territory, all assets and claims of every description belonging to the said Company, the Crown, on behalf of the Indian territory, shall take on itself all the obligations of the said Company, of whatever description, and that the said Company shall receive from the revenues of the said territory such a sum, and paid in such a manner and under such regulations, as Parliament shall enact. 3. That it is expedient that the government of the British possessions in India be intrusted to the said Company, under such conditions and regulations as Parliament shall enact, for the purpose of extending the commerce of this country, and of securing the good government and promoting the religious and moral improvement of the people of India."

It is remarkable, says Beveridge, that these resolutions, though involving the future government of India, and the consequent condition of its myriads of inhabitants, were passed without discussion, and awakened so little interest that a large majority of the House of Commons did not even deign to be present.*

On the 12th of August the Court of Directors came to the resolution that they must recommend the proprietors to defer to the pleasure expressed by the House of Commons, and to consent to place their right to trade for their own profit in abeyance, in order that they might continue to exercise the government of India for the further term of twenty years, upon the conditions and under the arrangements embodied in the Bill.

* "Comprehensive History of India," vol. III.



RAJAS AND ZEMINDARS OF THE NORTHERN PROVINCES OF HINDOSTAN

A very slender Court of the Directors assembled on the 16th of August, and resolved that the Bill should be adopted. On the evening of the same day, it was read a third time in the House of Lords, and on the 28th became law, after receiving the royal assent by commission. The Court of Directors, whose number continued at twenty-four, now ceased to be Eastern merchant-princes; their monopoly in the trade with India and China was gone for ever; and they retained their powers of government alone. "The great mansion in Leadenhall Street is no longer a mart or place for buying and selling; hence many of its offices are deserted or closed, and something resembling the tranquillity of the cloisters prevails throughout the edifice; but it is still (or was, till the Mutiny) the spot where the stupendous machinery of the Indian Government is regulated."

While the great Bill was in progress, during the debates on it, many were the just tributes of admiration paid to the past conduct of the Honourable Court, and the great men, the brilliant soldiers, the expert financialists, and the keen diplomatists, whom the Company had trained and developed since those days when the four little ships of Captain Lancaster dropped down the Thames on their adventurous Eastern voyage, in the spring of 1801. Lord Ellenborough, who had devoted much of his time to the study of Indian affairs, applauded warmly the servants of the Company, in war and peace, and doubted whether there was anything in the new system which would produce such men and such deeds; and warmly, too, spoke the great Duke of Wellington, who declared that, from his own residence and experience, he believed that the Government of India was one of the wisest, best, and purest that ever existed.

"I recall to my memory," said he, "the history of British India for the last fifty or sixty years. I

remember its days of misfortune and its days of glory, and call to my mind the proud situation in which it now stands. I remember that the Indian Government has conducted the affairs of—I will not pretend to say how many millions of people, for they have been variously calculated at 70, 80, 90, and even 100,000,000, but certainly of an immense population—a population returning an annual revenue of £22,000,000 sterling; and that, notwithstanding all the wars in which that empire has been engaged, its debts amount only to £40,000,000, being not more than two years' revenue. I do not say that such a debt is desirable, but I do contend that it is a delusion on the people of this country to tell them that it is a body unfit for government, and unfit for trade, which has administered the affairs of India with so much success for so many years. . . . Depend upon it, my lords, that upon the basis of their authority (the Company's) rests the good government of India."

And yet, when speaking of this very time and crisis, what says Lord Macaulay, with honest bitterness of heart?—"The House has neither the time, nor the knowledge, nor the inclination, to attend to an Indian budget, or to the statement of Indian extravagance, or to the discussion of Indian local grievances. A broken head in Coldbath Fields excites greater interest in this House than three pitched battles in India would ever excite. This is not a figure of speech, but a literal description of fact; and were I called upon for proofs, I would refer to a circumstance which must be still in the recollection of the House. When my Right Hon. friend, Mr. Charles Grant, brought forward his important propositions for the future government of India, there were not as many members present, as generally attend upon an ordinary Turnpike Bill."

CHAPTER XII.

PROVISIONAL GOVERNMENT OF SIR CHARLES METCALFE.—THE RAJAH OF GOOMSUR.—LORD AUGLAND, GOVERNOR-GENERAL.—LEGAL CHANGES.—DISTURBANCES IN OUDE AND SATTARAH.

On the resignation of Lord William Bentinck, Sir Charles Metcalfe assumed, provisionally, the administration of British India; but his term of office was too short to admit of any important

changes. There was one measure which his predecessor had initiated, and which Sir Charles had carried out, and which was of a nature calculated to influence powerfully, for good or for evil, the

of India—freedom of the press. It might prove in some to give the full details of the mode in which he carried out his favourite idea, which met with much advocacy on one hand, and bitter opposition on the other. It does not appear that there was much difference of opinion in the Council on the subject; but there is no doubt that Mr. Macaulay was one of the majority. A public address was presented to Sir Charles, at Calcutta, on the part of a numerous and most influential body of the inhabitants, and the document was highly eulogistic of his views and the practical application of them; but, unfortunately, "the natives who have since used the press have had no sympathy with liberty, civil or religious; and almost the only use made of the freedom conceded has been to give expression to a furious fanaticism and a bitter hostility to the Government. Military revolt and civil insurrection have been more promoted by the native press than by any other means, not excepting even the preaching of the fakirs. The Government has certainly obtained the advantage of knowing, by the columns of the native press, the state of feeling which the more educated classes of the natives have cherished. It is to be feared, however, that very little use has been made of the knowledge thus derived, and the advantage has been counterbalanced by the incitement to sedition which the native newspapers have supplied."*

Towards the close of the year some trouble was given to Sir Charles's government by the hostile attitude assumed by the Rajah of Goomsur, a little district westward of Juggernaut. The whole tract is still covered with dense jungle, and is hot and unhealthy. It first fell under our yoke in 1804. The country is traversed, in its entire length, by the Eastern Ghauts, and may properly be described as consisting of highlands and lowlands; the former occupied by three distinct tribes—the Sourabs, Koles, and Gonds.

The rajah defied the government; thus a force was detailed to act against him, under Lieutenant-Colonels Hodgson and Muriel, consisting of seven companies of the 21st and 49th Native Infantry, a wing of the 8th ditto, and a company of native artillery, under Lieutenant Austin, with four brass pound howitzers.

The main force advanced from Aska on the 3rd of September, under torrents of rain, which did not add to the comfort of marching through a rice-growing country. The insurgent rajah was supposed to have taken up a position at a place called Gilling, between two rivers between him and the force. It was not until the 14th, when

Hodgson's force was about to encamp at a place called Gilling, that shots were exchanged with the hill-warriors, on which he proclaimed martial law, and offered 5,000 rupees for the apprehension of the rajah. On the 14th the line of march was greatly annoyed by jungle-firing, till the mountain howitzers opened with grape. The Goomsurs proved, however, extremely pugnacious, and continued to fire, at intervals, during the whole of that day and part of the night.

The Black Cavern, a strong barrier-post, expected by the colonel to be fiercely defended, was reached on the following day, and from thence volleys of matchlocks were opened on the column, till the howitzer practice and a musketry fire checked it. "The barrier is on the summit of a hill, or, rather, between two hills, with deep jungle rising from the bottom upwards. The coolies behaved manfully in carrying up the howitzers, which are admirably adapted for jungle work, mounted on beds similar to mortars, and each weighing only 380 pounds—coolies carrying them over passes and through jungle that would be impenetrable to six-pounders. Having fired this place, the camp was pitched in the plain, and again annoyed by the rebel fire."*

Eventually, the rajah had to fly, with all his people who were in arms, to the western extremity of Goomsur, and the insurrection was completely quelled.

In this year (1835) the Indian navy consisted only of four eighteen-gun sloops, two ten-gun brigs, and one twelve-gun ship, to perform the duties of the Persian Gulf, the Red Sea stations, and Socotra, besides that of the coasts of Western India. So hard has this duty been of late, says a writer,† that vessels have been kept at these unpleasant and unhealthy stations—the Gulf and Red Sea—for periods of twelve and twenty-one months, because there was no vessel to relieve them, and the consequence was that several officers died, many fell sick, and others had their constitutions ruined.

At this time the total strength of the Bengal army was 7,041 Europeans, and 79,825 natives; and it was in this year that the king's troops adopted the percussion, in lieu of the old flint lock.

In consequence of Sir Charles Metcalfe merely holding the government temporarily till some peer of rank was selected by the British Cabinet, his acts were deprived of much of the authority or weight which otherwise they must have possessed; and it has been said that had this distinguished civilian been permitted to remain, as the Directors and Proprietors alike wished and requested, it

* *Calcutta Englishman*, 1835.

† *Bengal Hurkaru*, 1835.

had been well for Britain and for India. It was, however, become a kind of understood thing that the post of Governor-General there should be held by a peer through the direct nomination of the Crown.

Charles Grant had, notwithstanding this, been proposed by the Ministry, under the mask of advocating general principles; but the Directors, offended that he had not attended so fully as they wished to their suggestions in framing the new charter, were unwilling that he should be put in nomination. He wrote powerfully on the disadvantages of Metcalfe's temporary appointment, and urged the necessity for forthwith appointing some one in regular form. It was offered to Mountstuart Elphinstone, who declined. William, Lord Heytesbury, G.C.B., was then nominated and sworn. He had provided his outfit and passage, and completed all his arrangements; but, ere he sailed, the Peel Ministry, who had endeavoured unsuccessfully to strengthen themselves by a dissolution of Parliament, resigned. Under Lord Melbourne, the Whigs resumed office, and, with singularly bad taste, ungenerously cancelled the commission of Lord Heytesbury.

The office was again vacant, and Charles Grant—now created Lord Glenelg—having become Colonial Secretary, and been succeeded by Sir John Hobhouse as President of the Board of Control, might be considered as out of the field; the appointment was, therefore, conferred on George, Lord Auckland, G.C.B., then in his fifty-first year; why, was not very apparent, as there was nothing in his antecedents to show that he had ever had any interest in India or its affairs; “all that could be said of him was that he was a nobleman of amiable manners and excellent character, free from any overweening confidence in his own judgment, and disposed to listen to advice from those whom he believed competent to give it.” Hence it was supposed he would avoid blunders and do nothing rash.

Accompanied by his sisters, he arrived at Calcutta on the 3rd of March, 1836; but there was no doubt that his appointment was deemed a discreditable party nomination. “His lordship,” says Edward Thornton, “was the son of one of the most steady adherents of the administration of Mr. Pitt, under which his services were rewarded by a peerage. He acquired distinction as a diplomatist and a political writer. His son forsook the politics of his family, and attached himself to the liberal party.”

His office was tranquil when he entered on the

duties of his office; thus, like his predecessor, he had time to devote himself to the work of internal improvement; and there was one clause of the new charter which left him in no doubt as to what should first engage his attention: the formation or creation of “a general system of judicial establishments and police, to which all persons whatsoever, as well Europeans as natives, may be subject.”

To aid in the accomplishment of this great work of legal reform, a fourth member was added to the Council, to indicate the particular department in which he was expected to labour; and there was established a law commission, the reports made by which, from time to time, were to furnish the material or the reason for alteration or improvement. Provided thus with the necessary means, Lord Auckland went to work at once. In March, 1836, there was given to the employment of the uncovenanted judges additional extent and importance, by an enactment that “no person ever shall, by reason of place of birth, or by reason of descent, be incapable of being a *principal sudder ameen*, *sudder ameen*, or *moonsif*, within the territories subject to the presidency of Fort William, in Bengal.” Originally, the two latter officials were the only classes of native judges, and had a very limited jurisdiction; but gradually the powers of both were extended, and in 1827 the *sudder ameen* was empowered to try suits to the amount of 1,000 rupees. Yet the legal necessities were but imperfectly met, till Lord William Bentinck, in 1831, instituted the third or higher class—the *principal sudder ameen*—whose jurisdiction ultimately extended to cases involving any amount of property. Under the enactment above given, all barriers to legal promotion, or to the attainment of a judgeship in the three classes, were removed, and no kind of descent, mixed or native, could operate as an exclusion. This led to another change, which encountered much opposition when, on the 9th of May, 1836, even British residents were brought under the jurisdiction of the courts of *Sudder dewanee adawlut*, of the *zillah* and city judges, of the *principal sudder ameen*s in the presidency of Fort William; the effect of which enactment was, therefore, to deprive British-born subjects of a privilege, real or supposed, which they previously possessed, and to place them as defendants in the *mofussil* courts, on the same footing as the natives of India.

Unless we except some sharp attacks on the H.M. ship *Andromache* and the pirates of the coast in June, save the contentions existing among the residents by some of these legal reforms, the year justly says, that the first year of Lord Auckland's

"administration of the government of India was completed without the occurrence of any event sufficiently remarkable to require notice, and the first half of the ensuing year passed with equal tranquillity. The calm was then interrupted by some violent proceedings in that perpetual seat of trouble and disquiet, Oude." *

On the night of the 7th July, 1837, Nasir-ud-Deen Hyder, Nabob of Oude, died suddenly, and an attempt to put a spurious successor on his throne had been defeated, but not without bloodshed. He died without children, and though, at one time, he had adopted, or acknowledged two boys to be his, he afterwards formally disavowed them. Being an only son, it became necessary, therefore, to seek for a successor among ascendant branches; but now a fresh difficulty arose. Of the ten sons of Sadut Ali, his father was the eldest; the second of these sons had died, leaving children; but the third son, Nasir-ud-Dowlah, was still alive. According to the British law of inheritance, the succession lay with the heir of the second son; but the Mohammedan law prefers a younger surviving brother to the children of an elder brother, who had died before the succession became vacant.

By this law and rule, the British Resident, Colonel Low, on hearing of the nabob's death, at once prepared to recognise the claim of Nasir-ud-Dowlah. "There was not a moment to be lost. The Padishah Begum, or queen-mother, who had been obliged to quit the palace in consequence of a quarrel with her son, was known to be intriguing for the succession of one of the boys whom he had formally disavowed; and the children of Sadut Ali's second son were disputing the soundness of the interpretation of the Mohammedan law by which they were excluded."

Our force in the city was small; reinforcements could be obtained, but the arrangements for bringing them on were bad. So soon as Colonel Low heard that the nabob's death was certain, he wrote to the general commanding in Oude to have 1,000 men ready to march on Lucknow at a moment's notice. He then hastened to the palace, and finding that Nasir-ud-Deen Hyder had just expired, he posted sentries on the inner gates and sealed up all the royal repositories. By a second request, the Padishah was to push on five companies to the palace in advance, and send on the remainder. Captain Paton, the colonel's first assistant, remained at the palace; and Lieutenant Shakespeare, the second, was sent to the residence of Nasir-ud-Dowlah to obtain his signature to an obligation, which was required for the purpose; and thereafter

to escort him to the palace for enthronement on the musnud. The obligation ran in the following terms:—

"Lieutenant-Colonel John Low, the Resident, has apprised me, through Lieutenant Shakespeare, his second assistant, of the death of Nasir-ud-Deen Hyder, King of Oude. The Resident has also communicated to me the substance of the orders of the Government of India, respecting the necessity of new engagements on the part of the Company's government with Oude State; and I hereby declare, in the event of my being placed on the throne, I will agree to sign any new treaty that the Governor-General may dictate."

Nasir-ud-Dowlah was an old man; startled and roused suddenly in the middle of the night, he agreed readily to do whatever he was asked, and after writing a few words in the spirit of the document tendered to him, he affixed his seal thereto, and thus completed its execution. He was in delicate health; but as delay was perilous, he was borne to the palace, and after an interview with Colonel Low, at three in the morning, he was accommodated with a couch, begging that he might have an hour or two of sleep before his installation on the throne; but from that sleep he was fated to be noisily and roughly aroused.

We are not told whether the scene of these events was a palace in the city or that stately one by the Goomtee, nine miles above it, which is built in the European style, and to which the late king was in the habit of making excursions in a small steamer, built for him by a British engineer in 1819, and said to be the first vessel of the kind ever seen on Indian waters.

Colonel Low, while making his arrangements to secure the throne for Nasir-ud-Dowlah, was not forgetful that they had a perilous opponent in the Padishah Begum, and fearing that she might advance against them, sent a messenger to her to enjoin strict neutrality, and desiring her, on no account to leave her own residence, which was four miles distant from the palace. The colonel's messenger had barely returned with her artful prayer "that she might, for Allah's sake, be permitted to see the body of the late king, as she had not been allowed to see him while living," when the united roar and clamour of thousands of voices shook the air, and a vast multitude of her armed followers were seen rushing towards the palace where one prince lay dead and the other was sleeping.

Captain Paton hurried to secure the inner gates, but found the insurgents before it in armed ranks, and furiously demanding admittance, with fierce

faces and brandished weapons. When they forced the gate by means of an elephant which threw down one leaf, that nearly crushed Captain Paton in its fall, and at once made themselves masters of the place. The captain was then knocked down and made prisoner. Soon after, the Padishah Begum entered, with her *protégé*, Moona Jaun, and lost not a moment in placing him on the throne. Colonel Low, who had managed to force a passage through the crowd, arrived in time only to see the installation completed. After seeking in vain to show the begum the folly of her desperate proceedings, he was but too glad to effect his escape; while poor old Nasir-ud-Dowlah, who was roughly wakened from his morning slumber by the horrible hubbub around him, found himself on the point of being murdered; but fear of the consequences forced the begum to content herself by only compelling him, amid insult of every kind, to witness his rival seated on the throne. Various royal personages had laid claim to the sovereignty of Oude; but none, save Moona Jaun, had dared to assert it in this manner.

But ere the morning was far advanced the sound of the British drums was heard; our troops arrived, and Colonel Low gave the begum fifteen minutes to make her submission, while the artillery came thundering forward. She sent an evasive answer, to which a few rounds of grape were the response; our soldiers rushed in with the bayonet, and soon had in their hands Moona Jaun and the begum too. Only three sepoys were wounded in assaulting the palace, wherein they killed or wounded forty of the defenders. As soon as it was cleared, the terrified Nasir-ud-Dowlah, whom it was necessary to soothe and encourage, was installed King of Oude under discharge of artillery, while the begum and her *protégé* were dispatched, prisoners of state, to Cawnpore.

Twelve days after the installation, Lord Auckland wrote a complimentary letter to the new sovereign, in which he said:—"My representative, Colonel Low, who possesses my fullest confidence, has been authorised by me to propose, for the consideration of Your Majesty, certain modifications of the treaty subsisting between the East India Company and the Oude State, and I feel assured that you will recognise in these propositions the same moderate views and the same zeal for the welfare of the prince and people of Oude, as have invariably characterised the British Government in its negotiations with its allies."

To the Resident he wrote thus:—"His lordship in Council would not qualify, even by an expression of doubt, the high approbation which he

is ready to express of your conduct on this trying occasion. The expediency of obtaining from his Majesty the signature of a previous agreement, binding himself to absolute submissiveness, is the only point on which he feels that difference of opinion may be entertained; and if, on one hand, it may appear to secure the objects of the government, and to be justified by precedent on the other, it seems open to misrepresentation, and from the reliance which might be placed on the character and position of his Majesty, superfluous."

But now, though the Padishah Begum and Moona Jaun had been removed from Lucknow, the question of the Oude succession was not at an end; and Thornton, after detailing the events we have related, tells us of another competitor, who prosecuted his claims in a peculiar manner, and who was named Shum-ud-Dowlah. Acting under European advice, this claimant proceeded to London, and there addressed the Court of Directors. "The folly of undertaking a long voyage to assert a claim known to be absolutely and undoubtedly bad, and with a certainty of its being rejected, need not be dwelt upon. What profit the advisers of the claimant derived from the expedition cannot be known; but they were fully aware that none would accrue to the person on whose behalf they affected to act. Such occurrences are not now, indeed, uncommon in the history of British India, and they will, probably, never cease altogether, until native powers shall acquire sufficient acquaintance with the principles of British policy to prevent their becoming the dupes of unprincipled adventurers."*

The affairs of Oude were barely arranged when our interference in another quarter became imperative. Pertaub Sing, the Rajah of Sattarah, had never displayed much gratitude for the favours conferred upon him, when, under the administration of the Marquis of Hastings, he was taken from degradation and thralldom, and restored to the possession of a noble principality. The actual government was not conferred upon him at first, as it was necessary that he should give proofs of his ability to conduct it. The superintendence of his affairs was assigned to Captain Grant, and the country became tranquillised. Many of the old baronial castles had been in the days of the Pargagenets—mere dens of thieves, cut-throats, and abductors—were dismantled and razed to the ground in 1821, when Pertaub Sing came to the throne, and was vested with the administration of his principality, which, under Grant's care, had become a peaceful

* "Hist. Brit. Empire in India."



VIEW OF THE MARTINIÈRE, OR PALACE OF CLAUDE MARTIN, LUCKNOW.



VIEW OF THE PAVILION OF LANKA IN THE KAISERBAGH, LUCKNOW.

even prosperous; but in 1822 his true character began fully to develop itself.

He committed the public affairs to worthless characters; abandoned himself to indolence, vice, and such childish follies, that doubts were entertained of his sanity. He enrolled a company of women, armed them with muskets, and had them taught gunnery with field-guns. Other women were taught to manage elephants, and every cunning fakir who offered to propitiate the gods in his favour had his object, whatever it was, gratified immediately; and he had three sects of Brahmins daily at ceremonies to procure the expulsion of a ghost which, they alleged, haunted his palace.

With all this folly, he had a most inflated idea of his own consequence, and believed that all Lord Hastings had bestowed upon him was but a modicum of what he was entitled to as the lineal descendant of Sevajee, the favourite of the goddess Devi, and founder of the Mahratta empire. Adventurers of all kinds, European as well as native, began to turn these ideas to personal account, and flattered him into the belief that he would yet become the head of those millions who formed the Hindoo population. Hence he began to form intrigues at variance with the position in which he stood with the British Government; but nothing would deter him, so the penalty came at last.

Sir James Rivett Carnac, Bart., then Governor of Bombay, who was leniently disposed, held personal interviews with the rajah, in the hope of inducing him to cease his intrigues and concede; but he signally failed, and the result was announced in a proclamation issued by Colonel Lodwick, our Resident at Sattarah, on the 5th of September, 1839. This document, after detailing all the honours and benefits heaped upon Pertaub Sing, announced that he had, "for years, held clandestine communications, contrary to the stipulations

contained in the fifth article of the treaty (by which he was restored); that he has cherished ambitious designs hostile to the British Government; that he has advanced claims and pretensions incompatible with the spirit and letter of the treaty; and that he has conducted himself in a manner subversive of the alliance formed between the two States; and finally, the document announced that the British Government, having no view of advantage and aggrandisement, "has resolved to invest the brother, and next in succession to the rajah, with the sovereignty of the Sattarah State, under the title of Shreemunt Maharaj Shahee Rajey Chut Turputtee, of Sattarah, and that all persons within his territory are hereby required to render him allegiance."

Much discussion was caused by this in India; but Pertaub Sing was marched off to Benares, where he ended his days, a pensioner of the East India Company. At first, he adopted the same plan that had been pursued by the claimant for the throne of Oude. He hired emissaries in London, and sent thither diplomatic agents to arraign the Directors before the Proprietors, and in the event of that proving fruitless, to arraign the entire Company before Parliament. They denied the existence of all plots and intrigues, and in public assemblies, where the rajah's rights to a vast sovereignty could be safely insisted on, much noisy declamation ensued, and many benevolent persons—chiefly among the Society of Friends—urged the formation of an "Association for the Protection of Aborigines." The result of all this amiable folly was a long-continued agitation in favour of the deposed prince, the issue of which was of no advantage to himself, but during the progress of which, his long-hoarded treasures were dissipated among the legal harpies and knaves whom he employed to advocate his cause in London.

CHAPTER XIII.

THE SIKHS.—THE RISE OF RUNJEET SING.—ORIGIN OF THE FATAL AFGHAN WAR.

In the summer of 1837 there was an insurrection among the Moplas in Canara, that wealthy province which extends for 180 miles along the coast of Malabar, and runs from thirty to ninety inland, and which, though it came into our possession on the

death of Tippoo and the fall of Seringapatam, was fully disposed to assert its independence, and refused, for a time, to settle with the British in the matter of the revenue, until decisive measures were adopted to punish the more obstinate and rebellious

some of the Kanarees, who are chiefly Hindus, and whose language, called the Malabar, differs from the Tamil.

The petty revolt of 1837 compelled Captain Le Hardy, the superintendent of Coorg, who had prepared to descend the Bissley Ghaut, with a battalion of infantry and 800 Coorgs, to withdraw to Mercara, and take shelter in the fortress there. On the first intimation of the rebellion, the Coorg chiefs offered fervent professions of loyalty to Britain, and marched to meet the foe in arms; but they wavered, and could not be relied on.* Eventually, the commotion, which might have proved a very troublesome one, was completely suppressed.

At this time, the Nizam's army was restricted to a strength of five regiments of cavalry, four companies of artillery, one of sappers, eight regiments of infantry, and one garrison, and one invalid battalion. The cavalry were armed with sword, spear, and pistols, and clad in green, with red turbans. The infantry conformed in every respect to those of Madras. Many king's and Company's officers were in the force, as all the patronage lay in the hands of the Governor-General.†

In the following year, the Indian Civil Service suffered a severe loss by the death of Sir Charles Grant, the Governor of Bombay, who died on the 9th of July, at Dapooree, and who was author of a "History of the East India Company, from its first foundation to the Passing of the Regulation Act of 1773," and had long borne a distinguished part in letters, politics, and in the affairs of India generally.‡

The north-western frontier of British India was bounded by the territories of the Sikhs—a people who occupied a country equal in size to about half the Spanish peninsula—comprising the greater part of Moultan, a portion of Delhi, and the whole of the Punjaub. The religion of the Sikhs, as distinguished from that of the natives of India generally, originated towards the close of the fifteenth century, with Baba Nanak, who had once been a trader, but who subsequently led a religious life; and their tenets are defined in the Holy Book, the "*Adi Grantha*," or Book of Origins, which was shown to the Prince of Wales at Umritsar, in February, 1876, and which the Indian Government undertook to publish, some time ago, at its own expense, in the form of a translation. It is a quarto volume of 300 pages, and was produced by a firm in Hertford.§

Their original seat was the upper part of the Punjaub, the possession of which had often been keenly contested between the Moguls and Afghans; hence the Sikhs were equally disliked by both, and the alternate change of masters brought them no relief. The resolution to extirpate them was often avowed openly; but the Sikhs ever fought with the courage that was born of despair, and amid the confusion that prevailed during the latter years of the Mogul empire, they began to gather strength and to figure as conquerors.

They were a confederacy, under separate chiefs, who, though independent of each other, met as equals when their common interest required it, in a diet at Umritsar (*i.e.*, the Pool of Immortality), in the centre of which is the temple dedicated to the Hindoo saint, Govind Sing, wherein is deposited the holy book already referred to, under a silken canopy. Towards the end of the eighteenth century, the confederacy consisted of twelve *misals*, or associations, which extended from the Indus eastward, across the Sutlej, as far as the Jumna. Govind Sing did not fetter his disciples with political systems or codes of municipal law; yet in religious faith and worldly aspirations they are wholly different from other Indians, and they are bound together by a community of inward sentiment and of outward knowledge unknown elsewhere.*

While they felt that union was necessary for their mutual safety, they acted together with the utmost cordiality; but in proportion as external danger diminished, internal dissensions grew, and the feuds, engendered by the desire of individual aggrandisement, produced such confusion that the necessity for some political change became apparent to all. If independence was to be maintained, it could only be done by submitting voluntarily or under compulsion, to the ascendancy of some *misal* more powerful than the rest, and thus, by incorporation with it, form an undivided Sikh kingdom. This came to pass thus:—

Among the twelve associations, the last formed and least important was one named the Sookur-Chukea, whose capital was at Goojeranwala, northward of Lahore. Churut Sing, its founder, was a Jaut, who had thrown off his own faith and become a Sikh convert. Possessing himself of a small mud fort, he started in life as a freebooter, and made it the receptacle of his plunder. His dangerous proximity to Lahore, and the ravages he committed, compelled the Afghan governor of that city to march against him in 1762; but the expedition proved futile, as the other *misals* made common cause with Churut Sing, and the Afghan

* Capt. Cunningham's "Hist. of the Sikhs."

§ *Bombay and Calcutta Chron.*, 1837.

† *Asiatic Researches*, 1837.

‡ *Asiatic Researches*, "Biographical Dictionary," 1842.

§ *Asiatic Researches*, 1876.

chief was glad to escape by a speedy flight, abandoning his tents and baggage. Ahmed Shah, the famous King of Afghanistan, by hastening from Cabul, won a pitched battle over the Sikhs, whose losses amounted to 12,000 men.

As he had to return to Cabul to meet more pressing dangers, the Sikhs again took the field, at the head of the most powerful army they had ever mustered, and extended their conquests on every side, and Churut Sing was soon recognised as one of their most able leaders. When no longer required for foreign enterprises, he was ready to take part in a domestic strife between the mountain Rajah of Jumoo and his eldest son, Brij-Raj. The rajah wished that a younger son should have the succession; thus the elder, as the most effectual method of preserving his rights, resolved to seize them in his father's lifetime. To aid him, Churut Sing drew his sword, in league with Jye Sing, chief of the Ghunea Misal, and, with 10,500 men, they marched northward to commence the strife.

On the other hand, the Rajah of Jumoo had not been idle. Several hill-chiefs joined him, together with Jhunda Sing, head of the Bhangee Misal, who could bring 10,000 mounted lances into action. This was in 1774. Before any battle took place, Churut Sing was slain by the bursting of his match-lock in a skirmish; on this, the allies of Brij-Raj retired, but not before they had assassinated, in a barbarous manner, Jhunda Sing; and the Bhangee Misal, deprived thus of their leader, abandoned the contest.

Churut was succeeded by his son, Maha Sing, who in after years captured Ramnuggur; after which, many chiefs who were attached to the Bhangee Misal, believing its fortunes on the decline, placed themselves under his banner; thus a new career of conquest began; and he pillaged the Rajah of Jumoo's territory so completely that he swayed it of booty to the value of £2,000,000 sterling. By the close of the century Maha Sing's ascendancy over the Sikh chiefs had become an established fact; but his ambition was not yet satisfied. He made a groundless pretext that tribute was due to him from Goojerat, the chief of which, Sahib Sing, had married his sister, and marching against him, laid siege to one of his strongest forts, and was pressing it, with every prospect of success, when an illness carried him off in 1792, leaving the succession to his only son, the famous Runjeet Sing, then in his twelfth year.

When an infant, he had been deprived of his left eye by small-pox, and instead of being trained in boyhood to government, he was left in ignorance. His selfish mother, anxious to keep the regency in

her own hands, shared her power and her favours with the chief minister, and, to retain the former, indulged young Runjeet in every form of profligacy; but, on attaining the age of seventeen, he assumed the government, and quietly put both his mother and her minister to death. It was soon after this that Zemaun Shah, the Afghan, made the invasion of the Punjaub which excited such alarm in India. Unable to meet him in the open field, Runjeet was one of the chiefs who consulted their own safety by retiring beyond the Sutlej, but after the retreat of Zemaun Shah, the future career of Runjeet was a brilliant one. He made himself master of the city of Lahore; he made himself master of the city of Lahore; he made himself master of the city of Lahore; and made an attempt upon Moultaun, he crossed the Sutlej, and began to extend his territory from the Sikh chiefs between it and the Jumna, when our interference checked him. He next directed his whole energies towards seizing all the Punjaub, and pushed his arms as far as he could to the north and west. In 1809 he got possession of Kangra, and, marching to the opposite extremity, laid Moultaun under tribute. In 1812 he conquered the rajahships of Bhunbar and Rajaori among the northern hills, and, for a lac of rupees, in 1814, he bought the great fortress of Attock, upon the Indus.

In 1819 he conquered Cashmere and Peshawur. In 1834 he entered into a treaty with Shah Sujah, whereby the latter gave up all claim to the latter district and others on the Indus. During all this time he had been rapidly improving the discipline of his army by means of European officers. The downfall of Bonaparte had given peace in Europe, and drove many Frenchmen and Italians, as military adventurers, into the armies of Persia and India. Among these were M. Ventura, one of the aides-de-camp of Murat, and General Allard, who ultimately was accredited the *chargé d'affaires* of the King of France to Runjeet Sing, and from whom he brought presents to the Begum Sumtoo, then in her ninety-fifth year. He displayed the most dashing bravery near Attock, where, on one occasion, he forded the Indus, at the head of 3,000 lancers, in close columns of troops, to stem the fearful force of the current, which, however, swept two away; and on reaching the opposite shore, he attacked and routed the Afghans, capturing their camp equipage and guns. Runjeet attempted to follow him with his other cavalry, but so late was their order, that 700 were swept away and drowned.*

The King of Lahore was in the zenith of his fame and power when Lord Auckland arrived in India, soon after which the latter took into his service Sir

* Madras Lit. Gazette, 1834.

fidence Captain Alexander Burnes, and some other stirring young officers of the Indian army, who were burning to distinguish themselves as soldiers and diplomats, especially at this time, when it was believed that our Eastern empire was threatened alike by Russian intrigues and by Persian and Afghan arms.

The leading and most melancholy feature in the administration of Lord Auckland is the Afghan war, the origin of which began in the summer of 1837, and the closing catastrophe of which occurred in the beginning of 1841; but to form any proper idea of this disastrous affair, it will be necessary to glance briefly at the events which led to it.

The exiled monarch of Cabul, Shah Sujah, while a British pensioner at Loodiana, made a second effort to regain his crown in 1833. After defeating the Ameers of Scinde at Shikarpore, he was defeated in turn by Dost Mohammed, after which he took possession of Peshawur. About this time, a wild robber horde on the right bank of the Indus had made repeated raids into the district of Hazara, which Runjeet Sing had subjugated, and as they were supposed to be instigated by the Ameers, the army of the Punjaub took possession of their forts, and both parties stood ready for a strife which would have ended in the overthrow of the Ameers and the extension of Runjeet's authority throughout the course of the Indus to the sea; and this the Government of India resolved, if possible, to prevent. It was with no small difficulty that Colonel Pottinger prevented the warlike Ameers from rushing to battle; while Captain Wade, our representative at the Court of Lahore, had to impress upon the impatient Runjeet Sing the hazard he would incur if he adopted measures distasteful to Britain. On the other hand, he was importuned by his warlike courtiers and gallant soldiers to risk all, and push on to the sea-shore; "but he shook his venerable beard, and asked where were now the 200,000 Mahratta swords which had once bade defiance to the Company. He bowed to the majesty of British power, and at once relinquished the expedition to Scinde."

Deeply in the breast of Dost Mohammed of Cabul rankled the loss of Peshawur, and assuming the character of a ghazee, he proclaimed a holy war against the Sikhs as infidels, and then from the snowy and stony of the Hindoo Coosh, from the hills of Turkistan, and the farthest recesses of the Hindoo mountains, thousands in arms came pouring forth under the green standard of the Prophet. Even the old Runjeet quailed before this

host of bloodthirsty fanatics, and, while constrained to march in defence of Peshawur, he sent Mr Harland, an American adventurer, on a pretended mission to Dost Mohammed, with secret instructions to sow, if possible, dissension in his camp.

In this he succeeded so far, by exciting the jealousy of the brothers of the Dost at his growing power, that one drew off abruptly, with 10,000 men. On this, the Dost, full of doubt and chagrin, fell back on Cabul. As soon as he heard of Lord Auckland's arrival at Calcutta in 1836, he sent him a complimentary letter, and with reference to his hostile relations with Runjeet Sing, asking his lordship's suggestions for settling "the affairs of the country." Lord Auckland's reply was courteous and friendly; he offered to send an envoy to discuss any questions of trade; but with regard to the Sikh quarrel, he added, that the Government, as a system, did not interfere with independent princes.

The Dost, therefore, early in 1837, applied to the Shah of Persia for aid against the infidel Sikhs; but in his impatience to efface the disgrace that had been put upon him, without waiting for Persian succour, he sent his son, Ackbar Khan, with an army, into Peshawur, where he routed the Sikhs in battle; then reinforcements came pouring in from the Punjaub, and Ackbar was compelled to retreat to Cabul; and it was at this most critical juncture that Captain Alexander Burnes, an enterprising native of Montrose, made his appearance as Lord Auckland's envoy, to discourse concerning trade and manufactures, and at a time when the Russians were making undoubted progress in the East.

"Like the Romans," says Marshman, "they have systematically devoted their energies to the extension of their power and dominions, and for more than a quarter of a century have prosecuted schemes of aggrandisement in Europe and Asia, without intermission or failure. After having succeeded in bringing the Khirgis Cossacks to subordination, they took up their position on the Jaxartes in 1830, and gradually advanced with a steady pace, fixing their grasp on Central Asia more firmly at every step. On that river they erected a chain of forts, extending from its estuary in Lake Ural to Fort Vernoe, 700 miles distant. Meanwhile, the ambitious diplomatists of Russia had been pushing her influence in Persia, and through Persia up to Afghanistan. On the death of the king, Futeh Ali, who had always been favourable to a British alliance, he was succeeded by his grandson, Mohammed Shah, who threw himself into the arms of Russia. Since the first mission of Captain Malcolm, the British Government had expected

more than a crore of rupees in embassies and subsidies to Persia, in order to acquire a preponderant influence at the court, which might serve as a bulwark to the empire of India. The Ministry had now the mortification of finding this labour and expenditure thrown away, and the British influence at Teheran completely superseded by that of Russia."

The Persian rulers had long coveted possession of the independent State of Herat, the key of Western Afghanistan, and Mohammed Shah resolved on making an expedition among its mountains and desert tracts. Mr. McNeill, our minister at the Persian Court, asserted that this expedition was more than justified by the atrocities of its ruler; but that, in the then state of political relations between the Persians and Russians, the march of the former into Afghanistan would be tantamount to an advance of the latter to the very threshold of our Indian empire. To dissuade the Shah from this expedition, McNeill used every argument; while the Russian minister, on the other hand, urged him to proceed, and promised him every requisite aid. "The Ministry in London presented a remonstrance on the subject at St. Petersburg, and the emperor replied that Count Simonich, his envoy, had exceeded his instructions, but he was not recalled; and his proceedings were so completely in accordance with the national feeling, that the *Moscow Gazette* threatened that the next treaty with Britain should be dictated in Calcutta!" *

In July, 1837, Mohammed Shah set out, at the head of 50,000 men, with fifty guns, and hoped to take the route that Nadir Shah had taken, even to the gates of Delhi—a movement which created a profound sensation through all Central Asia and in India, where the native princes at once began to speculate on the downfall of British power and the triumph of the Russians over us at the court of Persia. In the Deccan, the people began to bury their money and jewels, and all kinds of alarming rumours and reports were heard on every hand. It was about this time that Lord Auckland visited Simla, when the north-western provinces were desolated by a famine, which swept away 500,000 souls, and, as his camp of 20,000 troops served to aggravate the calamity, he returned to Calcutta. The Cabinet seeing, in every direction, how the restless and ambitious spirit of Russia was directed against the security of our Indian empire, instructed the Governor-General to adopt vigorous measures for its protection, while McNeill, our Persian minister, strongly advised that we should create a barrier in Afghanistan, by subsidising and

strengthening Dost Mohammed, but, as every mission in the East is measured in accordance with the value of the gifts it brings—when, amid these fierce commotions, Captain Burnes opened his treasury, consisting of a pistol and telescope for the Dost, and some pins and needles for the Zenana—he and his embassy sunk at once into contempt."

The brothers of the Dost, who were the rulers of Candahar, were arranging an alliance, offensive and defensive, with the Shah, whose ambassadors brought princely robes and presents for the Dost. The latter assured Captain Burnes that the subject nearest his heart was the recovery of Peshawur, and that if he could but hope for solid aid from Britain, he would renounce all intercourse with Persia, and send her envoy back from Candahar; but Lord Auckland had a timid dread of offending the formidable Runjeet Sing, and declined to hear anything about Peshawur. Yet the latter had offered to restore it if the Dost would pay tribute for it; and he was prepared to do so, and hold it as a fief of Lahore; but there can be little doubt that if the Council at Simla had met the question properly, and intrusted the settlement of it to the able Captain Burnes at Cabul, and to Captain Wade at Lahore, the horrors of the Afghan war had never been heard of.

Dost Mohammed, after the receipt of Lord Auckland's unfavourable letter in 1836, sent an envoy to solicit aid against the Sikhs from the Emperor of Russia, who dispatched Captain Vikevitch to Cabul, with rich presents and an autograph letter, concerning the genuineness of which some doubts have been expressed. He entered Cabul on the 19th of December, 1837; and the Dost immediately visited Captain Burnes, and assured him that he desired no connection with any government save ours, and was ready to dismiss the envoy of Russia, without ceremony, if any hope was held out to him by Lord Auckland.

Captain Burnes urged on the latter the necessity for immediate action; but his lordship, still inspired by the morbid fear of offending Runjeet, replied, that the Dost must be content with whatever arrangement the King of Lahore might make, and waive all hope of having Peshawur. Eventually, after much correspondence, the Cabinet at Simla persuaded the Governor-General to write Dost Mohammed a letter that "was not overbearing, but arrogant; every sentence in it was calculated to kindle a flame in the breast of the Afghan sovereign, and the mission of Captain Burnes became useless."

Still the Dost did not despair, and once again

* *Murshid's Hist. of India.*

and again; but Lord Auckland turned a deaf ear to every overture, and continued to require that he should ignore the tempting alliances offered him by Russia and Persia, while he proffered nothing in return to preclude the further encroachments of the Sikhs. It was perfectly well known at Simla that Runjeet Sing had no more idea of marching to Cabul than to Calcutta; but when the last ray of hope from British India vanished, the Russian

maintenance of his troops and officers to discipline them; but it soon became evident that, unless we engaged in the war as principals, and not as allies, the whole affair would end ingloriously. It was, therefore, resolved to send an army into these unexplored regions of Central Asia, where all the commissariat provisions, stores, and other munition of war would have to be taken through the states of doubtful allies, by long and perilous mountain



VIEW IN AFGHANISTAN.

envoy was conducted through the city to the durbar amid every pomp, and Captain Burnes returned, crest-fallen, to Simla. There he found a strong feeling against the Dost in the advisers of Lord Auckland, who, most absurdly, were exasperated to find that an independent prince, whose mountains were the key and the gate of India, hesitated to accept their vague or negative offers, or the more definite ones of their opponents; and now it was required to march across the Indus and depose him, and to re-enthrone Shah Sujah, the pensioner of Lahore, on the throne.

It was first proposed to supply funds for the

passes, beset by hordes of wild and lawless plunderers, for the purpose of compelling the Persian king to raise the siege of Herat, to drive Dost Mohammed from Cabul, and place Shah Sujah on the throne of Afghanistan.

With the hope of achieving all this, a tripartite treaty was negotiated and concluded by Mr. Macnaghten between the Indian Government, Shah Sujah, and the King of Lahore, who engaged to contribute the aid of a body of troops, on the condition that Shah Sujah should recognise his right to all those districts which his sword had won beyond the Indus, and share with him in common

all the treasure he might be able to wrench from the Ameers of Scinde.

It would seem, eventually, that, with the exception of the Ministers at Downing Street and the officials at Simla, this wild, disastrous, and preposterous affair in Afghanistan was universally condemned.*

Mr. Elphinstone stated, that "if 27,000 men could be sent through the Bolan Pass to Candahar, and we could feed them, we might take Cabul and set up Shah Sujah; but it was hopeless to maintain him in a poor, cold, strong, and remote country, among a turbulent people like the Afghans."

Lord Wellesley regarded "this wild expedition, 800 miles from our frontier and resources, into one of the most difficult countries of the world—a land of rocks and deserts, of sands and snow—as an act of infatuation;" and the Duke of Wellington also condemned it. In a manifesto issued from Simla on the 1st of October, 1838, an attempt was made to justify the expedition. This, says Marshman, with truth, is "one of the most remarkable documents in the Company's archives, unique for its unscrupulous misstatements and its audacious assertions. A single instance will suffice to stamp its character: it affirmed that the orders for assembling the army were issued in concurrence with the Supreme Council; whereas the Council, when required to place the proclamation on record, remonstrated on the consummation of a policy of such grave importance without their having had any opportunity of expressing their opinion on it."

To succour the besieged garrison of Herat was said to be the immediate object of the expedition. As the only route by which any army could approach India, the province of Herat had long been an acquisition ardently desired by the kings of Persia, who knew that it was also the key to Afghanistan on the west, as Cabul is on the east. On the 23rd of November, 1837, the Shah sat down before the capital, the walls of which were in ruins; and its long defence of nine months was simply owing to the exertions of one man, and that man was a British officer of the Bombay artillery—Lieutenant Eldred Pottinger.

While making some researches in Central Asia, he had entered the city of Herat disguised as a *Sun*, or descendant of the Prophet, and resolved to take part in the coming struggle. His services were readily accepted by the rulers of Herat, who

recognised his genius, and gave him the direction of all the operations. He inspired the garrison with his own invincible courage, and for nine months the efforts of the Persians were baffled, though assisted by a regiment of Russians, called deserters, to save appearances. The 24th of June, 1838, was fixed for a general assault, and the works were attacked, under the personal direction of the Russian minister, Count Simonich, and his engineer officers, at five different points. At four of these the stormers were signally repulsed; but at the fifth a practicable breach was made in the walls, and the courage of the defenders began to fail. Yar Mohammed withdrew from the carnage; but the gallant Pottinger, by main strength of arm, dragged him back to the corpse-encumbered breach, and urged the defence with such irresistible valour and fury, that the Persians, when on the point of gaining Herat, fled, leaving 1,700 killed and wounded behind them.

The siege then became a blockade, during which the Indian Government sent two steamers to occupy the isle of Karrack. Rumour magnified them into a powerful squadron, and consternation was excited in the Persian camp. Mr. McNeill took advantage of this, and sent the unfortunate Colonel Stoddart to the Persians, to assure them that they would bring on the hostility of the British Government, which had already sent a squadron to the Persian Gulf. The Shah, on this message from Mr. McNeill,* broke up his camp and retired, after the loss of half his army and treasure; and so ended an expedition which had excited for many months the whole population of Central Asia; and so the grand projects of Persia and Russia ended in smoke.

Yet the proposed expedition of the British Government was prosecuted with vigour. Of the reasons assigned for it one was, that the treaty with Runjeet Sing and Shah Sujah bound us in honour to proceed with it; yet, in the convention with the former, there was no allusion made to the march of a British army across the Indus, and the exiled monarch of Cabul was most anxious to avoid the unpopularity he was certain to excite if he was restored by the arms of infidels.

* Mr. McNeill was afterwards celebrated as the *Right Hon.* Sir John McNeill, Knight of the Bath, and of the Lion and the Sun, and was, long after, one of the Sanitary Commission in the Crimea in 1855. He was the third son of McNeill of Colonsay; and when in Persia, his attack, the youngest son of Sir Walter Scott, died at Teheran, in 1841.

* Marshman's "India."

CHAPTER XIV.

THE ARMY OF THE INDUS.—COERCION AND UNJUST TREATMENT OF THE AMEERS OF SCINDE

It was at Ferozepore that the great force known as the Army of the Indus assembled, in November, 1838, and where there ensued a meeting between the Governor-General and the old Lion of Lahore, then tottering on the verge of the grave, "but still exhibiting in his countenance the calmness of design, while his single eye was lighted up with the fire of enterprise."

Many showy pageants, gay doings, and much of mimic warfare were enacted as the troops from every quarter came pouring into their camps on the north and westward of Ferozepore. These extended over seven days. At dawn on the first day (the 29th of November), the guard of honour, consisting of a squadron of H.M. 16th Lancers, the 4th Cavalry, a camel battery of artillery, H.M. 3rd Buffs, and four battalions of sepoy, with other troops, formed a street for the reception of Runjeet Sing, who had 20,000 men in his camp, from whence he came between two lines of elephants, preceded by his bandsmen, loading the air with indescribable music. He was clothed in a turban, tunic, and trousers, all of red, without a single ornament; but around him were the Sikh chieftains, resplendent in cloth of gold, with every variety of picturesque costume, and armed with spears, shields, sabres, and lighted matchlocks; and he was presented with a portrait of Queen Victoria by General Sir Willoughby Cotton, while the camel battery fired a royal salute. On the second day there was a review, which one who was present has described as being the acme of military splendour. On the fifth day the grand review took place, amid clouds of dust and smoke.

"Crowds of Sikhs," wrote an officer, "invariably accompany Runjeet Sing and his deputations whenever they cross the river, and much amusement is excited by their bearing towards the British officers. There is a strange mixture of frank courtesy, curiosity, and dislike in their demeanour. They enter freely into conversation with those who accost them, and are at all times very communicative. But they cannot abide our beardless chins; they hold in great contempt our short-tailed horses; and our ladies are regarded as unaccountable abuses of humanity. Distrust of the British also seems to characterise most of their proceedings. They light their matches when they approach our officers, and wherever the Maharajah moves they

cluster round him, as if Lord Auckland would take an early opportunity of seizing his person or cutting his jugular. . . . Their costume embraces silks of all colours of the rainbow—orange, crimson, and green. The turban, neither too large nor too small, is generally yellow or crimson, surmounted by a small tuft of feathers. I have not seen so much armour as I expected. Excepting the steel and brass casques of the cavalry, and a few coats of mail and cuirass-plates, there is nothing of the olden time to be found in the costume. Djan Sing, the prime minister, is, perhaps, the most attractive man at court, and he merely wears an elegant French cuirass and steel gauntlets." *

On the 10th of December the Bengal column began its march from Ferozepore, 9,500 strong, with 38,000 camp-followers, and 30,000 camels. It is no unusual thing for subalterns to have six of the latter to carry their baggage, says Captain Neill, and when such is the case, and other ranks travel in a proportionate degree of grandeur, it is easy to conceive what an unwieldy mass the baggage of an Indian army becomes, and, as a natural result, how much the duties and anxieties of a rear-guard are increased.†

The force raised for Shah Sujah, and called his army, though commanded by Company's officers, and paid by the Company's treasury, mustered 6,000 men. The Bombay troops, under Sir John Keane, numbered 5,600, and the whole force amounted to 21,000 men. Mr. Macnaghten was the political agent, and was styled the envoy. The direct route to Cabul lay through the Punjab, but Runjeet Sing, though our ally, declined to grant the army a passage through his dominions, and thus it became necessary to take a circuitous route of 1,000 miles down the Indus, and then across it up to Candahar and Cabul.

The army was formed in two divisions: Major-General Sir Willoughby Cotton, G.C.B., K.C.H. was to command the first, and Major-General Duncan the second. The divisions comprised respectively the following regiments, brigaded under the officers whose names are given:—

First division of infantry, three brigades. First Brigade: Colonel Sale, C.C., H.M. 13th Light Infantry, 16th and 48th Native Infantry. Second

* "Army of the Indus;" *E. I. U. S. Journal*, 1838.

† "Four Years' Service with H.M. 40th Reg."

Brigade: Colonel Nott, 2nd, 42nd, and 43rd Native Infantry. Third Brigade: Colonel Dennis, H.M. 3rd Buffs, and 27th Native Infantry, and one company of sappers.

Second division of infantry:—Fourth Brigade: Lieutenant-Colonel Roberts, Bengal Europeans, 35th and 37th Native Infantry. Fifth Brigade: Lieutenant-Colonel Worsley, 5th, 28th, and 53rd Native Infantry, with one company of sappers.

The cavalry brigade, under Colonel Arnold of H.M. 16th Lancers, consisted of that regiment and two of native horse. Lieutenant-Colonel Graham commanded the artillery, which consisted of two brigades of horse, and three companies of foot artillery.

The Bombay force, under Sir John Keane, consisted of two brigades, under Colonels Wiltshire and Gordon. With the former were H.M. 2nd and 17th Regiments, with the 19th Native Infantry; and with the latter were three battalions of sepoys. The cavalry with this column consisted of two squadrons of H.M. 4th Light Dragoons, and the 1st Light Cavalry. Both corps had bodies of irregular horse.

The plan of the campaign had arranged that, while the Bombay column, proceeding by sea to the mouth of the Indus, should then disembark and operate upwards towards Bukkur, and from thence pass over the level plains of Beloochistan and the Bolan Pass upon Candahar, the Bengal force should concentrate at some convenient point near the frontier of the Punjab, from whence it might move upon Peshawur, and, penetrating the hills of the Khyberees, proceed by Jelalabad and the valley of Tizeen to Cabul. Both columns were led to expect great difficulties; it was known that the roads were little better than foot-tracks; that the tribes inhabiting the mountains were fierce and hostile; but, the friendship of Runjeet Sing being secured, and that of the Ameers of Scinde taken for granted, the possibility of a repulse or disaster was never for a moment contemplated.*

On the 27th of December, 1838, the army arrived at Bhawalpore, on the confines of the great Indian desert, the inhabitants of which are hardy wild Beloochees, and Afghans. The weather was cold, but clear and healthy, the country open as yet, and the supplies abundant. "These were the halcyon days of the movements of this force," says Sir Henry Havelock, who was then a captain in the Bengal force, which he describes as being animated by high military ardour. This was sorely tested by the constant desertions among the camp-followers, who carried

off the hired camels and left the officers without the means of transport. For much of this, it has been said, themselves alone were to blame, as most of them had too many camels, too much baggage, and tents that were too large. The consequence was that even in the most pleasant and convenient parts of the route, forage became so scarce that the condition of the animals was greatly impaired, and their deaths became of almost hourly occurrence. Many traders who had hired out their camels took the alarm, and as the most effectual means of avoiding danger, resolved not to face it. Their vicinity to the Great Desert rendered desertion easy, and the utmost vigilance of the cavalry patrols failed to prevent it. Hence, before six days' marches were accomplished, much of the private baggage, the bedding and camp equipage, had been stolen, lost, or abandoned.

Our faithful ally, the Khan of Bhawalpore, did all in his power on this occasion to provide for the comfort of our troops; but his means were very inadequate to his wishes, "and some complaints were made against him unreasonably, for not obviating or mitigating evils which, under the circumstances, were absolutely inevitable." Shah Sujah's contingent kept three days' march ahead of our advanced guard.

On the 1st of January the army marched, and prepared to enter the territories of the Ameers of Scinde. Great was the alarm of the latter, and deep their anxiety to avoid the fulfilment of any treaty with us. Long, and by various methods did they endeavour to protract the surrender of Bukkur, a stronghold upon a rock in the middle of the Indus, which, as forming a convenient place of arms, the general commanding was directed to occupy. But they yielded at length, and, with country boats, and planks mostly sawn from the date-trees that grew near, the mighty Indus was bridged.

The tides in this river present many peculiarities. They ebb and flow with great violence, particularly near the sea, where the country is frequently covered with water so deep that, should a vessel cast anchor in some places, she would run the risk of being left high and dry when the tide—at times nine feet in height—subsided. Hence the low lands at the mouth of the Indus present a most dreary appearance. Not a single tree is to be seen in the desert waste, overgrown with brushwood and jungle.*

When the invading army fixed upon Bukkur as the point at which the great river of Scinde was to be crossed, the Ameers were not consulted, neither

* See the Brigade in Afghanistan."

* United Service Magazine, 1839.

was their consent obtained. But Sir Alexander Burnes knew the tone to adopt with them, and they were simply told that "the Scindian who hoped to stop the approach of the British army might as well seek to dam up the Indus at Bukkur." The Ameers, as we have said, gave way, but stipulated that the forts on either bank of the river were to remain untouched. This was agreed to; but the great fort of Bukkur, on its rocky island in the Indus, guarding numerous tombs and shrines—the Mansurah of Arabian geographers,*—was it included in this stipulation? Distinctly it was not, though the object of Sir Alexander was to obtain, for the British, the use of it during the war; and Meer Roostum, the chief Ameer, finding resistance futile, allowed the cession to be added to the treaty in a separate article, concealing that unpalatable fact, in the meantime, from the other Ameers. When it was sent to him for ratification the aspect of the added article, to which he had always avowed repugnance, filled him with fresh disquietude.

"Bukkur," he exclaimed, "is the heart of my country. My honour is centred in keeping it; my family and children will have no confidence in me if it is given up."

He then offered another fort in its stead, or to give security that the British treasure and munition of war would be protected. These offers were declined; so the old man had to give his signature while other Ameers looked darkly and grimly on. "What more can I do now," he asked, in bitter irony, "to prove the sincerity of my friendship for your British Government?" "Give us orders for supplies, and place all the country, so far as you can, at our command!" replied the resolute Burnes. "After such a transaction," says Beveridge, "both parties must have been aware that, though the name of friendship might be used, nothing but hostility could be meant, and that the rulers of Scinde would to a certainty avail themselves of the first favourable opportunity of revenge."

Notwithstanding their religious prejudices, the sepoys in force crossed the Indus without hesitation, and planted the British flag upon its right bank; but then the most serious disasters of the army began, and the difficulties of the Bombay column were great.

Continuing their route south-westward, these troops arrived, on the 14th of January, at Subzul, at no great distance from the left bank of the Indus, and the first place that lies immediately beyond the frontier of Scinde. Then tidings came which changed the operation in the preconceived plan of

operations. Sir John Keane, who had reached the coast of Scinde with his troops in the end of November, 1838, was not permitted to land without opposition, and with the utmost toil and trouble, made his way to Tatta, a town about four miles in circumference, situated on a sandy and barren delta of the Indus, but which, however, produces rice and salt; and there he was obliged to halt. He was without proper means of transport, and the Ameers, on whose friendly aid he had been compelled to calculate, were intent only on obstructing him by all the means in their power. A limited supply of commissariat aid from Cutch enabled him to push on to the left bank of the river Jurruck, twenty miles south-westward of Hyderabad, and there he was obliged to halt again.

The Ameers of Hyderabad had given no consent to his passage through their country; this was an event that might well have been looked for, but no provision had been made for it, and all that could be done now was to remedy the blunder. By this time the Bengal column, as related, was at Bukkur, and Shah Sujah, with his own troops, had already crossed the Indus and joined Mr. Macnaghten and his suite at Shikarpore. Both the exiled prince and the envoy were bent on reaching the scene of active operations; but Sir Henry Fane, who—with the intention of sailing down the river, and taking ship for Europe, being in ill-health—was still accompanying the army as commander-in-chief, was of opinion that, to influence the Ameers, and give strength to Sir John Keane, the greater portion of the army, instead of crossing the river, should march down towards Hyderabad under Sir Willoughby Cotton.

This change was at once put in execution, and its propriety was soon confirmed by the urgent application of Sir John Keane for some horse artillery, cavalry, and a brigade of infantry. This march down the river's bank was hailed with joy by the troops, who considered that the siege and capture of Hyderabad would be a glorious preface to the campaign, while the enormous treasures which were said to be stored up there would give something more substantial than glory. But the reader must not confound Hyderabad of the Ameers with the city of the same name in Golconda. It is situated on a rock washed by a branch of the Indus, defended by walls and towers, and its inhabitants—about 5,000 in number—are famous for the manufacture of matchlocks, swords, shields, cottons, and ornamental silks. This downward movement, of which Mr. Macnaghten did not approve, brought the main business of the cam-

* Masson.

paign to a stand still; but eventually the Ameers of Hyderabad were thoroughly intimidated by the superior organization and discipline of their brothers and sons elsewhere; a small force seems to have dispersed the troops, who were anxious to storm the city, in which were gold and jewels to the value of eight millions sterling. "In a moment all our visions of glory and booty were dispelled," says Havelock, then a captain in the 13th Regiment; "it was announced to us that the Ameers were at length brought to a sense of their impending danger, and compelled to comprehend that as a few days would, according to every calculation of human prudence, deprive them at once of their independence, their capital, and the accumulated treasures of years, they had acceded to all the conditions of the treaty laid before them by Colonel Pottinger. . . . Vainly repining, therefore, at the change in events which had given this small sum (ten lacs) to the state, instead of eight crores to the army, its officers and men, with light purses and heavy hearts, turned their backs upon Hyderabad, from which they had hoped never to recede until they had made its treasures their own, and put to a stern proof that Beloochee valour which had so loudly vaunted its power to arrest their further progress, and fix on the bank of the Indus the war which they had set out to carry into the heart of Afghanistan!"*

The pressure put on the luckless Ameers must have been somewhat severe. The suspicion they had of what they openly called our "grasping policy," seemed confirmed now, when it was proposed that they should agree to receive a permanent subsidiary force, while a fourth article to the tripartite treaty was added in the following terms:—

"Regarding Shikarpore, and the territory of Scinde lying on the right bank of the Indus, the shah will agree to abide by whatever may be settled as right and proper, in conformity with the happy relations subsisting between the British Government and the Maharajah (Runjeet Sing), through Captain Wade." This treaty was concluded on the 26th of June, 1838, and on that day the political secretary of the Government sent a long letter to our Resident, enclosing a copy of the treaty and other documents, from which he sought to make the Ameers understand British intentions and motives, and telling him that the Governor-General had not made up his mind as to the amount which the Ameers might be fairly called upon to pay, but that the minimum would

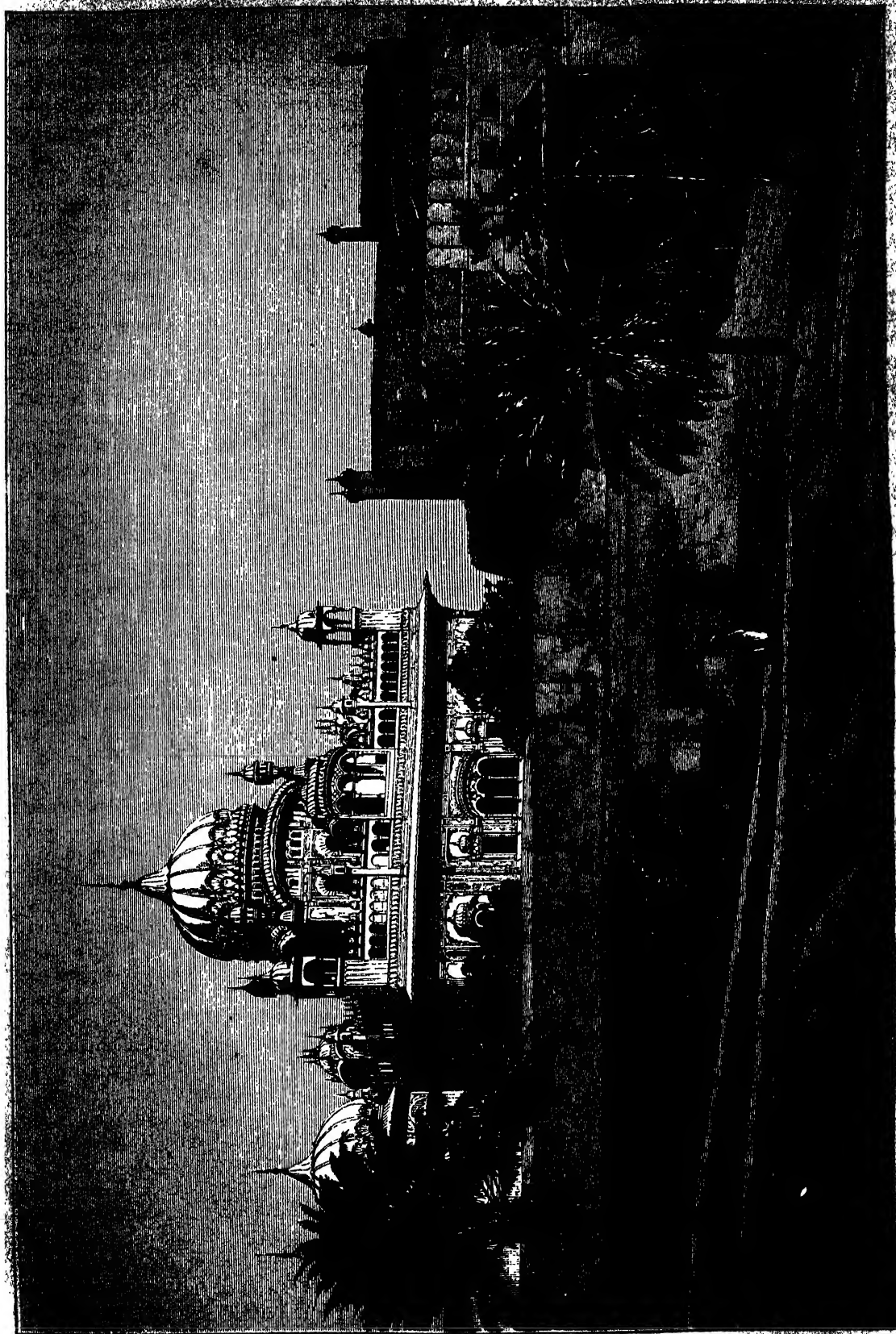
be about twenty lacs of rupees, or 2,00,000. The Resident added, that he would endeavour to prevail on Shah Sujah to reduce his claim on the Ameers to a reasonable amount, securing them the undisturbed possession of the territories they then held, with an immunity from all future claims on account of the pecuniary sacrifices.

This was simply extortion, in return for which, however, by the 16th article of the tripartite treaty, Shah Sujah agreed "to relinquish for himself and his heirs and successors, all claims of supremacy and arrears of tribute over the country now held by the Ameers of Scinde, on condition of payment to him, by the Ameers, of such a sum as may be determined under the mediation of the British Government, fifteen lacs of rupees of such payment being made over by him to Maharajah Runjeet Sing."

Thus the wily old Lion of Lahore contrived to secure the chief share of the money about to be so wantonly extorted by our mediation and revival of a long obsolete claim; but the rage of the warlike Ameers on hearing of the scheme for fleecing them, threatened seriously to upset all the plans of the Governor-General, and eventually the storm was arrested by a treaty with them early in the following year, and the advantages of it are thus summed up by Lord Auckland in a letter to the Secret Committee:—

"The main provisions of the proposed engagements are, that the confederacy of the Ameers is virtually dissolved, each chief being held in his own possessions, and bound to refer his differences with the other chiefs to our arbitration; that Scinde is placed formally under British protection, and brought within the circle of our Indian relations; that a British force is to be fixed in Lower Scinde, at Tatta, or such other point westward of the Indus, as the British Government may determine, a sum of three lacs of rupees per annum, in aid of the cost of this force, being paid in equal proportions by the three Ameers, Meer Noor Mohammed Khan, Meer Nusseer Mohammed Khan, and Mea Meer Mohammed Khan, and that the navigation of the Indus, from the sea to the most northern part of the Scinde territory, is rendered free of all toll. These objects are of high undoubted value, and especially so when acquired without bloodshed, as the first advance to that consolidation of our influence, and extension of the general benefits of commerce throughout Afghanistan, which form the great end of our designs. It cannot be doubted that the complete submission of the Ameers will go far towards diffusing in all quarters a conviction of the futility of resistance to our arms."

* "Narrative of the Campaign in Afghanistan," By Captain H. Havelock.



VIEW OF THE PALACE OF LAHORE.

command of the navigation of the Indus, up to the neighbourhood of the junction of the five rivers, will, by means of steam-vessels, add incalculably to the value of our frontier, and the free transit of its waters, at a time when a considerable demand for merchandise of many kinds will be created by the mere onward movement of our forces, will give a

spur to enterprise by this route, from which it may be hoped that permanent advantages will be derived."

The treaty referred to was signed by the Ameers on the 5th of February, 1839, and, as there was no longer any occasion for lingering about Hyderabad, the troops got once more into motion, for an advance to the front.

CHAPTER XV.

THE BOLAN PASS—THE MARCH TO CANDAHAR—THE STORMING OF GHUZNEE—CAPTURE OF CABUL AND RESTORATION OF THE SHAH

ACCORDINGLY, the Bengal army having crossed the Indus at Bukkur, reached Shikarpore, a town of Scinde, encircled by an ancient wall, nearly 4,000 yards in circuit, and having narrow streets that are poor and mean, with a bazaar roofed by palm leaves. This was on the 20th of February, and on the same day the Bombay column continuing its progress along the right bank of the Indus, arrived at the town and fortress of Sehwan on the right bank of the Arrul. The inhabitants of the former derive their chief support from the pilgrims who come from afar to the shrine of Lal Shah B , but their houses, though several storeys high, are entirely built of sun-baked mud. On the following day, Sir Henry Fane, who had now quitted the army and was hastening down the Indus to embark for home, arrived with his fleet of boats at the junction of the Arrul with that river, and after bidding farewell to Sir John—a veteran of the wars in Egypt, the West Indies, and the Peninsula—he continued his voyage. At Shikarpore, the plan of giving the lead to Shah Sujah's contingent was abandoned, and Sir Willoughby Cotton, leaving in his rear the 2nd Brigade under Colonel Nott, marched with his other two on the 23rd, after a three days' halt in the direction of Dadur, a walled town of Beloochistan, at the entrance of the famous Bolan Pass. The marches were always commenced in the night, by the light of torches, and continued till day-dawn.*

The country through which the route lay became almost a desert, 140 miles in length, and the effect of excessive fatigue and of bad forage grew more and more manifest. There was little water and not a blade of grass. The soil, if such it could be

called, was merely hard sand, thickly impregnated with sun-dried salt, which crackled beneath the hoofs of the sinking horses, and where a few stunted thorny shrubs alone gave evidence of vegetable life. The camels died by hundreds, says Marshman, and the mortality among the draught cattle, on which the subsistence of the army depended, was portentous. Amid this sterile waste, the flint stones lamed the poor patient camels, fatigue and want of pasture disabled the artillery horses, the mountain paths were strewn with tents, equipages, and stores of every kind, and the rivulet which flowed at the bottom of the ravine they were entering, was tainted with the carcases of animals.*

"From Rojhan," wrote Havelock, "to the town and mud forts of Burshaw, extends an unbroken level of twenty-seven miles of sandy desert, in which there is not merely neither well, stream, nor puddle, but not a tree, and scarcely a bush, or herb, or a blade of grass. Delay in such a place was impossible, and the army toiled on as well as it could to Burshaw, where many wells had been dug, and brackish water was supplied, but scantily. On the 6th of March the head-quarters were fixed at Bhaj, where water was found in abundance, with grain for immediate requirements, and then the army pushed on to where the desert of Cutch Gundava terminates, annoyed daily the while by armed marauders on both flanks. Three months had now elapsed since the tents had been struck at Ferozepore.

While the column of Bengal had been advancing thus, Sir John Keane was pushing up the western bank of the Indus, suffering but little, as a fleet of laden boats kept pace with him. On the 4th of

* "Rec. 26th Lancers," p. 104.

* "Hist. of India," 1853.

March he reached Luckiana, while his boats sailed on to Roree, and, as a portion of the Bengal force was still quartered there, Sir John, with formality, assumed the entire command of the army of the Indus.

At Roree the Indus is 1,000 yards broad; its banks were clothed with groves of date-trees, that covered the hills, and the level plains were green with corn and tamarisk-bushes *

On the 14th of March the leading column, consisting of the Horse Artillery, the 2nd Cavalry, H.M.'s 13th (styled Prince Albert's Own) Light Infantry, with the 48th B N I, started from Dadur, and pushed on to penetrate into the Bolan Pass, which gives the only practicable entrance into Afghanistan from the south-east. It is a succession of savage gorges and ravines, fifty-five miles in length, winding between masses of mountains that tower up to nearly 6,000 feet in height, between Dadur, in Cutch-Gundava, and the town of Shaml, in Beloochistan. These were then capped with snow.† The former place is situated on the most northern branch of a stream which issues from the pass. Along its bank the foot track winds, after passing some ancient shrines and ruined tombs, and, at about five miles from the town, the pass begins. At ten miles' distance, precipitous rocks, of appalling height, that nearly meet overhead and exclude the light, enclose a small oval valley, the hard surface of which is covered with stones and gravel, and which, after heavy rains, is converted into a deep lake, where the steepness of the surrounding precipices "would preclude the possibility of escape to an army caught in the torrent" ‡

Nor is this the only peril to be risked in these dreadful gorges. The wild mountaineers, concealing themselves within the dark caves of the rocks on each side, lay in wait for spoil, and on every available opportunity rushed forth to make a prey of any weary or footsore straggler, who was easily disposed of in the channel below. Such was the perilous place through which the British had now to penetrate. To conciliate, money had been liberally distributed among the rapacious mountaineers, on whose pacific professions, however, no reliance could be placed, but without encountering any hostile force, the army, which had entered the Bolan Pass on the 16th of March, emerged from it finally on the 24th, and entered the vast green plain of Shaml.

On the 26th, it encamped in the neighbourhood of Dadur, in Beloochistan, where the vegetation

showed many of the plants and trees peculiar to the north of Europe. It was a disappointment of Mehrab Khan, the Belooch ruler of Khelat, whose alleged failure to fulfil the conditions of a treaty made between him and Sir Alexander Burnes, brought down—at a future time—our vengeance on him, and cost him his life; but had he been so treacherous as it was alleged, he might have cut up our troops when entangled in the Bolan Pass. Sir Willoughby Cotton's orders were to halt at Quettah, which proved a peril and difficulty, for on leaving Dadur he had but one month's food. "Half that period had already elapsed, and the calculation now was, that were the march continued, and unopposed, only a few days' supplies would remain in store when Candahar should be reached. How much then must the threatened starvation be increased by the halt which had been ordered?" Hence a diminution of the daily consumption became imperative, and from the 28th of March the loaf of the European was diminished in weight: the native troops received only a half, instead of a whole *seer* (i.e., 2 lb weight) of prepared flour, and the wretched camp-followers received but a quarter of a *seer*.*

The energetic Burnes had just concluded a treaty with the Khan of Khelat, who, in return for the guarantee of his independence by the Governor-General, promised to yield a nominal allegiance to Shah Sujah, and that which was of much more importance, a supply of grain with many camels. At the same time, by his remarks, he showed an acute foreknowledge of all that was ultimately to ensue.

"The shah," said he, "ought to have trusted to the Afghans to restore him, whereas he is filling the land with Hindostances, an insult which his own people will never forgive him. This will never do. You British may keep him by main force for a time on the throne, but as soon as you leave the kingdom, your Shah Sujah will be driven beyond its frontier."

Sir John Keane, aware of the imperative necessity for advancing, came on with an escort, and on the 6th April established his head-quarters at Quettah, and it was generally believed in the army that when it entered the Kojuk Pass advantage would be taken by the natives of its formidable character, and there were difficulties in getting through it irrespective of Dacoits and other predatory hordes. Two divisions of the army of the Indus, the Bengal and the Bombay, were placed respectively under the command of Sir W. G. Campbell and General (afterwards Sir Thomas) Munro.

* Havelock's "Narrative."

* Rec. 16th Lancers "

† Rec. 4th Light Dragoons."

The latter appointment excited the dissatisfaction of General Nott, who was a senior officer, and deemed it a slight to the service; but Wiltshire was an officer of vast experience, who had first drawn his sword with H.M.'s 38th in 1800, and had served in nearly every war since that time: but "the commander-in-chief adhered to his arrangement, and Nott, after he had even gone the length of tendering his resignation, quitted the divisional command which he had held under Sir W. Cotton, to resume the command of the 2nd Bengal Brigade, with the additional mortification of knowing that it was to be left in garrison at Quettah, and consequently precluded from an active share in the coming struggle."

On the 7th April, the day after Sir John Keane's arrival, the army set forth for the scenes of its peril and glory; for it was now generally known, or reported, that the chiefs of Candahar were at last mustering for battle, and the terrible Kojuk Pass was named as the scene of it—all false alarm. However, one chief, Hadji Khan Kakur, at the head of a hundred lances, entered the British camp on the 20th of April, and gave his allegiance to the shah. This movement proved only to be one of many treacheries of which he had been guilty; but his present apparent defection, which had been bought by the bribe of 10,000 rupees, spread terror and doubt among the Barukzye chiefs, who knew not who might prove traitor next, and prepared for flight instead of fighting. On this being known, Sir John Keane placed Shah Sujah, who had been lagging in the rear, in front, with his own contingent, at the head of which he entered Candahar on the 25th of April, not only without opposition, but even with signs of welcome, bought, it was alleged, by gold, lavishly bestowed from the treasury at Calcutta.

The march to Candahar was long remembered with horror by those who had to perform it. In traversing the Kojuk Pass—in some parts of which the cliffs overhead met and reclined against each other—the battery and field guns were dragged up and lowered down its tremendous precipices by the European soldiers, while parched with thirst, and consumed by incessant fatigue;* and the march beyond it is thus described by Havelock:—"All ranks have been taught to understand to-day how little prized when plentiful, how outrageously demanded when scarce, is that bounteous provision for the wants of God's creatures—water! Weary of the delays which had kept us so long at Dundi Goolau we moved forward on the 21st (April, 1839) into the plains which we had sur-

veyed from the summit of the Kojuk Pass, recognising all the distinctive peaks of the scattered hills which we had observed from that commanding height. We saw them now magnified as we approached them, and casting a dark shade over the plains which they overhung. Anxious looks were from time to time cast towards those grim eminences, and their bases were carefully searched for any small stream which might supply the urgent wants of a thirsting force. It was not very pleasant to discover that this day, too, we must depend for a supply on the stream of a small and imperfect *kahreez*. Its water was brackish, and flowed scantily and sluggishly. Thousands of brass *lotas* and leathern buckets were soon dipped into the little channel, and though proper regulations were promptly established, one half the force had not been watered before scarcity commenced. Soon diluted mud alone could be obtained, and whole regiments, under a burning sun, with parched lips, sighed for night to cool them, and then for morning that they might move on to a happier spot. The troops were buoyed up towards evening with fallacious hopes of the waters of a spring, actually discovered in the hills, being brought down to their relief into the plain; but up to the hour of early march no stream had begun to flow into the dry bed of the nullah, on which so many were gazing in hope." On the following day he tells us that the army, unable to find water, was compelled to advance without it.

"Forward the brigade moved, to finish the second day's march of ten miles: their horses dropping from drought and exhaustion, as they toiled on, and leaving in the mountain passes traces of this day's sufferings and perseverance. When the cavalry had thus got over five miles—in the course of which British dragoons and native troopers were seen eagerly sharing their chargers' muddy and fetid water, drawn from puddles at the side of the road, the very sight of which would, in Hindostan, have equally sickened all to whom it was offered—they struck into a by-road on their left, and, winding their way by a narrow path through an opening in the undulating eminences, found themselves towards evening on the banks of a beautiful stream. The rush of unbridled indulgence of the troops and their horses into its waters, after all the privations of the morning, may fairly be described as uncontrollable. What moderation was to be expected from man or beast, breaking forth from the results of two days' unwilling abstinence?"

At last, on the 26th, they saw before them

* Marshman, vol. iii.

* Captain H. Havelock's "Narrative."

the ancient capital of the Dooranee empire, a welcome sight—Candahar—according to Elphinstone, a city of 100,000 souls, girt by walls, ditches, and ramparts, with all its canals and water-courses, its minarets, mosques, and domes, and, over all, the gilded cupola that covers the great tomb of Ahmed Shah, wherein the Dooranee lords who retire from the world, spend the last years of their lives in prayer and penance.*

By the 4th of May, the whole army of the Indus, save those troops left rearward in garrison at Bukkur, Shikarpore, and three other places, was encamped under the walls of Candahar, where the toils of the perilous march through the passes were replaced by a pleasant round of ceremonies and parades, kept up for the purpose of enabling Shah Sujah "to feel himself a king," as it was said.

The tents of the troops were pitched among grassy meadows, and fields covered with waving crops of wheat, barley, and lucerne, provisions and forage came regularly, and, though the men and horses recovered strength, a damp prevailed there which induced fever and dysentery. The 16th Lancers alone had eighty men in hospital, and the great heat in the tents, together with a saline impregnation of the water, augmented the number of sick.†

No military operations took place till the 12th of May, when it was deemed necessary to look after the fugitive Bunkrue chiefs. Accordingly, Brigadier Sale was dispatched in pursuit of them, at the head of a strong division composed mainly of the shah's contingent, and some Europeans, who followed them as far as the river of Afghanistan, named Helmund by Masson, and the Hir mund by Elphinstone, after which the chiefs succeeded in escaping into Persia. On the 28th Sale returned from his fruitless expedition, and on the same day an example was given of the lawless state of the country and the bloodthirstiness of its people. "In the environs of Candahar was a remarkable mount, forming one side of a pass, by skirting it, access was gained into a picturesque valley, planted with pine trees, and watered by the Ughandaub river. The officers formed parties of pleasure to visit this beautiful spot; their tents were pitched on the margin of the stream, and after amusing themselves with angling, they partook of an evening repast. On the 28th of May, two or two social fishing parties had been formed in the valley, and Lieutenants Inverarity and Wilmer, of the 16th Lancers, remained on the bank of the river until sunset. They sent their

servants, tents, and horses towards the camp, and followed leisurely and unarmed. The moon shone brightly, and Lieutenant Inverarity was walking a little in front of his companion, unconscious of danger, when he was suddenly attacked by a band of armed men. On Lieutenant Wilmer coming up, he was surrounded by about a dozen assassins, but he defended himself with his walking-stick for some time, and then, taking to flight, reached a camp of the shah's infantry, with a single wound on the face. An armed party returned with him, and found Lieutenant Inverarity alive, but he died soon afterwards."*

He was dreadfully mangled, and when the shah was informed of the atrocity, he simply said to the British officers about him, "Oh, gentlemen! you must be cautious here, remember, you are not in Hindostan."

During the halt at Candahar, Afghan horses were procured to remount the cavalry, the Bengal brigade of which had 701 dismounted men, whose chargers had perished.

On the 27th of June—the same day on which the old King of Lahore breathed his last—the army marched from Candahar. Dost Mohammed was in no wise overawed by its advance, and it was believed that a bloody contest alone would secure the conquest of Cabul. A garrison was left in Candahar, and another in Grishk, a fort beyond the Helmand. The guns and mortars of the siege-train, after all the toil and difficulty of dragging them through the Bolan and Kojuk Passes, were now left behind. As there had been no occasion to use them hitherto, it was unwisely supposed they might be dispensed with: a somewhat singular idea, when the strong fortress of Ghuznee—deemed of course impregnable by the Afghans—was in front, and yet to be captured, as it stood in the direct line of march to Cabul.

On the 21st of July the troops were before it. This fortified city—formerly the capital of an empire that extended from the Tiber to the Ganges, and from the Jaxartes to the Gulf of Persia—stands on a scarped rock 280 feet above a level plain, and is washed by a large stream. It is encircled by two stone walls thirty feet in height, flanked by strong towers. High over these, on the north, towers its citadel. The land it overlooks is richly cultivated, but its streets are dark and narrow. Three miles from the city stands the tomb of the Sultan Mahmood, the sandal-wood doors of which were brought by him as a trophy from the famous temple of Somnath in Goojerat. An idea prevailed that it

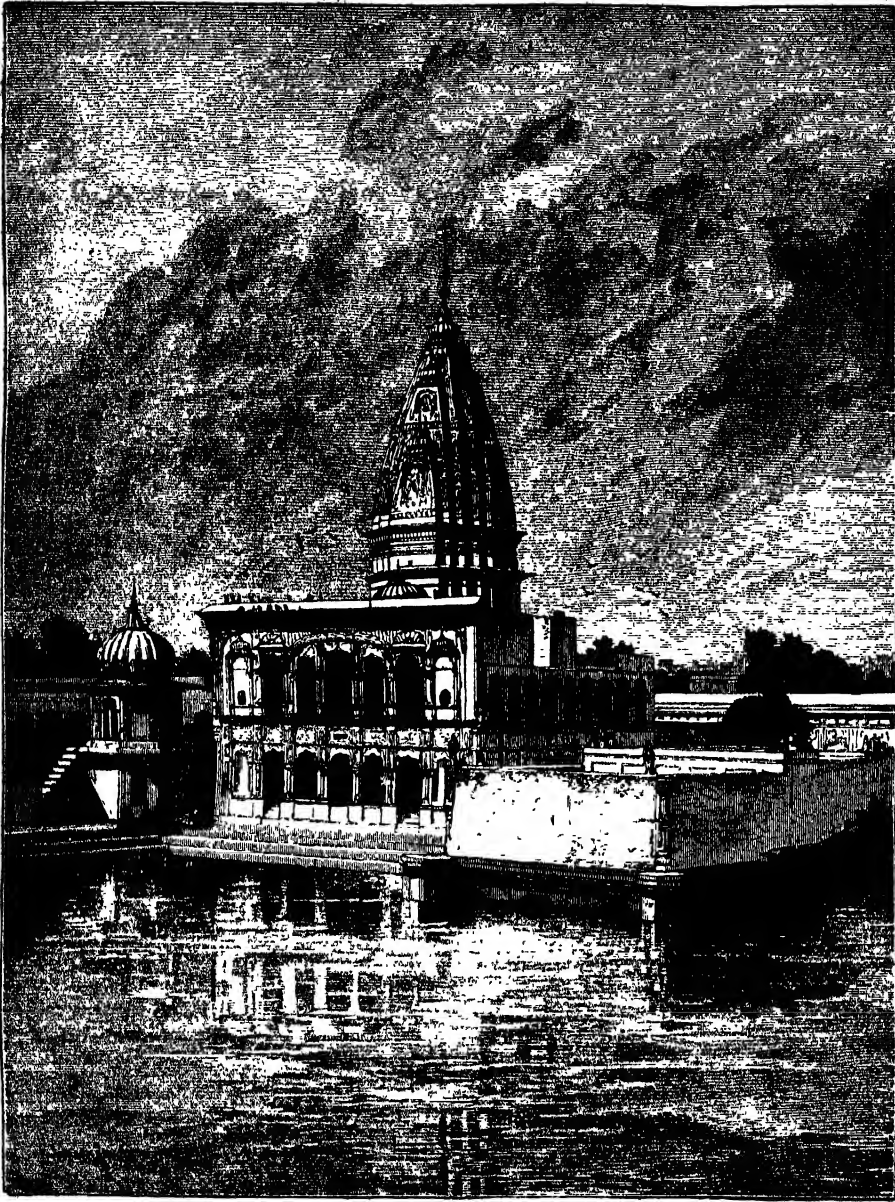
* Elphinstone, Conolly, &c.

† "Hist. Records, 16th Lancers."

* Ibid.

could be easily taken, as no defence would be made; but "we were very much surprised," says one who was well qualified to form an opinion, Captain Thomson, chief engineer of the army of the

nugatory. In addition to this, the towers at the angles had been enlarged; screen walls had been built before the gates; the ditch cleared out and filled with water (stated to be unfordable); and an



TOMB OF RUNJEET SING, LAHORE.

Indus, "to find a high rampart in good repair, built on a scarped mound about thirty feet high, flanked by numerous towers, and surrounded by a *fausse braye* and wet ditch. The irregular figure of the *enceinte* gave a good flanking fire, whilst the height of the citadel covered the interior from the commanding fire of the hills to the north, rendering it

outwork built on the right bank of the river, so as to command the bed of it."

The investing forces met with an unexpected advantage, which facilitated the capture. A nephew of Dost Mohammed deserted to them and afforded much valuable information. The gates were all found, according to the engineer's report, to be

secured by strong masonry, save the Cabul Gate, yet Major Hough, who was with the army, states that none of them were built up, and all were equally accessible.* Be that as it may, the engineers reported that as we had no battering train, the most feasible mode of attack was to blow open the gate with powder, and charge through the smoke, fire, and débris, into the heart of the place.

The garrison was 3,500 strong, having been largely reinforced from Cabul, by Hyder Khan, the killedar, and the Ghiljies, through whose rugged territory, studded with mountain forts, a retreat must have been conducted, had the attack failed. So far from cordially welcoming the shah, like most of

for the rear and much of the baggage, if not for the troops, as we were not to move till four in the afternoon, and the route for both columns could not well be known." Not a moment was to be lost in taking up the new formation.

A force under a son of the Ameer of Cabul had marched down to raise the siege, and was now not far off. The forces of the Ghiljies, Abdulruhman, and Gool Mohammed were in the field, and at no great distance. A body of armed fanatics who were banded for a religious war, hovered on the heights eastward of Ghuznee. "Reflections on these circumstances, and on our want of a battering train," says Havelock, "the glimmering of lights on the



ON THE RIVER SWAT, A TRIBUTARY OF THE CABUL.

their countrymen, they were quite disposed to take the first opportunity of showing how he and his allies were detested by them. On Sir John Keane resolving to burst open the gate, no time was lost in making the necessary preparations. At this crisis, the troops were without proper rations; they had undergone excessive toil, and the weather as usual, at that time of the year, in the hilly districts of Afghanistan, was cold, especially at night. The hungry and harassed soldiers had not been three hours encamped, when a change of ground was ordered, with reference to the intended attack, and to be able to face Dost Mohammed Khan, who was supposed to be pushing on from Cabul in person. "The movement was a delicate one," says Outram, "being a march in two columns, by two different routes; for it involved a night march

hostile battlements and in the plains, with the chill of the night air, effectually chased away slumber until day broke on the 22nd."*

As the dawn came in, the sick were still pursuing the toilsome march, and parties were sent out to urge them on. Many of the camp-followers lost their way and were seen no more. One writer affirms—but it seems an exaggeration—that of 100,000 persons of this description which left the Indus with the grand army, all, save 20,000, perished by the sword, famine, or cold.†

In a dash made that night by the brilliant Outram, among a band of hill fanatics, at the head of some of the shah's contingent, he captured the holy green banner, and brought many prisoners into the royal presence. Then a startling event

* "Narrative," vol. ii.

† "The Three Presidencies."

* "Narrative of the Afghan Campaign."

occurred. They cursed Shah Sujah to his face, and stabbed some of his officers; on this, he ordered sixty of them to be instantly executed, though Buist says that the number was thirty-eight.

The general orders of the evening of the 22nd July contained instructions for the attack:—

"At 12 p.m., the artillery will commence moving towards the fort, and the batteries will follow each other in succession at the discretion of the brigadier commanding. The guns must be placed in the most favourable positions, with the right above the village on the hill north-east of the fortress, and their left among the gardens on the Cabul road. They must all be in position before day-light. . . .

"The storming party will be under the command of Brigadier Sale, C.B., and will be composed as follows—viz., the advance, to consist of the light companies of H.M. 2nd and 17th Regiments, and of the 47th (Lancashire) Regiment, with a flank company of the 13th Light Infantry, under command of Lieutenant-Colonel Dennie, C.B.

"The main column will consist of H.M. 2nd Regiment; of the 47th Regiment, with the remainder of H.M. 13th Light Infantry formed as skirmishers on the flanks; the latter will push into the fort with the rear of the main column; H.M. 17th Regiment will be formed in support, and will follow the storming party into the works; the whole must quit their respective encampments in columns of companies at quarter distance, right in front, so as to ensure their arrival at the place appointed for the rendezvous by 2 o'clock, a.m.; at half-past 12 o'clock, the companies of the 13th Light Infantry, intended to act as skirmishers, will move up to cover in front of the gateway, and be ready to keep down any fire on the party of engineers who proceeded to blow it open; this last party will move up to the gateway before daybreak, followed slowly by the assaulting column. On the chief engineer finding the opening practicable, he will have the advance sounded, for the column to push on; when the head of the column has passed the gateway, a signal must be made for the artillery to turn their fire from the walls of the town on the citadel; at 12 o'clock p.m., three companies of native infantry (48th) will quit the camp, move round the gardens on the south of the town, where they will establish themselves, and about 3 p.m., open a fire upon the place for the purpose of distracting the attention of the garrison."

The infantry of the division, not required for active duty, were to form a reserve; so, to the Europeans was assigned the honour of assaulting Ghuznee, and such was their ardour, that when the hospital tents of the 17th Regiment were visited by

the surgeon, he found them empty, the whole of the sick had left their beds to join their comrades in the attack.

Stormy weather which prevailed throughout the night rendered all our movements inaudible. Ghuznee, amid the darkness, seemed to sleep in peace, and not a light ere long gleamed from amid the gloom that shrouded it, but after the attack commenced, such was the bellowing of the mountain wind, that when the three detached companies under Captain Hay opened fire, the sound of their musketry was unheard, though the red flashes were seen.

The explosion party on whom everything depended, consisted of Captain Peat of the Bombay, and Lieutenants Durand and Maclean of the Bengal army, with three sergeants and eighteen sappers, carrying 300 lbs. of powder in twelve bags, with a hose of seventy feet in length. Headed by Durand, the adventurous little band moved steadily, but stealthily on. The bags were placed, the hose laid, the train fired, and in two minutes the party had rushed to cover.†

Effectually the explosion did its work. A glare burst for an instant on the night, accompanied by a thundering crash; and with loud cheers, the stormers, led by Dennie, dashed on, while at the same moment, a brilliant blue light cast its ghastly glare from above the gate, at the approach of the engineers, which had not been unheard by the enemy, who were crowding to discover the cause, when the whole party were buried amid the ruins of the fallen gate and archway. Above even the roar of the musketry the British bugle rang out sharply the advance, and all poured on to the assault, which was nearly failing, through a momentary misconception of Brigadier Sale, that the avenue was blocked up. He actually ordered a retreat to be sounded, but it was unheard amid the tempest and the din of the musketry. Sale, one of the bravest among many brave men, now pushed on to succour Dennie, and a desperate struggle took place amid the shattered ruins of the gate, and there the brigadier had a narrow escape from the Afghans.

"One of their number," says his brother-officer Havelock, "rushing at the falling timbers, brought down Brigadier Sale, by a cut in the face with his sabre." The Afghan repeated his blow, as his opponent was falling, but the blow did not strike the edge of his sword, this time took effect, though with stunning violence. He lost his footing, however, in the effort, and

* Dr. Kennedy's "Campaign of the Army of the Indus"
† Thornton's "British India."

Briton and Afghan rolled together among the fractured timbers. Thus situated, the first care of the brigadier was to master the weapon of his adversary. He snatched at it, but one of his fingers met the edge of the trenchant blade. He quickly withdrew his wounded hand, and adroitly replaced it over that of his adversary, so as to keep fast the hilt of his *shansheer*. But he had an active and powerful opponent, and was himself faint from loss of blood. Captain Kershaw, of the 13th, A.D.C. to Brigadier Baumgardt, happened in the mêlée to approach the scene of conflict; the wounded leader recognised him and called to him for aid. Kershaw passed his drawn sabre through the body of the Afghan, but still the desperado continued to struggle with frantic violence. At length, in the fierce grapple, the brigadier for a moment got uppermost. Still retaining the weapon of his enemy in his left hand, he dealt him with his right, a cut from his own sabre, which cleft his skull from the crown to the eyebrows. The Mohammedan shouted, '*Ne Ullah*' (O God!) and never moved or spoke again." *

On regaining his feet, Brigadier Sale put himself once more at the head of the stormers, who were still fighting, and had yet to force their onward way. But ere long, the walls were everywhere won, although there was still much destructive street firing, and close conflicts between groups of Afghans and British soldiers. Sir John Keane, on perceiving the entrance fully achieved, ordered the cannonade to be turned upon the citadel, against which Sale now advanced at the head of his own regiment, the splendid 13th Light Infantry.

Meanwhile, Colonel Croker with the supports, came on, but slowly, as the débris of the gateway and the fallen masonry, together with the conveyance out of the wounded, greatly obstructed his advance, and enabled the Afghans in some numbers to regain the walls, and finding places of concealment, to pick off our men at their leisure. Hence it was not until the last of the supports passed fairly in, that all anxiety was over, and Mohammed Hyder Khan, paralysed by the suddenness of the whole attack, abandoned all resistance in despair, and H.M. 13th and 17th Regiments planted their colours on the citadel. These, as they floated out on the morning breeze, were greeted with loud and prolonged cheers by the whole army, and Azful Khan, a son of the ruler of Cabul, who, at the head of 5,000 horse, was hovering in sight of the place, when he saw the four standards floating on the embattled summit, turned and fled, pursued by our cavalry.

* "Narrative of the War in Afghanistan."

Once more the ramparts were swept, and a body of Afghans, uniting, made a gallant charge, sword in hand, to cut a passage to the gate. The way along which they rushed, with frantic and fanatic cries, was encumbered by groups of weary soldiers, by wounded in dhoolies, and riderless horses careering wildly about; and as the fugitives pressed onward, they cut and slashed at everything, even at the unfortunate horses, in the blindness of their fury, but their chief object was to destroy the maimed and the helpless. Our soldiers, filled with rage, now manned the narrow way, and the Afghans were shot or bayoneted to a man. Not one reached the shattered gate alive. In other quarters, houses had to be stormed, room by room, and the defenders bayoneted, ere Sir John Keane entered the city, escorting Shah Sujah to the fortress we had won for him.

In the defence, 500 Afghans perished, but many more in their furious attempts to escape. Our loss was 120, but not one officer was killed. 1,600 prisoners were taken, among them the governor, Hyder Khan (a brother of Dost Mohammed), whose sword was sold for £400, and presented to the commander-in-chief.^a The place was found to be provided with immense stores of grain and flour, which, with the horses, money, and arms taken, formed together a valuable booty.

Most honourable to the British army was the capture of this great fortress, alike for the valour and moderation displayed. Its fall excited consternation among the followers of Dost Mohammed, and Azful Khan, on seeing its capture, fled with such speed, that he left all his elephants and camp equipage behind him. His father was full of rage, and for a time refused to see him, but vowed he would struggle to the last. The mountain chiefs, however, from the moment tidings reached them, gave up his cause as hopeless; and one after another, as the army resumed its march, they hastened to offer their submission, till at last Shah Sujah seemed to have solid ground for boasting that he had not deceived his allies in the statements he had made, touching the enthusiasm with which his people would welcome his return.

The desperation of the Dost's position was apparent now to all. Early in the contest, supposing that the chief attack would be made in concert with the Sikhs by the Khyber Pass, he had dispatched his favourite son, Ackbar Khan, to that point, with the main body of his army, and was obliged to recall him in hot haste, when he became aware of the real quarter from which the greatest peril was to come.

* Letter of Lord Keane, *U.S. Mag.*

Left thus unguarded, the formidable Khyber Pass was easily traversed by that column of the army led by Colonel (afterwards Sir Claude Martin) Wade, and nominally commanded by the shah's son, Prince Timour, storming *en route* the fort of Ali Musjid, with the loss of 110 men. Hence, as Cabul was about to be attacked from two points, resistance seemed vain, and nothing remained but to negotiate, and the brother of the Dost, named Jubbar Khan, sanctioned by a council of war, was sent to the British camp to arrange about terms. For himself, provided he were guaranteed in the hereditary office of weezee, or prime minister, he offered to acknowledge Shah Sujah as his monarch, but instead of accepting his proposal, nothing was given to him but the option of accepting an honourable asylum in British territory, on condition of immediate capitulation. All negotiation now failed, and Jubbar Khan sullenly took his departure, whilst Dost Mohammed, gathering energy from despair, marched forth to give us battle, but the means to do so were failing him fast.

On all sides he was surrounded by the faint-hearted and the treacherous. Among these, threats, entreaties, and remonstrances proved unavailing, and his ranks thinned so fast, that but a few remained by his side, and on the 2nd of August, 1839, he fled westward in the direction of Bamian, pursued by Captain James Outram—the Outram of future glory—then aide-de-camp to Sir John Keane. In this duty he was associated with Hadji Khan Kakeer, who—ever a man of treachery—having command of the principal part of the horse employed, threw so many obstacles in the way, that the pursuit proved a failure.

The Afghan troops are hardy and brave. Their dress at this time was an ample turban, generally of striped blue cloth, for defence against cold and sabre-cuts. Their chief attire, the *keorta*, or shirt, is fastened down the right side with buttons or loops, not permitting any part of the body to be

seen, such being deemed highly indecorous. Over this is worn a camel's-hair cloak—red or yellow being the favourite colours; loose trousers and boots complete the dress. For arms, many wore, and yet use, helmets and breast-plates, sabres and flint-lock muskets, with bayonets of unusual length, fixed permanently to the muzzle. A shield is slung over the back, and their powder and bullets are carried in leather bottles attached to the waist-belt.

During Outram's pursuit, the army continued its march, and on the 7th of August, saw before it, Cabul, amid its bare and rocky hills, with its lofty walls and towering Balahissar, or citadel, its vast bazaars, forming one continuous street, and having a population, estimated by Vigne and Burnes in 1836, at 60,000 souls.

On that day, amid every martial pomp, Shah Sujah, mounted on a beautiful Cabul charger, in a dress resplendent with diamonds, emeralds, and rubies, was conducted through the narrow and gloomy streets to the Balahissar. "In these," says Havelock, "an ocean of heads spread out in every direction, the expression of countenances indicated a ready acquiescence, or something more, in the new state of things." But on the infidel soldiers who guarded him, "they poured a shower of maledictions."*

After making his way with difficulty through the dense throngs of people—fur-capped Persians, turbaned Afghans, red fezged Kuzzilbashs, all bristling with arms, Hindoos, Tajiks, Christians, Armenians, and most filthy Jews—on reaching the palace, he hurried up the great staircase, and literally ran with childish delight from one apartment to another. The great object of his ambition, after thirty years of exile, was at last secured. He was once more seated on the throne, and the thunder of our cannon, as their salutes woke the echoes of the city walls, and of the rocky hills of Bymaroo, must have been as music in his ears.

CHAPTER XVI.

DISSOLUTION OF THE ARMY OF THE INDUS.—CAPTURE OF KHELAT.—REVOLT OF THE GHILJIES.—THE CANDAHAR CONSPIRACY.—NOTT AND THE SHAH'S OFFICIALS, ETC.

LITTLE foreseeing the horrors that were in the future, our troops remained quartered in and about Cabul. Replying to the despatch, in which Sir John Keane announced the installation of Shah

Sujah, the Governor-General, after expressing his satisfaction, added: "It is to be hoped that the measure which has been accomplished, of restoring

* Marshman.

this prince to the throne of his ancestors, will be productive of peace and prosperity over the country in which he rules, and will confirm the just influence of the British Government in the regions of central Asia." The great object of the expedition—the substitution of a friendly for a hostile power in Afghanistan—was now accomplished, and the period had come, when, according to the Simla manifesto, our troops were to be withdrawn, but unfortunately the popularity of the shah proved a delusion, and within a fortnight after his entrance, Lord Auckland placed on record that "to leave him without the support of a British army, would be followed by his expulsion, which would reflect disgrace on Government, and become a source of danger."

It was determined, therefore, to leave a force of 10,000 men to maintain him on his throne, and it was no longer possible to doubt the truth of Wellington's prediction, that when once our army reached Cabul, the most difficult part of the task we had undertaken would begin.

Though the expedition was not barren in military glory, it was fertile enough in honours, to give *éclat* to our first success. Thus Lord Auckland was created an earl; Sir John Keane was made a peer of Britain, as Lord Keane of Ghuznee and Cappoquin, with £2,000 per annum; General Wiltshire, Colonel Pottinger, and Mr. Macnaghten were made baronets, and Colonel Wade was knighted; and, not content with all this, an Order of the Dooranee Empire was created, and while all this was in progress, the Afghans had begun to murder at Cabul, every officer and soldier they could find beyond the limits of the British camp.

It was now resolved that the two capitals of Cabul and Candahar, with the important posts of Ghuznee, Quettah, and Jelalabad should be garrisoned, after which the rest of our troops might take their way homeward to British India, the Bengal division by the Khyber Pass, and the Bombay division by the Bolan route. Instead of continuing his flight, Dost Mohammed had found an asylum in the wild and wide country beyond the Oxus, and—still ripe for mischief—was reported to be levying troops for a rough renewal of the contest, while the Ghiljies, with other mountain tribes, were giving unequivocal signs of hostility.

Ultimately, as in addition to all this, Shah Kamran at Herat, oblivious of the deliverance effected for him by our influence, was intriguing with Persia and Russia, which while verbally repudiating schemes of aggression, was dispatching an expedition against the Khan of Khiva, it was

resolved that the whole Bengal division of the army should remain in Afghanistan.

Under General Wiltshire, the Bombay column took its departure on the 18th September, 1839, and in this homeward movement was included a demonstration against Mehrab, the Khan of Khelat, who had broken certain treaties by which he was bound to furnish supplies for the British troops, and repress marauders, who had harassed its march. His excuses of inability were, perhaps, not without certain foundation; but some one was to be punished, a victim was wanted, and Mehrab was at hand. Thus, when General Wiltshire reached Quettah, he ordered the main body of his troops to push on through the Bolan Pass, while with a detachment, consisting of 1,000 infantry, six field-guns, the engineer corps, and 150 irregular cavalry, he marched alone. This was on the 4th of November. The 13th saw him before the picturesque and vast fortress of Khelat, situated about eighty-five miles to the south-westward of the Bolan Pass, and deemed the capital of Beloochistan.*

It is situated in a difficult and mountainous country; its site is commanding. It was well fortified and fully garrisoned by hardy warriors, under Mehrab Khan, a Beloochee chief of considerable influence, and when our troops were within two miles of his gates, a letter which was received from him—after all explanations and professions of friendship had proved unavailing—left no doubt that he would resist to the last. It referred to some negotiations alleged to be pending; directed that the British troops should halt till these were concluded, and defiantly threatened them with condign vengeance if they dared to advance; and to show that he really meant fighting, the march had barely been resumed, when a cloud of Beloochee horse came galloping up, and without a word of parley, poured a ragged volley from their matchlocks into the head of the column.

A nearer approach to Khelat showed that the long lines of crenelated wall, and the clustering mass of towers that rose in its centre, were crowded by masses of Beloochee warriors in their flowing and picturesque dress, while other masses, who disdained the protection of the ramparts, were formed in order of battle on some adjacent heights, resolved to try their strength with Wiltshire's little force. A few discharges of artillery put them to flight, and the infantry captured the heights without further trouble, and the success that followed was still more important. Khelat had only two gates; one was captured before the flying fugitives had time to close it, the other was blown

* Kennedy's "Campaign," &c.

in by the cannon, and at both points the troops rushed in. The slaughter was great, for the united Beloochees and Afghans, led by Mehrab, now fought with reckless bravery, after they had retired into the citadel. Wiltshire ordered the gates to be blown in by gunpowder bags, but ere this was done, the effective fire of our artillery rendered it unnecessary, and the capture was soon complete. Mehrab died sword in hand at the head of his adherents. Outram computes the prisoners at 2,200, and the slain at a fourth of that number. Our losses were 37 killed and 107 wounded.

ment of sappers and miners, with a rissala of Skinner's Horse, to be stationed at Jelalabad; Ghuznee to be garrisoned by the 16th Native Infantry, a rissala of Skinner's Horse, and such details of H.M. Shah Sujah's troops as are available. The whole to be under the command of Major Mac-laren. Candahar will have for its garrison the 42nd and 43rd Native Infantry, 4th company, 2nd battalion of artillery, a rissala of the 4th Local Horse, and such details of H.M. Shah Sujah's troops as may be available. Major-General Nott will command."



INTERIOR OF A TURCOMAN TENT.

Although the Bombay division had begun its homeward march, the final arrangements for the occupation of Afghanistan were not announced till the 2nd of October, 1839, when it was intimated in general orders, that the whole of the 1st (Bengal) division of Infantry, the 2nd (Bengal) Cavalry, a battery of light guns, and a detachment of sappers, were to remain under the command of Sir Willoughby Cotton. A subsequent order fixed the posts of the army of occupation thus:—"H.M. 13th Light Infantry, 3 guns of No. 6 light field battery, and the 35th Native Infantry to remain in Cabul, and to be accommodated in the Balahissar. The 48th Native Infantry, the 4th Brigade, and a detach-

On the 15th of October, Keane set out for India, escorted by H.M. 16th Lancers, who, in fording the rapid Jhelum, had one captain, 10 troopers, and 13 horses swept away. He took his way by the Khyber Pass. Shah Sujah also quitted Cabul to avoid the severities of the coming winter, and went to Jelalabad, leaving the envoy, Sir Alexander Burnes behind, to act as his substitute, but the native administration was committed to most unworthy hands, who, instead of reconciling the fierce and suspicious Afghans to the new régime, infuriated by extortion and general mismanagement of everything, while a hatred of the British, and contempt for them too, grew strong and deep.

In the January of 1840, the snow fell to the depth of five feet; the unfortunate sepoys—the men of hot and sunny regions—suffered terribly; even the British soldiers were most indifferently supplied with clothes and bedding, and the hardy Afghans, with derisive scorn, saw them shivering on frozen mountains and snow-clad table-lands. The latter, however, remained inactive till the

Russia in all her attempts upon this land—a continuous waste of mountains, forest, and desert—was the general security of her frontiers, from whence numbers of her subjects were annually dragged into slavery by the Kirghiz, and to ensure the safety of the caravans which annually proceed to Bokhara and Thibet; but the Emperor had another motive. The Earl of Auckland, in his



VIEW OF THE HINDOO COOSH MOUNTAINS.

approach of spring, and then the Ghiljies and other powerful clans began to muster their cavalry for the attacks on our outposts; at the same time the people dwelling on the hills, and in the secluded glens, would neither give tribute to the shah, nor sell provisions to his unwelcome allies.

The Russian expedition to Khiva, a khanate of central Asia, comprehending all the tract north of the Attrack river, and from Elburz to the Sea of Aral, now raised the suspicion of our officers in Afghanistan, but more especially those of Macnaghten and Burnes, to fever-heat. The professed object of

Simla manifesto, had stated that our expedition was also "to give the name and just influence of the British Government its proper footing among the nations of central Asia;" but the hot spirit of Macnaghten was disposed to develop this policy to an extent that startled our Government. He sent a military force beyond Bamian to depose an Usbec chief and instal another, a measure by which he spread alarm through all Turkestan. Major Todd, who had been sent as our envoy to Herat, was strengthening its fortifications, and had dispatched one of his assistants to offer our friendship

to the Khan of Khiva. This official exceeded his instructions, and proposed an alliance, offensive and defensive, which Lord Auckland immediately disavowed. A mission was also sent to Bokhara, whose barbarous khan had commenced that series of outrages which culminated in the atrocious murders of Colonel Conolly and Major Stoddart. "If we go on at this rate," said Baron Brunnow significantly to Lord Palmerston, "the Cossack and the sepoy will soon cross their bayonets on the Oxus." But the Russian expedition proved a failure, and the general had to return, leaving the half of his force dead among the snowy deserts.

As soon as winter was past, Shah Sujah returned to Cabul about the end of April, 1840, when the state of his kingdom was becoming more unsatisfactory than ever, Dost Mohammed, hovering at that time in the territories of the Wullee of Khoolum, whose people were Tajiks, Afghans, and Usbec Tartars, was in dangerous proximity to the frontiers of the shah, and a recent event would, it was expected, precipitate hostilities. Before his arrival at Khoolum, his family, who had been residing there in the care of his brother Jubbar Khan, were handed over as prisoners to the officer commanding our post at Bamian, with no other stipulation than that they should be kindly treated. It was supposed that now we held hostages for the good behaviour of the Dost; but it was soon shown that he cared not for this arrangement. When reminded that by hostility he would expose his wife and children to danger—"I have buried them," was his grim and pointed reply, and in concert with the Wullee he continued to levy troops, to measure swords with us once more in Afghanistan.

Signs of the coming storm were not wanting elsewhere. The Ghiljies, who occupy the mountains between Candahar and Cabul, had never ceased to be hostile, and had now begun to commit such ravages that it became necessary to send a detachment for their repression. After flying to the north, when a few months had passed, the chiefs ventured to return, to re-occupy their forts, and to resume their depredations more boldly than ever. In consequence, General Nott, commanding in Candahar, was compelled in April, 1840, to attack them. The force at first employed consisted of only 210 sabres of Shah Sujah's 2nd Cavalry and the 4th Local Horse, under Captains Taylor and Walker, with a party of infantry under Captain Codrington, and some of the shah's infantry; but so great was the resistance they experienced, that it became necessary to reinforce them by H.M. Northumberland Fusiliers and four horse artillery guns, under Captain Anderson. The

Ghiljie chiefs, now in open revolt, were found in position 3,000 strong, on the 16th of May, at Tazee, on some heights. Notwithstanding his inferiority in numbers, Captain Anderson, commanding the whole, attacked them. They fought with dauntless bravery; and after suffering from a destructive artillery fire, gave way before the bayonet, and fled into the recesses of the mountains. But notwithstanding this, the revolt seemed to gather strength, for these free men of the hills felt, with justice, that we had no right to be among them; and so large a body gathered at Khelat-i-Ghiljie, that preparations on a greater scale became necessary, and General Nott received orders from Sir Willoughby Cotton to tranquillise the Ghiljie country. The former was convinced that the insurrection would prove less formidable than it was supposed to be at head-quarters, but being somewhat apprehensive of a rising in Candahar, took with him only a detachment of the 43rd Native Infantry; and the sequel proved the truth of his anticipations, as the Ghiljies fled and their chiefs submitted. Then, to keep them in awe, a permanent force was posted at Hoolan Robart, commanding a mountain pass of the same name; and as it was doubtful if even this would ensure tranquillity, it was agreed to pay a "black mail" of £3,000 yearly to the chiefs, on condition that they should give a free passage through their country, and abstain from marauding.

General Nott was not without solid reasons for his fears of a rising in Candahar. Letters had been found on some of the prisoners taken by Captain Anderson at Tazee, from which it was learned that certain chiefs resident in that city were in full hope that, if the garrison were greatly weakened by a Ghiljie expedition, they might effect a rising, and massacre every Briton and Hindoo in Candahar. The fact that such a plot had been formed was a strong proof of the general hatred with which Shah Sujah and his allies were regarded. And there was good reason for this in the conduct of his heir-apparent, Prince Timour, who was ruling in Candahar as the representative of his father, and in this capacity plundered, oppressed, and outraged the people shamefully. Their houses were entered, their crops cut down, and themselves cut, wounded, and shot by his followers. In one instance, at Hoolan Robart, General Nott caused the plunderers and their spoil to be seized, and intimated to the prince, and to Captain Nicolson, our political Resident, that he did not wish to interfere with the royal servants, but as the pillage had been brought into the British camp, the people looked

to him for redress. This he gave them effectually; he had the prince's people tied up and well flogged in presence of the oppressed, to whom he restored their property, and sent them away exulting.

Against these stern measures Captain Nicolson protested, and though they were absolutely necessary for the repression of the bad feeling that was growing up on all hands against the restored royal family, eventually General Nott's procedure was disapproved of by the Governor-General, and by the envoy, Sir William Macnaghten.

The censure of Nott for an alleged encroachment on the royal dignity was a species of triumph to the envoy, who had represented it in strong terms at Calcutta; but the fact of his doing so soon added to the difficulties of his position, and these were increasing fast. So far from settling down into tranquillity, the country was becoming more and more discontented; and the same spirit exhibited by the Ghiljies and the people of Candahar prevailed everywhere. On the fall of Khelat, the territory was annexed to the dominions of Shah Sujah, and the government of it was bestowed on Newaz Khan, who was supposed to be friendly to British interests. He was a collateral branch of the ruling family, a circumstance which only made him more hated by the Beloochees; and of this feeling the young son of the fallen Mehrab Khan was quite ready to avail himself.

He displayed his father's banner, and the tribes rallied round him. Though the danger had been foreseen, no precautions were taken; the revolted made themselves masters of the city. Newaz fled, and the son of Mehrab was seated on the throne, while our troops were made prisoners; and one of them, Lieutenant Loveday, after several months of severe captivity, was most barbarously murdered.

And now several disasters befell the British troops. "During our long campaign in Scinde and Afghanistan," says Captain Neill, "many a gallant soldier fell; but among the noble spirits that fled, there was not one more chivalrous and daring than Walpole Clarke." This officer, a lieutenant of the 2nd Bombay Grenadiers, had, for his bravery, been appointed to a corps of Scinde Irregular Horse, and early in May left the fort of Kahun, about twenty miles west of Suleiman Mountains, in south-eastern Afghanistan, with a convoy of camels, escorted by fifty horse and 150 foot. His object was to obtain supplies. Having marched about twenty miles, on his return to Sukkur, he directed a portion of the infantry to return to Kahun, and the rest to bivouac. In this position he was attacked by more than 2,000 Beloochees. Leaving his troopers

to protect the camels, he dashed against the enemy at the head of his little band of infantry. He was soon shot down. They perished to a man, fighting desperately to the last; and the cavalry, overpowered by numbers, fled on the spur. All the stores were taken by the elated Beloochees, who overtook the party on the march to Kahun, and left none alive to tell the tale.*

Shortly after, the fort itself was attacked, and its little garrison, though ably led by Captain Brown, of the 50th Native Infantry, while making a stubborn defence, was in danger of being starved into a capitulation; and in August occurred that episode which was known as "Clibborn's disaster," which, says Captain Neill, was, "in all its results, a most painful and calamitous event, evidencing, as it did, gross ignorance of the country, or a recklessness utterly indefensible in sending a detachment on a most difficult service, by a route almost impracticable."

On the 12th of August, Major Clibborn, of the 1st Bombay Grenadiers, to relieve Captain Brown, was dispatched from Sukkur, with a convoy of 1,200 camels and 600 bullocks, escorted by 464 bayonets and thirty-four artillerymen with three twelve-pound howitzers. At Poolajec he was reinforced by 200 irregular horse, and proceeded through a country the natural obstacles of which were of the most formidable nature. On the 31st of August he reached the Pass of Nuffosk, the aspect of which might have appalled even Swiss or Scots mountaineers. There the precipitous hills start to a vast height, sheer from the plain. The path to be traversed led zig-zag up the front of one, the crest of which was black with the gathered bands of the enemy, who, the moment that Clibborn's convoy came in sight, fired a beacon-light to alarm the whole country. The troops were already exhausted by a long march, and were parched with thirst, which there was no means of alleviating; yet the gallant Clibborn resolved at once to storm the pass—and terrible was the sequel. After the storming party had struggled breathlessly upward to the head of the pass, they were assailed by a literal tempest of rocks and stones from the summits above it, mingled with a murderous musketry fire, which it was impossible to return with the least effect. Then the wild Beloochees rushed down, sword in hand, and bore all before them. They cleared the pass of all but the dead and dying, and rushed, yelling, on the muzzles of the guns before they could be repelled. Their loss is unknown. Of Clibborn's men 150 fell; and during the conflict the camel-drivers plundered the

* "Four Years in H.M. 40th Regiment."

stores and absconded, taking with them also the horses of the artillery, which had to be abandoned, with the camp-equipage and everything else; while, with the loss of many more lives, Clibborn effected a retreat to Poolajee, more than fifty miles distant. Left thus unsuccoured, Captain Brown, having only a garrison consisting of three sepoy companies, with one gun, had to capitulate; but his bravery won him most honourable terms, which were not violated.

Outbreaks were now taking place over all the country; but the most serious as yet was that of Nusseer Khan, the son of Mehrab, at Khelat, which General Nott, in obedience to an order dated 3rd September, 1840, prepared to re-capture. The terms he was to offer were unconditional surrender, and an assurance that Nusseer Khan would be recognised by the Government of Britain and Cabul as the lawful chief of Beloochistan on his immediately paying personal homage to Shah Sujah-ul-Mulk. In one of his letters, General Nott expresses his disgust at this document.

"Our authorities talk big for a day or two," he wrote, "and then send me instructions to offer terms to a boy, declaring that they will place him on his father's throne, and thus they disgrace the character of our country. Had they taken this boy by the hand when he was a wanderer in the land of his ancestors, there would have been a generous and honourable feeling; but to bend the knee to him and his bloody chiefs now is disgraceful."

Swearing that he would accept no terms, but have vengeance for his father's fall, the young khan breathed only defiance, when he marched in the direction of Moostung, and, on the 29th of September, was within sixteen miles of that place, where Nott, with only 600 men, had halted, to await certain reinforcements he had been led to expect. Nusseer, notwithstanding his overwhelming force, evinced no intention of fighting, so various movements ensued. Nott had reached Moostung on the 25th of October, while the young khan moved rapidly on Dadur, a walled town of considerable size in Cutch-Gundava, near the eastern entrance of the Little Bolan Pass. He attacked our post there on the 30th and 31st, but the approach of a small detachment under Major Boscawen compelled him to retire in such haste, that he abandoned his camels and camp; and in a very handsome European tent was found the mangled body of young Lieutenant Loveday, who had been our political agent at Khelat.

"When Nusseer Khan went on any of his expeditions," says Captain Neill, "Loveday was invariably taken with him, being carried about in a

kajavañ (a sort of chair, placed like a pannier on either side of a camel), to which he was chained, exposed to the burning heat of the climate, and almost entirely divested of clothing. When found, his head was nearly severed from the trunk, which was yet warm, and the galling chain had struck into, and grated on, his weak and emaciated body. Poor fellow! it was hard to die, when imagination must have been whispering hopes of future enjoyment, and a speedy restoration to his friends and countrymen—and yet death must have been a release." * The order given had been, that the last man who quitted the camp was to murder the European captain.

Nusseer Khan's flight at Dadur opened the path to Khelat, and as Nott advanced, the former fled before him; thus, the capital of Beloochistan was re-won without effort; but now, the next source of anxiety was Dost Mohammed, whom we last left levying troops to war in Afghanistan.

Approaching Cabul with some 7,000 Usbecs, he resolved to cross the Hindoo Coosh and raise the war-cry of the Prophet, and hoping to gather strength from the unpopularity of the shah, to march in triumph to the capital. Encountered and defeated by Colonel Dennie, he entered Kohistan, or the mountains north of Cabul, where the same chiefs, who, on the Koran, had but lately sworn fealty to the shah, now joined his standard, till he was once more attacked and routed by Sir Robert Sale.† After hovering for three weeks among the hills, he descended in the Nijrow valley, the people of which are Tajicks, near Cabul, which was filled with consternation. Our alarm-guns thundered from the Balahissar, and the troops got instantly under arms. But on the 2nd of November, Sale, the indefatigable, who had been relentlessly in pursuit of him, came upon him in the valley of Purwandurra. "The heights were bristling with an armed population, but the Dost had only 200 horsemen with him. The 2nd Cavalry charged down upon him, and he resolved to meet the charge manfully. Raising himself in the stirrups and uncovering his head, he called upon his troops in the name of God and the Prophet to aid him in driving 'the accursed infidels from the land.' The cavalry troopers fled from the field like a flock of sheep; the European officers fought with the spirit of heroes till three were killed and two wounded. Sir Alexander Burnes, who was in the field, wrote a hasty note to the envoy to assure him that nothing was left but to fall back on Cabul, and concentrate

* "Four Years with the 40th Reg."

† "Personal Narrative," &c. By Col. Deane, C.B., Dublin, 1843.

our force for its defence. The note was delivered to him next afternoon as he was taking a ride, when, to his surprise, Dost Mohammed suddenly presented himself, and dismounting, gave up his sword, and claimed his protection.*

"Even in the moment of victory," the fallen prince said, "it would be impossible to continue the contest; and having met his foes in the open field and discomfited them, he could claim their consideration without indignity."

The Dost rode with Sir William into our cantonments, where his frankness, courtesy, and dignity, won him the sympathy and admiration of all, emotions that were assuredly by no means lessened when he was contrasted with the old puppet-king in the Balahissar of Cabul. He was sent with every honour to Calcutta, where Lord Auckland assigned him a suitable residence, with an annual income of two lacs of rupees, or £20,000 sterling.

CHAPTER XVII.

CAPTURE OF ADEN.—DISTURBANCES IN AFGHANISTAN.—THE MARCH OF SALE'S BRIGADE, ETC.

BEFORE continuing the narrative of events at Cabul, it is worth while to note an important acquisition made in our overland route to India by the Government in 1839, when, in consequence of an act of piracy committed on a Madras vessel in 1837, we took possession of that desolate place of rocks and ashes, of old the fabled Rose Garden Irem, "adorned with lofty buildings, the like whereof hath not been erected in the land,"† and where the famous Albuquerque, in his attack in 1513, and Lope Soarez eight years after failed.

In the January of 1839, a squadron, consisting of H.M.S. *Volage* and *Cruiser*, with five of the Company's ships, under Commander Haines and Captain Smith, having a body of troops on board, appeared off the black, calcined, and ashy-looking shore of Aden, the hills of which vary in height from 1,000 to 1,200 feet. Under Major Baillie the troops consisted of the Bombay Europeans, the 24th Native Infantry, the 6th Battalion of Gholandazees, and a company of the 2nd Artillery. On the morning of the 19th all were in readiness for landing. The *Volage* and *Mahi* leading the way came to anchor at 300 yards' distance from the lower Arab battery, from which, while they were standing in, the enemy opened a fire of great guns and musketry, but the shot passed high in the air. The battery was soon knocked to pieces, and some of its guns were dismantled; but from behind the ruins a fire was maintained with small arms. Our guns then opened on a round tower and some batteries that were on the heights and full of matchlock-men. Though the former was sixty

feet high and strongly built, it was beaten to shapeless ruins in an hour. Meanwhile, the *Coote*, with the 2nd Division of the troops on board, was bombarding the town from the southward. On the fire of the enemy ceasing, the troops landed, and a dash was made at a 68-pounder (in battery), the fire of which had been obnoxious. It was taken, and the British flag was planted by Mr. Rundle.*

The guns were everywhere spiked; 139 Arabs were made prisoners, and sent on board the *Volage*, but effected their escape after killing and wounding eight men with their creeses. The Pierzadeh, on the tomb of the Mohammedan patron saint of Aden, displayed a flag of truce for the protection of a host of the inhabitants who had taken shelter there, and it was of course respected. There were taken in Aden considerable quantities of arms and ammunition, together with 33 pieces of cannon, one an 85-pounder of brass. Several of these had been conveyed there by Soliman II. during the conquest of Arabia, "and these it was the wish of the captors should be presented to her Majesty." Since then we have had possession of Aden as a port and coaling station, but agreed to pay the Sultan of Lahedge an annual sum of 8,700 German crowns for it in perpetuity.

The removal of Dost Mohammed rid Shah Sujah of the only rival to the Afghan throne who had any prospect of success, and now the envoy Macnaghten sanguinely expressed his conviction that peace was ensured, but when 1840 closed, his anticipations seemed somewhat premature. In Zémindawer, a place westward of Candahar, a body of men revolted, and, led by a chief named Akur

* Marshman's "India."

† Koran, chap. lxxxix.

* Despatches in *Bombay Gazette*, Feb., 1839.

Khan, dispersed a party of the shah's troops when collecting the revenue. Captain J. J. Fanington, who had been detached from the city with a party, attacked the khan, who had 1,500 men, on the 3rd January, 1841, and defeated him, after a sharp contest. The most alarming feature in this petty insurrection was, that it consisted entirely of Dooranees, who, as the hereditary enemies of the Barukzyes, ought to have zealously supported Shah Sujah.

And now Yar Mohammed, feeling his power in the ascendant at Herat, had quarrelled with the British envoy, and threatened to march against Candahar, and as a preliminary thereto, had fostered the discontent under Ackbar Khan, who once more appeared in arms, but whom Lieutenant Elliot, the officer entrusted with the settlement of the district, was desired to conciliate rather than fight, and the bad effect of purchasing his submission by degrading terms was plainly foreseen by Colonel (now Sir Henry) Rawlinson, our Resident at Candahar, who informed Macnaghten that the tranquillity thus procured would be very temporary, and the accuracy of his views was soon confirmed by the restless Ackbar Khan, who appeared at the head of 6,000 men, near Ghiresk, on the west bank of the Helmand, formed in six columns, with a priest at the head of each, and a banner inscribed, "We have been trusting in God; may He guide and guard us." He kept complete possession of the district till more powerful reinforcements came up, and he was not crushed till he had tried his strength in a regular conflict with our troops under Colonel Woodburn.

This Dooranee affair set the ever restless Ghiljies tribe once more in motion. They are a fine muscular race, expert in the use of arms, and able to bring 40,000 men into the field—men characterised by an intense ferocity of disposition, and whom neither power nor money may repress. Proud of their boasted independence, their fears were roused on finding that, to keep them in check, our garrison had been strengthening the defences of their capital, Khelat-i-Ghiljies, and to bring about a rupture, they insulted the Resident, Lieutenant Lynch, when riding near a fort in its vicinity, and he deemed it necessary to punish this insolence, lest others might imitate it. He attacked the fort and

captured it, slaying the chief and many of his people. Instead of his gallantry and promptitude being commended, he met with reprimand from the envoy, and was removed by the Governor-General.

Whether forbearance on Lynch's part would have prevented what followed it is difficult to say, but a formidable insurrection immediately followed. Reinforcements were sent from Candahar, under Colonel Wymer, who, on halting on the 29th of May, 1841, at Eelmee, on the banks of the Turnuk, was informed that a strong body of Ghiljies, under two chiefs, were on their way to attack him. He had barely time to take up a position ere they were upon him. Advancing with impetuosity, they came within 900 yards, when our guns opened on them with grape. Though suffering greatly, in obedience to some pre-arranged plan, they broke into three separate columns, for the purpose of making three simultaneous attacks upon Wymer's front and flanks. His force was slender, and being encumbered by a large convoy, was compelled to remain simply on the defensive, and allow the Ghiljies, 5,000 strong, to come on, sword in hand. The infantry file-firing seconded the showers of grape, which told on them with fearful effect, causing the masses to reel and break; but again and again these mountaineers renewed the



PORTRAIT OF ACKBAR KHAN.

attack, nor were they defeated, till after the conflict had lasted five hours. Many hundreds of them were inhabitants of Candahar, to which they quietly returned after their rout, carrying with them the wounded.

These repeated chastisements gave some prospect of tranquillity, but only for a time. Ackbar Khan and Azmal Khan, two of the revolted chiefs, who had returned to their respective forts of Dirawut and Tizeen, sixty miles north of Candahar, when summoned to submit, answered with proud defiance, and once more began to muster their spears and matchlock-men, exciting thereby so much alarm, that a large portion of the troops in Candahar was detailed to act against them; and General Nott, after receiving some very contrary instructions, on finding himself left to his own discretion, put himself at the head of the expedition on the 29th September, and advanced into the disturbed districts with such a display of force as to compel chief after chief, without having recourse

to fighting, to submit to the authority of Shah Sujah. As it was evident that the rule of that prince would never be completed while "the accursed infidels" garrisoned the country, and would be at once shattered if they withdrew, it was resolved that we should remain in Afghanistan; and, without increasing the army, to reduce the expenditure but make a new loan, as the expenses of the war had drained the treasury at Calcutta.

to the politics of Afghanistan, and cared not who ruled so long as their franchise was not invaded. The stipends now reduced had been guaranteed to them when we took possession of the country, and they had performed their part of the contract with exemplary fidelity. They had not allowed a finger to be raised against our posts or couriers, or weak detachments, and convoys of every description had passed through their terrific defiles—the strongest



SIR ROBERT SALE.

"The retrenchments," says Marshman, "were to be made by reducing the stipends of the chiefs; and, by that fatality which seemed to attend every measure connected with this unfortunate expedition, those who ought to have come last were taken up first. The eastern Ghiljies were the first to be summoned to Cabul, when they were informed that the exigencies of the State rendered the reduction of their allowances indispensable. The subsidies paid by us had been paid from time immemorial by every ruler of Afghanistan, and were regarded by the highlanders as a patrimonial inheritance. They were magnanimously indifferent

mountain barriers in the world—without interruption. They received the announcement of the reduction in the beginning of October without any remonstrance, made their salaam to the envoy, and, returning to their fastnesses, plundered a caravan and blocked up the passes."*

Our communication with Hindostan being thus rendered impracticable, it was resolved to take advantage of the intended march downward of Sir Robert Sale's brigade to repress the Ghiljie rising and re-open the passes. Accordingly, on the 9th of October, 1841, the brigade, consisting of the

* "History of India."

13th Light Infantry, 800 strong, and the 35th Native Infantry, about the same strength, under Colonel Monteith, with two guns, marched towards the Khoord Cabul Pass, with orders to "chastise those rascals, and open the road to India"—orders in tenor somewhat like those issued by Cope and Hawley in other times. The arms of the brigade were the old flint muskets, which, from incessant use, had become very imperfect, and were apt to miss fire. Before moving, Sir Robert Sale reminded the authorities that there were in store 4,000 percussion muskets, perfectly new, and he begged that his regiment, at least, might be armed with them, and the old firelocks left behind. But the general commanding would not listen to the proposal. "What could the 13th want with new muskets, when it was well known that in marching out of Cabul they were but accomplishing the first stage of their journey to England?"

Hence many a poor fellow of the 13th never saw England; and when the day of our final overthrow came, 800 new muskets fell into the possession of Ackbar Khan.

The Khoord Cabul Pass consists of a narrow defile, overhung by lofty, rugged, and impending rocks, where the enemy clustered, thick and resolute, to dispute the way, and so completely sheltered by their position that, while remaining secure, they could, with their long *juzails* (or rifles) levelled over the rocks, quietly shoot down all that came within range. The casualties were sixty-seven ere the pass was forced, and Sale had his left leg shattered at the ankle by a ball. The 35th took up an advanced position, while, according to a previous arrangement, the 13th fell back upon Boothauk, which is only four miles south-east of Cabul, to wait for reinforcements; while Monteith underwent a harassing night attack, when the Ghiljies, in greater strength than ever, maintained a most obstinate conflict, inflicting a severe loss, which was further aggravated by the treachery of the Shah's Afghan cavalry, who, cold in his cause, failed to hold their ground, and enabled the enemy to carry off a number of our camels. But it was only after Sir Robert Sale, hastening on from Boothauk to support Monteith, pushed again through the pass, and, without much serious opposition, reached Jugdulluk, that the most stern struggle commenced.

The enemy, posted as before, upon advantageous heights, maintained from them a destructive fire, which could not be returned with sufficient effect, and to advance in the face of which was to court destruction. To neutralise it, parties were detached to take these heights in flank, and dislodge the foe by bayonet and bullet; while a third, under Captain

Savage Wilkinson (who had served in Burmah with the 13th), dashed through the pass, in which the enemy had erected works, but, luckily, forgot to defend them. The onward march was now resumed, and Gundamuck reached, but not without a terrible loss of life and of much camp equipage. Among the killed was Captain Wyndham, of the 35th, who perished while performing an act of humanity. Seeing one of his sepoys wounded and unable to get on, he, though lame from a previous wound, dismounted, and lent him his horse. In the retreat he was thus unable to keep up with the soldiers, and fell into the hands of the enemy, who slew him.*

On reaching Tizeen Sir Robert Sale had sent a detachment against the fort of the Ghiljie leader, the capture of which would have inflicted a severe blow on the insurrection; but the wily chiefs contrived to outwit our political agent, and he was lured into a treaty which conceded all they wished. Their stipends were restored, and 10,000 rupees paid down; but the revolt, instead of being crushed, was rendered greater by this display of weakness. Thus, while professing submission, they sent emissaries to raise up the tribes in front of Sale, who was thus obliged to fight every inch of the way to Gundamuck, a walled village, where he found his rearward communication with the capital cut off, and the whole country in a blaze of rebellion, if it can with justice be called so.

At this time—and, indeed, during the whole progress of our disastrous intervention with Afghan affairs—the greatest infatuation seemed to pervade the minds and counsels of our officials there. Still dreaming of tranquillity, with the smoke of battle lingering in the passes, Sir William Macnaghten actually expressed a belief that the fierce attack on Sale's brigade "was the expiring effort of the rebels;" and in this delusion he did not stand alone. General William Keith-Elphinstone, C.B., and Sir Alexander Burnes were of the same opinion, "though there can now be little doubt that they were guided less by their judgments than blinded by their wishes."

The former, who now commanded the troops, was a gallant old Queen's officer, a Waterloo veteran, and Major-General of 1830, but broken-down in constitution, and, having already resigned, was longing to turn his steps homeward to die in Scotland, and for the arrival of General Nott, who, as next senior officer, was to assume the command; while Sir W. Macnaghten, who had been appointed Governor of Bombay, was irritated by every occurrence that obstructed his departure; and Sir

* "Sale's Brigade in Afghanistan."

Alexander Burnes, who was to succeed him as envoy and minister at Cabul, was anxious to enter on his double duties; but fate ordained that they were all three to find their graves in the land of the Afghan.

Hence, influenced by personal views, they were but too apt to think hopefully of that tranquillity which alone could bring their wishes about; and "when warning was given of a gathering storm, they continued to see only a few passing clouds."

By the departure of Sale's brigade, Cabul had lost a large portion of its most necessary garrison. In the same spirit of confidence, orders had been

given to General Nott to send a portion of the Candahar troops to Hindostan; and three regiments of native infantry, with the Bengal Artillery, had joyfully begun their march towards the Indus, when the alarming state of Cabul rendered their instant recall necessary. The whole tide of revolution had now, in bitter earnest, set in: all the hardy clans of Afghanistan had risen, to expel or destroy the infidel invaders by whom they deemed their native soil was polluted, believing the while that Sujah-ul-Mulk, the puppet shah, was but as a wretched tool by which to secure, in the end, their own usurpation.

CHAPTER XVIII.

INSURRECTION AT CABUL.—MURDER OF SIR A. BURNES.—INCOMPETENCE OF THE OFFICIALS.—
BLUNDER UPON BLUNDER AT THE CANTONMENTS.

CABUL, after Candahar, the second capital of Afghanistan, is built of sun-dried bricks and wood, and few of the houses are more than two storeys high. "Let the reader conceive a broken succession of houses, composed of mud walls of different elevations, pierced here and there with wooden pipes to carry off the rain from the flat roofs which it would otherwise injure; then let him imagine a few square low doors opening under the eaves of the first storey, projecting over a sort of trottoir, formed by the wearing away of the middle of the road, so angular that no wheel carriage could be driven along safely; now and then a larger door interposing the entrance to the residence of some great man, with a mulberry-tree occasionally peering over the wall, and he will form a good idea of a Cabul street." *

The city is about three miles in circuit. The Balahissar, or citadel, is on its south-eastern side, a quarter of a mile in breadth, and is girt by a lofty rampart and a broad moat of stagnant water. The principal street is a succession of bazaars, and, in 1832 presented an appearance of splendour; but all these edifices were destroyed in the troubles we are about to narrate. Around it the hills are bare and rocky, and the plain before it is barren. Cabul has few manufactures, but it is the centre of a great internal traffic, and was the entrepôt of trade between India, Afghanistan, and Turkestan. It is a place of great antiquity, and in the

eightth century was the residence of a Hindoo prince.

The Indian Caucasus, with its summits covered by eternal snow, forms the background to the city, which, when seen from afar, has a very imposing aspect; and when our troops first appeared before it, the gardens and orchards which surround it on every side were teeming with fruit. Clear and rapid, though shallow, the Cabul river passes in front of the city, where it is crossed by three bridges, and pursues its course eastward to join the Indus. Havelock considered the Balahissar as the key of Cabul, and adds, that "the troops who hold it ought not to allow themselves to be dislodged but by a siege, and they must arm its population with their mortars and howitzers."

Lieutenant Durand, of the Engineers, when directed to select a proper station for the quartering of the troops, at once suggested the citadel, or upper portion of the Balahissar; but Shah Sujah declined to have the privacy of his palace destroyed by turning any portion of it into British barracks; so Durand was ordered to provide accommodation elsewhere, as the actual barracks in the citadel had been turned into a royal harem. Eventually, cantonments were erected on the worst site that could be chosen: on a flat space, two miles and a half north of Cabul, and nearly equi-distant from the Balahissar at its eastern, and the Kuzzilbash quarter at its western extremity. The cantonments, or ranges of huts, formed a parallelogram, about 1,200

* Vigne.

yards long by 600 yards broad. The Kohistan road bordered them on the west, as it ran towards a principal gate of the city; on the east lay a canal, 250 yards distant; and 300 yards further to the east ran the Cabul river. A shallow ditch, an indifferent rampart, and a round bastion at each of the four angles, formed the defences. North of these, and merely enclosed by a wall, was the residency; and by a singular blunder the government offices, instead of being within the cantonments, were placed in a little isolated part at 300 yards' distance; while, to make the position worse, a low range of heights, called the Secah Sung Hills, and those of Beymaroo, commanded the whole of the buildings.

In these cantonments our troops passed the winter of 1840-1; and though the sepoys suffered so much from cold that the hospital was full, the British, by nature more robust, and accustomed to the climate of their native land, were rather healthy, and passed their time pleasantly. Cricket, shooting, fishing, hunting, and horse-racing, afforded occupation for the most active. For the latter sport the shah gave a valuable sword to be run for, and it was won by Major Daly, of the 4th Light Dragoons. Nor were amateur theatricals forgotten; nor in winter, skating on the lake of Istalif, on the waters of which an ingenious Scottish officer, named Sinclair, launched a boat of his own building, to the astonishment of the Afghans, who had never seen such a thing before; and they were heard to say that they wished the Feringhees had come among them as friends and not as enemies, adding, "you are fine fellows one by one; but, as a body, we hate you!"*

"Though a crisis had long been foreseen by those who, looking below the surface, saw the causes which were working to produce it, all the leading authorities, civil and military, continued as it were spell-bound. General Elphinstone, looking fondly forward, saw himself proceeding quietly under escort for the British frontier; Sir William Macnaghten had nearly completed the packing prior to his departure; and Sir Alexander Burnes felt so satisfied with the higher position on which he was about to enter, that, on the evening of the 1st November, he did not hesitate to congratulate the envoy on his approaching departure at a season of such profound tranquillity."

Yet it would appear, that some days previous a Moonshee, named Mohun Lal, of whose fidelity there was no doubt, and whose intelligence was unquestionable, had informed him that there was a general confederacy among the Afghan chiefs, and

* "Sale's Brigade in Afghanistan."

strongly warned him against the coming storm. Unwilling to believe in the existence of what he fervently wished would not happen, these notices served only to irritate him, and to such an extent, that he once haughtily expelled from his presence Gholam Mohammed Khan, a high Dooranee chief, who went to him by night to inform him of the coming mischief.

At that very time some of the conspirators were assembled in a house of the city concerting their plans for insurrection, and at dawn on the 2nd of November, with shrill yells and fierce imprecations, they and their followers surrounded the residence of Burnes, who instantly dispatched a messenger to the envoy at the cantonments for aid, while from the balcony of his house he harangued the armed mob, offering large sums for his own life and the lives of his brother, Lieutenant Charles Burnes, and Lieutenant Bradford, who had just arrived to act as his military secretary. He had a slender Sepoy guard, whom he would not permit to use their arms, though firing had begun, and Bradford had fallen with a ball in his chest.

More obnoxious to the Afghan chiefs than all the other British officers, the unfortunate Burnes found his efforts to allay the tumult utterly unavailing. He was eventually decoyed into his garden by a treacherous Cashmerian, who took an oath upon the Koran that he would convey him and his brother to the Kuzzilbash fort, which was a mile distant, and then held by Captain Trevor with a very small party. Disguised as a native, Sir Alexander descended to the door, and the moment he passed it, his traitorous guide exclaimed, "This is Sekunder Burnes!" In an instant both brothers were literally hacked to pieces by Afghan knives; and the sepoys, after a fruitless resistance, were barbarously butchered, with every man, woman, and child in the place. The paymaster's guard shared the same fate, and £17,000 fell into the hands of the insurgent chiefs, who had so little expectation of success, that they had their horses saddled for flight on the first appearance of the British troops; and they subsequently acknowledged that the slightest exhibition of energy at the commencement would have put down the insurrection at once; but no effort was made.*

Although the rabble at first were little more than 300 strong, our superior officers—more especially old General Elphinstone—were so thunderstruck as to be incapable of proper action. To the credit of the shah—coward though he was—on hearing of the uproar, he sent forth against the rioters one of his Hindostanee regiments and two guns, under

* Marshman, &c.

the command of an able officer; a Scoto-Indian, named Campbell.

The latter, in his impetuosity, instead of taking a route that would have led them to the house of Burnes with little obstruction, endeavoured to make his way straight through the very heart of the city, where his troops became entangled in the crooked and narrow streets. A conflict ensued; 200 of his men fell, and the rest commenced a retreat so disorderly, that all must have perished, but for the timely arrival of Brigadier Shelton, who had brought into the Balahissar three companies of the 54th Bengal Native Infantry, Shah Sujah's 6th Regiment, and four guns, the whole force which he had then in a small camp beyond the Seeah Sung Hills. He extricated the Hindostanees of Campbell, but failed to save their two guns, as he had lost some time in parleying with the shah about an entrance to the palace. Shelton was Lieutenant-Colonel of H.M. 44th, and had lost an arm at the storming of St. Sebastian.

On the evening of this disastrous day, General Elphinstone—an amiable and, at one time, a most gallant officer, who was suffering from a long and painful illness, which affected his mind as well as his body—instead of adopting a vigorous plan for operations on the morrow, wrote to Sir W. Macnaghten: "We must see what the morning brings, and think what can be done."

The morrow saw 3,000 armed Ghiljies rushing through the Khoord Cabul Pass towards the convulsed capital, while other numerous bands began to hover on the hills that overlook it, and still our leaders remained in a state of fatuous indecision. On the bank of the river there was a tower, occupied by Captain Trevor, with a few men. As it was in the Kuzzilbash quarter it was deemed of importance to retain it, as a means for communication with the inhabitants there, who were understood to be better affected towards the British than any other portion of the Afghan population. Advantage ought to have been taken of its proximity to garrison it efficiently, and secure it against capture. Elsewhere, on the right branch of the road, 500 yards beyond it, stood a large fort, enclosing the magazines erected for the commissariat of Shah Sujah's contingent. Though ill-selected, it was quite defensible if properly manned, and the importance of securing it was great, as at that time it contained a great store of grain. Yet, in the spirit of blundering, nothing was done to prevent its falling into the hands of the fast-gathering enemy, who, on the very morning of the outbreak, assailed it with fury, and it was evident that, unless relieved, its few defenders would be compelled to succumb;

yet General Elphinstone looked helplessly on, and Captain Lawrence, who offered to march with two companies to its succour, was not permitted to do so.

In addition to Brigadier Shelton's futile attempt to succour Burnes—futile through the fault of Shah Sujah, not of himself—the only active step taken was to increase the party in the commissariat fort to eighty bayonets: a most pitiful reinforcement, when we remember that the subsistence of the troops depended upon the protection of the stores that were there; and to add to its perils, no attempt was made to dismantle some adjacent forts that commanded it, or to destroy the walls of an adjacent garden and orchard, from which a musketry fire could be maintained against it. But the terrible penalty for all the shortcomings of those in authority was close at hand now.

Within thirty hours of the outbreak, even Sir William Macnaghten began to despond, and dispatched letters to Generals Nott and Sale, desiring them to march at once to his relief; for now the fatal errors of failing to occupy the Balahissar, and erecting the cantonment on such low ground, were painfully apparent. The note sent to Candahar, consisting of a slip of fine paper enclosed in a quill, such as the natives place in their ears when the rings are taken out, did not reach General Nott till the 14th November. It desired him to march upon Cabul, with all the troops then under orders for Hindostan, together with Shah Sujah's Horse Artillery and half of his 1st Cavalry. There was nothing to preclude his compliance with this peremptory order, though there were some obstacles which he seems to have deemed insurmountable: such as the depth of the snow—between Cabul and Ghuznee five feet, at least—and a belief that thereby the troops would arrive, after five weeks' delay, in a state quite unfit for service. Moreover, there was the disordered state of the country, where the people spoke openly of attacking him; and, as an earnest of their evil will, Captain Woodburn, who was proceeding on sick leave to Cabul, was assailed by an armed band after leaving Ghuznee, and barbarously slain, only six out of his escort of 130 men escaping the same fate.

On the other hand, the order sent to Sir Robert Sale was equally futile, but the 37th Bengal Native Infantry, which had been left to hold the western entrance of the Khoord Cabul Pass, came duly into camp, under Major Griffiths, on the morning of the 3rd, with all their baggage and equipage in order, though they had been obliged to fight every foot of the way.* No other succour

* Lady Sale's "Journal."

reached our doomed men in Cabul; for, before receiving the order Sir Robert Sale had quitted the village of Gundamuck, and was pushing to reach the city of Jelalabad: though, no doubt, he would gladly, at the head of his gallant light infantry, have gone back to Cabul, where his wife, his daughter, and her husband, Lieutenant Sturt, were sharing the perils of the rest. But to have done so was impossible. His troops were worn out by unrelenting attacks, both day and night, by continual intrenching, and most arduous outpost duty. "I beg to represent," he also states, "that the whole of my camp equipage has been destroyed; the wounded and sick have increased to upwards of 300; and that there is no longer a single dépôt on the route, and the carriage of the force is not sufficient to bring on one day's rations with it. I have at this time positive information that the whole country is in arms, and ready to oppose us in the defiles between this city and Cabul, while my ammunition is insufficient for two such contests, as I should assuredly have to maintain for six days' at least. With my present means I could not force the Passes of Jugdulluk or Khoord Cabul; and even if the débris of my brigade did reach Cabul, I am given to understand that I should find the troops now garrisoning it without the means of subsistence. Under these circumstances, a regard for the honour and the interest of our Government compels me to adhere to my plan already formed of putting this place (Jelalabad) into a state of defence, and holding it until the Cabul force falls back upon me, or succours arrive from Peshawur or India."

The morning for which the general waited came, and saw, as we have said, the force of the insurgents greatly increased; for thousands, who had hitherto held aloof, now openly rose in arms, and thousands more, hearing of the plunder that might be obtained, came pouring from their mountain villages towards the British cantonments; and the Kohistan road, along which we might have passed with ease on the 2nd of November, was now completely beset by exulting and bloodthirsty hordes of horse and foot.

So miserable was the indecision of Elphinstone, that it was not until three o'clock in the afternoon of the 3rd, that any attempt was made to penetrate from the cantonments into the city; and the whole force employed for this purpose consisted of only one company of her Majesty's ill-fated 44th, two of the 5th Bengal Native Infantry, and two horse artillery guns. Major Thomas Swayne, 44th, an officer who had served in the wars of America and Burmah, encountered an opposition which com-

pelled him to fall back. His force was too feeble to achieve anything, and, in addition to this blunder, not the slightest effort was made to open up a communication with the troops in the Balahissar.

Meanwhile, Captain Trevor had been compelled to abandon his fort, thankful only that some friendly natives had, prior to that, secretly removed his wife and seven children to the cantonments; and Captain Mackenzie, an energetic Highlander, who commanded at the shah's commissariat, after keeping the enemy at bay for two whole days, and sending importunate and futile messages for support, was compelled to quit his post, as the enemy had undermined it; and our officers and men looked over the cantonment walls, "burning with indignation, while a rabble of Afghans was employed, unchecked, like a swarm of ants, in carrying off the provisions on which their hope of sustaining life depended." The effect of this episode was very great upon the troops, and thoroughly inspired them with alarm. "It no sooner became generally known," says Lieutenant Vincent Eyre, "that the commissariat fort—upon which we were dependent for supplies—had been abandoned, than one universal feeling of indignation pervaded the garrison; nor can I describe the impatience of the troops—but especially the native portion—to be led out for its re-capture: a feeling which was by no means diminished by their seeing the Afghans crossing and re-crossing the road between the commissariat fort and the Shah Bagh, laden with the provisions on which had depended our ability to make a protracted defence."*

Other disasters succeeded this; and, by the 5th of November, the general, alarmed by the loss of the commissariat fort, actually began to talk of terms with the enemy, and in one of his letters to the envoy, wrote thus:—"It behoves us to look to the consequences of failure. In this case I know not how we are to subsist, or, from want of provisions, to retreat. You should, therefore, consider what chance there is of making terms, if we are driven to this extremity." When such was the language adopted, after such gross mismanagement, what could be expected but ruin and death? "He has an army," says a writer, justly, "which, handled by such men as Sale or Nott, would have sufficed to clear the district of every rebel Afghan who dared to show his face, and he keeps it cooped up within cantonments, timidly whispering about difficulties, till he has broken the spirit of his men, taught them to dread an enemy whom they previously despised, and thus prepared them

* "Military Operations in Cabul."



ASSASSINATION OF SIR ALEXANDER BURNES.

for every species of humiliation. On the following day, writing as before to the envoy, he recurs to the subject which was now evidently uppermost in his mind, and, as if the resolution to treat had been already taken, seems only anxious that the negotiations should not be protracted."

This timidity was the more inexcusable as, on that day (the 6th of November) the prospects of the army had improved. Captains Boyd and Johnson, the respective heads of the British and Shah's commissariat, had exerted themselves to the utmost to compensate for the loss of the stores, by extensive purchases in the adjacent villages, so that the danger of starvation ceased to be imminent.

A work, called Mohammed Shureef's Fort, which commanded the commissariat fort, and occupied a height on the opposite side of the Kohistan road, and which was crowded with the enemy, who plied their juzzails and matchlocks from its walls, after being the subject of much discussion, and the scene of more than one disgraceful repulse, was captured at last in a manner which showed that common energy, at first, might have suppressed the whole insurrection.

As soon as Lieutenant Sturt had so far recovered from some wounds which he had received during an affair in the city, he asked leave to open on the fort with three nine-pounders and two twenty-four-pound howitzers. These effected a breach by twelve o'clock, and an assault was made with such gallantry that the enemy, after a brief resistance, abandoned the place. Ensign W. G. Rahan, of H.M. 44th, while brandishing his sword on the summit of the breach, which he had been the first to mount, was shot through the heart, and eighteen of the stormers were killed.* A sepoy private, who distinguished himself, was promoted to the rank of sergeant, and before the enemy recovered from their consternation, they were charged twice: first by Anderson's Horse, who rode straight up a ridge to the right of the fort, and secondly, by some of the 5th Cavalry, who attacked them on the left.

The effect of these movements was to hem the enemy in between the two corps, and force them to a general encounter under circumstances so unfavourable that, if followed up, would ensure their total destruction. But Elphinstone failed to see this, and full of groundless fears, actually expressed doubts about the ammunition, though there was enough in store to last the army for a year; and he urged upon the envoy, "we are in a dilemma, from which there is no hope of escape by honourable or manly means. Fighting is of no use. Try diplo-

macy, and do not stand upon punctilios; for if it fails our case is desperate."

Sir William, who had often found money succeed when other resources failed, hoped by means of it to conciliate, at least, some of the chiefs, or sow dissension among them, and break up their confederation, and he was quite cognisant of the jealousies and suspicions that existed among them. The Kuzzilbashes, or Persian party, as Shiites, stood somewhat apart from the rest of the Afghans, who were rigid Soonees, and dreaded the tyranny to which they might be subjected if the British were expelled. Mohun Lal, the moonshee of Sir Alexander Burnes, when that unfortunate man was killed, had saved his life by taking shelter under the ample garment of a Kuzzilbash chief, named Mohammed Zemaun Khan. Another chief of still greater influence, Khan Shereen Khan, had afterwards taken him under his protection; and he was residing with him on the 7th November, when the envoy began his Machiavellian policy, and wrote, authorising him "to assure his friends, Khan Shereen Khan and Mohammed Kumye, that if they performed the service, the payment would certainly be forthcoming—£10,000 to the former, and £5,000 to the latter."

The nature of the service required was to kill or seize certain of the rebels, and to arm all the Sheeahs, to spread dissension, and 10,000 rupees were offered for the head of each of the rebel chiefs. This would seem to have been promised by Lieutenant Conolly to Mohun Lal. Though nothing of moment came of all this, Conolly's offer would seem, nevertheless, to have been acted on to a certain extent; as, within a month from that time, Abdoolah Khan and Meer Musjedee, two chiefs who had been specially marked out for assassination, were both dead, "and under circumstances so suspicious, that the blood-money was actually claimed by the wretches hired to assassinate them, and was only evaded by an abominable subterfuge." Abdoolah Khan was wounded mortally in battle, but by a ball from one of Mohun Lal's juzzailchees, who fired at him from behind a wall; the other is said to have been suffocated in his sleep. "One would fain keep the envoy free from all connection with these atrocious proceedings; and it has only been suggested that Conolly made his inhuman offer at the suggestion of Shah Sujah alone."

While Elphinstone was counselling diplomacy, and Macnaghten was endeavouring to put off the day of evil by an ample distribution of gold, which, as a fresh token of our weakness, only served to increase the arrogance of the insurgent chiefs, the

* Thornton.

revolt spread so rapidly over the whole country as to leave our troops at their several stations only the ground they actually occupied. The adherents of Dost Mohammed had ever been numerous in Kohistan; and there, a Ghoorka regiment, quartered at Charikur, a town in the Ghirbund valley, and the seat of the *Hakim*, or governor, of the province, was all but annihilated. Eldred Pottinger, the hero of Herat, who was then acting as political agent on the frontier of Turkestan, occupied the castle of Lughmannee, about two miles distant, and after a furious struggle, succeeded in uniting his detachment to the Ghoorkas under Captain Codrington. By this time the fortified barrack of Charikur was surrounded by vast bodies of Kohistanees, who pressed to the attack with equal fury and determination. Pottinger opened on them with a field-piece, but was soon disabled by a musket-shot in the leg; and Codrington, while gallantly heading his Ghoorkas, was carried in mortally wounded. The soldiers, now reduced to 200 men, had emptied their last vessel of water, and were perishing with thirst. They resolved, therefore, to evacuate Charikur, and, as their ammunition was nearly expended, to force their way, in light marching order, at the point of the bayonet, to Cabul. This resolution, born of despair, had but a small prospect of success, and on the first day's march all order was lost.

Pottinger, and another officer named Houghton, suffering from wounds, and feeling that they could be of no service, put spurs to their horses, and after many perilous adventures, reached our cantonments at Cabul, while the retiring party, led by Ensign Rose and Dr. Grant, struggled on till it reached a place called Kardurrah, where it was overwhelmed and destroyed. Ensign Rose fought with heroic valour, and slew four of the enemy ere he fell, covered with wounds; but the fate of Dr. Grant was more piteous. Fighting his way off, he escaped, and arrived within three miles of Cabul, weary, faint, and worn; and in this condition was barbarously murdered in cold blood by some woodcutters.

We have already referred to the age and infirmities of General Elphinstone. At this time he was nearly crippled by a rheumatic gout; and a very severe fall from his horse on the 2nd of November, the day of the outbreak, added seriously to his ailments. So long as he had found himself capable of acting at all, he felt bound to remain in command, till either General Nott, or some other officer, was appointed to relieve him of it; but now, he called in Brigadier Shelton to act as his second in command, and to take the more

heavy and active duties of the field. Shelton was an officer of great energy, distinguished for his courage and iron nerve; and when he came into the cantonments from the Balahissar, on the 9th of November, with Shah Sujah's 6th Infantry and a six-pound field-piece, he raised the drooping spirits of the troops; but it was soon apparent that his insupportable temper neutralised all his great military qualifications. At this time, he reports, there were only three days' provisions in the cantonments, and he read anxiety in every face.

On the day after his arrival an offensive movement was resolved on. It was directed against a work named the Rickabashee's fort, which stood nearly midway between the Cabul river and the mission residence north of the cantonments, and so near the latter, that our men in the bastions were shot down by the fire of juzzails from its walls. Against it 2,000 men were detailed; and Shelton was in the act of forming the column, when he heard Elphinstone say feebly to his aide-de-camp, "I think we had better give up the idea." "Then why not countermand at once?" asked the aide-de-camp; so the counter order was actually given. By Macnaghten's advice the attack was again ordered; but two hours had been lost; the spirit of the soldiers was damped by this indecision and forebodings of failure, while the enemy had been adding to their means of resistance.

Elphinstone set out with 1,000 infantry, composed of the 44th Regiment and two native battalions, some of Anderson's corps, and one gun. The gate was to be blown open; but, unfortunately, the explosion only opened a wicket, which the stormers found a difficulty in passing through under a hot musketry fire. A few, however, forced their way in with the bayonet, and struck terror into the enemy, who strove to escape on the other side; but at that very moment the cry of "Cavalry!" together with a sudden charge by some Afghan horse, struck equal terror into those without the wicket, and both queen's troops and sepoys, turning their backs, fled.

Disdaining flight, Shelton succeeded more than once in rallying them, and succeeded in saving the few brave fellows who had already entered the fort, and been exposed there to a fearful conflict. They shut the rear-gate, out of which the enemy had fled, drew a chain across it, and further, secured it by a bayonet. Two of their number, Lieutenants Cadell and Hawtrey, returned to bring assistance; but ere Shelton had the fugitives rallied, the Afghans returned, forced away the chain and bayonet, and attacked the few who were in the fort. There Colonel Mackerrall fell, mortally wounded;

and Lieutenant Bird, of the 37th Bengal Native Infantry, with two sepoys, took shelter in a stable, and baring the door of it, kept up a fire through some air-holes. Against this frail post the enemy dashed with all their fury; but the three men defended their lives most resolutely: they shot down thirty of their assailants. When succour came at last, and the fort was taken, one of the faithful sepoys had fallen; but Bird and the other were found unharmed, with only five cartridges left, and a pile of Afghan dead heaped up before the stable door.*

In this affair we had 200 men killed or wounded. Captain M'Crea, of the 44th, was cut down in the first attack upon the gateway, and Captain Westmeath was shot outside. The effect of our success was such that the enemy abandoned the adjacent forts; and in one of these some grain was found, and during the day fatigue parties removed much of it to a safer place. By the commissary a guard was applied for, to protect the rest during the night; but, with the infatuation which characterised everything connected with the command of this unfortunate army, his request was refused, and before dawn it was all carried off by the enemy.

On the 13th of November the latter appeared in unusual force on the Beymaroo Hills, which lay westward of the cantonments and the Kohistan road, across which they fired, with two guns, into the former. Urged by Macnaghten, the general was induced to send out a strong force in three columns, with two guns, to dislodge them; but on this occasion all the troops, European and native, displayed such a lack of common courage as to excite the astonishment of their officers. Of the latter the men did not doubt the bravery; but they had lost all confidence in their commander-in-chief, and were loth to throw away their lives in futile enterprises. One of the enemy's guns was captured, however, but the other was protected by a heavy fire from the Afghan matchlocks; and neither by words nor example could the officers of the 44th get their men to advance against it, though it lay abandoned in a ravine. As if to shame them, Lieutenant Eyre, attended by one horse artillery gunner, went forward to the gun, spiked it, and returned untouched.

The bad example set by the 44th—a regiment which had distinguished itself in Egypt, in Spain, and at Waterloo—infected the whole native troops; but the attack on the heights had a salutary effect on the Afghans, who for nearly a week offered us no molestation; and Elphinstone, well content to be let alone, left the enemy to adopt their own course.

* Thornton.

On the 22nd of November a contest ensued at the village of Beymaroo, which lies northward of the heights of that name. Though it afforded the troops supplies, it was left utterly unprotected; hence, to cut off our resources, the Afghans took quiet possession of it. On this, General Elphinstone ordered an attack to be made upon it, before daybreak on the 23rd, by a strong force of horse and foot, under Brigadier Shelton and Major Swayne, of the 44th, with a single gun. A standing order had been issued by the Marquis of Hastings, when Governor-General, to the effect, "that under no circumstances, unless where a second could not be obtained, were less than two guns to be taken into the field;" and the events of this day showed the propriety of his rule.

By two o'clock a.m., Shelton had the gun in position upon a knoll, from whence it opened with grape upon an enclosure of the village which seemed full of the enemy; and he contented himself with this distant firing instead of dashing on with the bayonet, and taking them by surprise. Meanwhile, the Afghans had begun to ply their juzails (long matchlocks, which are fired over a forked rest, and carry further than the muskets of those days), and the sound brought thousands of the insurgents from the city across the hills to take part in the conflict. When day broke the opposing parties saw each other's position distinctly—the British in possession of one hill, and the enemy holding another, with a ravine between them. The juzail fire having become destructive, the brigadier left five companies on a flank of the hill overhanging the village, and hurrying across the ravine with the remainder, took post with the gun on the brow of the enemy's hill. There he formed his infantry in two hollow squares, with the cavalry in their rear. This singular formation was not productive of mischief so long as the solitary gun, which was ably worked by Sergeant Mulhall, told with effect on the crowded Afghans; but when, from incessant firing, it became hot and unserviceable, the folly of not having another soon became apparent.

The long range of the Afghan juzails enabled them to pour in a murderous fire, which the British were unable to return; and most disastrous was the result. Why these useless squares, covered by cavalry, were kept in such a position, neither advancing nor retreating, has never been explained, but the spirit of the troops was so completely broken that they were incapable of resisting the terror which began to seize them. Led by some fanatical Ghazees, the Afghans, whose movements had been concealed by a ridge, now rushed, yelling,

from behind it, and in an instant all was confusion in our ranks. The squares broke. When ordered to charge, the cavalry, like the infantry, wheeled about and fled, leaving the gun in the hands of the enemy.

All seemed lost, when Shelton had the presence of mind to order a halt to be sounded. Mechanically, by mere force of habit, the men obeyed, re-formed, and advanced upon the enemy. It was now the turn of the Ghazees to fly, the gun was re-taken, and the tide of the conflict flowed to and fro over the hill; but the village remained uncaptured; and when it was suggested that the troops should return to the cantonments while they could do so with honour—"Oh, no," replied Shelton, "we shall keep the hill a little longer." And his ground he certainly kept, losing many

valuable lives, till another rush of yelling Ghazees caused another panic, and the troops gave way again. They fled in such confusion, pursuers and pursued all mingled, that had the Afghans known how to use their advantage, even the cantonments must have fallen into their hands.

It is said that the brigadier had the folly to inquire that evening of Lady Sale if she did approve of all the troops had done; and we are told that "this brave woman, accustomed to witness the heroic deeds of her illustrious husband, and the military genius which distinguished him, answered with indignant censure, pointing out the absurdities, in a military point of view, of the way in which the undertaking had been conducted and had failed."

CHAPTER XIX.

MOHAMMED SHUREEF'S FORT RE-CAPTURED.—EVACUATION OF THE BALAHISSAR.—TREATY WITH THE AFGHANS.—MURDER OF THE ENVOY, ETC.

HARASSED by being kept perpetually on the alert day and night, pining with cold, hunger, hopelessness, and exhausted by incessant fatigue, the spirit of our troops was broken, and, without shame, they fled from foes whom they despised. What was to be done now? A retreat to the Balahissar was still open, and the shah was in such alarm that he would now gladly have seen the red-coats guarding its walls. But another resource was deemed preferable—to treat for terms with the insurgents; and the envoy, having ascertained that they were willing to do so, dispatched a message to the Afghan chiefs, requesting them to appoint deputies to discuss the preliminaries of a treaty.

On the 25th of November the meeting was held, at an intermediate spot, Sultan Mohammed Khan and Meerza Ahmed Ali representing the Afghans, and Captains Lawrence and Trevor the British. The former, though representing chiefs, some of whom had betrayed Dost Mohammed, and were now ready to betray Shah Sujah, assumed a tone so arrogant, that after two hours' discussion no progress had been made.

At last they requested to see Sir W. Macnaghten, and had an interview with him in one of the gateways of the cantonments. During that conference a bullet whistled over his head; but his hour was not yet come. It was unavailing. The Afghan

chiefs demanded that the British should surrender as prisoners of war, delivering up their arms, ammunition, and treasure. These terms were, of course, rejected, and the Afghan chiefs departed, muttering dark menaces. Some days passed now without active measures being taken; but this delay, while it improved the position of the enemy, was most ruinous to our army.

Their stores were consumed faster than they could be replaced, and it became obvious that, at last, they would be starved into accepting any terms. Daily the soldiers became more demoralised, and, on more than one occasion, exhibited the most despicable cowardice; and hence, on the 6th of December, Mohammed Shureef's fort, which it had cost us so much trouble to gain, was re-captured.

The Afghans tried to blow up the gate with powder, but not understanding the process, the explosion only did harm to themselves. They then tried a mine, but Lieutenant Sturt—Sale's heroic son-in-law—entered it in the night and destroyed it; then the cowardice of the 44th, or East Essex Regiment, betrayed the fort. The garrison consisted of one company of that corps, and one of the 37th Bengal Native Infantry. On seeing some Afghans, who had mounted to a window, using their crooked sticks as ladders, they

fled like sheep to the gates. Not a man of the 44th was touched when they thus abandoned Lieutenant Alured Gray, while getting his wound dressed. "They all ran as fast as they could. The 44th say that the 37th ran first, and as they were too weak they went too."* But Lieutenant Hawtrey, the officer in command, said, "There was not a pin to choose—all were cowards alike." A company of the 44th, which held the bazaar, endeavoured to run away like their comrades in the fort, but their officers, by desperate exertions,

the country by what he called "honourable terms." On the 11th of December, 1841, there was but one day's food in the commissariat for the fighting men, and then the envoy opened a negotiation with the enemy. The conference took place on the bank of the Cabul river, about a mile from the cantonments. It was attended by Ackbar Khan, the most able of the sons of Dost Mohammed, a young soldier of great energy and great ferocity, with a fiery and ungovernable temper, who had arrived in Cabul and assumed the leadership of the



WELL IN THE HYRCANIAN DESERT.

prevented them, and a guard of sepoy had to be placed at the entrance to prevent the Europeans from deserting! At last discipline began to fail in the cantonments as well as in the field; and there also the luckless 44th set the evil example.

In the now terrible dilemma, the envoy showed more spirit than the general. The latter thought of nothing but negotiating, while the former urged that the sick and wounded should be sent to the Balahissar under cloud of night, and that the whole of the troops should fight their way thither, after destroying all ordnance and stores that could not be removed. But the feeble general could see no relief, beyond getting out of the cantonments or

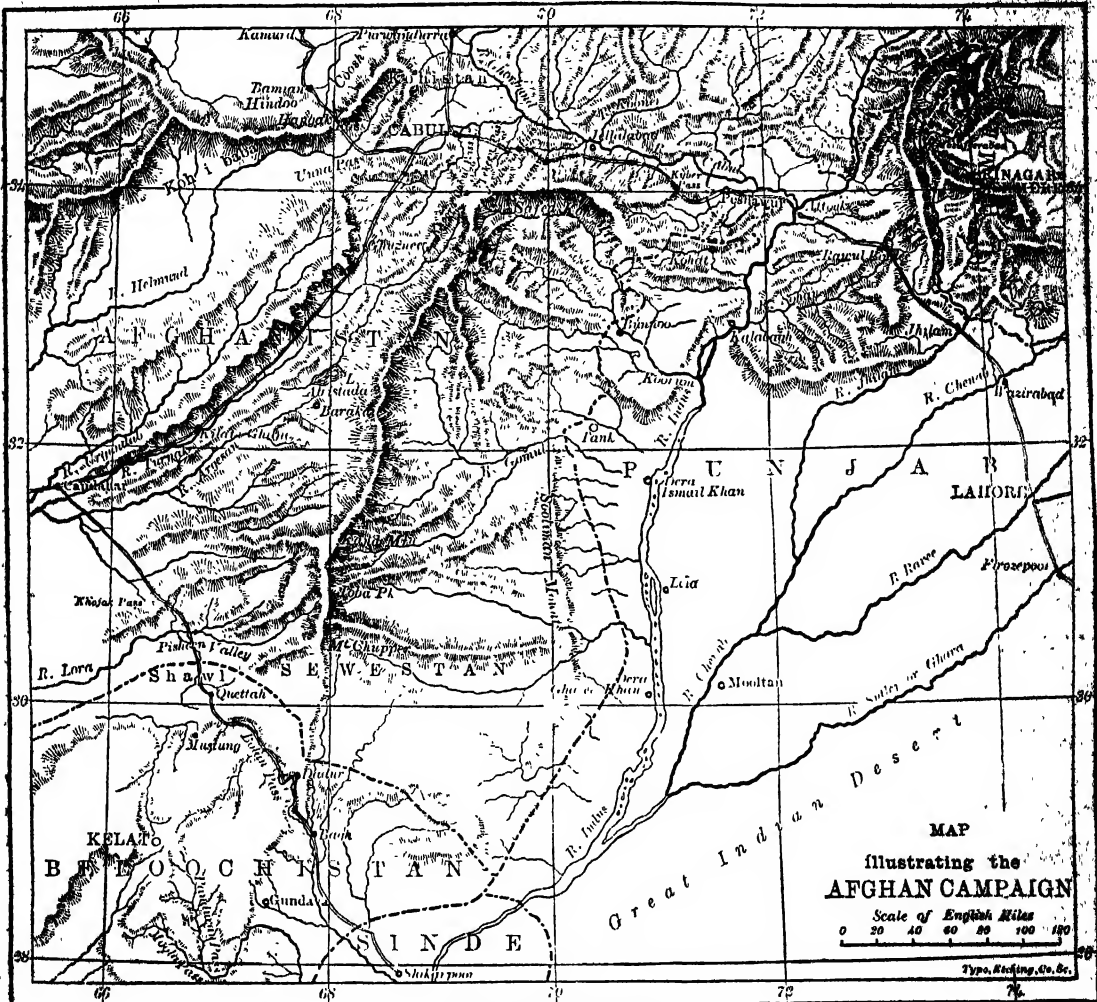
* Lady Sale's "Journal."

national confederacy, the principal chiefs of which attended him. With the envoy were Captains Lawrence, Trevor, and Mackenzie. The former read the draft of a treaty which he had previously prepared, and which stipulated that the troops now at Cabul would march to Peshawur, and thence to India, without delay, the chiefs engaging to keep them unmolested, and to furnish "all possible assistance in arms and provisions;" that Shah Sujah should have the option of remaining in Afghanistan, on a maintenance of not less than three lacs of rupees per annum, or of accompanying the troops, and that immediate arrangements would be made for the return of Dost Mohammed and other noble Afghans now detained in India.

As he read, he received but one interruption from Ackbar Khan, who said, bluntly, that there would be no occasion to supply the troops with provisions, as their march from the cantonments might be commenced on the following day. The other chiefs checked his impetuosity, and the reading continued to the end of this document, the most disgraceful in the brilliant annals of British India.

"Environed and hemmed in by difficulties and dangers—overwhelmed with responsibilities there were none to share—the lives of 15,000 resting on his decision—the honour of his country at stake—with a perfidious enemy at his back, he was driven to negotiate by the imbecility of his companions."

The Afghans were crafty, ferocious, avaricious and vindictive, and we could have no guarantee



MAP OF AFGHANISTAN.

In its extenuation, the envoy placed on record that "we had been fighting forty days against superior numbers, under the most disadvantageous circumstances, with deplorable loss of life, and in a day or two must have perished of hunger. The terms I secured were the best obtainable, and the destruction of 15,000 human beings would little have benefited our country, while the Government would have been almost compelled to avenge our fate, at whatever cost." Sir J. W. Kaye more accurately describes his position thus:—

that, after agreeing to the conditions, they would fulfil them. On the third day our troops were to evacuate the cantonments, and this done, without hostages, they would be entirely at the mercy of the enemy, who had the option of destroying them by starvation or the sword; and it never was their intention to permit the escape of the Europeans.

Our troops in the Balahissar, 600 strong, were to evacuate it on the 13th of December, and proceed to the cantonments; and, as it was most necessary that their store of grain, amounting to 1,600

maunds, should not be left behind, every arrangement was made for its removal; but this occupied so much time that night fell before they were ready to march. Ackbar Khan, who had undertaken to guide and protect them, had his men under arms apparently for that purpose. As soon as the head of the column began to emerge from the gate, some of these made a rush at it to force an entrance. On this our troops closed it, and, lining the walls, opened a destructive and indiscriminate fire on friends and foes alike.

On this, Ackbar Khan declared that he could not guarantee the safety of our troops if they persisted in marching in the dark, as the Seeah Sung hills, along which they must pass, were crowded with Ghiljies, whom no power could restrain. The result was, that our troops, most of whom were sepoys, were compelled to remain outside the walls, without either food or shelter, exposed to the severity of such a winter night as they had never experienced before. Indiscriminate slaughter might have befallen them had Ackbar proved treacherous; but he kept his faith then, and, though much exhausted, they reached the cantonments next morning.

The adjacent forts were now resigned to the enemy, and Ackbar Khan received letters to the commandants at Candahar and other military stations, ordering them to retire. The chiefs were now allowed to enter our magazines, and assist themselves to whatever stores they fancied, while officers and soldiers looked indignantly on; but the supplies furnished scarcely sufficed to appease hunger, and Ackbar Khan and his compatriots, while withholding the necessary carriage and provisions for the march, raised their demands, and insisted not only on the surrender of stores and ammunition of every description, but on the delivery of all the married families as hostages.

Under these desperate circumstances, Macnaghten directed Mohun Lal to open negotiations with other tribes, and inform them if any portion of the Afghans declared to the shah that they wished him to remain, he would break with the faithless Barukzyes, the tribe of Ackbar, to whom he had shown his friendship by making him a present of his carriage and horses. It was at this most critical juncture that Sir William received a most unexpected message from Ackbar, with a new proposal that the British forces should remain till spring; that in conjunction with his troops they should attack the fort and seize the person of Ameen-oolah-Khan, the projector of the insurrection; that Shah Sujah should retain the throne; and that Ackbar be appointed vizier, receiving

from our Government an immediate payment of thirty lacs, and an annual stipend of four lacs. In an hour that was alike one of evil for his reputation and safety, the envoy agreed to these terms in writing, and promised to attend a meeting which was appointed to be held next day.

The game which Sir William Macnaghten was playing, in seeking to set one portion of the tribes against the other, while apparently leaguings with both, scarcely deserved to succeed; and while he smiled at his own dexterity in keeping it secret, the chiefs knew it all, and believed themselves well entitled to checkmate him.

Though the envoy had frequently been warned of the danger of intriguing with one so artful as Ackbar Khan, he had apparently made up his mind to risk all now, rather than endure suspense. Accordingly, after breakfast on the 23rd, he sent for Captains Lawrence, Trevor, and Mackenzie, to accompany him to a conference with Ackbar. The greater prudence or keener perception of Mackenzie led him to be suspicious, and he stigmatised the conference as "a trap." "Trust to me for that," replied the envoy confidently. As yet, General Elphinstone had been kept in the dark as to the new plans and proposals; and when told of them, he was far from satisfied, and asked "what part the other Barukzye chiefs had taken in the negotiation." "They are not in the plot," replied the envoy. "Do you not then apprehend treachery?" asked the general. "None whatever," replied Macnaghten; "and I am certain the plan will succeed. What I wish you to do is, to have two regiments and two guns quickly ready, and, without making any show, be prepared to move towards the fort of Mohammed Khan." Elphinstone still doubted and remonstrated, until Macnaghten almost rudely cut him short by saying, "Leave it all to me—I understand these things better than you do."

Accompanied by Lawrence, Trevor, and Mackenzie, with a small escort, the envoy, about noon on the 23rd, repaired to the place of meeting, about 600 yards eastward of the cantonments, near where a bridge crossed the Cabul river. It was situated on a green slope among some knolls, and was indicated by a number of horse-cloths, which had been spread on the grass for the occasion. While proceeding, the envoy remembered that a beautiful and valuable Arab horse, which he intended to present to Ackbar Khan, who coveted it, had been left behind. He requested Captain Mackenzie to return for it, and meanwhile he, with the other two officers, was occupying his thoughts on the subject, and unable, it would appear, to repress some foreboding of the fate that was so near

him now, he said, "Death is preferable to the life we are leading here."

Ackbar Khan was most profuse in his thanks for the present of the Arab horse, and also for a very handsome pair of pistols, which he had also coveted at a previous meeting. Sir William reclined on the slope, and Trevor and Mackenzie seated themselves close to him; but Lawrence, who was full of undefined suspicion, remained standing, till, on being importuned, he knelt on one knee, but ready to start at a moment's notice; and meanwhile, the two battalions in the cantonment were getting under arms. "Are you ready to carry out the proposals of the past evening?" said Ackbar Khan abruptly. "Why not?" replied Sir William; but Lawrence now called attention to the Afghans who were crowding about them, and said that "if the conference was to be a secret one, intruders should be removed."

Then some of the chiefs made a pretence of clearing the circle with their riding-whips. "Their presence can do no harm," exclaimed Ackbar Khan, "as they are all in the secret." What the latter was did not remain long a doubt. The envoy and his companions were seized suddenly behind, and, incapable of resistance, were roughly dragged away, and placed each behind an Afghan trooper, who galloped with his prey towards the great square fort of Mohammed Khan. Trevor fell from his seat on the way, and was instantly cut to pieces by the Ghazees, while Lawrence and Mackenzie were flung into the fort. In the meantime, Sir William had been grasped by the ruffian, Ackbar Khan, and together they struggled desperately on the ground. Whether he merely meant to drag him away like the others is now unknown; but in the fury of resistance Ackbar's rage became roused, and he shot Macnaghten dead with one of the pistols so recently presented to him. Horror and wonder were seen in the face of the doomed man as he received his death-shot; and the only words he was heard to utter were, "*Az barae Khoda!*" (for God's sake!) The body was then hacked to pieces by armed fanatics. The hands were hewn off, carried about, and then flung into the window of the room where the two surviving officers were imprisoned. The head was taken into the city, and triumphantly shown to Captain Conolly, who was a prisoner there. As soon as the officers were seized, their escort, instead of attempting to rescue them, fled—all save one man, who was instantly cut to pieces.

Sir William was severely blamed for trusting to Ackbar, but no other course remained open to him. His murder, however, completely changed

the relations that previously existed between the British and the Afghans, and left it optional for the former to choose their own course. "The highest representative of a government," it has been said, "an ambassador whose very office hedged him round with a sacredness which all nations not absolutely barbarous recognise and revere, had been decoyed into an ambush and treacherously murdered. With a people capable of doing such a deed, and boasting of it after it was done, engagements, however solemnly made, were useless; and all, therefore, that now remained for the British, was to avenge their wrongs; or at all events, if that was beyond their power, to become once more their own protectors, and trust to nothing but Providence and their own stout hearts and swords."

But in those wretched cantonments, the spirit of honour, and even of indignation—save with a few—seemed dead. No call was made upon the army, and no effort of valour or devotion was made to rescue the living or to avenge the slain. Nothing of chivalry, bravery, wisdom, or nobility was essayed, and the blundering generals listened to the new tale of horror, and simply wondered over it. Macnaghten was the only civilian in Cabul, yet there was no truer-hearted soldier there. He had served several years in the Madras army, and little doubt has been expressed that if he could have assumed the command of the forces, they would have escaped the dreadful doom that befell them.*

At first it was not believed in the cantonments that the envoy had been murdered, and instead of taking means to dispel all doubt on the subject, to each regiment a message was sent to calm alarm, intimating that the conference had been interrupted by Ghazees, and that the envoy and the officers who accompanied him had gone into the city, whence their immediate return might be expected.

On the following day a letter came from Captain Lawrence, ending all doubts on the subject, and containing overtures from the murderers for a renewal of negotiations; but instead of being met with scorn and repugnance, the propositions were embraced with eagerness. They differed but little from the treaty framed by the envoy; and when the chiefs found the generals so very facile, they sent back the draft with four new articles appended thereto. 1. All treasure in the military chest to be given up. 2. All the cannon, except six pieces. 3. All spare arms in store to be left behind. 4. General Sale (then commanding at Jelalabad), with his wife and daughter, and the other gentlemen of rank who were married and had families, to remain as guests or hostages at Cabul, until the arrival of

* Marshman, vol. iii.

Dost Mohammed Khan, and other Afghans, from Hindostan."

These humiliating articles were submitted to, except the last, and it is supposed that it was not complied with, merely because it could not be enforced.

On the 6th of January, 1842, the humiliated British troops, after waiting in vain for the safeguard promised by the faithless Afghan chiefs, got under arms to commence that which may justly be termed, the death-march of the whole force. The plains were deep with snow; in the passes it lay deeper still, and the magnificent yet terrible mountain ranges presented to their eyes vast piles of dazzling white, upheaved against a cold blue sky, while the frosty atmosphere was so keen that no

clothing was a protection. The army amounted now to nearly 4,500 fighting men, with 12,000 camp-followers. The former may be enumerated as follows:—One troop of Horse Artillery, 90 men; H.M. 44th Foot, 600; total Europeans, 690. The 5th Cavalry, 260 sabres; 5th Shah's Irregulars (Anderson's Horse), 500; Skinner's Horse (one rissala), 70; Body-Guard, 70 = 900 Horse. 5th Native Infantry, 700; 37th Native Infantry, 600; 54th Native Infantry, 650; 6th Shah's Infantry, 600; sappers and miners, 20; Shah's ditto, 240; half the mountain train, 30 = 2,840; total, 4,430; with six horse artillery and three mountain guns.*

Of all that force but one man—and he then covered with wounds—was fated to reach Jelalabad, the bourne for which they were now departing.

CHAPTER XX.

DESTRUCTION OF THE ARMY IN THE KHYBER PASSES.

PRECISELY at nine in the morning the advance-guard left the cantonments; the throng continued to pour out, not by the gates, but through a large opening made over-night in the rampart; but evening had darkened on the snow-clad wastes ere the rearguard had passed forth. The Nawab Zemaun Khan, whom the Afghans had set up as their king, wrote to Pottinger, warning him of the peril of departing without the promised safeguard; but it was too late now, so the fatal march went forward. It was six o'clock ere the rear-guard was on the way, and after a fierce conflict with Ghazees and other plunderers, pushed on after the main body. The Afghans had, early in the day, commenced firing on the former, and in this manner murdered Lieutenant Hardyman and fifty troopers of the 5th Cavalry; and it is said, that as soon as the British cleared the cantonments, the incapacity of the commanders became more than ever conspicuous.

The body they commanded ceased to be an army, and the whole became a disorganised mass of fugitives, whose confusion increased as night deepened upon the weary and terrible way they had to pursue. Rearward the darkness was somewhat dispelled by the glare from the spacious cantonments and residency, whence sheets of ruddy flame shot skyward, the whole place having been set on fire. Many of the sepoy and camp-followers dropped

dead among the snow before the generals could order a halt, on the right bank of the Cabul river, near Begrammee, about two hours after night, and there many more perished.

When the cold grim dawn of the 7th stole in, a fearful scene presented itself. Hundreds of Hindoo women and children lay dying among the snow; while soldiers and camp-followers, and the baggage animals—horses, camels, and Cabul ponies—were all huddled together in hopeless confusion. One of the shah's regiments deserted in the night to the enemy, small parties of whom hovered on the flanks. These were supposed at first to be the escort promised by the chiefs who had obtained bills for fourteen lacs of rupees; but a furious attack on the rearguard soon dispelled this illusion.

The force detailed for this duty consisted of the 44th Regiment, the mountain-guns, and a squadron of irregular cavalry; but in one sudden and unexpected onset the guns were captured, and the gunners nearly destroyed. The 44th were ordered to retake them, but being now without shame, failed, or refused to advance; but a lieutenant named White, with a few gholandazees, spiked them in the face of the enemy.†

The snow now became so deep that the horses were unable to drag the artillery, and some pieces

* Lieutenant V. Eyre.

† Lady Sale's "Journal."

were accordingly spiked and abandoned. The army had but one chance of escape—a rapid march, by which the passes might have been traversed before the enemy could effectually block them up; but that was impossible now. Zemaun Khan having promised to disperse the fanatic and marauding bands that hovered on the flanks, and to send supplies of food and fuel to Boothauk, General Elphinstone was induced to halt there, though it had been his intention to continue the march all night, had not the sudden appearance of Ackbar Khan on the scene induced him to abandon it.

Coming on at the head of 600 horse, this unscrupulous personage announced that he was to act as a safeguard; but, at the same time, to demand hostages for the evacuation of Jelalabad; and till these were given—and Sale had actually quitted the city—he was instructed to detain the retreating force, but to furnish it with supplies. From the tenor of these announcements, it became apparent that the extermination of the whole army was the real object in view.

Another night of bivouacking in the snow amid the intense cold of the mountains might have achieved this, but the best chance of escape was to push on at all hazards; yet instead of doing this the general halted, and, as usual, endeavoured to make terms. Another night of horrors, death, and suffering was passed, and then Ackbar Khan agreed to accept of Major Pottinger and Captains Lawrence and Mackenzie as hostages, and to permit the retreat to be continued to Tizeen, the way to which lay through the Khoord Cabul Pass—that terrific gorge, which is five miles in length, and so narrow that the rays of the sun never penetrate its depths. At the bottom runs an impetuous torrent, which the road—if such it can be called—crosses twenty-eight times; and it was through this tremendous defile that the disordered and helpless mass of human beings pressed wildly on, inspired by one maddening desire to escape destruction. Above and around them rang, with a thousand reverberations, the roar of carnage and the shrieks of the falling; for the Ghiljies poured an incessant fire from every rock upon the crowd beneath, with arms that were unerring, and that carried death at 800 yards. Here more than 3,000 perished, and it was amid this dreadful place that delicate English ladies, some with infants in their arms, had to run the gauntlet of the Afghan bullets, amid a tempest of falling snow; but they all escaped save Lady Sale, who had a ball lodged in her left wrist.

On the evening of the 8th the survivors reached the fort of Khoord Cabul; but there the suffering

was increased. The altitude and the cold were greater; there were neither tents, fuel, nor food; and the groans and cries of the hungry and the destitute were heard during the whole night.

Before sunrise on the 9th the march was resumed; and three-fourths of the troops, without waiting for orders, or for their officers, pushed on with the camp-followers. The remainder had followed about a mile when another of these fatal halts was made at the instigation of the artful Ackbar, with one of his usual assurances of protection and supplies. The Afghans had never lost sight of their demand to get the married officers and their families into their power, and the terrible proceedings of the previous day afforded Ackbar a plausible pretext for renewing the obnoxious proposal and to Elphinstone for granting it, amid the grumbling—almost uproar—of his perishing troops, who were constrained to remain idle another whole day in the snow.

Ackbar offered to take all the ladies and children to Peshawur. Since leaving Cabul they had almost been without food; they were poorly clad, and were without shelter from the ever-falling snow. Major Pottinger—already Ackbar's prisoner—felt that it would be impossible for them to survive these hardships, even if they escaped another day's murderous conflict; and, in accordance with his advice, Lady Macnaghten, Lady Sale, and nine other ladies, with fifteen children, were sent to Ackbar's camp, and were thus rescued from destruction. It was a horrible alternative, and when the tale of their abandonment became known in Britain, the keenest anxiety was manifested for their future fate in hands so horrible; and we may imagine, rather than express, the emotions of Lady Macnaghten, on finding herself a hostage in the power of her husband's murderer. The general felt, perhaps, more confidence in the measure from the fact that all Ackbar's family were in our hands at Calcutta.

On the morning of the 10th the march was resumed once more; but before evening the unfortunate sepoys had almost disappeared. All did not perish; they were prepared to desert, and as the shah's troops had set the example, they were not slow in following it. "The Europeans," says Eyre, "were now almost the only efficient men left, the Hindostanees having all suffered more or less from the effects of frost in their hands or feet. Few were able to hold a musket, much less to pull a trigger; in fact the prolonged delay in the snow had paralysed the mental and bodily powers of the strongest men, rendering them incapable of any

useful exertion. Hope seemed to have died in every breast; the wildness of terror was exhibited in every countenance."

Panic-stricken, and thus benumbed with cold, it was evident that the end of all was approaching now. The remorseless Ghiljies still hovered on the heights with their deadly musketry, while the inextricable mass in the narrow defile kept struggling onward, mechanically, as it were, to a destruction that was inevitable. The narrow defile between the two hills was soon choked up with the dying and the dead. On went the dreadful slaughter, till of the thousands who had left Cabul not more than a fourth were alive.

Of the Europeans there were now only 250 men of the 44th, 150 cavalry, fifty horse artillery, and only one gun. On observing this unparalleled slaughter, General Elphinstone called upon Ackbar, who had looked on it idly and complaisantly, to make good his promised and purchased protection; but he replied that he could do nothing unless the British troops laid down their arms and submitted at discretion. There was still spirit enough in the dying band to spurn a proposal so humiliating. By a rapid movement, the defile—where already so many of the camp-followers had perished that it was impossible to move without treading on their corpses—was reached; but before it was left behind, the enemy had opened a destructive fire upon our rear.

The one-armed old soldier, Shelton, who commanded there, on being well seconded by a few of the 44th, won a brief respite for the whole; and as Ackbar Khan, on his being again appealed to, renewed his degrading proposal, a rapid night march was made to Jugdulluk, where the survivors, now fewer in number and faint with fatigue and want of food, found a temporary shelter behind some ruined walls. There, on the snowy earth, they endeavoured to get a little repose, but once again the roar of musketry rang around them, and volley after volley was poured into the wretched bivouac.

Rushing forth with bullet and bayonet, they cleared the ground of the foe, and, as night closed in, again took shelter behind the ruins, while Ackbar schemed out a new work of treachery. He sent a messenger inviting to a conference General Elphinstone, Brigadier Shelton, and Captain Johnstone of the 44th. They rashly went, and found themselves entrapped. Sir Robert Sale had not yet evacuated Jelalabad, so he resolved to detain them as further hostages. The general pleaded that his personal and unexplained disappearance from what remained of his army would

cover him with disgrace; but Ackbar Khan was inexorable.

On the morning of the 12th the troops prolonged their halt to await the issue of the supposed conference, at which the three detained officers implored the interposition of Ackbar to save the little remnant that survived, and he engaged his father-in-law, a powerful Ghiljie chief, on payment of two lacs of rupees, to withhold the hands of his savage countrymen. He pocketed the money, or the orders for it, and returned about dusk, to state that he had arranged all comfortably for the safe conduct of the troops to Jelalabad.

Even as the ruffian spoke, the sound of firing was heard, which gave the lie to his words, and told that the Ghiljies had again remorselessly assailed the bivouac; and Ackbar, having now the persons of the principal officers, as well as the ladies, in his possession, quietly abandoned the remnant of the troops to their fate. Fairly at bay at last, the latter inflicted a chastisement so severe on the enemy that the first portion of the next march was effected without much more loss; but the worst struggle was yet to come, as they had to clear the Pass of Jugdulluk, up which the steep road winds between precipices. The summit was won, and then a formidable barricade, composed of fallen trees, opposed their passage, and rendered advance impossible; and so likewise was retreat. All around were the enemy in ambush, thick as bees and fierce as famished tigers. But why prolong this weary story of days that were not of glory, but of disaster and death!

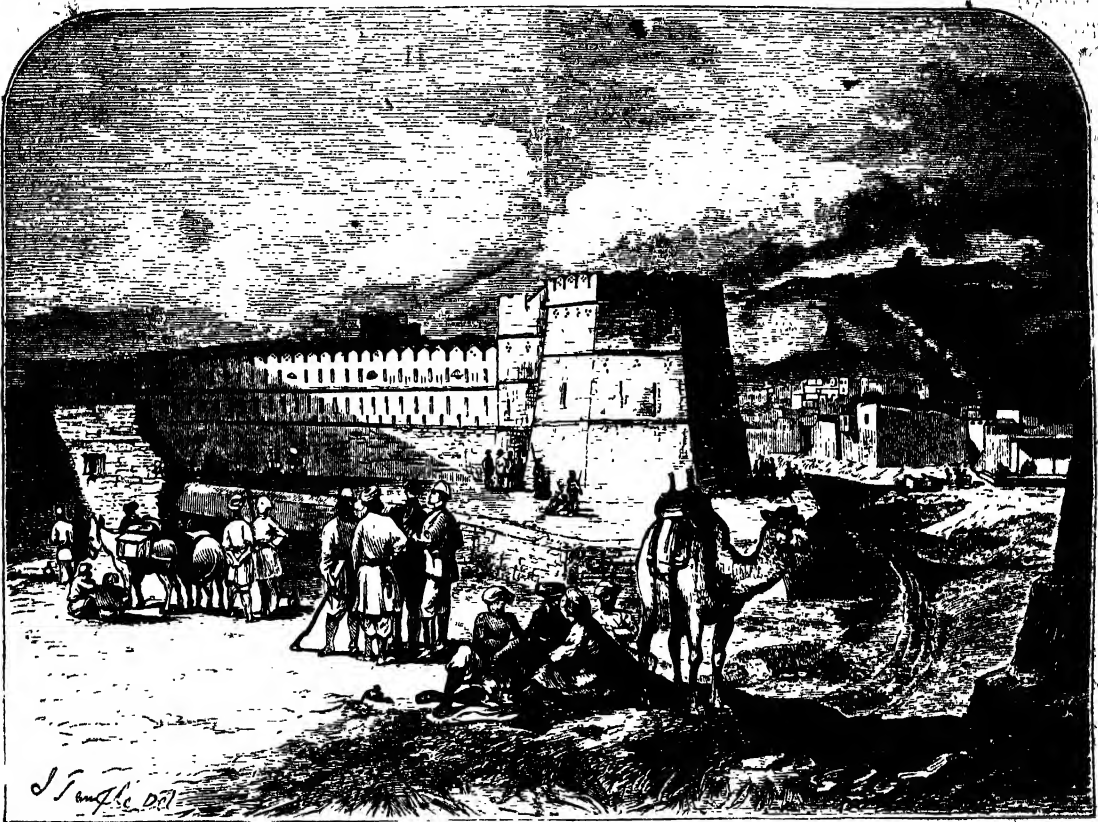
The unequal struggle was ended by the total destruction of the force. There fell Brigadier Anquetil, Colonel Chambers, and ten other officers, with several men. During the contest, about twenty officers and forty-five privates contrived to force the barricade, and made their way to Gundamuck as day was breaking on the 13th; but the respite was short, for again the enemy was upon them, with yells of "Death to the Feringhees! death to the infidel dogs!" Only two rounds of ammunition were in the pouches now; and two measures only could be taken—to seek for terms, and, if these were refused—to die fighting.

Major Griffiths, the senior officer in command, advanced in front of all that remained, viz., seventy-five of all ranks, with 300 camp-followers, to meet the chief, when the savage horde burst in upon his little band, with drawn knives, and murdered every man of them, save Captain Souter and four privates of the 44th. A few officers, who, being mounted, had got in advance of the whole, still remained; but they were all shot down in succession till only

six were left; and these, while snatching a hasty meal at Futteahbad, were attacked by an armed mob. Two were cut down on the spot; three overtaken elsewhere, and Dr. Brydone, a Scottish medical officer of the Shah's 6th Infantry, the last survivor and representative of a whole army, rode wildly and blindly on with a broken sword in his hand, and so covered with wounds that he could scarcely keep his saddle. Mr. Gleig tells that, as our sentries saw him galloping thus towards Jelala-

destroyed.' Under such circumstances, it is little to be wondered at if men's blood curdled while they watched the advance of the solitary horseman; and the voice of Dennie sounded like the response of an oracle when he exclaimed, 'Did I not say so? Here comes the messenger!'"*

A cavalry escort was sent out to meet the doctor, who had fought so toughly that nothing was left of his sword but the hilt;† and the soldiers regarded him with pity and awe when he announced himself



VIEW OF CABUL.

bad, it is impossible to describe the thrill that ran through their veins.

"Slowly he approached; and strange as it may appear, it is nevertheless true, that Colonel Dennie (13th Foot) foretold the nature of the tidings of which he was bearer: for it is a fact that almost from the first Colonel Dennie had boded ill of the force left in Cabul; and that, subsequently to the receipt of the earliest intelligence which told of the warfare in which they had been engaged, and of the disastrous results to which it led, he repeatedly declared his conviction, that to a man the army would be destroyed. His words were 'You'll see. Not a man will escape from Cabul but one man, and he will come to tell us that the rest are

to be what he believed he was, the last survivor of Elphinstone's once magnificent army—the last, says Marshman, "save 120 in captivity, of 15,000 men."

Instead of one, however, there were several, and among them those in whom the keenest interest was felt. Though captives, the British ladies and children were yet alive, and might be recovered; but how they were so belongs to another part of this history.

Dr. Brydone survived his many wounds, and died in 1876, at a green old age, as surgeon of the Inverness Volunteer Rifle Corps.

* "Sale's Brigade in Afghanistan."

† Ibid.

CHAPTER XXI.

SALE'S BRIGADE IN JELALABAD.—COLONEL DENNIE KILLED.—ACKBAR DEFEATED.—ADVANCE OF GENERAL POLLOCK.—COMBAT OF URGHANDAUB.

THE destruction of our Afghan army was the heaviest blow that had ever yet befallen us in the East; but so strongly had our power there been consolidated, that no demonstrations of hostility were induced from native powers, nor was any commotion among them observable, as when Monson's force was destroyed in 1804, or when the Nepaulese campaign failed in later years, or when the army of Burmah proceeded so slowly in 1825.

Though undoubtedly overwhelmed by the greatness of the calamity, Lord Auckland issued a proclamation to the effect that "the Governor General regarded the partial reverse which had overtaken a body of British troops in a country removed by distance and difficulties of season from the possibility of succour, as a new occasion for displaying the vigour and stability of British power, and the admirable spirit and vigour of the British Indian army."

After "this spasm of energy he relapsed into a spirit of dejection," says Marshman, and instead of considering how most effectually to restore our military superiority, the sole basis of our high position in India, he was timidly prepared to leave it without vindication, and thought only how he could withdraw General Sale safely and quietly from Afghanistan. Unluckily, the commander-in-chief was somewhat of the same opinion, but Mr (afterwards Sir George) Clerk, a spirited Scotsman, who entered the Indian Civil Service in 1818, and was afterwards Lieutenant-Governor of the Western Provinces, when our political agent in the Punjab, on hearing of the blockade of the Cabul cantonment, had hurried on the brigade which had been ordered to relieve the regiments falling back from Afghanistan, but it was placed under the command of Colonel Wyld, who was obliged to advance without either cannon or cavalry.

He moved so slowly through the Punjab, that he was thirty-five days in reaching Peshawur. The sepoys were all eagerness to rescue their comrades, but he lingered there until their discipline was nearly destroyed by intercourse with the auxiliary Sikhs of Runjeet Sing's successor. They had been sent to co-operate with Wyld; but, on reaching Jumrood and beholding the mountain pass—like the terrified Hessian troops at Killiecrankie—they wheeled about and marched back again. The

colonel then entered it without them; but the frail guns they had lent him proved unserviceable after the first discharge, his sepoys lost heart, and allowed themselves to be ignominiously repulsed, with the loss of the borrowed cannon, which fell into the hands of the Afreedies.

Lord Auckland, in the excess of his caution, was unwilling to send on a second brigade to relieve the oppressed force at Cabul, but Clerk's persevering energy overcame all objections, and on the 4th of January, a corps of 3,000 men crossed the Sutlej. It was led by General (afterwards Sir George) Pollock, G.C.B. and K.S.I., a most distinguished artillery officer, whose father was a Scotsman, settled in London, where the general was born in 1786. Pollock had seen hard service under Lord Lake at Deeg and Bhurtpore, and his sagacity, caution, decision, and valour, eminently qualified him for the arduous task before him.

On the 22nd of January the entire destruction of the Cabul force became known at head-quarters, and Mr Clerk met the commander-in-chief, Sir Jasper Nicolls, to discuss the measures necessary to meet the crisis. Sir Jasper—an officer who had served in the old Mahratta war, under Cathcart in Hanover, Crawford in South America, and Moore at Corunna—actually stated that the only object now to be pursued, was to withdraw Sir Robert Sale's column safely back to India, but Clerk, in a spirit more worthy of a Briton, maintained that our honour imperatively required that not only should the Jelalabad garrison be reinforced, but that, in conjunction with the troops at Candahar it should march upon Cabul, and inflict on the Afghans a signal punishment for all our late disgraces. The energy of his appeal and his fiery nature could not be resisted, and a third brigade was held in readiness to join General Pollock, but Lord Auckland's last communication cautiously and timidly informed him that "his sole business was to secure the safe return of our people and troops detained beyond the Indus."

We have already referred to the difficulties encountered by Sir Robert Sale in marching his brigade downward from Cabul, and his subsequent refusal to risk its entire loss by returning at the instructions of the late unfortunate envoy. When

the latter's first order was received, the brigade was encamped at Gundamuck, prior to which it had been so roughly handled, and was so imperfectly supplied with the requisite munition of war for marching back through one of the most difficult countries in the world, full of hardy and hostile enemies, that a council of war—though not unanimous—decided that the march should be continued to Jelalabad.

Even this could not be done without sacrifice. In order to move lightly and expeditiously, much valuable property was left in Gundamuck, with no better guardians than some of the Shah's Irregular Horse, who, as might have been foreseen, lost no time in fraternising with the insurgents. The buildings were given to the flames, the property vanished, and the revolt spread wider than ever.

On the 11th November the brigade began its march, and daybreak on the morning of the 12th, showed the adjacent hills covered with armed men, watching the opportunity for rushing down to sweep all before them. The task of keeping them in check was entrusted to the rear-guard under Lieutenant-Colonel W. H. Dennie, a veteran of Lake's wars, who, after a running fight had been maintained for some time, had recourse to a manœuvre. Concealing the cavalry in ambush, he led on the infantry of his command, with instructions to wheel about when near the enemy, as if seized with a panic. Mistaking this for a real flight, the enemy, with wild shouts came rushing into the lower ground to complete the victory with their deadly knives; but a gallant charge of cavalry threw them suddenly into hopeless confusion, and they fled, leaving the valley covered with their dead and wounded. After this, no further opposition was made to the progress of the brigade, which took possession of Jelalabad on the 13th of January, 1842. Like other Afghan cities of note, it had its Balahissar, half palace and half citadel, which stood in the heart of it, forming with bare walls a kind of inner town, and furnishing but indifferent accommodation to those who dwelt there. When Sale entered the city, as many of its people as could escape, fled through its opposite gates, so the place was won with whatever stores might be in it, by our weary and foot-sore troops, without the snap of a musket.*

Sir Robert's intention was to hold it as an intermediate post, from whence reinforcements that came by the way of Peshawur might be pushed on to Cabul, and where the force there might find a place of safety if compelled to retreat; but to hold such a place was no easy task. "I found the

walls of Jelalabad," he wrote, "in a state which might have justified despair as to the possibility of defending them. The enceinte was far too extensive for my small force, embracing a circumference of upwards of 2,300 yards. Its tracing was vicious in the extreme. It had no parapet, excepting for a few hundred yards, which there was not more than two feet high. There was a space of 400 yards together, on which none of the garrison could show themselves, except at one spot; the population within was disaffected, and the whole enceinte was surrounded by ruined forts, walls, mosques, tombs, and gardens, from which a fire could be opened at twenty or thirty yards."

The difficulty of holding such a place seemed great, but great was the spirit there, for "the very same circumstances which General Elphinstone mismanaged, so as to bring disgrace and ruin on the Cabul force, sufficed to make Sir Robert Sale and his brigade a band of heroes." The first question he had to consider was, whether the whole city ought to be held, or merely the citadel. Strong reasons for the latter course were not wanting, but the bolder course was preferred, and it was determined not to yield up a foot of the city, save under dire pressure. When our troops entered it, they and their cattle were short of two days' food, and the surrounding country, from whence it alone could be procured, was completely in the hands of the insurgents, 5,000 of whom could be seen posted on some heights close by.

To proceed with defences while the workers would be exposed to the Afghan marksmen, would have been vain; so the first thing to be done was to teach the latter to keep their distance. A general attack being arranged on the 14th November, Colonel Monteith of the 35th Bengal Native Infantry moved out at daybreak with 300 men of his own corps, 300 of H.M. 13th, 100 sappers, and 200 men of the Khyber corps, a squadron of the 5th Cavalry, some irregular horse, and three guns, in all only 1,100 men, to give battle to foes five times their number. The attack was made with such spirit, that the latter gave way at every point, and suffered so much in their flight, that a fortnight elapsed ere they ventured to show themselves again.

Meanwhile, strong working parties toiled daily, repairing breaches in the town walls, and deepening the ditches; every tree that stood in the line of fire was cut down, and every wall, house, and inequality was levelled. Along the ramparts parapets were run up, sand-bags and even the saddles of the baggage animals being used in their construction. Ten pieces of cannon of various calibre, and

* Sale's Brigade in Afghanistan."

mounted on strange carriages, with two mortars, were run into the bastions, while with strong escorts, foraging parties gathered from the adjacent villages grain, sheep, fuel, and all manner of necessary articles. By the energy of Sale, Jelalabad in a few days was rendered fit to be defended. At half rations there was food enough in store for one month's consumption, but not one drop of spirits, and the alarming discovery was made, that, including what the men had in their pouches, not more than 120 rounds per man remained in store, hence the greatest care was necessary, that, when under fire, not a single shot was to be thrown away.

As the enemy were again pressing close to the walls, another demonstration against them became necessary, and this task was entrusted to Colonel Dennie, who made a vigorous sortie on the 1st of December, and once more put the insurgents to rout with an amount of slaughter that was terrific, and, singular to say, he lost only one man.

But now, the tidings from Cabul that reached our brave fellows in Jelalabad, became darker and more gloomy in succession. On the 29th of December, 1841, there came to Captain Macgregor a letter bearing the signatures of Eldred Pottinger, at the head of the Cabul mission, and W. Keith Elphinstone, the general. The bearer of it was an Afghan horseman, and it ran thus :—

"It having been found necessary to conclude an agreement founded on that of the late Sir W. H. Macnaghten, for the evacuation of Afghanistan by our troops, we have the honour to request, that you will intimate to the officer commanding at Jelalabad, our wish, that the troops now in that place should return to India, commencing their march immediately after the receipt of this letter, leaving all guns the property of Dost Mohammed Khan, with the new governor, as also such stores and baggage as there may not be the means of carrying away, and the provisions in store for our use on arriving at Jelalabad. Abdool Ghuffoor Khan, who is the bearer of this letter, will render you all the assistance in his power. He has been appointed governor of Jelalabad on the part of the existing government."

This document placed both Sale and Macgregor in a dilemma, but the mode in which they met it was subsequently approved by Government. They disregarded the order to give up the city, as the neighbouring chiefs were all in arms, and the brigade had no security for its march unmolested downward to Peshawar, and four days after, the arrival of Dr. Brydone, with his dreadful narrative, convinced these officers that they had acted wisely,

as the destruction of their force would have been certain to follow next.

They had refused to yield up Jelalabad, and the next idea was, would they be able to retain it? Sale's first resolution was to add to the real strength of his garrison, by curtailing it of the Khyber corps, a detachment of Juzailchees, and some Hindostanee gunners who had once served Dost Mohammed, and on all whom no reliance could be placed. They were disarmed and dismissed, about the same time that the disheartening tidings came of Colonel's Wyld's brigade being defeated in the Khyber Pass near Jumrood.

Wyld's retreat was a serious disappointment to the small and isolated force in Jelalabad, and was soon followed by a disaster, which no human effort could avert, when, on the 19th of February, 1842, an earthquake shook down all the parapets so recently constructed, injured several of the bastions, demolished a third of the town, made a great breach in the wall, and reduced the Cabul Gate to a mass of shapeless ruins. "It savours of romance," wrote Sir Robert, "but it is a sober fact that the city was thrown into alarm within the space of little more than one month, by the repetition of fully one hundred shocks of this terrific phenomenon of nature."

While the garrison worked hard to repair their defences, Ackbar Khan, whom the destruction of the Cabul army had left idle, suddenly made his appearance, with a large body of troops, at Murkail, within seven miles of Jelalabad, where for a time he contented himself with cutting off Sale's foraging parties. In repelling these attempts the bastion guns did excellent service. "The whole country within long range of the walls had been carefully measured by the artillery officers, and certain marks set up by which the distance could be accurately calculated; and the consequence was, that every shot thrown where a group of Afghans presented themselves, told. Indeed, to such perfection was the gunnery of the place carried, that a man and horse, at 800 or 1,000 yards' distance, ran extreme risk of being cut down by a round shot; and on one occasion Captain Backhouse struck down a cavalier who could not have approached within a mile of the fort."*

After a time Ackbar ventured on bolder courses. He established two camps, one with his headquarters, two miles to the west, and another about a mile to the eastward, thus blockading Jelalabad with rigour. The result of this was a series of skirmishes most harassing to the British, whose only object was to protect their parties of foragers or workers; and some of the younger officers devised

* "Sale's Brigade in Afghanistan."

an amusing scheme for the latter. They dressed a wooden figure in uniform, painted its face, put a cocked hat on its head, and, by raising it from time to time above the parapet, drew such a storm of fire in that direction as left the working party free elsewhere. When it was allowed to fall, triumphant shouts rang from the enemy.

On the 10th of March, from a suspicion that the Afghans were preparing a mine, a vigorous sortie was made, and they were put to flight; but from deficiency in food and ammunition, the situation of the garrison became daily more and more critical, till the 1st of April, when, by a well-conducted sally, three fine flocks of sheep were captured, chiefly by the cavalry; and then the garrison took heart anew, as tidings came that General Pollock was on his march towards them from Peshawur.

On the 6th of April the guns of Ackbar fired a royal salute, of the cause for which different accounts were given. One was that a victory had been won over Pollock in the fatal Khyber Pass; another, that it was preparatory to the departure of Ackbar to Cabul, where a new revolution had taken place. Whatever the cause, Sale deemed it advisable to attack the Afghan camp. At daybreak on the 7th the troops, in three columns, moved out of the western gate; and Ackbar drew up his forces, 6,000 strong, to receive them, with his right resting on a fort, and his left on the Cabul river. Our central column turned all its efforts against the fort, which, as it had given annoyance on several occasions, it was thought proper to capture. The struggle was a severe one, and in it the gallant Colonel Dennie (a subaltern of 1800) lost his life. He was leading his brave men of the 13th straight to the breach, when a ball entered his side, through his waist-belt, and he fell forward on his horse's mane. He was carried to the rear, and there he died, "with the sound of battle in his ears, hoping, but not living to be assured, that it would end triumphantly."*

Meanwhile his brother-officer, Henry Have-lock, had penetrated to the extreme left, and, sweeping round by the river in order to turn the flank of the enemy, became exposed to their cavalry, against whom his force formed square. The three columns now combined and made an attack upon the camp, when the foe gave way on all hands, and had our slender cavalry force been equal to the task, few would have escaped to tell the story of their overthrow. As it was, the fugitives, being driven towards the river, rushed madly in, and perished in hundreds, some amid the deep water, and others under the balls and

bayonets of their pursuers. Never was victory more complete. Camp, baggage, artillery, ammunition, standards, horses, and arms—all fell into the hands of the victors. The camp was given to flames, and all the spoil was taken into Jelalabad.

General Pollock was now at hand, and, on the 16th of April, only nine days after their victory, the sound of his drums was heard, and the garrison had the happiness to receive him, and the ample succours he had brought, within their gates.

On the 5th of February, 1842, he had reached Peshawur, and found the state of our troops there worse than he could have anticipated. Colonel Wyld's defeat had filled them with dismay, and delegates from the different native regiments of his brigade were actually holding meetings by night, for the purpose of resisting any order which might be given for an advance towards these dreadful passes of Afghanistan. While such a lack of spirit existed he could expect no success, and he was doubtful whether to await reinforcements which he knew to be on the march, or start with such troops as he had. Prudence suggested that he should wait; but such was the urgency of Sale's position that he was compelled to move. His force was intended to be 12,000 men, but 4,000 of them, chiefly Europeans, had not yet joined, and a considerable portion of the 8,000 actually under the colours were Sikhs, upon whose faith he could not depend.

With the greatest possible silence and secrecy he began his march, at half-past three a.m. on the 5th of April. Immediately at the entrance of the pass he had to penetrate, the Khyberes had thrown up a strong barricade. Pollock might have stormed it, but he preferred to take it in flank, and for this purpose two columns of infantry ascended the heights on either side. The mountaineers, on seeing this, lost heart, and gave way as soon as they were attacked. Their barricade was left undefended, and the main body of the troops, with their long train of baggage animals, poured slowly through that dreadful defile, which is twenty-five miles long, and where the road is often merely the bed of a mountain torrent. In this place the Khyberes were wont to levy a toll on passengers, "but in times of trouble they are all upon the alert. If a single traveller attempts to make his way through, the noise of his horse's feet sounds up the long, narrow valleys, and soon brings the Khyberes in troops from the hills and ravines; but if they expect a caravan they assemble in hundreds on the side of a hill, and sit patiently, with their matchlocks in their hands, watching its approach."

* Gleig.

* Mountstuart Elphinstone.

Before evening fell, Pollock's troops reached the great hill-fort of Ali Musjid, the key of the pass, perched on the summit of a precipitous rock. It was found to be evacuated. From thence the way was open to Jelalabad, the garrison of which, after five months of heroic daring and bitter privation, was triumphantly relieved.

Meanwhile General Nott was nobly doing his

solved to strengthen his works and victual his stores, so as to be ready for any eventuality. The people of the town had not been turned out, and they repaid the kindness of being permitted to remain, by treacherously admitting the enemy, and the consequence was that our troops had to shut themselves up in the citadel.

There they maintained themselves bravely, but



PORTRAIT OF LADY SALE.

duty at Candahar; but Ghuznee had fallen into the hands of the Afghans.

Colonel Maclaren's brigade, after a vain attempt to reach Cabul, had retraced its steps and rejoined Nott at Candahar in December. Ghuznee had been invested by the adjacent tribes as early as the 20th of the preceding month. It was provided neither for siege nor blockade, and the garrison found with joy that the enemy, alarmed by Maclaren's partial advance, had suddenly retired. On this Colonel Palmer, the officer in command, re-

solved with difficulty, till a letter of similar import to that which Elphinstone and Pottinger had sent to Jelalabad arrived.

Colonel Palmer did not wisely disregard the order as Sale and Macgregor did. He therefore agreed, on the 1st of March, to evacuate the place. The sepoys of his garrison, who would seem to have lost all discipline, were destroyed almost to a man as they attempted to force their way across the country to Peshawur, which, in their ignorance, they believed to be only fifty miles distant, while

their British officers, who had surrendered on the solemn promise of "honourable treatment," were disarmed and thrown into rigorous confinement.

* Our forces at Candahar, under Nott, were 9,000 strong. He was a man of indomitable spirit and great ability, but he had, in addition to the open hostility of the people, to dread treachery in his own camp; and of the latter he had a painful example on the 27th December, when two corps of Janbaz, or Afghan cavalry, belonging to Shah Sujah's contingent, after murdering one British officer, Lieutenant Golding, with singular barbarity, and leaving another, Lieutenant Paterson, dreadfully mutilated and for dead, marched off with a quantity of treasure entrusted to them. They were, however, overtaken by Captain Leeson's cavalry, who slew about eighty of them, and brought back with him the head of the chief instigator of Golding's murder.*

Only two days after this event, Prince Sufter Jung, a younger son of the shah, proved a traitor, and joined Atta Mohammed, a Ghilzie chief, who was mustering a large army, with which he fully hoped to keep Nott's division amply occupied during the winter. He had set up his camp in the Urghandaub valley, about forty miles west of Cabul.

On the 12th of January, Sufter Jung and Atta Mohammed came within fifteen miles of Candahar, at the head of nearly 20,000 men, and took up a position on the right bank of the Urghandaub river, so Nott lost no time in taking the field against them. He took with him Blood's Artillery, four nine-pounders, twelve six-pounders of Shah Sujah's Horse Artillery; Leeson's Cavalry, two rissalas of Skinner's Horse under Captain Haldane, H.M. 40th, 2nd, 16th, and 38th Regiments, and a wing of the 43rd Bengal Native Infantry, and the 3rd Shah's Infantry.

Under Colonel Maclaren, H.M. 2nd, 16th, and 40th, were to form the right column, and to advance into the Urghandaub valley by a narrow gorge called the Baboowalla Pass. The remainder were to move round the hills to the left, Maclaren threw out his skirmishers as he neared the pass, and though parties of the enemy were in sight, they did not dispute the way, but fell back on their main

body, which, on clearing the pass, our troops saw drawn up about three miles distant on the opposite side of the stream, where they had a very imposing appearance from the number of gaily-coloured banners they displayed.*

On both sides of the river were numerous pretty villages, surrounded by mud walls and luxuriant orchards. On the forces effecting a junction, General Nott crossed the river by a ford two miles below the pass, for the purpose of attacking the enemy, who took up a strong position at the fortified village of Killa Sheik, with their right and left resting upon orchards, the walls of which they loop-holed.

Before opening fire, General Nott made it known that he would give 5,000 rupees for the head of Atta Mohammed. The troops advanced against the enemy through a swamp, where the mud rose to the knee, and the fire became general along the whole line on both sides.

Theirs "began to move as we approached," says Captain Neill, "and when at length the bayonets were brought to the charge, and the British cheer struck their astonished ears, they fell back, broke, and retreated in complete disorder across the plain. Our cavalry had now to make a wide *détour* to avoid the swamp, and we did not derive the advantage which we should have enjoyed had they been well placed. The enemy continued their retrograde movement, but at length rallied and reformed on the plain. Long before the infantry could get within musket shot of them they resumed their retreat in good order, our cavalry and one of the troops of horse artillery, which had now come up, were sent in pursuit, and overtaking them, cut up numbers of the infantry, who were abandoned by their sowars Our loss was slight: six or eight officers wounded, and a few men killed and wounded, that of the enemy was said to have been very great, which I can easily imagine—our artillery, which was beautifully served, having such dense masses on which to play."

Prince Sufter Jung and Atta Mohammed commanded in person. The latter rode about enveloped in a shroud to evince his determination to die in the field rather than surrender. Yet he was among the first who fled.

* Captain M. B. Neill.

* "Four Years with the 40th Reg.," &c.

CHAPTER XXII

ATTEMPT TO RE-CAPTURE CANDAHAR.—LORD ELLENBOROUGH GOVERNOR-GENERAL.—GENERAL ENGLAND DEFEATED IN THE KOJUCK PASS.

TIDINGS of Sir William Macnaghten's murder reached Candahar on the 30th of January, and prepared Nott and his soldiers for the more dismal events that were to follow. The time for active operations in the field was somewhat passed now, but neither of the armies seemed disposed to sheathe the sword, and while the British troops held the city, the insurgents, led by Meerza Ahmed, a great Dooranee chief, established their camp at no great distance. In the meantime, Nott was unremitting in his exertions: he repaired the fortifications, and secured five months' provisions. He was more sanguine than ever, after the late affair at Urghandaub, of being able to defend Candahar, when, to his astonishment, the letter of Pottinger and Elphinstone arrived, directing the evacuation of that city, and also of Khelat-i-Ghilzie. It was addressed to Major Henry C. Rawlinson, the political Resident, and in tenor was precisely similar to that received by Sale at Jelalabad.

Rawlinson deemed it wise to disregard the order for retiring, but at the same time desirable to make it the basis of a negotiation, the terms of which might enable us, even in the event of abandoning Afghanistan, to retain a certain political influence there; but Nott, more soldierly in spirit, could not brook this temporising policy, and in answer to the major's official letter on the subject of evacuation, wrote thus:—"I have only to repeat that I will not treat with any person whatever for the retirement of the British troops from Afghanistan until I shall have received instructions from the supreme government. The letter signed 'Eldred Pottinger' and 'W. K. Elphinstone' may, or may not, be a forgery. I conceive that these officers were not free agents at Cabul, and, therefore, their letter or order can have no weight with me."

To prepare for the defence of Candahar upon one hand, and the attack of Meerza Ahmed's camp on the other, it became necessary to expel from the city all who were supposed to be antagonistic to the cause of Shah Sujah. Accordingly, on the 3rd of March, an order was issued for 1,000 families of pure Afghan descent, making a total of about 5,000 persons, to quit the place. On the third day thereafter the clearance was complete; and on the 7th, Nott, leaving only 2,600 men to garrison the city, marched forth with 4,000 fighting men, including

Shah Sujah's and Skinner's Horse, six six-pounders, and four nine pounders, with their gunners; H.M. 40th; the 16th, 38th, and 42nd Native Infantry; six companies of the 43rd; and a wing of the Shah's 2nd Regiment.

Though the enemy numbered 12,000 men, of whom 6,000 were cavalry, in proportion as Nott advanced they retired, first across the Turnuk and then beyond the Urghandaub, keeping sufficiently distant to prevent our infantry from reaching them; and Nott's cavalry, only a squadron, were too feeble to push forward. At last our guns got within range of them and opened, on which they broke and fled; but this plan was only a portion of a premeditated scheme, as they made a circuit, which brought them into our rear, and after that they hastened on to Candahar, hoping to gain it by assault while the greater part of the garrison was absent.

On the 10th large bodies of Afghans began to occupy the cantonments and some gardens in their vicinity. During the day their numbers continued to increase, and towards evening Prince Sufter Jung and Meerza Ahmed arrived, while a small body of cavalry were left far afield, to hover near Nott and deceive him as to the whereabouts of the main body. After sunset, a villager, pretending to have come from a great distance, presented himself at the Herat Gate, where Lieutenant Cooke, of the 2nd Bengal Native Infantry, was on guard, and asked permission to take in a donkey-load of faggots. This was, of course, refused, as it was contrary to orders to admit any one at that hour. On this, he said he would leave the wood till next morning, and, throwing it against the gate, departed.

About eight o'clock, a party of the enemy stole softly up, unseen, poured oil and ghee over the faggots, set them on fire, and the flames quickly spread to the old gate, which burned like tinder.

Prior to this, a similar trick had been played at the citadel gate, but something induced the quartermaster of H.M. 40th, who was the officer on guard there, to look out, and on seeing the heap of faggots, some undefinable suspicion made him take them carried inside.

Meanwhile, at the blazing Herat Gate, the enemy were attempting to force an entrance, but were frustrated chiefly by the presence of our cavalry.

* "Four Years with the 40th Regt."

by the Commissary-General, who formed within it a barricade of bags of flour. This the enemy gained by a rush, but were repulsed. Again and again they renewed the assault, but so hot was the fire that was poured upon them, that they were compelled to retire over a rampart of their own dead. Had both gates been attacked thus, Candahar must have been lost, with all Nott's stores, ammunition, and two eighteen-pounders; and there can be little doubt that he committed a military error in marching so far from it.

In consequence of the disasters in Afghanistan, the position of the Governor-General was rendered more embarrassed by the state of parties at home. Disgraced by the blunders of their career, the Whig ministry were tottering to their fall, and were about to be succeeded by the Tories, who had not failed to make capital out of the horrors of the Khyber Pass. And now vacillation and diffidence succeeded the former confidence of Lord Auckland, and as he had no hope that the Government, on his resignation, would be carried out in accordance with his own views, he resolved for the little term that remained to him, to conduct it in such a manner as would be least embarrassing to his successor. But the state of Afghanistan destroyed all hope of the country being tranquil before that successor arrived; and when it seemed but too probable that nothing remained for our troops but to fight their way home, the Governor-General and his council lost no time in timidly announcing their intention of shunning further conflict.

Thus Sir Jasper Nicolls was directed to forward troops to Peshawur, to assist the army in the intended retreat, and, accordingly, Pollock had hastened to that place, under the impression that he was only to relieve Sale in Jelalabad, and assist in the evacuation of Afghanistan. Nott's command in the south was confirmed, and each officer was made superior to the political Residents at their respective posts—an arrangement, the expediency of which in countries where the sword is the sole arbiter, cannot be questioned. "At the date of the resolution conferring new and, to some extent, discretionary powers on the military commanders, the full extent of the Cabul disaster was not known at Calcutta; but on the 30th of January letters were received which destroyed all hope, and made the reality even worse than had been apprehended. Severe as the blow must have been felt, not a day was lost in publishing it to the world, and at the same time, pledging the Government to the adoption of a steadfast prosecution of the most active measures for expediting powerful reinforcements to the Afghan frontier, and for assisting such

operations as may be required in that quarter for the maintenance of the honour and interests of the British Government." A proclamation, issued from Fort William on the 31st after making the above declaration, and adding that "the ample military means at the disposal of the British Government will be strenuously applied to these objects, so as at once to support external operations, and cause efficient protection for its subjects and allies," continues thus, as we have already quoted, "a faithless enemy, stained by the foul crime of assassination, has, through a failure of supplies, followed by consummate treachery, been able to overcome a body of British troops, in a country removed by distance and difficulties of season from the possibility of succour. But the Governor-General in council, while he most deeply laments the loss of brave officers and men, regards the partial reverse only as a new occasion for displaying the stability and vigour of the British power, and the admirable spirit and valour of the British Indian army."

All this sounded very well, but most puerile were the attempts to follow it up; and when Colonel Wyld's column was repulsed in the Khyber Pass, Lord Auckland's heart failed him, and mortified deeply that the last military operation undertaken during his administration should prove a miserable failure, he saw nothing for it but to abandon Afghanistan; and though we had yet to take vengeance on its people, on the 19th February, 1842, he wrote thus:—"Since we have heard of the misfortunes of the Khyber Pass, and have been convinced, that from the difficulties at present opposed to us, and in the actual state of our preparations, we could not expect, at least in this year, to maintain a position in the Jelalabad districts for any effective purpose, we have made our directions in regard to withdrawal from Jelalabad clear and positive, and we shall rejoice to learn that Major-General Pollock will have anticipated these more express orders, by confining his efforts to the same objects."

The arrival of Lord Ellenborough in Calcutta on the 28th February brought Lord Auckland's desponding and disastrous administration to a close.

He wrote a benevolent minute on education, and, in the interests of science, he strove to promote them; but his administration comprised a short series of transactions—the conquest, the occupation, and the disasters of Afghanistan. It commenced with a surplus revenue of a crore and a half, and it closed with a deficit of two crores, and a large addition to the debt. The Tories

contributed an inefficient Governor-General in Lord Amherst, and the Whigs another in Lord Auckland. The one wasted thirteen crores in the Burmese war, and the other squandered an equal sum in the Afghan expedition.*

Lord Ellenborough, the new Governor-General, having previously held the office of President of the Board of Trade, was not ignorant of the duties on which he entered, and possessed both the talents and the knowledge to discharge them with success. He was a statesman of high reputation, an eloquent orator, and for many years had taken a special interest in the affairs of India, which he reached at a time when on all sides "men's hearts were failing them because of fear." After arriving there, to use the language of an Indian journal, he "took two or three months to look about him. He found that the administration of his predecessor had been a 'secretariat administration,' and to that cause alone he attributed the fact that, after an experiment of five years, it had closed in dismay and defeat. He therefore resolved to take the executive power from the hands of his secretaries and to wield it himself. Hence it was that the country which he found distracted, shaking to pieces, with an exhausted treasury and a discontented army, he left in a condition to which it had never before attained: the coffers overflowing, the army enthusiastic, and the secretaries in their proper places. Hence, too, his unpopularity with the civil service."

He was known to possess great energy and decision of character; thus the community in India augured a happy relief from the weak and vacillating policy of his predecessor. In a letter, dated the 15th of March, 1842, addressed by him to the commander-in-chief, he gave a rapid survey of recent affairs, and drew a conclusion that the tripartite treaty, in consequence of the suspicious conduct which Shah Sujah had lately been pursuing, was no longer binding upon us, and we were under no obligation to peril our armies, and even the Indian empire, in seeking to carry out its provisions. "Whatever course we may hereafter take must rest solely on military considerations; and hence, in the first instance, regard must be had to the detached bodies of our troops at Jelalabad, at Ghuznee, at Khelat-i-Ghilzie, and Candahar; to the security of our troops now in the field from all unnecessary risk; and, finally, to the re-establishment of our military reputation, by the infliction of some signal and decisive blow upon the Afghans, which may make it appear to them, to our own subjects, and our allies, that we have the power of inflicting punishment upon those who commit

atrocities and violate their faith; and that we withdraw ultimately from Afghanistan, not from any deficiency of means to maintain our position, but because we are satisfied that the king we have set up has not, as we were erroneously led to imagine, the support of the nation over which he has been placed."

On the part of Lord Ellenborough there was great activity, and apparent resolution; and, to be nearer the scene of operations, he started from Calcutta on the 6th of April, and, breaking loose from all official trammels, left his council behind him; but the language he adopted at Benares somewhat belied the spirit of his first proclamation, and he spoke of withdrawing Major-Generals Pollock and Nott, with their troops, into positions where they should have easier communication with India. The former was ordered to fall back upon Peshawur; the latter to withdraw his garrison from Khelat-i-Ghilzie, and to take up a position at Quettah, in Beloochistan, till the season should permit of his retiring to Sukkur.

This remarkable and unexpected change of views could only be accounted for by gloomy intelligence which he received from Afghanistan, and which perplexed him. While cheered by the steady heroism of Sale at Jelalabad, the dispersion of Ackbar Khan's troops, the junction of Sale and Pollock, he learned that these successes in the north were nearly counterbalanced by reverses in the south. Ghuznee had fallen; Khelat, though far less tenable, was sorely pressed, and General England had met with a disaster in the Kojuck Pass.

That officer, then in command of the Scinde field force, having been ordered to march from Dadur through the Bolan Pass towards Quettah, and from thence to traverse the Kojuck Pass, for the purpose of reinforcing General Nott, for whom he had supplies of treasure, ammunition, and medicine, took with him only five companies of H.M. 41st Welsh Regiment, six of Bombay Infantry, one troop of Bombay Cavalry, fifty Poonah Horse, and four Horse Artillery guns. He was an officer who had served at Flushing and Antwerp, and subsequently at Tarifa and in Sicily in 1810. On the 28th of March he reached the entrance of a defile that leads to the village of Hykulzye, where he intended to halt for the rest of his brigade, then threading its way through the Bolan Pass. It would appear that, in the hope that General Nott would send two or three battalions to the Kojuck Pass, he had resolved to halt in the Pishan Valley till they should arrive; and it was only on learning that no such movement would be made, that he moved on towards Hykulzye.

* *Marshall*, vol. iii.

He had been distinctly warned that the enemy, in strength, were in readiness to contest his passage; and yet, without waiting till all his troops were concentrated, while in total ignorance of the country and of the whereabouts of the Afghans, he continued to advance rashly.

In consequence, he was suddenly attacked, when at the head of only 500 men, and compelled to give way, with the loss of 100 killed or wounded. Among the former were Major Apthorpe, of the Bombay service, and Captain May, of the 41st. He ordered the whole to retreat to Quettah, where, as if he had been pursued, he proceeded to intrench himself. Our loss was small, but the moral effect of the combat was great, and to it was ascribed the Governor-General's change of policy.

His peremptory orders for Pollock and Nott to withdraw were most mortifying to these officers, and neither were slow in bitterly expressing it; while the former, in the hope that the order might be cancelled, dexterously availed himself of a deficiency in carriage, and urged that, until it was supplied, he would be unable to fall back upon Peshawur. Meanwhile, Brigadier England (who was Lieutenant-Colonel of the 41st) seemed to have made up his mind that it was no use attempting to enter the Kojuck Pass, and announced that he would wait till General Nott came in his direction. Nott lost all patience now, and wrote him peremptorily thus:—"I think it absolutely necessary that a strong brigade of 2,500 men should be immediately pushed from Quettah to Candahar with the supplies noted. I therefore have to acquaint you that I will direct a brigade of three companies of infantry, with a body of cavalry, to march from Candahar on the morning of the 25th instant. This force will certainly be at Chummun, at the northern foot of the Kojuck, on the morning of the 1st of May, and possibly on the 30th of this month. I shall, therefore, fully rely on your marching a brigade so that it may reach the southern side of the pass on the above-mentioned date."

As this was an order which he dared not disobey, he marched from Quettah on the 26th of April. Two days later he was at Hykulzye, where the way was barricaded and the enemy in strength; but he handled his troops so well that the Afghans fled, and on the 30th he reached the southern end of the Kojuck Pass, and on sending his advance-guard along the heights, he had the satisfaction to find these in front already in possession of the Candahar troops.

After forming the junction, the whole continued their march to the city, which they reached on the 1st of May. Now, it was at this very time, when

the active and impatient Nott had received those supplies, for want of which he had been kept inactive, that Lord Ellenborough's obnoxious letter reached him. It was indicative of timid and retrograde policy at a crisis when Nott hoped to be able to relieve Khelat-i-Ghilzie, or somewhere strike a blow to retrieve our tarnished honour. So great was his mortification that he could not trust himself to write on the subject to his seniors; but Major Rawlinson wrote thus, next day, to the gallant Outram:—"The peremptory order to retire has come upon us like a thunderclap. No one at Candahar is aware of such an order having been received, except the general and myself, and we must preserve profound secrecy as long as possible.

When our intended retirement is once known, we must expect to have the whole country up in arms, and to obtain no cattle, except such as we can violently lay hands on. If the worst comes to the worst, we must abandon all baggage and stores, and be content to march with sufficient food to carry us to Quettah."

But for the courage of such men as Nott and Sale, the Cabul disasters would have been repeated. When the whole extent of our loss then became known, the former had written to Lord Auckland, urging him not to be disheartened for a moment, and cheerfully undertaking to march through the corpse-strewn passes from Candahar to Cabul as soon as the roads should be passable. Nott scorned the panic which prevailed at Calcutta, and exclaimed—"Stupid blunders caused disasters at Cabul; is that a reason for the despair of a mighty empire? I do greatly wonder at such deep folly."

"Had I not been sternly determined," he wrote, at a later period, "there would have been no advance on Ghuznee and Cabul, and we should have left Afghanistan in disgrace, being laughed at by the whole world, and all India would have been up in arms. I was obliged, more than once, to save their honour and their lives in spite of themselves. My sepoys always acted nobly, and I could have done anything with them. . . . But when among our own countrymen all was panic and infatuation, from Lord Auckland down to the drum-boy; when I endeavoured to uphold the honour of my country, and save it from disgrace, I was told—mark this! it is on official record—I was told, 'Your conduct has been injudicious, and shows that you are unfit for any command.'"* But a time came when Lord Ellenborough was among the first to value and appreciate Nott.

Notwithstanding the apprehensions expressed in Rawlinson's letter to Outram, General Nott wrote

* Sir W. Nott's Papers, *Quarterly Review*, 1845.

that, as a soldier, his first duty was obedience, prepared to execute the orders of the Governor-General, and, as a beginning, on the 19th of May he dispatched a brigade, consisting of H.M. 40th and two Bengal battalions, with some cavalry, and a company of Bombay European gunners, having some nine-pounders, under Colonel Wymer, to Khelat-i-Ghilzie, to assist the garrison in the evacuation of the place and the destruction of its works. Only two days before, the defenders, under Captain Halkett Craigie, had repulsed and slain 500 of the enemy, and now, to that officer's mortification, "the only result was something like an acknowledgment of defeat by an abandonment of the place as no longer tenable."

"The last sheep in the garrison had been killed on the day before Colonel Wymer's arrival, and after three days were spent in the destruction of the fortifications, the whole force, accompanied by Craigie's garrison, marched back to Candahar.

"The order for the immediate evacuation of Afghanistan excited a burst of indignation throughout India. It was universally felt that to retire before our honour had been vindicated, or the prisoners rescued, would inflict a deeper stigma on the national character than the capitulation

at Cabul, and which might be considered one of the chances of the war. With all the contempt Lord Ellenborough expressed for public opinion, he could scarcely be indifferent to this unanimous expression of feeling, and he changed his mind again. On the 4th July, General Nott was assured, in an official communication, that the resolution of the Governor-General to withdraw the troops remained without alteration. On the same day Lord Ellenborough wrote himself to the general, suggesting that it might possibly be feasible for him to withdraw from Afghanistan by advancing to Ghuznee and Cabul, over the scenes of our late disasters; that this would have a grand effect upon the minds of our soldiers, of our allies, of our enemies in Asia, of our own countrymen, and of foreign nations in Europe. It was an object unquestionably great. A copy of this letter was sent to General Pollock, with the suggestion that he might possibly feel disposed to advance to Cabul and co-operate with General Nott. Both officers were too happy to move up to the capital and retrieve our honour, to think for a moment of the responsibility thus thrust upon them, and which the Governor-General, as the head of the state, should have had the courage to have taken upon himself."*

CHAPTER XXIII.

FATE OF SHAH SUJAH.—NOTT TAKES THE FIELD.—THE MARCH OF POLLOCK.—CABUL RE-CAPTURED AND PARTIALLY DESTROYED.

WHEN our army began that retreat from Cabul—a retreat which had no end, save death—Shah Sujah was acknowledged as king, and permitted to occupy the Balahissar, though the insurgent chiefs held all the powers of the State. To Jelalabad he sent repeated messages expressive of his unchangeable adherence to the British Government, with some cravings for money, though he had contrived to save twenty lacs of rupees out of the sums given him since he left Loodiana. But, as there was an irreconcilable hatred between the Afghans and the British, it was impossible that he could be the friend of both. Hence, when he protested his constant faith to the national cause, the chiefs of the Afghan clans desired him to demonstrate it by placing himself at the head of the army they were

about to march for the expulsion of Sale from Jelalabad. "He was totally unworthy of the support which the British Government in an evil hour had resolved to give him, and he was now endeavouring to play a double game, in which it was hardly possible for him not to be a loser. He was safe only while he remained within the Balahissar; and, therefore, the chiefs who were bent on his destruction used every means in their power to lure him beyond its walls."

As it was rumoured that he would be murdered or blinded by the Barukzyes, to lure him proved no easy task, but the proposal that he should march to Jelalabad, as a test of his truth, won a reluctant consent from him, and his personal safety

* Marshman's "India."

having been guaranteed by the most solemn oaths | on the following morning he would review the
sworn on the Koran, he moved out of the citadel | troops now encamped near the hills of Secah



PORTRAIT OF LORD ELLENBOROUGH.

on the 4th of April, and returned to it unharmed
on the same day. As this seemed to prove that
his fears were groundless, it was announced that

Sung, and then march with them for Jelalabad.
At an early hour on the 5th he left the Balahissar
under a salute of cannon, wearing his most costly

jewels and all the insignia of royalty, and was riding towards the camp, when a band of Afghan juralchees, who lay in ambush, poured upon him a murderous volley. One of the balls pierced his brain. Sujah-ul-Dowlah, son of the Nawab Zeman Khan, the chief of the assassins, now rushed forward to ascertain that the king was dead, and then stood idly by while the others stripped the bloody corpse and tossed it into a ditch.

It would seem that the regicides had been ignorant of their real influence, as before night closed, Futteh Jung, Sujah's second son, was proclaimed king in the Balahissar, and was able to rescue his father's dead body from further indignity, and inter it with all the honours due to his rank. But the proclamation of the prince was followed by confusion and anarchy, amid which the guns of the Balahissar were turned again and again on the city; the rival factions fought deadly battles in its streets, and these ended in the complete ascendancy of Akbar Khan.

While Lord Ellenborough had been changing his policy, he was anxious to disguise the fact that he was doing so; thus, while he continued to address letters to Generals Nott and Pollock, in which he constantly reminded them that to "withdraw" was still his intention, he in the same documents gave them express permission to advance on Cabul. The inflexible resolution to withdraw, with the permission to advance, were very like a contradiction, but the legal education of the Governor-General will account for any tergiversation of which he was then apparently guilty. Of this Beveridge, himself a lawyer, says: "Withdraw was still the order of the day, but there were different modes of effecting it. General Nott, for instance, instead of taking the shortest road, and retiring into Scinde by the Bolan Pass, might prefer to go a thousand miles about, and after traversing Afghanistan from north to south, reach India by the Khyber Pass and the Punjaub. Some may say that to speak of such a march as a 'withdrawal' was a mere play upon words—in short, a despicable quibble. The Governor-General thought differently, and saw in this very quibble the means of once saving his own consistency and restoring the honour of the British arms."

Eventually the whole responsibility was thrown upon General Nott, whom Ellenborough knew was too much of a soldier not to accept it with joy; and he concludes his second letter of the 4th of July thus:—"If you should be enabled by *coup de main* to get possession of Ghuznee and Cabul, you will act as you see fit, and leave decisive proofs of the power of the British army, without impeaching its

humanity. You will bring away from the tomb of Mahmood of Ghuznee his club, which hangs over it, and you will bring away the gates of his tomb, which are the gates of the Temple of Somnauth. These will be just trophies of your successful march."

As an artful, but additional inducement to choose the route to Ghuznee, Nott was informed that a copy of the letter would be forwarded to Pollock, with instructions to facilitate the advance by a forward movement, and that the operations of the two armies should be in conjunction, so as to effect, with the smallest amount of loss, the occupation of Cabul, while keeping open our communication between that place and Peshawar.

Our soldiers heard the welcome tidings of the intended advance with joy; and with joy, too, did the generals accept that responsibility which was selfishly and ungenerously thrown on them, and which, in the event of failure, might have ended dubiously for them both.

Nott, as having the longer march to perform, was the first to uncasing the colours. Having dispatched Brigadier England, with five regiments and a half, twelve guns, and some cavalry, to march by the Bolan Pass, he prepared to take the longer and more difficult route with his main body; and on the 9th of August he made his first march northward in the direction of Ghuznee. The route was continued without interruption as far as Mookur, a large village, distant 130 miles from Candahar, when some of the enemy's cavalry came in sight, on which our light companies were sent to the front. That night an attempt made on the baggage was repulsed, and sixty Afghans were sabred; but on the following day, the 28th of August, the first actual skirmish occurred, with a result not at all creditable to the British arms.

A report having been brought into camp that a portion of Shumshoodeen Khan's army had attacked the grass-cutters who had gone out to forage, Captain Delamaine, who commanded the cavalry, moved to the front, while dispatching a messenger to the adjutant-general that he had done so. This message was not delivered in proper time, and hence Delamaine was unsupported. He overtook and repulsed the enemy, with loss. Elated by this, the cavalry rode on, and by pursuing the fugitives so far, fell among the whole of Shumshoodeen's army in difficult ground, full of ravines, from whence the matchlock-men repulsed them by a heavy fire; and the first tidings the British had of an encounter was the sound of a cloud of whirling dust obscured the scene of the attack, and out of these some riderless horses were seen

galloping wildly into camp. The whole cavalry fell back in good order, till a kind of panic ensued among them on being charged by only 150 of the enemy's horse. On seeing Nott's main body approaching, the Afghans moved off, satisfied with what they had done.

Among the slain were Captains Bury and Reeves, of the 3rd Bombay Cavalry. When a regiment, with some field-pieces, went to the front to recover the bodies of those who fell—fifty in number—they were all found to be deprived of their heads, hands, and otherwise shockingly mutilated. At Ghuznee, Captain Reeves' head was exhibited as that of General Nott, who, it was said, had been entirely defeated near Mookur, himself killed, his army dispersed, and his guns taken.*

The effect of all this was to add greatly to the forces of Shumshoodeen Khan, and, at the same time, to inflate him with such confidence, that he began to think of assuming the offensive. Accordingly, on the 30th, when Nott was marching upon Ghoine, he took up a position on some hills in front of the British. The country there was finely wooded and studded with little square forts, having round towers at each angle. To lure him to a trial of strength, Nott, about three in the afternoon, moved out with half his force. The challenge was at once accepted. Beating tom-toms, and uttering discordant yells, the Afghans came pouring down, and there ensued a conflict which Nott describes with brevity in his despatch:—"The enemy advanced in the most bold and gallant manner, each division cheering as they came into position; their left being upon a hill of some elevation, their centre and right along a low ridge, until their flank rested on a fort filled with men. They opened a fire of small arms, supported by two six-pounder horse artillery guns, which were admirably served; our columns advanced upon the different points with great regularity and steadiness, and after a short but spirited contest completely defeated the enemy, capturing their guns, tents, ammunition, &c., dispersing them in every direction. One hour more of daylight would have enabled me to destroy the whole of their infantry. Shumshoodeen fled in the direction of Ghuznee, accompanied by about thirty horsemen."

The two guns had been worked by Mussulman deserters from our service. Our total in killed and wounded was 104 officers and men, and seventy-eight horses, including thirteen missing. Next day Nott was joined by a body of Huzaurehs, men of a tribe from the Paropamisian mountains, supposed to be of Afghan extraction. They professed a great

friendship for the British, and an equal detestation for the Afghans. As devout followers of Ali, they implored the general to exterminate all the Soonees, to raze Ghuznee, but more particularly to carry off or destroy "Jubber Jung," as they named a famous sixty-four-pound brass gun, for which they appeared to entertain a deep religious horror. These men are always good shots alike with bow and match-lock; in addition to which their arms are a Persian sword, a long narrow dagger in a wooden sheath, and sometimes a spear.*

On the morning of the 5th of September, Nott was before the lofty city of Ghuznee. It was full of armed men, he tells us in his despatch to the Indian Government, and on a range of mountains that lie north-east of the fortress there hovered heavy bodies of cavalry and infantry. Major Saunders, of the Engineers, with the 16th Bengal Infantry, proceeded to reconnoitre it to select a point for breaching; but, as he approached the village of Bullab, which occupies a spur of the mountains, about 600 yards from the walls, he was attacked by the enemy in such numbers that it became necessary to support the 16th. Captain Ferdinand White, of H.M. 40th, moved up with the light companies. Then Nott advanced with the other troops, and the firing became general. The village was captured, and Shumshoodeen Khan, who had been considerably reinforced by Sultan Jan, from Cabul, retired, with his infantry, within the walls, but not before we had lost forty-six men and sixteen horses. Two regiments of infantry and some light guns were left in Bullab to guard the formation of the breaching battery, while the rest of the troops encamped on the Cabul road. The enemy waited patiently till all the tents were up and the drums had beaten for breakfast, when a tremendous report was heard, and a shot from "Jubber Jung" whizzed over the mess-tent of H.M. 40th, and landing among the camels in the rear, killed several of them. Shot after shot came from it with amazing rapidity, and as these were roughly made of hammered iron, they hissed in their passage through the air. The camp was therefore transferred to Rosah, where the tents were set up amid vineyards and orchards. As the guns for the battery were being moved into position on the morning of the 6th, it was found that Ghuznee was empty. The enemy had abandoned it under cloud of night.

We thus entered the famous fortress without firing another shot. The Cabul Gate, by which Lord Keane had marched in, was found built up, and in the citadel where our officers had been

* Captain Neill.

* Elphinstone's "Account of Cabul."

imprisoned their names were written on the wall with the statement of Colonel Palmer having been there put to torture. The mace that had hung above the white tomb of Mahmood—a weapon of wood, but with a metal head so heavy that few men could wield it—was gone; so was that mighty warrior's shield; but the sandal-wood gates, which, it was said, he had brought from Somnauth eight centuries before, were secured; and on hearing of this, Lord Ellenborough expressed his delight in a private letter to General Nott, abounding in minute and frivolous detail as to the mode in which the gates were to be paraded on the march homeward, and conveyed to their final destination. They were removed by a company of our 40th Regiment, amid the tears, curses, and wailings of the fakirs who watched the shrine. "Jubber Jung" was found to be a brass gun of the finest kind, and beautifully ornamented. All the guns taken in Ghuznee were burst, by order of the general. The fortifications were blown up, the woodwork set on fire, and the flames of this ancient and renowned citadel, the cradle of the Moslem power and faith in India, lighted the sky during a whole night.

Carrying with him the alleged gates of Somnauth, which Mahmood had reft from the famous temple in 1024, General Nott, on the 10th of September, marched from Ghuznee, and met with no opposition till the fourth day, when, on arriving at Maidan (twenty miles from Cabul), he found Shumshoodeen Khan, Sultan Jan, and other Afghan chiefs, at the head of 12,000 men, in possession of some heights, and prepared to dispute his passage. He immediately attacked them, and, as he states in his despatch to General Pollock, commanding west of the Indus, "our troops dislodged them in gallant style, and their conduct afforded me the greatest satisfaction." He had only two men killed, but several wounded, including three subalterns.*

The march of the 17th of September brought our Candahar force within five miles of the blood-stained capital, which was already in possession of General Pollock, who had entered it on the preceding day, and of whose triumphant march we must now give a brief account.

At the head of 8,000 men, he left Jelalabad, and on the 2nd reached Gundamuck, where the enemy were found in sufficient force to justify certain manoeuvres that, though necessary, are not worth detailing; but it was not until the 7th of September that the march was resumed by the first column, under Sale, while the second, under General to McCaskill, prepared to follow on the 8th. On act that day, when our advance reached Jugdulluk, pon

the enemy were seen in strong force occupying some heights forming a kind of amphitheatre to the left of the road; and Pollock, impatient for battle and vengeance, without waiting for the second column, ordered an attack. The foe met this with great firmness for some time, resolutely maintaining their posts, though the shells of our howitzers burst in showers among them; but the fiery gallantry of the veterans of Jelalabad was irresistible, and the heights were triumphantly stormed. Singular to say, we had only one man killed—an officer—and sixty-five wounded, among whom was one officer.

This success facilitated the progress of the second column, and both formed a junction at Tizeen on the 11th. Already had the Afghan chiefs become aware of the futility of resistance, and thought of obtaining terms. With this view, Ackbar Khan, who held Captain Troup as a species of hostage, sent for that officer, and told him "that he was immediately to proceed to Gundamuck, to General Pollock, and offer, on the part of the Afghan chiefs, submission to any terms he might be pleased to dictate, provided he would stay the advance of his army on Cabul." Troup, aware that the time for negotiation was passed, and that for punishment was come, urged the futility of the proposed journey. Ackbar seems to have become sensible of that, too; and the moment he learned that the British troops were halting in the Pass of Jugdulluk, and might be entangled there like their luckless comrades, he moved his camp to Khoord Cabul, and then pushed on to Tizeen, where the position of the British was certainly a perilous one.

They were in the bottom of a valley, encompassed by great mountains, and there Pollock's pickets were attacked with such boldness on the evening of the 12th September that, though the assault was repulsed by the energy and personal valour of Colonel Taylor, it was evident that progress through the pass beyond would be hotly contested. On the 13th it became necessary for Pollock to decide whether that gloomy vale, where the bones of our dead lay whitening in thousands—as, indeed, they were all over the route—was again to become the scene of another dreadful carnage, or whether it was to witness the condign punishment of Afghan perfidy.

On entering the Tizeen Pass next day, its heights were seen to be crowned with 16,000 men, under Ackbar Khan, and in the battle that ensued the utmost energies of the combatants on both sides were keenly called forth. "The Afghans," elated by their previous success on the same spot, hoped that they were to achieve a second and more glorious victory, while they also knew that

* Despatches.

defeat would involve the loss of their capital and, it might be, of their national independence. The British were animated by still stronger motives. Their companions in arms, whose remains lay scattered around them, were calling aloud for vengeance, and the only question now was, whether, by victory, they were to give a true response to this call, or, by defeat, to be in a like manner exterminated."

The battle was begun by a body of Afghan horse, who, full of confidence and the desire for plunder, descended into the plain to attack our baggage, ere they could reach which, our cavalry fell upon them like a human tempest, threw them into instant confusion, and cut them to pieces. Meanwhile, our infantry had won the crest of the heights, and, trusting chiefly to the bayonet, carried all before them. Though the flower of the Ghiljies and other tribes were under their most able chiefs, their efforts were vain, for the troops with whom they had to deal were unlike the dispirited fugitives of Elphinstone, who, long ere this, had died in the Tower of Tizeen. Deprived of the double advantage which they hoped to possess, in their elevated position and the long range of their juzzails, on the near approach of our infantry they acknowledged their defeat by flight; but not before we lost 162 men killed and wounded, exclusive of four officers among the latter.

Leaving his army to its fate, Ackbar Khan fled, almost alone, to the Ghorebund Valley, while General Pollock continued his march, without further molestation, through Khoord Cabul and Boothauk, and on the 15th of September he encamped on the race-course at Cabul. On the morning of the 16th he hoisted the British colours on the Balahissar, while our bands played the National Anthem, and the cheers of the soldiers rose "with triumphant vehemence, as if they would rend the heavens."

The next occupation of our troops after entering Cabul was the collection and reverent interment of the bones of their brother-soldiers and others who had fallen in that terrible retreat. In many places the skeletons lay in piles, and nearly all headless, the Afghans having taken the skulls as trophies. We are told that horrible and agonising were the efforts made by many of our officers and their men to trace, in the skulls and shattered bones, the remains of some dear friend or comrade. On the spot where the unhappy "44th made their last stand more than 200 skeletons were found lying close together."

General Pollock's first attention was turned to the release of the captives, whom Ackbar Khan,

on the 25th of August, after stripping them of everything of value, had hurried over the barren wastes and steep ascents of the Hindoo Coosh, many thousand feet above the level of the sea, to Bamean, where they arrived on the 3rd of September. Sir Richmond Shakespeare, the military secretary, was now dispatched after them, at the head of 600 Kuzzilbash Lancers. The ladies and officers were then under the charge of Saleh Mohammed, who had been a native commandant in a local Afghan regiment, but had deserted it in the previous year. On the 11th of September he had called Captains Johnson, Lawrence, and Major Pottinger aside, and produced a letter from Ackbar Khan, desiring him to convey the helpless prisoners to the higher regions of the Hindoo Coosh, and deliver them over to the Usbec Tartar chief of Kholoom, in which case, too probably, we should never have heard of them more. At the same time, he exhibited a letter from Mohun Lall, the moonshee of the assassinated envoy, promising, on the part of General Pollock, a gratuity of 20,000 rupees, with an annuity of 12,000, if he would restore the captives. "I know nothing," said he, "of General Pollock; but if you three gentlemen will swear to me by your Saviour to make the offer good, I will deliver you over to your own people."

The proposal was rapturously received, and the officers and ladies united in making themselves responsible by a deed for the funds. Major Pottinger now, by common consent, assumed direction of their movements. He deposed the governor of Bamean, and laid under contribution a caravan of Lohanee merchants which passed it. He secured the Afghan escort of 250 men by promising them four months' pay on reaching Cabul, and issued proclamations to the neighbouring chiefs to make their obeisance to him, while he granted them remissions of revenue. To be ready for a siege, the hero of Herat repaired the fortifications, dug wells, and laid in provisions; and on the 15th a passing horseman brought the glorious tidings that Ackbar Khan was a fugitive in the Toba Mountains, that the Afghan army was annihilated, and that Pollock was in full march for Cabul.

Major Pottinger now determined to return there with his fellow-prisoners, who all moved on the 16th, and slept that night on the bare rocks, unconscious, amid their joy, of suffering or fatigue. Next afternoon, when they were resting in the sunshine under the walls of an old fort, Sir Richmond Shakespeare came galloping up with his Kuzzilbashes, and was received with heartfelt pleasure; and more than ever did the rescued—especially the ladies, with their children—feel



MOUNTAINERS OF THE WESTERN HIMALAYAS

thankful for "the grace and protecting providence of a forbearing and merciful God." *

But the party had still a long march through a difficult and disturbed country; and as Shakespeare was not without fears that Ackbar might make an effort to recover his prey, he forwarded an urgent message to General Pollock to send troops to their support, as the Pass of Suffed Khak, through which they had to march, was said to be beset. At the

"It was a glorious rescue," says another writer, "but, alas! that the number rescued should be so small. Major-General Shelton, of H.M. 44th Foot, stands at the head of the list. The total number of all who were released and recovered by Nott and Pollock's brilliant advance to Cabul, and by Sale's forward movement, was only 122. Of this number nine were ladies, and three the wives of non-commissioned officers, there were twenty-two



PORTRAIT OF SIR CHARLES NAPIER.

same time, it was resolved that the party should move forward by forced marches, for which every facility was afforded by the Kuzzilbash chiefs, who supplied fresh horses; and on the 20th they met a British officer, who gave them the welcome intelligence that the gallant Sale, with his noble brigade, was but a few miles distant, on the road to meet them. "All doubt was now at an end," says Lieutenant (afterwards General Sir Vincent) Eyre: "we were once more under the safeguard of British troops. General Sale was there in person, and his happiness in regaining his long-lost wife and daughter may be imagined."

* Lieutenant Eyre's "Journal."

children, and thirty-four officers. The rest, with the exception of two or three regimental clerks, were British non-commissioned officers and privates."

Many of them had no other garment than a sheep-skin; others had the flowing garb of Afghanistan. Our camp at Cabul rang with acclamations when they entered it, and never since the establishment of British India had so intense a feeling of anxiety pervaded the community as the fate of the prisoners excited, and the thrill of delight which vibrated throughout the country on the announcement of their safety may be more easily conceived than described.*

* Marshman.

Cabul was won, but the fighting was not entirely over. Under Ameen Oolah Khan, the most bitter of our enemies, the scattered bands of the Afghan army were gathering in Kohistan, or the highlands of the country, and it was deemed necessary to disperse them. For this purpose General McCaskill marched against Istaliff; but prior to his departure, an interesting ceremony was performed in Lady Sale's tent, when some of the infants who had been born in captivity were baptised by a military chaplain.

Istaliff, boasted as the virgin fortress of Afghanistan, had hence been selected by the insurgents as the place where to leave their families and treasure. It occupies a spur of the Hindoo Coosh, distant twenty miles from Cabul, and McCaskill found its strength had not been over-rated. The town rose in terraces on the mountain slope, and besides being protected by numerous forts, was accessible only by climbing heights, separated by deep ravines and narrow avenues, lined on each side by the strong walls of gardens and vineyards. Confident in the traditional strength of Istaliff, the enemy were disdainfully careless in their arrangements for its defence; thus, when the British troops advanced on the morning of the 29th, they cleared the approaches with ease. The town was stormed, and much booty found, and by some means about a third of the place was burned down. No lives were taken after resistance ceased. A large number of women and children were collected and placed under guard for transmission to their friends, and they were treated with every care and consideration; but considering all that happened there—how the people had murdered Captain Codrington, Lieutenant Ratray, and others, when dwelling peacefully in their midst—how Major Pottinger had escaped covered with wounds, after all his people were slain—it might not have excited surprise had every armed man in the place been put to death. As there were no means for transporting their booty, our soldiers threw into the flames all that they could not convey about their persons.*

General McCaskill next marched to Charikur, where our regiment of Ghoorikas had perished by wholesale slaughter, and burned it down. The objects of the new expedition had been accomplished; the surviving prisoners had been released; Afghanistan had been re-conquered, and our military reputation thus restored; but one thing more was necessary, to leave some retributive and lasting mark of our vengeance on its capital.

Prior to doing this, our generals, somewhat unwisely, set up another puppet-king at Cabul. Futteh Jung, the son of the murdered Shah Sujah, found

his way, in a state of utter destitution, to General Pollock's camp at Gundamuck, from whence he accompanied our troops to Cabul, where he was again installed as king. But this availed him nothing, for when the departure of our army was announced, he resolved to return with it rather than wear a crown which would cost him his life, and a younger brother took his place, only to be dethroned before we crossed the Indus. The Bala-hissar, which had been doomed to destruction, was, most unwisely, left untouched, but the great bazaar of Cabul, the most splendid edifice of its kind in Central Asia, was undermined and blown up, as having been the place where Macnaghten's mutilated corpse had been exposed to the insults of a mob for days.

The British colours were lowered on the Bala-hissar, and with emotions of high satisfaction, our two armies began their homeward march, accompanied by the family of Shah Sujah. This was on the 12th of October, 1842. Lord Ellenborough was all impatience to publish their triumphs to the world in official proclamations. He was at Simla, in the house from which Lord Auckland had sent the declaration of war four years before, and he issued a proclamation announcing the termination of it, and that some dramatic effect should not be wanting, he dated it on the same day of the month with Lord Auckland's manifesto, though it was not issued till ten days later, and it was much censured for its unseemly remarks upon his predecessor.

"Disasters," wrote Lord Ellenborough, "unparalleled in their extent, except by the errors in which they originated, have, in one short campaign, been avenged on every scene of past misfortune. . . . The combined army of Britain and India," he continued, "superior in equipment, in discipline, and in valour, and in the officers by whom it is commanded, to any that can be opposed to it in Asia, will stand in unassailable strength on its own soil, and for ever, under the blessing of Providence, preserve the glorious empire it has won in security and honour."

With Nott and other generals, and not with Lord Ellenborough, lay the glory that had been won; but in his inflation, his proclamation about the captured gates excited ridicule as a parody on Napoleon's famous bulletin.

"My friends and brothers," he said, in his address to the princes of India, "our victorious army bears the gates of the Temple of Somnauth in triumph from Afghanistan, and the despoiled tomb of the Sultan Mahmood looks upon the ruins of Ghuznee! The insult of 800 years is at last avenged. . . . To you, princes and chiefs of Sirhind, of Rajwara,

* "Sale's Brigade in Afghanistan."

of Malwah, and of Goojerat, I shall commit this glorious trophy of successful warfare. You will yourselves, with all honour, transmit these gates of sandal-wood to the restored temple of Somnauth."

This document excited such laughter, that many persons doubted its genuineness. The gates which Nott was ordered to guard as he would his colours, and which an old Fakir predicted would never reach Somnauth, were borne in a wagon covered with costly trappings, escorted by Hindoo volunteers from the 2nd Grenadiers,* and taken in Lord Ellenborough's train to Agra, while, as the procession went forward, hundreds of frantic Hindoos prostrated themselves before it, and made pooja, as if it were a deity; but the gates never went further than Agra, and were thrown into a lumber room of the fort. Moreover, the gates proved in the end not to be those of Somnauth, as their date was found to be much more recent than the time of Mahmood of Ghuznee.

Partly to overawe the Sikhs, and partly to get up a grand ovation, the Governor-General mustered a large army at Ferozepore, and there, at the bridge

* Captain Neill.—Appendix.

of the Sutlej, amidst hundreds of elephants, which he had collected to do honour to the returning troops, he welcomed General Pollock with the rescued captives, and General Nott—who must have felt some contempt for the whole affair—with the gates in their wagon. The officers were feasted in a magnificent tent, while a repast of their favourite sweetmeats was given to the sepoys. All the troops in camp now mustered 40,000 men, and if imposing, it was also a judicious display after our recent military disasters beyond the Indus.

The Afghan prisoners were now liberated; and on taking leave of Dost Mohammed, Lord Ellenborough asked his opinion of the British after all he had seen in India. "I have been struck," replied the Dost, "with the magnitude of your resources, your ships, your arsenals; but what I cannot understand is, why the rulers of an empire so vast and flourishing should have gone across the Indus to deprive me of my poor and barren country."

The surprise expressed by the Dost, says Marshman, was equally shared by the community in Britain and India; and here the curtain drops on the dark tragedy of Afghanistan.

CHAPTER XXIV.

THE CAPTURE OF CANTON.—RELATIONS WITH SCINDE.—THE PERFDY OF ALI MORAD.—EMAUMGHUR DESTROYED.—BATTLE OF MEANEE.

To preserve coherence in the foregoing narrative of the Afghan war, we have omitted, chronologically, a reference to the expedition to the coast of China, in May, 1840.

In our dispute concerning the opium trade, Lord Palmerston, in 1839, gave instructions to our Resident at Canton to inform all British merchants and masters of vessels that to traffic in that drug was illegal; that "the British Government could not interfere for the purpose of enabling British subjects to violate the laws of the country to which they trade." Nevertheless, smuggling was greatly carried on, the Chinese authorities at Canton conniving at it, while the supreme government, like the British Resident, issued proclamations against it. In the February of 1839, strict orders came from Peking to carry the official decrees into effect, and hence, a Chinese accused of smuggling was publicly strangled in front of the foreign factories.

Captain Elliot, our Resident, thereupon ordered all British craft not having licenses to proceed outside the Bogue. On the 10th of March the imperial commissioner, Lin, arrived at Canton, and on the 18th he issued two edicts, one to Hong merchants, and the other to foreigners; the latter requiring every particle of opium in the store-ships, as well as in the vessels without the Chinese waters, to be delivered up to the government on the penalty of death. Captain Elliot, and other residents at Canton, who had never been concerned in any opium transactions, were seized, and threatened with execution unless the mandate was complied with in three days. Our representative had only the alternative of death or implicit obedience. To save lives he chose the latter, and promised to give up opium to the value of £2,500,000, a great part of which was at the time on the high seas, and entirely beyond the control of the Chinese government.

All the opium in these vessels was delivered up; but Lin contended that the specified amount was not made good, and detained Captain Elliot under the same threat of death, compelling him to purchase opium, to the value of about £40,000, to make up the quantity. A convention entered into by the Chinese commissioner for carrying on the outside trade was, on some pretence, broken; and a rencontre took place between H.M. ships *Volage* and *Hyacinth* and a fleet of war-junks, which ended in the utter destruction of the latter. Various attempts were made to burn the British ships in the roads, and to poison their crews. To demand redress and compensation for these insults, and the vast destruction of property, an expedition was sent from India, under Sir Hugh Gough, who captured Canton in May, 1840, and also took possession of the whole river defences, which were held by our troops until 6,000,000 dollars were paid by the Chinese government,* and five ports were opened to European commerce.

Before the final evacuation of Afghanistan took place, the attention of the Governor-General had been drawn to Scinde. On the 4th of November, 1842, a draft of a treaty with the Ameers of Scinde was prepared, and several of its articles became important before the strife then raging was over. By the 2nd article the Company's rupee was to become the only coin legally current after the 1st of January, 1845. By the 5th article the Ameers renounced the privilege of coining money. Article 6 related to the cutting of wood for steamers navigating the Indus. By article 7, Kurrachee and Tatta were ceded to us, with a free passage between them. By article 8, Subsulkhote, which had been taken from the Nawab by the Ameers, and the territory between the present frontier of Bhawalpore and the town of Rohree, are ceded to "that ever faithful friend and ally of the British Government," his Highness of Bhawalpore.

Nott's advance upon Candahar the Ameers mistook for a retrograde movement, and though he afterwards destroyed Ghuznee, and joined in the retribution that fell on Cabul and Istaliff, they would assume that his measures bore the character of a flight. "It was," says Sir Charles Napier, "viewed as a proof of weakness, and the Beloochees and Brahoos became more hopeful and more confident than before. The Ameers of Upper and Lower Scinde consulted together how best to league against the Feringhees; Sikh vakeels were at Khyrpoor ready to start for Lahore, loaded with presents for the Maharajah; and at the same time letters came from the victorious Afghans, reminding the Ameers

that they were ever feudatories of the Dooranee empire, and exhorting them to act boldly in the common cause. These things led to the Ameers' final destruction: they were the forerunners of the battle by which they fell; but their primary cause, it has been shown, was deeper seated. The Scindian war was no isolated event. 'It was the tail of the Afghan storm.' " *

To prosecute a war with the British, the Ameers swore upon the Koran their resolution to unite with Afghans, Sikhs, or any other allies; but, luckily for us, at this crisis there was then in command of the troops in Scinde, where he was invested with full diplomatic and military power, a soldier of the highest reputation, Sir Charles James Napier, who had served first in the Irish rebellion, and afterwards in Spain and America. He was taken prisoner at Corunna, but not until he had received five wounds, and had his ribs broken by a cannon-shot.† He was a man of heroic valour and extraordinary energy; but it is said, by Marshman, that he assumed his post in Scinde with a strong prejudice against the Ameers. The investigation of the charges of disloyalty was left to him by the Governor-General; with the distinct injunction that he was not to proceed against them without the most complete proof of their guilt; and we are also told that he did not consider the war about to be launched upon them as just. Various treaties had been forced already upon these free and independent chiefs; and now Britain treated their country as if it were a province won in war. When Lieutenant Eastwick, on behalf of the Bombay Government, laid before the Ameers the draft-treaty referred to, Noor Mohammed, one of the most powerful, took from a box all the treaties which were in force, and with some sarcasm, asked what was to become of all these; but before he could be replied to, he added, indignantly, "Here is another annoyance! Since the days that Scinde has been connected with Britain there has always been something new; your Government is never satisfied. We are anxious for your friendship, but we cannot be continually persecuted. We have given a road to your troops through our territories, and now you wish to remain!"

The death of this patriotic chief facilitated the designs of Britain, which were carried out with as little sense of scruple as of justice. The Ameers had submitted with tolerable patience to much injustice under Lord Auckland's administration, but when his successor arrived, "a puerile and hot-headed policy was pursued, calculated to drive them to madness or despair. Yet, as in the case

* Lord Jochelyn's "Chinese Expedition;" Despatches, &c.

* "Conquest of Scinde."

† Hart's "Army List," 1843.

of Afghanistan, his hot vigour was followed by reaction, and he hesitated as to the expediency of forcing certain cessions of territory, which he had ordered Colonel Outram, the Resident, to demand." And it was when one of his fits of activity returned, that he placed Sir Charles Napier in civil and military command in Scinde.

On the 5th of October, 1842, that officer reported to Calcutta that the Ameers levied toll upon the Indus, contrary to a treaty which, like others, had been forced upon them by our Government, and "which," it has been said, "they had no more right to dictate, than any Scinde or Belooch robber would have to levy black-mail within the Indian territory." Although he admitted that the Ameers had been aggrieved, and had as yet committed no act of aggression, he still resolved to carry out the Governor-General's unjust policy with a resolute will, and a series of intrigues began "between certain of the Ameers, which were neither very clever nor cunning, and eventually did more to embarrass affairs and drive the Ameers to resistance, than any of the articles of the oppressive and insolent treaty forced upon them;"* and eventually, without allowing them to discuss the terms of it, Sir Charles Napier sequestered the whole of the lands stated in the first treaty, which belonged to Belooch chiefs, who were feudatories of Ameers, thus plunging them at once in penury.

These violent measures were caused by the villainy of Ali Morad. The highest dignity in Upper Scinde was the office of Rais, the symbol of which was a turban. Meer Roostum, then in his eightieth year, had long enjoyed it, and was venerated by all. According to the usage of the country, the succession to this honour belonged to his younger brother, Ali Morad, but he wished to bestow it on his own son. To make sure of the turban, the former won the confidence of Napier, whose mind he poisoned against Meer Roostum, who, terrified by three threatening messages sent by the general, fled to the castle of Ali Morad, on whose head he placed the coveted turban, an act which betokened the surrender of power. Sir Charles was not without some suspicion that the cession had been obtained by force or fraud, and wished to see the Meer on the subject. To prevent any elucidation of the matter, and preclude an interview, Ali woke his brother at midnight, and urged flight, as the British troops were coming to seize him. In fear and bewilderment the aged chief rode in the dark to the camp of some other relatives, twelve miles distant, to avoid Sir Charles Napier, who immediately issued a proclamation

* "Parliamentary Papers relating to Scinde," &c.

to the Ameers of Scinde, announcing that he was resolved to maintain Ali Morad as chieftain of the Talpoora family. Meer Roostum sent his minister instantly to Napier, to relate the true story, and how he had been prompted to fly. To this explanation an arrogant reply was sent by the general, who announced his resolution of reducing and destroying Emaumghur in the desert, because it was deemed the "Gibraltar of Upper Scinde;" and he was determined to show the Ameers that "neither the deserts nor their negotiations could intercept the progress of a British army."

Accordingly, although we were then at peace with all the known authorities of Scinde, on the 4th of January, 1843, he made his arrangements for crossing the desert, and started on the night of the 5th, with 350 men of H.M. 22nd Regiment, mounted on camels, two soldiers on each with their muskets slung; two 24-pound howitzers, with double teams of camels, 200 of the Scinde Horse, provisions for fifteen days and water for four. On the 7th, Choonka, twenty-five miles from Deejeekote, was reached. Though the Ameers had repeatedly shown themselves, no opposition was encountered, and after a toilsome march, the 12th saw Napier before Emaumghur, a square fort built of burned brick with round towers, about fifty feet in height, and capable of resisting any force unfurnished by artillery. It was found to be deserted, so nothing remained but to destroy it, which was effectually done with 10,000 lbs. of powder, in sight of clouds of fanatical Beloochee horsemen, who hovered in the desert and looked angrily on. He then retired, and on the 21st of January reached Peer Abubeker, on the road from Khyrpoor to Hyderabad. The Duke of Wellington said it was "one of the most curious military exploits" he had ever heard of, but as poor old Meer Mohammed, to whom the fort belonged, had never given us the least offence, it was an act of wanton aggression. Moreover, his lands were confiscated in Upper Scinde, he was deprived of all power and dignity, and Sir Charles ordered all the Ameers of the upper and lower provinces to meet Major Outram at Khyrpoor, and there discuss and sign the treaty; but as some of them failed to attend, the conference was transferred to Hyderabad.

There Major Outram gave them credit for more sincerity, and so far became their dupe, as to propose that Sir Charles, who had already drawn the sword, should leave behind the army he was assembling, and come in person to Hyderabad. "This," said he, "will remove all difficulties." "Yes," replied the veteran, "and my head from my shoulders." That Napier was wise in not

trusting himself in Hyderabad, was proved on the 12th of February, when twenty-five Beloochee chiefs of the Mussee tribe were arrested in arms, and, on the person of Hyat Khan, who held chief command, was found an order from Mohammed Khan, one of the Ameers of Hyderabad, directing him "to assemble every male capable of wielding a sword, and join his victorious Beloochee troops at Meanee on the 9th."

It would appear that on the very day this discovery was made, the Ameers met in solemn durbar, and with the exception of Nusseer Khan of Khyrpoor, signed that, which was to them a most obnoxious treaty, and which has been justly termed "the consummation of a system of duplicity." They had been simply seeking to gain time to complete their military preparations, but tidings of the sudden advance of Napier on Hyderabad, filled them with confusion.

As Outram, then holding the local rank of colonel, was leaving the fort after the signature of the treaty, he was surrounded by a crowd of armed and furious citizens and soldiers, who poured bitter curses on the British, as tyrants, robbers, and truce-breakers, and he, the future "Bayard of India," would have been torn to pieces, had the Ameers not personally guarded him to the residency. Next day they informed him that the Belooch troops were so exasperated, as to be no longer amenable to authority, and with more chivalry than discretion he refused to leave his post. But on the morning of the 15th February, three days after the signature of the treaty, masses of infantry surrounded the residency with a dreadful din, and after a gallant defence of three hours, Outram withdrew to an armed steamer, anchored at 500 yards distance in the river. On board of her, Captain Brown, of the Bengal Engineers, proved an efficient artillery officer, but Outram and others had to leave all their baggage and other property behind, when, subsequently, they joined the forces gathering under Sir Charles Napier.

These events rendered a general appeal to arms inevitable, and the Belooch troops flocked to the capital in greater numbers, when it was seen that Sir Charles Napier, the fiery scion of an old fighting race, persisted in advancing on it, though the treaty had been signed.

Sir Charles Napier now moved to Meanee, a town on a branch of the Indus, which is there a mile broad and eighteen feet deep. There he halted on the 17th of February, and there on that day was fought a battle, and won a British victory, second to none in the warlike annals of India.

The Beloochees were 22,000 strong; our force

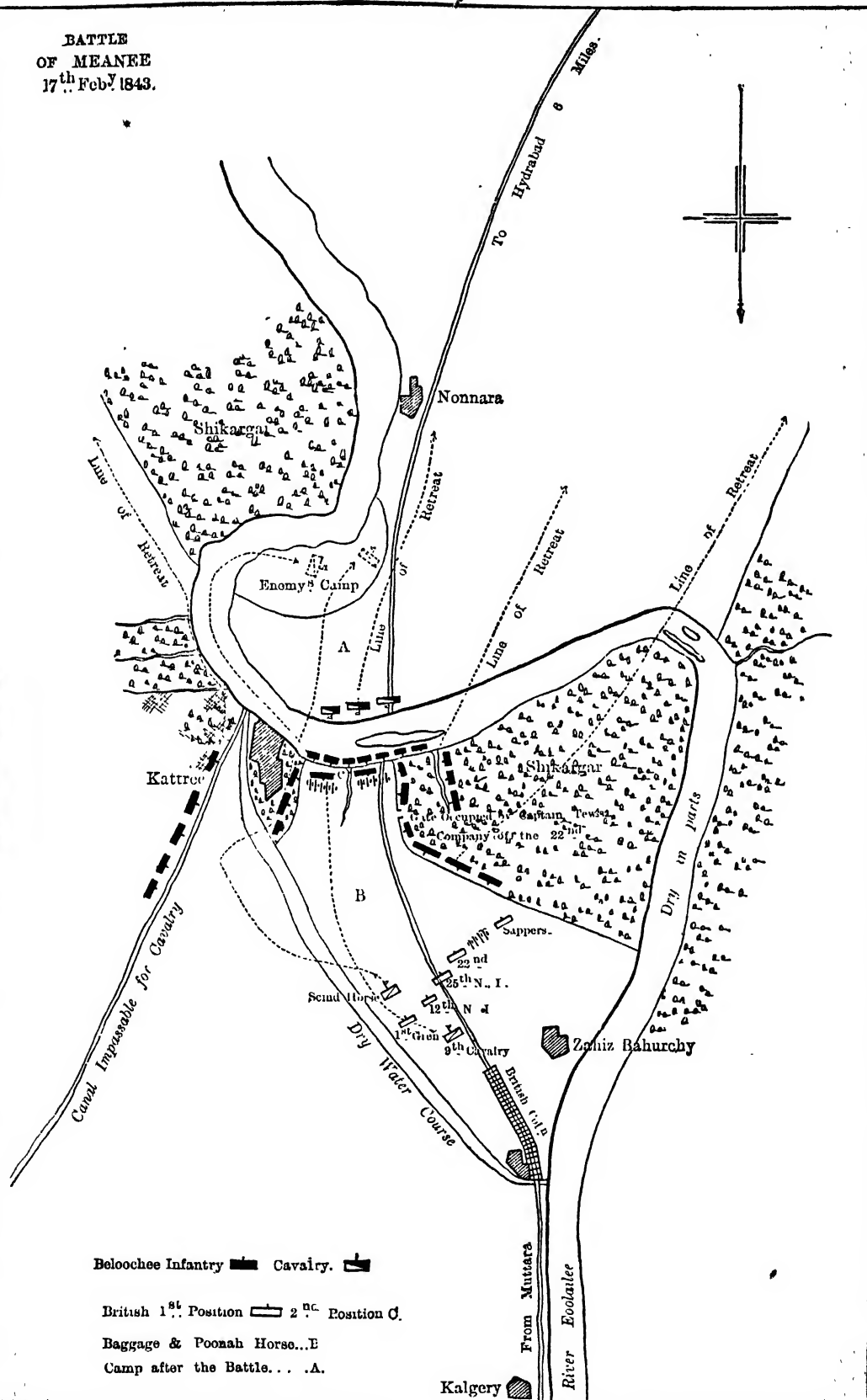
but 2,000 infantry and 800 cavalry, with twelve pieces of cannon.

After a four hours' march, about nine in the morning, our troops came in sight of the enemy, whose wings rested on dense woods near Meanee. In their front lay the Faililee branch of the Indus, quite dry. Our slender force began its advance from the right in echelon of battalions; the artillery and H.M. 22nd in line taking the lead, the 25th Native Infantry the second, the 12th Native Infantry the third, the 1st Native Grenadiers the fourth. The 9th Bengal Light Cavalry formed the reserve in rear of the left wing; the Poonah Horse, together with four companies of infantry, guarded the baggage. "In this order of battle," says Napier, "we advanced as at a review, over a fine plain, swept by the cannon of the enemy."

The fighting that ensued was terrible, and when our troops got close up, after the dry nullah was crossed, they had to ascend the sloping bank, but braver men never rushed to battle than those who met at Meanee; and never was true British generalship more conspicuous than there, and no quarter was given or asked while the conflict lasted.

"The Beloochees," says Napier, "having their matchlocks laid ready in rest along the summit of the bank, waited until the assailants were within fifteen yards ere their volley was discharged; the rapid pace of the British and the steepness of the slope deceived their aim, and the result was not considerable; the next moment the 22nd were on the top of the bank, thinking to bear down all before them, but they staggered back in amazement at the forest of swords waving in their front. Thick as standing corn, and gorgeous as a field of flowers, stood the Beloochees in their many-coloured garments and turbans; they filled the deep, broad bed of the ravine, they clustered on both banks, and covered the plain beyond. Guarding their heads with their large dark shields, they shook their sharp swords beaming in the sun, their shouts rolling like a peal of thunder, as with frantic gestures they dashed forward, with demoniac strength and ferocity, full against the front of the 22nd. But with shouts as loud, and shrieks as wild and fierce as theirs, and hearts as big, and arms as strong, the Irish soldiers met them with that queen of weapons the musket, and sent their foremost masses rolling back in blood. . . . Now the Beloochees closed their dense masses, and again the shouts, the rolling fire of musketry, and the dreadful rush of their swordsmen, were heard and seen along the whole line, and such a fight ensued as has seldom been known or told of in the records of war. These wild warriors continually advanced,

**BATTLE
OF MEANEE**
17th Feb'y 1843.



PLAN OF THE BATTLE OF MEANEE.

sword and shield in hand, striving, in all the fierceness of their valour, to break into the opposing ranks; no fire of small arms, no thrust of bayonets, no sweeping discharges of grape from the guns, could drive these gallant soldiers back; they gave their breasts to be shot; they leaped upon the guns by twenties at a time; their dead went down the steep slope by hundreds, but the gaps in their masses were continually filled from the rear; the survivors of the front rank still pressed forward with unabated fury, and the bayonet and the sword clashed in full and frequent conflict."*

At one time, our whole line was nearly overborne by sheer weight and numbers, but a brilliant charge, made by the 9th Cavalry and Scinde Horse, completely relieved it, by forcing the enemy's right flank, capturing a standard, with several pieces of

artillery, and driving a body of horse beyond even their own camp. "This charge," says Sir Charles, "decided, in my opinion, the crisis of the action, for, from the moment the cavalry were seen in rear of their right flank, the resistance of the enemy slackened; the 22nd Regiment forced the bank, the 25th and 12th did the same, the latter regiment capturing several guns, and the victory was decided."

The British losses were 256 killed and wounded; those of the enemy exceeded 500; and the results of the victory were the capture of the whole of the enemy's treasure, artillery, stores, standards, and camp. Several of the Ameers personally submitted to Napier. Hyderabad surrendered, and the 20th of February saw the British colours floating on its great tower.

CHAPTER XXV.

VICTORY AT DUBBA.—CONQUEST AND ANNEXATION OF SCINDE.—THE MAHRATTAS OF GWALIOR.—

BATTLE OF MAHARAJAPORE, ETC.

BRILLIANT as this victory was, the war was not yet over. Shere Mohammed of Meerpoore, the most famous of all the Ameers, had been on the march to join the confederates, when he heard of their signal defeat. Sir Charles Napier offered to accept his submission on the same terms as the others, but he scorned to submit, and kept the field, at the head of a force that rapidly augmented to 20,000 men. For some time after his victory, Napier was able barely to muster 2,000 men, and, therefore, instead of continuing offensive operations, he prudently formed an intrenched camp on the left bank of the Indus, and constructed a fort on the right bank, as a protection to the steamers which carried his supplies. There he resolved to wait for reinforcements, certain that if Shere Mohammed assailed him, he would be beaten, and that if he did not, his money would soon become exhausted. The Amcer drew near the place, and finding that he was not attacked, became confident, and when twelve miles distant, sent a letter, offering to permit the British to quit the country (though he had sworn to "Cabul them," as he phrased it), provided they restored all captives. Just as his messengers delivered the letter, the evening gun was

fired. "There," said Sir Charles, "do you hear that?" "Yes." "Well, that is your answer," he added, significantly.

The expected reinforcements came up on the 21st of March, and at the head of 5,000 men, Napier was able to assume the offensive, and marched from Hyderabad at dawn on the 24th, to a village called Dubba, where the enemy, still 20,000 strong, were strongly intrenched in rear of two parallel ditches, the first eight feet deep and twenty-two wide, and the second seventeen feet deep and forty-two wide, with a bank or ridge forty-three feet wide between them. Napier attacked instantly, the whole of his guns, nineteen in number, opening at once on the enemy's position, while the line, led as before by the 22nd, advanced in echelon from the left. In a short time, the enemy, while throwing considerable bodies to this point, were apparently falling back as if unable to oppose the cross-fire of our artillery. This was the moment to try the effect of a cavalry charge, and it was performed with great brilliance by the 3rd Cavalry under Captain Delamaine, and the Scinde Horse led by Captain Jacobs, who dashed across both nullahs, and pursued the fugitives of the enemy for several miles, but not without considerable loss.

* "Conquest of Scinde."

While this occurred on the right, the 22nd, with their usual heroism, attacked the point assigned them and carried it, but not without many casualties. Three regiments of native infantry followed them close, and thus decided the battle of Dubba, otherwise called Narajah, which the Duke of Wellington said was "a brilliant victory, in which he (Sir C. Napier) showed all the qualities of a general officer, and in which the army displayed all the best qualities of the bravest troops."

We lost 270 officers and men: more than half the casualties occurred in the ranks of our 22nd Foot.

On the 27th, our troops took possession of Meerpore, the capital of Shere Mohammed, but Napier was afraid to advance further, being obliged to watch the Indus, lest the overflow of its waters should cut him off by inundation. To act still on the offensive, he sent a squadron of cavalry, on the 28th of March, to reconnoitre Omerkote, a fort in the desert, about 100 miles from Hyderabad, which, though supposed to be garrisoned by 4,000 men, was eventually found to be abandoned; and the importance attached to its capture gave Napier occasion to write thus:—"Omerkote is ours. . . . This completes the conquest of Scinde; every place is in my possession; and, thank God! I have done with war. Never again am I likely to see a shot fired in anger."

But this was a rash anticipation, for Shere Mohammed, returning from the sandy desert to which he had fled, was able, towards the end of April, to rank 8,000 men under his standard at Khoonera, about sixty miles from Hyderabad, while his brother, Shah Mohammed, at the head of several thousands more, with four guns, had gone down to Sehwan, with a view to cross the Indus, and join in a preconcerted revolt at Hyderabad. Meer Hossein, the son of Meer Roostum, was in the desert of Shaghur, with 2,000 men, and with several refractory chieftains, was menacing Ali Morad at Khyrpoor; 20,000 predatory Beloochees were traversing the Delta of the Ganges; and to the east of it, beyond the Poorana branch of the river, a tribe 5,000 strong, was threatening to cut off all communication with Bombay. Therefore, instead of the peace expected by Napier, there was every prospect of renewal of the war, and a necessity for the most decisive measures, lest Shere Mohammed should double his force amid the predatory hordes in the Delta of the Indus.

The first encounter was with his brother, upon whom Colonel Roberts came by surprise, at Sehwan, dispersed his troops, burned his camp, took him prisoner, and sent him under escort to

Hyderabad. To attack Shere Mohammed, Sir Charles Napier marched out of the city in the middle of the hot season. The sufferings of the troops from thirst, fatigue, and heat, were of a dreadful nature. On the 15th of June, Sir Charles and forty-three other Europeans were struck down by sunstroke, and within three hours all were dead, save himself, an escape which he attributed to his extremely temperate habits. Another circumstance, he added, "roused me from my lethargy, as much as the bleeding." This was a message from Colonel Jacob, intimating that he had, without the loss of a man, utterly routed Shere Mohammed. All strife was completely over now, and, as Governor of Scinde, Sir Charles could devote himself to the work of internal improvement—a department in which the veteran soldier displayed administrative talents of the very highest order.

Lord Ellenborough had, prior to this, on hearing of the victory at Meanee, issued a proclamation, annexing Scinde, "fertile as Egypt," to the dominions of the Company. The triumphs of our army there, as contrasted with the disastrous extirpation of the one at Cabul, created great exultation in India, though somewhat damped by the conviction that the act was altogether lawless, grasping, and indefensible; and Sir John Hobhouse, President of the Board of Control, remarked, that the conquest would never have taken place, if Lord Ellenborough had been fully aware of the perfidy of Ali Morad. But before Sir Charles became cognisant of that matter, he wrote:—"We only want a pretext to coerce the Ameers. . . . The more powerful government will swallow up the weaker." Elsewhere he wrote—"We have no right to seize Scinde, yet we shall do so, and a very advantageous, useful, and humane piece of rascality it will be."

The troops had a rich harvest of prize money, of which seven lacs fell to the share of Sir Charles Napier, but on the finances of India the annexation inflicted a loss of two crores and a half of rupees in the course of fifteen years.*

Burnet gives us a pleasing description of the somewhat lawless Ameers of Scinde. They and their attendants, he tells us, were habited nearly alike, in tunics of fine white muslin, neatly prepared, and plaited so as to resemble dimity, with sashes of silk and gold, wide Turkish trousers of silk, chiefly dark blue, and tied at the ankle, and Scindian caps of gold brocade or embroidered velvet. A pair of cashmere shawls of rare beauty were usually thrown over the arm, and a Persian dagger at the girdle, richly ornamented with

* Marshman's "India."

diamonds, or other precious stones, completed the dress and decoration of such princes as Noor Mohammed and Morad Ali.*

The unwarrantable annexation of the free country of Scinde eventually brought its own punishment, as it injured alike the loyalty and the discipline of the native army, and gave us a foreshadowing of the dreadful climax which, thirteen years subsequently, was to end in its total destruction. The land of the Ameers had now become a British province, and the sepoys, accustomed to extra batta granted to them there when it was foreign soil, failed to see any reason why it should be taken from them now, because Scinde had become a portion of British India. Hence, in February, 1844, the 34th Bengal Native Infantry (known as the *Bradsaw-ka-Pullan*) refused to march to Scinde, without the same field allowance that had been given as before to troops beyond the Indus. The 7th Cavalry and some Bengal Artillery, being animated by the same spirit, were marched back. The 4th Bengal Native Infantry, raised in 1759, and the 69th, ordered in their stead, refused to enter the boats at Ferozepore, while the 64th openly mutinied at Loodiana and Moodkee, and on none of those occasions was the spirit of discipline enforced, or the honour of the state vindicated. The Government, finding it impossible to garrison the new conquest with Bengal troops, turned to Bombay and Madras; but a regiment of the former presidency, on finding the usual allowance was not to be granted, also mutinied; so the province was turned over to the Presidency of Bombay, which made satisfactory arrangements for the pay of its sepoys.

The conquest of Scinde did not terminate the warlike operations of Lord Ellenborough's active administration. Junkojee Rao Scindia, who succeeded by adoption, in 1827, to Dowlut Rao Scindia, died childless on the 7th of February, 1843, and the Government acknowledged as his successor the young Maharajah Tyajee Rao Scindia, who was nearest in blood, and the widow, with the approval of the Mahratta chiefs of Gwalior, was appointed regent during the minority; but she wisely transferred that dignity to Mama Sahib, the Maharajah's maternal uncle; with this Lord Ellenborough concurred, and the British Resident explained to the assembled chiefs that the Mama was recognised as the head of the State, and as such would receive our support. Yet, within a very short time the Mama Sahib was with violence compelled to quit the Gwalior State, despite the remonstrances of the Resident. By the widow of

the late Maharajah, men so inimical to British interests were placed in office that the Resident had also to quit Gwalior.

The Dada Khan Walla, though opposed by several of the chiefs, usurped the whole royal power in the state, which the British Government was bound to maintain in the house of Scindia. A demand was made that the Dada be expelled or delivered up to us as a necessary preliminary to the re-establishment of our usual relations with Gwalior. The widow and her faction, after much delay, yielded this point, but soon after set up men who were more turbulent than the Dada had been, and consequently the country was rent by factions, plots, insurrections, conspiracies, and murders. The British Government could neither permit the existence of an unfriendly government in Gwalior, nor leave that territory without one capable of controlling its own subjects, particularly the troops, who were 40,000 strong, 10,000 being cavalry, mutinous, arrogant, and always in arrears of pay.

With this view, an army, under Sir Hugh Gough, assembled. The Governor-General attended it, and vakeels from certain Mahratta chiefs sought him for the purpose of negotiation, but simply as a ruse to gain delay, for the usurping powers were determined to appeal to the sword in the end.

The time was certainly one of alarm, and events which had recently occurred in Lahore would not permit acquiescence in a policy suited only to a state of peace. Sir Hugh Gough's army got in motion, not as the enemy, but as the friend of the young Maharajah, to restore tranquillity, and secure his rights and person.*

Ere this, on the 21st, our first brigade had crossed the Chumbul, and encamped six miles to the south, beyond the ravines and defiles. The headquarters moved on the 22nd, and by the 26th our whole right wing, with the heavy guns, had crossed, and been placed in position at Hingona. Up to the 27th it was deemed possible that the troops of Gwalior, after all their vaunts and menaces, would not dare to oppose the advance of the British; but on the 25th, Bapoo Setowlea, who had been appointed dewan, and had been expressing an earnest desire for the restoration of friendship, and had come with that pretended view to the British camp, suddenly quitted it; and on the following day it was ascertained that both troops and guns had left Gwalior, and were moving in two columns towards Chandore and Hingona, the former to encounter General Grey, who was coming on with the left wing through Bundelcund, and the latter to repel the advance of the right, under Sir Hugh Gough.

* Burnet's "Visit to Scinde."

* Proclamation from Hingona Camp, 25th Dec., 1843.

On the 28th of December, when a small party was reconnoitring the ground at a short distance from Chounda, where the Mahratta army occupied a strong position, a fire from their batteries was suddenly opened upon it, thus ending all doubt as to hostile intentions; and the Gwalior troops, by thus taking the initiative, hurled defiance at us from the mouths of their guns. Both armies now prepared for a battle, in which the inequality of numbers, usually so frequent an event in our Indian wars, was less apparent; as on that day, the 29th December, 1843, the British troops were 14,000 strong, with forty guns; the Mahrattas 18,000 strong, with 100 guns.

By eight a.m. the whole British troops, after passing over a district of extreme difficulty, intersected by deep ravines, crossed the Kohary in three columns, and halted in position, in front of Maharajahpore. Unknown to our general, during the previous night the enemy had occupied this place, with seven regiments of infantry and twenty-eight pieces of cannon. The latter opened immediately on our advances, and rendered a change of plans at once necessary. So unexpected was this fire, that Lord Ellenborough, Lady Gough, with many other ladies and civilians who were in the field on elephants, were suddenly exposed for a time to all the fury of the cannonade.

Major-General Littler's column being exactly in front of Maharajahpore, was ordered to advance direct, while that of Major-General Valiant took it in reverse, both supported by the column of Major-General Dennis; but all underwent a terrific and unexpected cannonade by which many perished, whose lives, by proper management, might have been saved; yet, as the despatch has it, "nothing could withstand the rush of British soldiers." Our siege-train had unaccountably been left behind on the surrender of the Dada; thus our light field-pieces were speedily silenced by the heavy ordnance of the enemy, at whose batteries the troops were instantly launched.

The brave old 39th, with "*Primus in India*" and "Plassey" on its green colours, and the 56th Native Infantry, burst into the village shoulder to shoulder, driving the enemy from their posts, bayoneting the gunners at their guns. "Here a most sanguinary conflict ensued; the Mahratta troops, after discharging their matchlocks, fought, sword in hand, with the most determined courage."*

The brigade of General Valiant, in which was H.M. 40th, with equal spirit took the village in reverse. In this, two officers of that regiment, Major Stopford and Captain Codrington, each of

whom had captured standards, fell under the muzzles of the guns, every one of which was captured, though the Mahratta swordsmen clung to them with desperate tenacity.

On the extreme left, Brigadier Scott was opposed by a column of the enemy's cavalry; but by some well-executed charges made by the 4th Lancers and 10th Cavalry, supported by the plunging showers of grape from Captain Grant's troop of horse artillery, they were driven back; more guns were captured, and two standards. After this decisive success at Maharajahpore, the intrenched position at Chounda was carried, and the victory was complete. The foe dispersed and fled, with the loss of 3,000 in killed and wounded, and of forty-three brass and ten iron guns. Our loss was also severe, making a total of 797 in killed, wounded, and missing. Among the first were seven officers.

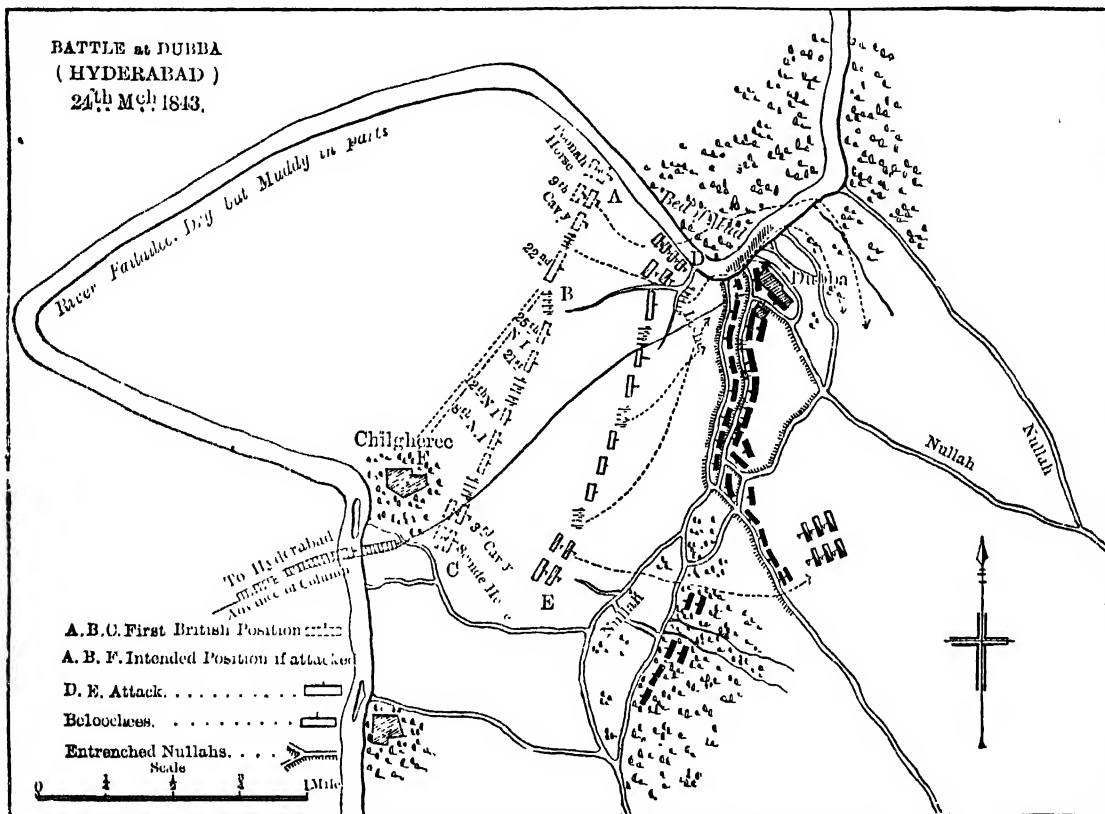
While Gough was fighting the somewhat confused battle of Maharajahpore, General Grey was winning the battle of Punniar, where he acted with equal promptitude and vigilance. At that place, which is within twelve miles of Gwalior he found his progress to the capital disputed by about 12,000 Mahrattas, who showed themselves in a strong position on some heights near a fortified village. He immediately attacked them, and they were driven from height to height and utterly routed. Our casualties were 215, and would have been less, but that the troops were fatigued by a long and sultry march.

The junction of the two *corps d'armée*, after having each won a decisive battle, under the walls of Gwalior, awed the durbar into submission, for the whole kingdom of Scindia was thus at the disposal of Lord Ellenborough, who had hitherto always talked of Gwalior as an independent state; but now, as a conqueror, he not only set the rights of the Maharanee aside, but changed its form of government. In future, she was to be a dependant on the Company, with a revenue of three lacs of rupees, but no political authority; and during the minority of the Maharajah, the administration was to be conducted by a council of regency acting in accordance with the advice of the British Resident; and the vacancies in which, when occurring by death or otherwise, could only be filled up with the sanction of the Indian Government; thus virtually converting the once proud state of Scindia into a British dependency, by a regular treaty, which was not negotiated, but actually dictated by the Governor-General, in the stately fortress of Gwalior, an edifice so vast in strength and magnificence, that it is impossible to convey any idea of it without the aid of the pencil.

* Gough's Despatch.

The treaty consisted of twelve articles, of which, in addition to the stipulation above, the most important were those which limited the strength of the Gwalior army to 9,000 men, of whom not more than 3,000 were to be infantry, with twelve field-pieces and 200 gholandazees. On the other hand, the British subsidiary force was largely increased, and the fort of Gwalior was to be garrisoned by the Reformed Contingent (of which we have elsewhere written), under Brigadier Stubbs, who was to

ing Scinde was strongly objected to. "He had," it was averred, "concocted a series of charges against the Ameers on insufficient evidence, and then made them the pretext for imposing a final treaty, to which he might have foreseen they would never submit without coercion. In this way, when the exhaustion of the Indian treasury by the disasters of Afghanistan made it most desirable that peace should be maintained, he provoked a war of the most formidable description, which, but for the



PLAN OF THE BATTLE OF DUBBA.

act as commander of all the forces, which were to be recruited by high-caste Brahmins and Rajpoots—men of athletic frames and high courage, and also of unlimited presumption, as we found to our cost in 1857.

While carrying matters thus with a high hand at Gwalior, Lord Ellenborough was subjected to a severe ordeal in the Court of Directors. By his bombastic proclamation about the gates of Somnauth, he had somewhat impaired the confidence placed in his sound judgment, and by circumstances, to a certain measure beyond his control, the whole course of his administration but little accorded with the pacific policy to which he had pledged himself on leaving Britain; and that regard-

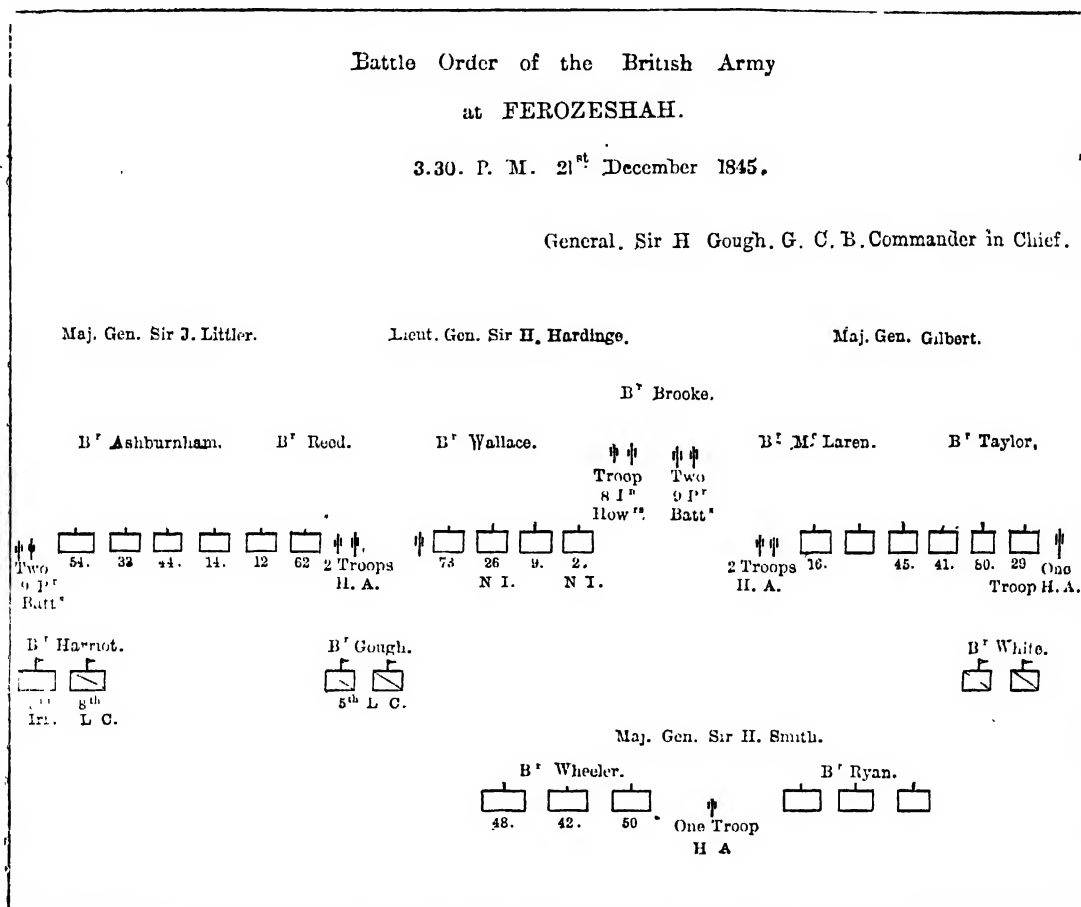
singular ability of the military commander, might have proved ruinous, and which, after the most brilliant victories, had only added to our already overgrown Indian empire a tract of territory, which, for years to come, would not pay the expense of governing it. His policy in Gwalior was of a similar description, and there was reason to suspect, from hints which he had thrown out, that he was meditating a greater war than any he had yet carried on.*

He had continued to provoke jealousies and animosities between the civil and military branches of the public service. Under Lord Auckland it had been the rule to make the political subordinate

* "Comprehensive Hist. of India."

to the military department; but this, which had hitherto been the exception, was made by Lord Ellenborough the established custom: so much so, indeed, that he always spoke and acted as if the first qualification for office of any kind was the profession of arms; hence the time came when he found himself at enmity with the most able and influential officials in India, and nothing but the urgent remonstrance of the Cabinet prevented the

imprudence, and as "the most indiscreet exercise of power he had ever known." The mortification which Lord Ellenborough undoubtedly felt was somewhat softened by the fact that he was to be succeeded in office by his brother-in-law, who would naturally be more tender of his reputation than a stranger, and would innovate as little as possible on the policy of his predecessor. Military experience would seem to have been regarded by Lord



PLAN OF THE BATTLE ORDER OF THE BRITISH ARMY AT FEROZESHAH.

Directors from exercising the power of recall, which they undoubtedly possessed, though they had not exercised it. At last, on the 21st of April, 1844, Sir Robert Peel, then Premier, in reply to a question put to him by Mr. Macaulay, said that "Her Majesty's Government had received a communication from the Court of Directors that they had exercised the power which the law gives them to recall, at their will and pleasure, the Governor-General of India."

Cheers from the Opposition benches greeted this announcement; but the Duke of Wellington, in the House of Lords, stigmatised the recall as an

Ellenborough as the chief qualification for the office he held, and thus, turning his back on the seat of government, and oblivious of any attempt at internal reform, he spent most of his time under canvas. At a farewell banquet given him before he quitted Calcutta, which he did on the 14th of July, 1844, he said: "The only regret I feel at leaving India is that of being separated from the army. The most agreeable, the most interesting period of my life, has been that which I have found here in cantonments and in camps."

He was raised to the peerage as Earl of Ellenborough, and died on the 22nd December, 1871.

CHAPTER XXVI.

SIR HENRY HARDINGE, GOVERNOR-GENERAL.—THE SIKH WAR.—ARMY OF THE SUTLEJ.—BATTLES OF MOODKEE AND FEROZESHAH.—THE 62ND REGIMENT.

THE new Governor-General, Lieutenant-General Sir Henry Hardinge, K.C.B., Colonel of the 97th Regiment, reached Calcutta on the 23rd of July, 1844, and immediately entered on the duties of his office. No man was more universally esteemed than Sir Henry, who, like the conqueror of Scinde, had fought at Corunna, and was by the side of Moore when the hero received his death-wound. Dismounting, he raised him from the ground, strove in vain to stop the effusion of blood with his silk sash, and wept when his beloved leader was borne to the rear by the mourning men of the Black Watch. He was gentle-hearted as he was brave, and never "allowed the sun to go down upon his wrath." As Deputy Quartermaster-General of the Portuguese army, he served throughout the whole Peninsular War, from the battle of Roliça to that of Orthes, and lost a hand at Ligny in 1815. He had now been forty-six years in harness, and his conduct at Albuera had won him from a great historian the commendation of being then "a young soldier, with the eye of a general and the soul of a hero."

The first months of his government were given to making judicious arrangements for the improvement of the civil service, to the removal of grievances, the maintenance of strict discipline in the native army, and in opening up new avenues to prosperity by the construction of railways and the encouragement of steam navigation; but while engaged in these peaceful plans for a happy future to India, it was but too apparent that he would soon have to draw the sword. The Punjaub had fallen into anarchy, while a large Sikh army, that defied all control, was hovering on our frontier.

The death of old Runjeet Sing had been followed by confusion and bloodshed not often equalled in India. He had been succeeded by his imbecile son, Khurruk Sing, whose son, Nao Nihal Sing, a gallant youth, the equal of old Runjeet in talent and courage, ruled the state, but was obliged to share that rule with Dhyan Sing, one of the most influential men in the Punjaub, who was a member of the Dogra family. Gholab Sing, the head of it, had originally been a running footman, who had attracted the notice of Runjeet Sing, risen high in his service, and was endowed with the territory of Jummo. Being a Rajpoot, and not a Sikh, his

power rendered him an object of hatred and envy. Khurruk died, the premature victim of many excesses, and, singularly enough, his son, Nao Nihal, when returning from his funeral, was killed by the fall of a gateway as he was entering Lahore.

Runjeet's reputed son, Shere Sing (though never fully acknowledged, his birth being doubtful), having suborned a portion of the troops, marched to Lahore, and seized on the government in the January of 1841. Though shrewd and frank, he was the slave alike of sensuality and of the Jummoo family, from whose control he could not free himself; thus the chief power was centred in Dhyan Sing, who had been prime minister to Runjeet. Ultimately, the intrigues of Shere Sing's boon companions began to prevail, and the old wuzeer found his life in danger. This fear induced him to sanction the assassination of the Maharajah, a crime quickly followed by that of his son, Pertaub Sing, while Dhyan was shot dead by Ajeet Sing, the same chief who had murdered his master. After these atrocities the land was plunged in anarchy, yet Dhuleep Sing, another son of Runjeet, was placed upon the throne, and Heera Sing, son of the murdered prime minister, succeeded to his father's office. The army, now conscious of the part they had played in effecting these various changes—a compact and martial body of Sikhs, united by the strongest national and religious sympathies, proud of their past achievements, and conscious of their good discipline (though they did occasionally blow an officer from the gun)—began to clamour for increased pay, and took dire vengeance on all who were opposed to this demand. In this way Heera Sing met his fate, and Juwaheer Sing, uncle of the young Maharajah Dhuleep, was also destroyed before the eyes of him and his mother, who, in her capacity of guardian, then assumed the government of Lahore. Her power was nominal, as all real authority lay with the army, who exercised it by means of delegates, and issued imperious mandates, which neither she nor her adherents dared to disobey. That war would be the result of this military despotism was apparent to all. Sufficient in numbers to form a mighty host, the soldiers had inexhaustible stores, but there was no arena for glory or plunder save the British territories, which they resolved to invade.

Though averse to the unprovoked war, the raneer was compelled to give a formal assent to it; and while this rash resolve seemed, to all appearance, that of the army and the durbar, Gholab Sing, of Jummo, brother of the murdered wuzeer, continued to keep aloof, and to play with dexterity a double game, externally complying with the fierce demands of the army, but secretly professing a friendship for the British Government.*

Sir Henry Hardinge was perfectly cognisant of all that was passing at Lahore, but he was resolved not to bring out his array till the last moment, or till there could be no possible mistake as to the intentions of those fiery soldiers, whose lawless will was law in the land beyond the Sutlej. He was not quite satisfied with the state of preparation to meet, or even to repel, a Sikh invasion; thus, before he was three months in India he had several strong columns marching from the most remote confines of Bengal towards the north-western frontier; but so quietly was every post at Ferozepore, Loodiana, Umballa, and elsewhere, reinforced, that even in our provinces the operations passed unnoticed; and so strong was the desire of the Directors for a period of peace, that Sir Henry proceeded with extreme caution; and though censured by the uninformed for being unprepared, he was fully ready for action when the crisis came. The accompanying table will show how the forces stood on his arrival in India in July, 1844, and when the war broke out in the December of the following year:—

At Ferozepore	{ July, 1844...	4,596 men, 12 guns.
	{ Dec., 1845...	10,472 „ 24 „
At Loodiana...	{ July, 1844...	3,030 „ 12 „
	{ Dec., 1845...	7,235 „ 12 „
At Umballa....	{ July, 1844...	4,113 „ 24 „
	{ Dec., 1845...	12,972 „ 32 „

We had in garrison at the hill stations, during both periods, 1,800 men. Thus, when Sir Henry landed in India, in the first line from Umballa to the Sutlej there were but 13,539 men, with forty-eight guns; but when the war broke out, there were 32,479 men, with sixty-eight guns, giving an increase of nearly 19,000 men and twenty guns.

The Meerut force, consisting of 5,873 men, with eighteen guns, was augmented to 9,844 men, with twenty-five guns; but being 250 miles in the rear, was rather for the support of the Umballa column than actually available for repelling invasion; and, with what was now called the army of the Sutlej, there were serving H.M. 3rd Light Dragoons; 9th and 16th Lancers; 9th, 10th, 29th, 31st, 50th, 53rd, 62nd, and 80th Regiments of Infantry.

* Macgregor's "Hist. of the Sikhs," &c.

To give an idea of the power of the Sikhs, their army on the 1st July, 1844, according to a statement made by our adjutant-general on the north-western frontier, was as follows:—101,020 infantry; 33,925 cavalry; artillery, 5,180 men, 552 guns, and 995 camel swivels.

On the 2nd of December, 1845, Sir Henry was at Umballa, and on the 6th he moved his camp towards Loodiana, to carry out his previously-announced intention of visiting our protected Sikh States, as his predecessors in office had done. "His movements," it would seem, "were made in as peaceful a manner as possible, because he was not only anxious not to furnish the Sikhs with any pretext for hostility, but had not ceased to hope for an amicable settlement. He only deemed it probable that some act of aggression might be committed by parties of plunderers for the purpose of compelling the British Government to interfere, and, as nothing was further from his wish than to be thus involved in war, he resolved to carry his forbearance as far as possible. The wisdom of this resolution may be questioned," continues Beveridge; "a more spirited conduct might have made the Sikhs pause, whereas forbearance, being only regarded by them as a symptom of fear, probably hastened the crisis."

On the other hand, it has been supposed, not without reason, that the great force massed on the frontier, together with the appearance of fifty-six large boats brought up from Scinde to Ferozepore, had kindled the suspicion of the Sikhs, and led them to anticipate our views, whatever they were, by invading our territories; and yet, considering the disordered state of the Lahore government, with the most efficient army ever marshalled under the banner of any native state, panting for battle and glory, and hovering on our frontier, Sir Henry would have been held inexcusable had he failed to prepare for the storm that might burst at any hour. The invasion that came was the work of the Sikh leaders, Lal Sing and Tch Sing, less than of "the Messalina of the North," as Sir Henry termed the raneer, as they felt that the only way to maintain their power in the Punjab was to hurl their battalions on our territories for their own security, to involve their army in a quarrel with Britain, and by the destruction of Delhi and Benares, to avert that of Lahore. On the 17th of November the order was issued to cross the Sutlej.

Our political agent on the frontier, Major Broadfoot, urged the most energetic action without delay; but Sir Henry still clung to the hope of peace, and sent another remonstrance to the durbar, the only reply to which was the command to march; and,

full of the highest enthusiasm and religious rancour, 50,000 Khalsa soldiers, with 40,000 well-armed camp-followers, and 155 guns of the largest calibre, poured across the Sutlej in four days, and by the 16th of December were in front of Ferozepore, which was held by Sir John Littler, one of the best officers of the Indian army, with some 10,000 men and twenty-one guns.

On the 13th, Sir Henry heard* of their invading British territory, and on the same day he issued an order which said :—"The Sikh army has now, without a shadow of provocation, invaded the British territories. The Governor-General must, therefore, take measures for vindicating the authority of the British Government, and for punishing the violators of treaties and the disturbers of the public peace. The Governor-General hereby declares the possessions of Maharajah Dhuleep Sing, on the left, or British bank of the Sutlej, confiscated and annexed to the British territories. The Governor-General will respect the existing rights of all jagheerdars, zemindars, and tenants in the said possessions, who, by the course they now pursue, evince their fidelity to the British Government."*

Ferozepore, where Littler was in command, was about 150 miles north-west of Umballa; there, on the 11th December, Sir Thomas Gough was seriously menaced the moment the Sikhs, led by an able warrior, Teh Sing, advanced against it. On that night our officers at Umballa were making preparations for a grand ball in the state tent of the Commander-in-chief, when tidings came of the invasion; the ball was abandoned, and the time spent in preparing to aid Littler. Hours were now priceless, and our troops, heavily accoutred, performed a march never before known in India, by which they compassed the whole distance in six days through deep sand, without time to cook their food, and scarcely one hour of repose. The day after the Sikh army crossed the river a large body of it, said to be 25,000 strong, with eighty-eight guns, under Lal Sing (another account says 20,000 men, with only twenty-two guns), pushed on to Ferozeshah, where they began to construct works of the most substantial nature, to protect the walls, leaving Teh Sing to watch Sir John Littler, with 23,000 men and sixty-seven guns.

On the 18th of December, the army, after performing a most fatiguing march of twenty-one miles over an arid plain, not having broken bread since the preceding night, and when just about to halt and cook, saw clouds of dust whirling up in front, and then the booming of cannon announced the foe, under Lal Sing.

* War in India: Despatches, 1846.

The scene of the battle of Moodkee is a flat country, covered in part with low scrubby jungle, and dotted with hillocks, most of them bare and sandy. The jungle and inequalities of the ground enabled the Sikhs to cover their infantry and artillery, presenting a good position, which was occupied by troops giving every indication of perfect confidence in themselves. As in most accounts of Moodkee, the number of men and guns in the field vary, we shall here adhere to the despatch of Sir Hugh Gough, addressed to the Governor-General on the day after the battle.

Amid clouds of dust and smoke, deepened by the shadows of the closing day, the troops advanced into action.

"I immediately pushed forward the horse artillery, directing the infantry to move forward in support. . . . The rapid and well-directed fire of our artillery appeared soon to paralyse that of the enemy, and as it was necessary to complete our infantry dispositions, without advancing the artillery too near the jungle, I directed the cavalry, under Brigadiers White and Gough, to make a flank movement on the enemy's left, with a view of threatening and turning that flank if possible. With praiseworthy gallantry, the 3rd Light Dragoons, with the 2nd brigade of cavalry, consisting of the Body Guard and 5th Light Dragoons, with a portion of the 4th Lancers, turned the left of the Sikh army, and sweeping along the whole rear of its infantry and guns, silenced for a time the latter, and put their numerous cavalry to flight. While this was taking place on the enemy's left, I directed the remainder of the 4th Lancers and the 9th Irregular Cavalry, under Brigadier Mactier, to threaten their right. This manœuvre was also successful. Had not the infantry and guns of the enemy been screened by the jungle, these brilliant charges of cavalry would have been productive of greater effect. When the infantry advanced to the attack, Brigadier Brooke rapidly pushed on his horse artillery close to the jungle, and the cannonade was resumed on both sides. The infantry, under Major-Generals Sir Harry Smith, Gilbert, and Sir John McCaskill, attacked in echelon of lines the enemy's infantry, almost invisible among wood and the approaching darkness of night. The opposition of the enemy was such as might have been expected from troops who had everything at stake, and who had long vaunted of being irresistible. Their ample and extended line, from great superiority of numbers, far outflanked ours; but this was counteracted by the flank movements of our cavalry. The attack of the infantry now commenced; and the roll of fire from this powerful

arm soon convinced the Sikh army that they had met with a foe they little expected, and their whole force was driven from position to position with great slaughter, and the loss of seventeen pieces of artillery, some of them of very heavy calibre; our infantry using that never-failing weapon, the bayonet, whenever they stood. Night only saved them from worse disaster, for this stout conflict was maintained during an hour and a half of dim starlight, amidst a cloud of dust from the sandy plain, which yet more obscured every object. I regret to say, this successful and gallant attack was attended with considerable loss; the force bivouacked upon the field, and only returned to its encampment after ascertaining that it had no enemy before it, and that night prevented the possibility of a regular pursuit."*

The grand total of all ranks killed and wounded amounted to 872, of whom 215 were among the former. Two general officers fell—old Sir John McCaskill, shot dead when gallantly leading on his column, and Sir Robert Sale, "the hero of Jelalabad," whose left thigh was shattered by a grape-shot, and who died on the field.

For about sixty years past it had been the practice of the home authorities to unite the office of Commander-in-chief with that of Governor-General, when he happened to be a military man; but it was unfortunately omitted in the case of Sir Henry Hardinge, who, feeling not quite satisfied with the tactics displayed at Moodkee, placed his services at the disposal of Sir Hugh Gough, and chivalrously took the post of second in command; but it must be borne in mind that, though both were lieutenant-generals of November, 1841, Gough stood senior in the list.

For two days the army remained at Moodkee, to take repose and bury the dead, and then it was reinforced by two European and two native regiments, brought on by forced marches, through the active exertions of Sir Henry Hardinge. Without provisions or tents, it marched on the morning of the 21st against the intrenched camp of the Sikhs at Ferozeshah. Sir John Littler was directed to join about the computed hour of its arrival, and moved out at dawn, deceiving Teh Sing by leaving his tents pitched and bazaar flags flying, with his cavalry pickets standing, and before noon formed a junction with the main body, at the head of 5,500 men, with twenty-two guns.

The Sikh intrenchment at Ferozeshah was in form a parallelogram, about one mile in length and half a mile broad, with the village in its centre. The number of troops now under Lal Sing was

computed at 35,000 men, with 100 guns and 250 zumboorucks or camel-swivels; with 50,000 men and 188 heavy guns, according to one account. The batteries were armed, not with field-pieces, but heavy siege guns. The day was the shortest in the year, "and with such an enemy as the Sikhs proved themselves to be at Moodkee, every moment was of inestimable value; but three hours were strangely frittered away after Sir John Littler's arrival, and it was nearly four in the afternoon before the first shot was fired."* To this delay no reference is made in the despatch of Sir Hugh Gough.

The British mustered 15,700 men, with sixty-nine guns, chiefly of the horse artillery.

The command of the left wing was taken by Sir Henry Hardinge, while Sir Hugh led the right. Upwards of 100 guns, says the latter's despatch, opened on our troops as they advanced, and this fire the practice of our lighter pieces failed to silence; but in the face of a dreadful storm of round shot, grape, and musketry, our matchless infantry rushed up the works, threw themselves headlong on the cannon with bayonet and clubbed musket, and wrested them from the grasp of the enemy; "but when the batteries were partially within our grasp, our soldiery had to face such a fire of musketry from the Sikh infantry, arrayed behind their guns, that in spite of their most heroic efforts, a portion only of the intrenchment could be carried. Night fell while the conflict was everywhere raging. Although," continues Sir Hugh, "I brought up Major-General Sir Harry Smith's division, and he captured and long retained another point of the position, and H.M. 3rd Light Dragoons charged and took some of the most formidable batteries, yet the enemy remained in possession of a considerable portion of the great quadrangle, whilst our troops, intermingled with theirs, kept possession of the remainder, and finally bivouacked upon it, exhausted by their gallant efforts, greatly reduced in numbers, and suffering extremely from thirst, yet animated by an indomitable spirit. In this state of things the long night wore away."

Elsewhere, Sir John Littler's column, at the muzzles of the battery guns, was arrested by the overwhelming fire; and the 62nd Regiment, mowed down by round and grape shot, after losing every officer but six, was checked and compelled to retire, but not without honour, as we shall ere long show. Terrible indeed was the resistance shown everywhere that night around the fatal village of Ferozeshah. "The guns were dismounted," says the historian

* Despatches, 1846.

* Marshman.

of the Sikhs, "and the ammunition blown into the air; the squadrons were checked in mid career; battalion after battalion hurled back upon its shattered ranks; and it was not until long after sunset that portions of the enemy's position were finally carried. Darkness and the obstinacy of the conflict threw the British into confusion, and all ranks were mixed together. Generals were doubtful of the fact or extent of their own success, and colonels knew not what had become of the regiments they

Meanwhile, there were stormy councils and fierce recriminations passing in the camp of the enemy; their military chest had been pillaged, and confusion was beginning to reign, when at day-dawn Sir Henry and Sir Hugh collected the scattered soldiers of General Gilbert's corps, formed them in line, flanked by horse artillery, and, aided by a fire from these and a flight of rockets, once more attacked the village, and bore down all before them, driving the Sikhs completely out. The



THE BATTLE OF FERORESHAH.

commanded, or of the army of which they formed a part." *

All this was doubtless the result of the three hours' delay, of fighting in the dark, and of attacking the strong batteries with cold steel instead of two points where no such heavy guns were placed. Sir Henry Hardinge had no less than five aides-de-camp struck down by his side; but the one-handed veteran of Iigny and the Peninsular War spent the night in passing from corps to corps, sustaining the ardour of the toil-worn soldiers, and instead of falling back, as he was more than once advised to do, determined to grapple anew with the foe in the morning.

* Macgregor.

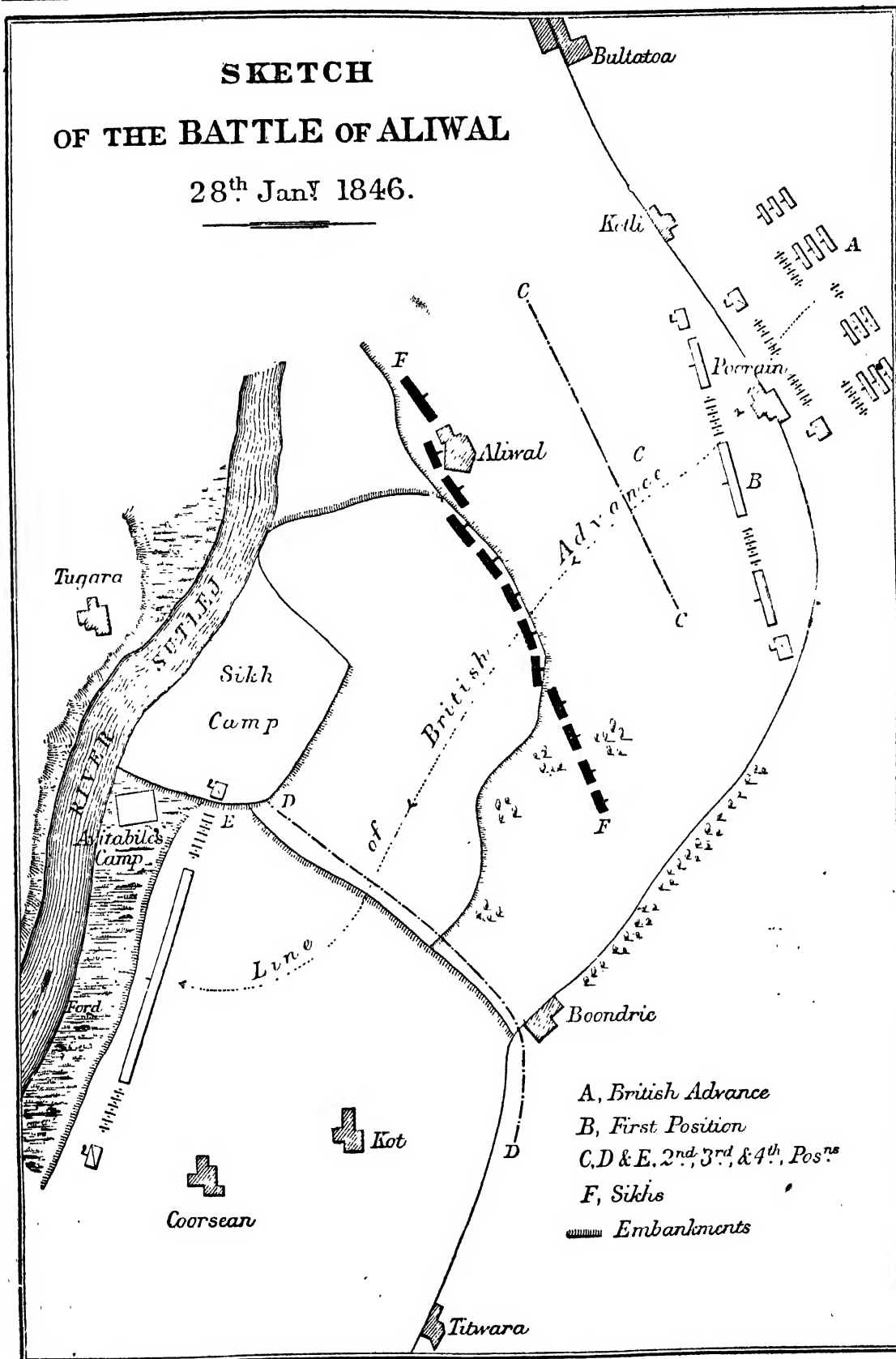
whole line then halted beyond, breathless and flushed, "but as if on a day of manœuvre, and received its two leaders as they rode along the front with a gratifying cheer." *

We had taken three stands, upwards of seventy-three pieces of cannon, and were masters of the field. The cheers along the line had scarcely died away, when clouds of dust announced the approach of other foes. These were the forces of the Sirdar Teh Sing, who, on finding how Littler had eluded him, brought on from Ferozepore fresh battalions and a large field artillery, supported by 30,000 Ghorepurras, who hitherto had been quietly encamped by the bank of the river.

* Gough's Despatch.

SKETCH OF THE BATTLE OF ALIWAL

28th Jan^y 1846.



At this terrible crisis, the British troops were sinking from sheer hunger, no food having passed their lips for six-and-thirty hours, and now they were almost without ammunition, that for the guns being entirely expended. Hence, when those of Teh Sing opened, ours were unable to reply by a single shot. He drove in our cavalry outposts, and made vigorous attempts to regain Ferozeshah, compelling us to change front to the left; but Gough directed our now exhausted cavalry to menace him on both flanks at once, while the infantry prepared to advance in support, movements which made him suddenly cease firing, and quit the field with precipitation.

British India was again saved by British valour, against enormous masses, as of old; but our loss was 2,415, including 103 officers, and it was quite as much the deficiency in our tactics and in our gun ammunition, as the native courage of the Sikhs, that gave for a time a fatal equality to the struggle. The Sikh loss was estimated at four times that of ours.

Prince Waldemar of Prussia, with Counts

Grueben and Oriola as volunteers, rode with the staff at Ferozeshah, as also at Moodkee.

In both actions, our officers and men behaved nobly; yet old Sir John Littler, in the hurry and confusion of his despatch to the adjutant-general, stated, unfortunately, that the havoc was such "as to cause an immediate panic and hesitation in H.M. 62nd Foot." But never was charge more groundless, for that regiment has ever been second to none in the field or elsewhere, and the accusation was well rebutted at the time. Before it fell back, it had seven officers killed and ten wounded, eighty-eight rank and file killed and 161 wounded, out of its weak ranks, and its loss was greater than that of any European regiment there, save H.M. 9th Foot, whose total losses of every kind were 297.* Both the Governor-General and Sir Hugh Gough did all in their power to remove the impression caused by Littler's mistake; and in the House of Lords the Duke of Wellington stood manfully forward to vindicate the fame of a gallant old regiment, which in other days had formed a portion of his Peninsular army.

CHAPTER XXVII.

COMBAT AT BUDDIWAL.—BATTLES OF ALIWAL AND SOBHAON.—THE PUNJAB ENTERED.—ITS SETTLEMENT, ETC.

AFTER their second defeat, the Sikhs hastened to place the Sutlej between themselves and the victors. Their expectation was that they would be immediately followed up; but it was deemed imprudent to pursue them until the arrival of Sir John Grey, who, with an auxiliary force and a powerful battering train, was coming on from Meerut. Emboldened by this delay, which they attributed to doubt or fear, their Sirdars took heart anew, and with the intention of recrossing the river, began to construct a pontoon bridge a little below Hurreek. Sir Harry Smith had, in the meanwhile, been detached, with a single brigade of his division and a field battery, against the town and fort of Durrumkote, which cover the road from Ferozepore to Loodiana. Brigadier Cureton's cavalry were ordered to march by Jugroon towards the latter place, and a brigade under Brigadier Wheeler moved on to support him.*

Smith's task had barely been accomplished,

* Major Hough.

when he was obliged to push on to Loodiana, where Brigadier Godby, with only three battalions, was menaced by 10,000 Sikhs, under Runjoor Sing, who had crossed the Sutlej and intrenched himself in the vicinity. Sir Harry pushed with his small force along the direct road to Loodiana, but at a place called Buddiwal he received a serious check; so his march proved a disastrous one, and he was thrown out of communication with General Wheeler, a matter of serious strategical importance. Runjoor, relying on his superiority in force, sought to intercept his progress by moving parallel with his flank, and at length cannonaded him furiously. According to Sir Harry's despatch, some of his baggage fell into the hands of the enemy. The reality was, that amid the many manoeuvres which the activity of the enemy compelled him to make, nearly the whole of it was captured, and he was checked, with the loss of 131 rank and file,

* Adjutant-General's Return, Lahore, March, 1846.

of whom forty-seven were reported missing,* and these, no doubt, would be butchered by the enemy.

By a series of able manœuvres, Sir Harry succeeded eventually in effecting his communication with Loodiana.

In addition to the reinforcement obtained from Brigadier Godby, he soon after obtained another of greater importance, by the advance of his second brigade, which had moved to support Wheeler. It was now his turn to resume the offensive against Runjoor Sing, who, elated by the result of the combat at Buddiwal, had retired to his intrenched camp.

These little operations preluded the great battle of Aliwal.

Runjoor had still the superiority in force, as Sir Harry mustered only 10,000 men, with thirty-two guns, while the former had 15,000 men intrenched, with fifty-six guns; and on the 26th of January, this disparity in strength was still further increased by the arrival of 4,000 of the regular, or *Aïen* troops, the corps of the veteran Italian, General Avitabile, with twelve guns and a large cavalry force. Strengthened thus, Runjoor was compelled to yield to the clamorous impatience of his troops to fight. They believed that Smith's retreat from their cannonade, at Buddiwal was equivalent to a confession of inferiority, and they, full of confidence that victory must be theirs, on the 28th advanced, and when the British came in sight of them, were formed in order of battle close to the village of Aliwal, eighteen miles west of Loodiana, with their left resting on their intrenchments next the Sutlej, and their right occupying a ridge towards Boondree. Aliwal stood on their left front, and masses of jhow jungle, with a dry nullah, lay in their rear.

Our cavalry, under Brigadier Cureton, and the horse artillery, under Major Lawrenson, formed two brigades, one under Brigadier Macdonald, of the 16th Lancers, and the other under Brigadier Stedman, 7th Cavalry. The 1st Division of Infantry consisted of two brigades: H.M. 53rd and the 30th Native Infantry, under Brigadier Wilson, of the latter corps; the 36th Native Infantry and Nusseree Battalion, under Brigadier Godby, of the latter corps; and the Shekawatee Brigade, under Major Foster. The Sirmoor Battalion was in Wheeler's brigade, and the 42nd Native Infantry guarded the head-quarters.

The cavalry led the attack with the celerity and precision of a home review; as they approached, they wheeled off to either flank, uncovering the steadily advancing infantry and artillery, the

bayonets flashing and the colours rustling in the wind, forming a grand and imposing scene. There were the glittering lines of the Sikhs, many of whom were clad in complete coats of mail, led by the chiefs with their aigrettes in their steel helmets, which sparkled like silver in the sun along the jungly slope. After gaining the exact range, their dark-looming guns opened a steady and perilous cannonade.

"I was compelled," says Sir Harry, in his despatch to the Adjutant-General, "to halt the line for a few moments, though under fire, until I ascertained that by bringing up my right and carrying the village of Aliwal, I could with great effect precipitate myself upon his left and centre. I therefore quickly brought up Brigadier Godby's brigade, and with it and the first brigade, under Brigadier Hicks, made a rapid and noble charge, carried the village, and two guns of large calibre. The line I ordered to advance—H.M. 31st Foot and the native regiments—and the battle became general."

Aliwal was occupied by hill-men, who, singular to say, made a feeble resistance; but the Sikh gunners died, nearly to a man, around their guns. Our cavalry, on the right, charged the enemy's overlapping left, through jungle, smoke, fire, and everything, and broke up a large portion of Runjoor's force; but, at the same time, his right, consisting of his best troops, outflanked us by numbers, till a charge of cavalry changed the complexion of the conflict.

The Sikhs threw themselves into squares, against which our lancers hurled all the weight of man and horse and weapon. They rode right through; but we are told that as they did so "the Sikhs closed behind, as some of the British squares did when partially penetrated at Waterloo." Their infantry, casting aside their muskets, betook them to sword and dagger, and received these British lances on their large dark-brown shields, against which many of the tough ash shafts splintered and broke. Again our horsemen charged through, and by a happy but singular manœuvre changed the lance to the bridle-hand. The Sikhs being unprepared for this, received in their bodies, instead of on their bucklers, the thrusts of the 16th and other regiments; but the latter had to ride a third time through these squares before they were utterly broken, mixed up together, and dispersed; yet it was a conflict in which cavalry, by the use of all their weapons in succession, sword, lance, and pistol or carbine, effected wonders against these brave swarthy infantry.

Cureton led the cavalry in these charges. He was an old Peninsular veteran, and had been under

* Adjutant-General's Return.

fire a hundred times. He had been wounded by balls at Mondego and Fuentes d'Onoro, where his skull was also fractured by a sabre.

Brigadiers Wheeler and Wilson had been equally tried, in the meanwhile, and had been equally successful on their side in driving back the enemy and capturing their guns, and nothing remained but to dispossess the latter of the village of Boondree, which they had occupied strongly to cover their retreat and secure to them the passage of the river. This gallantly achieved, the battle was won.

"Every gun of the enemy fell into our hands," reported Sir Harry, "as I infer, from his never opening one upon us from the opposite bank of the river, which is high and favourable for the purpose; fifty-two guns are now in the ordnance park, and four were spiked on the opposite bank, making a total of fifty-six pieces captured or destroyed."*

Our whole troops advanced in splendid order to the common focus, the passage of the Sutlej. Hemmed in on every hand, fleeing wildly from our fire, with their shields slung behind, the enemy precipitated themselves in disordered masses into the ford and boats in confusion and terror; our eight-inch howitzers soon began to play upon the straggling multitude, and ere long the débris of the Sikh army was seen flying in consternation in every direction beyond the high bank of the river.

Our grand total of killed, wounded, and missing was 589 men and 353 horses. The quantity of stores of every kind taken was "beyond accurate calculation." The loss of the foe was unknown; but when the dead bodies of both armies floated down the Sutlej to Sobraon, it became first known there that a great battle had been fought, "and these silent and appalling witnesses bore evidence conclusive on which side the victory lay."

Moving up the left bank of the Sutlej, the British army, on the 18th of January, 1845, encamped at Khodawala, nearly opposite to where the Sikhs had constructed their new bridge. This work they had been permitted to complete without molestation, and had further strengthened it by a *tête de pont*, skilfully constructed by a Spanish engineer named Hobron, who next proceeded to form it into an intrenched camp of the most formidable character. The disasters of the Sikhs in the open field had been too terrible for them to tempt the fortune of war there again; but the stern resistance which they had been able to offer

among their jungles at Ferozeshah, had convinced them that behind the trenches of a stronger camp, they would be able to repel any attack.

Hobron's camp at Sobraon they therefore occupied with 37,000 of their best troops, and manned its ramparts with a numerous and heavy artillery.* Our army, after waiting at Khodawala for the arrival of the siege-train from Delhi, and the junction of Sir Harry's victorious troops, moved out of camp under Sir Hugh, at three in the morning of the 10th of February. It was intended that our whole park of artillery, siege and field guns alike, should be posted in a semi-circle, so as to embrace within its fire the entire radius of the enemy's works, and should open at daybreak; but so heavy a mist shrouded all the plain and the river, which there makes a bold sweep, or reach, that it became necessary to wait till the rays of the sun exhausted it.

There were several Spanish and French officers of high reputation serving in the army of the Sikhs, whose jealousy and pride often led them to oppose the sound advice given by these soldiers of fortune.

Gough's army was 15,000 strong; of these 5,000 were Europeans. After describing the position assigned to the various corps, the despatch tells us that our guns opened at seven a.m. The Sikhs answered flash for flash from sixty-seven pieces of artillery, and by nine it was found that our cannonade made no impression on their position; the ammunition was already beginning to fall short, and after having waited seven weeks for these guns, it was discovered that they were of little avail, and that to the musket and bayonet must the final issue be left, after about 120 pieces of ordnance had been thundering for hours in the valley of the Sutlej. Accordingly, "at nine o'clock," says Sir Hugh, in his despatch to Sir Henry Hardinge, "Brigadier Stacy's brigade, supported on either flank by Captains Horsford's and Fordyce's batteries, and Lieut.-Colonel Lane's troop of horse artillery, moved to the attack in admirable order. The infantry and guns aided each other co-relatively. The former marched steadily on in line, which they halted to correct when necessary. The latter took up successive positions at the gallop, until at length they were within 300 yards of the heavy batteries of the Sikhs; but notwithstanding the coolness and scientific nature of this assault, which Brigadier Wilson well supported, so hot was the fire of cannon, musketry, and zumboorucks, kept up by the Khalsa troops, that it seemed for some time impossible that the intrenchments could be won

* Despatches: "Eleven guns were sunk in the river; total, sixty-seven pieces."

* Despatches, p. 129.

under it; but soon persevering gallantry triumphed, and the whole army had the good fortune to see Brigadier Stacy's soldiers driving the Sikhs in confusion before them within the area of their encampment. The 10th Foot, under Lieutenant-Colonel Franks, now for the first time brought into action, greatly distinguished itself. This regiment never fired a shot until it got within the works of the enemy. The onset of H.M. 53rd Foot was as gallant and effective. The 43rd and 59th Native Infantry, brigaded with them, emulated both in cool determination."*

The general plan of attack was in three divisions, on three points, by Generals Dick, Gilbert, and Smith. That of Sir Robert Dick, K.C.B. (a very old officer, who served with the 78th Highlanders in Sicily, and led the Black Watch at Waterloo after Macara fell), charging home with the bayonet, cleared the ditch and mounted the rampart. The enemy perceiving that this was to be the chief point of assault, slackened the defence of their works elsewhere, and concentrated their guns upon it. Fresh regiments rushed on to succour Dick, who here received a mortal wound, but they were checked and staggered by the terrible resistance they encountered. The other two divisions were then ordered to press on. The enemy no sooner perceived this, than they rushed back to the posts they had quitted, and from every foot of the ramparts they poured a withering fire of all arms; but the most remarkable occurrence of the day was the charge of General Gilbert's division on the centre: his troops were repeatedly driven back, but returning to the assault over their own fallen, by the most indomitable courage they carried the works, with the loss of 689 killed and wounded.

The defences were stormed on three points. Teh Sing was among the first to fly, and either by accident or design, the bridge was broken down after he had safely crossed it. Pressed on three sides into a disordered mass, the valiant Sikhs still continued to dispute every inch of the ground, till they were hurled upon the bridge, and, preferring slaughter to yielding, plunged wildly into the stream, which having risen in the night, flooded the ford by which they had hoped to cross, so the current swept them away by hundreds.

As they rushed to the broken bridge, our cavalry cut them down like ripened grain, while flights of roaring rockets and showers of vertical grape blew their heads off, or tore their bodies to pieces, and the carnage, it was said, was horrible for human hand to inflict, and human eye to witness; but what would it have been with us had we been

defeated? In addition to those who perished in the river, hundreds lay dead and mangled on the bridge, till the crashing of round shot and the explosive shells rent the pontoon itself to pieces, and then its ruins, with the dead, the dying, and the drowning, were all swept away by the stream, which was crimsoned with blood.

Many fought their way along the bank, and reaching fords that were known to them, escaped across, and continued their flight to Lahore. A few thousands escaped thus; but they acknowledged their loss to be 14,000 men, including eight great Sirdirs; while our losses presented a grand total of 320 killed and 2,063 wounded. Among the former were Brigadier Cyril and Sir Robert Dick, "who fell gloriously at the moment of victory, displaying the same energy and intrepidity as when, thirty-five years ago in Spain, he was the distinguished leader of the 42nd Highlanders."* A monument has since been erected to him in his native place in Perthshire. Old Brigadier Mac-laren, borne off the field, mortally wounded, when put to bed, declared that he must cross the Sutlej at the head of his beloved European Light Infantry, even if they carried him in a litter; "but the conquerors, as they beheld the trenches filled with the bodies of their iron-hearted defenders, and the fords of the Sutlej choked up with thousands of corpses, and the great river itself exhibiting in every direction the wreck of a great army, did not fail to pay a tribute of admiration to the gallantry and devotedness of the Khalsa legions."†

Here, as elsewhere, Prince Waldemar of Prussia, with Counts Oriola and Grueben, rode on the staff, and exposed themselves to every danger. Many of our army were ill after the battle from excessive fatigue and fever, arising from their exertions; and Colonel Havelock, the future hero of Lucknow, had a horse killed under him.

Major Abbot, who had been unceasingly employed in constructing a pontoon bridge of the boats which Sir Henry Hardinge had brought to Ferozepore, had it finished on the night before the battle. Sir Henry, who had been most active on the field at Sobraon, and had been severely injured by a fall from his horse, the moment our victory was certain, rode to Ferozepore, twenty-six miles distant, to hasten the passage of the pursuing troops, and that night six regiments bivouacked in the Punjaub. On the third day after the battle, the whole force, which, including a horde of camp-followers, made up 100,000 men, with 68,000 camels and horses, and forty guns, crossed the Sutlej without a single casualty.

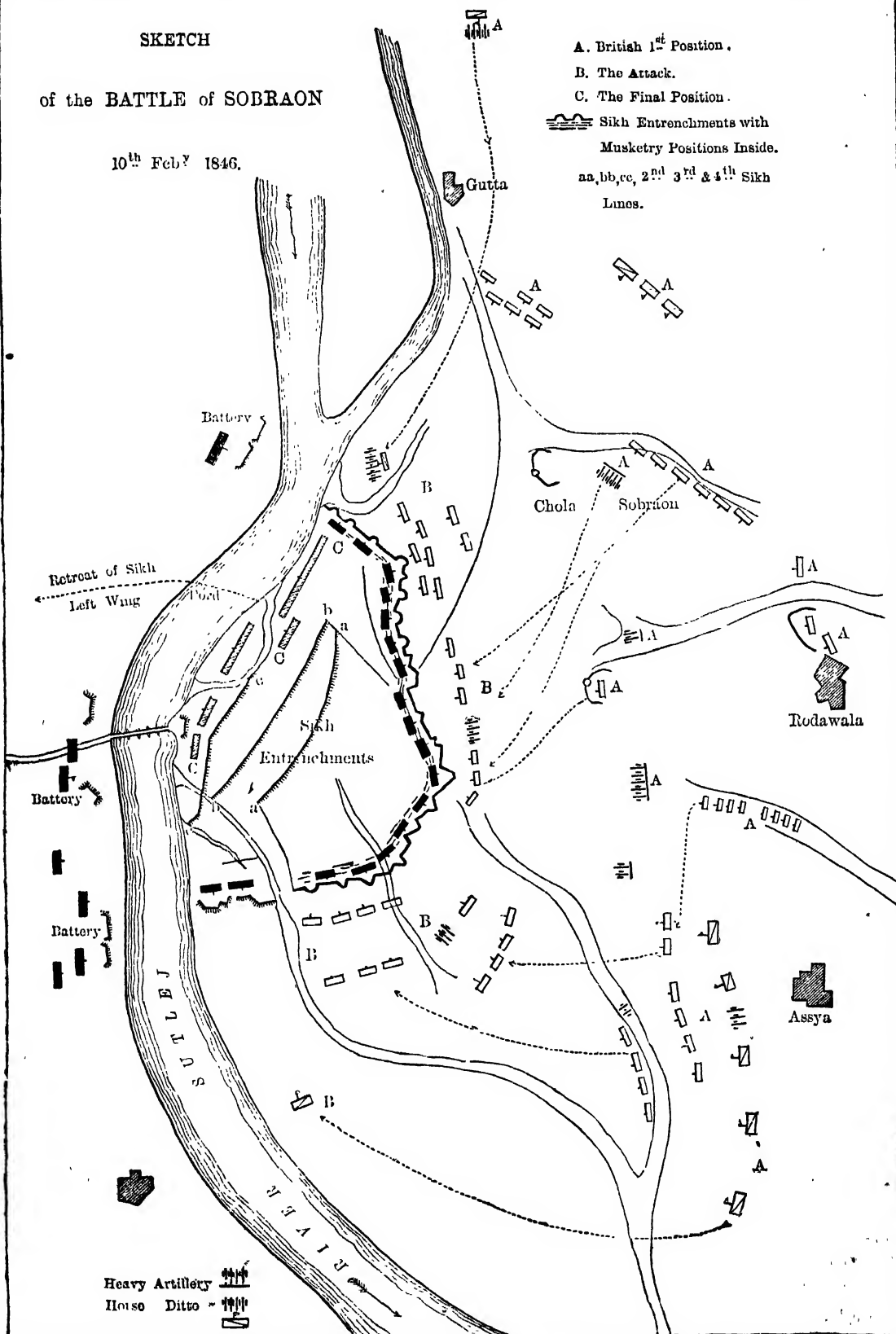
* Despatches, Camp Kussor, 13th Feb.

* Despatches.

† Marshman.

SKETCH

of the BATTLE of SOBRAON

10th Feb^y 1846.

PLAN OF THE BATTLE OF SOBRAON.

In Lahore great was the consternation of the durbar, when the scared fugitives from Sobraon came pouring in. Further resistance was hopeless, and nothing remained but to negotiate. With this view, a deputation from the Sikh cabinet waited on Sir Henry Hardinge. At its head was Gholab Sing, who had been playing the double game already referred to, and who now endeavoured to make profit out of it in the person of a mediator.

taken possession of the citadel, he issued the following proclamation, of which we give a part :—

"Foreign Department, Lahore, February 22nd, 1846.—The British army has this day occupied the gateway of the citadel of Lahore, the Bad-ashahee Mosque, and the Hoozooree Bagh.

"The remaining part of the citadel is the residence of his Highness the Maharajah, and also that of families of the late Maharajah Runjeet Sing,



PORTRAIT OF SIR HENRY HARDINGE.

On the 15th of February he arrived at the Kussor camp, when the Governor-General immediately put him in possession of the terms he meant to enforce.

He at once declared that he was alike empowered and prepared to accept them, and begged that the army would now halt, and not approach the capital; but so far from assenting to this, Sir Henry told him plainly that, if he signed a treaty at all, it must be signed at Lahore.

On the 22nd of the same month, after a brigade of British troops, with himself at their head, had

for so many years the faithful ally of the British Government. In consideration of these circumstances, no troops will be posted within the precincts of the palace gates.

"The army of the Sutlej has now brought its operations in the field to a close by the dispersion of the Sikh army and the military occupation of Lahore, preceded by a series of the most triumphant successes ever recorded in the military annals of India: The British Government, trusting to the faith of treaties, and the long-subsisting friendship between the two states, had limited

military preparations to the defence of its own frontier.

"Compelled suddenly to assume the offensive, by the unprovoked invasion of its territories, the British army, under the command of its distinguished leader, has, in sixty days, defeated the Sikh forces in four general actions, has captured 220 pieces of artillery, and is now at the capital, dictating to the Lahore durbar the terms of a treaty, the conditions of which will tend to secure the British provinces from the repetition of a similar outrage.

"The Governor-General being determined, however, to mark with reprobation the perfidious character of the war, has required, and will exact, that every remaining piece of Sikh artillery, which has been pointed against the British army during this campaign, shall be surrendered.

"The Sikh army, whose insubordinate conduct is one of the chief causes of the anarchy and misrule which have brought the Sikh state to the brink of destruction, is about to be disbanded."*

Could it be the case, the conquered asked of each other, that the mighty army of the *Khalsa* (or church)—the band of the Sikh prophet—was to be humbled thus?

On the subsequent day, at a durbar, attended by the young Maharajah Dhuleep Sing and a glittering suite, the new treaty was signed and ratified. Its articles were sixteen in number. The most important were those which confiscated the whole of the Sikh territories on the left bank of the Sutlej, and also those on the right bank, known as the Jalindar Doab; and which stipulated for an indemnity of a crore and a half of rupees, or £1,500,000, the half to be paid down instantly, and the rest to be discharged by the cession of all the hill country between the Beas (a river of the Punjab) and the Indus, including Cashmere and Huzareh. The disbandment of the imperious and mutinous *Khalsa* army was fully provided for, and the future strength of it was limited to twenty-five battalions, of 800 bayonets each, and 12,000 cavalry.

By the twelfth and thirteenth articles, wily old Gholab Sing was to be recognised as the indepen-

dent sovereign of such territories as we might assign him, and all disputes between him and the Maharajah were to be referred to the British Government. By another treaty, concluded at Umritsur, on the 16th of March, 1846, the latter transferred to him and his heirs all the mountainous country, with its dependencies, eastward of the Indus and westward of the Ravee, including Chumba (with its lofty mountain covered by eternal snow), and excluding Lahool, which our Government ceded to Lahore; while he, in consideration of this, was to pay us "seventy-five lacs of rupees: fifty lacs to be paid on the ratification, and twenty-five lacs on or before the 1st of October of the current year, 1846."

The Lahore cabinet, well aware how their troops had been their masters, still feared them, even in this form, and petitioned Sir Henry Hardinge to have a body of British troops in the capital. He consented, but not without some hesitation; and this led to a supplementary treaty, by which, eventually, the force thus left was to be placed in full possession of the city and citadel of Lahore, while the *Khalsa* troops should be quartered outside of both, and the Sikh Government became bound to pay all the expenses of this new and humiliating arrangement; after the conclusion of which, the victorious army of the Sutlej began its homeward march. It received the thanks of Parliament, and many were the honours distributed; Sir Henry Hardinge and Sir Hugh Gough were both raised to the peerage—the victor of Aliwal was made a baronet—and medals were granted to the army which had humbled the pride of Lahore.

"Those ponderous cannon, the pride of the Sikh soldiery, and which they knew so well how to direct, swelled the train of the conqueror, or lay in broken fragments in the shattered trenches, which the valour of the Sikh, sepoy, and Briton had stained with the blood of the brave. It was more like the relation of some Indian tale of gods and spirits, creating strange fantasies among the abodes of men, than a reality. The Sikh could not realise it. The beaten soldier stalked forth and viewed the anomaly with scowling brow, but unarmed hand, baffled and wonder-struck, but not cowed."

* "The War in India;" Desp., London, 1846.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

OUR RULE IN SCINDE.—WAR WITH THE HILL TRIBES.—FEMALE INFANTICIDE, ETC.

WE must now refer to the affairs of Scinde. There the active and indefatigable Sir Charles Napier had been all this time displaying his admirable skill, alike as a soldier and diplomatist. Lord Ellenborough's recall had made him doubtful whether or not he was bound in honour to resign, as his lordship had ever been his friend; but Napier felt that, though he was suffering severely in health from the climate, and that Scinde was conquered, his work there was incomplete, as among the Cutchee mountains northward of Shikarpore were many hill tribes, capable of mustering raiders by thousands, who from time to time carried havoc and desolation within the boundaries of Scinde. The Ameer Shere Mohammed had found protection among them, and it was but too probable that, under the influence of his presence, they might become a rallying-point for all who were averse to us, and thus lead to a revolution in Scinde.

To preclude all chance of this, Napier, in 1844, drew up a plan for a campaign among the mountains. The difficulties were great, but Napier knew "no such word as fail," and his proposals met with the full approval of Sir Henry Hardinge; but at Sukkur the motions were delayed by an epidemic peculiar to the country, which fearfully decimated his troops, especially the 78th Highlanders, who had embarked for the East in 1842, and were not yet acclimatised. "I have lost the 78th," he wrote, despondingly, in December, 1844; "that beautiful regiment arrived here in high health, but the first week in November they began to grow sickly, and here they are bodily in hospital, with about 200 dead, men, women, and children."

Greatly to his disappointment, he found himself compelled to order the regiment—on which, as Highlanders, he had depended so much in a mountain campaign—to Hyderabad; but eventually his arrangements were complete, and the force was in motion towards Cutch Gundava. This is a district of Beloochistan, bounded on the north-east by Afghanistan, on the south and east by Scinde, and on the west by Salaman and Sarawan. Its climate is oppressively hot. The Khan of Khelat is ruler, and it is connected with the Lower Indus by a range of remarkable rocks, named the Cutchee Hills, that run towards the Bolan Pass. The inhabitants are fierce and wild. "The Scindians

are Indians," says Lieutenant Burton, "a very different race peoples the rugged ranges of the Khelat Hills, and the oases that chequer the deserts beyond. Here (as in Scinde) a collector may raise his revenue without perpetual appeals to the bayonet. A handful of Europeans may still overawe thousands with the white face. There there is no revenue to collect; and had there been, nothing but steel or hemp could collect it."

Numerous fierce tribes inhabit the Cutchee Hills, under the names of Jackranees, Doomkees, Bhoogtees, and Muzarees, &c., who could bring 18,000 well-armed warriors, with many more followers, into the field, and whose boast it was that no foreign foot had ever traversed their rocky defiles, an immunity which they owed to the nature of their passes and the impassable deserts that lay beyond.

To ordinary troops, owing to the scarcity of water and the absence of those hill-forts usually erected for the security of such wells as may occur, the passage of these desolate places offered the most perilous difficulties; but against these Napier had to a great extent provided, by the formation of a fighting camel-corps: each carried two men, clad in turbans, short tunics, and long boots, one armed with a musket, and bayonet slung over the left shoulder, the other with a carbine and sword. One guided the camel and fought from its back, the other acted as an infantryman on foot, "because the robbers were accustomed to fire from the fissures and holes in the plains whither neither sword nor lance could reach them. If assailed by superior numbers, the camels were to kneel in a ring, with their heads inwards and pinned down, so as to form a bulwark for the men."

The most noted of the robber chiefs at this time was Beja Khan, long the scourge of the Scindian frontier by the number and success of his inroads, and he had added to his local renown by repulsing an ill-managed attempt to capture his patrimonial fort of Poolajee, among the Cutchee Hills. Lieutenant Fitzgerald had once resided in this district, and now believed that his knowledge of it was such that he would be enabled to surprise Beja with ease. Sir Charles Napier, with this intention, despatched Captain Tait with 500 horse, and Fitzgerald with 200 of his camel corps. These

made a forced march across the dreary desert, but found Beja on the alert, at the head of a strong body of matchlock-men, so the proposed surprise proved an utter failure, and after some loss Tait retreated; and the movement would have been disastrous, but, fortunately, in choking up the wells, Beja omitted one, at which the sinking soldiers procured some water.

Tidings now came that, elated by this, the tribes were assembling at Beja's fort, and openly spoke of bringing into Scinde the Ameer Shere Mohammed. The Doomkees and Jackranees made a successful raid across the frontier; and, as if to add to the troubles of Sir Charles, the 64th Native Infantry (which served at Cabul) evinced a mutinous spirit at Shikarpore, on an old complaint, a demand for increased field allowances, on the plea that Scinde was not a portion of India, but a foreign country. There was great reason to fear that the other native infantry might adopt the same course, but this was prevented by the prompt measures of Brigadier Hunter, who, finding his remonstrances unavailing, ordered the old garrison under arms, seized and manacled some forty of the mutineers, disarmed the rest, and forced them across the left bank of the Indus.

As any delay was now dangerous, from the bad spirit of the native troops on one hand and the ravages of the hill tribes on the other, it was resolved to open the campaign; and consequently, on the 18th of January, 1845, the advanced guard of cavalry and guns, under Sir Charles in person, marched from Sukkur, and on the 15th arrived at the town of Khangur, situated in a barren country overgrown with low jungle.

Captain Jacob, who had marched with the left column from Larkhana, arrived on the same day at a place called Rojan; his force and the centre then moved northwards, at an average distance of twenty miles apart, the former to Shapoor, where Beja Khan was alleged to have his head-quarters, and the latter to Ooch, where, on the 18th, Sir Charles was relieved of some anxiety which he felt concerning the fate of a detachment which had gone in advance, on hearing that Captain Salter, the officer in command of it, had defeated 700 robbers, under Deyra Khan, a chief of Jackranees. About the same time he received intelligence to the effect that Captain Jacob, with the left column, had surprised and routed another band, under the son of Beja Khan.

A friendly chief, named Wullee Chanda, had also been victorious at Poolajee; after this triple defeat, Beja Khan and his followers, full of wrath and terror, abandoned the western range of hills, and

sought shelter among the eastern. While Salter held Ooch, Jacob's column moved on Poolajee to co-operate with Wullee Chanda (whose friendship for us proved him only a traitor to his own people), to overawe the tribes of Khelat, while the infantry, artillery, and all the stores were sent to Shapoor, where a magazine for a fortnight's consumption was formed. While posted thus, Napier's forces occupied two sides of a square. One menaced the dark rocky passes from the jungly desert on the south, and the other commanded the gaps of the long parallel and solitary valleys which run eastward towards the broad waters of the Indus. It was now that the real and defined pursuit of Beja Khan commenced, and was persevered in, till it proved one of the most remarkable pieces of service ever undertaken and brilliantly achieved by disciplined troops.

A detailed narrative of the operations is unnecessary; suffice it to say, that though it had always been taken for granted that disciplined troops had a slender chance of warring with mountaineers, among the rugged cliffs and savage ravines of their native hills, it was now shown that, under such a leader as Napier, they could fight and pursue as well as on the lowland plains. Thus, ere long, Beja Khan and his confederates, finding themselves hemmed in on all sides, as threatened by starvation, made an unconditional surrender on the 9th of March, 1845; and so ended the war among the hills of Cutch Gundava, and Sir Charles was left free to improve the internal condition of Scinde. No man ever deserved a peerage better than Sir Charles Napier, and why he did not receive one, no man can say.

Of the Ameers he wrote:—"Their misfortunes were their own creation, but as they were great, I gave them back their swords." There was chivalry in this, but in most instances they were undeserving of it, though Ali Morad, of Khyrpore, is described by Mr. Postans, who knew him personally, as the beau-ideal of a strong-hearted, independent chief, "the last of the Barons," and the only one who was consistent in his spirit of independence from first to last; but in his superstition, he directed the bones of a tiger to be preserved in his fortress of Dejee, to protect it in case of attack, and to save its inhabitants from the evil eye or death.

As rulers or sovereigns, the Ameers knew no law but the sword, and the people of Scinde were slaves rather than subjects. There was no security for property, and money was extorted from merchants and others by torture and mutilation, as it was drawn from the wretched English Jews in the

days of the savage Plantagenet. They restricted commerce; they hated strangers, lest they should draw comparisons that were unpleasant between their rule and that of neighbouring princes. With a rich soil, and people who were willing to till it, they only formed vast hunting-grounds, "and laid waste in sixty years a fourth part of the fertile land of Scinde. The process of William the Conqueror in forming the New Forest in Hampshire was gentle and diminutive compared with their proceedings along the bank of the Indus."

The only trade they are actually known to have encouraged was the slave trade, and so did all their chiefs as importers and exporters; while infanticide was a regular system among them; the Ameers and Sirdirs killed all their illegitimate, and very commonly their female legitimate children, when they thought they had too many girls in their family.

This horrible practice existed from the earliest period in India; though in all nations, before Christianity shed its light upon them, the sacrifice of a child to some grim idol has prevailed; and even in Scotland, so late as the early part of the ninth century, an Earl of Caithness is said to have offered up a human sacrifice to Odin. Without referring to the long legend in support of female infanticide, the first official intimation our Government had of it in India was about 1789, when Mr. Duncan, afterwards Governor of Bombay, informed Lord Cornwallis that he had discovered it to be "no unfrequent practice among the tribe of Rajkoomar to destroy their daughters by causing the mothers to refuse them nurture." By the humane exertions of Mr. Duncan and Major Walker, every means were taken to suppress this crime at Benares, and among the people of Cutch and Kattywar; though, when urged on the subject, they had the effrontery to say: "Pay our daughters' marriage portions, and they shall live."

In the Koran we find this crime referred to thus among the Arabs: "And when any of them is told of the birth of a female his face becometh black, and he is deeply afflicted: he hideth himself from the people, because of the ill tidings which have been told him, considering within himself whether he shall keep it with disgrace, or whether he shall bury it in the dust."*

Mr. Duncan was inclined to pay for the lives of the girls; but the Court of Directors at once declined, on the plea that other tribes would seek to barter in the same way. From time to time new disclosures of the most fearful nature came to light, showing the extent to which this crime

* Koran, chap. xvi.

prevailed among the Khonds and others; while the worshippers of Boora Penmu, a sect of the Khonds, alleged his permissive sanction for the custom, given on the occasion of his last communication with mankind, when he said to men: "Behold! from making one female what I and the world have suffered. You are at liberty to bring up only as many women as you can manage."

According to the law of births the number of each sex is nearly equal; but at one time it was found among the population of Kattywar, a central division of Goojerat, though exceeding 8,000, not more than sixty-three female children had been preserved in the course of ten years. On some of the largest estates only one, and on others, containing more than 400 families, not one female child was found.

With this crime there was the greatest difficulty in dealing, even when the extent of the iniquity was known; but how was it to be prevented? Done in zenanas, recesses whither none could penetrate, or in forts to which no legal access could be had, by what manner of evidence could the terrible custom be proved or punished? The proposition to bribe informers was suggested, but negatived, lest the cure should prove worse than the disease, by the suggestion of false accusation or revenge. The most able of Indian statesmen, while admitting that no effectual check could be imposed upon the atrocity, added, that "we must be content to follow the footsteps of our predecessors (without going beyond them) in their most meritorious endeavours to discountenance this enormity; and we may flatter ourselves that, as the manners of the people become softened by a continuance of tranquillity and good order, they will gradually discontinue a practice which is not more inconsistent with reason than repugnant to natural instinct."

This patient acquiescence and trust in the softening effects of civilisation would never have produced any change in a people so unchangeable. Certainly, force could not be used, as the Rajpoot tribes, most guilty of infanticide, were not then subjects of the East India Company; but as soon as the chiefs were given to understand that they must either renounce the crime, or be scouted by the British as utter barbarians, with whom we could hold neither faith nor friendship, they came forward, and proffered rewards, and some even issued proclamations denouncing infanticide, and threatening the committal of it with punishment; but it was only when they found that their personal interests were likely to suffer, that these vaunted Rajpoots affected to be suddenly inspired by emotions of humanity and natural affection.

It was in Kattywar that our political agent, Mr. J. P. Willoughby, after carefully ascertaining the exact census of the Jharigah population, whose chiefs he compelled, under severe penalties, to furnish half-yearly registers of marriages, births, and deaths, obtained the first great triumph over this ancient domestic crime. By proclamation he guaranteed protection and reward to all informers, by enjoining every father who gave his daughter in marriage to a Jharigah chief to have a written stipulation that all children born alive should be preserved; and to prove that the British Government would no longer be trifled with, he had several offenders tried and convicted. He fined one chief 12,000 rupees; another 3,000 rupees, with a year's imprisonment. Thus, under the influence of the hope of reward and dread of punishment, the proportion of the children of the two sexes in Kattywar was nearly equal in 1849; and so progressive was the increase of the female population, there were grounds, in time, to believe that, in Kattywar at least, infanticide had become extinct; but from some passages in the Indian newspapers, so lately as 1876, it does not seem to have altogether passed away. "At one time it carried on its murders by wholesale, and must have annually slain its hundreds; whereas now, if ever it find a victim, it can only be by shrouding itself in the deepest darkness, and doing the horrid deed, while trembling at the punishment with which it will certainly be visited if discovered."

In 1847, the intrigues of the Ranee of Lahore, who wished to upset the council of regency, rendered it necessary, for the general peace of India, to remove her to some distance from the capital, after which the Governor-General gave his almost undivided time to peaceful improvements. New encouragement was given to education; Christian labour was prohibited on Sunday; the exchequer, previously drained by the Afghan war, was replenished; while in the liberal patronage bestowed upon railways, and in the erection of public works, great and permanent good was done to India.

Through misapplied patronage, influence, and interest, partialities, jealousies, and heart-burnings had crept into many branches of the public service; but the good Lord Hardinge "threw oil upon the troubled waters, and merited the honourable title of peace-maker."

Lord William Bentinck had abolished *Suttees* throughout the whole dominions of the Company; but they were still perpetrated in those native states over which we had no control. Hence, on the death of the Rajah of Mundee, his obsequies were celebrated by a perfect "holocaust, no less than

twelve of his widows being burned with his body on the funeral pile.

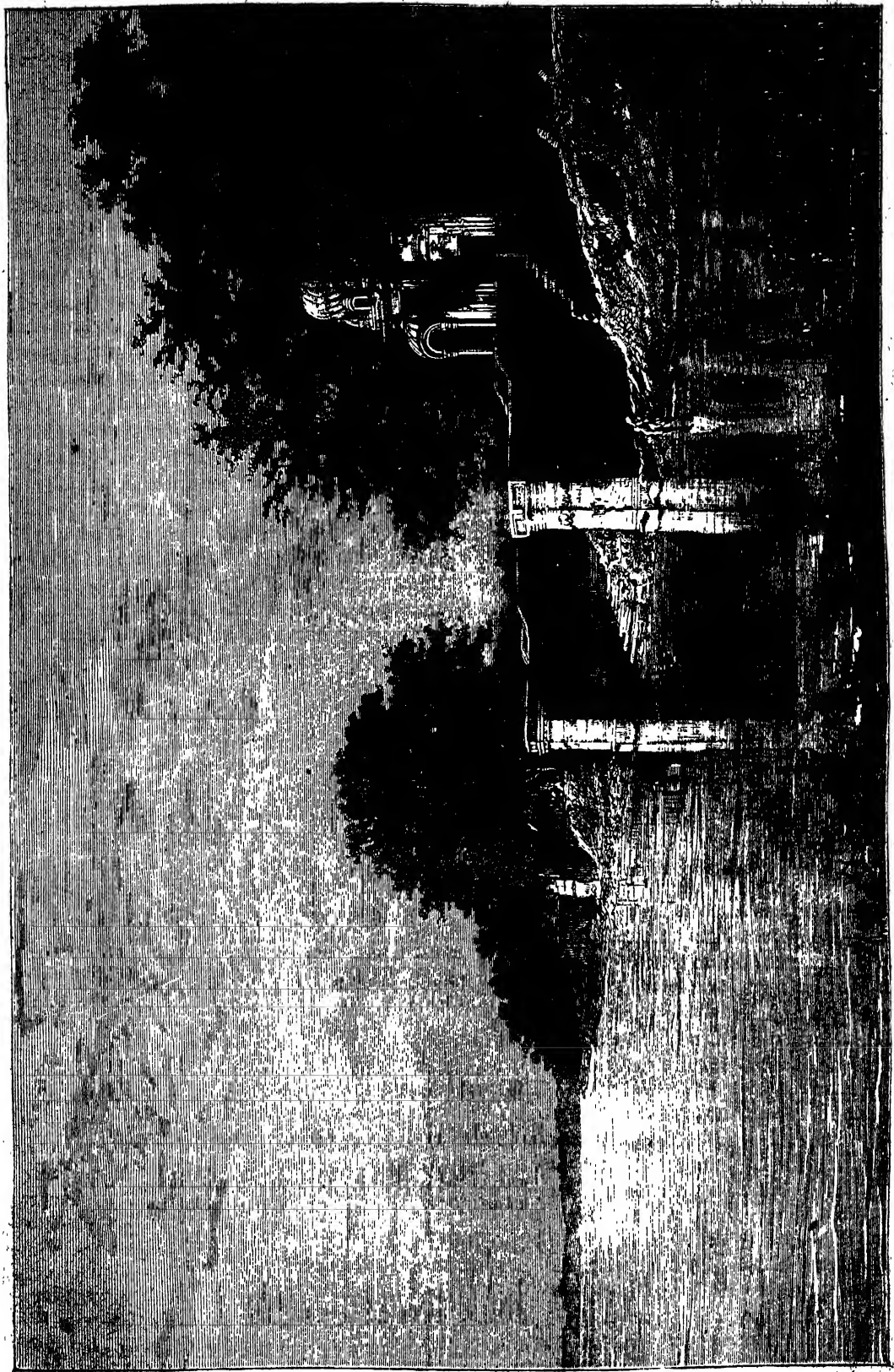
Lord Hardinge used all the influence he possessed, and all that of our paramount authority, to induce the native princes and chiefs to relinquish or abolish a practice so barbarous; and before his departure he had the satisfaction to receive, from twenty-four native princes and princesses, written and solemn assurances that they were making strenuous efforts to meet his humane wishes; and a *Suttee* is now all but unknown in India.

On the 5th of April, 1847, he wrote to the Secret Committee in London that the Sikh chiefs, forming the cabinet of Lahore, were carrying on the government with a loyal desire to maintain the terms of the recent treaty; and so they were to all appearance; but, at the same time, the majority of them were privately plotting the destruction or expulsion of the British. By the 27th of May, he again addressed the Secret Committee, holding forth the same assurances that all was quiet and well. In that letter he quotes the opinions of the talented Lieutenant-Colonel Lawrence, to the effect that, as usual, all manner of rumours were flying as to the hostile intentions of the Sikh chiefs towards us. Such tales he believed to be greatly exaggerated or obviously false; but he was deceived, as a little time was to show.

These reports seem to have been utterly rejected at Government House, Calcutta; yet few who had studied the deeply-rooted religious antipathies of the Sikhs, their fierce disposition and whole antecedents, could doubt that another storm was gathering along the banks of the Sutlej, and that those rumours, flying though they were, had an origin in the wide-spread disaffection of the chiefs and their people, to the alliance which the Maharajah Dhuleep Sing had contracted with infidel strangers, and rage at the presence of the latter in any part of the Punjaub empire.

The distribution of Lord Hardinge's patronage was regulated by an exclusive regard to the interests of the public, and he was as free from the suspicion of nepotism as his predecessor. In India, by his plain, good, common sense, by his decision of character and kindly disposition, together with vigour of discipline, he secured the golden opinions of all men.

The termination of such an administration was indeed viewed as a calamity, and great was the general regret which was felt when, at the end of little more than three years from the time when he took office—and three stirring years they were—he announced his intention of resigning; but we have already told how his services and those of his



VIEW OF THE SUTTEE CHAOKA-GHAT, OR BROAD STAIRCASE OF FUNERALS, ON THE GANGES AT CALCUTTA.

gallant comrades in the war of the Punjaub were duly acknowledged by the authorities at home. These honours were doubtless well and faithfully earned.

He sailed from Calcutta on the 15th of March, 1848, with the firm, but most mistaken conviction, "that it would not be necessary to fire another

shot in India for several years to come." Yet so impossible is it to foresee the future, that before a short twelve months had passed, the great district of the Punjaub had revolted against us, had been re-conquered, with a vast amount of bloodshed, and converted from an independent state into a mere province of the British Empire.

CHAPTER XXIX.

REVOLT AT MOULTAN.—THE OPERATIONS OF LIEUTENANT EDWARDES.—THE BATTLE OF KINEYREE.—
SIEGE AND CAPTURE OF MOULTAN.

THE successor of Viscount Hardinge, James Andrew, Earl of Dalhousie, K.T., Lord Clerk Registrar of Scotland, took his seat in the Council at Calcutta on the 19th of February, 1848. The representative of a long line of warlike ancestors and of a Scottish family of great note since the reign of David I., he was then in his thirty-sixth year, had occupied a seat in the House of Commons, and in Sir Robert Peel's last Cabinet had been President of the Board of Trade at the most busy period of its existence, "when it was flooded with railway schemes." When entering on the administration of India, he was without that intimate knowledge of its policy and institutions which was possessed by the Lords Teignmouth, Wellesley, Minto, or Bentinck; but he had a great natural genius, which soon caught the spirit and learned the details of Indian affairs. Hence, the period of his administration, which extended to eight years, was filled with transactions which must long continue to influence the prosperity and good of the vast empire of the East.

His reception in India was most flattering, for the pleasant odour of a good name and unblemished reputation preceded him. Like most of his predecessors, he was most anxious for the preservation of peace, and yet, within four months after his arrival, the alarm of war was given in the Punjaub.

The tranquillity in which Lord Hardinge left India was only the treacherous lull before the furious storm, which at length burst suddenly in the south-western province of Moultan. There a chief of some talent, named Sawun Mull, had been succeeded as prime minister, in 1844, by his son Moolraj, whose ambitious spirit led him to aspire to independence. On the understanding that he

would pay into the treasury a sum of thirty lacs of rupees, his succession had been confirmed at Lahore; but taking advantage of the confusion consequent to the war, he not only failed to pay that sum, but withheld the entire revenue. Remonstrances now proved futile; he was addressed in terms which showed very clearly that, unless he acted in conformity with the views of the durbar, force, in the name of Dhulcep Sing, would be employed against him.

He thereupon responded by proposing to resign office into the hands of any person authorised to receive the trust. Whether this was a pre-arranged scheme between him and those inimical to the British, it is now difficult to determine; but it has been thought not improbable that, had native officers only been sent to receive the surrender, it might have been made *bonâ fide*. Our Resident, however, ordered Mr. P. A. Vans Agnew, a civilian, and Lieutenant Anderson, of the 1st Bombay Fusiliers, to accompany Sirdir Khan Sing, who was nominated Dewan of Moultan; 530 irregulars formed the escort. Moolraj now made a show of surrendering office on one hand, with many sly pretexts for delay on the other.

It was on the 18th of March that Agnew and Anderson entered the city. Next morning Moolraj waited on them to discuss the general terms of his resignation, and asked a general deed of quittance; but Mr. Agnew insisted on all the monetary accounts of the preceding six years. Much recrimination ensued; Moolraj acceded eventually to the demand, and left the conference with an ominous scowl on his brow, quitting the *Edgan*, a spacious building, within cannon-shot of the north face of the fort of Moultan. On the following

morning, Sirdir Khan Sing and the two British officers accompanied Moolraj into the fort, where they received the keys, and placed two Ghoorka companies in possession of the posts. They allayed, or thought they had allayed, the manifest impatience of the garrison at this change by promises of service, and proposed to return.

They had passed the gate and reached the drawbridge which lay across the ditch, when a soldier of Moolraj rushed at Mr. Agnew, unhorsed him by a thrust of his spear, and gave him two severe sword-wounds; but before he could complete the intended murder, the assassin was tumbled into the ditch by a trooper of the escort. Instead of interfering, Moolraj forced his horse through the excited crowd, and galloped to his residence of Am Khue, near the fort. Lieutenant Anderson was now attacked by some of Moolraj's followers, and was so severely wounded that he was left for dead, till found by some Ghoorkas, who carried him in a palanquin to the Eedgah.

To that place Mr. Agnew was also brought, by the assistance of Rung Ram (the brother-in-law of Moolraj), who placed him on his own elephant, and conveyed him in haste to the camp, binding up his wounds as they went along. Mr. Agnew was able to report these occurrences to Sir Frederick Currie, the Resident at Lahore, and to Lieutenant Edwardes, who, with a small force, was employed in collecting the revenue in the neighbourhood of Leia, a fertile and well-cultivated province north-west of Moultan. He further wrote to Moolraj, calling upon him to prove his own innocence by seizing the culprits, and coming in person to the Eedgah. Moolraj replied by asserting that he was incapable of doing either; adding that all the Lahore garrisons, Hindoo and Mohammedan alike, were in rebellion, and he would advise all British officers to consult their own safety without delay.

At that very time he was presiding over a council of chiefs, composed of Hindoos, Afghans, and Sikhs, who were successively taking the oath of allegiance to him, as prescribed by their different faiths.

If any doubts had been entertained as to the past intentions of Moolraj, there could be none about the present, as he was in open revolt. On the 19th the whole of the baggage animals of the escort were carried off, and as all escape, or retreat, was thus precluded, nothing remained but to put the Eedgah in a state of defence. Though sinking with wounds, Agnew called within its walls all the soldiers of the escort and their camp-followers, while six guns were placed in battery; and could

the place be but defended for three days and nights succour might arrive.

But the worst was yet to come. On the morning of the 20th the guns of the fort opened on the Eedgah; the six there replied by one round, and then ceased. The Lahore gholandazees refused to act; and the efforts to seduce them and the escort proved so successful, that ere evening fell the whole had deserted, save Khan Sing, eight troopers, the Moonshees, and domestic servants of the British officers. The idea of further resistance was at once relinquished, and a messenger was sent to Moolraj to arrange a capitulation. The utmost he would accord was that the officers should quit the country, and they would be unmolested. But ere these terms could be communicated, the fortified temple was attacked by a horde of howling savages, who burst in, sword in hand, took Khan Sing prisoner, and barbarously cut Anderson and Agnew to pieces. They hewed off their heads, and presented them to Moolraj, who made the atrocity his own by rewarding the perpetrators of it.

Two days after, Sir Frederick Currie, Bart., whose administrative qualities had been largely tested during the late Sikh war, heard of the attack only; and under the impression that the revolt had many branches, immediately put in motion against Moultan seven battalions of infantry, two corps of regular cavalry, 1,200 irregular horse, and a force of artillery. These were all Sikhs, inadequate in strength and doubtful in fidelity; thus, when tidings of the murders and desertion of the escort came, lest the other troops of the durbar should imitate the example given them, he referred the matter to the Commander-in-chief, Lord Gough, who resolved to postpone all operations until he could take the field in person in the cold season.

And now it was that the heroic Lieutenant—afterwards Sir Herbert—Edwardes took action personally at this crisis. Colonel Van Cortlandt, a distinguished officer of the Company's service, then occupied Dhera Ismael Khan, in the same neighbourhood where Edwardes was collecting the land-tax for Moolraj. The lieutenant crossed the Indus into Deerajat the moment he received Agnew's letter from the Eedgah, with his whole force, mustering only twelve companies of infantry, 350 horse, with two guns, and twenty zumborucks; he resolved to move on Moultan, which was ninety miles distant. At the same time he wrote to Lieutenant Taylor, who was with Van Cortlandt (then commanding the troops of the Maharajah), for a regiment and four guns. He took possession of Leia, and was about to intrench himself there,

and await the approach of Moolraj, when a paper of importance fell into his hands.

It was an intercepted letter, from which he learned that his Sikh soldiers had agreed to sell his head to Moolraj for 24,000 rupees. To baffle these men, and to raise other recruits free from the infection of revolt, or Afghans who had no sympathy with the Sikhs—"bold villains, who," as he said, "were ready to risk their own throats, and cut those of any one else"—he re-crossed the Indus; and on being joined by Soobdan Khan's regiment of Mohammedans, under Van Cortlandt (who was a native of India), with six horse artillery guns, and by the troops of the Rajah of Bhawalpore, he thought himself strong enough to face Moolraj.

By the 19th of May the enterprising young subaltern—the future Governor of the Punjaub—was at the head of a force mustering 4,000 men who were supposed to be faithful, and 800 Sikhs, whose loyalty might well be considered doubtful, with ten guns and twenty-nine zumboorucks—a force which he describes as "this brave but heterogeneous army, composed of every race that peoples the Soolimaneerange and Deerajat."*

His troops were far outnumbered by those of Moolraj; but a strong diversion had been made in our favour by the Rajah of Bhawalpore, who, urged by Edwardes, was marching to cross the Sutlej, and threaten Moulton. So confident did Lieutenant Edwardes feel, that by the 20th of May he wrote to Sir Frederick Currie, saying, "I am prepared to undertake the blockade of that rebel (Moolraj) in Moulton for the rest of the hot season and rains, if you should honour me with that commission, and order Bhawal Khan to assist me."

For the present, however, the main object in view was the capture of Dera Ghazee Khan, the country around which had been bestowed by Moolraj on a native named Julal Khan, a title ever in use in the East, and synonymous with "esquire" in Britain. Khowrah Khan, who was his avowed foe, immediately made his submission to the British, and sent his son, Gholam Hyder Khan, with a contingent, to act in concert with our troops. Accompanying Colonel—or, as he is sometimes called, General—Cortlandt, this youth volunteered, on the 20th, to go in advance to raise his father's tribe, and drive Lunga Mull across the Indus.

Van Cortlandt, without attaching much importance to the offer, accepted it. The youth proved true to his word; he raised the tribe in arms, and prepared for the encounter. Lunga Mull, Cheytun Mull, and Julal Khan, at the head of the Lugharee

tribe, did not decline the conflict—an obstinate and bloody one—which ensued. A night attack, led by Gholam, commenced it on the 20th, and it was undecided on the following morning, when by a charge with shield, sword, and dagger, like those of the Scottish clans of old, he gained a complete victory, slaying Cheytun Mull, and taking Lunga Mull prisoner. Some of the fugitives took shelter in the fort of Dera Ghazee Khan, but capitulated on obtaining permission to cross the river; so the whole place was delivered up to us without further opposition.

The forces of Moolraj now moved down the Indus towards the scene of this disaster, and took up a position on its left bank, at a place called Koreyshee, intending to seize a fleet of boats provided by the captive Lunga to pass the river; but they failed to achieve this, and the two armies remained inactive, with the broad waters of the mighty river rolling between them, till Bhawal Khan crossed it in June, with the intention of moving on Soojahbad, which is westward of Moulton, and this had the effect of drawing them from their position, and leaving the passage of the river free to the British, who could cross with ease, having previously secured the flotilla in question.

The chief barrier was a peremptory order from Sir Frederick Currie to keep the left bank; but this was withdrawn on Bhawal Khan demanding instant support. The Indus was then crossed without further delay, and our whole force marched to the town of Khangur, in a barren country, overgrown with jungle, on the right bank of the Chenab. In the meantime, the Moulton forces were pushing on towards Soojahbad, with the imperative orders of Moolraj to fight Bhawal Khan before he could form a junction with Lieutenant Edwardes, who gives the strength of the several forces thus:—

The rebels were from 8,000 to 10,000 horse and foot, with ten guns, commanded by Moolraj's kinsman, Rung Ram; and the Bhawalpore army of 8,100 horse and foot, with eleven guns and thirty zumboorucks, led by Futtch Mohammed Khan Ghoree, held the left bank of the Chenab. His own force, consisting of two divisions (one of regulars, foot, and artillery, of the Sikh service, of about 1,500 men and ten guns, under Van Cortlandt, and another of 5,000 irregulars and thirty zumboorucks, under his own command), held the right bank of the river. The three several forces formed a species of triangle in their three positions.*

The plan of Rung Ram should have been to attack the Bhawalpore troops without a moment's delay, for his own, being better disciplined, must

* Letter in the Punjaub Blue Book.

* "A Year in the Punjaub."

infallibly have routed our allies; but he lost the opportunity by waiting till evening, and then moving eight miles lower down the Chenab to within an easy march of Kineyree, the point at which he knew the British must cross the river.

To seize this passage was his plan, intending thereafter to attack the chief of Bhawulpore, when left single-handed; but, luckily, his views were baffled by him, as he, too, hastened towards Kineyree, while a strong British corps, consisting of 3,000 Patans, under Foujdan Khan, had already crossed the river, and was already moving on the same point. This junction had scarcely been effected, when Lieutenant Edwardes, who had left Cortlandt to bring over the rest of the force, and was crossing the Chenab (which takes its rise in Thibet, and is the largest of the five great rivers of the Punjab), heard the booming of great guns, announcing that a conflict had begun.

This was on the 18th of June, when Rung Ram, in hurrying on to seize the ferry, found it already occupied, and had to take up a strong position on the salt-hills of Noonar, and opened fire with his guns; thus the active Edwardes came at an important time. Without waiting for orders, the undisciplined warriors of Bhawulpore rushed to the attack, but were met by a fire so steady, and so different from their own border tactics, that they were driven in confusion on a village in their rear. They were in this condition when Edwardes' force came upon the ground, and he inquired for Futteh Mohammed Khan Ghoree, whom he found squatted under a large peepul-tree. He was a little old man, with dirty clothes, a skull-cap on his head, and a rosary in his hands, the beads of which he was telling rapidly, while muttering, helplessly, "Ullundoolillah!" (God be praised!) "apparently quite abstracted from the scene around him, and utterly unconscious that six-pounders were going through the branches overhead, that officers were imploring him for orders, and that 9,000 rebels were waiting to destroy the army of which he was general."*

Edwardes had now to take the whole responsibility upon himself; nor did the brave young fellow shrink from the difficulty, which was great. The Bhawulpore artillery was so overborne by that of the Moulteenees that he could not assume the offensive until his own guns crossed the river, and it was an effort to avoid defeat ere they could be brought into the field. Imperfect as the Bhawulpore artillery proved, he continued the cannonade with it, and placed the rest of the troops in the jungle, and under cover as much as possible. Under this fire the Patans were very impatient, and

continually started up, clamouring to be led against the enemy; and thus did Edwardes spend six harassing hours, till six British guns arrived, and with them two regiments of infantry.

When they opened, the Moulteenees, supposing that they had already silenced their enemy's cannon, were taken by surprise, and made but a poor resistance, especially when one of the fresh regiments charged. The whole allied force then advanced steadily, led by Edwardes; and the victory was his, together with all the ammunition, and eight out of ten pieces of cannon. His losses were about 300 killed and wounded; that of the enemy 500 in killed alone; and the fugitives never halted till they reached Moultean. But Moolraj was determined not to let himself be shut up in that place without measuring swords with us again.

Edwardes now importuned the Resident to support him, fighting, as he was doing, single-handed, and almost on his own authority, and preparations were made to dispatch an adequate force; but Lord Gough again interposed, because the season was not favourable and the siege-train had not moved from Cawnpore. Ten days after, the invincible subaltern, on receiving a reinforcement of 4,000 men, under the Sheikh Imaum-ud-Deen—whose fidelity, however, was doubtful—attacked Moolraj at Suddoosain; but although his army now consisted of 11,000 Sikhs, supported by eleven guns, he was defeated, put spurs to his horse, and fled into Moultean, which Lieutenant Edwardes at once proposed to besiege; but, too weak to undertake that service as yet, he encamped in the vicinity to keep a watch on the enemy.

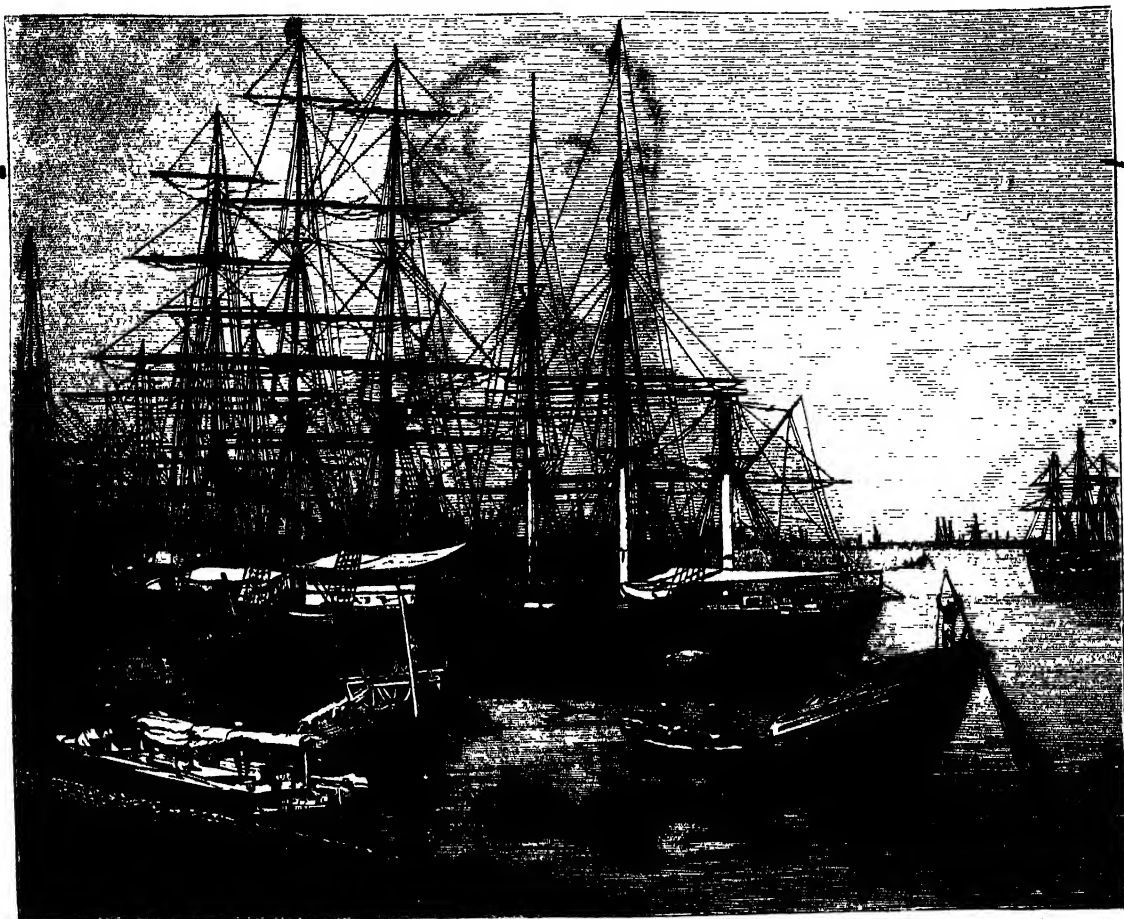
Sir Frederick Currie thought that the addition of a single British brigade, with ten guns and twenty mortars, would be a sufficient force for Edwardes; but Lord Gough still adhered obstinately to his former opinion. Lord Dalhousie concurred with him; so Currie was compelled to take the matter into his own hands, and order General Whish, commanding in the Punjab, to take measures for the dispatch of a siege-train, with all its requirements and escort, for the reduction of Moultean. This step of Sir Frederick Currie was certainly a bold one; but the peril of relinquishing it after it had been made public, appeared to Lord Dalhousie far more than that of prosecuting it. So, as the die was cast, on the 24th of July, Major-General Whish, a distinguished artillery officer, started for Moultean, with a force of 8,039 men, thirty-two pieces of siege-ordnance, and twelve horse artillery guns. Among these troops were H.M. 10th Regiment, a troop of horse artillery, the 7th Irregular Horse,

* "A Year in the Punjab."

and the 8th and 52nd Native Infantry. He marched in two columns: the right, with his headquarters, moving from Lahore along the left bank of the Ravee; and the left, under Brigadier Salter, coming on from Ferozepore by the right bank of the Sutlej. With the latter were H.M. 32nd Foot, a battering-train of thirty guns, a troop of horse artillery, the 11th Cavalry and 11th Irregulars, the 49th, 51st, and 72nd Native Infantry.

five mortars. This great disparity of numbers was compensated by the strength of the works."

Moultan is built on a mound of considerable height, formed of the accumulated debris of many cities that have occupied the same site, on the left bank of the Chenab. Its bazaars are extensive, and silks, cottons, and brocades were extensively manufactured by its inhabitants, who, previous to the events now to be narrated, numbered about



VIEW OF THE PORT OF CALCUTTA.

The native force which had assembled before this, consisted of 8,415 cavalry, and 14,327 infantry, with forty-five horse artillery guns, four mortars, and 158 zumboorucks. "Of this column, including that of General Cortlandt. 7,718 infantry and 4,033 cavalry were commanded by Lieutenant Edwardes; 5,700 infantry and 1,900 cavalry formed the Bhawalpore army, commanded by Lieutenant Lake; and 909 infantry and 3,382 cavalry, formed the Sikh army, commanded by Rajah Shere Sing. To this besieging force of nearly 32,000 men Moolraj was not able to oppose more than a garrison of 12,000 men, with an artillery of fifty-four guns and

80,000 souls. Its silks and carpets rivalled those of Persia. The citadel, on which the banner of Moolraj was waving, is an irregular hexagon, constructed on an eminence, and girt by a ditch twenty-five feet deep by forty wide. The city surrounds the hill which this citadel crowns. Prior to the late defeat of Moolraj, an old brick wall was its only defence, but now, by unremitting exertions, he had surrounded it by an enormous rampart of mud, having six gates. The citadel was undoubtedly one of the strongest and most regular of Indian fortresses constructed by native engineers. Beyond its deep wide ditch, which was faced with masonry,

rose a wall, strengthened by thirty great towers. Within, everything had been done for its security, and its magazines were stored for a protracted siege. Around the city are populous suburbs, groves of date-trees, and beautiful gardens.

"The city of Moulton," says Iben Haukal, a traveller of the tenth century, "is about half the size of Mansureh-Bukkur, and is called the Golden House; for there is in it a certain idol, to which the natives of the country come on a religious

royal salute at sunrise to-morrow, in honour of her most gracious Majesty the Queen of Great Britain, and her ally his Highness Maharajah Dhuleep Sing." In the event of non-compliance, death and destruction was threatened to "the rebel traitor and all his adherents, who, having begun their resistance to lawful authority with a most cowardly act of treachery and murder, seek to uphold their unrighteous cause by an appeal to religion, which every one must know to be sheer hypocrisy."



PORTRAIT OF SIR HERBERT EDWARDES.

pilgrimage every year, and bring great riches with them. This temple is situated in the middle of the city, and over the centre of the temple there is a great cupola, or dome. All around this building are the houses in which the servants and attendants of the idol reside. It is made in the form of a man sitting upon a square throne, the hands resting on the knees. All the riches which are brought to this idol are taken by the Amir, who distributes a portion among the servants of the temple."

On the 4th of September, 1848, General Whish issued a proclamation to the people and garrison of the city, demanding an unconditional surrender "within twenty-four hours after the firing of a

The only reply to this was a cannon-shot from the citadel, which buried itself in the earth, close by General Whish and his staff. Moolraj had recently become inspired with new confidence; as, at the time he had shut himself up in Moulton, the disaffection of the Sikhs had become more general, so that the Resident, who had been confident of his speedy destruction, was obliged to confess that plans were maturing and combinations being made with a view to a grand struggle for our total expulsion from the Punjaub. Shere Sing, who was at the head of the finest soldiers of the Sikh army, though ordered to halt at Tolumba, had continued to advance on Moulton. Many suspicious events occurred else-

where. Among them was a formidable revolt led by Chuttur Sing in the Hazareh country in the north-west of the Punjab, where the people are of Tartar origin, and, like our Highland clans of old, are almost constantly at variance with each other. They are, moreover, an irritable, fierce, and capricious race, good matchlock-men, and excellent archers. Their outbreak derived significant importance from the fact that Chuttur was the father of Shere Sing, who though now encamped with his troops before Moulton, affecting to be part of the besieging force, must have been acquainted with his father's designs, and no doubt sanctioned them.

At daybreak, on the 7th of September, the siege of Moulton was opened. The first parallel was commenced at the singular distance of 1,000 yards, in consequence of the nature of the ground; and on the 9th, an attempt to dislodge the enemy from gardens and houses in front of the trenches failed, owing to the darkness of the night and the confusion it occasioned. This event greatly elated Moolraj, who began to strengthen his post anew, and thus besiegers and besieged continued for two whole days throwing up works within half musket shot of each other. On the 12th, the general determined to scour his front, and caused the irregulars to make an attack on the left, while two columns of British troops advanced to the attack in front. Elated by the trivial affair of the 9th, and confident in the strength of their works, the enemy fought with the most obstinate valour, but were driven headlong in with the loss of 500 killed. The result of this was to bring our approaches within 800 yards of the walls, or quite within battering distance. The speedy capture of Moulton was confidently anticipated, when an unlooked-for event took place.

On the 14th of September Shere Sing threw off all disguise, and, at the head of all his contingent, marched to join the enemy in Moulton, ordering the *dhurum kha dosa*, or religious drum, to be beaten, and proclaiming a sacred war, "under the auspices of the holy *Gooroo*," against "the cruel *Feringhees*," summoned all who had eaten the salt of the Maharajah to come forth and destroy them. The arrival of Shere Sing was a source of high satisfaction to Moolraj, though the latter was far from having confidence in his new allies; thus, instead of admitting them into the citadel, he cautiously kept them under its guns in the city, while he took all the officers to a temple and made them swear that they had no designs of treachery.

Even this oath proved insufficient to allay the suspicions of Moolraj, who was anxious for the withdrawal of Shere. Lieutenant Edwardes had

skillfully contrived to ferment the disputes between these chiefs by letters fabricated to deceive them. Each came into possession of a pretended correspondence, fabricated for the purpose of deceiving them both, which the spies of Edwardes placed in their hands, and by which, each seemed to betray the other for the Khalsa cause. Hence Shere Sing, on the 9th of October, marched to join his father, and became the leader in a new Sikh war; before narrating which, we shall tell all that remains to be told of the siege of Moulton.

Prior to this, on his first defection, General Whish had held a council of war, which was unanimously of opinion that the siege was no longer practicable. Our troops were in consequence withdrawn from their advanced positions to new ground, to await the arrival of such reinforcements as Lord Gough might send.

Though the siege was not resumed till the 17th of December, the intervening period was not one of idleness, as materials for the progress of it were prepared. Thus, when the time for action came, 15,000 gabions and 12,000 fascines had been provided. But Moolraj, on the other hand, was equally active in perfecting his defences and looking round for allies. In the selection of these he showed some political knowledge, for he addressed himself first to Dost Mohammed of Cabul, and the Candahar chiefs, to whom he made the tempting offer of having the Indus for their mutual boundary, after they should have expelled or extirpated the abhorred *Feringhees*!

In December the Bombay division came into camp, under Brigadier the Hon. Henry Dundas (afterwards Viscount Melville, and Commander-in-chief in Scotland), an officer who had served during the Canada insurrection of 1837; and the plan resolved on now, was not to reduce the city as a preliminary, but to make a regular attack on the north-east angle of the citadel, and occupy only such portions of the suburbs as were required for actual operations. These were the mausoleum of Sawun Mull (the father of Moolraj, named the Wuzeerabad), and his own residence at Am Khush, and not a day was lost in effecting the capture of them. At the same time an attack, which was merely meant to be a feint, became a real one, and brought the assailants close to the walls of the city. On the 30th of December a chance shell from one of our mortars blew up the magazine under the dome of the great mosque—400,000 pounds of powder (the collection of five years)—and caused an extraordinary loss of life—500 men—shaking the earth for miles, and darkening the sky with smoke. By this time the grand masjid

and many of the principal houses were laid in ruins, and the granaries were totally destroyed. General Whish was now at the head of 15,000 British and native troops, with 17,000 of those of Bhawalpore, and 150 pieces of cannon.

By the 2nd of January, 1849, one breach in the city wall was declared practicable, and another sufficient to allow of its being assailed by a column. The latter proved very imperfect, for the stormers who approached it were subjected to a heavy cross-fire, and after passing through a deep intervening hollow, found to their bewilderment the old city wall in their front—about thirty feet high—unbreached and impracticable. They were thus compelled to retire. The other breach was carried with brilliant success, though the Sikhs are said to have fought with “the tenacity of men and the ferocity of wild beasts ;” but the town was stormed by two columns, one of the Bombay, and the other of the Bengal army: the first British colours planted on Moulton being by the hands of a brave sergeant-major of the Company’s Fusiliers. The city presented a melancholy spectacle after 120 hours’ cannonade ; every house was roofless ; but the citadel, however, held out, and there was every prospect that it would be desperately defended by Moolraj, who had retired into it, at the head of 3,000 picked men ; for as soon as he saw the city was lost, he closed the gates of the former, and left the rest of his troops to shift for themselves. By the 4th of January, a brigade of the Bombay division encamped on the north, communicating with a Bengal brigade on the east ; the irregulars were on the west, and thus the investment was complete. Even the desperate courage of Moolraj now began to give way, and he made overtures to Herbert Edwardes—now deservedly major—in the hope of

obtaining terms. He was referred to General Whish, who refused to receive any messenger but one who would announce when Moolraj would yield himself a prisoner.

The latter had not made up his mind to this humiliation, but continued his defence, and, on the night of the 12th, made a furious sortie on our trenches. By this time regular parallels of approach had been made, mines sunk, and the walls were incessantly battered by iron showers of shot and shell, direct and vertical. On the 14th our sappers crowned the crest of the glacis at the north-east angle of the citadel, with a cavalier only fifteen feet from the edge of the ditch ; on the 18th the counterscarp was blown into the latter. By the 21st two practicable breaches were made, and the troops were ordered to hold themselves in readiness for a general assault.

But when the day of the intended storm dawned, Moolraj came forth, mounted on a beautiful Arab charger, magnificently caparisoned, and, while his chiefs and soldiers prostrated themselves in passionate devotion as he did so, he gave up his sword, which was returned to him. He was at once placed under guard, and the citadel was taken possession of. As his partisans in the country were numerous, it was deemed unsafe to leave him near the city ; thus, when our army marched along the bank of the Chenab, to wheel off to the camp of the Governor-General by the road leading to Lahore, he was conveyed with it.

During the siege, which had lasted twenty-seven days, our losses were 210 killed, and 910 wounded. Moolraj was afterwards tried at Lahore, and sentenced to be hanged ; but the court recommended him to mercy, so the award was commuted to banishment beyond the seas.*

CHAPTER XXX.

THE SECOND SIKH WAR.—THE BATTLES OF RAMNUGGUR, SADOOLAPORE, AND CHILLIANWALLA.

WHILE these events had been in progress, others transpired at Lahore and elsewhere which revealed the volcano that had been under our feet. It was discovered that the Maharanee, a woman of great ambition and indefatigable intrigue, had been busily plotting against the British Government at Candahar, Cabul, Cashmere, and Rajpootana, and the whole Lahore cabinet, save two, were confederated

with our foe. By a skilful manœuvre our Resident had secured her person, and transferred her to the Resident at Benares, whom Marshman styles “the warder of the disinherited princes and princesses of India.”

The insurrection of Chuttur Sing, in Hazareh,

* Despatches ; *Ann. Reg.*, 1848-9 ; Burt’s “*Annals of India*,” 1848, Bombay, &c.

where, as he said, he "devoted his head and his arms to God and the Khalsa," threatened to become more formidable in consequence of his alliance with Dost Mohammed, to whom he offered Peshawur as the price of a joint crusade against the Feringhees. The proposal was too tempting to be resisted, and he agreed to join with his contingent; though Peshawur, which Chuttur had thus sold to the Afghans, was under the political charge of Major (afterwards Sir) George Lawrence, and was garrisoned by 8,000 Sikh troops, upon whose fidelity little dependence could be placed, as the atmosphere of the whole Punjab was pervaded by the spirit of revolt. On the 24th of October these troops mutinied, and Major Lawrence, after seeking in vain to recall them to a sense of duty, thought only of consulting his own safety, and escaping with his assistant, Lieutenant Bowie, to Kohat, thirty-six miles from Peshawur. It belonged to the brother of the Dost, the Sultan Mohammed Khan, whose conduct during the Afghan war had proved him to be a compound of the most complete villany and heartlessness; but there was no choice left to the major, who now learned that Mrs. Lawrence, whom he had sent towards Lahore at the beginning of the revolt, had been carried off to Kohat; so he had no alternative but to join her, and place himself and his assistant in the power of Sultan Mohammed, who, after promising by the most solemn oath to treat them as honoured guests, sold them as prisoners to Chuttur Sing, as part payment of the promised grant of Peshawur.

The latter's revolt, and the defection of Shere Sing before Moulton, made it seem beyond all doubt that the entire Sikh nation was preparing for another trial of strength with us, while the veterans of Runjeet Sing, now scattered throughout the country, were burning with impatience once more to take the field for their beloved Khalsa. Hence, Lord Dalhousie set out for the North-west Provinces, after instructing Lord Gough to assemble an army at Ferozepore. On the 10th of October, Lord Dalhousie, before proceeding to the scene of operations, had a farewell entertainment given him at Barrackpore, and said, in the course of his speech, "Unwarned by precedent, uninfluenced by example, the Sikh nation has called for war, and, on my word, sir, they shall have it with a vengeance!"

Lord Gough marched towards the Chenab on the 22nd of November. His army consisted of four British and eleven native battalions of infantry; three noble regiments of British cavalry, and ten of native and irregular horse; thus, he was manifestly weak in infantry. Shere Sing had

taken up a position near Ramnuggur, a town on the left bank of the Chenab, stretching to a mile and a half from that river. An island is situated in the middle of the latter, at a bend in it, opposite Ramnuggur. This Shere Sing occupied by a brigade, and, with batteries erected there, he commanded a ford. Besides the forces here and on the right bank of the stream, the Sikhs were in strength on the left bank, from which Lord Gough thought they should first be dislodged.

The strength of the enemy's main position was very great; but to dislodge or capture both the troops and guns on the left bank, Lord Gough directed Brigadier Colin Campbell (afterwards Lord Clyde), with a brigade of infantry, a column of cavalry, and three troops of horse artillery, under Brigadier Cureton, to advance for this purpose in the dark, on the morning of the 22nd. Pushing on to Ramnuggur, from which the enemy retired, they continued their march towards the Chenab. From some unaccountable oversight, or the difficulty of obtaining accurate information, our artillery, inspired more by courage than prudence, pushed on through deep sand to open fire upon the enemy, but found themselves opposed to a cannonade from twenty-eight heavy pieces of ordnance, placed in three batteries on a bend of a river, thus completely raking them by a cross and front fire point blank; they were now compelled to retire, leaving one gun and two tumbrils behind them. Supported by the 5th Corps of Native Cavalry, H.M. 14th Light Dragoons were ordered to charge. The latter were led by Lieutenant-Colonel William Havelock, K.H., elder brother of Sir Henry, a veteran of the campaigns in the Peninsula and Flanders. Most impetuous was the charge; "and so energetically did Havelock and his troopers ply their swords, that the bank was swept in a few minutes of all its swarthy occupants, who, running hastily across the sand, threw away their standards in their flight. Not contented with having driven the enemy from this position, Havelock, animated by that fiery spirit which glowed within him, instantly resolved to exceed the limits of his mission, and renew the offensive, contrary to the real wishes of the Commander-in-chief, by continuing the charge on the discomfited enemy, and driving them back across the river."

The Khalsa infantry, however, gathered fresh courage, re-formed, and opened a terrible fire of matchlocks, while the horses of our cavalry became exhausted by the deep sandy soil. In their last laborious and third charge, just as Cureton arrived with Lord Gough's order to retire, Havelock fell, pierced by two matchlock-balls.

In the last charge, according to General Thackwell, he suddenly disappeared; "and the latest glimpse of that daring soldier disclosed him in the midst of the savage enemy, his left arm half severed from his body, and dealing frantic blows with his sword, so soon doomed to drop from his hand. His last words were—'Follow me!' Some days after the action a mutilated corpse was discovered, which the chaplain of the army, Mr. Whiting, recognised to be that of the gallant but ill-fated sabreur. Such a death was worthy of William Havelock."

Captain Fitzgerald was also mortally wounded. Shere Sing held his position on the right bank of the Chenab, at the head of 35,000 men; and as the unfortunate result of the recent combat showed how difficult it would be to dislodge by a front attack, it was resolved to take him in flank.

Sir Joseph Thackwell was therefore dispatched with 8,000 men of all arms, on the 1st of December, to Wuzeerabad, thirty miles higher up the Chenab, which he crossed next day, and marched down thirteen miles, towards the encampment of Shere Sing, who, on hearing of the movement, at once abandoned Ramnuggur, and left Lord Gough to expend his shot and shell on the empty intrenchment.

Sir Joseph Thackwell, K.C.B., Lieutenant-Colonel of H.M. 3rd Light Dragoons (with the local rank of Brigadier), who lost his left arm at Waterloo, was not allowed to proceed, as he was encountered at Sadoolapore, a small town near the river Tistna, by a large force, which Shere Sing had dispatched with the hope of overwhelming him; and there ensued a conflict which was rather a series of demonstrations and an artillery duel than a battle, though it was called one. Thackwell was now menaced on his own flank by guns and cavalry at a time when his orders fettered him. Nothing had been left to his discretion, though he was quite as competent as Lord Gough to handle troops in the face of an enemy. His orders allowed him little more than to reply to the enemy's cannonade; yet he made such dispositions as deceived them, both as to the amount of his troops and his intentions; so the Sikh force fell back upon its main body. Thackwell reported the enemy's loss to be severe, but ours small—only seventy-three men and forty-eight horses killed and wounded. It was midnight when the Sikhs gave way, and the barking of dogs in their rear announced their retreat.

Shere Sing, with his artillery perfect, and his troops unbroken in spirit, continued to retire, till he took up a position of remarkable strength on

the Jhelum, with his rear resting on that stream, his main body posted in ravines, strengthened by field-works, and his front covered by a broad and dense jungle. His strength had now increased to 40,000 men, with sixty-two guns.

For six weeks our troops remained inactive between the Jhelum and the Chenab. It was deemed proper to continue this attitude till the fall of Moultan permitted a juncture with the army which had been serving there; after which the war was brought to a glorious termination, but not before more strife ensued. On the 12th of January, 1849, our troops arrived at Dingee, and found Shere Sing posted in its vicinity, with his right flank resting on the villages of Lukneewalla and Futteh Shakechuck, the main body at the village of Lollianwalla, and his left at Russool, on the Jhelum. All these were on the southern extremity of a low range of hills.

On the 13th, our engineer department, while examining the front of the position, and the quartermaster-general, when marking out a camp, were both fired on by the enemy's horse artillery. "I immediately ordered them to be silenced," says Lord Gough, "by a few rounds from our heavy guns, which advanced to an open space in front of the village. The fire was instantly returned by that of nearly the whole of the enemy's field artillery, thus exposing the position of his guns, which the jungle had hitherto concealed. It was now evident that the enemy intended to fight, and would probably advance his guns, so as to reach the encampment during the night. I therefore drew up in order of battle; Sir William Gilbert's division on the right, flanked by Brigadier Pope's brigade of cavalry, which I strengthened by the 14th Light Dragoons, well aware that the enemy was strong in cavalry upon his left. To this were attached three troops of horse artillery, under Lieutenant-Colonel Grant. The heavy guns were in the centre. Brigadier-General Campbell's division formed the left, flanked by Brigadier White's brigade of cavalry, and three troops of horse artillery, under Lieutenant-Colonel Brind. The field batteries were with the infantry divisions.*"

From the tenor of his own words, there can be little doubt that Lord Gough intended to delay giving battle till he had made a careful reconnaissance, when the shots from the advanced guns of the Sikhs roused that spirit of defiance and antagonism which were so natural to him, overcame his sober judgment, and made him issue orders for the uncasing of the colours, and immediate action.

* Despatches.

The continuous peal of fire from the thick jungle in front was so incessant and uniform that nothing was offered as a mark for our artillery amid the dark greenery but the red flash and whirling smoke of the enemy's guns. This lasted for an hour and a half; and it was three in the afternoon, with only an hour or two of daylight left, when Brigadiers Campbell and Pennycuik were ordered to begin the deadly game, and the beginning ended in a fatal repulse at first.

The two leading officers of the right brigade of the left division brandished their swords overhead, as they rose in their stirrups, to cheer on their men. Somehow, this act was mistaken for a signal to advance at a double-march. The consequence was that H.M. 24th Foot, chiefly composed of very young soldiers, outstripped the native corps, who could not keep pace with them, and on arriving at a belt of jungle were completely blown and got into confusion; or, says Marshman, with such ardour that Shere Sing, to whom they were opposed, was on the point of retiring, when he perceived them rushing breathless, and panting, as he described it, like dogs in a chase, upon his guns, between which Lieutenant-Colonel Brookes, who led the 24th, was killed.

At this moment," says Lord Gough, "a large body of infantry, which supported these guns, opened upon them so destructive a fire that the brigade was forced to retire, having lost their gallant and lamented leader, Brigadier Pennycuik, and the three other field officers of the 24th, and nearly half the regiment before it gave way; the native regiment, when it came up, also suffering severely."

The colours of the 2nd Warwickshire fell into the hands of the enemy, but not before 23 officers and 459 non-commissioned officers and soldiers had been killed and wounded.

Colin Campbell, who with his brigade had been victorious in front, now came to the rescue, and the Sikhs were borne tumultuously back, and the victory snatched from them. The division of General Gilbert succeeded by the most brilliant gallantry in putting the Sikhs in their front to flight; but pursuit into a jungly forest, where no man could see twenty yards before him, was impossible, and every leafy vista was rendered more obscure by the smoke of the battle. While halting to collect their wounded, a body of Sikhs, who had turned Gilbert's left flank unperceived, suddenly opened a terrific fire, and he was only rescued from destruction by the field battery of Major Dawes. The struggle at that moment was dreadful, and an eye-

witness said, "it seemed as if the very air teemed with balls and bullets."

Most disastrous and humiliating were the adventures of our cavalry in the field. Lord Gough had thrown forward four regiments of cavalry in the first line, and these found themselves, when, as cavalry, they were practically useless, opposed to an unapproachable fire of artillery and the entanglements of an almost impenetrable forest, while the troops of artillery attached to them, being in their rear, could not open a gun. Moreover, this helpless brigade was led by a superannuated general, who was unable to mount his horse without assistance, was irritable, and wedded to notions of cavalry manoeuvres old as the days of the Duke of Marlborough.

Of all this, Lord Gough quietly says: "The right brigade of cavalry, under Brigadier Pope, was not, I regret to say, so successful. Either by some order, or misapprehension of an order, they got into much confusion, hampered the fine brigade of horse artillery (Colonel Grant's) which, while getting into action against a body of the enemy's cavalry that was coming down on them, had their horses separated from their guns by the false movements of our cavalry, and notwithstanding the heroic conduct of the gunners, four of their guns were disabled to an extent which rendered their withdrawal at the moment impossible. As soon as the artillery was extricated and the cavalry reformed, a few rounds put to flight the enemy that had occasioned this confusion." The actual details of all this were as follow:—

When our line of cavalry advanced, it was broken up by clumps of trees and jungle bushes into small sections that were forced to cover each other in succession to the rear; and while in this useless order, a body of Sikh horsemen, maddened with intoxicating drugs, rushed on their centre in one wild galloping mass, inspiring utter terror among the native cavalry; and at this crisis, it is said, that one of our 14th Light Dragoons cried "Threes about!" on which the whole regiment wheeled in obedience and made rearward in confusion, and, while the exulting Sikh horse pressed on, galloped in helpless panic through the cannon and wagons posted in their rear. Entering the line of artillery with our own dragoons, the Sikhs captured four guns, and then night put an end to this indecisive conflict.

Our troops were half dead with fatigue, and suffering dreadfully from want of water, which could not be procured nearer than Chillianwalla, two miles distant, to which Lord Gough was thus compelled to withdraw the army, and thus virtually



THE SURRENDER OF MOOLRAJ.

abandon the field of battle. During the night the Sikhs and bands of armed peasantry traversed the forest which had been chiefly the arena of the conflict, mutilating the slain, cruelly murdering the wounded, and rifling both; while all the guns which had been secured during the engagement were carried off, with the exception of twelve, which had been brought into camp. Our losses were severe; 26 European officers and 731 soldiers killed; 66 officers and 1,446 men wounded; but the carnage, though greater on the side of the Sikhs, did not break the spirit of these hard-fighting warriors, who retired to another position four miles from the field, which they name, not the battle of Chillianwalla, but of Russool.

To us, it was the nearest approach to a defeat which we had met with in India. Four British guns were captured, the colours of three regiments were lost, the reputation of the British tarnished, and the Sikhs proportionately elated. The Governor-General officially announced it as a victory, and fired salutes in honour of it; so did Shere Sing. "By the community in India it was considered a great and lamentable calamity. The intelligence of the combat was received in Britain with a feeling of indignation and alarm. British standards had been lost; British cannon had been captured; British cavalry had fled before the enemy, and a British regiment had been annihilated. These disasters were traced, and justly, to the wretched tactics of Lord Gough, and he was recalled with the full approval of the Duke of Wellington."* Prior to this, however, he had the good fortune to

win a battle at Goojerat; but there was one unhappy episode connected with Chillianwalla, which made a deep impression soon after.

Lieutenant-Colonel John Wallace King (formerly of the 5th Dragoon Guards) who succeeded to the command of the 14th Light Dragoons, when William Havelock fell at Ramnuggur, was much censured. His defence was that he did his utmost, but in vain, to rally his men, who were of under stature, mounted on light horses, and opposed to cavalry who were more numerous, physically more powerful men, splendidly mounted, all cuirassiers and armed with long and superior swords, while those of the 14th were, of the wretched material usually supplied to our troops, and which bent or broke when they met those of the enemy.

When Sir Charles Napier arrived to command the forces in India, he inspected the 14th, and addressed them with reference to the allegations against them, and telling them that "they were fine, stalwart, broad-chested fellows, that would follow anywhere that they were led." Colonel King took these remarks so much to heart that, retiring from the parade of inspection, he shot himself. Sir William Napier, in the London newspapers, denied that his brother meant to reflect on the conduct of Colonel King. But the whole British army condemned the remarks of Sir Charles, who in his place of power cast a censure on an unfortunate officer, whose sensitive honour preferred death to the endurance of it; hence his fate excited the deepest commiseration at home as well as in India.

CHAPTER XXXI.

DEFEAT OF THE SIKHS AT GOOJERAT.—GILBERT'S PURSUIT.—ANNEXATION OF THE PUNJAUB.—
SIR CHARLES NAPIER AS COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

The best proof that Chillianwalla was indecisive is the fact that the enemy, instead of being compelled to cross the Jhelum, kept possession of his post, and Lord Gough deemed it imprudent to attempt to force him. Pressed by want of provisions, the Sikhs ultimately quitted their intrenchments, and made a retrograde movement towards the Chenab, by the Goojerat route. Their intention is supposed to have been to ravage the country, and then retire upon Lahore; but General Whish, coming on from

* Marshman.

Moultan, was able to baffle this intention by guarding the fords above and below Wuzeerabad, and, at the same time, by means of a bridge of boats to effect a junction with Lord Gough, whose army thus amounted to 25,000 men, while that of the enemy was now estimated at 60,000 men, of whom 1,500 were Afghan horse, under Akram Khan, a son of Dost Mohammed, who had obtained possession of Peshawur, and openly become an ally of the Sikhs. Our troops, though inferior in numbers, were superior in discipline, as they were

in artillery, for we had 100 pieces of cannon, while the enemy had but 59.

The troops under the command of Lord Gough were:—*Cavalry*—H.M. 3rd, 9th, and 14th Light Dragoons; the Bengal 1st, 5th, 6th, and 8th Cavalry; 3rd and 9th Irregular Cavalry, with detachments of the 11th and 14th Irregular Cavalry, and Scinde Horse. *Artillery*—Nine troops of horse, and four light field-batteries. *Infantry*—H.M. 10th, 29th, and 32nd Foot; 2nd Bengal European Regiment, and 16th battalion of Bengal Infantry. In addition to this, there was a strong brigade under Major-General the Hon. H. Dundas, including 1st Bombay European Fusiliers, and several native regiments.

After the last conflict, the two armies lay encamped within a few miles of each other for twenty-five days; the Sikhs near Russool, and the British near Chillianwalla. Evading Lord Gough, on the 6th of February, 1849, Shere Sing marched unperceived round the British camp, and established his head-quarters at Goojerat; and the last brigade of Whish's army having come in on the 20th, Lord Gough moved towards the enemy, then holding the town above-named, which stands in the province of Lahore. General Cheape, of the Bengal Engineers, who had directed the siege of Moultan, with equal professional skill and success, joined the army a week before the conflict that ensued, and, with unwearied industry, applied himself to the task of obtaining the most trustworthy information as to the enemy's position, neglect of which had produced such lamentable effects elsewhere.

On the 21st of February it was seen that the enemy's camp nearly encircled the town of Goojerat, lying between it and the deep dry bed of the Dwarra, which, bending here, encompassed two sides of the whole place, and then diverging to a considerable distance, intersected the British camp. This nullah greatly strengthened the position of Shere Sing, as he placed his guns immediately in rear of it, with his infantry in front, under cover of the bank. His left flank was covered by a deep but narrow stream, which runs eastward of the town, and turns south to fall into the Chenab. The interval between the two watercourses was an open plateau of nearly three miles, and, as it presented no obstacle to military manoeuvres, it was selected by Lord Gough as the point of his chief attack.

The army, invigorated by rest and food, was in full motion by half-past seven. The morning was clear and cloudless, and the brilliant sun shone on the long lines of fixed bayonets and drawn swords.

"On the extreme left," says his lordship, "I placed the Bombay column, commanded by the Hon. H. Dundas, supported by White's brigade of cavalry and the Scinde horse, under Sir Joseph Thackwell, to protect the left, and prevent large bodies of Sikh and Afghan cavalry from turning that flank. With this cavalry I placed Captains Duncan's and Hush's troops of horse artillery, whilst the infantry was covered by the Bombay Horse Artillery, under Major Blood. On the right of the Bombay column, and with its right resting on a nullah, I placed Brigadier Campbell's division of infantry, covered by No. 5 and No. 10 light field batteries, under Major Ludlow and Lieutenant Robertson, having Brigadier Hoggan's brigade of infantry in reserve. Upon the right of the nullah, I placed the infantry division of Major-General Sir W. Gilbert; the heavy guns, eighteen in number, under Majors Day and Horsford, with Captain Shakespeare and Brevet-Major Sir Richmond Shakespeare, commanding batteries, being disposed in two divisions on the flanks of his left brigade. This line was prolonged by Major-General Whish's division of infantry, with one brigade of infantry under Brigadier Markham, as support in a second line; and the whole covered by three troops of artillery—Major Fordyce's, Captains Mackenzie and Anderson's, and No. 17 light field-artillery, under Captain Dawes, with Lieutenant-Colonel Lane's and Captain Kinleside's troops of horse artillery in a second line in reserve, under Lieutenant-Colonel Brind. My right flank was protected by Brigadiers Hearsey's and Lockwood's brigades of cavalry, with Captain Warner's troop of horse artillery. The 5th and 6th Light Cavalry, with the Bombay light field-battery, and the 49th and 69th Regiments, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Mercer, most effectually protected my rear and baggage."*

To be brief, the army advanced in two parallel lines, with cavalry on the flanks, and eighty-four pieces of cannon in front. Lord Gough began the action by employing his superior force of artillery, and certainly used it with success, causing great havoc in the ranks of the enemy, while dashing to pieces the gun-carriages and tumbrils along their line. Our oldest officers had never witnessed a cannonade like this for magnificence and effect. He was resolved on this occasion, by no precipitancy, as elsewhere, to give advantage to the foe; but to meet him on the strictest principles of military science, so that no more unfavourable critiques and comparisons might be made of his generalship at home. Meanwhile, Shere Sing was

* Despatches.

endeavouring to make the most of that arm in which he excelled—his cavalry—and strove to outflank Lord Gough. Vast bodies of Sikh cavalry were thrown out on either wing, and all the skill, energy, and valour of ours were required to the utmost, to prevent the design proving successful. But the mind of Shere Sing was disturbed and anxious; hence on this momentous day he failed to display his usual skill as a leader. He omitted to conceal the exact position of his batteries, as he had done at Chillianwalla; but by opening fire at too long a range, when our lines had temporarily halted, betrayed their arrangement ere that fire could be effectual.

This fault was soon without remedy. His guns were ere long nearly silenced by those of Lord Gough, who out-manceuvred his cavalry on the flanks, and attacked with his infantry by hurling the whole strength of his right against the left centre and right of the enemy's left. The chief difficulty proved the passage of a deep, dry nullah, in doing which our troops were under a fire from the enemy's guns, while their own had to cease cannonading. Many brave fellows perished here; but success attended the movement, despite the hissing showers of grape and canister, and the rolling fire of musketry poured from lines in rear of the guns. Shere Sing now began to see that after his flank movements had failed, if our infantry passed the nullah, his artillery and the fortune of the day would be lost together. On the other bank of the nullah being ascended, the British cheer rang out as the keen bayonets were brought down to the charge, and dashing forward, our troops penetrated the line, separating the left and centre; and this movement, though it did not end the struggle, virtually decided the fate of the battle.

Scarcely had our right achieved the purpose for which it had advanced, than our left also cleared the nullah, and, turning the enemy's right wing, hurled, simultaneously, the flanks in confusion on the centre. Even then, the huddled and clamorous masses of the gallant Sikhs did not despair of victory. Their cavalry, in glittering squadrons, charged the flanks of our now victorious infantry; but were mowed down like grass by the close rounds of grape and canister from the guns of our horse artillery, and then their shrinking squadrons were furiously charged in turn by our cavalry. Left free thus to follow their own course, the British infantry of both wings wheeled round the village of Goojerat, pouring incessant and independent file-firing, into the shapeless masses of the Sikh infantry, inflicting the most dreadful slaughter among them. The battle was won! Colin Camp-

bell and Henry Dundas with their infantry, and Gilbert with his infantry and artillery, with relentless vengeance pursued, and pushing on, repaid the enemy for the slaughter at the nullah of Ramnuggur and on the slopes of Russool.

The enemy was utterly and hopelessly broken now; and our cavalry were let loose. Onward they rushed with loosened reins and uplifted swords, riding over and trampling down the flying and scattered infantry of the Sikhs, then "a shapeless mass of fugitives;" and it was not till half-past four, after they had advanced fifteen miles beyond Goojerat, that the cavalry drew bridle, when the trumpets sounded to halt and retire. Over all that distance of fifteen miles, the track was strewn with killed and wounded, and "their arms and military equipments, which they threw away to conceal that they were soldiers." *

As an army, the force of Shere Sing was annihilated. His whole camp, many standards, and fifty-three pieces of cannon, being, save six, all he had in the field, were ours; and what made this signal success more pleasing was, that our losses were only ninety-two killed and 682 wounded. The battle of Goojerat was undoubtedly one of the noblest achievements of our army in India; and as it was gained chiefly by a judicious use of that arm which had a preponderating power, it was, not inaptly, named by our soldiers "The Battle of the Guns." So, well might Lord Dalhousie write thus to the Secret Committee:—"Under Divine Providence, the British arms have signally triumphed. On the 21st of February an action was fought, which must ever be regarded as one of the most memorable in the annals of British warfare in India; memorable alike from the greatness of the occasion, and from the brilliant and decisive issue of the encounter. For the first time Sikh and Afghan were banded together against the British power. It was an occasion which demanded the putting forth of all the means at our disposal, and so conspicuous a manifestation of the superiority of our arms as should appal each enemy, and dissolve at once their compact by fatal proof of its futility."

On the 22nd, Sir William Gilbert, at the head of 15,000 men, with forty guns, continued the pursuit of the fugitives in the direction of the Jhelum, but on reaching Noorungabad, he found that Shere Sing had already crossed, and with only 8,000 men, the relics of his once splendid army, was encamped on the right bank. Some state his force at 16,000. Major George Lawrence, who, as we have elsewhere narrated, had been taken prisoner, was now

* Despatches.

sent by Shere Sing to make terms with us, and to own his submission without that of other chiefs in arms. Meanwhile, the veteran Gilbert, having crossed the Jhelum, turned all his attention to the Afghans, now in full flight towards the Indus. He nearly overtook them at Attock, which they had just quitted, before they had time to destroy the bridge of boats. He was therefore able to take over his troops and enter Afghanistan; but as there was no hope of reaching the fast-flying Afghans before they entered the Khyber Pass, of fatal memory, he prudently halted and retraced his steps, while of the fugitives, it was sarcastically said by the natives, that "those who rode down the hills like lions, now ran back into them like dogs."

On the 12th of March, Shere Sing and Chuttur Sing gave up their swords to the general, at the celebrated monument of Manikgla, once deemed a trophy of Alexander the Great; thirty-five subordinate chiefs, and the gallant Khalsa soldiers, advanced one by one, and after clasping and kissing their weapons, cast them on the growing pile, all with heavy sighs, and many with unconcealed tears. A gratuity of a rupee was given to each; and then those brave men, who had fought so nobly and so well for their country, set out for their homes, resigned to a feeling of proud submission to a power that had proved stronger than themselves.

During the war, the Sikhs lost 160 pieces of cannon, and 20,000 stand of infantry arms. Our guns taken at Chillianwalla were all restored.

After double aggression, and the indefeasible right of double conquest, the Punjaub was completely at the disposal of the British Government, and Lord Dalhousie annexed it to the dominions of the Company, in a proclamation which stated that, "as the only sure mode of protecting the Government of India from the perpetual recurrence of unprovoked and wasting wars, he was compelled to resolve on the entire subjugation of a people whom their own Government had long been unable to control, and whom no punishment would deter from violence, and no acts of friendship could conciliate to peace." The Governor-General lost no time in acquainting the Lahore Council of Regency that the Sikh dominion was at an end. Aware that resistance was futile, the members of it contented themselves with endeavouring to obtain favourable terms, and all who had taken no part in the war against us, and were assured that they would be liberally dealt with, consented to a treaty, which, though made in the name of the Maharajah, and signed by him, could scarcely be deemed his, as he was only in his eleventh year. By it he renounced for ever

all right to the sovereignty of the Punjaub, surrendered to the Queen of Great Britain the famous gem called the Koh-i-noor, or "Mountain of Light," which had been taken from Shah Sujah-ul-Moolk by Runjeet Sing, and agreed to reside wherever the Governor-General might select, stipulating only, that he should retain the title of "Maharajah Dhuleep Sing Bahadour," with a pension of not less than four lacs of rupees. And we may here add, as an interesting fact, that the young prince subsequently embraced Christianity.*

On the 29th of March the British colours were hoisted on the ramparts of Lahore, and a royal salute announced the fulfilment of old Runjeet Sing's prediction, that "the Punjaub would one day become red," in allusion to the colour which, on the maps of India, distinguishes our possessions there. The jaghires of the leaders of the revolt were confiscated, and they retired into obscurity on small stipends. Moolraj was tried, but evaded the fulfilment of his sentence by dying in prison. Lord Dalhousie was created a marquis, and the reproach of Chillianwalla was forgotten amid the glory of Goojerat.

In the Punjaub a noble field was open for the construction of an administration free from the errors that had been committed elsewhere, when our rule was in its infancy. A board was constituted, with ample powers, at the head of which was placed a fitting representative of Munro, Ochterlony, and Malcolm—Sir Henry Lawrence, and with him was associated his brother John, who subsequently was Governor-General, and Mr. (afterwards Sir Robert) Montgomery; and it has been said that a more efficient board it would have been difficult to construct even in India. The administration was formed on a new system, and intrusted to fifty-six gentlemen, half of whom were military officers, the other half civilians, "the flower of the service, men of mature experience, or of noble aspirations for distinction." The system of government was, by its simplicity, well suited to the requirements of our new acquisition. For the voluminous regulations, which lay like an incubus on the older provinces, a clear and concise manual, adapted to the habits of the people, who courted justice and dreaded law, was compiled by Robert Montgomery, and comprised in a few sheets of foolscap.†

* He resides now (1877) in Britain, and is a frequent visitor at Court. He is a pious Christian and fond of retirement, though on public occasions he wears a gorgeous Oriental costume. He has a shooting lodge in Scotland, and when there, often appears in a dress which would have astonished the old Lion of Lahore—the garb of old Gaul.

† Marshman.

Our north-western Indian frontier was, by the annexation of the Punjab, removed to the mountain-chains beyond the Indus, inhabited by roving clans, whose vocation from the days, perhaps, of Alexander the Great, had been the levy of black mail among the lowlanders. To protect the latter from their fierce inroads, a line of forts was built, connected with each other by a series of roads. For duty on this frontier nine special exterminated. The reduction of the land-tax, and the mode in which leases were granted, sometimes for thirty years, gave such an encouragement to agriculture, that more than 30,000 soldiers of the Khalsa turned their swords into ploughshares. The vexatious duties on the transit of goods from district to district and town to town, were swept away as useless barriers to free-trade; the loss was replaced "by the scientific selection of new taxes,



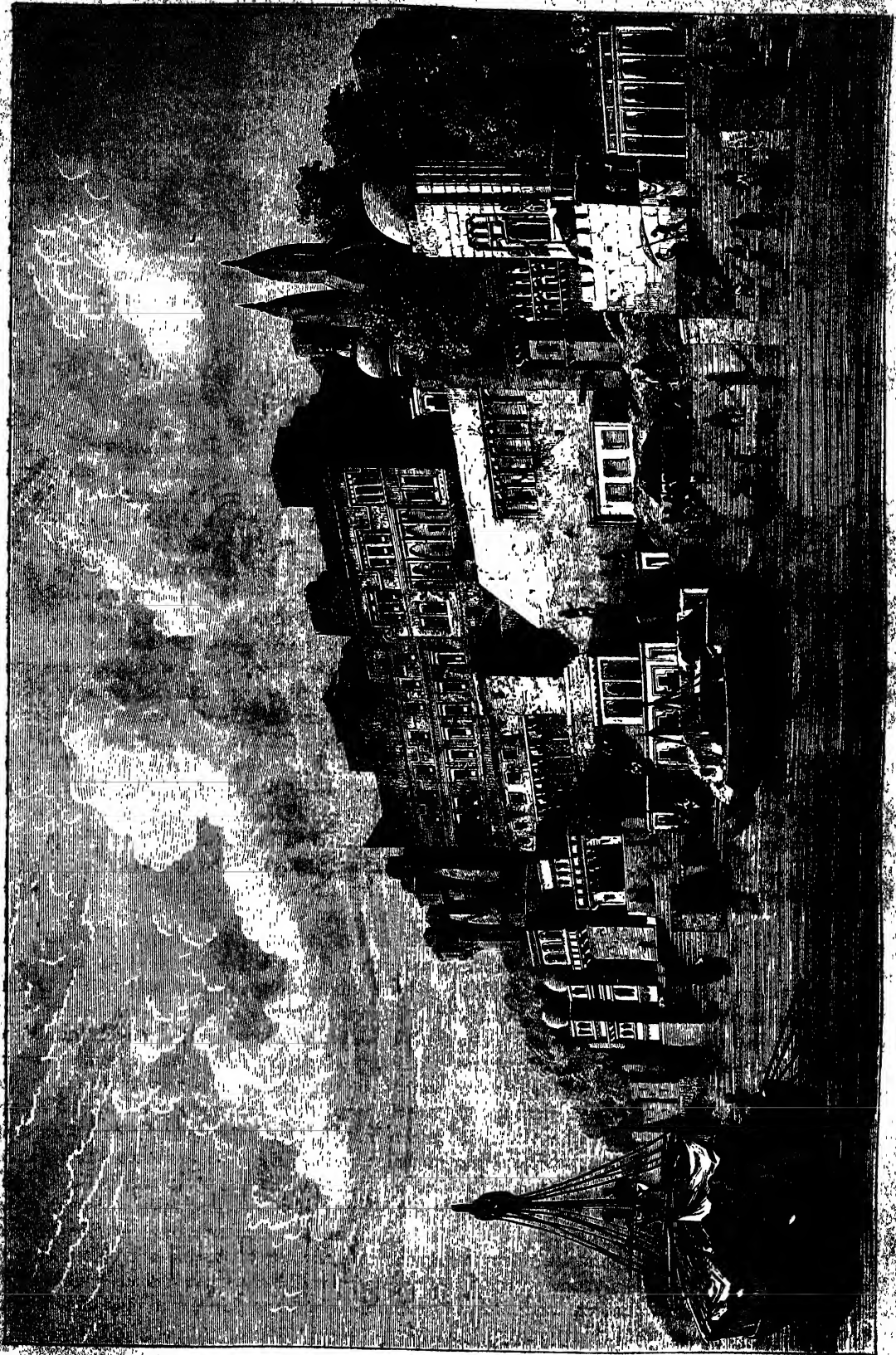
VIEW OF FORT RHOTAS NEAR CHILLIANWALLA.

regiments were raised; and within a few months, Lord Dalhousie had disarmed the Punjab, and collected therefrom 120,000 different weapons of every character, and some of great antiquity.

A military police, consisting of six foot battalions and twenty-seven troops of horse, was raised; the ancient village watches were reconstituted; and within three years after the battle of Goojerat, no province of British India was more free from crime than the Punjab. The sale of children was put down by the Board of Administration, and thus was domestic slavery abolished. The Thugs and Dacoits, who had fled hither when driven out of Hindostan and the Deccan, when Colonel Sleeman brought the full terrors of the bayonet and gibbet upon them, were likewise traced out and finally

four of which yielded a larger return than forty-eight of Runjeet Sing's clumsy imposts."

When the result of Chillianwalla reached London, it was fully regarded by the British public as nothing less than a defeat; and, in the fear of others yet to come, all eyes turned to Sir Charles Napier as the man best qualified to handle our armies in India; and the demand for his appointment to the office of Commander-in-chief was so loud and persistent, that the conqueror of Scinde, who thought he had bidden adieu to that land for ever, embarked for it once more on the 24th of February, 1849, in supersession to Lord Gough, who, however, received additional rank in the peerage, with a pension of £2,000 per annum from the East India Company.



VIEW OF THE QUAY OF BENARES.

He was off Ceylon when he heard tidings of the victory at Goojerat, which totally changed the circumstances under which he had been appointed; and, as he was by no means of a suave or tractable temper, it was not long before he found himself—or thought he did—in a false position in India. Lord Dalhousie was far from entertaining any such feelings himself, or of giving them the slightest encouragement in others; there was, however, but a slender prospect of harmonious co-operation at first; and before a year elapsed an unpleasant collision took place. Imagining that a spirit of mutiny prevailed among the native troops in the Punjab, and that the chief reason of it was a reduction of allowances, Sir Charles Napier suspended certain regulations on his own responsibility, and, without consulting any other authority than his own as Commander-in-chief, he disbanded the 66th Native Infantry, and by another unwise stretch of power, gave its colours to a battalion of Ghoorkas, which was thenceforward numbered as the 66th. Of all this the Governor-General disapproved, and a formal letter thereupon was addressed to the Adjutant-General of the army; this document was deemed a harsh and unjust reprimand; and Sir Charles was in it given to understand, for his future guidance, “that the Governor-General in council will not again permit the Commander-in-chief, under any circumstances, to issue orders which shall change the pay and allowances of the troops serving in India, and thus practically to exercise an authority which has been reserved, and most properly reserved, for the supreme Government alone.”

After such a reprimand, resignation alone could follow, and that of Sir Charles was, on the 22nd of May, 1849, transmitted through the future Lord Raglan to the Commander-in-chief at the Horse Guards, the Duke of Wellington.

We may here mention that, prior to these events, Sir Charles met with much opposition in his attempts at military reformation. During the first six months of his residence in India, he had to decide on no less than forty-six cases of courts-martial on officers alone, their charges being chiefly intoxication and gaming, or actions arising out of these causes; and while at Lahore he issued a general order which, though required, is undoubtedly the most remarkable ever issued to British troops. If such matters as are referred to therein existed during the time of Lords Hardinge and Gough, they must have permitted them to pass unnoticed, or shrunk from unpopularity; but Napier was a man of a sterner mould than either, with undoubtedly a high sense of military duty.

“At a late review of the troops on the plain of Meer,” ran this order, “the following egregious deficiencies were evident to all:—1st. That some commanders of regiments were unable to bring their regiments into line. 2nd. One commanding officer attempted to wheel his whole regiment as he would a company. 3rd. Several officers commanding companies were seen disordering their companies by attempting to dress them from the wrong flanks. 4th. When the line was ordered to be formed on the left column, some commanders deployed too soon, and ordered their lines thus improperly formed to ‘double quick,’ in order to regain their position. This was all bad; but it was worse to see the regiments on receiving the word to ‘double quick’ at once charge, with loud shouts, no such order having been given by any one, nor the words ‘prepare to charge;’ nor did anything occur to give a pretext for such a disgraceful scene, exhibiting both want of drill and want of discipline. 5th. Bad as this was, it was not the worst. When these regiments chose to charge, the Commander-in-chief, to his astonishment, saw some of the rear ranks firing straight up into the air; he saw some of the men of the rear rank actually firing off their muskets to the rear, over their shoulders, as the bearers—he will not call them soldiers—were running to the front. If ever such again happen, he will expose the commanding officer of any regiment that so disgraces itself in public orders to the whole Indian army. In the course of his service he never witnessed such a scene. No commander could go into action with a regiment capable of such conduct without feeling certain that it would behave ill. The Commander-in-chief will, therefore, hold commanding officers responsible—for they alone are to blame—that any soldier who shouts, or charges, or fires without orders, be instantly seized, tried at once by a drum-head court-martial, and the sentence executed on the spot.”

During the entire eighteen months Sir Charles was in office, fourteen officers of the Bengal army were cashiered, six dismissed, seven lost rank, five were suspended, ten reprimanded, and only two honourably acquitted, one simply found not guilty, and four had their sentences commuted or were pardoned.* With all this, Sir Charles was no martinet, and all his regulations were based upon the soundest military principles. On finding a spirit of opposition against him, he resigned, as we have said, and gave his reasons for doing so in a speech at Kurrachee, when he was presented with a splendid sword by the native chiefs:—

“Lord Ellenborough treated me as a general.”

* Dr. Taylor's “Hist. of India.”

officer, and the brave Bombay army seconded me nobly; not, as is the custom now-a-days, when a general officer entrusted with a command is to be told by a colonel and a captain that this thing is right, and that thing is wrong. If general officers are unfit to command, in God's name, do not appoint them to command—and I must say, there are nine out of ten who ought not to be appointed, but I hold, that when once a general officer is appointed to command, he ought to be treated as such, he ought to know what is best for the army under his command, and should not be dictated to by boy-politicians, who do not belong to the

army, and who know nothing whatever of military science. It is this that has caused me to resign the command."

The Duke of Wellington, who had ever been Napier's friend, was displeased with his resignation, and declared that he had been unjustly censured. Sir Charles landed in England in March, 1851, and not long afterwards, acted as a pall-bearer at the Duke's funeral, on which occasion he caught a cold which accelerated his death. That event took place in his seventy second year, when he expired on the morning of the 29th of August, 1853

CHAPTER XXXII

ROADS AND CANALS —THE CASE OF JOTEE PERSAUD —THE AFFAIRS OF MADRAS.

ON the 6th December, 1850, Sir William Gomm arrived as Commander in chief—a veteran of the old wars in Holland, the Peninsula, and Flanders, whose life had been one career of fighting from the time he joined the 9th Foot as an ensign in 1784, to the field of Waterloo, where he was Picton's quartermaster general

The Marquis of Dalhousie did not consider the conquest of the Punjaub perfected till it was intersected with great military roads, hence, within the course of five years, 2,200 miles of these were formed, or in course of formation. Of these, the most important was one of 275 miles in length, connecting Lahore with Peshawur. It passed over 550 bridges, 100 of which were of great size, and it penetrated six chains of mountains. All these natural obstacles were overcome by an able engineer officer, the future Lord Napier of Magdala, to whose talent and energy these improvements in the "Land of the Five Waters" were chiefly owing. The marquis, considering that "works of irrigation were the happiest in their effects on the physical condition of the people," ordered all the canals, excavated in ancient times by Mohammedan and Sikh rulers, to be carefully repaired and reconstructed, while new ones were made elsewhere with a liberal hand. The Baree Doab Canal, which with its branches extended to the length of 465 miles, was one of the greatest of Colonel Napier's works of irrigation, and is fully equal to the finest canal in Europe. No water-rates were levied, as Lord

Dalhousie deemed that the increased cultivation of the soil fully repaid the state

The genius of the marquis gave animation to that which was his own creation—the system of government in the Punjaub. He traversed the country in every direction, and proceeded from Peshawur to Cashmere, adopting all measures necessary, civil and military, to secure our new possessions. He then came by the rivers, examining their sources, and the countries on their banks to the capital of Scinde. From Hyderabad he proceeded to Bombay, where he embarked in a steamer for Goa, Colombo, Galle in Ceylon, Singapore in the Malacca Peninsula, and Malabar, and thence steamed through the Bay of Bengal to Calcutta. But the Punjaub was the grandest arena of his administrative labours, and he made it one of our chief elements of strength in India. "The brave soldiers who had shaken our power to its foundation at Ferozeshah and Chillianwalla enlisted under our banners, assisted in reconquering Delhi from the rebel sepoys, marched up the Irawaddi to fight the Burmese, and aided in planting the British colours on the battlements of Peking."

In the year 1850, died Lieutenant Waghorn, whose name is inseparably connected with his great postal enterprises, and the vast services he rendered thereby to the Company and India, to the Crown and the British Isles, and yet, to his widow there was awarded a pension alike contemptible and poor. In the January of the following year,

the last of the Peishwas, the famous Bajee Rao, died an exile at Benares, when his pension of £90,000 per annum fell to the Company.

In that year, meetings of Hindoos were held at Calcutta to protest against the Government patronage of the Christian religion, and the proselytising nature of the Government schools. It was sufficiently evident that the executive were using the public treasure of India for the propagation of opinions opposed to those of the people from whom that treasure came, although it was obvious that Mohammedan and Hindoo institutions were supported by the same funds, but the emotions which pervaded the native assemblage at Calcutta were intensely and savagely ligoted.

Attempts were made now to disconnect the Government with any endowment of Mohammedan or heathen institutions, though many Europeans, to conciliate the natives, were not unfavourable to supporting them as a matter of policy. But the minds of the Bengalese became much inflamed by an unwise transaction on the part of the executive, which was calculated to uproot their confidence in the British, and destroy faith in their officials. In various public accounts, deficiencies had been discovered, and in order to draw attention from the Europeans, a plan would seem to have been formed among the officials, to incriminate wealthy natives who transacted business with our Government. The progress of these proceedings, in 1848-49, as we find them in a history of the time,* portrays the scandal with great force and brevity, clearness and point.

A wealthy native banker, named Jotee Persaud, who had been long wont to enter into great monetary transactions with the Company, and had ample means and organisation at his disposal, maintained the British armies during the wars in Afghanistan and at Gwalior, and this he did by native agency, remote from any efficient system of check or supervision. Irregularities in detail may have occurred, as at the close of that disastrous strife all his accounts, it was alleged, were not clear, distinct, or sufficiently well vouched for. When peace came, Jotee Persaud claimed a balance of half a million sterling, which demand was disputed, and, of course, left unpaid. Jotee Persaud was too much of a Hindoo to be baffled thus, but years of dispute and debate followed, till he grew actually weary of the affair. The war in the Punjaub broke out, and the British authorities had the effrontery to seek his monetary aid again. Persaud refused to pass again connected with their commissariat, but Native effort was made to induce him to yield, and with little success.

* McKenna's continuation of Taylor.

eventually he did so, on the double and distinct conditions that his past arrears should be liquidated, as soon as the new contest should be over, and that some title of honour should be conferred on him.

On this being promised, he accepted the new contract, and maintained our armies during the war in the Punjaub. When it ceased he applied to the Indian Government to fulfil their stipulations, but was bitterly disappointed. Instead of the old Afghan balances being paid up, his new accounts were subjected to keen scrutiny and examination; and ultimately, a native, employed in the commissariat, on the 30th of March, 1849, made a deposition, accusing Jotee Persaud of corruption, embezzlement, and forgery. An investigation was ordered, and Major Ramsay, who made it by order of the Government, declared Persaud to be blameless, and reported such to the military board. Two of the members agreed with him, and the case was about to be relinquished, when a third recommended it to the consideration of the Marquis of Dalhousie and the Council.

Jotee Persaud had been threatening to bring an action in the law courts for his demands, but now, while at Agra, he was compelled to find bail to abide a trial on the criminal charges brought against him by the Government. Mr. Long, of Meerut, became responsible for him, but Persaud, when at liberty, went to Loodiana, and from thence to Calcutta, believing that when within the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court there he would be safe from the authority of that at Agra. So a warrant was served upon him at Calcutta, and he was conveyed back to Agra for trial, while his bail was estreated, and he himself roughly handled by the authorities. Mr. Long, a barrister of spirit and talent, defended Jotee Persaud with ardour; and eventually the court—though composed of a judge, jury, and prosecutor, appointed by Government—acquitted the defendant.

His trial lasted twelve days, in the March of 1851, and excited an interest unparalleled in and around Agra. All India was ransacked for witnesses through whom to procure a conviction; but the case failed in every way. During the defence, Mr. Long brought forward many high Government officials to speak of Jotee Persaud's character and services, and after his acquittal the enthusiasm of the natives burst forth, and they proposed to carry him in triumph from the court-house. The Government of India endeavoured to clear themselves of the blame which these proceedings afforded for imputing to them injustice, by not settling the creditor's just claim, and ingratitude for not dealing liberally with one whose services were undoubtedly

great breach of faith for not fulfilling the stipulations entered into with Persaud, as an inducement to undertake the supply of the troops; and more than all, a vindictive anticipation of his legal proceedings against them in the Queen's Court, by the concoction of criminal allegations which they were unable to prove. "It is impossible," says Nolan, "to come to any conclusion favourable to the authorities in this affair. It is more than probable that Jotee was not more honest than European commissaries are reported to be. That he had his own way of making a profit both by the Government and the unfortunate soldiers, and that way not commendable, is also very likely; but he was acquitted of fraud by the very persons whom the Government appointed to investigate the charges which they brought against him. Before the matter came into a court of law, his accusers appointed his judges on the tribunal of investigation, and they declared him innocent. A large debt was due to the man, and the officials who had the honour of their country in keeping, endeavoured to confiscate his claim. They, resolutely bent on this course, nevertheless made fresh bargains with him, when their own official helplessness made him indispensable. They then openly violated their new compact, and to uphold the iniquity of their proceedings, endeavoured to ruin the man by resorting to subornation of perjury."

It is remarkable that the Marquis of Dalhousie, who was accustomed to look personally into almost everything, omitted to see justice done to Jotee Persaud, and to stop the legal authorities, as by the violation of simple honour and common honesty they sought to disgrace and ruin him; but, says the writer above quoted, "when faith is so often violated in contracts by Government at home, in sight of the English public, and under the lash of Parliament and the press, we cannot wonder that the like should occur in India, were it not for the destruction to the interests of the nation which is created there, by destroying confidence in British honour in the native mind."

During the administration of Lord Dalhousie there occurred but little in the general government of Madras to give trouble. Certain attempts made to restrict the liberties of European residents had excited some opposition during the rule of Lord Hardinge and the presidential government of General the Marquis of Tweeddale, K.T. The latter, who had been aide-de-camp to the Duke of Wellington during the Peninsula war, and had been wounded at Busaco, held the chair at Madras from 1841 to 1847, during which time he personally favoured civil and religious liberty; yet one of his

measures provoked much discussion and discontent among the natives of India.

In 1847, a minute of Council, introduced by him, made the Bible a class-book in all Government schools. This disturbed the feelings of the natives, and this emotion was increased in the same year by the decision of a law court on the question of religious liberty. A young native girl avowed herself a Christian, under the teaching of our missionaries; but her mother demanded that she should be given up to her, with the admitted intention of coercing her in the matter of conscience. The natives debated the matter fiercely, and treating it as a question of creed and right, brought it before the Supreme Court.

The girl, being of age, was by the court permitted to decide for herself. This gave dire offence to the obtuse natives, who insisted that she should return to the heathenish creed of her forefathers. They hated liberty, civil and religious alike, as Brahminism and Mohammedanism had taught them to do. Religious intolerance and bitter fanaticism agitated deeply the minds of the people of the Madras presidency in particular. There was a lofty and arrogant tone adopted by them, and many spoke and wrote, and even acted, as if they had both the right and power to compel the Government to set at defiance the rights and scruples of the Christian population; and yet Mohammedan and Brahmin hated each other as bitterly as both hated the Christians. At Gumsoor, in the Northern Circars, among the Koles and Gonds, human sacrifices were again attempted, and the whole country became so convulsed that military intervention was necessary; but the era was one of progress, and was marked by an extension of greater religious freedom to the army of Madras, though the baptism of four native girls—a petty, if real, conversion—there, increased the religious ferment produced by previous affairs. "The Marquis of Tweeddale left in 1847, having completed many reforms, removed vexatious taxation, improved Madras, and opened the gate wider for the free labours of the missionaries. On the question of religious liberty, however, in Madras, as elsewhere in India, *adhuc sub judice lis est.*"

On the departure of the Marquis of Tweeddale, Mr. Henry Dickinson, the senior member of Council, held the government till the arrival of Colonel Sir Henry Pottinger, Bart., who landed on the 7th of April, 1848. In that year there was an insurrection at Calicut, on the Malabar coast; but it was chiefly among the Moplas, who were only put down after some very dreadful slaughter. The

custom of these Mohammedan fanatics, who so often commit some cruel outrage upon Christians or Hindoos, after which they would shut themselves up in a mosque or temple, and defend it with the resolution to sell their lives as dearly and desperately as possible, and pass, sword in hand, to paradise and the presence of the prophet. Many alleged conversions were made among the natives after the arrival of the new Governor, who regarded them somewhat dubiously. In 1850 it chanced that a young native embraced Christianity, on which his friends, and those of his wife, by force withheld her from joining him, and he applied to the Supreme Court for a writ of *habeas corpus*. By the intervention of the judges she was restored to him.

The natives viewed this act of simple justice as an invasion of their assumed right to persecute. In the vocabulary of the Anglo-Indians, Madras is termed "the benighted presidency," yet there are more Christians in it, and it contains many more native schools, than any of the other presidencies.

During the early part of Viscount Hardinge's administration, Bombay was governed by Sir George Arthur, Bart., K.C.H., an amiable man, an enlightened gentleman, and good soldier, formerly colonel of the York Chasseurs; and under his successors in office, Sestock Robert Reid, Esq., and Sir George Russell Clerk, the province of Bombay grew in prosperity and peace.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

OF THE PORTUGUESE, DUTCH, AND DANES IN INDIA.

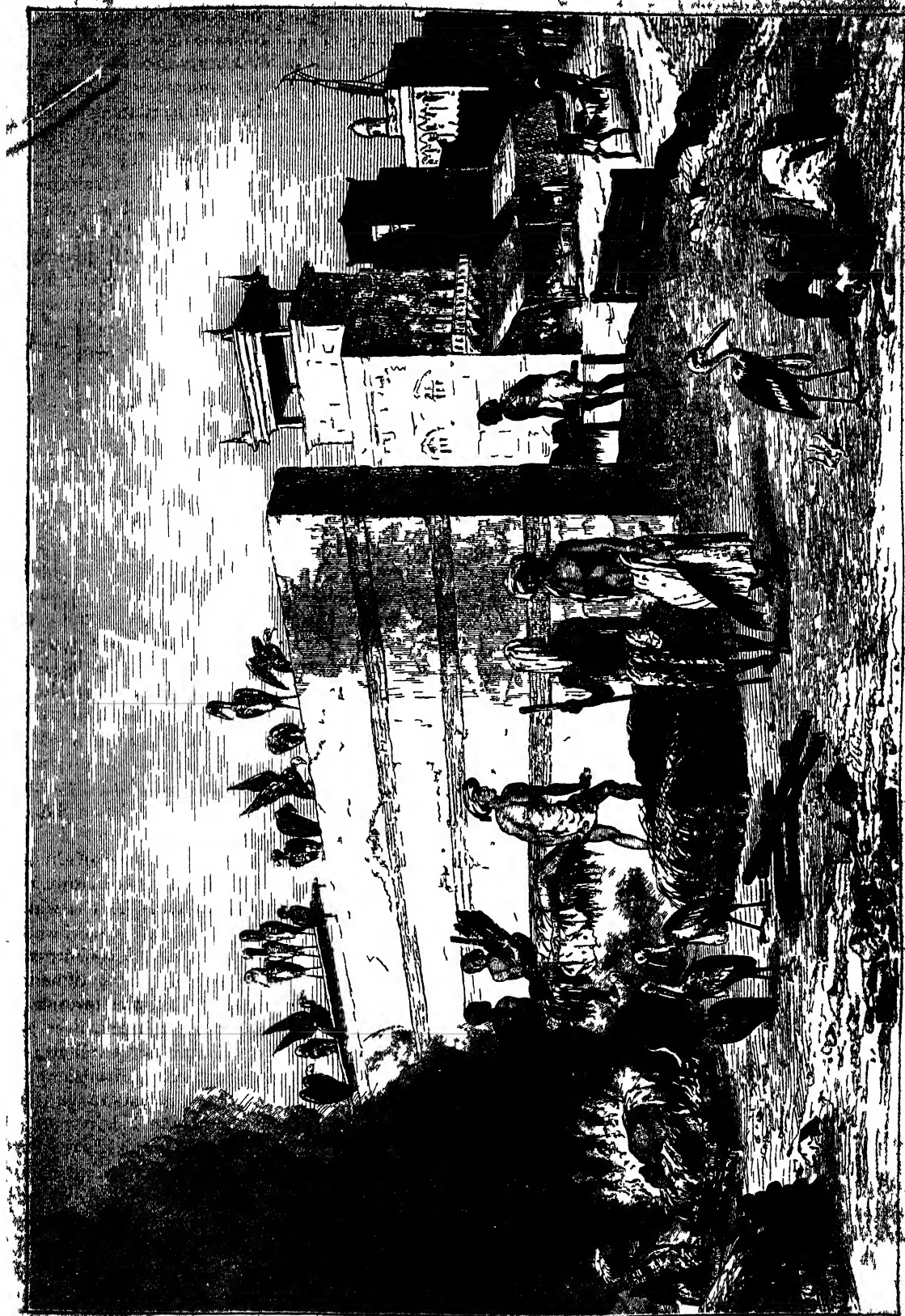
IN the history of an empire so vast and varied as ours in India, digressions are unavoidable, hence, as we have referred briefly to the Scottish and French East India Companies, it may not be out of place—before narrating the Burmese war, and the close of Lord Dalhousie's brilliant administration—to make a short reference to the affairs of the Portuguese, Dutch, and Spaniards in the East, or to their settlements there, which, by absorption or otherwise, are intimately connected with the history of British India.

To take them seriatim we shall begin with the Portuguese. The spirit of maritime adventure became strongly developed in Europe during the fifteenth century, and nowhere so much as in the little but enterprising kingdom of Portugal, where great progress had been made in the science of naval architecture. Its sovereigns warmly encouraged the growing spirit, and sent out successive expeditions, which gradually made their way along the coast of Africa into latitudes hitherto unknown, till John II., in 1486, sent three vessels, under Bartholomew Dias, to discover the limits of Southern Africa. He was the first who doubled the Cape, which he named *Cabo Tormentoso*, from the tempestuous weather he experienced there, and the idea that there was no passing beyond it "very much retarded the prosecution of further designs."*

* Locke's "Hist. of Navigation."

John II., hoping, however, to reach the realms of Prester by this route, called it more appropriately *Cabo da Buena Esperanza*; and soon after, the great Genoese, Columbus—convinced that India was to be discovered by sailing westward—offered his services to the king, but they were not accepted; so, under the auspices of Spain, he set forth on that adventurous expedition which ended in the discovery of America.

It was not until eleven years after Dias had doubled the Cape that Emanuel, the successor of King John, fitted out three ships, under Vasco de Gama, his brother Paul, and the two Nunez, who, after many solemn religious ceremonies, sailed from Lisbon on the 8th of July, 1497, for the hitherto unexplored Indian Ocean; and after traversing 3,000 miles, with only sea and sky visible, he sighted Malabar in May, 1498, and joyfully cast anchor off Calicut, whither the Mohammedan arms had not come as yet, and where there reigned a Hindoo prince named the Zamorin, as we have mentioned in a previous part of this history. He at once granted De Gama the privilege of trade throughout his dominions. The commerce of the Malabar coast had hitherto been a monopoly among the merchants of Egypt and Arabia, who viewed the new arrivals with jealousy, and persuaded the Zamorin that they were not what they represented themselves to be, but were ocean robbers, who had



HINDOO FUNERAL RITES IN CALCUTTA.

escaped from their own country, and would fill the eastern seas with peril.

Thus influenced, the Zamorin became so hostile to the Portuguese, that De Gama set sail for Lisbon, where he arrived on the 29th of August, 1499, and was received with admiration by the king, the court, and the people, who crowded the beach to behold the three little caravels which had performed this astounding voyage, the first of its kind in the annals of the world; a voyage in which a way by sea had been discovered to India, the land of fable and of fabulous riches. The Portuguese monarch lost no time in following up the enterprise of De Gama, and fitted out an expedition consisting of thirteen ships and 1,200 men, the command of the whole being given to Pedro Alvaréz Cabral, who was accompanied by eight friars, with orders to carry fire and sword among all who would not listen to their teaching. He sailed on the 8th of March, 1500, but meeting with violent storms, was driven so far from the coast of Africa that on Easter Eve the fleet gladly sought for safety a port which they named Seguro, and the country Santa Cruz, which is now known to us as Brazil. Other storms were encountered, and such were the casualties, that the admiral arrived with only six vessels, on the 20th of July, at Mozambique. On the 13th of September he reached Calicut, and was graciously received by the Zamorin, to whom he restored some hostages that had been taken away by De Gama, and obtained in return permission to erect a factory. As the Mohammedan traders prevented him from getting any cargoes, Cabral, in revenge, captured one of their richest vessels, and set her on fire after transferring her cargo to his own ship.

For this they attacked the factory, and slew fifty of his men. Cabral was not slow in resenting; he captured and burned ten other vessels, after securing their cargoes. He then cannonaded the town, and sailed to Cochin, where he formed an alliance with a chief who was a feudatory of the Zamorin, and then sailed for the Tagus. The king, having obtained from the Pope a bull conferring on him the sovereignty of all the countries visited by his ships in the East, assumed the title of "lord of the navigation, conquest, and commerce of Ethiopia, Arabia, and India," in consequence of which a third expedition, consisting of fifteen vessels—some say twenty—was fitted out under Vasco de Gama. No new discoveries were made by him; but he secured trade with Cochin and Cananore, took and destroyed several ships of Calicut, to avenge the insult offered to Cabral, and returned home with nine ships richly

laden, leaving Vincente Sodre, with five others, to scour the coasts of India. He also, most singularly, left Pacheco with a little party to protect the factory at Cochin, where they were attacked by the Zamorin of Calicut; and though the latter's forces outnumbered the mail-clad Portuguese by fifty to one, they were ignominiously defeated; "and the superiority of the European to the Asiatic soldier—which has ever since been maintained—was now for the first time exhibited, and the foundation was laid for European ascendancy in India."

So early as 1500, says Voltaire, there was no getting even pepper at Calicut but at the expense of human blood.*

In 1505 the King of Portugal sent out Don Francisco de Almeida, with the title of Viceroy of India, though he did not possess a foot of land there. He had with him twenty-two ships and 1,500 men, with whom he built a fort at Cananore; but he found a new opponent in the Venetians, who had hitherto monopolised the Indian trade by the way of Egypt, where they enjoyed a paramount influence, and prevailed on the Sultan to send a fleet down the Red Sea, to drive all interlopers from the shores of India, while the maritime King of Gujerat, equally alarmed by the growing power of the Portuguese, sent his ships to co-operate with those of Egypt, and together they defeated a portion of the Portuguese fleet in the harbour of Choul. The son of Don Francisco was killed in this battle, and to revenge his death, finding that Dabul, on the Concan coast—one of the greatest marts in those days—had taken part with the enemy, he utterly sacked and ruined it. He then proceeded in search of the combined fleets, and finding them in the harbour of Diu, obtained a victory, and put all he captured to the sword to avenge the fall of his son. This was in 1508.

Prior to this he had been superseded as Viceroy by Alfonso Albuquerque, a man of great spirit and unbounded ambition, who attacked the town of Calicut, before which a fourth of his force perished. He then came to the conclusion that the Portuguese, instead of wasting their strength in desultory attacks, should found a permanent establishment on the coast, where they could have a harbour for their shipping, and a citadel for their retreat and protection. He accordingly fixed on Goa, or the island of Sissoari as the natives call it, which is twelve miles in length, by six broad in the province of Bejapore. He had 1,400 fighting men and nineteen ships. It thus became the metropolis of the Portuguese possessions in the

* "Essays on Universal History."

East, and every effort made from time to time by native princes for its recapture has proved unavailing. Albuquerque now assumed the position of an Indian prince, and received embassies with pomp and ostentation. Proceeding to the distant provinces of the Malay archipelago, he established his authority, and carried his commercial enterprises to Java, Siam, and Sumatra. Turning westward, he next obtained possession of Ormuz, the great emporium of the Gulf of Persia, and within nine years created a great European power in the East. The Venetians, who were as much interested as the Egyptians in opposing the progress of Portugal, proposed to cut the isthmus of Suez at their own expense, and dig a canal to join the Nile at the Red Sea. By this they hoped to command the commerce of India, but difficulties arose, and the grand project proved abortive.

Though his power throughout the Indian waters was irresistible, and his authority supreme along 12,000 miles of coast, on which he had planted thirty factories, many of which were fortified, he did not seem to care much for territorial possession. But his last days were darkened by the ingratitude of his country. Amid his eastern triumphs he was superseded by mean and artful court intrigues, which broke his gallant heart, and he expired as his ship was entering the harbour of Goa. So he found his last home in the great settlement he had given to Portugal, amid the sorrow of the Europeans and natives, by both of whom he was beloved.

During the following century the maritime power of Portugal became more than ever formidable in the Eastern Ocean. She took possession of Ceylon, and in 1517 established at Macao the first European factory ever known in the Celestial Empire. In 1513 she equipped an armament of 400 vessels, having on board 22,000 men, of whom 3,600 were Europeans, and captured Diu, which, though lost for a time, she afterwards regained. One of the most memorable events in the annals of the Portuguese in India was the league formed by the Kings of Ahmednuggur and Bejapore with the Zamorin of Calicut for the siege of Goa, which lasted ten months, and which they were compelled at last to relinquish, after losing 12,000 men. The Portuguese established a factory at the Gola, now called Hooghley, and completely absorbed the provincial trade from the town of Satgong, which for fifteen centuries had been the great commercial emporium of Bengal; around this factory grew a flourishing town, strongly fortified, and adorned with many churches. When the Moguls attacked

it with their armies, they failed to carry it by storm, and had recourse to mining.

In 1683, in revenge for an attack upon their territories by the Mahrattas, the Viceroy of Pedro II. collected at Goa an army of 1,500 Europeans and 10,000 native troops, and having crossed the river, advanced into the interior, and laid siege to Poonah, while a fleet of his vessels swept the Mahratta coast. The troops carried fire and sword into the very temples, and the Inquisition is said to have burned some of the prisoners. The siege of Poonah was pressed with great vigour; and three breaches were nearly practicable, when Sambagi, a Mahratta chief, advanced with 22,000 horse and foot to its relief. The Viceroy being without proper intelligence, was surrounded in his trenches, but was resolved bravely to hew a passage through the enemy.

The distance the Portuguese had to march was thirty miles, at every pace harassed by cavalry; and ere the conclusion of the first day's retreat, they had to abandon their baggage and heavy cannon, with the loss of 1,200 men. Ultimately, the rest reached their boats, and were transported to Cumboreen, an isle which lies between Goa and the mainland. In country craft the Mahrattas followed them, and landed on the isle 3,000 strong; but the Portuguese opened a fire of swivel-guns upon them, cut off their retreat, and killed or captured them all. After this they formed an alliance with Aurungzebe, who sent an army to their assistance, but that force, though it drove out the Mahrattas, greatly injured the Portuguese territory by requisitions and plundering; and on a treacherous attempt of the Mogul admiral to seize Goa, the alliance was dissolved. At the beginning of the seventeenth century, when the greatness of Portugal was at its zenith in India, it was encountered and supplanted by a European rival in the Dutch, who, having thrown off the yoke of Spain, began a career of maritime enterprise with singular ardour and success.

During a portion of our long war with France, Goa was partly garrisoned by British troops; but its population about that time was computed at only 20,000, of whom very few were genuine Portuguese, the remainder being people of colour, many of whom were darker than the darkest natives of India.

In the days of its glory the walls of Goa were six miles in compass, and its bazaar was famous through all the Orient, while its population amounted to 150,000 Christians, and 50,000 Mohammedans and Hindoos; but now, the villas around it are in ruins, its palaces are falling to pieces, its barracks,

hospitals, and custom-house are shapeless fragments, and its streets and squares can only be traced by their foundations. "I went down to the cathedral," says a traveller, "there were ten canons in their stalls, the dean officiated, the sacristans, the vergers, and the choristers were all in their places. As for congregation, there was only one person present, an elderly Portuguese gentleman, besides four African slaves, the bearers of the dean's *mancheela* (litter). 'You may enter seven large churches within a two miles' walk. The black robe, the white robe, the brown, the cowl and the skull cap, the silk cassock, the laced surplice, the glittering vestments—you see them all. Pastors abound, but where are the flocks? I found in one about 150 Indian-born Portuguese, in another a few common black Christians, with crosses and beads. 'Goa the Golden' exists no more! Goa, where the aged De Gama closed his glorious life, is now but a vast grassy tomb; and it seems as if its thin population of priests and friars were spared only to chant requiems for departed souls.'"

The Dutch, though they did not attempt a passage to India by the Cape so early as the English did, were more wary in their mode of setting about it, and on the 2nd of April, 1595, fitted out in the Texel four ships, armed with fifty eight guns, and the crews of which mustered 247, with 1,030 tonnage in all. The commander was Cornelius Hootman. The 10th of January, 1596, saw him off the coast of Madagascar, in distress for want of supplies, and so reduced were his crews by sickness, that only twenty men were fit for duty. He visited Bantam, but his injudicious conduct provoked quarrels. The attempt to trade proved a failure; and narrowly escaping death, with all his people, he reached Holland, with three ships and only eighty-nine men, on the 14th of August, 1598. Though almost a failure, his voyage was hailed with acclamations, and new expeditions were at once projected. Three merchants of Middleburg fitted out two ships under Hootman for the East, but he was again unfortunate, and lost his life by an act of treachery on the part of the King of Acheen, in the island of Sumatra, in 1598. Already the Dutch trade with the East might be considered as established. It had its origin in private enterprise, and had the times been those of peace, it might have been carried on with success, but the Spaniards and Portuguese did not conceal their determination to cling to the monopoly at all hazards, and compel the Dutch to meet force by force. At first, the States-General of Holland were content to grant authority for that purpose, but it

soon became necessary that the various Dutch companies trading to the East would be better and stronger if united against the common foe; hence, on the 20th of March, 1602, a general charter was granted, incorporating the Dutch merchants into one great association, with the exclusive privilege of trading in India.

By 1609 they had pursued it with such success that they made no secret of their intention—as soon as they could establish their supremacy in the Spice Islands, to exclude all other nations from trading to them. Captain William Keeling, in the English ship *Dragon*, found it impossible to resist their arbitrary proceedings, and was compelled to carry on a precarious trade under a species of ignominious sufferance, but succeeded in obtaining a cargo of pepper, cloves, and other spices, and returning to Bantam, placed the English factory there on a more satisfactory footing before setting out on his homeward voyage.

Of the Dutch opposition, the mutual complaints, and the jealousies which culminated in their barbarous massacre of Englishmen in the castle of Amboyna, in 1622, mention has already been made in a previous chapter. Among those who perished there, as being in the pretended plot to seize the Dutch fortress, was Captain Gabriel Towerson, the English agent at Amboyna. While endeavouring to defend these proceedings, Dutch writers dwell particularly on the uniformity of the confessions made by the sufferers, but carefully omit to mention the barbarous tortures, by means of which those confessions were wrung from the dying men, and that those confessions thus extorted were always retracted in the intervals before death.

During 1631 most protracted discussions ensued with the Dutch, who, emboldened by the growing difficulties of the English Court, refused all redress for what was known as "the bloody deed of Amboyna," which excited great indignation in England, and, between 1651-2, petitions against the Dutch were pressed upon the Parliament of that country; but though the vigour and success with which the war against Holland was prosecuted by Cromwell threatened her commerce in Europe with total destruction, in India—where her maritime and commercial ascendancy had long been established—her shipping swept the seas, and, in 1654, would have annihilated the settlement at Surat but for a dread of the Great Mogul. After menacing it, their fleet set sail for the Persian Gulf, where it not only destroyed the lucrative trade which the Company had long carried on with Surat and elsewhere, but captured three of their ships, and drove a fourth on shore, where she was totally lost. This only served

to rouse the energies of the Company anew ; and they petitioned Government to lend them five or six frigates, to be manned and equipped at their own expense, for the purpose of reprisals ; but after a negotiation, during which the Dutch became sensible that they would be compelled to submit to any terms Cromwell might dictate, a peace was ratified at Westminster on the 5th of April, 1654.

The claims of the Company were not forgotten by the Protector in the treaty drawn up on this occasion, in which it was agreed, that "the States-General of the United Provinces shall take care that justice be done upon those who were partakers or accomplices in the massacre of the English at Amboyna, as the Republic of England is pleased to term that fact, provided any of them be living." Four commissioners were to be named, to arrange about the injuries and losses on both sides, to the year 1611, and afterwards, to 18th May, 1652 ; and in case of non-agreement, the Swiss Cantons were to be the arbiters. At the first meeting, held in August, 1654, the English Company stated their damages to be £2,695,999 15s.; but the Dutch East India Company made out theirs to be £2,919,861 3s. 6d. This demand was supported by a series of accounts on which no dependence could be placed ; and the chief findings of the commission were, that the island of Polaroon, one of the Moluccas captured by England in 1617, should be restored to the Dutch, who were to pay the London Company £85,000, and to the heirs of the sufferers at Amboyna £3,615.

In 1634 the Dutch had taken possession of the island of Formosa, in the Chinese seas, where they erected factories, and built Fort Zealand, but they were, in 1662, driven out for a time by a Chinese pirate, named Coshinga, who made himself monarch of the place, and who had originally been a tailor. The Dutch were destroyed in great numbers, and the survivors were sent to Batavia ;* but the ancient Dutch church and factory of those days are still standing.

The mixed Dutch breed of Topasses, which had also Portuguese and Indian blood in them, were named Mardikers in Batavia, a term derived, says Colonel James, from the place called Mardyke, four miles from Dunkirk ; for when the Dutch took Batavia, the leading adventurers came from that quarter.†

After the Dutch made peace with the Portuguese, they spread their conquests in the East. captured Cochin, on the Malabar coast, in 1663 ; com-

pelled some places between Calicut and Cochin to submit to them ; and for the re-capture of Formosa they equipped seventeen sail, which beat the Chinese fleet of eighty junks, and utterly routed Coshinga, after which they possessed themselves of Amoy and other places.*

In 1673, Rickloff van Goen, the Governor-General of Dutch India, made his appearance off the coast (during our war with Holland and alliance with France), at the head of twenty-two sail, with 1,000 troops on board. Bombay was evidently the point menaced ; but he lost time by endeavouring to secure the co-operation of Sevajee on shore ; and when the hour for action came, he lost heart, on seeing the arrangements made for his reception. The President Aungier was then at the head of 400 European troops and 1,500 militia, besides a marine force, and had a little squadron in order of battle in the harbour,† so Van Goen, after simply reconnoitring, bore away to sea.

On the Coromandel coast the Dutch excited similar alarms ; but our French allies not only kept them in check, but made themselves masters of Trincomalee, in Ceylon, and took San Thomé, near Madras, by storm. The latter event gave the Company more alarm than satisfaction ; thus, they were not displeased when, after a brief occupation, the French were dispossessed, and San Thomé was restored to the King of Golconda ; but a subsequent event caused them greater anxiety. Ten of their richly-laden and homeward-bound ships, on the 22nd of August, 1673, fell in with the Dutch fleet, which had been engaged at San Thomé. A running fight ensued off the coast of Masulipatam, which ended in the capture of two of the Indiamen, and the sinking of a third. The other seven, greatly damaged, got into Madras Roads ; while in the Indian archipelago, where the Dutch superiority was still more decided, it was impossible for the Company to traffic with advantage, though fully alive to the importance of carrying their trade further east, and seeking mercantile intercourse with China ; but the strife was ended, in 1674, by the marriage of the Prince of Orange with the Princess Mary Stuart.

By 1693, during the hostilities with the Mogul, the blunders of the Company were turned to good account by the Dutch, and also by the French, both of whom almost monopolised the Indian market. The Dutch thus acquired advantages which were not eventually serious, because of the strict alliance between Great Britain and Holland ; but the case was different with the French, who had

* "Atlas Geograph.," vol. iii, 1712.

† "Military Dict.," 1805.

* "Hist. United Provinces," 1705.

† Orme, &c

not only established factories at Surat and at the mouth of the Ganges, but had acquired that commanding settlement, to which we have so often referred, at Pondicherry, eighty-five miles from Madras. Even when France and Britain were allies, the Company had a jealous fear of the growing power of the former in the East; and when war was declared, one of the first instructions sent to the authorities at Surat was to wrest Pondicherry from the French. But this was more than they were then able to do. However, Tegnapatam, twelve miles south of Pondicherry, was purchased from a native prince, and converted into the important settlement of Fort St. David; and it has been considered remarkable that the French, with whom we were then at war, should have permitted the Company quietly to fortify themselves in their immediate vicinity, while the Dutch, our allies, manifested the utmost jealousy, and declined to recognise the right, which the Company claimed in virtue of their purchase, to levy harbour-dues and customs.

How Clive opposed and defeated their naval and military armaments, sent to Bengal in 1759, we have already told; and the Dutch remained quiet in India till, on the commencement of our hostilities with them in 1781, they concluded a defensive treaty with Hyder Ali, when, in return for the cession of Nagpore, they undertook to assist him in maintaining his ground in Tanjore. But the most crushing operations ever undertaken against them in the East were those in the time of Lord Minto, when, in 1810, the British colours waved supreme over Java and their settlements in the Moluccas.

The chief settlement of the Danes is at Tran-

quebar, a seaport town in the Tanjore district of the Carnatic, at the mouth of the Cauvery river. This they acquired by purchase from the King of Tanjore, when it was a village, in 1616. They erected a fort and mission-house; and the genial, quiet, and correct bearing maintained by them soon attracted population and commerce. The latter is chiefly carried on with the mother country, the Isle of France, Ceylon, and Bengal. According to agreement, the Danes still continue to pay a ground-rent of 2,000 pagodas per annum. The fort, which is called Danebourg, is finely kept, and all the buildings being white, the settlement can be seen at a great distance from the seaward. It was captured by the British in 1787, but was restored to Denmark at the peace.

The possessions held in Hindostan by other European nations are as follow:—

French territory	530 sq miles ;	178,000 pop.
Danish „	93 „	35,000 „
Portuguese „ at Goa, Diu, and Damao	1,200 „	350,000 „
Total	1,823	563,000

Thus, we see that while Denmark, France, and Holland achieved in early times a footing in India, Scotland, which made a vigorous effort to do so, failed, partly through the jealousy of the English East India Company, but principally through the ignorance of the projectors and the incompleteness of their preparations; though the subsequent union of the kingdoms rendered that failure of no consequence, as there was no part of the empire where Scottish enterprise, civil or military, found a more ample field than British India.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

SECOND BURMESE WAR.—OPERATIONS AT RANGOON.—CAPTURE OF MARTABAN AND BASSEIN, PROME AND PEGU.—ANNEXATION OF THE LATTER.

The Government of Ava had for several years been on unfriendly terms with that of India; and early in 1852, the ignorance, arrogance, and stupidity of the Burmese led once more to an appeal to arms for the settlement of differences that might have been more quietly adjusted. Under our treaty with Burmah, British subjects trading to its ports were entitled to the most perfect

protection and security; but a new Governor, who had taken up his residence at Rangoon, was inspired by a keen hatred of the British, and a resolution to avenge the disasters of the last war. His conduct, at first, was merely insulting, and was borne somewhat meekly by our traders, who were loth to incur the trouble of another Burmese

* Fullarton's "Gazetteer of the World," vol. vii.

war; but this tame endurance of affronts provoked their repetition and aggravation until they became intolerable.

Commodore Lambert, of H.M.S. *Fox*, forty-two guns, was therefore ordered to proceed with a squadron to Rangoon, and demand reparation, but in doing so to use the utmost caution. He was first to address a letter to the Governor of Rangoon, briefly setting forth the circumstances of the case. If compensation was granted, the matter was to go no further; but as it seemed rather improbable that any amicable settlement would be come to, he was furnished with a letter to the King of Ava, which was to be forwarded only in the event of a refusal by the Governor of Rangoon, recommending the removal of that officer as essential to the continuance of peace. But the commodore was received with much hauteur, and acts of violence still continued. Finding that the charges made by our people against the governor fell far short of the actual truth, Commodore Lambert, believing it futile to hope for any arrangement with such an official, at once dispatched the letter to the King of Ava, together with one from himself to the prime minister. These documents he transmitted through the Governor of Rangoon, whom he addressed briefly thus:—

"I shall expect that every dispatch will be used for forwarding the same; and I hold you responsible for an answer being delivered in these waters within five weeks from to-day."

The Marquis of Dalhousie was of opinion that Commodore Lambert had acted well and wisely in appealing to the king at once, but again cautioned him not to resort to hostilities till every other method had failed. On the 1st of January, 1852, the Court of Ava returned an answer which gave hopes of a peaceful adjustment, as it announced that the obnoxious governor had been displaced, and that his successor would make all necessary reparation. Encouraged by this appearance of friendship, the commodore sought to open a communication with the new governor, and sent Commodore Fishbourne, of H.M.S. *Hermes*, a six-gun steamer, Captain Latter, the chief interpreter, and some other officers, ashore to deliver a letter; but their reception was insulting in the extreme; and after being subjected to very ignominious treatment, they were obliged to return with it undelivered, and without seeing the governor, who, they were told, was asleep,* and not to be disturbed, whereas he was watching them through a Venetian blind, and laughing at

* Lieut. Laurie's "Second Burmese War."

the mortifications to which they were subjected. This treatment was properly at once resented by the establishment of a blockade, as the *missive*, according to Marshman, had been intrusted to one of Cromwell's ambassadors, "a frigate which spoke all languages, and never took a refusal." Operations were begun by the *Hermes* capturing a ship of the King of Ava, while the squadron set sail for the mouth of the river. When the *Hermes* was seen with her prize, known as the *Yellow Ship*, in tow, the Burmese opened a fire upon her from a stockade. The *Hermes* returned it most liberally with shot and shell, together with the *Fox*, and the enemy's works were demolished in a few minutes.

Prior to this, all British residents in Rangoon were requested to take shelter on board the flagship, and their embarkation is thus described in a paper of the time:—"The *Proserpine* steamer ran close into the main wharf (of Rangoon), and eight or ten of the boats from the frigate and steamers came to the shore to receive and protect the fugitives. Meanwhile, the streets were filled with armed Burmese, and Burmese officers were moving to and fro on horseback, threatening all who gave assistance to the foreigners, in consequence of which not a coolie could be procured. All classes of foreigners—Moguls, Mussulmans, Armenians, Portuguese, and English—were seen crowding down to the river with boxes and bundles, and whatever they could carry; but they were generally obliged to abandon all they possessed. Mr. Kincaid, the American missionary, left his library of more than 1,000 volumes, the collection of twenty years, behind him to be destroyed, too happy, however, to find his wife and children safe under the British flag."*

On the 8th of January the *Proserpine* left for Moulmein, with about 400 fugitives and their families, whose number is not stated.†

At this time Lord Dalhousie was in the North-Western Provinces, and apprehending that his Government was fast drifting into another war, he hastened down to prevent it; and it was not until his third application for redress had been treated with contempt that he resolved to appeal to arms by land and sea.

"The Government of India," he wrote in his minute, "cannot, consistently with its own safety, appear for one day in an attitude of inferiority, or hope to maintain peace and submission among the numberless princes and people embraced within the vast circuit of the empire, if for one day it give countenance to a doubt of the absolute superiority

* *Friend of India.*

† *Dengal Hukaru.*

of its arms, and of its continued resolution to maintain it."

The Commander-in-chief being in Scinde, Lord Dalhousie was thus obliged to be his own war minister; and the singular genius he displayed for military organisation astonished all India, but the task he had in hand was one of no ordinary difficulty. It was the 10th of February before the declaration of war was issued, or the preparations for the campaign were made, and it was of the most vital importance that Rangoon should be occupied before the rains came on in May.

The British forces now detailed for service consisted of two separate armaments from Calcutta and Madras. The former, under the command of General Godwin, who, as lieutenant-colonel of a regiment, had served in the former Burmese war, and to whom the whole expedition was now entrusted, sailed from the Hooghley on the 28th of March, and on the 2nd of April was off that mouth of the Irawaddi on which the town of Rangoon is situated.

The troops were on board six steamers. Among them were the 18th Royal Irish, 35th Royal Sussex, 51st Light Infantry, 80th, or Staffordshire, with some native infantry, Madras Artillery, and Sappers and Miners, making a total of 4,388 men to invade Burmah. In all, there were nineteen vessels, carrying 159 guns, manned by 2,200 seamen and marines. Admiral Austin led the naval portion of the expedition. Both the leaders were considerably advanced in life, were inactive in their habits, and naturally enfeebled by years and service. "This circumstance excited much painful comment, to the effect, that notwithstanding all the nation had suffered from partisanship and routine in the selection of commanders, the system remained the same, as if incurable by any amount of calamity or experience." *

Admiral Austin's flag was on board H.M.S. *Rattler*, six-gun steamer. The Madras division had not as yet arrived; but, as delay was deemed inexpedient, it was resolved forthwith to attack Martaban, on the south-east coast, near the mouth of the Salween, opposite to Moulmein. It was considered by the Burmese of great importance. "And there can be no doubt that it is so," says Lieutenant Laurie; "in a military point of view it is capable of making a very formidable defence. On the river appears the usual array of houses; then, as you recede, trees extending to a hill, at the top of which is a pagoda. Then other hills stretching further away, adding dignity and grandeur to the landscape." †

* Nolan.

† "Second Burmese War."

The attack was made on the 5th of April at daybreak. The admiral, notwithstanding the many shoals and currents which obstructed his progress, moved up with five steamers, and placed the *Rattler* within 200 yards of the city wall. Under cover of a heavy cannonade, the troops landed, and a storming party was then detailed, under Colonel Reigold, of the Royal Irish, who attacked the chief position under a fire of cannon and musketry, and in a few seconds Martaban was ours, with a loss scarcely worth mentioning.

On the 8th there came from Moulmein the right wings of the 18th and 80th Regiments, with some Bengal Artillery and Madras Sappers. Loud cheers from the squadron greeted the two steamers, and with the band playing "St. Patrick's Day," the right wing of the Royal Irish steamed into position beyond the vessel containing the left, as the admiral moved up the river, and came to anchor close off Rangoon. On the 11th of April, the fire which the enemy had opened from both banks was silenced by the guns of the steam-frigates, which were turned to Rangoon on the right and Dalla on the left, when both were utterly destroyed. The large stockade south-west of the stupendous Shwedagon pagoda—a gilded temple, devoted to the worship of Gautama—was set in flames by one well-directed shell, which caused the magazine to explode, "and then all the work became filled with black smoke and vivid flame—up, up to the bright skies ascending, till the scene became one of extreme beauty and awful grandeur. At this crisis," adds Mr. Laurie, "an occasional gun was heard from the shore. Two or three pieces were observable in the burning stockade; but as no Burmese were visible, some conjectured it to be the flames firing them off without orders."

On the 12th the troops, after landing, began to advance. They had not proceeded far when, on reaching some rising ground to their right, guns opened upon them, and soon after skirmishers showed themselves in the jungle. This was so entirely a new mode of fighting with the Burmese—no instance having occurred during Sir Archibald Campbell's campaign, or their making flank attacks, or leaving the shelter of their stockade—that the new tactics excited some surprise. Though they increased the number of our casualties, they proved unavailing, as the Burmese were driven under cover of their wooden defences, from whence they kept up a fire of musketry so steady and effective, that they were not stormed without a severe loss, and such a complete exhaustion of the storming party, that though the hour was only eleven a.m., the general resolved to halt where he

was, after concentrating his slender force in the strongest position he could find.*

Because the heavy guns were not forwarded, the troops were unable to move until the morning of the 14th. Old Rangoon having been destroyed by fire in 1850, a new city had been formed, about a mile and a half from the river. "It is nearly square," says the general's despatch, "with a bund or mud wall, about sixteen feet high and eight thick; a ditch runs along each side of the square, and on the north side, where the pagoda stands, it has been very cleverly worked into the defences, to which it forms a sort of citadel. The distance from the pagoda to the south entrance of the town is about three-quarters of a mile, and it—the town—is something more than that in breadth from east to west. The old road, from the river to the pagoda, comes up to the south gate, running through the new town, and it was by this road the Burmese had settled that we should attack it, and where they had made every preparation to receive us, having armed the defences with nearly 100 pieces of cannon and other missiles, and with a garrison of at least 10,000 men."

To have made an assault at the point where the foe expected it, would have cost Godwin half his force, at least; he resolved, therefore, to force a passage into the great pagoda, the key of the whole position, by adopting a route which entirely turned all the defences of it. Marching to the north-east through a thick jungle, he found the stockaded town, and got to the east side of the pagoda, which was 294 feet in height from its platform, and the capture of which was his main object. A battery of heavy guns was immediately erected, and opened with so much effect, that the assault, which was to have been made at noon, took place an hour sooner.

The storming party was formed by a wing of the 80th Regiment, under Major Lockhart, two companies of the Royal Irish, under Lieutenant Hewitt; two of the 40th Bengal Native Infantry, under Lieutenant White; the whole commanded by Colonel Coote, of the 18th, and Captain Latter leading. Under a galling fire from the lower walls and gun-platform, or triple terraces of the pagoda, our troops rushed to the assault with all the resolution of British infantry. Lieutenant Doran fell, pierced by four balls; Colonel Coote also fell wounded; but the troops swept onward to the upper terrace; a deafening cheer rent the air; the Burmese fled in all directions, with all the speed of which their great gilded hats and grotesque and flowing habiliments were permit; and once again

the great pagoda of Gautama was ours, and the capture of the town was a complete success.

A red jacket which the Burmese had adopted caused some confusion to our troops, who at times mistook them for our own skirmishers. Their arms were all old British flint muskets, which had been sold as "condemned," with a *dah*, or sharp square-pointed sword with a long wooden hilt, and with other weapons, such as British bayonets stuck on spear shafts. Their balls were iron as well as lead, and, not being cast or moulded, varied in size.

The next capture was Bassein, situated about sixty miles above the mouth of the river so named, which forms the western branch of the Irawaddi; it was deemed by Sir Archibald Campbell as the key of the Burmese empire. In the afternoon of the 19th of May the steamers were ranged opposite the fortifications of Bassein, having accomplished a voyage of sixty miles without a pilot up an unknown river, lined with stockades, without an accident, or a shot having been fired.*

In the attack, the conduct of H.M. 51st Foot is described as having been equally magnificent and cool. After a fifty minutes' conflict with 5,000 of the King of Ava's picked soldiers and 2,000 men of Bassein, the place was ours, with eighty-one guns and jingals. We had six officers wounded, but the enemy left 800 dead behind them. Leaving a small garrison in Bassein, the general returned, with the rest of the troops, to Rangoon.

The Burmese, although they had now lost three of their most important towns, and sustained defeat in every encounter, were so far from showing the least aspect of submission, that on the 26th of May they made a bold attempt to re-take Martaban, against which its late governor, Moun-Bwosh, who had to conquer or lose his head, advanced with 600 men, while 1,000 remained near a small white pagoda, 2,000 formed a reserve at the distance of half a mile, and a fourth force kept up a fire at the distance of 150 yards. Our slender garrison, under Major Hall, by signal gallantry held their ground till reinforced by two companies of H.M. 51st Light Infantry and 26th Bengal Native Infantry.†

In this repulse such confidence and daring were shown by the Burmese, that it was evident that most decisive measures would be necessary to humble them. It was therefore proposed to menace the capital of Burmah—the city of Ava, or Umerapoora—by advancing up the main branch of the Irawaddi, and making an attempt upon Prome. With this view, Commander Tarleton, of H.M.S. *Fox*, had been dispatched, early in July, with five

* Gen. Godwin's Despatch.

* *Friend of India.*

† *Moulmein Times.*

steamers, to examine its defences and position ; and while on this service he did much more than was expected, as he not only forced his way up the river, in spite of every obstruction, but by the selection of a navigable channel, different from the one by which the Burmese, to the number of 10,000, awaited him, he reached Prome on the 9th of the same month, and found it ungarrisoned. He was unable, however, to do more than to capture a few guns, spike the rest, destroy the stores, and get once more under weigh.

As a more determined resistance was now anticipated on the part of the Burmese, the Marquis of Dalhousie came in person to Rangoon, which he reached on the 7th of July. During his visit, which lasted ten days, he arranged to forward extensive reinforcements, and to raise a force that should bear the title of the Army of Ava, as it would be 20,000 strong ; but so much time elapsed ere these succours came, that it was not until the 9th of October that our troops were before Prome, where the Burmese made little or no resistance. When our advanced guard reached the pagoda there, it was found to be abandoned, as well as the heights beyond it, leaving in our possession an empty town, "overgrown with thick and rank vegetation, and abounding in swamps." *

The general was puzzled by the facility with which this place, on which he had advanced with equal caution and hesitation, fell into his hands, as he had been for some time aware that 18,000 Burmese, in strong stockades, were well posted about ten miles to the eastward of it.

Early in June a force had been dispatched to Pegu, situated on the river of that name, some fifty miles above its junction with the Rangoon. It consisted of one company of H.M. 80th Foot, the Rifle Company of the 67th Bengal Native Infantry, and a detachment of Madras Sappers and Miners, under Lieutenant Macintosh, Lieutenant Mayne as field-engineer, with Major Cotton, of the 67th, in command of the whole. He was accompanied by a small naval brigade, under Commander Tarleton. All were embarked on board the steamer *Phlegethon*, which had in tow the boats of the squadron. Ere nightfall, Major Cotton was joined by a body of Peguese, who were distinguished by wearing small white flags in their caps.

On the morning of the 3rd the whole expedition was before Pegu, which is an ancient city, fortified, and of a quadrilateral form, measuring a mile and a half on each of its faces. A brick rampart, thirty-five feet thick, with towers at every 300 yards, forms its defence ; but all these were in

ruins, and so were the streets, as the destruction of the city, which once had 150,000 inhabitants, was achieved in 1757 by Alompra, the Burman conqueror of Pegu.

Our Peguese allies were ordered by Major Cotton, in case of accidents, to keep at a distance, until required, during our operations. However, as heavy firing between them and the Burmese was soon heard on the right bank of the river, the troops instantly landed ; but only a few of the enemy could be seen, and these were retreating as fast as they could ; so the boats, with the naval force under Commander Tarleton, were sent further up the river, to cut off all who might attempt to cross ; and during this service some of our boats were captured and re-taken.

As the heat was overpowering, Major Cotton prudently postponed till three o'clock an attack on the garrison in the great pagoda. Composed of brick and mortar, this edifice is conical in form, and at the base measures 162 feet each way. It is 360 feet in height, and is crowned by a gilt umbrella fifty-six feet in circumference. It was founded more than 2,000 years ago, and around it are innumerable images of Gautama.

About one p.m. the enemy, emboldened by Cotton's apparent inactivity, were seen coming down the bank of the river, about 1,400 strong, led by thirty chiefs on ponies, some of whom carried gilt umbrellas and sung a vaunting song. The bugles sounded ; the Rifle Company stood to arms, on which the Burmese instantly fled, even before the longest shots could reach them ; so the whole place fell into our possession, and the next day was occupied in destroying the granaries, and carrying off nine pieces of cannon.

In Pegu, 400 men were placed under Major Hill, whose slender force was unable to prevent the Burmese, who soon after came on in strength, from possessing themselves of the ruinous town, and making a daring attack upon the pagoda, which they completely invested on every side, shutting up his detachment within it. Their first attack he repulsed with vigour ; but on a second of a formidable character being made, Major Hill, who was scarcely able to hold the position, made an urgent application for instant succour. On this, General Godwin set out for Pegu, with 1,350 men. "During his passage up the river," says Beveridge, "he paid the penalty of his former negligence by the state of fearful suspense in which he was kept, while scarcely venturing to hope that his small garrison had been able to hold out against their numerous and persevering foes. His intense anxiety was not relieved till he obtained a distant view of the pagoda,

* Gen. Godwin's Despatch.

and ascertained by his telescope that a single individual observed upon it was a Madras Lascar."

He highly complimented Major Hill and his brave little band in orders for their defence of the pagoda, "for so many anxious days and nights, cut off as they were from the succour of their comrades by the works of the enemy in the river, as well as by distant communication with the headquarters of the army."

The King of Ava having refused to hold any communication with the Marquis of Dalhousie, the latter had only to consider the course to be pursued. The inhabitants of Pegu were anxious to be released from the iron yoke of their Burmese conquerors, and entreated to be taken under British protection; thus, he determined at once to accede to their prayer, and annex the province, once one of the most ancient kingdoms of Asia. The breadth of it, towards its northern frontier, is about 180 miles, and its length, from north to south, about 230; and on the 20th of December, 1852, Lord Dalhousie issued the following proclamation:—"The Court of Ava having refused to make amends for the injuries and insults which British subjects had suffered at the hands of its servants, the Governor-General of India in Council resolved to exact reparation by force of arms. The forts and cities on the coast were forthwith attacked and captured; the Burmese forces have been dispersed wherever they have been met, and the province of Pegu is now in the occupation of British troops. The just and moderate demands of the Government of India have been rejected by the king; the ample opportunity that has been afforded him for repairing the injury that was done, has been disregarded; and the timely submission, which could alone have been effectual to prevent the dismemberment of his kingdom, has been withheld. Wherefore, in compensation for the past, and for better security in the future, the Governor-General in Council has resolved, and hereby proclaims, that the province of Pegu is now, and shall be henceforth, a portion of the British territories in the East. Such Burmese troops as may yet remain within the province shall be driven out; civil government shall be immediately established, and officers shall be appointed to administer the affairs of the several districts. The Governor-General in Council hereby calls upon the inhabitants of Pegu to commit themselves to the authority, and to confide securely in the protection, of the British Government, whose power they have seen to be irresistible, and whose rule is marked by justice and munificence. The Governor-General in Council having exacted the reparation he deems sufficient, desires no further conquest in

Burmah, and is willing to consent that hostilities should cease. But if the King of Ava shall fail to renew his former relations of friendship with the British Government, and if he shall recklessly dispute its quiet possession of the province it has now declared to be its own, the Governor-General in Council will again put forth the power he holds, and will visit with full retribution, aggressions which, if they be persisted in, must of necessity lead to the total subversion of the Burman state, and to the ruin and exile of the king and his race."

In his minute on this subject, Lord Dalhousie said:—"In the earliest stage of the present dispute I avowed my opinion that conquest in Burmah would be a calamity, second only to the calamity of war; but I have been drawn, most reluctantly, to the conclusion that no measure will adequately meet the object which, in my judgment, it is absolutely necessary to secure—the establishment of our security now, and its maintenance hereafter—except the seizure and occupation of a portion of the territories of the Burman kingdom." In this opinion the Court of Directors and the Ministry fully concurred; and then, owing to the strict naval blockade of the mouths of the Irawaddi, trade with the interior was entirely ended, and provisions speedily rose to famine prices in the Burmese capital.

The old monarch, to whose obstinacy and pride the war was generally attributed, or the protraction thereof, became very unpopular, and was dethroned by his brother; but not without a struggle. Soon after overtures for peace were made, and on the 5th of April, 1853, British and Burmese commissioners met at Prome to arrange the terms. The conference lasted only two hours, as the officials of the enemy seemed anxious for a state of amity, and at once offered to sign a treaty in accordance with the proclamation, annexing Pegu, provided the frontier was not fixed at Meeaday—as we, who had captured that place, proposed—but lower down the river, in the vicinity of Prome. This point was conceded; and then they receded from their previous declarations, and, on the 9th of May, had the effrontery to announce that no treaty would be consented to which involved the cession of territory.

On this they were summarily dismissed, and it seemed as if the sword must be drawn again; but eventually it appeared that the objection was not so much to the cession of Pegu as to the humiliation of doing it by a formal treaty; and the king, who was well aware of the impending ruin in case the war was renewed, managed to avert it by



THE "BUND" OR DAM OF THE LAKE OF BARWA, JHANSI.

addressing a letter to the Marquis of Dalhousie, in which he granted all that was required of him. This equivalent was accepted, and on the 30th of June peace was proclaimed.

Thus ended a war which, though barren of glory or brilliance, added to our Eastern empire a province containing 40,000 square miles, with a population of fully 3,000,000 souls. Such had never

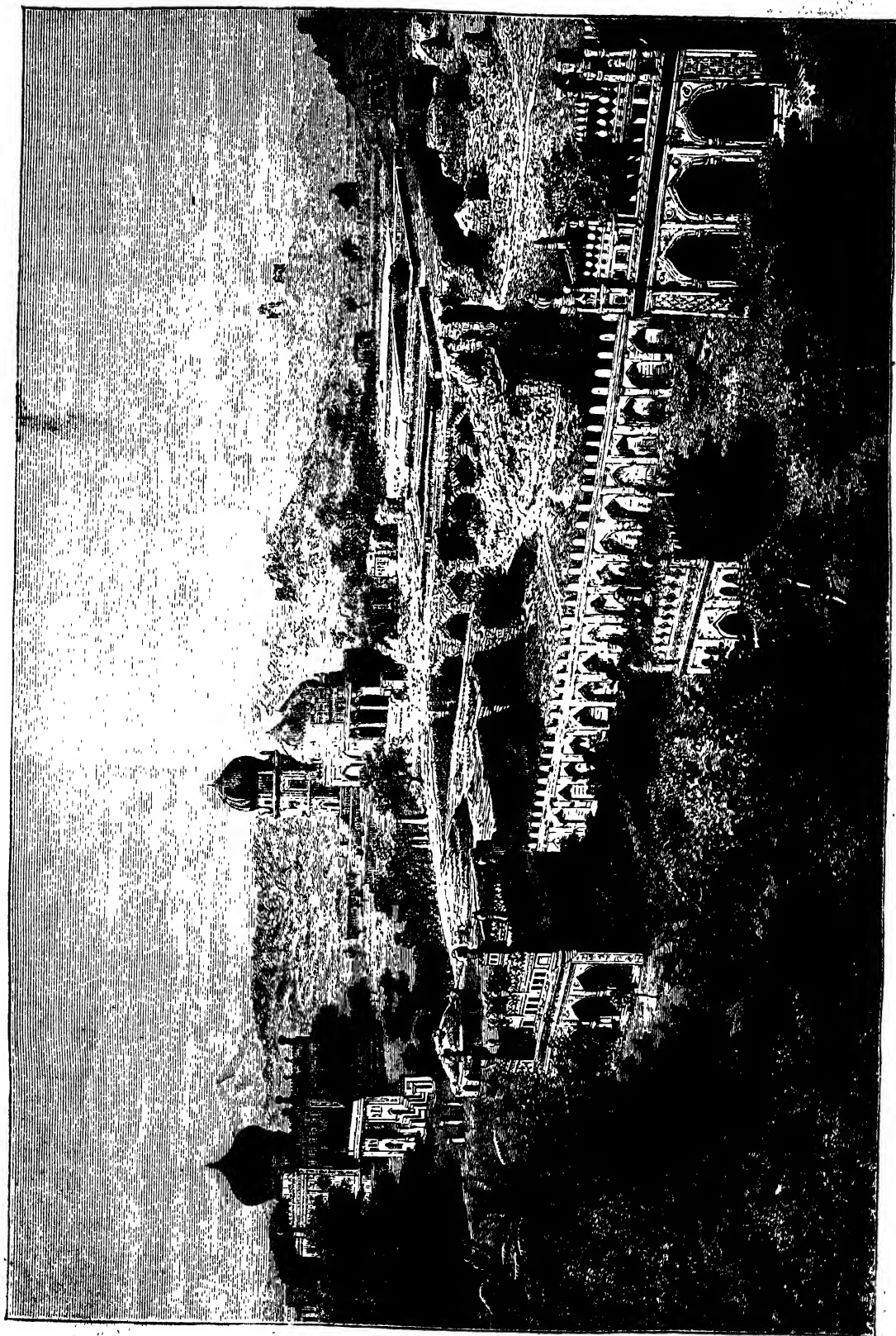
before been gained in so short a period by annexation. The export and import traffic has since increased from a few lacs to nine crores of rupees; the people are contented and happy, and would consider a change of masters the greatest of calamities. The first Burmese war entailed an expenditure of thirteen crores; the second cost little more than one crore.

CHAPTER XXXV.

THE ANNEXATIONS OF SATTARA, NAGPORE, AND JHANSI—THE AFFAIRS OF HYDERABAD (DECCAN).

AFFAIRS in Burmah had once more raised in the ascendant the policy of annexation which had been so long discountenanced by the home authorities, on the plea that our Eastern empire was already unwieldy enough; though many in India at that time

thought that, having once moved inland, it would be difficult to stop short of the Sea of China. "No fear of our empire," wrote one bold son of progress, "falling to pieces from its own size, were it extended from the Caspian to the wall of



THE ROYAL NECROPOLIS AT GOLCONDA, HYDERABAD (DECCAN).

China, so long as the country is rich enough to meet its own charges, and is possessed of a defensible frontier." *

The annexation of the Punjaub and of Pegu—like those made during the preceding fifty years, to the territories of British India, from the principalities of Mysore, Holkar, Scindia, Nagpore, and the Peishwa—followed the success of our troops in war, and was the natural result of unprovoked hostilities and dangerous and unsuccessful combinations against us; but the absorption of Sattara, Nagpore, and Jhansi, which we are about to narrate, proceeded from another cause: the failure of heirs, and the assumed—it may be, usurped—prerogative of our being the paramount power in India. The "annexation policy" of the Marquis of Dalhousie occasioned some animadversions at the time; but in tracing this policy to its origin, it is to be observed that, seven years before his arrival, the Governor-General and Council, in 1841, placed on record their unanimous opinion that our line of policy was "to persevere in one clear and direct course of abandoning no just or honourable accession of territory or revenue, while all existing claims of right are scrupulously respected."†

In these views of his predecessors, Lord Dalhousie, after assuming office, recorded his entire concurrence; but added, that we were not bound "to put aside or neglect such rightful opportunities of acquiring territory or revenue as may from time to time present themselves, by the failure of all heirs of every description whatever, or from the failure of heirs natural; but whenever a shadow of doubt can be shown, the claim should be at once abandoned."

The first case of importance to be acted on, or in which the principle of annexation was fully avowed and acted on, was that of Sattara, a district and town now in the presidency of Bombay, which forms a part of the table-land of the Deccan, and lies between the parallels of 15° 40', and 18° 30', with a coast line of about twenty miles north of Goa.

The rajahs of this district, after being recognised as the nominal heads of the Mahratta confederacy, had gradually been deprived of all power by the Peishwas or prime ministers, and at last reduced somewhat to the position of state prisoners. When the power and rule of the Peishwa was extinguished, in 1818, by the Marquis of Hastings, the principality of Sattara was created in favour of a descendant of Sevajee, and endowed with a revenue of fifteen lacs yearly. Pertaub Sing, for alleged violations of the treaty, was deposed in 1839,

and succeeded by his brother, who died in 1848, leaving no issue. He had repeatedly applied to the Resident for permission to adopt an heir, but had been informed it was not in his power to grant it; but two hours before the death of the prince, a boy, who, though distantly related, was unknown to him, was brought in by hap-hazard; the ceremony of adoption, with the usual rites, was performed, and the last sound in the ears of the dying rajah was the salute of cannon in honour of it. "This adoption having been made in a regular form, was recognised as binding, so far as to give the adopted son all the rights which his adoptive father could convey to him; but it was denied that the succession to the raj was one of those rights. Sattara, it was said, was a British dependency, and adoption could have no validity until it was sanctioned by the paramount power."

Sir George Clerk, K.C.B., the Governor of Bombay, while admitting that the consent of that power was required by custom, maintained that the Government could not, without much injustice, object to it. His successor, Viscount Falkland, concurred with the other members of the Government in taking quite an opposite view of the case; while Mr. Willoughby, a most able member of Council, alleged that the confirmation of the paramount power was essential to the validity of adoption in India; and with this opinion Lord Dalhousie, when the question was submitted to him, entirely concurred. The adopted son of the dead rajah was thus put aside, and Sattara was annexed to the British dominions on the principle thus given in a letter from the home authorities, dated 24th of January, 1849:—"That by the general law and custom of India, a dependent principality, like that of Sattara, cannot pass to an adopted heir without the consent of the paramount power; that we are under no pledge, direct or constructive, to give such consent; and that the general interests committed to our charge are best consulted by withholding it."

It has been questioned whether the British Government had the legal right it asserted, to seize upon and appropriate, or annex Sattara as a lapsed principality; and also whether, under all the circumstances, it was expedient to declare this right. Be all that as it may, Sattara was annexed, and ceased to exist as a separate state. "It is necessary, however, to remember," says a historian, on this point, "that the questions of right and expediency are perfectly distinct, and that cases might occur where the one was answered in the affirmative, and the other, without any inconsistency, in the negative."

* Laurie's "Burmese War," p. 201.

† Marshman's "India."

As an illustration of this we may cite the very next case that occurred—that of the Rajah of Kerowly, a small Rajpoot state, about eighty miles from Agra, in a south-westerly direction. He died without heirs; yet, though a mere youth, he had an adopted son, without obtaining, therefore, the permission of the British Government. Hence the Marquis of Dalhousie, who was bent on carrying out his policy of annexation, would at once have absorbed this state as he had done Sattara; but, in this instance, the Directors took a more equitable course, and on the 26th of January, 1853—six months after the young rajah's death—they announced their decision, that the succession of the adopted son should be sustained, on the principle that there was a marked difference between this case and that of Sattara. The latter had been a creation of the British Government, and a gift to its late rulers, “whilst Kerowly was one of the oldest of the Rajpoot states, which has been under the rule of its native princes from a period long anterior to the British power in India. It stands to us only in the relation of a protected ally; and perhaps there is no part of India where it is less desirable—except on the strongest grounds—to substitute our government for that of the native rulers.”

Five years after the case of Sattara, a similar one occurred at Nagpore, when Ragojee Bhonsla, the Rajah of Berar, or, as he was more frequently named from his capital, the Rajah of Nagpore, died on the 11th of December, 1853. We have elsewhere shown how that kingdom was forfeited by the Marquis of Hastings. The rajah, who was childless, resisted the earnest advice of the Resident to adopt a son; thus, when he died at the date given, he was without any heir or successor, lineal, collateral, or adopted, so that the question of lapsing occurred here in its most simple form, and the marquis placed on record an elaborate minute on the subject.

“We have not now,” he wrote, “to decide any question which turns on the right of a paramount power to refuse confirmation to an adoption by an inferior. The rajah has died, and deliberately abstained from adopting an heir. The state of Nagpore, conferred on the rajah and his heirs in 1818 by the British Government, has reverted to it on the death of the rajah without an heir. The Government is wholly unfettered to decide as it may think fit.” The Court of Directors signified their entire concurrence in the annexation, stating, as the ground of their doing so, that Nagpore was a kingdom granted after conquest by British favour to the late rajah on hereditary tenure. “He had left no heir of his body; there was no male heir who,

by family or hereditary right, could claim to succeed him; he had adopted no son; there was not in existence any person descended in the male line from the founder of the dynasty; and they had no doubt of their right to resume the grant.”*

As if all this were not sufficient, there was a member of the Council extravagant enough to defend the policy of general annexation, on the principle that it had been decreed by heaven. “So far as we can foresee the ultimate destiny of this great empire,” said Mr. Dorrin, the member in question, “its entire possession must infallibly be consolidated in the hands of Great Britain. Thoroughly believing in this dispensation of Providence, I cannot coincide in any view which shall have for its object the maintenance of native rule against the progress of events, which throws undisputed power into our possession.”

The fourth case which came under consideration was that of Jhansi, the little Bundela state in the north-west of Bundelcund, comprising about 2,600 square acres, with a population of 25,000 souls. By its chief, Sheo Rao Bhao, it was held as a tributary of the Peishwa, on the extinction of whose power, Lord Hastings granted Jhansi to the former, with the title of Soubahdar, as a reward for his fidelity, and declared the fief to be hereditary in his family, with a succession, “confirmed in perpetuity” to his grandson, Rao Ram Chund. The latter, who succeeded under this treaty in 1832, was permitted to change the title of Soubahdar to that of Rajah, and as such held the Government till 1835, when he died without issue. A competition of the succession now ensued, and the decision of our Government was in favour of Rao Ragonath, a son of Sheo Rao Bhao, and consequently uncle of the late rajah; but, as he was a leper, and thus unable to rule, our Resident in Bundelcund had to assume the administration till the death of Rao Ragonath in 1838. He, too, left no issue; and after another competition, his brother, Baha Gunghadur Rao, then the sole male descendant of Sheo Rao Bhao, was preferred. For a time after this, our minister still managed the government, and the revenue, which previous misrule had impaired, began to flourish. In 1843 the native administration was restored, and Baha Gunghadur Rao ruled till his death, on the 21st of November, 1853, when once more the question of succession was resumed. The whole male line of Sheo Rao Bhao was extinct; but Gunghadur Rao had striven to secure a nominal succession to his family by the adoption of a distant relation on the day before his death; and his widow, a woman of talent and resolute spirit, demanded

* Marshman.

the succession of the boy; but Colonel Low, a member of Council, recorded in his minute that "the native rulers of Jhansi were never sovereigns; they were only subjects of a sovereign, first of the Peishwa, and latterly of the Company, and the Government of India has now a full right to annex the lands of Jhansi to the British dominions."

To this the widow, who would have been entitled to the regency during the adopted son's minority, urged, with some plausibility, that the original Persian terms, interpreted "heirs and successors," meant, not merely heirs of the body, or otherwise, but "successors in general," which implied, that any one whom he, Gunghadur Rao, "adopted as his son, to perform those funeral rites over his body necessary to ensure beatitude in the future world, would be acknowledged by the British Government as his successor, and one through whom the name and interests of the family might be preserved."

But this proved without avail, as Lord Dalhousie stated that the last rajah having left no heir of his body, and there being no male heir of any rajah, or chief, who had ruled the principality for half a century, the right of the British Government to decline acknowledging the present adoption was unquestionable. The Court of Directors took the same view of the case, and Jhansi was incorporated in our territories; but when the dark day of the Mutiny came, the disappointed raneë took a fearful revenge by the murder of the wretched European men, women, and children, who, by her orders, were butchered in cold blood.

It was during the administration of the Marquis of Dalhousie, and with his full concurrence, that the dignity and privileges of the Nabob of the Carnatic were suppressed by the Madras Government. It may be remembered that in 1801, when that province was annexed to the Company's territories by Lord Wellesley, with a yearly sum for the support of the nabob and his household, he was excluded from allusion to heirs and successors. He enjoyed a titular dignity, received royal salutes, and was placed above the law, but distinctly as a mediatised prince with a personal settlement. Two nabobs of the Carnatic had successively left heirs at their deaths, respectively in 1819 and 1825; and the Government had permitted these heirs to succeed to the title, with all its accompanying privileges.

The last nabob died, without issue, in 1853, on which his uncle, Azim Jah, claimed the dignity and immunities attached to this nominal throne; but Lord Harris, then Governor of Madras, in an elaborate minute to Government, pointed out that we were not bound to recognise an hereditary suc-

cession to this dignity, even of direct heirs, and still less so, that of those who were merely collateral heirs.

He averred that the perpetuation of this nabobship in the Carnatic was prejudicial to the public interests, while there existed a separate authority in the capital not amenable to the law, and which combined the vicious habits of an Indian palace with the accumulation of an idle and dissipated population. The palace was already mortgaged, and the debts of the late rajah amounted to half a crore of rupees; Lord Harris therefore suggested that the pensions of the Arcot family should cease, and that the Government should undertake to settle its debts and make a proper allowance to the uncle, Azim Jah. In these views the Marquis of Dalhousie fully concurred, and the Court of Directors declared that the rights of the family to rule, were restricted to the prince who signed the treaty with Lord Wellesley in 1801.

The much vexed question of the Hyderabad (Deccan) Contingent was brought to a satisfactory conclusion by the tact and firmness of Lord Dalhousie and the good judgment of Colonel Low, the Resident at the court of the Nizam. The origin of this force took place in past wars, and it was always over-officered and under-paid. The contingent became a severe expense to the revenues of the state, yet the Nizam would not hear of its being reduced; so its allowances had fallen so repeatedly into arrears, that it became necessary for the Resident to make advances from his treasury, which the Nizam acknowledged as a debt, bearing interest. His territory was sufficiently rich to meet all the demands of the administration; but it was impossible to prevail on the prince to attend to business. His debts amounted to three crores of rupees, and the exorbitant interest he had to pay, together with the expense of maintaining a useless horde of 40,000 mercenary troops, consumed his resources. In 1851, Lord Dalhousie requested that he should give up to our Resident at Hyderabad a portion of his territories, equal to the yearly value of £370,000, until his debt due to the Company was fully cleared off; and the Resident was empowered to occupy the required tract of country with troops, in case the Nizam declined to accede to the demand.

At this time, the relations of the latter with the Indian Government were extremely delicate, and much dissatisfaction prevailed at Calcutta concerning the mode in which the Nizamat was governed. His state was a tributary one, and he was held responsible for the good administration of it, according to the standard of British ideas; but to

these, neither he nor his people showed much desire of conforming. Unable to cultivate any independent relations on one hand, he dared not, on the other, make any alliance or treaty without the permission of the Governor-General. He was compelled to maintain a contingent, which was to be at our disposal, in virtue of a treaty which, too probably, he never intended to observe; and, like most Indian princes, he acted without seeing, or caring to see, the obligations to which it bound him.

From 1850 to 1852, a remarkable number of pamphlets and books were written in defence of the annexation policy; and one of the advocates thereof, Mr. Horace St. John,* wrote boldly in terms that so completely accorded with the measures of Lord Dalhousie, that one might have almost thought that its general application had been fully resolved on as a future system.

A population of nearly 11,000,000 is under the sway of the Nizam, says this writer; "his finances are in irretrievable confusion; his ministers prey on him, he preys on the people; and daily the process of disorganisation and decay is going on, while the prince sits on a throne that would not last a year without the assistance of the East India Company. Anarchy and oppression consume the resources and desolate the face of a beautiful province, with an area of nearly 100,000 square miles. This is an organised crime against humanity. It is for the British Government to redeem the state of Hyderabad from the demoralisation and poverty with which it is afflicted, and to spare its reputation the reproach of conceiving an authority exercised only for the vilest of purposes. Corruption, profligacy, and oppression, practised in all the departments of the Nizam's administration, enfeeble and impoverish the country; and it is a shame that the British nation should lend itself to the support of a government so irretrievably weak and immoral, or

to the further injury of a people already debased, degraded, and undone. Charity may ascribe to the Nizam the virtue of good intentions; but it is scarcely wise to adopt the Jesuit principles of dividing his motive from his acts, and judging of him by the philosophy of Escobar. When a sovereign is set up by British authority, one question alone is to be answered—Is he fit or able to reign? If he is not, every aid extended to him is an offence against the people he oppresses. The Nizam's dominions, however, will inevitably, sooner or later, be absorbed in our own, and humanity will bless the occasion which rescues a fine country and a large population from the double curse of a tyranny at once feeble and destructive."

The Nizam had, from time to time, made a few payments towards defraying his debts, especially those incurred by the contingent; but by 1853 they had attained such a magnitude, that the Marquis of Dalhousie lost all patience, and resolved to put the matter to a stern issue. He proposed a draft treaty: to place the contingent on a defined and permanent footing, to provide for its punctual payment and the liquidation of arrears, by the cession of the territory referred to, which was to yield about thirty-six lacs yearly—which was less than the annual claim on the Nizam by about six lacs.

By this arrangement he was relieved of debt to the amount of half a crore; yet he displayed a strong reluctance to agree to the arrangement; and it was only by the importunity of his ministers, and more particularly through the influence of a favourite valet, whom they bribed, that he was induced to consent to it.

The districts which he was compelled to cede, and which were occupied by our troops, were those in Western Berar which the generosity of Lord Wellesley had accorded to his ancestor for the somewhat doubtful assistance he had given us during the strife in 1803 with the Mahrattas.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

LORD DALHOUSIE'S ADMINISTRATION.—ANNEXATION OF OUDE.

THE last most important, and, as it proved eventually, most fatal act of annexation, was that of the kingdom of Oude; yet it proceeded on grounds very different from those we have narrated, and the opinions of the highest authorities were divided on

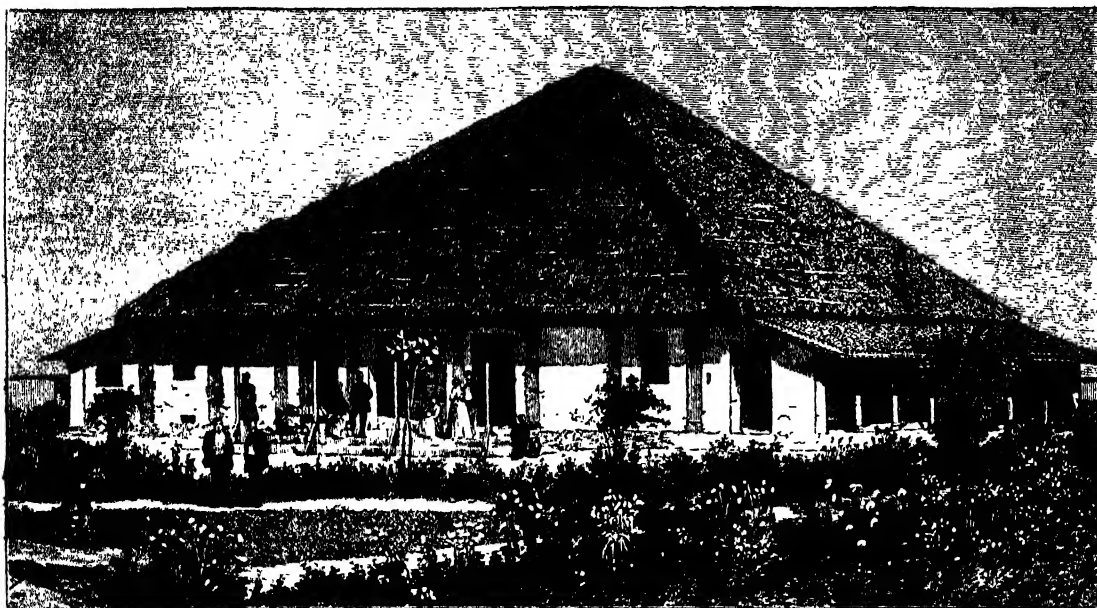
the subject, some condemning it as a gross breach of public faith, and others lauding it as a master-stroke in politics. And here it may be necessary to remind the reader of our early relations with that fruitful source of discord—Oude.

When the empire of the Moguls was falling to

* "Hist. of the British Conquests in India," 1852.

pieces, about 1760, Shujah-ud-Dowlah, its hereditary vizier, holder of the Soubah of Oude, seized upon the latter, and became virtually an independent sovereign, while affecting a nominal allegiance to the emperor. Making common cause with Meer Cossim, he deposed the Nabob of Bengal, but was defeated by our troops, and deprived of Allahabad, yet left in full possession of Oude. In the beginning of the present century, its nabob, Sadut Ali, assumed the title of King of Oude, and though he ably administered the government, our troops were frequently required in the suppression of rebellion and disorder; thus, our relations political, military, and monetary, were a somewhat

death, and been re-occupied, before the last crash came. In 1842, Mohammed Ali was succeeded by his son, Soorya Jah, and he again, in February, 1847, by his son, Wajid Ali Shah who, by his natural indolence, permitted the administration of affairs to fall completely into the hands of worthless favourites. Hence it was that, in the first year of his reign, Lord Hardinge, when visiting his capital of Lucknow, caused a memorandum to be prepared and carefully explained to him. That document, after citing all our treaties made with his predecessors in past years, deduced therefrom the fact that the British Government was bound by them to secure a good administration



VIEW OF A PLANTER'S HOUSE AT ALLAHABAD.

tangled skein for generations; and a succession of debauched princes made these more complicated still.

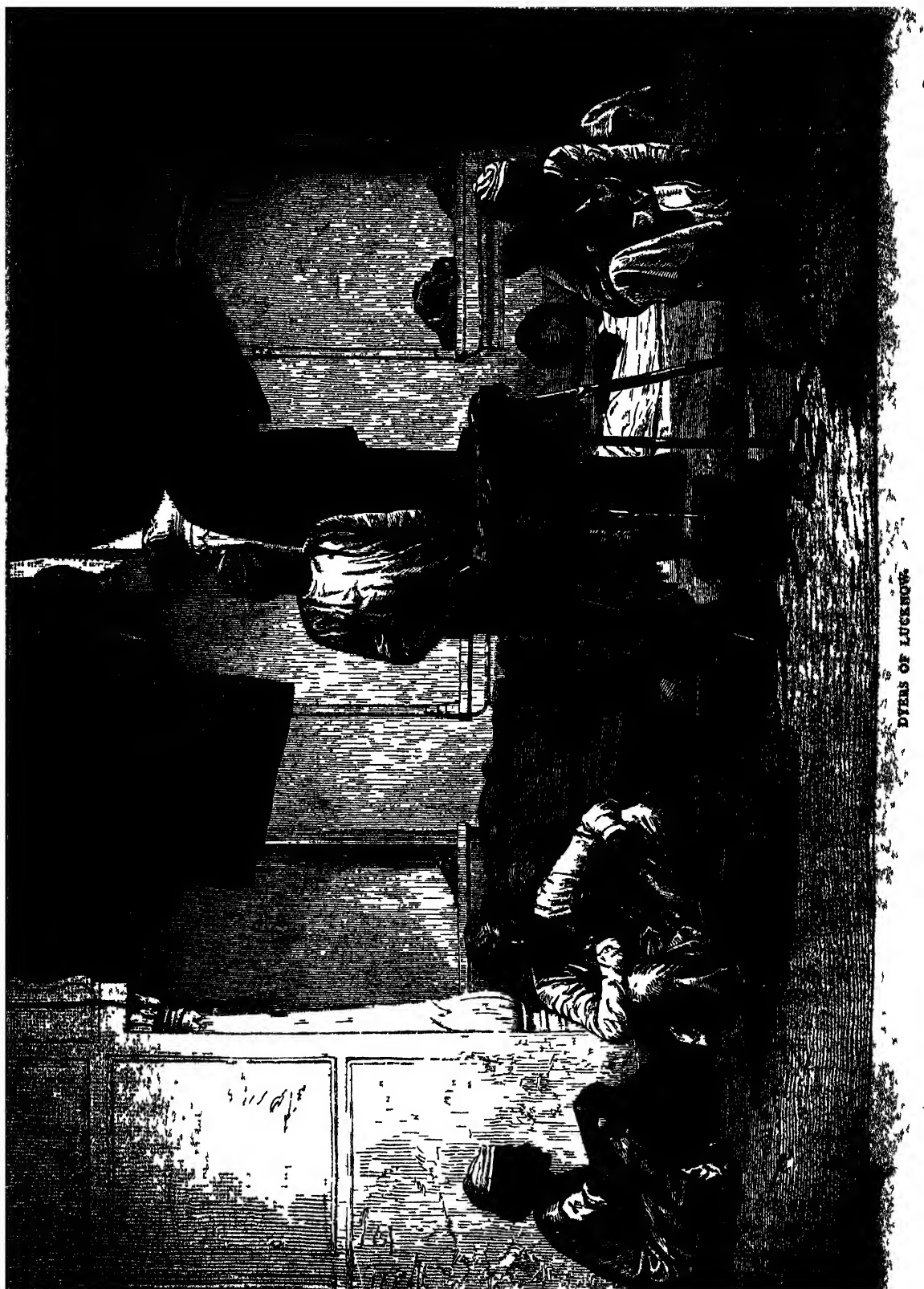
When we engaged in the Afghan war and the great military operations subsequent thereto, an increase of troops, which we undertook, by a previous treaty, to maintain in Oude, at the estimated expense of sixteen lacs yearly, did not take place; and much of the consequent misrule that prevailed in Oude was attributable to this, but more to the degraded court of the king and the conduct of his profligate ministers, whose general bearing justified the harshest measures that could be taken against them.

Day by day local abuses and oppressions became more urgent; but so much was our Government occupied by other affairs, that the musnud of Oude had twice become vacant by

in Oude, and could not permit the continuation of a flagrant system of misrule without being guilty of participation in it.

"If his Majesty," concluded the memorandum, "cordially enters into the plan suggested by the Governor-General for the improvement of his administration, he may have the satisfaction, within the specified period of two years, of checking and eradicating the worst abuses, and, at the same time, of maintaining his own sovereignty and the native institutions of his kingdom unimpaired; but if he does not—if he takes a vacillating course, and fail, by refusing to act on the Governor-General's advice—he is aware of the other alternative and the consequences. It must, then, be manifest to the whole world that, whatever may happen, the king has received a friendly and timely warning."

Two years passed after this, and no change for



DYERS OF LUCKNOW.

the better for the place in the fort was king of Oude; hence the new Governor-General, Lord Dalhousie, directed our Resident, Colonel (afterwards General Sir W. H.) Sleeman, to make a tour through the country, and after personal inspection, to make a report upon its actual state.

The account he furnished was a continuous record of crime, misery, and oppression in Oude, under a king who surrounded himself exclusively with eunuchs, fiddlers, poetasters, and all manner of parasites. The fiddlers had the control of the administration and of civil justice; the eunuchs administered the criminal law and had charge of public works; while everything else was managed by similar people.

Never was a nation more cursed by utter disorganisation. Colonel Sleeman reported that there were 246 forts or strongholds in Oude, armed with only 476 guns, and held by the landholders, who were chiefly Rajpoots, and who converted large tracts of the most fertile land into jungle, which became the haunts of lawless characters, who robbed or levied outrageous imposts upon all travellers and traders. One in particular, within sixteen miles of Lucknow, had turned thirty miles of rich land into wilderness thus, and erected four fortresses within that circuit. The favourite fiddler held the highest post at court, and the chief singer was *de facto* king. Every official, on appointment, had to pay a species of black-mail to the king, to his heir, to the prime minister, or whosoever had interest at court, and then reimbursed himself by extortions from the wretched people.

Colonel Sleeman—though an avowed enemy to annexation as a system—stated in his report that, with all his desire to maintain the throne of Oude in its integrity, fifty years of experience had destroyed in him the smallest hope that the king would ever carry out any system of government calculated to ensure the happiness of his people.

"He did not think," he continued, "that, with a due regard to its own character as the paramount power in India, and the particular obligations by which it was bound by solemn treaties to the suffering people of this distracted country, the Government could any longer forbear to take over the administration," and in perpetuity to make some suitable provision for the king when dethroned.

Regarding the King of Oude at this time, Horace St. John says:—"He is, as his predecessors have ever been, a feeble, cruel, and blood-thirsty despot, and we are the janissaries of his arbitrary power. We have lately been assured by an Indian official, high in the estimation of the

Government, that he has seen the tax-gatherers in the territories of Lucknow lighting their way through the country with the flames of forty villages at one time, set on fire because the wretched inhabitants were unable to satisfy those vampires—the agents of the Oriental exchequer. It would be difficult with the utmost licence of style, to draw an exaggerated picture of the anarchy and impoverishment which prevail in Oude, under a prince whose imbecility renders his subjects equally contemptible with himself—*fraco Re fa forta gente fraca*. Whenever the British Government determines, therefore, to be consistent in its justice, it will do what the king's want of faith gives it authority at any moment to resolve. It will withdraw its support from him; he will assuredly fall; and it will remain for the Company, instead of keeping up a standing army to defend a people which has been robbed of all that was worth protecting, to undertake the duty which attaches to an imperial power, and make late atonement to Oude for all the misery with which it has been afflicted under its native governors." *

After urging annexations, and the abolition everywhere of "the fiction of native sovereignty," this writer continues thus:—"The unhappiness of these populations is enhanced by contrast with the felicity of their neighbours. It is futile to muse over the pleasant vision of creating new Indian states, under kings of Indian blood, who may receive the lessons of civilisation from us. We cannot proselytise these princes to humanity. They will not embrace our ethics; we must recognise their crimes. We may be gentle and caressing to them, but they will be *carnefices* to their people. We have dreamed too long over this idea. We have no moral authority to uphold them, and they have no claim to be upheld, for the prescriptive right to plunder and oppress any community is a vile and bloody fiction. The regeneration of such powers is impossible. It is time to relinquish the fancy. The more we delay, confiding in a better future, the further will the chance be driven. 'The hope is on our horizon, and it flies as we proceed.'"

On every hand the necessity of interference in the affairs of Oude was admitted to be most urgent; but, occupied by the protracted war with Burmah, and preparations for a coming struggle with Persia, the Marquis of Dalhousie, though determined to annex Oude, was compelled to permit some time to elapse ere he acted. The days of his administration were drawing to a close, and well aware of all the doubts and difficulties

* "Hist. of Brit. Conquest in India."

with directions to make another proposal, taking into the condition of the people. The result was that there was no improvement, and not the least prospect of any; and the duty imposed upon our Government by treaty would not longer admit of delay, in seeking to ameliorate the condition of 5,000,000 people, by ceasing to uphold an idle and incapable dynasty.

By the home authorities his offer was at once accepted, and he was left with ample discretionary power as to his mode of proceeding. Hence, annexation, involving the absolute extinction of Oude as a native government and the utter abrogation of all existing treaties with it, was decreed and announced to all the empire by one simple public proclamation.

In the statement given, it was said that the mutual obligations of the two Governments were based upon the treaties of 1801 and of 1837.

By the first of these, the British Government obtained in perpetuity the half of the territory of Oude, for undertaking to defend the remaining half from enemies, foreign and domestic; and by the last-named treaty it was stipulated that, in the event of a reformed administration not being established, the British Government might enter into possession of the disturbed districts, and hold them till they could be satisfactorily restored; any surplus revenue arising in the meanwhile to be paid into the exchequer of Oude. Many averred that all this was reducing to practice the classical fable of the Monkey and the Cheese, as there was nothing contained in either of these treaties which could countenance the annexation of Oude.

"The one," says a legal writer, "bound the Government of Oude to reform its administration; and the other defined and fixed the penalty to be inflicted in the event of failing to do so. When the treaty of 1837 was framed, there was no idea of annexation; and an important point was understood to be gained, when, by the insertion of a penalty, means were provided for giving gradual effect to the vague promise of 1801. Now, however, when annexation was to be resorted to, the treaty of 1837 was found to present a serious obstacle. Its very definiteness would not allow any other penalty than that which it prescribed to be exacted, and therefore, if annexation was to be persisted in, it became absolutely necessary to hold that the treaty of 1837 was not binding."

Some time prior to announcing the annexation, Lord Dalhousie, acting still with caution in a matter of such moment, had appointed Colonel (afterwards General Sir Barnes) Peacock Resident in Oude,

with directions to make another proposal, taking into the condition of the people. The result was that there was no improvement, and not the least prospect of any; and the duty imposed upon our Government by treaty would not longer admit of delay, in seeking to ameliorate the condition of 5,000,000 people, by ceasing to uphold an idle and incapable dynasty.

It was then that the Marquis of Dalhousie drew up a comprehensive minute, in which he analysed the evidence that had been adduced of the gross and shameful abuse of power that had existed for years in Oude, and of the opinions given by those who urged us to protect its people.

"Were it not for the presence of our troops," he wrote, "the people would long since have worked their own deliverance; inaction on our part could no longer be justified. But the rulers of Oude, however unfaithful to the trust conferred on them, have yet ever been faithful and true in their allegiance to the British power, and they have aided us as best they could in the hour of our utmost need. Justice and gratitude require that, in ameliorating the lot of the people, we should lower the dignity and authority of the sovereign as little as possible. The prospects of the people may be improved, without resorting to so extreme a measure as the annexation of the territory and the abolition of the throne."

He affirmed that he did not wish Oude made a mere province of Britain; hence he proposed that the king should retain the nominal sovereignty; and while the entire civil and military administration should be placed in the hands of the Company, an annual stipend should be given to him for the support of his rank. Of the Council, Mr. (afterwards Sir Barnes) Peacock agreed with the marquis, while Mr. Grant (afterwards Sir John Peter Grant, and Governor of Jamaica) recommended the entire absorption of Oude into our territories; and General Low, who had long been Resident at Lucknow, was of the same opinion.

The whole of these minutes, together with the reports of Generals Sleeman and Outram, were transmitted by Lord Dalhousie to the Court of Directors, with whom, and the Ministry, the decision rested. Two months of deliberation followed, and then they came to the determination to adopt that sterner resolution—from which Lord Dalhousie had thought to dissuade them—the entire absorption of the territory and abolition of the throne.

Hence the tenor of the proclamation issued by Lord Dalhousie.

But this was not the last we were fated to hear of Oude.

CHAPTER XXXVII

LORD DALHOUSIE'S ADMINISTRATIVE REFORMS.—REVENUE.—POSTAL REFORM.—GANGES CANAL.—RAILROADS.—TELEGRAPHS, ETC.

Memoranda indeed was the Marquis of Dalhousie's tenure of office, by the many reforms he effected, and by the material progress civilisation made in India under his brief rule; while there was scarcely a branch of the public service into which he did not penetrate for the purpose of examination. To all circumlocution and obstruction, to all boards that were cumbersome and forms that were useless, he had a great aversion; he abolished or re-constructed them all, as far as possible, and invigorated every department of the state by infusing unity of control, added to responsibility.

He did away with the Military Board; and, though a civilian, there was no branch of the public service in which his general reforms were more welcome and beneficial than those of the army. The Military Board had been weighted with the superintendence of public works, and by other multifarious duties that had been thrust upon it, and hence its failure in many of its duties had been palpable. Thus, he organised, in 1850, a department of public works, with separate officials and a secretary, not only to the Government of India, but to each of the three Presidencies. In a chief engineer, assisted by a body of subordinates, the responsibility of management was vested; while to ensure the steady progress of all public works—which previously had been done by sudden and often feeble efforts—a schedule of those that were to be executed during each year was submitted to Government at the commencement of it.

For ten years, without much, if any, intermission, the Government of India had been engaged in wars which absorbed thirty crores of treasure, and created an annual deficit, which, however, ceased with the cause of it; and the revenues of India, during Lord Dalhousie's administration, increased from twenty-six to thirty crores. During eight years—between 1848 and 1856—the commerce of India became developed to an extraordinary extent; that of Calcutta was doubled; and the shipping trade, after being freed from every obstruction, was rendered safe by the crection of light-houses on the headlands and bays.*

The necessity for having in India the priceless boon of that cheap and uniform postage, which

Britain had enjoyed since the advent of Rowland Hill, was taken up by Lord Dalhousie with all that zeal and energy which were natural to him. He transmitted to Leadenhall Street a plan for establishing a uniform rate of half an ounce, or three farthings for every letter of a defined weight, without regard to distance, though it should be 2,000 miles; and the Court of Directors readily and liberally sanctioned this, as they did all his other great schemes for improvement. He next procured a reduction of the postage between Great Britain and India, and took a kindly national pride in an arrangement which, he said, "would enable the Scottish recruit at Peshawur to write to his mother at John o' Groats for sixpence."*

The Ganges Canal, that magnificent work which connects the Ganges with the Jumna by a navigable channel, and likewise furnishes irrigation to a tract of country between those two great rivers, having an area of 5,400,000 acres, had been commenced long before the arrival of Lord Dalhousie, but was advancing at a very sluggish pace, as the sum expended on it from the beginning did not exceed seventeen lacs of rupees. Aware of its vast benefit to India, he pressed on the work with unflagging ardour, permitting no exigencies of war, no financial difficulty, or other contingency, to interrupt its progress; and in six years the sum spent upon it exceeded a crore and a half of rupees. In March, 1854, the main stream was opened into it by Mr. Colvin, the Lieutenant-Governor of Agra. This noble undertaking, which had been designed and completed by Sir Proby Thomas Cautley, K.C.B. (a native of Suffolk, and a distinguished officer of the Bengal Artillery), ranks among the highest efforts of civilisation. "It nearly equals in aggregate length all the lines of the four greatest canals of France, and is five times larger than all the main lines in Lombardy."

Some portions of this splendid work present architectural features of a most important kind, amongst which is the aqueduct of fifteen arches over the Solani river. The intention was that, when completed, it should be used for the whole or greater part of the hill produce, which had previously been rafted down the Ganges for export, the main articles being timber of different sorts.

harness, and other material, and the various articles and implements for farming uses, or those which are in the market for rope and other purposes.

In 1853 the Madras University was opened, during the rule of Lord Dalhousie; and the Grant College, at Bombay, founded in honour of a late governor, and built by subscription, promised soon after to be productive of great good. To the college at Fort William, founded long before, reference has already been made in this work.

The railroad system, which is working greater and more wonderful changes in the social, political, and mercantile interests of British India, owes much to the exertions of Lord Dalhousie. The first line of rail in that country was projected in 1843 by Sir Macdonald Stephenson, and it received the warmest encouragement from Mr. Wilberforce Bird, while temporarily officiating at the head of the administration; but the commercial disasters that ensued prior to 1847 made British capitalists reluctant to embark in a field so unknown in the annals of railway enterprise as India. This nearly baffled the undertaking; but Sir Macdonald was indefatigable, and succeeded at last in forming the East India Railway Company; and Sir James Weir Hogg, Bart. (afterwards M.P. for Honiton), a member of the Court of Directors, prevailed on his colleagues, but not without the utmost difficulty, to guarantee a rate of interest sufficient to raise the necessary capital.

Two short and experimental lines at Calcutta and Bombay were sanctioned; but as numerous applications for others elsewhere poured into the India House, the Directors wisely referred them all to the consideration of the Marquis of Dalhousie, who, from the first, had seen the advantages, in a military as well as commercial point of view, which must accrue from connecting the different main points of the splendid empire he governed, by means of a complete system of railways; and to whom the Court intimated a wish that, without loss of time, these should be got into operation.

In no better or more able hands could this important matter have been placed. The marquis presided for some years at the Board of Trade, during a time that was the most active of British railway enterprise, and hence he had become completely master of the principles and even the minutest details of railway economy; and to this knowledge he added broad and comprehensive views of policy. On the 20th of April, 1853, he presented to the Court a most carefully drawn report, which became the future basis of the Indian railway system, and in which he expressed his views on the projected and experimental lines

already sanctioned, would no longer be deemed the standard of railway works for Hindostan.

"A glance at the map," he said, "will suffice to show how immeasurable would be the national advantages of a system of internal communications by which intelligence of every event should be transmitted to Government at a speed far above its present rate, and enable the administration to bring the bulk of its military strength to bear upon any given point in as many days as it now requires months. . . . A system of railways, judiciously selected and formed, would surely and rapidly give rise in this empire to the same encouragement of enterprise, the same multiplication of products, the same discovery of latent forces, and the same increase of national wealth, that have marked the introduction of improved and extended communications in the various kingdoms of the western world. With the aid of a railway carried up to the Indus, the risk involved by the extension of our frontier to a distance of 1,500 miles would be infinitely diminished. Peshawur would, in fact, be reached in less time and with greater facility than Moorsheadabad, though only seventy miles distant from Calcutta, in the days of Clive."

In conclusion, he suggested the system of railways which should connect the three presidencies with each other by great trunk lines, and advocated the construction of these by public companies, which should be sustained by a State guarantee, and directly controlled by the Government of India, acting in the public interest, on the principle for which he had ever contended, though somewhat in vain, when at the head of the Board of Trade.

What the railway system of India may ultimately become it is impossible to conjecture, but the wonderful statistics of what it now owes to the energy and talent of Dalhousie may be briefly summarised thus:—

The guaranteed lines are—1. The East Indian Railway, from Calcutta to Delhi; from Allahabad to Jubbulpore, where it joins the Great Indian Peninsular Railway, with a length of 1,504 miles, of which 414 are double. 2. The latter line, which runs from Bombay to Jubbulpore, where it joins the East Indian Railway, and south-west to Raichose, where it joins the north-west branch of the Madras Railway, and the important branch line to Nagpore; the whole length being 1,278 miles, of which 287 are double. 3. The Madras Railway from that city to Beypore, with a branch to Bangalore, and the north-west line, which joins the Great Indian Peninsular Railway, making 826 miles, with the branch from Coimbatore to the densest ranges

of the Northern India, which are still in progress, and their great commercial ports, the Rotal and Bombay, and the Indus, the workshops of India. 1. The Bombay, Baroda, and Central Indian Railway, which runs from the first-named city due north to Ahmedabad, a distance of 407 miles, with an extension line of seventy-eight miles to Wurdwan. 2. The Sindh, Punjab, and Delhi Railway, from Kurachee to Kotra on the Indus, a distance of 120 miles, passing by Lahore and Umritsir, the holy city of the Sikhs, joining the East Indian Railway at Ghazecabad, a distance of 533 miles. The stately bridge over the Sutlej, connecting the line between Delhi and Lahore, was opened on the 15th of October, 1870, thus establishing communication from Calcutta and Bombay with Moulton, so famous for its silks and brocades; the entire length being 676 miles, together with 500 more worked by steamers on the Indus. 6. The Great Southern Railway, from Negapatam to Trichinopoly, and from there to Erode, the ancient capital of the Naicks of Madura, where it joins the Madras Railway (south-west line), a distance of 445 miles, of which 100 were open in 1875. 7. The Carnatic Railway, merged in the South Indian, includes all the lines belonging to the former, commencing at Madras and running to Cuddalore, but not yet finished. 8. The Eastern Bengal runs north-east from Calcutta to Dacca, the third city in Bengal, and so famed for its muslins; it is 158 miles in length. 9. The Oude and Rohilkund Railway is designed to afford communication through these countries, and to make branches to various places on the East Indian Line. Its sanctioned length is 692 miles, of which 523 were open between Cawnpore and Lucknow in 1875.

In addition to these are five State lines: the Calcutta to Muttah Harbour, the Nalhatee, Kangra, Gomrawuttee, and Patna; with eight not yet complete, including the Indus Valley and the British Burmah Line, Rangoon to Prome, 160 miles.

The electric telegraph was another valuable boon conferred on India by Lord Dalhousie, in conjunction with the enterprising Mr. O'Shaughnessy, assisted by Sir William Brooke O'Shaughnessy, M.D., a graduate of the University of Edinburgh, and who was Medical officer of the Bengal army, published his "Memoirs" on electricity, and by the manner was appointed superintendent of telegraphs in India, from whence he previously sent him to London, with a letter to the Directors, stating the project of an experimental line of wire, which was succeeded in laying down from Cal-

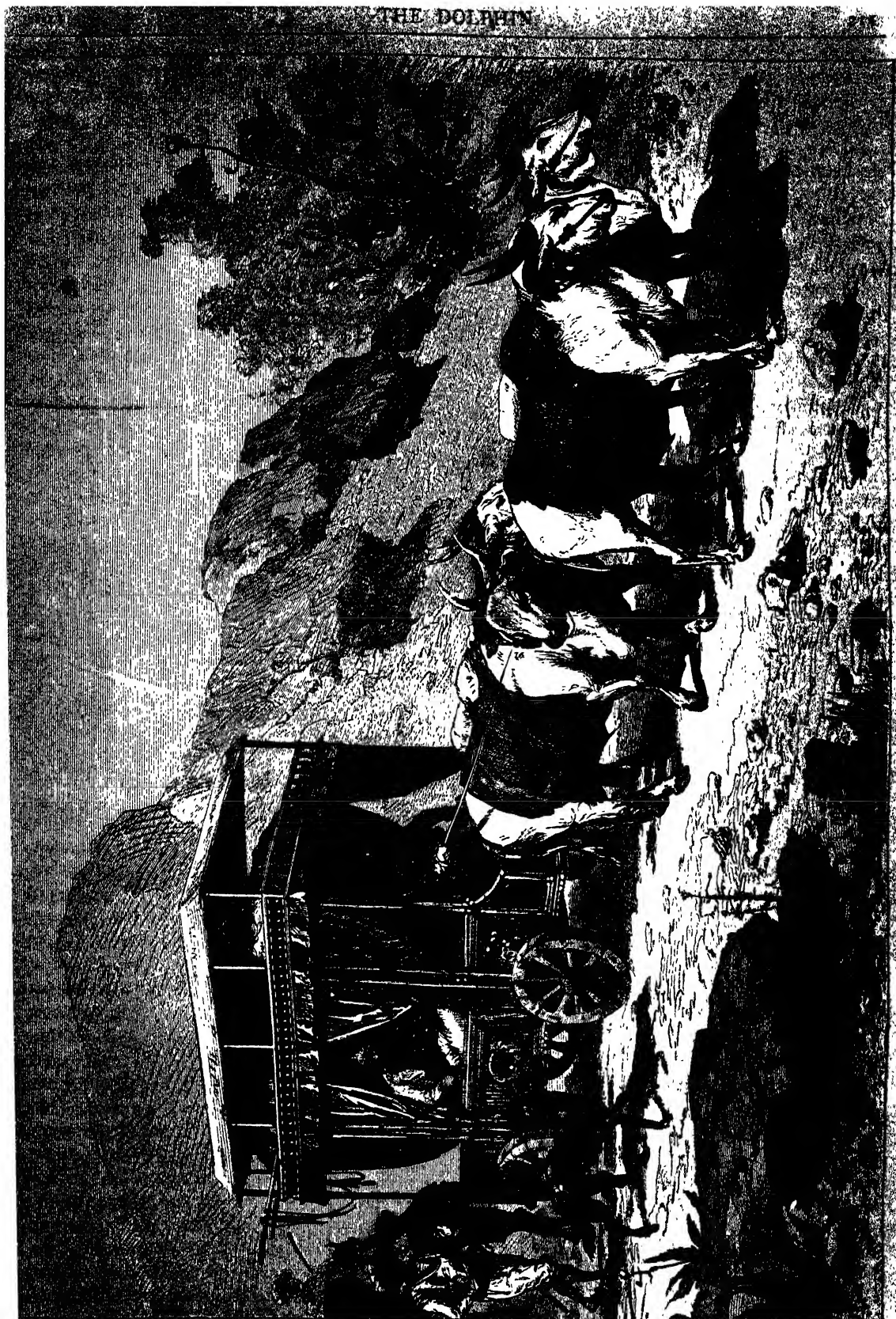
cutta to the first station, which was opened in 1851. The Government of India, and the Government of Bengal, were both anxious to bring the various parts of the Indian empire in direct communication with each other by telegraphic wires, and earnestly and personally solicited authority for their construction. Sir James Hogg, then chairman, fortunately took the same interest in the promotion of the telegraph as the marquis, whose proposal was carried through the various official stages with a promptitude pleasing even to him; for, within a week after his communication arrived, a despatch, sanctioning the establishment of the telegraph, was on its way to India. Over all that vast peninsula has spread the network of wires to an extent that has fully answered the hopes of the enterprising Governor-General, who, even in his time, found the facilities for administration increased tenfold.

"It may yet be hoped," wrote this far-seeing Scot, "that the system of electric telegraphs in India may one day be linked with those which envelop Europe, and which already stretch across the Atlantic."

On this subject, Marshman, writing in 1873, remarks, "Not only is the Government of India in daily communication with the home authorities, but on a recent occasion a complimentary message from the Governor-General at Simla to the President of the United States reached Washington, and was acknowledged in three hours. It cannot, however, but be considered a fortunate, not to say a providential, circumstance, that the submarine telegraph was not in existence before the conquest of India had been completed, and Peshawur had become the frontier station of the empire. Considering the inveterate repugnance of the Court of Directors and of the Board of Control to any increase of territory whatever, it is manifest that if such facilities of communication had existed at a more early period there would have been no Indian empire to govern."

It is strange to find that, while modern civilization was making such progress in India, much of its ancient barbarism lurked in secret among the people; for in June of 1852 a discovery was made in the Punjab of a frightful system of Thuggee, or the remnant of it. Fully 300 murderers were detected, and the names of 120 were distinctly Thugs, were obtained, and of these 120 openly confessed their crimes.

In the same year, the pirates of the Indian Archipelago committed many atrocities, and among these we may mention the murder of a British merchant ship, the *British merchant ship*, 2,000 tons, on the coast of Sumatra.



THE CHODAYA OR HINGOO TRAVELLING CARRIAGE.

Zambo and Saloo, sea robbers in Malacca Bay, on the north-east coast of Borneo.

On the 1st of September, when the vessel was under weigh, two boats, manned by armed men, came alongside in the evening, and intimated their desire to trade, which Captain Robertson declined to do till day dawned on the morrow. At seven o'clock two men came on board, apparently to trade with Mr. Burns, the supercargo, to whom they showed some matting, pearls, and camphor. While he stooped to examine some of the pearls, a rolled-up mat was handed up from the boat, concealing a Malay kreese, with which the pretended trader by one slash severed the head of Mr. Burns from his body.

The Saloo man then rushed on Captain Robertson, who was standing on the quarter-deck looking aft, when he received across the chin a slash, intended, no doubt, for his neck. On this he sprang, bleeding fast, to the end of the jib-boom, when he begged his life, but was slain by spear-men in one of the native boats. No resistance

was offered, as all the time was taken by the three of the crew were next butchered, and then leaped overboard, or rushed up the rigging, when they were bound with ropes. A native woman was cut nearly in two, and then thrown into the sea, after which, the pirates carried off the *Dolphin* to Labuk Bay, on the north-east coast of the island of Borneo. The Honourable Company's steamer *Pluto* followed in pursuit, but the water then shallowed, and two paddle-box boats, each armed with a six-pounder, went in shore, under Mr. Hodge, of the *Pluto*, and Mr. St. John, the officiating commissioner. In consequence of the intricacies of the Benguin river, some difficulty was experienced in selecting the proper channel; but eventually the *Dolphin* was reached and boarded by the British seamen, to whom the chief of Benguin, under the influence of fear, gave up the murderers, some of whom were cut down, and others wounded. The *Dolphin* was then towed down the river to where the *Pluto* was at anchor, and by the commander of which she was sent to Singapore.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

THE PERSIAN WAR.—WHAT LED THERETO.—THE ARMY OF PERSIA DETAILED.—BATTLE OF KHOOSH-AB.

The origin of the already-forgotten war with Persia in 1856 was somewhat similar to that which led to the serious strife with Afghanistan; and certain minute and remarkable details of Russian policy towards Persia, and through that country towards British India, have been given in both instances as events preliminary to both wars.

Although we were, to all appearance, on the best of relations with the court of Persia, the desire there to invade Afghanistan was not relinquished; a secret bad feeling lurked at Teheran, and in the halls of "the Ark," or royal palace there, the counsels of Russia had the greatest influence. Without actually urging Persia into a war, she was anxious to keep open and rankling a source of contention, which she might turn to her own profitable account some day, and yet she had so wholesome a fear of the power of Britain as to avoid provoking her by operations in the Persian Gulf. Thus her instigations to hostility only took effect when too late, or when any movement on the part of Persia was rendered useless or feeble by the fall

of Sebastopol and the proclamation of peace among the Western Powers.

Nevertheless the Russian policy was just what it had been at the time when our troops penetrated the dark passes of the Khyber Mountains, and it was expressed with clearness and decision by her ambassador, Hoossian Khan, in his letter to Prince Metternich, in 1839; and that in straightforwardness it was more European than Oriental, the following extract will show:—"The Shah is sovereign of his country, and as such he desires to be independent. There are two great powers with whom Persia is in more or less direct contact—Russia and the British power in India. The first has more military power than the second; on the other hand, Britain has more money than Russia. The two powers can thus do Persia good and evil, and in order, above all, to avoid the evil, the Shah is desirous of keeping himself, with respect to wars, within the relations of good friendship, and free from all contest. If, on the contrary, he finds himself threatened on one side, he will seek alliance

in the other an enemy, or the support which he shall stand in need of. What is not what he desires, but to what he may be driven, for he is not more the friend of one than of the other of those powers; he desires to be with them on a footing of equal friendship. What he cherishes, above all, is his independence and maintenance of good relations with foreign powers."

The policy of the Persian monarch is there put in its most favourable light; but the idea of having compensation on the Afghan side for territory lost on the Russian frontier strongly pervaded his court, where, the capture of Herat, whenever a fitting opportunity should present itself, was deemed a point of national honour; though, on the 20th of July, 1851, Colonel Shiel, the British Minister at Teheran, informed the Shah that our views were quite unchanged as to the independence of Herat. During the latter part of that year the country was so much convulsed by contentions, that the Khan asked the aid of Persia to uphold his authority. This aid the Shah promised, and began a negotiation, which had for its object the extortion of certain Oriental forms, which would have constituted him lord paramount of Herat, with all its mountains, deserts, and hordes of wandering Turcomans—the dwellers in black tents; while, on the other hand, Dost Mohammed of Cabul threatened to pour his Afghan clans on Candahar, and undermine the policy of the Shah.

The spring of 1852 saw a Persian army marching against Herat. It was occupied, and many oppressions ensued, while several Afghan chiefs, resident there, were seized and sent as prisoners into Persia; and all this was done in the face of assurances of the most pacific nature given to the resident minister of Great Britain. Court falsehoods of the most disgraceful kind were unblushingly resorted to, to conceal the ultimate intentions of the Shah, who now annexed to Persia the hitherto independent state of Herat, which extended from Ouch on the east, to Ghorian on the west, about 120 miles, and in breadth, from Karakh on the north to Izfazar on the south, about ninety miles.

When these transactions became known by the Cabinet in London, the Earl of Malmesbury, then Minister for Foreign Affairs, declined all intercourse with the ambassador of Persia. In that emergency Colonel Shiel offered such resistance, and so boldly menaced the Shah with the active assistance of Britain, that he became alarmed, and without having the sword drawn against him, on the 10th of January, 1853, a treaty, or agreement, announcing all sovereignty over the

state of Herat, and binding himself not to interfere by force of arms in its affairs; but reserving the right to march his armies into its territory, if any other power did the same.

In making this sudden and peaceful proposition, the Shah's minister had no other views than to show the British, whom, in their arrogance, the Persians deemed half barbarians, off their guard; but the firmness of Colonel Shiel compelled them to observe the stipulations they never intended to perform. Enforced thus to act with apparent honour, the bearing of the Persian Court was the reverse of pleasant to the British ambassador and his suite, and there came to pass an episode which brought this out in plain colours.

On the 15th of June, 1854, Mr. Thompson, then our plenipotentiary, wrote to the Earl of Clarendon, the Secretary for Foreign Affairs, informing him that he had chosen as his Persian secretary a person named Meerza Hashim Khan, who was learned, courtly in bearing, and every way suitable to the appointment, which the earl confirmed, and a persecution of Meerza by the Persian court, as the favourite of the British, at once commenced. The Honourable Charles A. Murray C.B., second son of the Earl of Dunmore, on his succession as envoy at Teheran, also favoured Meerza; but the persecution of the latter by the Persian court became so bitter, that on some frivolous pretence, they seized his wife and threw her into prison. Mr. Murray spiritedly demanded reparation for this outrage upon a member of his staff, together with the instant release of the lady. His message was treated with insolent disdain; hence, to uphold the dignity of the empire he represented, on the 20th of November, 1855, he struck his flag.

To cover this conduct of his master's, the Persian prime minister circulated a malicious report that both Mr. Murray and Mr. Thompson, his predecessor, had been guilty of intrigues with the wife of the khan, who owed to these his appointment; and on this allegation being made to Mr. Murray himself, in an official missive from the Persian Cabinet, on the 5th of December, after having endured many insults, he quitted Teheran.

The court of Persia, now greatly perplexed, endeavoured to transact business with that of Britain, through Lord Stratford de Redcliffe, our ambassador at Constantinople, where, on the 22d of January, 1856, the Persian envoy laid before him a long list of complaints against Meerza Thompson, Murray, Consul Stevens, and all connected with our mission at Teheran. In fact it appeared that "the Persian court was as much opposed to the consul as to the minister." The

Persian Ministry drew up a scandalous document for publication in Europe, incriminating the British ministers at their court with immorality. This document breathed a malignant hostility unusual between belligerent states, and was utterly disgraceful in its conception and expression. Had all the British ministers been immoral, the fact would not have affected the merits of the dispute. The sacredness of the persons and property of all persons, Persians or others, engaged in the service of the British embassy, and of their families, had been violated spitefully and without provocation, and for this wrong redress was demanded. It is probable that all these disturbances were got up by the Persian Government to cover their policy towards Herat, for at the end of 1855, Prince Sultan Moorad Meerza was sent with a force of 9,000 men against that place."

During the war with Russia the fall of Kars was circulated all over Asia, with immeasurable exaggerations and wild rumours; the fall of Sebastopol was not known for long after. The secret agents of Russia had ample means for producing this double effect; the consequences of which were, that, impressed by some vague ideas of our being weakened or humiliated, the effeminate Persians became emboldened, as were also the Zemindars of recently annexed Oude, and other enemies of Britain in the East, so the Shah thought that now or never was the time to accomplish completely, in spite of right or treaty, the long-cherished desire of his court, the conquest and annexation of Herat.

In July, 1856, by direction of the Earl of Clarendon, the ultimatum of our Government was delivered to the Persian *chargé d'affaires* at Constantinople; while at the same time, the Marquis of Dalhousie was directed to collect forces at Bombay, for operations in the Gulf and on the coast of Persia, where our consul, Mr. Stevens, still remained at his post in Teheran.

By the terms of the ultimatum, the prime minister of Persia was required to write, in the service of the Shah, "a letter to Mr. Murray, expressing his regret at having uttered and given currency to the offensive imputation upon the honour of her Majesty's ministers; requesting to withdraw his own letter of the 19th November, and two letters of the Minister for Foreign Affairs of the 26th of November, one of which contains a rescript from the Shah respecting the imputation upon Mr. Murray; and declaring in the same letter that no such further rescript from the Shah as that enclosed herewith in copy, was communicated, directly or indirectly, to any of the foreign missions at Teheran. A copy of this letter to be communi-

cated officially by the *Sadr Azim* (Prime Minister), to each of the foreign missions at Teheran, and the substance of it made public in that capital. The original letter to be conveyed to Mr. Murray at Bagdad, by the hands of some high Persian officer, and to be accompanied by an invitation to Mr. Murray, in the Shah's name, to return with the mission to Teheran, on his Majesty's assurance that he shall be received with all the honours due to the representative of the British Government; another person of suitable rank being sent to conduct him, as *Mehmandar*, on his journey through Persia. Mr. Murray, on approaching the capital, to be received by persons of high rank, deputed to escort him to his residence in the town.

"Immediately on his arrival there, the *Sadr Azim* to go in state to the British Mission and renew friendly relations with Mr. Murray, leaving the Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs to conduct him to the royal palace; the *Sadr Azim* receiving Mr. Murray, and conducting him to the presence of the Shah. At noon on the following day, the British flag to be hoisted under a salute of twenty-one guns, and the *Sadr Azim* to visit the mission immediately afterwards; which visit Mr. Murray will return, at latest, on the following day before noon. Satisfaction being thus given, and friendly relations restored, the settlement of the questions of Herat, of Meerza Hashim, remains to be stated. Should Herat be occupied by the Shah's troops, his Majesty to engage to withdraw them without delay. Should that city be in any way menaced, though not occupied, by the Shah's troops, his Majesty to engage not to allow them to occupy it on any account. In either case, the engagement being solemnly given, the British Mission to defer to his Majesty's wish, if renewed respecting Meerza Hashim, by not insisting upon his appointment at Shiraz; the Meerza's wife, however, to be restored to him, and himself to enjoy the security, emoluments, and position offered by the Persian Government in a former stage of the question. The whole of the correspondence respecting Meerza Hashim may then be mutually withdrawn and cancelled, it being to be understood that no objections will be made by the Persian Government to the appointment, as heretofore, of a British correspondent at Shiraz till that and other matters can be arranged by a suitable convention."

The friendly spirit of this document failed to effect its object, for fresh outrages and indignities were offered to all servants of the British Government who were rash enough to linger in Persia. The intelligence that our troops were marching to

Bombay reached London, but the Shah—the same Shah who visited Europe in 1823—was unmindful, and sent more troops to garrison his menaced provinces. To Mr. Stevens, our Consul, the Ministry gave orders to quit Persia instantly, but to take the necessary measures to secure the liberty and property of British subjects.

The Shah, who was then determined to go to war with us, was born in 1829, and had succeeded to the throne in 1848. We are told that “he is well-versed in Persian and Turkish, is acquainted with history, and has a correct idea of the relations in which he stands to each of the European powers. Although endowed with considerable energy of character, he is mild and gentle in manners, and simple in the habits of his private life.”

On the 24th September, 1856, the President of the Board of Control was directed to forward to India, by the next mail, instructions for the Persian expedition to move for the Gulf; and on the 17th of next month Ferukh Khan reached Constantinople as minister plenipotentiary of the Shah. He sought to negotiate with Viscount Stratford de Redcliffe; and while consenting to terms of peace, raised such absurd obstructions to them subsequently in detail, that no reliance whatever could be placed on his political sincerity. Hence, on the 1st of November, the Governor-General of India declared war against Persia.

Three proclamations were sent forth by him, and these, when they reached Constantinople, caused Ferukh Khan to break off all further attempts at negotiation, and treat his past agreements as null and void.

Major-General Outram, K.C.B., who had repaired to London after settling and leaving Oude, had been consulted by the Home authorities with reference to the Persian expedition, the command of which was assigned to him. He repaired at once to Bombay, and placed himself at the head of the second division of “the army of Persia,” the first having already sailed under Major-General Foster Salter, K.C.B. The brigadiers of this division were Colonels Wilson and Housen; Brigadier Trevelyan commanded the artillery and Brigadier Larn the cavalry. When the second division reached the Gulf, Outram, having now the rank of Lieutenant-General, reserved it for Brigadier Havlock, C.B., Deputy Adjutant-General of H.M. Indian Army, who arrived soon after. Brigadiers Hamilton and Hale had the brigades of that division. Colonel Shaw of the 4th, or Queen’s Light Dragoons, commanded the cavalry of the second division, and those of both were placed under the

orders of Brigadier Fernal, C.B.; while the entire command of the artillery was given to Brigadier Hill.

The whole force under Sir James Outram on this occasion was as follows:—3rd Bombay Cavalry, 243; Poonah Horse, 176, making only 419 sabres; H.M. 64th Regiment, 780; 2nd Bombay Europeans, 693; 78th Highlanders, 739, making 2,212 European infantry; Sappers, 118; 20th Native Infantry, 442; 4th Rifles, 523; 26th Native Infantry, 479; Beloochees, 460, making 2,022 coloured troops; total, 4,653. 3rd troop of Horse Artillery, six guns; 3rd and 5th Light Field Batteries, twelve guns. Camp Followers—1,370 Europeans, 1,466 natives; one company of European Artillery, with fourteen guns. Total number of pieces, thirty-two. Such were the forces destined for the Persian campaign, of which an interesting narrative was published by Captain Hunt, of the 78th Highlanders.

The general rendezvous of the sea and land forces was at Ma’mur on the Persian Gulf, and after the arrival of Outram, active operations at once ensued, by the army commencing its march around the head of Bushire Creek, on a heavy road lying through loose sand. When the troops halted to bivouac in order of march, on the second day, there burst forth a dreadful thunderstorm. The rain fell in blinding torrents, mingled with heavy hailstones, drenching all to the skin, as the troops were without the shelter of either tents or trees. A piercing wind, that blew from some snow-clad mountains over the sandy waste, added to their misery; but the ardour of our troops was only equalled by their love for, and confidence in, the gallant Outram.

The dawn of the 5th of February stole into that comfortless bivouac, where it then became known that the Persians were halted nine miles in front, and in considerable strength. All loaded arms were discharged, and re-loaded, so that none should miss fire, after the rain, and then the march was resumed. About mid-day, the grey masses of the Persians were seen in possession of a strongly-intrenched position, so Sir James Outram ordered the bugles to sound a halt, while the regiments deployed from column into line; but the formation was barely complete when, to the annoyance of all, by the wavering and uncertain gleam of their arms, the enemy were discovered to be in full retreat, a movement during which our light cavalry overtook, and cut up their rear-guard. The Persians behaved with considerable spirit. One officer and several of our men were wounded, while Brigadier Housen had a narrow escape from a ball which

pierced his saddle. Here the military governor of Bras-joon was made prisoner.

In the abandoned camp, of which we immediately took possession, great stores of grain and ammunition were found. An examination proved that we might have forced this position with ease, whereas Bras-joon, an adjacent village, had it been fortified, might have given us infinite trouble. For two entire days Outram's troops were occupied in destroying the enemy's military stores, and searching for buried cannon and treasure.

On the morning of the 7th of February the march was resumed, but in the direction of Bushire, the Persians having been observed to be still retreating into the fastnesses of the distant mountains. All remained quiet during this retrograde movement until midnight, when suddenly the army was startled by a volley of musketry flashing out of the gloom in its rear, accompanied with the discharge of two pieces of cannon. For half an hour this continued to increase, till the whole force became involved in a singular and indescribable skirmishing fire. Making every possible noise, and vociferously blowing their trumpets, the Persian cavalry galloped furiously to and fro, while a Persian bugler in the dark got close to the ranks of the 78th Highlanders and sounded the British bugle-calls, "cease firing," and then "march to the left," but the Highlanders, whom he failed to mislead, remained steady. The yells, shouts, and bugle-calls ceased after a time; the enemy satisfied with the *alerte* they had given, drew off, and in silence the British remained under arms awaiting the dawn, before which five heavy guns were opened on us by the Persians with great precision. They had the range accurately, and succeeded in killing and wounding several officers, soldiers, camp-followers, and baggage animals; and when day fully broke, the enemy were seen in front to the number of 6,900 men, with eighteen pieces of cannon.

Their detailed strength in the field was as follows:—Guards, 900; two Karragoozloo battalions, 1,500; the Shiraz regiment, 200; the corps of Tabriz, 800; the Arab regiment, 900; Kaskai, 800; Sufengchees, 1,000; cavalry of Shiraz, 300; Elkhanee, 500 = 800 sabres. The infantry were all clad in dark blue, with conical caps of black fur. Their knowledge of our bugle-calls is to be accounted for from the circumstance, that European discipline had been first introduced into the Persian army by two Scottish officers during the early part of the present century. The first Persian artillery corps was organised by Lieutenant Lindsay, of the Madras army, who had every difficulty

thrown in his way by the prejudice and ignorance of the Mohammedans. Though the Shah gave him unlimited power over his soldiers, it was only on the article of shaving off beards that the prince was inexorable, nor would that sacrifice ever have taken place had it not happened that, on firing the guns before him, a powder-horn exploded in the hand of a gunner, whose long beard was blown away from his chin. Lieutenant Lindsay lost no time in proving his argument on the encumbrance of beards to soldiers, and immediately produced the scorched and mutilated gunner before the Shah, who was so struck with his woeful appearance that the military beard was at once abolished. "The *Serbaz*, or infantry, were then placed under the command of Major Christie, of the Bombay army, an officer of the greatest merit, who inspired his troops with an *esprit de corps* that manifested itself on many occasions."* Another Scotsman, Dr. Campbell, was head of the medical staff, when, in 1816, Prince Abbas Meerza encamped the Persian army in the plain of Yam, in Azerbijan.

But to return from this digression, on the morning of the 8th of February, when the mist drew up like a curtain, the Persian army had its right flank resting on the village which gave its name to the conflict—Khoosh-ab. In its front lay several dry water-courses, which were lined with skirmishers, and a cannonade on both sides preluded the closer strife. Sir James Outram now changed his front, and advanced with such speed that our loss was small when the weight of the Persian fire is considered.

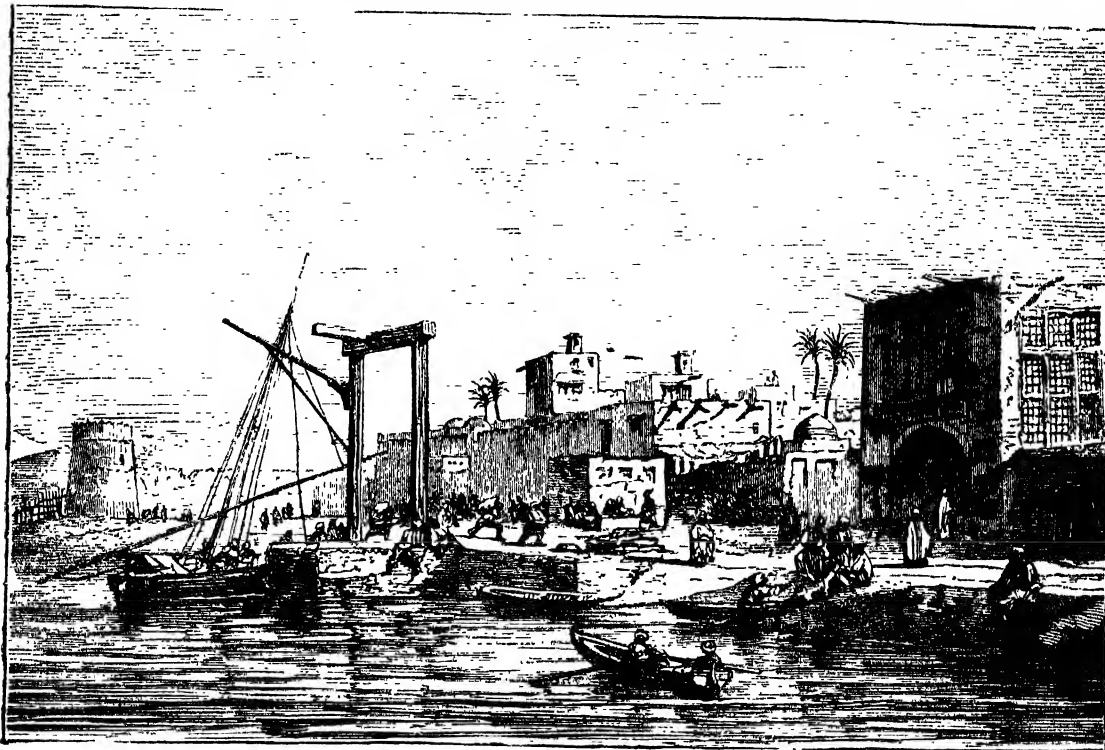
The latter was soon silenced by our batteries, while our cavalry, headed by the 3rd Bombay, in one brilliant charge swept theirs out of the field like chaff before the wind; and when the line closed up there were only three battalions of Persians that stood their ground at all, or retired like trained troops. The following is an abridgment of Sir James Outram's despatch to Lieutenant-General Sir H. Somerset, Commander-in-chief, Bombay, dated from the camp near Bushire, 10th of February, 1857, detailing the defeat of the Persian army, under Shooja-ool-Moolk:—

"The enemy's loss in killed and wounded must have been very great. It is impossible to compute the amount, but from the number of bodies which strewed the ground of contest, extending several miles, I should say that fully 700 must have fallen. Two brass nine-pounder guns, with their carriages and horses, eight mules laden with ammunition and several hundred stand of arms were taken, and the Persian commander-in-chief, with the remainder

* Morier's "Travels."

of his army, only escaped annihilation owing to the numerical weakness of our cavalry. . . . I have to regret the loss of Lieutenant Frankland, 2nd European Regiment, who was acting as brigade-major of cavalry, and was killed in the first cavalry charge; Captain Forbes also, who commanded, and most gallantly led, the 3rd Cavalry, and Lieutenant Greentree, 64th Foot, were severely wounded. . . . I myself had very little to do with the action, being stunned by my horse falling with me at the commencement of the contest, and recovering only in time to resume

the whole brunt of the action, as the enemy moved away too rapidly for the infantry to overtake them. By ten o'clock the defeat of the Persians was complete. . . . The number of wounded could not be ascertained, but it must have been very large. The remainder fled in a disorganised state, generally throwing away their arms, which strewed the field in vast numbers, and nothing but the paucity of our cavalry prevented their total destruction, and the capture of the remaining guns. The troops bivouacked for the day close to the battle-field, and at night accomplished a march



VIEW OF THE FORT OF BUSHIRE.

my place at the head of the army shortly before the close of this action.

* * * * *

"At daybreak the Persian force, between 6,000 and 7,000 men, with some guns, was discovered on our rear left (north-east of our line of march) in order of battle. Our artillery and cavalry moved rapidly to the attack, supported by two lines of infantry, a third protecting the baggage. The firing of the artillery was most excellent, and did great execution; the cavalry brigade charged twice with great gallantry and success; a standard of the Kaskai Regular Infantry was captured by the Poonah Horse; the 3rd Light Cavalry charged a square, and nearly killed the whole regiment; indeed, upon the cavalry and artillery fell nearly

of twenty miles over a country almost impassable by the heavy rain which fell incessantly. After a rest of six hours, the greater portion of the infantry continued their march to Bushire, which they reached before midnight, thus performing another most arduous march of forty-four miles under incessant rain, besides fighting and defeating the enemy during its progress, within the short period of fifty hours. The cavalry and artillery reached camp this morning. . . . The rapid retreat of the enemy afforded but little opportunity for deeds of special gallantry. I have already alluded to the successful charges made by the 3rd Cavalry and Poonah Horse, under Captain Forbes and Lieutenant-Colonel Tapp, and to the very efficient service performed by the artillery

under Lieutenant-Colonel Trevelyan. The brigadiers commanding the infantry brigades—Wilson, Sisted, and Housier—with the several commanding officers of regiments, and, indeed, every officer and soldier of the force, earned my warmest approbation."

In the charge of the 3rd Cavalry, Lieutenant A. Moore won the Victoria Cross. He was the first man within the square of infantry. His horse was shot under him, and he was on the point of being bayoneted, when Lieutenant John Grant Malcolmson, of the same regiment, rode to his assistance, cut down the Persians on right and left, and by dragging him out of the enemy's square, also won the much-prized Order of Valour.

The grand total of our killed, wounded, and dead from wounds, was only seventy-seven of all ranks.

For their bravery on this occasion, the 78th Highlanders have on their colours and appointments the word "Khoosh-ab."

"There is a fine spirit in this regiment," wrote Havelock, in his confidential report. "I am given to understand that it behaved remarkably well at the battle of Khoosh-ab, near Bushire, which took place before I reached the army; and during the naval action on the Euphrates, and its landing here (in Persia), its steadiness, zeal, and activity, under my own observation, were conspicuous. . . . It is proud of its colours, its tartan, and its former high achievements."

As stated in the despatch, the troops rested on the field and refreshed themselves; but when they resumed their line of march again, the chilling torrents of rain began to fall. Great were the sufferings of our soldiers, but greater still were their patience, endurance, and heroic fortitude. The cold to which they were exposed was intense; and the season was especially severe, although the winter in that part of Persia is generally cold and wet, with dreadful tempests of hail. On the night

after the battle our men bivouacked in what was literally half-frozen mire. It was knee-deep, and nearly reached to the kilts of the Highlanders; yet rain continued to fall, while a sharp and biting wind swept in gusts over the treeless waste. Our troops came into Bushire without the loss of a straggler, bringing with them all the wounded, and even the dead, whom Outram resolved to bury within our lines with all the honour due to British soldiers.

For several days the rain continued to fall at Bushire, on the ramparts of which the British flag flapped heavily in the sea-breeze above the Persian Lion. A few fine mornings, however, enabled the troops to take exercise, and during this interval it was, that Brigadiers Havelock and Hamilton arrived from India to assume their commands. After the 14th of February the lines were again deluged with rain; but so excellent were the arrangements of Outram, that the health and spirit of the troops never drooped. Reinforcements arrived, but the furious surf that burst upon the shore prevented them from landing. A good arrangement of the commissariat—a piece of fortune rarely known in British armies—prevented the inconvenience which thus arose from getting the sea supplies for the men and cattle.

On the night of the 22nd of February the camp fires of the Persians were seen to dot, as it were, with red flaming spots, the dark ranges of the distant hills; and though their cavalry patrols avoided all encounters and demonstrations by day, they never omitted an opportunity by night of cutting off any straggling camp-follower. Outram fortified the British lines by the erection of strong redoubts, which he armed with heavy sixty-eight-pounders; and matters remained thus till the 4th of March, 1857, when an amelioration of the weather suggested to Sir James the embarkation of his forces for an expedition against Mohammerah.*

CHAPTER XXXIX.

THE WAR IN PERSIA.—EXPEDITION TO MOHAMMERAH ON THE EUPHRATES.—THE AFFAIR OF AKWAZ.—PEACE WITH PERSIA.—RESIGNATION OF LORD DALHOUSIE.

For the Mohammerah service the arrangements of General Outram were as follows:—General Stalker was to remain in command at Bushire, with Brigadiers Wilson and Tapp, with two field-batteries, the mountain trains, the entire cavalry of the first division, and three companies from H.M. 64th and from the Highlanders, the 4th

Rifles, the 20th Native Infantry, and the Belooch Battalion.

* For the circumstances attending the embarkation, and the arrival of the troops before that place, we are chiefly indebted to the pages of one who was an eye-witness and participator in the events of the war we waged on classic ground—Captain George Henry Hunt, of the Ross-shire Highlanders, together with Townsend's "Persian Campaign," &c.

Sir James was to proceed himself with the remainder, mustering about 4,000 men of all arms, those left for the defence of Bushire being about 3,000. The accounts of the Persian force in Mohammerah varied; some averred that it was held by from 10,000 to 13,000 men, with a numerous cavalry force in its vicinity, and had seven of the Shah's best regular regiments as its garrison. The works of the forts, or batteries, were described as formidable parapets of earth, eighteen or twenty feet thick, with heavy guns pointed towards the river. To encounter these until the troops should arrive and be in readiness to storm them, were the broadsides of the *Clive* and *Falkland* sloops; the *Ajdaha*, *Feroze*, *Semiramis*, *Victoria*, and *Assaye* steam frigates, which were to encounter the enemy's fire at 100 yards' distance.

The supposed general difficulty of the undertaking, only seemed to make the gallant Outram more resolved to accomplish it, and rumour affirmed that a mis-timed remonstrance from the Turkish Government against our attacking a place so near their own possessions only hastened his operations. On the 6th of March the *Falkland* sailed for the Euphrates; and about the same time H.M. 64th Regiment embarked in the *Bride of the Sea* transport, while the *Feroze*, *Pottenger*, and *Pioneer* entered the roads, bringing a troop of horse artillery and the long-looked-for Scinde Cavalry.

At the same time there came tidings that a new Persian general had assumed the command of the army recently beaten at Khoosh-ab; that he had brought with him considerable reinforcements, intending to advance; and that strong hopes, if not actual expectations, were entertained that he might be induced, when the departure of so large a portion of our force became known, to attack the camp, and try the strength of our new redoubts, and thus give the troops remaining behind an equal opportunity of honour and distinction with those who were departing.*

On the afternoon of the 6th, the *Kingston*, with four other transports, worked out of Bushire Roads, and early next morning were off the desolate-looking and rocky isle of Karrack—the *Icarus* of Alexander—which a detachment of the 4th Rifles held as a coaling station for the Indian Navy. By daylight on the 8th, the mouth of the Euphrates, that famous stream of classical and sacred antiquity, was in sight—"the river of Desire"—rolling into the Gulf of Persia as it rolled in the days of Xenophon.

With the *Falkland* sloop leading, under a cloud of canvas, the eight or ten vessels that had now

made for the same point, the anchorage was reached in the course of the day, and the cavalry patrols of the Persians were seen hovering near the beach, but though quite within gun-range, no shot was fired at them. A considerable body of their irregular cavalry and infantry occupied the village of Mahamur, opposite the anchorage, and had posted pickets in some ruinous buildings within rifle-range. The Persian cavalry along the bank of the great stream were seen, from time to time, indulging in feats of horsemanship, not unlike many seen only in a circus in Europe, while flourishing their swords and poising their lances, as if to impress the British with ideas of the dangers that were before them.

But now, while the troops were impatiently waiting to be led against Mohammerah, General Stalker committed suicide at Bushire. It would seem that this unfortunate officer, on finding that, by the departure of Sir James Outram, he was to have sole command in Bushire, became overwhelmed by a sense of responsibility, though in reality a most efficient and highly-honoured soldier; and, most singular to say, Captain Ettensey, the naval chief of the expedition, influenced, doubtless, by the event, perished by his own hand, from a consciousness of incompetency for the great task that devolved upon him.

Until the 23rd of March, the squadron, with the troops on board, remained at anchor. With their field-glasses, the officers from the tops reconnoitred the shore with ease; and on the night of the 24th, a boat, with muffled oars, having on board some of the staff, stole in to select a position for a mortar battery, and, unseen and unheard, passed under the cannon of Mohammerah; but as the darkness was great, not much was effected in the way of a reconnaissance. Meanwhile, the enemy were trenching hard at their works; and a Captain Maisonneuve, of *La Sibylle*, a French man-of-war, then on a cruise of observation in the gulf, under the pretence of a display of alliance, made energetic representations to the British of the vast strength of the enemy's position, and the incompetence of Outram's force to attack it, in the hope that the latter would yield to his opinion, and incur the disgrace of abandoning the enterprise.

Our active preparations continued until the dawn of the 25th, when the attack began, and in this the seamen of the Indian Navy, by their intelligence, order, and activity, showed that they were in no way inferior to their mess-mates of the royal service. On the night of the 25th, a gallant and useful manœuvre was executed. A raft, with two eight-inch and two five-inch mortars, was moored

* Captain Hunt.

behind a low island in the middle of the Euphrates, and fronting the most formidable battery of the Persians.

"The cool daring of the men who placed, and of the little band of artillery who remained on this raft for several hours of darkness in the middle of a rapid river, without means of retreat, and certain destruction staring them in the face, should the enemy, within but a few hundred yards, be aroused to the fact of their presence, requires no commendation. The simple narrative of the event as it occurred is sufficient." Of their presence there the enemy remained in perfect ignorance till daybreak, when the first shell thrown from the raft slew eleven of them as it exploded in the great battery, where they were engaged in prayer, and where the survivors were filled with consternation and wonder. This was the signal for the attacking ships to get under weigh, and engage the batteries, where the Persian gunners, clad in blue surtouts, with black fur caps, were already standing by their artillery.

The *Semiramis*, with the commodore's pennant flying, Captain Young, of the Indian Navy, and towing the *Clive*, twelve-gun sloop, led the squadron, says Mr. George Townsend, followed by the steam frigates *Adaha*, *Force*, *Asaye*, and *Victoria*, the latter towing the *Falkland*, twelve-gun sloop, which she cast off when in position. "The leading ships passing the lower batteries, and opening their guns as they could be brought to bear, were soon at their respective posts, followed in quick succession by the rear division, and but a few minutes elapsed after the *Semiramis* had fired her first gun before the action became general, the Persian artillery replying with spirit, the morning being very clear, with just sufficient breeze to prevent the smoke from collecting. A more beautiful scene than was then presented, can scarcely be imagined. The ships, with ensigns flying out from every mast-head, seemed decked for a holiday; the river glittering in the early sunlight, its dark date-fringed bank contrasting most effectively with the snow-white canvas of the *Falkland*, which had loosened sails to get into closer action; the sulkily-looking batteries just visible through the grey, fleecy cloud which enveloped them; and groups of brightly-dressed horsemen flitting at intervals between the trees, where they had an encampment—formed altogether a picture, from which even the excitement of the heavy cannonade around could not divert attention." *

The Persian cavalry were clad in light blue uniforms, with white cross-belts. The calmness of

the day and smoothness of the water enabled steady aim to be taken; hence, very few of our shots were thrown away. And now, loud and high, between the din of the cannonade, were heard the pipes of the Highlanders, who, under Havelock, on board the *Berenice*, led the column for disembarkation. So crowded was her deck with these men—the future heroes of Lucknow—that, had a single shot plunged into their mass, the havoc would have been dreadful; but that peril was escaped; and the conduct of the Indian Navy in covering the landing was above all praise. At the critical moment, when the first boat with its freight of Highlanders drew near, they kept up such a succession of broadsides as quite to distract the attention of the enemy from the approaching transports. The latter were all armed with one gun or more, and these were all in operation now, and skilfully handled; and we are told that the "reckless exposure of the sailors of the Indian Navy must have filled the enemy with surprise, as it did the British army with admiration. The enthusiasm of these gallant tars equalled their audacity; in the midst of the furious cannonade, they cheered vociferously each detachment of the troops as they passed between the ships on their way to what appeared still greater dangers and more formidable encounters."

By two o'clock the infantry and some field-pieces were on shore, but the creeks of the river were so filled by the rising tide, that the passage of the Horse Artillery and of the 14th Light Dragoons was intercepted. Outram ordered all that were ashore to advance with him, and then the grenadiers of H.M. 64th opened fire on the Persian matchlockmen, while the troops passed on till they reached the extremity of the groves of date-palms, which covered the line of advance and concealed the enemy's position; then, all at once, their lines came in view as our troops emerged beyond the intercepting wood. By this time, the deep and hoarse booming of the cannonade had died away between the ships and batteries, in the chief of which the explosion of a great magazine had destroyed many of the guns and filled the Persians with dismay.

From the verge of the date grove, General Outram could now perceive that the position of the enemy consisted of the town and batteries flanked by intrenched works, which were thrown back to the rear of Mohammerah; and in front of these his formation was thus:—A line of contiguous quarter-distance columns, with a field battery on the right flank. Then came the 78th Highlanders; then a wing of the 25th Native Infantry, H.M. 64th, the 4th Rifles, and 23rd Bengal Light Infantry; a cloud

* "Outram and Havelock's Persian Campaign."

of skirmishers covering the front with a close and sputtering file fire. The main point to be attacked was a camp to the left rear of the town of Mohammerah, where the Shahzadeh, uncle of the Shah Nasser-ed-Deen, had placed his cavalry and guns. His infantry had occupied another camp, about 500 yards to the right of this, and had also been quartered in considerable numbers in the batteries and adjacent date groves. At the moment of our advancing, these troops were drawn up in order of battle outside the camp of the Shahzadeh, who is said to have been appalled, when one of our sixty-eight-pound shots was shown him, and said, "Oh! if they fire such things as these, we had better be off!" The right of his line far out-flanked our left, which had actually no protection, when it marched into the open plain, and saw the 23rd Native Infantry thrown obliquely back. The scene which now ensued was a singular one.

The British advanced boldly in compact order of battle, and with a confident pace, with bayonets fixed, and colours waving in the centre of each battalion; but, "to their astonishment, as if the hosts of the enemy were a dissolving view, they melted away. The Persian soldiery refused to fight; battalion after battalion vanished, and with such rapidity, that before the British could recover from their astonishment the grand army of the Shah had disappeared!"

The advice of the Shahzadeh to "be off" had been obeyed implicitly. Every tent remained standing, and the ground around them was littered with arms and ammunition, accoutrements, garments, and shot, which, with fragments of shell, had come from our shipping. The dead lay there in ghastly numbers, but few wounded, as the others had been borne away, or were concealed by the people of Mohammerah.

The gross inefficiency of our shells was evinced by the number that lay there unexploded. As the timid Persians fled, hordes of Arab robbers drew near to plunder the camp, but were put to flight by the 14th Light Dragoons; while Sir James Outram pressed on the Persian rear. The Scinde Horse made incredible exertions to overtake them, but could only come upon a few wounded stragglers, who were murdered by the Arabs, partly from animosity and partly from love of pillage. Outram felt himself powerless to pursue effectually from one of the old causes of British inefficiency—an inadequate cavalry force.

There were taken in camp eighteen beautiful brass guns and mortars; among them was a Russian twelve-pounder, cast in 1828, bearing an inscription to the effect that it was a present from Nicholas,

Emperor of Russia, to the Shah. The Persians killed amounted to about 500; but the wounded who died on the retreat, or were murdered by the Arabs, would increase that number by hundreds more; so their total loss could not have been less than 1,000 men.

Our casualties were only ten men killed and thirty-one wounded, including Lieutenant Harris, of the Indian Navy. The fire of the Persian artillery was undoubtedly good, hulling the ships, and cutting up their rigging; several boats were destroyed, but many lives were saved on board ship by the simple precaution of placing trusses of hay round their sides.

When our officers had leisure to look around them and examine Mohammerah, they were astonished by the strength of the place they had captured so easily; and it was found that Captain Maisonneuve had not over-estimated the defences of the position. "Nothing but stout hearts within them was required to make their capture a matter of bloody price to the victors," wrote an officer of the staff; "and, happily for us, these were wanting. Solid earthworks, open in rear, with parapets eighteen feet thick and twenty-five in height, riveted with date-stumps (which the heaviest shot will not splinter), and the whole interior thickly studded with pits full of water to catch our shells, had been the work cut out for us. The north battery had embrasures for eighteen guns, and stood on the right bank of the Karoon, at its junction with the Euphrates, and looked down the stream of that river. The south battery had eleven guns, and was on the opposite bank of the Karoon, commanding in the same direction. A small fort between the north battery and the town, and connected with the former by a long intrenchment, with embrasures for guns, mounted eight or ten pieces. This intrenchment, crowded with infantry, had kept up a heavy musketry fire during the whole action; and from the broken pieces of arms and appointments lying about, as well as patches of blood in all directions, our shot must have told fearfully among its occupants. Several minor batteries, of from two to four guns each, were on either bank, and just outside the west face of the town, on the right bank, was a very carefully-made and strong work for ten guns. The whole of the works bore marks of very rough treatment from our shot, though they were far from being ruined. Outside the small fort connected with the north battery, was a capsized brass twelve-pounder, with the carriage smashed, and three dead horses harnessed to it, all evidently killed at the same moment, if not by the same shot. A captain of

artillery and three gunners were also lying dead beside it." In a pocket of this unfortunate officer

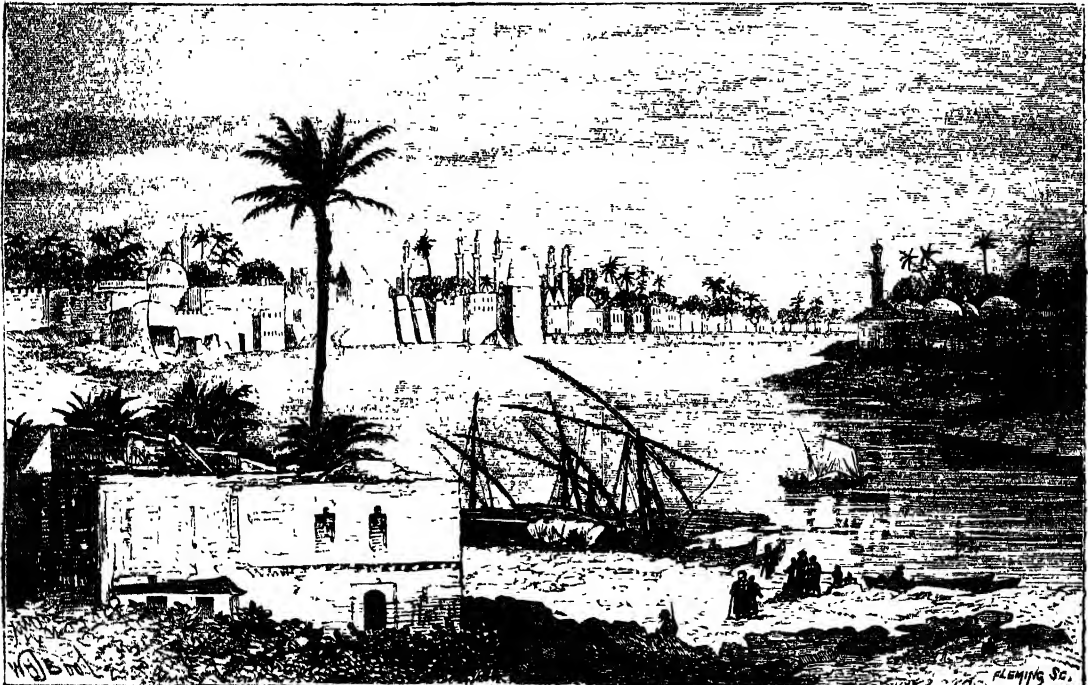
The staff-officer before quoted says, that the effect of our sixty-eight-pound shot upon the



A STREET IN BAGDAD.

was found a letter, stating the belief on his part that a great battle would be fought out on the morrow, adding a foreboding of his own fate, and with some tenderness entrusting the care of his

date-trees was most extraordinary, a single one sufficing to break even the largest. The great size and the range of the missiles had given rise to a panic among the Persian troops, and hence caused



VIEW OF BAGDAD.

wife and children to his brother in Teheran. Our political agent at Bagdad subsequently very properly forwarded this interesting letter to the address it bore in the Persian capital.

their dastardly conduct. Much discouragement was also said to have been occasioned in their ranks by the loss of Aga Jan 'Khan, a *Surteep*, or general of division, who fell, des-

perately wounded, early in the day, in the north battery. The corpses of those who perished by our cannon-shot presented harrowing spec-

the hideous, eyeless black mask that had once been a countenance still grinning, as it were, at the beholder."



PORTRAIT OF NASSER-ED-DEEN, SHAH OF PERSIA.

tacles. "A huge African, in particular, struck on the back of the head by a round shot, which had carried away all the bones of the skull and face, lay across another dead soldier, with

Where the explosion of the grand magazine took place, the scene was awful—legs, arms, heads, and other wretched and mangled remains of humanity, protruding among the blackened and blasted ruins;

and there, too, lay wounded Persians, with their ghastly scars, exposed, undressed, to the hot sun, the whirling dust, and the stings of the insects that battered in their blood.

The 27th and 28th of March were employed in the collection and removal of guns and stores, in landing supplies and our own tents for the troops, who, with the exception of those to whom the Persian tents had fallen prizes, had, up to that time, been in the open air.

And now, Sir James Outram, having ascertained that the enemy had retreated, with the intention of halting at a place named Akwaz, about a hundred miles distant, on the Karoon, where they had a grand depot of all kinds of munition of war, resolved to send some steamers up that Persian river, with a detachment of troops, to do all the damage and destruction possible before the fugitive army could reach it.

The steam squadron consisted of the *Comet*, *Planet*, and *Assyria*, under Commander Rennie, of the Indian Navy, whose experiences of river warfare in Burmah and China had been considerable.

The stream to be navigated disembogues into the Persian Gulf by many channels, one of which joins the Euphrates. After its union with two tributaries at Bundikir it becomes a noble river, "exceeding in size the Tigris and Euphrates,"^a and well suited for steam navigation.

The troops detailed for the service on its bank were 150 men of the grenadiers and light company of the 64th Regiment; "a like number furnished by Captain McAndrew's companies of the Highlanders. Each steamer took 100 men, the light company of the Highlanders going in the *Comet*; Captain Goode's grenadiers of the 64th in the *Planet*; and Captain McAndrew, with part of his own Highlanders and part of the light company of the 64th, in the *Assyria*."

These troops were accompanied by Captain Wray, the Deputy Quartermaster-General, Captain Green, Sir James Outram's military secretary, and Captain Kemball, our consul and political agent at Bagdad. On the morning of the 29th of March the steamers quitted Mohammerah, each having in tow a gunboat, armed with two twenty-four-pound howitzers. After sunset, on the first day of sailing, a party of officers landed, and detected the ground on which the retreating Persians had bivouacked, and the wheel-marks of five guns could be traced, with those of a small carriage. Getting under steam by dawn, next day, the ruinous Mosque of Imaum Seibbeh was

reached in the afternoon, and there our explorers again found marks of the enemy's camping-ground, so fresh that they must have been there but twenty-four hours before.

Several recently-made graves also afforded evidence that they had buried their dead by the way; while the total absence of bones or scraps of food about the bivouac fires and picket posts, proved that they were pressed for time, or were without food and forage. Again the squadron got under steam; and on reaching the Arab village of Ismaini, Commander Rennie ascertained that the enemy had passed through it but the day before, and that their force consisted of seven regiments of foot, 2,000 horse, and four guns, with a fifth, unserviceable, towed in a boat up the river.

On the 31st, at dawn, the *Comet* cast off the *Assyria*, put on her utmost power of steam, and went ahead, expecting to capture the boat with the gun; and soon after nine in the morning, a straggler from the rear-guard was captured, brought on board, and questioned: but he was so exhausted by hunger, fatigue, and fear, that his answers were incoherent; from some Arabs it was ascertained that the enemy, still towing the disabled gun, had reached the town in safety. The remainder of our squadron came up in the evening, and early in the morning of the 1st of April the whole steamed up towards Akwaz, which occupies the left bank of the river, and the Persian army was seen, under arms, on its right.

Their formidable cavalry force, together with their infantry, massed in four columns, were partly screened by a low range of sand hills, which lay in their front that faced the river. Near a mosque in their centre were seen three guns, with a fourth on a slope near their left; and their cavalry patrols galloped to and fro within rifle-range, while the little squadron steamed slowly abreast of the position. A boat beneath the left bank escaped notice for a time, till a cutter from the *Comet*, with a corporal's guard of the 78th Highlanders, went off, and discovered her to be the towed craft, with a beautiful brass twelve-pounder on board, which was at once slung to the *Comet's* deck.

Some Arabs now hailed the shipping from the shore: and one, who came on board, volunteered the information that the garrison of Akwaz did not exceed 500 infantry, with thirty horsemen, left to protect the stores, which had scarcely been touched by the enemy as yet. As all this seemed reliable, it was resolved to make an attempt on the town, by landing on the left bank, and making a detour, out of cannon-shot, towards its eastern face, when, if it should be found of greater strength

^a Layard.

than was reported, a mere reconnaissance was to be made, and then an orderly retreat to the boats. If practicable, the town was to be stormed and the stores burned. A gun-boat was ordered to ascend the Karoon as far as possible, without rashness, and open fire with two howitzers; and, as there were only two small boats on that side of the river where the Persian army lay, it was evident that no great reinforcement could reach the garrison of Akwaz.

The gunboat performed its service admirably, under the direction of Mr. Hewitt, of the Indian Navy, while dispositions were ingeniously made to lead the enemy to believe that Renne's force was but the advance guard of a great flotilla. A single line of skirmishers, each twelve paces apart, first issued from the bushes on the plain in view of the enemy; 100 yards in rear followed their supports, also in single rank. At another interval of 100 yards the three principal detachments came on, about 200 yards apart, advancing in sections of threes (the formation in those days), and opened out to very wide intervals. The light company of the Highlanders was on the left, and when entering the town had to wheel to the left, and getting under cover at the water's edge, had orders to keep down the enemy's fire.

The grenadiers of the 64th, under Captain Winter Goode, were in the centre, with orders to penetrate to the heart of the town, and at once begin the destruction of the stores. Captain J. Duncan McAndrew (who had served with the 40th in Afghanistan) was on the right, with a mixed detachment of his Highlanders; and the 64th was to wheel to the right on entering, to face any troops that might approach that front of the town, and destroy everything that came in the way.

The garrison did not wait the issue of all these arrangements, but took to flight, and crossing the river far above Akwaz, joined the army on the other bank; while the Shakh, with a long retinue of religious persons, came to solicit protection, and he was assured that if he showed where the stores lay, all private property would be respected. As the Persian army still remained menacingly in its position, circumspection was necessary. A shell, splendidly thrown from one of our howitzers, fell into the quarters of the Shahzadeh, and nearly destroyed a mosque. On this, that official became so alarmed, that he gave instant orders for a retreat upon Shustee, a city in the province of Khuzistan, where the Karoon is crossed by a bridge 300 yards in length. There lay his next nearest depôt, but at a long distance for an army to march that was

leaving all its stores behind; 10,000 men nearly, thus fled from 300, surrendering a city, with all their magazines of food and ammunition.

"Their infantry," wrote an eye-witness, "keeping in four distinct masses, went off first, taking the four guns seen in position with them; they were also said to have had three others with them of lighter metal. A small green palanquin carriage, with glass windows, and a *takhteridan*, or mule-litter, in which Persian women of rank usually travel, were conspicuous in the midst of a large escort. This was the carriage the tracks of which had been found in several of the bivouacs. The cavalry brought up the rear, and a magnificent appearance this great body of horse presented. They certainly exceeded 2,000 in number, and were dressed in long blue frocks, with trousers of a lighter colour, white belts, and high black lambskin caps peculiar to the Persians. A sabre and long matchlock slung across their backs, appeared to be their only weapons, as (unusual in Asiatics) no lances were visible among them. The pick of the Bactdyari tribes, reputed the Shah's best cavalry, were present among the number. They carried three standards, but in crimson cases, not flying. One of these horsemen remained concealed behind a wall until their whole army had proceeded about a mile, then suddenly starting from his hiding-place, he fired his matchlock at the town, as if in defiance, and galloped off at full speed after his comrades. This was the last man seen of the Persian army."

The rear-guard had scarcely quitted their lines when a gunboat went across, taking Captains Wray and Green, with Lord Schomberg Kerr (son of the Marquis of Lothrin) and twenty Highlanders, who, with perfect impunity, blew up a quantity of ammunition which had been abandoned. The Persians made no attempt to cut this little party off, which they might have done with ease, though they unlimbered a light gun, and shot at some Arab marauders, who were swimming the river to pillage in the empty lines. By mid-day the last gleam of the Persian arms had faded away in the distance.

All that time the work of destroying the stores in Akwaz had been quickly proceeding, after as much wheat and flour as the steamers could carry had been stowed on board of them, and vast quantities given to the Arabs. In addition to the grain, there were taken here fifteen cases of new firelocks and bayonets, fifty-six fine mules, a beautiful horse of the Shahzadeh's, and a great stock of trenching tools. All the fire-arms were of British manufacture, and bore the Tower mark. A

captured flock of sheep was divided between the squadron and the townspeople.

The 2nd and 3rd of April were occupied by our political agent receiving the submission of the Sheikhs of the surrounding districts; and while these events were occurring at Akwaz, there were negotiations for peace in progress at Paris, where it was concluded on the 4th of March. Tidings of this reached Mohammerah on the same day that the expeditionary force from Akwaz came into camp at head-quarters, after which Sir James Outram put himself in communication with the nearest Persian authorities with reference to the fulfilment of the treaty.

He arranged that a small garrison should remain in Bushire after the rest of the army had returned to India. In the ranks of his force great dissatisfaction prevailed with reference to the easy terms granted to the Persian envoys at Paris; and a general impression existed that the Emperor of France, or his foreign minister, was rather anxious, by interposition, to prevent us from gaining either renown or permanent influence in Persia. It was alleged by some that Lord Clarendon had been too facile, and that he and Lord Palmerston displayed too much eagerness to please the Emperor of France in making peace with the enemy; but the troops engaged became a useful reinforcement to the army of India, then struggling against the revolt in the provinces of Bengal and Central India. Hence it may not be without interest to give the detail, as issued by general order, in the camp at Mohammerah on the 9th of May, 1857, showing the places for whence these troops were destined.

"1st. The third troop of Horse Artillery to Kurrachee; first company, 2nd Battalion of Artillery, to Kurrachee; reserve companies, to Bombay; H.M. 64th Regiment to Vingorla; H.M. 78th Highlanders to Bombay; the light battalion to Bombay; Madras Sappers and Miners to Bombay.

"2nd. The 23rd and 26th Native Infantry are transferred to the first division, and will proceed to Bushire, with the detachment of Scinde Horse and Land Transport Corps now at Mohammerah.

"3rd. The staff of the second division will return to Bombay, with the exception of the Engineers, ordnance, and commissariat departments, which will proceed to Bushire, and await further instructions.

"4th. Brigadier-General Jacob, C.B., will command the troops stationed in Bushire, which will be organised as follows:—*Cavalry Brigade*: 3rd Regiment of Light Cavalry, Scinde Horse, Poonah Horse, the Aden Troop, 14th Queen's Light

Dragoons—Brigadier Stewart. *Artillery Brigade*: 4th Troop Horse Artillery, 5th Light Field Battery, 8th Light Field Battery, three companies of the 2nd Battalion of Artillery, four companies of the 4th Battalion of Artillery—Lieutenant-Colonel Trevelyan. *Infantry*: 20th Regiment of Native Infantry, 26th Regiment of Native Infantry—first brigade, Colonel Macan; 4th Bengal Native Infantry, 23rd Native Light Infantry, Belooch Battalion—second brigade, Colonel Housier.

"5th. The Lieutenant-General avails himself of this opportunity to return his warmest thanks to the whole of the troops placed under his command for service in Persia, for their very exemplary conduct since their arrival in this country, evinced by the fact of scarcely one instance of misconduct on the part of any individual having been brought to his notice. This entire absence of crime among so large a body of troops assembled in camp redounds to the credit of both officers and men, and is the strongest possible proof of the high state of discipline in the force; whilst their conduct throughout the expedition to Bras-joon, and in the engagement at Khoosh-ab, bore ample testimony to the gallantry of all ranks before an enemy, and to their patient and cheerful endurance of fatigue and hardship under most trying circumstances."

It was on the 15th of May that Brigadier Henry Havelock, with the staff of his late command, embarked on board the *Berenice*, the same vessel in which, with the Highlanders, he had faced the fire of the batteries at Mohammerah; the 23rd saw her in harbour at Bombay, when the terrible intelligence of the sepoy revolt stirred in the inmost chord of every heart. Without landing, the Highlanders and 64th, full of eagerness and impatience, were dispatched for disembarkation at a point nearer the scene of action.

Henry Havelock, who was to be the chief saviour of our Indian empire in the terrible emergency that was every day growing darker, deeper, and more sanguinary, left Bombay in the *Erin* on the 1st of June, following the troops that had already been sent on. Off the island of Ceylon, and near a small civil station called Caltura, between Galle and Colombo, she struck upon a reef, and the loss of all on board seemed imminent. The cowardly crew of Lascars refused to go aloft and take in canvas to ease the ship, but lay huddled below in craven fear and fanatical indifference, while the British officers performed their work; and to the coolness, example, and firmness of all—but principally of Havelock—was it due that every soul on board did not perish.

On the 8th of June, he and his staff got on board

the *Five Queen*; the 12th saw her in the roads of Madras; and on the 17th she reached Calcutta, bringing with her the new Commander-in-chief of the Bengal Presidency, Lieutenant-General Sir Patrick Grant, C.B., an officer who had entered the service of the Company in 1819, and served at Maharajahpore, at Moodkee, and Sobraon, receiving two severe wounds, and having three horses shot under him, and who had married a daughter of the veteran, Viscount Gough, so well known in the wars of India.

The arrival of these officers at Calcutta—but more especially Havelock—infused joy and hope into the hearts of many whose courage had begun to droop under the dreadful tidings that daily came from Central India and elsewhere, and the cause of which shall be given in a future chapter.

To preserve order in the narration of the Persian campaign we have omitted to mention, under its date, the departure of Lord Dalhousie from India. Previous to that event, his successor, Viscount Canning, arrived, and the two nobles met at Government House, amid festivities and splendour, balls and banquets. On the day of Lord Dalhousie's departure, wrote one who was present, "as early as four in the morning, the regiments began to gather, and by half-past four the companies had lined the road from the palace to the steamer; and here, again, I had the opportunity of admiring the drill and tactics of the sepoy troops. Many of them are noble-looking fellows, and some of the native officers compare favourably with the white man.

"The Household Troops, or Body Guard, are all picked men, and you would not wish to see a finer body of cavalry. At five o'clock the guns from the fort began to roar, and we at once knew that his lordship had started from Government House. An hour later the Governor was in his yacht; the regiments were marching to their barracks; the friends of the Governor, under Princep's monumental tablet, had given the last wave of the handkerchief, and resumed their carriages and their gossip; the pleasure-seekers were again upon the course to comment upon the occurrences of his departure; the coolies began to disperse; the cannon were hushed; the bells ceased to vibrate; and Lord Dalhousie was on his way to Britain to be censured and be praised, while Lord Canning was left to govern India."

But, save for what was called his annexation policy, no censure fell on the name of Dalhousie at home, while in India his social qualities had endeared him to all, and to none more than the

troops.* Moved by an emotion of admiration of the great ruler who had improved, enlarged, and consolidated the empire of British India, the entire population of Calcutta crowded the plain to witness his departure, and to testify their regret.

As he was only forty-four years of age when he quitted India on the 6th of March, 1856, it was fondly hoped that he had then performed only the first act of the brilliant career for which he was so peculiarly adapted by his many talents and virtues; but with something of that emotion which is not uncommon in some Scottish minds, he seemed to forebode otherwise; and in his farewell reply to an address from the people of Calcutta, he said, "I have played out my part; and while I feel that, in my case, the principal act in the drama of my life is ended, I shall be content if the curtain should drop now on my public career."

His words were mournfully prophetic. Eight years of incessant toil had exhausted his constitution, and after a lingering illness of four years, he sank into the grave on the 19th of December, 1860, at the age of forty-eight, and was laid by the side of the marchioness (who pre-deceased him), in the family vault of the ancient church of Cockpen, in Lothian; and there, amid the most beautiful and sequestered scenery, an obelisk is erected to his memory; by his daughter, Lady Susan Ramsay, who had accompanied him to India.

His administration of that great country forms one of the most important epochs in British history. Broad and comprehensive, his plans always bore the stamp of solid improvement rather than sensational innovation. If he exacted the rigid performance of duty from those under him, says Marshman, he set them the example, by his own intense application to public business, to which, by a noble spirit of devotion, he sacrificed leisure, ease, comfort, and health. His judgment was independent, his intellect sound, and in his character he combined firmness with rapid decision. He investigated with patient care every question that came before him, and never failed to adduce weighty reasons for the decisions at which he arrived; and his admirable administration of the Punjab alone would form the greatest glories of his government, the general merits of which were thus summed up in the columns of the *Times*:—"He could point to railways planned on an enormous scale, and partly commenced, at an expense of little more than £50 a mile; to 2,000 miles of road bridged and metalled—nearly the whole distance from Calcutta to

* Among these he was popularly known by the patronymic of "The Laird of Cockpen," a quick-step often played by the bands as a compliment to him.

Peshawur, to the opening of the Ganges Canal, the largest of the kind in the world; to the progress of the Punjab Canal, and of many other important works over all India, as well as to the reorganisation of an official department of public works. Keeping equal pace with these public works, he could refer to the postal system which he introduced, in imitation of that of Rowland Hill, whereby a letter from Peshawur to Cape Comorin, or from Assam to Kurrachee, is conveyed for three farthings, or one-sixteenth of the old charge; to the improved training ordained for the Civil Service, covenanted and uncovenanted; to the improvement of education and prison discipline; to the organisation of the legislative council; to the reforms which it had decreed, such as permitting Hindoo widows to marry again, and relieving all persons whatsoever from the risk of forfeiting property by a change of religion."

Such was the active tenor of Lord Dalhousie's administration; and before closing the narrative of it, a notice must be given of an important change which was made in the constitution of the East India Company.

In 1853 the charter of 1833 expired, and a bold effort was made to wrest the Government of India from the Company, but the Whig Ministry resolved to continue it in their hands, not for any definite period, but for so long as Parliament should ordain. By Sir Charles Wood, Bart., the President of the Board of Control (and, in 1859, Secretary of State for India), the bill was introduced in a lucid speech of five hours, which, when it was considered that he had only come into office five months before, and had been then a stranger to the affairs of India, was deemed an exhibition of no ordinary power, and held out the prospect of an able and vigorous administration, and this was subsequently realised to the utmost extent.

The chief alterations suggested were these. The number of the Court of Directors was reduced to eighteen from thirty, and the election was effected by a most ingenious process of balloting, devised by the secretary, Colonel Sir James C. Melvill, K.C.B.; and of the number thus reduced, a certain proportion were to be named by the Crown. "Under the old system many of the most eminent of the public servants in India were excluded from the Direction on their return to England, owing to their invincible repugnance to a laborious and humiliating course of canvassing; but the minister was now enabled at once to avail himself of their valuable assistance."*

Bengal and Behar were now placed under a separate lieutenant-governor. Prior to this, the administration of these provinces, peopled by more than 50,000,000, and contributing fully a third of the Indian revenue, had been cast on the Governor-General; and when he was absent, a circumstance which not unfrequently happened, the duty devolved on the senior member of Council, who was sometimes an officer of the army; and under this anomalous system there had been no less than ten governors and deputy-governors of Bengal in the course of as many years. During this period of perpetual change and consequent weakness, the office of secretary had been held by Mr. (afterwards Sir Frederick James) Halliday, a cadet of Haileybury, who had entered the Company's service in 1825; and to whose great local knowledge, judgment, and diligence it was owing that the administration exhibited the requisite degree of consistency; and for his eminent services he was appointed, in 1854, first Lieutenant-Governor of Bengal.

By a third provision of the charter, the patronage of the Civil Service was withdrawn from the Court of Directors to make way for the principle of open competition without reserve.

CHAPTER XL.

CHRISTIANITY IN INDIA.—A BRIEF NOTICE OF ITS PROGRESS.

INDIA was one of the earliest fields of the Christian missionaries, and history and tradition alike assign it as the scene of the martyrdom of St. Thomas, and to him is ascribed the foundation of several churches in the distant East. The story that he

preached the Gospel in India is of great antiquity, and is extremely well supported. Bishop Fleet and Neander both admit its general credibility, and that a Christian church was founded in India

* Marshman.

...removed to ... church built there ...
 The Portuguese, in their ... mission, tell us that, on his voyage ... cast away on the isle of Socotra ... Sêa, which certainly was inhabited ... period by a little Christian community ... St. Francis Xavier, the second apostle ... 1542, found a population professing ... Christianity, oddly mingled with Mohammedanism and Judaism. St. Thomas, it is added, predicted that the religion he had planted should flourish there in strength again, and

... removed to ... church built there ...
 The Portuguese, in their ... mission, tell us that, on his voyage ... cast away on the isle of Socotra ... Sêa, which certainly was inhabited ... period by a little Christian community ... St. Francis Xavier, the second apostle ... 1542, found a population professing ... Christianity, oddly mingled with Mohammedanism and Judaism. St. Thomas, it is added, predicted that the religion he had planted should flourish there in strength again, and



THE INDIAN SILENUS

In the beginning of the thirteenth century Marco Polo was shown the spot where St Thomas suffered martyrdom on "the Great Mount," which was visited by pilgrims from all Christendom, while the Mussulmans themselves revered the apostle as a holy man. The Portuguese, on their first arrival in India, in 1498, to their surprise, found many Christians there, who called themselves the Christians of St. Thomas. John III. of Portugal ordered the remains of the saint to be sought for "in an old ruined chapel which stood over his tomb without the walls of Mailapore." By digging there in a very deep vault was discovered, and there were found human bones, together with the head of the saint, "in which the saint was slain"*. This was placed in a small chapel of the cathedral. * See the author of "Scenes and Sights in

Alban Butler.

prediction he inscribed upon a pillar near Mailapore. This pillar then stood forty miles from the sea, and its inscription told that when the waters should reach the foot of it, a race of foreigners should arrive in India and restore the Christian faith. When Vasco de Gama landed in the south of India, he found the encroaching sea washing its base, all of which is perhaps as true as another Portuguese assertion, that St. Thomas altogether built in Southern India 3,300 Christian temples.

"The religion of India," says Bruce, "has been unchanged since the days of St. Thomas." At this day Christian missions and conversions are freely subscribed to by wealthy worshippers of Siva. A missionary who waits on the King of Travancore, and asks money for his purposes, does not depart empty-handed. A Christian school at Jubbulpore, in the

territory, annually numbers some forty or fifty pagan subscribers, including the Rajah of Sangor.*

On either side of the Red Sea, Christian colonies had by this time been established, and in many instances merchants and seamen, as converts, must have been anxious to disseminate the Gospel; and any zealous monk who put himself on board ship in the Red Sea was sure of respect on his voyage, and a welcome from co-religionists in India; but ere long the western world began to sink into anarchy and barbarism, and the sixth century saw "the eagle of Rome become little better than a carrion crow."

It was in April, 1541, that St. Francis Xavier sailed on board the admiral's vessel, which carried Don Martin Alfonso de Sousa, Governor-General of the Indies, with five other ships, to take possession of his government, and he landed at Goa on the 6th of May, 1542, after "touching at Socotra," according to Alban Butler. Preaching, teaching, and baptising, he visited La Pescaria, or the Pearl Coast, Cape Comorin, Travancore, at the Spice Isles, Amboyna, and Japan; he died when about to visit China, in 1552, in his forty-sixth year, bequeathing the scenes of his labours to the Jesuits, who, from the middle of the sixteenth century onwards, had ever had great success in India.

To disarm prejudice, some writers assert that they have, in many instances, introduced themselves as white Brahmins, and "with some amount of compromise in the way of religious observances, to induce numbers to receive the outward form of this Christian baptism;" but, with an order so rigid, this seems barely probable.

During the reign of Akbar, the Roman Catholic missionaries who came from Goa were received at his court, and for fifteen years resided at Agra with respect and in honour.

The earliest Protestant missionaries came from Holland and Denmark; and with the latter the eminent Schwartz was closely connected.

But among the Hindoos, Christianity in any form has made very limited progress, notwithstanding the unceasing efforts of Christian missionaries, as the great mass of the Indians are idol-worshippers, and retentive of all the customs that pertain to the grossest idolatry; so that their most simple domestic habits differ in no way from those of their forefathers in dark and distant ages, since every act they perform refers to the superstitions they deem religion. Hence the number of converts has always been small, and is likely to be increased only as education becomes diffused, and the mind

of the people enlightened by the educational system pursued by the British Government—a system to which the Company was somewhat averse, though at an early period considerable attention was certainly paid to the diffusion of the Christian faith among their native servants, by the establishment of schools and chapels in their factories.

By the charter of 1698 the Company were bound to maintain a chaplain and schoolmaster in every garrison and superior factory, and to set apart a proper place for the performance of divine worship. They were also obliged to have a chaplain for every vessel of 500 tons, whose salary was to commence with the voyage of the ship, and who was to be approved of by the Archbishop of Canterbury, or the Bishop of London; while all resident ministers in India were required to learn Portuguese and the Hindoo languages for the due instruction of "the Gentoos and others in the Christian religion;" and on the union of the two companies in 1708, it was directed by the charter that the chaplain should take rank after the fifth member of council at his factory.

In 1677 the Company sent out a special teacher, Mr. Ralph Orde, with a liberal salary, "to teach all children to read English and to write and cypher gratis; and if any of the other nations, Portuguese, Gentoos, or others, will send their children to school, we require that they shall also be taught gratis; and," adds the document which is quoted by Peter Auber, "he is likewise to instruct them in the principles of the Protestant religion."*

In 1744 the Company gave hearty assistance to the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, which had sent to India missionaries and quantities of books, aiding the Danish missionaries already established in Southern India; and to those preachers they gave the use of a church at Madras and another at Cuddalore, empowering their agents at the former city "to give them, at such times as you shall think proper, in our name, any sum of money not exceeding 500 pagodas, to be laid out in such manner, and appropriated to such uses, as you shall approve of."

In the year 1752 the Court of Directors wrote to Bombay, desiring to have "the soldiery, and others of our dependants in the presidency of Bombay, instructed in the principles of the Protestant religion," and ordering two more chaplains to reside at Tellicherry and Anjengo, together with the formation of charity schools for educating the children of soldiers, mariners, topasses, and others, adding: "When schools are erected in consequence of this recommendation, our chaplains are

* "Scenes, &c., in the East."

* "Rise and Progress," &c.

frequently to visit them to see what improvement the children make, and to give their utmost assistance in instructing and confirming them in the principles and profession of the Protestant religion.*

With all this, it must be borne in mind that, unlike all other rulers in India, the British Government has scrupulously abstained from any violent interference with the various religious beliefs of the natives, however grotesque these may be. Its ecclesiastical establishments have been chiefly for the benefit of its own Christian servants, though for far too long a period the spiritual good of these numerous and hard-worked classes of Europeans was overlooked; but of late years churches and chapels have sprung up in all considerable towns, stations, and cantonments.

The labours of Christian missionaries with all this, however, have not been attended with any great success, as compared with the many millions among whom their labours are directed, and the more cautious Anglo-Indians have rather shrunk from the risks attendant on a too energetic spirit of proselytising. "Partly through their own fault in attempting to translate the whole of the Scriptures into the most difficult languages, with which they were most imperfectly acquainted, and partly through the scarce-striking, attractive, and splendid ritual of the Catholic church, the success of the English missionaries, whether of the Established Church or Baptists, has been very inferior—at least, in a numerical amount—to the Papal missionaries. And yet the most able and best member of the great Roman Propaganda had been found to confess, after residing forty years in India, that only the very worst of the natives he converted remained steady in their new faith."†

At Tinnevely, an extensive district of the Southern Carnatic, one of the best efforts of the missionaries was to be seen, and it was such as to encourage the hope that much might have been done elsewhere. In the very centre of the district were two villages containing 900 native Christians, with regular schools, native priests, and catechists. All lived in harmony; no idol was to be found there, and not a vestige of Hindoo idolatry. Service was performed in the church daily, and groups of women were to be seen under the great shadows of the palmyra-tree spinning cotton while chanting Lutheran hymns. One village was named Mother-ton, and the other Nazareth. They were the result of the labours of the Christian Knowledge Society at Tinnevely. They had been, says Auber, for years without a missionary among them; but

* *Christianity and Progress*, &c. † MacFarlane's "India."

retained the faith and doctrines they had been taught, performing all the offices of the Lutheran religion among themselves.

Among the last religious efforts of the Portuguese in British India was the erection of a little church at Cossimbazar, which somewhat resembles a pagan temple, and where a slab in the doorway "desires our prayers for Fra Jeronimo, Augustine friar of Goa, who founded this chapel in 1766." Near it may be traced the graveyard of the ancient Dutch factory, in which were laid, in 1759, the remains of the first Mrs. Warren Hastings.*

Despite what the charter of 1698 ordained concerning the ecclesiastical establishment, many of the stations were found to be destitute of churches and chaplains in the time of Sir John Shore (Lord Teignmouth), who, about 1795, took measures to have these wants supplied, and who complained much of the general indifference and infidelity prevalent among our people in Bengal.†

But at one time the East India Company actually adopted the policy of excluding missionaries altogether from their territories; and as these restrictions existed till about the beginning of the present century, religious progress was necessarily slow; and, in 1813, during the debates upon the new charter, when much was said respecting the propagation of Christianity, nearly every man who had lived in India was bitterly opposed to the appointment of missionaries to be salaried by the state. Nevertheless, the time had come when it was necessary that India should have a regular and well-appointed hierarchy, headed by prelates of the Anglican Church; and in the renewed charter a provision was made "for the maintenance and support of a church establishment in the East Indies."

By the 49th section, it was provided, that if His Majesty should be pleased, by his royal letters patent under the Great Seal, "to erect, found, and constitute one bishopric for the whole of the British territories in the East Indies," and one archdeaconry for each of the presidencies, the Company were to pay £5,000 per annum to the bishop, and £2,000 per annum to each of the archdeacons.

While the subject of the Episcopal establishment was under discussion, a claim was put in by the State Church of Scotland, on the just and ample plea, that the majority of British residents in India were Scotsmen, and of the Presbyterian communion. The justice of the claim was denied by Parliament; but on some mystic

* *F.I.U.S. Journal*, 1837.

† "Lord Teignmouth's Life and Letters."

plea of expediency, more easily assented than vindicated, it was not recognised by the Act, in short, the usual narrow and provincial system of legislation prevailed, and the appointment of Scottish chaplains, which the Presbyterian residents were entitled to demand as a right, was only given as a boon from the Court of Directors, while the claims of the Roman Catholics were, of course, at that time, ignored.*

The first Protestant Bishop of Calcutta was Thomas Fanshawe Middleton, D.D., who was born in 1769, and was consecrated on the 8th of May, 1814, as metropolitan of all India. This first appointment was admirable, and it has been justly said, that the lawn has not been often worn by better men than Bishop Middleton and Reginald Heber. The former died on the 8th of July, 1822, and a monument to his memory was erected in St. Paul's, London. Subsequently Bombay and Madras were each made bishoprics; the latter only so lately as 1855.

Native conversions were frequently the cause of much ill feeling and monetary quarrels among relations, while the converts themselves were placed in an unfavourable position. By certain regulations promulgated in 1793 and 1803, it was provided, that all questions of succession to property should be decided in conformity to the religion of the parties. The obvious intention of this was to give Hindoos and Mohammedans the benefit of their respective codes, than which nothing could be more equitable. "Unfortunately, the regulations were loosely and obscurely worded, and in a case which was daily acquiring new importance, was entirely overlooked. The efforts of Christian missionaries were beginning to bear fruit, but no provision had been made for the social position of their converts. As the regulations stood, there was ground for maintaining that by the mere fact of their conversion, they forfeited the rights of succession which would undoubtedly have belonged to them if they had continued Hindoos. This result, which had never been contemplated, and was moreover, in itself absolutely intolerable, was remedied by a new regulation (in 1829), which provided that the rules relating to succession, as affected by religion, should bind those only who were *not* of Mohammedanism or Hindooism unless the succession opened. The effect was to free Hindoo converts to Christianity from all trammels of their former superstition, and give them full possession of Christian freedom."†

In 1833, when the new Bill passed, on the extinction of the Company's monopoly, it contained

a series of sections which, after providing for the intended new bishoprics of Bombay and Madras enacted that at each of the presidencies "two chaplains shall always be ministers of the Church of Scotland," and concludes with justly declaring "that nothing herein contained shall be so construed as to prevent the Governor-General in Council granting, from time to time, with the sanction of the Court of Directors and of the Commissioners for the affairs of India, to any sect, persuasion, or community of Christians, not being of the united Church of England and Ireland or of the Church of Scotland, such sums of money as may be expedient, for the purpose of instructing, or for the maintenance of places of worship."

In 1820 the Bishop's College, near Calcutta, was founded for the education of such students as the Government or the religious societies connected with the Church of England may place there. It has a principal, two professors, eight missionaries, two catechists, and a printer. The Bible has been translated into ten languages for India, and the New Testament into five others—not reckoning the Serampore versions.

In Ceylon there is a bishop of the Church of England, with several clergymen; the Church of Scotland, Wesleyan Methodists, Baptists, and American missionaries are all engaged in the work of religious and intellectual teaching; but throughout the island, among all Christian denominations, the Roman Catholics preponderate; yet the Governor reported about 1850, that multitudes who call themselves Christians in public are, in secret, closely attached to Buddhism and the Hindoo mythology.

In Mauritius, says Mr. Pridham, the Church of Rome has ever the pre-eminence, in the antiquity of its foundation and its numerical superiority. The white and creole population, with few exceptions, belong to that persuasion—somewhere about 80,000. The remainder of the religious community may be divided into two sections—the Church of England and the Protestant Dissenters. Among the former are the officials civil and military, some Anglo-Indians, and a few negroes, while the latter is extremely limited indeed, and consists only of a few old Huguenot families.

There is also an English bishop at Victoria (Hong-Kong), who, in time to come, may exercise a very beneficial influence on the countries and islands adjacent to India.

Few Protestant missionaries have been more active in India than the Baptists, whose head-

* *Quarterly Review*, 1813, &c.

† Beveridge's "India."

* Leyland's "Colonial Empire," &c.

quarters are at Serampore, on the west bank of the Hooghly, twelve miles above Calcutta, a little Danish settlement sold to our Government by that of Denmark in 1845, but where they were nearly crushed, during the administration of Lord Minto in 1811, by measures unfortunately at variance with the good sense and enlightened spirit he usually displayed.

Although he defrayed out of the public treasury the expense of several native grammars, dictionaries, and other rudimentary works, printed at the Serampore Press, and aided liberally the Serampore translation of the Scriptures, he yet issued an edict, which evidently tended, if not to crush them altogether, at least to diminish their usefulness, and bring them under bondage. Prejudices were then strongly entertained by Sir George Barlow and all old European residents that the recent mutiny at Vellore had some connection with missionary labours; hence they were prohibited from preaching in the streets, from sending itinerant native preachers into villages, and from the gratuitous distribution of controversial tracts; though no restriction was imposed on their private tuition or their translation of the Scriptures; and they were at full liberty to continue divine service in Bengalee within the walls of their mission houses; but one of the earliest acts of Lord Minto's government threatened the luckless missionaries with something very like proscription.

The reason for this procedure against them was the discovery of a pamphlet in Persian, containing an account of Mohammed, so scurrilous, that it was deemed dangerous, inflammatory, and likely to excite discontent among the Mussulman population. Hence, the Governor-General in Council not only prohibited the issue of religious tracts, but ordered that publications in the vernacular tongue in the mission house at Calcutta should be abolished; and as this was not deemed sufficient to place the missionary press more completely under government control, the Baptists were ordered to remove it from Serampore to Calcutta.

As Serampore was then Danish and not British territory, it has been justly said that Lord Minto had no more power over the missionaries there than he would have had at Copenhagen. It was a distinct violation of the rights of a European sovereign. "The removal of the missionaries from Serampore," says a writer on the subject, "was equivalent to a confiscation of their property there, since it rendered the whole establishment on which their capital had been expended, worthless. If by any absurd misnomer this could be called toleration to Hindoos and Mohammedans, what was it

to Christian missionaries but rank persecution? They were to be put to an expense which they declared to be ruinous, and their mouths were to be gagged in order that they might not be able to preach the Gospel within their own mission-house to the natives who would have come of their own accord to listen to it. The whole proceeding was so monstrous, that when the missionaries remonstrated, Government hesitated in carrying out coercive measures which could only have been characterised as an anti-Christian crusade. The interdict on preaching in the chapel at Calcutta was withdrawn, and the missionaries saved their Serampore press by submitting to a censorship."

Lord Minto's edict against the Baptists was the more to be regretted that he had the well-earned honour of being deemed a model administrator.

The year 1812 saw their press again in full operation, and we find Dr. Carey writing thus to Mr. Fuller, another leading Baptist:—"I have a great desire to do what I can to ensure the gradual perfection of the Oriental versions of the Scriptures after my death, and I am therefore trying to lay a foundation for Biblical criticism in these languages by securing to the public the little that I know of them. I have, therefore, begun to write grammars of the Telnya, the Orissa, and the language of the Sikhs, to which I intend immediately to add grammars of the Kurnata, the Kashmeera, and the Nepaula; of the Bengalee, Sanscrit, and the Mahratta, I have already published grammars, and a dictionary of the Mahratta. I am about a Bengalee Dictionary. I have also in my mind, and have proceeded far in collecting materials for a general dictionary of the Indian languages, derived from the Sanscrit, of which that language, of course, is the basis. I intend to give the Hebrew and Greek synonyms of the Sanscrit throughout. Should I live to accomplish all this, and the translation in hand, I think I could then say, 'Lord, lettest thou thy servant depart in peace.'"

By Mullen's general census of Indian missions, taken in 1862, there were in India in that year, 418 missionaries; eighty-one ordained natives; 1,079 catechists; 890 native churches; 118,893 Christians; 21,252 communicants; at school, 54,888 boys, and 14,723 girls.

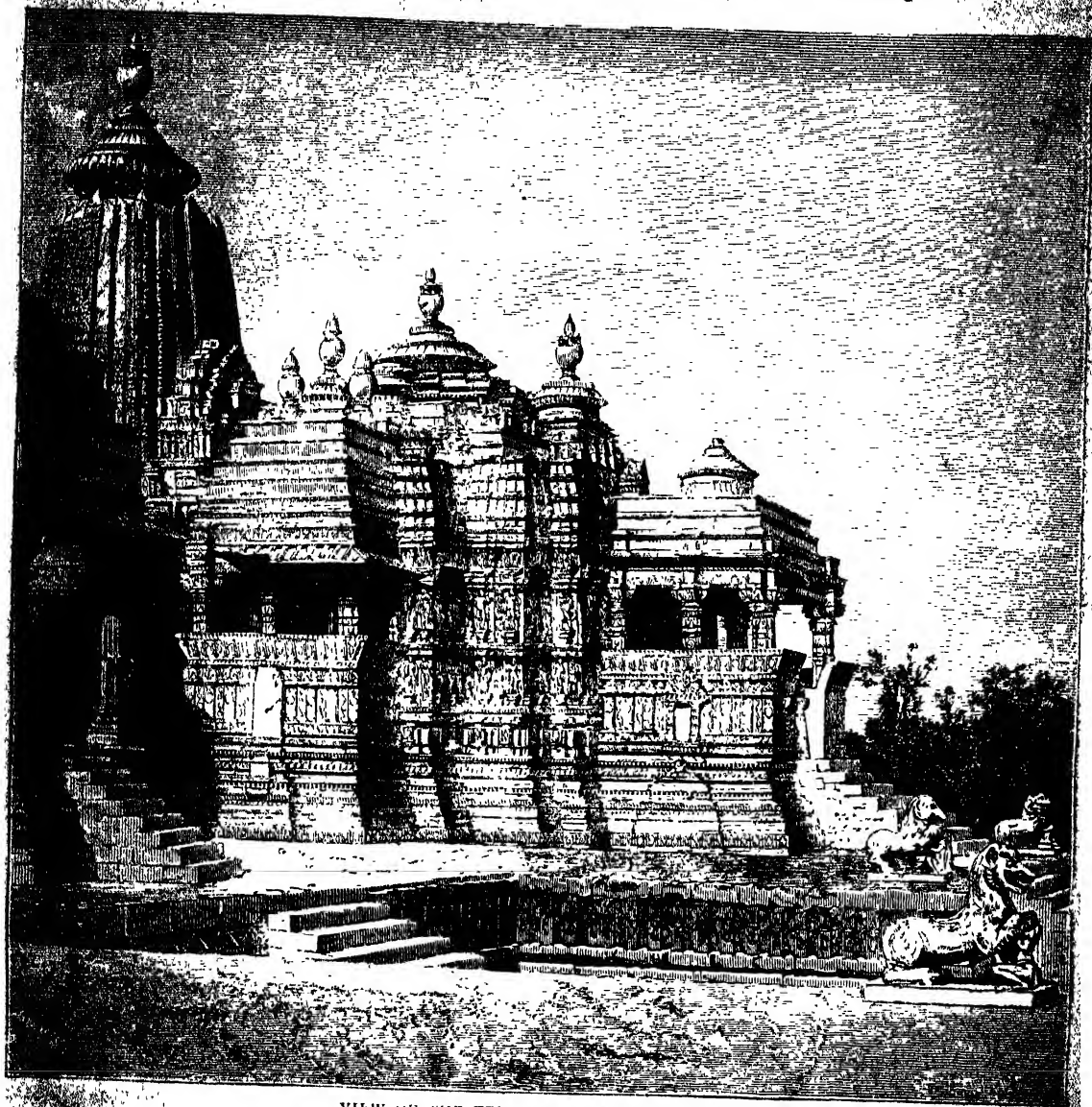
For all this, unfortunately, it seems to be admitted that the Government schools have not done much generally for either religion or morality—the students who go into them as Hindoos or Mohammedans often coming forth with little or no faith at all, and their conduct in society being

* *Edinburgh Star*, Aug., 1862.

afterwards deplorably unprincipled and lax. "One distinction between the missionary schools and those of the Government is this—the missionaries make the Bible a class-book, while the Government teachers exclude it. The scholars of the mission-

or idolatries; but," adds this writer, "we cannot believe that a merely secular education will much contribute to make the population either wiser or happier."*

Among the most interesting conversions to

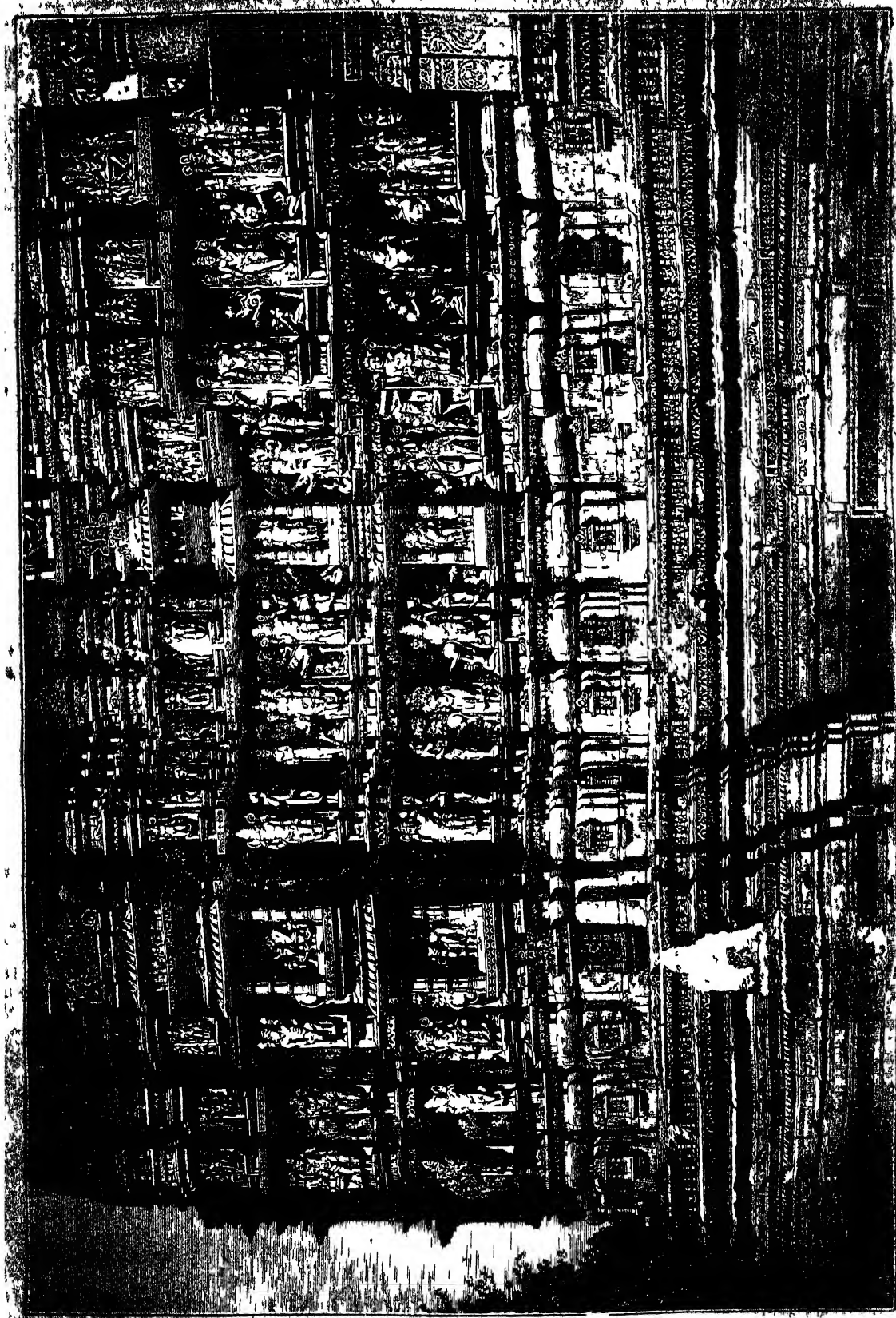


VIEW OF THE TEMPLE OF KALI AT KIJRAHA.

aries need not believe the Bible, but they must read it, and have the opportunity of believing. It is found that this regulation by no means deters children from going to the missionary schools, which, indeed, are said to be much better filled than those of the Government, by persons who wish to receive a cheap and practical education. We are fully sensible of the difficulty, and even danger, of any direct interference with old religions

Christianity was that of the Princess Guaramma (daughter of the Rajah of Coorg), who is described in one of Prince Albert's letters "as an amiable and intelligent girl," who was baptised in London, 30th of June, 1852; "Victoria was her godmother," he adds, "and will look after her education." She married a Scottish gentleman, a cadet of the Campbells, of Kinloch, and died young.

* Bohn's "India." + "Life of the Prince Consort," vol. i.



THE FAÇADE OF THE TEMPLE OF KALI AT KUJRAHA.

The missionary reports for the year 1870 give the number of native Christians in connection with the Church of England in India at 20,884, with 24,213 scholars. The Church of Scotland there is divided into seven presbyteries, but as the reports for the year are defective, or without a synopsis, no statement can be given; while those of the Free Church of Scotland show about 914 baptised

adherents, with 5,564 scholars; the United Presbyterians number, in "Christian community, 383," with 3,350 pupils.

The Roman Catholic Church in India, Burma, and Siam shows an approximate number of fifteen bishoprics, 906 priests, and 100,000 adherents, with 1,000 schools, attended by 40,000 children; and these are exclusive of the archbishopric of Goa.

CHAPTER XLI.

LORD CANNING GOVERNOR-GENERAL.—OF THE SEPOYS AND INDIAN ARMY GENERALLY.

CHARLES JOHN VISCOUNT CANNING succeeded, as we have stated, Lord Dalhousie, and was the thirteenth and last of the Governors-General of the East India Company, and first Viceroy of the Crown. He had sat in the House of Lords for twenty years, and had thus acquired a considerable amount of official experience. He inherited a great name, and was a favourite of Lord Palmerston, under whose auspices he now took office. At the farewell banquet given to him by the Court of Directors, he uttered these memorable words:—"I wish for a peaceful term of office; but I cannot forget that in the sky of India, serene as it is, a small cloud may arise, no larger than a man's hand, but which, growing larger and larger, may at last threaten to burst and overwhelm us with ruin."

Most prophetic was this sentence. Some of the most remarkable events in the history of British India occurred during the administration of Lord Dalhousie; but these were destined to be surpassed in importance, and to require all the talent and powers of Lord Canning to face them—the dreadful mutiny, and almost extirpation of an army 150,000 strong; the awful massacres of Europeans of every age and sex; the loss and recovery of the North-western Provinces; the total dissolution of the ancient East India Company, of so many memories; and the complete annexation of the Indian Empire to the British Crown.

For some time after the departure of Lord Dalhousie his successor believed that India was in a state of tranquillity; but as the eventful year wore on, elements that, though not of immediate danger, were certainly disquieting, began to manifest themselves. The deposed King of Oude, who had been permitted to take up his abode in the suburbs

of the Indian capital, had his secret emissaries actively at work in scattering the seeds of hostility to our Government in and around Calcutta. To Mr. Coverley Jackson, a civilian, was given the chief commissionership of Oude, a post for which he was somewhat unfitted. "Instead of labouring to reconcile the chiefs and people to a foreign rule, as Outram and Sleeman would have laboured to do, his time was passed in unseemly squabbles with his subordinates, and in sowing the dragon's teeth of rebellion among the proud aristocracy of the country by a wanton and disastrous interference with the tenure of their estates."*

In Delhi, the ancient Mohammedan capital of India, the royal family had been permitted, unwisely, to maintain a semi-royal court, in which the proceedings of our Government roused a keen feeling of dissatisfaction. Contrary to the advice of some of the most experienced men in the Court of Directors, the Board of Control had resolved to remove the royal family from Delhi, and on the death of the king, Bahadoor Shah, to abolish the regal title, with all its immunities.

Lord Dalhousie had delayed taking action on this measure, from a feeling of deference to the urgent remonstrances of the Directors; and thus to Lord Canning was left the consideration of this distasteful piece of policy, but he at once came to the conclusion, that the stately royal palace of Delhi, the citadel of a strongly fortified town, and measuring a mile in circumference, was immediately required for military purposes, and should be in the hands, not of its native princes, but of the British Government.

A mortifying communication to this effect was

* Marshman.

laid before the king, who at the same time, was informed that his son, Mohammed Korah, would be recognised as his successor, but without the title of king. His young and most favourite wife, Zeenat Mahal, resented the exclusion of her own son, and equally so this abolition of regal dignity and the high privileges of the long line of the Moguls. With all the activity and zeal of an artful female intriguer, she set every secret engine to work to excite a hostile movement against the British Government, not only in Hindostan, but in the Deccan, and even at the Court of Persia, then at war with our troops under Outram, while fast and far spread the rumour that Lord Canning had come out with orders from the Queen of Great Britain to enforce Christianity on the people of India, Hindoo and Mussulman alike.

There went abroad, too, a strange prophecy that the raj, or rule, of the Company would pass away at the end of a hundred years, and 1857 was the centenary of the glorious field of Plassey. Most industriously were the rumour and the prediction propagated together, and the fate of the Feringhees was supposed to be like everything else viewed from an Oriental point of view, amenable to the inexorable law of destiny. Hence, towards the close of the year 1856, the public mind had become completely unsettled, and vague apprehensions of some portentous event or coming calamity pervaded the entire community; and it would seem that this event might have taken place sooner, during the Crimean War, and when we should have been less able to face it—*if* to face it all—but for one circumstance.

The Indian Moslem ever takes a deep interest in the fate of the Padishah; and it is a fact now thoroughly ascertained, that our support of Turkey in the war with Russia in 1854 had such an effect upon the Mohammedan population of India, as to postpone the Mutiny for a year or two, and to lessen its force when it came.*

In times before, mutinies had repeatedly broken out in the native army, and, in many instances, the measures of repression to which the officers resorted had rather evaded the matter than punished or extinguished it. Moreover, the native troops of India, whether under their own princes or the British flag, had never been quite exempt from a somewhat insubordinate spirit; thus Holkar, Scindia, and other Mahratta princes had been repeatedly coerced by their own soldiers, while Akbar, the fierce old Lion of Lahore, was wont to declare that he dreaded his own victorious troops more than he did their vanquished enemies; and

in the Company's army, from the first calamity at Buxar in 1764, to the latest mutiny, in 1857 at Shikarpore, there had been a succession of petty outbreaks, all more or less disquieting or formidable.

In approaching the events which we are now about to relate, it is impossible to forget the prophetic words of one who knew India well—the far-seeing and wary Scottish veteran, Sir Thomas Munro, concerning the great extension of our Indian Empire by annexation, as tending to give the Mutiny its extent and power.

"If we could subdue all India to our dominion," said Munro in his time, "it is doubtful if this would be desirable either for the natives or ourselves. One of the effects of this conquest would be, that the Indian army, having no longer to combat warlike neighbours, would gradually lose its discipline, and that the native troops would have leisure to contemplate their own strength, and turn it against their European masters."

The same politician had earnestly advised the maintenance of the native protected princes on their thrones, as a source of union between the Supreme British Government and the Hindoo and Mussulman populations.

In the year 1827 the armies of the East India Company belonged to the three Presidencies, each under its own commander-in-chief. That of Bengal consisted of a regiment of artillery, a corps of engineers, ten regiments of cavalry, and seventy-five of infantry. The Madras army consisted of a regiment of artillery, another of engineers, eight regiments of cavalry, and fifty-four of infantry. The Bombay army comprised a regiment of foot artillery, one brigade of horse artillery, having four troops European, two battalions of European and two of native artillery, three regiments of cavalry, and twenty-nine of native infantry. The cavalry were clad in silver-grey, faced most frequently with orange or red, and laced with silver. The infantry were in scarlet, and the artillery in dark blue.

Their European troops were recruited for in Great Britain and Ireland, the head-quarters for these being at Warley, in Essex.

In addition to these fine and carefully developed forces, recruited for among the best and most warlike tribes of India, there were added to each of these three armies many local and irregular corps, officered from the line, and denominated as Sikh Battalions, Irregular Horse, Infantry and Cavalry of the Punjaub, Assam Light Infantry, Oude Infantry, the Gwalior Contingent, Provisional Battalions, Militia, and Rangers. To all these the strange necessity for having a complete set of

* See Northbrook's speech at Falmouth in 1876.

native officers, the senior of whom—however long his service, and the number of his battles, scars, and medals—was inferior to the junior European subaltern, proved the great peril of this vast military organisation.

In India there were then of all kinds about 294,675 men in arms. Of these, 40,000 or more belonged to the royal light cavalry and infantry of the line, whose head quarters at home were respectively Maidstone and Chatham, but were struck off the home strength, and were paid and maintained by the East India Company.

The country from which the Bengal infantry had usually been recruited extended from the eastern quarter of Behar to Rohilkund. In person, the men there are robust, and when in their own dress, and untrammelled by the unsightly European garb, either civil or military, most of them seemed fine examples of the human form, especially those in the flank companies which then existed.

Writing of the Indian army in his time by desire of Lord Buckinghamshire, Sir John Malcolm says that the Bengal diagoons were men of stouter frame than the same corps in Madras. "The latter are almost all Mohammedans, he continues, and a considerable portion of the Bengal cavalry are of the same race. The fact is, that with the exception of the Mahratta tribe, the Hindoos are not generally speaking, so much disposed as the Mohammedans to the duties of a trooper, and though the Mohammedans may be dissipated and less moral in their private conduct than the Hindoos, they are zealous and high spirited soldiers, and it is excellent policy to have a considerable portion of them in the service, to which experience has shown, they often become very warmly attached. In the native infantry of Bengal the Hindoos are in the full proportion of three-fourths to the Mohammedans. They consist chiefly of Rajpoots, who are a distinguished race among the Khiteree, or military tribe. We may judge of the size of these men when we are told that the standard below which no recruit is taken is five feet six inches. The great proportion of the grenadiers are six feet and upwards. The Rajpoot is born a soldier. The mother speaks of nothing to her infant but deeds of arms and every action and sentiment of the future man is marked by the first impressions that he has received. If he tills the ground—which is the common occupation of this house—his sword and shield are placed near the fire state and moved as his labour advances. The frame of the Rajpoot is always improved (even if his habits were those of civil life) by martial exercises, he is, as a well treated, obedient, zealous, and faithful *"

* "The Indian Army, 1834.

Sir John was further of opinion that neither the Hindoo nor Mohammedan sepoy could be deemed of a revengeful nature, though both were prone to deeds of extreme violence, especially in points where they deemed their honour—of which they have a very keen sense—slighted or insulted, or their character stained. Of this spirit, two or three examples may be given. In 1772, a sepoy of the 10th Bengal Native Infantry, supposing himself injured, quitted the ranks, and approaching Captain Iwens, commanding with "recovered arms," as if about to make some request, shot him dead, and then quietly awaited the death he merited. Captain Crook, of the Madras Cavalry, once struck a sentry for allowing a water bullock to enter his tent. The man waited calmly till relieved from his post, and then seeking the captain, shot him dead with his carbine. He made no attempt to escape. He had avenged his honour, thus terribly, for a blow given, and he met with calm fortitude the death which punished his crime. * An officer relates another instance of adherence to honour thus—A sepoy, of the Bengal Native Infantry, was accused by one of his comrades of having stolen a rupee and a pair of trousers. The sergeant-major before whom in the first instance the charge was brought was both unable and unwilling to give it credence. Besides the unusual circumstance of a native soldier being guilty of so base an act, the accused sepoy had always been remarkably conspicuous for his brave and upright conduct. His breast was literally covered with medals, and he had long been accustomed to the voice of praise. Still however justice demanded that the charge should not be dismissed without an impartial investigation. The whole affair was brought to the notice of the commanding officer, who desired that the sepoy's residence should be immediately and thoroughly examined. On opening his knapsack, to the utter astonishment and regret of the whole regiment, the stolen property was discovered. None, however, looked more thunderstruck than the sepoy himself. He clenched his teeth in bitter agony, but spoke not a single word. The colonel told him that though circumstances were so feebly against him, he would not yet pronounce him guilty, as it was not impossible he might be the victim of some malignant design. He therefore dismissed him from his presence until the result of further inquiries should produce a full conviction of his guilt or innocence. In a few hours the sepoy was observed to leave his hut, and walk with hurried steps to a neighbouring field. He was soon concealed from sight by a

* Ibid.

thick cluster of bamboos. Suspecting the purpose of his present visit to so retired a spot, a comrade followed him, but was unfortunately too late to arrest the hand of the determined suicide. The poor fellow lay stretched on the ground, with his head hanging back, and the blood gushing from his open throat. He had effected his purpose with a sharp knife, which he still grasped, as if with the intention of inflicting another wound. He was carried to the hospital, and carefully attended, but the surgeon pronounced his recovery impossible. A pen and ink were brought to him, and he wrote with some difficulty on a slip of paper, that he firmly hoped that he had not failed in his attempt to destroy himself, for life was of no value without honour. He stated, too, that though it might now be useless to affirm his innocence, he hoped that a time might come when his memory should be freed from its present stain. He lingered no less than fifteen days in this dreadful state, and died at last apparently of mere starvation; for, though he invariably made signs of a desire for food, it was, of course, impossible to give it to him, and any nourishment would merely have prolonged his misery. Two days before he died, it was discovered that a Bengalee servant, of low caste, who had taken offence on some trivial occasion, had placed the stolen goods in the sepoy's bundle, and then urged the owner to accuse him of the theft. The disclosure of this circumstance appeared to give infinite satisfaction to the dying soldier.

Prior to the dark days we are approaching, the native and the British soldier always became great friends; the latter invariably spoke well and pettingly of "Jack Sepoy," by whom they were in turn admired for their daring valour, and other excellent qualities. "It is pleasant," wrote an officer on this subject, "to see the ranks intermingling on a march, and to hear the native, when the sun grows hot, begging to be allowed to carry the musket of his wayworn European comrade."

In 1856 there was more than one cause to disquiet the minds of the native troops, whom many—and no mean authorities—averred that we had pampered too much. More than 40,000 men of the sepoy army were recruited in that land which had ever been a source of trouble—Oude—and with the view of attaching them more especially to our service, they had enjoyed the privilege of having their numerous and vexatious lawsuits decided before those of others, on the production of a receipt from their commanding officer. This exclusive and remarkable privilege, which greatly enhanced their importance in their own localities, was abolished when Oude was annexed, and hence

a feeling of general discontent took deep root. In addition to this growing annoyance, only one of the Bengal regiments were enlisted for foreign service; and, in 1856, a Government order was issued to the effect, that in future no man would be enlisted as a soldier who was not willing to embark when required. This order, which was absolutely necessary for the discipline and military utility of the army, produced a deep and marked discontent in every regiment of the Bengal army.

Hitherto the military service of the India Company had been deemed a noble and honourable profession; but, under the new rule, the sons and nephews of the high-caste sepoys, who were waiting for vacancies, would have to forego that service altogether, or defile their caste, by crossing the *Kala paanee*, or "black water," as they termed the ocean.

By this time a change had come over the European soldier's view of his native comrade. The singular facility with which, in our early Indian campaigns, enormous masses of native troops were defeated and dispersed, as at Plassey and elsewhere, by a mere handful of Europeans, led to the not unnatural conclusion, that they were as inferior in natural courage as in physique; and it was with a feeling almost bordering on surprise, that it was found that the sepoys, in subsequent wars when disciplined and led by British officers, became good and efficient soldiers. Hence, on more than one occasion, those of Madras have crossed their bayonets in battle with the best grenadiers of King Louis; and at Bhurtpore a Bengal regiment thrice planted their colours on the breach, when two corps of the line declined to quit the trenches.

Few troops in the world were more caressed and carefully considered than those of the native armies, after a revulsion of sentiment and good opinion took place in their favour. They were lauded in general orders, and, often without any application on their part, they had increased pay and allowances given them. "They were petted and pampered like children," says a writer, "or as if they had been Prætorian cohorts, with whom it rested to bestow or withhold the imperial title and power. No wonder, then, that they became inflated with an idea of their vast importance, and considered themselves the real masters of the state. Their self-complacency gradually over-stepped all bounds, and, like all mercenary armies, they threatened to become more formidable to their employers than to the enemy."

Many statesmen had already seen the peril of humouring them so much. Lord Hardinge is

reported to have declared before he came to India "that he had no apprehension about any enemy he was likely to encounter except the Bengal army, and Lord Metcalfe—a much higher authority—is known to have entertained so much uneasiness as to the permanence of British supremacy in the East, that he once said, "that some fine morning all the Europeans in India would get up with their throats cut."*

The discontents in Oude, with the rumours of an intended forcible conversion of all classes to Christianity, caused measures for defence and offence to be taken with decision and promptitude; and well was the force of systematic and combined action understood by the Hindostanees. For a long time past it had been known that a brisk and sustained (but to the European, puzzling) correspondence was maintained between the different regiments of the Bengal army, however far apart they might be stationed.

There was, as yet, no reason to suppose that any schemes of revolt or aggression were in progress, or anything beyond a general understanding that the battalions might mutually rely on each other for a combined resistance if the British Government attempted in any way to coerce them in matters of religion, or alter the conditions under which they enlisted. As an emblem of universal agreement, a *chapatty*, or little cake, made simply of flour and water, went from hand to hand, and from station to station, pledging each man to stand by his comrade—each regiment to do so by its neighbour.

Noted as the Mohammedans were now for a generally insolent and overbearing demeanour, those of Delhi surpassed all others, in a swaggering air, and avowed hatred of the Feringhees. Nor was this altogether unnatural. The loss of empire could hardly fail to inspire them with something, at least, of sullen animosity towards their conquerors; for now, instead of being a dominant race, under an Emperor, they were reduced to engage in trade or agriculture, or submit to wretched pittance as the dependants of a puppet king, who was the degraded pensioner of a race of unbelievers.

The idea that some catastrophe was coming prevailed in the minds of many Anglo-Indians; but many more there were who laughed, and said—"Oh! the thing will last our time, and so we need not care." And while they thus deluded themselves into fancied security, the native army had also deluded itself, but into the belief that it was now in a condition to dictate terms to Govern-

ment, and when such an idea prevailed, revolt became inevitable, and the only point to be determined was—the time.

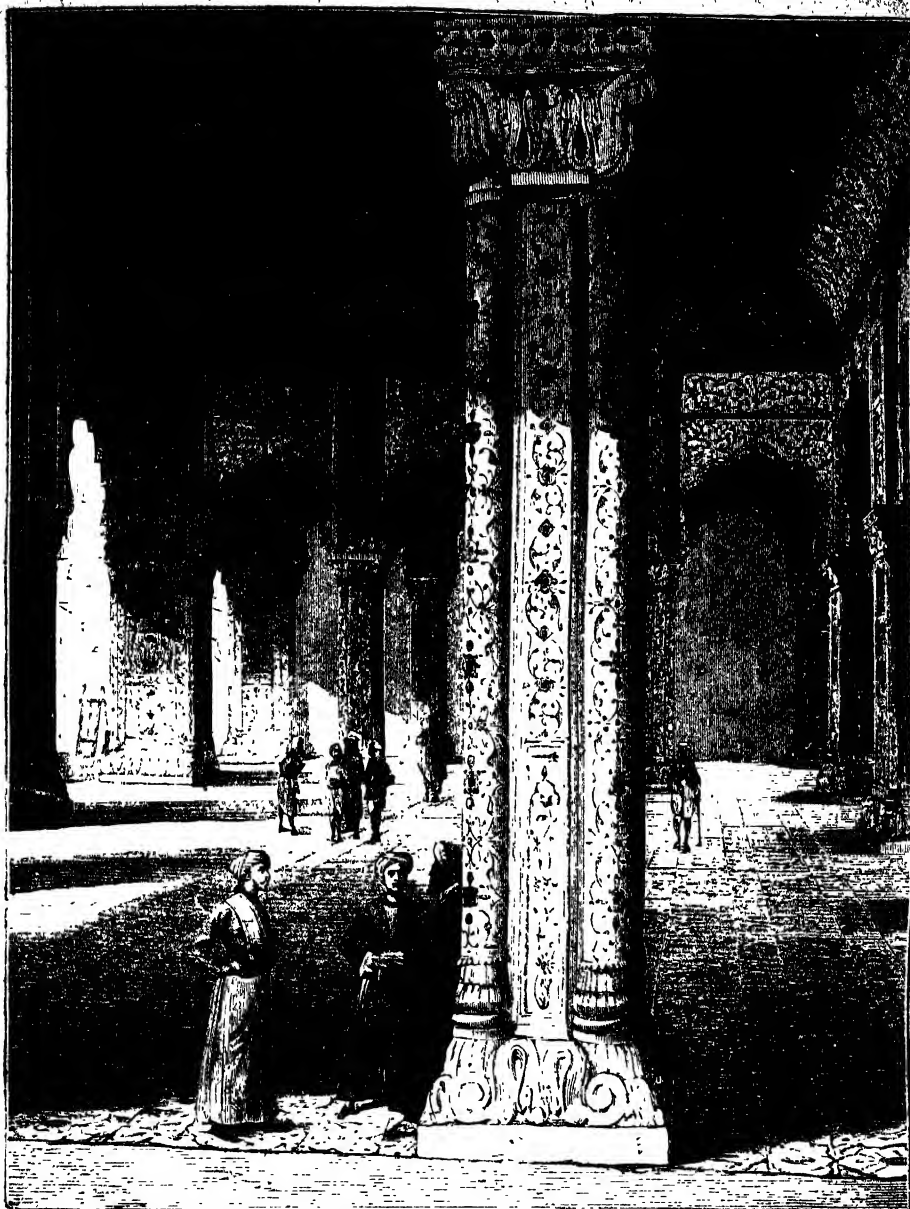
In the way, or ultimate success, of this movement there was one great obstacle—the intense and ancient antipathy between the Hindoos and the Mohammedans. The former composed by far the greater bulk of the population; and the latter, though quite numerous enough to be formidable, derived from their superior position, as a once dominant and still warlike class, a greater degree of influence than their mere numbers would indicate.

The natural effect of this antipathy was to keep the two classes apart, and make it seem impossible to combine for any common object. Aware of this security against a united revolt, our Government appear not to have under-rated it; and yet, by a most singular and unforeseen fatality, they—without a suspicion of what would ensue—destroyed the security, and enabled Hindoo and Mohammedan to fraternise, and make a combined effort together for the overthrow of our empire in India.

This was the cry so artfully raised, that the religion of both was in danger, and that Christianity alone would be tolerated. It has been deemed singular that such a cry could have any influence, as a succession of Governors-General had vied with each other in carrying to their utmost limits, the true principles of religious toleration; and some had given so much countenance and encouragement to the most absurd of native superstitions and idolatry, as to nearly incur the charge of forgetting that they themselves were Christian men, and the representatives of a Christian Government; thus, in 1803, even the car of Juggernaut, with its blood-encrusted wheels, was placed as carefully under a guard of British troops as if it had been the altar of a Christian church!

It is almost needless to say that not the slightest intention to reverse this policy had been manifested; but ripe as they were for revolt, the Bengal sepoys were ready to listen to any incendiary, and to grasp at any pretence to justify their meditated treachery. The terrible delusion spread like wild-fire, "and a circumstance so trivial in itself that one can hardly speak of it with gravity," became, not the cause of a revolt, unsurpassed in magnitude and ferocity, the spark applied to the subtle train so many hands had laid, and, in a day, all became death, desolation, and despair—when a disaster, unlike anything known in history since the Sicilian Vespers, filled India with alarm, and Britain with horror and grief.

* The "Indian Mutiny." By an editor of the *Delhi Gazette*.



GREAT HALL OF THE DEWAN KHĀN IN THE PALACE OF DELHI.

CHAPTER XLII.

THE ENFIELD RIFLE IN THE BENGAL ARMY.—THE SPIRIT OF MUTINY AT BERAHMPORE, ETC.—DISBANDING OF THE 19TH BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY.—REVOLT AT MEERUT.

It has been deemed questionable whether the disaffection excited by the two royal families of Oude and Delhi, or even the vague discontent of the native troops, would have culminated in a revolt of the whole army, with its attendant atrocities, but for the very unexpected incident of the greased

cartridges, which caused a most opportune source for complaint against the Government.

Towards the close of 1856, it had been determined to replace the old infantry musket, "the Brown Bess," of so many wars and glories, by an improved firearm, with a grooved, or rifled bore,

and which could not be easily loaded without the lubrication of the cartridge; and Dumdum, a cantonment six miles north-west of Calcutta, was one of the schools of musketry for instruction in the use of this new weapon—the Enfield rifle.

Early in January, 1857, when the manufacture of these cartridges (which, before being used, must be torn by the fingers, or bitten) was proceeding briskly in the Artillery Arsenal of that place, a *classie*, or low-caste workman, asked a soldier of the 2nd Grenadiers, a high-class Brahmin, for a draught of water from his *lotah*, or drinking-vessel. The grenadier declined, on the plea that the vessel would be defiled.

“You think much of your caste,” sneered the *classie*; “but wait a little; the *sahib-logue* (white gentlemen) will soon make high and low caste on an equality; as cartridges smeared with beef fat and hog’s lard are being made up in the magazine, which all sepoys will be compelled to use.”

The mention of two kinds of fat was singularly artful and malicious, as one was the abomination of the Hindoos, and the other of the Mohomedans; like a double-edged sword, it cut two ways, and the subject once mooted, was not likely to be permitted to subside. The astounded grenadier rushed, in an agony of shame and terror, to the sepoy lines, where the news was speedily discussed with much real, and probably more pretended alarm; for the story spread like wild-fire, and the credulous sepoys of both religions readily believed it was a base attempt on the part of the Government to undermine their faith. It was useless for anyone to insist upon the absurdity of this idea; they were convinced of its truth, and could not be persuaded that though the cartridge-paper might be glazed, it was not greased.

The public post was literally laden with the letters of the alarmed sepoys, and in a very few days every regiment in Hindostan was affected with the same emotions of danger and frantic passion. The little cloud of which Lord Canning spoke by chance was “growing larger and larger,” and might, in its bursting, overwhelm the empire of British India with ruin. When first made aware of what was passing, Major Bontein, the officer commanding at Dumdum, paraded all the native troops in the barracks and cantonments, and asked them if there were any complaints.

On this, at least two-thirds of them, including the native officers, stepped to the front, and in a manner that—whatever it veiled—was perfectly respectful, stated their objection to the method of preparing the new rifle-musket cartridges, as “the mixture employed for greasing these was opposed to their

religious feelings, and they begged to suggest the employment of beeswax and oil in such proportion as, in their opinion, would answer the end required.”

It is but too probable that the moderation thus shown, blinded the military authorities at the beginning to the extent of the evil. At all events, there seemed no necessity for instant or severe action, and they contented themselves by ordering that the further manufacture of greased cartridges should cease, and that, in future, the men might purchase the necessary ingredients at the bazaar, and apply them with their own hands! The moderation exhibited at Dumdum proved quite exceptional; for, in other quarters, the excitement, instead of being allayed by assurances that the cause for it had ceased to exist, continued to increase, and the Inspector-General recommended that the Home Government should not send out any more made-up ammunition for the Enfield rifles.* At first, it was only the grease to which the sepoys objected; but it was now discovered that there was something mysteriously wrong with the paper, as, unlike that which had been previously used, it had a glazed appearance, which, the sepoys were resolved to consider, was the result of greasing. Thus, on the 6th of February, General Hearsey, commanding the division of Bengal troops, reported as follows, from Barrackpore, to head-quarters:—“A most unreasonable and unfounded suspicion has, unfortunately, taken possession of the native officers and sepoys at this station, that grease, or fat, is used in the composition of this cartridge-paper; and this foolish idea is now so rooted in them, that it would, in my opinion, be both idle and unwise to attempt its removal.”

As, if no ulterior or darker purpose were in view, it was generally believed that the objection to the polluting cartridge was sincere, and the growing excitement was treated with calmness; but ere long, indications of deliberate evil were manifested.

On the day before General Hearsey wrote the letter above quoted, a *jemadar*, or native lieutenant, waited upon Lieutenant Allen, of the 84th Regiment of the Line, then stationed at Barrackpore, a large military village, distant twenty-four miles by water from Calcutta, and informed him that the four native regiments in the cantonments were ready to break out in open mutiny, and that he had been invited to attend a meeting on that very night, for the purpose of maturing the plot, and scheming out the mode of its operation. Lieutenant Allen was loth to attach much importance to a statement so startling; yet he boldly visited the lines at the time when the alleged meeting was to be held, that

* “The Sepoy Revolt; its Causes, &c.” By Henry Mead.

he might have ocular evidence of it; but none took place.

The faithful jemadar, however, persisted in his statement, and asserted that the resolution to hold the meeting had been postponed in consequence of certain suspicions being excited; but that his information was correct, was proved by General Hearsey reporting again, on the 11th of February, that the Europeans at Barrackpore were "dwelling upon a mine ready for explosion;" that he had been watching the bearing of the sepoys for some time, and was convinced that "their minds had been misled by some designing scoundrel."

To counteract the impressions produced by those intrigues, the general paraded all the troops on the 9th, and availed himself of that knowledge of Hindostanee which he so thoroughly possessed to endeavour to disabuse the minds of his hearers.

"Energetically and explicitly," he says, "I explained in a loud voice to the whole of the men the folly of the idea that possessed them—that the Government, or their officers, wished to interfere with their caste or religious prejudices, and impressed upon them the absurdity of their, for one moment, believing that they were to be forced to become Christians. I told them the British were Christians of the Book, *i.e.*, Protestants; that we admitted no proselytes but those who, being adults, could read and fully understand the precepts laid down therein; that if they came and threw themselves down at our feet, imploring to be made 'Book-Christians,' it could not be done, they could not be baptised until they had been examined in the tenets of the Book, and proved themselves fully conversant in them; and then they must, of their own good-will and accord, desire to become Christians of the Book ere they could become so."

In conclusion, the general asked them if they understood what he said, especially the 2nd Grenadiers, who nodded their assent, after which he dismissed the parade; but, still doubtful of the temper of the troops, he laid before the authorities the dangerous policy of having six regiments of native infantry brigaded in one place, such as Barrackpore, without any European corps of cavalry, infantry, or artillery, to be a check upon their movements; adding, that so far as influence went, the native officers were of no use; all they could do was to hold themselves aloof, hoping, by so doing, to escape censure, though, in fact, they were afraid of their own men. He then quoted the remark of Sir Charles Metcalfe, which we have given elsewhere.

A detachment of the 34th Native Infantry (one of the regiments harangued by General Hearsey) marched into Berhampore, 116 miles north of

Calcutta, on the 24th of February, and the members of it were, according to the custom in such cases, entertained by the sepoys of the 19th Bengal Native Infantry, there in garrison; and at the feast the all-engrossing topic of the greased cartridges was fully discussed, together with all other grievances, real or fanciful; and the sequel was not far distant.

On the following day, when Colonel Mitchell, the officer commanding, ordered a distribution of blank ammunition, for musketry exercise, the men of the 19th refused to put it in their pouches, on the plea of having suspicions as to how the cartridges had been prepared. As they were of the old fashion, made up, as usual, in dark blue paper, and at a time before Enfield rifles had been heard of, this conduct was deemed as absurd as it was outrageous. Colonel Mitchell intimidated them with some difficulty; they accepted the packets of ammunition in sullen and ominous silence, and repaired, on dismissal, to their lines.

In the course of the evening, after secret consultations, during which they worked themselves into a frenzy of excitement, they rushed forth, burst open the little huts where the spare arms were deposited, and seized them with shouts of defiance. To Colonel Mitchell only two courses were open: to march against the mutineers in the dark, or remain under arms till morning; and both of these were open to doubt and objection. There were no European troops at Berhampore, and no others, save a detachment of cavalry and a battery of artillery, both of whom, doubtless, sympathised with the infantry now in revolt.

The night was so intensely dark, that even with the aid of torches there would have been a difficulty in finding the way; while the ground near the lines was interspersed with dangerous tanks, which would have impeded the operations of cavalry, and the torchlight reflected from which would have enabled the mutineers to open a destructive fire, while they themselves would have been quite unseen. Anxious to avoid an issue so bloody and doubtful, Colonel Mitchell held a negotiation with them. This ended in a compromise; he, on his part, agreeing, as a first step, to withdraw the horse and artillery, and the mutineers on theirs, agreeing to make submission. To this arrangement Colonel Mitchell should never have stooped, by permitting mutineers to dictate terms, at a time when insubordination was spreading far and wide.

During these incipient affairs, the Commander-in-chief, General the Hon. George Anson (son of the Earl of Lichfield), who had been in the Guards, and served at Waterloo, was, unfortunately, far away

at Simla, whither he had gone for the benefit of his health. But Government seemed to be now fully alive to the perils that were impending; and two days after the news from Berhampore reached Calcutta, the Oriental Company's ship, *Bentinck*, was steaming towards the Irawaddi, with orders to bring the whole of H.M. 84th Regiment from Rangoon, with all possible dispatch. Meanwhile, the refractory 19th had been ordered down to Barrackpore. There, too, with an eye to the future, were dispatched a wing of H.M. 53rd (or Shropshire), with two troops of artillery, while twelve guns were also brought into the cantonment.

At this most dangerous period there was a great paucity of European troops in India, which had, in a great measure, been denuded of those that were imperatively necessary to control an infuriated, and most infatuated, native army. Battalion after battalion had been withdrawn, despite the remonstrances of Lord Dalhousie, who ultimately was compelled to inform the "cheese-paring Government" at home, "that he would not be responsible for the safety of the empire if any more European troops were withdrawn; yet four more regiments were sent to Persia after he had retired from the country;"* and now, there was little more than one British regiment to ten of natives between Calcutta and Agra!

On the 24th March, our 84th Regiment reached Calcutta, and proceeded at once to Chinsurah, to wait the arrival there of the 19th. The object of all these preparations was too palpable not to be completely understood by the secretly disaffected; and, presently, the 34th Bengal Native Infantry in particular, forgetting the probably affected moderation which they professed when harangued by General Hearsey, loudly expressed their sympathy with the 19th, whom they declared to merit, not punishment, but honour, as a reward for the defence they made of their sacred religion.

The time now passed on with little disturbance, but with intense disquietude and anxiety by the Europeans—especially those who had families; and it afterwards transpired, that a great and general conspiracy had been organised throughout that vast sepoy army which we had been more than a hundred years in bringing to perfection, for the simultaneous revolt of every regiment, at every station in Hindostan, on the last Sunday of May, 1857, at the hour of church service, when all Europeans were to be murdered, without regard to sex or age. But God willed it otherwise; for had this event actually taken place, we must inevitably have lost India, for a time, at least.

* Marshman's "India."

The 34th, though they must have been fully aware of the vast importance to themselves of remaining quiet till this terrible Sunday came, could not suppress unequivocal signs of the mutinous spirit that inspired them. Thus, two days before the 19th came in, on the 29th of March, a sepoy of the former corps, named Mungal Pandey, maddened by the excessive use of *bhang*, and other intoxicating drugs, armed himself with a sword and loaded musket, and staggered up and down in front of the lines, calling upon his comrades of the 34th—the *Bradshaw-ka-Puttan*—to rise, and threatening with death any European who should approach him. Lieutenant Bough, the adjutant, rode to the parade-ground, and, assisted by Sergeant-Major Hewson, attempted to disarm the dangerous drunkard, while calling upon the quarter-guard to turn out; but the latter, under a jemadar, looked sullenly and passively on, spectators of the struggle. As the adjutant approached, Mungal Pandey, from the cover of a field-piece, fired, and shot the horse of that officer, who then discharged one of his pistols, but missed, and ere he could draw his sword, Pandey made a rush, and cut him down. Ere the blow, which was not mortal, could be repeated, Hewson sprang forward, but was severely wounded, and both Europeans would have been murdered in the end, had not the orderly of Lieutenant Bough, a Mohammedan, seized Pandey, who was in the act of levelling his reloaded musket.

With several other officers, whom the sound of the firing had alarmed, General Hearsey, C.B., was promptly on the ground, and, by his resolute spirit, crushed that which was on the eve of becoming a general mutiny. Riding up to the jemadar and his recreant guard, with a cocked pistol in his hand, he threatened to blow out the brains of the first man who showed the slightest symptom of disobedience. They were thus overawed, and withdrew to their posts. For their conduct, both Mungal Pandey and the jemadar were tried, convicted, and hanged in front of the lines. The name of the former fanatic, who won an unenviable notoriety in India, as the shedder of the first blood in the cause of the mutineers, was, from that circumstance, given to all sepoys, as "Pandies," who excited the hostility or contempt of the British.

On the day after this outrage, the 19th Native Infantry, on the way to Barrackpore, reached Barasut, eight miles distant, when something of the punishment in store for them transpired, and Lord Canning, in a minute of date the 27th of March, had announced what it was to be:—"The open refusal of the whole regiment to obey orders, the seizure of arms with violence, and a tumultuous but

combined resistance to the authority of its officers, with arms loaded, is an offence for which any punishment less than dismissal from the service would be inadequate; mutiny so often and defiant cannot be excused by any sensitiveness of religion or caste, by fear of coercion, or by the seductions or deceptions of others. It must be met promptly and unhesitatingly, without the delay of a day more than may be necessary."

It has been questioned whether Lord Canning acted up to his own ideas of the enormity of the crime when he proposed so mild a punishment as mere dismissal, or being turned out of the service; and this painful ceremony took place at Barrackpore, on the 31st of March, though the regiment had petitioned for pardon.

When they entered Barrackpore on that day, the 19th found there under arms H.M. 53rd and 84th, two European batteries, and the Body Guard of the Governor-General, a corps of whose fidelity, though Indians, there never was a doubt, and the disbandment was at once carried into effect—a measure that undoubtedly filled the regiment with grief, and which they strove to avert by too late signs of real, or pretended, repentance. On one side of the parade-ground stood the European troops and batteries, with the Body Guard; on the other were the 34th, with the native troops previously at that station. Between them were halted the doomed 19th Regiment.

To all the officers it was a time of no ordinary anxiety; for at any moment all the natives might make common cause against all who had white faces, and of the former 4,000 were present.

The warrant for disbandment was read, and concluded thus:—

"The regiment has been guilty of open and defiant mutiny.

"It is no excuse for this offence to say, as has been said in the before-mentioned petition of the native officers and men of the regiment, that they were afraid of their religion, and that they apprehended violence to themselves.

"It is no atonement of it to declare, as they have therein declared, that they are ready to fight for their Government in the field, when they have disobeyed and insulted that Government in the persons of its officers, and have expressed no contrition for their heavy offences.

"Neither the 19th, nor any regiment in the service of the Government of India, nor any sepoy, Hindoo or Mussulman, has reason to pretend that Government has shown, directly or indirectly, a desire to interfere with the religion of the troops.

"It has been the unvarying rule of the Govern-

ment of India to treat the religious feelings of all its servants of every creed with careful respect, and to representations or complaints put forward in a dutiful and becoming spirit, on this or any other subject, it has never turned a deaf ear.

"But the Government of India expects to receive in return for this treatment the confidence of those who serve it.

"From its soldiers of every rank and race it will, at all times and in all circumstances, enforce unhesitating obedience. They have sworn to give it, and the Governor-General in Council will never cease to exact it. To no men who prefer complaints with arms in their hands will he ever listen.

"Had the sepoys of the 19th Regiment confided in their Government, and believed their commanding officer, instead of crediting the idle stories with which false and evil-minded men have deceived them, their religious scruples would still have remained inviolate, and themselves would still be, as they have hitherto been, faithful soldiers, trusted by the state, and laying up for future years all the rewards of a long and honourable service.

"But the Governor-General in Council can no longer have any confidence in this regiment, which has disgraced its name, and lost all claim to consideration and indulgence.

"It is, therefore, the order of the Governor-General in Council, that the 19th Regiment of Native Infantry be now disbanded; the native commissioned and non-commissioned officers and privates be discharged from the army of Bengal; and this be done at the head-quarters of the presiding division, in the presence of every available corps within two days' march of the station; that the regiment be paraded for the purpose; and that each man, after being deprived of his arms, shall receive his arrears of pay, and be required to withdraw from the cantonment.

"The European officers of the regiment will remain at Barrackpore until orders for their disposal shall be received from his Excellency the Commander-in-chief. This order to be read at the head of every regiment, troop, and company in the service."

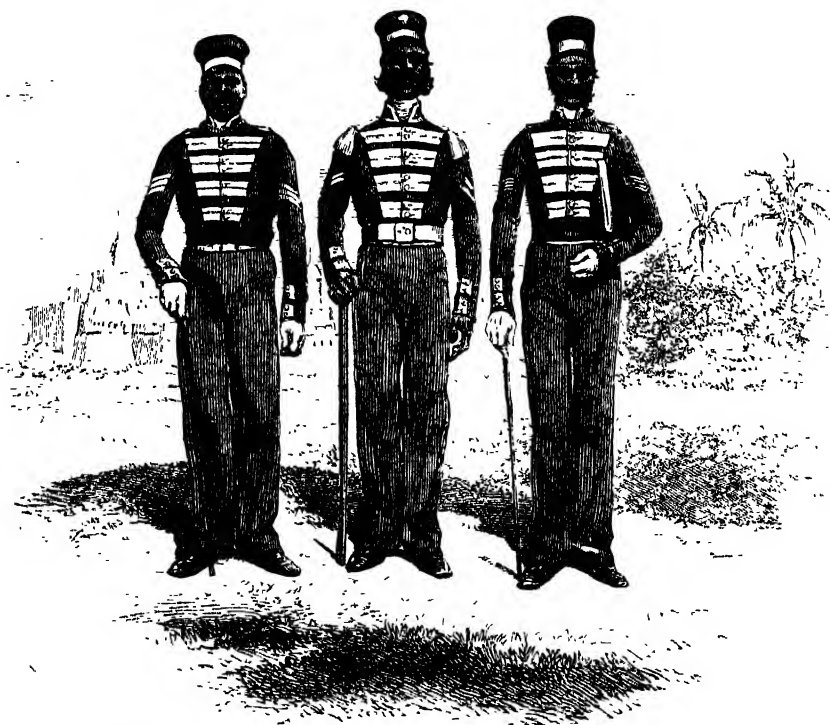
When ordered to ground arms, the regiment obeyed without a murmur; their colours, which were of dark-green silk, were then taken away, and the number of the 19th, which had been raised in 1776, was struck from the Indian Army List. Though the sentence could not be reversed, their peaceful and repentant behaviour won them several indulgences, which they could scarcely have anticipated. They received payment of their arrears to

the utmost anna, with money to pay for the cattle and boats that had brought down their families. "This gracious act was keenly felt," says General Hearsey, than whom none knew the sepoys better; "and loudly they bewailed their fate, saying the regiment had been misled."

The future fate of the 19th, the *Ung-ka-Pullan*, has something of melancholy interest in it. They begged to be enlisted into other corps, and offered to fight the 34th, as the original source of their disgrace. Both requests were, of course, declined, and they dispersed to seek other homes. Many

no example was made of the 34th Regiment; and of the general in command the leading English journal wrote bitterly at this time.

"The Commander-in-chief, a holiday soldier, who had never seen service either in peace or war, was, in the meantime, enjoying the pleasant climate of Simla. A shameless job had some years before sent him at one step from Tattersall's and Newmarket to the command of an army in one of the Presidencies; and when a vacancy occurred in the chief command of 300,000 men, the authorities at home at once recognised the claims of family and



NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS OF NATIVE BENGAL INFANTRY.

perished of cholera by the wayside; some were employed as menials by rich natives, but none of them were afterwards seen in arms at any time against the Government, while some were found serving bravely as volunteers against the rebels.

Government now hoped the matter was set completely at rest. The danger was actually spoken of as a matter of the past, and a vessel was chartered to take back the 84th to Rangoon. It seems now difficult to conceive how the Governor-General and his Council were so deluded. Their conduct was slow and vacillating towards the 34th, which contained a number of those men who had cheered and applauded Mungul Pandey; and now incendiary fires, the sure forerunners of mischief, were constantly taking place in localities far apart, yet

personal acquaintance in the disposal of the post. General Anson appears to have had no share in the disbandment of the Barrackpore regiment, and it was not until three months afterwards that the adjutant-general notified withdrawal of the objectionable cartridges.*

Meanwhile, the distribution of the mysterious and uncavined *chupatties* was becoming more visible, not only among the troops, but the general population.

On the 2nd of May, the 7th Oude Irregular Cavalry, then cantoned about seven miles from Lucknow, when ordered to bite, or otherwise tear, the new cartridge, the use of which, though recalled by order, through some unexplained oversight was

* *Times*, 1857.

still served out, refused. The regiment was one which belonged to the deposed monarch of Oude, and from that circumstance, and other influences brought secretly to bear upon its members, though the insubordination took the pretended aspect of a religious scruple, it sprung from a different sentiment; as, on the 8th of May, the regiment sought to instil a mutinous spirit into the 48th Bengal Native Infantry, quartered at Lucknow, and tacitly proposed that the corps should league together. Fortunately at this time the administration of Oude was in the hands of the able Sir Henry Lawrence,

ordered out for carbine practice with the new cartridge, all, save five, declined to use it. The eighty-five malcontents were at once brought before a court-martial, and sentenced to ten years' imprisonment with hard labour. On the 9th of May their sentences were read out on parade. Their uniform was stripped off them, and iron shackles were fixed to their ankles. Many of these men were the flower of the regiment, who had done the Queen good service in many a battle, and they implored the general to have mercy, and not degrade them by a doom so ignominious; but they



NATIVE OFFICERS OF THE BENGAL IRREGULAR CAVALRY.

who was officiating as chief commissioner in the absence of Outram, and took instant measures for repression. The aspect of some of the regular native troops, with a wing of H.M. 32nd, and a battery of eight guns, which he brought against them, proved too much for the mutineers, who threw down their arms and fled. At first Sir Henry was disposed to disband and disperse the whole of this mutinous Oude regiment, and permit those who were guiltless to re-enlist; but Lord Canning acted, perhaps, more wisely, and urging that it "was a fiction discharging soldiers one day to take them back the next," ordered the dismissal only of the native officers, with one or two exceptions, and about fifteen sepoy.

But a more eventful scene was at hand. Ninety men of the 3rd Light Cavalry, at Meerut, when

were marched off to gaol. On the following evening, while the Europeans were in church, the men of the 11th and 20th Bengal Native Infantry began to assemble tumultuously within their lines, and were evidently bent on mischief. The European officers at once hurried to the spot, in the hope of pacifying them. One of the first who arrived was Colonel Finnis (brother of the then Lord Mayor of London), who was shot in the back while in the act of haranguing the 20th. Choking in blood, he fell from his horse, and was hewn to pieces. The work of slaughter thus fairly inaugurated, the sepoys gave way to the most dreadful excesses; while the troopers of the 3rd, with yells, rushed to the gaol, burst in its gates, and released not only their comrades, but every felon and miscreant in the place. Joined by these wretches, and all those

vagabonds who usually infest our Indian military stations, the European bungalows were sacked and given to the flames, while an indiscriminate massacre ensued of all Christians, without regard to sex or age. The women and children, who took refuge in the gardens, were all tracked out and shot down amid the most fiendish yells.

None who witnessed the horrors of that Sunday night at Meerut ever forgot them. "On all sides," wrote one, "there shot up into the heavens great pinnacles of waving fire, of all hues and colours, according to the fuel that fed them; huge volumes of smoke rolling sullenly off in the sultry night air, and the crackling and roar of the conflagration mingling with the shouts and riot of the mutineers." "Bungalows began to blaze around us," wrote another, "nearer and nearer, till the frenzied mob reached that next our own. We saw a poor lady in the verandah, a Mrs. C—, lately arrived. We bade the servants bring her over the low wall to us, but they were too confused to attend to us. The stables of that house were burned first. We heard the shrieks of the horses. Then came the mob to the house itself, with awful shouts and curses. We heard the doors broken in and many shots, and at that moment my servants said they had been to bring away Mrs. C—, but found her dead on the ground, cut horribly, and she on the eve of her confinement." "It was not until sunrise on Monday," wrote a third, "that we knew, with anything like certainty, the extent of the atrocities committed by the savages within the cantonment of Meerut. What spectacles of terror met the eye almost simultaneously with the return of day! The lifeless and mutilated corpses of men, women, and children were to be seen, some of them so frightfully disfigured, and so shamefully dishonoured in death, that the very recollection of such sights chills the blood." *

It is difficult to believe that there was at this time, in Meerut, an European force consisting of H.M. 60th Rifles, the 6th Dragoon Guards (only half-horsed, however), a troop of horse artillery, and 500 artillery recruits—about 2,000 men in all, and fully officered. But, unfortunately, the command was in the hands of General Hewitt, an old man,

* "The Chaplain's Narrative."

who, though he had done good service in his day, was now unfitted by age, enervated by long residence in India, and unable to act with proper promptitude at such a crisis—or as Rollo Gillespie acted at Vellore, when, half a century before, with a handful of dragoons and his galloper guns, he crushed the mutiny there, and saved the Deccan.

He pleaded, in his report, that he did not think the result was premeditated, and that much valuable time was lost in calling out the Europeans, whose barracks were at some distance from the native lines. When the Queen's Carbineers were, at length, in their saddles, they dashed off at a brisk pace, through clouds of blinding dust and darkness, for it was then eight in the evening, and there is no twilight in India. Instead of riding straight for the scene of outrage, for some unknown reason they skirted it, and finally debouched on the left rear of the native infantry cantonments, which were then sheeted with fire.

On reaching the parade-ground of the 11th, they found the 60th Rifles and artillery already there; but the mutineers and others were all off *en masse* for Delhi, horse and foot, where a sure welcome awaited them.

Had the wretched General Hewitt at once set off with the Carbineers and horse-artillery guns, leaving the Rifles to follow, he would undoubtedly have overtaken and cut them to pieces, and thus prevented the horrors that took place at Delhi; but he contented himself with little more than a reconnaissance. An officer of the Carbineers volunteered to push on with a party, and possess himself of the bridge of the Jumna, but this was not permitted.

The 60th Rifles contrived to pick off a few of the rearmost of the fugitives, and then the horse artillery galloped to the front, unlimbered, and opened a useless fire upon a corpse, in which it was supposed many were concealed. The heavy discharges of grape crashed and tore among the trees, but did no other damage; and after this demonstration, on the plea of protecting the station against any other nocturnal assault, the force returned to Meerut, while, flushed with their partial success, the mutineers, without further molestation, pushed on for the city of the Moguls.

CHAPTER XLIII.

THE ATROCITIES AT DELHI.—VIGOROUS MEASURES IN THE PUNJAB.—PROGRESS OF THE MUTINY.

ABOUT eight o'clock on Monday morning a disorderly party of the 3rd Cavalry were seen from Delhi galloping down the Meerut Road towards the pontoon bridge, which spans the Jumna near the walls of the Selinghur Fort. On this being reported to the commissioner, Mr. Simon Fraser, some suspicion led him to have the city gates closed; but ere this could be done the mutineers, horse, foot, police, and convicts were all pouring within the walls, when, without a moment's delay, the work of destruction commenced. They made their appearance in front of the stately palace, calling clamorously for the king, announcing that they had come from Meerut, resolved to fight for their faith, and to murder all Europeans.

They set fire to all the bungalows in the Durya Gunge, killing every European they met; they plundered the dispensary near the fort, and on seeing Mr. Fraser driving in his buggy, shot him, cut off his head, and carried it about in triumph. At the palace gate they shot down Captain Douglas, the brave commander of the guards, who ventured to remonstrate with them. Rushing upstairs they found the station chaplain, the Rev. W. Jennings, and his daughter, who had lately arrived from England, and was on the eve of her marriage. Despite her tears and shrieks, they butchered her father before her eyes, and then put her also to death, after subjecting her to the most dreadful indignities.

While similar atrocities were occurring everywhere throughout that beautiful city, a grand instance of self-devotion was given by two British officers in the magazine of the arsenal, which was the greatest in India, stored with many heavy guns, and a vast quantity of firearms, powder, percussion caps, and material of war. There was another magazine outside the walls at two miles distant in the cantonments; these were occupied by the 38th, 54th, and 74th Bengal Native Infantry. On the mutineers entering the city, Lieutenant Willoughby went to the great magazine, and had the gates closed and barricaded, and every measure for a defence taken. This magazine contained 300 pieces of cannon, 20,000 stand of muskets and bayonets, 200,000 rounds of shot and shell, and other munition to correspond.

"Inside the gate leading to the park were placed two six-pounders, double-charged with

grape, under Sub-conductor Crow and Sergeant Stewart, with the lighted matches in their hands, and with orders that if any attempts were made to force the gate both guns were to be fired at once, and they were to fall back on that part of the magazine in which Lieutenant Willoughby and I (Lieutenant G. Forrest) were posted. The principal gate of the magazine was similarly defended by two guns, with the *chereaux de frise* laid down on the inside. For the further defence of this gate, and the magazine in its vicinity, were two six-pounders, so placed as to command the gate or a small bastion beside it. Within sixty yards of the gate, and in front of the office, and commanding two cross-roads, were three six-pounders and a twenty-four-pound howitzer, which could be managed so as to act upon any part of the magazine in that neighbourhood. After all these guns had been placed in the several positions above-named, they were loaded with double charges of grape. The next step taken was to place arms in the hands of the native establishment, which they most reluctantly received, and appeared to be in a state, not only of excitement, but of insubordination, as they refused to obey any orders issued by Europeans, particularly the Mussulman portion of the establishment. After the above arrangements had been made, a train was laid by Conductors Buckley, Scully, and Sergeant Stewart, ready to be fired by a preconcerted signal. So soon as the above arrangements had been made, guards from the palace came and demanded possession of the magazine in the name of the King of Delhi. To this no reply was given. Immediately after that, the soubahdar of the guard on duty at the magazine informed Lieutenant Willoughby and me, that the King of Delhi had sent down word to the mutineers that he would without delay send scaling-ladders from the palace for the purpose of scaling the walls, and which shortly after arrived. On the ladders being erected against the walls, the whole of our native establishment deserted us by climbing up the sloped sheds inside of the magazine, and descending the ladders on the outside; after which the enemy appeared in greater number on the top of the wall, and on them we kept up an incessant fire of grape, every round of which told well, as long as a single round remained." *

* Lieutenant Forrest's "Narrative."

The assailants were all in the uniform of the King of Delhi, and the only persons to work the four field-pieces against them were Lieutenant Forrest and Conductor Buckley. The crisis had come! The magazine had been entered at two points; the capture of the guns was certain, and already these two officers had been wounded, one by two musket-balls in his left hand, and the other by one above the elbow. This was at half-past three p.m. Lieutenant Willoughby gave the signal, Buckley repeated it, and Scully fired the magazine.

A roar followed as if the earth were splitting asunder, and while all Delhi, from the bank of the Jumna to the Cashmere Gate, shook and trembled, the mighty magazine exploded, and, for a time, a dark cloud overhung the palace and the city. Hundreds of the mutineers were blown into the air, and won the death they deserved; but none of the brave defenders escaped without injury. Conductor Scully was so dreadfully wounded that for him escape was impossible, as his head and face were so scorched and contused. Many women and children who had taken shelter in the magazine also perished. Willoughby and Forrest succeeded in reaching the Cashmere Gate. The latter escaped, and the former was murdered on the road to Meerut; but Buckley and another, who sought the same place by a different route, reached Hewitt's head-quarters in safety.

While the struggle at the magazine was in progress, horror was reigning supreme elsewhere in Delhi, and a general massacre of the Europeans ensued everywhere. The bank was pillaged. Mr. Beresford, the manager, his wife and five children, had their throats cut by pieces of broken glass; the treasury, the church, and the office of the *Delhi Gazette*, were all demolished. The presses were hurled into the river, and the types used as slugs, while the printers and compositors were hacked to pieces. About thirty persons, who barricaded themselves in the house of a Mr. Aldwell, made a resolute but futile defence, as Mrs. Aldwell and her three children alone succeeded in escaping, disguised as natives, and after many painful adventures reached the palace of the king, who had there some fifty other Europeans, whose lives he guaranteed, with what faith we shall soon have to show.

As soon as the brigadier commanding found that the mutineers were in Delhi, he got the troops under arms at the cantonments, and lost no time in sending down the 54th Bengal Native Infantry, under Colonel Ripley, with two guns; and that officer, while hoping like the rest for better things, foresaw but too clearly the terrible sequel. There were no European troops in or near Delhi, and

nothing was left to our officers but the slender and desperate chance of putting down a revolt by soldiers who, however well disciplined, sympathised with it. The consequence was, that the three regiments in Delhi, when brought face to face with the mutineers, fraternised with them, or—like the infamous 54th—stood by while their officers were all murdered in succession by the 3rd Cavalry.

All thought of making head against the mutineers was abandoned now; but Brigadier Grove deemed it possible that the Flagstaff Tower, a work of some strength, near the cantonments, might be defended till succour came; but from whence it would come none knew. There, accordingly, the surviving officers, and some European residents who had escaped from the city, took refuge. The defence seemed practicable, and there the brigadier took post, with two guns and 300 sepoys who still obeyed orders. But this exception to the general treachery was of brief duration; and when they revolted, the handful of Europeans could only disperse and fly for their lives in the night, but under a fire of cannon and musketry from the walls of Delhi. Some officers and their wives succeeded in making their escape; and many a tale is told of the heroic bearing of delicate ladies, some bearing children in their arms, while, under the scorching sun of the Indian May, they sought refuge in the deep jungles, or waded through streams, with little clothing and no food. Meanwhile, the mutiny within the city assumed the form and magnitude of an organised rebellion; and the king, either in execution of a premeditated design, or as he afterwards vainly pretended, under the influence of intimidation, assumed the sovereignty of India. An old silver throne was brought into the marble hall of audience. On this he took his seat under a salute of twenty-one guns, received public homage as the heir of the Mogul, and began to issue royal mandates.

His son, Mirza Mogul, was named commander-in-chief, and a very helpless one he proved. The fugitives in the place, chiefly women and young girls, could all have been saved and concealed by these infamous princes, had their number been 500 instead of fifty; but they were capable of committing in cold blood atrocities greater even, when measured thus, than those of the mutineers.

For five days and nights these unhappy creatures, stripped to the skin, were kept in the palace, and all they were compelled to undergo will never be known. On the fifth day they were ordered to be put to death in the great courtyard, and by ten a.m. great numbers of people came flocking to the palace as to a festival. Mrs. Aldwell and her three children were the only Europeans

who escaped; this she achieved by skilfully adopting Mohammedan disguises, and teaching them to repeat the Mohammedan confession of faith. In this way, with their fair skins, they passed for Cashmerians.

This lady relates, that on the order being issued to bring the victims to the courtyard they cried piteously. After they were all counted, a rope was thrown round them to prevent any escape. Four men who were found among them were taken forth and shot. The rest, on a given signal, were suddenly attacked, by the king's body-guard and some of the mutineers, with the sword, and all were stabbed, hewn down, and cut to pieces.

From 100 to 150 men were employed in this work. Soon after, the bodies were placed in carts and flung into the Jumna. These were some of the first-fruits of the revolt at Delhi.

On an appointed day, the King of Delhi—the monarch without a kingdom—proceeded with much pomp and circumstance through the magnificent "Street of Silver" (which is ninety feet broad and 1,500 long) and other parts of Delhi, and enjoined the bazaar people to open their shops. Prince Mirza Abubeker was appointed general of the cavalry. The troops held the old king responsible for the supplies, but refused to give up the public money found in the treasury—more than half a million sterling. Several native officers were promoted to high nominal commands, and most active measures were taken to place the blood-stained city in a state of defence. A kind of discipline was generally maintained, and a determination was expressed to do battle to the death with the British if they approached the walls.

Thanks to the telegraph—that element of civilisation for which India had been so recently indebted to Lord Dalhousie—the electric wire flashed down to Calcutta the tidings of these terrible events, and the establishment of a Mogul dynasty; and then to Madras, to Ceylon and Bombay, Lord Canning sent immediately for every available royal regiment, while a steamer was dispatched to intercept the Earl of Elgin, then on his mission to China, and to entreat him to forward to Calcutta the European force which accompanied him, while orders were given to dispatch to the front the Highlanders and other Europeans returning from Persia as fast as they arrived.

The telegraph gave our officers in the Punjab immediate notice of the crisis at Delhi, which operated as a common signal to all the native regiments throughout Bengal; and accordingly, in many localities the tidings of it no sooner came than a determination was evinced to join in the

same career of crime and bloodshed. Our authorities had now to prepare for the worst; and to diminish the means of mischief, it was resolved to disarm the sepoys whenever they could be overawed; and nowhere was this policy so quickly adopted and ably carried out as in the recently-annexed Punjab.

As its inhabitants were warlike in spirit, there was a necessity for keeping a firm hand over them; hence the troops in the "Land of the Five Waters" were 59,656 strong. Of these 35,900 were Hindostanees, 13,430 were Punjaubees, and only 10,326 were Europeans. It was considered Lord Dalhousie's "pet province," and he drained the old districts of their best officers to enrich its establishments. "Never," says Marshman, "since the introduction of British power into India had so large a number of statesmen and generals of the first order been collected together in the administration of any province. At the head of this galaxy of talent stood Sir John Lawrence, a tower of strength, with a genius for military organisation, although a civilian, second only to Lord Wellesley and Lord Dalhousie; while among the foremost of his assistants were Robert Montgomery, Donald Macleod, Herbert Edwardes, Neville Chamberlain, and, above all, John Nicholson. But it is not easy to select any names without doing injustice to other distinguished men, civil and military, whose zeal, devotion, and energy achieved the success of which their country is justly proud. . . . Cut off from all communication with the Government of India in the capital, they were constrained to act on their own judgment and responsibility; and when the vigour of their proceedings is contrasted with the official feebleness too visible in Calcutta, this isolation cannot but be considered a fortunate circumstance."

The Hindostanee troops in the Punjab, though the strongest force there, were so cantoned as to be scarcely capable of combined action, and were without the sympathy of the inhabitants, who viewed them as foreigners; hence, had they mutinied, they might have had more than the Queen's troops to face. These advantages were not forgotten by the authorities; thus the Punjab, from which, at this crisis, the greatest danger was apprehended, not only remained tranquil, but materially assisted in the final suppression of the revolt.

On the 12th of May the telegraph informed our officers at Lahore of the outbreak at Meerut and the revolt at Delhi; but Sir John Lawrence was then at Rawul Pindee, an old walled town of mud-built houses, 165 miles N.N.W. of the capital; and owing to a stoppage in the telegraph he could not

be communicated with at this time, when instant action was necessary, as dissatisfaction among the sepoys was notorious. Mr. Robert Montgomery, the judicial commissioner, assuming the requisite responsibility, summoned a council of the civil and military authorities, and suggested the propriety of depriving the sepoys of their percussion caps, if not of their arms. The latter, as the bolder course,

pile arms, at once obeyed; and it was afterwards ascertained that this prompt measure had not been enforced one hour too soon, as these regiments had formed a plot for seizing the fort at Lahore, and massacring every European there and at Mean Meer. But now ensued something of a blunder at Ferozepore.

On his first intelligence of the mutinies, Mr.



PORTRAIT OF LORD CANNING.

was preferred. Six miles from Lahore, in the large cantonment of Mean Meer, were the 8th Bengal Cavalry, with the 16th, 26th, and 49th Bengal Infantry, to control and overawe whom the only European force consisted of H.M. 81st Foot (850 strong), with two troops of the Company's horse artillery.

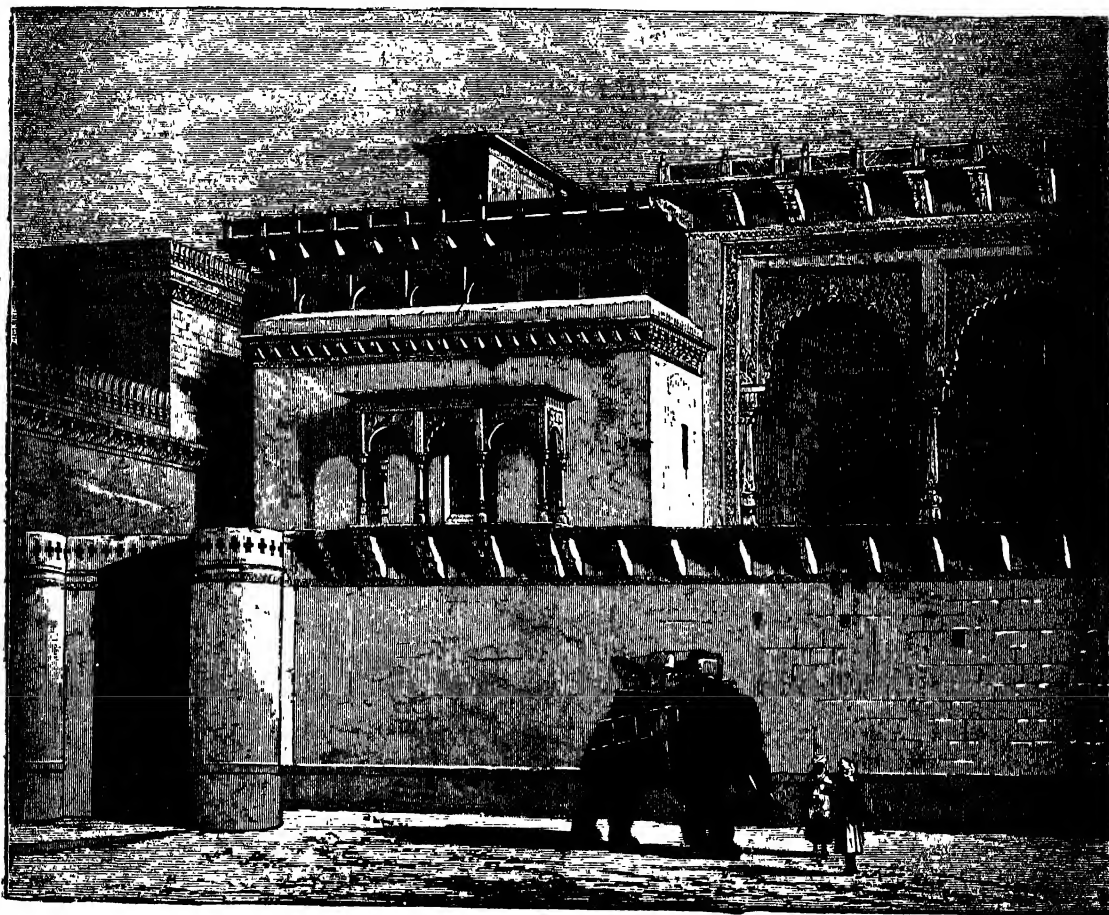
In spite of the great disparity of force, as a portion of the 81st had to keep Lahore from becoming a focus of mischief, and only 300 bayonets with twelve guns could be brought against them, the sepoys, 3,500 strong, when ordered to

Montgomery sent off an express to that place to inform Brigadier Innes. The intimation, which reached that officer on the 13th May, for some reason, failed to impress him sufficiently. In his care was an immense arsenal full of military stores; and though he could not but be aware of the imperative necessity of properly securing it, the 45th and 57th Bengal Native Infantry were permitted to retain their arms, and lost no time in showing how little they deserved the trust he reposed in them; but, as Sir John Lawrence stated in his report on the subject, "it was fortunate that

the European barracks were close to the arsenal, into which building a company of Europeans were introduced just before it was assailed by the native infantry. But after the arsenal had been secured and the mutineers repulsed, they were allowed to return and burn buildings in the cantonments at their pleasure during the whole night of the 14th of May. No adequate efforts were made even to punish them. Even those who in their flight from

at Ferozepore, no murders of Europeans were perpetrated.

So early as the 19th of April, the appearance of incendiary fires at Umballa announced the discontent of the native troops there; and by the 8th of May wandering Fakirs and others, went about with a prediction "that in the following week infidel blood would be shed at Delhi and Umballa, and that a general rising would take place."



COURTYARD OF THE PALACE OF GOVINDGHUR.

the station towards Delhi had been seized by the police and the country people, were not brought to trial until reiterated orders to that effect had been issued. But unfortunately, at Ferozepore, errors did not end; for when, at a date subsequent, the light cavalry were disarmed, their horses were not taken away. When, however, the taking of the horses was insisted on at last, the troopers had a full opportunity of concocting their plans for an outbreak; as the order, instead of being kept secret, was formally copied, and circulated in the order book!"

But notwithstanding these unfortunate blunders

But only two days after, on the 10th, as if they feared others would anticipate them in the sanguinary game, the 5th and 6th Native Infantry rushed, by tacit arrangement, to their bells of arms, and clamorously began to load and cap their muskets. They were eventually quelled, and, most strange to say, unconditionally forgiven, after which the most of both battalions marched off to join the rebels at Delhi.

These minor blunders were exceptions to the able management evinced in the Punjaub and Cis-Sutlej provinces. The fort of Phillour, on the Doab frontier, was fortunately saved by having a

company of European infantry and some European gunners placed into it, while the native troops were expelled. The same promptitude saved the fort of Govindghur, one of the most important strongholds in the Punjab, having complete command of Umritsir, the holy capital of the Sikhs. When the revolt took place, it was held by a strong detachment of the 59th Bengal Native Infantry

and only seventy European gunners, who must have been overpowered and destroyed, had they not been reinforced by a subdivision of H.M. 81st, hurried over from Lahore in native one-horse gigs.

What the 59th would have done may be deduced from the fact, that it was necessary soon after to deprive them of their arms and ammunition.

CHAPTER XLIV.

AFFAIRS IN PESHAWUR.—ACTS OF DISARMING.—MUTINIES IN THE DOAB, AT BAREILLY, AND ELSEWHERE.

At the time of these occurrences, our troops in the valley of Peshawur consisted of 2,800 Europeans, and 8,000 natives, with eighteen field pieces and a mounted battery. On hearing of the mutinies, it was suggested by Colonel John Nicholson, an Irish officer of great gallantry, to form a movable column of select troops, while, at the same time, a rigid supervision of the sepoy correspondence was made at the Post Office; and the 64th Bengal Native Infantry, which was notoriously disaffected, was broken up into small detachments, which were posted far apart. But the insolent demeanour of the men was no longer concealed, and letters, addressed to them through the post, revelled in descriptions of the atrocities perpetrated elsewhere on the Feringhee men, women, and children, and urging them to emulate the example.

A letter from a portion of the 51st Native Infantry, stationed at Attock, addressed to the 64th, fell into the hands of Brigadier Cotton, commanding at Peshawur, and part of it ran thus:—"The cartridge will have to be beaten on the 22nd instant. Of this you are hereby informed. This is addressed to you by the whole regiment. Oh, brothers! the religion of Hindoos and Mohammedans is all one; therefore all you soldiers should know this. Here, all the sepoys are at the bidding of the jemadar, soubahdar-major, and havildar-major. All are discontented with this business, whether small or great. What more need be written?"

Another hand in the same letter added—"In whatever way you can manage it, come into Peshawur on the 21st instant. Thoroughly understand that point; in fact, eat there, and drink here!"

Made thus aware of what was about to take place, and that (as Colonel Edwardes said at a council

of war) "whatever gave rise to the mutiny, it had settled down into a struggle for empire under Mohammedan guidance, with the Mogul capital for its centre," the authorities were able to counterwork the plot of the 55th and 64th. On the 21st of May, the day appointed, a party of the former corps quitted their post on the Attock ferry, and marched towards Nowshera, where Major Verner, who commanded there, had been informed of their intentions, and thus intercepted and disarmed them. But the moment he entered Nowshera with his prisoners, three companies of the 55th, stationed there, rescued them, broke into the magazine, filled their pouches with ammunition, crossed the Cabul, and, on hastening to Murdan, where the rest of the battalion was quartered, its mutiny was complete.

It was but too apparent now, that it was impossible to delay the general disarmament of the native troops, and the movement began in Peshawur. There were stationed the 5th Cavalry, the 26th, 24th, 27th, and 51st Bengal Native Infantry. The 21st, having hitherto shown no sympathy with the mutineers, was exempted from the degradation, together with the 7th and 18th Irregular Cavalry—the latter not without considerable hesitation on the part of those in command: "But the case stood thus. Four native regiments were to be disarmed, while three, who were to be spectators of the operation, were by no means free from the suspicion of being more inclined to oppose than to assist in it."

On the morning of the 22nd, H.M. 70th Foot, and the 87th Irish Fusiliers, with the artillery, took post at each end of the cantonments; and so firmly and promptly acted our officers, that the four regiments dared not resist, but laid down their arms when ordered to do so. And this master-

stroke had a magical effect on the people and chiefs in the valley of Peshawur.

The next step was to deal with the 55th, in open mutiny at Murdan. At midnight, on the 23rd, a force of 300 European infantry, 250 irregular cavalry, with police, and eight guns, quietly left Peshawur, under Colonel Chute, of H.M. 70th, accompanied by Colonel Nicholson, as political officer. *En route* they were increased by a party, under Major Vaughan, from Nowshera, and by sunrise on the 25th, the whole were seen approaching Murdan. On this, the mutineers at once abandoned the fort, and fled towards the hills of Surat, but Nicholson's galloping troopers soon overtook them, and facing about, they made a desperate resistance.

Broken by a charge, they fled again in small parties; but 120 were slain, and 150 made prisoners. Many of these were marched back to Peshawur, and blown from the guns on parade.

About the same time, the 5th Native Infantry were in a state of mutiny at Umballa, although fully aware that H.M. 75th was then ready to annihilate them, for the blood of every Briton was at fever-heat now; but the officer commanding them, dreading the responsibility of bloodshed, merely disarmed them, on which they marched off to swell the fast-gathering army of traitors at Delhi. Thus every officer did not act with the wise energy of Nicholson, as Brigadier Johnson permitted Loodiana to be plundered, and the three regiments from Jullunder and Phillour to march off with all their arms to Delhi.

The 14th, at Jhelum, was found ready for revolt, but the officer sent against them by Sir John Lawrence disobeyed his instructions, and in the sharp conflict which ensued, as the sepoys had the advantage, they made their escape. This emboldened the discontented regiments at Sealkote to rise, in that way which was now the fashion, upon their officers, burst open the gaol, plunder the treasury and the European houses, and set out on the march to Delhi. But Nicholson was not far off, with his select movable column, and after having succeeded in disarming three more regiments, regardless of the then insufferable heat, he pushed on with untiring energy and speed.

Overtaking the Sealkote mutineers, he cut them to pieces, took all their baggage and ammunition, together with the spoil of the station. Four hundred of them were left dead on the field.

In short, within a month from that Sunday evening at Meerut, there was scarcely a native regiment between Allahabad and the banks of the Sutlej which had not revolted; and as the sepoys

flocked towards Delhi, as the seat of the new government, the recapture of it became daily more urgent, and, to all appearance, more arduous. Lawrence and his gallant compatriots turned all their attention to the dispatch of men and munition for the intended siege; but with the slender means at his disposal, and the harassing local demands upon them, he thought of placing Peshawur and all the district that lay beyond the Indus, in the hands of Dost Mohammed, and thus obtaining the valuable aid of the royal forces quartered there. Colonel Edwardes earnestly opposed this idea, and referred to Lord Canning, on the 10th of June. "Hold on at Peshawur to the last," was his reply, dated the 15th of July, for so completely had the rebels cut off the communication between Calcutta and the Punjab, that it was sent by steamer to Lord Harris at Madras, to be telegraphed to Lord Elphinstone at Bombay, from whence he was to send it to the front as best he could.

Though the energetic measures resorted to in the Punjab gave security there for a time, the revolt made alarming progress elsewhere. Early in May, the 9th Native Infantry were in the Doab; three companies were stationed at Allyghur, three at Mynpooree, three at Etawah, and one at Bolandshuhur. Though startled and shocked by the events at Meerut and elsewhere, their officers still had confidence in them, especially after parties of the revolted 3rd Cavalry, in search of plunder, came near them, and were fired upon and driven off. At the station of Bolandshuhur it chanced that a mutinous agent, or spy, was captured by them, and given over to the authorities, by whom he was hanged. Unfortunately, he proved to be a high-caste Brahmin, and this sequel so shocked and enraged the very men who had apprehended him, that a frenzy seized them on the 20th of May; they plundered the treasury, opened the gaol, and marched off to Delhi. By the 24th, every detachment of the corps had imitated their example. The men at Mynpooree were opposed and thwarted by the bravery and energy of a young English lieutenant, named De Kantzow, who succeeded, by an admirable display of patience, temper, and courage, in saving the contents of the treasury, for which he was warmly thanked by the Governor-General.

After a little pause, a simultaneous burst of insurrection took place, and in localities so far apart, that it seemed scarcely possible to have been the result of a previous understanding. On the 28th of May, the Hurriana Light Infantry, and the 4th Irregular Cavalry, quartered in the towns

of Hansi and Hissar, north-westward of Delhi, broke out into open mutiny. This they inaugurated by an indiscriminate massacre of all the Europeans, accompanied by atrocities as black and as sickening as any that had yet occurred. On the very same day, at the distant locality of Nusseerabad, fifteen miles south-west of Ajmere, in the heart of Rajpootana, the 15th and 30th Bengal Native Infantry, with a company of native artillery, revolted and made themselves masters of the guns, but not without a struggle. As if to show how little sympathy the army of their presidency had with the movement, the 1st Bombay Lancers thrice charged the mutineers, but without success, as the disparity of numbers was too great, and they were compelled to retire to Beawr, thirty miles distant, while the former set the cantonments in flames, and marched off to Delhi. During the struggle, many European officers fell, but, protected by the lancers, the survivors were enabled to escape. One of these, Lieutenant Prichard, writes thus of the dreadful suspense in which the Europeans were kept at that terrible time :—

"I think all who have passed through the eventful period of 1857 will agree with me that the most distressing time of all was the interval—short in some cases, long in others—which elapsed before the troops actually declared their mutinous intentions. To trust them really was impossible ; at the same time we could not actually distrust them.

. Those who had families to protect, wives and children, whose fate might be so dreadful that the stoutest heart feared to contemplate it, and the bare possibility of which was enough to unman any one, experienced this anxiety to the utmost. But there we were, day after day, looking out eagerly for reports, discussing among ourselves anxiously the signs of the times, and the feeling of our men, and the prospect of their remaining faithful, with the chance of escape, or the first mode of action to be adopted if they mutinied. From the first thing in the morning to the last thing at night, we were kept with our mental energies strained to the very utmost, striving to maintain a careless, unconcerned demeanour, lest we should encourage disaffection by showing want of confidence. Expecting to hear from the lines every moment the sound of uproar that would herald in, we knew, a scene of outrage and massacre, we looked at our wives and little ones, and felt how powerless we were to save and protect those whom God had given us for protection, from a lawless and bloodthirsty rabble, drunk with lust and fury."

After denying the truth of those stories that

some officers shot their wives to save them from indignities, he says, "The accounts of the atrocities heaped upon the ladies at Delhi and many other places, were, alas, no fabrication. They were too true. This has been proved by investigation made upon the spot, though the detailed results of those inquiries will probably never be made public, and perhaps it is just as well they should not be."*

Simultaneous with the rising in Rajpootana was a formidable outbreak at Bareilly, the capital of Rohilkund, where the wrongs suffered by the Rohillas, in consequence of the compact between Warren Hastings and the nabob, had never been forgotten, and were remembered now with all the unreasoning rancour of a transmitted feud.

On receiving tidings of the proclamation of a king at Delhi, the 18th and 68th Bengal Native Infantry, cantoned at Bareilly, were thrown into a state of high excitement, which was enhanced by the passage through their lines of 150 mutineers of the 45th, from another post. Their officers had foreseen the impossibility of averting an outbreak, and had wisely transferred all women and children to Nynce Tal. The men talked sometimes openly of revolting, but being loth that any of their intended victims should escape them, they employed all the arts of Oriental treachery to delude their officers, and professing contrition, begged for forgiveness for having been at all misled, and then urged, some with tears in their eyes, that the European ladies and children might be brought back from Nynce Tal. With this their relations were not so infatuated as to comply. But the request imposed so much upon Brigadier Sibbald, that he wrote to Government, extolling the fidelity of his sepoys ; and ere the letter reached its destination, he was one of their first victims.

On Sunday, the 31st of May, by a preconcerted signal, they rushed to arms, and commenced the work of devastation and slaughter, by pouring grape and musketry into the officers' quarters, firing the houses, plundering the treasury, and loosing from gaol some 3,000 prisoners, who instantly fraternised with the populace, who were notorious as the most turbulent in British India ; and Ruktawar Khan, a soubahdar of artillery, who assumed the rank of general, commanded the whole, and rode through the streets in the carriage of the murdered brigadier, attended by a numerous staff. The escapes of many on that night—for the revolt took place at eleven p.m.—were marvellous, but few were more so than those of Captains Peterson and Gibbs, and Lieutenant Warde of the 68th, who had to gallop along the line of the whole

* "The Mutinies in Rajpootana."

parade, exposed to volleys of musketry and grape, at 200 yards. An old native judge, one of the Company's servants, named Khan Bahadoor Khan, the descendant of an old Rohilla chief, proclaimed himself King of Rohilkund, and inaugurated this assumption by a cruel tragedy. Among the prisoners captured were Messrs. Robertson and Raikes, of the civil service, Doctors Hay and Bach, principal of the college. All of these unfortunates were brought to trial before a mock court; the forms of law were gone through, and they were hanged in front of the gaol. On the same Sunday, the 28th mutinied at Shahjhanpore, shot an officer dead, and sent a party to murder the Europeans in the church; but though Mr. McCallum was shot in the pulpit, and though others were cut down, the greater part effected an escape to Oude, only to be in the end barbarously massacred near Aurungabad. There the ladies were compelled to quit their carriages by the sepoy of the 41st, and "on their alighting they were shot one by one—the children, some bayoneted, others dashed on the ground." All the officers were then killed. "The police jemadar afterwards came up, and finding the bodies of the officers, ladies, and children lying there, had a large hole dug, and buried them all in it."*

Most atrocious was the mutiny at Jhansi, which stands 140 miles south of Agra, where a bitter feeling of disaffection existed, especially among those who regretted the fall of their independence, and the loss of their native court. The ranee had never concealed her hatred of the British Government, whose pension she had scornfully spurned; thus Jhansi was not long in taking a part in the terrible Bengal convulsion. The only troops there were the left wings of the 12th Bengal Native Infantry, and 14th Irregular Infantry, and with these the ranee and her advisers had begun to tamper on the first tidings of the outbreaks at Meerut and Delhi; but a dread of being unsuccessful kept them in a state of sulky repression till the 4th of June. Forewarned of the coming peril, the Europeans, whose whole number, women and little ones included, amounted to only fifty-five, had taken shelter in the Star Fort, and the task seemed indeed a dark and desperate one to withstand the bloodthirsty hordes who beset them. They barricaded the gates, and defended themselves for four days and nights, the ladies behaving admirably, cooking their scanty store of provisions, nursing the wounded, and casting bullets; but after Captain

Gordon, Lieutenant Powys, and others had fallen, their position became most desperate.

Then the merciless ranee sent her elephants, and the gates were forced. By retiring to some buildings they were able to fight—as only men can fight who do so for those that are dearest to them—for a little longer; and, as an unconditional surrender was impending, they gladly accepted the terms offered—to surrender the fort on condition that their lives were spared. "This offer, after it had been confirmed by the most solemn oaths, was accepted, and all who had survived the miseries of the siege, having laid down their arms, were beginning to retire, when, in utter violation of all that had been stipulated and sworn, they were carried off to a place of execution, and put to the sword, man, woman, and child, with a barbarity too horrible for description."

The men were destroyed first, Captain Burgess taking the lead, with his elbows tied behind his back, and a Book of Common Prayer in his hands.

At Agra, once the capital of all India under Ackbar, and the centre of the leading province of his mighty empire, great anxiety was felt as the rebellion spread; but, as there was a European force there, whatever happened, there would be a sharp struggle. In garrison were the 3rd Bengal Fusiliers (now 107th of H.M. Line), a troop of European artillery, with the 44th and 67th Native Infantry. That the latter meant mischief soon became apparent, from the number of incendiary fires that broke out at night. By these they hoped to lure forth the white troops to extinguish the flames, when advantage would be taken of their absence to seize the fort; but the arrangements of those in command defeated this. Aware that everything depended on possession of the fort, no means were omitted to secure it. On the 14th of May the sepoy troops were harangued on parade, when they made the air ring with protestations of their inviolate fidelity. It chanced that the two native regiments were on bad terms, and Mr. Colvin thought to turn this to good account by employing each corps as a check upon the other; but, about the end of May, it became desirable to bring in a quantity of treasure from Muttra, thirty miles distant; and, not to weaken the European force, a company from each sepoy corps was sent to escort it, in the belief that their mutual hatred would preclude any act of common treachery. However, no sooner was the money in their possession than they forgot their feud, and marched off to Delhi with it. In consequence of this the remaining companies of both regiments were instantly disarmed, and many of the men deserted.

* "The Indian Mutiny," 1858.

The outbreak at Allahabad presented the usual features of cruelty and crime. There some of the native infantry, to "throw dust in the eyes" of the authorities, were so loyal in their protestations

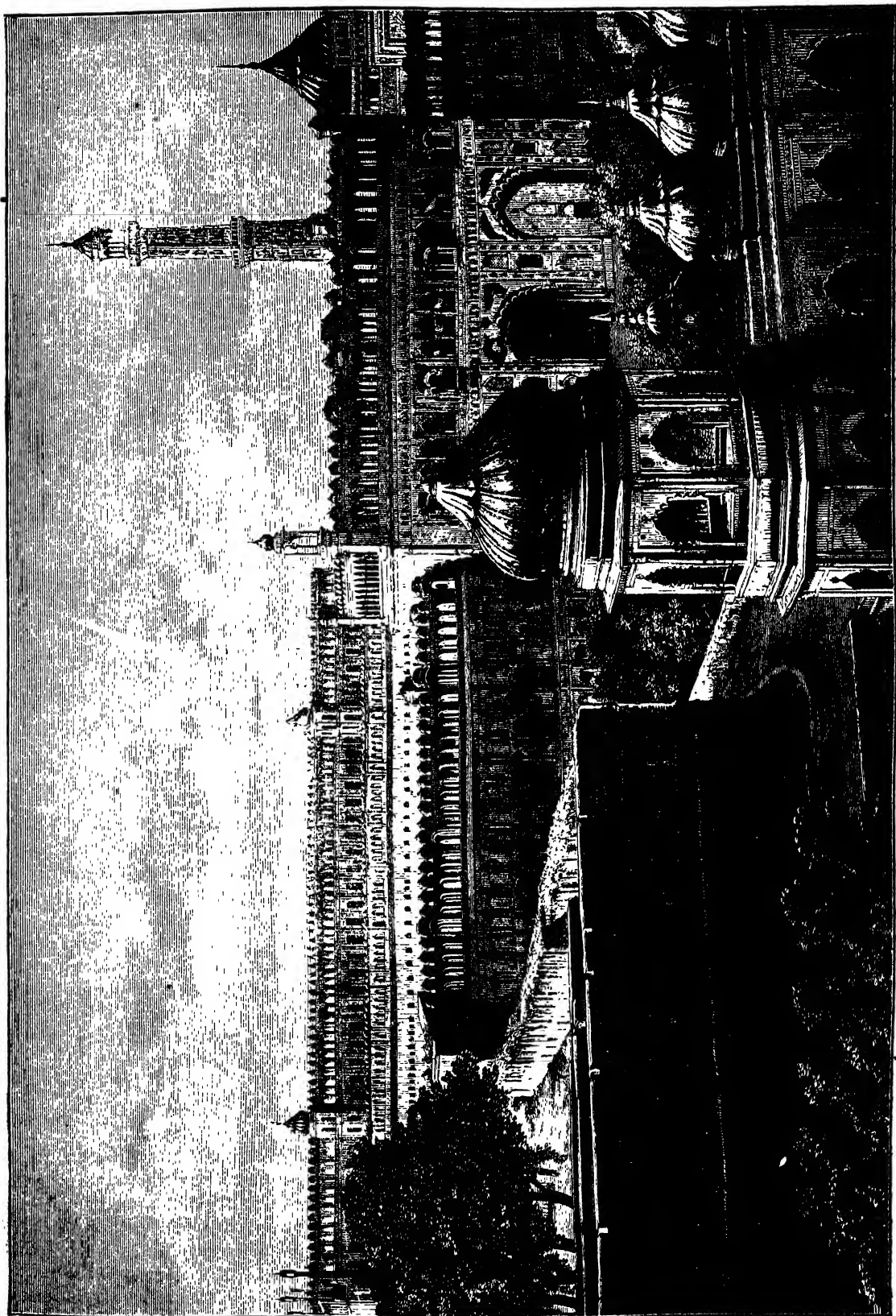
up to a kind of frenzy by stragglers from other stations. Situated at the delta of the Ganges and the Jumna, the city is considered the key of Lower Bengal. Its arsenal contained 40,000 stand of



FLIGHT OF EUROPEANS FROM THE MUTINERS.

that they volunteered to march against Delhi, and the 6th in particular were thanked by the Governor General, and on the 6th of June officers and men fraternised in a tableau "that would not have disgraced the earlier days of the first French revolution;" but in the same night all were worked

up to a kind of frenzy by stragglers from other stations. A few Europeans—the magazine staff—were the chief guardians of the arsenal, while the garrison within the fortress consisted of a Sikh regiment 400 strong, and a company of the 6th, the other nine being in the cantonments. Further to



VIEW OF THE GREAT MAJIDAH YOUNG

strengthen the fort, a body of European invalids, all of whom were men of extreme age, were brought by steamer from Chunar, and arrived at a crisis, when the company of the 6th who held the principal gate had conspired to admit the rest of the battalion.

On the 6th of June, at nine in the evening, as the officers were at mess, the bugles in the cantonments sounded the alarm. They hurried out; a fire was instantly opened upon them, and five officers of the 6th, with nine young ensigns attached to the corps, were all shot down. On this night, the bravery of the unfortunate Lieutenant Alexander, of the 3rd Oude Irregulars, who strove to hold the bridge of the Jumna, was gloriously conspicuous, till he was shot through the heart. Many other officers were barbarously murdered within the lines, while the work of unchecked rapine, fire and pillage, reigned everywhere around the fort, which a few Europeans, with the Sikhs (after driving out the company of the 6th), defended stoutly. As usual, the treasury was plundered, the gaol burst open, and prisoners to the number of thousands were liberated, and before dawn the whole were off to Delhi, the common focus, leaving more than fifty Europeans lying murdered in all directions; and now British authority had totally ceased to exist along the whole bank of the Ganges from Allahabad to Agra, more than 250 miles.

The houses of the Europeans at the former place had, as elsewhere, been destroyed, the railway-stations shared the same fate; the telegraph-wires had been cut down, "the lightning dawk" posts being deemed magical, the lines of rail were torn up for twenty miles. The locomotives were for some time left untouched, lest they might explode; but ultimately they were cautiously riddled with round shot from a distance, amid yells of triumph.

Sixty miles below this city stands Benares, the grand seat of Hindoo science and mythology, where, if religion had aught to do with the revolt, it might have been expected to have shown its utmost fury. Its population of 180,000 was famous for its turbulent character. The regiments there in garrison consisted of the 37th Bengal Native Infantry, the Loodiana Infantry, and the 13th Bengal Irregular Cavalry, while the only Europeans were the gunners of Major Oliphant's battery, a party of the Madras Fusiliers, and 150 men—"brave Irishmen of the 10th," as Colonel Edwardes justly called them.

As it was believed that the Sikh corps and the cavalry would be faithful, while the 37th were mutinous, a general parade was ordered for the disarmament of the latter, on the evening of the 4th of June. Prior to this, they discovered by some unknown channel the degradation that awaited

them, and to make matters worse, tidings came that the 17th Native Infantry had mutinied successfully at Azimghur, a place fifty miles distant, and carried off £170,000 from the treasury. As there was no time to be lost now, the bells of arms were ordered to be locked; but the sepoy forced the doors, and secured their muskets by open force, and appeared with them on parade. On one side stood the Europeans, little over 200 strong; on the other were the natives, above 2,000; but the former had three pieces of cannon, while the latter had none.

Some of the companies of the 37th, on being ordered, piled their arms; but while in the act of doing so, a few dared to fire upon their officers. The Sikhs, supposing their only safety lay in joining the mutineers, now poured a ragged volley among the Europeans, and had three showers of grape from Oliphant's guns sent into them. They bravely charged up to the very muzzles of the cannon three times with the bayonet, and thrice were repulsed by the withering fire of grape. As darkness had now fallen, Colonel Spottiswood of the 37th took a blazing port-fire, and with his own hand set fire to the sepoy lines of huts. The flames spread fast, and threw up such a lurid light as to expose to full view the mutineers who, from cover, were firing on the handful of Europeans, who retorted so terribly, that in a few minutes 100 of the former lay dead, and twice that number were wounded, when the rest fled in the wildest disorder. Though Major Guise, of the cavalry, had been murdered early in the night, some of his corps and some of the Sikhs remained loyal or neutral, and craved pardon, urging that they had acted under terror of the sepoys. Colonel Neill, who was on the scene of action with his famous Madras Fusiliers, acted with stern promptitude and decision in scouring the country and bringing in prisoners, who were hanged, flogged, or shot, as their cases required. The most guilty sepoys and sowars (*i.e.*, riders) were placed in the fort, and when their crimes were made clear, they were blown from the guns, a mode of punishment more dreaded by them than any other. While the Colonel was endeavouring to enforce order at Benares, he was commanded by Lord Canning to march to Allahabad. "Can't do it," he curtly telegraphed; "wanted here."

On the 4th of June we had only four killed and twenty-one wounded; and this success had an excellent effect upon the population, who, contrary to what had been feared from their number and peculiar character, did not venture to rise; though at Jaunpore a Sikh detachment murdered its officers, and on being joined by the fugitives of the 37th, plundered the treasury and decamped.

CHAPTER XLV.

THE MUTINY IN OUDE.—SIEGE OF LUCKNOW.—COMBAT OF CHINHUTT.—MASSACRES AT CAWNPORE.

"THE first and most vivid impression received from the pages of early travellers in India," says a writer, "is made by the frequent recurrence of cases of premeditated cruelty. From the highest to the lowest among 'the mild Hindoos,' quite as much as among the fierce and fanatic followers of the Arabian prophet, princes and people alike appear to delight in the infliction of barbarous tortures, except where satiety of horrors has induced an utter indifference to human suffering."* As they were in the days of Mandeville and Marco Polo, so were the Hindostanees in the days of the Mutiny in their lust of cruelty and bloodshed.

Sir Henry Lawrence was meanwhile preparing for the worst in Oude, which was destined for a time to be a main centre of the revolt. His headquarters at the Lucknow Residency were situated on the northern side of the city, near the right bank of the Goomtee. Close by were the treasury and other public buildings, all of stone, and a mile or more distant was the Chowpeyrah Istubul, an edifice used as barracks by the only European troops in the province—H.M. 32nd Foot. "At some distance to the north of the barracks stood another building called the Kuddum Rasool, converted into a powder magazine. In the same vicinity were the lines of the 3rd Regiment of Military Police. Immediately south of the barracks was the Tara Kotee, or observatory, where the law-courts were grouped. About a mile above the Residency, and on the same side of the river, were the Dowlut Khana and Sheesh Mahal, forming part of the palace of the old Kings of Oude. In one were the head-quarters of the brigadier commanding the Oude Irregular Force, and in the other a magazine containing many stands of arms and native guns. Still farther up the river, and to the westward, was the palace of Moosa Bagh, occupied by the commanding officers of the 4th and 7th Oude Irregular Infantry, which were cantoned in its vicinity. About a quarter of a mile above the Residency, the Goomtee was crossed by an iron bridge, the road from which led almost in a straight line to the Muraion and Moodkeepore cantonments."

In the latter, at the distance of three miles from the city, were the 13th, 48th, and 71st Native Infantry, the 7th Cavalry, two battalions of native, and one of European artillery. The 2nd Oude

Cavalry were at Chukkur Kotee, on the left bank of the river. Sir Henry Lawrence, who had full military power, saw a necessity for altering these arrangements. Four guns were brought from the Muraion cantonment into the quarters of the 32nd Regiment, which furnished 120 men to guard the treasury and Residency in lieu of native troops. The women, children, and sick were placed in the Residency, and the rest of the 32nd were stationed close to the European battery; and as a place of strength, and for the concentration of stores—more than all, as a final asylum when the worst came—choice was made of the Muchee Bhawn, midway between the Residency and the Dowlut Khana.

The 24th of May, the great Mohammedan festival of the Fed, had, as in some other places, been generally fixed upon for a rising in Oude; but the terrible crisis, so fearfully looked forward to by all Europeans, did not arrive till the 30th. On that evening, when the gun was fired as usual at nine o'clock, its echoes had barely died away in the cantonments, when the light company of the 71st turned out with their arms, and began firing ball at random, while two parties of the same corps and the 7th Cavalry appeared suddenly at opposite points, and made for the mess-house, with the evident design of placing the officers between two fires, and rendering escape hopeless. At the sound of the first shot Sir Henry Lawrence was in his saddle, and he hurried with his staff to that part of the cantonment where 300 Europeans, with six guns, were posted. Two of these guns were placed on the road that led to Lucknow, to intercept any mutineers who might attempt to reach it; the other four swept the native parade, where the natives stood under arms, by regiments—first, the 71st; next, the 13th; and lastly, the 48th, for military order always prevailed when the native officers revolted with their men. The 71st shot down Brigadier Handscomb, and then advanced firing.

A shower of grape from the four guns sent them flying to their lines, where they barbarously murdered a European officer, whose body was found a mass of bayonet and bullet wounds. The 48th, who had been in the rear, and did not suffer from the grape, were not active in the mutiny, but refused to aid in its repression, and deserted in such numbers that only fifty-seven remained with the colours. The mutineers obtained a considerable amount of pillage; they burned the bungalows,

* James Hutton.

and ruined the cantonments, but had sustained a defeat. On the 31st they were seen in position near the lines of Moodkeepore; but after a few discharges from the guns, they fled in confusion towards Seetapore. Meanwhile, the greatest alarm prevailed in the city. A company of the 71st, which had been removed from the Muchee Bhawn to another station some days before, on being ordered to "pile arms," refused to obey; and on that evening—the 31st—the city mob, to the number of 6,000, rose, and crossed the river by a ford, and were moving, in a yelling and ferocious mass, towards Muraion, to join the mutineers; but when this scheme was frustrated by the cannon on the road, they returned to the city, and after rioting in the streets, were repressed by the native troops in the Dowlut Khana, who did not decline to act, and fired on them heavily for an hour; but after this the European women and children were compelled to take shelter in the Residency.

As if taking the signal from Lucknow, a revolt took place at all the principal stations in Oude, and with the same sickening details attending all. On the morning of the 3rd of June, the noise of musketry and tumultuous shouts announced to Seetapore that the 10th Irregulars were plundering the treasury. When hastening, with two companies of the 41st, to the rescue, Colonel Birch and two other officers were slain. In anticipation of some such event, Mr. Christian, the Civil Commissioner, had collected all the European civilians with their families at his house, under a guard of the military police, who, when the mutiny became general, murdered him and made an indiscriminate massacre of all who were in the mansion.

In Fyzabad most hideous crimes took place, when the 22nd Native Infantry and the 6th Oude Irregulars rose. Colonel Goldney, the commissioner, obtained shelter in the fort of a talookdar for the Europeans, while the treasure was assigned to the mutineers. On solemn promises given, the officers with their families began to descend the river in boats, but according to a concerted plan were overtaken by the mutinous 17th at a place called Begungunge, where volleys of grape and musketry were opened upon them. Many perished instantly; others attempted to escape by swimming, but were shot or bayoneted the moment they reached the bank. Colonel Goldney alone was taken. "I am an old man," said he, "surely you will not disgrace yourselves by my murder?" But he was slain on the spot.

Of the massacre near Aurungabad we have already written; but while the mutiny spread thus in Oude, the condition of its capital became daily

more alarming, and the idea of a siege, which many there had scouted, now began to be seriously, yet desperately, entertained. Sir Henry Lawrence was indefatigable; he had guns mounted at every commanding point, a store of provisions laid in, and in addition to his Europeans were 437 men of the mutinous garrison, who remained true, and, to all appearance, as much interested as the former in holding out against the insurgents. Throughout the month of June, Sir Henry not only repelled every attack, but inflicted severe chastisement on the rebels when they came too near. But, owing to the number of women and children who had taken shelter in the Residency, provisions began to run short, and it therefore became necessary to make a sortie in the direction of the enemy's camp. This brought on the affair which was known as the "battle of Chinhutt," a few miles east of Lucknow.

Intelligence came in, on the 29th of June, that the rebel advance guard, consisting of 500 bayonets and 100 horse, were then collecting supplies for their main body, which, on the following day, was to come from Nawabgunge Bara Bankee, in consequence of which the troops from the cantonments were sent into the Residency and the Muchee Bhawn, which literally means "the fish-house," a castle of the ancient Shikhs, over the gate of which a fish is carved. At four a.m. next day, a force, consisting of 250 of the 32nd (Cornwall) Regiment, 100 Sikh cavalry, thirty-five Volunteer Horse, a party of Carnegie's Burkandazees, with an eight-inch howitzer, and ten field pieces, drawn by elephants and horses, and manned by natives, set forth as a sortie under Sir Henry, and early though the hour, the air was close and suffocating.*

Beyond the Kokrail Bridge the first difficulties were experienced, as the path there was the summit of an unfinished embankment of loose earth, with gaps where arches were to be built. After a halt under a blazing sun, and while—by some oversight—no refreshment was served out, the force moved slowly on, till their advanced files were fired on from the village of Ismailgunge, on the Chinhutt road, about 9 a.m. Followed by the rest of the guns, the howitzer now came clattering up and opened fire, while the column still struggled along the embankment, exposed to the round shot of the enemy, whose strength had been increased, and at that time, unknown to Sir Henry, actually amounted to 5,550 bayonets, 800 horse, and 160 artillerymen, with twelve nine-pounders.

These were seen posted in front of Chinhutt. The detachment of the 32nd deployed to the left, between Ismailgunge and the road; the native

* "Siege of Lucknow;" Rees' "Personal Narrative," &c.

infantry crossing the latter to the right, and drawing up in front of a small hamlet. And now, after a fire had been exchanged for about twenty minutes, the enemy seemed to be giving way, till our troops became the victims of treachery. The native gunners cut the traces of their horses, threw the guns into a ditch, and galloped off; at least the howitzer, six field-pieces, and most of the limbers were lost thus, while a murderous fire was poured on our slender force by the enemy. Then the Sikhs turned their horses' heads and fled. Sir Henry was constrained to retreat. The Europeans, who could be spared least, suffered most, 112 being killed, and forty-four wounded, among whom was the brigadier. "Men were falling, untouched by ball; the heat of a June sun was killing more than the enemy."* The loss in natives was also great, but far less by casualties than by shameful desertion.

After this reverse, Sir Henry was obliged to contract his lines of defence within the Residency grounds; and what was more disastrous even than the loss of life was the damage to that reputation, which had enabled him to keep the *budmashes* of the city in awe. The few natives who had hitherto remained nominally faithful, now mutinied in the Dowlut Khana, as did the police, who held a grand domed edifice, named the Imambara, or "House of the Twelve Patriarchs," midway between that building and the Muchee Bhawn. Meanwhile, the victorious rebels from Chinhutt had urged the pursuit unchecked, till they attempted to force the brick bridge above the old castle, and the beautiful iron bridge of three elliptical arches above the Residency. Though repulsed, by means of a ford they entered the city, and there established themselves in such numbers, that, before nightfall, the Muchee Bhawn and the Residency were both closely invested.

On the 4th of July Sir Henry expired of a wound received from a shell which burst into his room; and British India was deprived, when at its greatest need, of the priceless services of one of its most illustrious servants. On his death the command devolved on Brigadier J. E. W. Inglis, of the 32nd, an officer who had served with that regiment during the rebellion in Canada, and throughout all the operations of the Punjab campaign. Had there been no women and children to hamper their movements, the brave handful of the 32nd would have cut their way to Cawnpore or Agra; but with 350 helpless creatures depending upon their humanity and valour, they had no alternative but to fight during that close and perilous siege of twelve weeks, till relieved by Outram and Havelock.

* "Siege of Lucknow," Rees' "Personal Narrative," &c.

Three days before the little disaster at Chinhutt, there was perpetrated at Cawnpore that dreadful massacre of which it is impossible to think or write with adequate patience, too great pity, or horror.

Separated from Oude by the Ganges was the district of Cawnpore, one of the most fertile in Upper India, which, after the battle of Buxar, had been ceded to Britain by the vizier-king of Oude. In its capital, of the same name, situated on the west side of the river, and built in a straggling manner on a sandy plain, broken occasionally into sandy ravines, General Sir Hugh Wheeler, with only 200 European soldiers, held the command, and opposed to him was a strong brigade of native troops, consisting of the 1st, 53rd, and 56th Bengal Native Infantry, with the 2nd Cavalry; and he was compelled to rest satisfied for the worst eventualities with means that were miserably inadequate. In the hope that the sepoys, if they did revolt, would quietly march off to Delhi, he formed an intrenchment which, though incapable of long defence, would furnish a temporary asylum. Reinforcements from Government were expected; but, urgent though the case was, Sir Henry Lawrence could only, when applied to, send him, on the 21st of May, fifty men of the 32nd, conveyed in post-carriages, and two squadrons of cavalry.

In this great emergency, Sir Hugh received an offer which was too tempting to be declined. It consisted of two guns and 300 matchlock-men, furnished by Doondhoo Punt, the wretch better known as the Nana Sahib of Bithoor, who secretly had been most assiduous in fomenting a spirit of rebellion amongst the troops. His residence, Bithoor, was within a few miles of Cawnpore, and his protestations of friendship were lavish, while he only waited an opportunity for vengeance. A singularly brutal voluptuary and bloodthirsty miscreant, his relations with us were such as to make him madly vindictive. On the dissolution of the Mahratta empire, when the last of the Peishwas was bereft of all power, he was permitted to live at Bithoor, and take the title of rajah from that place. Being without children, he adopted Nana Sahib, and left him property to the value of four millions sterling. A pension allowed by the British to his patron lapsed, according to usage, on that person's death without heirs male. The Nana pleaded Oriental law and custom as an adopted son, and claimed the pension, which our Government declined to accord; and from that hour he became a deadly enemy to all Europeans.

This bitter emotion he carefully concealed under a mask of admiration for western civilisation and a taste for European customs; and he lavishly

entertained, *à l'Anglaise*, British civil and military officials and their families at his palace of Bithoor. It appeared to be his ambition to be regarded as an English gentleman; he spoke the language fluently, and filled his palace with European furniture and pictures; he used British horses and carriages, but withal professed himself a profound Hindoo devotee. Sir Hugh Wheeler's long residence in India, and intimate acquaintance with native manners, made him more open to the influence of such a character; but though warned to be on his guard against him, such was his confidence in the Nana, that to his troops he assigned the guardianship of the treasury.

On the morning of the 5th of June the whole of the native troops mutined, set fire to their lines, and marched to the treasury, where they were joined by the Nana's troops. £170,000 was packed on elephants or in carts, and they departed for Delhi; but, halting at the village of Nawabgunge, they were joined by the Nana, who put himself at their head; and as his object was not to revive a Mogul dynasty, but to raise a Mahratta throne for himself as Peishwa, he prevailed upon them to return and drive the Feringhees out of their entrenchment, inside which, three days before the rising, all the Christian non military residents had been removed. It was totally unfitted to stand an investment of any duration, being completely commanded from various quarters, and, moreover, was simply a bank or breastwork. "The selection of such a place," it has been said, "was certainly a fatal error; and it is difficult to explain how an officer of so much experience and ability as Sir Hugh Wheeler could have fallen into it. He had a choice of other places. His entrenchment was at the south-east extremity of the cantonment, below the town of Cawnpore; whereas, at an equal distance above it, at the north east extremity, stood the magazine, amply supplied with guns and military stores, and near it the treasury, which happened at that time to be well replenished. Ravines on one side, and the proximity of the river on the other, gave the magazine strong natural defences, while a high enclosing wall of masonry, with numerous substantial buildings, supplied at once the means of resistance and, what was equally wanted, adequate shelter. The only plausible account of the preference given to the entrenchment is that Sir Hugh, after having so long served with sepoys, still clung to the belief that they would not mutiny at all, or would, at worst, after temporary outrage, quit the station, and hasten off to Delhi."

The whole number of persons crowded within the entrenchment amounted to more than 900.

Of these not more than 200 were combatants, and 330 were women and children; but these numbers vary in the several accounts.

On the afternoon of the 5th the Nana seemed irresolute what course to pursue; but on the following morning he made a hostile demonstration against his former friends in Cawnpore. He sent a party of horse into the town, with orders to kill every European, Eurasian, and native convert they could find, without attacking the entrenchment, and then to fire the town. All this they did *con amore*. A high wind blew at the time, and a few minutes sufficed to involve the whole place in flames. The noise of the wind, the roar of the conflagration, the wild cries of the mutineers, maddened with bhāng and excitement, and raging for blood, mingled with shrieks, oaths, and prayers, "formed an atmosphere of devilry which few of our countrymen could wish to breathe again. A few of the residents fought with the fury of despair; but they were a handful against many thousands of enemies, and silence gradually settled over the place, which a few hours before had been fair and flourishing." *

It was now that by beat of drum Nana Sahib proclaimed himself Peishwa of the Mahrattas, and unfurled two standards; one was announced as that of Mohammed, the other of Huncynan, the Monkey-god. Around the former all the Mussulmans crowded; around the latter mustered all the robbers, *bandushes*, and other villains of the locality. A position was taken up by the mutineers in front of the meagre entrenchment, which Sir Hugh Wheeler and his little band defended with the most heroic and romantic gallantry, hourly expecting help from whence no help could come. Various assaults were repelled at great cost to the mutineers, who at last cannonaded the place almost with impunity from twelve pieces of cannon, while Sir Hugh at times could only reply with one; hence the miseries of the besieged have seldom, if ever, been exceeded in the history of the world, while the dauntless courage and endurance they displayed have never been surpassed.

Captain John Moore, of the 32nd, who served at Multan and Goojerat, wrote thus from Cawnpore on the 18th of June to Lawrence at Lucknow:—"Our troops, officers, and volunteers, have acted most nobly, and on several occasions a handful of men have driven hundreds before them. Our loss has been chiefly from the sun and their heavy guns. Our rations will last a fortnight, and we are well supplied with ammunition. Report says that troops are advancing from Allahabad, and any assistance

* "The Sepoy Revolt." By Henry Mead.

might save our garrison. We are, of course, prepared to hold out to the last."

Another letter, dated 24th June, after mentioning that the attack had been continued for eighteen days and nights without cessation, says, "The condition of misery experienced by all is utterly beyond description in this place. Death and mutilation in all their forms have been daily before us. The numerical amount of casualties has been frightful, caused both by sickness and the implements of war."

the dreadful sequel could be far off. The first thought was to assume the offensive, and by a desperate effort capture or spike the enemy's guns, or perish in the attempt. By this time a stray dog had been turned into soup; an old horse was considered a delicacy, and the well was nearly exhausted.

Meanwhile, outside Cawnpore, Europeans—men, women, and children—were daily dragged from their hiding-places in the surrounding country and



VIEW OF CAWNPORE.

The dead could only be disposed of by waiting till night, when the enemy's fire slackened; and they were thrown into a well outside the entrenchment. On the 13th of June, the enemy's live shells, which had compelled the officers to strike their tents, set fire to a barrack which was used as a hospital and shelter for the soldiers' families. The flames spread fast, and forty of the sick and wounded were burned to death; and now, as every other building was riddled by balls, the women and children had by day to burrow in holes in the ground, and there, too, they had to pass the night in the open air. It was impossible that with their thinning number and diminishing food,

put to death, every form of torture and indignity being previously resorted to; for infamies puerile and disgusting seemed to afford infinite delight to the Nana, who in some instances caused the noses and ears of his victims to be hung round their necks like beads.

It chanced that during the investment of the entrenchment, 126 British fugitives—the first who fled from Futtehghur—arrived opposite Cawnpore in boats. On these unfortunate and helpless people, some of whom were wounded, the Nana brought guns and musketry to bear, with the alternative of being sunk or submitting to his protection. Afraid to trust him, some declined, and

got away ; while the majority accepted his promises of security as their only chance ; and the moment he had them in his power, he ordered the work of slaughter to commence. "The women and children were dispatched with swords and spears ; the men were ranged in line, with a bamboo running along the whole extent, and passing through each man's arms, which were tied behind his back. The troopers then rode round them and taunted their victims, reviling them with the grossest abuse, and gloating over the tortures they were about to inflict. When weary of vituperation, one would discharge a pistol in the face of a captive, whose shattered head would droop to the right or left, the body meanwhile being kept upright the blood and brains besprinkling his living neighbours. The next person selected for slaughter might be four or five paces distant. And in this way the fiends continued to prolong for several hours the horrible contact of the dead and the living. Not a soul escaped ; and the Nana Sahib thanked the gods of the Hindoos for the sign of favour bestowed upon him by the opportunity thus vouchsafed to torment and slay the Christians."*

The proposed sortie was a step which, with a force so slender, despair alone could justify ; hence it cannot be wondered at that, before incurring a responsibility so terrible, Sir Hugh Wheeler should listen to terms offered by that artful demon, the Nana. On the 24th of June, an aged lady named Mrs. Greenway, who with her family had been taken prisoner, and only spared on the promise of paying a lac of rupees as a ransom, arrived at the intrenchment, bearer of a note from the Nana to the effect that all officers and soldiers who had nothing to do with Lord Dalhousie's government, would be sent in safety to Allahabad if they would lay down their arms. On this, provisions and conveyance would be amply furnished them. Sir Hugh Wheeler, ignorant of the fate of the Futtehghur fugitives, authorised Captain Moore to act in the matter as he should consider best ; and on the following day a treaty was made, by which Sir Hugh, on the part of the British Government, agreed to give up all the money, stores, and guns in the intrenchment ; the Nana, on his part, undertaking, and solemnly swearing "not only to allow all the inmates of the garrison to retire unmolested, but to provide means of conveyance for the wounded, and for the ladies and children." Hostilities at once ceased, and preparations for a departure were joyfully begun.

On the morning of the 27th, the miserable remnant of the garrison, with the women and children,

quitted the intrenchment, and were permitted quietly to embark in boats ; but the river-bank was lined with sepoys, "and then was perpetrated one of the most diabolical acts of treachery and murder that the darkest page of human annals records."*

Acting for the Nana, Tantia Topee took his seat on a platform and ordered a bugle to sound. Then two guns, that had been concealed, were run out, and opened with grape ; while a fire of musketry was poured from both banks of the river. The thatch of some of the native boats was ignited by hot cinders ; thus many of the sick, the wounded, and the helpless women were burned to death. The stronger women, many with children in their arms, sprang into the current, and were shot down in succession, or sabred by the troopers, who rode their horses into the stream. A number of both sexes, however, reached the shore, and then the Nana issued his orders that not a man should be permitted to live ; but that the women and children should be taken to his residence. There they were added to some captives from Futtehghur, and they all huddled together in one room, a prey to sorrow, grief, and horror. They were fed on the coarsest food, subjected to every foul indignity, and taken out by couples to grind corn for the household.

It is difficult to give any correct narrative of the fate of the British women and children who were dragged from the boats ; all the details are so different, and only agree in those which are too atrocious to place before the reader. The first demand of the Nana was that they should enter his harem ; but the women replied that they would prefer death. Among them was a younger daughter of Sir Hugh Wheeler, who has been represented as displaying an amount of courage that certainly borders on exaggeration. Before her capture she is said to have shot five sepoys with a revolver. Mr. Shepherd, a commissariat officer, who had disguised himself as a native cook, asserts that she was taken away by a trooper as his particular prize ; and that when in his hut she seized his sword, cut off his head, and then threw herself into a well. The ayah of a European family said that it was in the hut, and after cutting off the sowar's head, she shot four other sowars. Other accounts represent her being carried off by the trooper when the rebels retreated. Whatever was her fate, she was never seen or heard of more.

On the evening after this second massacre, the Nana celebrated the event by a series of salutes : one, of twenty-one guns, in his own honour as Peishwa, while he seated himself upon a throne,

* "The Sepoy Revolt."

* Marshman's "India."

and had Bithoor illuminated; another, of nineteen rounds, to his brother, Bala Sahib, now entitled Governor-General; and a third to Jowalla Pershaud, a rebel Brahmin soubahdar, whom he appointed Commander-in-chief. He concluded these ceremonies by a speech, in which he lauded his troops for their glorious achievements at Cawnpore.

Amid all this, on the 1st of July, another batch of fugitives from Futtchghur arrived. "All the men, like those at Cawnpore, were put to death. The women and children were carried off to join the others already imprisoned in a building called

the Subada Ke Kotha, where they were destined to endure another fortnight of misery, and then become the victims of one of the most inhuman massacres ever perpetrated."

Not contented with the atrocities he had committed, the Nana, on hearing that a British force was advancing against him, resolved to cut off the noses and right hands of all the Bengalee clerks in the pay of commercial firms, or of the Civil Service, and all persons who were known to speak English; but already the British drums were beating not far from Cawnpore, and an army of vengeance and retribution was coming on.

CHAPTER XLVI.

PREPARATIONS FOR THE RECOVERY OF DELHI.—VICTORY OF BADULEE KE SERAI.—THE CORPS OF GUIDES.—THE SIEGE OF DELHI.—COMBAT OF NUJUFGHUR, AND ARRIVAL OF THE SIEGE TRAIN.

FROM Rangoon, Madras, and Ceylon, reinforcements of the Queen's troops were now pouring into Bengal and in Britain, where the dreadful tidings brought by every mail from India, produced an amount of excitement and indignation that was unparalleled, and too often grief and horror, the general voice of the nation declared that, cost what it might in blood and treasure, the revolt must be suppressed and its crimes avenged; hence the embarkations of troops on a scale adequate to the crisis had commenced.

In India, one of the primary objects was the recovery of Delhi, and for this purpose all available troops were hurried on. Under the immediate direction of the Commander-in-chief, three European regiments—H.M. 75th, or Stirlingshire, the 1st and 2nd Fusiliers—which had been stationed near Simla, among the hills, arrived at Umballa, on the 23rd of May. To these were added the 9th, and a squadron of the 4th Lancers, the 60th, and two troops of horse artillery. These were formed in two small brigades, under Brigadiers Halifax and Jones, and with them the Commander-in-chief was preparing to move for Kurnaul when he died of cholera, on the 27th of May. General Reid, the next senior officer, was too unwell to be capable of undertaking the siege of Delhi, the operations against which were therefore entrusted to Sir Henry Barnard. To co-operate with the troops now advancing, a column came from Meerut, consisting of a wing of H.M. 60th Rifles,

two squadrons of the 6th Dragoon Guards, fifty troopers of the 4th Irregulars, two companies of native sappers, Scott's battery of six guns (two of which were eighteen-pounders), under the command of Brigadier Wilson, encamped, on the 30th, near Ghazee-ud-deen Nugger, a fortified village, about fifteen miles from the capital, where the Meerut and Delhi road crosses the little river Hindon by a suspension bridge.

A rumour that the mutineers, emboldened by numbers and past successes, meant to dispute the passage, was regarded as improbable, and hence there occurred a species of surprise when, about four in the afternoon, a picket of irregular cavalry, which had been posted beyond the bridge, came galloping into camp with the announcement that the enemy was in front. As if to give solid proof of this, an eighteen-pound shot came crashing into the camp, just as the Rifles got under arms, and advanced supported by the Carbineers.

Two companies of the 60th proceeded at the double to secure the bridge, which the brigadier deemed the key of his position, while he detached four guns and a squadron of Carbineers along the bank of the river to turn the enemy's flank. The rebels having opened with heavy guns upon the advanced companies, two more battalion companies were sent forward to support them, while four guns of Scott's battery and a troop of Carbineers also went into action. When within eighty yards of the enemy's guns, the Rifles, filled with ungovern-

able base, and they, charged with fixed sword-bayonets. This movement was decisive, and the rebels, though outnumbering them at least sevenfold, took to disgraceful flight, leaving five pieces of cannon behind them.

The struggle was not yet over. Trusting to the strength of the village in which they had intrenched themselves, the mutineers mustered courage for another encounter, and next morning—Sunday, the 31st of May—opened a sharp cannonade, but kept their guns at such a cautious distance that no more captures were made. This precaution, and the intensity of the heat, made pursuit impossible, and enabled them to escape with the tidings of their own defeat to Delhi.

The intense excitement of our troops, as a general rule, enabled them to surmount everything; they had but one ardent and intense longing—for battle and vengeance. "Our blood is roused," wrote one of them at this time; "we have seen friends, relations, mothers, wives, and children brutally murdered, and their bodies mutilated frightfully. This alone, without the pluck that made us victorious over the Russians, would enable us, with God's assistance, to be victorious over these enemies. As the riflemen charge—ten to a hundred—the word is passed, 'Remember the ladies! remember the babies!' and everything flies before them. Hundreds are shot down or bayoneted. The sepoy, it is true, fight like demons; but we are British, and they are natives."*

In this last encounter we had Lieutenant Perkins, of the artillery, killed, and forty rank and file more or less severely wounded.

The Meerut column did not move till the 4th of June, when it did so in the direction of Bhagput, and on the 7th it reached Alipore, and formed a junction with the two brigades from the north. Quitting Alipore next day, the united forces, with the immediate prospect of fighting, advanced in three columns, marching in order of battle. The rebels had strongly intrenched themselves at a place called Badulee Ke Serai, to intercept the approach of British troops to the line of the cantonments, which Delhi occupy a lofty and somewhat rocky position northward and westward of the city, facing the river, and a tract of ground which, in wet seasons, is always inundated. It was at Badulee Ke Serai, then, that the encounter was to take place, and the despatch briefly records it thus:—

"As soon as our advanced picket met the enemy, three brigades deployed, leaving the main road clear. The enemy soon opened a very heavy

fire upon us, and finding that our light field-pieces did not silence their battery, and that we were losing men fast, I called upon the 75th Regiment to make a dashing charge, and take the place at the point of the bayonet; this service was done with the most heroic gallantry, and to Lieutenant-Colonel Herbert, and every officer, non-commissioned officer, and man of the 75th Regiment, my thanks are most especially due. The 1st Europeans supported the attack, and on the second brigade coming up and threatening their right, and Brigadier-General Grant showing the head of his column and guns, the enemy abandoned the position entirely, leaving his guns on the ground."*

There, too, lay many of the wretches who had perpetrated the late massacres, terribly torn by shot or shell, and left to die like dogs in the summer heat, without aid or water, as the troops pushed on, for the work of the day was not yet over. This encounter took place five miles from Delhi, and Sir Henry Barnard, afraid to delay lest the enemy might form fresh works for him to storm, resolved, weary though his troops were, to push on at once. He formed his force in two great columns; one was led by Brigadier Wilson, with Shower's brigade in support, while he in person led the other, supported by Grove's brigade. Wilson marched along the Main Trunk Road, where he had to fight his whole way through gardens, high walls, and other obstacles, while the other, diverging to the left, proceeded straight through the cantonments, and came in sight of the magnificent city, with its vast marble palaces, its mosques and temples, its towering Koutab Minar, Houmayoun's tomb, and the vast extent of fortifications where, thick as bees, the armed rebels were clustered with all their cannon. But this point was not attained till the prowess of our troops had been sorely tested again.

The rebels had constructed another line of defence from the Flagstaff Tower to the late Maharajah Hindoo Rao's house, and there—as men who fought with halters round their necks—disputed every inch of the ground. They knew their fate if beaten, and how the column that came on from Umballa had been hanging, flogging, and shooting, or blowing from the guns, every mutineer that hands could be laid on. By nine o'clock the Army of Retribution—as it was justly named—had forced the ground, driven the rebels from their guns, and into the city, and finally sweeping the ridge, ran upon it at Hindoo Rao's house, which from that time became the key of our position. The whole cantonments and parade-ground were now ours. Of the former, blackened walls alone remained.

* Sir H. Barnard's despatch.

the compounds were strewn with broken furniture, tattered books, leaves of music, soiled clothes, and fragments of female attire, all a suggestive scene of desolation that inflamed the minds of our men with a fierce desire for revenge.

On the following day they received a valuable addition by the arrival of the Corps of Guides, which formed the first instalment of troops from the Punjab. This regiment had marched from Peshawur to Delhi, 570 miles, in twenty-two days, in the hottest month of the Indian year, and the cheers in the British camp were long and loud when Captain H. Daly marched in at the head of his three troops of cavalry and six companies of infantry. The men of this corps were selected for their courage, sagacity, and hardihood. They were taught to rely upon themselves individually, and thus acquired perfect confidence in their mutual co-operation. It was said that there was scarcely a wild or warlike tribe in Upper India which had not contributed recruits to this corps, and most of them were genuine mountaineers, habituated to warfare from their childhood. Their uniform was of a drab colour, and the pay eight rupees a month for a foot-soldier and twenty-four for a trooper.*

During the subsequent operations before Delhi these famous Punjab irregulars lost the whole of their officers three times over.†

After their long and arduous march—in one day alone, between Hotee Murdan and Attock, they got over thirty miles—they were certainly entitled to repose, but it was neither asked nor could be given, as a cannonade, which was continued all that morning, was followed up in the afternoon by a desperate attack on the right flank of the British.

In repelling it, the Guides displayed a valour that ended in rashness; they pursued the flying rebels close under the walls of Delhi, and exposed themselves to a dreadful fire, under which they suffered severely. Maddened to delirium with bhong, opium, and churries, many of the sepoys here acted, looked, and fought like incarnate fiends. Daly, the gallant Irishman who led the Guides, and Hawes were wounded; and Quentin Batty, a young lieutenant, commander of the cavalry, described as “a joyous, boyish, but noble fellow, whose every thought was honour,” was struck in the stomach by a round shot, and died twenty-four hours after.

This sortie by the rebels was only one of a series in which they persisted for several days in their efforts to turn our right flank by gaining

possession of Mandoo Rao's mansion with a terraced roof, the top of a slope, where Barnard's Battery was placed in battery. Being foiled, they attempted our left flank, and on the 12th it in strength. As it extended no farther than the Flagstaff Tower, immediately of which was a deep cut, through which a road that led from the city to the cantonments had been carried, near the tower we had some guns in battery, which rendered it impossible for them to advance by it; but north of the tower the ridge sloped steeply down towards the bank of Jumna. In order to avail themselves of this facility for attacking in this quarter, the rebels, after pillaging the mansion of Sir Theophilus B. Calfe, which lay near the river, got some guns into a position there, and made it so strong that there was a fear of not being able to dislodge them.

Early on the morning of the 12th, under their carefully-trained native officers, they brought a formidable array of guns and a strong body of infantry within 400 yards of the Flagstaff Tower while another stole quickly round the flank of the ridge, to gain the ruined cantonments, and thus place themselves in the British rear. The skill and peril of these movements became apparent the moment day broke; the whole position was endangered; but it was not long before means of resistance were mustered, and they were driven back, firing briskly the while from behind walls and rocks. “The heat was terrific,” wrote an officer; “the thermometer must have been at least 140 degrees, with a hot wind blowing, and a frightful glare.”

The impossibility of wresting Delhi from the rebel and organised army within its walls, with the weak force which had so boldly broken through before it was quite apparent now. The magazine blown up by Lieutenant Willoughby, was such that which contained small arms and ammunition; consequently the rebels, who came pouring in with all their arms and cannon had an inexhaustible supply of all manner of munition of war. On the 15th, encouraged by the junction of the 60th Native Infantry and the Bengal Lancers, they sallied forth again. This attack was so fierce and well sustained, that at one time our out-marched and wearied soldiers were sorely tried; but British pluck prevailed, and more the enemy was hurled in rout and driven into the city; yet old soldiers, who had seen Moultan, Goojerat, and elsewhere, averred that the work before Delhi surpassed all they had ever undergone.

The question was now mooted whether or not the city might be recaptured by surprise in the dead of the night by an infantry attack while the cavalry held the camp; but Sir Henry Barnard, after actually conceiving the plan, abandoned it as desperate with a force so small. The knowledge that such had been intended, only served to put the

by unbounded rumours, which announced that it had actually fallen. As a regular siege was now inevitable, and would necessarily require months of preparation, every effort was made to strengthen the hands of Sir Henry Barnard, whose force was still so weak in men and guns, that he could do little more than hold the ridge which overlooked



PORTRAIT OF NANA SAHIB.

even on their guard against any similar attempt at a second hopeful time; so nothing now remained for the investing troops but to strengthen their position on the ridge, and await reinforcements and the siege-train, meanwhile submitting almost to chance conditions with the rebels, and become the besieged instead of the besiegers. This was, indeed, a great disappointment to the Government, who had not only calculated on the early recapture of Delhi, but, in the eagerness of their spirit, allowed themselves to be imposed upon

the city, while for every shot fired from our batteries the sepoys responded fourfold.*

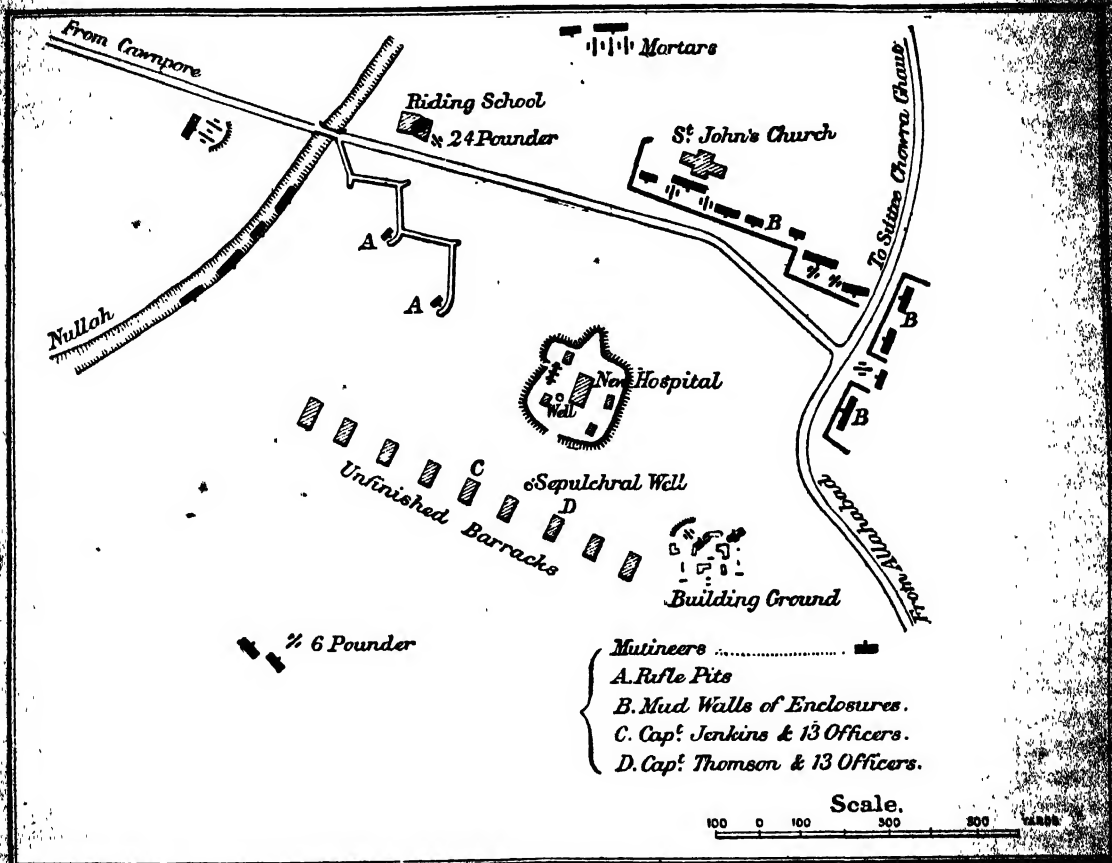
Few days passed without an assault on the entrenchments; and on the 17th of June the mutineers commenced a work at Kissengunge with heavy guns in such a position as to render Hindoo Rao's camp untenable by enfilading the position. To draw attention from the locality and their operations there, they commenced a bombardment in the day; but the advance of a

* Martineau.

them aware that they must either fall back from Kissungunge, or fight desperately to hold their ground.

The attacking force came on in two columns; one under Major Tombs consisted of two companies of the 60th Rifles, four companies of the 1st Fusiliers, thirty cavalry of the Guides, twenty sappers, and four guns; the other, led by Major Reid, consisted of his own Sirmoor battalion of

19th they were seen retiring in great numbers from the Lahore road through Kissungunge, when they disappeared among the ruined houses and abandoned gardens beyond that suburb. It was found that our troops had been under arms, in expectation of an attack at Hindoo Rao's house, the rebels having taken a détour, and were within a mile and a half of Barnard's rear in the evening.



PLAN OF THE ENTRENCHMENT AT CAWNPORE, JUNE, 1857.

Ghoorkas, four other companies of the Royal Rifles, and four of the 1st Fusiliers. The rebels, who expected an attack directly in front, were disconcerted when the columns, by two sudden flank movements, placed them between a cross fire. Their resistance, though by no means obstinate, cost them dear; the battery was captured, the magazine near it blown up, and forty-one rebels, who were hemmed into a corner, were all killed down, for our troops were now in the mood to exterminate all who fell into their hands.

This memorable day in our military annals, the day of the 15th June, passed over quietly, as the foe were making extensive preparations; and on the

On this Brigadier James H. Grant, commanding the cavalry, turned out with all he could muster—only 250 troopers, with 12 guns—a force most inadequate, as the enemy was 3,000 strong. Against such odds little could be effected in the fast-closing dusk; and our cavalry were retiring in some confusion, when the arrival of 300 Rifles and Fusiliers gave the enemy an unexpected check, while capturing two of Grant's guns and compelling them to retreat. In the *mêlée* his lieutenant-colonel, Abercrombie Yule, of the 9th Lancers, who served nobly in the campaigns of Afghanistan, India, and Punjaub, was unhorsed and killed; his body was found next morning. Both Brigadier

broken by musket-balls, another had passed through his head, his throat was cut, and his hands much gashed as he held up to protect his head. Four fencers lay dead by his side.

The 3rd of June being the anniversary of the battle of Plassey, the first day of the new moon, and therefore auspicious to the Mohammedans; and also the *Ruth Futra*, and consequently favourable to the Hindoos; and being more than all, the day fixed for the end of the Company's *raj*, was marked by a furious attack on our outposts; but the sepoys were again driven into Delhi with ignominy. "Thus, while the citizens of London were reading with much complacency the *Times*' article on the centenary of the glorious victory at Plassey, and while literary orators in Willis's Rooms were dilating on the achievements of Clive, a handful of British troops were struggling for empire and for life under the walls of Delhi."

The loss of the enemy in these encounters—they numbered thirty—was always heavier than that of the British force; but their numbers were continually swelled by the accession of fresh regiments of rebels, which gravitated to Delhi as the common centre of the revolt, and were seen marching in with drums beating and the British colours flying, while, oddly enough, some of their bands were heard to play the National Anthem.

By the end of June we had 6,000 men before Delhi, but more were required ere we could dare to assault it. Our reinforcements from the *Lanjaub* were, for a time, few and far between. In the months of May and June five new regiments had been completed for service, and by the beginning of October the number had been augmented to sixteen battalions. At the same time irregular levies of 14,000 horse and foot had been raised, so that ultimately the total new force amounted to 20,000 men; and but for these exertions, made by Sir John Lawrence and others in the *Punjaub*, the protracted siege of Delhi must have been relinquished.

When the month of June closed, our forces before Delhi had improved their position by driving the rebels from the important suburb of Subzee, which lies north-west of the city, on the main road to Kurnaul. But still there was the prospect of an assault being near, to seal at once the city's fate; nor was there any prospect of a successful blockade, by which its defenders might be driven into a capitulation. Our batteries, at 1,000 yards from the walls, were too distant to do any thing; and moreover, commanded only by the *Cashmere* and *Cabul*, leaving more than five miles open for all the purposes of the

enemy, and all this served to produce despondency, mingled with fierce impatience, in our ranks. Sir Henry Barnard, an officer who had served in the Eastern Campaign of 1855 as a brigadier, and been chief of the staff at the fall of Sebastopol, was unused to Indian warfare, and was not indisposed to follow the advice of those who urged that we should abandon Delhi and move eastward for the security of Agra and the furtherance of concentration. Suddenly the idea of an assault was revived again, and as suddenly abandoned, a fortunate circumstance, as the enemy, who were aware of it, had formed counterplans, which might have accomplished the destruction of our slender force.

On the 4th of July, Colonel Baird Smith arrived to take charge of the engineer staff, and on the following day Sir Henry Barnard was seized with cholera, and died in a few hours. "The event created a feeling of deep and universal regret—a regret rendered all the more poignant by the fact that he had been brought by no choice of his own into a position in which the excellent qualities he undoubtedly possessed were not displayed to advantage." He was succeeded by General Reid, whose state of health compelled him within a fortnight to relinquish the command to Brigadier (afterwards Sir Archdale) Wilson, G.C.B., a native of Norwich, whose future services won him a great name in this memorable war. In the same month we were exposed to a new danger. There were two Hindoo regiments in the investing force; some suspicions were excited, a plot was detected, and a Brahmin hanged for attempting to induce the soldiers to shoot their officers; and it having been seen that many Hindoos joined the enemy when skirmishing, the rest were paid up and turned out of camp, whence every man of them went to swell the ranks of the foe in Delhi.

One of the first measures of General Wilson was to discover the number and quality of the garrison there, and he reported it thus:—Bengal Native Infantry: 3rd, 9th, 11th, 12th, 15th, 20th, 28th, 29th, 30th, 36th, 38th, 44th, 45th, 54th, 57th, 60th, 61st, 67th, 68th, 72nd, 74th, and 78th; the 5th and 7th Gwalior Contingent, the Kotah Contingent, and Hurriana Battalion, with 2,600 other miscellaneous infantry. Native Cavalry: portions of five or six regiments, besides others of the Gwalior and Malwa Contingents. There arrived in the city mutinous regiments from sixteen different stations, all more or less stained with the crimes of murder and outrage, and estimated at 15,000 persons, 12,000 of whom were veteran sepoys, with a few cavalry, well horsed and disciplined. These were numerous in proportion.

When General Wilson took the command, he and Brigadier Showers were the only generals in perfect health, while 101 officers had died in action, of wounds, and sunstroke, or were then on the list of sick or wounded. He found our total strength to consist of—all ranks—4,023 infantry, 1,293 cavalry, 1,602 artillery and engineers; making a total of 6,918 effectives, exclusive of 765 sick and 351 wounded.

Early in July an addition was made to his force by the arrival of 450 men of H.M. 51st; but on the very same day the Bareilly brigade, consisting of three regiments and some cavalry, after mutinying as recorded, appeared with colours flying on the Meerut side of the Jumna. No attempt could be made to dispute their passage by the long bridge of boats, and they marched into the city, where the cordiality of their reception was enhanced by the known fact of their having a great quantity of treasure.

Strengthened thus, the rebels resolved to inflict summary vengeance on the village of Alipore, which formed the first station westward on the Kurnaul road, and was known to have furnished large supplies to the British camp. Marching out by the Lahore Gate in considerable force, they proceeded westward, reached Alipore before their destination was known, and spent their fury upon the unfortunate inhabitants. It was most desirable that this sortie should not be allowed to fall back with impunity, and also to prevent them from gaining a footing in that quarter, as the village lay in the direct line of communication between the camp and the Punjaub; and only the day before its destruction a large detachment of our sick had passed through it; and, but for a little delay after their slaughter, much valuable property and treasure would have fallen into the enemy's hands. Our troops overtook them, and handled them so roughly that all who were there had reason to remember their expedition to Alipore.

"What a sight our camp would be, even to those who visited Sebastopol," wrote an officer; "the long lines of tents, the thatched hovels of the native servants, the rows of horses, the parks of artillery, the British soldier in his grey linen coat and trousers; the Sikhs, in their red and blue turbans; the Afghans, with their wild air and gay head-dresses; and the little Ghoorikas, dressed up like demons of ugliness, in black Kilmarnock caps and woollen coats. . . . If we go to the summit of the ridge which separates us from the river, we see the river winding along to the left, the boats, the towers of the palace, the high minarets of the great mosque, the roofs

and gardens of the doomed city, and the walls, with batteries here and there, and the smoke of which rises slowly among the foliage that clusters round the ramparts."

There was an old Khalsa prophecy that the Sikhs should one day, enjoy the plunder of the city of the Moguls; and believing the day was at hand, they hailed with passionate ardour the prospect of its realisation, and enlisted under the banner in thousands, and, as the movable column under Brigadier Nicholson was no longer wanted in the Punjaub, he pushed on with it to Delhi.

On the 16th of July, the Jhansi mutineers, stained with the blood of their atrocious massacre, arrived at Delhi, and, after a day's halt, went according to what had become an established custom, sent forth to signalise their zeal against "the infidels," but were repulsed. On several occasions our men, after defeating the enemy, in the ardour of pursuit exposed themselves to a whole line of fire from the walls of the city, till a standing order was issued that in future they were to content themselves with repelling the enemy, and not risking further loss of life. This changed the tactics of the sepoys, who, on finding they could no longer lure our men within the range of the walls, allowed days to pass without any attack. And now, with July, came the heavy rains, which, though causing much discomfort in camp, failed to damp the ardour of the troops. This respite was partly employed in the completion of a breastwork along the ridge, from right to left, enabling the men to move from point to point in safety, as if under a regular covered way.

The movable column, under Nicholson, came into camp 4,200 strong, on the 14th of August; the brigadier had preceded it by a week, and was welcomed with emotions of homage, "as if he had been the very god of war." The force thus added to the camp was as follows:—H.M. 52nd Light Infantry; H.M. 61st, one wing; No. 17 Field Battery; 2nd Punjaub Infantry; one wing 1st Punjaub Police; 4th Sikh Infantry; 250 Mooltanee Horse, with guns, stores, and treasure. The 52nd, which Colonel Campbell had clothed in *karkae-rung*, native grey cloth, mustered 600 bayonets, but by the 14th of September, fever and cholera reduced the number to 240 of all ranks.*

The siege-train was moving but slowly, by way, as its line of guns and limbers, with caissons and tumbrils, extended over thirteen miles of road from Ferozepore.

Meanwhile the rebels were beginning to starve.

* "Hist. Rec. 52nd Foot," p. 275.

their insolence and confidence; the difference between Mussulmans and Hindoos often ended in bloodshed, and wholesale desertions began to take place, even the Delhi princes—the same wretches who had ordered and witnessed the barbarous treatment and massacre of the ladies and children in the palace—had the effrontery to send letters to General Wilson, by which they sought to avert the dire retribution that awaited them, by whining that “they had all along been fondly attached to us, and only wanted to know what they could do for us.”

In Delhi the kotwal, or mayor, was changed every second day. The sepoy, masters of all, were incessantly plundering, and neglected, when they chose, orders, parades, and bugle-calls; while the very incapacity of the Delhi princes to lead them excited their scorn, and even the laughter of the old trained officers of the Company's service; and the alarm of the old king when our shells burst over his palace became a by-word among them, and though desperation existed in the ranks of his army, discipline was on the wane.

As the whole hope of reducing Delhi depended on the safe arrival of the siege-train, it was necessary, for its protection, to keep the Ferozepore road clear of all hostile parties; and it was known that its safety was endangered by a predatory and warlike horde, named the Raughurs, who were located in the districts of Paniput and Rohtuk, and taking advantage of the revolt, had withheld their revenue, and threatened war on being joined by a body of rebels from Delhi. To keep them in check, and ensure the safety of the train, Hodson—the brilliant and chivalric leader of a body of irregulars known to fame as “Hodson's Horse”—at the head of a small force, set out on the 16th of August, and pushed on for Rohtuk, to take the Raughurs to task. As his party consisted entirely of cavalry, he could hope to achieve but little against a reckless force shut up in a walled town, so meanwhile he bivouacked in its vicinity.

There, in the evening, he was visited by a deputation from Rohtuk, “having grass-tufts in their hands” in token of submission; but this was only a snare to throw him off his guard, as he was suddenly attacked next morning. He drove the rebels back, but finding himself exposed to a killing fire from behind trees and walls around the town, he resigned a retreat.

On this the rebels came rushing forward with shouts and exultant yells, to ensure their victory, when suddenly Hodson's Horse, at a word from him, went “threes about,” and rushed to the

charge. The fancied pursuit was suddenly reversed into a headlong flight, and next morning Rohtuk was found to be abandoned.

The way was thus cleared in the direction of Rohtuk, while another column, having the same object, moved from camp in a separate direction. Mohammed Bukht Khan—an old artillery soubahdar, who had become the rebel commander-in-chief—swearing that he would either capture the siege-train or die in the attempt, sent out on the 24th a force consisting of 6,000 men of all arms, with sixteen guns. It was the revolted Neemuch brigade, deemed the very flower of the Delhi army.

An early hour of the following day saw Brigadier Nicholson depart with a column of 1,000 Europeans and 2,000 natives, to check this movement. Among the former were H.M. 61st, the 1st Fusiliers, and a squadron of Grant's Lancers, under Captain Sarcel. Torrents of rain had so flooded the roads and paddy fields, that in seven hours only ten miles had been accomplished. A halt became necessary, and, that time might not be lost, Sir Theophilus Metcalfe, who served with the column as a volunteer, and knew the country well, rode on with two officers in search of the enemy, whom they found encamped beyond a nullah, about five miles distant, at a point where the water crossed the road, and ran both deep and strong. Another two hours' plodding brought the column to a rising ground, from whence the foe could be seen, well posted alike for defence or retreat, near the village of Nujufghur, fifteen miles distant from Delhi. The rebels fronted the nullah, their right rested on a village where nine guns were placed, their left was on rising ground, and in the centre was old Serai, the key of their position, armed with four guns.

It was now half-past five p.m. Ere the line advanced, Nicholson harangued the Europeans, and bade them remember how at Balaclava the “thin red line” of the 93rd Highlanders had achieved such brilliant success by the reservation of their fire, and exhorted them to emulate that example. The nullah was forded, Nicholson's object being to force the enemy's left centre, and then changing front to the left, to hurl down their line of guns towards the bridge. But little resistance was offered, and every gun was taken; the affair seemed over, when suddenly it was reported that a village some little distance in the rear was still occupied. There the rebels fought with desperation, and were overpowered with difficulty, but the affair was not over till about ten o'clock morning. So many of our cavalry were engaged in protecting the baggage, our main force

these we had captured, that pursuit was impossible. The enemy's loss was 800, and to preclude any advance in that direction again, the bridge, which had been undermined by Captain Geneste, was blown into the air. Our loss was estimated at 120 killed and wounded. Great stores of the enemy's ammunition were destroyed; some ten or twelve wagons were blown up; bags of money were found, and one private got as much as 900 rupees. The column came into camp at six p.m.

Next day, the men very weary with their success, and on the 3rd of September before the rebels had recovered from the stertor produced by their defeat at Delhi, the siege-train came safely into Delhi, escorted by a wing of the 8th, or King's, companies of our 61st, detachments of the 1st Lancers, 60th Rifles, Cashmerian Dogras, and other troops; and then the erection of the batteries was commenced forthwith.

CHAPTER XLVII.

THE BATTERIES OPEN.—THE ASSAULT AND CAPTURE OF DELHI.—THE PRINCES SHOT BY CAPTAIN HODSON, ETC.

THE siege-train consisted of forty heavy guns, mortars, and howitzers, with a vast supply of ammunition, and before a week elapsed the batteries were armed against the city in the following order:—The first, which was ready on the 6th of September, was planted on the plateau in front of Hindoo Rao's house, and consisted of six nine-pounders and two twenty-four-pounders, under Captain Remington, and near it, fortunately, lay a dry nullah that formed a natural parallel. Advancing through it untouched, on the night of the 7th, our troops erected another battery of ten guns, within 700 yards of the walls, under Major Brind; and they were both opposed to the place where the rebels expected an assault; the erection of the third took them by surprise.

A post called Ludlow Castle, where they had a picket, was wrested from them, and there battery No. 3 was erected, mounting on its right flank seven eight-inch howitzers, with two eighteen-pounders; and on its left nine twenty-four-pounders, under Majors Kaye and Campbell. The character of this work indicated to all that the real attack would be from the left, when two other batteries were at once thrown up and armed, one with ten mortars, under Major Tombs, at the Koodsee Bagh (or garden), near the bank of the river, and the other at the old custom-house in front of it; and before the end of the week mentioned, the whole of these batteries were in full operation against Delhi, and the effect of their fire soon became apparent.

The Moree Bastion was soon silenced; the Cashmere Bastion, on its proper left, adjoining the old bastion (within which stood St. James's Church), though recently strengthened by the British, soon began to crumble beneath

the iron tempest that shook it to the base; while Remington's battery did excellent service against the Shah Bastion in the north-west angle of the walls adjoining the Cabul Gate. But most heavy and destructive was our fire against the Water, or North-east Bastion, where, by the close proximity of the guns, every shot told with terrible effect, and soon a great breach yawned in the walls. In the meantime the besieged were most active. From every battery not silenced, and from every point within range of grape and musketry, they kept up a ceaseless fire, and succeeded in placing two batteries, one at Kissengunge, which enfiladed those in the ridge by a fire due north, and another on the opposite side of Jumna, which raked those of the Koodsee Garden and custom-house by a fire that went directly westward across the river, and these cost us the lives of many brave men.

On the 13th of September the breaches were reported practicable, and at three on the following morning the work of retribution was to be more fully inaugurated by an assault delivered on four points.

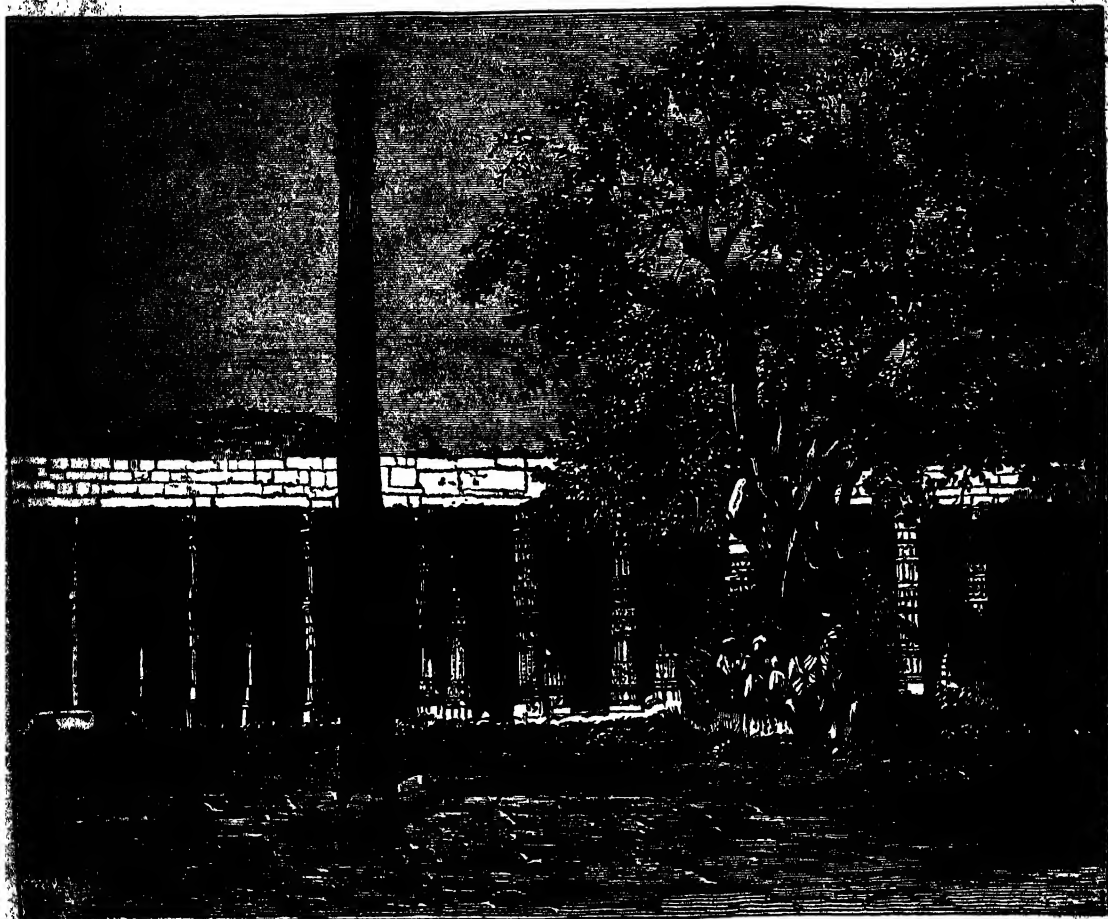
In the first column, led by Brigadier Nicholson, were 1,000 men, H.M. 75th Foot leading; in the second, led by Brigadier Jones, 850 men, H.M. 8th Foot leading; in the third, Colonel Campbell, 950 men, H.M. 52nd Foot leading; in the fourth, Major Reid, 850 men, the Sirmoor Ghosia leading. The reserve, under Brigadier Long, consisted of 1,300 men, H.M. 61st Foot leading, and the order of advance was as follows:—

The first column was to attack the main bastion and carry by escalade the face of the Cashmere Bastion, while covered by a detachment of the 60th Rifles. The second to enter the breach in the Water Bastion, covered by another detachment

the same corps. The third to attack the Cashmere Gate, preceded by a party of engineers, under Lieutenants Home and Salkeld, to blow it open with petards and powder, while also covered by a rifle party. The fourth, similarly covered, to force an entrance by the Cabul Gate, while the cavalry, under Brigadier J. H. Grant, were disposed so as to guard the lines, sick and wounded.

the four columns that hurled their strength on Delhi now; and no danger daunted, no obstacle remained unsurmounted by them; and if daring can win glory, then glory was won there.

The breaches were entered, over stones, guns, corpses, and every ghastly *débris*, by both columns simultaneously, Nicholson leading. Wheeling to the right, our troops, with terrible impetuosity,



THE IRON COLUMN OF THE KING DHAVA, KOUTUB, DELHI.

By three in the morning all men were under arms, and in the hushed ranks every eye was lit up, and every heart and hand tingled with the thought of grapple with the enemy, and in the morning after the assault began. In extended ranks the Rifles opened a skirmishing fire, while the columns dashed on at the double quick, which became a wild rush, Nicholson's first; and he emerged equally from the well-directed and ready file-firing of the mutineers as if he were like a red blaze over tower and curtain. Seldom or never had assaulting troops been so impulsive to inspire them as those of

hurled the yelling mutineers along the ramparts, and captured in quick succession the batteries, the Cashmere and Moree Bastions, with a tower midway between them, and then the Cabul Gate, in a few minutes scouring half a mile of the walls on the northern face of the city; but the Burn Bastion and Lahore Gate on the western face defied any assault, for there the mutineers met us with coolness and resolution, and drove down the stormers. Along a narrow lane leading from Trevelgan Gunge, Nicholson led the men against the Lahore Gate, which led into the great thoroughfare of Chandni Chowk, or

Silver Street; but that narrow lane was swept by concentrated grape and musketry—a veritable rain of death—and there the noble and enthusiastic young general fell desperately wounded, adding grief to the fury that now filled his soldiers. "Their efforts were fierce; but the lane was swept by bullets, as a tunnel by a fierce wind or a penetrating torrent."

The command now devolved upon Brigadier Jones, who finding the enemy in great force, pru-

and Salkeld, with Sergeants Smith and O'Connell, and sappers carrying the powder bags, were laid against the gate. How they reached it seemed miraculous, as they had to climb over a broken bridge in the clear light of a full moon, under the eyes and rifles of the mutineers, who had long since lost all scruple about handling powder cartridges. As soon as the bags were laid, the party slid down into the ditch, to make way for the firing-party, led by the gallant Salkeld.



CAPTAIN HODSON ARRESTING THE KING OF DELHI

dently resolved on retaining the Cabul Gate, which the troops had already won.* Three sand-bags were thrown up for shelter, and the guns of the vanquished turned against the city, with such effect that their shot reached the Selinghur Fort and the Calcutta Gate, close by the palace, whose cowering inmates now felt that Nemesis was at hand.

Elsewhere the attack was in progress against the Cashmere Gate. It was a portal of vast strength, and a party of picked marksmen, stationed at a distance, rendered all approach to it a matter of nearly certain death. This was the barrier to be stormed by the Engineers, led by Lieutenants Home and Wilson. General Wilson's Official Report.

The latter, according to the Engineers' Report, "while endeavouring to fire the charge, was shot through the arm and leg, but handed over the slow-match to Corporal Burgess, who fell mortally wounded just as he had accomplished the onerous duty. Havildar Tilluk Sing, of the Sikhs, and Ramloll, sepoy of the same corps, were killed during this part of the operation. The demolition being most successful, Lieutenant Home, happily wounded, caused the bugler (Hawthorn) to sound the regimental call, as a signal for the advancing columns. Fearing that amidst the noise of the assault the sound might not be heard, he repeated the call three times, when the troops

advanced and carried the gateway with complete success.

It was probably this circumstance of the bugler sounding thrice amid the frightful din of the time, that led a recent historian of the Sepoy War to sneer in a sneer at the 52nd Regiment—one second to none in the annals of glory—which has incurred the indignation of all who were present.†

Sergeant Smith, who feared that the match had failed in effect as it lay in the hand of the dying Burgess, rushed forward, but saw it burning, and had barely time to fling himself into the ditch when the mighty masses of wood and stone were upheaved, to fall in crushing fragments. Then rang out young Robert Hawthorn's bugle-call, and his comrades of the 52nd rushed to the attack, though Captain Bayley, who led them, fell, and the whole column, led by Colonel Campbell, with Sir Theophilus Metcalfe as a guide, burst with a bayonet charge into the vast extent of the Chandnee Chowk, in hope of gaining the Jumna Musjid.‡

The column was assailed with the most desperate bravery, and was actually driven back by the sepoys for nearly an English mile, close to the gate by which it had entered, and might have been driven out of the city but for the supports which came up; while the attack of the fourth column, under Major Reid, on the western suburbs, failed, through the inefficiency of the Cashmere Contingent and the contempt which the sepoys had for foes of their own colour; but it was not till after a dreadful conflict for the possession of the Redgah, that the Cashmerians, Sirmoor Ghoorkas, Guide infantry, and European pickets gave way, and the attack on the western suburbs was abandoned, and the column fell back on the camp.

Within the town we held all the captured posts, and when night closed over the sanguinary scene we had to enumerate (according to Marshman) a loss in killed and wounded of sixty-six officers and 1,104 men. The first and second columns held all the line of walls from the vicinity of the Cashmere Gate to the Cabul Gate; the third column and the reserve held the Cashmere Gate, St. James's Church, Bala's House, the Water Bastion, Ali Khan's House, the College Gardens, the Moora and Nizam's Bastions, the Killa Ghaut Gate, and many other posts in that part of Delhi. Next morning the fort and its extensive grounds were captured, and thus enabled General Wilson to get his guns turned on the king's magnificent palace—a stately and royal castle indeed, but since June the scene

of manifold crimes and cruelties. On the same day the Jumna Musjid, a splendid and enormous edifice built of red and white marble by Shah Jehan, was stormed, and the adjutant-general reported to Government the capture of 205 guns, with vast quantities of warlike stores.

On the 17th, dawn came in upon both armies, eager still for battle and conquest, and a series of combats ensued which left all the northern defences almost entirely in our hands. On the 18th, Wilson hurled columns of attack against the southern portion of the city, capturing all the great buildings in succession; while the magazine supplied us with great mortars wherewith to shell the palace, and then the women and children began to fly, and with them the wounded were permitted to depart. On the 19th, the Burn Bastion was taken, and Hodson captured the cavalry camp. The palace was now attacked, and its gates were blown open, but save by the wounded and some Mohammedan fanatics, who died like tigers, fighting to the last, it was found deserted.

Delhi was now ours, but with the loss of 3,537 killed, wounded, and missing, nearly a half of the whole engaged; and in the palace of the Great Mogul, General Wilson (who here won a baronetcy) and the officers of his staff drained goblets of wine to the health of her Majesty as Empress of India, while a thousand triumphant voices shouted with fervour, "God save the Queen!"

The sepoys in despair cut the throats of their wives and children, and then shot themselves. The helpless, of course, were spared; but the male inhabitants were slain whenever encountered. "The sights which met the gaze of the British, when the enemy being completely vanquished they had time to look around them, were horrible. Christian women had been crucified nude against the houses, and native women and children, butchered by the sepoys to avert the same fate at the hands of the British, lay scattered in the streets and houses. Shattered ruins, mangled limbs, dead bodies, slain and wounded horses (600 of these perished) lay in every direction." Large sums of money were found on the dead and wounded; "the English soldiers, breaking the spirit depôts, drank to excess, and in this state bayoneted numbers of the inhabitants who had found temporary security in hiding-places."

Of the rebels 5,000 effected their escape in safety into the Doab, the remainder fled down the bank of the Jumna, to join mutineers elsewhere.

On the 21st Captain Hodson, ascertaining that the king had fled to that wonderful pile, the Tomb of Houmayoun, a few miles southward of the city, galloped thither at the head of fifty horse.

† *Illustrations*. Col. Baird Smith.

‡ See Kaye's "Hist. of the Sepoy War," vol. iii.

§ See G. Campbell's Despatch.

THE PRINCES SHOT.

dragged him, together with his favourite wife, Zeenat Mahal, who had been a chief instrument in the revolt, back to the palace, in which they were lodged as prisoners. Next day this fiery and indefatigable officer went in search of the two sons and grandsons of the king—the chief inciters of the Delhi atrocities—who were concealed in the tomb, and surrounded by a multitude of armed scoundrels from the city. The time was not one for hesitation or delay, so the fearless Hodson with his own pistols shot the princes dead on the spot, and had their bodies conveyed to the city and hanged up in the Kotwallee, or Mayor's Court, being literally, as in the Hebrew story of old, exposed at the gates of the city. There they remained in view of the people, till sanitary reasons required their interment. Several months after, the king was tried by a military court in the imperial palace, and found guilty of the massacre of the British in Delhi and levy of war upon the Government. Lord Canning spared his forfeited life, but sentenced him to be transported to Burmah; and thus ended the royal line of Baber, three hundred and thirty-two years after he had ascended the Mogul throne.

During the closing events of the siege, General

John Nicholson, whose sufferings neither age nor friendship could alleviate, died in the camp on the 23rd of September, of his wound. The army mourned him truly; he was only in his thirty-third year, when he passed away in the midst of his fame. He was succeeded in the command by Brigadier Penny, C.B., a brave and experienced veteran. To his widowed mother the East India Company granted a pension of £500 yearly. Lieutenant Philip Salkeld—son of a Dorsetshire clergyman—died of his wound on the 10th of October; but his brother-officer, Lieutenant Home, won the Victoria Cross, but did not live to wear it long, as on the first of the same month, he died of a mortal wound, when in pursuit of the Delhi fugitives.

The Victoria Cross was awarded to Lance-Corporal Smith, of the 52nd, for conspicuous gallantry in the storm; nor was the bugle-boy, Robert Hawthorn, forgotten, as he too obtained it for "not only most bravely performing the dangerous duty on which he was employed, but having previously attached himself to Lieutenant Salkeld of the Engineers, when dangerously wounded, bound up his wounds under a heavy musketry fire, and had him removed without further injury."*

CHAPTER XLVIII.

THE MARCH OF HAVELOCK.—VICTORY AT FUTTEHPORE.—COMBAT AT AHERWA.—THE THIRD MASSACRE AT CAWNPORE.—BIIHOOR DESTROYED.—SIR COLIN CAMPBELL COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, ETC.

We have now to bring the gallant Havelock on the scene, and return to Oude, where we have already adverted to the position of the few British at Lucknow, after the disastrous combat at Chinhutti, and the subsequent death of Sir Henry Lawrence, an event which made a deep impression on all. Had his constitution been less shattered, he might have survived the shell wound—could he have undergone amputation; but in his enfeebled state the utmost that could be done was to apply the tourniquet to stop the bleeding, which procured him a respite of two days of agony. During these he remained quite collected, dictated his last instructions, appointed Major Banks Chief Commissioner, and Lieutenant-Colonel Inglis, of the 4th, to the command of the garrison, and in his dying thoughts wavered between the change he was to undergo and the half-finished charge he was leaving.

"Save the ladies," he often said, and then urged that the modest epitaph, which his tomb now bears, should be inscribed upon it: "Here lies Sir Henry Lawrence, who tried to do his duty. May God have mercy on him;" and he often spoke of the mutability of human life, adding "What is it worth now?" His spirit was one of a noble order; he was tender and affectionate by nature, and, as the soldiers said, was simple-hearted as a child. "His services, particularly in the Punjab, of which he was one of the earliest and most successful administrators, entitle him to a foremost place among Indian statesmen; but even could these be forgotten, the noble institution which bears his name as its founder, and by which the children of European soldiers serving in India instead of being left to grow up as outcasts, and duly cared for, would suffice to keep his memory

* Field Force Orders, Delhi, 21st Sept., 1857.

in perpetual and honoured remembrance. The siege of the garrison at Lucknow, and its gallant defence, furnish perhaps the most interesting episode in the history of the Mutiny."

"No military honours," says one who was present, "marked our last acts to his corpse. The times were too stern for idle demonstrations of respect. A hurried prayer, amid the booming of the enemy's artillery, and the rattle of their musketry, was read over his remains, and he was lowered into a pit with several other, though lower, companions-in-arms; and so closed the 4th of July over Lucknow."*

The Residency was a fine building, three storeys in height, but little adapted for defence, while its many lofty windows gave free entrance to the enemy's shot, and its flat roof, which was only enclosed by a cornice and balustrade, was completely exposed. Hence the upper floor, during the siege, was abandoned; the entrance floor was occupied by the soldiers, while the women and children were placed in the *tykhanas*, or rooms that are formed underground for coolness in the hot season. The banqueting-hall, a two-storeyed edifice, eastward of the Residency, was converted into a hospital, but, like the latter, it was too much open, though the doors and windows on the exposed faces were completely barricaded. Beyond this, farther eastward, stood the arched Bailey Guard gate, opposite to which was the house of Dr. Fayer, a large and flat-roofed building. Being used for defence, it was familiarly known as "Fayer's garrison." A breastwork of sand-bags surrounded its roof, and when firing became heavy, all the female inmates could take shelter in its *tykhanas*.

South of this were successively the Financial garrison, Sagos, and the Judicial, overlooked on the west by Anderson's and Duprat's, with the Post-Office garrison. On the west, with the Cawnpore battery at its extremity (facing the road that led thereto), was Gubbins' garrison, a post to which the judicial commissioner of Oude, by his gallant services during the siege, and his book thereon, has given some celebrity.† But all these defences were formidable only in name; the real and strongest works were the Redan and Cawnpore Battery, armed with only three guns each; and in many places the defences of the Residency, with its buildings and grounds, were so feeble that nothing was wanting, amid the vast masses of the besiegers, to have enabled them to hew a passage into the heart of the place.

* Ross' "Siege of Lucknow."

† "Mutinies in Oudh," R. Gubbins (Bentley, 1853).

Among the many disadvantages our people had to contend with, were the number and proximity of the native houses; and though in the vicinity of the Redan and Mr. Gubbins' garrison some demolitions had been made, elsewhere the ground remained covered with houses, of which the enemy's marksmen made an incessant and destructive use, while Havelock's little band was struggling on to succour the isolated garrison.

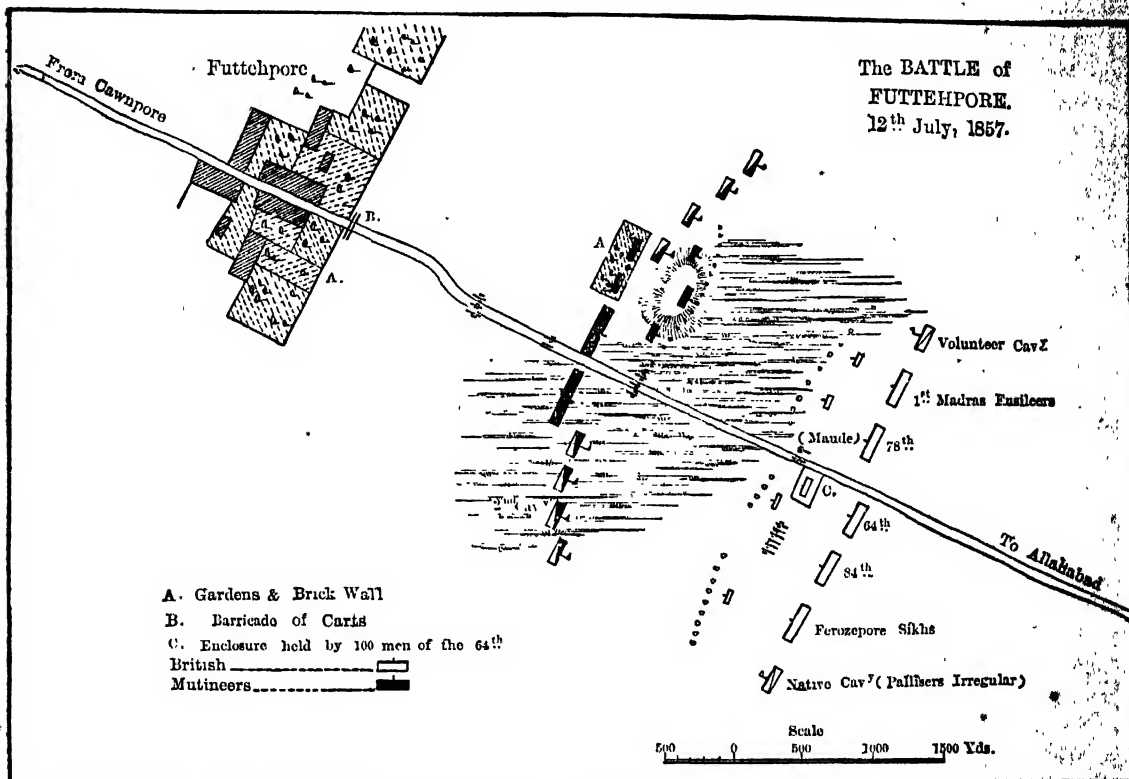
We have narrated the narrow escape of Sir Henry Havelock and others off the coast of Ceylon, after his return from Persia. On the voyage he had mapped out a plan of operations against the rebels, and recommended the formation of a movable column, to proceed upwards from the lower provinces to the scenes of revolt, and this arrangement was at once made on his arrival at Calcutta, with Sir Patrick Grant, who became, provisionally, successor to General Anson. This column was placed under his command, as Brigadier-General, with orders, after suppressing disturbances at Allahabad, to lose no time in proceeding to support Sir Hugh Wheeler at Cawnpore, and then Sir Henry Lawrence at Lucknow—a mission peculiarly acceptable to a man of his character, who, to the high spirit of an enthusiastic soldier, added much of the stern Puritan. Among the troops in his column were the 64th (or Staffordshire), and 78th Ross-shire Highlanders, both of which had been with him in Persia, and it was with emotions of mutual gratification that they undertook the errand of mercy, to conquer and to save, while the orders were that "he should take prompt measures for dispersing and utterly destroying all mutineers and insurgents."

Havelock was of opinion that if he had "1,000 Europeans, 1,000 Sikhs, and 1,000 Ghoorkas, he could thrash everything; but now, in this dire emergency, he could only gather some 2,000 men of all arms."

His first object was to obviate delay by want of carriage. He knew that during the mutiny at Allahabad 1,600 bullocks collected by the commissariat there had vanished, and he therefore proposed that the carts and bullocks on the Grand Trunk Road should be utilised for the transport of ammunition and stores, while the troops, with their camp equipage, should proceed by river conveyance; and having obtained the sanction necessary for these arrangements, and also a liberal supply of secret service money, for the purpose of making his intelligence department as perfect as possible, he started from Calcutta on the 25th of June, and three days after saw him in the great city of Benares.

By this time one of the primary objects which he had in view had been frustrated by the perpetration of the first Cawnpore massacre, which was not made known to him and his already infuriated troops till the 3rd of July, three days after he reached Allahabad, where another disappointment awaited him. The European column was to have included four regiments; but, from circumstances beyond all control, when, on the 7th of July, he marched for the recapture of Cawnpore, he had with him only 1,400 European bayonets. The day before he

numbers, even if every man of his detachment had been faithful to him. Should it have proved otherwise—and he strongly suspected some of the natives—destruction would have been inevitable, and, instinctively aware of all this, Havelock pushed on to join him by forced marches. On the other hand, the rebels were equally active and well-informed; thus they hurried on to Futtehpore, near the right bank of the Ganges, and about forty-five miles below Cawnpore, in the hope of cutting off the detachment of Renaud, whose suc-



PLAN OF THE BATTLE OF FUTTEHPORE.

entered Allahabad, the first Cawnpore massacre being unknown, Colonel Neill had detached for its relief Major Renaud, of the Madras Fusiliers, with 400 Europeans, 300 Sikhs, 100 irregular cavalry, and two nine-pounder guns, with ample orders to inflict summary vengeance on all who were in any way suspected of disloyalty; and for three days the major marched on, leaving behind him traces of retributive justice in desolated villages and ghastly corpses dangling from the branches of trees.*

Renaud's movements had to be made with intense caution, for had the enemy borne down upon him he must have been overwhelmed by mere

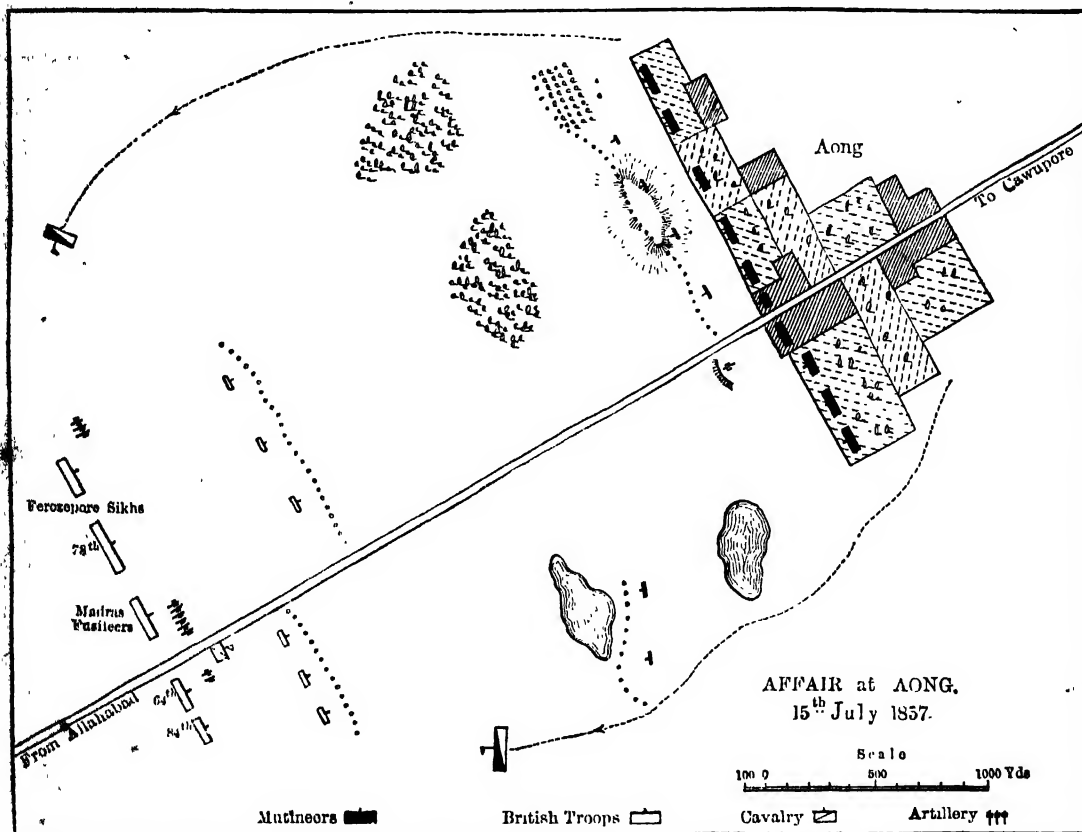
successful junction with Havelock was effected on the 12th of July.

Their united forces consisted of 600 men of the 64th, 600 of the 78th, 500 of the 1st Madras European Fusiliers, a company of Royal Artillery, under Captain Maude, from Ceylon, Brazier's Sikhs, and some twenty mounted gentlemen volunteers. Wearied by a long march, about eight o'clock the whole halted near Futtehpore, but the tents were scarcely pitched when Colonel Tytler, who had been reconnoitring, came galloping in with intelligence that the enemy were coming on. The latter, believing that the troops before them were only Renaud's force, in the hope of another easy massacre, came confidently on, but soon discovered

* Marshman, &c.

their mistake, as Havelock thus records:—"Futtehpoore constitutes a position of no small strength. The hard and dry trunk road subdivides it, and is the only convenient access, for the plains on both sides at this season are flooded by heavy lodgments of water, to the depth of two, three, and four feet. It is surrounded by garden enclosures of great strength, with high walls, and has within it many houses of good solid masonry. In front of the swamps are hillocks,

that short space of time the spirit of the enemy was entirely subdued. The rifle-fire reaching them at an unexpected distance filled them with dismay; and when Captain Maude was enabled to push his guns through the flanking swamps to point-blank range, his surprisingly accurate fire demolished their little remaining confidence. In a moment three guns were abandoned to us on the chaussée, and the force advanced steadily, driving the enemy before it at every point." *



PLAN OF THE AFFAIR AT AONG.

villages, and mango groves, which the enemy already occupied in force. I estimate his number at 3,500, with twelve brass and iron guns. I made my dispositions. The guns, now eight in number, were formed on, and close to the chaussée, under Captain Maude, R.A., protected and aided by 100 Enfield riflemen of the 64th. The detachments of infantry were at the same moment thrown into line of quarter-distance columns at deploying distance, and thus advanced in support, covered at discretion by Enfield skirmishers. The small force of volunteer cavalry and irregular cavalry moved forward on the flanks on harder ground. I might say that in ten minutes the action was decided, for in

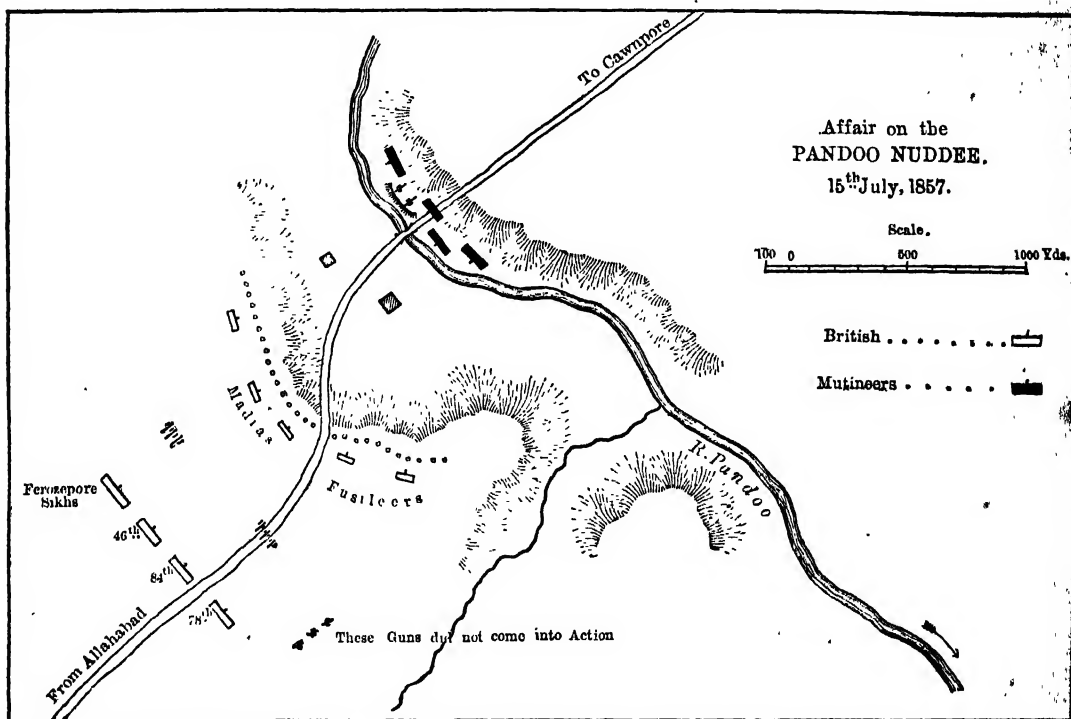
Out of the inclosures and into the streets, out of the latter into the open country beyond, they were driven into headlong flight; but the excessive heat, and the exhaustion of the previous marching, rendered pursuit impossible, and the irregular cavalry conducted themselves in so shameful a manner that two days after they were disbanded. This was the first check the mutineers had received below Delhi, and it produced a most salutary impression.

On the 14th Havelock resumed his march, and on reaching the village of Aong, midway between Futtehpoore and Cawnpore, found the enemy posted a little beyond it, and in rear of an entrenchment

* Despatches.

which they had thrown across the road. Colonel Fraser-Tytler advanced with about a third of the force, and found the enemy strongly lining garden walls and other enclosures. As a little delay ensued during the formation of the British, the enemy mistook it for hesitation, and confidently advancing, occupied the village which lay 200 yards in their original front. The Madras Fusiliers gallantly dashed forward to dislodge them, and did so effectually, but with the loss of their brave Major Renaud, who was struck in the left leg, and had part of his scabbard driven into the wound, but

Cawnpore under a blazing sun, but one thought inspiring every man in the ranks, a thirsty eagerness to save and free the unfortunates who were then in the power of the merciless Nana; though the primary cause of this unwonted exertion was to obtain possession of the bridge which spans the Pandoo Nuddee before the enemy could blow it up. "The stream, though usually fordable, was now flooded, and might have proved a serious obstacle to the advance if the bridge had been removed. Fortunately the enemy were surprised in the very act of mining, and after a short but



PLAN OF THE AFFAIR AT PANDOO NUDDEE.

after a successful amputation he suddenly expired. One of his officers lingered near to assist, but the last words of the fine old soldier, who thought only of duty, were, "Go—go on with your men."

After clearing the village, Fraser-Tytler gave the foe not a moment of respite, and compelled them to fly with precipitation, leaving their baggage and guns behind them. While his detachment was occupied thus, the main body, under Havelock, was assailed repeatedly by cavalry in heavy squadrons, who made attempts upon his baggage, and were completely foiled; but the perilous work of the day was not yet over.

The moment the troops had breakfasted, bugle and baggage sounded the advance, and for two hours the troops pushed along the main road to

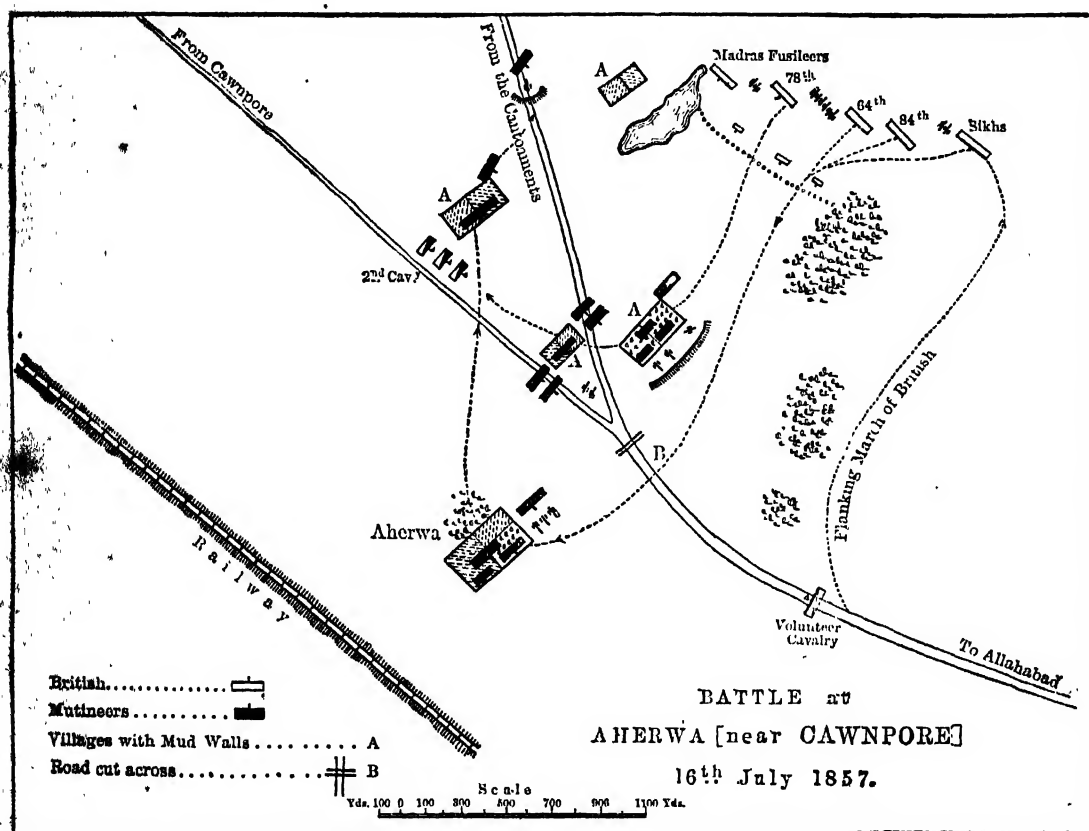
sharp contest were compelled to retreat on Cawnpore. That place was now only twenty-three miles distant, and every man was anxious to push on for it without the loss of a single hour. Above 200 European children (a number vaguely stated), reserved by Nana Sahib when he perpetrated his two previous massacres, were reported to be still alive. What a glorious enterprise to rescue them, and at the same time take summary vengeance on their inhuman gaoler!"

The Nana's brother, who was in the field, galloped back to Cawnpore, with the alarming intelligence that we had forced the passage of the bridge, and were in full march on the town.

According to generally received opinion, it was after Havelock's successful passage of the flooded

river that the fatal order of the Nana was given; but, notwithstanding the intense eagerness of the troops to push on, delay was unavoidable. Night had fallen before the commissariat cattle came up, and most of the men, before animal food could be cooked, contented themselves with some mouthfuls of porter and biscuit, and then sank on the ground exhausted; but morning had hardly dawned ere the eager soldiers were again on the line of march, and, pushing on at a pace far beyond the ordinary quick-

to force a passage in front would be but to court destruction; he therefore resolved on a flank movement, commencing upon the enemy's left. Leaving the baggage in his rear, at Maharajahpore, he advanced along the trunk road, in columns of subdivisions (or half companies), his little band of volunteer cavalry taking the lead. A three miles' march brought them to the point where the two roads diverged. His infantry then wheeled to the right, and under cover of a border of thick trees he



PLAN OF THE BATTLE OF AHERWA.

step, after traversing sixteen miles, reached the village of Maharajahpore.

Only seven miles now lay between them and Cawnpore!

With eight guns and 5,000 men, Nana Sahib had taken post at the village of Aherwa, at a place where the road from the old cantonments diverges from the road to the town. Five fortified villages, with entrenched approaches, supporting each other, skillfully defended his position; and if ever anything on earth could have given this indescribable miscreant any confidence in the battle, it must have been the strength of the ground he occupied.

On reconnoitring it, Havelock saw that to attempt

achieved the coveted flank movement unobserved, and marched on quite unseen for 1,000 yards, the enemy supposing that the volunteer cavalry, whom they saw leisurely pursuing the direct road, were followed by the main body.

At length, some openings in the trees enabled them to see the red coats of the brigade, and the green tartans of "the petticoated devils," as they termed the 78th, and they found their flank was turned. Every available gun was now fired on the flank of the marching column, while an attempt was made, when too late, to change front and meet it. While they were yet in surprise and consternation, the column emerged from the grove, the subdivisions deployed

into line, and that line advanced with terrible celerity, under an effective artillery fire.

So skilful were the arrangements of Havelock, that the rebels were unable to use the artillery of the centre and right without mowing down their own left; still, the twenty-four-pounders of the latter made such havoc in our ranks, that the true old British resort—the bayonet—became necessary. Then it was, as Havelock tells us, he appealed, not to the senior regiment, but to the Ross-shire Buffs. "The opportunity had arrived for which I have long anxiously waited of developing the powers of the 78th Highlanders. Three guns of the enemy were strongly posted behind a lofty hamlet, well intrenched. I directed this regiment to advance, and never have I beheld conduct more admirable! They were led by Colonel Hamilton, and followed him with surprising steadiness and gallantry under a heavy fire. As they approached the village they cheered and charged with the bayonet, their pipes sounding a pibroch. Need I say that the enemy fled, the village was taken, and the guns were captured?" *

When the enemy's left had been thus annihilated, their infantry were seen rushing in consternation to the rear, when they broke into two columns, one falling back some hundred yards on the cantonment road, and the other halting near a howitzer which was posted in their centre.

To the 78th Havelock again turned, crying, "Now, Highlanders, another charge like that wins the day!" With a cheer and a rush, in which the 64th joined them, the howitzer was taken, and the dusky masses around it scattered like chaff before a gale. The enemy's entire right had also given way, but the fighting was not yet over. From one of the five villages, wherein some of the fugitives rallied, there came a sharp and incessant fire, till the general, to excite emulation, called aloud, "Come, who'll take that village—the Highlanders, or the 64th?" The appeal was instantly responded to, and once more the Highlanders, led by Colonel Hamilton, and the 64th, dashed on, and the village was cleared.

Still, the fighting was not yet over, and another effort was necessary; for at a time when the enemy seemed in undoubted retreat, a deadly fire was suddenly opened from a twenty-four-pounder and two field-pieces, which had been placed in reserve on the roadway. The troops which covered these were fresh (while our men were exhausted), having been just brought from Cawnpore. Our guns were then a mile in the rear, so, till they could come up, our infantry lay down for shelter from the fire, which swept over them. This gave fresh courage to

the enemy, among whom Nana Sahib was seen riding to and fro, while the mingled din of drums and trumpets seemed to indicate that a grand attack was about to be made.

Extending in the form of a crescent, their cavalry threatened to envelop and cut off the advanced force of the British, which was only 800 strong, at a time when the artillery cattle, from exhaustion, were unable to bring on the cannon, so there remained nothing to be done but to form the detachments of the Fusiliers, 64th, and 78th, in line. "So," says Havelock, "calling on my men, who were lying down, to leap to their feet, I directed another steady advance. It was irresistible. The enemy sent round shot into our ranks until we were within 300 yards with such precision and determination as I have seldom witnessed. But the 64th, led by Major Stirling and by my aide-de-camp" (his son, afterwards Sir Henry Havelock, M.P.), "who placed himself in their front, were not to be denied. Their rear showed the ground strewn with wounded; but on they steadily and silently came, then, with a cheer, charged and captured the unwieldy trophy of their valour. The enemy lost all heart, and after a hurried fire of musketry, gave way in total rout. Four of my guns came up and completed their discomfiture by a heavy cannonade; and as it grew dark, the roofless barracks of our artillery were dimly descried in advance, and it was evident that Cawnpore was once more in our possession." *

Here Havelock had only six men killed and about 100 wounded, including some of the bravest of his officers. All fought well, but the most successful competitors for glory were Major Stirling of the 64th, and Lieutenant Henry Marshman Havelock, of H.M. 10th, referred to in his father's despatch. In eight days, Havelock's force had marched 126 miles, fought four actions against overwhelming odds, had taken twenty-four pieces of cannon, field and battery guns, and in the hottest and most sultry month of an Indian summer. By the most superhuman exertions, and with hearts full of pity, ardour, and anxiety, they had reached Cawnpore only to find, to their bitter disappointment and grief, that those they had come to save were now beyond all help!

As it would have been hazardous to enter the town in the dark, the troops bivouacked for the night on the bare ground, and ere they could start next morning, spies arrived with the dreadful intelligence that in revenge for his successive defeats the fiendish Nana Sahib had massacred the 120 women and children, whom fate or misfortune

* Despatches.

* Despatches.

had placed in his power. The manner of their death has been so often told that it need not be repeated, while the frightful spectacle in the prison house that met the gaze of our soldiers fresh from victories is too appalling to describe. "The pavement was swimming in blood, and fragments of ladies and children's dresses were floating on it. They entered the apartments, and found them empty and silent; but there, also, the blood lay deep on the floor, covered with bonnets, collars, combs, and children's frocks and frills. The walls were dotted with the marks of bullets, and on the wooden pillars were deep sword-cuts, from some of which hung tresses of hair. But neither the sabre-cuts nor the bullets were sufficiently high above the floor to indicate that the weapons had been aimed at men defending their lives; they appear rather to have been hurled at crouching women and little children begging for mercy.

"The soldiers proceeded in their search, and when crossing the court-yard they perceived human limbs bristling from a well, and on further examination found it to be choked up with the bodies of the victims, which appeared to have been thrown in promiscuously, the dead with the wounded, till it was full to the brim. The feelings of those who witnessed the spectacle it is easy to conceive, but difficult to describe. Men of iron nerve, who had during the march from Allahabad rushed to the cannon's mouth, and, unappalled, had seen their comrades mowed down around them, now lifted up their voices and wept." *

Amid the blood there was found, with many other relics, a prayer book, on the fly-leaf of which was written, "For dearest mamma; from her affectionate Tom, June, 1845." It lay open at the Litany. Amid the clothing was found a scrap of paper, containing some entries in pencil by a female hand, afterwards ascertained to be that of a Miss Caroline Lindsay, who, ere she perished herself, had witnessed the destruction of her family:—
 "Mamma died, July 12th; Alice died, July 9th; George died, June 27th. Entered the barracks, May 21st. Cavalry left, June 5th. First shot fired, June 6th. Uncle Willy died, June 18th; Aunt Lilly, June 17th. Left barracks, June 27th. Made prisoners as soon as we were at the river." Lieutenant John Saunders, of H.M. 84th, when brought before Nana Sahib, pulled out his revolver and shot down five of the guards. With his sixth round he missed the Nana, when he was seized, and underwent systematic mutilation and torture till death next day released him from unutterable agony.†

* Marshman.

† "Indian Mutiny to the Recapture of Lucknow."

Of the effect these stories had at home we find Macaulay writing thus:—"The cruelties of the sepoys have inflamed the nation to a degree unprecedented within my memory. 'Peace Societies, Aborigine Protection Societies, and Societies for the Reformation of Criminals, are silenced. There is one terrible cry for revenge! The account of that dreadful military execution at Peshawur—forty men blown at once from the mouths of cannon, their heads, legs, and arms flying in all directions—was read with delight by people who three months ago were against all capital punishment.'" *

A certain despondency now fell upon Havelock's force; their ranks had been thinned not only in combat but by cholera, which every day carried off some valuable life, and as their strength grew weaker, the magnitude of the task before them—to clear the way of rebels, and march to Lucknow—became more and more apparent. General Neill, when urged for reinforcements, could bring only 227 men with him, and more than these were necessary to garrison the town of which he took command, and where he instituted measures of such stern and inexorable justice as struck terror into the hearts of all evil-doers. The collector who had managed the massacre was caught on the 19th, and hanged from a tree.

"Whenever a rebel is caught," wrote General Neill, "he is immediately tried, and unless he can prove a defence, he is sentenced to be hanged at once; but the chief rebels or ringleaders I make first clean up a certain portion of the pool of blood, still two inches deep, in the shed where the fearful murder and mutilation of the women and children took place. To touch blood is most abhorrent to the high-caste natives; they think by doing so they doom their souls to perdition. Let them think so. My object is to inflict a fearful punishment for a revolting, cowardly, barbarous deed, and to strike terror into these rebels. The first I caught was a soubahdar, or native officer, a high-caste Brahmin, who tried to resist my order to clean up the very blood he had helped to shed; but I made the provost-marshal do his duty, and a few lashes compelled the miscreant to accomplish his task. When done he was taken out, immediately hanged, and after death buried in a ditch at the roadside. No one who has witnessed the scenes of murder, mutilation, and massacre can ever listen to the word 'mercy,' as applied to these fiends." †

In this spirit he continued daily to hang, flog, or blow from the guns all culprits, while Havelock prepared to advance into Oude, and was heard to

* "Lord Macaulay's Life," vol. ii.

† "Mutiny, to the Recapture of Lucknow."

exclaim, while thinking of the difficulties that lay before his slender force, "If the worst comes to the worst, we can but die with our swords in our hands." One of his first measures was to fortify a spot which would secure the passage of the Ganges, and the safety of the garrison he left behind. It was situated on the bank of the stream, and measured 200 yards in length by 100 in breadth. He made this field-work capable of defence by 300 men, and upon it he employed 4,000 labourers, who were encouraged to punctuality by daily payment; and it made such progress that it would evidently be in fighting order by the time the passage of the Ganges was achieved—a task of some difficulty, as it was now a swollen and impetuous torrent a mile in breadth. The bridge of boats had been cut by the mutineers, and there were neither craft nor boatmen to supply its place.

He procured a small steamer, in which, on the 21st of July, amid blinding torrents of rain, a detachment of Highlanders crossed, and landed in a swamp, where, had the enemy been on the alert, they might have been destroyed. A second detachment followed in the evening, and by the end of a week his whole force was over. It consisted of only 1,200 British and 300 native soldiers with ten guns, with which he began his eventful march into Oude by first advancing against the enemy at Onao, some eight miles from the Ganges, a small town flanked by an extensive swamp, the only approach to which was defended by fifteen guns, and where an advanced force of the mutineers was strongly posted within a village, the enclosure of which was in the form of a bastion, and all the houses of which were loopholed.

The attack was begun by the 78th Highlanders, who, with the Madras Fusiliers, flung themselves against the bastion and carried it, but met with such a biting fire from the houses that they were unable to capture the village till supported by the 64th, after which the guns were taken, and the whole force debouched between the village and the town of Onao, towards which the enemy were seen hastening in such strength, and with so many guns, that it was evident if they once established themselves there, all further advance would be barred, and the hope of succouring those now struggling in Lucknow might be destroyed.

Havelock had thus no alternative but to outstrip them. His column pushed on, and took post on the Lucknow side, where it commanded the high road, along which the enemy, still hoping to gain the race, were hurrying. Havelock allowed them to come on unmolested till

they were in front of his line, when he suddenly opened with guns and musketry, and put them to flight, with the loss of 300 men and several pieces of cannon. During these manoeuvres Jupah Sing, a lieutenant of the Nana, hung upon the British flank with cavalry, watching for the least symptoms of disorder to fall upon it.

During the fierce noontide heat Havelock halted for four hours at Onao, and then pushed on to Busseret Gunge, a walled town, intersected by the Lucknow Road, which had been there trenchied. Water protected the flanks of the town; four guns were above its gate, which was strongly barricaded, while the walls and turrets on each side were closely loopholed. But there was another gate on the left, to which the road was continued by a causeway across a sheet of water, about 150 yards wide and six feet deep. By this way the 64th were ordered to advance, while the Madras Fusiliers and 78th Highlanders were to storm the front gate, after a brief cannonade. A severe struggle ensued, yet the combined movements so alarmed the enemy that they abandoned the town, but not until we had eighty-eight officers and men killed or wounded.

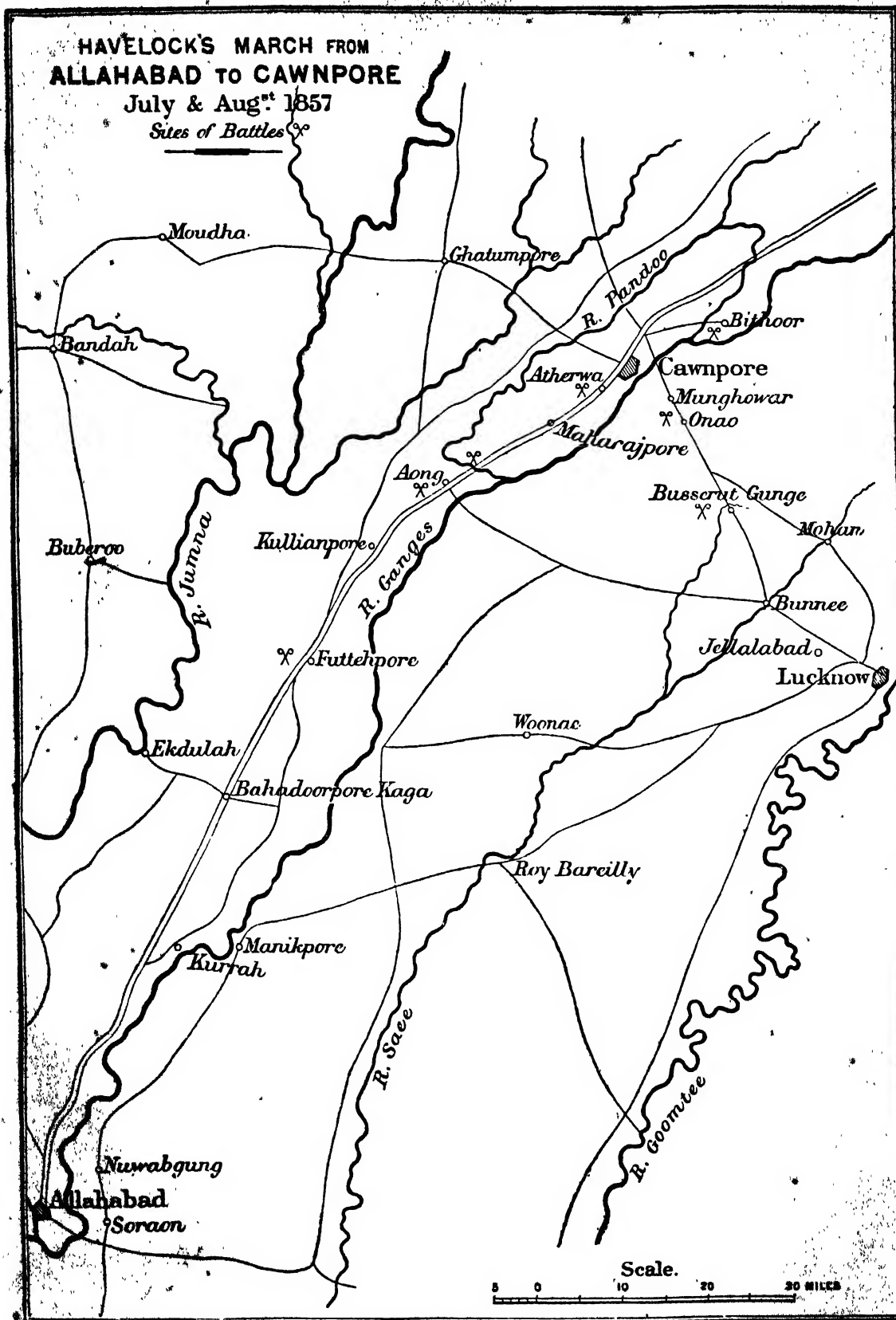
Sickness now greatly impeded the triumphant march of the slender force, and though two victories had been won in one day, the prospect was a gloomy one, especially as fresh mutinies at Dinapore and elsewhere were adding to the strength and confidence of the rebels. Sickness and battle thinned the ranks so fast, that the whole ambulance available for those on the doctors' lists was already required. Havelock was, however, promised reinforcements—the 5th, from the Mauritius, and the 90th Perthshire Light Infantry, whose original destination had been China; but the pressure of affairs delayed the advance of these corps; and now a retrograde movement became imperative to deposit all convalescents safely in Cawnpore hospital. The order, equally repugnant to Havelock and his troops, was issued, and the column retired to Mungulwar, where they were within an easy distance of Cawnpore, and could encamp on a ridge which formed a strong position. There they were joined by 257 men, with five guns of Captain Olphert's battery, sent by General Neill; and even with this addition the force was no stronger than when it first crossed the Ganges; but it was now the month of August, and Havelock felt that another advance to Lucknow was imperative, or the massacres of Cawnpore and Delhi might be repeated there.

Quitting Mungulwar, the morning of the 5th saw him again before Busseret Gunge and before the

HAVELOCK'S MARCH FROM ALLAHABAD TO CAWNPORE

July & Aug^r 1857

Sites of Battles



PLAN OF HAVELOCK'S MARCH.

enemy, with only 1,400 men, but nearly all Europeans. His plan of attack was carried out more successfully than before. He formed his little force of volunteer cavalry in front, in such a manner as to make their numbers seem more than double what they really were, while under a furious cannonade the 64th and 84th pushed straight forward, and the 78th, Madras Fusiliers, the Sikhs, and

Contingent had just mutinied in what was now the usual fashion, and he was informed that the Dinapore mutineers were marching into Oude from the east, and those of the contingent—in itself an army—well disciplined and perfect, had reached Calpee on the Jumna, only forty-five miles distant from Cawnpore. If he fell back, what would be the fate of the helpless garrison he was longing to



PORTRAIT OF SIR HENRY HAVELOCK.

Madras Battery, made a flank movement to the right, by which it had been discovered that access was easier than by the causeway on the left. As before, the enemy rushed out of the gate in that quarter, and made for the causeway, but Maude's Battery swept it by a dreadful storm of grape and shells, amid which they had literally to "run the gauntlet;" and so complete were their rout and panic, that they never halted till they reached Nawabgunge, five miles distant; but again Havelock was compelled to pause, for to reach Lucknow seemed more than ever impossible. The Gwalior

succour? If he advanced, what might be his own? Hence, a prey to many corroding anxieties, he once more gave the bitter order to retreat on Mungulwar, whence he telegraphed to Sir Patrick Grant, the Commander-in-chief, informing him of the precise condition of affairs.

On the morning of the 11th of August, his force numbered precisely 1,000 fighting men, so heavily had sickness, sunstroke, and the late combat reduced its strength. Neill had only 250 men at Cawnpore fit for duty, and death had reduced the invalids to about the same number. About

Mungulwar and Lucknow the enemy were 30,000 strong, and three strongly-fortified positions lay between. At Bithoor a great force was collecting, and there the Nana had been joined by all the zemindars and villagers.

By means of rafts and boats, and taking advantage of three islands, a complete communication had been established between the Mungulwar and Cawnpore sides of the river, and the value of this was soon put to the proof, when Havelock was suddenly informed by General Neill that 4,000 men, with five guns, threatened his post. "I cannot stand this," he wrote; "they will enter the town, and our communications are gone; if I am not supported I can only hold out here; I can do nothing beyond our entrenchments. All the country between this and Allahabad will be up, and our powder and ammunition on the way, if the steamer, as I feel assured, does not start, will fall into the hands of the enemy, and we shall be in a bad way."

He was on the point of crossing to succour Neill when he learned that another 4,000 men, with some guns, had arrived at Busseret Gunge, and to do so then would have a fatal effect in Oude, so he resolved to try his strength with them ere leaving it. After sending over all his sick, wounded, and heavy baggage, on marching to Boorkiya, a mile and a half from Busseret Gunge (and on the way, seeing the peasantry flocking in arms to the enemy's post in such numbers as to double their strength), he found the mutineers strongly entrenched, with their right resting on the village and the main road, and their left on a ridge 400 yards distant, both flanks being defended by artillery. Along their front lay what seemed a dry grassy level, but which proved in reality to be a treacherous morass, when the right wing of his advancing force reached the margin of it. The pause was a very brief one. The 78th Highlanders, now, like the others, reduced to a mere skeleton corps, finding themselves cut up by the fire of two nine-pounders, suddenly uttered a yell of rage, and rushing on with charged bayonets, captured both pieces, and wheeling them round, opened fire with them on the enemy, who turned and fled.

"Well done, my brave Highlanders!" cried Havelock, as he galloped up to them; "you have this day saved yourselves and your comrades!" After this feat, the column returned to Mungulwar, without further molestation, and crossed the Ganges to Cawnpore, on the night of the 13th of August. But there was no repose for Havelock and his men. Only some ten miles distant were 4,000 rebels in position, under the Nana, at Bithoor, but Havelock

and Neill concocted a plan for their dispersion, and on the 16th they marched for the purpose, at the head of 1,300 men, under a cloudless and vertical sun, the fierce glare of which was almost unbearable, and they found the enemy in one of the strongest situations they had yet occupied.

In front spread a plain dotted with villages and dense plantations of the sugar-cane and castor-oil plant, through which wound a stream on its way to the Ganges, and at that time too deep to be forded. Hence, the only access to the town, where stood the magnificent palace of the Nana, was by a narrow stone bridge, defended by a breastwork on its flank, and commanded by high ground and some massive edifices. In their ignorance, or, perhaps, from over-confidence, the enemy failed to make the most of this position, and by scattering themselves among the villages and plantations, left themselves no escape in case of defeat, save by the narrow bridge, which was in their rear, instead of being in front.

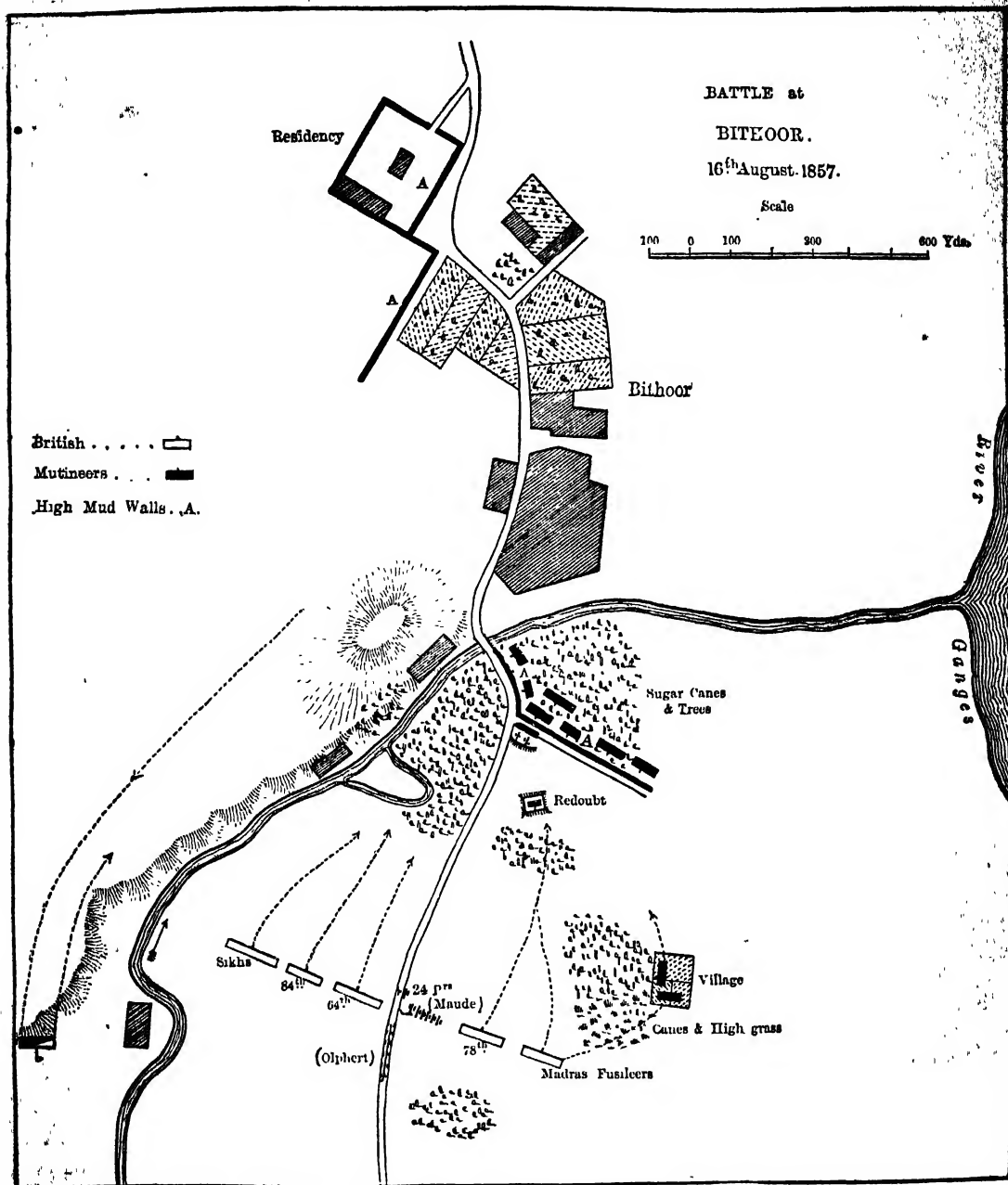
Advancing in echelon from the right, the 78th, the Madras Fusiliers, and Madras Battery, formed the right wing, the 64th, 84th, the Sikhs, and Olphert's Battery, formed the left. When the superiority of our artillery is considered, an easy victory might have been expected; but entrenched among the thickets and villages, the enemy stood well to their guns, till they were carried at the point of the bayonet; and when flight again became general, the want of cavalry was, as usual, felt, and Havelock asserted, that had he possessed some, not a rebel would have escaped. Moreover, we might have captured the infamous Nana, who fled with all his females across the Ganges into Oude, while our troops pillaged his palace, and gave it to the flames.

Neill was now compelled to urge that his handful of men, who had been marching and fighting for six weeks without intermission, should have some rest, or they must sink from sheer exhaustion. Havelock yielded to his opinion, but impatiently waited reinforcements. Aid from Allahabad was hopeless, for there, as at Benares, the British were in hourly alarm of attack or extended insurrection; so daily the situation of Havelock became one of greater peril; and after being full of hope to reach Lucknow, he was compelled to telegraph to the incompetent Government at Calcutta that he must abandon Cawnpore, as he had now only 700 men fit for duty, while 37,000 mutineers menaced him on every side. He had only eight ill-horsed guns, while the enemy had thirty, with all the necessary material. He declared his willingness to "fight anything and against all odds," but reminded the Calcutta

authorities that "the loss of a single battle would be the ruin of everything in that part of India."

On the 23rd of August he heard from Lucknow

the Ganges, a little above Patna, containing about 5,000 thatched huts, and only eight brick houses, irrespective of the European residences and public



PLAN OF THE BATTLE OF BITHOOR.

that the garrison was in sore extremity; that there were 100 sick and wounded; and 350 women and children to protect from cruelty and massacre.

The progress of those reinforcements he had at one time looked for with confidence, was arrested by a mutiny at Dinapore, a zilla, or collectorate, on

buildings. It had long been known that the native brigade there, consisting of the 7th, 8th, and 40th Regiments, had only been kept in check by the presence of H.M. 10th, a wing of H.M. 37th, and a six-gun field-battery. General Lloyd, who commanded there, was an aged officer, of the old

Indian school, who believing in the faith of his beloved sepoy, turned a deaf ear to every suggestion for disarming them. Even when it was no longer possible to doubt their disaffection, he adopted temporising measures, and finally permitted them to march off with their arms, ammunition, and accoutrements; and before the Queen's troops could get under arms, the mutineers were in full flight, while the general was at lunch on board a steamer in the Ganges.

They crossed the Soane at a point about sixteen miles from Dinapore, and next morning marched into Arrah, a populous town of Behar, where they made a gaol delivery, and were joined by a rajah named Baboo Koer Sing, at the head of 3,000 armed men. Mr. Wake, the magistrate, had, with fortunate prescience, fortified a two-storeyed brick house, by building up the tall pointed windows of the upper and lower floors, and loopholing the latter, and there the resident Europeans—only sixteen civilians in all, one of whom was Mr. Boyle, a railway engineer—with fifty of Rattray's Sikh Police, took shelter, and defended themselves with desperation. Meanwhile, two days elapsed before General Lloyd could be induced to send a force in pursuit. It consisted of 230 men of the 37th, 150 of the 10th, fifty Sikhs, and twelve volunteers, officers and civilians; and the whole, under Captain Charles Dunbar, of the 10th, an officer who had seen much service in the East, left Dinapore by steamer, to rescue Mr. Wake's little garrison. At ten p.m. he made a brief halt near Arrah, and then pushed on, unluckily without reconnaissance, and severely was this omission punished.

In passing a thick grove of trees, through which the light of the waning moon was shining, there came upon them three successive volleys of musketry. Dunbar fell mortally wounded, while his soldiers strove to return the fire upon an unseen foe, but were compelled to make their way back to the steamer, leaving half their number killed and wounded behind them. The fate of Wake's little band at Arrah seemed to be sealed now. Still, their hearts never failed them; and being excellent rifle-shots, they struck terror into the besieging ranks by the accuracy with which they aimed. On the 28th, two pieces of cannon were brought to bear upon the house, and the rebels were proceeding to undermine it, when the gallant Vincent Eyre came to relieve the little garrison, which must inevitably have been overpowered. He was on the march with his field-battery to Allahabad, and entered Dinapore on the very day of the mutiny. As Buxar and Ghazipore were reported to be in danger, he steamed to both, but finding no cause

for alarm, resolved to relieve Arrah with all the Queen's troops he could pick up. Luckily, 160 of the 5th Northumberland Fusiliers had just arrived, and formed the nucleus of a field force, with which, and three guns, he started on the morning of the 2nd of August, and on advancing a little way beyond Gujragunge, found the rebels in force posted in a wood, and moving in two columns round his flanks.

As their intention was evidently to surround him, he opened fire with his guns at once. Screened behind broken ground, the enemy replied by musketry, notwithstanding which the skilful Eyre forced a clear passage for his guns and baggage beyond the woods, after which his advance became easy, as the road was formed by a causeway, with inundated rice-fields on either side, and these kept the enemy at such a distance that their musketry fire was quite innocuous. The major then made a flank movement towards the line of railway, along which was a direct road to Arrah. This change of direction he concealed for some time by a fire of artillery; but the moment it was discovered, the enemy hastened to arrest his progress; the horde of Baboo Koer Sing pressed upon his rear, while the disciplined Dinapore brigade moved parallel with him on his flank, and eventually took post in a wood that abutted on the railway; but, after a sharp combat, they were driven off, and early on the morning of the 3rd, the gallant fellows at Arrah were relieved, after a defence which Eyre records as "one of the most remarkable feats in Indian history." He then followed up his success by capturing the fort of Jugdespore, the stronghold of Koer Sing, who, undeterred by all this, assumed the title of King of Shahabad, and though in his 80th year, gave proof of considerable military talents.

As soon as the death of General Anson became known in London, Sir Colin Campbell was appointed to succeed him. When asked by the Premier when he would be able to start for India, he promptly, yet simply, replied, "To-morrow," and in twenty-four hours after he was on the sea. No appointment could have been more judicious. His long career of distinguished service since the field of Corunna—particularly during the later battles in the Crimea, when at the head of the Highland Brigade—pointed him out as the man in whom, amid an emergency so terrible as the sepoy revolt, Britain might repose confidence; and having spent many years of his active life in India, he knew the country well. By taking the overland route he outstripped nearly all the reinforcements of which "the Army of Deliverance" was to be composed: "but there was no reason to fear that the means placed at his disposal would prove inadequate, since the national

spirit, completely roused, was no longer to be satisfied with desultory efforts, and troops to the number of 30,000 had already left, or were preparing to leave, the British shores for India."

On the 13th of August, Sir Colin Campbell arrived in Calcutta, an event which had been preceded by that of another officer of the same stamp, Major-General Sir James Outram, who, after the conclusion of the Persian war, was without any fixed appointment, till he received the office of Chief Commissioner in Oude, with the local command of the Dinapore and Cawnpore divisions, now both vacant, one by the incompetency of General Lloyd, and the other by the murder of Sir Hugh Wheeler. He was thus placed over both Havelock and Neill, and lost no time in organising a movable column for the relief of Lucknow. On the first of September he arrived at Allahabad with the 5th Fusiliers, the Perthshire Light Infantry, and a company of artillery—in all only 1,500 men, but Captain Peel had formed a naval brigade of 500 seamen from his own frigate, the *Shannon*, and vessels in Calcutta, so, for the first time, the blue-jackets were sent into the interior of India.

The appointment given to Outram had an effect which was overlooked at the time. "It placed a superior officer in the district in which Havelock had achieved his glorious victories, and thus by reducing him to a subordinate position, really superseded him. The same thing took place in respect of General Neill when Havelock himself was appointed; and if regret was then felt, it is impossible not to feel it still more when, returning with Havelock from his victory at Bithoor, we see him take up the *Calcutta Gazette*, and receive from it his first intelligence of the fact that the command

which had already given, and still promised to give him so many laurels, had passed into other hands. But with his characteristic magnanimity, Sir James—the Bayard of India—determined to leave to Havelock the honour of relieving Lucknow, and intimated his intention of accompanying him in the civil capacity alone, as Commissioner of Oude, and, with genuine chivalry, tendering his military services as a simple volunteer, and as such, he actually assumed the command of the Volunteer Horse, announcing that on the relief of Lucknow he would then resume his position at the head of the field force.*

No time was now lost in resuming the advance upon Lucknow. On the 19th the relieving army crossed the Ganges by a bridge of boats, and the rebels fell back on Mungulwar, where, on the 21st, they were attacked by Havelock at the head of 3,179 men with seventeen guns, and the slender Volunteer Horse. He completely routed them, and captured four guns. The soldier whose personal valour on this day was most conspicuous was Sir James Outram, who charged the battery sword in hand, at the head of the mounted volunteers, and captured the regimental colour of the 1st Bengal Native Infantry. As Havelock advanced the rebels rapidly retreated, abandoning four more guns, and throwing others into wells.

On the 22nd Sir James Outram reported to the Government the joyful intelligence, that firing at Lucknow was distinctly heard, and that a royal salute had been fired to announce the approach of the army of deliverance. And here it will be proper to return to the beleaguered force in that place, and show the condition to which a siege of more than two months of danger, toil, and anxiety had reduced it.

CHAPTER XLIX.

SIATE OF LUCKNOW.—RELIEVED BY HAVELOCK AND OUTRAM.

THE Mohurrum was near at hand, so that at Lucknow, as elsewhere, there was every fear that the stimulus of fanaticism would probably add to the courage and rancour of the enemy. From the Residency the incessant tom-tomming of their processions, and the shrill notes of their buffalo-horn bands, were distinctly heard in the adjacent city. The Mohammedan festival is held on the

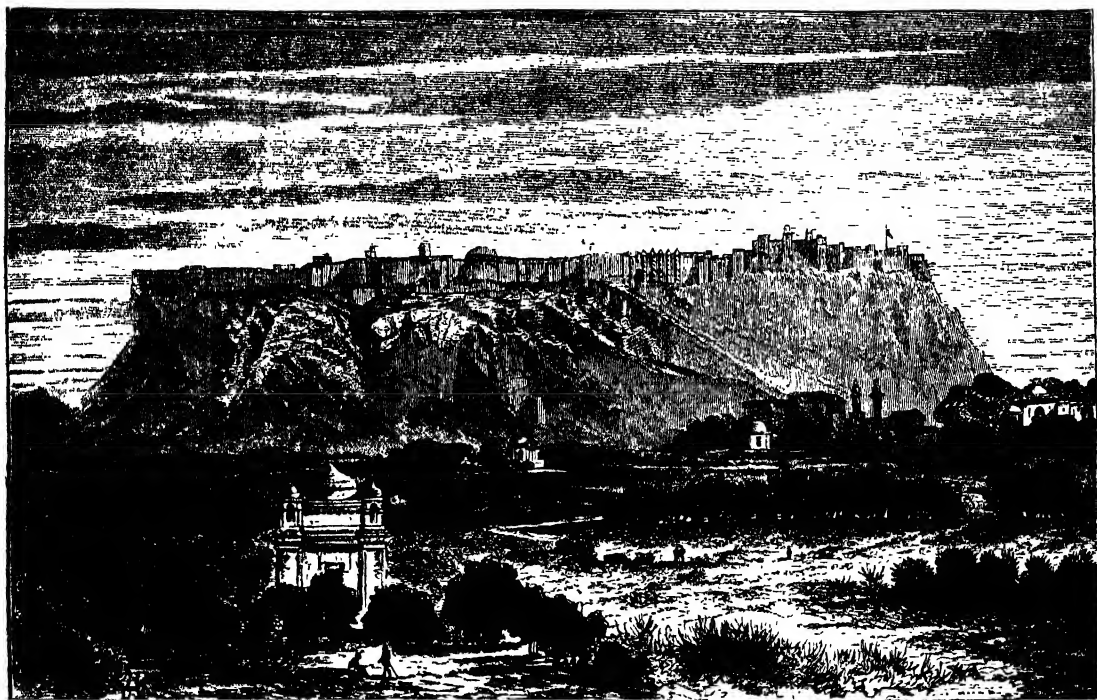
anniversary of the deaths of Hossein and Hassan, whom the Shiah's view as martyrs to their faith, and reckon in the number of their twelve holy imams. Nine days after the first of the forty days of the Mohurrum is the *Kull ka Ruth*, or Night of Butchery, when the Shiah's sacrifice a goat to heaven; and in Lucknow it was never

* Division Order, Cawnpore, 15th Sept., 1857, &c.

doubted but that a holocaust of Feringhees would be a more acceptable offering; but some days before this, on the 23rd of August, Havelock received a letter from Colonel Inglis, of the 32nd, the brigadier commanding, in which he wrote thus, describing the situation of affairs:—

"If you hope to save this force, no time must be lost in pushing forward. We are daily being attacked by the enemy, who are within a few yards of our defences. Their mines have already weakened our post, and I have every reason to believe they are carrying on others. Their eighteen-

and many unfortunate creatures had to lie on cloaks or coats for want of bed and bedding. Though the windows were barricaded, shot and shell frequently forced their way in, and ended the miseries of many. Most arduous were the duties, and heroic the endurance of the slender medical staff; for the hospital was crammed as much with the sick as the wounded, owing to the pestilential atmosphere, the result of crowding in the Residency, the graves, and heaps of putrid matter accumulated everywhere; while among other annoyances were the flies, that came in clouds, blackening every-



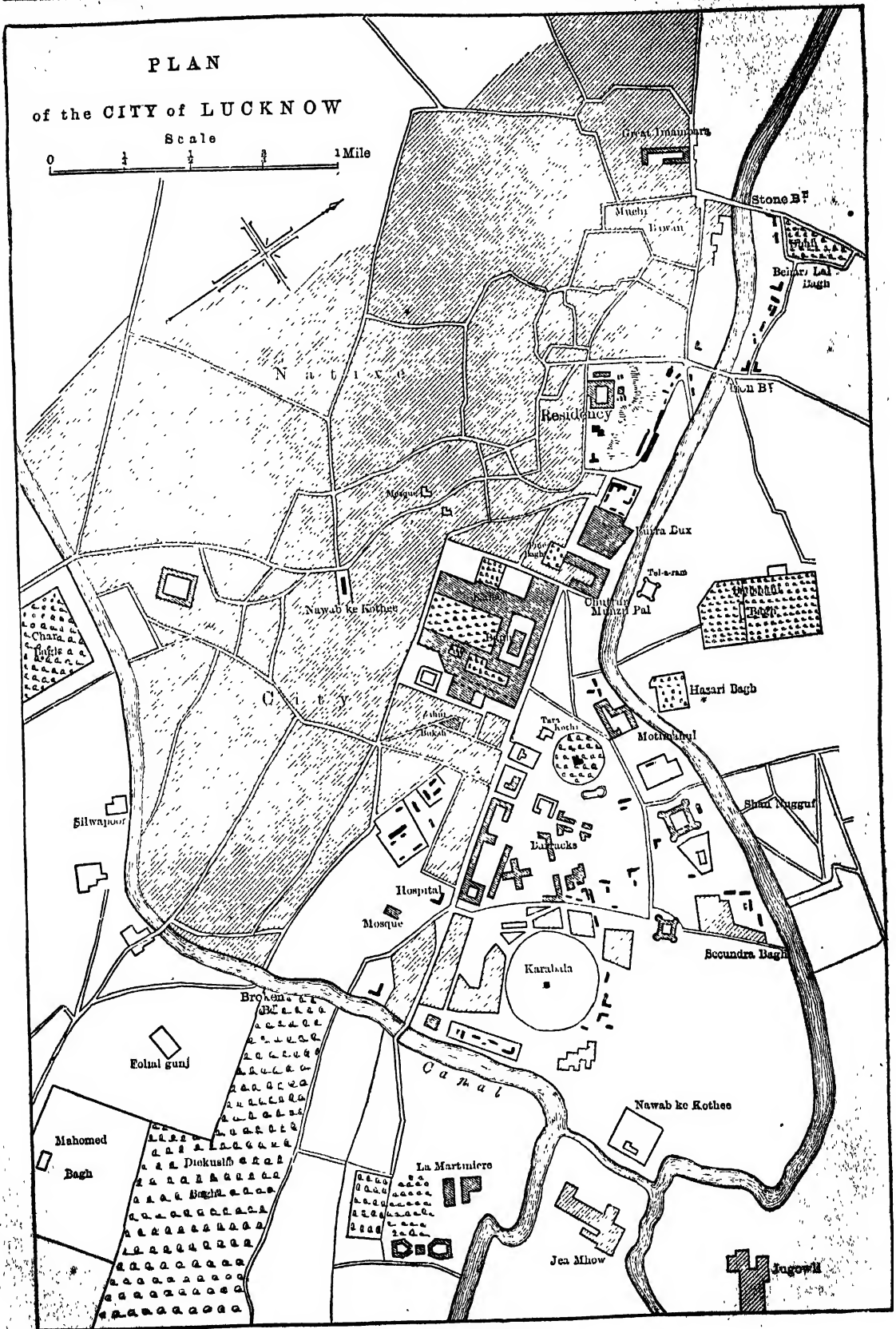
VIEW OF GWALIOR.

pounders are within 150 yards of some of our batteries, and from their position, and our inability to form working parties, we cannot reply to them, and consequently the damage done hourly is very great. My strength now in Europeans is 350, and about 300 natives, and the men are dreadfully harassed, and owing to part of the Residency having been brought down by round shot, many are without shelter. Our native force having been assured, on Colonel Tytler's authority, of your near approach some twenty-four days ago, are naturally losing confidence; and if they leave us, I do not see how the defences are to be manned."

To detail the perils, dangers, and events of such a defence as that of Lucknow would require a history for itself. The hospital was always full,

thing, and, as one correspondent has it, "obstinately disputing every mouthful of food." These flies were a source of great disgust and horror; they were large, cold, and clammy, and came from the corpses that were festering everywhere in the vicinity.

On the 28th of July the enemy adopted some new missiles, and threw in "a number of stink-pots, which were a very curious composition of large pieces of our exploded shells, sewn up in canvas, and surrounded by flax and resin, with dry powder in the centre. These had been thrown in daily from a howitzer; they made a fearful hissing noise, a great stench, and finally exploded. They were not very dangerous, unless they exploded close to a person."



By the successful explosion of a mine nearly eighty of the rebels were slain. Immediately afterwards two sallies were made, one led by Captain Fulton, who attacked some adjacent buildings, drove the enemy out, and then blew them up; the other, under the gallant Lieutenant Bernard M'Cabe, of the 32nd, an officer who had served in eight pitched battles, and was the first man who planted the British standard on the ramparts of Moultan. He was not less successful, and returned with the loss of only one man, a soldier of the 32nd.*

But in describing this siege we cannot do better than quote the words of Brigadier Inglis. After detailing that the enemy had kept up an incessant fire of guns and musketry till the 20th of July, when at ten a.m. on that day they exploded a great mine within his outer line of defences for the purpose of destroying the Redan Battery—a measure which failed:—"But, as soon as the smoke cleared away," he continues, "the enemy boldly advanced under cover of a tremendous fire of cannon and musketry, with the object of storming the Redan; but they were received with such a heavy fire, that after a short struggle they fell back with much loss. A strong column advanced at the same time to attack Innes' post, and came on within ten yards of the palisades, affording to Lieutenant Loughman, 13th Native Infantry, who commanded the position, and his brave garrison, composed of gentlemen of the uncovenanted service, a few of H.M. 32nd Foot, and of the 13th Native Infantry, an opportunity of distinguishing themselves, and the enemy were driven back with great slaughter. The insurgents made minor attacks at almost every outpost; but were invariably defeated, and at two p.m. they ceased their attempts to storm the place, although their musketry fire and cannonading continued to harass us unceasingly as usual. Matters proceeded in this manner until the 10th of August, when the enemy made another assault, having previously sprung a mine close to the brigade mess, which entirely destroyed our defences for the space of twenty feet, and blew in a great portion of the house occupied by Mr. Schillig's garrison. On the dust clearing away a breach appeared, through which a regiment might have advanced in perfect order, and a few of the enemy came on with the utmost determination: but were met with such a withering flank fire of musketry from the officers and men holding the top of the brigade mess, that they beat a speedy retreat, leaving the more adventurous of their number lying in the breach. While this operation

was going on, another large body advanced on the Cawnpore Battery, and succeeded in locating themselves in the ditch. They were, however, dislodged by hand-grenades. At Captain Anderson's post they also came boldly forward with scaling-ladders; but here, as elsewhere, they were met with the most indomitable resolution, and the leaders being slain, the rest fled, leaving the ladders, and retreated to their batteries and loopholed defences, from whence they kept up for the rest of the day an unusually heavy cannonade and musketry fire. On the 18th of August the enemy sprang another mine in front of the Sikh lines, with very fatal effect. Captain Orr (unattached), Lieutenants Micham and Soppit, who commanded the small body of drummers composing the garrison, were blown into the air; but providentially returned to earth with no further injury than a violent shaking. The garrison, however, were not so fortunate. No less than eleven men were buried under the ruins, from whence it was impossible to extricate them, owing to the tremendous fire kept up by the enemy from houses situated not ten yards in front of the breach. The explosion was followed by a general assault of a less determined nature than the two former efforts, and the enemy were consequently repulsed without much difficulty; but they succeeded, under cover of the breach, in establishing themselves in one of the houses of our position, from which they were driven in the evening by the bayonets of H.M. 32nd and 84th Foot. On the 5th of September the enemy made their last serious assault. Having exploded a large mine within a few feet of the bastion of the eighteen-pounder gun in Major Apthorp's post, they advanced with large and heavy scaling-ladders, which they planted against the wall and mounted, thereby gaining for an instant the embrasure of a gun. They were, however, speedily driven back with loss by hand-grenades and musketry. A few minutes subsequently they sprung another mine close to the brigade mess, but soon the corpses strewed in the garden in front of the post, bore testimony to the fatal accuracy of the rifle and musketry fire of the gallant members of that garrison, and the enemy fled ignominiously, leaving their leader—a fine-looking old native officer—among the slain. At other posts they made similar attacks, but with less resolution, and everywhere with the same want of success. Their loss upon this day must have been very heavy, as they came on with much determination, and at night were seen bearing large numbers of their killed and wounded over the bridges in the direction of the cantonments."*

* *Rees' Journal.*

* *Brigadier Inglis' Despatch.*

So passed day after day, and week after week, till the greatest difficulty was experienced in getting shelter for the women and children, so many houses had been destroyed by the round shot from the enemy's guns; and the effluvia from the churchyard became so dreadful that the chaplain, the Rev. J. P. Harris, though fearless in the discharge of his duty, was compelled to read the funeral service over the dead in the hospital porch, instead of accompanying them to the grave. Night after night the solemn service was read over the lifeless bodies of brave men and heroic women, and over little babes, and very piteous were some of the scenes that took place beside the death-beds of young children, while the din of cannon and musketry loaded the air round Lucknow.

On the 29th of August news came from Cawnpore in a letter brought by a boy. Relief was promised in three weeks, and the besieged learned the gallant efforts made by Havelock's little band before it had been compelled to fall back upon Cawnpore. On the 22nd of September, Rees has the following entry in his journal:—

"Spies came in last night. Generals Outram and Havelock are actually coming to our relief. This is true! How can I describe my joy even at the bare thought of our being relieved!"

The day of deliverance was indeed approaching. We have said that Havelock's army mustered 3,179 men. Of these 2,388 were British infantry, 109 British volunteer horse, 282 British artillery, 341 Sikh infantry, and 59 irregular cavalry. They were formed in two brigades; the 1st under General Neill, and the 2nd under Colonel Henry Hamilton, of the 78th Highlanders. On the 21st, after clearing the way at Mungulwar, they bivouacked under torrents of rain, and next morning an advance was made to Bunna, on the Sye, where it was never doubted the passage of that river would be hotly disputed by the rebels; but the latter, filled with genuine alarm by the events of the previous day, continued their retreat, without even attempting to secure it by the destruction of the bridge, and they were not again seen till the 23rd, on the morning of which they were found in force in the vicinity of the Alumbagh, a princely palace belonging to the kings of Oude, about four miles from Lucknow—"the garden of the Lady Alum, or the Beauty of the World." Within a park of great extent it was enclosed by a lofty quadrangular wall with turrets at the angles; and, in addition to the main building, had an extensive range of offices to accommodate the vast number of servants necessary for a great Indian household.

It was evident that at this point they were determined to risk a battle and cover the siege of Lucknow, as they were formed in a line that extended nearly two miles with their right and centre posted on some mounds, and their left resting on the Alumbagh. Their strength here was about 1,500 cavalry, and 10,000 infantry, with six guns. Havelock's plan of attack was to turn the flank of their right wing, but an intervening morass rendered it necessary to make a considerable détour; and while this movement was being executed the troops were exposed to a sharp cannonade, till the guns were silenced by Vincent Eyre's brigade of twenty-four-pounders. At the same time the enemy's cavalry on the right were hurled back in confusion, and the whole line of infantry fell into disorder and dismay.

The greatest resistance was met with at the Alumbagh, in the front wall of which two port-holes had been formed after the conflict commenced, and guns run through them, the fire of which had a serious effect; till the field-guns and the 5th Fusiliers with their bayonets cleared the whole edifice, and ended all opposition. Leaving five guns behind them, the enemy fled to Lucknow, and just as the troops were about to bivouac for the night, tidings came in of the capture of Delhi by Wilson's conquering column.

As there had been no communication from the besieged for some time, their fate was more than doubtful; but on this day all anxiety was ended, for the guns of the Residency were heard in the distance answering that salute which announced the approach of the relieving force. Still the hope of the others was chequered with fear. Brigadier Inglis knew that Havelock's force was small, under 4,000 men at most, while the rebels, said to be 50,000 strong, were prepared to dispute their passage into Lucknow.

During the halt in the Alumbagh, on the 24th, Havelock, Outram, and Neill consulted as to the direction in which the relief was to be made. Advanced pickets were already posted at the Charbagh (or Four Gardens) Bridge, which crossed a canal about a mile and a half beyond the country palace, and from thence the Cawnpore Road, passing to the left of the Topkulla, led directly into the city of Lucknow. Aware that this was the shortest and most direct way to the Residency, the enemy had thrown up barricades, and cut deep trenches across it, while loopholing all the houses on both sides of the street, and filling them with men. The idea of fighting a passage in by this route was therefore abandoned, and the generals resolved, after crossing the Charbagh Bridge, to proceed eastward

along a lane, and passing the corner of the Kaiserbagh, a royal garden on the left, thus reach the Residency.

Under a guard of 300 men, the strongest force that could be spared for the purpose, the sick, the wounded, and the baggage were left in the Alum-bagh, and at eight a.m. on the 25th, the force moved off for Lucknow, Sir James Outram leading with the first brigade, and Havelock following with the second; but the colours were barely uncased when the struggle began, and men were falling killed and wounded, ere they could reach the Charbagh Bridge, near which three guns, covered by the rebel marksmen, raked the way. At the bridge itself there was a desperate struggle, for there were planted six guns, one of them a twenty-four-pounder, while all the adjacent houses were loopholed and filled with musketry. So severe was the fire, that the men were ordered to lie down under such cover as they could find, and let it pass over them, while Captain Maude brought up two guns with which to encounter the enemy's six.

Our men stood in the open road, without shelter, while the enemy fired from a breast-high barricade; hence, to end this destructive work, the Madras Fusiliers were ordered to clear the way at the point of the bayonet, and bravely they did so. The moment the order was issued, Lieutenant Arnold, at the head of a section, rushed on without waiting for the rest, and received a shower of grape, which broke both his legs, and swept away ten men. Two staff-officers joined in this headlong rush. One, Colonel Fraser-Tytler, had his horse shot under him; while the other, Lieutenant Henry M. Havelock, spurred his horse to the bridge, where he kept brandishing his sword till the Fusiliers came up and cleared the way. Then Lucknow rose before them, with all its gilded minarets, its rich domes, its splendid mosques and many palaces, its regular and thickly-crowded streets of houses, but all relieved by beautiful gardens, stately parks, and foliaged trees. By this time, in the Residency, while their hearts beat high with hope and gladness, the besieged could see the smoke and hear the rattle of the musketry as the street-fighting went on, and the stream of fire approached their intrenchments; for, leaving the bridge in their rear, the relieving force proceeded in a northerly direction as far as the Secunder Bagh, where they made an abrupt wheel westward to the left, and passing Shah Nujeeb on the right, came within a short distance of the Motee Mahal, close by the Goomtee, and there the most desperate part of the work began.

At this point, nearly a mile eastward from the Residency, the whole strength of the enemy was

concentrated for a final struggle. From the Kaiserbagh a heavy battery opened upon our troops, which, in unison with the musketry, poured a fire so terrible as to render all further advance next to an impossibility. Vincent Eyre, with two of his heavy guns, succeeded in twice silencing the battery for a time; but the opposition might not have been overcome at all if relief had not arrived from an unexpected quarter.

A detachment of the 78th Highlanders, who had been left at the Charbagh Bridge for a time, had been following the main body of the regiment, which, with the Perthshire Light Infantry, was under Havelock, till they came to a point where all trace of the advance was lost, and they knew not which way to turn in the hostile city; but, being most providentially guided by the sound of firing, they wheeled off to the left by a street, which brought them straight to the gate of the Kaiserbagh. This gave them an opportunity of taking the obnoxious battery in reverse, and then their bayonets made wild work among its defenders, after which they effected a junction with the rest of the troops.

Though the Residency now was only 500 yards distant, as night was at hand, and a whole day had been spent in fighting, a halt was proposed, but the whole troops refused to rest till the great end of their purpose had been achieved; so the Highlanders and Sikhs were ordered to lead the way. They pushed on through a literal storm of missiles, supported by the Madras Fusiliers, under the gallant Neill, who was here shot through the head, ere he had added the reputation of a general to his high renown as a soldier. He was the son of Colonel Neill, an Ayrshire proprietor. He had served in the first Burmese War, and commanded the Turkish Contingent in the Crimea. As he fell from his horse, a wilder impulse seemed, if possible, to seize the troops, and dashing on through every obstacle, they found the reward of all their toils and perils, when the gates of the Residency were flung open to receive them.

"Thank God!" exclaims Rees, "we then gazed upon new faces of countrymen. We ran up to them, officers and men without distinction, and shook them by the hand, how cordially who can describe? The shrill tones of the Highlanders' bagpipes now met our ears. Not the most beautiful music ever was more welcome, more joy-bringing. And these brave men themselves, many of them bloody and exhausted, forgot the loss of their comrades, the pain of their wounds, the fatigue of overcoming the fearful obstacles they had combated for our sakes, in the pleasure of having accomplished our relief."

* "Siege of Lucknow." By Ruutz Rees.

Another eye-witness, an officer of the staff, writes thus of the scene, as the Highlanders and Sikhs, who were the first in, arrived:—"Once seen, all our doubts and fears regarding them were ended, and then the garrison's long pent-up feelings of anxiety burst forth in a succession of deafening cheers. From every pit, trench, and battery—from behind the sand-bags piled on shattered houses—from every post held by a few gallant spirits, rose cheer upon cheer: men from the hospital crawled forth to join in that glad shout of welcome to those who had so bravely come to our assistance. It was a moment never to be forgotten! The delight of the ever-gallant Highlanders, who had fought twelve battles to enjoy that moment of ecstasy, and in the last four days had lost a third of their number, knew no bounds. The general and Sir James Outram had entered Dr. Fayer's, and the ladies in the garrison and their children crowded with intense excitement into the porch to see their deliverers. The Highlanders rushed forward, the rough-bearded warriors, and shook the ladies by the hand with loud and repeated gratulations. They took the children up in their arms, and fondly caressing them, passed them from one to another in turn. Then, when the first burst of enthusiasm was over, they mournfully turned to speak among themselves of the heavy losses they had sustained, and to inquire the names of the numerous comrades who had fallen in the way."

Under the guidance of Lieutenant William R. Moorsom, of H.M. 52nd, who acted as deputy quartermaster-general, and also as guide to Sir James Outram (being intimately acquainted with Lucknow, of which he had once made a survey),* the remainder of the troops, who were at the Fureid Buksh, 500 yards distant, at the time the Highlanders and Sikhs entered the Residency, were conducted thither without further loss; but the rear-guard, consisting of the 90th Perthshire, under Colonel Robert Campbell (who served in the Kaffir War with the 73rd) were less fortunate. They had been left at the Motee Munzil, to cover the advance of the Highlanders, who were not known at that time to have chanced upon a route that was more direct than that taken by the main body.

The regiment had with it two heavy guns, the tumbrils of spare ammunition, and the lately wounded, and remained halted at its post during the night; but when day broke, Mr. Thornhill, of the Civil Service, volunteered to lead the way for the wounded. Unfortunately, his knowledge of Lucknow proved unequal to the task; and he guided the convoy of litters into a square, where the

enemy opened a sputtering fire from every point. The escort fell back, the dhoolie-bearers fled, and nearly forty of the wounded were instantly butchered by the mutineers.

In achieving the first relief of Lucknow—for eventually it only proved a temporary one—the killed, wounded, and missing of the force (the latter being wounded may be included among the former, as the foe murdered all who fell into their hands) amounted, on the evening of the 26th, to 535 officers, non-commissioned officers, rank and file.

The garrison of Lucknow consisted originally, at the beginning of the siege, of 927 Europeans and 765 natives. The casualties were 350 Europeans and 133 natives killed; of the latter, 230 deserted. Of the original garrison, when relieved on the 25th September, there remained alive, including sick and wounded, 577 Europeans and 402 natives.*

As an instance of the cannonading undergone, in the brigade mess alone, 435 round-shot were found; not less than 10,000 had struck the various buildings, and as for musket-shot, they lay about in myriads. More than 400 of the defenders of the garrison are interred in the churchyard.†

Had Havelock been a little later, nothing short of a miracle could have prevented all that had been done at Delhi and Cawnpore from being reenacted at Lucknow; unless the garrison did as they once talked of doing—namely, blow up the women, children, and wounded, to save them from worse at the hands of the insurgents, and then to have died themselves fighting among the ruins.‡

Sir James Outram had organised an intelligence department, under Captains Carnegie and Orr, who discovered some curious circumstances in the city. There the mutineers had crowned as King of Oude a child eight years of age (a natural son of the ex-king), named Burges Kadr. He was to be, like his ancestors, a tributary king under the now captive Mogul, and was to govern under a council of state. The army was fully officered; but they were chosen by their men, who elected and degraded, or murdered them at will. The insurgents had in their hands some prisoners, among whom were Sir Mountstuart Jackson and Miss Jackson; Captain Patrick Orr, lately a deputy commissioner in the Malloon district, with his wife and child; Lieutenant Burns, Sergeant-Major Norton, and a Miss Christian, whose parents had been murdered at Seetapore. They had all been manacled and horribly treated, and Sir Mountstuart Jackson was

* Gubbins' "Mutinies in Oude."

† Rees' "Personal Narrative."

‡ Ibid., p. 248.

* "Records 52nd Foot."

afterwards murdered, negotiations for the release of the party having failed.

The garrison and the relieving force now found themselves alike unable to quit Lucknow, which at first they had intended to do forthwith. There was found in the Residency, on a new examination being made, food sufficient to feed the whole united force for two months; this discovery on one hand, with a knowledge, on the other, that it was imprac-

vicinity, together with supplies brought under escort from Cawnpore, to be free from all fear of starvation.

The area occupied by the garrison of the Residency being insufficient for its accommodation now, an addition was made to it on the north, by which the mutineers were thrust back fully a thousand yards; the defences were rendered stronger, and points formerly weak were rendered perfectly



THE ATTACK ON THE ALUMBAGH.

ticable to procure the means of conveying sick, wounded, women, children, and stores, caused the generals to determine on an occupation of the Residency till further reinforcements came.

The little force left in the Alumbagh caused them much anxiety, and an attempt was made to open up a communication with it by the Cawnpore road on the 3rd October; but there were difficulties in the way of this, for the enemy had taken heart anew, resumed the offensive, and placed the whole force in a close state of blockade. Fortunately for itself, the isolated detachment was able, by the

length of the Alumbagh, to repel any attempt to Resurprise the post, and by frequent sallies in its

secure. On the southern and western sides new works were thrown up and damages repaired, and a series of mines were constructed on both sides, which Sir James Outram, in one of his despatches, asserted to have no parallel in modern warfare. There were sunk twenty-one shafts, aggregating 200 feet in depth, with a gallery of 3,291 feet. Against the palaces and outposts the enemy ran twenty mines; of these three were exploded with a loss of life, three did no injury, and seven were blown in. The enemy were driven out of seven others at the point of the bayonet, and their galleries captured by our miners, thus evincing the skill of the engineer department.

CHAPTER I.

MAUN SING'S PROPOSAL.—THE MARCH OF SIR COLIN CAMPBELL.—SECOND RELIEF OF LUCKNOW, AND DEATH OF HAVELOCK.

Among the most distinguished of the insurgent rajahs, or most powerful landed barons of the provinces, according to Rees, Maun Sing holds one of the first places. During the whole of the siege of Lucknow he would seem to have held aloof, and did not permit his troops to act against us. He had saved the lives of twenty-nine Europeans—gentlemen, ladies, and children, refugees from Fyzabad and Sultanpore, and conducted them to Allahabad in safety; but knowing his power, he resolved to use it for his own aggrandisement and the gratification of his ambition. From among his tenants and retainers he could muster 10,000 armed men, chiefly Rajpoots and high-caste Hindoos of the military class, and he had plenty of cannon, ammunition, and treasure.

To the local government at Allahabad he proposed to use his forces for the restoration of order in the district of Sultanpore, but conditionally, that he should be rewarded with a grant of land. On this proposal not being accepted, he declared for the insurgents, when the attack of the 25th September failed to disperse them. He then endeavoured to treat with Sir James Outram, offering to act as mediator with the rebels, provided his life and estates were secured; but to all this, Sir James replied, that any fidelity he felt must be displayed untrammelled by conditions, and no doubt it would

receive due consideration from the Government at Calcutta.

After this his demands rose higher; he claimed immunity for all, with pensions for every one, including the little king whom the mutineers had crowned in Lucknow; and he next proposed to escort our women, children, and wounded to Cawnpore, under a guard of his 10,000 men. This was treated as ridiculous, and, perhaps, at the time, the kind of escort given by Ackbar Khan to Elphinstone's people was remembered. Then came a threat to murder the prisoners; but that catastrophe was averted for a time, by an assurance that reprisals would be made on the state prisoners in Lucknow, as well as the royal captives at Calcutta.



RUINS OF THE RESIDENCY, LUCKNOW.

The mutineers had in their hands a number of native prisoners. These were servants and others who had deserted from the Residency, and been seized as spies. They were all hanged or shot; the kotwal, or mayor, was placed on a donkey, conveyed through the streets with his head and face shaved and blackened, and was then decapitated. All the native Christians and those who had been their servants, were murdered.

The siege still proceeded—mining and countermining, cannonading, rifle practice, assaults, and sorties; but the time was fast coming when the

The siege still proceeded—mining and countermining, cannonading, rifle practice, assaults, and sorties; but the time was fast coming when the

prisoners of the most valuable munitions were to be finally relieved. It was now possible to see clearly how well and skilfully the rebels had worked. In front of their batteries they had excavated trenches, some of which were twenty feet deep. Ladders had been placed to enable them to ascertain our mining operations, and intersecting trenches enabled them to creep to the very edges of our works. On the 15th of October, Sir James Outram informed the volunteers of the uncovenanted service that for their valour and efficiency in the defence they were to receive three months' gratuity, and the native soldiers were also handsomely rewarded. Every thing of utility brought high prices. An old flannel coat sold for fifty one rupees. Fifteen chiroots went for the same sum. Old saws sold well, and brandy fetched fifty four rupees a bottle. Howly the din of cannon and musketry went on, death and starvation still stared the garrison in the face, and the advent of Sir Colin Campbell was looked for with inexpressible anxiety.

That officer, on learning that the intended retreat of the original garrison at Lucknow had been abandoned as impracticable, now hastened to place himself at the head of a force more adequate than that which had marched under Havelock and Outram, and, fortunately means were not wanting. From Europe reinforcements had been pouring into India, and in addition to these there was, as we have said, the Naval Brigade, under Captain Peel, son of the late Sir Robert Peel, with a train of very heavy cannon, and to their honour be it said many of the mercantile mariners at Calcutta volunteered to serve under Captain Peel. The latter with 500 seamen, and Colonel Powell with a detachment of troops, were marching from Allahabad to Cawnpore, when they were attacked by the enemy, 4,000 strong. A conflict ensued that proved one of severity, and Colonel Powell was shot. Peel assumed the command, and fought with all the skill of a general, defeating and dispersing the enemy. He then halted to refresh his force, and next pushed on to Cawnpore, whither many detachments were making their way, as the conquest of Delhi had set free a great portion of the besieging army to join the other reinforcements, where Sir Colin Campbell came to concentrate the whole early in November.

Throughout the preceding month there had been much severe fighting at Lucknow. Brigadier Inglis commanded in the Residency, and General Havelock in the outer portion of the defence, and his was, without doubt, the post of the greatest danger, labour, and anxiety, but the genius which characterised his advance from Cawnpore was now

displayed in the defence of Lucknow. In order to facilitate the advance of Sir Colin Campbell, he was incessantly engaged in blowing up houses and clearing the streets, to lessen in every way the resistance the latter would receive. At the Alumbagh, four miles distant, Havelock had, as related, left his sick, wounded, and stores, under a guard of 300 men. The enemy got between that point and the city, cutting off the communication, and blockading both.

The detachment in the Alumbagh were enabled, however, to keep open a portion of the Cawnpore road, and the garrison there sent to them both supplies and reinforcements, so, after a time, the rebels left the Alumbagh almost entirely unmolested, and devoted all their energies to the capture of the Residency.

On the 9th of November, 1857, Sir Colin Campbell began his march for Lucknow, at the head of the following forces — H. M. 8th, or King's, 53rd, 75th, and 93rd Sutherland Highlanders, the 2nd and 4th Punjab Infantry, H. M. 9th Lancers; detachments of the 1st, 2nd, and 5th Punjab Cavalry, of Hodson's Horse, and of the Bengal and Punjab Sappers and Miners, the Naval Brigade, with eight guns, Bengal Horse Artillery, ten guns, Bengal Field Battery, six guns, and a heavy field battery, in all about 5,000 men, with thirty pieces of cannon. The cavalry were 700 strong. The officers by whom he was assisted were General Mansfield, chief of the staff, Brigadier Generals Sir James Hope Grant (of the 9th Lancers), G. Rathed, Russell, the Hon. Adrian Hope (93rd Highlanders), and Crawford. Captain (afterwards Sir William) Peel, had, of course, the Naval Brigade, and Lieutenant Jennox commanded the Engineers.

Sir Colin halted for three days at Buntara, to allow some detachments still on the way to come up, and began his advance again. On the 9th of November, when it was known in Lucknow that the army of relief would soon come, Mr. James Kavanagh, of the uncovenanted service, gallantly volunteered to go forth and make his way to Campbell's camp. It was an enterprise replete with perils, as every outlet was closely guarded by the enemy's posts and pickets, and the way he had to pass lay through the very heart of the hostile city. His object was to give Sir Colin information as to the actual state of the garrison, and make himself useful as a guide.

In going on this duty, the brave Irishman knew well that if he fell into the enemy's hands he would suffer a death of the most elaborate and barbarous that barbarians could invent. In his own narrative he says, "I was dressed as a budmash, or a soldier

toilet, a turban, a sword, and shield, native-made shoes, a pair of trousers, a yellow silk kumtiah over a tight-fitting white muslin shirt, a yellow-coloured hunting sheet thrown round my shoulders, a cream-coloured turban, and a white kumarbund. My face down to the shoulders, and my hands to the wrists, were coloured with lampblack, the cork used being dipped in oil to cause the colour to adhere." In this disguise he bade adieu to Outram and his staff, and, provided with a carefully loaded double-barrelled pistol, set forth under cloud of night, and forded the Goomtee, where the water was nearly five feet deep and 100 yards wide.

After perils worthy of any romance, he got close to Campbell's outposts, and heard the English challenge, "Who comes there?" but with a native accent. "My eyes filled with joyful tears, and I shook the Sikh officer in charge of the picket heartily by the hand," he continues. "The old soldier was as pleased as myself when he heard from whence I had come, and he was good enough to send two of his men to conduct me to the camp of the advanced guard. An officer of H.M. 9th Lancers met me on the way and took me to his tent, where I got dry stockings and trousers, and what I much needed, a glass of brandy, a liquor I had not had for two months."

A flag, displayed by Campbell on the summit of the Alumbagh, announced to all in the Residency, but chiefly for the information of his wife, that the gallant Kavanagh was safe, and had achieved his enterprise, for which he was rewarded by Government with £2,000, admission into the regular Civil Service, and obtained that which he prized more than all—the Victoria Cross.

On the 14th of November, Sir Colin Campbell began his advance on the city after receiving a reinforcement of 700 men of H.M. 23rd Welsh Fusiliers, 82nd Foot, and Royal Artillery, with two guns. He came in contact with the enemy at the Dilkhoosa, or "Heart's Delight," a hunting castle of the ancient Kings of Oude. There his advanced guard was met by a long line of musketry fire. The supports came up, and after a running fight of nearly two hours, the rebels were driven across the grounds by Colonel Hamilton of the 78th Highlanders. He drove them across the canal which intersects the park, and pursued them past the Marimere College, which he also compelled them to abandon. On the 15th, the general left his baggage of every description at the Dilkhoosa, in charge of the 8th Regiment, and early on the 16th began to advance direct on the Secunderbagh, which he describes as "a high-walled enclosure of 120 yards square, carefully loop-

holed all round. Opposite to it was a mosque, at a distance of 100 yards, which was also high-walled and filled with men. On the 16th, the British advanced up the lane to the left of the Secunderbagh, fire was opened on us. The infantry of the advanced guard was quickly thrown in, skirmishing in order to line a flank to the right. The guns were pushed rapidly onwards—viz., Captain Blunt's troop, Bengal Horse Artillery, and Captain Trotter's Royal Artillery heavy field battery. These troops passed at a gallop through a cross-fire from the village and Secunderbagh, and opened fire within easy musketry range in a most daring manner. As soon as they could be pitched up a steep bank, two eighteen pounder guns, under Captain Trotter, were also brought to bear on the building. While this was being effected, the leading brigade of infantry, under Brigadier the Hon Adrian Hope, coming rapidly into action, caused the loopholed village to be abandoned, the whole fire of the brigade being concentrated on the Secunderbagh. After a time, a large body of the enemy, who were holding ground to the left of our advance, were driven in by parties of the 53rd and 93rd, two of Captain Blunt's guns aiding the movement."

Pursuing the advantage won, the Highlander now seized the barracks, which they converted into a military post, while the 53rd Shropshire threw a long line of skirmishers into the open plain beyond and drove the enemy before them. The attack on the Secunderbagh had now been proceeding for an hour and a half, when the place was stormed by the remainder of the 93rd Highlanders, the 53rd, and 4th Punjab Infantry. Tearing out the iron bars of the windows, the stormers leaped headlong in on the now dismayed defenders. Resistance was vain, the slaughter was dreadful, and mercy was neither given nor asked for. "The lightning flash of the bayonet was followed by the thunder of the word *Cannonfire* into the heart and ear of the wretch meeting his well earned doom, and not less than 2,000 of the rebels met death in the Secunderbagh." Sir Colin says that more than that number of corpses were carried out, and that "there never was a bolder feat of arms."

The next capture was the Shah Nujeeb, which lay between the Secunderbagh and the river—mosque, loopholed from basement to the summit, dome and minaret. It was surrounded by a garden, the wall of which was also loopholed. The entrance to it had been covered by a regular work of masonry, and from every point an unceasing fire of musketry was flashing out after the commencement of the attack. For three hours this great mosque

was defended with the greatest resolution against a heavy cannonade. "It was then stormed in the boldest manner by the 93rd Highlanders, under Brigadier Hope, supported by a battalion of detachments under Major Barnston, who was severely wounded, Captain Peel leading up his heavy guns with extraordinary gallantry within a few yards of the building to batter the massive walls. The withering fire of the Highlanders," continues Sir Colin Campbell's despatch, "covered the Naval Brigade from great loss; but it was an action almost unexampled in war; Captain Peel behaved very much as if he had been laying the *Shannon* alongside an enemy's frigate."

Among the supports under Barnston was a company of the 90th Perthshire under Captain Garnet Wolseley, of future fame.

During the attack on the Secunderbagh and mosque, the garrison had not been idle. A battery had been erected in a garden within a few hundred yards of the Shah Nujieef. Fortunately, at first, it was hidden from the enemy on two sides by a lofty wall, which was to be blown away by a mine when the guns were in readiness to open; but this failed, as the powder with which the mine was charged had become damp by being three days in the ground. Thus, as the guns had to batter down the obstruction, some time was lost, but ere long they opened with terrible effect on two strong buildings that were full of sepoys, the steam engine house and the Hureen Khana, which adjoined the king's palace. Both were fully breached, and then stormed by parties from the garrison, and once more night closed over the dead and dying in Lucknow.

On the morning of the 17th, the conflict was renewed betimes, and so stubborn was the resistance, that it took our troops six consecutive hours to capture the mess-house, though cannonaded by Peel's sixty-eight-pounders. Surrounded by a deep ditch, with a loopholed wall on an eminence, it consisted of a large, two-storeyed, flat-roofed mansion, flanked by two square turrets. After being well battered and shelled, it was stormed by Major Barnston of the 90th, with his companies, and the Sikhs, under Lieutenant Powlett, who carried the place with loud shouts and a rush.

• The observatory, in rear of the mess-house, was next attacked and taken. On that day and the following, Sir Colin, pressing on from one side, and Havelock from the Residency, occupied all the houses between the extended intrenchments, the mess-house, and the Motee Mahal, and to accomplish this, much street-fighting and strategy were required, while the enemy's battery still thundered from the Kaiserbagh. To keep up a continued

line of communication with the Dilkhoosa, then held by the 8th, or King's, was the next object, and after some tedious and perilous operations, a long line of posts was successfully established. In effecting this, Brigadier Russell was severely wounded, and his successor, Colonel Biddulph, killed.

It was scarcely achieved, when the rallying enemy made a furious attack upon our pickets at the mess-house, and a portion of the Sutherland Highlanders, under Colonel John A. Ewart, a Crimean officer, in the barracks taken on the 16th. At the head of the Welsh Fusiliers and the 53rd, Sir Colin advanced in person to succour Ewart, and, supported by Remington's troop of horse artillery, routed the enemy.

The second relief of Lucknow was fully effected now; but the street-firing was still heavy, when, on the afternoon of the 17th, old Sir Colin was met by his countryman, Outram, and Sir Henry Havelock. A loud and long cheer greeted the generals and their staff as they shook hands; and proud indeed must the former have felt at the complete success which had crowned all his measures, and stamped him as one of the first generals of the age.

"Sir Colin," says Rees, "received the hearty thanks and congratulations of Sir James Outram, with evident satisfaction; and General Havelock, not less delighted and proud, harangued the troops, who had so gallantly carried out all the Commander-in-chief's brilliant manœuvres, in that concise and yet soul stirring language for which he was so well known by his soldiers. While yet speaking, his attention was drawn to the place where his only son had just fallen, wounded by a musket-ball from the enemy. Though his father's heart must have been then bleeding with anguish and curiosity to know the nature of the wound, the general, with wonderful self-command, continued his discourse without interruption, and then only, amidst the cheers of the men, who were unacquainted with the sad event which had just happened, left to visit his wounded son. Fortunately, it was only a slight wound, and he soon recovered from the effects of it."*

By the time the operations, which consisted of a series of isolated sieges, and bombardment of palaces, mosques, and other public buildings, were over, we had ten officers killed and thirty-three wounded, among whom were Sir Colin and Captain Peel. Of the rank and file, there were 122 killed and 345 wounded. Above 4,000 of the enemy were found slain; but many of the dead had been borne away, doubtless for the purpose of cremation.

Sir Colin resolved to abandon Lucknow as

* "The Siege of Lucknow."

untenable, and convey the war-worn garrison to Cawnpore; but this was far from an easy task in the face of an enemy whose numbers, notwithstanding all losses, were still reckoned at 50,000 men;* for after every defeat numbers still flocked to the standard of revolt. The orders given for the departure were, that the wounded should first be removed to the Dilkhoosa, and the women, children, and treasure afterwards. If an example to the others were wanted—which was not—Lady Inglis, wife of the gallant brigadier, refused the accommodation of a dhooly, urging that she was better able to walk than many others; and at four o'clock in the afternoon of the 19th the general exodus began.† The conveyance of the sick, wounded, women, and children, took place in carriages of every description, pressed into the service, and closely packed. "Many were seated in native carts," says Mr. Gubbin, "and not a few walked. They were conducted through the Bailey Guard Gate, the Phured Buksh and Chuttur Munzil Palaces, and emerging near an advanced battery, crossed the line of fire from the Kaiserbagh to Martin's house. Then they entered and passed through the court of the Motee Munzil, on the farther side of which they gained the high road to the Secunderbagh. Here, and near Martin's house, they were exposed to the fire of the enemy's guns on the farther side of the river. Screens, formed of the canvas walls of tents, or doors placed on each side of the way they traversed as far as the Motee Munzil, concealed the march of the fugitives from the enemy; and on one side of this a ditch had been dug, along which, dismounting from their carriages, they walked past all the exposed places. All, fortunately, reached the Secunderbagh in safety,"‡ together with the state prisoners (among whom were two of the Delhi princes, and other suspected persons). With this convoy went also the grain and ordnance stores.

The garrison had still to be withdrawn; and, to deceive the enemy, Peel's sixty-eight-pounders opened on the Kaiserbagh, and, breaching it in three places, led the rebels to expect an assault at the very time the whole of the garrison was silently defiling through the line of pickets. All guns not wanted were burst; the retreat was covered by Adrian Hope; and so completely were the enemy deceived, that they began to fire on the old positions some hours after our troops had left them. It ought to be mentioned that it was the hand of Lieutenant Moorsom, 52nd Foot (acting as quarter-

master-general), that drew out the details of the plan by which the people in Lucknow were thus withdrawn. An able young officer he was killed at Lucknow in the following year, as a monument to his memory in Rochester Cathedral records.*

At four o'clock on the morning of the 23rd the whole force reached the Dilkhoosa, save one man, Captain Waterman, who, owing to some mistake, remained at his post in the dark, after all the others had departed, but who eventually reached the common rendezvous in a state of utter exhaustion. When the sepoys found that the garrison had flown, with their women, children, wounded, and treasure, they were filled with transports of fury, and blew from the guns four wretched Britons, who had been prisoners in the city. One other event threw a gloom over the glory of Campbell's achievement—the death of the noble Havelock, who was fated to find his last home far away in the Alumbagh. On the 20th he had been seized with diarrhoea, and his constitution, so shattered by past exertions and anxieties was unable to contend with a disease so formidable. Thus he sank under it on the 24th. "I die happy and contented," were among his last words. "I have, for forty years, so ruled my life, that when death came I might face it without fear."

Immediately after he had breathed his last at the Dilkhoosa, the troops selected to remain as a movable column in Oude began their march for the Alumbagh, bearing with them the remains of that beloved general whose name will be for ever indelibly stamped on the annals of British India. Born near Sunderland, in 1795, he was in his sixty-second year. His diploma of K.C.B. reached him but a few days before his death. Havelock has ever been considered a hero of the true national type. "His simple character, his religious enthusiasm, and the rare fortune which crowned with merited glory a long life of undistinguished devotion to duty, all appealed to the deepest sympathies of the people; and, although no soldier could fall at a happier moment, there was a natural feeling of disappointment that he should have died before he knew how fully he was appreciated by his countrymen. Even foreigners of English descent recognised in Havelock the favourite characteristics of the race; and when his death was reported at New York, the vessels in the harbour lowered their flags in token of mourning for the gallant old foreign general."†

His son was created a baronet of Great Britain, and, together with the widowed Lady Havelock, received a pension of £1,000 a year.

* General Order, 23rd Nov., 1857.

† Lady Inglis's "Journal."

‡ "Mutinies in Oude."

* "Records 52nd Foot;" *Dumby Standard*, &c.

† *Times*, 1858.

CHAPTER LI

MUTINIES AT MHOW AND INDORE.—MURDER OF SIR NORMAN LESLIE.—BATTLE OF CAWNPORE, WON BY SIR COLIN CAMPBELL, GENERAL FRANKS, ETC.

IN order to avoid as much as possible interruptions to the consecutive details of the second relief of Lucknow, we can only refer now, and briefly, to the escaping, with the ladies, whom they placed on some ammunition-wagons, which happened to be in the grounds. The post-office and telegraph clerk



PORTRAIT OF CAPTAIN PEELE.

events that were occurring elsewhere in India at that calamitous time, without attending to their precise chronological order.

On the 1st of July in this fatal year, mutinies took place at Indore and Mhow. At the former city, in the province of Malwa, the capital of the Holkar States, pleasantly situated on the Seepra, Holkar's Contingent mutinied in the afternoon, and proceeded with their artillery to attack the Residency here, after a gallant, but futile attempt on the part of Colonel Travers, with a few horsemen, to capture the guns. All the European officers and residents who took shelter in the Residency succeeded in

being less fortunate, were murdered with great cruelty. To do him justice, it is admitted that Holkar personally did all in his power to restore order and discipline; and when urged to make common cause with his rebellious subjects, who reminded him of his ancestor, Jeswunt Rao Holkar, and asked him to march with them to Delhi, he replied nobly:—"The strength of my forefathers has departed, and I do not consider rapine and the murder of innocent beings as part of any religion."

Then, as a further proof of his faith, the young prince placed the greatest portion of his treasures in the hands of our officers at Mhow, a town ten



SCENE AT THE RELIEF OF LUCKNOW.

miles distant from Indore, and where a mutiny took place but a few hours after that at the latter city. To Colonel Platt, commanding, the unsettled spirit of the men had been duly reported; but unluckily he could not be persuaded that danger was imminent, and it was even with difficulty that Captain Hungerford of the artillery, and Lieutenant Martin, could prevail upon him to give orders for the occupation of the fort, into which all the ladies were at once sent, while the officers, as yet, ran the horrid peril of sleeping in their lines.

On the 6th of July the officers were sitting at dinner, when rifle-shots were fired in the cavalry lines, and an alarm was given of being attacked in the rear by Bheels. All hurried towards the muster-places of their companies, only to find themselves fired upon in the dark, and that the guards and sentries had quitted their posts. All ran a great risk, as the moon was shining brightly, and they were clad in their white uniforms. Colonel Platt was still infatuated, and called on Lieutenant Pigot to follow him to the lines. Thither they rode, and were never seen again. The other officers reached the fort, disarmed and turned out the native guard, mounted sentries themselves, and prepared for the worst. Several, however, were patrolling for miles on the Indore road; the escapes of some of them were wonderful, and one, Major Harris, was murdered by his own escort. The bungalows were pillaged, and the mess-house given to the flames. The ladies, without servants or attendants, were all huddled together in the fort. "They have to do everything for themselves," wrote an officer, "and employ all their time in sewing powder bags for the guns, well knowing the awful fate that awaits them if the place is taken. There has not been a sign of fear; they bring us tea or any little thing, and would even keep watch on the bastions if we would let them." In that wretched little fort this handful of brave men, with their helpless companions, defended themselves for an entire month, till they were relieved, early in August, by a column from Bombay.

Some peculiar circumstances attended the mutiny at Sangor. The brigade there consisted of the 31st and 42nd Bengal Native Infantry, with the 3rd Irregular Cavalry. Having delayed to the last moment any display of suspicion, Brigadier Sage found himself compelled to order the Christians of every rank and age into the fort, and take every precaution against its capture by surprise. A singular quarrel—doubtless a religious one—ensued between the two battalions of infantry, and in it the cavalry took part. The 42nd were put to rout, and, with the greater portion of the cavalry, were

driven out of the station; and it was fortunate for the Christians that matters took this remarkable turn, as the fort was not relieved till the middle of September, and during all that time its little garrison, consisting of sixty-three gunners and the same number of officers, clerks, and Indo-Britons, had to suffice for the defence of 190 women and children, and an important arsenal filled with the munition of war.

At Jhelum, in the Punjab, the next regiment to mutiny was the 14th Native Infantry. As the military authorities at Lahore resolved to disarm that corps, a wing of H.M. 24th (or Warwickshire), under Lieut.-Colonel Charles Ellice, was ordered up for that purpose; and it chanced that the 14th were on parade when the Europeans suddenly marched upon the ground. Seized with a panic, they rushed away to their lines, and fought desperately under cover of their huts. Captain Francis Spring and twenty-four of the 24th were killed; Colonel Ellice, three other officers, and fifty men were wounded. The 14th then fled; 100 who took shelter in the territories of Gholab Sing were seized and sent back; others were cut to pieces by the Punjab police; and very few survived to reach the plains of Hindostan.

At Rohnee, in the Santhal district, an infamous outrage was perpetrated on some officers of the 5th Irregular Cavalry. Lieutenant Sir Norman Leslie was seated in the verandah of his bungalow, conversing with Dr. Grant and Major Macdonald of the same corps, when three of their troopers attacked them from behind with drawn swords. Leslie was run through the back, and fell forward on his face, his assailant at the same time slashing him across the head. He survived about an hour, and expired while murmuring, "What will become of my poor wife and children?" He was Sir Norman Leslie, Bart., of Findrassie, in Ross-shire. Dr. Grant received a sabre-wound in the arm and another in the hip, while Macdonald was nearly scalped by three rapid sword-cuts. Snatching up a chair, the Highlander, though almost blinded with his own blood, defended himself with all the courage and strength of despair, till his assailants lost heart and fled. Two days after he discovered the three troopers, and put them in irons, held a drum-head court-martial, and by his own voice sentenced them to be hanged, without the ceremony of asking any one's leave. To him it was a day of awful suspense, as one of the culprits was a high-caste Brahmin of great influence in the corps, and Macdonald was determined to degrade him by getting the lowest caste men to execute him.

"The regiment was drawn out," wrote the major.

"Wounded cruelly as I was, I had to see everything done myself, even to the adjusting of the ropes, and had them looped to run easy. Two of the culprits were paralysed with fear and astonishment, never dreaming I would dare to hang them without an order from Government. The third said he would not be hanged, and called on the Prophet and his countrymen to rescue him. This was an awful moment! An instant's hesitation on my part, and probably I should have had a dozen balls through me. I seized a pistol, clapped it to the man's head, and said, with a look there was no mistake about, 'Another word, and your brains will be scattered on the ground!' He trembled, and held his tongue. The elephant came up; he was put on its back; the elephant moved away, and he was left dangling. I then had the others up and off in the same way; and after some time, when I had dismissed the men of the regiment to their lines, and still found my head on my shoulders, I could scarcely believe it."

The mode of blowing the captured rebels from the guns is thus described in a periodical of the time by an eye-witness (Colonel Hanley), as it was done at Peshawur after the 55th broke out into open mutiny:—

"All the troops, European and native, armed and disarmed, loyal and disaffected, were drawn up on parade, forming three sides of a square; and drawn up very carefully, you may be sure, so that any attempt on the part of the disaffected to rescue the doomed prisoners would have been easily checked. Forming the fourth side of the square were drawn up the guns (nine-pounders), ten in number, which were to be used for the execution. The prisoners, under a strong European guard, were then marched into the square, their crimes and sentences read aloud to them, and at the head of each regiment; they were then marched round the square, and up to the guns. The first ten were picked out; their eyes were bandaged, and they were bound to the guns, their backs leaning against the muzzles, and their arms fastened to the wheels. The port-fires were lighted, and at a signal from the artillery major the guns were fired. It was a horrid sight that then met the eye: a regular shower of human fragments—of heads, of arms, of legs—appeared in the air through the smoke; and when that cleared away, these fragments lying on the ground—fragments of Hindoos and fragments of Mussulmans, all mixed together—were all that remained of those ten mutineers. Three times more was this repeated; but so great is the disgust we all feel for the atrocities committed by the rebels, that we had no room in our hearts for any

feeling of pity; perfect callousness was depicted on every European's face; a look of grim satisfaction could even be seen in the countenance of the gunners serving the guns. But far different was the effect on the native portion of the spectators; their black faces grew ghastly pale as they gazed breathlessly at the awful spectacle. You must know that this is nearly the only form in which death has any terrors for a native. If he is hanged, or shot by musketry, he knows that his friends or relatives will be allowed to claim his body, and will give him the funeral rites required by his religion; if a Hindoo, that his body will be burned with all due ceremonies; and if a Mussulman, that his remains will be decently interred, as directed in the Koran. But if sentenced to death in this form, he knows that his body will be blown into a thousand pieces, and that it will be altogether impossible for his relatives, however devoted to him, to be sure of picking up all the fragments of his own particular body; and the thought that perhaps a limb of some one of a different religion to himself, might possibly be burned or buried with the remainder of his own body, is agony to him."

Lucknow was left in the hands of the rebels while Sir Colin Campbell continued his way towards Cawnpore, and Sir James Outram remained at the Alumbagh with 4,000 men, for the double purpose of keeping open our communication across the Ganges and holding the enemy in check should they attempt any hostile movement. On arriving at Buncce, with his column seriously encumbered by an immense train of wagons and carriages of every description, carrying stores, baggage, and fully 2,000 helpless women, children, sick and wounded, Sir Colin was startled by hearing the boom of heavy guns in the direction of the point he was marching to—Cawnpore. There could be no doubt as to the reason of these alarming though now familiar sounds. General Windham, who had been left there with 2,000 men, after being long menaced by the rebels, had now been attacked by them. Up to that time Sir Colin knew nothing of the event, for although General Windham had sent him several urgent messages, not one of them had been delivered.

The mutineers of the Gwalior Contingent had for some time established their head-quarters forty miles from Cawnpore, at the town of Calpee, where there is a strong fort commanding the Jumna, and where they thus had complete power over all the adjacent country. The ever-infamous Nana was also hovering in the neighbourhood at the head of a considerable force. A junction was formed, and the morning of the 26th November saw the united

revolters in full march for Cawnpore. General Windham, "the hero of the Redan," an officer who had served with distinction as assistant quartermaster-general in the Crimea, and was promoted for special bravery on the 8th of September, 1855, on becoming aware of their approach in strength, sent to Sir Colin for instructions; but the miscarriage of his letter left him no resource save to act on his own responsibility. Had he acted simply on the defensive, he might have done so with success; but his high military spirit led him to adopt a bolder course, and leaving a part of his slender force to guard the intrenchment, he marched out with the remainder, only 1,200 bayonets, of the 64th, 82nd, and 88th Regiments, with 100 troopers, and eight pieces of cannon, to meet the enemy. His object was to strike such a blow at the enemy's vanguard as might cause the whole to fall back. He found them strongly posted on their own side of the Pandoo Nuddee, from whence they opened a heavy fire of both siege and field guns; but such was the revengeful eagerness of our troops, and so high the courage of their officers, that they carried the position at a rush, all cheering vehemently as they went on. The village and ground to more than a mile and a half beyond it were cleared of the enemy, who fled, abandoning three pieces of cannon.* He believed that the main body was still so far distant that he would have time to withdraw before he could be overwhelmed by numbers, and hence the disaster that ensued.

On perceiving suddenly that their whole strength was close at hand, he resolved to fall back at once, for the protection of Cawnpore and the bridge over the Ganges; but this retrograde movement of a force so petty in the face of 20,000 men, with forty guns, was a matter of no small difficulty. The sowars charged, and were received by a little detachment of our 34th Foot in square, whose fire was so murderous that scarcely a man of them escaped untouched. During this affair, Captain Henry H. Day, of the Connaught Rangers, who had escaped at Inkerman and the Redan, was here struck by a ball, and fell into a well, where he perished miserably. Towards dusk, the British troops fell back, and encamped on the Jewee Plain, with a thick cover of trees and brushwood between them and the enemy.

The latter, at an early hour on the following morning, opened an unexpected cannonade from behind the copsewood, and its severity threw our camp into confusion, and many blunders ensued, for which it is impossible to say now who was to

blame. In a brief time the British were surrounded on every side, save that next the river. On the left and centre, a terrific fire from guns of every calibre drove in the outposts to within 100 yards of their own batteries, and then the assembly-rooms, with all their contents, including the mess-plate of four regiments, 11,000 rounds of rifle-cartridge, and an immense quantity of private property, fell into the hands of the insurgents, who confidently exulted in the hope of another Cawnpore massacre on the same ground. At one point—the Baptist Chapel—Captain Wright, with only thirty men of the 64th, kept them in check.

While thus employed, he saw a little column of 250 men of the 64th, under Colonel Wilson, K.H., marching to capture four guns, the fire of which was most severe; and with his party, Wright sallied forth to take the place of an advanced guard; and now the enemy turned all the fury of their fire upon the 64th. With a ringing cheer the latter rushed on the cannon, spiked them, and bayoneted the gunners; but the enemy were more than ten to one. Colonel Wilson and Major Stirling were shot dead; Captains McCrea and Murphy were cut down at the guns, while Captain McKinnon and Lieutenant Gordon were wounded, taken, and murdered in cold blood. Of the rank and file of the gallant 64th the slaughter was proportionately great. So passed the day; and just as the evening of the 28th was closing, the Commander-in-chief, old Sir Colin Campbell, "calm, self-possessed, and stern," was seen with his staff crossing the bridge of boats, and he soon made himself master of the situation.

To secure the bridge from the enemy became necessary, to do so required caution, and Sir Colin thus describes the mode of procedure:—"All the heavy guns attached to General Grant's division, under Captain Peel, R.N., and Captain Travers, R.A., were placed in position on the left bank of the Ganges, and directed to open fire, and keep down the fire of the enemy on the bridge. This was done very effectually, while Brigadier Hope's brigade, with some field-artillery and cavalry, was ordered to cross and take position near the old dragoon lines. A cross-fire was, at the same time, kept up from the intrenchment to cover the march of the troops. When darkness began to draw on, the artillery-parks, the wounded, and the families, were ordered to file over the bridge, and it was not till six p.m. of the 30th that the last cart had cleared the bridge."*

As soon as the passage, which occupied three hours, was accomplished, the troops felt the keenest desire to punish the foe for their temporary

* Despatches.

* Ibid.

success. By none was this felt more than by Sir Colin himself; but he was compelled to attend to that which he deemed his first duty—to have all the helpless ones in his hands transmitted carefully to Allahabad; and this was not entirely achieved until the 5th of December, after which they were conveyed gratuitously by river-steamers to Calcutta, while the work of death went on in the terrible scenes they had left.

On the 6th, Sir Colin drew the sword again. The enemy's left occupied the old cantonments; their centre was in Cawnpore, lining the houses and bazaars that overhung the canal, separating it from Brigadier Greathed's position; and the principal streets were afterwards found to be barricaded. Their right stretched away beyond the Grand Trunk Road and the canal, two miles in rear of which the Gwalior Contingent had pitched their camp to cover the Calpee road. The main feature of the whole position was the canal, which was held by the right and centre in the latter direction (Calpee), by two bridges. "It appeared to me," reported Sir Colin, "if his right were vigorously attacked, that it would be driven from its position without assistance coming from other parts of the line, the wall of the town which gave cover to our attacking columns on our right being an effectual obstacle to the movement of any portion of his troops from his left to right."

To Sir Colin, it seemed feasible to cut up in detail the enemy, on this day mustering 25,000 men, with thirty-six guns. He ordered General Windham, at nine a.m., to open a heavy bombardment from the intrenchment, so as to induce the enemy to believe that the attack was coming from that point. The tents were struck betimes; and to avoid all risk of accident, the baggage was sent to the river-side, under a guard. On being reinforced by the shattered 64th, Brigadier Greathed was ordered to retain the ground he had held for some days past; and by eleven in the forenoon the rest of the forces were drawn up in contiguous battalions, in rear of the old dragoon lines, which concealed them from the enemy.

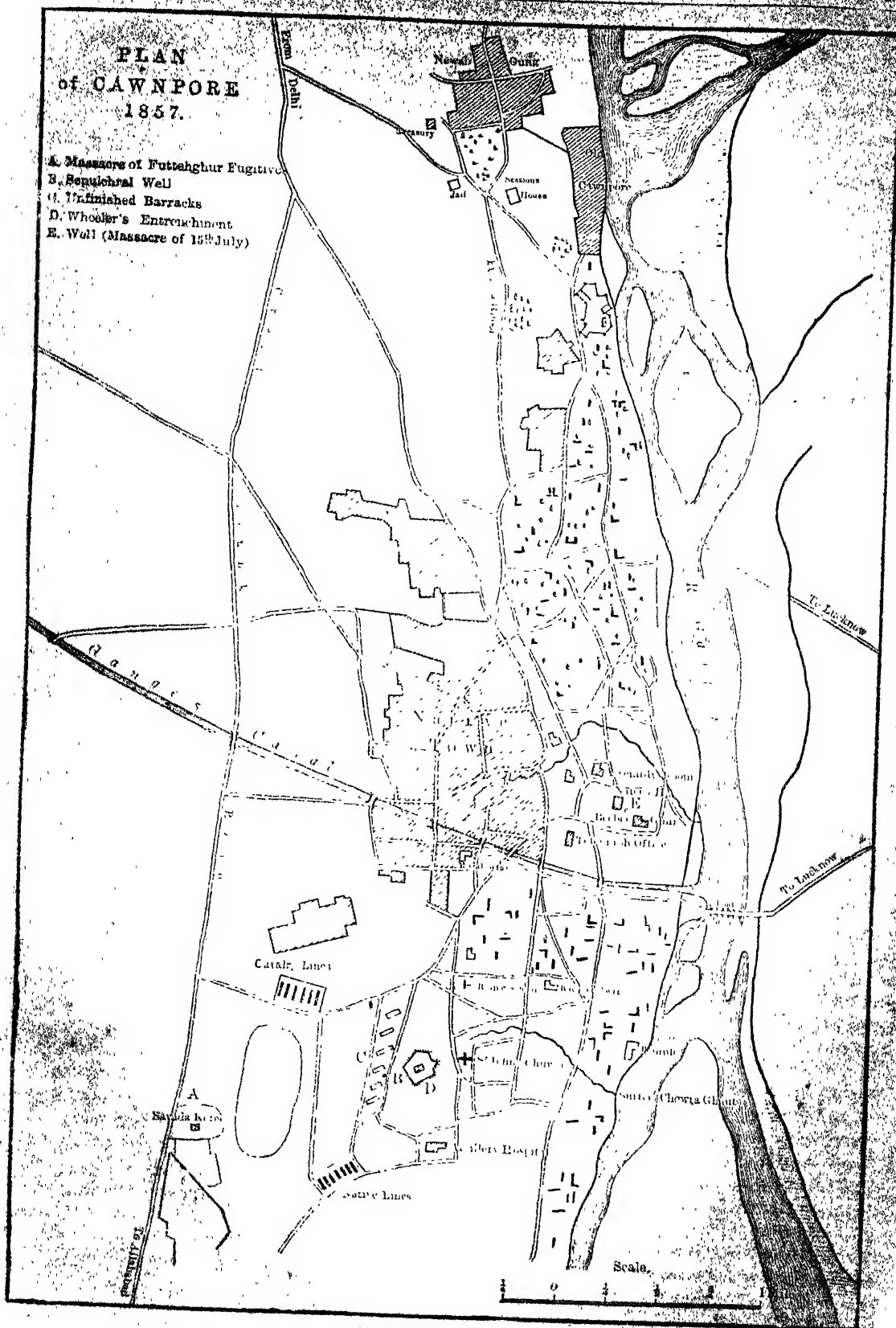
A slackening of Windham's cannonade announced that the time for attack had now come. Grant's cavalry and the horse artillery made a sweeping *abimur* on the left, and crossed the canal by a bridge, a mile and a half farther up, to menace the enemy's rear, while the infantry columns deployed into lines fronting the canal. Brigadier Adrian Hope's brigade formed the first; Brigadier Inglis's brigade the second; at the same time, Brigadier Walpole, aided by Captain Smith's battery of the Royal Artillery, was ordered to cross the bridge on Greathed's left,

and driving the enemy from some brick-kilns, to keep the city wall for his guide."

The whole lines advanced with splendid unanimity, Walpole making equal progress on the right. "The canal bridge was quickly crossed," wrote Campbell, "Captain Peel leading over it with a heavy gun, accompanied by a soldier of the 53rd named Hannaford. The troops which had gathered together resumed their line of formation with great rapidity on either side as soon as it was crossed, and continued to drive the enemy at all points, his camp being reached and taken at one p.m., and his rear being complete along the Calpee road. I must here draw attention to the manner in which the heavy twenty-four-pounder guns were impelled and managed by Captain Peel and his gallant sailors. Through the extraordinary energy with which the latter have worked, their guns have been constantly in advance throughout our late operations, from the relief of Lucknow till now, as if they were light field-pieces; and the service rendered by them in clearing our front has been incalculable. On this occasion there was beheld the sight of twenty-four-pounder guns advancing with the first line of skirmishers."

Before nightfall the rebels were in rapid retreat along the Calpee road, hotly pursued by the Commander-in-chief, at the head of horse, foot, and flying artillery. To the fourteenth milestone along that road the pursuit and slaughter went on; sixteen guns were captured, with twenty-six wagons and a vast quantity of stores and plunder. During these operations General Mansfield was equally successful in outflanking and routing Nana Sahib. Early on the 7th the pursuit began again. Sir James Hope Grant, with the cavalry, flying artillery, and a lightly-accoutred brigade of infantry, started for Bithoor, where he discovered a large quantity of treasure in a well. He then pushed on to the Serai Ghaut, where he overtook the fugitives as they were crossing into Oude, and cut them up without mercy, capturing fifteen more guns. Our whole loss in this important battle of Cawnpore was only ninety-nine in killed and wounded; but that of the enemy was never known.

The fight was won, but the troops were compelled to remain idle in camp, awaiting the return of the means of conveyance from Allahabad; but when the tents were struck on the 24th of December, Campbell had fully matured his plan for the campaign. To sweep rebellion from the Doab, and keep open a line of communication by the Great Trunk Road from Allahabad to Delhi, were to be the first objects of his operations. The northern



PLAN OF CAWNPORE

portion of this line had been already secured by Colonel (afterwards Major-General Sir Thomas) Seaton, who had been wounded at the siege of Delhi. He had set out with his own regiment, the 1st Bengal Fusiliers, Hodson's Horse, the 6th Carbineers, and a Sikh battalion, from that city, and marched southward with a vast convoy of tents, elephants, camels, carts, ammunition, and everything which he knew to be necessary and much wanted at head-quarters. His entire force only mustered 1,900 men. He was marching towards Mynpoorie, and to that place, for the purpose of co-operation, Brigadier Walpole was dispatched, with 2,000 men of all arms, including H.M. 60th Rifles, to clear the Lower Doab, and then wheel north, so as to be able, after forming a junction with Seaton's column, to reach Ferruckabad, on the Ganges (about eighty miles from Cawnpore), where, when the whole British army encamped, it was found to be little under 10,000 strong on the 3rd of January.

While Sir Colin Campbell had now the joy of finding himself at the head of a body of troops more equal to the work he had yet to do, an important diversion in our favour was made on the eastern borders of Oude, where 10,000 of the fierce little Ghoorkas, who were animated by an intense hatred of the sepoys, descended from the mountains of Nepal, under Jung Bahadoor, who, though only prime minister, was virtually monarch of the country. On the 21st of December he was at Segowlic, and then moved into Oude from the east, to cut off the rebels in that direction, and join in the final capture of Lucknow.

Meanwhile Sir Colin Campbell remained for some time encamped at Futteghur, which he occupied without striking a blow. So rapid had been the flight of the rebels that they forgot to complete the destruction of Government property in the gun and clothing agencies. Several guns, found loaded, were taken. The Nawab had set fire to his palace and fled; but another rebel of rank, less fortunate, was caught by the troops, and hanged over the gate of the place. Leaving Brigadiers Walpole and Grant to tranquillise the district by the lash and the musket, and, at the appointed time, to co-operate in the grand combined attack on Lucknow, Sir Colin Campbell returned to Cawnpore on

the 4th of February. On the 8th he had a hurried interview with the Governor-General at Allahabad; and, hastening back, was at his own head-quarters the same evening.

Meanwhile, early in January, our supremacy had been restored in Rajpootana by a slender force under Major Raines, who, on the 6th of that month, attacked and stormed the village of Rewah. It was strongly fortified by a hedge, a deep ditch, and earthen breastwork. After a close and daring reconnaissance, the major, with his guns in the centre, the 10th Bengal Native Infantry on the left, and H.M. 95th on the right, assailed the place; but owing to the quantity of jungle and surrounding wood, it was impossible to ascertain the exact position of those houses which were full of men.

After much firing and cannonading, "there came the order to storm, and the 10th, advancing in admirable order, cleared the hedge, headed by the brave McGowan. This impetuous onset was too much for the enemy, who, though fighting desperately, gradually retreated."

Rewah was laid in ashes, and its inhabitants were mowed down in sections by the artillery as they were entering a cover on the side of a rock in rear of the village.

In other parts of India the British arms were equally successful. Ratghur and Saugor were reduced by Sir Hugh Rose;



JUNG BAHADOOR.
(From a Portrait by a Native.)

General Whitlock's column destroyed the mutineers of the 52nd Bengal Native Infantry, and swept the district of Jabulpore; Colonel Durand cleared that of Indore; while General Roberts poured his forces through Rajpootana, driving the rebels before him down to Kotah, the inhabitants of which had murdered the political Resident and his sons. On all hands the British officers acquitted themselves in a manner worthy of their country; while the rebels of all kinds, defeated and dispirited, fled towards Lucknow, as to their last asylum and common centre, intending there to make their final and desperate stand.

Although most anxious for immediate action, Sir Colin Campbell remained for some time encamped at Futteghur. "The plan of the campaign which he preferred was to cross the Ganges into Rohilcund, which was almost entirely in the hands of the rebels, and re-establish the authority of the Government, so as to make it impossible for the insurgents to find an asylum in it after they

should be driven out of Lucknow. The Governor-General's plan was different. He thought that the time which would necessarily be occupied in the subjugation of Rohilcund might be still more advantageously occupied in Oude, where the rebellion still counted the largest number of adherents, and possessed its most important stronghold. This was the plan ultimately adopted; and Sir Colin Campbell, leaving a sufficient garrison in the fort of Futtchghur, broke up his camp on the 1st of February, and set out for Cawnpore."

Elsewhere his able plans were fully carried out. The brigadiers on the frontiers of Oude, and the Ghorkas of Jung Bahadoor, were closing in and making narrower the circle within which the rebellion was enclosed; and the hour was coming now when the might of Britain would be fearfully evinced at Lucknow.

Campbell's whole force at this time amounted to 18,277 men of all arms--infantry, 12,498; cavalry, 3,169; artillery, 1,745; engineers, 865; but these numbers included the column of Outram, who, in addition to holding his post desperately and gallantly at the Alumbagh, had on two different occasions put to total rout two large bodies of the enemy who had attacked him. Though confronted by at least 50,000 trained sepoys, he never experienced the slightest check, but kept open his communications throughout with Campbell's camp at Cawnpore.

Another British force had been organised in Benares under General Franks, an able and resolute officer, who, after defeating a body of rebels estimated at 25,000, moved on to take part in the operations at Lucknow. On the 19th of February he contrived to prevent a junction of the rebel force under Bunda Hassein with that under Mehn-dee Hassein, by attacking the former at Chanda. The enemy consisted of 2,500 sepoys and 6,000

armed budmashes, who occupied the fort and adjacent intrenchments, the villages and clumps of coppice along the line of march, from all of which they were driven headlong, and, with the loss of 300 killed and six guns, were hotly pursued for three miles. Franks was now about to encamp, when a volley of grape and eighteen-pound shot came crashing through his lines; and it was found that Mehn-dee Hassein, ignorant of Bunda's defeat, had now come up with fully 10,000 men and eight heavy guns.

The conflict that ensued was fiercely contested; but before sunset the rebels were in full retreat.

Far from being discouraged by this result, the Nazim Mehn-dee Hassein made a detour to get into Franks' rear; but the latter was not to be so entrapped, and, by a masterly manœuvre, got his whole force completely into the rear of Hassein, with whom a decisive action came off on the 23rd. Then 2,500 Europeans, supported by 3,000 mountaineers from Nepaul, were opposed to 25,000 desperate men, of whom 5,000 were trained sepoys, 1,100 cavalry of all corps, and with twenty-five guns.

The result was the rout and utter disorganisation of this great army; 1,800 rebels, including a rajah of high rank, were left dead upon the field; twenty pieces of cannon were captured, together with a standing camp, stores, and baggage, while Franks' loss was most trivial. At a little distance from the road a party of 500 rebels had taken possession of a petty fort, from whence they had the hardihood to menace Franks' advance. He detailed a detachment against it to dislodge them, but sustained a repulse; and as the orders of Sir Colin Campbell were to push on without delay, Franks was compelled to submit to the affront, and march for the grand rendezvous at Lucknow.

CHAPTER III.

OUDE ENTERED.—LUCKNOW ATTACKED AND TAKEN.—THE SUBSEQUENT CAMPAIGN.

DURING Sir Colin's halt at Futtchghur the rebels in Lucknow had not been idle. They were animated by the presence of the Begum of Oude, a woman of indomitable energy who had been the soul of the insurrection, and had prevailed upon the chiefs and sepoys to recognise her son as King of Oude.

They were also incited by a monvie, or Mussulman fanatic, who perpetually stirred up the followers of the Prophet, and was supposed to aim at the throne himself. The defenders were very numerous, comprising the whole population, stated by some authorities at 300,000 persons; the well-trained

soldiery of Oude and of various chiefs to the extent of 50,000, with sepoys and sowars, all deserters from the Bengal army, to the number of 30,000. They had left nothing undone to strengthen the city; and the extraordinary industry displayed by them had seldom been equalled, and never surpassed, in India. Every outlet had been covered by a work, and strong barricades and loop-holed parapets had been constructed in every direction. The various buildings formed a range of most massive palaces and walled courts of vast extent, and they had been fortified with the greatest skill.* Guns swept the long streets and narrow lanes, and others were mounted even on the domes of mosques and royal palaces; but our troops knew the perils of the task before them, and these served but to increase their noble ardour.

The first portion of our army crossed the Ganges on the 4th of February, 1858, but the whole were not over until the 28th, when the head-quarters were established at Buntara; but operations did not actually commence till the 2nd of March, when Sir Colin, starting in the grey dawn with the second division of infantry, a strong force of artillery and cavalry, marched eastward of the Alumbagh, and menaced the Dilkhoosa palace, which the enemy abandoned on the following morning when our guns opened on it, and it was seized and occupied by the 42nd Royal Highlanders; and then a battery was erected to play upon the Secunderbagh. On the 5th, Brigadier Franks came in with his conquering column, and scouts announced that the Ghoorkas of Jung Bahadoor were now near at hand.

On the preceding day the last guns of the siege-train came up, when the right of our position rested on the Goomtee and Bibrapore, situated within an angle formed by the river, while the left stretched away in the direction of the Alumbagh, about two miles distant. The communication between these two extreme points was kept open by Hodson's Horse; and now the plan of the attack developed itself rapidly. Two floating bridges had been constructed across the Goomtee by means of porter casks lashed to cross-pieces of wood, and covered with planking. By means of these, 6,000 men, with thirty guns, under Sir James Outram, passed over to the other side on the 6th, and took up a position on the Fyzabad road, to close some of the great avenues of supply for the besieged, though it was impossible for Sir Colin to invest completely a city of twenty miles in circumference.

The orders to Sir James Outram were to proceed northward in a line nearly parallel to the river's

course, and then endeavour to penetrate westward and secure the command of two bridges, one of iron and the other of stone, which gave access to the city from the north, the latter being opposite a street that lies between the Muchee Bhawn and the Great Imambara; and hence he was to turn the works thus referred to by Sir Colin—"The series of courts and buildings called the Kaiserbagh, considered as a citadel by the rebels, was shut in by three lines of defence towards the Goomtee, of which the line of the canal was the outer one. The second line circled round the large building called the Mess House and the Motee Mahal; and the first, or interior one, was the principal rampart of the Kaiserbagh, the rear of the enclosures of the latter being closed in by the city, through which approach would have been dangerous to an assailant. These lines were flanked by numerous bastions, and rested at one end on the Goomtee, and the other on the great buildings of the street called the Huzratgunge, all of which were strongly fortified, and flanked the streets in every direction. Extraordinary care had been expended on the defence of the houses and bastions to enfilade the streets."*

Sir James Outram was barely in position when the enemy were seen pouring out of the city in great strength to cut off his column, the appearance of which barred all hope of escape in that quarter by the bridges. A few crashing rounds from the horse artillery, and one dashing charge made by the Queen's Bays, sent them to the right-about with great celerity; but in the charge Major Percy Smith, an officer who had served under Keane in Afghanistan, was killed by a matchlock-ball. During the next two days the operations were almost entirely monopolised by the artillery; for as soon as it became apparent that Sir James Outram had turned the first line of defence by pushing boldly forward to the Chukkur Walla Kotee, every gun at the Dilkhoosa opened on the Martinière, and with such splendid effect that it was breached at one of the angles, and was successfully stormed by the Black Watch, the 53rd, and Perthshire Light Infantry, led by Brigadiers Sir Edward Lugard, C.B. (of the 29th Foot), an officer of great experience, and by Adrian Hope. This achievement was immediately followed by a greater, when the Black Watch and 4th Punjaub Rifles rushed over the intrenchment that abutted on the Goomtee, and, strewing the whole ground with dead and dying, swept like a whirlwind the whole line of works forming the outer line of defence, so far as a building known as Banks's House, which was

* Marshman.

* Despatches.

stormed next day at dawn, and converted into a strong military post.

Early on the morning of the 9th, Sir James Outram had marched along the Fyzabad road, and overcoming all resistance, found himself by mid-day in possession of the Badshahbagh, or King's Garden, a great oblong enclosure, between which and the city and river lay an open plain. From thence he enfiladed the formidable intrenchments formed by the rebels at the canal, and, in fact, completely turned their position.

Sir Colin now ordered the Naval Brigade with their ponderous guns to open fire on the garrisoned buildings within the college enclosure, in order to drive out the enemy's riflemen; and it was here that, while encouraging his blue jackets, the gallant Sir William Peel was shot through the thigh, and borne to the rear; he died at Cawnpore. "No seaman of his time appeared to inherit in so large a proportion the calculated daring and the felicitous enthusiasm which gave Nelson the instinct of victory. If his contempt of danger was excessive, he never overlooked the minutest detail which could tend to the safety or success of his undertakings." *

As the rebels, who now found they were fighting with the gallows before them, withstood alike the musketry fire and that from six mortars and ten heavy guns, Sir Colin determined to try the bayonet; and then "as the stern and unbending line of Highlanders and Sikhs came on in grim silence, the sepoys fired a few hurried shots and fled from the works. In a few minutes later the Martinière was won, and with it fell the Secunderbagh and the Residency."

During the night of the 12th Sir James Outram, who was reinforced by a number of heavy guns and mortars, directed his fire on the Kaiserbagh, while at the same time mortars in position at the Begum's house never ceased to play upon the lofty Imambara, the next large palace which it was necessary to storm between the Begum Kotee, and the spacious Kaiserbagh. Eventually the Begum's palace was stormed by the Sutherland Highlanders, who made terrible use of their bayonets, and by the Choorkas and Punjaub Rifles, while at the same time Sir James Outram captured the iron bridge of the Goomtee, and made a dreadful slaughter of the flying enemy.

It was about this time that, after long delays, Jung Bahadoor arrived in person with 6,000 men and twenty-four field guns, and took up a position close to the canal, after being received with much ceremony by the Commander-in-chief. The con-

versation did not seem to have been very animated, as the latter's mind was pre-occupied by detailing the attack of the Begum-ke-Mahal. Suddenly a commotion was observable among the staff, when there hurried forward a tall and stately officer, his face flushed, and, like his figure, begrimed with dust. He was Captain Hope Johnstone, the assistant adjutant-general, announcing that the British troops were then in the palace. Formalities were now at an end, and Jung Bahadoor, riding forward, shook Sir Colin's hand. Among the slain was the gallant Hodson, the captor of the King of Delhi, and young Moorsom, of the 52nd, one of the most promising officers in the service.*

On the 19th the Moosabagh, which was occupied by 7,000 of the rebels, and was their last stronghold, fell to the British. It was a large palace, with gardens and enclosures situated at some distance to the westward, near the right bank of the river. It was under the immediate care of the ex-queen of Oude, Begum Hazarat-Mahal. She had her son with her, the same boy whom in absence of her husband (then a prisoner at Calcutta) she had made a puppet king, and also her notorious paramour, Mumoo Khan, who had been so long permitted to occupy her husband's place, and make the real paternity of Brijers Kuddr more doubtful. Another, but lesser body of rebels held a post in the city under the fanatical Moulvie of Fyzabad, whose religious character made him one of the most dangerous and influential of the insurgent leaders.

Marching on the Moosabagh, Sir James Outram attacked it direct by the right bank of the river, while Brigadier Hope Grant cannonaded it from the left, and Brigadier Campbell took post westward from the Alumbagh to cut off all fugitives. Most complete was the rout, and ample the slaughter of the enemy.

Two days subsequently the Moulvie, after a desperate resistance, was driven out of his post by Sir Edward Lugard, and his followers were pursued by Brigadier Campbell's cavalry, who cut and slashed them down on every hand for six miles along the highway. Resistance everywhere was at an end in Lucknow.

Savage and desperate though the fighting had been, so much care had Sir Colin taken of his troops, that the final capture was effected with comparatively small loss. The number of killed and wounded throughout the siege did not exceed 900; but we had to regret the fall of two distinguished officers among many—Hodson and Peel. The former fell mortally wounded during the

* *Times*, 1858.

* "Records 52nd Foot."

assault, the other died, as we have said, at Cawnpore. It was unfortunate that, by some mismanagement on the part of one of our commanders, Sir Colin was deprived of the full fruit of his victory by the escape of the greater part of the mutineers with their leaders.* He invited the return of the fugitive inhabitants; but it was impossible to restrain the victorious and justly infuriated soldiers from the rich plunder of the great city, of which the largest share fell to the active Ghoorkas, who took back with them to the mountains of Nepal several thousand cart-loads of every kind of spoil.

Though with the fall of Lucknow it must have been apparent to the well-trained desperadoes who had defended it that all hope of successful resistance elsewhere was at an end, the struggle in Oude continued still. Save the capital and the road to Cawnpore, the whole kingdom was still in the possession of the rebels and of those who adhered to them; while they were strong in Behar under the banner of Koer Sing; in Rohilcund, on the north-west, where, on being reinforced by fugitive mutineers from every point, Khan Bahadoor was in such strength as to make it doubtful whether a campaign against him should prelude the reduction of Lucknow; and in the south and south-west, where, throughout the most of Central India, the authority of the Governor-General and of Scindia and Holkar, native princes who had been faithful to us, was quite extinguished.

Severe fighting was still in prospect before our troops, and as there was but a slender prospect of achieving much before the setting in of the rainy season, all that the Commander-in-chief could do was to provide for the security of shattered and half-desolate Lucknow by entrusting it to the care of Sir Hope Grant, with a force sufficient to garrison it and to overcome the adjacent country; and then prepare for the final crushing of the revolt by marching into Rohilcund, forming a junction with Sir Hugh Rose, who had been moving victoriously through Central India, and lastly to return once more into Oude, and from thence sweep the rebels before him to the miasmatic marshes of the pestiferous Terai of Nepal.

Immediately on hearing of the capture of Lucknow, Lord Canning, on the 31st of March, directed Sir James Outram, as Chief Commissioner in Oude, to issue a proclamation, confiscating the right of proprietary to every estate in that kingdom, with the exception of six zemindaries. The generous mind of Outram led him earnestly to remonstrate against the impolicy and injustice of a wholesale

measure which punished innocent and guilty alike and which could not fail to retard a peaceful settlement of that stormy and warlike kingdom. The proclamation was repudiated in Britain by a spiteful and sarcastic despatch from Lord Ellenborough, then President of the Board of Control; but Lord Canning was, in the meanwhile, induced to mitigate the severity of the order, and to entrust large discretionary powers to Mr. (afterwards Sir Robert) Montgomery, the successor of Sir James Outram, who had been raised to the Council. He concluded a fresh settlement with the Talookdars, the proudest aristocracy in India, upon a moderate rental, and gave them the advantage of a new and Parliamentary title to their estates, and, moreover, endeavoured to attach them to the Government by appointing them honorary magistrates.*

Prior to all this, the Ghoorkas of Jung Bahadoor, impatient to return homeward with the plunder of Lucknow, had quitted its vicinity and marched eastward, by the way of Pzabad. They were followed on the same route by Sir Edward Lugard, whose force consisted of three battalions of infantry, three regiments of Sikh horse, a military train, and a park of artillery, which, starting from Lucknow on the 29th of March, moved south-eastward to the town of Sultanpore. Azimghur, on the left bank of the Torse, a town famous for its cotton manufactories, was his immediate destination, as for some time it had been besieged by Koer Sing with the greater number of the Dinapore mutineers and some 3,000 bulmashes, with four pieces of cannon. On the 2nd of April, Koer had made an attempt to interrupt a large convoy of provisions and ammunition, which had been sent to the blockaded garrison from Benares, with an escort of 460 men under Lieutenant-Colonel Lord Mark Kerr, who successfully repulsed him, and relieved and strengthened those in Azimghur; but all were yet in danger there, so Lugard's column pushed on, though serious obstacles were in the way.

A temporary bridge, which Jung Bahadoor had placed across the Goomtee at Sultanpore, had been destroyed; hence the column had to make a détour and did not reach Juanpore (the citadel of which stands on high ground, overhanging that river) till the 9th of April. Sir Edward met with another detention, caused by a body of rebels, whom he defeated while attempting to bar his passage; but he came before Azimghur on the 15th, and utterly cut up Koer Sing's force, which broke into three columns. One of these fled north on the Goruckpore road; a second retired towards Oude; and the third, led by Koer in person, moved toward

* Marshman.

* Ibid.

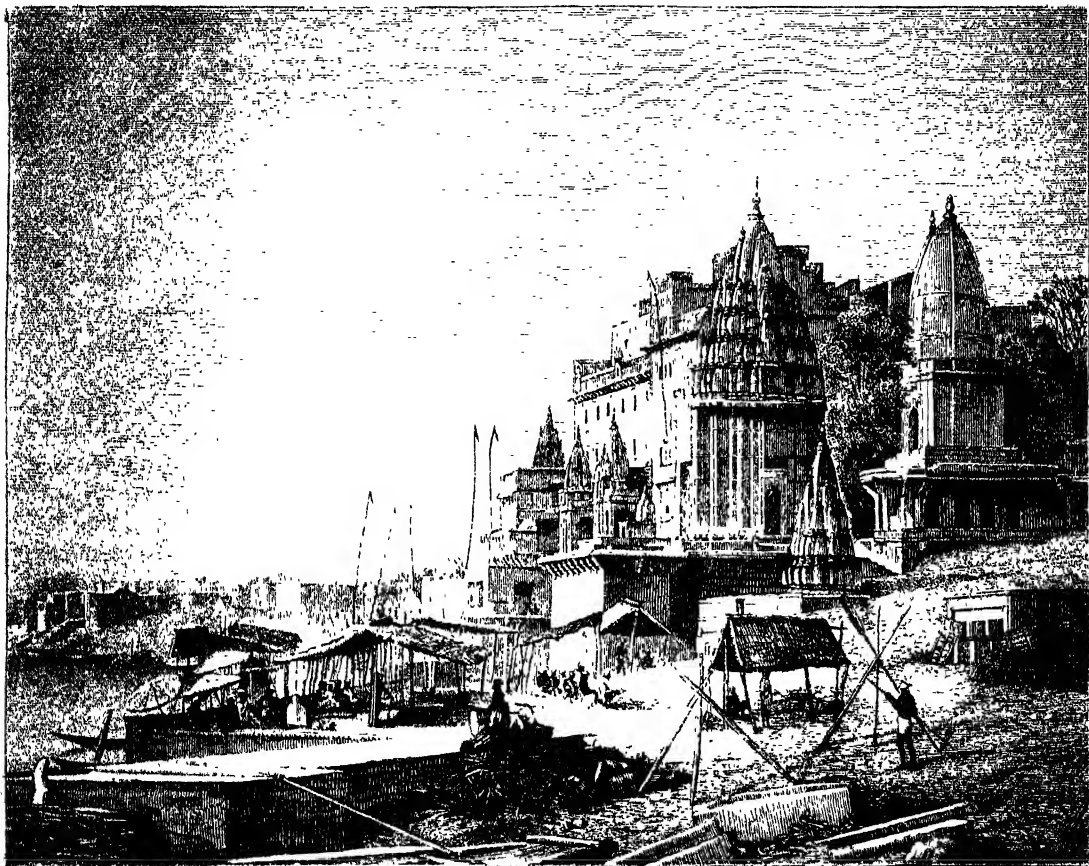
his own territory in the vicinity of Arrah, where he died of wounds received in action.

The 10th of April saw another hostile column departing from Lucknow, under General Walpole. It was 6,000 strong, with an ample brigade of guns, and moved along the left bank of the Ganges towards Rohilcund. Hearing that a body of rebels 400 strong had sought protection in one of the country forts having a high loopholed wall and

of the most gallant and best-beloved soldiers in the army of India.

As an evidence of Walpole's costly blunder, "he brought up his heavy guns to batter a breach, but the enemy stole away in the night, leaving the English general to batter his way in, or take some shorter method if he chose."

Bareilly, the capital of Rohilcund, was still held by old Khan Bahadoor, who, as related in its



VIEW OF THE GHĀT OF DACESWAMEDHI, BENARĀS.

ditch, named Rhoohca, fifty miles from Lucknow, he resolved, contrary to the express injunctions of Sir Colin Campbell, to attack it; and without making a reconnaissance, or even using his powerful artillery, detailed for this service the 12th Highlanders, with the 4th Punjab Rifles in support—a duty in which they utterly failed. Completely sheltered, the mutineers poured forth a murderous fire; the assailants were repulsed, and compelled to retire with the loss of 100 killed and wounded. Among the former were four officers, one of whom was their brigadier, the Hon. Adrian Hope, who was literally adored by his own regiment, the 93rd Highlanders, and who was generally deemed one

place, had proclaimed his independence, and in the earlier stages of the Mutiny had put some of our judges to death, under the mimic forms of European justice. While allowed to remain in undisturbed possession of the power he had usurped, on the plea of being a descendant of Hafiz Rahmat, of the days of Hastings, he had carried matters with a hand so high, that the entire Rohillas, who certainly had solid and traditional wrongs to avenge, had rallied round his colours, and the concentration of force provided for his suppression evinced that a stern resistance was expected.

The campaign was opened by Sir Colin Campbell capturing Shahjehanpore, after which, on the



MOUNTAINEERS OF THE NORTH-WEST FIRING ON THE BRITISH.

2nd of May, he began to advance northwards on Bareilly, against which two other columns were moving—one under General Penny, by the way of Budapa, from the south-west; and another under General Jones, by Moradabad, from the north-west; but when the sequel came, it was found that Khan Bahadoor was only formidable while he was unmolested.

On the 3rd, Sir Colin was joined by the column of Penny, who, *en route*, by some carelessness, allowed his troops to be entangled in an ambush, and with difficulty saved them from destruction. By sheer dint of hard fighting they beat the foe, and resumed their march; but in the conflict Penny was slain by a body of fanatics, who made a rush at him, and then the beaten rebels hurried to Bareilly, where they strengthened the garrison. Colonel Richmond Jones, of the 6th Dragoon Guards, brought on the brigade to Sir Colin; while his namesake, Brigadier John Jones, *en route* from Moradabad, met also with resistance in his march; but drove the rebels headlong before him, while Campbell was advancing from an opposite direction.

Reaching Bareilly, Jones carried the bridge, which the rebels were stoutly defending, when the boom of Sir Colin's cannon was heard on the other

side of the city. The rebel cavalry contrived to make a sudden attack upon the head-quarter baggage, and created such confusion in Campbell's column as to make further operations for that day impossible. From fatigue, weakness, and sun-stroke, many, on the march, had sunk by the wayside. On the 7th, the attack was resumed. Khan Bahadoor, after making little more than a show of resistance, took to precipitate flight, and left the British in undisputed possession of Bareilly. But it happened that about the same time the Moulvie of Fyzabad, taking advantage of Campbell's march from Shahjehanpore, made a dash at that town, seized, and pillaged it, driving the slender garrison into the gaol, where they had to defend themselves till succoured by a detachment sent by General Jones from Bareilly. With the capture of the latter, the campaign in Rohilcund was deemed at an end. Some desultory warfare was essayed by the rebels, who were otherwise unable to keep the field, while the approach of the rainy season made further operations on the part of the Europeans impracticable. In consequence, Sir Colin Campbell established his head-quarters at Futtelghur, to await the return of the dry and cold season, when he might once more take the field.

CHAPTER LIII.

THE CAMPAIGN IN CENTRAL INDIA.

DURING the time that the events we have narrated had been occurring in Bengal, the Madras army, though chiefly Mohammedans, remained loyal. This came from the peculiar system of that army, and the distance of its scene of service from Delhi and Lucknow, the ancient traditional centres of native power, and also from the circumstance that there was a numerous population of native Christians scattered through Madras, and connected with the army. That there were agitations and arrests among the cavalry and sepoys, when tampered with by secret firebrands from Bengal, is undeniable; but Madras remained loyal, and its troops served well and efficiently during the campaign in Central India.

In Bombay, although the army there excited the most serious apprehensions, it was loyal in the main. In the north-western provinces the irregular

troops were not indisposed to revolt; some even deserted, but were captured and instantly hanged. The 27th Bombay Infantry, when stationed at Kolapore, without the slightest indication of previous discord, suddenly rose on the 1st of August, murdered three of their officers and a native woman, plundered the treasury, performed sundry fantastic acts of devotion, and left the station in a body. In this instance the whole of the native officers remained loyal; but the event agitated and disturbed the whole surrounding country, as no one knew what might happen next, but ere long it was discovered, by the vigilance and circumspection of the British authorities, that a great Mussulman conspiracy existed, having its ramifications throughout all Bombay, its chief centres being Poonah, Dhawar, and Satara. The rajah of the latter place, being implicated, was

arrested, with the rance, and placed under surveillance by Mr. Rose, the commissioner at Poonah.

It was then discovered that the Mohammedan chiefs of that city had formed a plan for an entire massacre of all Christians, European and native, at Poonah, Sattara, Belgaum, and elsewhere, and the signal was to have been the explosion of the arsenal at Poonah. The native troops were instantly disarmed, the chief devotees were arrested, and a number of the 27th, who were captured, were blown from the cannon's mouth at Kolapore. One of the chief conspirators was a moonshee, who received 250 rupees monthly for teaching our young officers Hindostanee.

A tumult broke out at Hyderabad among the more fanatical of the Mohammedans, till a few rounds of grape from our horse artillery guns cooled their fervour. But the troops—regular and irregular—of the Bombay army, in more than one instance, refused to obey orders, and openly asserted that the King of Delhi was their lawful monarch; and in this spirit some deserted, though the mass were reduced to obedience.

Leaving Sir Colin Campbell encamped at Futtehgur, we shall, in the meanwhile, turn to another quarter, and notice briefly the progress of events in Central India. To check the revolt in its earlier stages there had been impossible, as the mutineers were, in more than one instance, headed by the native princes, but their temporary triumph, amid cruelty and bloodshed, was not of long duration. When it was found that the troops of Bombay and Madras could be relied on, columns of them were organised to advance into Central India by the south-east and south-west. The former division, under General Whitlock, moving from Nagpore, proceeded north, towards Jubbulpore; the latter, under General Roberts, advancing from Rajpootana, marched in the direction of Kotah; and both were to effect a junction with a third division, when the whole were to assume the name of the Central India Field Force, under General Sir Hugh Rose, G.C.B., who had served in the Crimean campaign as Queen's Commissioner with the French army.

In the beginning, the central column was formed in two brigades, mustering together 6,000, of whom 2,500 were British. One of these, commanded by Colonel Charles Stewart, of the 14th Light Dragoons, as brigadier, having on the 2nd of August, 1857, effectually relieved Mhow, which had been in a state of siege since the commencement of the Mutiny, spent the remainder of the wet season in strengthening the fort, forming new

batteries and intrenchments there, as a *point d'appui* for further operations. On the 10th of October Brigadier Stewart was again in motion, and marched westward to the ancient town of Dhar, the capital of a petty principality, surrounded by a mud wall, with a fort, defended by towers upon a height. There a body of mutineers, from various quarters, had forcibly garrisoned themselves, in defiance, it was said, of the native authorities; but as the actual rajah was a mere boy, it is more probable that, in true Indian fashion, his guardians were playing a double game, and professed a loyalty they did not feel.

As Stewart's brigade approached Dhar, a sharp fire was opened upon him from three brass guns in position upon a height. These were abandoned by the mutineers, who suddenly lost heart, and took refuge in the fort, the walls of which are thirty feet high. On obtaining some heavy guns, Stewart laid siege to the place, and while shelling it without intermission, worked his breaching battery at 300 yards distance from the walls, which are of solid stone. Meanwhile he disposed his force in such a way as he thought would preclude the escape of the garrison, which was 4,000 strong. The curtain was breached by the 29th, and then terms were sought. On being told that they had nothing to hope for but an unconditional surrender, they vowed to hold out to the last cartridge. This was but a ruse, as they fully intended to escape, and did so with such incredible dexterity that their flight remained unknown till the storming party entered the breach.

Brigadier Stewart dismantled the fort, and on being reinforced by the Hyderabad Contingent under Major Orr, he marched again in two columns. The contingent, on the 7th of November, pushed on to Mahidpore, where the Dhar mutineers, now joined by many more, were committing great excesses; and Stewart followed on the 8th. Major Orr came up with them at the village of Rawul, and, by one dashing charge, drove them from their cannon, which he captured, together with all their bullocks, ammunition, and wagons of plunder. No other encounter took place till the 21st, when the force reached Mundisore, where the enemy had fixed their head-quarters, and, having confidence in their superior numbers, without waiting to be attacked, came steadily and boldly on in line, with bayonets fixed and colours flying, menacing at once the British centre and flanks; but they were routed, and driven close to the walls of the town. Intelligence now came that a rebel column, 5,000 strong, which had been blockading Neemuch, had marched to join those

in Mundisore. As this junction would have given the enemy a strength too great to face, Stewart resolved to prevent it at every hazard, and marching in search of them, found them posted on such strong ground in and about the village of Goraria, that he was unable to drive them in, and after a fierce conflict night fell, leaving the foe still unbeaten; and to make matters worse, during the contest in front, a column from Mundisore came on Stewart's rear, and nearly cut off his baggage. On the 24th, Stewart—an officer who had served in the campaign of the Punjab, and got a sabre-cut at Chillianwallah—attacked them with renewed vigour, and though they fought with bitter obstinacy, he drove them from Goraria at the point of the bayonet, slaying 1,500 of them on the spot. He thus effected the relief of Neemuch, in the fort of which a handful of Europeans had long been making a gallant and almost desperate defence. Mundisore was next evacuated, and leaving Orr, with the contingent to occupy it, the brigadier marched to Indore to join the Central India Force under Sir Hugh Rose, the future Lord Strathnairn.

The orders of the latter were to fight his way northward to Jhansi, and crush the rebel garrison there. His brigades sometimes acted far apart; the actions fought were generally in the open field, in jungles or passes, "and everywhere Sir Hugh rolled away or cut through the living ramparts that obstructed his progress." At one time the brother of Nana Sahib threatened his flanks at the head of a vast horde of looters. Early in January, 1858, he marched in the direction of Sehore, a town of Bhopal, which at this time was ruled by a princess, who remained faithful to Britain, though her contingent had joined in the revolt. Condign punishment was inflicted by Sir Hugh on all who fell into his hands at Sehore, from whence he continued his march to the fort of Rhatghur, one of the largest and strongest in Central India, occupying the spur of a lofty hill, isolated on both sides by sloping precipices, girt by a deep ditch on the north, and defended on the west, where the gateway stood, by many great bastions. There was a numerous garrison, full of confidence in their stronghold, against which Rose's mortars and battery guns opened on the 27th of January at 300 yards, with such effect that next day a great breach was reported practicable. But the garrison, instead of facing the storming party, descended by a precipice, where safe descent seemed impossible, and effected their escape in the night.

Sir Hugh Rose then moved on to Saugor, and relieved a party of Europeans, who for eight weary

and harassing months, with their wives and little ones, had been besieged in the long, low, water-girt fortress of that name; and a few days after, the Madras column came up, under General Whitlock, who had moved by the way of Jubbulpore, pursuing wandering bands of rebels with such activity as to leave them no rest, cutting up and dispersing them in every direction.

After compelling a body of rebels to evacuate the fortress of Gurrukota and leave vast quantities of plunder behind them, Sir Hugh Rose now moved on Jhansi, the little state which Lord Dalhousie had annexed five years before—a deed which the rance so terribly revenged when the Mutiny took place. She had now assembled 10,000 men for the defence of the town, and was a woman who had given such proof of her talents that they would have excited admiration but for the horror she caused by her dreadful massacre of our people. On the 21st of March, Sir Hugh Rose was before Jhansi, a city of four miles and a half in circuit, surrounded by luxuriant and extensive woods, and girt by a wall of solid masonry, varying from six to twelve feet thick, and from eighteen to thirty feet in height, flanked by strong gun-bastions, and closely loopholed for musketry. "Within the town, and enclosed by it on all sides except the west, where the rock on which it stands terminates in an abrupt and lofty precipice, rises the citadel, completely commanding both the town and the roads leading to it, and strongly fortified by nature and art. Its walls, constructed of solid granite, from sixteen to twenty feet thick, were flanked by elaborate outworks of the same solid construction; while the interior, partly occupied by the massive buildings of the palace, contained several lofty towers mounting heavy ordnance, and in some places pierced with five tiers of loopholes."

The south appearing its weakest side, the concentrated fire of Sir Hugh's guns silenced many of those of the enemy, the great ramparts began to crumble, and all looked forward to the hour of assault with an ardour that was suddenly damped on the 31st of March, when tidings came that a body of 20,000 men, including that portion of the Gwalior Contingent which had escaped the vengeance of Sir Colin Campbell at Cawnpore, were advancing under the command of Nana Sahib's lieutenant, Tantia Topee, to the relief of the rance. The odds were fearful now; but on the 1st of April, without slackening his fire against Jhansi, Sir Hugh moved out to meet the enemy with only 1,200 men, of whom 500 were British soldiers.

A battle which took place near the bank of the Betwa proved the utter inability of any native force

to cope with our troops when handled as Rose handled them on that day." After a fire from his field-guns, which made dreadful havoc among the unwieldy masses of the enemy, both their wings were simultaneously charged by a handful of cavalry, then a wild cry arose in front—a shout of rage and vengeance, and through the smoke there flashed before the eyes of the rebels a slender line of white caps, red coats, and a hedge of steel, as our tiny force of infantry rushed, cheering, on with the bayonet, and then—huddled together, rolled into themselves as it were—the rebels were hurled in confusion and dismay across the river, leaving 1,500 dead behind them, and all the guns they had brought from Calpee. From the ramparts the cruel ranee saw the signal defeat of her confederates, and with a heart that began to shrink at last.

On the 3rd of April, the town was assaulted by two columns of attack; one, composed of the 3rd Europeans, the Bombay and Madras Sappers, with the Hyderabad Contingent, entered on the left by escalade; the other, composed of some Royal Engineers, H.M. 86th (County Down), and the 25th Bombay Native Infantry, clad in scarlet, faced with pale yellow, stormed the breach direct; and both columns, after hewing a passage through the streets, met at the palace, which was stormed and sacked, but not till every avenue had been fiercely contested, "and no quarter was asked or given." *

The fighting did not finally cease till the 6th, when the ranee, after making a last desperate stand, escaped; she was seen in full flight mounted on a grey horse, and though attended by only a few followers, could not be overtaken.

While Sir Hugh Rose was achieving these brilliant deeds of arms, about 1,000 faithful Bengal sepoys, with the same number of Madras, who had been placed in Saugor by General Whitlock, kept at bay the rebels who swarmed in the country round there; Scindia cut up the Kotah mutineers who had sought shelter from General Roberts' column within his territory, and captured their ten pieces of cannon. This band was accompanied by a large number of women and children, who were now, in turn, suffering the hardships of peril and flight—but not of terror—which had been in so many cases imposed upon the families of the Europeans.

In Bundelcund, General Whitlock was most successful with his Madras troops. On the 19th of April he defeated 7,000 rebels, led by the Nawab of Banda, whom he captured, with all his guns, slew 500 of his people, and dispersed the rest.

After remaining some time at Jhansi, to prepare

* Marshman.

for a movement on Calpee—where the Gwalior Contingent had their head-quarters, whether the ranee had fled, and which had become the rallying-point of all mutineers west of the Jumna, the point where they seemed to have resolved to make a last final stand, where they had collected military stores of every description, and even established foundries to cast cannon, shot, and shell—Sir Hugh Rose, though weakened in force, by having to garrison Jhansi, marched on the 29th of April, and did so frequently at midnight, but even these marches were becoming more difficult in consequence of the oppressive heat.

The first opposition was encountered in the vicinity of Kunch, a town of Agra, sixty miles distant from Gwalior. There, a body of rebels, led by the Ranee of Jhansi, the Rajah of Baunpore, Tantia Topee, the Nawab of Banda, and others, and stated to be more than 20,000 strong, had taken up their ground; but the series of heavy disasters that had befallen them of late deterred them from risking a general engagement; thus, after exchanging a fire of artillery, the advance of our troops became the signal for a speedy retreat to Calpee.

Though that place was only forty miles distant, it was approached by slow marches, the intensity of the heat rendering rapidity of action almost impossible, and thinning the ranks as much as the fire of the enemy could have done. The advance to Calpee was resisted perpetually, but without avail; for as a mountain torrent sweeps away the branches that cross its course, so Rose swept away all opposition. Riddell from Etawah, Maxwell from Cawnpore, and Whitlock from the south, were all acting in a combined system of action with Sir Hugh Rose, who had to encounter almost hourly skirmishes as he approached Calpee.

A nephew of the Nana was one of the most active in opposing Sir Hugh. On the 18th, Rose shelled some earthworks which had been constructed to bar his advance; while on the opposite bank of the Jumna, Maxwell's guns suddenly opened fire, at a time when the rebels believed him to be at Cawnpore. On the 20th, they made a sortie with force and skill; but were hopelessly repulsed; yet on the 22nd, after Golowlee, six miles from Calpee, had been reached, they were seen marching along the road in strength and in order of battle. An encounter at once took place, and for some time the conflict was maintained by the enemy with so much resolution, and with numbers so overwhelming, that the issue looked doubtful till Rose resorted to the bayonet. Then hurried headlong from the field, the enemy's columns of infantry were broken up and scattered in every direction,

after which Calpee was captured, with all their ammunition, stores, and the accumulated plunder of every station from which they had come.

Sir Hugh Rose, supposing the campaign to be at an end, and as he was about to go on leave with a medical certificate, issued from his camp at Calpee this General Order, on the 1st of June, 1858:—

"The Central India Field Force being about to be dissolved, the major-general cannot allow the troops to leave his command without expressing to them the gratification he has invariably experienced at their good conduct and discipline, and he requests that the following General Order may be

watchword; you have attended to my orders. In hardships, in temptations, and in dangers, you have obeyed your general, and have never left your ranks. You have fought against the strong, and you have protected the rights of the weak and defenceless—of foes as well as friends; I have seen you in the ardour of the combat, preserve and place children out of harm's way. This is the discipline of Christian soldiers; and this it is that has brought you triumphant from the shores of Western India to the waters of the Jumna, and establishes without doubt that you will find no place to equal the glory of your arms."

This eloquent farewell address was delivered



AN ENCAMPMENT.

read at the head of every corps and detachment of the force: Soldiers! you have marched more than a thousand miles, and taken more than a hundred guns; you have forced your way through mountain passes and intricate jungles, and over rivers; you have captured the strongest forts, and beat the enemy, no matter what the odds, wherever you met him; you have restored extensive districts to the Government, and peace and order now reign where before, for twelve months, were tyranny and rebellion; you have done all this, and you have never had a check. I thank you with all my sincerity for your bravery, your devotion, and your discipline. When you first marched, I told you that you—as British soldiers—had more than enough of courage for the work which was before you; but that courage without discipline was of no avail, and I exhorted you to let discipline be your

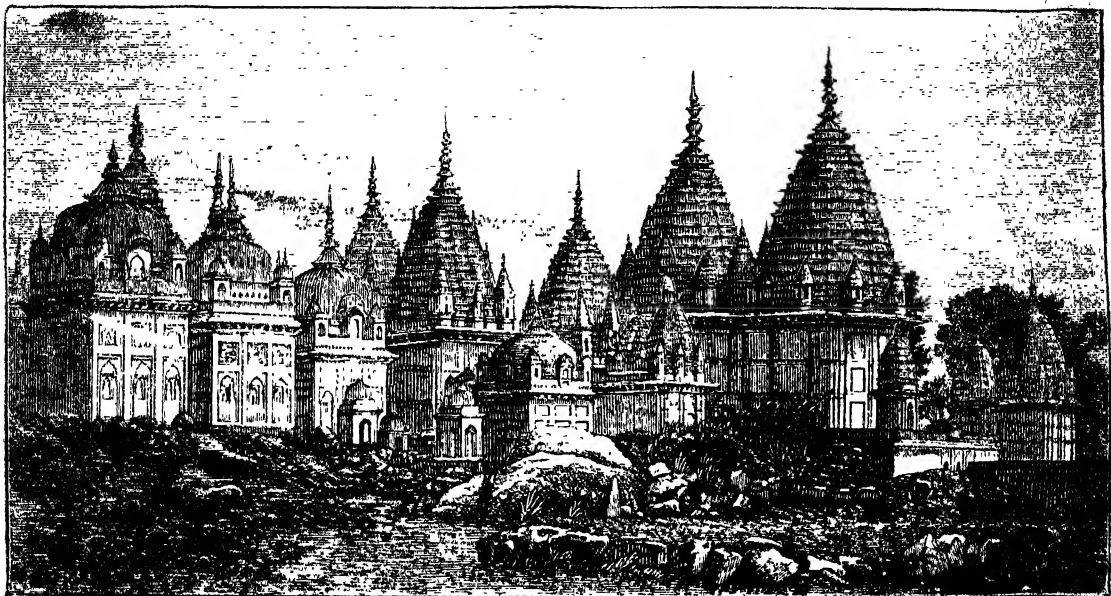
somewhat too soon, as Sir Hugh had more fighting before him; for on the very day he issued it, the rebels entered Gwalior under Tantia Topee, who drove Scindia from his throne, and within a week was at the head of 18,000 men cantoned beside the capital. Scindia sent to Agra for succour; but none could be given. He was then compelled to fly there for shelter, after appealing in vain to his troops, of whom 3,000 cavalry and 6,000 infantry, with eight guns, went over to Rao Sahib, the infamous Nana's nephew. The body-guard fought till cut to pieces, and a remnant escorted their sovereign to Agra. On this the Nana was proclaimed Peishwa of the Mahrattas, the title he had assumed at Cawnpore. Rao Sahib was declared sovereign of Gwalior; the vast treasures of Scindia were seized, and the rich citizens were plundered; the flight from Calpee proved the ruin of Gwalior,

to which the adjacent rajahs flocked with their retainers; thus a large army was organised, with plenty of stores and treasure to supply it.

When he conquered at Calpee, Sir Hugh Rose was in ill-health, and probably it was owing to that circumstance, and the slenderness of his cavalry, that any escaped thence; but when tidings reached him of these events at Gwalior, he at once marched against the rebels, who were now led, less by Tantia Topee and others, than by the warlike Ranee of Jhansi, who, clad in male attire, mounted on a beautiful charger, and accompanied by a select staff, kept moving about where her presence was required, displaying a skill, energy, and enthu-

burned. Tantia Topee assumed the direction of those operations which she had hitherto guided; but Smith was always victorious. His column was joined by the main body under Sir Hugh, who approached Gwalior in flank, and stormed some fortified heights held by the enemy, who became panic-struck and fled. Our cavalry pursued the fugitives, and cut them down in such numbers that the whole adjacent plain was strewn with their dead and shrieking wounded. Fifty pieces of cannon were taken.

All was conquered now, save the stupendous rock-built fortress, into which a few desperadoes had retired, resolved to sell their lives as dearly



NECROPOLIS OF THE RAJAHS OF JHANSI.

siasm worthy of a better cause. On the 16th of June, Rose was near the old cantonments at Gwalior, and reconnoitred the position at a time when the heat was 130° in the shade; and in the morning, though the troops were exhausted after a night march, he attacked instantly, and did so victoriously. The slaughter of the fugitives was frightful, some of the trenches that lay beyond the cantonments being filled to the brim with corpses. Sir Hugh then encamped within the captured lines.

The ranee organised a fresh force to intercept a reinforcement that was coming up under Brigadier Smith from the westward. On the 17th of June, that officer drove the rebels before him, and it was in his last charge that the ranee, who had been in every engagement since she left Jhansi, was killed by one of our hussars, who was ignorant of her sex. Her body was borne away by her attendants to be

as possible; but two young officers, who were left with a party to hold a police-station near the castle, resolved to surprise it. Aided by a blacksmith, they and their soldiers forced a passage in, and won the place, yet not without desperate fighting. The attempt was planned by Lieutenant Rose, who perished in its execution. Lieutenant Waller secured the prize.

A compact body of the enemy, 6,000 strong, with twenty-five splendid field-artillery, retired in good order from Gwalior; but were followed by Brigadier Napier, with only 600 cavalry and six horse-artillery guns. Overtaking them at Jowla Alipore, the gallant brigadier, who was well worthy of his ancient Scottish name, dashed into their ranks, put them to utter rout, and obtained a complete victory, with the capture of all their guns. Tantia Topee, with another body 8,000 strong,

directed his march to Jeypore, the chief state, carrying with him the crown jewels and treasure of Scindia, who now returned to Gwalior, amid the acclamations of his subjects.

The daring and active Tantia Topee kept Central India still in agitation, but Sir Hugh Rose, worn out with toil and long service, retired from

the command, and his force was broken up. He departed for Bombay; but his services in India were not yet at an end. He was created for them a K.C.B., afterwards a G.C.B., and received the thanks of Parliament; and on the institution of the Order called the Star of India, he was one of the first recipients of it.*

CHAPTER LIV.

THE GOVERNMENT OF INDIA.—A PROPOSED CHANGE.—THE INDIA BILL.—EXTINCTION OF THE COMPANY. — PROCLAMATION OF THE QUEEN.

THIS dreadful revolt proved the death-warrant of the ancient East India Company. Not only Great Britain, but nearly all Europe was astounded by the announcement of a great military rebellion, which threatened to dissolve our Eastern empire, and of the awful massacres which accompanied it; and the responsibility of the outbreak was at once cast on the Company, though for fully more than seventy years no political measure, or administrative arrangement, had taken place without the full concurrence of the Home Ministry. In consequence of the revolt, India suddenly attracted both from the country and the Legislature an amount of interest and attention it had never gained before, and the conviction in men's minds became general that a complete change in the system of its Government was imperatively required. The argument by which the Court of Directors some fifty years before endeavoured to justify their abrupt dismissal of Lord William Bentinck from office, after the Mutiny at Vellore, in 1806, was now applied with fatal effect to themselves on the Mutiny of the entire Bengal army. "As the misfortunes which happened under your administration placed your fate under the government of public events and opinions which the court could not control, so it is not in their power to alter the effect of them."

In December, 1857, Lord Palmerston informed the Court of Directors that a Bill for placing India under the direct authority of the Crown would shortly be laid before Parliament. In both Houses the subject had been incidentally discussed, and, prior to this communication, the Company had become aware that their existence as the rulers of India was seriously menaced and plainly imperilled. Hence the directors instructed Mr. John Stuart Mill, the historian of India, and examiner of

Indian correspondence in the India House, to draw up a long and elaborate petition, in which, while pleading justly their own merits and past services, they denied that the sepoy revolt was owing to their mismanagement, and deprecated legislation of the kind which they understood to be in contemplation as both pernicious and unseasonable, all the more so while the Mutiny was still raging and still unrepressed—pernicious, too, because it would substitute a new form of government for one which, on the whole, had worked admirably; and at that crisis would have the effect of unsettling still more the minds of the native population, and increasing the confusion. Mr. Mill's production was one of the most able State papers in the language; but, with the horrors of Delhi, Cawnpore, and other massacres fresh in the public mind, nothing could withstand the popular outcry.

On the 11th of February, 1858, this petition was presented to the House of Lords, and next day Lord Palmerston introduced into the House of Commons his "Bill for the better Government of India." While leaving the local arrangements in India without change, it was intended only to apply to Home management, and proposed the abolition of the powers then held by the Courts of Directors and Proprietors; that in their place there should be substituted a President, assisted by a Council for Indian affairs; that the former should be a member of the Government, and the organ of the Cabinet in everything pertaining to India; and

* In addition to works on the Mutiny quoted in the text, "The Sepoy War," by Sir Hope Grant; "Eight Months' Campaign," by Colonel Bouchier; General Outram's "Campaign in India," London, 1860; Greathed's Letters, "A Lady's Diary of the Siege of Lucknow," "Russell's Diary," and many others, have been consulted.

that the Council—named, like the President, by the Crown, “but restricted to individuals who had either been Directors of the Company, or had resided in India for a certain period with or without employment—should consist of eight members, elected for eight years, two retiring by rotation every two years; in order that successive administrations might have an opportunity of renewing the Council from time to time by the introduction of persons returning from India with fresh knowledge and ideas.”

In all disputed pair : the final decision was to rest with the President, because the Cabinet of which he was a member would be henceforth responsible alone for his measures; but, in the event of any great difference of opinion, the members of Council had reserved to them the right of recording that circumstance, and the reasons for it, in the minutes. In the matter of patronage, all the appointments hitherto made in India were left by the proposed Bill to be made there as before; and at home, while the writerships remained open to public competition, the gift of cadetships would be shared by the President and Council, precisely as they had previously been by the President of the Board of Control, and the Court of Directors at Leadenhall Street.

When the motion for leave to bring in this Bill was made, Mr. Thomas Baring (so well-known as a capitalist, and connected with some of the greatest monetary operations of the age), who had presented the Company's petition to the Lower House, moved as an amendment, “That it is not at present expedient to legislate for the Government of India;” but after a keen debate, which was continued for several successive nights, his motion was negatived by 318 to 173, whereas the continuance of the Government of India in the hands of the Company was voted without a division only five years before—a fact which evinces the great and sudden change that had come over the public mind. The supporters of Lord Palmerston's Bill so far outnumbered its opponents that it was considered beyond the reach of all danger; and yet there arose a sudden contingency altogether unconnected with Indian affairs, by which, through a change of Ministry, the Bill was not destined to become law.

An attempt to assassinate the Emperor of

France caused such an outcry concerning foreign refugees in this country, that the Government was constrained to introduce what was called a Conspiracy Bill, on the second reading of which, on the 19th of February, the Palmerston Ministry found themselves in such a minority that they were compelled to resign; and the new Ministry formed by the Earl of Derby could scarcely fail, from its general character, and also from the appointment of Lord Ellenborough to the Presidency of the Board of Control, to have a great effect on Indian affairs. The Conservatives had not only supported Mr. Baring's amendment, but their leaders in the Lords and Commons, when votes of thanks were proposed to the generals commanding in India, and to Civil officials there for the eminent skill

and courage shown by them at a crisis so momentous, took special exception to the name of Lord Canning, “on the ground that the merits of his administration during the crisis were very questionable, and at least ought not to be recognised till they were better ascertained. There were thus two points to which the new Ministry stood committed, as far as previous expressions of opinion could bind them—the one, the impolicy of introducing an India Bill at present; and the other, a determination not to recognise the merits of Lord Canning's administration without further inquiry. The latter point,



TANTIA TOPPE.

(From a Drawing by a Native.)

though insignificant with the other, was felt to be the more pressing, as it was of a party character; and we cannot, therefore, wonder that, in the vigorous hands of Lord Ellenborough, to whose department it officially belonged, it soon gave rise to discussions, which for a time absorbed all the interest which was felt in the other.”*

The new Ministry had certainly some difficulties before them, and were somewhat in a false position. The vote in favour of the India Bill was so overwhelming that it could not be supposed that the same identical House would reverse that vote at the mere wish of a new Ministry. Hence, if the latter were to retain office, it could only be by their adopting the opinions of the majority, and by speedily introducing another India Bill which would secure the objects suggested by that of Lord Palmerston, and would, at the same time, be free from certain points in it which were held to be

* Beveridge.

objectionable. Their apparent change of opinion was plausibly accounted for, by implying that as the effect of the vote on the first Bill must have been to weaken the authority of the Company, the transfer of it to the sovereign, though then inexpedient, had become absolutely necessary now.

So Mr. Disraeli, then Chancellor of the Exchequer, and leader of the House of Commons, on the 26th of March, 1858, introduced the "India Bill, No. 2," so called to distinguish it from the other, which still retained precedence by not having been quite abandoned. By this quibble, the chief object—the transference of the government of India to the Crown—was the same, but the mode of effecting it was different.

As in Lord Palmerston's Bill, there was to be a President and Council; but that body, instead of being limited to eight members nominated by the Crown, was to consist of eighteen, nine of whom were to be nominated, and nine elected. In the selection of the latter the Royal power would be perfectly excluded; but in regard even to the former, though named by the Crown, the qualifications that were necessary to render them eligible were such as to make them true representatives of Indian interests. "Four representing the Civil Service, must have served in it ten years: one in Upper India, one in Bengal proper, one in the Presidency of Madras, and one in that of Bombay. Of the four representing the military service, one, a Queen's officer, must have served five years in India, and each of the other three ten years in their respective presidencies. The remaining nominee was to be an individual whose employment in India, as resident or political agent at a native court, must have made him well acquainted with native character. Of the elected half of the Council, four were to be eligible only after ten years' employment, or fifteen years' residence without employment, in India."

Those having power of election, supposed to number about 5,000, were to consist of all civil and military officers who had been ten years in India; of all persons still resident there and possessed of shares in any public work to the value of £2,000, and of all proprietors of £1,000 of India stock. It was proposed that the other five elected members must have been ten years resident in India, or must have been engaged for firms, in the trade or exportation of Indian manufactures, and were to be elected by the Parliamentary constituencies of the towns: London, Manchester, Liverpool, Glasgow, and Belfast.

Though slightly opposed, this important Bill was allowed to be introduced without a vote; but

when the various points of it came to be dissected and canvassed during the Easter recess, they excited so much ridicule and opposition, as to threaten the existence of the Ministry that had brought it forward. At this crisis Lord John Russell, who had not been a member of the late Cabinet (having retired from office in 1855, after his unsatisfactory mission to the Vienna Conference, while the Crimean war was in progress), came suddenly to the rescue by a suggestion that the House "should not proceed by Bill, but by a series of resolutions on which a Bill more acceptable than either of those yet proposed might afterwards be founded."

Mr. Disraeli, with evident satisfaction, accepted the proposition, and was even willing that Lord John Russell should bring forward the resolutions in person; but this mode of disposing of Government business being disapproved of by the House, Mr. Disraeli undertook the task, and brought forward fourteen propositions for separate discussion and for selection, to the end that those approved of might form the basis of a third Bill, combining all the best points of its two predecessors. A long debate ensued, but his two first resolutions—one declaring the expediency of an immediate transfer of the government of India to the Crown, the other empowering the Queen to commit the Home administration to one or her responsible Ministers—were adopted without division.

At this point the discussion was arrested by an act of indiscretion on the part of Lord Ellenborough—his injudicious publication of a document concerning the kingdom of Oude.

At this crisis Lucknow was still in the hands of the rebels, and, in contemplation of its capture by Sir Colin Campbell, Lord Canning had prepared a proclamation to be issued as soon as our colours once more waved over the city. It dealt at length upon the rebellion, and the great crimes of which the people of Oude had been guilty, the just retribution to which they had subjected themselves, that their capital should be held by a force that nothing could withstand, and that the authority of the British Government would be carried into every corner of the province. That those who had been steadfast in their allegiance would be rewarded, and that therefore the Rajahs of Butrampora, of Pudinah, Rao Buksh Sing of Kutiaree, the Talukdar of Sissaindie, the Zemindars of Gopal Ghat and of Baiswarah, were "to be honoured and sole hereditary proprietors of the land which they held when Oude came under British rule, subject only to such moderate assessment as might be

imposed upon them; and that these loyal men will be further rewarded in such manner and to such extent as, upon consideration of their merits and their position, the Governor-General shall determine."

With the above six exceptions, he announced the entire soil of Oude as confiscated to the British Government, and simply promised that the lives of all other talookdars, chiefs, and zemindars who made due submission would be safe, provided their hands were not stained with European blood, in which case they would be excluded from all mercy.

When this proclamation was prepared, Lord Canning knew nothing of the change of Ministry, and had not received a despatch, sent through the Secret Committee of the Court of Directors, in which the views of the Conservative Government as to any amnesty to those who were in rebellion were fully detailed. This despatch, which was dated 24th March, 1858, suggested a lenient line of policy, while admitting that crimes had been committed against us which it would be criminal to forgive, and recommended that we should act to the people, when fully subdued, with the generosity and justice "which are congenial to the British character;" and then, with a natural fear of what might be the temper of our troops at such a time, this remarkable document concluded thus: "In carrying these views into execution you may meet with obstructions from those who, maddened by the scenes they have witnessed, may desire to substitute their own policy for that of the Government; but persevere firmly in doing what you may think right: make those who would counteract you feel that you are resolved to rule, and that you will be served by none who will not obey."

During the short time that the Earl of Ellenborough held the administration of India, he appeared far from being an indulgent ruler, or one disposed to view gently native delinquencies there: nor should we forget his treatment of the Ameers of Scinde and invasion of the district of Gwalior; hence, in the face of the dreadful events which characterised the sepoy revolt, his sudden moderation and leniency seemed somewhat out of place and ill-timed; but only shortly after sending his despatch, he received a copy of Lord Canning's proposed proclamation, together with that of certain instructions issued to Sir James Outram, which showed distinctly that the confiscation of the Kingdom of Oude was no idle threat. Considering the features already referred to in the Indian experiences of the Earl of Ellenborough, he could have paused before inditing to Lord

Canning a severe letter in animadversion of his intended proclamation, which—the turn of events might so order it—would perhaps not be issued at all. Nevertheless, in his capacity of President of the Board of Control, he wrote a new despatch denouncing the Oude proclamation in language so strong "and sarcastic as to be almost insulting, and spoke of the talookdars and other proprietors of Oude as if they were more sinned against than sinning, and were entitled to be treated rather as patriots than as rebels."

The premature publication of this singular despatch by Lord Ellenborough at such a time was every way calculated, from its entire tenor, to weaken the authority of the Governor-General, and to encourage the spread of rebellion by the hope of ultimate impunity. Being transmitted through the Secret Committee—men sworn to secrecy—it was declared to be an outrageous proceeding, alike discourteous and unstatesmanlike, to place it in the hands of the general public weeks before it could be received by the Governor-General.

The friends of the latter expressed so much disapprobation of the whole proceeding that the Earl of Shaftesbury and Mr. Cardwell gave notice of their intention to bring the subject before both Houses of Parliament by motions amounting to Ministerial censure; and then Lord Ellenborough, to save his colleagues, retired from the office which he had held but a few weeks, thus bringing his official connection with Indian affairs to an abrupt termination for a second time.

Still the Whig party, being full of anxiety to regain place, refused to be satisfied with the Earl's retirement, and the motions were absurdly persisted in till the affair degenerated into a mere struggle between parties, which ended in a complete Ministerial triumph on the opportune arrival of important despatches from India when the debate was at its height. Before being issued the proclamation which had caused such disturbance in the Cabinet had been greatly modified in its spirit, by the advice of Sir James Outram, who expressed his firm conviction that if the talookdars of Oude were reduced to desperation they would betake themselves to a guerilla warfare, which would lead to the loss of thousands of our soldiers by battle, disease, and exposure. Lord Shaftesbury's motion had been lost in the Upper House, and that of Mr. Cardwell was still under discussion in the Commons, when it was now withdrawn, and the Ministry were thus left at liberty to proceed with Mr. Disraeli's resolutions, which, after the usual discussion, were embodied in a Bill, which became law on the 2nd of August, 1858, entitled "An Act

for the better Government of India." (1st and 2nd Victoria, chapter 106.)

No less than eighty-five sections are in this important Act, which transferred 150,000,000 of the subjects of the East India Company to its sovereign. It enacts that India shall be governed by, and in the name of, Her Majesty, through one of her principal Secretaries of State, assisted by a Board composed of fifteen members, to be styled the Council of India. Of these fifteen, eight are to be

is to transact, in the United Kingdom, the business relating to India, and in all cases where a difference of opinion may arise, the vote of the Secretary of State shall be final, though each member may require that his opinion and the reasons therefore made be recorded in the minutes. The appointments to the Civil Service, as well as cadetships in the engineers and artillery, shall be thrown open to public competition, and conferred on the successful candidates in the order of proficiency.



PORTRAIT OF SIR JAMES OUTRAM

nominated by the Crown, and seven to be elected, and the first election only by the then existing Court of Directors, and in future by the Council, subject to the proviso that the majority, whether nominated or elected, shall always, with the exception of those nominated by the Directors, be persons who have been ten years at least in India previous to appointment.

The Secretary of State for India, should he be a layman, in addition to the present four shall have the same salary as they, and each member of Council a salary of £1,200, with a retiring pension of £1,000, all to be paid by the Indian revenue. Every order sent to India shall be signed by one of the principal Secretaries of State, but the Council

In regard to patronage all appointments hitherto made by the Directors shall henceforth be made by the majority by warrant under the royal sign manual. Those sections of the Act which relate to the transfer of property, revenue, existing establishments, and so forth, are too voluminous for reference here.

On the 1st of September, 1858, the Court of Directors met for the last time in their Council Chamber at Leadenhall Street, and, as their last Act of administration, gracefully voted an annuity of £2,000 per annum to Sir John Lawrence, one of the chief instruments of saving that vast empire which was now transferred to the Crown.



THE GARDENS OF THE TAJ, AGRA.

So passed away that famous old East India Company, which was incorporated by Queen Elizabeth in 1600, but the political existence of which is chiefly to be dated from the Battle of Plassey, in 1757, after the lapse of 100 years, by the revolt of that army which had won so many victories. There is no record in history of so brilliant a career, nor is there any instance of power so extensive and so rapidly acquired, with so few causes of regret on the score of political morality. Notwithstanding its errors and its shortcomings (remarks Marshman with justice), it may safely be affirmed that no foreign dependency has ever been administered in a spirit of higher energy, or greater benevolence, or by a longer succession of great men. But its high mission was accomplished, and the anomaly of continuing the government of so vast a dominion with such an agency was daily becoming more obvious, and even without the dark crisis of the Mutiny the termination of its trust could not have been far distant.*

Shortly after the passing of the India Act, Her Majesty in Council caused a proclamation to be issued, to notify the important changes introduced by it, and the line of policy it was her royal desire and intention to pursue, and constituting Viscount Canning her "first Viceroy and Governor-General." Translated into the various languages of India, it was addressed to the princes, chiefs, and people, and was first published by the Governor-General in person, and, amid the thunder of cannon, with great state, at Allahabad, on the 1st of November, 1858. It announced that Her Majesty had at length assumed the Government of India, which had hitherto been conducted by her trustees, the Honourable East India Company; that ancient rights and usages should all be inviolate, that the public service should be open to all her subjects without regard to caste or creed, and that while the Government was a Christian one, no one should be either molested or benefited by his creed. This proclamation was cordially welcomed by the native princes. The *ickbal*, or good fortune of the East India Company, expired with the Mutiny which they thought exposed its weakness. British authority was now nearly restored (though Oude had yet to be cleared of rebels) by the armaments sent forth by the Queen, and it seemed but reasonable and expedient that she should assume the sceptre of India. The introduction of an entirely new policy after such a convulsion was eminently calculated to reassure the public mind. Moreover, the natives of India have from the earliest period paid profound veneration to the principle of

monarchy, and an emotion of pride and satisfaction was diffused through the country in being considered the subjects of a sovereign and not of an inferior power, in which light the Company was now viewed.*

The royal proclamation included this:—"We know and respect the feelings of attachment with which the natives of India regard the lands inherited by them from their ancestors, and we desire to protect them in all rights connected therewith, subject to the equitable demands of the State, and we will that generally in framing and administering the law due regard be paid to the ancient rights, usages, and customs of India. We deeply lament the evils and misery which have been brought upon India by the acts of ambitious men, who have deceived their countrymen by false reports, and led them into open rebellion in the field; we desire to show our mercy by pardoning the offences of those who have been thus misled, but who desire to return to the path of duty. . . . Our clemency will be extended to all offenders, save and except those who have been, or shall be, convicted of having directly taken part in the murder of British subjects. With regard to such, the demands of justice forbid the exercise of mercy. To those who have willingly given an asylum to murderers, knowing them to be such, their lives alone can be guaranteed; but in apportioning the penalty due to such persons, full consideration will be given to any circumstances under which they have been induced to throw off their allegiance; and large indulgence will be shown to those whose crimes may appear to have originated in too credulous acceptance of the false reports circulated by designing men. To all others in arms against the Government we hereby promise unconditional pardon, amnesty, and oblivion of all offence against ourselves, our crown and dignity, on their return to their homes and peaceful pursuits. It is our royal pleasure that these terms of grace and amnesty should be extended to all those who comply with these conditions before the 1st day of January next. When, by the blessing of Providence, internal tranquillity shall be restored, it is our earnest desire to stimulate the peaceful industry of India, to promote works of public utility and improvement, and to administer its Government for the benefit of all our subjects therein. In their prosperity will be our strength, in their contentment our security, and in their gratitude our best reward. And may the God of all power grant to us, and to those in authority under us, strength to carry out these our wishes for the good of our people."

* "Hist. of India," vol. iii.

* Ibid.

Admirable though the spirit of this proclamation, some of those leaders whose atrocities had placed them, as they too well knew, beyond the hope of mercy, did all in their power to throw discredit on a document which led them to dread the desertion of their followers. The most formidable attempt of this kind was made by the Begum of Oude, who, acting in the name of her son, the child whom the mutineers had crowned king, replied to it by a formal counter-proclamation, in which that of Her Majesty was analysed in each paragraph seriatim, and its promises treated with derision.

"In the proclamation," says the Mussulman begum, "it is written that the Christian religion is true, but no other creed will suffer oppression, and that the laws will be observed towards all. What has the administration of justice to do with the truth or falsehood of religion? That religion is true which acknowledges one God, and knows no

other. Where there are three gods in a religion, neither Mussulmans nor Hindoos—nay, not even Jews, Sun-worshippers, or Fire-worshippers—can believe it to be true. To eat pigs and drink wine, to bite greased cartridges, and to mix pig's fat with flour and sweetmeats, to destroy Hindu and Mussulman temples on pretence of making roads to build churches, to send clergymen into the streets and alleys to preach the Christian religion, to institute English schools and pay people a monthly stipend for learning the English sciences, while the places of worship of Hindoos and Mussulmans are to this day entirely neglected; with all this how can the people believe that religion will not be interfered with? The rebellion began with religion, and for it millions of men have been killed. Let no our subjects be deceived; thousands were deprived of their religion in the north-west, and thousands were hanged rather than abandon their religion."

CHAPTER LV.

THE MOVEMENTS OF LORD CLYDE AND SIR HOPE GRANT IN OUDE.—THE ESCAPES OF BENE MADHOO
—THE DURBAR AT CAWNPORE.—AMALGAMATION OF THE FORCES.

FOR his eminent military services, Sir Colin Campbell, the Commander-in-chief in India, had been raised to the peerage of Britain as Baron Clyde of Clydesdale. He was also gazetted a general, with the colonelcy of the 93rd Highlanders. He was also one of the Supreme Council, the other members being Mr. John Peter Grant, Lieutenant-General Sir James Outram, Bart., the Hon. R. Ricketts, and Mr. Barnes Peacock.

After taking part in the grand ceremony of reading the royal proclamation at Allahabad, Lord Clyde crossed the Ganges there on the 2nd of November, 1858, and repaired to his head-quarters, then at Pertabghur, in a part of Oude where the country is fertile, and undulating with extensive fields of poppies and wheat. As the rebels in that kingdom could no longer keep the field, but only maintain a kind of desultory warfare while refractory chiefs could trust to the strength of their forts and the faith of their retainers, his operations partook less of the character of a campaign than a march to enforce the law, as he announced by a proclamation which he issued on the 26th of October.

While insisting that all kind of resistance must

cease on the part of the natives of Oude, this document added, "The most exact discipline will be preserved in the camps and on the march, and when there is no resistance, houses and crops will be spared, and no plundering allowed in the towns and villages. But wherever there is resistance, or even a single shot fired against the troops, the inhabitants must expect to incur the fate they have brought upon themselves. Their houses will be plundered, and their villages burned. This proclamation includes all ranks of the people, from the talookdars to the poorest ryots. The Commander-in-chief invites all the well-disposed to remain in their towns and villages, where they will be sure of his protection against all violence."

Despite his pacific intentions, Lord Clyde found himself compelled to march direct against the Raja of Amethie, who was lord of a mud-built fort situated in the midst of a wild jungle, where he was at the head of a force stated to be 26,000 men, with a park of artillery. To have battered this stronghold would have been an easy task for Lord Clyde's artillery, but as he now preferred peaceful measures, he placed himself in communication with

the rajah by letter, and fixed a date on which he was to decide, whether he would capitulate or defend himself.

On the 9th of November, when Clyde's advanced guard was within three miles of Amethie, it was fired on, and some syces came rushing back on the main body to announce that the enemy were in front. In the evening a messenger came from the rajah to express his regret for what had taken place, urging that it had been done without his orders by the sepoy deserters, who were beyond his control. He would submit, he added, and give up his cannon, but his authority was limited to his own troops. Distrusting all this, Lord Clyde left him the alternative of surrendering next day, or having his fort beaten to pieces about his ears.

On this, the rajah sent word that he would capitulate on the following day. Stealing out in the night, he came into the camp, by which he secured his own person, family, and property; but deluded Lord Clyde, who found that the whole body of sepoys, to the number of several thousands, had silently marched off in the dusk; and when Amethie was entered it was found to contain only 3,000 of the rajah's matchlock-men, with a few old guns, instead of thirty, which he was known to possess, but had hidden in the surrounding jungle.

Lord Clyde's pioneers and working parties cleared away much of the latter, completely dismantled the fort, and he proceeded on his march again. Another refractory chief, named Bene Madhoo, who had added to his own raj troops by receiving the fugitive sepoys, who had eluded us at Amethie. While on route to his mud fort, which was situated at Shunkerpore, a messenger reached Lord Clyde from the son of Bene Madhoo, who offered to expel the latter, as he was an adherent of Brijais Kudr (the begum's son), and make terms for himself with the British Government, to which he professed all loyalty. Believing that all this was but a scheme, this proud between the father and son to elude for native princet no reply, but continued to advance the East India Co.

which they thought reached Pechwarra, which is authority was now nearly-west of that place, while had yet to be cleared of rebels. Sir Hope Grant, appointed forth by the Queen, and by the road from sonable and expedient that shanks of the Sye, and sceptre of India. The introduction of bows and arrows, new policy after such a cor to be hemmed in, the culated to reassure the Grant and Lord Clyde, of the natives of India in the dark, and moving unpaid profound y troops, guns, women, treasure, of n

pore was entered, nothing was found therein but a few old fakirs, some useless bullocks, and a mad elephant. When Bene Madhoo was next heard of, he had taken post at Poorwah, a town of Oude, from whence, with something of irony, he sent a messenger to Lord Clyde, asking what terms he might expect now.

As Shunkerpore was considered to be reduced, Lord Clyde broke up his force. Sir Hope Grant's column marched northwards, and crossed the Gogra into Gorruckpore, a district which had been ceded to Britain by the Nabob of Oude in 1801, and the northern portion of which is covered with thick primeval forests; while a detachment from Lucknow moved in the direction of Fyzabad, and another, led by Colonel F. Evelagh, had orders to follow up Bene Madhoo, and keep him closely in sight. With the same purpose, Lord Clyde marched through Roy Bareilly, on the 20th of November, and on the 21st crossed the Sye, at the town of Kunpore, when Bene Madhoo was reported to be at Doondeakira, a place about thirty miles from Cawnpore, belonging to Ram Bux, a zemindar, or landowner, who had murdered in cold blood many of the poor fugitives from that place. His stronghold was attacked and captured; but again Bene Madhoo effected a safe retreat, or escape, with all his troops and their equipage, and for some days nothing was known of his whereabouts, though Lord Clyde, now thoroughly exasperated, made several marches till he found himself in the vicinity of Lucknow, when Mr. Roberts, the commissioner, reported that the pacification of the country was making rapid progress, and many chiefs had availed themselves of the amnesty offered by the proclamation of Her Majesty.

On the 6th of December, Lord Clyde, after having marched some twenty miles from his camp at Bune, on the Cawnpore road, to Nawabgunge, on that to Fyzabad, heard from his spies that the ubiquitous Bene Madhoo was not more than twenty miles distant from his outposts, at a place on the river Gogra, named the Beyram Ghaut. Making sure to have him now, Lord Clyde, leaving all his infantry under Brigadier Horsford, dashed towards the river at full speed with all his cavalry and four guns of the horse artillery, but arrived just in time to find that the rebel force, under Bene Madhoo, had crossed it, and was safe on the other side, where he had moored all the boats. Halting for a day, till Horsford brought on the infantry, and leaving a detachment at the Ghaut to protect a brigade of engineers who, under Colonel Henry Drury Harness, were constructing a pontoon bridge, Lord Clyde marched to Fyzabad, where he

halted on the 20th of December; but being too impatient to await the colonel's bridge, he crossed by that of Fyzabad, to put in execution a previously arranged movement.

On the 25th of the preceding month, Sir Hope Grant had already crossed the river, and after attacking and routing a body of insurgents under the Rajah of Gonda, and taking possession of that place, had marched to Secrora, a town fifteen miles eastward of the Beyram Ghaut. He was thus in rear of Bene Madhoo, and the latter must have been cut off now by Clyde's advance, had he not discovered his peril in time, and eluded both generals by another rapid flight.

The frontier of Rohilcund, from whence these wandering insurgents had been driven into Oude, was now carefully watched by a chain of posts, with every practicable passage of the Gogra; and thus, on the east, west, and south, the foe was barred in a comparatively narrow space, and nothing remained for them now but to die on the field, or amid the miasmatic marshes of Nepaul.

On the 26th of December, after a twenty-one miles' march, Lord Clyde attacked a considerable body of them at a place named Burgidia; he turned their flank and routed them, and they were pursued till darkness fell, on which all their guns were captured; and next day his troops marched to the fort of Musjidia. "This place," reported Lord Clyde, "was taken after three hours of vertical fire from two mortars, and a cannonade from an eighteen-pounder and an eight-inch howitzer, the infantry being carefully laid out to command the enemy's embrasures and parapets. I have much satisfaction in dwelling on the manner in which the fort was captured, with a very trifling amount of loss to the troops engaged. The chief engineer, Colonel Harness, R.E., has reported it to be one of the strongest, as respects artificial defences, that he has seen in India. But, like all the others, it was without bomb-proof covers, and consequently fell easily into our hands after a few hours of well-directed fire. On the 29th the troops returned to Nanpara, made a forced march on the night of the 30th to Bankee, where the enemy had loitered under the Nana. He was surprised and attacked with great vigour, driven through the jungle, which he attempted to defend, and finally into and across the Raptée, the 7th Hussars entering that river with the fugitives."*

Next day, the general learned that all the various bodies of the rebels who had been retreating before him, and Sir Hope Grant from the day of their arrival at Beyram Ghaut, had either surrendered or

been hurled over the frontier of Nepaul, and among these was a band under the indefatigable Begum of Oude. In these affairs we captured eighteen pieces of cannon.

Meanwhile, Brigadier Rowcroft had, on the 22d of December, attacked Toolasepore, driving the rebel leader, Bala Row, from thence to the mountains, with the loss of two guns. "Sir Hope Grant," says Lord Clyde, "was alarmed about his flank being turned to the eastward, and to the north of Goruckpore. Acting according to his instructions, and with great judgment, he made that point absolutely safe before renewing his attack on Bala Row. That being done, he advanced through the jungles on that leader, and took fifteen guns from him, almost without a show of resistance on the part of the rebels, the latter dispersing, and seeking refuge in the adjacent hills, and Bala Row fleeing into the interior, as the Nana and his brother had done before him. Thus has the contest in Oude been brought to an end, and the resistance of 150,000 armed men been subdued with a very moderate loss to Her Majesty's troops, and the most merciful forbearance towards the misguided enemy."*

The spirit of revolt was not dead, but the Mutiny was virtually at an end, and the malaria of the Terai of Nepaul proved as fatal to the fugitives as the swords from which they fled. The infamous Nana Sahib and his brother died amid the jungles there, in 1859, as Marshman asserts; the King of Delhi, by that time, escaping the capital punishment his crimes merited, was expiating them as a transported convict; the ambitious Begum of Oude was glad to find a peaceful asylum at Khatmandoo; the Rancee of Jhansi had been slain, as we have said, by one of our hussars; Tantia Topee, after wandering from place to place with many armed followers and much treasure, was at length betrayed by his most trusted friend, and was seized on the 7th of April while asleep in the jungle, and tried and executed at Sepra. It has been said that, "with the exception of the Rancee of Jhansi and the Begum of Oude, he was the only great leader whom the rebellion produced, and the extraordinary energy and valour he displayed might have entitled him to a more lenient penalty; but for the monster who had taken his seat on a stage, and directed the diabolical massacre at the Ghaut of Cawnpore, there could be no compassion."

On the 8th of July, 1859, Lord Canning proclaimed peace throughout India; and on the 12th of October he commenced a tour through the provinces much in the style of a royal progress, as

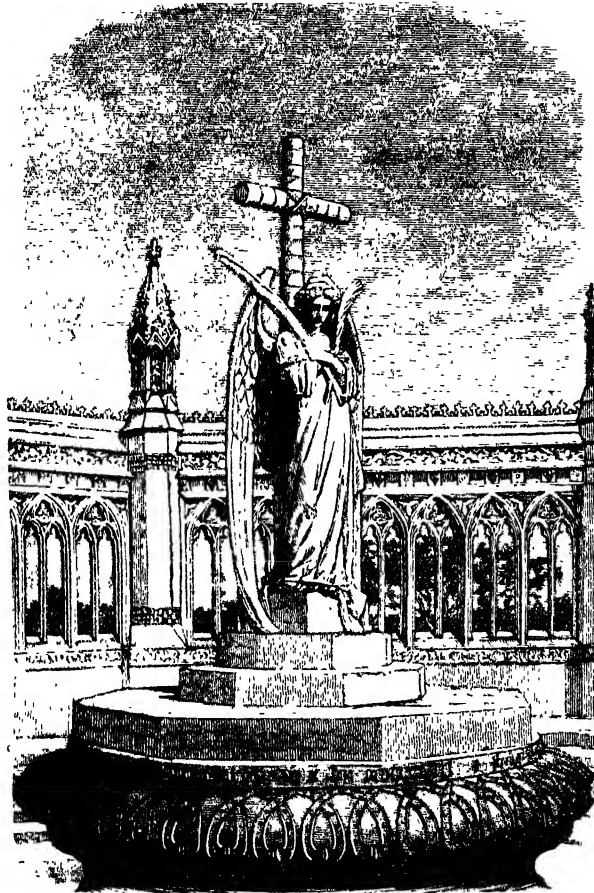
* Despatches.

* Ibid.

ceiving the homage of chiefs and nobles in Her Majesty's name, and holding levees with a display of magnificence well calculated to dazzle the Oriental mind, bestowing *khelats*, or dresses of honour, and ornaments on those whose services during the Mutiny were deemed worthy of such an acknowledgment.

At Cawnpore—where a memorial church has since

staff, "a flock of black coats," and about 200 officers in various uniforms. *Khelats* and presents were given to the various princes; but to one only, the Rajah of Rewah, was this done personally by Lord Canning, who, with his own hands, hung a chain round his neck, and he specially eulogised the Chikaree Rajah for his marked devotion to the British cause, in having not only borne arms against



THE MEMORIAL AT CAWNPORE.

been erected over the well where the victims of the massacre lie—he held a *darbar* on the 3rd of November, which was famous for its splendour. There were present from eighty to one hundred rajahs, with their brothers and Ministers, clad in the richest and most brilliantly coloured silks, blazing with jewels, and not two of them dressed alike. The hour fixed for the *darbar* was two o'clock, by which time all were in their seats; a passage-tent, lined by the grenadiers of the 35th Regiment, led to the *darbar*-tent, a double-poled pavilion, lined with yellow. Lord Canning sat in the centre, and on his right were all the rajahs; on his left, Lord Clyde, the

rebels, but offered his son as a hostage to save the life of a British officer.

"Lord Clyde," said the viceroy, "I wish to bring to your notice the conduct of this brave man who showed such marked devotion to the British cause; and I trust that every officer of the Queen now present will remember this, and should they ever come in contact with this rajah, act accordingly."

When the late Company's charter was renewed in 1853, the Supreme Council, which had been invested with the power of imperial legislation, was increased by the addition of one member from

* *Times*.

each presidency, and lieutenant-governorship, and two judges of the Supreme Court; but now a more important alteration was made upon the transference of the Government of India to the Crown. The two judges were excluded, and the Viceroy was instructed to summon additional members, not exceeding twelve in number, when engaged in making laws. One-half the number was to consist of non-official members, who might be either Europeans or natives; thus the latter, for the first time,

when the war with China came on. The actual merit of availing ourselves of their services lies with the Marquis of Dalhousie, who, when a sepoy regiment refused to embark for Rangoon, supplied its place by a battalion of Punjaubees; and this example was followed by Lord Canning in the war we are about to relate.

The transference of the East India Company's establishments to the Crown included the transfer of their European troops of all ranks and arms,



PORTRAIT OF LORD CLYDE.

obtained a voice in the deliberations of the State. The earliest of these members of Council were the Rajahs of Benares and Putteala, and Rajah Dinkur Rao, all of whom had been steadfast in their allegiance to Britain during the revolt. To the Governments of Bengal, Bombay, and Madras, similar councils were attached, with the same admixture of natives of position.

To the assistance derived through the annexation of the Punjab, the suppression of the Mutiny was mainly due; but the full value of this great nursery for soldiers of high courage—which was fortunately free from that intolerable nuisance, the caste prejudices of the sepoys—was fully developed

estimated at about 24,000 men. On the return of Lord Clyde to Europe, it fell to the lot of Sir Hugh Rose, who succeeded him as Commander-in-chief, to superintend and direct the amalgamation of the Queen's forces with those of the late Company. By his zeal, energy, and professional skill on this occasion, he succeeded in reforming many old-standing abuses and defects, and greatly promoted the comfort and efficiency of the troops. Three regiments of Hussars were eventually added to the cavalry of the line; and to the infantry were added the Bombay, Bengal, and Madras European Fusiliers and Light Infantry, now respectively numbered from the 101st to the 109th Foot.

Though this made no change in the position or prospects of the men, they protested against being handed over from one service to another without being allowed some voice in the matter, and such a strong feeling of dissatisfaction was manifested, that it attained the aspect of insubordination in the corps. To all who objected to the change, Lord Canning offered their discharge and a free passage home to Britain. In reality the soldiers felt no objection to the royal service; but, not unnaturally, looked for a small bounty, similar to that which the royal troops received when, at the expiration of their time, they re-enlisted into other regiments. As this expectation, which was perfectly reasonable, was injudiciously denied them, 10,000 men demanded their discharge; hence the State, by the payment of their passage home, in addition to the loss of more than the petty bounty would have cost, lost the invaluable services of a body of trained and seasoned British soldiers, accustomed to war and hardship. Contrary to the advice of the most eminent Indian statesmen, it was resolved to abolish the local European army, the value of which had been insisted on by Lord Cornwallis and all his successors.*

The Indian Navy--as the small squadron of armed schooners belonging to the Company, employed as a species of police in the Indian seas, was termed--was abolished, and the duty assigned exclusively to ships of the Royal Navy.

During the year that saw all these changes, 1850, the indigo districts of Bengal were much disturbed by the refusal of the ryots to cultivate that plant. The cultivation had never been very remunerative, but they were bound to it by advances forced on them by the planters, and by contracts to which they were often obliged to affix their mark before witnesses, though ignorant of their contents. When once they accepted an advance, they could never free themselves from the planter's books: and hence the Lieutenant-Governor of Bengal, Mr. F. J. Halliday, on his return from Dacca, was surrounded by thousands of men and women, who lined the banks for a whole day's journey, crying aloud and piteously to him for justice.

To meet this new difficulty, the Government passed an Act inflicting a penalty for breaking the contracts of the year, and appointing a commission to investigate the causes of complaint among the ryots. They were fully substantiated; and Sir Charles Wood, Bart., who in that year had been appointed Secretary of State for India and President of the Indian Council, refused to sanction the proposal, which had been made, to consider the

non-performance of a civil contract by a ryot the ground of a criminal prosecution.

The Indian debt had been increased by the Mutiny by fifty crores, and the yearly expenditure, by increased military charges, had risen from thirty-three to fifty crores, while the actual deficit amounted to ten crores, for the financial department had generally been the weak point of the Indian Government. Famous though the land had been in the production of brilliant soldiers, able diplomatists, and eminent statesmen, it had never had a Chancellor of the Exchequer.

To supply this deficiency, Sir Charles Wood resolved to add a financial member to the Executive Council, and for this new post selected Mr. James Wilson, one of the secretaries of the Treasury in London, whose great speciality was finance. He proceeded to have a complete revision of the Customs on scientific principles; as an exceptional impost to meet the monetary charges caused by the late revolt, he laid on an income tax for five years, he imposed a licence duty, and remodelled the currency, withdrawing the privilege of issuing bank-notes, which had been granted by charter to the Bengal banks. A state paper currency was thus created. All his plans were most successful. In less than three years the heavy deficit was removed; but, unhappily, ere all his reforms were complete, Mr. Wilson had to succumb to the climate, and death cut short his career.

In the year 1860, the penal code for India, which Mr. Macaulay had drawn up in 1837, after being for years bandied from one commission to another, having at length been approved of, became law; while, at the same time, the Legislative Council approved of an excellent code of civil and criminal procedure, which substituted simplicity and rapidity for the stupidly complicated, antiquated, and tardy forms of pleading which before so completely impeded the course of justice.

In this year John, Lord Elphinstone, formerly Governor of Madras, and latterly of Bombay, who had rendered the highest service to the State during the revolt, by the vigorous repression of every hostile tendency, and by the organisation of the force which crushed the insurrection in Central India, returned to Britain, with his constitution, after thirty-three years' service, so seriously impaired by the latter labours and anxieties of his post, that he sank into a premature grave. He had formerly been an officer of the Horse Guards, and went to India at an early age.

His Highness the Nizam, who had remained steadfast and true to us during the Mutiny, was

* Marshman.

rewarded with every honour Lord Canning could bestow, and with the more substantial gift of three of the provinces, which he assigned to meet the payment of his contingent and other monetary obligations, as well as the remission of the balance

of his debt to the extent of half a crore of rupees. He had likewise transferred to him the principality of Shorapore, which had been confiscated by the Viceroy, in consequence of the treason of the rajah of that place.

CHAPTER LVI.

THIRD WAR WITH CHINA.

THE year 1860 saw us for a third time in collision with China: the Celestial Empire, the land of opium, of singularly combined civilisation and barbarity, ignorance and exclusiveness. During the three preceding years, a bad feeling had existed in the minds of the people there against Europeans and Christians generally, and this was particularly manifested in what may be called Further India, or the Asiatic empire of Annam, comprising a great portion of the peninsula between Hindostan and China, or the regions generally known as Cochin China and Tonquin. At Vinh-tri, in that country, the storm against the Christians broke out in 1857, and in the persecution and atrocities that ensued, none surpassed in cruelty the governor of Nam-dinh, a mandarin who bitterly hated all Christians, and posted the following notice on the gates of the city:—

“Is it possible that people born in this great kingdom can give up the traditions of their ancestors to observe the bad practices of the religion of Europeans? What extreme folly! Have any of you ever been in Europe, so as to be able to form any conception of its customs? I once visited it in my youth in the way of business, and what I learnt was this: there are no more than seventeen large villages, whose inhabitants are poor and barbarous, and the soldiers are not so many as in the single province of Nam-dinh. Can you hope for anything from them? So little are they able to help you, so powerless are they against our king, that should they appear on our coast with their ships of war, I would, to show my scorn, open my theatre before their eyes. And what can you expect from the priests of Jesus and their followers, who are put to death and sent into exile, and their God does not interfere to deliver them from our hands?”*

Under pressure, he compelled the Christians to

* Shortland's "Persecutions in Annam," &c.

burn their books, trample on the cross, and insult it by blasphemous words, and in some places they had flesh torn by red hot pincers from the body. Whole villages were destroyed, convents and churches burned and the inhabitants scattered or put to terrible deaths; and these outrages were continued till a treaty with France, on the 5th of June, 1862, put an end to the persecution, though at Tonquin, even after it, a priest was executed, and several Christians were drowned or burned, "so loth were the persecutors to give up the prey of which they once had possession."*

While the French troops were employed on the coast of Annam, the mandarins derived so much confidence that when our envoy was entering the Peiho river, expecting to obtain the final ratification of the treaty of Tientsin, which had been signed on the 26th of June, 1858 (while a similar treaty had been signed between France and China the day following), a heavy fire, was most wantonly opened upon his squadron from the forts on the bank, thus evincing what might "be expected to arise in dealing with a nation hitherto impenetrable to the principles of European morality. International law implies a reciprocity of obligation, which has never practically existed between China and Britain, and even Lord Elgin's treaty created rather a contingent right of coercion than a reliable contract between responsible Governments."†

The correctness of this speculation was proved when Mr. Bruce, the envoy, finding on his arrival at Shanghai his reception at Peking would be evaded, procured the escort of Admiral Hope's squadron, which, in attempting to force the entrance to the Peiho, was repulsed, notwithstanding his own gallantry and that of his officers and men, by a fire of well-directed artillery, backed by the overwhelming forces of the Celestial Empire. The subsequent failure of the American Minister to

* Ibid.

† *Times*, 1859.

obtain an audience of the emperor, afforded sufficient proof that submission to Chinese demands was unlikely to be attended with any satisfactory results, while they were disposed to treat with contempt Europeans in general and Christians in particular.

Though the repulse of Admiral Hope's squadron partook more of the nature of a surprise than anything else, the British mind cannot be easily reconciled to a defeat of any kind, especially one at sea, however superior may be the hostile force; consequently an expedition against the "Flowery Land" was instantly prepared to assail it by land and water.

The command of the troops was assigned to Sir James Hope Grant, and Hongkong was named as the rendezvous. It had been ceded to Britain at the close of the former war, and then new names, such as Victoria Peak, Gough Peak, Mount Parker, and others, were given to localities the titles of which were unpronounceable by Europeans, when it was the "Red Harbour" of the Spanish Ladrões.

Ships were chartered in great numbers, and hence our troops arrived with great rapidity. Under the orders of Major Temple a singular corps of Canton Coolies was embodied. They were clad in the Chinese dress, but were barefooted, and wore on their heads conical hats of plaited bamboo. Thirty-seven shillings and sixpence per month was their pay, but, from a rumour having been spread that in battle the British barbarians would take shelter behind them, the major could only recruit from the veriest rascals of the place, many of them being known robbers and murderers. Those who could speak a little English were made sergeants and corporals, and when this corps departed crime disappeared in Hongkong.*

As a body of French troops—chiefly those who had been occupied in Annam—were to co-operate with ours, orders were given to take, mutually, possession of the island of Chusan (or Chow-shan), which is fertile and well cultivated, and possesses a delightful climate. To carry this arrangement into effect, on the 21st of April, about noon, the men-of-war and transports moved into the harbour, and Sir Hope Grant with the British and French admirals, escorted by a guard of the Royal Marines, entered Singhai, the principal town of the island, from whence the inhabitants are frequently called Sing-hae-hyen. It is surrounded by walls thirty feet high and two miles in extent, strengthened at every 200 yards by square stone towers. It is so much intersected by canals that

* Swinhoe's "North China Campaign."

it is said to have some resemblance in this respect to Venice.

Unopposed, Sir Hope Grant and the naval commanders reached the residence of the Chinese military governor; and the mandarins, finding opposition futile, came to a conference on board the head-quarter ship of Grant, when it was settled that the town was to be held in the same manner as Canton, and that, in taking possession, the European troops were to aid them in controlling the people.

For this duty the Lanarkshire Regiment, a wing of the Royal Marines, and a battery of artillery under Major Rotton, came on shore, under the command of Colonel George M. Reeves (of the first-named corps), acting as brigadier; but eventually three companies of infantry were deemed sufficient to hold the town. As many baggage animals were necessary before the troops could move inland, Canton, Manilla, and Amoy were searched for ponies; but the Chinese, avaricious and cunning, demanded enormous prices for them. Sir Hope Grant and his staff now sailed for Pechili, and on the 24th of July the whole expedition once more to sea, and proceeded to the is were Pechili, which our fleet entered on the 1st of the same moment when that of France, 1857, were descried, under sail and steam, advancing had to same anchorage.

The following is a detail of the force under Sir Hope Grant:—

In the Cavalry Brigade were the 1st Dragoon Guards, Fane's Cavalry, Probyn's Sikh Cavalry, and Colonel Milward's Battery.

First Division of Infantry, 1st Brigade: 1st Royal Scots, H.M. 31st or Huntingdon Regiment, the Loodiana Light Infantry. 2nd Brigade: 2nd or Queen's, H.M. 60th Rifles, 15th Punjaub Infantry, Colonel Barry's battery of the Royal Artillery, and Captain Desborough's, with three subdivisions of the Royal Engineers.

Second Division, 3rd Brigade: H.M. 3rd Buffs, H.M. 44th Foot, and 8th Punjaub Infantry. 4th Brigade: H.M. 67th and 99th Foot, 19th Punjaub Infantry, Captains Gavin and Mowbray's batteries of the Royal Artillery, and Major Graham's company of the Royal Engineers.

In the Reserve were the guns of position, the Madras Sappers, the mountain guns, and Major Rotton's Battery.

On the 30th of July, when the squadrons were within five miles of the coast, it appeared so insipidly flat that only a few green mounds were visible at the line where sea and sky seemed to meet; but ere long these mounds proved to be the famous

Takoo Forts. The dawn of the following morning came in ; it was windy and cloudy, with a drizzling rain sowing land and sea. This caused some delay in attacking the forts, and it was rumoured that the emperor had sent Sir Hope Grant a message, to the effect that 40,000 Tartars were in position at the Pehtang Forts, with 200,000 more men quartered between them and Tientsin.

In a boat, with the American flag flying, Major Fisher of the Royal Engineers (an officer who had surveyed most of the coast secretly in the preceding year) entered the River Peiho, and after closely reconnoitring the forts, reported that they were unchanged since he had seen them in 1859.

Sir Hope now issued orders for the disembarkation of the troops. Each man was to land with his water-bottle full and three days' cooked provisions in his haversack, sixty rounds of ammunition, his great-coat, cloth trowsers, summer tunic, and wicker helmet. Those in the boats to carry the great-coat folded, with canteen attached to it ; those in the troop-boats also to have the coat folded, but not strapped to the back.

All knapsacks were left on board ; neither tents nor baggage of any kind were carried by the 2nd Brigade of Infantry, the first portion of which was to land on the 1st of August. Care was to be taken that all should leave the boats with deliberation, so as to insure the rifle-locks and ammunition being dry.

The 1st of August dawned ; the wind came in light puffs, and a torrent of rain poured steadily down on the dark sea, which was still and calm as a mill-pond. After the landing of our Second Brigade, among the first ashore were General Sir Hope Grant, General Michel, the French commander, with the 101st and 102nd Regiments of the Imperial Line, and a few Chasseurs, who laughed at their own appearance, as they were mounted on wretched-looking Japanese ponies.

The signal for a general disembarkation was then made from the flag-ship ; and from the whole squadron, which consisted of sixty-six sail, the boats put off for the low, flat shore with their armed freights, the gunboats each towing six great launches, filled with troops ; while the French, in gunboats and Chinese junks, were landing at the same time close by.

The sullen-looking masses of the Takoo Forts loomed within a short distance of the united squadrons ; but, save a Tartar flag that fluttered out on the largest, they gave no sign of life. At two in the afternoon, the gunboats moored at the distance of two thousand yards from them ; but all the embrasures were masked, and no sign of troops

was visible anywhere. The town was seen in their rear, and on the causeway that led to Takoo a Tartar cavalry picket was visible, but their commander made no communication on either hand.

Next, two men of rank, in sedan-chairs, accompanied by a mounted escort, were seen being hurriedly borne along the causeway from the town. At three in the afternoon the allied generals determined on making a closer reconnaissance of this causeway, or road, at the head of 200 British, and the same number of French, soldiers.

The former portion were detailed from the 2nd or Queen's, and the boats were pulled shoreward to what proved to be a mere mud-bank, on which they grounded, and there, in landing, the men jumped out, and were up to their middles in mud and water. On reaching the shore, a plot of soft, sticky, slippery mud extended on every side. "Through this we waded," says the *Times* correspondent, "sinking ankle-deep at every step. For fully three-quarters of a mile did we flounder and struggle before reaching a hard patch of similar mud, evidently covered by the sea during high tides. Nearly every man was disembarrassed of his lower integuments, and our gallant brigadier led on his men in no other garment than his shirt. Immediately after the reconnoitring party had effected a landing, the Tartars retreated along the causeway, and then an order was given to disembark the rest of the forces at once. This was effected without accident by five o'clock, not a single shot having been fired by the enemy."

Depressingly dark, sad, and dreary seemed the country around the advancing troops—on every side black sheets of mud and slime, with sombre pools of brackish water, met the eye. The contents of the latter were quite unfit for drinking, and not a well of pure water was to be found, even when we advanced into a district that was dotted by sand-hills, useful for cover to skirmishers.

Sir Hope Grant had arranged that the British troops should keep the right, and thus take ground on the side nearest the town ; while the French were, of course, to be on our left ; but the combined forces had barely begun to move, when a French colonel of Chasseurs, more zealous than courteous, took possession of the ground allotted to us, by rushing, at the head of his battalion, along the causeway close to the gate.

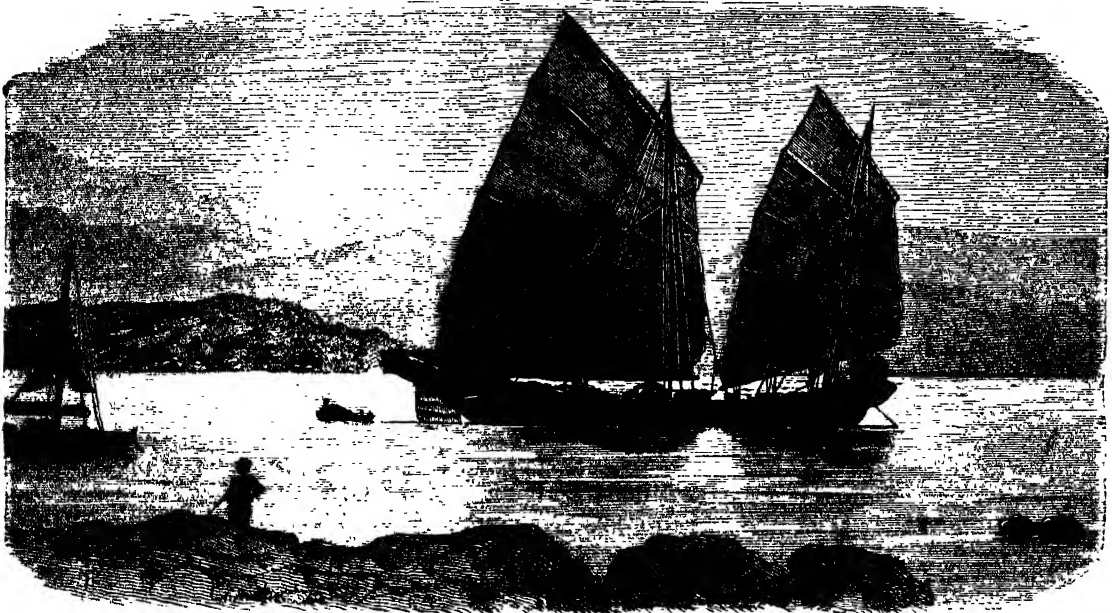
Ordering his bugles to sound a halt, Sir Hope Grant instantly reported the circumstance to General Cousin de Montauban, who sent the chief of his staff to recall the intruders, on which the British columns got in motion again. The battalion of

the 60th Rifles formed the extreme right of our advance; the 2nd Foot were on the left, and the 15th Punjaubees were in the centre.

They found themselves on a species of island, as it was separated from the causeway by a ditch of great depth, and forty feet in width; but "forward" was the word. The whole brigade plunged in, and in an instant found themselves up to their pipe-clayed waistbelts in black slush and slime of the most odious description, emitting, moreover, a horrible stench; but they struggled onward, assisting each other by turns, till all reached the road, or causeway, that lay beyond.

hand, while he might be unable to save the inhabitants from havoc and sack on the other. So the troops could but lie on the causeway, in the mud, or wherever they were halted, and impatiently wait for the dawn of the next day, when the gunboats were to begin the attack.

A strange rumour was now spread that these vast forts, which loomed so strong and dark in aspect, had been deserted, and hence the silence in and around them. On this, Captain Williams, the Deputy-Assistant Quartermaster-General, accompanied by a few of the 60th Rifles, crept near and entered. He found four men asleep on the



A CHINESE JUNK.

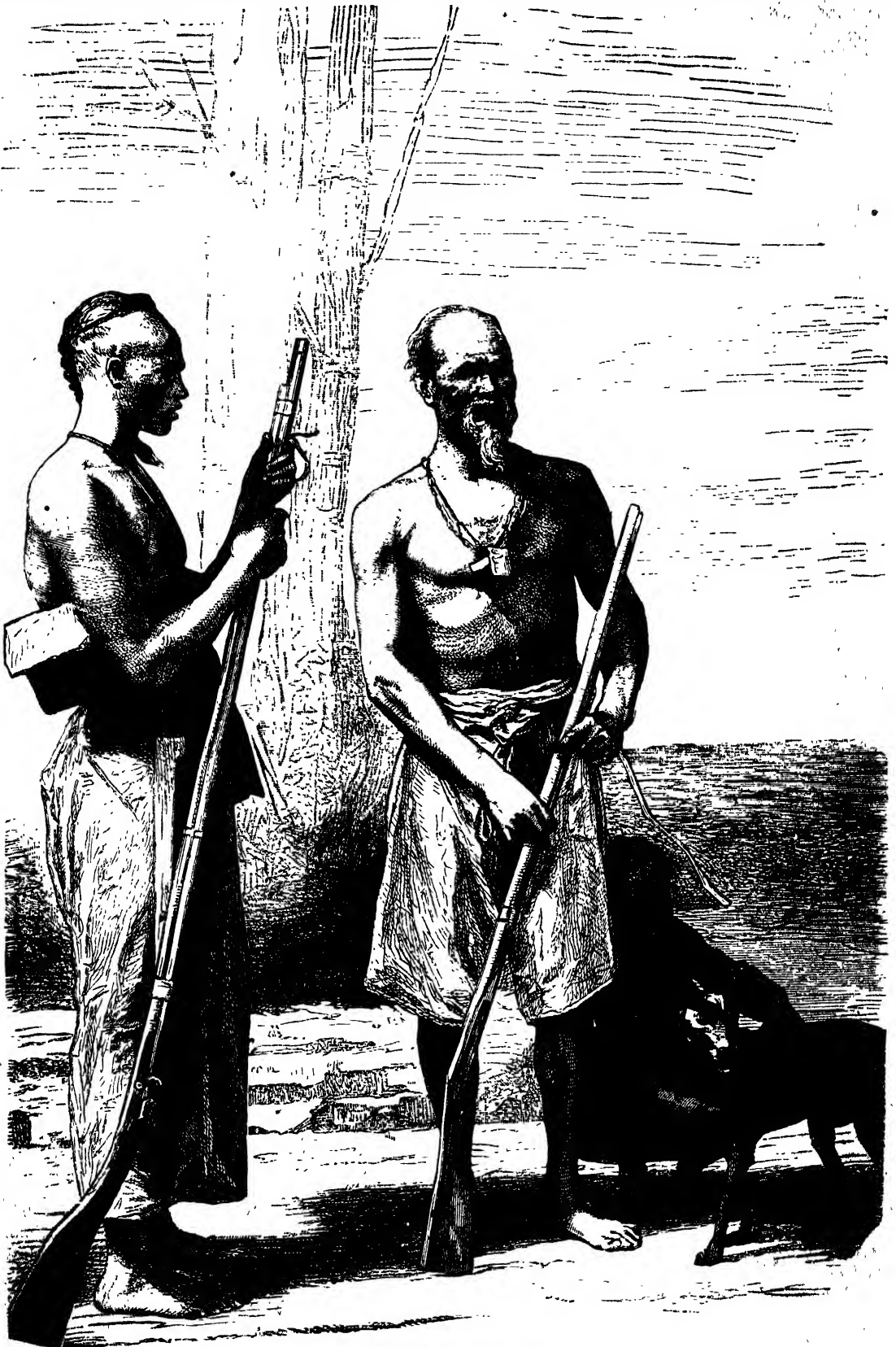
The setting sun now loomed, luridly yet duskily, through masses of cloud, while from the causeway our troops reconnoitred the position. At the wooden barrier of the town, which lay on their right, the causeway terminated, but at a species of moat, as the path had been recently cut for a space of thirty feet, and over the gap was thrown a bridge, which was occupied without delay by the 60th Rifles, and a hundred French infantry, all of whom were astonished that not a shot was fired upon them. Sir Hope Grant was pressed to capture the town at once; but the sun was at the flat and dim horizon now, and evening would darken fast into night.

He was ignorant of the strength of the forces that held the forts, and it would have been alike unwise and rash to entangle his troops in the narrow streets of a strange Chinese town on one

mats, otherwise the forts were empty, and the guns mounted in their embrasures were nearly all dummies formed of wood!

While our astonished soldiers were laughing at a discovery so strange and unexpected, some peasants gave them the alarming intelligence that the works were undermined, and might blow up at any moment. In the night certainly, some Tartar troops approached stealthily, but were repulsed by a rattling volley of musketry, and when day broke Sir Hope Grant set the sappers to work, and they speedily laid open the mines, of which there were four.

In circles of ten feet diameter and seven deep, live eight-inch shells were placed in tin cases, connected by fuses and traps, into which flint-locks were set, with long and strong cords attached to the triggers; and so arranged under a matting



CHINESE MOUNTAINEERS.

covered by a thin coating of earth, that the weight of a man would throw him on the traps, and cause a most dreadful explosion of the whole contrivance.

The generals, now that the day was in, ordered the troops to take up their quarters in the town.

On the 4th of August General Robert Napier (afterwards Lord Napier of Magdala), with a column of troops, sailed from the main army for the mouth of the Pehtang river, and his vessels passed over the shallow bar, at half ebb, without grounding. Then, for three miles in front of the fort, there lay a dreary waste of mud and ooze, amid which the sea-birds fed and waded. On the south bank, and in rear of the fort, stood the village of Pehtang.

It had but one landing-place, which was assigned to the French, while our engineers and man-of-war's men proceeded to erect four wooden jetties, under the superintendence of Captain Barlow, of H.M.S. *Pearl*, twenty-one guns. General Napier occupied a joss-house; General Michel, with his staff, had another; while Sir Hope Grant, with the head-quarter staff, occupied the fort.

The mud-built cottages of Pehtang were jointly held by portions of the allied force. So far as the eye could reach, this portion of the boasted "Flowery Land" looked painfully bleak and desolate. It was one vast plain of mud—mud everywhere. There no shrub and no blade of grass grew, nor green thing, save the rushes, which were used to thatch the cottages of Pehtang.

The branch road out of the latter was the causeway to Peiho, on which our advance had passed the first dreary night in China. Sir Hope Grant issued strict orders against pillaging; hence many men were flogged for doing so—among others two of the 60th, for taking a little pig—while the French were openly capturing swine all day for their messes, as they were fully entitled to do in an enemy's country. Yet the 15th Punjaubees, who by choice occupied a pawnbroker's establishment, "made some good pickings out of their quarters there."

Many conflicting rumours now reached Sir Hope Grant as to the strength, disposition, and intentions of the forces then mustering against him under San-Kollinsin, the Chinese general. They were estimated at 20,000 men, drawn up hastily from the provinces, in addition to 40,000 Mantchoorian bannermen and retainers of the forty-eight Tartar princes. A reconnaissance assured Sir Hope Grant that there was no other way by which the Peiho Forts could be reached, save through that half sea of obnoxious mud; so, on the 3rd, he

returned to inspect the causeway once more. At four in the afternoon the French, who were to take the lead, advanced, 4,000 strong, under General Collineau, supported by two three-pounder rifled mountain guns, followed by 1,000 men from the 2nd, the 60th, and the 15th Punjaubees, under Brigadier Sutton. Along the causeway this force marched for three miles, seeing nothing but a monotonous expanse of dark mud and foetid water on each hand, till a wayside temple was reached, and it proved to be the enemy's extreme advanced post in the direction of the invaders.

Half a mile beyond this joss-house stood a bridge, across which the Tartar vedettes were seen galloping to join the main body of their out-picket (if it could so be called), which was about 300 strong, and held some houses at a little distance. From these they opened a heavy fire of musketry and wall-pieces, the moment the French had left the bridge behind. General Collineau then ordered his men to deploy and advance at the double, till they found cover in rear of some grave-mounds that lay in the vicinity.

On this the Tartar picket took post in rear of the houses, which had red tiles with curving eaves, and then a body of their cavalry—some 2,000 strong—came suddenly into sight, and extending to the right and left, threatened to overlap the flanks of the approaching column; but the French cannon, two pieces, now came to the front and opened fire, on which the Tartars at once gave way, so again the line of march was steadily resumed.

Deploying as the ground hardened, the French now took ground in line to the right, and the British to the left, but still the place was marshy, with muddy pools, and the only green tufts seen were those of the salt-plant.

Now there came slowly into sight a large intrenched camp, extending right across the line of advance, defended by a wall with embrasures; at the same time Brigadier Sutton, finding that the Tartar cavalry menaced his left flank, threw it back by a change of front, while a portion of the 2nd, or Queen's, started out, in extended order, to skirmish, till their advance was halted by a pool of water, which, ere they were recalled, compelled them to fall back.

Meanwhile the Tartars had been firing briskly, but as they were beyond range, their bullets pattered harmlessly into the mud nearly midway between the lines. The brigade pushed forward again and halted in line, within twelve hundred yards of the enemy. Again the skirmishers were thrown forward, but were recalled by bugle sound,

as the matchlock firing became severe to all appearance. Doubtful whether, as a reconnoitring force, the brigade should advance or retire, the officers commanding ordered their men to lie down and rest, while they sent messengers back to Pehtang for further orders; on which Sir Hope Grant and General Montauban came galloping on in person, to see how matters stood. On consideration, they resolved to bring back the brigade, as they had no cavalry there to act against the mounted Tartars.

As the retrograde movement began, two British field-pieces from the rear were brought up by six horses each, at full speed, to cover it. In this reconnaissance only seven men of the allied force were killed, not by bullets point blank, but by their falling downward through the air. The Tartars made no attempt to follow; but after this victory, for such they conceived it to be, they became more defiant, and were wont to shout, shriek, brandish their swords, and gesticulate grotesquely within a few hundred yards of our sentinels. As pure water was greatly wanted now, Admiral Hope sent Mr. Morrison, his interpreter, to Hong-fuh, governor of the province, with some white flags inscribed with Chinese characters, and to state that it was the European custom to respect such as flags of truce. On this, Hong-fuh, thinking that we had been terrified by the valour of his Tartars in the affair of the causeway, at once sent letters to the plenipotentiaries—the Earl of Elgin and Baron Gros—but they bluntly declined to treat with him till the British and French colours were unfurled over Takoo.

By this time our King's Dragoon Guards and the other cavalry were all impatience to measure swords with the Tartar horsemen, and on the 12th of August, by drum, bugle, and trumpet, long before the sun was above the horizon, 10,000 British troops and 5,000 French were under arms, and on the march to leave behind the muddy wastes around Pehtang. It was arranged that our First Division, with the French, should advance by the causeway, and make a direct attack on the fortified camp at Tinho; while the Second Division, led by General Napier, after making a détour at some distance to the right, acting in concert with the Dragoon Guards and Fane's and Probyn's cavalry, should cross the muddy desert, with the view of cutting off all fugitives who should seek the Tientsin road, and drive them back upon the Takoo Forts.

A portion of the 99th Foot was left to guard Pehtang, together with the Government stores; while one officer, with forty bayonets from every

other corps, remained there to form a general baggage guard. "The march was a fearful one across that sea of mud," we are told: "many dropped out of the ranks, and lay, sick of life and heedless of death, by the sides of the gloomy grave-mounds; and many more, the Punjaubees especially, finding their boots an impediment to their progress, threw them away, and rolling up their nether garments, pushed on, bare-legged, through the mire."

Deep amid the fetid ooze sank the cannon wheels, and deeper still the hoofs of the cavalry, yet horse and gun were kept in their places along the line of that horrid march; but maledictions, both loud and deep, were heaped from time to time on China and the Chinese, till the harder ground was gained, and with stern and revengeful satisfaction the troops, though haggard and worn with fatigue, saw a long line of Tartar cavalry, clad in conical hats and flowing garments, drawn up in a kind of order of battle to bar their farther advance.

It was four in the morning when the troops began to leave Pehtang, and so deep was the mud, so slow the progress, and toilsome the way, that it was not until half-past seven a.m. that the last section left the village. On a halt being sounded, General Grant sent forward Captain Milward's battery of the Royal Artillery, three Armstrong guns, with a company of the Buffs on each flank, and one in the rear. The rest of the infantry formed contiguous close columns, with the other Armstrong guns and Major Rotton's rocket battery to protect their left flank. On the right stood Stirling's battery, with a troop of cavalry in the rear, impatiently watching an opportunity for action. Protected by a wing of the 67th, the Canton Coolie Corps, under Major Temple, came with the stretchers for the wounded, and carrying the reserve ammunition.

At 2,000 yards distance the Tartar cavalry stood in line, waiting to be attacked, but in a fashion they were unaccustomed to. The three Armstrongs in front were ordered forward for 500 yards, when they opened fire. Gap after gap now began to yawn in the Tartar line, as horse and man went down beneath the terrible shells from those magnificent cannon, and for a few minutes the Tartars kept closing inward to preserve their front, while firing their antiquated jingals, without the slightest effect save noise.

After a brief space of time a wavering movement began, and one wing of the Tartars swerved away to the right and another to the left, as if to menace both our flanks. Our cavalry on the right were

closing their files in fierce and exulting impatience to be at them; but they were disappointed, as the sharp fire of Stirling's guns drove the Tartars back in wild disorder; but those on the left, seemed men of better mettle, for regardless alike of Milward's guns and the sharp rifle fire of the advanced guard, and of Rotton's rockets too, they kept moving on towards the Kentish Buffs, when suddenly a party of them changed their front and charged the 67th, the 99th, and 19th Punjaubees, who formed our Fourth Brigade, a movement that caused intense consternation among the Coolie Corps, who were all huddled in rear of the first-named regiment and some marines.

Brigadier Reeves at once gave the order to form squares; but now the boom of heavy cannon and the roar of musketry were heard from another point, announcing that the First Division and the French had begun to storm the intrenched camp, and the terrified Tartar horsemen began to rush about in all directions.

In obedience to orders, our First Division, under Sir John Michell, C.B., had left Pehtang at ten that morning, and marched in a direct line towards the intrenched camp at Tinhó. Brigadier Stanley led the way with the First Brigade, strengthened now by a company of the Royal Engineers, an Armstrong battery, a thousand of Montauban's French infantry, and some of his guns. Closely followed the Second Brigade, with a rocket battery, two more nine-pounders, and the main body of the French troops. On reaching the enemy's first picket-house, already referred to, the skirmishers of the Royal Scots were extended on the left, and those of the 31st on the right; and soon after, Barry's Armstrongs and Martin's nine-pounders opened a crashing fire on the enemy's works at 800 yards range, in conjunction with a French gun battery on the left and an allied rocket battery.

The Tartars were now to learn in grim earnest what European fighting is, and what are the appliances of European warfare. In some twenty minutes or so after the cannonade began, their cavalry were seen on the left of the intrenched camp, and then some more on the right. The guns were now closed up to within 500 yards, and played alike on the position and the cavalry of the right, who were quickly dispersed. The "advance" was now sounded for both horse and foot, and then the position was found to be abandoned.

As Stirling's half-battery was incapable of following over such heavy ground the cavalry to which it was attached, it remained in the rear under an escort of thirty of Fane's Horse, commanded by Lieutenant Macgregor, who found himself suddenly

charged by more than a hundred Tartars, with such spirit and fury that it required all the energy he and his thirty Sikhs could exert to meet them. But they did so effectually, and completely routed them; yet Macgregor was wounded in his face, which was, moreover, severely scorched by the explosion of a matchlock near it.

The First Division and the French were now in full possession of the intrenched camp that commanded the road from Pehtang to Tinhó, along which our exulting skirmishers were quietly taking farewell shots at the Tartars, who, as Sir Hope Grant had foreseen, were now rushing in headlong flight towards the Takoo Forts, leaving the whole plain in front of Tinhó strewn with their dead and wounded, the bodies of both showing the most dreadful wounds and lacerations, the effect of our round shot and shells fired point blank.

The entire Tartar force mustered only 7,000 horsemen, and behaved with enduring courage, especially when we consider that though many had matchlocks and jingals, more had only horses and spears to oppose to British and French riflemen, armed also with the finest artillery the world had yet seen. Hence our loss was most trivial—only two Sikhs were killed and about twelve wounded.

After a two hours' halt in front of Tinhó, the men of the Second Division were ordered to pile arms and bivouac for the night. They had no tents, and no provisions save the cooked rations which they had brought from the ships in their haversacks. All around them the ground was dotted by the corpses of the enemy's slain. The entire loss of the latter was never known, while great numbers of their wounded were borne away by their fugitive comrades. Some who lay near the bivouac implored our men, in words they could not understand, to kill them outright and end their bodily misery.

The flat country could be plainly seen from the walls of the captured camp, and the general could then see another camp, about three miles distant, which seemed to enclose a village named Tangkoo. Like that they had already traversed, a causeway led thereto, and on each side of it lay a wide ditch full of the inevitable black mud. On the right, the plain was intersected in every direction by ditches and watercourses, while on the left was slimy ground of that kind through which the troops had passed. All this plain seemed impracticable for cannon, and after their horrible morning march from Pehtang the men were weary; but General Montauban was anxious to push on and have another brush with the Tartars. Sir Hope Grant, more wary, or more mercifully disposed to the

troops, declined to take any part in an attack; yet he was prevailed upon eventually to lend the 60th Rifles and 15th Punjaubees to Montauban, who opened fire upon Tangkoo with his rifled cannon at 1,800 yards' distance.

The Chinese responded to this with such warmth, that after an hour's firing Montauban drew off, and thereafter the night passed quietly in the dreary neighbourhood of Tinho (which is the name of a district, as well as village, in the province of Chihli), the men finding rest upon or shelter behind the strange grave-mounds that were scattered all about the neighbourhood till next morning, when the bugles sounded *réveillés*, and the sun came up in unclouded splendour.

The allied generals now found that the intrenchments captured at Tinho were merely outposts for the Tartar cavalry, within the works of which were mud-built huts for their accommodation, with a species of awning set on poles in the centre, for the mandarin in command, whom some averred to be no other than the famous San-Kolinsin. As the baggage had now been brought on from Pehtang, our troops got up their tents, but during the night of the 13th two sharp *alertes* brought the men under arms, and a Tartar horseman was captured, whose equipment, as described by Swinhoe, afforded a good specimen of the kind of troops ours had now to meet.

He was armed with a rusty sword and spear, and rode in a wooden saddle, with circular solid iron stirrups slung in leathern thongs. The saddle was strapped to the pony by two girths of leather, one round the belly and the other close to the forelegs. The bridle was of leather, fastened by hob-nails, supporting a rough iron bit, to which rope-reins were attached. The animal he rode was a sturdy little filly like the Shetland breed, and the rider was supposed to be a Mongolian. On his head was a cap shaped like a mandarin's, but minus the loose scarlet silk on the crown, though adorned with two cats' tails, hanging over his back, the usual badge of a Tartar trooper.

The drums beat at half-past five on the morning of the 14th, as the First Division was to carry Tangkoo by storm, while the Second was to halt midway between that place and the camp, to be in support or reserve, according to circumstances. The causeway between the two villages was, we have said, some three miles in length. On the left was the muddy flat; on the right the marshy plain, with its watery intersections. Over these the active engineers had thrown temporary bridges. The fortifications of Tangkoo consisted of a long crenellated mud wall, semicircular in form, terminating

at both ends on the bank of the river, which was there made pleasing to the eye by some bordering orchards. As the attack was to be made from the right of the causeway, the British advanced on that point, and the French on the left by the road.

Barry's six Armstrong guns and Desborough's nine-pounders were trotted round to the extreme right, while Milward and Gavin's batteries kept the centre. In the night, breastworks of earth had been thrown up within 700 yards of the walls, to cover our sharpshooters, 200 of whom, under Major Gibbes Rigaud, of H.M. 60th Rifles (who had served in the Kaffir War of 1851-3), took post there in skirmishing order.

Then came closing to the front the Royal Scots, the 31st Foot, then the 2nd, the 60th, and 15th Punjaubees.

A mile below Tinho the river takes a bend to the south, and, turning north again, comes close to Tangkoo. A Tartar battery constructed at the first of these curves galled the flank of our troops as they advanced, but to silence its fire two of Barry's Armstrongs were unlimbered, and opened on it, within fifty yards, with terrible effect, which three of Desborough's twenty-four pounders completed by utterly reducing the battery to silence. At a bend of the river, lower down, another battery and some war junks opened on the column; but their guns were soon silenced also by our seamen, only twenty of whom, under some officers of the *Chesapeake*, fifty-one guns, steam frigate, crossed the river in a boat, routed the Tartars, spiked their cannon, and left the junks shrouded in flames; and in effecting all this only one man was wounded.

"But the scene!" wrote an officer who served in the Chinese wars: "Their junks—just what you see on the rice-paper drawings—the Chinese army, with a sort of armour and tunics, and all the showy old-time equipment, carried me back in imagination to the times of Froissart. It seemed exactly as if the subjects of his old prints had assumed life, and substance, and colour, and were moving and acting before me, unconscious of the march of the world through centuries, and of all modern usage, invention, and improvement. There were the flowing standards to every half-dozen of men, the cumbrous equipment, the attempt at fierce display, the queer weapons, and insignia of all sorts; and then the junks, with their huge mat-sails, their eyes and tiger-heads, and high, elaborately-painted sterns and bluff prows!"*

These war junks range from 300 to 800 tons, and have European masts, on which traverse the square sails of matting, with stout bamboos at

* "Colonel Mountain's Letters, &c."

intervals of two feet. Their anchors are always constructed of wood, weighted with immense stones, and unprovided with a stock across to ensure their taking any hold.

While the battery was being destroyed and the junks burned, the column of attack was still advancing, and opened fire with all its guns at 800 yards' distance. The enemy replied with some

place while the guns of the former were still bombarding it.

The wall was found to have been a wretched defence, especially against Armstrong guns. The Chinese killed and wounded lay thick around their cannon, to which many of the poor wretches were found securely lashed, to prevent their flight, and in this condition were discovered dead or dying.



VIEW OF HONGKONG.

heavy pieces and jingals, but as the allies had forty-two guns at work, the former were soon silenced, and then Sir John Michell ordered forward the infantry, who at once made a rush for the walls, from which the Tartars fled with absurd precipitation, while the rockets from Rotton's battery whizzed in fierce curves above their heads, spreading dismay among them as they rushed along a causeway to a village farther down the river, which they crossed by means of a floating bridge, and reached the village of Takoo. The French claimed the honour of being first in; but their boast was an idle and false one, as the 60th Rifles burst into the

All who were there wore the white circular badge of the Chinese troops on the breast and back of their tunic. These badges were inscribed with Chinese characters, indicating that the wearers served under the General of Chihli, a Chinese province which is separated by the Great Wall from that of Mantchooria. Wooden tickets, that indicated their rank in their wretched service, hung at their girdles. Scores of them lay about the guns, fearfully mangled; dozens more lay in the ditch near the works, while vast numbers of others were taken down the river in junks, or borne off by the fugitives, while the allied

force had only one man killed and fifteen wounded.

Rushing from house to house the French dashed in the doors and looted the whole place with a

centre of which rose a tall pagoda, then occupied by Prince San-Kolinsin and his staff. A little further off were the forts, looking huge and very gloomy, though gaily decorated with flags of defiance.



A TARTAR HORSE-SOLDIER.

celerity that astonished our First Division, which was now ordered to encamp on the bleak open space between Tinho and Tangkoo, which was occupied by the division of General Napier, who established his head-quarters in the principal joss-house of the village. Two miles distant from it, at the end of a raised path through a muddy flat, was the long, straggling village of Takoo, in the

Sir Hope Grant, before risking an assault on them, resolved prudently to make a close and careful reconnaissance, to have his heavy guns well in position, and all preparations complete before firing a shot at them; and in what he had to do he was happily aided by an able colleague, in the person of General Napier, already famous as a Bengal engineer officer. The preparations in-

volved a lapse of time, and a stay of some length in Tangkoo. Two companies of the 3rd Buffs held the gates that led to Takoo, under Colonel Sargent.

Deserting an intrenched camp which they had formed on the road that led to the northern forts, the enemy now cut their pontoon bridge, the boats of which they towed into the docks at Takoo. In the afternoon some armed horsemen were seen deliberately approaching Tangkoo, and were greeted by a volley of musketry from the guard of Buffs. This emptied a few saddles, after which the white flag of truce was shown, and a stout little mandarin, whose white button and peacock's feather indicated that he was of the sixth rank, came forward, bearer of letters to the Earl of Elgin and Baron Gros. For these he earnestly demanded a receipt, which Colonel Sargent refused to give, though he took the letters.

No answer was returned to them; and on the following day there came another flag of truce with more letters, which were also unanswered. The third day saw a third flag arrive, with the intimation that they had some European prisoners, whom they would forthwith send in. After this they brought a sergeant of the Buffs and a sapper, who had undergone such barbarous usage as to be incapable of standing, and under which the former had apparently lost his senses.

About this time Hong-fuh offered great rewards for the capture of the barbarian chiefs and soldiers, to the end that if he had them once in his hands he might compel their Governments to come to terms; and specially enjoined the capture of the barbarian, Lord Elgin, whose decapitation he believed would put an end to the war. But in his ignorance and insolence, he could little foresee that the fighting was to end in the imperial city, and amid the ashes of the emperor's palace.

To reduce the Takoo Forts was unquestionably the next necessity of the campaign; but Sir Hope Grant and General Montauban had different views about the mode of procedure. "Did we merely wish to gain possession of the forts, and the right of entry into the river, with as little loss as possible?" writes Swinehoe, "or did we wish to surprise San-Kolinsin, with all his Tartar hordes, and thus put an end to the possible recurrence of opposition from that quarter, regardless of life on our part, and by the stroke hold the Chinese Government at our feet? Sir Hope Grant's policy pointed to the former; General Montauban's to the latter, result. By crossing the river and attacking *en masse* the south fort, we should have cut off all possibility of retreat along the broad road leading to Tientsin. With the sea beyond, and

the river on the left flank, the Tartars must have succumbed or perished. Should they have crossed the river and attempted to escape on the north side, our cavalry would have taught them a lesson."

The pride of the ignorant San-Kolinsin and his barbarous soldiery would have been humbled effectually by this; but our loss in achieving it might be serious, as the southern fort had bomb-proof batteries and three high cavaliers, and could only be approached from the rear through the village of Takoo, which was enclosed by an embattled wall five miles in length. A little inspection showed the experienced eye of Sir Hope Grant that as the upper fort commanded all the others, on which its guns could be turned, it was the key of the whole position; that with their capture we should hold the command of the river; that if he were once beaten out of them, San-Kolinsin would have some doubts about meeting us in field, and the stupid Government of China might be compelled to listen to reason and to negotiate.

On the day Tangkoo was captured the floating bridge on the Peiho had been destroyed, hence, to achieve its passage speedily, it was resolved that we should construct another at a point near Tinh, as the conveyance of the army across by boats would prove a tedious process. A number of little craft, found in the ditches about Tangkoo, were utilised for this purpose; the whole vicinity was searched for planks and logs; while anchors and ropes were brought up from our shipping at Pehtang. To choose a spot for the opposite end of the bridge, Colonel Livy, of the French Engineers, crossed the Peiho, with three hundred men, at a point where it is three hundred yards wide, and was bordered by some quaint-looking houses, surrounded by luxuriant orchards and a hedge. From under cover of these a fire of matchlocks was maintained upon his soldiers, till they cleared the place of the Tartars; but finding that he was unable to hold his ground, General Montauban succoured him with fourteen hundred men and some guns, and thus secured to France a firm footing on the hostile side of the stream.

Relinquishing all use of the causeway that led from the gate of Tangkoo, it was resolved to construct a road to facilitate the advance on Takoo; and on the 17th this task was commenced with spirit by the Royal Engineers and Madras Sappers, in concert with working parties of the 67th, and the morning of the 21st was fixed for the assault, at six o'clock.

On the afternoon of the preceding day Major

Graham, of the Engineers, advanced towards the forts with a party of the 67th, bearing a flag of truce, and asked to see the mandarin in command, and on that personage appearing, the major announced that he had come to arrange terms of capitulation. To this the mandarin replied, with ready insolence, that he would accept no terms of any kind, and that if the allied barbarians wanted the Takoo Forts, they had better try to take them. While this had been proceeding through the interpreters, Major Graham, with professional eye, made some useful notes of the form and strength of the north fort, from which,

the moment his party withdrew, a fire was opened on the working parties constructing the road. Milward's Armstrongs then came up in support, and a cannonade was maintained for an hour.

During the night before the attack, the enemy betrayed an evident uneasiness. Ever and anon the boom of a cannon pealed out upon the night, and brilliant light-balls glared through the darkness from the sombre mass of the north fort, compelling our workers, who were pushing their road steadily on, to lie down and thus avoid the enemy's aim, but ere the day dawned their task was complete.

CHAPTER LVII.

FALL OF THE TAKOO FORTS.—CHAN-CHIA-WAN.—PARKES AND OTHERS TAKEN.—PA-LE-CHIAO.—ADVANCE ON PEKIN.—SUMMER PALACE TAKEN.—FATE OF THE PRISONERS.—PEKIN TAKEN.—PEACE WITH CHINA.

THE allied generals disposed the artillery for the attack in the following order:—Six French twenty-four-pounders, with one British eight-inch gun and two Armstrongs, were to pound the inner south fort and protect our flank, by keeping down its fire. Point blank from Tangkoo two Armstrongs and two nine-pounders were to fire across the Peiho at some works that flanked the French right; and three eight-inch mortars were placed in the centre at 600 yards range, to batter the greater fort, which we were to assail. Two Armstrongs, two nine-pounders, four twenty-four-pound howitzers, and a rocket battery, were planted in the open ground, 800 yards distant from the fort, while eight allied gun-boats (ours being the *Fanus*, *Drake*, *Clown*, and *Woodcock*), as soon as the morning tide served, were to hammer the lower fort with shot and shell.

On the morning of the 21st, the troops detailed for the assault left their camp, which was about four miles distant from the forts, in light marching order, 2,500 strong. They consisted of a wing of the 44th, under Lieutenant-Colonel MacMahon (who had served at Alma, Inkermann, and Sebastopol); a wing of the 67th, under Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas, the other wings being in support; with a detachment of the Royal Marines, under Colonel Gascoigne; another of the same corps, under Colonel Travers, with the portoon bridge for the wet ditches; and a company of Engineers,

under Lieutenant Graham, to guide the attack. The whole were commanded by Brigadier Reeves.

Prior to this the French had advanced, under Col. lineau, 1,000 strong, with six rifled twelve-pounders.

Dawn was clear and bright now; the approaching columns could be distinctly seen by the Chinese, who opened with their guns from all the forts at once. Some time after six o'clock, a magazine in the upper north fort blew up with a mighty and tremendous crash, causing all the muddy soil around to heave as if an earthquake were about to ensue; and almost immediately after a similar event occurred in the north fort. On this our field artillery, now within 500 yards of the forts, redoubled their efforts, till the guns of the enemy were nearly silenced; a breach was already yawning near the gate, and creeping to within thirty yards the stormers opened fire—the French on the right, the British on the left. Their close approach compelled the allied guns to slacken fire, on which the Chinese manned their works and opened a heavy shower of musketry.*

Under Collineau the French gained the salient angle next the Peiho, crossed the wet ditches, and gallantly made a lodgment on the berme, or little path of turf between the ditch and rampart, from whence they endeavoured to carry the latter by escalade, but failed, so admirable was the resistance

* Sir Hope Grant's Despatch.

of the Chinese. The sappers also failed to lay down the pontoon bridge; so heavy was the fire that fifteen men fell, all at the same instant, and one boat was utterly destroyed. It was at this crisis that Sir Robert Napier threw forward two howitzers within fifty yards of the gate, to batter a breach; which was speedily done, but only wide enough to admit *one* man.

Reinforced by the right wing of the 67th, under Colonel T. E. Knox, the stormers forced their way in by single files with singular bravery, Lieutenants Rogers of the 44th, and Burslem of the 67th, being the two first to enter, with sword and pistol in hand. Ehsign Chaplan, of the latter corps, then planted its colours in the breach, assisted by Private Lane. The French effected an entrance at the same moment, and the garrison were hurled pell-mell, at the point of the bayonet, through the embrasures on the other side and out of the place. While in terror and dismay they scrambled off, obstructed by the wet ditches and palisades of pointed bamboo, erected to impede our advance, a fire of canister and musketry was opened upon them with terrible effect.*

After this the flags on the southern forts were pulled down, and white ones, in token of truce, substituted; and one of San-Kolinsin's officers, who spoke English, came over with a letter, to state that now the Chinese would remove the booms from the mouth of the Peiho, and permit our ships to ascend the river to Tientsin, where terms of peace would be concluded. The letter was crushed up and thrown in his face, with a warning, that if the remaining forts did not surrender by two in the afternoon, they also would be stormed.

A deluge of rain that fell now turned all the muddy district around the forts into a species of inky sea, through which, precisely when the time came, the 3rd Buffs and 15th Punjaubees marched against the lower northern fort; while the heavy guns of the one we had captured—the true key of the position—were turned upon it; but ere a shot was fired, its gates were thrown open, all its flags of defiance were hauled down, and its garrison, more than 2,000 strong, yielded like cowards, and were sent across the Peiho. Soon after, the southern forts were entirely abandoned; 300 men were sent to take possession of them, and about nightfall the whole banks of the river, as far as Tientsin, were unconditionally surrendered to the allies. The capture of the once famous Takoo Forts was fully accomplished.

The Earl of Elgin, with his staff, occupied the site of a temple in Tangkoo, to witness the opera-

* Sir Hope Grant's Despatch.

tions, during which the Tartar battery at the bend of the river opened on it, and might have done some mischief, had its guns not been speedily silenced by the fire of some of ours.

The losses of the enemy were great, exceeding 2,000 men, including the mandarin in command of the first fort, who was shot by Captain J. Basset Prynne, of the Royal Marines, who took his cap as a trophy. The second in command could nowhere be found, and is supposed to have committed self-destruction. Never was the genuine and native cowardice of the Chinese so generally shown as in their miserable defence of these strong forts, which had massive and heavily-armed fronts to the sea, contained casemated batteries, and had mantlets in front of the guns. Piles of shot of every calibre were found near these, with baskets of powder and matchlock bullets. There were captured a vast number of wall-pieces, matchlocks, bows, arrows, and arblasts, spears, pikes, and sharp iron calthrops. The wounded Chinese were ultimately removed to the village of Tangkoo, while our own were conveyed on board the hospital-ships.

H.M. 3rd Foot garrisoned the Takoo Forts, while the rest of the army began its march for Tientsin, the 1st division marching on the 29th of August, and the 2nd on the 31st; while the gun-boats tore up and cleared away the obstructions at the mouth of the Peiho, a work of great difficulty, as, in addition to the enormous boom, there was a row of dangerous boats, laden with every kind of combustible, and another of sharply-pointed iron stakes—a veritable *chevaux-de-frise*—each several tons in weight, firmly imbedded in the stiff, dense mud. As soon as these were all cleared away, the admiral, in his steam tender, with five gun-boats, sailed to a point ten miles below Tientsin, and came to anchor. Proceeding further up next morning, he landed small detachments of marines at some forts that were below the town, at the eastern gate of which he hoisted the colours of the allies.

Tientsin is on the Pekin road, thirty-five miles distant from Takoo. The French advanced by the left bank of the Peiho, the British by the right, and the 5th of September saw the bulk of our troops cantoned about the town. It had come to the knowledge of Mr. Parkes, the interpreter, that San-Kolinsin had organised a kind of commissariat there, and the former offered to employ the chief officers for our own purposes. As they were merchants and burgesses they responded readily, and brought in large supplies of sheep, oxen, vegetables, fruit, and blocks of ice.*

* Sir Hope Grant's "China War." Edited by Captain Knollys, R.A.

On our first entrance, the viceroy, Hong-fuh, attended by two commissioners named Kangke and Wantsum, came off to the admiral's tender to announce that they had been sent by the emperor to escort the Earl of Elgin to Peking, where, no doubt, a perilous snare was prepared.

Finding themselves unable to cope with the allies in arms, they resolved to try what could be done by the more congenial mode of treachery, and under pretence of peaceful concession to lure our plenipotentiaries to Peking, where, doubtless, torture and death awaited them. The strength of the accompanying escort was fixed at 1,000 men, with a battery of artillery; but the French, for some unknown reason, objected to Lord Elgin taking more than 150; and our officers, fresh from service in India, were all too well versed in Oriental politics not to augur the worst, if the peaceful visit to Peking were persisted in.

It was now given out that Tientsin would be opened to free trade; that the Chinese would pay us two millions and three-quarters sterling, and two millions to the French—the Takoo Forts to be retained till every *tael* was paid. The war was supposed to be over, and all were thinking of home, when suddenly it was announced that the Commissioners had no power to sign the treaty, and that Lord Elgin, with a slender escort, must go to Peking. The duplicity of the Chinese became once more manifest, and the onward march of the army was resumed on the 8th of September.

The force was small, but mixed. The 99th and Marines made 800 infantry; 600 cavalry and two batteries of artillery moved first, under Brigadier Reeves. Lord Elgin and Sir Hope Grant followed and overtook them.

That night there fell a deluge of rain, during which the Chinese drivers, with the carts, baggage, and ponies, absconded. On the 13th the division reached Ho-si-wee, half-way between Peking and Tientsin, where it was joined by Sir John Michell's column, which made up the strength to 2,300 infantry, the whole of the cavalry, three batteries of artillery, and a company and a half of engineers. Sir Robert Napier's brigade remained in the rear to hold Tientsin, and it was arranged that Admiral Hope should establish a *dépôt* at Ho-si-wee, where a regiment was left, with three six-pounders. The whole country thereabout seemed a flat sea of millet, dotted with little hamlets and an occasional brick-kiln.

On the day of the halt Messrs. Parkes and Wade, the interpreters, with a small escort, pushed on alone, and were received with extreme politeness

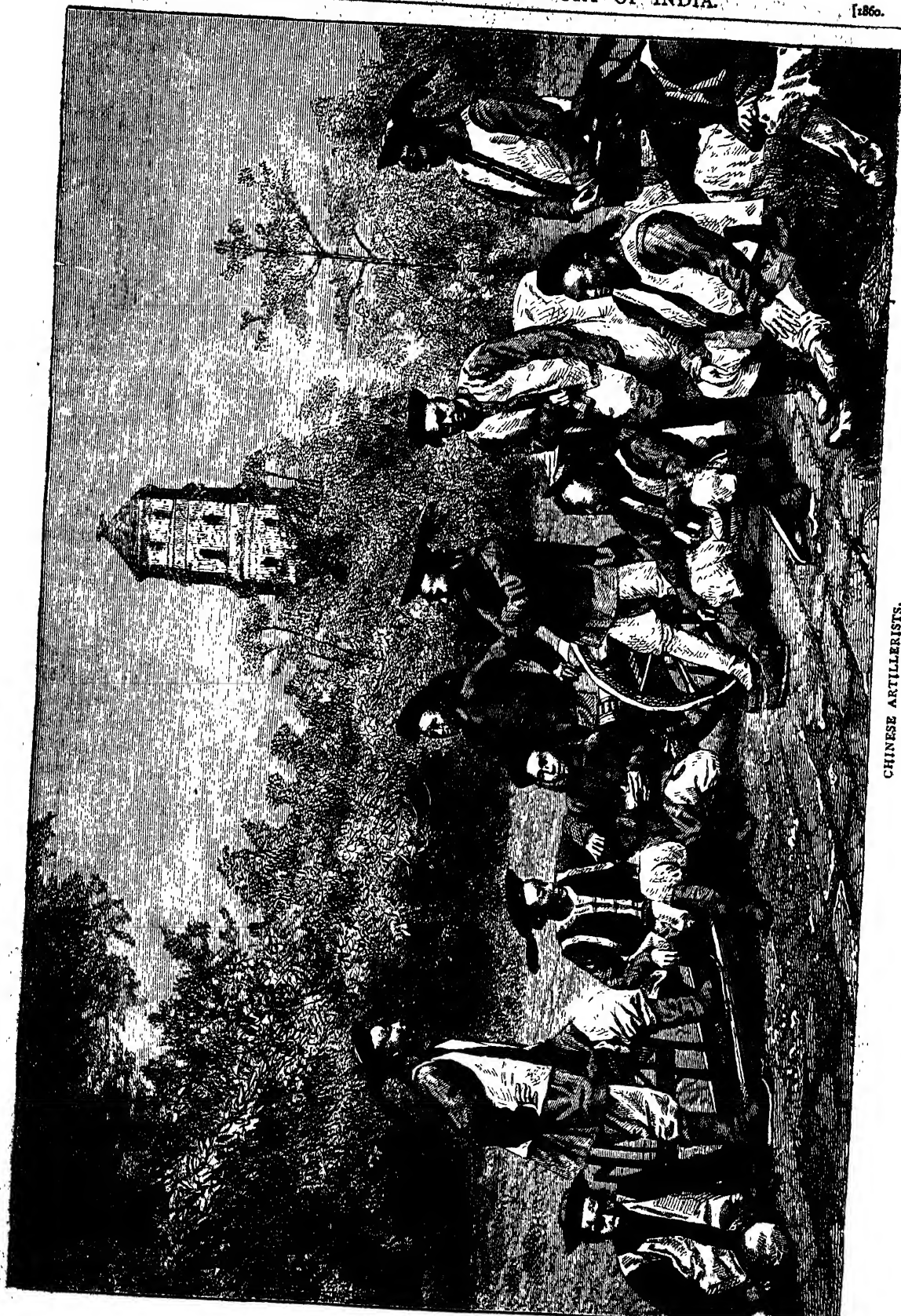
by Tsai, Prince of E., who was at the head of a large force, and skilfully veiled his secret hatred, though he and San-Kolinsin were resolved that not one of the "Hats" should return alive to Tientsin. The term "Hats," was generally applied to the allied troops, who wore pith-helmets, or solar-tops. The success of our envoy was communicated to General de Montauban by Lord Elgin, and it was resolved to push on; and Mr. Parkes went in advance to arrange for the peaceful arrival of the allied forces. He was accompanied by Colonel Walker, C.B., afterwards Military Attaché at Berlin, but then Quartermaster-General of the cavalry; Mr. Thompson, of the Commissariat Department; Mr. Lock, secretary to the Earl of Elgin, afterwards lieutenant-colonel, and governor of the Isle of Man; Mr. de Norman, one of Mr. Bruce's attachés; and Mr. Bowby, the *Times* correspondent. They were escorted by five of the King's Dragoon Guards and twenty of Fane's Horse, under Lieutenant Anderson, and none of the party had the least suspicion of treachery.

On the 18th, at daybreak, the army resumed its march, with the intention of encamping at Chan-chai-wan, but had not proceeded far when signs of mischief and the Chinese troops appeared in front.

"We looked through our telescopes," says Sir Hope Grant, "along the line of Chinese troops, and made out Colonel Walker and three of the Dragoon Guards on their horses; but to our surprise they did not come out to meet us. The space of ground occupied by the enemy extended over three miles; and as they were moving round both our flanks, I sent a squadron out to our right and left, with directions to keep a good look-out, and advanced a battery of nine-pounders to some high ground on our right flank, with orders to prepare for action. Suddenly we heard a heavy fire of matchlocks and jingals, and a number of horsemen were seen galloping furiously towards us. They turned out to be Colonel Walker and his party. They soon reached us, and told us their story."

A French officer had been engaged in a dispute about a mule with some Tartars, who murdered him before he could be rescued by Colonel Walker, who rode to his assistance, and was next assailed by the Chinese, on which he called to his party to ride for their lives. Charging through, they made their escape—viz., Walker, Thompson, one sowar, and four Dragoon Guardsmen, but not without wounds. Mr. Loch, Mr. Parkes, and Major Brazazon were missing.

This attack was more premature than San-Kolinsin intended, and put Sir Hope Grant on the alert.



CHINESE ARTILLERISTS.

In front were the enemy, more than 20,000—some say 30,000—strong, while his force, by sickness and garrisons left in the rear, numbered only 3,500 of all arms. The French were on the right, with Fane's Horse and the batteries of Barry and Desborough, covered by a weak squadron of the King's Dragoon Guards; the 15th Punjaubees were in the centre; H.M. 2nd Foot, with the rest of the cavalry, and Stirling's battery, were in the centre. The remainder of the infantry formed the reserve. The general briefly narrates the engagement that ensued as follows:—

"The enemy opened upon us from all points, but their fire was ineffectual. Sir John Michell encountered such heavy masses on his left that he had some difficulty in holding his position, and was attacked by a large body of Tartar cavalry. Probyn, who had only a hundred of his regiment with him at the time, was ordered to charge to the front, which he did in most gallant style, riding in amongst them with such vigour and determination that they could not withstand his attack for a moment, and fled in utter consternation. The Mushees (low-caste Sikhs) then advanced in steady line, carrying everything before them, and taking

several guns. By-and-by we were joined by the 99th Regiment, the nine-pounder battery, and the Dragoon Guards; and Sir John Michell having sent to say that the enemy was still very strong in front of him, I sent the Armstrong battery to his assistance, and shortly after they retired. The whole of their position was now captured, and I sent to the French, who had made a long circuit, to say that I intended to advance and take the town of Chan-chai-wan; but General de Montauban replied that his men were so knocked up that he did not propose to advance any farther. The squadron of Fane's Horse, commanded by Lieutenant Cattley, crossed over and joined Sir John Michell, and I rode on and found the enemy had evacuated Chan-chai-wan. Advancing through it with the Mushees about a mile on the other side, I

came to a large Chinese camp, in which we took several guns. The total number which fell into the hands of the allies that day amounted to eighty. Our combined forces did not exceed 4,000 men. We occupied the town."*

Many houses full of rare and elegant furniture were pillaged and destroyed, less by our troops than by the natives of adjacent villages, who crowded in and carried off all they could lay their hands on.†

On the 19th fresh pickets were thrown forward, and Mr. Wade was sent with a flag of truce to discover the fate of the prisoners, and to warn the Chinese that, if they were not given up, Sir Hope Grant would capture Peking. General Collineau's column now came up, and increased the French strength to 3,000 bayonets; Sir Robert Napier was ordered to come on with two regiments from Ho-si-wee, and the 21st of September saw the advance resumed again.

A march of two miles brought the allies close to the enemy, whose guns opened on the French, who had the right flank. Opposite them was the canal bridge of Pa-le-chiao (from whence General de Montauban subsequently took his

title of Count Palikao), to all appearance strongly fortified.

Our troops formed with the infantry on the right, the cavalry in echelon on the left. Stirling's guns opened on some Tartars and drove them back, firing with case-shot at 200 yards. The Dragoon Guards, Fane's Horse, and Probyn's Lancers now went thundering forward in a headlong charge, before which the Tartars gave way. Fane's Horse followed them in hot pursuit across a road bordered by a high bank and ditch. Lifting their horses with bridle and spur, the front rank cleared it well; but the men of the rear, unable to see before them owing to the excessive dust, crossed with difficulty; while the Tartars fled, followed by a terrible fire from the Armstrong guns, and the pursuit was

* Sir Hope Grant.

† Swinhoe.



PORTRAIT OF GENERAL MONTAUBAN
(AFTERWARDS COUNT PALIKAO).

continued past what must have been the camping-ground of a Tartar general of rank, as there were captured two yellow banners of the Imperial Guard and eighteen brass guns.

With their usual spirit the French attacked and captured, with twenty-five guns, the bridge of Pa-le-chiao, which was held by the Chinese Imperial Guard, whose flowing dresses of brilliant yellow made them conspicuous among the greenery with which they attempted to mask their batteries; but on every hand the enemy were routed. Their general, Paou, was borne away wounded, and in his rage and agony ordered the decapitation of the Abbé de Luc and Major Brabazon, two of the unfortunate prisoners so treacherously captured. The Chinese loss at the bridge alone was 510 men. One of ours who fell into their hands had his eyes scooped out, and was slowly hacked to pieces, joint by joint.

At both ends of the bridge of Pa-le-chiao the French formed their camp. Around it the country was beautiful, with dilapidated temples amid groves of tall and magnificent trees. In three of the former the Earl of Elgin, Sir Hope Grant, and General de Montauban had their quarters. Next morning, the 22nd of September, a flag of truce was sent in, with letters from the highest mandarin in the empire, Prince Kung, brother to the emperor, stating that he had been appointed chief commissioner in place of the other two, with a view to peace; but Lord Elgin declined all word of peace till our prisoners were released. Another message offered to restore them in exchange for the Takoo Forts, but the emperor would not receive a letter from the Queen of Britain except through Lord Elgin in person. The surrender of the poor prisoners still being evaded, the advance to Peking was again resolved on, though Kung threatened the result would be their entire massacre.

"The perils which environed the latter placed both the military and the diplomatic chiefs in a position of the most painful perplexity. Mr. Parkes and his party, having been captured in violation of the laws of nations, when employed on diplomatic duty, could not be considered lawful prisoners of war; and Lord Elgin always refused, in his correspondence with the Chinese, to admit them to be such. The cruel and treacherous people into whose hands they had fallen, if irritated, were quite capable of wreaking a fearful vengeance on them, as subsequent events proved; and yet to have yielded an iota in our demands to ensure the safety of our fellow-countrymen would have been the most fatal of precedents—would have been a precedent on future bad faith, and might

almost have neutralised the successes we had already gained. The plenipotentiaries made the surrender of the prisoners a *sine quâ non* before hostilities could be suspended." *

The sole cause of delay now was waiting for the siege train to batter the walls of Peking, and according to a return picked up about this time, the Tartar army we had to oppose was stated to be 80,000 strong, and chiefly horsemen. To Sir Hope Grant, General Ignatieff, the Russian ambassador, gave a carefully-marked and privately-made map of the Celestial capital, which proved of great service in the operations against it.

On the 27th the future hero of Magdala arrived, and by the active measures of Sir Hope Grant the army was reinforced by a battalion of the 60th Rifles, the 67th, a wing of the 99th, and another of the 8th Punjaubees; and on the 29th the siege guns arrived in charge of Captain Dew, R.N., who had experienced great difficulty in bringing them up, owing to the shallowness of the river, in which Grant had channels cut by the Madras Sappers. About the same time the chief mandarin at Tientsin, proving refractory, was brought a prisoner into camp, when he expressed much genuine astonishment at the existence of two such nations as Britain and France, having never heard of these barbarian tribes before.

Our movements evidently excited alarm, as, on the 1st of October, Prince Kung again wrote Sir Hope Grant, praying him to stay his march, and hinting that Mr. Parkes should be employed as mediator; but again he was told that nothing could be done till the prisoners were given up. By this time it was discovered that they were lodged in the Kaon-meon Temple, near the Tch-shun Gate.†

On the 3rd of October the tents were struck at noon, and our troops began their final advance, through a populous country, so intersected with houses and trees that progress often became difficult. On the 6th the army reached a large grass-covered but ruined rampart, when the bugles sounded a halt for breakfast, and Sir Hope Grant and General de Montauban agreed that, as the great army of San-Kolinsin had evidently fallen back, they should make for the famous Summer Palace, near Peking, where they might capture the emperor, or some of his principal officials.

It was now the turn of the British troops to march first—each nation taking it day about—and as the country became still more enclosed, Grant pushed on with a strong advanced guard

* Grant's "China War."—Note by Capt. Knollys.

† Wolseley.

with carefully covered flanks. From a slight eminence the entire movements of our compact little army could be seen distinctly, though portions of the line of march were lost at times as the lines of white helmets, the glittering bayonets and colours, pair by pair, disappeared between the green groves and orchards that bordered the way. Peking, the place of their destination, is situated sixty miles from the great wall of China, and one hundred from the sea. A halt was sounded, when from the summits of some old brick-kilns, the staff got their first glimpse of the mighty capital of China at a distance of six miles, occupying flat ground, its buildings almost hidden by its long line of fortified walls, with great towers looming at intervals against the blue sky. The former are thirty feet in height and twenty feet thick at their base, narrowing in successive courses of stone, like the pyramids of Egypt; the latter are square, seventy yards apart, with a projection of forty feet from the curtain. The population was estimated at 2,000,000, including the standing garrison of 100,000 Mantchoorian warriors and their families.

By this time our troops were much fatigued, and Sir Hope Grant ordered them to bivouac near some fine temples in an open plain, where straw and millet were plentiful, while he rode in search of the French general, whom he supposed to be on the left, for the purpose of holding a conference with him; but Montauban was nowhere to be found, or his troops either, for having made a greater détour to his flank, he had crossed the rear of the British troops, and thinking that he was still behind them, marched on, and thus was first at the Summer Palace.

Lord Elgin and the general took up their quarters in an old Confucian temple, and when darkness fell the latter had large fires lighted to indicate to the French, and also to our cavalry flankers, who had lost the main body in the enclosed country, his exact position; a royal salute was also fired for the purpose, but without avail, so a squadron of the Dragoon Guards were sent to patrol, to discover the exact quarter of the Summer Palace, and to ascertain if the French and our missing cavalry were there. Sir Garnet Wolseley (of the 90th), then Lieutenant-Colonel and Deputy-Assistant Quartermaster-General, went with the squadron, and returned at 9 a.m. next day, to report that he had found them at Yuan-min-yuan, the Chinese name of the palace, to which Sir Hope and the earl at once proceeded, and found it beautifully situated amid gardens and woods, approached by a stately and ancient avenue,

terminated by ranges of edifices, roofed with bright yellow tiles turned up at the end. The French were encamped near the Great Audience Hall, and already the work of general pillage had commenced. In the gateway lay several Chinese officials shot dead. All these proved to be eunuchs, wearing hats with scarlet tassels. The grounds were ten miles in diameter, 60,000 acres in extent, containing a singular example of Chinese landscape gardening, in mimic forests, mountains, lakes, and rivers, spanned by bridges like those on the old willow-pattern plate. The palace resembled a vast village, and contained thirty distinct residences for the emperor.

It was filled, says Sir Hope Grant, with beautiful jade-stone ornaments of great value and carved in a most elaborate manner, splendid old China jars, enamels, bronzes, clocks and watches—many of which had been presented by Lord Macartney, probably about 1793, and two guns, dated 1782, and given by him, were taken and sent back to Woolwich, where they had been made. "General Montauban and I," he continues, "agreed that all that remained of prize-money should be divided between both armies. A quantity of articles were set aside for us, and I determined to sell them for the benefit of our officers and men. The French general told me that he had found two *joies*, or staves of office, made of gold and green jade-stone, one of which he would give me as a present to Queen Victoria, the other he intended for the Emperor Napoleon. . . . The next day, the 8th of October, a quantity of gold and silver was discovered in one of the temples of the Summer Palace, and a room full of the richest silks and furs. This treasure was divided in two equal portions between the French and ourselves."* In the stables of the palace were found fourteen chargers, belonging to the unhappy captives so treacherously taken by the Chinese, who, on the afternoon of the 8th, under pressure of alarm, sent into camp the survivors, Mr. (afterwards Sir Henry) Parkes, Mr. Henry Brougham Lock, and five Frenchmen, including the Comte l'Eskayrac de Latour, of the Imperial Scientific Mission, who came to the temple where Sir Hope Grant and Lord Elgin resided, and told their sad story, which was as follows:—

"On the 8th of September, Lock and Brabazon having ridden into Tang-chow, collected all the party, consisting of De Norman, Mr. Bowlby (of the *Times*), Lieutenant Anderson, nineteen sowars, one of the King's Dragoon Guards—Phipps by name—and Parkes himself, and started on the way

* "Incidents in the China War;" Blackwood, 1875.

back. Ere long, however, they were fired at from the Chinese lines, and on riding round a field of high maize they came across a body of infantry, who, levelling their matchlocks, desired them to halt. Parkes spoke a few words of remonstrance, but was told that no one could be allowed to pass without an order from San-Kolinsin, who was not far distant, and to whom he was referred. Lock and a sowar accompanied him, and thus they became separated from the rest of their party. That general abused him, and said that all the evil of the war had been brought upon the Chinese owing to his misconduct, and ordered him and Lock to be made prisoners. They were then made to dismount, and forced to kiss the ground. Their arms were tied tightly behind their backs, and they were taken to the rear, where their custodians began to ill-treat them, and they expected every moment to be killed. They were put into a cart, and driven to Pekin, thrown into a common prison, in company with seventy-five malefactors, and loaded with chains, one round their necks, one round their bodies, two round their arms, and two round their legs. These were connected by a main chain to a ring in the roof so tightly that they could not sit down. It was afterwards lengthened, which relieved them considerably. . . . A jailer kept close to them day and night. In this state they were kept, badly fed, for nine days, when they were released from their chains and put in a prison by themselves, where they were interrogated by inquisitors as to the strength of our force, and other matters connected with us; but the two Englishmen refused to answer."

The fate of the other prisoners was not known until the 13th, when one Frenchman and eight Sikhs were given up, and their sufferings had been terrible. When Messrs. Parkes and Lock had left to remonstrate with San-Kolinsin, they had been overpowered by a rabble of Chinese soldiers, who tied their hands behind them as tightly as possible, and then wetted the cords. These, of course, contracted, and the state of the prisoners' hands and wrists soon became past description. Lieutenant Anderson grew delirious, and died after nine days of torture; he "was a noble fellow," wrote the general, "clever, amicable, and much looked up to by his brother officers."

De Morgan suffered more; he did not die for seventeen days. Mr. Bowlby, and the others, also died, or were destroyed by violence. Among the last who survived was Private John Phipps, of the Dragoon Guards, "who was especially distinguished by the fortitude with which he endured his

sufferings, and with which, up to the day of his death, he strove to keep up the courage of his fellow-captives."

Loot and destruction were the order of the day at the once far-famed Yuan-min-yuan. Silk stores and embroidered dresses were carried off by the French, who with clubbed muskets and heavy sticks smashed mirrors, clocks, chandeliers, and all they were unable to carry off, while rifle-shot demolished other objects beyond immediate reach. One French officer found a string of precious pearls, each the size of a marble, and foolishly sold it for only £3,000 at Hong Kong. On the table of the empress lay a repast, showing how sudden had been her flight. The Chinese of the adjacent villages crowded in, and carried off all they could find; while some of General Napier's staff found the roof of an edifice consisting of plates of pure gold, valued at £9,000, which they gave over to the soldiers. The surrender of the Anting Gate of Pekin was now demanded: but Kung's commissioner, Hong-ke, a vainglorious mandarin, protested against such a humiliation—eventually in vain, however.

"A great change of temperature now took place," records Sir Hope Grant, "and on the 9th of October the rain fell, and a cold north-west wind set in, like the blasts of Edinburgh in March." He ordered a sale of all the collected plunder, by a commission appointed, and each officer on restoring his spoil could redeem it at a fixed price. A few of our Dragoon Guards and Sikhs had found their way into the Palace with the French, consequently their camps were much resorted to for the purchase of silks; but nearly every French soldier had in his possession many watches, or strings of pearl, jade ornaments, silks, and furs; others had large sums in dollars, and many of their officers amassed what they deemed small fortunes. The state robes of the emperor, yellow silk, embroidered with dragons in gold and floss-silk, lined with ermine, were sold at the general auction. "The proceeds of the sale amounted to 32,000 dollars, and the amount of treasure secured was estimated at over 61,000, making a rough total of 93,000 dollars. Of this, two-thirds were set apart for distribution, in proportionate shares, to the soldiers, and one-third to the officers. Sir Hope Grant generously made over his share to the men, and, as a token of respect, the officers presented him with a gold claret-jug, richly chased, one of the handsomest pieces of the booty."*

In the private apartments of the emperor at the Summer Palace many remarkable documents were

* Swinhoe.

found, which showed that there had been a disposition to resist us even after the fall of the Takoo Forts; and showing also that it had been the intention of the Chinese to lure Lord Elgin from Tientsin with a slender escort, make him prisoner, and then frame their own terms of peace. One document, written in vermilion, suggested "war to the knife," and concluded thus:—"If we wait until the spring, and summer of next year, these barbarians will, of course, raise large bodies of black barbarians (*i.e.* sepoys), and will bring the force of all the world to try conclusions with us. And they will league with the long-haired rebels; and then, between war with those from afar and those close at hand, we shall have trouble enough to hold our own."

This referred to the rebel Chinese army, reported to be within 100 miles of Peking, about October, on the 10th of which Sir Hope Grant and General de Montauban, with the approval of the two plenipotentiaries, informed Prince Kung, that unless he gave up one of the gates of the Tartar portion of Peking, an entrance would be made by force. After this Sir Hope, to reconnoitre, daringly rode so close to the walls that his horse drank out of the ditch, though Tartar soldiers lined them. Then our engineers began to form a battery at "the Temple of the Earth," a handsome set of buildings within 200 yards of the city, and the generals of the allied army threatened to commence the attack precisely at noon on the 12th, if the An-ting Gate was not surrendered.

Watch in hand Sir Robert Napier stood counting the minutes, and with bayonets fixed the 1st Royal Scots stood by the guns, supported by a wing of the 67th, when, precisely at five minutes to twelve, Colonel Stephenson came galloping up to announce that the gate had been surrendered. Between the vast imposing towers, and under the great archway, then instantly Sir Robert Napier marched in, with 300 of the 67th and 100 of the 8th Punjaubees. These proceeded a few yards along the street within, driving before them great multitudes of the people, and then halted, fronted, and formed line, to receive with presented arms the French, who marched in with colours flying and brass drums beating. Sir Hope Grant then got some of his Armstrong guns upon the rampart, and turned their muzzles threateningly over the city of Peking, on the walls of which the British flag was now flying.

To Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas, of the 67th Regiment, was assigned the command of the An-ting Gate, and on the 14th of October the bodies of eight of the unhappy prisoners, six British and two French, according to one account—four British

and eight Sikhs (afterwards cremated), according to another—were brought to head-quarters in coffins, "which," says Sir Hope Grant, "contained little more than the bones. By the clothes, however, we were able to identify the remains as those of Lieutenant Anderson, Messrs. De Norman and Bowlby, and two sowars." They were buried in the Russian cemetery at Peking; and the French in an old Roman Catholic one formed long ago by the Jesuits. "Lord Elgin and I were the chief mourners," says Sir Hope Grant; "the band was furnished by the 60th Rifles. I shall never forget the bitter cold of that day—the hills were white with snow, and a north-west wind blew with the cold piercing blast of winter. The coffins were laid in one large grave, the service was read without any pomp or display, and then we left the bodies of our poor countrymen in their last sad resting-place."

The French were buried with much more ceremony on the 28th, according to the Roman Catholic ritual. General de Montauban made an eloquent address, and waving his hat cried, "Adieu, mes amis—adieu!" Then, instead of giving three volleys, every French soldier present marched past the coffins singly, firing his rifle against them, till they were covered with exploded cartridge-paper.*

Major Brabazon, of the Artillery, and the Abbé de Luc were still unaccounted for, till the fact of Paou having ordered their decapitation was proved by their headless bodies being seen floating in the Yung-leang canal. The troops were so exasperated by the general treatment of the prisoners, that very general regret was expressed that Sir Hope Grant had given his word that Peking should be spared if the An-ting Gate was surrendered; but as the Summer Palace had been the scene of these atrocities, its destruction was resolved on, and completed by the division of General Michell, and amid the flames roof after roof went crashing down, while the cheers of the soldiers echoed through Peking.

But peace was now agreed to.

On the 22nd of October, Father Mahé, a French Roman Catholic missionary, reported, on the authority of some converts, that treachery was meditated on the allies entering the town; that infernal machines were placed in the streets through which the plenipotentiaries and generals would have to pass; and that guns on the walls would be turned on the building in which the treaty of peace was to be signed. This made Sir Hope Grant prepared for the emergency; and on the morning of the 24th of October, the day on which

* Sir Hope Grant.



SCENE IN A STREET IN PEKIN.

the treaty was to be signed, Sir Robert Napier, with the Second Division, occupied the main street leading to the "Hall of Ceremonies;" a field battery was posted at the An-ting Gate, ready for instant action; while Lord Elgin, with Sir Hope, 400 infantry, and 100 cavalry, proceeded to the Hall, where they were met by Prince Kung and 500 mandarins in silken robes of state. Kung

march; and on the conclusion of peace, after Lord Elgin had insisted on the payment of 300,000 taels (about £100,000) to the heirs of the murdered prisoners, with the cession to Britain of Kooloom, a district at the mouth of the Canton river, and an indemnity of 8,000,000 taels, the troops began to take their downward way towards the sea. Save three regiments, the whole force was shipped off



PORTRAIT OF SIR HOPE GRANT.

bowed low to the earl, who replied by a proud, contemptuous stare, which inspired him with a terror that became pitiable when, a few minutes after, he saw the lens of Signor Beato's camera (the photographer who accompanied the staff) levelled full at him, "expecting every moment to have his head blown off by the infernal machine, which really looked like a sort of mortar ready to disgorge its terrible contents into his devoted body."*

As the winter was drawing on fast, Sir Hope Grant was anxious to commence his homeward

* Sir Hope Grant.

in about a fortnight by the active quartermaster-general without a single accident, but a battalion of the 60th and the 67th, with Fane's Horse, were left, as a precautionary measure, to hold the Takoo Forts till the indemnity was paid, while a naval squadron received orders to winter at the Miaoutau islands of Cheefoo; and for his eminent services in China and elsewhere Sir Hope Grant received the Grand Cross of the Bath.

"The capture of the gates of Peking," said the *Times* of the day, "though, unhappily, ineffectual in saving the lives of the prisoners, at once led to

the conclusion of the peace which had formed the sole object of the expedition. By the flight of the emperor, by the violation of the immunity of the capital, and the exposure of the vulnerable points of the monarchy, the Chinese have purchased the third Sibylline book in time to avert destruction."

CHAPTER LVIII.

THE STAR OF INDIA.—LORD ELGIN GOVERNOR-GENERAL.—DIES.—SIR JOHN LAWRENCE SUCCEEDS.—THE WAR IN BHOTAN.

THE most exalted Order of the Star of India was instituted by the Queen in February, 1861, and was enlarged and re-modelled five years afterwards by letters patent under the Great Seal, to afford to the princes, chiefs, and people of her Indian Empire a testimony of her royal regard, and to commemorate Her Majesty's resolution to take upon herself the government of that portion of her empire. It consists of the sovereign, a grand master, and one hundred and seventy-five companions, divided into three classes:—(1) twenty-five knights grand commanders, (2) fifty knights commanders, (3) one hundred companions, together with such extra and honorary knights as the sovereign may appoint. The sovereign is the king or queen reigning in Great Britain; the grand master is the viceroy of India for the time being. The sovereign may confer the dignity of K.G.C. upon such native princes and chiefs as shall have entitled themselves to the royal favour, and upon such British subjects as have, by important and loyal services rendered by them to the Indian Empire, merited such favour; and among the earliest who received the new order were the Maharajahs of Cashmere, Indore, Jeypore, and Travancore, with the Guicowar of Baroda, the Rana of Dholepore, the Nawab of Hyderabad, and others, with the Lords Harris, Lawrence, Strathmairn, and General Sir George Pollock.

The whole machinery of judicature in India was finally remodelled throughout that empire during the administration of Lord Canning. He amalgamated the Supreme and Sudder Courts, and established in each presidency a High Court, consisting chiefly of English barristers, and partly of the Company's judges, while a native lawyer of eminence was likewise raised to the Bench, with much honour to himself, and great gratification to the country; "and thus was the baneful ostracism of Lord Cornwallis abolished by the admission of natives to the

distinction of administering the law upon a perfect equality with Europeans." Small cause courts were at the same time established, with a simpler mode of procedure, for the recovery of petty debts in the provinces, and demands were rendered easy by the absence of the cumbrous formula of ancient English law.

In 1862 the death of Lady Canning hastened the departure of the viceroy, whose health had become seriously affected by six years of care and political toil. He embarked in March, but did not survive his arrival in England more than three months. He died "leaving the reputation of an industrious and conscientious public servant, though he had not attained the highest rank among statesmen. In the troubles which rendered memorable the commencement of his viceroyalty, and the prosperity of its close, his principal merit was undaunted resolution and steady devotion to duty."*

His administration certainly forms the most remarkable period in the history of British India. No governor-general ever had to experience such an epoch as that of the terrible Mutiny. If he was somewhat slow—perhaps dilatory—under circumstances when the foresight and energy of such men as Hardinge and Dalhousie would have been priceless, he never lost heart or composure of spirit, and his perfect equanimity under the most appalling circumstances has rarely been surpassed.

On the 12th of March, 1863, Alexander Bruce, Earl of Elgin and Kincardine, who had been our ambassador to China, and chief superintendent of British trade, succeeded Lord Canning as governor-general and viceroy, but died, at Dhurumsala, on the right bank of the Gogra, in the Himalayas, on the 20th of November, 1864. His tenure of office was thus too brief to afford sufficient scope for any display of those talents which he possessed in an eminent degree.

* *Times*, 1862

The preceding year was rendered memorable by the loss of two gallant soldiers, who had earned their highest fame in India—Sir James Outram and Lord Clyde—the former one of the most sagacious and chivalrous of that long succession of heroes who have conquered and kept for us the Empire of India; and the latter, though less distinguished by intellectual power, was equally a general who understood the art of war; yet it was only in old age that his long services were rewarded by a peerage.

Brief though Lord Elgin's tenure of office, it was marked by a Mohammedan conspiracy against the British Government, fomented by the fanatical Wahabees. It burst forth in Sitana, a village of Upper India, which is chiefly inhabited by them, and lies beyond the Indus, between Torbala and Umb, on the Afghan frontier. Under Brigadier Chamberlain, eight battalions of infantry (six of which* were sepoys) marched against them, and penetrated into those savage fastnesses amid which, about three centuries before, the army of the mighty Akbar was beset, cut off by thousands, and nearly destroyed.

Early in the strife Brigadier Chamberlain was disabled by wounds, and the position of his troops became so critical that the Council at Calcutta, contrary to the remonstrances of the Commander-in-chief, Lord Strathnairn, was on the point of withdrawing them from what seemed a useless contest—a perilous measure, which, by a confession of weakness, would have encouraged all the wild tribes of the Punjaub to rise in arms against us. Luckily at this juncture Sir William Denison, K.C.B. (brother of the Bishop of Salisbury), Governor of Madras, arrived in Calcutta to assume temporarily the duties of viceroy; and by his orders those desultory operations known as “the Umbeyla campaign” were prosecuted against the Wahabees with vigour, till their close in 1863.

In London the Ministry were filled with alarm at the prospect of a new Mohammedan outbreak and all the terrors associated with it, and at once offered the vacant office of viceroy to Sir John Lawrence, Bart., K.C.B.—one who had contributed so largely to the preservation of India—and his acceptance was hailed with universal approbation; for, although the revenue was flourishing, the most

able of Indian rulers would find sufficient occasion for his energy and for his vigilance. The Wahabee disturbances were of minor importance; but the Mutiny had furnished a terrible precedent to malcontents, as well as a warning to us, that the chiefs and princes of India were daily becoming more impatient of their social and political inferiority.

Sir John Lawrence reached Calcutta on the 12th of January, 1864, and used at once, in the duties of his office, the influence of that love and fear which are at all times most effectual in the East; and that the former predominated was proved by the magnificent assemblage of six hundred native princes, attending in all the gorgeous display of Oriental pomp his durbar at Lahore, in the October of the same year.

On his landing he found the Umbeyla campaign at an end. Four years after there was another outbreak of these fanatical barbarians, but the march of a single brigade sufficed to crush it.

The civil war which was then—in 1863–4—raging in China, did not prevent a rapid extension of British trade. By our forces and the French, the Taepings, who were in rebellion, were prevented from approaching the European settlements at Shanghai, and a certain number of British officers, with the sanction of our Government, entered



PORTRAIT OF LORD ELGIN.

the singular service of the Celestial Empire.

The civil war in America having interrupted the supply of cotton, Indian cotton was looked to as a substitute. The price rose to an exorbitant amount, and the exports increased to two or three hundred per cent; but as they greatly exceeded the exports from Britain, the article was paid for in coin. During the American strife the imports of precious metals into India amounted to more than seventy-five crores of rupees, and poured unprecedented wealth into the pockets of the cultivators. So great was its influx that “it was poetically described by the metaphor that the ryots made the tyres of their cart-wheels of silver.”*

During the year 1865, the unexpected increase of prosperity at Bombay, arising from the export of cotton, caused a remarkable mania for speculation. The most preposterous schemes were brought forward and embraced with readiness, and the shares of the companies rose fifteen and twenty-fold.

* Marshman.

The Bank of Bombay lent itself, without inquiry or scruple, to many wild projects and bubbles. When these burst, it was driven into the Bankruptcy Court, and was thus the first bank associated with Government that had been in such disgrace.*

In 1864 Sir John Lawrence found the Government of Bengal involved in disputes with the wild tribes of Bhotan, which, though an extensive region of Northern Hindostan, lying between the 26th and 28th parallels of north latitude, and forming the southern declivity of the great table-land of Thibet, is almost unknown, save by name, even to the student of geography. But so far back as the time of Warren Hastings, the Bhotanese had been a source of annoyance to the Indian Government, by their lawless inroads to carry off cattle, plunder, and even our people as slaves. Till about the time of which we are now about to write, Thibet and Bhotan had been a land of mystery, and as much unknown to us as the "thick-ribbed ice" around the Pole; and, apart from the old accounts of Marco Polo, little was known, till a survey of the lower district of Thibet was made, in 1864, by Major Montgomery. Among the few who have explored that region were Drs. Saunders and Hamilton, in 1783; † Moorcroft, in 1812; and Huc and Gabet, two French Jesuits, in 1855-57; but the first Europeans who ever penetrated into these mountain districts in modern times were Thomas Manning, an Englishman, and George Bogle, a Scotsman, who were sent, in 1774, by Warren Hastings, to open up a communication with Thibet, and between the Bhotanese and Bengal. Thomas Manning was then the only European who had ever been to Lhasa; and Bogle, who had come to India to seek his fortune, that he might clear from debt his paternal estate of Daldowie, in Lanarkshire, would have achieved much, as he became on friendly terms with the Tesha Lama, but he died prematurely, in 1781.‡

The lawless proceedings of the Bhotanese compelled the Government to organise a field force against them in 1864, with orders to penetrate beyond the great central ridge of the Himalayas and the level ground which constitutes the natural boundary of Assam.

The Bhotanese are a tall and athletic race, with dark complexion, high cheek-bones, black hair, and narrow pointed eyes—a mixture, apparently, of Chinese and Tartars, and a race distinct from all others in Hindostan. They are governed under two heads, the Dhurma and the Deb Rajahs—the

former a spiritual, and the latter a temporal, chief—who are aided by a council of ten in conducting public affairs. The office of Dhurma is viewed as a perpetual incarnation of the Deity, and is always filled by a priest. The latter, or Deb Rajah, sends yearly a caravan to Rangpoor with coarse woollen cloths, wax, ivory, gold-dust, tea, pepper, and horses, in return for English woollens, cotton, nutmegs, and gunpowder; and save these caravans and an occasional raid, the Bhotanese were not wont to have much intercourse with their southern neighbours.

Under these rajahs are a subordinate class of officials, who command the small stockades called *katmas*, and who were the chief leaders of the outrages which it was resolved, in 1864, to put down with the strong hand. Brigadier Mulcaster, commanding in Assam, was to operate with a column on the right; while two others, under Brigadier Dunsford, C.B., were to act on the left, and to push through the Dooars to the forts on the hills. Mulcaster was to start from the place named Gowhatty against the Bhotanese in Dewangiri, with three mountain guns worked by half-caste artillerymen, the 43rd Assam Light Infantry, three companies of the 12th Bengal sepoy, and a company of sappers and miners.

Under Colonel Richardson, C.B., the right-centre column was to move against Bishensing. It consisted of a half-caste company with three guns, six troops of Bengal Light Cavalry, wings of the 12th and 44th Bengal Infantry, two more companies of the 12th, and one of native sappers.

Under Colonel Watson, the left-centre column was to assail Buxa and Balla, for which purpose it had three Armstrong guns and two eight-inch mortars, manned by the Queen's artillery, a pontoon raft in charge of the sappers, the 2nd Ghoorkas, and a wing of the 11th Bengal Infantry.

The column on the extreme left, which had orders to march against Dhalimacote (the key of the defile by which Bhotan can be entered from Bengal) and Chamoorchee, had also three Armstrongs manned by the Queen's Artillery, with wings of the 11th and 18th Bengal Infantry, a company of sappers, the 30th Punjaub Infantry, and two squadrons of Bengal cavalry.

The reserve consisted of three companies of H.M. 48th and 80th Regiments, and two companies of the 17th Bengal Infantry, to move from Darjeeling. By the end of November all these troops were ready for action; but owing to certain commissariat difficulties, the advance of those on the right was delayed for some days. Led by Major Gough, V.C., and accompanied by a body of native peons

* Marshman. † "Phil. Trans.," February, 1780.

‡ "Mission of G. Bogle to Thibet, &c." Trübner & Co., 1876.

under Major Pughe, an advanced party of our Royal Artillery, with two mortars, covered by cavalry and infantry, crossed the river Teesta near Julpigorie, and inaugurated the mountain war by the capture of Gopulgunge.

The 29th of November Major Gough was before Myngoorie, where he found a large stockade deserted; and as the people submitted peacefully, he allowed them to continue their agricultural operations unmolested, while pushing on with his little force through a rich and romantic country that was cultivated to perfection, and where the rivers and chasms were crossed by *sangos* or wooden bridges, or the *jhoola* or rope bridge, like those described in the work of Captain Gerard.* Major Gough advanced to a stockade at Dhamonee, on the delta of the Durlah and the Teesta; but its garrison fled without firing a shot.

Brigadier Dunsford's column crossed the latter stream by the pontoon bridge, and the 3rd of December saw it marching with ease over a level plain, among fields of waving rice and hemp, mustard and tobacco, for about five hours, till it pitched its tents at the base of the hills that are bordered by the Chayb river, and rise near the entrance of the pass that leads to Dhalimacote. There, as the nature of the country rendered it impracticable for cavalry, he sent back that arm of his force, and advanced with the artillery and infantry, pushing up the steep ascent into the charming vale of Ambiok, where, the green jungle being open, and the path amid it good, the bullocks and elephants brought on the baggage and Armstrongs with ease.

On a densely-wooded hill peeped out the yellow bamboo huts of the village of Ambiok, and above them rose the Bhotan fort of Dhalimacote. On the troops halting, a Bengalee interpreter, with a white scarf in token of truce, was sent to the chief who commanded there, with a request that he would comply with the directions of Colonel Houghton, our political agent, if he wished to save his fort from being captured next day. The garrison were now seen making hasty preparations to resist; and, as diplomacy was likely to be but little understood, the guns and mortars were got into position near the village, and opened a vertical fire on the fort, while a party of the 30th Punjaub, by a secret path which Colonel Houghton had discovered, gained a ridge about 200 feet below the walls, from whence, and from some jungle, showers of well-directed stones, with volleys from matchlocks and bows, swept and galled their ranks. The Punjaubees replied with their Enfield rifles, and captured a barricade or breastwork which had been

formed across the ridge, from which they rushed at once against the sloping works of the fort, under the mingled storm of matchlock-balls, and stones shot unerringly from strong catapults, while quivering arrows studded all the turf about them; and there two men were killed and many wounded, including Captain Macgregor and Lieutenant Loughman, one by a ball and the other by a barbed arrow. The mortars were now dragged forward to the ridge; but when reducing the charges of powder to suit the shortness of the range, one of our own shells exploded, and blew up an ammunition cask, by which Major Griffin, Lieutenants Anderson and Waller, of the Royal Artillery, with four gunners, were killed on the instant, while Lieutenant Collins of the Engineers, and several artillerymen, were severely mutilated and scorched, and the Brigadier, who stood by, had a narrow escape.*

In one of the towers the Armstrongs soon beat a great breach, and as the Punjaubees rushed through it with fixed bayonets, the Bhotanese were seen flying out on the opposite side and down the steep and wooded slopes to the sheltering jungle.

Dhalimacote was found to be built of mud and stones, and, though having a residence for women, was destitute of artillery. The monastery and every other edifice within, including some stores full of rice and grain, were given to the flames.

To take possession of a fort at Dhumsong, about twenty miles from the frontier, was the only operation to be carried out now in that quarter of the mountains; and on the *jungpen* in charge of it surrendering, it was garrisoned by fifty of the 17th Bengal Native Infantry, under Lieutenant Dawes. Thus by the 19th of December Brigadier Dunsford had annexed all the hill-territory between the fort of Dhalimacote and the Darjeeling line of the Bhotanese frontier.

By successive detachments his column now began to march towards the plains, and along the base of the mountains towards the pass of Chamoorchee, which opens thirty miles eastward of that at Dhalimacote. Not a Bhotanese was to be seen when, on the 23rd, he was pushing eastward through wild, dense jungle to a place where he encamped, midway between the passes, and from whence, on the 29th, he sent 150 men of the 30th, under Major Mayne, to reconnoitre Chamoorchee, where the enemy had taken post. The major marched his party to a piece of open ground 600 yards below the hill on which Chamoorchee is situated, and then the Bhotanese came rushing down with great force and fury, yelling like demons, and showering missiles from matchlocks, bows, and

* "Account of the Himalaya,"

* Dr. Rennie.

slings against him; and, before he could get his detachment into a place of security for the night, twelve men fell wounded, two most severely.

General Dunsford came up on the 31st of December and made a reconnaissance, thus securing

1865. With one Armstrong gun, one mortar, and 250 of the 11th Native Infantry, Major Garstin took post on the left of Chamoorchee; fifty men of the same corps, and the artillery with two Armstrongs, were on the right; while, with 250 Pun-

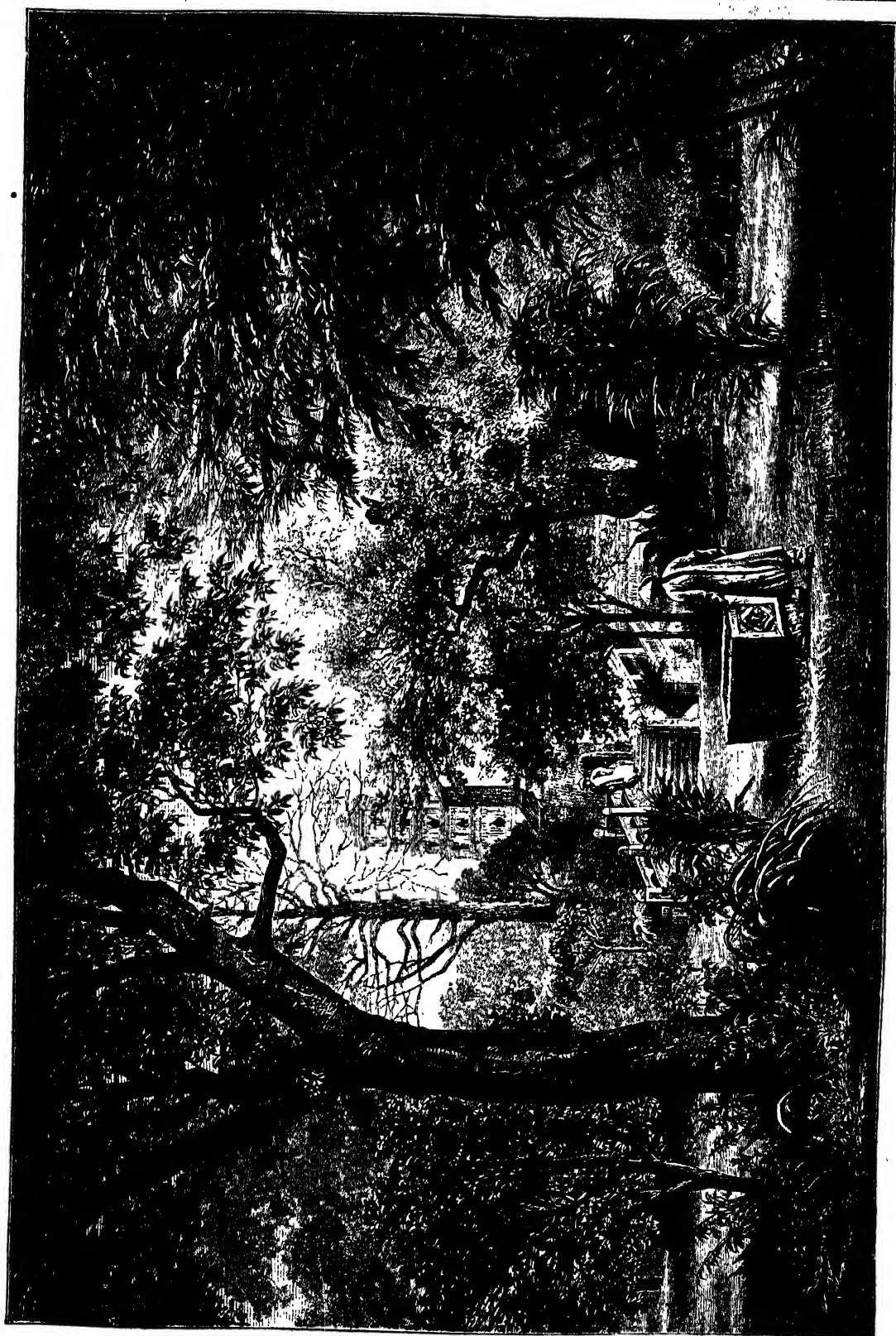


CHINAMAN SELLING THE "PEKIN GAZETTE."

a good position for the Armstrong guns, and discovering an unfrequented path that led directly to the village. Meanwhile Captain Perkins, of the Engineers, with a hundred bayonets, marched next morning betimes to cut off the flight of the Bhotanese, by taking post near some densely-wooded acclivities that were in their rear. To enable him to act with due effect the attack was deferred till three a.m. on the New Year's Day of

jaubees and one mortar, Major Mayne held the centre, with orders to attack by the main road.

The roar of the great gun on the right, and the splitting crash of the mortar in the centre, announced the attack at the appointed time; but, owing to some difficulties in the approach, Major Garstin's two guns failed to get into position, and he—finding the opposition but slight—dashed with the bayonet into the village, which was instantly



VIEW OF THE BRITISH CONSULATE, CANTON.

abandoned by the enemy, whose archers, slingers, and matchlock-men fled rearward to the wooded acclivities, from whence the unexpected fire of Perkins' men completed their consternation and destruction, while we had only five casualties in all. A body of armed Bengal Police was placed temporarily in the village, which consisted of only twenty huts and a monastery; after that the column descended from the mountains and returned to its tents, while Brigadier Dunsford, with a small party, proceeded eastward to reconnoitre the posts of Buxa and Balla; but these had already been taken possession of by Colonel Watson's Division, which had come on from Cooch Bahar (the inhabitants of which claim descent from Mahadeo, or Siva) simultaneously with the march of the left wing from Julpigorie. About this time there came to the brigadier a letter from the Deb Rajah of Bhotan (whose title signifies "the Divine King"), in which he styled himself the brother of Queen Victoria, and, after some proposals for peace, concluded in these amusing terms:—"If you wish for peace, do not disturb our peasantry: it will be best for you to go back to your own country without doing any harm to ours. But if you will take possession of my country, which is small, without fighting, and attach it to your own, which is large, I shall send the divine force of twelve gods, *as per margin*, who are very ferocious ghosts. Of this force 7,000 stop at Chamoorchee, 5,000 at Dhurma, 9,000 at Buxa, and 12,000 at Dhalim Dooar. You have done great injury to our country, and should not repeat it."

In spite of the "ferocious ghosts" Colonel Watson took possession of Buxa on the 7th of December, and found it to be a wretched sample of military architecture; and having only one gun, a dismounted Chinese piece of great antiquity. Advancing by a causewayed road, that was pleasantly shaded by graceful ash and willow-trees, Watson marched westward by the plains, and took possession of the Balla Pass, and left a detachment to hold its stockaded fort. Near the bed of a dry stream, in which the troops found a welcome vein of coal, he established his camp, at the foot of the hills, while our two right columns were busy along the frontier of Assam.

Colonel Campbell, of the 43rd Light Infantry, territorially named from that province, had crossed the Brahmapootra River on the 2nd December, accompanied by Brigadier Mulcaster, and established a standing camp at the summit of the Darungah Pass, fifteen miles distant from the hill-fort of Dewangiri. The village, which consisted of several huts, three great temples, and a stone

edifice occupied by the Soubah, crowned a ridge of the Himalaya, about 2,000 feet in height, from whence could be seen the level plains of Assam, covered with groves of mango, bamboo, and tea, interspersed with tea-gardens and tree-ferns.

After the tents were pitched, Captain Macdonald, with fifty men, preceded the column, which on the 9th began to penetrate the mountains beyond the pass, by a path which was only the bed of a rugged torrent. The advanced guard was formed by a company of the 43rd, under Lieutenant Peet, who came upon a stockade manned by the Bhotanese, to the volleys of whose slingers and jingal-men he made a brisk response; but, when about to storm it, was recalled by General Mulcaster, who now received tidings of the successful capture of the fort of Dewangiri by the gallant Macdonald, with only six casualties.*

The column at once advanced to that place, when a royal salute was fired as soon as the guns came up. Strict orders were given to leave the temples unmolested; and in the library of one were found more than a thousand volumes of sacred writings. Two mountain howitzers of the half-caste battery, with six companies of the 43rd, under Colonel Campbell, were placed as a garrison in Dewangiri, to carry out the scheme of complete annexation, and on the 17th of December the brigadier marched the rest of the troops back to his standing camp; but on the day after his arrival the right centre column marched for Bishensing, a hill-fort forty-two miles distant. The route proved a most arduous one, so much so that frequently only four miles' progress were made in a day, owing to the steepness of the mountains and the impervious density of the ancient jungles, to counteract the miasma of which quinine was every morning administered to the troops, who did not find themselves within three marches of Bishensing till the 5th of January.

So little was known of this district, in which the grass was sometimes so high as to conceal the largest baggage elephants, that on General Mulcaster advancing, with much caution and resolution, at the head of the 12th and 44th Native Infantry, to storm that which he had been led to consider a strong hill-fort, he found, to his intense surprise, only a small stone house, occupied by an aged Lama priest. Leaving, however, three companies of the 44th to hold it as a post, he began his return to Gowhaty, on the frontier of Assam.

The Government at Calcutta, believing that the task of annexation had been completely accomplished, unwisely hastily issued orders to break

* Dr. Rennie.

up the Dooar field force early in February, to withdraw the regular troops, and leave the occupation of the newly-acquired districts chiefly to some 800 men of the Bengal Police Battalion, together with a few light cavalry posts along the hilly frontiers of Bengal, Assam, and Cooch Bahar, while the land was to be placed under deputy-commissioners and divided into districts.

That all this was premature soon became apparent; for when all seemed quiet, and the Bhotanese were to all appearance coerced, they were secretly and actively preparing for a general onslaught upon the whole of the small and isolated chain of hill-posts that lay between Dewangiri and Chamoorchee. Thus, on the night of the 29th of January, the little garrison in the former place was suddenly environed, when least expecting it. The camp faced the north; a Sikh company of Roorkie sappers were on its extreme right; in the centre were the six companies of the Assam Light Infantry; on the left was the jungpen's house, occupied by some officers and the Bengal Police; while in front of the centre was the artillery, on a mound 150 yards distant.

Amid the darkness and stillness of the morning of the 30th, about five o'clock, a terrible noise was heard suddenly in the camp, as if all the cattle had broken loose, and Lieutenants Peet and Storey, of the 43rd, who occupied the same tent, were roused by its cords being slashed through, like all the rest in camp. It was then found that the Bhotanese had crept past all the advanced sentinels unseen, and were now, with matchlocks, slings, arrows, spears, and swords, making a general attack. The gunners rushed to their cannon, the troops confusedly and half-clad fell into their ranks, opening, as they did so, independent file-firing in that direction where they supposed the enemy to be; and thus the Bhotanese were kept in check till day was fairly in, and their position could be exactly seen. Then Colonel Campbell, with the 43rd and sappers, charged them with fury, and drove them off, but not without encountering an obstinate resistance. Lieutenant Urquhart, of the Royal Engineers, was mortally wounded by a jingal bullet, four men were killed, and Adjutant Storey, of the 43rd, and thirty-one others, were wounded; but Tongso Punlow, the aged leader of the Bhotanese, fell (as he received a wound which ultimately proved mortal), with more than sixty of his men, who, though repulsed, were by no means defeated, and for three days continued, without intermission, to harass Campbell's post, and destroyed a bamboo aqueduct which supplied it with water from a spring about a mile and a half distant.

Taking fresh courage now, they took possession of the mouth of the pass, thus cutting off Campbell's communications with Assam, and began to erect a stockade within 600 yards of his camp. At this point the Bhotanese were 5,000 strong, each matchlockman carrying a flask of powder, a bag with 100 bullets, six pounds of rice, and twenty stones, each sufficient to stun a man.*

It was now deemed impracticable, with the small force in Dewangiri, to dislodge the enemy from their position before it, and water was imperiously required. Hence Campbell contrived to dispatch a messenger to Brigadier Mulcaster, urgently requesting aid, but was told that the force he had with him was sufficient to hold Dewangiri, which commanded the five great passes into the mountains; yet Darungah, the great central one, was now in possession of the enemy.

Ammunition, which he at least expected, failed to reach Colonel Campbell, who, finding his position a desperate one, resolved, on the night of the 4th of February, to abandon it, and endeavour to reach the plains of Assam by a valley in the hills known as the Libra Pass. Secretly and quickly he made all his preparations. Of the 43rd he told off 250 men to carry and escort the sick and wounded, fifty to carry two twelve-pound howitzers, while the remainder of his force (only 200 bayonets) formed the advance and rear guards.

In silence—for their lives depended upon it—the troops began their downward march, amid darkness, at one o'clock on the morning of the 5th; but the enemy were aroused, and the march had to be covered by a fire from the pickets; and soon the extreme difficulty of such a retreat became apparent, as it was made amid pitchy gloom, among the wildest and most stupendous mountain ranges in the world. The main column lost its way, and a panic ensued. The cannon had to be abandoned, and, by order of Captain Cockburn, of the Royal Artillery, they were hurled over a tremendous cliff, where, however, they were found by the Bhotanese. After many perils and much suffering, Campbell's troops reached Mulcaster's headquarters; but all their baggage was taken, together with the wounded, who, instead of being butchered, as all expected they would be, were fed, kindly treated, and all sent in, each man with a small present, by order of old Tongso Punlow, who was then suffering from a bullet in his chest.

The conduct of the 43rd on this occasion was severely reprehended by those who forgot to consider that, until the Bhotan expedition, the corps had never, since its formation, acted as a battalion.

* *Calcutta Englishman.*

CHAPTER LIX.

END OF THE CONTEST IN BHOTAN.—FAMINE IN ORISSA.—AFFAIRS OF MYSORE.

THE unfortunate affair of Colonel Campbell proved to be one of the general series of attacks upon the whole line of hill-posts between the two points named. Bishensing was assailed, on the 25th of January, by a strong force of Bhotanese, whose approach was concealed by the density of the adjacent underwood till they were within half pistol-shot of a stockade which our troops were in the act of constructing; yet they were roughly repulsed by three companies of the Sylhet Light Infantry, who had only two men wounded by their missiles. Buxa was assailed in a similar manner at three o'clock in the morning of the 26th; but the fiery little Ghoorkas who held that place repulsed them bravely with bayonet and *kookeric*. Early on the 27th our stockaded post at Tazagong, in the Galla Pass, was attacked with singular fury by the Bhotanese, who sought to cut a passage into the heart of the place, but were repulsed by fifty men of the 11th, under Lieutenant Millet, who routed them with the loss of only seven men. Here, as in other encounters, the casualties of the enemy were unknown, as they always bore away their wounded. Though repulsed here, they did not lose heart, but began the construction of a stockade to command the post of Millet, who was so harassed thereby that Colonel Watson had to march to his succour.

On the 4th of February that officer attacked the stockade, at the head of some infantry, with Armstrong guns and a mortar; but after cannonading and shelling it for two hours, he was compelled to fall back with the loss of Lieutenant Millet killed, Lieutenant Cameron, R.A., mortally wounded, and many men of the 11th Bengal Infantry. Meanwhile our post at Chamoorchee, which was held by only 150 of the Bengal Police Battalion, was menaced, and had some of its sentinels murdered in the night. Major Pughe, their commanding officer, hastened to their succour, but found the Bhotanese so strongly intrenched that he was unable to drive them back, and had to appeal for aid to Brigadier Dunsford, who sent 150 Punjaubees under Captain Huxham. The Bhotanese were driven out, but they returned and re-occupied the work the moment our troops retired.

The Government at Calcutta now began to find their recent measures a mistake, and that there was a rigid necessity for securing the posts that yet remained in our possession. To this end, two

batteries of the Royal Artillery, the 55th Regiment from Lucknow, and the 80th from Dumdum, were marched to the north-eastern frontier without delay, together with three battalions of Punjaub infantry (the 19th, 29th, and 31st), under Brigadier-General Tombs, an officer whose bravery had already won him the Victoria Cross. One of these batteries, with a wing of the 55th, moved against the Bhotanese in Dewangiri; the other, and the second wing, with H.M. 80th, the 19th and 31st Punjaubees, moved to reinforce the left, and the end of February saw them toiling across the fertile plains of Assam towards the snow-capped ridges of the Himalayas; but, ere the month was over, exposure led to their decimation by cholera.

Under Generals Tombs and Fraser-Tytler respectively, the troops were now divided into two independent columns, designated the right and left brigades. The last-named officer commenced hostilities, on the 15th of March, by the recapture of Balla, at the head of the 18th Bengal and the 19th and 30th Punjaub Infantry, covered by the Armstrongs and mortars. The latter set the stockade in flames; from two points the infantry, through fire and smoke, rushed in with the bayonet, and, with the loss of only nineteen killed and wounded, drove out the Bhotanese, who left forty-four dead behind them. Tytler's brigade now pushed on towards Buxa, where the Bhotanese abandoned a stockade, after which, with slight opposition, he took post at Chamoorchee.

Led by General Tombs, the right brigade was meanwhile moving onward to recapture Dewangiri, after halting at the eastern fort of Koomreketta, in a spacious plain at the base of the hills, till the right wing of the 55th and the Royal Artillery guns came up. In each of the five great passes that led to Dewangiri, the key of the whole, the natives had thrown up fortifications to oppose all passage. From Koomreketta reconnoitring parties were sent forward to inspect these works, and on the 13th of March one of those, led by Captain Norman, stormed a stockade in the Balaider Pass (leading to Dewangiri), and slew twenty-four of the enemy. Four days subsequently, the stockade in the Darungah Pass was captured, after which there came a last letter from Tongso Punlow, who was still lingering under his wound, asking the general why he wanted Dewangiri

again, and from whom he first got permission to take it.

Tombs waited at Koomreketta till the end of March, when his reinforcements came up, and then, as the rains were at hand, at two in the morning of the 1st of April, he began his march into the Darungah Pass, when a fire was opened from a stockade upon his advanced guard, but a few rounds from a gun soon caused it to be abandoned; the march was resumed, and the invaders halted only at the base of the hill which was crowned by Dewangiri.

At seven next morning the troops, consisting of a battery of the Royal Artillery, the 12th, 29th, and 44th Bengal Native Infantry, part of the Assam Light Infantry, and H.M. 55th, commenced the attack. Along the front of the whole was the last-named corps extended in skirmishing order, while the guns got into position—howitzers on the right, and mortars on the left—at 600 yards' range; but they soon closed up to half that distance from the enemy's works, which were formed of a central stockade, flanked by two others, distant respectively at 120 and 150 yards. As the artillery were now unable to act, from the nature of the ground, the extended file of the 55th crept up the slope of the hill, and fired into the loopholes of the stockade, within the distance of 100 yards, and from these close apertures the fire was briskly returned, when the bugles sounded for the stormers to advance.

A party of these were repulsed in attempting to carry the stockade on the right; another assailed the central one, but was unable to find entrance, till Captain Truro and Lieutenants Douglas and Griffiths gallantly showed a way by climbing over the palisades. When they leaped down, sword in hand, among the Bhotanese, the latter became panic-stricken, and offered no resistance. Then the native troops rushed in, and the natural blood-thirstiness of the Hindostanees was shown by an indiscriminate slaughter, in which the discomfited stormers from the right took an active part, till every Bhotanese in the place was destroyed by the Sikhs and Patans, whose conduct on this occasion was not exceptional, says Dr. Rennie; "it is their character whenever they get an opportunity of so dealing with a beaten foe. . . . Very different is said to have been the conduct of the men of the 55th (Queen's) Regiment, to such of the wounded as escaped the bayonets of the native soldiery. They were seen supplying them with water, and doing what they could to relieve their sufferings by placing them in more comfortable positions." The garrisons of the smaller stockades, on beholding the capture of the great one, fled down

the mountain, and once more Dewangiri was ours, with the loss of only one officer, who was shot in the groin, and three others injured by stones from slings; hence the slaughter that ensued was most unjustifiable, though our officers did all in their power to avert the wholesale butchery.

Deemed untenable during the monsoon, the buildings at Dewangiri were utterly destroyed, and by the 7th of April all the European troops were on their homeward march to Calcutta. General Tombs returned to Gwalior, leaving to Fraser-Tytler the establishment of the chain of hill-posts, fourteen in number, extending from Tezporé to Darjeeling, along the western side of Lower Assam.

The Bhotanese were supposed to be completely crushed now; but the Government was again mistaken, for, in 1866, an army of 7,000 men, including a considerable number of Europeans, had once more to penetrate their mountain passes, which was achieved on the eastward and westward simultaneously. These measures so completely overawed the Deb Rajah that he conformed to all we required of him, and concluded a treaty with our civil commissioner, Colonel Bruce. One of its conditions was, that in consideration of the territory we had annexed, the Government of India should pay to that of Bhotan the annual sum of £2,500 sterling, which was to be increased to twice that amount, or 50,000 rupees, in the event of our failing to fulfil the stipulation, and so ended the desultory war with Bhotan.

Sir Hugh Rose, the Commander-in-chief in India, who had attained such distinction there, resigned in February, 1865. He had long been regarded as one of our most able general officers, and was deservedly raised to the peerage as Baron Strathnairn, in the county of Nairn, and of Jhansi, in the East Indies. He was succeeded as Commander-in-chief by Sir William Rose Mansfield, K.C.B., an officer who had served with distinction in the campaigns of the Sutlej and Punjab, in the Crimea, and throughout the Mutiny.

One of the most important legislative measures of Sir John Lawrence had reference to the tenancy question in the Punjab and Oude. He was most earnest in his desire to protect the just rights of the hereditary cultivators against the encroachments of the landholders, whether zemindars or talookdars. In 1865, a great outcry was raised against the acts which were of his creation, as being of a nature calculated to unsettle the engagements which had been made with the landholders, and to revive disaffection. On inquiry it was discovered that the ryots in Oude, for whose benefit the Government had incurred the greatest risk, had

joined the talookdars during the Mutiny, oblivious of the oppression and petty tyranny under which they had groaned for generations, and that in fact there was no class to whom the term of hereditary cultivators could be applied.

With great earnestness and no small acrimony the question was discussed, and then silenced by a despatch from Sir Charles Wood, who desired the

and yet, contrary to what might be expected, they are far from being unhappy. The law allows a husband to beat his wife, and for infidelity to maim her, or else put her to death; but I have never known these severities resorted to, and rarely any sort of harsh behaviour. A man is despised who is seen much in company with women. A wife, therefore, never looks for any fondling from



MARWARI MERCHANTS OF CALCUTTA.

local authorities "to take especial care, without sacrificing the just rights of others, to maintain the talookdars of Oude in that position of consideration and dignity which Lord Canning's Government contemplated conferring on them."

The social condition of the Hindoo peasant was not a very high one. According to a paper read by Mr. Coats before the Literary Society of Bombay, we are told that "the women of the cultivators, like those of other Asiatics, are seldom the subject of gallantry, and are looked upon rather as part of their live-stock than as companions,

her husband; it is thought unbecoming in him even to mention her name, and she is never allowed to eat in company with him from the time of their wedding dinner, but patiently waits on him during his meals, and makes her repast on what he leaves. But, setting aside these marks of contempt, she is always treated with kindness and forbearance, unless her conduct is perverse and bad, and she has her entire liberty. The women have generally the sole direction of household affairs, and, if clever, notwithstanding all their disadvantages, gain as great an ascendancy over their lords

as in other parts of the world." But the author quoted gives us the reverse of this picture of a Hindoo cultivator's establishment, by adding that "the condition of these interesting people is extremely deplorable. Their houses are all crowded, and not sufficiently ventilated, and their cattle and

miles in length, with an average breadth of seventy; and though generally a barren country, its south-eastern portion equals any part of India in fertility, particularly in its crops of rice. The total failure of rains in 1865 had given the Bengal Government premonition of the scarcity that was certain to



INDIAN NOBLES.

families are often under the same roof. Their food, though seldom deficient in quantity, is not always wholesome and nutritious, and they are wretchedly clothed, though exercise and water-drinking generally make them wear well. The constant labour of the women out of doors unfits them for nurses, and a large proportion of their children, in consequence, die in infancy."

In 1866 there occurred a desolating famine in the great province of Orissa, which is about 400

follow; but they took no measures to avert the evil. They were, in fact, quite indifferent, till the visitation came, and it was too late in the season to obtain succour by sea; yet the calamity was greatly mitigated by the humanity and exertions of Lord Harris, Governor of Madras; but the victims numbered three-quarters of a million, and their fate cast a deep stain on the Bengal authorities.*

In 1867 the affairs of Mysore were brought to

* Marshman, Abridg.

an issue, during the administration of Sir John Lawrence. Lord William Bentinck had been constrained by the oppression and insufferable misrule of the rajah to assume the government of that country, and grant him a pension suitable to his rank and requirements, while the local administration was placed in the hands of General Cubbon, one of the old Company's greatest statesmen, under whose care Mysore attained a state of unexampled prosperity. The rajah petitioned Viscount Hardinge to replace the government in his hands. The question was referred to General Cubbon, whose local knowledge enabled him to report with confidence, that every improvement that had been made had encountered the most strenuous opposition on the part of the rajah, and that the transference of the government of Mysore to him would have a most fatal effect upon the people and their prosperity: the request was consequently declined.

In no way daunted by this result, the rajah made similar applications successively to Lords Dalhousie, Canning, and Elgin, and to Sir John Lawrence; but all emphatically refused. Sir Charles Wood upheld the decisions of the five governors-general. The rajah then proceeded to adopt a son, in the old Indian fashion, and demanded that he should be acknowledged as the heir to his throne. In the creation of the principality in 1801, Lord Wellesley had expressly declared that he excluded all heirs and successors to the musnud of Mysore, limiting the enjoyment thereof to the rajah alone, on whom he had bestowed it as a personal gift; but in 1867 the Conservative Secretary of State for India reversed the decision of all the public functionaries there, and recognised the adopted son as the future heir to the throne, and to whom the administration of the country was to be committed on his coming of age.

Since reinforcements for the army of Egypt, under Sir David Baird, no Indian troops had gone westward till this year, when the Abyssinian war was undertaken, and Mr. Seymour Fitzgerald, then Governor of Bombay, assured the Ministry that a sufficient force could easily be dispatched before the end of 1867. The command of the troops destined to act against King Theodore was assigned to Sir Robert Napier, then Commander-in-chief of the Bombay army, an officer of a Scottish family, though born in Ceylon. He had served in the campaign of the Sutlej, and been senior engineer at Moultan, Goojerat, and Lucknow; and he willingly undertook the enterprise, in which the natural obstacles were more to be feared than armed resistance. Among the three Indian presidencies there arose a jealous contention as to

the contribution of a quota of troops from each, and on this subject Sir Robert Napier wrote thus on the 5th of September:—

"I consider it especially of advantage to have the native regiments, if possible, of one army, as they work in harmony with, and rely upon, each other. If they are of different presidencies, feelings of great bitterness arise when one is left in the rear, and partialities are conjured up as a reason why one or other is not taken to the front."

Sir Robert Napier estimated that for this expedition 12,000 men would be required, including 2,000 to remain in port to cover the embarkation of the rest; and with the exception of one regiment of Dragoon Guards, some of the Royal Artillery, and four regiments of infantry, the troops embarked belonged to the Bombay army, including a battalion of Beloochees, whom an eye-witness describes as "a splendid regiment—tall, active, and serviceable-looking men as I ever saw. Their dress is a dark green tunic, with scarlet facings and frogs, trowsers of a lighter green, a scarlet cap, with a large black turban around it; altogether a very picturesque dress."* But the expedition on which these troops departed, though crowned with the most complete success, does not belong to the history of India.

In a brilliant durbar, held at Lucknow in 1867, Sir John Lawrence received, in Her Majesty's name, the homage of the talookdars, zemindars, and other landholders of Oude, who then appeared to have become sincerely loyal to the British Government.

In the same year the generals of Russia succeeded in establishing a protectorate over the semi-barbarous state of Bokhara, or Usbekistan, in Central Asia, the then reigning ameer of which owed to his new patrons the safe possession of a throne that had been assailed by dissatisfied subjects under his rebellious son. This acquisition of Bokhara brought the Russians—ever a source of anxiety in India—into the immediate neighbourhood of Afghanistan, and afforded them a convenient opportunity for interference in the perpetual civil wars which distracted that country. An Afghan prince, with a body of his fierce mountaineers, was already serving in the Russian army, and it was evident that other defeated pretenders might court the favour of allies so powerful.

Dost Mohammed, who had faithfully maintained his engagements with the British Government, had died in 1863. His son, Shere Ali, whom he had nominated his successor, mounted the throne, but was soon driven from it, though he ultimately suc-

* Henty's "March to Magdala."

ceeded in recovering it. While these intestine struggles were in progress, Sir John Lawrence maintained strict neutrality, and avoided all interference in a contest that desolated the country.

This policy was applauded by some "as masterly inactivity," and it may possibly have been the more prudent course; but it soon became apparent that the rapid progress of Russian influence in Bokhara rendered the maintainance of such a policy impracticable. The administration of Sir John Lawrence, which was now drawing to a close, was marked by an earnest advocacy of an open Christian course in the government of India, and especially of making the Bible a class-book in all Government schools, but allowing the attendance of the native pupils to be completely voluntary.

It was also marked by a great attention to works of irrigation, and just before the expiration of his term of office he drew up a minute, detailing those which had been completed and planned for all the three presidencies. The proposed works would have required an expenditure of many crores of rupees; but as the finances exhibited a yearly deficit, the complete canalisation of India had to be deferred to a more auspicious period.

On his quitting office in the beginning of 1869, the leading journal wrote thus:—"It is asserted that Sir John Lawrence has lately seen reason to modify the absolutely neutral policy which he has observed during the lengthened contest in Afghanistan. It is unfortunate that he should be replaced by an inexperienced successor at a moment when

a comprehensive knowledge of Asiatic politics is more than ever required by the rulers of India. For the present, the Russians in Bokhara and the adjacent regions have given no cause of offence to the Indian Government, nor is their mighty power, at so great a distance from their resources, likely at any time to be formidable. It is only in dealing with disaffected subjects or turbulent neighbours that the vicinity of a second European power might lead to complications." *

At this very time we were nearly on the brink of a collision once more with the Chinese, and had to employ a small naval squadron to avenge the wrongs of certain missionaries, though it must seem doubtful whether such interference was justified by our last treaty with "the Celestial Empire," or by international right; and it was perhaps justly—though some said harshly—urged then that "it was impossible to protect all British adventurers who, in the prosecution either of commercial or religious designs, think fit to reside in remote and uncivilised regions. A missionary is not bound to expose himself to death or torture; and if he thinks fit to incur the risk, he must not suppose that he has always a British squadron at his back."

Sir John Lawrence, after his return to Britain, was raised to the peerage of the United Kingdom on the 27th of March, 1869, as Baron Lawrence of the Punjaub and of Grately in the county of Southampton, and other honours and rewards were deservedly conferred upon him.

CHAPTER LX.

THE ISLES OF BRITISH INDIA.

IN most histories of our Eastern Empire, save by an occasional reference, these dependencies of the great continent are seldom mentioned and rarely described, with the exception of Ceylon and Penang, of which we have given detailed accounts chronologically, in their places. The other islands are Manar and Rameshwaram, the Lacadives and Maldives, the Mergui Archipelago, the Andaman and Nicobar Isles.

The two first-named lie between Ceylon and the coast of the Deccan. Manar is eighteen miles in length, with an average breadth of three, and is separated from Ceylon by an arm of the sea, which

at low water is partly dry. It is nearly covered with pretty groves of the cocoa-nut and palmyra trees, and is famous for its black cattle. From the western point of this island to that of Rameshwaram there runs a bank of sand called Adam's Bridge, which the Hindoos regard as the remains of a bridge constructed by their demi-god Rama when he invaded Ceylon, since when the monkeys have enjoyed a sacred character, as having been then the soldiers of Krishnu. Across this bank are three openings or channels—one called the Tal-Manar passage, the second eight miles to the

* *Times*, 1868.

westward of the isle, and a third eleven miles from Rameshwaram, called the Tanny-Coody passage.* Manar was first occupied by the Portuguese in 1560, but it was taken from them by the Dutch in 1658, after a tough engagement, at the head of 1,000 men with twelve frigates, after which they made it a place of exile for their refractory subjects. It was formerly noted for its pearl fishery, which now has passed away.

Rameshwaram, the other isle at the northern extremity of Ceylon, is low, flat, about ten miles in length, and is considered as the most southerly pier of the series of shoals and coral rocks composing the Bridge of Adam or Rama, and has a population of more than 5,000. "The name signifies the temple of Rama," says an old account, "and there is a pagoda belonging to the lord of the isle, which they say contains immense treasure. The lord of it has built a strong castle opposite to the coast of Coromandel and Madura, which commands a straight passage leading to Manar, Jaffnapatam, and Negapatam."†

The pagoda or temple is entered by a gateway 100 feet in height, under which no European has ever yet been permitted to pass; in architecture it closely resembles the Egyptian. Within it is an image of Rama, which is bathed every day with water brought 1,000 miles, from the Ganges; and consequently the concourse of pilgrims, jugglers, and beggars is very great, and each pays according to his zeal or ability. All surplus, after the expense of the temple, becomes the property of a Brahmin family, whose chief is named the *Pandaram*, and with whose emoluments our Government does not interfere. The whole island is dedicated to the purposes of religion; no plough is allowed to break its sacred soil, and no animal, wild or tame, permitted to be killed within its precincts; but early in the fourteenth century the Mohammedans carried their arms into it, and erected a mosque in testimony of their zeal.

In the Indian Ocean, 150 miles westward of the Deccan, lie the Lacadives, a group of isles which are divided into fifteen clusters of two or more each, surrounded by rocks, coral reefs, and dry, uninhabited spots. They were discovered by Vasco da Gama in 1499, but passed to Britain, with Canara, at the close of the eighteenth century. Each cluster is called an *attollou*, and the natives, who are of Arabian origin, and about 10,000 in number, assert that each of these was formerly one island, through which the encroaching sea has made inroads. Owing to the extreme intricacy of the navigation, they are seldom visited by European

ships. The three principal isles are Anderot, Caharita, and Akhalu, and all are of coral formation. The first of these presents one remarkable feature, in the land being highest on the windward side, where it rises almost perpendicularly from an unfathomable depth, whereas all the others are protected to windward by sloping banks of coral.

The larger isles grow plantains, cocoa-trees, the manufacture of coir from the husk of the nut being, with the cultivation of rice and fishing, the sole occupation of the peaceful and inoffensive inhabitants, whose circulating medium is the cowrie-shells that are found upon their shores. An old writer, De la Val, tells us that those "who are much in the sun about noon often lose their sight in the evening, and for the recovery of it take the liver of a cock boiled, write certain magic words upon it, and swallow it just before sunset." He adds that he and his companions found much benefit from this recipe, though they omitted to use the charm. Only twenty days' consumption of rice can now be grown in all these islands; the rest is imported from the continent.

Two hundred miles south-west of Cape Comorin lies another cluster of coral islands, named the Maldives, in seventeen groups or *attolls*, the entire chain of which has a length of 466 geographical miles, and the narrow channels between which are most unsafe for ships of burden, owing to the bottom being coral, and the anchorage near the shore, on which the mighty surge of the Indian Ocean is for ever rolling in tumultuous fury. Some of these clusters are now wasting away before its violence; and in many places the cocoa-nut groves of the *attolls* are already standing in the water. One island has totally disappeared; but a sacred banyan tree that grows upon it is still visible.

The natives of the Maldives, estimated at more than 200,000, are of African race, though the higher orders among them, by their fairness of complexion, seem of Persian descent. They carry on a considerable trade with the continent of India by means of decked boats, and, like the people of the Lacadives, they traffic by means of cowrie-shells, which are valued at one rupee per *goolah*, a bundle of about 1,200. They are a quiet and peaceable race, and the awkwardness of their sword and spear exercise at festivals shows that they are but little accustomed to use them. Their only military duty is to serve in rotation, with muskets, at the palace of their prince at Malé. They are both civilised and hospitable. In 1777 a French ship, having many ladies on board, was cast away on the isle of Yemety, and they were treated with the utmost

* Major Sim's Report.

† "Atlas Geographus," 1712.

kindness and attention. The poverty of these isles—perhaps, save those of Mergui, the poorest in British India—has saved them from foreign invasion, although the Portuguese erected a fort on one of them, but were soon driven off. Hyder Ali contemplated their conquest by his fleet, till frustrated by his wars with the British and Mahrattas. It is singular that, among the Maldives, the brewers reside in one group, the goldsmiths in another, and the locksmiths, mat-makers, potters, turners, and joiners each inhabit their respective group.

The ordinary dress of the men consists of drawers and a cummerbund. The head-people wear in addition a sash of embroidered silk or cotton; and on Fridays, when attending the mosque, a white turban and overshirt reaching to the ankles. The women's dress is a skirt from the waist to the knees, and they are not kept from the view of strangers, or secluded, as in most Mohammedan societies, though a plurality of wives is allowed.

The Mergui Archipelago is a chain of bold and rocky isles, which lie in a triple line from north to south along the coast of Tenasserim, with deep, wide, and smooth channels between them. They are covered with trees—red-wood, lance-wood, satin-wood, and cocoas—and are edged with rocks, which are encrusted with little oysters. Small rills of pure water pour down their sides; but a few patches of cultivation are only to be found in those opposite the town of Mergui. There is a spacious harbour, capable of containing a fleet, on the north side of St. Matthew's Isle, formed by it and the adjacent islets, named Phipps, Hastings, Russell, and Barwell. A race of men, named Geelongs, are found scattered among these Mergui islands, where their dread of the Malay pirates keeps them in constant locomotion to escape slavery. Of this race Dr. Helfer is the only traveller who has written any account; and on his landing among them, he says a general terror spread everywhere, the community not knowing whether friend or foe had come. "Suspecting an incursion of the Malays, the women and children fled into the interior, and their best property, sea-slugs and rice, had been buried in all hurry in the jungle. Finding that a white man had come among them, the whole community came in the morning to welcome me." They are chiefly fishermen; but he adds that "they have no nets—the trident is their only weapon, and with it they spear sharks as well as turtle; all the rest is done with the *dah*, or hand, as they know no other instrument."

The Nicobar Isles, which lie 180 miles south-west of Pegu, are a British possession. The largest of the group is named Sambelong; but

the two most visited by Europeans are Carnicobar and Nancoury; there are nine others, with a multitude that are nameless. They are generally covered with wood, and some have large trees that are of little value. In 1756 the Danes attempted to make a settlement on Nancoury, but by 1770 scarcely one settler remained alive. They were chiefly Baptist missionaries, who sought to convert the natives, who are of Hindoo race with an interfusion of Malay blood. The men are nearly beardless, and shave their eyebrows, but never cut their nails.

The climate is unhealthy, owing to the heavy dews by night. In the year 1782, the *Hinchinbrook*, East Indiaman, came for supplies to the Great Nicobar, and out of twenty-one persons who slept a single night on shore fifteen perished, four others had severe fevers, and the only persons who escaped in safety were two who walked about the whole night.

The weapon of the men is a javelin; the women, who are remarkable for their ugliness, till the ground. Most of the country ships from the different coasts of India touch at the Nicobar Isles to procure cocoa-nuts, which they purchase at the rate of four for a leaf of tobacco, and a hundred for a yard of blue cloth—the former is the current medium of all exchange and barter. The yams grown in these isles are the finest in India, and the oranges are good and abundant.

The Andaman Isles (the penal settlement of British India) are a group in the Bay of Bengal, forming the larger and more northerly portion of that island chain which stretches from the southern shore of Burmah to the north-westward of Sumatra. The length of the Great Andaman is about 150 miles, and is from eighteen to thirty in breadth. The Little Andaman, thirty miles to the south of it, is twenty-eight miles long by seventeen broad. In the former is a mountain 2,400 feet high. The climate is temperate, and on both grow the banyan, almond, and oil-trees, the latter to a vast height, and many other beautiful kinds of wood; amid which scorpions, snakes, and lizards abound, and in the branches of which, as well as in the rocks, the salangane, a kind of swallow, builds its nest, which is edible, and an object of traffic.

The aborigines, whose total number does not exceed 2,500, are an anomalous race of the most degraded and repulsive description; and are supposed to be the descendants of a cargo of African slaves wrecked upon these isles, which before that had been uninhabited. Fierce, cunning, and vindictive, they are perfectly black, never over five feet in height, with huge disproportioned heads,

high shoulders, small limbs, and protuberant stomachs. The only covering of their persons consists of mud, in which they are constantly coated as a protection from the noxious insects which infest these isles. Their woolly hair they dye red with ochre. Their habitations are branches of trees, spread over four short poles; their couches are leaves, and they have no vessels capable of resisting the action of fire. Their weapons are

Demon of the Storms, whose wrath they deprecate in wild and barbarous choruses. In the time of Kæmpfer they were deemed cannibal, but this has been since disproved.

The necessity for a British establishment, as shelter for shipping east of Bengal, and also as a depôt for the reception of convicts, induced the Government to establish a colony at Port Chatham (in 1791), a well-sheltered, picturesque embayment



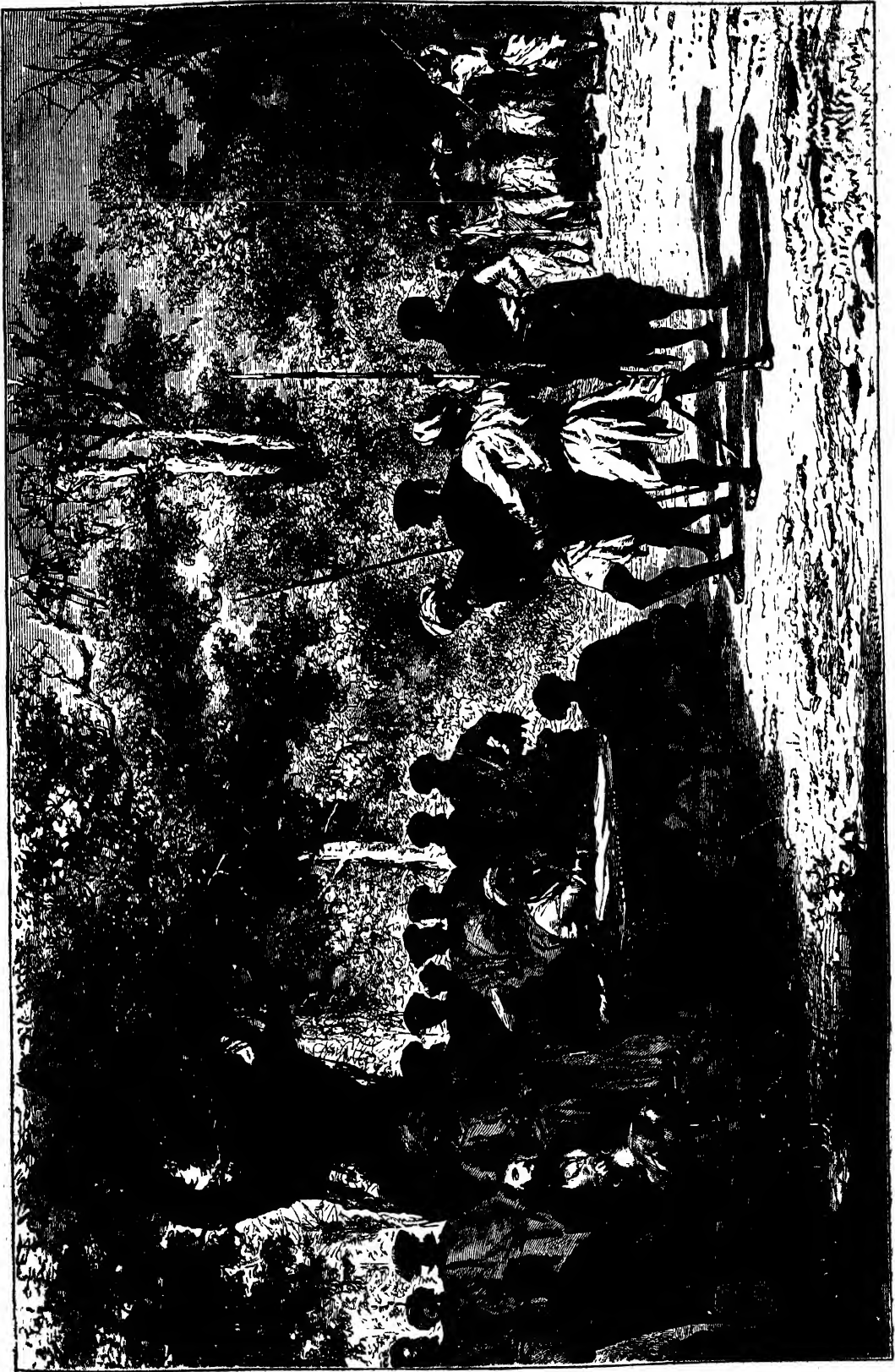
PORTRAIT OF THE EARL OF MAYO.

bows and lances of iron-wood. The former are bamboo, strung with vegetable fibre; their arrows reeds, pointed with fish-bone. Their mode of running up a cocoa-tree is remarkable—running up like a monkey, and descending with astonishing velocity. In tempestuous weather they are reduced to the utmost want, feeding on rats, lizards, and snakes, and perishing when these resources fail. Their language has no affinity to any other in India, and they worship the celestial bodies and various imaginary genii, especially one named the

at the south-eastern extremity of the Great Andaman. Two years subsequently a similar attempt was made at Port Cornwallis, in the same island; but the extreme unhealthiness of the locality, together with the ferocious disposition of the natives, and their excessive hostility to all strangers, rendered the attempt abortive.*

We shall have again to refer to these islands, when detailing the unfortunate fate of the successor to Sir John Lawrence in the administration of India.

* "Asiatic Researches," vols. ii. and iv., &c. &c.



A COURT OF JUSTICE IN THE JUNGLE.

CHAPTER LXI.

EARL OF MAYO VICEROY.—SHERE ALI.—THE REVENUE OF INDIA.—THE FEUDATORY PRINCES.—THE LUSHAI WAR.

RICHARD SOUTHWELL BOURKE, Earl of Mayo, was the next Viceroy of India. Born at Dublin in 1822, he was a man of refined literary taste and high diplomatic talent. When Lord Naas, he had been M.P. for Kilkenny, and had thrice been Secretary for Ireland. Prior to his departure for the East, he paid a farewell visit to his native land, to which, with all its associations, he was tenderly attached, and in October, 1868, was at Palmerstown, his family seat. "The day before he left these scenes for ever," says his biographer, "he chose a shady spot in the quiet little churchyard on his Kildare estate, and begged that if he never returned, he might be brought home and laid there," as if some foreboding of the sudden fate that awaited him had passed through his mind.

On the 13th of October, he left Palmerstown, as he tells us in his diary, "amid tears and wailing, much leave-taking, and great sorrow." On the 25th, he dined with the Prince of Wales, at Marlborough House; and on the 11th of November, 1868, left London for India, by the overland route. He reached Calcutta, on the 11th of January, 1869, where his reception on the great flight of steps at Government House formed an imposing spectacle. He was received by the worn and veteran viceroy in full uniform, "his face blanched, and his tall figure shrunken by forty years of Indian service; but his head erect and his eye still bright with the fire that had burst forth so gloriously in India's supreme hour of need.*" The earl took the oaths as viceroy on the 12th of January, 1869.

One of his first acts was to modify Sir John Lawrence's policy of non-interference with the affairs of Afghanistan, and to confirm amicable relations with Shere Ali, the reigning ameer. His predecessor had frequently been censured for his persistent neutrality during the struggle for supremacy among the descendants of Dost Mohammed; and it is no doubt probable that Shere Ali, when his rule was finally established, may have felt but small gratitude to the Viceroy of India for the tardy recognition of his title, though, as an Eastern ruler, he was little inclined to regulate his policy by sentimentalism. He was, however, invited to an interview with Lord Mayo, who received him

with every pomp at Umballa, on the 29th of March. With the Russian dominion steadily extending itself over Central Asia, and almost to the base of the Afghan mountains, Shere Ali saw the necessity for an alliance with the only power which was strong enough to protect him; and in his journey to Umballa he had a good opportunity of appreciating the strength and discipline of our troops in North-western India. Although it was deemed unnecessary to conclude a formal alliance, Shere Ali was gratified by a subsidy of twelve lacs yearly and a supply of arms.

By all this he no doubt understood that our Government simply desired the maintenance of his power and independence, as a native prince, interposed between us and the Russian advance to Khiva and Bokhara. Lord Mayo rendered himself popular with all the native princes by his graciousness, and with the European community by his winning manners and noble hospitality. In all his domestic administration he profited largely by his parliamentary and Irish official training to exercise a vigilant supervision of finances. On a careful revision of the Indian budget, it appeared that the expenditure largely exceeded the revenue; and he began at once, by a vigorous effort, to restore equilibrium, by a sweeping system of retrenchment.*

Before the end of his first year, Lord Mayo had completed his circuit of India, or 5,666 miles, by rail, steamer, and saddle. In the latter he sometimes travelled from sixty to eighty-six miles a day, and he availed himself of every conceivable conveyance—Punjaub camels, Bengal elephants, and the *yakhs*, or riding cows of the Himalayas. From Bombay he sailed to the coast of Goa, and wherever he went we are told that the consolidation of the British power in India struck him "as a marvel of labour."

On the 16th of November, 1869, the fêtes inaugurating the opening of that link between Europe and India, the Suez Canal, took place. They commenced with religious ceremonies in the open air; at these were present the Empress of the French, the Khedive of Egypt, the Emperor of Austria, the Crown Princes of Prussia, Holland, Sweden, and the Grand Duke Michael of Russia,

* Hunter's "Life of the Earl of Mayo."

* *Times*, 1869.

with many other royal personages, and the diplomatic representatives of all nations; and on the 20th the canal was traversed by forty sea-going vessels, among which was the imperial yacht, *Aigle*, with the Empress Eugenie on board.

That this great work has been a success experience has proved. In 1870, for instance, the tolls taken came to £206,373; in 1874, they were £994,375; and Mr. Fitzgerald records * "that the receipts were trebled in two years from the opening, and in the next four years this amount had been almost doubled; while the receipts at the end of the last year (1875) were nearly six times those of the first. This progress, or anything approaching to it, will not, of course, be maintained but, on the other hand, the steady increase at five per cent., at which some competent authorities have declared it will settle down, seems far too low. There are hardly any data to go upon, the development being literally incalculable, for we know not to what extent the trade with the East may expand under the new encouragement, and fifteen or twenty per cent. steady increase does not seem so improbable."

Ever since the Suez Canal service has been instituted, all H.M. troops proceeding by that route to India have been directed to "call for orders" at Gibraltar and Malta.

In the same year there was held a great industrial exhibition at Kurrachee, in Scinde, the chief entrepôt of the Indias; and to celebrate the event medals in bronze and silver were struck, bearing upon them for the first time since the capture of Delhi by General Wilson that title which became such a vexed matter seven years after, "Victoria, Queen of Great Britain and Empress of India." The same title was used three years subsequently, in an address by the Rajah of Jeypore, in connection with the Baroda inquiry.

For the first time in our national history, an Indian budget was presented to the British Parliament in 1868-9, by the Duke of Argyll in the Peers and Mr. Grant Duff in the Commons; and from the accounts presented to the latter, in May, 1870, the net receipts and expenditure were as follows:—

Total revenue (net) ...	£40,012,925
Expenditure over revenue	4,144,643
	£44,157,568†

Of the improvement of the agricultural population of India we find Sir Charles Trevelyan, the financial Minister there, writing thus on the 27th of July, 1870:—After mentioning that wages

had risen from two to eight annas a day, he goes on to say that the peasant proprietors had "become emancipated from the village money-lenders, to whom they had been enthralled time out of mind. They have been elevated to a state of physical ease and abundance, so that the time has now come for commencing their education and moral improvement on a comprehensive and systematic plan. There was no use in attempting it while they were ground down to the earth, and were struggling for daily subsistence. They are now so well off that innumerable stories are current about the fancy bullocks in which they indulge, and the marriage-portions they give their daughters; and Oriental imagination has even marked the change by the characteristic mythical ploughing with a silver ploughshare. The agriculturists are the only class to whom the great rises of prices have been pure gain. The merchants have had immense losses from the panic and collapse of trade; the Government has lost by high salaries and prices what it gained by high prices; but the peasants have kept their share, and their share was the largest. The result is that 'the poor ryot' with his 'scanty subsistence' is a thing of the past. Then there is the excise duty on spirits and drugs. This ought to be screwed up to the highest possible point which will not encourage smuggling. That is the principle on which all Anglo-Indian Governments profess to act, and they have only to go on, and really carry it into effect."

One of the most noted features in Lord Mayo's administration was the projection of another system of railways, embracing 10,000 miles, to be constructed by the State, and not by the agency of guaranteed companies. A rigid economist of time, the earl rose always at dawn, and began the work of the day at once, frequently, in his ardour for business, omitting the morning ride so usual with all Europeans in India. In a private letter to H.M. Ministers, dated the 23rd of November, 1870, he wrote thus:—

"Our relations with the native feudatory states are, on the whole, satisfactory, though they are by no means defined. We act on the principle of non-interference, but we must constantly interfere. We allow them to keep up armies, but we cannot permit them to go to war. We encourage them to establish courts of justice, but we cannot hear of them trying Europeans. We recognise them as separate sovereigns, but we daily issue to them orders which are implicitly obeyed. We depose them, as in the Tonk case, when the ruler permits or sanctions a grievous crime; or create an administration for them, as in the Ulwar case, when

* "The Great Canal at Suez" (2 vols).

† Finance and Revenue Accounts.

a chief misgoverns or worries his subjects. With some we place political agents, with others we do not. With some, as with Jeypore, Bhopal, and Patiala, we are on terms of intimacy and friendship; others, such as Dholapore and Ulwar, we scarcely ever address, except to find fault with them for some gross neglect of duty. In fact, all our action with regard to these petty despotic States is governed by the circumstances of the time and the character of the ruler, and it must be so if we are to influence them for good."

Lord Mayo discerned much evil in our feudatory system, and was much hurt by the native maladministration, which the principle of non-interference left him powerless to amend—as all petty intermeddling precluded salutary intervention; yet he greatly wished to develop such a scheme of general government as would secure to the many princes of India their present cherished independence, while at the same time arming the suzerain with power to check their abuse of authority over their people.

In the second year of his administration he found that in Rajpootana improvement proceeded slowly, and that the power of the princes over their *thakoor*s, or barons, was no greater than it used to be of old; and that in Jodpore and Ulwar female infanticide, and many other social evils, prevailed to an enormous extent, and that in all these districts there was a vast amount of undetected crime; but Lord Mayo was not one of those reformers who hope to change the customs, habits, and thoughts of a people in a day. He kept his hands "unstained by a single annexation," yet he made every native prince to feel that, if he proved unfit to rule, the sceptre would be taken from him.*

Ulwar was now to be the scene of some trouble. This state lies north-east of Rajpootana, and comprises, with its adjuncts, a superficial area of about 3,000 square miles, populated by 778,591 souls. Its army consisted of 7,408 men, and its revenue was £200,000 yearly. It was founded in the latter part of the last century by a Rajpoot chief, who became an ally of ours; and nearly seventy years of British surveillance, since the days of Lord Lake, had made it a prosperous state. But early in 1870 the Earl of Mayo had tidings that the people of Ulwar had risen in arms, and that 2,000 of them were in the field against their prince. One-half the *thakoor*s were loyal to him; but the other half were with the rebels, whom his misrule had exasperated, as he had confiscated to his own uses the public lands assigned for the support of his troops and the relief of the poor, and had proudly and

vindictively rejected all the counsels of our political agent.

Terms between the contending parties seemed impossible, though a last chance was given the prince by Lord Mayo, who summoned him to name a committee for the management of affairs. As he neglected to do this, the viceroy created a native council at Ulwar, the capital (which stands at the base of a steep hill, seventy-five miles from Delhi), with the British agent as president; and under their care the principality rapidly emerged from its troubles, though the prince clung to his worthless favourites, and, at a state durbar held on the Queen's birthday, publicly insulted his nobility. The council did its work well and ably; but the prince held himself haughtily aloof, "and sank deeper and deeper into the slough of evil habits, until he died, a worn-out old man, at the age of twenty-nine, in 1874."

This was the most serious case of misrule during Lord Mayo's short administration, and the only one in which he had to push the necessity for interference to the point of superseding the hereditary prince; but he was strong in power, as he gathered around him a circle of chiefs whose personal character he admired, in whose administration he took pride, and by whom he was beloved in turn.

He entertained very stringent views of the duties of the Indian Government towards the hill tribes on the frontiers. He held that we were bound to preserve the peace of the borders, not by vindictive inroads for chastisement, but by the organisation of preventive measures.

"It is with great reluctance," he wrote, "that I have to express the opinion that it will be necessary to send, in the ensuing cold weather, an armed force into the country of the Lushais. The cruel raids that have been made for years upon various parts of our territory, more especially on the Tea Gardens of the Cachar District, and the very unsuccessful and inefficient means which have been hitherto taken for the protection of our frontier, together with the partial mismanagement, or want of success, which have attended almost everything which we have done, have doubtless imparted to these savages the impression that we are either unable or unwilling to take active measures, and to punish the perpetration of such crimes."

He estimated the expense of the intended expedition at ten lacs, or £100,000;* and, save a disturbance among the Kookas, and another near Hyder Kail, the petty Lushai war was almost the only occasion when any fighting occurred during his administration.

* "Life of Lord Mayo."

* Ibid.

On the 18th of January, 1872, the Kookas—a Hindoo caste—made a serious outbreak near Loodiana, and some Punjaub mutineers attacked the Malad Fort, killing two men and wounding a sirdar; but troops were promptly on the spot from Delhi; 100 Kookas were killed, and a vast number made prisoners. About the same time General Keyes had to march from Edwardesbad, with 1,700 bayonets, to punish some hostile tribes, whose chiefs submitted, while their followers fired upon the troops. General Keyes at once attacked and utterly destroyed the Afghan village of Hyder Kail, on the Cabul road, killing forty of its defenders.

With regard to the punishment of the Lushais, Lieutenant Woodthorpe, in his narrative of it,* tells us that the tribes on the north-eastern frontier of India have ever been a cause of anxiety and expense to the British Government. Every district in that quarter has the same characteristics and history. Bordered by, or forming part of, a range of hills inhabited by fierce and roving tribes, for ever engaged in armed inroads on their neighbours, plundering the villages and leaving them in flames, while bearing off to slavery all whom they did not kill or disable. The rights of the hill-men, real or fancied, were always respected carefully when we annexed any district: losses sustained by them were made good, and every means were taken to conciliate them; but after the annexation of Cachar, which we wrested from the Burmese in 1824 (after they had conquered it in 1774), it became necessary to secure the peace of the frontier, and enable the peaceful tea-planters to follow their avocations unmolested, and this was the object of Lord Mayo in dispatching the Lushai Expedition in 1871-2.

Cachar is a province lying between Bengal and Ava, bounded on the north by Assam, and to the south by Cassay. On the west it is bounded by Sylhet; on the east by the Jiri river, to its delta on the Barack, and from thence to where a stone pillar marks the triple junction of Cachar, Muni-pore, and the Lushai Hills. It is mountainous, sterile, and full of jungle. The ancient name of this territory was Hairumbo. The natives are Hindoos of the Khuti tribe; formerly a communication was kept up between them and Bengal, and Mr. Verist, with a party, visited Coss-pore—its capital—in 1763, before it fell under the yoke of Burmah. The Cacharis are a quiet and inoffensive race, whose rajah pays a yearly tribute to the British Government.

In unison with a tribe named the Poctoo Kookies, the Lushais began to cause much

* "The Lushai Expedition." One vol. London.

trouble and anxiety to the Indian Government about 1840 and 1844, when some of the former attacked the village of Sylhet, on the east side of the Brahmapootra river, and carried off several of the people as slaves, together with twenty human heads to bury in the grave of a chief who died at the time. Similar outrages succeeded each other quickly, till early in 1850 Colonel Lister marched against them with a force, destroyed Mora, their largest village, and rescued several hundred captives; but in every movement he was harassed by the Lushais, who fired into his camps, hovered on his line of march, and put every straggler to a barbarous death.

Twelve years later three villages were pillaged and set in flames by these marauders, near Adum-pore; and in 1868 simultaneous attacks were made on those in Muni-pore, a part of the Cassay territory under our protection, and the great tea-gardens in South Cachar were menaced with destruction. Nawarbund was invaded by the Lushais in January, 1869; the villages were everywhere burned, and many people slain. Next, the Monarkil Garden was attacked, a stockade stormed, the police guard routed, and everything given to destruction; after which the Viceroy in Council resolved to send an armed force against these restless marauders, and crush them for ever.

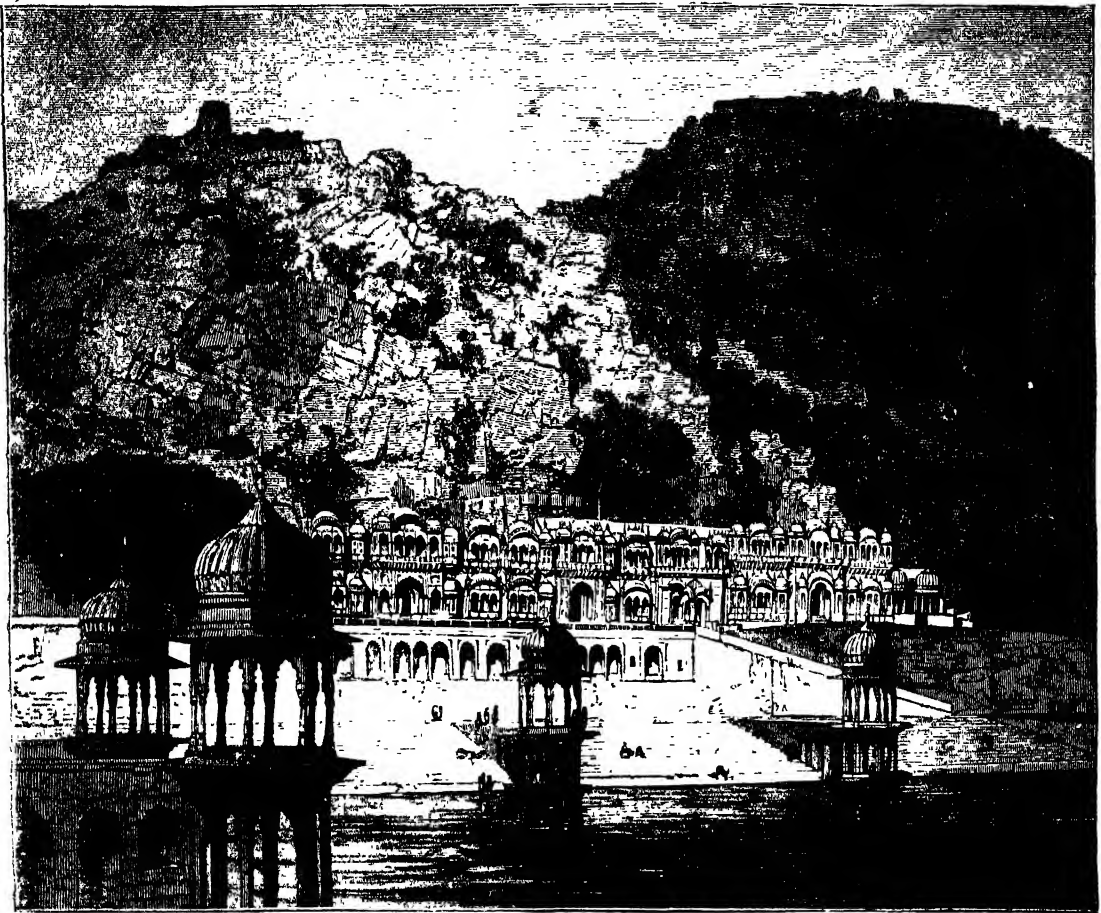
The expedition was ordered to consist of two columns—the right and the left. One was to advance from the district of Cachar, and the other from Chittagong, at the south-eastern verge of Bengal. Each was to consist of three battalions of infantry, with a half-battery of artillery and a company of sappers and miners. The whole force mustered only 2,000 men, with the same number of camp followers, and some baggage elephants.

Brigadier Bouchier, C.B., commanding on the north-eastern frontier district, was to lead the Cachar column, with orders to attack Lalboora. The Rajah of Muni-pore was to aid us with a contingent of 500 men, and Major-General Nuttall—an officer of great experience in frontier warfare—was to accompany it as political agent. By his directions the rajah was to establish a line of outposts along the mountains, eastward of the Tipai Mukh, and to have an advanced force near Chiboo, for the double purpose of securing the valley of Muni-pore, and to prevent a chief named Kamehow from aiding the Lushais, who, at the same time, would be precluded alike from moving eastward, closing upon our rear, and cutting off our supplies from thence.

The Lushais, like all mountaineers, are men of a hardy nature and muscular frames, and are great

hunters and eaters of venison. Their average stature is good, their complexion a deep rich brown; they have flat noses, full projecting lips, and eyes that are small and almond-shaped. They are fond of Scottish tartans of brilliant colours; these they procure at Munipore or Cachar, but their chief attire is a large piece of homespun cloth twisted round the body. For

Stafford; 500 of the 42nd Assam Light Infantry, under Colonel Rattray, C.B.; 500 of the 44th Assam, under Colonel Hicks; 100 Native Police, under Mr. Daly; half of the Peshawur Mountain Battery, under Captain Blackwood, R.A., and the Sapper Company, under Lieutenant C. Elwyn Harvey, R.E. The management of the commissariat was entrusted to Colonel Davidson, who had



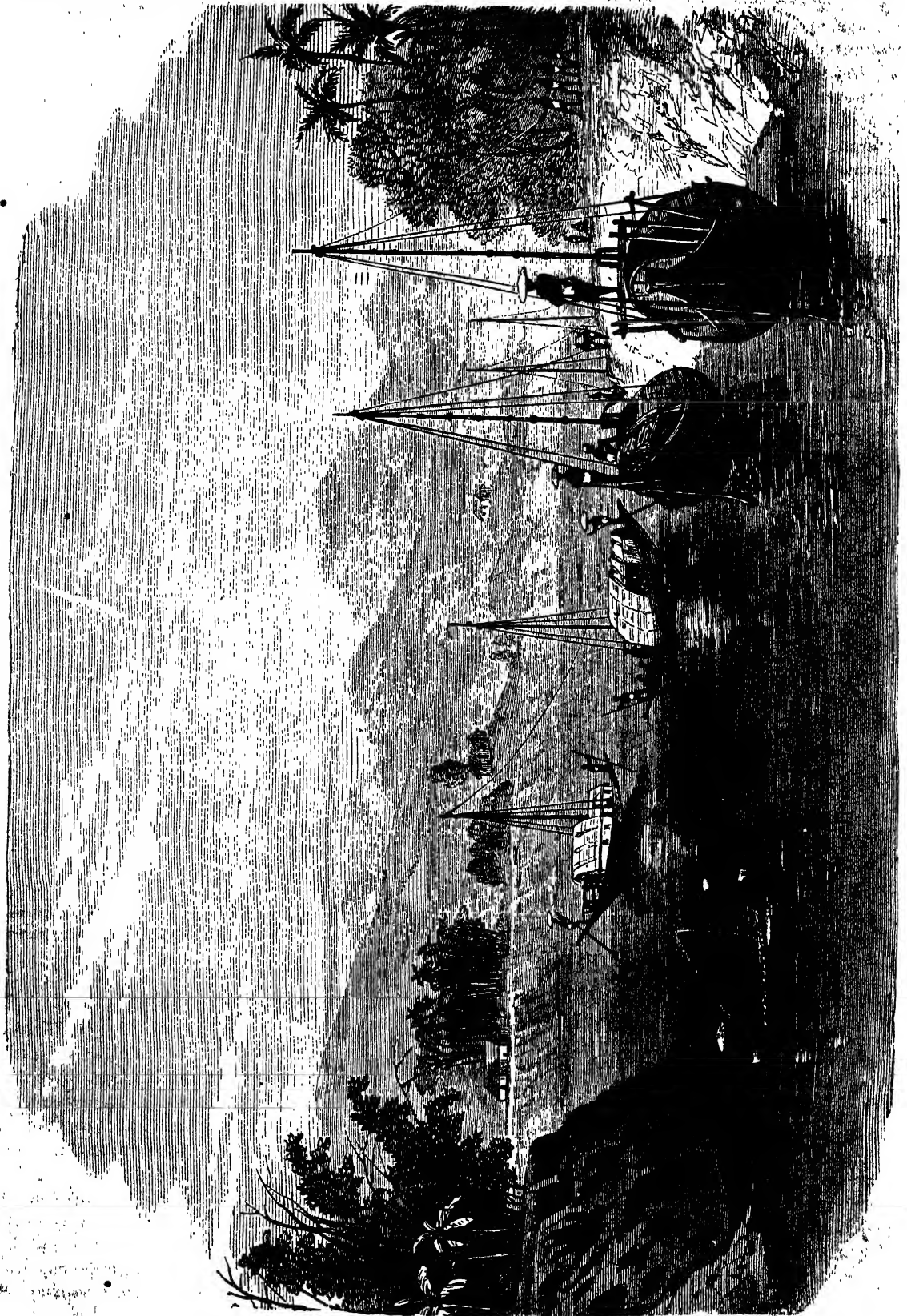
VIEW OF THE LAKE OF ULWAR.

arms they had old flint muskets, some of considerable antiquity; their bullets are iron slugs or balls of hammered lead, and their powder-flasks are bulls' horns, frequently mounted with silver. Their other weapons are spears, the *das*, a triangular dagger twelve inches long, with two-handed Burmese knives, bamboo bows and poisoned arrows. Their dwellings are of timber, thatched with jungle-grass; they are frequently enclosed by stockades, and are usually built on hill-tops or commanding ridges.

General Bouchier's column consisted of 500 men of the Punjab Infantry, under Colonel

a coolie corps with the elephants; while another coolie corps, 800 strong, under Major Moore, carried the lighter baggage. Silchar, a little village of a few brick houses, was named as the rendezvous of the corps forming the expedition, and for that place all their trenching tools, Norton pumps, waterproof sheets, and gutta-percha boots, had been sent on by water.

Some delay occurred in moving the Cachar column, owing to the slow drying of the country, after some unusually heavy floods; but by the 22nd of November, the 44th Assam Regiment had reached Mynhadur, the last and most outlying of



the tea-gardens, on the left bank of the Barack river, where the sappers and police were already at work making roads to the front, for the purpose of getting on the artillery, which had been left at Cachar, until the route was reported practicable for elephants that were to carry the guns of the left column.

The country through which they had to proceed consists of jungle, studded with steep hillocks; but the troops were all in high spirits and anxious to push on, though cholera broke out among the camp-followers, and Captain Hidayat Ali lost 150 coolies out of his corps of 800. "They had been shamefully overcrowded in the flats that brought them to Chattack"—says a paper of the day—"and a proper supply of medicines and medical officers had somehow been forgotten at the right moment. Under Dr. White's active care, however, the cholera was fast disappearing, and great praise is given to the commissariat and local authorities for the energy with which they have pushed on the work of obtaining and forwarding supplies, in spite of obstacles thrown in their way by the natives."*

Between Mynhadur and the place called Tipai Mukh, four camps were established, and the troops built them huts of bamboos, for which kind of work they were all supplied with native knives. Of Tipai Mukh General Bouchier made a careful reconnaissance, but could discover no stockades or other defences. Limes, cinnamon, and walnut-trees abounded, and in many places the paths lay through fine forests, where gigantic creepers swung from the branches overhead in graceful festoons. In some places the Lushais put up certain threatening symbols, as if to warn our troops of what awaited them. One of these was a bamboo gallows, from the cross-beam of which some little wooden dolls were dangling; another consisted of slender bamboo canes stuck into the trunk of a felled tree, from the wounds in which a natural sap of deep red, like blood, was oozing.

On the bank of a stream called the Tuibum, a party of fifty of them was discovered by the advanced guard, against whom they made threatening demonstrations, and yelled out to the troops to turn back and go home; but on the 44th advancing steadily, they fled into the woods shouting, and without firing a shot. As it was supposed they meant to fight at a place called Kholel, General Bouchier resolved to give them no time to strengthen their position there, and so he advanced towards it on the 23rd of December, by a march up-hill, amid jungle dense and thick. The advanced guard was led by Colonel Roberts,

who came suddenly upon an edifice, called a joom-house, from which the Lushais fired briskly upon our skirmishers as they debouched from the jungle into the open, but, closing in, the 22nd Punjaubees rushed, with fixed bayonets, against the enemy, who fled like hunted deer over the hills behind the joom-house, which was instantly destroyed, with all its stores of grain.

In this kind of fighting the steep nature of the ground and the density of the jungle were much in their favour, and against accoutred troops. As the latter advanced they found many blood-gouts in all directions, but no other trace of the fallen, as the Lushais bore them all away, having a strange belief that if the skull of a man slain in battle becomes a trophy of the foe, he is compelled to be the shadowy slave of the victor in the world to come. A three hours' skirmish up-hill was terminated by the destruction of two villages and many storehouses full of rice and grain, after which our troops pushed forward.

Another village on the Vauboug ridge, the chief stronghold of a leader named Kalhi, was vigorously defended by the Lushais, but was captured by the 44th with trifling loss. The former then resorted to desultory firing from the woody shelter of a forest into the camp; by this several men were hit, and skirmishing between them and our sentinels continued the whole night. General Bouchier, with a party of the 44th, under Captain Robertson, carried a fourth village next day, and destroyed it by fire. On Christmas Day, the work of punishment was still in progress, and parties of the 44th, under Captains Robertson and Lightfoot, gave twenty-two well-filled granaries to the flames.

On that festive day the officers attempted to establish a Christmas mess, and all dined round a table on which lighted candles were placed, as the evening was calm and still. But as darkness fell, the Lushais began to fire at the lights from an adjacent thicket, and it was remarked that whenever a song was sung they always ceased firing to listen.

So greatly did they increase in strength, skill, and caution, that this point soon became untenable, and General Bouchier resolved to fall back on the Tuibum river, and there take post; but as this would appear as a timid retreat to the Lushais, he used secrecy in effecting the movement. The advanced guard was formed by the 22nd; the 44th covered the rear, while the baggage and sick were sent on in front. The new camping-ground by the Tuibum was overlooked on every side by steep mountains, densely wooded, and from these the Lushais harassed the troops by

* Allen's Indian Mail, 1871.

incessant firing, especially on the detached parties who were burning their villages in all directions. Near one of these our advanced skirmishers came suddenly upon a man clad in a yellow cloak, with a scarlet cap. He proved to be a messenger from Poiboi, the Lushai chief at Kholel, suing for peace, or at least a cessation of hostilities and destruction of villages. To this the general consented temporarily; then the jungle firing ceased, and two days of perfect quiet ensued.

On the 27th, the Lushai sharpshooters began to

give considerable trouble again, as the general states in his report, "until we had cleared the jungle for some distance round the camp. The road as far as this will be ready for elephants to-day. A reconnoitring party proceeded three miles onwards yesterday without coming across the enemy."

Up to the 1st of January, 1872, the skirmishing in wood and jungle, and the destruction of villages, continued without intermission, and the sufferings of the Lushais, in life and property, were admitted by themselves to be very considerable.

CHAPTER LXII.

LUSHAI WAR.—THE RIGHT COLUMN, ETC.—LALBOOKA DESTROYED, AND PEACE ENFORCED.

IN a despatch from Vananah, dated 23rd of December, 1871, Brigadier-General Brownlow reported that a portion of the right column, under Colonel Macpherson, had made its way to a range of mountains and destroyed a large village, marked on the map as Lalpoethal, and that Major Macintyre had captured and destroyed two others, which had been strongly stockaded, with all their rice granaries, estimated at 8,000 maunds, seizing on twenty-five *gvals* and all the pigs and poultry.

Writing on the 5th of January, the *Times* correspondent says:—"Intelligence from the Lushai expedition shows that no time has been lost since the troops arrived in the enemy's country, in striking at the resources of the tribes; and already there has been an outcry here (at Calcutta) that the war is cruel—about the most absurd outcry ever raised in relation to military operations. The demand for the expedition was general; men confessed on all hands that these successive raids must be checked, or our Cachar tea-gardens deserted. Yet how we were to reach the tribes was a problem not to be solved theoretically. If they stood, there would be no difficulty; if they rose, there would be no means of punishing them save by the destruction of their stores. The fighting so far has been very slight, as running has been the order of the day. Well, we have destroyed what stores the fugitives left behind, and they have systematically destroyed all they have been able to destroy before retreating. Their scouts and sharpshooters have hung around both columns ever since the arrival of our troops in the thick jungle country. Our men have been fired

upon from every hill-top. And yet there are people who blame them for destroying stores—and blame them in India, too, where military feeling is supposed to be so strong, and where it cannot be weak without entailing disastrous consequences. I refer to the subject lest the same unjust outcry should be raised in Britain. Our officers have been sent to do an unpleasant duty; their orders are so simple and definite, that almost everything which has occurred was foreseen long before the expedition was entered upon. The forbearance of the Indian Government has been most marked. You will remember that even after the raid of 1868 there was a general hesitation about following the raiders. Instead of an expedition, Lord Mayo sent a mission of peace, used every argument to persuade the tribes to enter into peaceful relations with the men of the plains, and exchange visits with them yearly for festive intercourse and trade. But it was of no avail, and as a last resource the expedition was organised."

The artillery had been left at Tipai Mukh, guarded by a wing of the 42nd and another of the 44th Assam, under the command of Colonel Hicks. The gun and commissariat elephants were usually sent a little way up the riverside to graze, and on the 27th of December, trusting to the cessation of hostilities, the drivers had unwisely taken thirty-six of these to a greater distance than usual, and an alarm reached the camp of their being attacked. The drums beat to arms, and, as the troops were forming, an elephant came trotting in, with its blood pouring from seven bullet wounds. The *mahouts* next brought tidings that the camp

was about to be attacked. Colonel Hicks at once got the guns into a proper position; a musketry fire began to flash redly out of the leafy jungle, where the dark figures of the crouching Lushais were invisible. The two infantry wings poured in a few sharp volleys at random; but a single cannon-shot, where the enemy's fire was thickest proved effectual. Some shrieks and yells rent the sky, and then the fusillade died away.

A party of the 42nd, under Captain Harrison, recovered nine of the elephants and some of their drivers, who were severely wounded; and next day all the animals were recaptured save three. Three attendants were killed and one wounded.*

The slain were found to have been most barbarously mutilated, hacked, and decapitated; and, singular to say, the scalps only had been carried off†

A halt was now made at an advanced post, named Pachui, where the general hoped to bring the western tribes to terms, and collect supplies, to enable him to march with rapidity against the village of Poiboi, in case that resolute chief should oppose our principal movement upon Lalboora; while, to secure our communications, a road was formed to the Tuivai river. The troops were now amid the most magnificent scenery, where every morning the deep valleys were filled with silvery mist, from which the mountain spurs and rocky peaks started abruptly up like islands amid a sea of carded wool.

When General Bouchier, on the 17th of January, with a wing of the 44th, was descending a bank of the Tuivai—a fine stream that foams amid rocks, between mountains covered with forests—so many Lushais became visible that he halted in line. Then Darpong, the former messenger in the yellow cloak, approached, and promised that Poiboi would come and parley with him in the night. To this strange meeting the general declined to accede, and resumed his march, after which 200 Lushai sharpshooters were seen to extend themselves in skirmishing order over some rough ground in front. All these men were clad in grey shirts, with a grey fillet round the head, and each carried a haversack slung over his left shoulder.

The 44th now halted in line, about 150 yards in front of them, and, through Darpong, the general demanded that Poiboi should now come to treat with him. As he did not appear, the advance was resumed with steadiness; and though the Lushais uttered many fierce warning cries, they did not fire, while the troops ascended a height of more than

2,200 feet, up which the elephants, with the artillery on their backs, were driven with inconceivable labour; and ere long Chelam, the chief village of Poiboi, became visible over the crest of an intervening eminence.

General Bouchier having been informed that he might expect an attack at eight a.m. on the 25th, in a ravine through which he had to pass, sent Captain Robertson of the 44th, with fifty men, in advance. The general, with a wing of that regiment and his staff, followed, while only sixty men of the 22nd were left to protect the guns and coolies. The advance had not been made for more than half a mile into the wooded ravine, when shots were heard in front and along the whole line of march, for the force of Bouchier was so reduced now, by the number of detachments he had been compelled to leave at different places, that he had not sufficient men to scour the defiles on his flanks.

In the first discharge of bullets and slugs, the general's orderly was shot dead from the right bank, and himself was wounded from the left bank in the hand and arm. Captain Robertson threw out his little party in skirmishing order, and carried the ground on the left flank, "while the rest of the 41th, under Colonel Nuttall and Captain Lightfoot, flinging down their packs and great-coats, dived into the rocky stream, and, meeting the enemy in their own jungle, almost hand to hand, drove them up the hill, scattering them most effectually. Thirteen Lushais fell almost in one spot in the stream, those who were not dead being dispatched without mercy. One was trying to escape up the face of a rock, over which some water trickled into a pool below. The slippery stone hindered him, and, ere he could mount it, a Ghoorka cut him down with his kookerie. He fell on his face in the pool, looking painfully like a woman as he lay with his smooth cheek and neatly braided hair and knot."*

When the troops pushed on, and reached more open ground, the Lushais could be seen rushing in confusion along the green spurs of the hills, and all making for one point, the village, as if their chief stand was to be there.

After traversing a narrow and perilous path that wound along the sheer face of a mighty cliff, and which for a long distance was commanded by a stockade at a point where a few brave men might have held it against thousands, and where whole battalions might have been slaughtered simply by large stones dropped from above, our troops were permitted to pass unmolested, till they came to a

* General Bouchier's Despatch.

† Lieutenant Woodthorpe's Narrative.

* Lieutenant Woodthorpe.

second stockade, on the crest of a very steep ridge. Owing to the precipitous nature of the ground, it was impossible to carry by a rush this work, from which brisk firing at once began; but two detachments of the 44th, under Captains Lightfoot and Robertson, moved round to its right flank, and, finding concealment among the tall, wavy jungle-grass, allowed the Lushais to expend their ammunition in the direction of the cliff pathway, where Bouchier had halted the main body under cover of a bank, till the result of the flank movement was seen.

Terrified on finding themselves suddenly attacked in the rear and flank, the Lushais fled down the steep slopes, and vanished into the forests. The village was entered through the stockade; the baggage was brought in during the evening. Fires were found burning in all the houses, and the troops regaled themselves on such food as they could find.

It now came to the knowledge of the general that it was only on the preceding evening that, at a council of chiefs of tribes, Poiboi had come finally to the firm resolution of casting his lot with the rest in arms, believing that if he could achieve the slaughter of the unarmed coolies, we should be compelled to retire; but the number of dead that lay in the ravine proved how complete the defeat of his people had been, and so hasty was their flight, that they had only time to remove the heads of two of the fallen.

Colonel Roberts was now ordered to follow up this success, by taking a hundred men, and two steel guns of the mountain battery, to Taikum, and burn the village of that name. On this service the guns were not carried by elephants, but by coolies, sixteen to a gun—six for the carriage, six for the gun, two to each wheel, and four for the ammunition boxes. After traversing some mountain-ridges, one of which was 6,000 feet in height, and en route turning the flank of a strong stockade, about five p.m. Colonel Roberts found himself before Taikum, a village of some two hundred houses, well stockaded, and full of armed warriors. He brought the steel guns to bear upon it at twelve hundred yards' distance, with shells. Four rounds completely cleared the village, which the troops then set on fire, and fell back to the place where the guns were halted—a knoll, from whence the flames and smoke of the blazing houses presented a striking scene, as they ascended into the calm, moon-lighted sky. By eleven at night the troops were again in camp, weary and worn with the work of the day.

Tidings now came from Cachar to the effect that certain captives, carried off in a recent raid, in-

cluding a little girl named Mary Winchester,* whose name made some noise at this time, would be given up to the other column of our army by the Syloo tribe, whose chief had sent a submissive message to General Brownlow, then halted at Savoanga, 4,000 feet above the level of the sea, and from whence he reported that he was campaigning in a country of which he could give no proper indication by the map, as it had "ceased to be correct."

With detachments of the 22nd and 44th Native Infantry, General Bouchier, on the 1st of February, was again in motion. He marched along the western face of Muthelen, a route overhung by steep and gloomy mountains, and through an old primæval forest, where the rays of the sun seem never to have fallen, and ere long he came again in sight of Chelam, on its hill, 8,500 feet in height. "This was the chief stronghold of Poiboi, whose house stood high above the others, which rose in tiers of broad streets upon the slope, and were enclosed by a strong stockade."

No trace of the Lushais was visible, save some human skulls placed grimly as ornaments on the posts of a wooden gate; so the troops marched in without molestation. Part of the wall of Poiboi's house was found to be covered with human skulls and the antlers of the sambar. Orders were now issued for the right and left columns to effect a junction, prior to which General Bouchier resolved to reduce Lalboora, the chief village and stronghold of the enemy. The time was one of heavy rains, but the troops were well hutted, and in good health.

* Mary Winchester was born at Elgin, in Scotland, but lost her mother in early infancy. She was taken to India by her father, who had been appointed plantation overseer at Beckrampore. About March, 1871, Mr. Winchester paid a visit to the tea-plantation of Mr. Sellar, a "brither Scot," in Cachar, and was accompanied by his little girl. During the visit the party was attacked by the hill tribes. Sellar escaped. Winchester was shot while running off with his daughter on his back, and Mary was carried away to the wild Lushai country. The Lushais being unable to repel the attacks of the British expedition, she was latterly handed over to one of the Southern Howlong chiefs, who was on friendly terms with the British, and who delivered her up on January 30, 1872, to a party of the 4th Ghorkas, by whom she was brought to Lieutenant-Colonel Tytler, at Dewangiri, and by him she was sent to the Commissioner's house at Chittagong. On hearing of her release, her grandparents in Elgin applied to the Government for her, and their request was at once complied with. She left Calcutta on March 4, 1872, and reached London towards the end of April. She was then seven years old, and was described as a pretty, affectionate, and intelligent child. She would give no information respecting her captivity, but always looked sad whenever the Lushais were mentioned, and said she didn't want to hear or speak about them. It is obvious that she must have been a favourite with her captors, otherwise they would probably have put her to death. Before they restored her to the Howlong chief, they cut off her beautiful curls, and kept them as a sort of memento of her sojourn among them.

General Brownlow was meanwhile advancing north-eastwards, and had crossed the Dullesuree—two mountain-ranges. On the 18th of February he telegraphed from Chamgoomana, between the

British colours, where they had never waved before. Next day he reached the greater village of Lalboora, consisting of five hundred houses. The chief having failed to surrender, it was given



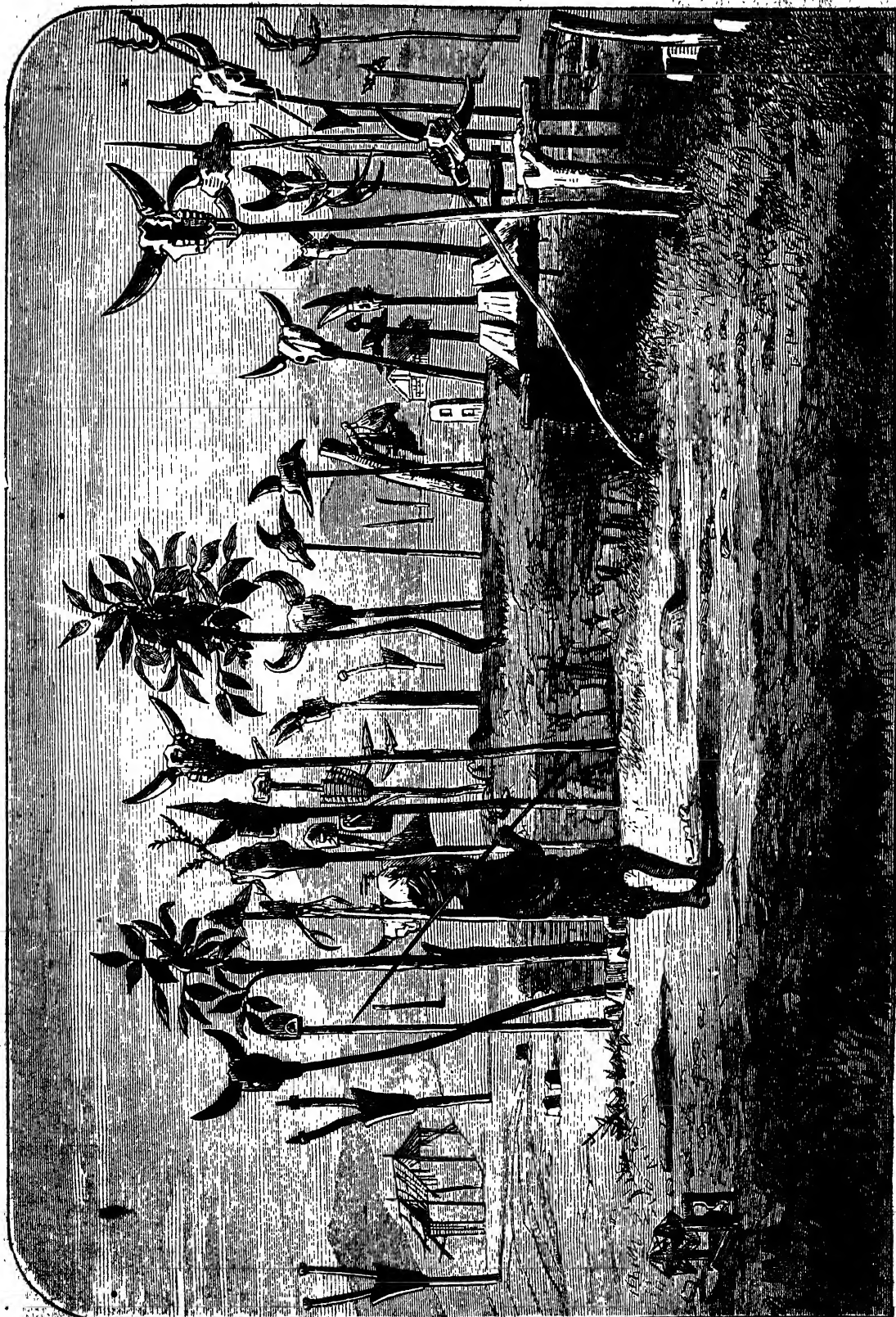
PORTRAIT OF MARY WINCHESTER, THE CAPTIVE OF THE LUSHAIS.

Koladyne and Dullesuree rivers, that two of the most powerful chiefs and northern Howlongs had made their submission, sent in captives whom they had taken, and bound themselves to keep the peace, and allow free access to their country now and hereafter.

On the 17th General Bouchier, after some heavy marching, reached the village of Lungvel, the stronghold of Vonslel, and there hoisted the

to the flames, after the troops took out the pillage, among which were found many articles carried off by raiders from the British territories.

After haranguing the troops, and thanking them in the name of the Queen and the Earl of Mayo, General Bouchier gave the welcome order for the homeward march, prior to which he had a parley with the chiefs and head-men of the now thoroughly humbled and harmless Lushais, in his



THE GRAVE OF A LUSHAI CHIEF.

camp near a stream, at a pleasant spot under some beautiful trees. To them he dictated the terms of peace.—They were to agree to receive British agents in their villages; to restore all firearms carried off, and pay as an indemnity a war drum, a set of gongs, ten goats, fowls, and twenty maunds of rice in the husk. The fine was paid, and the homeward march began, with the 42nd Assamese in front. All seemed happy to quit these terrible mountains, but none were happier than the captives rescued from slavery.

In March the troops re-entered Cachar, and then the field force was broken up.

"From the beginning of November, when the troops were first put in motion, to the present time," said General Bouchier in his Farewell Order, "every man has been employed in hard work cheerfully performed, often under the most trying circumstances of heat and frost, always bivouacking on the mountain-side, in rude huts of grass or leaves, officers and men sharing the same accommodation, marching day by day over precipitous mountains, rising at one time to 6,000 feet, and having made a road fit for elephants from Luckipur to Chipoune, a distance of 103 miles. The spirits of the troops never flagged, and when they met the enemy they drove them from their stockades and strongholds until they were glad to sue for mercy. The history of the expedition from first to last has been sheer hard work

Young officers may especially feel glad at having had such an opportunity of gaining experience in mountain warfare."

So ended this petty strife, since which—save the Naga outbreak—we have had peace on the frontiers of Assam and Cachar.

By this time various means had been taken in order to secure our authority in Central India and elsewhere, caused by the recent attempt of the mutineers to destroy it. The number of European troops had been already raised to the requisite standard, and the facilities for their transport on the shortest notice to any point of danger had been multiplied by the construction of many hundred miles of railroad, which would be further increased by the numerous arrangements schemed out for covering the whole continent with a network of railway lines; while, by the extension of the telegraph to Europe, intelligence of any outbreak would reach Britain on the day on which it occurred. The opening of the Suez Canal—which we have noticed in its place—by shortening the distance between Britain and India, brought into play those resources of European strength on which the safety of our Eastern Empire depends, so that now

they are within four weeks' reach of the nearest Indian post. In the course of our narrative we have seen "that whenever the mutinous sepoys encountered the Queen's troops in the field, though they might outnumber them as ten to one, they were signally defeated; and there can be no doubt that if on the outburst of the Mutiny the Government had enjoyed the same advantages for facing it which they now possess, it would have been nipped in the bud, and possibly might never have been attempted."*

At the same time that Lord Mayo created a kind of new frontier by the Lushai expedition on the north-east of Bengal, he was equally busy in Burmah, repressing the hostile proclivities of the Golden Foot, developing commerce, and compelling a due respect for the power of Great Britain.

The settlement of the Mekran, or Western Khelat boundary, had been rendered necessary by the continued encroachments of the Shah Nasser-ed-Deen, and his pretensions to the whole country between the boundaries of Scinde and Bandar Abbass. At Teheran these were viewed simply as a mild mode of evincing long-existing rights; but it became plain to the intervening states, and to the administration at Calcutta, that the question at issue was the pressure of the Persian frontier close up to our own. In September, 1869, the Viceroy laid before the Secretary of State the dangers that would follow if this were permitted, urging that if Persia was to absorb the regions lying between Scinde and the Mekran, the safe and prudent policy deemed so essential to British interests would be brought to a rough and speedy termination. The Mekran is a large and maritime province, forming the central part of Beloochistan, and separated by a desert from Afghanistan. The northern and inland part is separated from the maritime district by a range of barren mountains; and the whole province was occupied by a number of independent chiefs, whose power and extent of territory were continually fluctuating, and who professed allegiance to the Khan of Khelat, the Imaum of Muscat, or to the Shah of Persia, according to their own interest or the whim of the moment, and who could always bring 25,000 men into the field.

In November, 1869, the Viceroy again represented to Her Majesty's Government the necessity for dealing firmly with Nasser-ed-Deen, and ending finally this continued dispute as to boundaries, lest matters should become more complicated.

On this the Home authorities continued to stand,

* Marshman's "India."

ponder, and reflect, till the spring of 1870, when Lord Mayo was compelled again to press his views and desires upon them. In the most urgent feature of the question—the definition of the boundary-line between Persia and the Khanate of Kelat—he, in the meantime, gained his point; and on the 14th of April in that year a letter from the Shah reached London, agreeing to have the matters in dispute submitted to arbitration.

Under this consent, General Sir Frederick John Goldsmid, C.B., a Madras officer of high talent and learning, was deputed, in 1870, to carry out the work. The chief object of his mission had been to arrange the Sistan frontier, but the disturbed state of Herat rendered it impracticable for the ruler of Afghanistan to send a commissioner there; thus, Sir Frederick was ordered to proceed southward by Beloochistan, and there to settle the Kelat boundary. He marched, accordingly, to Bampore, the seat of authority in Western Beloochistan, and thence to the ocean, collecting sufficient topographical information to enable him, in 1871, to draw up a convention, which was accepted by both parties. But the actual demarcation of the frontier was effected by a subordinate commission in 1872, under Major St. John, of the Royal Engineers. What Lord Mayo achieved for Persia and Kelat he was, at the time of his assassination, attempting to perfect between Afghanistan and Persia.

Sir Frederick Goldsmid's decision in the affair of Sistan was given in August, 1872, as arbiter for the Perso-Afghan frontier; but neither of the claimants were satisfied—for to the tribes there, as to the Scottish and English borderers of old, there had been handed down a bitter legacy of wrong and reprisal, "and each village, with its own running sores, was not to be suddenly plastered over by parchments signed by high contracting parties at a distant court." Time was requisite to perfect the pacification of such a predatory and warlike frontier.

In December, 1869, the Lieutenant-Governor of the Punjab telegraphed to Lord Mayo that an envoy from Kushbegi, or Ataligh Ghazee (Defender of the Faith), had arrived at Leh on his way to the British frontier, from the ruler of Eastern Turkestan, concerning its frontier with Afghanistan. Our only knowledge of his master, Yakoob Kushbegi, who had risen on the conflict of races and creeds in Turkestan, was derived from the inquiries of Mr. Johnstone, a talented officer of the Indian Survey Department, and the more recent account of Messrs. Howard and Shaw, two travellers who had just come from that remote region; and it was now, for the first time, that this

new power in Central Asia—the *Ataligh*, or Lord of the Six Cities of Eastern Turkestan—came to the official knowledge of the Indian administration.

For the honourable reception of the ambassador of this new potentate orders were duly issued; but for nothing more. On the 29th of January, 1870, he entered the city of Lahore, with letters from Yakoob Kushbegi to the Lieutenant-Governor of the Punjab, the Viceroy, and the Queen of Great Britain. Towards the end of March, in an interview at Calcutta with Lord Mayo, he laid before him his credentials, and, among other things, solicited that a British officer might accompany him back on a friendly visit to his master, Yakoob of Eastern Turkestan.

Lord Mayo, after some inquiries as to the actual power of the latter and the consolidation of his recently conquered territories, assented; and that eminent Indian civilian, Mr. (afterwards Sir Thomas Douglas) Forsyth, was selected, and his powers were most minutely defined to him. He was to proceed to Yarkand, the capital of Eastern Turkestan (once in the Chinese Government of Ele), on a mere friendly visit, but with a view to obtain every information regarding the country and the removal of obstacles to commerce, if any such existed. He was to abstain from all political questions, and to limit his stay in the country so as to run no risk of finding the passes of the Himalayas closed by snow, and thus being detained in Yarkand for another twelve months.

On the 26th of April, 1870, Mr. Forsyth left the Punjab, and proceeded through Cashmere to Leh (or Leea), where he was joined by the Yarkand envoy, with whom he proceeded on his journey across the Himalayas, ascending through the Masiak Pass, 19,400 feet above the level of the sea, where the snow lies for ever; and by the 7th of August he was in the territories of Yarkand, where he found that, though that province and Kashgar were at peace, the Ataligh Ghazee was engaged in a civil war with other portions of his dominions.

On this, Mr. Forsyth, in accordance with certain instructions from Lord Mayo, resolved at once to return, but proceeded as far south as the capital, Yarkand, which had a population variously estimated from 40,000 to 200,000, and was surrounded by stone walls three miles in extent, with a victory that is fertile, yielding rice, barley, fruits, and all. There he re-fitted his train with provisions and beasts of burden for re-crossing the Himalayas. By the vice-regent of the Ataligh he was received with honour, and regrets for the absence of his master at the seat of war, and every effort was

made to detain him till the prince's return from battle; but Mr. Forsyth, finding the new kingdom was far from being consolidated, led back his retinue to India by a new route.

He learned much that was new concerning an almost unknown region; his visit evinced the friendly sentiments of the British Government; and from it, in 1870, dates the first turning-back

of Russian commerce in Central Asia before the advancing tide of British enterprise. The Russians have the prescriptive hold of that commerce; but the bazaars of Central Asia are ample enough for us both; and every season, since the first advent of Sir Douglas Forsyth, has seen the Brito-Indian merchant still more firmly established in Eastern Turkestan.

CHAPTER LXIII.

LORD MAYO'S FOREIGN POLICY.—RETRENCHMENT.—THE EX-KING OF OUDE.—INCOME TAX AND SALT DUTY.—RAILWAYS.

THE chief work of the Viceroy's foreign policy lay upon the western and north-western frontier of India; and what that important work was, is thus given by the Hon. Sir John Strachey, of the Bengal Civil Service, in a paper quoted by Dr. Hunter:—

"There is hardly one of the kingdoms that border on our Indian Empire of which it may not be truly said that peace and settled government have been unknown in it for ages. The history of one and all of these, from Oman to Yarkand, is a record of wars, revolutions, and dynastic changes, succeeding each other with such rapidity as to leave in the mind of the reader only a confused feeling of bewilderment. This chronic state of turbulence and disorder—destructive of ancient landmarks and boundaries, and producing only weakness and disintegration—both provokes and invites annexation. It ruins commerce; destroys the productiveness of the soil; scares away peaceful traders, who have an interest in the preservation of order and settled government; creates a permanent class, whose interest it is to perpetuate anarchy; and produces isolation, jealousy, and distrust in the countries that suffer from its curse. It was this state of things that forced on the extension of the British Empire to the mountains beyond the Indus. It was this state of things, more than lust of conquest, that extended, in spite of herself, the dominion of Russia in Asia.

To apply a radical remedy to these evils was the main object of Lord Mayo's foreign policy. Honestly proclaiming, and showing by his acts, that the spectre of annexation was laid for ever, he taught our neighbours that they had nothing to fear from us. By bringing about a common understanding between the countries on our frontier as to their

mutual boundaries, he sought to remove every pretext for war and aggression. By assisting the rulers of these States to strengthen their internal government, and by bringing both his own personal influence and the moral support of the British Government to bear in putting down rebellions and revolutions, he endeavoured to establish firm, just, and merciful government. By the encouragement and development of trade he hoped to break down the barriers which isolate these countries from us, and to create, both within and beyond our frontier, a permanent interest in the maintenance of good order. By free and friendly intercommunication he desired to remove that ignorance as to our policy, and that jealousy of our intentions, which in past years have been so fruitful of mischief. And lastly, by endeavouring, through frank and amicable discussion with the Russian Government, to secure the adoption on their part of a similar policy in the countries on the Russian frontier in Asia which are subject to Russian influence, it was his hope that he would be instrumental in securing some degree of peace and prosperity to the exhausted countries of Central Asia, and in removing the causes of disquietude as to the designs of Britain and Russia which have been so prominent in the public mind in both countries."

Lord Mayo's system of foreign policy was essentially his own, for, excepting a brief period when he had the able councils of Sir Henry Durand, he was his own Foreign Minister, and, personally, the initiating Member of Council for Foreign Affairs, working the Foreign Department almost entirely through its secretary, Mr. Charles Unwin, C.S.I.

When he assumed the viceroyalty, the conquests and annexations of a hundred years had left on our hands a population alleged to be nearly 150,000,000—even 200,000,000 (though the exact number never has been known)—with 50,000,000 of feudatories, a yearly revenue of £46,000,000 sterling, and a debt aggregating in November, 1869, £208,000,000, being the permanent cost of establishing our power in India. Of the last item, £70,000,000 may be deemed the cost of conquests, and about £35,000,000 as the expense of crushing the sepoy revolt and of the subsequent military organisation.

The Mutiny of 1857, says the biographer of Lord Mayo (abridging many blue-books and statistical abstracts), left on the hands of the Indian Government "two great armies—a vast shattered wreck of native troops, and a European force, fewer in numbers, but admirably equipped, hardened by a fierce struggle, and organised on the basis of constant readiness for war." In the year 1856 the native troops mustered 249,153 men of all arms; the European, 45,522. The terrible lesson taught us by the Mutiny led to the reduction of the native army to half its original strength; and to the corresponding increase of Her Majesty's troops by about half their number.

When all dread of further revolt passed away, and the respective armies were placed upon a new peace establishment, the native force consisted of 140,507 officers and men; the European of 75,337; but so effectually was the empire tranquillised under the vigorous government and able civil administration of Lord Lawrence, that on the 1st of April, 1869, the native army numbered 133,358 of all ranks, and the European, 61,942.

A fortnight after Lord Mayo's arrival at Calcutta, the Duke of Argyle, as Secretary of State for India, sent him a despatch on the yet unsettled matter of military reform, pointing out that, notwithstanding the numerical decrease of the forces since the Mutiny, the expenditure on them had increased from twelve and three-quarter millions sterling (1856-57) to over sixteen millions in 1868-69; and urged that, while a novel and most expensive system of native police had been organised, the anticipations of military retrenchment had been disappointed; and a hope was expressed, that his lordship would endeavour to reduce the military expenditure of India by a million and a half sterling.

After giving the matter his deepest consideration, in September, 1869, he brought it before the Council, where he had advisers of high experience: Major-General Sir Henry Durand, the military

member of Council; Lieutenant-General Sir Henry Norman, then secretary in the military department; and, more than all, Lord Sandhurst, the Commander-in-chief, who had served in the campaigns of the Sutlej and Punjaub, the operations on the Peshawur frontier, and under Lord Clyde in all the operations that led to the suppression of the Mutiny.

"Their previous efforts at military retrenchment had been directed partly to numerical reductions, partly to a more stringent economy in the staff and the various departments charged with the army administration. They now found that, as regards the latter class of charges, a vast saving might be effected by a better distribution of the duties and a more accurate adjustment of appointments to the actual amount of work to be done. But they also found that economy in administration, however stringent, would be wholly inadequate to meet the case; and that even if they suddenly cut down every such grant for the effective services in India by one-half, the saving would fall short of the one and a half million desired by the Secretary of State. It is hardly necessary to add that no measure of this sort was ever contemplated by the Duke of Argyle, for it would have left the army shattered and utterly disorganised."*

His Grace's allusion to the new police, whose great numbers had led him to hope for a reduction of the army such as had not been realised, served to strengthen the Indian executive in its plan for numerical reductions. They found that by the gradual progress of good government, the same efficient police referred to by the duke, the development of that railway system which had been a pet scheme of the Marquis of Dalhousie, and the improved rifles now in the hands of the troops, India could be controlled and guarded with a less costly army in 1870 than in preceding years.

The scheme of military reform which the Earl of Mayo's administration developed consisted of certain proposals under specific heads. He ascertained that retrenchments, aggregating £79,000, were possible without any sacrifice of efficiency in the staff and other departments of the army, and these he carried out firmly and stringently; but when he came to consider the numerical reduction among the troops, European and native, the question became a complex one indeed, for he conceived that of the former we had not one man too many in India. Nevertheless, he proposed to reduce the expense of that force by half a million sterling, without diminishing their numbers or pay.

He showed that the chief cause of the great

* Dr. W. W. Hunter.

military expenditure arose from the circumstance that the European corps in India had dwindled from their proper effective strength, so that a large number of separate battalions were necessary to give the requisite number of fighting men. He therefore proposed to keep the same total of effectives, but to reduce the number of separate regiments, and thus get rid of the expensive organisation of eleven European corps, as involving the

having each forty company sergeants and an average of 790 bayonets. The Earl proposed to reduce seven of these regiments from service in India, and to raise the strength of the remaining forty-five to fifty company sergeants and 930 bayonets. The number of sergeants, corporals, and privates on the roll of the fifty-two battalions originally was 43,160. The total strength of the forty five, on the new system, would have been



AN INDIAN MAIL CART

maintenance of a needless number of separate staffs. Hence, while the pay of officers and men remained untouched, the number of the latter would be increased, while efficiency would not be lessened; and that similar changes in the Queen's cavalry and infantry alone would yield a yearly saving of £297,220. A corresponding reform in the artillery, by the amalgamation of batteries, &c., would give a further reduction of £271,542 per annum. Hence, the total saving in European troops alone would be £568,762.

In 1869, the Treasury of India was charged with fifty-two separate regiments of British infantry,

44,100, showing an increase of 940 rank and file, with a certain decrease in other ranks, represented by the staff commissioned and non-commissioned officers of the seven battalions dispensed with. The saving to the Indian exchequer by this arrangement would be £122,220.*

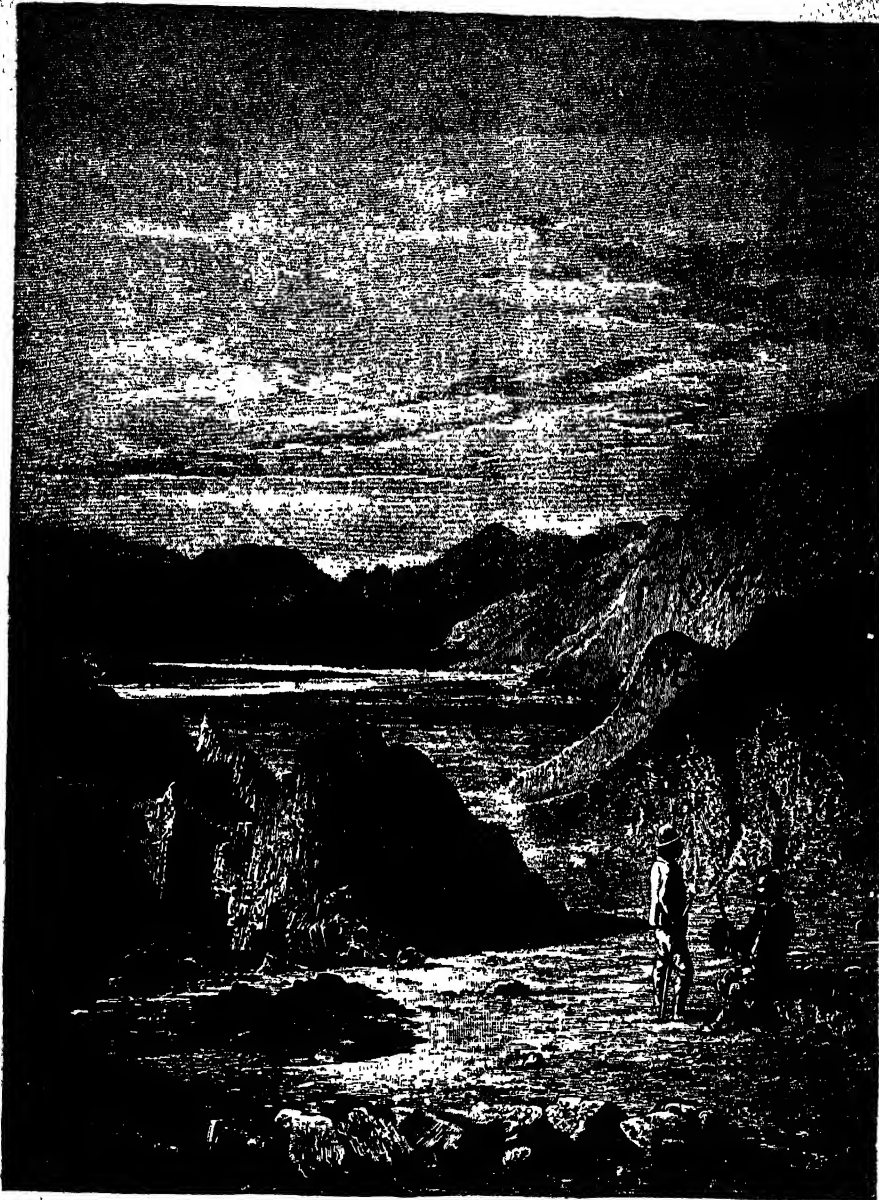
With reference to the British cavalry, the Viceroy found the revenue of India charged with the support of eleven regiments, having an average strength of 378 sabres, making a total of 5,000 of all ranks. This force he proposed to reduce by four, but to raise the remainder to a strength

* Despatch, 4th Oct., 1869. Quoted in Hunter.

of 518 troopers, the total of all ranks to be 4,200. Of this alteration the Commander-in-chief approved, and the eventual saving in this arm of the service would amount to £175,000 yearly.

twelve brigades, with eighty batteries, having 11,525 men and officers, which would give a saving of about £271,542 per annum throughout India.

The possible reductions to be effected in the



VIEW OF THE SALT MOUNTAINS OF RAWAL PINDI, HIMALAYAS.

As regards the artillery, it was proposed to reduce the undermanned batteries and raise the others to a proper standard of efficiency. The Royal Artillery, then on service in India, was formed into sixteen brigades, with ninety-four batteries, mustering of all ranks 11,993 men. These the Viceroy and Lord Sandhurst resolved to re-organise in

native army were the cause of much discussion between Lord Mayo and his military advisers.

"The general scheme of the military rearmament and re-organisations proposed by Lord Mayo's Government divides itself into four branches, and would have effected an eventual saving of close upon one million sterling. Thus :—

* 1. Staff Appointments	£46,065
* 2. Army Departments, and reduction of the Governor-General's Body Guard	32,940
* 3. European Troops— Artillery—6 horse and 8 field bat- teries	£271,542
Cavalry—4 regiments }	297,220
Infantry—7 regiments }	
	568,762
* 4. Native Army— Artillery—4 batteries or companies	17,003
Cavalry—4 regiments	59,009
Infantry—16 regiments	224,474
	300,486
"Total Saving	£948,253"

Such was Lord Mayo's scheme of military re-trenchment, and though he lived long enough to carry out a large portion of it, that adopted by Her Majesty's Government yielded eventually the saving of £591,440 per annum. To Lord Sandhurst and to Lord Napier of Magdala belong the credit of carrying out in detail, as Commanders-in-chief, the improvements in the various arms of the service effected or suggested during Lord Mayo's short period of rule. He advocated that the health and vigour of the European troops should be economised by a system of hill-stations, and other sanatoria, such as cottage barracks, "which, while fulfilling every desideratum of health, comfort, and discipline, enable a whole regiment to be housed for a smaller sum than, under the old system of imposing but less comfortable structures, it would have cost to house three companies." Nor was the duty of making a fit provision for the orphans of British soldiers in India forgotten by this generous Irish noble. To him it was a source of much earnest thought, and he appointed a committee for the more efficient working of the bequest of Sir Henry Lawrence. Regimental workshops, exhibitions, and every device for keeping alive the mental activity of our soldiers under the hard strain of an Indian climate, found in him a constant friend; and a mass of notes and papers which he left behind him proved the deep interest he took in the Lawrence Asylums.†

On many great subjects, such as education, irrigation, railways, and important questions affecting the ryots and rural people of India, he had well-defined views of his own, and strove, with some degree of success, to give effect to them. He considered personal acquaintance with the local administrators as an essential necessity in the good government of India; and this acquaintance he made by the exercise of princely hospitality

* Life of Lord Mayo, vol. II.

† Ibid.

towards all men of influence who came near him, and, like Lord Dalhousie, by a well-organised system of tours, in which he acquired more knowledge of India during his short term of office than many men could acquire in a lifetime.

"We all labour hard in India," said he, in one of his public speeches, "and no one knows better than I the intensity with which heads of departments and the members of the secretariat work. Wherever I have gone it is all the same! Under the snows of the Himalayas, in the feverish jungles, on burning plains, I have always found the same class of men doing the same good work. I believe that in history no sovereign was ever served by a body of men engaged in more arduous or more useful and more successful work, than are the servants of the Queen in India."

It was a sense of this that led him to strengthen the position and increase the authority of all district officers. A well-directed liberality in turf matters, added to his genial address and native love of field-sports, increased his popularity among these officials. His Indian tours amounted to more than 21,760 miles; and no one, says his biographer, can realise the risks he ran by rapid riding over hard roads, or along precipices in the hill tracts.

The ex-king of Oude never visited any governor-general, deeming it would be too great a condescension to do so; he always held sullenly and proudly aloof from the viceregal court, and he could scarcely be blamed for the position he adopted; but Lord Mayo, in his kindness of heart, went in state to see the fallen monarch. His palace is on the banks of the Hooghley, a few miles below Calcutta, and within its walls no majesty was more potent, save in the matter of life or death. The Resident at his court was Lieutenant-Colonel Mowbray Thompson, one of the few—eventually reduced to two officers and two privates—who escaped the massacre at Cawnpore.

The ex-king, says a journalist in 1875, has three great houses, and several small ones, and each of the former has a pet name. He has 141 ladies in his zenana, "of whom thirty-nine are called *Mahals*—persons who bear children—and 102 *Begums*; we do not profess to understand wherein the difference lies, but it is some Eastern etiquette, of course." He draws, paints, writes sonnets, which are popular in all the bazaars, and are favourites with the Nautch girls. Every night he has dancing and singing in the palace; but the Resident never enters the grounds after the lamps are lighted; and it would be perilous to any who ventured to do so, as every avenue is guarded by men, whose tulwars

would cut down any intruder. His three palaces are inhabited by his favourite wives, with whom he spends his time in rotation, and he has thirty-one sons and twenty-five daughters. He possesses, also, a marvellous menagerie, said, in some respects, to be the finest in the world. "Winding walks," continues this writer, "bring you to pond after pond, with one large lake, all literally filled with rare fish, and brought, regardless of cost, from all tropical lands. The pigeons, of which the ex-king is particularly fond, number no fewer than 18,000. On the banks of the lake and ponds are the ostrich, the pelican, the swan, and every other fresh water bird native to warm climates. Then there are wild animals caged, monkeys partly free, goats, sheep, ibis, diomedaries, camels, &c &c. The king has a 'snake mountain,' which he watches for hours. It is a dome of earth with a stone facing, and perforated in every part with holes, out of which, and into which, the snakes come and go at pleasure. But behind all this, in a room, are jars containing fine specimens of the deadly cobra, and these only the snake keeper dare touch. His power and daring are wonderful. Of course, he is of the caste of snake charmers. Such is the life of the dethroned king."

The imposition of an income tax in India had been one of the principal steps taken by the Right Hon. James Wilson, after the Mutiny, to restore the finances, which had been impaired by that event. The state of matters in 1870-71 convinced Lord Mayo that the solvency of our Indian Empire was quite secured, and aware that he had only to pursue his adopted course of rigid economy to prevent the recurrence of any deficit, in 1871-72 he reduced the income tax to one third, or 1 1/3 per cent. Even then the finances showed such an upward tendency, that during the last month of his life his mind was full of hope that he might be able to abolish it altogether. An obnoxious impost at all times, it was deemed particularly so in India; and the difference of the financial situation in that country and Britain may be seen from the circumstances, that although the British income tax is supposed, in theory, to be a temporary measure, it is, nevertheless, quietly submitted to year after year, but in India, the fact of its not being resolutely adopted as part of the permanent revenue acted as an encouragement for universal opposition and reprobation, as an intrusion into private affairs.

From the salt duty in India a revenue of about five and a quarter millions sterling is raised, and to this subject of financial interest Lord Mayo gave his special care and attention; for, as it falls

chiefly on the masses of the people, it naturally forms a subject for much consideration and controversy. The salt of India comes from four great sources: these are the vast salt range in the remoter Punjab; the salt-lakes and saline deposits in Rajpootana and Central India; from Britain and other places beyond the sea, whence it comes at a low freight to Bengal, and, lastly, from the salt pans along the coast of Madras, Orissa, and the maritime shallows that lie north of Bombay.

The duty imposed on this simple necessary of life exceeded by many times its value, while the preventive restrictions necessary to secure the revenue from it hampered trade and enhanced its prime cost, apart from the duty levied. The restrictions imposed by our salt duty crushed all local manufacturers, especially in the annexed kingdom of Oude, which, when under its native princes, manufactured its own salt, and at a very cheap rate. Aware of all this, the Earl of Mayo, though certain that the salt duty could not be remitted, resolved that no effort on his part should be wanting to reduce the evils attending the impost, which varied from a rupee on every 40lbs. in Bombay and Madras, to a rupee on every 25lbs. in Lower Bengal. Hence the different rates interfered with trade, and were a source of perpetual annoyance to the people. These variations were not due to the British Government, but to the misrule which India inherited from the time of the Mogul Emperors, when it was divided into so many territorial entities, the centralisation of which was a difficult task to our governors-general in succession. And even now, though British power has merged all the provinces of India into one empire, and though the same code of laws rules the land, each presidency has still its own legislative council, and retains certain features of the separate systems, handed down to us by the native Governments, Hindoo and Mohammedan.

The Earl of Mayo, after a patient consideration of the variations of incidence with regard to the salt duty, did not think it wise to attempt any radical remedy, though he resolved to remove, or reduce to a minimum, the checks which the existing system placed upon trade. He set on foot inquiries regarding the line between Bengal and Madras, and these resulted in the abolition of "the cordon of revenue harpies who had so long preyed upon the free interchange of commerce between the two presidencies. The credit of this reform belongs, however, to Mr. George Batten, the Commissioner of Inland Customs, acting under Lord Mayo's successor, rather than to Lord Mayo. Mr. Batten found that, by graduating

the difference in the duty across the intermediate province of Orissa, he could render smuggling unprofitable, without a preventive line."

To carry out a change in the railway policy of India, according to a scheme sketched by Lord Lawrence, was one of the tasks to which Lord Mayo applied himself; and in this he had, like his predecessor, the valuable advice of one to whom much of the reform is due, General Richard Strachey. Under the former system the money was raised on the credit and authority of the State, with a guarantee of five per cent., thus involving no risk to the shareholders, and sacrificing, on the part of Government, every chance of profit, while risking every chance of loss.

Under the new system which was inaugurated, the Indian Government borrows its railway capital at four per cent., thus saving £100,000 yearly on every ten millions. The old system involved double management, with a cost of construction that averaged £17,000 for every mile; under the new there is but one controlling power—Government has the work done by contract, and hence the cost of construction, on the narrow gauge state lines, is less than £6,000 per mile. While Lord Mayo thus inaugurated a new railway system for India, he carried out with vigour the schemes which had been formed by such predecessors as the Marquis of Dalhousie and Lord Lawrence.

"The comparison between the cost of guaranteed and of State railways, as above given, is not, however, quite a fair one," says his biographer. "For although it accurately states the expense of the two systems to the Indian Government, it compares lines of different intrinsic value. The guaranteed railways were made on the five-feet-six-inch gauge, or nearly a foot broader than that of the English lines. Several of the State railways have been made on a narrower gauge of three feet three inches. Their permanent way is less solid, their rails and their rolling-stock lighter, and a large part of the saving is due to these causes, irrespective of their more economical construction."

Indian traffic is of much lighter nature than what we find in Britain, while the ample river and canal facilities compel the railways to carry passengers and goods at moderate rates.

"The alternative, as regards India," wrote Lord Mayo, "is this, cheap railways or none; and I would rather do without railways altogether than incur the future risk of that annual increase of expenditure, and consequently of taxation, which I have stopped, and which is our only real danger in India. It is true that the people are lightly taxed; and so they ought to be. We are an alien

power, ruling at enormous disadvantages, principally by the force of character and by administrative skill. As long as the natives of Hindostan believe that whatever power might follow us, native or European, will tax them more heavily than we do, we are safe. Should the other feeling prevail, we will lose our hold on the country. There is no real patriotism in India. The great mass of the Hindoos have always been accustomed to be ruled by a foreign power. If the foreign power is just and wise, it is the form of government that suits them best. In our circumstances in India, we cannot therefore dig deeply into the people's pockets. Therefore, I say, let us have railways that will pay, or nearly pay; or no railways at all, if their effect will be to add £100,000 or £150,000 every year to the permanent burdens of the State. But we can make railways that will add little or nothing to the burdens of the State; and we can also make railways at £5,000 a mile that will not only pay, but do all we want. . . . With regard to the breadth of gauge, we adhere to our former opinion. We do not believe that for many years we can hope to obtain any amount of traffic that would justify the extra outlay of £2,000 a mile for standard gauge; and further, we feel that if we do not adopt a narrow gauge now, all hope of getting cheap railways for India would be closed for ever. I believe the evils of the breadth of gauge on long lines, where light traffic can only be anticipated, are exaggerated; that as far as native-passenger traffic is concerned, no evil whatever will result; and that as regards corn, oil-seeds, coal, and salt, the inconvenience will be small, and the expense of transshipment will hardly exceed the cost of twelve miles of haulage. For the carriage of soldiers and horses there will be no difficulty, as after long railway journeys they must eat and rest, which they can always do at the change. There will undoubtedly be some difficulty as to munitions of war and all military stores; but it will be absurd to suggest that we should spend two millions of money for this object only. What we should aim at is the provision of such railway communication as will provide for present wants, with a power of such increase as will give facility for considerable augmentation, if it is hereafter found necessary. This, I believe, we have done, and more than this we ought not to do."*

The chief aim of the Viceroy was to form a distinct system of narrow-gauge lines, that would all work in connection with each other, penetrating into the heart of the greater provinces within the trilateral formed by the broad-gauge lines. Bombay,

* "Life of the Earl of Mayo."

Calcutta, and Lahore, were the three extremities of this trilateral; and Lord Mayo's object was, that the less expensive lines should form a subsidiary railway system, intersecting the comparatively poor districts of Ajmere, of Rajpootana, and Central India—a system to be complete in itself, but touching at convenient points the great triangle formed by broad-gauge lines.

Besides the railways, another great branch of the public works in India is that which has to deal with the husbandry and diffusion of a supply of water; and for this purpose, Lord Mayo considered with earnestness the plans bequeathed to him by Lord Lawrence, whose measures he carried out actively to their full development.

CHAPTER LXIV.

CANALS AND CANAL CESS.—EDUCATION.—AGRICULTURE AND MINERALS.

IN 1872, the Earl of Mayo turned his attention to the Ganges Canal, which was extended, and, after a deficit for seventeen years, ceased to be a burden to the State. He also inaugurated a new system of irrigation, starting from the Ganges near Alighur, to water the whole lower quarters of the Doab, from Futteghur to Allahabad. At the same time, by the waters of the Sardah Canal, the eastern half of Rohilund and the western quarters of Oude were placed alike beyond the perils of drought and consequent famine. He had plans prepared to water the arid tracts westward of Delhi from the resources of the Jumna, while the Lower Jumna Canal was carried into those districts which are eastward of the city. With a view to a complete system of irrigation, works of equal importance were carried from the Soane river through the province of Behar; and the seaboard of Orissa, which had been so seriously stricken by famine in 1866, was placed beyond all chance of a recurrence of that evil, by a splendid system of canals and other means of communication with adjacent districts. Further to the south, the works on the Godavery, a noble and magnificent river (computed to be 900 miles in length), were in full progress; and in the remote west, he had projects formed for the irrigation of "the drought-stricken districts of Scinde." Upon the single item of canals for Orissa, the Government, from December, 1868, to December, 1871, laid out a sum equal to the total revenue derived during the same period from the entire province.*

It was clear that, however necessary to prevent the recurrence of famine, unless these vast works were made to pay interest for the cost of their construction, they would seriously embarrass the

* Hunter's "Orissa," vol. II.

exchequer. Lord Mayo thought to prevent this by a compulsory water-rate. In common with his chief advisers, he maintained that a local community, for whose local welfare a canal had been found an absolute necessity, should not be permitted to throw the cost of its construction on the uninterested ratepayers of a distant province; and that, whether the said local community delayed to use the water—as the Indian peasant has an obstinate antagonism to innovation, he might delay to use it for years—it should, nevertheless, be compelled to pay the yearly interest on that which is, in the strictest sense of the term, a local public work; just as a householder would have to pay the municipal water-rate, whether he used the water or not. To obviate irritation, Lord Mayo carefully adjusted the burden of the canal cess, providing that it should not be levied on the husbandman until he had neglected to use the water during five complete years after it had been brought to his fields, and only in places where it could be proved that the cultivator's net profits would be increased by the canal, after paying the irrigation-rates. He insisted that there should be a clear gain to the ryot from taking the water before the Government should be permitted to charge him for it. "So liberal a condition," says Dr. Hunter, "was never attached to a similar work intended for the local protection of a town against natural calamities. Science can only presume a benefit to the general body of citizens from water-works, for which municipal rates are charged; but before Lord Mayo would give the Government power to levy the canal-rate at all, he insisted that the benefit to each individual should be absolutely ascertained."

The Canal Act for the Punjab reduced these principles to the form of law.

By that enactment, money could be levied for the defrayment of the cost of local irrigation by compulsory cess upon the ryots and landowners to whose fields the water, so needful in time of drought, was conveyed. "Everybody," wrote the Earl, "seems to wish for irrigation, but many appear to desire that somebody else should pay for it. We must take such measures as will oblige the people, whose lives

protection of the peasantry from famine, compelled Lord Mayo to deal with such undertakings as public works as an entirely distinct branch of the Indian finance, desiring that the whole charge of such works should be kept apart from other charges, and that the whole profit derived from them should be applied to the liquidation of the debt so incurred. To this end, he desired to constitute a special body



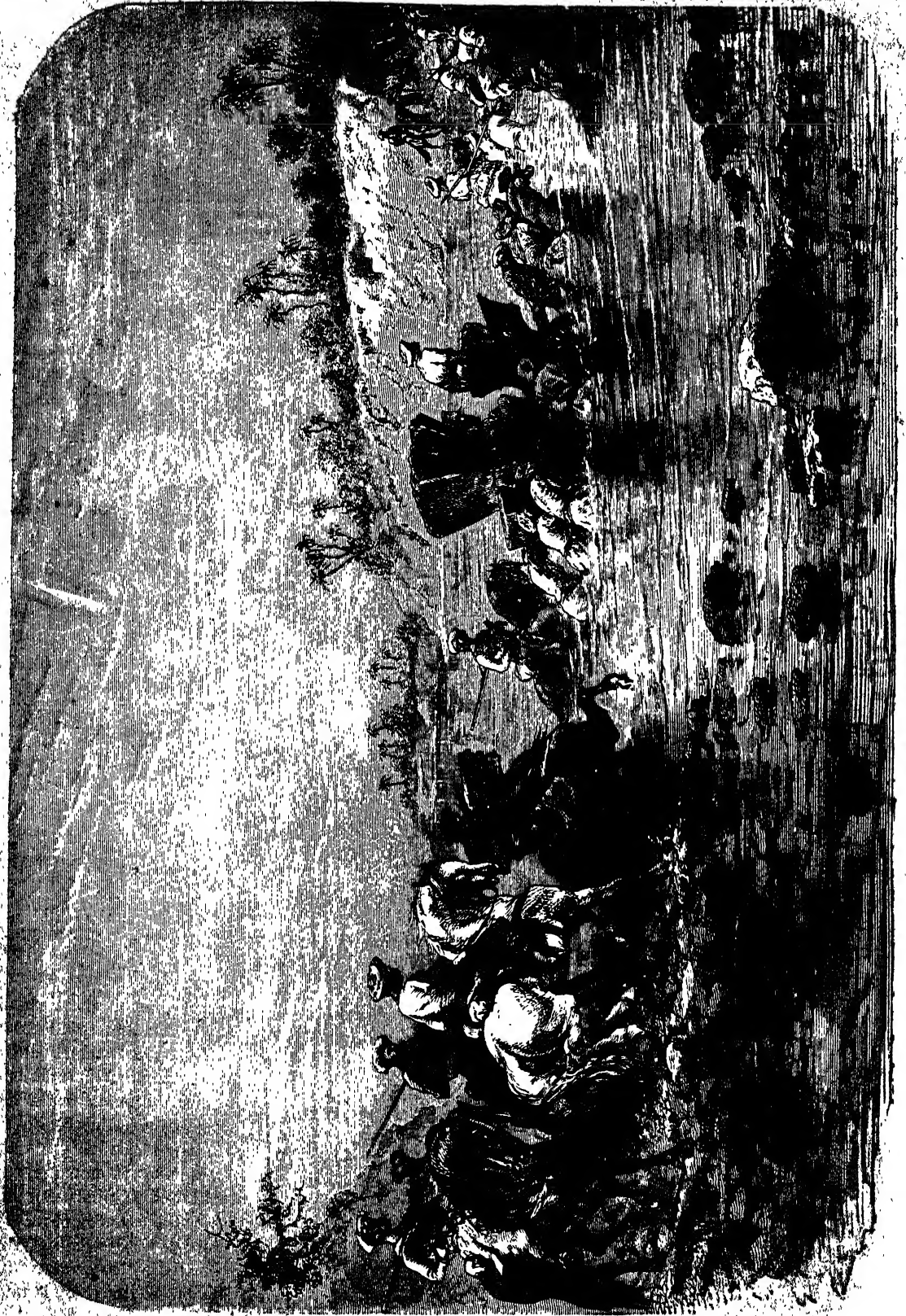
RAILWAY TRAVELLING IN INDIA.

are preserved and whose wealth is augmented by these works, to contribute in fair proportion to the cost of their construction. . . . I ask, is it right or fair that works constructed for the exclusive benefit of the Punjab or the North-west should be paid for out of the pockets of the people of Madras and Bombay? It was this early adoption of the principles which I now advocate that has led to the successful administration of the enormous sums borrowed from the State, or on municipal security, for agricultural, civic, maritime, and other undertakings in Britain."

The great accumulation of debt, consequent to

of Commissioners, "at least one of whom should not be an officer of the Government," whose duty it would be to certify, as an independent Board of Audit, with the public as witnesses, that the sum raised for the construction of the public works had been applied in accordance with the conditions under which loans for them were made.

Mere material development was not the only problem Lord Mayo had before him in India. Like all his predecessors, and every European in general, he found how hard it was to grapple with the formidable barriers erected by *caste*, originating in one of the most ancient fictions of Hindoo



PASSAGE OF AN INDIAN RIVER.

mythology, to which, as a classification, the Portuguese first gave that name. According to Menu, the Brahmin, since he sprang from the mouth of the Deity—the most excellent part—is, by right, chief of the whole creation. Next in order, but at a vast distance, stands the Cshatriya, whose descent marks him out as a soldier and a defender of the people. The Vaisya represents the industrial class, herdsmen, and others; while to the Sudra, the supreme ruler, it is said, is assigned the duty of serving, but without derogation, the before-mentioned classes. In time, caste became more fully and firmly identified with professions and trades. To every caste a particular occupation is exclusively assigned; thus, all are regarded as hereditary, and are transmitted from father to son in the same tribes and families: thus, it is easy to see that, the number of castes being as unlimited as that of the modes of employment, enumeration of them would be equally difficult and superfluous. Hence, the horror at losing caste is an almost insuperable obstacle to the spread of the Christian religion. The barriers of caste have conduced to exclude one class from the sympathy or regard of another—even to preventing, in many instances, inter-marriage—and to cripple the growth “of that local public opinion which, more than any written law, regulates an Englishman’s conduct to his neighbours.”

From long before the days of Mahmoud of Ghizni, the powerful have oppressed the weak in India. In every village the capitalist and the usurer have been hated from time immemorial, and their lives and properties have been at the mercy of any sudden ebullition of popular wrath. The British District Officer does not now permit such outbreaks, or prevents them if he can. “He brings to trial the slayers of a Bombay *soukar*,” says Dr. Hunter, “a North-western *baniga*, or a Bengalee *mahajan*, as ordinary murderers, and hangs them. On the other hand, the British District Officer will not allow the native landholder to recover his rent by the summary process of imprisoning defaulting tenants in his vaults, or by tying them on tip-toe by their thumbs to the wall. For the old processes of *agratit justitia*, whether carried out by the rich or by the poor, we have substituted uniform codes of procedure for both. The powerful now oppress by due course of law; and the weak now evade oppression, or combine to ruin their oppressors, by a dexterous use of our courts. The husbandmen of Lower Bengal have, more than once, shown that two can play at going to law, and that in a country of *petite culture* no landholder can stand against a sustained conspiracy of his innumerable tenantry to withhold their rent. . . . In the ordinary course

of rural life, our system of regular justice has immensely strengthened the hands of the educated and wealthy classes in the struggle which goes on, in a densely-populated country, between the rich and poor. At the same time, our system of public instruction had, in some parts of India, supplied an excellent education to the opulent and upper middle classes at the cost of the State, and made scarcely any provision for the education of the masses.”

The educational differences which he found between the different provinces of our Indian Empire attracted the attention of Lord Mayo soon after his arrival. For example, we are told, that in Bombay he found schools in plenitude, and public instruction sown on an ample and popular scale; while in the provinces of the North-west the native village seminaries were flourishing under the Lieutenant-Governor, Sir William Muir, K.C.S.I., whose administration encouraged and developed the character of their teaching. In Lower Bengal the system was different. The University of Calcutta had set the fashion for the whole schools of the province, and the influence of its able and high-class professors prescribed the mode of teaching therein; hence the wealthy and titled classes of the Indian community had educational facilities afforded them such as no other part of India enjoyed; but this was a triumph effected by the Bengal system at the cost of the primary education of the humbler and poorer masses.

The upper-class schools had risen, but upon the ruins of the old native village schools. If the parents of children were in good circumstances, and able to pay for their education, the State came forward and saved them the expense; while the old native schools received no encouragement whatever; and “the village teacher, who from generation to generation had gathered the children of the hamlet into his mat hut, and taught them to trace their letters on the mud floor, found himself deserted by his paying pupils. He and his fathers had been accustomed to teach their little stock of knowledge to all comers of decent caste, and to live by the offerings of a few of their wealthier disciples. They had looked upon the instruction of youth as a religious duty, and regarded their office as a priestly one.”

But now, under the new *régime* with its paid district schools, the youths who could pay were swept away to the classes opened by Government, and the old village *gurumahasay*, or schoolmaster, found his occupation well-nigh gone—a sore trial to temper and to faith, especially when he could see but too well that the practical result of the

Feringhee system was to arm the rich and titled with the powerful weapon of European knowledge, while burdening the poor with the weight of impenetrable ignorance in the struggle for life.

To this subject Lord Mayo turned his attention at an early period of his administration. The authorities of Bengal had not adopted their school system without careful thought, and they were prepared to defend it on the descending or "filtration theory of education," believing that eventually knowledge must filtrate downward from the upper and middle—the *babus*, or gentlemen—to the lower and rural classes; but to this system Lord Mayo was averse.

"In Bengal," he wrote to a legal friend, "we are educating in English a few hundred *babus*, at great expense to the State. Many of them are well able to pay for themselves, and have no other object in learning than to qualify for Government employ. In the meanwhile we have done nothing towards extending knowledge to the million. The *babus* will never do it. The more education you give them the more they will try to keep it to themselves, and make their increased knowledge a means of tyranny. If you wait till the bad English, which the four hundred *babus* learn in Calcutta, filters down into the forty millions of Bengal, you will be ultimately a Silurian rock instead of a retired judge. Let the *babus* learn English, by all means, but let us also try to do something towards teaching the three R's to 'rural Bengal.'"

To Sir George Campbell, of Edenwood, K.C.S.I., nephew of the first Lord Campbell, Lieutenant-Governor of Bengal during the chief part of Lord Mayo's administration, belongs the credit of giving full effect to the views of the latter, who gave him all the requisite political and financial support to effect the necessary educational reforms. The whole Bengal system was thoroughly analysed by Sir George, and its defects pointed out, and the Government expressed a readiness to hear his views on the subject; and the necessary changes which were inaugurated formed a new epoch in the annals of that vast province: and the result is thus given by the author already quoted.

In 1870-71, the Department of Public Instruction was educating 163,854 children in Lower Bengal, at a cost of £186,598 to the State. In 1874, when Sir George Campbell, in consequence of ill-health, resigned the lieutenant-governorship, he left 400,721 children being educated, at a cost to the Government of £228,151; and while sowing Bengal broadcast with primary schools, he had

revived and given better life than ever to the old native institutions for rural instruction.

As the Mussulmans of Bengal failed to partake of the educational benefits thus offered to them, they rapidly declined in importance, and dropped out from among the more intelligent classes as being unfit for any employment under the State, which, like the lucrative professions, passed into the hands of the Hindoos. Vague discontent among them speedily took the form of active disaffection, and the horizon became clouded by the signs of a probable revolt or civil war.

On the north-western border of India there was formed a standing camp of fanatical Mohammedans, whose numbers were augmented by recruits, as their finances were, by mysterious remittances from Lower Bengal. A permanent menace to European authority, this camp had more than one expedition sent against it, till eventually Lord Mayo was compelled to strike with a strong hand at the root of the disaffection wherever it became visible; and hence, ultimately, the movement, which originated chiefly among the Wahabees, was subjected less to warlike operations than the steady and stern action of the courts of law. Many prisoners were captured. A series of criminal trials ensued, but Lord Mayo's Government wisely did not permit any fanatic to fan the religious flame by achieving the glories of martyrdom: for all were transported as rebels beyond the seas, without one being put to death, as many might have been, in pursuance of a sentence from the courts; but the Mussulman fanaticism found a terrible culmination in the barbarous assassination of the Chief Justice of Bengal.

This partial disaffection among the Mohammedans led Lord Mayo earnestly to consider the educational requirements of those people, and he came to the conclusion that it was not impossible for them to learn under our system, and yet retain their religious sentiments and peculiar traditions of race. Returns proved that in Bengal there were only 14,000 Mohammedan scholars, against 100,000 Hindoos; and experience showed that the former would not submit to Hindoo teachers. Hence Lord Mayo suggested that as no Mohammedan is deemed a gentleman until he has acquired a certain knowledge of Arabic, Persian, and Qordoo learning, we should aid these by open classes and scholarships in the colleges for the Mohammedans, who till recently had been the most powerful race in India, and in every way to give them more equal chances of competing for those positions which the Hindoos, whom they detested, were fast monopolising.

His Excellency in Council desired "to call the attention of local governments and administrations to this subject, and he directs that this resolution be communicated to them, and to the three Universities of Bengal, the North-Western Provinces, and the Punjab, with a view of eliciting their opinions as to whether, without infringing the fundamental principles of our educational system, some general measures in regard to Mohammedan education might not be inaugurated, and whether more encouragement might not be given in the university course to Arabic and Persian literature. A resolution of this kind would be justified by the circumstances of the case, and would have an excellent effect on the feelings of the Mohammedan population at this moment."

These reforms were all carried out in the end, and were hailed by the latter with gratitude, as a boon of the highest value.

Among other matters for the good of British India, Lord Mayo resolved, if possible, to accomplish that which the most eminent of his predecessors in office had longed to achieve—a great department of knowledge, practically organised.

Under this new internal arrangement, he concentrated every branch of inquiry into India and the nature of its people—the revenue survey of its districts, the topography of its provinces and coasts, its mineral wealth, its commercial capabilities, agricultural productions, and meteorological phenomena, which, with the details of rural life and other solitary branches of inquiry, he concentrated into one combined office of general registration. From this department papers of vast importance to India have from time to time been prepared and made public on that ample class of its products yet to be more fully developed—the rhea fibre, silk and cotton, tobacco, gold, silver, lace, &c. The development of the commerce and general products of the country he held to be the proper duty of administration; but for the ultimate fruits of his efforts and inquiries in trade and agriculture, he looked to private enterprise, when the duty of Government would cease to be initiative. Manchester was now demanding a larger supply of cotton; the tea-planters on the north-eastern frontier were fast acquiring importance, while jute and oil-seeds were yearly covering more and more of the soil of Bengal; the population was fast increasing, and with it the demands for rice and other grains. Before the administration proposals were coming for the improvement of the native breeds of cattle, the introduction of more scientific agriculture, with European implements, and, as a natural result, better crops, to such an

extent that it began to be speculated whether the application of capital to land would be profitable in Bengal; and on the subject of having an agricultural department in the administration of India, with branches in the provinces, Lord Mayo consulted with Lord Napier of Ettrick, then Governor of Madras. He was anxious, among many other things, for the adoption of improved pumps, steam ploughs, and certain manures, by the Indian husbandmen, who were somewhat too content with the old-fashioned implements and notions, that had been in use and unchanged for centuries.

"For generations to come," runs one of his official dispatches given by Dr. Hunter, "the progress of India in wealth and civilisation must be directly dependent on her progress in agriculture. Agricultural products must long continue the most important of her exports, and the future development of Indian commerce will mainly depend upon the improvement in the quantity and quality of existing agricultural staples, or on the introduction of new products which shall serve as materials for manufacture and for use in the industrial arts. The efforts of the Government of India and of British enterprise have doubtless been beneficial. Thus, important progress has been made in regard to cotton. Large sums of money were spent in former years in attempts to improve its cultivation, with but little results, owing to the mistaken system under which they were made. It has become manifest that its improvement by the introduction of exotic seed can only be secured by careful and prolonged experimental cultivation. Renewed attention has been recently given to this subject with much better effect. The success of our tea, coffee, and cinchona plantations shows what has been, and may be, done in introducing into India new and valuable products. Jute, which not long ago was hardly used, has become an article of first-rate commercial interest. The world derives from India nearly the whole of its supply of indigo, a staple which was promoted by the Company's example in the last century, as the Calcutta manuscript-records abundantly attest. We have within the last few months taken special measures for improving and facilitating the preparation of the rhea fibre. There is, perhaps, no country in the world in which the State has so immediate and direct an interest in such questions. The Government of India is not only a government, but the chief landlord. The land revenue, which yields twenty millions sterling of the annual income, is derived from that proportion of the rent which belongs to the State, and not to individual proprietors. Throughout the greater

part of India every measure for the improvement of the land enhances the value of the property of the State. The duties which in Britain are performed by a good landlord, fall in India, in a great measure, upon the Government. Speaking generally, the only Indian landlord who can command the requisite knowledge and capital is the State."

Through his new department the Viceroy believed that much might be achieved in improving the breeds of cattle and horses, as the Government studs had hitherto done little in that respect for the country generally, having been maintained chiefly for military purposes. Measures were also required most urgently for the prevention, if possible, of those murrains which frequently proved so ruinous to the Indian agriculturist, but to Lord Mayo it was evident that the work generally which is performed in Europe by great agricultural societies must in India be performed by the Government, or not at all, and to the latter the introduction of the tea and cinchona cultivation was almost entirely due.

The vast forests of India had been handed over to the care of the Public Works Department, as there was no other special branch of the administration to supervise them, and in these primitive tracts a wasteful and destructive form of cultivation was resorted to by ancient wandering tribes, who clung to a primitive mode of husbandry, which consisted in burning down a forest here and there, and after exhausting the unmanured soil by a rapid succession of crops, deserting it, at the end of a brief term, for a new clearing.

The Government of India, in addition to being principal landholder, is also a great mineral proprietor. Hence, to the labours of the Geological Survey the Viceroy devoted the closest attention, supplementing them by special investigations, to the end that the marketable value and commercial capabilities of the ores and coal fields might be fully ascertained, for India was now at the dawn of a new future, with her three great elements of enterprise—coal, iron, and lime, though since the opening of the Suez Canal the turn-out of the first-named of these minerals has somewhat decreased, according to one of Sir George Campbell's last administrative reports.

In 1872 the total out-turn in Bengal was 322,443 tons, as against 564,933 tons in 1868, but then the imports of coal also had fallen from 54,461 tons in 1868-9 to 48,714 tons in 1872-3, so that the fact seemed rather to indicate a general depression of trade instead of the influence of the Suez Canal.

Of Raneeungee and the division of Chota Nagpore, a fully pergunnah of Bengal, Sir George Camp-

bell says, "There are now forty-four coal-mines at work, of which nineteen mines turn out more than 10,000 tons of coal apiece per annum. In the larger and better mines, coal is raised by steam from pits and galleries. In the smaller mines and workings coal is raised by hand-labour from open quarries. In the Raneeungee coal-field alone sixty-one steam engines, with an aggregate of 867 horsepower, are at work. Only one seam—or set of seams—of a less thickness than 8½ feet is worked, and the average thickness of the seams at the Raneeungee mines is about 15 or 16 feet," and he adds that in many places iron ore is as plentiful as coal.

This report refers exclusively to Bengal; but everywhere the mineral resources of India are great, and the scarcity of manual labour in some districts alone prevents the full development of many extensive fields, and thus the population who have been compelled to live by nearly the sole industry of India—tillage—will, in a generation or two, have new and vast outlets given to them by the mineral resources of their teeming land.

Lord Mayo, we are told, saw this; but he saw also that such enterprise in India is surrounded by a set of problems unknown in Great Britain, and which debarred the Anglo-Indian speculator from entering the arena. In Britain, lime, iron, and coal are usually found sufficiently near each other to encourage the erection by the capitalist of smelting-furnaces on an ample scale. But the manufacture of iron in India, with few exceptions, is still greatly in the hands of the half-barbarous tribes of the jungle, who scratch for their ore in the stony nullahs, get their flux in handfuls of lumps or nodules, and for fuel make charcoal in the nearest forest. Carriage between place and place was the first difficulty to be surmounted; the Viceroy therefore applied himself to the development of mineral lines, roads, and canals, and insisted that the mineral railway rates should be on the lowest possible scale—and thus limestone could be brought from the great valley of the Soane, which rises in Gundwana, to the mines of iron and coal, referred to by Sir George Campbell, at Raneeungee. The return freight to Britain pays for an Indian voyage, so that metals come out from such ports as Liverpool at low rates, and the European ironmaster now enters the Indian market "as lightly weighted, with regard to carriage, as an Indian iron-smelter would have found himself a few years ago, before he got his ore and flux into his furnace." By a short branch line, Lord Mayo opened up the beds of Chanda, and thus supplied coal to Central and Western India.

CHAPTER LXV.

PRISON DISCIPLINE.—THE WHITE PARIAS.—THE CONVICT COLONY.—ASSASSINATION OF LORD MAYO.

FROM this most active Viceroy the other ores of India, its gold and silver, copper, tin, lead, and nickel, received less attention than coal and iron, as he thought they might, for development, be left with perfect safety to the enterprise of private individuals. "What he laboured at through his new department was to help towards the solution of the special problems connected with the coal and iron ores of India, and to provide a basis of knowledge from which private enterprise might start. Western India is thus, at this moment, being covered with steam-power mills, destined yet to derive their whole fuel from the Indian coal measures; and efforts are now being made by private capitalists in Bengal to commercially solve the problem of iron manufacture on a large scale."*

During the Irish political career of Lord Mayo, prison discipline had been a favourite subject with him; and during his tenure of office he made a careful inspection of all the local gaols—not a very attractive duty at any time. A writer, who visited a number of these prisons, records that he was especially struck with the strange characteristics of the prisoners. "Some terribly rough fellow turned out to be a forger, who never gives trouble. Some extraordinary gentle person in appearance is a dacoit, a murderer, who could only be mastered by hunger and the treadmill. Lads of ten or twelve had committed murder, cut off fingers and ankles for the rings on them; torn rings from the noses of girls, and done all manner of sad things. The

* Dr. W. W. Hunter.

prison life of India was at one time dreadful to think of, when the superintendence of the system in Bengal fell into the hands of an able, practical man, Dr. Mouatt, and he literally transformed it. He resolved to send the less culpable prisoners out with the knowledge of trades. He made them

work, and offered them inducements to work; and soon his prisoners came to build, weave, and plant."

Sir George Campbell came, however, with different views, though also an able and practical man. He urged that punishment was intended to be punitive; and he made it so to a greater extent. It is a curious feature in Indian prison reports how far and closely a native constable will track—like a bloodhound—a criminal through all India perhaps, and secure him at last; for the native criminal is always shrewd up to a certain point, and then fails. The executions have one



A GUNDWANA TALOOKDAR

strange feature. The European official, as a rule, has neither pity nor bitterness towards the culprit who is about to die, whatever his crime. It is the decree of justice: the medical officer simply sees the criminal executed, and rides home to breakfast; and the complete apathy of the criminal infuses apathy in the minds of the beholders.

Among other points concerning prison life in India, Lord Mayo made up his mind that European convicts "should cease to be the formidable difficulty they had hitherto proved; and that a sentence by an Indian court should not be a device for obtaining a comfortable journey home." To this end it would be necessary to provide in India a

prison wherein European convicts could undergo penal servitude with as much rigour, but at the same time as little risk to health, as in Britain, as detention in a disease-stricken gaol would be equal at all times to a sentence of death. In this matter a struggle had always taken place in India between the district officer on one hand and the medical officer on the other, the former being resolved that

the erection of schools and asylums for the poorer Indo-British and Eurasian children; but these still failed to achieve all he wished, and a local newspaper, about the time of the Prince of Wales's Indian visit, drew attention to the fact that in many of the native villages near Calcutta numbers of abandoned English children were running about "waif and stray," homeless and friendless, so far as



RICE AND CORN MERCHANTS OF PATNA.

a prison should be an eminently uncomfortable place for culprits, and the latter as persistently urging his desire to show a low death-rate in the establishment he attended; and during Lord Mayo's administration much would seem to have been done to ameliorate the condition of prisoners in such a climate, for generally a gaol in India is worse than death to a white man.

There was another class of unfortunates who came under the humane consideration of Lord Mayo—the poor whites, or Europeans—for whom he provided a Vagrancy Act, while labouring to keep down the numbers of that hapless class by

their own country-people were concerned, and dependent for their subsistence upon a handful of rice given them now and then by the pitying natives.*

These English children, in some cases of misfortune (from the death of parents), in others of sin, grow up as utter pariahs. The familiar term "loafer" is applied in India to all men who are without any means of subsistence; and it is said that "the civil officer, be he who he may, would almost rather have to do with a mad elephant or a man-eating tiger." They are bold, rapacious, and

* *Indian Daily News.*

difficult people to deal with, all the more so as it is almost useless asking a native constable to apprehend a white man.

The institutions formed by Lord Mayo to prevent the growth or increase of this class received but scanty aid from the State, and he did not live to see them fully developed; so the poorer class of the British community are still but indifferently looked after by the administration.

Lord Mayo's policy, in general, was essentially his own; but it derived several strong features from a rare combination of secretariat talent and practical experience, which he found in the two leaders of the Home Department, and placed in charge of the new one which he developed out of it.*

These were Sir John Strachey and Sir Barrow Helbert Ellis. The former had been in the van of progress in India, like most of his family (since his grandfather went out as private secretary to Lord Clive), and he had made for himself a high reputation in Bengal, as a district officer, before he obtained his important post in the Government. Sir Barrow Ellis had for many years held a high place under the Governor of Bombay, and, by his knowledge of local administration, contributed largely to Lord Mayo's general success. He was also in the habit of perusing carefully the printed proceedings of the local administrations, that a very barbarous and mysterious assassination had taken place in the Andaman Isles which we have already described as the penal settlement of British India, but the mode in which the event was reported led him to consider the whole management of that dangerous and peculiar community, as he thought it, required a full inquiry; and subsequent investigation revealed a state of things that required immediate reform, while the disclosures that were made public acquired greater importance from the severe comments made thereon, at Calcutta, by the Supreme Court.

The great number of life-prisoners left on the hands of Government since the Mutiny had led, in 1858, to the formation of the more ample convict colony in the Andaman Islands, where the settlement certainly had a hard struggle for life.

"But the natives were the least terrible of the enemies of the colony," says the learned Dr Hunter, of the Bengal Civil Service. "The islands were buried under jungle to the water's edge, pestilent mangrove swamps fringed the creeks, evergreen foliage, and a lush growth of climbing plants watched out the fresh air from the forest,

and allowed malaria to gather in deadliest force below. The colony, in the last century, had been practically exterminated by fever, and for ten years after its re-establishment, in 1858, the settlers were exactly decimated each twelvemonth. In 1867, the mortality was returned at over 101 per 1,000. In only one previous year had the deaths fallen below that rate; in many they had exceeded it. The malaria smitten gangs depended on the distant mainland for their food. A small pig, a rat with spiny hair, and a fruit-eating bat had been found on the islands, a wild cat, also, was reported to have been seen. Fish and roots were the immemorial food of the inhabitants. Even the coco-palms, so plentiful on the Nicobars, did not exist. In the daily battle against disease and death, the British officers found their hands burdened by a convict population conservative beyond any people on the earth as to what they eat, and depending for each meal on supplies brought seven hundred miles across the sea."

As the rank vegetation was cut down the malaria lessened, and in 1870 the mortality among the convicts had sunk to ten per thousand; but the result of the daily struggle for existence was a looseness of discipline that produced scandalous results, while, to a few British officials, with a small party of soldiers, was committed the perilous task of guarding and holding down, in those remote and isolated isles, eight thousand of the most finished rascals of Northern India.

Instead of strict discipline, clear regulations, and firm subordination, the inquiries of Lord Mayo disclosed, in 1871, that there were quarrels and disobedience among the authorities, and a laxity of good order, which permitted the convicts to acquire too much liquor, and that consequently it was after a general debauch that the assassination in question occurred. This led him to reconsider the organisation of the penal colony, and during the spring of 1871 this occupied much of his thoughts, when at Simla, the Government sanitarium of India, among the hills.

He calculated that, as the Andaman Islands were for life-prisoners alone, the number sent there might ultimately amount to 20,000 convicts, who would require a stronger safeguard than the few isolated Britons scattered among them; and he resolved to enforce stricter discipline, and that while the terrors of transportation should be increased on one hand, on the other, to afford eventually a chance of a new career to those who might prove industrious and well-disposed to raise them into the position of settlers—and, as it were, to open up a new citizenship, with local

* Dr. Hunter.

ambitions and interests, to the exiles whose crimes had cut them off, alike from the future and the past."

With his own hand he drew up a code of regulations for the re-organisation of the whole settlement, and chose a general officer of approved courage, talent, and administrative skill to put them in force, and sent him to his post in the summer of 1871. The charge of the colony to the exchequer of India had averaged £150,000 yearly; but Lord Mayo conceived that, by the local cultivation of rice and pulse, the breeding of goats, by the adoption of goal-manufactured clothing, the substitution of a sepoy guard for native police, and other measures, a saving might be effected of £30,000 per annum.

Admirable though the scheme, the new superintendent soon discovered that a severe task had been imposed upon him, by attempting both the moral and material reformation of the desperadoes in his care—a sullen and degraded community, who, from the day of their arrival, had been accustomed to live on supplies that were brought from the continent of India, and for which they had neither sown nor dug. The reports of the superintendent were so discouraging, that Lord Mayo resolved to proceed to the Andamans in person, and see what could be done, and accordingly these isles were to be the turning-point of the cold weather tour, on which he left Calcutta on the 24th of January, 1872, after visiting the great camp of exercise at Delhi, and receiving in state the King of Siam.

Though the Viceroy could scarcely have had any foreboding of the fatality that was before him, it was remarked that as he took leave of Sir George Campbell, the lieutenant-governor, and other Bengal authorities, his face wore a particularly anxious expression; but this arose from his uneasiness concerning the affairs of Khelat, on our north-western frontier, and regarding the safety of the Queen's representative, then on his way to Sistan; and he mentioned, that if any evil tidings came from thence, and reached him at Burmah, he would relinquish his visit to the Andamans, and instantly return to Calcutta.

His intention was first to visit Burmah, then to visit the Penal Isles on the return passage across the Bay of Bengal, and inspect the province of Orissa. A brilliant party of guests accompanied him and the Countess of Mayo, on board H.M. frigate, *Glasgow*, of twenty-eight guns and 600 horse-power, and in the steamship, *Dacca*, which the British India Steam Navigation Company had placed at his disposal for the tour. Among those

who went with him were the Marquis and Marchioness of Drogheda, the Earl of Donoughmore, Count Waldstein, Sir Barrow H. Ellis, Colonels Jervais, C.B., Thuillier, and Rundall, and several other persons of distinction.

At Rangoon he received a reassuring telegram from Calcutta, and after paying two thoroughly practical visits to the principal seats of Burmese commerce, he sailed from Moulmein at dawn on the 5th of February, for the Andamans, and for Orissa, which he was doomed not to see. The *Glasgow* came to anchor off Hopetown, at the Andamans, three days after, at eight in the morning, and the Viceroy, delighted with the speed she had made, resolved to begin the work of inspection at once. When the superintendent came on board, the private secretary inquired of him what precautions had been taken for the safety of His Excellency among a population so eminently dangerous. The superintendent informed him that the convicts were to be all kept at their daily work, as usual, to the end that the Viceroy might see the penal colony in its usual state of routine, and that the warders had strict orders to keep every man in his place. In front and rear, and on both flanks of the Earl's party, were to be escorts of police, with their rifles loaded, and on Ross and Viper Islands, where the most desperate characters were cantoned, detachments of native infantry had been placed to support the police, who had everywhere strict injunctions to prevent any one approaching His Excellency on any pretext whatever.

After the party landed from the *Glasgow*, the forenoon was passed on Ross Island, where the head-quarter establishments, the convicts' abode, and the European barracks were visited. Lord Mayo noted several points for improvement, and more than once expressed surprise and impatience to find his movements so hampered by the escort on every side of him. After luncheon on board the frigate, where he pleasantly apologised to the officers for lining the gangway, and having the marine guard under arms to receive him, he landed again, to inspect Viper Island, accompanied, as before, by his staff within arm's length of him, and the police, with their loaded rifles; nor were the precautions altogether without reason.

"Many months had elapsed since, in far-off Simla, the authorities received hints that the Viceroy's life was in danger," says his biographer—"a warning to which the assassination of the Lord Chief Justice of Bengal gave a terrible significance. Lord Mayo had sternly trampled out the Wahabee disaffection, and in doing so made bitter enemies of a small fanatical gang. One of them struck

down the chief justice, who had given decision, in appeal, against their ringleaders; but Lord Mayo's immense popularity among the natives of all ranks and creeds led to timely warnings being sent to those who were accountable for his safety. During the following months a heavy responsibility devolved on Lord Mayo's staff. They had strengthened the guards round Government House, dexterously managed the relays on the Viceroy's progress through the hill states, so as to prevent him changing horses in any village, altered his route at the last moment, and without his knowledge, through the thronged streets of the northern cities where any danger was supposed to lie. All this had somewhat annoyed Lord Mayo, an utterly fearless man, with a spirit and courage as infectious to those about him as his untiring energy in work, or his happy laugh. He always maintained that such precautions were of small use. As a matter of fact, they had proved ample against whatever perils threatened him in India, from the traitors and fanatics whose wrath he had personally directed to himself by his stern scattering of their leaders. Only a couple of days before reaching the Andamans, he had said, in connection with the chief justice's murder, that 'these things, when done at all, are done in a moment, and no number of guards would stop a resolute man's blow.' However, to satisfy his brother (Major the Hon. Edward Bourke, then military secretary) and his private secretary, he accepted from them a weighted stick, which he had carried for several months, and which he was swinging in his hand as he now walked down to the beach."

The danger was deemed over then in Viper Island; though the worst of the bad characters are selected for quarters there, and inspection of the saw-mills, and other works on Chatham Island brought the sultry day's duty to a close. One or two convicts who wished to present petitions, though not permitted to approach the Viceroy, gave them to an officer of his staff. The general emotion among them seemed to be that indulgences, and perhaps some pardons, might be given in honour of a visit so unexpected; and as the party descended towards the boats of the frigate, all felt a sense of relief, and Lord Mayo said, with a smile, that the precautions of the superintendent had proved "more than enough," adding, "we have still an hour of daylight, let us do Mount Harriet." But, by the advice of the private secretary, who was always averse to the Viceroy being out after nightfall, the visit was postponed till the morrow.

On Mount Harriet, which is a hill 1,116 feet in

height, distant about a mile and a half from Hopetown Pier, he was anxious to found a sanitarium to rescue fever patients from the deadly malaria of the islands; and though none but convicts of approved conduct are at Hopetown, the superintendent had an armed guard in attendance, when in the evening he began to ascend the height to enjoy the prospect of a sunset in the sea. He attained the summit, and carefully surveyed the capabilities of the hill as a sanitarium, and expressed his pleasure at the beauty of the evening scene; but darkness set in with tropical rapidity, and the descent, for security to his person, was made in the closest order, though none could dream that an assassin, knife in hand, was then, as he had been the livelong day, dogging the footsteps of the Earl.

Midway down Mount Harriet, a party of torchbearers from Hopetown met him and his group of staff officers and escorting police, and the weird gleam of the flambeaux could be seen from where the *Glasgow*, the *Scotia*, the *Dacca*, and the *Nemesis* lay at anchor, with their long lines of lights glittering on the water.

Their bells had just rung seven; the state launch, with steam up, awaited the party of Lord Mayo, whose tall figure, clad in a grey tussar-silk coat, could be seen by the glare of two torches borne in front of him, though the darkness seemed almost opaque now. Stepping before the rest, he was about to descend into the boat, when a noise was heard—a noise described by those who were present as like the rush of some wild animal—and a descending hand and knife were suddenly seen in the torchlight; a blow next was heard, and the Viceroy fell over the pier into the water alongside, while at the same moment the torches went out.

A dozen of men grasped the assassin, and would have torn him to pieces, but an officer drew his sword, and pressed them back with the hilt, after which the culprit was properly secured. The torches were relighted, and then the unfortunate Lord Mayo was seen to stagger up, knee-deep in the water, and clear the hair from off his brow with an air of bewilderment. His secretary, Major Owen Burne, leaped down to his assistance. "Burne," said he, faintly, "they've hit me," adding in a louder voice to those on the pier, "It is all right—I don't think I am much hurt."

But it was otherwise. When lifted up, a gout of crimson blood was visible on the back of his grey silk coat. The torrent came streaming forth, and men mechanically strove to staunch it with their handkerchiefs. In their hands the Earl fell heavily back. "Lift up my head," said he faintly,

and then expired. Many would not believe that he was really gone, and they cut away his coat and vest, and strove to stop the wound with hastily-torn bandages; while, tied hand and foot, the assassin, stunned by a hundred blows, lay still and well-nigh breathless, within a few yards of him.

Eight bells now clanged from the ships, and as the launch sheered alongside the *Glasgow*, where the guests were waiting for dinner in the state cabin, and the voices of the ladies were heard merrily jesting, the lights in the launch were suddenly extinguished to hide the catastrophe, and unknown to all save a few, the dead Earl was borne gently to his cabin, and laid on the bed there. "To all on board," says Dr. Hunter, "that night stands out from among all other nights in their lives. A silence, which seemed as if it would never again be broken, suddenly fell on the holiday ship, with its six hundred souls. The doctors held their interview with the dead—two stabs from the same knife on the shoulder had penetrated the cavity of the chest, either of them sufficient to cause death. On the guest steamer there were hysterics and weeping; but in the ship where the Viceroy lay dead it was too deep for any expression, while the anguish of her who received back her dead was not, and is not, for words."

When day dawned, the *Glasgow* was in mourning, with her ensign half-hoisted at the peak, the yards topped up in every direction, and the running rigging thrown loose in lights and disorder. The chief officers of the Indian Government on board, Sir Barrow H. Ellis (Member of Council), Mr. C. Umphreaston Aitchison, C.S.I., Foreign Secretary, and others, assembled to adopt steps for a temporary successor to the administration, and a few hours after, while one steamer bore away to the north with the Member of Council to Bengal, another was on its way to bring up the Governor of Madras, Lord Napier of Ettrick, to act as viceroy at Calcutta; and that night the partially-embalmed body was placed in a coffin on the quarter-deck, covered with a Union Jack.

The assassin was a mountaineer from the north-western frontier, who had served in the Punjab mounted police, and been condemned to death at Peshawur for a murder, but, from some extenuating circumstance, his sentence was commuted to penal servitude for life in the Andaman Isles. He was a man of enormous muscular strength, and of considerable beauty of person; so great was the former, that when heavily ironed in the condemned cell, he knocked over the lamp with his fettered ankles, beat down the soldier who stood sentry over him, and, though handcuffed, wrenched his bayonet away.

The man slain in Peshawur had been his hereditary foe, hence the deed was no crime in his eyes; and when convicted for it in 1869, he had vowed to revenge himself by taking the life of some European of high rank. Though silent, sullen, dogged, and grim, he was well-behaved; gained a ticket of leave, and, while working among the convicts at Hopetown, for three years watched and waited the coming of some prey worthy of his dagger, and he sharpened it when a royal salute announced the arrival of the Viceroy, for now he knew that the time and the man had come.

The close watch kept around Lord Mayo had repeatedly baffled his attempts; but he had dogged him in the jungle, up and down Mount Harriet, and was beginning to lose all hope, when the simple circumstance of Lord Mayo stepping before his party at the jetty gave the assassin, at the last moment, the opportunity that he so fiercely longed for.

He received the usual trial and punishment due to his crime. In the launch, Mr. Aitchison asked him why he had done this dreadful thing. "By the order of God," he replied quietly. He was then asked whether he had any accomplices. "Among men," said he, "I have none—God is my accomplice." He was tried next afternoon, the superintendent officiating as chief judge of the settlement. The culprit pleaded "Not guilty." He was sentenced to be hanged, and the proceedings were forwarded to the High Court at Calcutta in the regular way. Pending their return the prisoner showed no sign of penitence, and was childishly vain of being photographed, and, believing himself a species of martyr, hoped that odes in his honour or memory would be sung among his tribe in the north-west.

On the 20th of February, 1872, the supreme tribunal confirmed the sentence; and on the 11th of March the assassin met his doom, with coolness and courage, at the usual place of execution on Viper Island.

Such was the mournful fate of the Earl of Mayo, who during his brief tenure of office had done so much, and so well, for the good of India. "In offices of secondary rank at home," said the leading journal, "he had acquired the reputation of a man of business, but the selection of Lord Mayo as Viceroy of India excited general surprise. It was soon found that Mr. Disraeli had formed an accurate judgment of his friend and colleague. With his new opportunities, Lord Mayo displayed the qualities of a statesman and ruler. Indefatigable in business, considerate to his subordinates, anxious to profit by their special knowledge, Lord



ASSASSINATION OF LORD MAYO.



PLOUGHING IN TURKESTAN.

Mayo, by his character and demeanour, exercised a strong personal influence over British officials and over natives. His maintenance of the splendour and dignity of the viceregal court was generally approved; and in more important matters, as in the re-establishment of a financial equilibrium, he displayed vigour and decision.*

Solemn, indeed, was the ceremonial with which the people of Dublin received his remains, which were laid in the shady spot he had selected in the secluded little churchyard of Kildare, before that 13th of October, 1868, when he left Palmerstown, as he tells us, "amid tears and wailing, much leave-taking, and great sorrow."

CHAPTER LXVI.

THE INTERIM-VICEROY.—LORD NORTHBROOK VICEROY.—THE AFFAIR OF KHIVA.—THE FAMINE IN BENGAL AND BEHAR.

THE Right Hon. Francis Napier, Lord Napier and Ettrick, K.T., who was Governor of Madras from January, 1866, until 1872, and was then acting Viceroy of India *pro tempore*, during the absence of Lord Mayo, succeeded him temporarily in the administration. The descendant of an ancient Scottish family, famous alike in peace and war, Lord Napier was well skilled in politics. He was made Attaché to the Embassy at Vienna in 1840, in his twenty-first year, and held diplomatic posts at Tientsin and Constantinople, to which place he returned as Secretary of Embassy in 1854, after

having been Secretary of Legation at Naples and St. Petersburg. He had also been British Minister at Washington, the Hague, and Berlin; but the general government of India was a very short time in his hands, as Thomas George Baring, Lord Northbrook, long known to political fame as Sir Francis Baring, was appointed Governor-General and Viceroy in February, 1872.

Educated at Christ Church, Oxford, he had been successively private secretary to Mr. Labouchere at the Board of Trade, to Sir George Cornewall Lewis at the Home Office, to Sir Charles Wood at the India Board, and at the Admiralty till 1857, when he

* Times, 1872.

was returned to the House of Commons for Penryn and Falmouth, which constituency he continued to represent in the Liberal interest till he succeeded his father, the first peer, in the Upper House, in 1866.

He was a Lord of the Admiralty from May, 1857, to February, 1858, and Under-Secretary of State for India from June, 1859, to January, 1861, and thus became initiated in the affairs of the East. From the latter date till June, 1866, he was Under Secretary for War, and on the accession of Mr Gladstone to office he received that appointment again, in December, 1868. On his accepting the viceroyalty, Lord Northbrook was in his forty-sixth year.

Though he had never sat in the Cabinet, he had acquired an almost unequalled official experience, as an under-secretary for the great departments of the State; almost without intermission, and from the moment of his arrival at Calcutta, he busied himself sedulously in the acquisition of that local knowledge which was so indispensable for one in his high position, and there was every prospect of his term of office being a successful and prosperous one.

At the same time it was evident to all who studied the matter, that additional demands on Indian statesmanship might soon be caused by the approach of Russia to the borders of those native states which cover our Indian frontier, especially as the Russian authorities had concluded a commercial treaty with the ruler of Eastern Turkestan—the place so lately visited by Mr. Forsyth, acting under orders from Lord Mayo.

As a Russian expedition was preparing against Khiva, the khan applied for the mediation of the Viceroy of India; but Lord Northbrook could only reply by advising that prince to comply with the just demands which a civilised power can always prefer against a barbarous, restless, and aggressive neighbour. This khanate of Central Asia comprehends the tract north of the Attrick River, and the Elburz, to the Sea of Aral, all the east coast of the Caspian, and the desert extending eastward to the Oxus, including the fertile oasis of Khwarezm—boundaries giving a mean length of about 750 miles, by a mean breadth of about 600. The standing force of the khanate was reckoned by Fraser at 30,000 cavalry, by Captain Abbott at 100,000 horse, of whom the Usbec Tartars, the dominant race, are accounted the best, though Kuzilbes and Persians, are really the *élite*.

When the first cause of complaint Russia might have had against the wild horsemen of Khiva for interference in the kidnapping of her people, it was

impossible for Great Britain to undertake the protection of lawless tribes in the remote regions of Central Asia, and it is but too probable that the Russian grievances were real ones. In some of the journals of Moscow and St. Petersburg, Lord Northbrook's reception of the Khivan envoy was insolently described as an insult to "Holy Russia," though the same organs habitually avowed and exaggerated the aggressive tendency of the Russian conquests.

In the autumn of 1872, it was distinctly announced that an expedition would march against Khiva early in the ensuing year, and the luckless khán was informed he had nothing to expect from British intervention. Earl Granville, Secretary for Foreign Affairs, invited an explanation of the intentions of the Russian Government, and the emperor dispatched Count Schouvaloff, an officer who enjoyed his highest personal confidence, on a special mission to Britain, with solemn assurances that, after exacting retribution for the many offences committed by the Khan of Khiva and his predatory subjects, the armies of Russia would evacuate that territory.

About the same time, the negotiation, which had been commenced by Lord Clarendon, when Secretary for Foreign Affairs, was concluded, in correspondence with Prince Gortchakoff, the Russian Foreign Minister, who undertook to abstain from interference in Afghanistan or any of its dependencies, the Russians accepting our demarcation of the Afghan State.

Prince Gortchikoff assumed, with some skill, in his closing dispatch, that the treaty involved a pledge against any encroachment by the ameer, Sher Ali, and his successors, on their neighbours to the north, and a remarkable disclaimer to the whole engagement by Mr. Gladstone, in reply to a question in the House of Commons, was interpreted by many Russian journals as a violation of the whole treaty, but it was evident that, so long as neither Britain nor Russia wished to provoke a collision in these remote parts of Asia, they would abide by the understanding of 1873.

All the preliminary arrangements that were made by Russia for the invasion of Khiva were complete and also of the most perfect kind. The command of the army was given to General Kauffmann, one of those soldiers who owe their advancement to natural talent and force of character. A distinguished officer of engineers, and experienced in mountain campaigning, it was he who settled with General Williams the capitulation of Kars during the Armenian war, and after the campaign in Asia Minor the Grand Duke Nicholas appointed him inspector

General of the Imperial Engineers and Chief of his Staff. In 1865 he was Governor of Lithuania. On the 1st of February, 1873, he left St. Petersburg for Tashkend, a town of Independent Tartary, formerly an independent state, but now forming part of Kokand, and began his march upon Khiva in six columns, by six separate roads, and one only failed in making its way to the capital, which is situated in a fine plain near the Oxus, and consists of only about fifteen hundred houses, arranged in narrow lanes within a mud wall and ditch, measuring half a mile each way. It contained a palace, but so mean and wretched, that the khan generally preferred to use his black tent.

The remainder of the Russian army passed the desert, through extremes of cold, amid the snowy steppes of Khiva, and also of heat subsequently; and, as in the case of our singular expedition to Magdala, the peril and difficulty were overcome as soon as the goal was attained. The troops of Khiva scarcely made any serious resistance, and on the 15th of July, the capital, with its population of about ten thousand souls, was occupied without the trouble of a siege, and a fine of 2,200,000 roubles was imposed upon the Khan, who had fled before the invaders, but returned and surrendered himself to the Russian general.*

The first and most satisfactory result of the conquest was the restoration of numbers of Russian and other foreign slaves, who had been lawlessly taken by the Tartars, and slavery, at the same time, was declared formally to be abolished.

A portion of the war indemnity was sharply imposed upon a tribe of Turkomans, who had fought against the former expedition from Orenburg to Khiva, in 1839, when the Russian troops did not get much beyond the Emba, a river which formed the nominal Russian frontier, or not much more than a third of the distance, having lost all its camels by the intense cold during a five months' campaign. They were only nominally Khivan subjects, and for a month after General Kauffmann's conquest of Khiva they had been on friendly terms with the officers of the victorious army, many of whom had been sent out for the purpose of making military surveys of the mountains, rivers, and positions, and, while on this duty, had passed several days and nights peacefully in the Turkoman encampment. But it would seem that the column of the Russian army to which they belonged had not seen enough of battle and slaughter, so General Kauffmann sent for the elders of the tribe, and demanded a part of the indemnity within fourteen days, and a promise for this was extorted.

* Campaigning on the Oxus and the Fall of Khiva, &c., 1874.

"The Russian Commander-in-Chief was in a hurry," says Captain Burnaby, in his descriptive volume of adventures in the East, "and sent out Golovatcheff to ascertain what chance there was of the payment being made. This general, in order to discover the intentions of the Turkomans, gave an order to his soldiery not to spare either sex or age. Men, women, and children at the breast, were slain with ruthless barbarity. Houses with bed-hidden inmates were given up to the fiery element; women—aye, and prattling babes—were burned alive amidst the flames. Hell was let loose in Turkoman! And this, the Russians would have us believe, was done to further Christianity and civilisation. This is the sort of Christianity which some people wish to see established in Constantinople."†

Russia did not comply with the understanding that the khanate should be maintained in its integrity. By a treaty dictated by General Kauffmann, the khan was compelled to acknowledge himself the serf and vassal of the Czar of all the Russias; to consent to the establishment of fortresses, garrisoned by Russians, in any part of his dominions, and in all respects to obey his new lord and master, after which General Kauffmann evacuated Khiva on the 12th of August, 1873.

A design for placing a strong Russian garrison in the delta of the Oxus was only relinquished because it was found to be, from various local causes, impracticable; it was therefore resolved to erect the fortress farther south, on the right bank of the river, and at the same time to annex the large portion of the territory of Khiva which lies between the Oxus and Russian Turkestan; and a treaty, published at the end of the year, fully supplemented that of Khiva, dictated by General Kauffmann.

"It is easier," says the *Times* on this, "to understand General Kauffmann's policy than to reconcile the Khiva treaty with the assurances which were conveyed through Count Schouvaloff. The interests, however, of Britain in the East, could only be affected by the partial or total annexation of Khiva, if the aggrandisement of Russia in that part of Central Asia should affect the relations between England and Russia."

The readiness of Russian suspicion with regard to Britain is shown in the volume of Captain Burnaby, published three years subsequent to these affairs. He relates a very interesting conversation with the khan, who reiterated the prevailing opinion that Russia was advancing, by degrees, on India. Captain Burnaby assured him that the

† "A Ride to Khiva:" Cassell, Peter & Co.

statement that Britain feared Russia was as ridiculous as it was false; that Britain had beaten Russia before, and could easily do so again; "but that we were a peaceable nation, and never wished to interfere with our neighbours, so long as they did not interfere with us." After a pause, the khan, through his interpreter, suddenly asked, "Why did not England help me when I sent a mission to Lord Northbrook?"

This was a question which, under all the circumstances, made Captain Burnaby feel uncomfortable, but he answered diplomatically, that he was only a traveller, and not in the secrets of his Government. Two days after, the Russians, much to the chagrin of the khan, desired Captain Burnaby to go to Petro-Alexandrovsk, as soon as they discovered he was in Khiva; and there he found an official telegram awaiting him from the Duke of Cambridge, requiring his immediate return to European Russia.

This telegram had been waiting for him several days, so that if he had gone to the fort of Petro-Alexandrovsk, he would never have seen Khiva or its Khan.*

In the year 1873, the Shah of Persia, Nasser-ud-Deen, paid his well-known visit to Europe and to Britain, thus breaking through all Eastern tradition, and it is a strong argument as to the popularity and moderation of his rule, that although he was absent from his kingdom from the 12th of May to the 6th of September, political calm reigned there undisturbed by suspicion of intrigue or the breath of sedition. In four months he crossed the Caspian to Astrakhan, and ascended the Volga to St Petersburg, and passed through Germany and Belgium to Ostend, from whence he crossed to Dover; and though but remotely connected with Indian history, it cannot be forgotten that if ceremonies and public demonstration of regard are of political import and value, Persia would seem to be thereby connected by the most friendly ties with Britain and with British India.

Fortunately his arrival in London was timed so that he should reach it when the metropolis was at its fullest, and when the millions of its population were most ready for amusement and variety. He was lodged in Buckingham Palace, and royally feasted at the Guildhall; a military review was held in his honour at Windsor, and a naval one at Spithead. 188,000 visiting Liverpool and Manchester, he was dominated with princely splendour at Trentham by Kuzlibergerland, and wherever he went good-

What the British people repaid the novel spectacle of have this British soil with full and inroad the Khiva." Cassell Petter & Galpin.

ready applause, so that he and his suite had ample opportunities for appreciating to the full the might, the population, and the wealth of Great Britain.

He was received with less enthusiasm in France and Italy, and after passing through Vienna, he visited the great head of the Mohammedan schism, the Sultan of Constantinople. During all this remarkable journey, the Shah kept a diary, a verbatim translation of which appeared at London in 1874.

When, in 1873, it was determined to send an envoy once more to Yarkand and the ruler of Eastern Turkestan, Mr. Forsyth was again selected to that post, and, after an arduous journey across the gigantic mountain-ranges which separate India from Kashgar, he succeeded, while acting in the name of Her Majesty, then named officially in his commission as "Empress of Hindostan," in getting a treaty signed, which is likely to produce important advantages, by opening up commercial intercourse with the most flourishing country of Central Asia. For this service it was that he received the honour of knighthood, and was made Knight Commander of the Star of India.

This treaty was signed on the 2nd of February, 1874, at Yarkand. All political impediments to the trans-Himalayan route were now completely removed, and the trade has rapidly developed (within its limited capabilities) ever since, even in 1873 it amounted to close on £60,000, and our merchants have found themselves respected and well treated throughout the distant dominions of the Ataligh Ghazee and Eastern Turkestan. The latter is, thanks to Sir Douglas's diplomacy, a recognised and most profitable market for British goods.

Lord Northbrook arrived in India when the painful circumstance of Lord Mayo's death was fresh in all men's minds, and no doubt he had considerable difficulties to confront. He had to grapple with finance, with new questions of the administration, civil and military, with frontier disputes, and, ere long, with a famine. Though he indulged but little in pageants or viceregal tours, he worked hard at his duties, and it was said that "his viceregal throne-room was his office, which he preferred to any room of state;" and he soon won the sympathies of the people, by convincing them that his word was not a plaything of policy, but represented a verity, and that what it represented would endure.

In grappling with finance, he promptly achieved the repeal of the Indian Income Tax, an impost which arose from native agencies and exigencies. India has no poor law, properly so-called, but

she has a great deal of charity, and in times of scarcity it is often very severely tested. That the calamity of famine was impending became pretty apparent in 1873. The failure of summer and autumn rains had destroyed or reduced the rice and other crops in Bengal and Behar to an extent that seemed to render great scarcity certain.

When the ordinary provision fails, a dense population, such as that of British India, living on the cheapest and most simple of food, has no resources within its own reach; and a whisper of famine always brings terror with it. In that which had occurred a century before, the deaths from starvation alone were reckoned by millions, and the sufferings of Orissa in 1866 were fresh in the recollection of all. Timely warning was given now, and our highest authorities on Indian affairs had ample opportunities given them for discussing the necessary measures, and suggesting the means of relief.

Sir George Campbell, the Lieutenant-Governor of Bengal, together with Lord Northbrook, with indefatigable industry and great prudence took the necessary initiative, and the Duke of Argyll, as Secretary of State for India, on behalf of the Home Government, approved fully, by anticipation, of any expenditure they might deem necessary for saving human life.

In an address to the municipality of Agra, towards the end of 1873, Lord Northbrook expressed a hope that it would be possible to avert the calamity, or at least ameliorate it; and he sanctioned the request of Sir George Campbell for the purchase of vast quantities of rice and other native food; then relief works on a great scale were at once commenced, and it was thought that when the pressure came, even the most secluded districts might be reached by railway, by road, or by water communication.

Rice is the staple food of the poorer classes of India, and, so far as Bengal is concerned, Backergunge is the great rice-producing district. It is in the Eastern Sunderbunds, and is a territory, notwithstanding its proximity to the sea, remarkable for its fertility, being periodically overflowed by the waters of the Ganges, and enriched by their alluvium; it produces annually two rice crops, in such abundance as to render it the granary of Calcutta, both for exportation and consumption.

Most simple is the repast of the Hindoos in general, and of the peasant in particular. It is pretty well known that the rice is put into one dish, round which the people sit, and eat with the fingers of the right hand; but then it must be remembered that it is almost—but not quite—a

matter of religion with a Hindoo never to soil or pollute that hand. If he has aught to touch that is unclean—even to picking up anything that lies in his way—he uses the left hand; but the right never.

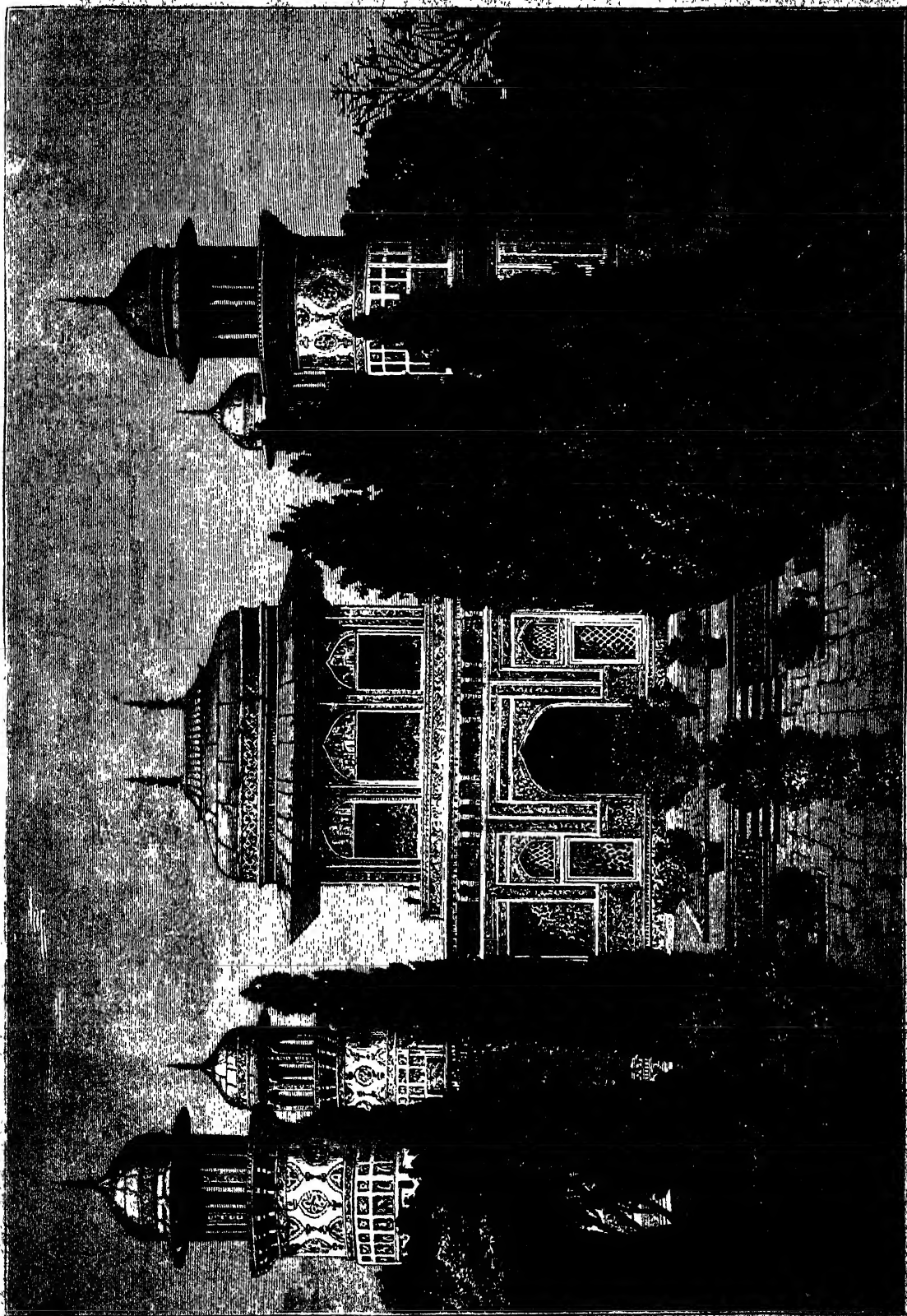
A Brahmin would not eat with any other caste for any consideration whatever, though any caste may follow a Brahmin, and partake of the food he has touched or left. He alone, by the supposed purity of his descent, defiles nothing.

The boiled rice is termed *bhat*; it is eaten with *ghee*, a kind of clarified butter—the same with which the holy idols are smeared—and one good meal of rice per day is all that is usually taken by the poor. In addition to rice there are peas, Indian corn, the plantain fruit, and the guava, which even the poorest can generally obtain; and there are in India about fifty-eight varieties of trees and herbs, all of which are cooked and eaten in some form, and eaten either alone or with some other food.

Before the calamity of famine became imminent, the condition of India was tranquil and generally prosperous; and fortunate it was that Lord Northbrook and Sir George Campbell were impressed with the necessity for taking timely and ample precautions, though they differed somewhat in points of detail, and especially on the question of prohibiting or permitting the export of rice. The Viceroy believed that, even in the actual crisis, it was inexpedient to disturb the ordinary course of commerce; while the Lieutenant-Governor maintained that it was an anomaly that food should be sent abroad when it was certain to be urgently required in the distressed districts.

Both the Duke of Argyll and his successor in office, the Marquis of Salisbury, who became Secretary of State for India in February, 1874, on Mr. Disraeli becoming premier, approved the judgment of the Viceroy; and there was not at any subsequent time much deficiency of food, though great difficulties were encountered, and great outlay incurred, in the distribution of the accumulated Government stores, by sale, in the form of wages, and frequently as gifts among the distressed population.

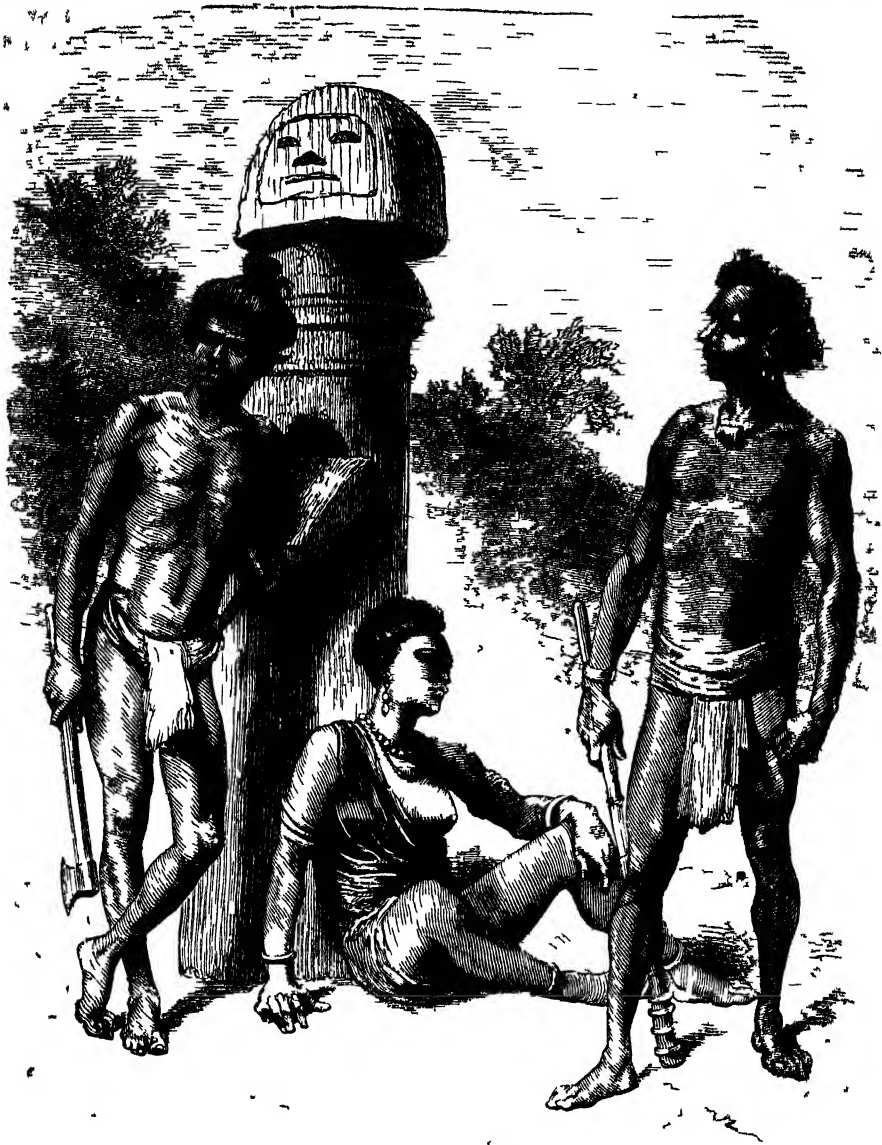
Sir George Campbell, who was charged with the organisation of the system of relief, displayed a faculty of administration and an indefatigable industry which placed him in the first class of Indian statesmen, till he was unwillingly compelled to resign his post by illness to Sir Richard Temple. They had to establish relief works on a vast scale, and to provide other means for those classes which, according to caste and the customs of the country, could not be expected to work.



VIEW OF THE MAUSOLEUM OF THE I'TIMAD-UD-DĀULAH, AGRA.

They had, moreover, to stimulate the native gentry and landlords, who generally responded satisfactorily to their appeals, and they had also to control the enormous expenditure which was

Government to 2,199,000 persons in Tirhoot alone—in the province of Behar, where the land is usually well cultivated, the soil drier, and the climate healthier, than in Bengal, and where the



GROUP OF SONTALS, NATIVES OF THE RAJMAHAL MOUNTAINS (BENGAL).

requisite for the purchase of food, for its conveyance to the various points of pressure, and for its distribution when there; while it was found necessary to supply with food, not only British subjects in distressed districts, but the starving inhabitants of the neighbouring provinces of Nepaul.

A few items connected with this anti-famine work we may also mention, that in the month of April, 1874, assistance was given by

population are in the proportion of three Hindoos to one Mohummedan. Up to the end of that month the consumption of grain from the Government stores, in the famine districts of Bengal, had come below the estimate by 50,000 tons, though so early as February the administration had arranged for a supply of 342,000 tons of rice to be in the distressed districts by the middle of May, at a cost of three millions sterling.

In May it was announced that Government was supporting 2,750,000 persons in the famine districts. The Government and trade supplies then amounted to 674,000 tons of grain. In May the Viceroy telegraphed to the Home authorities, on the 9th, that there had been no material change in the weather, though a minor rainfall had facilitated sowing; that the general upward tendency of prices continued, and the transport of grain was complete everywhere except in Eastern Tirhoot and Brahmmapootra. Everything, he added, was progressing favourably, and that the total number of deaths from famine was, as yet, only twenty-two.

Though there was some amelioration in the worst parts of Tirhoot by the 23rd of May, early in the month the distress was great in the southern portion of that province and in Singhbhoom, a district of Bengal, in the province of Orissa, which is thinly populated, and being mountainous and woody, is ill-cultivated.

By the middle of May, in Maunbhoom, relief was urgently required, in districts that were previously considered safe; and the landless classes had consumed the last of their stock, and even the seed-grain; while small-pox and cholera came to augment the sufferings of the people. The early rice was promising in Dinagepore, a hilly part of Bengal (where the rainy season usually extends from the middle of June to the middle of October), and also in Purneah, which adjoins it, but in Rungpore it was perishing fast. At Moorshedabad and Rajeshaye, the level surface of which is always under rice cultivation, the land was burned up, panting for rain, and hopelessly scorched by the intense heat.

In the same month, May, a despatch from Calcutta announced that hope was returning, with rain, to Durbungah, a Mohammedan district some fifty miles north-east of Patna, and that "according to the latest reports from the famine districts, 134,200 persons are employed on the relief works, 200,000 are receiving charitable relief, and 450,200 are supported by advance or sales of grain. Piece-work is being gradually enforced for able-bodied individuals. The condition of the people generally is better than in February, in consequence of the active measures of relief. Severe distress, however, occasionally breaks out, requiring constant vigilance on the part of the authorities, upon whom the natives generally depend for all deficiencies. The rainfall has been generally beneficial in North Behar, although insufficient to allay native anxieties respecting the next crop. Three hundred thousand tons of grain have been carried to the north from the banks of the Ganges; 50,000

now remain to be conveyed. Village inspection and relief are completely organised in the worst districts, and are being extended where required."

The efforts of Lord Northbrook and the Lieutenant-Governor of Bengal were vigorously seconded by officers of all ranks; and though the provision against famine imposed a heavy burden on the finances of India, it prevented a disastrous mortality such as ensued during the same calamity in past years. "The British Government," says a journalist, writing on the subject of charity, or a poor law for India, "is, perhaps, out of all comparison the most desirous of any Government India ever had to meet great social evils: *teste*, Lord Northbrook's glorious famine campaign. But the subject is so vast that the people must unite if the desired end is to be attained, and to effect a real union the sympathies of the wealthy men of India must be won. One pound gained by good will is worth five gained by social coercion. We do not, of course, term anything coercion that is carrying out of a law. The writer saw the inspection of the Famine Relief people at Monghyr (the capital of a hilly district of Behar), and from all he could ascertain the cases were in no way exceptional, but had merely been brought together from all parts by the rumours of relief. Such a mass of humanity though, can never be conceived without being seen—leprosy, elephantiasis, and a host of other diseases made the very air rank. The applicants had crawled out from their huts—feeble old people, emaciated children, persons stricken with diseases of which Britain knows nothing, for the daily dole of rice. The officers were all kind; but they saw what none of them would care to see again."

It is impossible to apportion the comparative operation of the scarcity, and of other causes that produced disease and death; but it was confidently believed that in Bengal and Behar fewer persons died of actual starvation, during the continuation of the relief system, than in an ordinary year.*

By July the Tirhoot autumn crops were successfully sown, the winter crop was reported to be well forward, and famine operations were suspended in Bengal, Behar, and other places.

It was a costly triumph to a beneficent administration, "the famine campaign" of Lord Northbrook; but to certain gloomy casuists it suggested grave doubts whether the Supreme Government confers an unmixed benefit on India by counter-acting the checks given them by Nature to an excess of population, by scourges in the shape of famine and even slaughter.

In an empire so great and varied, fresh anxieties for the administration are always coming to the surface, and the famine among the peasantry had barely been grappled with and subdued when symptoms of uneasiness began to be detected

among the most warlike of the Hindoo races; and thoughts were entertained that the Mahratta princes were combining secretly for defence against some danger yet unknown, or the development of some suspicious intrigues.

CHAPTER LXVII.

THE HINDOOS OF BRITISH INDIA.—BRIEF RÉSUMÉ OF THEIR HABITS AND CHARACTER.

Many features that appertain to the manners and customs of the Hindoos and Mohammedans of British India have been already referred to incidentally in preceding parts of this work; hence it is only necessary now to give a few detached particulars concerning them. "Of all ancient nations," says Mountstuart Elphinstone, "the Egyptians are the one whom the Hindoos seem most to have resembled; but our knowledge of that people is too limited to reflect light on any other with which they might be compared. It might be easier to compare the Hindoos with the Greeks, as painted by Homer, who was nearly contemporary with the compilation of the first Hindoo code, and therefore inferior in spirit and energy, as well as in elegance, to that heroic race; yet on contrasting their laws and forms of administration, the state of the arts of life, and the general spirit of order and obedience to the laws, the Eastern nation seems clearly to have been in the more advanced stage of society."

But from whence these remarkable people came, what were their race and lineage, or where their original home, ere they spread themselves over Hindostan and the Deccan, are questions easier asked than answered. The Persians gave to the peninsula the name of Hindostan, from being the land of the Hindoos; but in earlier ages it was called by themselves Bharata; and Sir William Jones traces the foundation of the Indian Empire back to above 3,800 years from the present time.

Many have imagined that the Hindoos, in some unknown age, had wandered from a more western climate, and located themselves first on the banks of the Indus. Others have supposed that the first settlers were a company of priests, from whom are descended the powerful order, or caste, of Brahmans, who established their religion with a form of government, constituting themselves superior in ascendancy over the barbarous natives, by the

influence of superior learning. But this theory will not hold; for if the first settlers were warrior-priests, they must have brought with them people of their own race—the only race over which they established a government.

Be all this as it may, it is in the upper basin of the Ganges that we now find the best physical type of the Hindoo. There he is of good stature, fairly formed, and of a complexion that, though dark, is removed by many degrees from black. There, too, he surpasses in those gifts which are, in a great measure, the result of physical constitution, and is by nature bolder and more manly than his countrymen elsewhere; for there the climate is better adapted to fully develop the human form; and by intimate relations with his conquerors from the West, his martial spirit has been rather stimulated than crushed, even amid the loss of his independence.

But in descending into the lower basin of the Ganges, towards the vast plains of Bengal proper, we find the Bengalee, though undoubtedly belonging to the same race just described, inferior in stature and physique, darker in skin, and more effeminate, more cunning and timid; while the Hindoo of the Deccan varies according to the locality in which he has been born, sometimes approaching the higher order of his singular race, but more frequently exhibiting the inferior type, and without the mental subtlety and activity of the Bengalee.

The principal food in the north is wheaten bread unleavened; in Bengal it is rice or pulse; and in the Deccan, when there is less of the former, pulse and ragée, with other inferior grains. In the north the turban is worn, and the dress is somewhat Mohammedan in fashion, and this "seems to separate the inhabitants from the great body of their Hindoo countrymen, who, leaving the rest of the body uncovered, think it sufficient for comfort and decency to wrap one scarf round the body, and throw another over the shoulders."

The dwellings of all the divisions are arranged upon nearly the same plan. Each, for the most part, contains but one apartment, with the addition of a cooking-shed, and if a shop is required, it is simply another shed open in front for the exhibition of wares to the passer. Generally, the chief aperture for both light and air is the doorway, which is seldom provided with a hinged door, and is generally closed by a species of hurdle. A few mats and hurdles supply the place of beds and bedsteads, while a few indifferent utensils, some of brass—among them the inevitable *lotah*—but most of earthenware, answer every other domestic purpose.

Such is, in general, the abode of the great body of the lower-class Hindoos; but in many parts of the country, when one who is possessed of some means deems it necessary to increase his accommodation, he seldom builds a larger house, but contents himself by adding more cottages, each consisting, as usual, of one apartment, with a separate entrance. Hence, as there is no internal communication between them by doorways, they cannot be reached—though occupied by the same family—without passing into the open air. So apparent are the inconveniences of such a system as this, that in other instances, the Hindoo whose means enable him to aspire to something better than a hut, accomplishes his object as people do in the Western world, by building a larger and more commodious edifice. In the north of India, the walls are formed of clay or unburned bricks, and the sloping roofs are tiled; but in the Deccan, where good stone is abundant, the humblest dwellings are substantially built, though exhibiting but little taste, and having roofs which, being flat, are quite invisible.

In the more southern parts of Hindostan, an aspect of neatness and cleanness is imparted to these dwellings by the practice of painting the walls alternately with broad vertical bands of red and white. The cottages in Bengal are chiefly built with flimsy cane walls and a thatched roof. Hence they are very liable to be destroyed by fire, or swept away by a tempest. Yet they are the most tastefully constructed cottages in India, and they have so far taken the fancy of the European residents, that the name of this kind of dwelling, "*bangala*," said to have been given to it from its being peculiar to Bengal, has by them been corrupted into *bangalow*, and applied indiscriminately to all their buildings in the cottage style."

The Hindoos were, in early ages, a commercial people; and in the first of their sacred law-tracts, which they suppose to have been revealed by

Menou many millions of years ago, there is a curious passage on the legal interest of money, and the limited rate of it in different cases, with an exception in regard to adventures at sea—an exception which the sense of man approves, though it was not before the reign of Charles I. that our jurisprudence admitted it in respect to maritime contracts.*

But the great mass of the Hindoo people have ever been devoted to agriculture, and even when the manufacture of muslins and silks was most flourishing, the weavers divided their time equally between the loom and the plough, and now that the foreign demand for the former productions has somewhat lessened, a greater proportion of the population have become dependent on the produce of the soil; but in Hindostan the eye of the European looks for a farm or homestead in vain, and sees only towns and villages, and these generally surrounded by old walls.

Next to the institution of caste, the most interesting feature of Hindoo government was the establishment of townships, and those village communities exist in the present day and in many parts of India nearly in the same state as they did in very remote times of antiquity. From the nature of the townships, it is supposed that when the people were separated into classes the agriculturists were settled in villages, to each of which land was apportioned, to be cultivated by that community, each family of which had to furnish its quota of labour.

The agriculturists were, for the most part, freemen—not vassals of any master—and paid for their lands a rental amounting to about one-fourth of the produce, collected by the headman, in those primitive times appointed by a superior, but whose office, in course of time, appears to have become hereditary. There would seem at one period to have existed in India a species of feudal system (if it can so be termed), since there were lords of large districts, containing, perhaps, a thousand townships or communities, subordinate to whom were the governors of ten of these; but though the many revolutions and invasions that have rent the country at various times have occasioned great changes in this system, every village has still its headman, and many of them are in the same state of simplicity which distinguished them in former days—even, perhaps, when Mahmoud bore away the holy gates of Somnath.

In the north these villages occupy open ground, and are closely built in compact groups, but in Bengal the houses are apart, and often scattered

* Sir William Jones.

loosely in a grove of palms or bamboo, or other trees, concerning some of which, such as the cocoa-nut, the mango, and the banyan, or Indian fig-trees, they have various superstitions. Legends tell us that, in the first age of the world, the cocoa-nut-tree produced children, till Brahma ordered it to bear nuts only; that in the days of Ram a monkey brought the mango first into India; and the banyan is a sacred tree, and worshipped especially by those who have children.*

In many localities the villages are walled, and provided with more effectual means of defence, such as a small fort or citadel; in others they are open, or merely closed by a cattle-fence; but all are provided with a general bazaar, where the ordinary articles of consumption are sold; and most of them have one or more temples, together with a *choultry*, or shed, with a broad verandah, for the reception of travellers. This edifice serves also as a sort of town-hall, though business transactions generally take place in the open air, under a pleasant and shady tree. "Each village possesses many of the powers of self-government, and has a regular gradation of officers for the superintendence of its affairs. First in order is the headman, designated in the Deccan, and in the west and centre of Hindostan, by the name of *patel*, and in Bengal by that of *mandal*. Though regarded as an officer of Government, and usually appointed by it, the selection is made from some family which claims it as a hereditary right. Sometimes the villages are permitted to select the particular individual of the family—a privilege the more readily conceded to them because a headman not enjoying their confidence would be incapable of performing the duties of his office. These are numerous, and include all parts of municipal authority. He settles with the Government the whole amount of revenue for the whole land belonging to the village, apportions among its inhabitants according to the extent and value of the lands occupied by them, regulates the supplies of water for irrigation, settles disputes, and apprehends offenders."

Holding his simple court under a tree, this father of the village administers justice like the ancient patriarchs, and for the settlement of private disputes avails himself of the assistance of a *punchayet*—a species of jury, composed of men who act as his assessors when chosen by himself, and as arbitrators if they have been selected among the parties by mutual agreement.

Though this onerous office requires several special qualifications, it is, singular to say, saleable; and in addition to the local importance conferred

by it, the temptations as regard emolument are not small.

These consist of a pension from the Exchequer, a considerable amount yearly, exigible from the villagers in regular and casual fees, with an addition to the land which he may hold by hereditary right. Subordinate to him are, the accountant, who keeps the village accounts and the register in which lands, and the rights thereto, with the burdens thereon, are duly entered, and who acts as a notary in the execution of all legal documents and deeds, and in all matters in which the use of the pen is required; the watchman, who has charge of the walls, fences, or boundaries, and is required alike to capture a thief or dacoit within his limits, or to trace him beyond them; the priest, who acts as a teacher in those village schools to which we have already referred under Lord Mayo's administration; the astrologer, who casts horoscopes, and determines those days which are lucky or otherwise; the money-changer, who acts also as assayer and silversmith; the minstrel, who, like the Celtic bard of old, composes verses and traces pedigrees; the barber, carpenter, and all other tradesmen, in their caste and degree.

A common fund is levied for religious and charitable purposes, and for the relief of wandering fakirs, or the celebration of public festivities; and thus, through a long succession of ages, the Hindoo village has preserved to our own time, within itself, the features of a miniature republic.

From this enumeration it may be seen that the aristocracy of the village are the headman and his assistant officials; but there are others to whom, as in the Western world, the possession of wealth gives distinction; though, with all their apparent advantages, the condition of the villagers generally is not a prosperous one. In some quarters wealth will be indicated by a dwelling two storeys in height, surrounded by a courtyard, or compound, thus aspiring above the surrounding huts; but as these edifices too often belong to the village money-lenders, to the prosperity of the latter much of the poverty of the former may be owing; for there, as elsewhere, the money-lenders acquire enormous profits by taking advantage of the necessities of those around them.

Frequently the tenants are unable to pay their rent and also to procure the necessary means of subsistence without borrowing, and giving their growing crop as security. Thus they become hopelessly involved in debt, and have either to endure cruel extortion, or, by seeking to resist it, become involved in those litigations which are sure to end in ruin. Many writhe in life-long bondage;

* The "Indo-Chinese Gleaner."

while the few who may free themselves are seldom able to profit long by the bitter experience won, as they are not able to avoid a similar recurrence of their monetary difficulties. By nature improvident, the event is committed to fate, and the passing day only is attended to; yet it is among these villages that we find the most pleasing samples of rural life in India.

"The husbandman rises with the earliest dawn," says Mountstuart Elphinstone, "washes, and says a prayer, then sets out, with his cattle, to his distant field. After an hour or two, he eats some remnant of his yesterday's fare for breakfast, and goes on with his labour till noon, when his wife

The towns of the Hindoos differ but little from those of other Oriental countries. The mansions are of stone or brick, and possess little architectural merit. The windows are few, and, like those of the Moors, placed high in the walls. The streets are often long, but narrow, ill-paved with uneven stones, or not paved at all; and where the population is great, and the thoroughfare crowded, the passenger has no small difficulty in making his way among the carriages drawn by oxen, palanquins with their bearers, armed horsemen, running footmen, and perhaps a howdah-crowned elephant, with all the *sawarri* of a native prince around it.

The shops, which are always in the lower part of



HINDOO JEWELLER

brings out his hot dinner; he eats by a brook, or under a tree, and sleeps till two o'clock, while his cattle also feed and repose. From two till sunset he labours again, then drives his cattle home, feeds them, bathes, eats some supper, smokes, and spends the rest of the evening with his wife and children, or neighbours."*

The domestic arts of the Hindoos are numerous and varied, for there is scarcely any trade that is not practised by them, even to the manufacture of leather, and almost every great city is noted for some particular branch of labour. Thus, Calcutta and Moorshedabad are famous for elegant and curious toys; Delhi surpasses all other cities for its jewellery and other goldsmith's work; Benares for its rich brocades; Monghyr for its steel and iron goods; Patna is the great emporium of opium, and is celebrated for its table-linen and wax candles.

* "History of India."

the house, or formed by a verandah before it, are left open for the display of goods, but make little show, as articles of great value are not exposed, and silks, cashmere shawls, and all costly stuffs are kept in bales. Each town has around it a district of which it is the capital, and is under a district officer or other Government official, whose jurisdiction extends to all matters of police and revenue. For these purposes he has the aid of native assistants, who, as usual with all manner of work in India, are more numerous than the duty requires, and are naturally so corrupt, that, instead of administering justice, they sell themselves for secret bribes to the perversion of it.

Among the inhabitants the lead is usually taken by bankers and merchants, who often act in both capacities, and in the former make loans on the security or assignment of revenue, and in transactions with private individuals stipulate for enormous



VIEW OF THE MOSQUE OF ABKUNGZEE AND MAHURAI GHAT ('QUAY') BENARES.

percentage, though, instead of fully obtaining it, and often being obliged to accept a compromise, so cunning is the Hindoo nature, that enough will still remain to enable them, through usury, to acquire immense riches. Meanwhile, their lives will be simple and frugal, nor will any extra outlay be indulged in, save on the occasion of a death or a marriage.

The lower-class Hindoos in towns seldom lead lives so simple and blameless as the villagers we have described. Around them are many temptations, which they have not been taught to resist, and amid which they give freedom to their passions, without restraint; and though drunkenness is nearly unknown to them, they use other stimulants, such as *blang*, which may be quite as maddening as alcohol. Betel-leaf, with the areca-nut and chunam, forms the universal and respectable stimulant in India. It cheers the soul of the rajah on his throne, and the heart of the poor woman who carries a heavy burden on her head all day for a few annas. At the entertainments of the great it is handed round on a silver salver among the guests; and Hindoos converted to the Gospel do not lay aside this, "the eighth sensual delight," with the worship of their false gods, and abstinence from it is regarded by them as a fast, on occasions of great mourning.

Elphinstone tells us that among the Hindoos there is no set of people "so depraved as the dregs of our great towns;" but he did not write in the days of the great Mutiny. To those who have any interest in imposing upon them, the greatest facilities are given by their credulity and gross ignorance; and though alleged to be naturally submissive to authority, history has shown us, again and again, that beneath the fawning manner and exterior mildness of the Hindoo there lurk a savage temper and vindictive spirit, which will lead him to make the warmest protestations of faith and attachment at the very moment when he is planning such abominable crimes as those which were perpetrated at Delhi and Cawnpore.

In their domestic arrangements the Hindoos present peculiarities that are remarkable. Among these is the right and meaning of *adoption*, which has caused so many court intrigues, assassinations, and crimes, and an alleged interference with which brought upon us the wrath and hate of Nana Sahib of Bithoor. What chiefly adds to its importance is, that it is not a mere civil obligation, but a religious rite of the first order. A man may thus pass over the heirs of his own body and select the god is *son* of an alien race to bear his name, to inherit property, and, finally, to close his eyes in death.

The last necessity is the chief consideration of all. It is the duty of every man to have at least one son, according to the great religion of the East. "We know a case of a comparatively poor man," says the late editor of the *Friend of India*, "who, having lost his only son (he had daughters, but daughters do not count in this matter), took his wife to Gya, a sacred city of Behar, and went himself to Benares to pray, and induce the Brahmins to pray, that he might have a son. He could not work, he said, had no enjoyment in life, could not keep his books (he was a clerk), nor think of any but the one thing—that *he had no son* to close his eyes at last, and, by taking his place in this world, secure him a fair chance of a home in the next. Of course, it is easy to laugh at all this; but let us remember that India thinks it has grounds upon which it can laugh at us."

Another domestic peculiarity is the early age at which matrimonial relations are effected. A mere boy and girl, who perhaps had never met before, are brought together as man and wife, without their own consent being asked or given, and by the arbitrary injunctions of their parents. Any previous attachment is impossible among the Hindoos; yet *Lacshmi* is the goddess of beauty and love, who, like the Greek *Aphrodite*, sprang from the white froth of the ocean. Influenced by selfish motives or by family pride, the loveless wedding will be celebrated with a pomp and splendour which tax the family exchequer to the utmost, and perhaps leaves them all drowned in debt. The extreme youth in which the contracting parties are mated, together with local customs, renders it almost impossible that the affections of either can be otherwise engaged; hence there is no room for the discord occasioned by ill-assorted marriages in Europe. In accepting her husband for better or worse, without being consulted in the matter, the little Hindoo bride only follows the immemorial custom of her country, all unconscious that the least injustice is done her, and, if kindly treated by her husband, becomes reconciled to the routine of life, and will repay his kindness with a love that errs only in its excess.

Yet she is the slave, rather than the helpmate, of her husband: she dare not share his meals, but must stand in attendance on him when he eats, and, however harsh his usage, must endure it with patience and silent resignation, for "the law, so far from affording any legal relief, expressly declares that no degree of worthlessness on his part can either dissolve the marriage or justify her in refusing to yield him the utmost deference as her lord and master." Yet the marriage is not indis-

soluble, for, if the husband wishes for freedom, the most frivolous pretext may be seized for degrading, supplanting, and turning the luckless wife adrift; and polygamy being legal, the husband may select wife after wife so long as he pleases. Under such a system, virtue can neither flourish nor domestic happiness be understood, as the peace and purity of the Hindoo home are often destroyed by the natural jealousy of rival spouses, and the conflicting interests of their rival offspring. However, as we have elsewhere related, the suttee is abolished, female infanticide suppressed, and the free right to re-marry, instead of immolating herself on a funeral pile, has been granted to the Hindoo widow.

Yet, as elsewhere out of Christendom, women in India are regarded as an inferior part of the creation. The birth of a son is hailed with joy, but that of a daughter too often with undisguised disappointment. When the proper age is arrived at, the Hindoo parents seek to give their sons some kind of instruction—generally reading, writing, and arithmetic; but from these simple attainments the daughters are excluded, on the barbarous principle that the less a woman knows the better, as knowledge would only give her the means of doing mischief.

"Under this idea," says a writer, "it has even grown into a maxim that an educated wife is unlucky. The consequence is that even women who have received education are shy of owning it, and deem it necessary to protect their reputation by feigning ignorance. The degradation thus inflicted on the female sex carries its own punishment along with it, and all the more important domestic duties are often imperfectly performed. Mothers confined almost entirely to drudgery are unable to take an efficient part in the training of their offspring. The studied ignorance in which they have been brought up leaves them destitute of all the necessary qualifications; while the contemptuous treatment which they too often receive from the head of the family weakens the authority which they ought to possess over its younger members. For a time, Nature may assert her rights and give the mother the largest share in her children's affections; but the bad example set them will, sooner or later, be imitated, and they will cease to obey her commands on perceiving that she has no power to enforce them. A tyrannical father, a degraded mother, and ill-trained children, are thus the natural result and just punishment of the barbarism which Hindoos display in depriving woman of her proper place in the family."*

* Beveridge.

Yet, withal, the history of India affords us many examples of Hindoo women, who, by mental ascendancy won over both husbands and sons, have ruled great and populous kingdoms, though, by the laws, traditions, and customs of the Hindoo race, woman is in every way defrauded of her proper rights and true position.

Elphinstone, who knew India well, gives occasionally a brighter view of the Hindoo character, and tells us that all persons who have returned from Hindostan think better of the people they have left, after comparing them with others even of the justly esteemed nations; and that with the Hindoo women, "in spite of the low place assigned to them, natural affection and reason restore them to their rights; their husbands confide in them, and consult with them in their affairs, and are as often subject to their ascendancy as in any other country."

Elsewhere he tells us that, "though their character is altered since their mixture with foreigners, the Hindoos are still a mild and gentle people. . . . Their women have a large share of beauty and grace, set off by feminine reserve and simplicity."

Among the Nairs, on the coast of Malabar, a custom more degrading than polygamy is still to be found in its fullest extent; for marriage cannot be said to exist, even in name. Hence, when Tippoo Sahib was among them, he said, in a proclamation, "It is the practice with you for one woman to associate with ten men, and you leave your mothers and sisters so unconstrained that all are born in adultery," and Colonel Wilks asserts that it is no uncommon thing for a woman, by a semblance of a marriage form, to become the wife of a whole family of brothers, one or all of whom she may displease, more especially in Southern Malabar; and yet, adds the colonel, "the Nairs, or military class, are, perhaps, not exceeded by any nation on earth in a high spirit of independence and military honour."*

Among the Hindoos, prior to the establishment of European courts of law, there were modes of trying offenders by an appeal to the Deity; and of these an account was drawn up by Ali Ibrahim Khan, chief magistrate of Benares, and translated by Warren Hastings.†

These modes are described at length in the "Mitacthera: or, Comment on the Dherma Shashtra in the Chapter of Oaths," and other ancient books of Hindoo law. These ordeals were nine in number: by the balance, fire, water, poison, *cosha*,

* "Historical Account of India."

† "Asiatic Researches," vol. i.

or water in which an idol had been dipped, rice, boiling oil, red-hot iron, and, lastly, by images.

In the ordeal by balance, the scales were adjusted and set perfectly even. The accused and a Pundit, after fasting a whole day, and the former bathing in sacred water and presenting an oblation of Fire, is carefully weighed, and when he is taken out of the scale, the accusation, written upon paper, is bound to his head. If he then weighs more than before, he is held guilty; if less, innocent; if exactly the same, he must be weighed a third time, when, as it is written, there must be a difference in his weight. Should the balance break down, it would be undoubted proof of guilt.

The fire ordeal was a small excavation in the ground, filled with flaming peepul-wood, through which if the accused walked unhurt with feet bare he was held guiltless.

The water ordeal was performed by placing the accused nearly to the hip in water, with a brahmin by his side holding a staff in his hand. Three arrows were then shot from a bow. Each of these were brought back by a man in succession, while the accused, during the time stooped with his head under water; "for if he raise his head or body above the surface before the arrows be brought back his guilt is considered as fully proved."

There were two ordeals by poison. one consisted in taking, without injury, seven barleycorns, poisoned with visha-naga, a dangerous root; the other of drawing, without being bitten, a hooded cobra, or *naga*, from a deep earthen pot.

The trial by *cosha* compelled the accused to drink three of the waters in which the image of Deva and other deities had been solemnly dipped, and if he had any illness within fourteen days thereafter, his guilt was proved.

A suspected thief was compelled to chew some rice, weighed with a sacred stone called Salgram, and if it came from his mouth dry, and unstained with blood, he was acquitted.

The ordeal by hot oil compelled him to dip his hand into it uninjured; and that by hot iron was to grasp the head of a lance, or an iron ball, when in a white heat.

In the ninth ordeal, either an image, named Dharma, or the Genius of Justice, which is made of silver, and another of clay or iron, called Adharma, are put into a large earthen jar, "and the accused having thrust his hand into it, is acquitted if he bring out the silver image, but condemned if he draw forth the iron."

In the year 1783 the ordeal by the red-hot ball was tried at Benares, according to the authority noted, and preparations were made by the officers

of Ibrahim Khan's court, in presence of Captain Hogan's battalion of Native Infantry and the chief inhabitants of the city. After prayers, "they made the iron ball red-hot, and taking it up with tongs, placed it in the hands of the accused: he walked with it, step by step, the space of three *gaz* and a half, through each of the seven intermediate rings, and threw the ball into the ninth, when it burned the grass that had been left in it. He next, to prove his veracity, rubbed some rice in the husk between his hands, which were afterwards examined, and were so far from being burned that not even a blister was raised on either of them."*

The Hindoos of British India, partly from the enervating influence of the climate and the peculiarity of their physical temperament, are generally indolent and listless. They are most unwilling to labour; and thus every species of it is portioned out, as if for the express purpose of employing the greatest number of hands possible, leaving very little for each to do. Hence the vast hordes of camp-followers attendant upon our troops, whether in the field or cantonments, and the vast number of servants maintained by European residents for household duties; the absurd, yet immovable, distinctions of caste prohibiting one individual from taking part in that which is regarded as the hereditary occupation of another caste, from the days perhaps of Menou the Lawgiver.

It is told, however, of Lord Dalhousie that, having requested a servant to pour some water from a basin, he declined, on the plea that it was contrary to his caste. The marquis sternly drew out his watch and said, "It is now so-and-so o'clock; if before so-and-so I am not obeyed, I shall discharge not only you, but every man of your caste in Government House!" And this threat is said to have proved effectual; for in many cases the distinctions of caste among servants are carefully maintained because they favour avarice and sloth, or encourage in every way the disinclination to undergo fatigue. Thus wages are low, and it is only by the exercise of the most rigid care and frugality that the Hindoo workman or labourer and his family can live; and they certainly limit their wants to suit their means: and so, instead of seeking by harder work to better their circumstances, they are content to dwell in such huts as we have described in this chapter, to feed on pulse and chupaties, vegetables and ghee or oil, tobacco and betel-leaf being their only luxuries.

The food of the wealthier or upper classes, who also practise great frugality, differs but little from that of the lower, save that they have a greater

* "Asiatic Researches."

number of vegetables, fruits, sweetmeats, and spices—among which *assafœtida* is deemed one; but when high entertainments are given, all frugality and economy are forgotten. The apartments are then gaily ornamented, and the floor—which, from the way the guests sit, cross-legged on carpets or low divans, is the table—is decorated with flower-patterns, formed of brilliantly-coloured sand; and when, after sunset, light becomes necessary, it is supplied in many instances by servants holding flaming links, on which, from time to time, they pour oil from bottles, with which they are provided for the purpose.

Without the introduction of the *nautch* dancing and singing girls (already described) these entertainments would be incomplete; and monotonous and insipid though such performances prove to the eye and ear of the European, they are, to the Hindoos, the most popular and attractive of all entertainments. The people are very punctilious; and at such social gatherings it is very difficult for the host to assign, without giving offence to some one, his place to each guest; and even when that is done, the intolerable nuisance of caste often intervenes to restrain friendly intercourse and merriment; and one of the heaviest items in the expense of such meetings is the number of jewels, or other valuable presents, to be bestowed upon the guests.

With regard to Hindoo festivals, Mountstuart Elphinstone says: "No concourse in England can give a notion of the lively effect produced by the prodigious concourse of people in white dresses and bright-coloured scarfs and turbans, so unlike the black head-dresses and dusky habits of the North."*

Among the festivals in which they delight most is one named the Holi, which we shall describe in Elphinstone's words. He tells us that it is "a festival in honour of the spring, at which the common people, especially the boys, dance round fires, sing licentious and satirical songs, and give vent to all sorts of ribaldry against their superiors, by whom it is always taken in good part. The great sport of the occasion, however, consists in sprinkling each other with a yellow liquid, and throwing crimson powder over each other's person. The liquid is also squirted through syringes, and the powder is sometimes made up in large balls covered with isinglass, which break as soon as they come in contact with the body. All ranks engage in this sport with enthusiasm, and get more and more into the spirit of the contest, till all parties are completely drenched with liquid, and so covered

with the red powder that they can scarcely be recognised. A grave prime minister will invite a foreign ambassador to play the Holi at his house, and will take his share in the most riotous parts of it with the ardour of a school-boy."

It is on the occasion of the Holi, or Hoolee, that drunkenness—that most rare vice among Hindoos—begins to show itself for a few days before the feast begins, and it often ends in wild orgies and riot. They take great delight in all manner of shows and merry-makings, especially in fairs, which are generally held once a year in most of the cities and villages. Of these, the most remarkable is the great fair at Hurdwar (*i.e.*, the Gate of Hurri, or Vishnu), a small and scattered town on the Ganges. There a handsome range of buildings backs an esplanade which runs along the western bank of the holy river, and deep dense woods extend to the vast forests far behind. Many of the temples are beautiful, and present choice examples of ancient Hindoo sculpture. Hurdwar is one of the most famous places for Hindoo purification; and in April the pilgrims flock thither from every part of India, from China, Tartary, Persia, and Bokhara; and every sixth and twelfth year the concourse is so vast that at one festival there were more than 2,000,000 present. The country around presented the appearance of one great camp, swarming with Arabs, Cingalese, Tartars, Persians, Sikhs, Chinese, and Europeans.

The sum accumulated by the brahmins at the fair of 1814 exceeded two lacs of rupees, as fees for bathing; and on that occasion, Mr. Chamberlain, an Anabaptist clergyman in the service of the Begum Sumroo, had the courage to preach the Christian doctrine boldly, and, singular to say, met with applause and cries of "May the Padre live for ever!"*

Endless and countless as are the religious superstitions of the Hindoo, perhaps the most singular sample was that presented to the Indian public in 1868, when a girl was publicly married to an idol. In that year, an old brahmin of the Deccan arrived with his family in the town of Muttra, where he was greatly patronised by Rungacharee, the high priest of the Ramanoojee sect. The brahmin had two daughters—one a grown-up girl, the other in her ninth year. While residing at Muttra, the latter announced that Krishnaje (one of the incarnations of Vishnu) had appeared to her in a dream and proposed marriage. Next day the girl was conveyed, amid much pomp and more mummary, to the temple, and there wedded to the hideous bronze idol. The ignorant people, says

* Elphinstone's "India."

* "Sketches of India," 1811-14: Parbury & Allan.

the Indian journal from which we quote, began to venerate the bride as an inspired being; and adds that both girls have learned by ear 18,000 couplets (*sic*) of the *Bhagwat*—a work in the Sanscrit language. "Both girls consider themselves as dedicated to the services of the god Krishna, and after their daily recitations are concluded, they make no hesitation in accepting such presents of money and sweetmeats as their hearers may choose to give them." *

The Doorga-pooja festival of worship is held about the end of September, and as, during its continuance, there is no work done, the European generally goes away to the hills, if he can, for a fortnight. It is held chiefly

in honour of Kali, the goddess of blood, and in all the temples there are idols of her, gaily adorned with flowers, and her presence is invoked during days of dancing, singing, and prayer.

The car of Juggernaut (*i.e.*, Lord of the World), an immense car or moving tower, preserved in the temple of that name on the coast of Orissa, is yearly dragged from thence by pilgrims to the Gonduh-Nourr, country house of the god Vishnu, and back again to the temple; and it was during this procession that, before British rule came, devotees used to sacrifice life by throwing themselves under its ponderous wheels. A pilgrim tax of three to ten rupees was levied by the British Government till 1840, when it was abolished. The



BUDDHIST FUNERAL URN, FROM THE TOPE OF SANCHI.

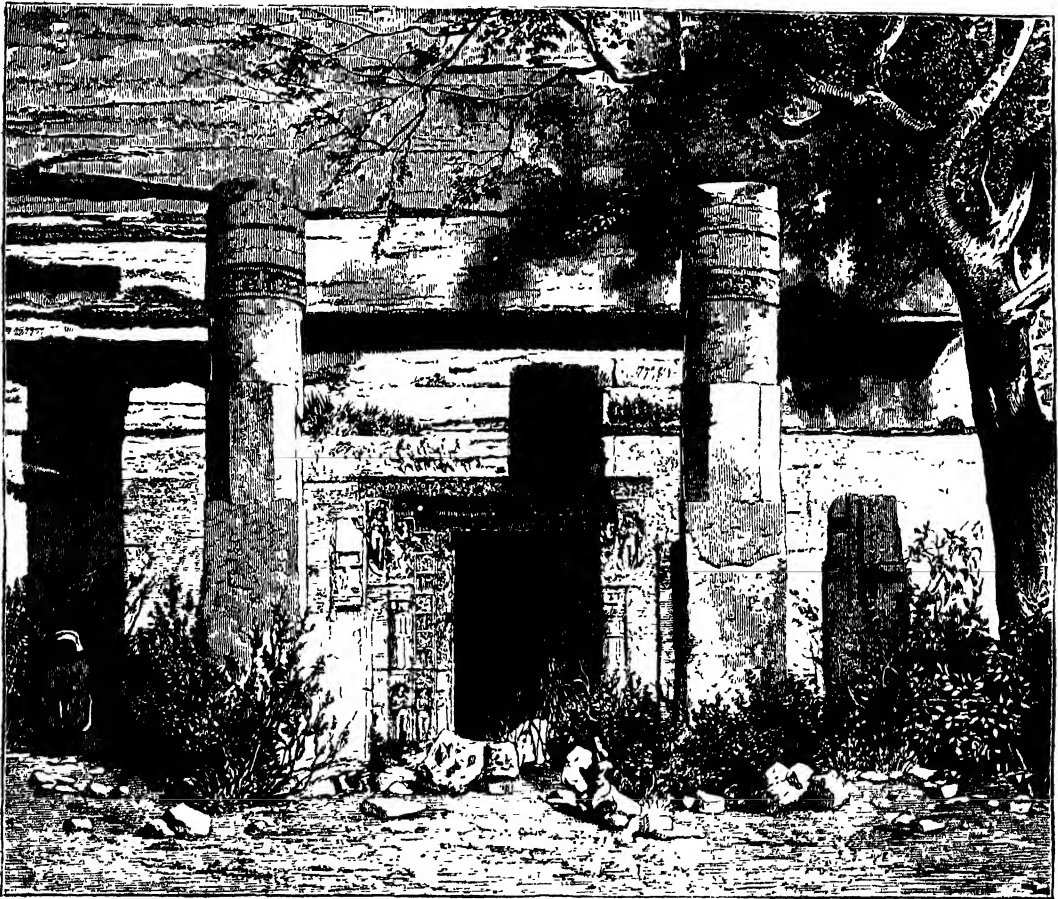
* *Oude Gazette*, 1868.



IDOL OF MANDAR, NEAR BHAGULPORE.

situate they visit at Juggernaut, the Hindoos deem the most sacred spot in the world. The temple of the idol stands in the centre of the town, within an enclosure, 620 feet by 600 feet, surrounded by a wall twenty feet high. On each side of the enclosure is an entrance, the most celebrated of which is the eastern portal, flanked by colossal figures of lions, and thence called the *Singh Dwar*, or "Lion's Gate." Within the sacred

excitement intense; while the danger is not small, for when once the monstrous machine is in motion, it can only be stopped with difficulty. The festival is a fair, with merry-go-rounds and all the features one usually finds at a fair anywhere. The vast tides of men and women from all parts—the latter bearing flowers to strew the way—show the intensity of the popular feeling, though, unless by accident, none perish under the wheels of the mighty car now.



VIEW OF THE SUBTERRANEAN TEMPLE OF MAHADEVA, OUDGHIRY.

area are fifty great temples, dedicated to the principal deities of the Hindoo Pantheon, but the most conspicuous building is a lofty stone tower, 200 feet high and forty-two feet square, called the Chief Temple. The idol is of wood, with a black and frightful visage, and a distended mouth smeared with blood. The deity is supposed to be enclosed in some substance deposited within the cavity of the idol's heart. When placed in the car, and the latter is started by hundreds of people bearing on the drag-ropes, the shouting of the multitude is astounding and the

With regard to the domestic arrangements of the Hindoos: though polygamy is permitted, as we have said, it is too expensive a system, perhaps found too hazardous, moreover, to be a common practice. Hence, in a well-regulated and religious Hindoo family, marriage is just what it is among the Europeans—the union of a single pair. A good Hindoo husband will treat his wife with kindness and delicacy, even at times admit an equality, and often carries the love of his children beyond all bounds. Frequently, when the business of the day is done, he may, if he has the skill, become their

teacher, to save the small fees paid, in either money, grain, or uncooked vegetables, to the village school-master. In such a Hindoo household domestic peace and happiness might exist without much alloy; but sooner or later, says a writer who has studied the subject well, something for the worse is sure to supervene.

"In respect both of mental and physical qualities, the Hindoo appears to most advantage in the first stage of his life. As a child or boy he is often remarkably handsome, and in quickness of intellect is usually superior to Europeans of his own age. Unfortunately, his passions are also more precocious, and are fostered by native customs, which force on him a premature manhood. He is married when a mere boy, and, becoming his own master before he can have learned the art of self-restraint, too often gives way to vicious indulgence. The promise of his boyhood is thus belied. The enervating influence to which he is thus subjected suddenly arrests all further progress, and he settles down to take part in the ordinary duties of life while destitute of the qualifications necessary to perform them aright. It is probable that for a time at least, even after he has become the head of a family, he may continue to reside under the paternal roof; but his position is entirely changed, and new interests arise by which the former peace of the family is broken up. He was previously treated as a child, and could repay all his father's fondness; whereas he is now a man, possessed of rights which he is desirous to maintain, or, it may be, to overstretch. The father sees a rival in his son—the mother in her daughter-in-law; and what was formerly a peaceful home becomes a scene of brawling and intrigue; while the grown-up son insists on his legal right of control over the family property, and the father resents an interference which, if legal, does not seem the less harsh and ungrateful, it is well if the alienation is not carried so far as to hurry one or other of them into crime."

And, doubtless, it was this state of things in royal households that caused so many of the deep intrigues, dissensions, assassinations, and civil wars, to which we have had occasion to refer in this work.

In the early period of Hindoo history, the intermixture of the invading Mohammedans produced some changes in the manners of the former in those provinces which were overrun. Many natives were converted to the faith of their new rulers; mixed marriages created ties and the adoption of new customs, especially with regard to women, who in more remote times enjoyed

more freedom and greater privileges. The introduction in so many places of a species of Turkish costume was one of the changes effected by Mohammedan conquest. It became very general in the neighbourhood of Delhi, and was adopted in most parts of Hindostan by the upper classes; but the brahmins, however, stoutly refused to accept the new style of dress, and even unto this day all strict members of their caste clothe themselves in the ancient Hindoo fashion.

The Hindoos were at all times liable to be roughly treated by their conquerors; and Aurungzebe, in particular, adopted a very harsh line of conduct with regard to them. They were prohibited from worshipping their idols with fairs and festivals, according to immemorial custom; they were excluded from all public offices; and edicts were issued against all their dancing and singing girls, who were attached to the temples. Astrologers, and even poets, were forbidden to exercise their vocations; and though these orders were but little attended to, they revived keenly the half-forgotten hatred of the Hindoos to their conquerors, with whom they never acted cordially till the epoch of the great Mutiny; but as most of Aurungzebe's rules could be evaded, none of them caused such universal discontent as the revival of the capitation tax, which was the more obnoxious as it made an invidious distinction between the Mohammedans and Hindoos, thus marking the latter as a conquered people: and at this hour, when we have conquered both, there is, perhaps, in secret not much cordiality at heart between them.

The Hindoo subject of Queen Victoria does not vary much from persons of his class in other lands in his general mode of conducting business, and in the ordinary intercourse of life with his fellow-men; though the natural timidity of his nature, combined with much of native and inborn subtlety, while disposing him to gain his ends peacefully, also leads him to do so by secret, strange, and tortuous means: and one of these is known as the *dharma*.

The Hindoo prefers persuasion to force if he has an object to effect, but if the former mode proves unavailing, he will resort unscrupulously to any sly or treacherous mode which may prove effectual; and the chief of these is the *dharma*, a superstition founded upon the sacredness supposed to be attached to the person of a brahmin, and the consequent guilt, shame, and future punishment to being accessory in any way to the death of one: for, when born over again, the slayer or insulter bears in his second life some mark or ailment, which can be discerned by a pretended science called *kurrembeypak*; for it is supposed that men,

"for sins committed in this life, and for bad actions in a *preceding* state, suffer a morbid change in their bodies."

When the Hindoo finds that his demand for money, or anything else, is not complied with within a given time, he hires a brahmin—either because he is a party personally interested in the claim, or because he is paid for the purpose—to seat himself before the door of the person upon whom it is made, justly or otherwise. He has a cup of poison and a poniard in his hand, and thereby intimates his firm resolution to put himself to death if the offending party tastes a single morsel of food before he has settled the claim in question.

The unfortunate debtor has thus no resource left him but either to comply, perhaps with gross extortion, or commence a very unpleasant course of fasting and abstinence. If the brahmin puts his strange threat in execution—and, from the character of these people, and the little value they set on life, there is every probability to think he might do so—he would be honoured and revered as a martyr, while the debtor would be covered with obloquy as his murderer. Hence, as the double risks, present and *future*, are too great to run, the brahmin and his employer invariably gain their purpose in the end.

Another mode of enforcing payment of some simple debt is for the creditor to plant himself before the door of the debtor, and vow that he means to remain there, without food, until his money is paid. "As a point of honour, which it is deemed impossible to violate, the debtor must, in like manner, remain without food; and if payment is not made, the parties immediately begin to put their mutual power of enduring hunger to the test. This trial might sometimes prove illusory, and, therefore, the creditor usually makes sure that the fasting of the debtor is real by cutting off his supplies. This kind of *dherma*, employed by troops against their paymaster, or the prime minister, or the sovereign himself, has often been effectual in obtaining their arrears of pay."

In the spirit of litigation the Hindoo is, perhaps, second to none; and from the manner in which he carries on an action at law, a legal writer has declared it to be "little better than a public nuisance." The whole process becomes a web of the merest rascality, as witnesses are readily found who, for the most pitiful bribes, will swear by their salt, by the Ganges' water, or anything else, with the most daring effrontery and cool plausibility, in favour of whoever pays them best; and even when evidence is not corrupt, it is so crooked and per-

plexed that the European can place no dependence upon it.

Though falsehood and perjury are borne often in the face of all that is adduced, the opposing parties are prepared with details the most ample and circumstantial, all showing that the element of truth is but little known to the Hindoo, as any temptation, however small, will lead him readily to trample it under foot. This great tendency to lying is scarcely deemed a reproach among them; but the utterer of the greatest falsehood will, at the same moment, perhaps, ask, with assumed dignity, "Why he should tell a lie, who would shed blood for what he regarded as the slightest infringement of his honour?"*

The falsehood of the Hindoo is engendered by his timidity and cunning, and it is the most glaring national defect among them. According to the Institutes of Menou—which, next to the Vedas, form the great source of Hindoo religious information, and are alleged to have been compiled 1,280 years before the birth of our Saviour—a moderate amount of lying is permitted, and even false evidence, too, if the giver does so "from a pious motive, even though he know the truth, he shall not lose a place in heaven."

This rather loose teaching, together with the duplicity forming the plot of the adventures of many a popular god and goddess (like the immorality of those of the Greeks), have not failed to instil a great amount of cunning and propensity to double-dealing in the Hindoo character. Add to this the many changes of rulers he has had—every form of government in succession being despotic, save our own—the rapacity of talookdars, rajahs, and emperors, the savage revolutions, and the venality of native judges generally, with the general insecurity of all property in the past time, and it is not difficult to find a cause for the dissimulation, perfidy, and slavish vices so often exhibited by the Hindoo.

Naturally, he is neither boisterous nor captious, neither is he prone to engage in quarrels; but he is acutely alive to all his own interests, and, when once roused to the suspicion that they are in danger, he is slow neither in speaking nor in acting. Cunning and prudence will lead to a concealment of his ire, if the encroacher on his rights is of a rank superior to his own, and also to his seeking redress by a fawning appeal to pity and to justice. But with an equal, still more with an inferior, if he deems himself wronged or insulted, vituperation and invective are his favourite resorts, and in these, together with violent gesticulation, he will

* Mountstuart Elphinstone.

indulge without limit, and in the fierce war of words generally finds his enemy his equal. "A spectator, unacquainted with native habits, would expect it to terminate in blows; but this is a mode of settlement not suited to the taste of the combatants, and they separate, each probably satisfied that his volubility has given him the victory. If the ground of quarrel involves some interest of which the law takes cognisance, vituperation is only a preliminary to a more serious contest, and a course of obstinate litigation ensues. In the mode of conducting it, all the worst passions are brought into play, and too often everything like honour and honesty is thrown aside. The spirit of litigiousness, once evoked, gathers strength by continuance; and when, at last, the paltry question at issue has been decided, one or, probably, both parties find that, partly by the expense incurred, and partly by the neglect of their proper business, they are hopelessly involved in debt."

The Hindoo, says another writer, while destitute of that grand and pure patriotism which makes men love their native land, irrespective of all its merits or demerits, just because it is their native land, has an intense admiration of India, as the most beautiful and delicious of all lands; while all its charms—its mighty rivers, and the luxuriance of its forests, fruits, and flowers—are associated with its mythology, and are deemed the direct gifts of its millions of gods.*

The loose morals of the Hindoo gods and goddesses are as familiar to their worshippers as were those of old on Olympus to the Greeks; and their literature has its Lucian in an ancient Tamil poet, whose pen was severe upon their frailties, which he made the subject of much satirical writing: for, like the Greeks of old, they believe that their gods scolded, hated, junketed, and cheated each other as mortals do on earth.

One of the great peculiarities of the Hindoo creed, in regard to a future state, is its belief in the doctrine of metempsychosis, or the doctrine of the transmigration of the soul, after death, into the body of some other animal or some other body—even into a vegetable; and that the future state will be happy or miserable according to a man's conduct in his present body. This was borrowed from them by the Greeks, and was the doctrine taught by Pythagoras. According to this idea, the Hindoo believes implicitly that every form of life now existing around him must be animated by a being who, though utterly unconscious of the circumstance, previously animated some other form, and owed its present place in

the scale of existence to the tenor of its conduct in the *past*. The penalty of previous sins and crimes is paid for by degrading or defective forms in this present state; hence poverty, misfortune, and disease are all regarded as divine dispensations from the gods, and designed for the ultimate moral improvement of the sufferer and of those who behold what he endures. The Institutes of Menou established the doctrine of sufferings for sins committed in a former state, and they describe both the personal signs by which those sins may be discovered, and the expiations which must be made for them; "since they who have not expiated their sins will again spring to birth with disgraceful marks."

The Hindoo identifies misfortune with crime—committed in the present life, or in the former by the twice-born man—and declines to relieve it, on the plea that to do so would thwart the designs of the divinity by whom the penalty is inflicted; hence even the most violent death is regarded with comparative apathy, in the belief that it is fully deserved. Thus, mutual sympathy is destroyed by this terrible and absurd creed, which steels the hearts of men against each other's sufferings, and inspires indifference as to fate. Life becomes to the Hindoo but a chapter in general existence—one of a series of metamorphoses, which have been preceded and will be followed by others—affording no incentive to genuine piety or high virtue in the hope of a final and eternal reward. Yet this apparently endless repetition of existence has, even to the Hindoo, some vague limit assigned it, but at a period distant and remote indeed.

"A rational creature," according to the twelfth chapter of the Institutes, "has a reward or a punishment for mental acts of his mind, for verbal acts in his organs of speech, and for corporeal acts in his bodily frame. For sinful acts corporeal, a man shall assume a vegetable or mineral form; for acts verbal, the form of a bird or beast; for acts mental, the lowest of human conditions."

The remote period when, after the lapse of ages upon ages, the course of transmigration is to end, and the purified soul is to enter the Hindoo heaven, gives the hope that is denied to none. Hence the Hindoo deems, says Elphinstone, that "the most wicked man, after being purged of his crimes by repeated transmigrations, may ascend in the scale of being until he may enter into heaven, and even attain the highest reward of all the good, which is incorporation in the essence of God."*

But according to the creed of the luckless Hindoo, even his heaven is a defective one; nor

* "Scenes and Sights in the East."

* "History of India."

is it eternal: for after a period, the length of which is fixed to an hour, a new cycle begins; and the spirits there, even amid their enjoyments, cannot become oblivious of the fact that one day they must quit them to enter on some new state of being, in which it may be their lot to be infinitely miserable and degraded. After a sojourn in their hell—the description of which somewhat resembles that of the Mohammedan faith—a hell of unspeakable tortures for thousands of years will be followed by re-appearance in the world under some very minor form, as one of the lower animals, a stone, or a tree, and this is a doom which the majority of worshippers anticipate; and even that distant doom is not beyond the possibility of a change, in which there may be a hope of something better. “But the truth of the case would be more accurately expressed,” says a writer, “by saying that, to all professing Hindoos, with the exception of a comparatively small number to whom peculiar favour is shown, the natural tendency of their creed is not to cherish hope, but to produce indifference or despair.”

Another writer, who has travelled among them and studied their character, takes a different view. “It is just the reverse of truth,” says Bruce, “that the Hindoo religion is to the millions who believe in it a cheerless faith; and it is the truth that the people of India are a remarkably cheerful, as they are a sweet-tempered, people, and that their religion is to them a perpetual source of pleasure and amusement, as polytheism is in its very nature a gladsome faith.”*

According to the rules of their religion, the Hindoo ought to pray thrice daily—in the morning, at noon, and in the evening—with his face turned towards the East. He should, at the same time, perform his ablutions, and, when he has an opportunity, should prefer a running stream to standing water; and to wash before a meal is indispensable.

At the hours of public worship the Hindoos resort to the temples, and begin by the performance of ablutions at the tank, which is always to be found, either in front of the sacred edifice or in the centre of the first court of the greater temples. After leaving their slippers or sandals by the side of the tank, they are admitted to a vestibule opposite to the building that contains the idols, all of which are monstrous in form and conception, but before which they observe the greatest reverence and devotion, while the brahmins perform the ceremonies of the *pooja*, and the nautch girls dance in the court, singing the praises of the divinity to, the sound of various musical instru-

ments. According to rule, the four angles of a temple ought to face the four cardinal points; and in addition to the tank—which a temple is seldom or never without—there is frequently a white marble fountain, in style not unlike those erected in Spain by the Moors.

The *pooja*, or act of prayer, may be performed before household images at home. Those who assist at it must first wash themselves and also the room destined for the ceremony, for which a new mat or carpet is spread, and used once only for that purpose. On this is placed the throne, generally made of wood carved and gilded, or, it may be, of gold and silver. On it is placed the idol, and on the mat are placed a bell of metal, a conch-shell to blow on, a censer filled with sugar, benzoin, ral, and other articles, which are constantly kept burning. Around are scattered fresh flowers. The idol is bathed and wiped; rice, fruit, and other offerings are laid before it; and certain prayers, or *ashlocks*, in its praise are repeated by the worshippers.

The bell is rung and the shell blown occasionally by the officiating brahmin, who gives the *tiluk*, or mark on the idol's forehead, after dipping his thumb in sandal-wood. He also marks all present in the same manner; but the colour, size, and shape of the *tiluk* depend upon what tribe the worshippers may be of: as some are marked with vermilion, some with turmeric, and others with white chalk. At the end, the idol is carefully wrapped up.

A veneration for the sun, and for fire as one of its essences, has been common to all early nations of the East. Hence, at sunrise daily the Hindoo priests go to some stream or temple-tank and perform the Sandivané, or worship to Brahma the Supreme.

After bathing, they take water in the palm of the right hand, and throw the sparkling drops in the air, before and behind them, invoking the god, and chanting thanksgiving and praise. Water is then thrown towards the sun, as an expression of gratitude for his having appeared again to dispel the darkness of the night. These priests are also enjoined to light up a fire at certain times, the flame to be procured by the friction of two pieces of wood of a particular nature; and with the natural fire thus procured all sacrifices are burned, the nuptial altars and the funeral piles lighted.

The offerings to the altars consist of money, fruits, flowers, spices, made at the temples, and incense. The offering on account of the dead is a cake, called *punda*, offered on the days of the new and full moon. The Hindoos consume the bodies of their dead by fire—all, at least, save those

* “History of India.”

of the religious orders, which are interred in a sitting posture, with their legs crossed in the fashion of the idols. As it is deemed a misfortune to die indoors, when the time of dissolution draws near, the Hindoo is usually borne forth and laid on a bed of grass: if possible, by a stream—the holy Ganges, if within reach, being always preferred.

Immediately after death the funeral rites are

means of the family—though pride, and the necessity in India, as elsewhere, of living for appearances, often lead to an excess of expense on such occasions.

Save for those who are slain in battle and famous, tombs are seldom erected by the Hindoo. In former times they were erected, after a suttee, to the memory of widows who had devoted them-

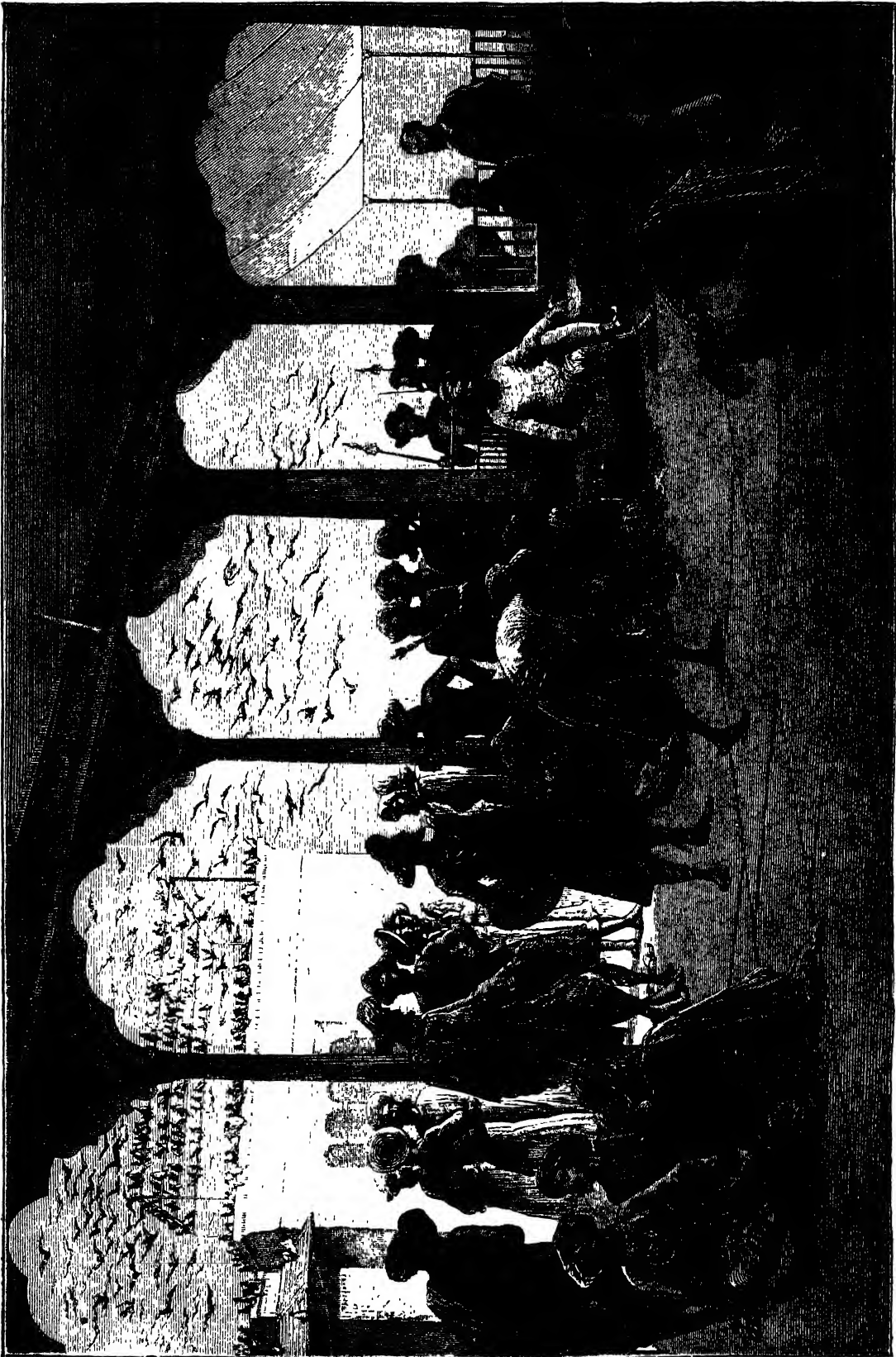


HORSEMEN OF THE GUICOWAR'S BODYGUARD AT BARODA.

performed. A pyre is raised, decorated with flowers, and the deceased, after having been bathed—if possible in Ganges water—perfumed, and adorned with freshly-gathered flowers, is laid upon it with due reverence, after having been borne thither to the sound of music.

The nearest relation then lights the pile, on which scented oils and clarified butter are poured, while the flames ascend, and friends and kinsmen sit around, mourning and watching the burning. On these solemn occasions, as at other religious ceremonies and rites, alms are given to the poor and gifts to the brahmins, in accordance with the

selves to death. But rites for the dead are wont to be performed every month by the bank of any stream, a tributary of the Ganges always being preferred; in any lonely grove; or under the banyan tree—the famous tree which proves the rich adornment of any landscape, and is so great in size, by the multiplicity of its shoots, that it might shelter a whole village: and to these memorial ceremonies the relatives of the departed bring offerings of rich rice cakes, of clarified butter, and beautiful flowers, which they place by the margin of the water, and tenderly invoke the manes of those they loved to come and partake of them.



THE COURT OF THE GUICOWAR OF BARODA.

CHAPTER LXVIII.

OF THE COOLIE SYSTEM.—TRIAL OF THE GUICOWAR OF BARODA.—SUPPOSED CAPTURE OF
NANA SAHIB.

IN the preceding chapter special reference has been made to *caste*, that great barrier to progress in British India, where now the system of coolie emigration is already beginning to effect a social revolution, in a certain degree, by breaking caste down, by enfranchising women, and opening up new fields for the children of the coolie, which is an East-Indian word for a porter or labourer; and this newly-developed trade in emigration forms one of the most remarkable features in the current life of India, extending even to China, where its features and details are less pleasing.

While the men, women, and children are being collected at the Coolie Depôt, Calcutta, by the emigration agents from all parts of India, the scenes around them are all peculiar to the country, and the poor people have not the most vague idea of that to which they are about to depart. On all the operations of the agents the commissioner, or European magistrate of the district, keeps a special eye, and is sure that there shall be no entrapping, intimidation, or improper influence at work: for the poor coolies are, when brought from their native villages, as helpless and bewildered as their children. Accustomed from infancy to the daily routine of labour among the paddy-fields, and so forth, that never took them more than a mile or two from home, each subsisting daily on a little rice or pulse, they regard with dread the shadowy terrors of the *Kala Pawnee*—the great Black Water—they have undertaken to cross in search of fortune, and herd together at the depôts like sheep in a fold; but when once these are reached, the scene changes. "The depôt of Trinidad is under one of the quickest-witted and most intelligent of officers," says a journalist in 1875; "you find there three or more long rows of buildings, shaded with trees, possessing the inevitable large tank for bathing and other purposes; native shops, in which rice is sold (the plan has here been adopted not to serve out food, but to give so much money a day, and enable the emigrant to begin, even before the voyage, on his own account); a medical store; an invalid shed, &c. The new-comers stare when they are first brought into the depôt and confronted with earlier arrivals, and with returned men and women, who have acquired all the dash and experience of travel. Gradually all this becomes less noticeable. The

scared look passes away. The men and women alike find their way into a new being, and the latter often acquire a saucy independent look, which comes from the knowing that their earnings henceforth will be their own—beyond even the reach of the husband, if the woman wishes it. The returned people, who went out poor, are now in many cases wealthy, and are waiting to go up country to see their friends, before, it may be, going back to the colony and immovable property they left there. The women, in all cases, wear costly ornaments—the main pride of a woman in India. The men are no longer to be mistaken for poor people: they have money."

Many of these may be brahmins even of the highest caste, who have utterly lost it by crossing the sea, and defiling themselves by eating of the sacred cow in other lands; and many thus, on leaving India, never more return. From Oude, Allahabad, Benares, Dacca, and elsewhere, they go to the West Indies, to South America, and other lands. "The total earnings of four thousand five hundred odd coolies who returned to India since 1851 in Government bills and cash, in gold and silver—but exclusive of their ornaments, which may be safely taken at a quarter more—was nearly £122,000: a prodigious sum, seeing," says the writer quoted, "that some 1,200 of the number were women and children."

And all these people returned with a new knowledge of other lands, and also with fresh ideas of civilisation, progress, and personal independence. Many who leave India penniless become owners of extensive stores in Trinidad and Jamaica, where the sober, frugal, and patient character of the Hindoo speedily enables him to rise above those among whom his new lot is cast; and those who return are succeeding, by their minor influence, "in breaking into the most conservative of countries as with a magical wand."

Of course, the coolie emigration is not without danger, privation, and even loss of life; but the mode in which it is conducted in India differs very much from the coolie trade in the Indo-China seas. In the former instance the vessels are rigorously examined before the voyage: they are overhauled in a dry dock, the berths must be of a regulation size, the stores good and ample, the ventilation

complete. All this may fail to secure immunity from some deadly disease, after the vessel has had her pleasant run down the Hooghley, between the far extent of flat rice and paddy-fields; but after she rounds the Sand-heads into the stormy Bay of Bengal, then comes a temporary change of life, on which the up-country coolie scarcely reckoned, when the waves of the *Kala Pawnee* are rolling round him.

From China the coolies are, or were until very recently, enticed away in a very different manner. Hulks, says a print of 1867, are hired by contractors for coolies, and anchored in the harbours of China—at Shanghai, Canton, or Foo-chow—in connection with gambling-dens, music, and loose women, through which they are lured on board, and often, for small advances wherewith to gamble, the coolie signs a document that binds him to pitiless slavery for four years or more. Though built in the United States, these coolie-ships carry indifferently the Italian, Peruvian, and Portuguese flags. Crowded on board, often to the number of a thousand, they endure the hardships of slavery. "If a rising is attempted, a few volleys of musketry do the work of quelling 'the mutiny' effectually. The poor creatures are not allowed to come on deck at all in a body, so that the officers and crew have them at their mercy. . . . On landing in Peru, the (Chinese) coolie is sold to a sugar planter, or to the guano contractors, and goes to work like a slave, as he is." * But in British India, as we have said, the agents can use no entrapping, enticing, or kidnapping: for there the coolie is a free man and a free emigrant.

In 1874 there was unveiled at Calcutta, on the parade-ground, and just outside the Chowringee Gate of Fort William, a noble equestrian statue of Sir James Outram, "the Bayard of India." The ceremony took place on the Queen's birthday, the 23rd of May, in presence of the Viceroy, Lord Northbrook, and the whole garrison under Lord Napier of Magdala, the Commander-in-chief. A salute of fifteen guns was fired by the artillery. In the same month died his comrade, one of the most famous of our Indian soldiers, Sir Archdale Wilson, of the Bengal Artillery, who had been created a baronet, with the thanks of both Houses of Parliament, for his services at the memorable siege and capture of Delhi in 1857.

In 1874, the Guicowar of Baroda was informed by the Indian administration that, in consequence of his barbarous cruelties and general misgovernment of his State, that he would be deprived of all authority therein, unless a thorough change took

place. A semi-independent king of the old Mahratta line, he held a city and district in Goojerat, having a population estimated, in 1818, at 100,000; and Sir John Malcolm, who visited it in 1830, reported the capital to be then one of the richest cities of its extent in India. In 1803 and 1806 its bankers advanced £1,500,000 in ready cash for the payment of our troops; yet there were then, and are now, few signs of external wealth about Baroda. The streets are wide but dirty, with high wooden houses roofed by tiles. The Guicowar's palace is a shabby building, yet his income amounted to eighty lacs, or £800,000.

The district is naturally rich and fertile, but much of its surface is wild, jungly, and peopled by the Bheels and coolies. The Guicowar referred to—Mulharao, a cruel and barbarous prince, who at times made sport of seeing his prisoners trampled to death by elephants, subsequent to the date of Lord Northbrook's warning—made an attempt to poison the Resident, Colonel Phayre, through whom the determination of the Viceroy was officially communicated, and for this and other crimes he was put under arrest on the 14th of January, 1875, at a time when it was greatly feared that the people of the Deccan might sympathise with him.

Firm in the consciousness of equity and duty, the Viceroy and his Council might have proceeded to deal summarily, in the old Indo-British fashion, with the offending prince; but certain sentimental counsels were permitted to prevail, and the Guicowar was arraigned before an extraordinary Court of Inquiry, composed of British officials and native magnates, at Baroda, on the 24th of the ensuing February.

Among these were Sir Richard Couch, who, in 1870, had succeeded Sir Barnes Peacock as Chief Justice of the High Court at Calcutta, and who had for many years practised on the Norfolk circuit; the Maharajahs Scindia and Jeypore; General Sir Richard Meade, Sir Dinker Rao, and Mr. Melville. The consequence of this rash innovation was to perplex justice with cumbrous pleadings suited only to English juries, and confer on a debauched tyrant all the temporary advantages of a divided judgment: for the native commissioners were naturally loth, or feared, to condemn a prince of the Mahratta line.

The proceedings were opened by the Clerk of the Commission reading the royal proclamation, which was translated into Mahrathi and Hindoostanee by an interpreter. Mr. A. R. Scoble, the Queen's Advocate, opened the case for the crown, and Serjeant Ballantine, well known as one of the most eminent barristers, was retained for the defence.

* "Chicago Tribune," 1867.

There were four serious charges against Mulharao, Guicowar, but these were eventually reduced to two. The first was that, through his servants, he tampered with those of the Residency; "and secondly, that he directly and by his servants instigated them to commit the serious crime of attempting to poison their master, Colonel Phayre, the British Resident." The ayah of Mrs. Phayre was one of the first persons to whom these insidious communications were made; and after that lady left Baroda, this woman, named Ameena, remained in the service of her daughter, Mrs. Boevey, and, enjoying the perfect confidence of her mistresses, any visits she paid to the palace of the Guicowar were without suspicion.

It was proved that this menial had done so at least three times: first, in November and December, 1873, with Faizoo Ramzan, when she was asked by the Maharajah to use her influence with Mrs. Phayre in his favour, and report all she said; secondly, in June, 1874, with Cureem, a Residency peon, when she informed the prince that Mrs. Phayre had gone to Europe, and was asked to influence Mr. Boevey, the Assistant-Resident, in his favour, and was presented with 100 rupees; thirdly, towards the end of October, 1874 (month of Ramazan—12th October to 10th November), accompanied by a boy named Chotoo, when it was suggested to her whether a *charm* might not be used to soften Colonel Phayre's heart; after which, she found fifty rupees mysteriously laid under her cot next day; and then rumours were heard in the bazaar that Colonel Phayre had been poisoned.

Among the mass of evidence adduced were four letters—two addressed by Ameena to her husband, and two by the latter to her—pointing conclusively to the establishment of a correspondence between the ayah and the Guicowar, by means of a person named Salim.* There were other private servants of the Resident who received presents of money from the prince for the assistance they were expected to give. Another class of evidence brought forward by the prosecution was that, connected with attempts to obtain information of what was going on at the Residency, there was the attempt that was afterwards made to take away Colonel Phayre's life.

The first of these was discovered on the 9th of November, and there were strong suspicions that two similar attempts had been made previously. The agency employed in these attempts was Hower Ramjee, an officer of pions attached to the Residency, with whom communication had been opened so far back as September, 1873. He was taken to

the palace by Salim, and there agreed to execute the wish of the Guicowar. According to his own statements, he paid three visits to the palace during the sitting of the first commission ordered to inquire into the prince's conduct, and on each occasion had a conversation with His Highness, and received large bribes, in common with one Jugga, a punka-wallah, who had excellent opportunities for overhearing and committing to writing all that went on officially at the Residency; and the results of his espionage were produced in court.

Then came the deliberate attempt to poison. "That attempt was discovered by Colonel Phayre on the 9th of November, 1874, although it appears (as stated) that two previous attempts had been made on the 6th and 7th of the same month. The person by whom the poison was to be administered was Ramjee, the havildar, and the method for administering the poison was this: Colonel Phayre was in the habit every morning either of walking or riding directly he rose. On his return he used to proceed to his office, adjoining the main building of the Residency. In this he had dressing accommodation, washstand, dressing-table, &c. It was the duty of Abdullah, one of his servants, to prepare a tumbler of sherbet made from pomegranates.

. . . . He used to place it on a table in an inner room, and leave it there. On the morning in question—the 9th of November—Abdullah prepared this sherbet as usual. Although the havildar had no immediate occupation in the small room, yet he was in the habit of going in to purloin a pen or piece of paper, or to make some minor arrangements. The position which he occupied at the hall of Colonel Phayre was on the verandah, outside the private office, where there was a bench for him, and from which position he could see so much of the inner room as was occupied by the table on which the sherbet was placed. Upon the morning in question, it will appear," continued Mr. Scoble, "from the havildar's own statement, he saw introduced the poison which was so nearly fatal to Colonel Phayre. The method adopted for securing the due administration of the poison was this: The arsenic was mixed with some water, and a solution made, and they were shaken well together, so that the poison would mix. He then poured it from a small bottle into the sherbet. That there was poison in this sherbet there cannot be the slightest doubt. Colonel Phayre came in from his walk, took two or three sips from it, but it seemed strange to him; possibly he thought the sherbet made from bad pomegranates, and threw a portion away."

The counsel for the prosecution then proceeded

* Mr. Scoble's opening speech at the trial.

to relate how the colonel felt unwell, and noticed some sediment in the remains of the sherbet, and this sediment, on being analysed by Dr. Seward, was proved to be "composed partly of arsenic, and partly of a glittering substance, which he supposed to be diamond-dust;" and this conclusion was further confirmed by Dr. Gray, the Government chemical analyst at Bombay. To connect the Guicowar and his servants with this attempt, it was proved that, on the morning of the 9th of November, Yeshvuntrao and Salim, who had been employed in all the secret communications, had gone to the Residency at an unusually early hour, when many persons saw them, and when they alleged they had been sent with a present of fruit, but the latter did not arrive until long after. They came in at six o'clock, the fruit at eight. On the poisonous qualities of the arsenic found in the sherbet it was unnecessary for the prosecution to dwell; but, as to the diamond-dust, it was shown that it is widely believed in India to be a poison quite as deadly as arsenic; and with this view Dr. Chever's work on Indian Medical Jurisprudence was quoted. Therein he says: "Although this material has no place in Taylor's 'Medical Jurisprudence,' it is widely believed in India as a potent poison at the present day."

There was now adduced the evidence of a person named Dumodhur Punt—who held the position of private secretary, and had also charge of the treasury—that an application had been made by the Guicowar for arsenic, on the plea that it was wanted for a horse; and in regard to the diamond-dust, he further declared that it was obtained from a jeweller, named Futteychund, by order of His Highness, and given to Yeshvuntrao, one of the early visitors at the colonel's residence; and that, after being duly compounded, the two poisons were given, on two occasions, to Salim and Ramjee, whose first maladministrations of these, on the 6th and 7th of November, failed in effect.

After the affair of the 9th, suspicion fell on Ramjee; he was arrested; a belt was taken from him, and within it "a small packet was found, in which was a portion of the powder wrapped up in paper, and on being submitted for analysis, it was found to contain seven grains of arsenic. A full dose consists of two or three grains." On a promise of pardon, Ramjee confessed his guilt, as also did Dumodhur Punt. Payments made to the jeweller for the diamonds to be converted into dust were also proved—the sum being as much as 3,000 rupees. Before the result of the chemical analysis was reported to Colonel Phayre, and while the latter was still suffering from the effects of the

partial poisoning, he was visited in a friendly way by the Guicowar, who pretended that he, too, suffered in the same way, and added that there was much sickness about just then.

As nearly all the witnesses spoke in Hindostanee, the advocate-general asked if it would be necessary to translate their evidence into any other language than English; but Serjeant Ballantine, on the part of the Guicowar, intimated that he had no desire that the evidence should appear in any other language than English and Hindostanee.

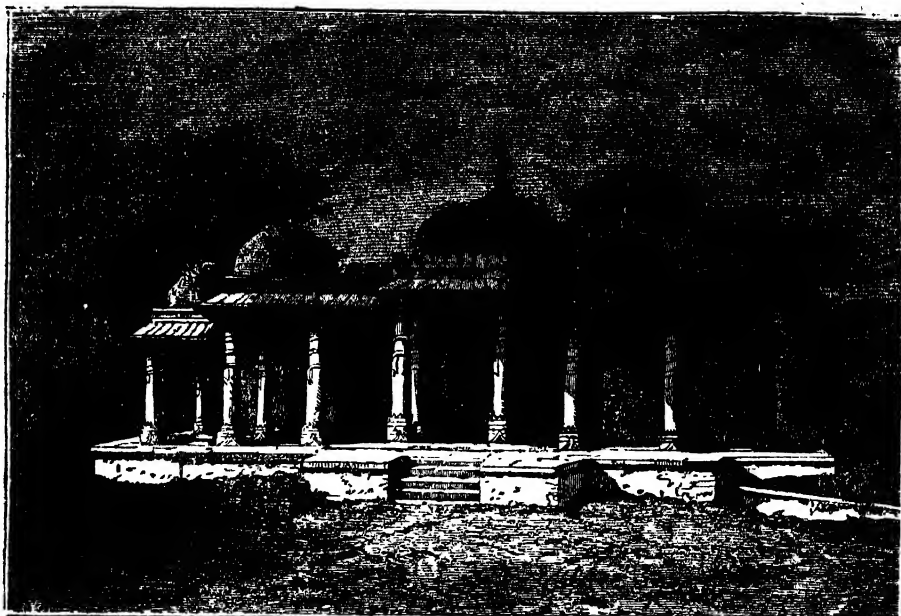
The chief witnesses examined were, Abdullah Mohammed, the servant who prepared the sherbet; Ameena, the ayah; Ackbar Ali, who felt the packet in Ramjee's belt, and tore it open; Ataram Ruggonath, who was employed in the jewel department, concerning the purchase of certain diamond-chips, which were to be entered in the books, "as the chips were to be returned;" Dattaria, concerning an "order granted for arsenic, endorsed with the Maharajah's permission;" Ramesha Mora, and others, concerning the payment of bribes, and bestowal of presents; and Dr. G. E. Seward, surgeon-major, Bombay Army, and residing-surgeon at Baroda, regarding the illness of Colonel Phayre, his mode of treating the case, and the results of the chemical analysis of the sediment found in the sherbet, made by himself and by Dr. Gray, of the Grant College, Bombay.*

"I have examined the powder," wrote the latter to Dr. Seward, "and find it to consist partly of common white arsenic and partly of finely-powdered silicious matter. This silicious matter, under the microscope, appeared to be either powdered glass or quartz, being most like the former. Some of the particles had a purplish or rose-coloured tinge, which fact may, perhaps, furnish you with a clue as to its source. If you wish an official reply in addition to the present, I shall send it."

When under examination, Ramjee contradicted himself many times, and his evidence in several points was contradicted by Nursoo, a jemadar, by Pedro de Souza, the butler; and, in such able legal hands, it may easily be supposed that the cross-examination of all the witnesses was long and searching. The defence made by Serjeant Ballantine was an able one, and occupied fully sixty-one columns of the *Times of India*; but, after a trial protracted over many days, owing to the mixed nature of the court, the guilty Guicowar had the temporary benefit, as we have said, of a divided judgment.

On this Lord Northbrook did at last what he might have done at first. After a careful perusal

* *Times of India*, 1875.



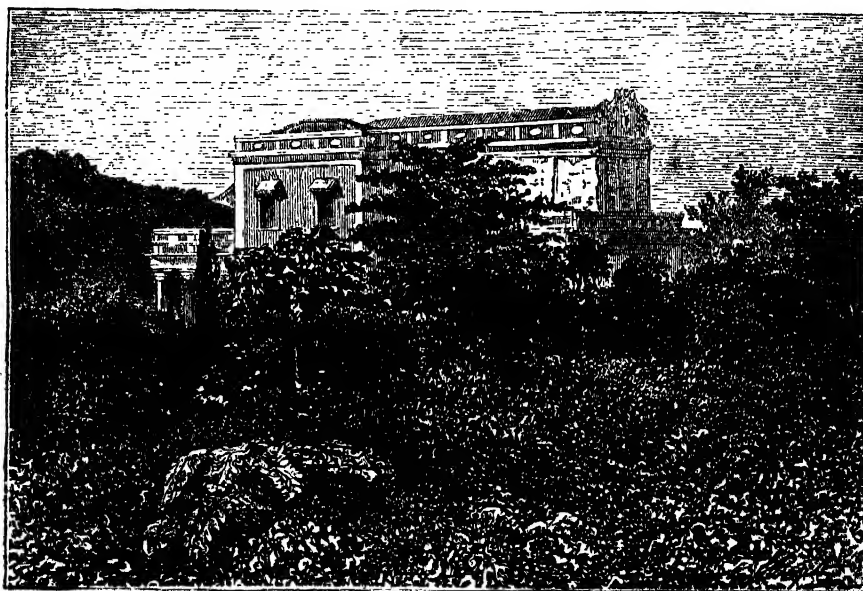
VIEW OF THE TOMB OF ALLUM SAYED, BARODA.

of the evidence, he banished the rapacious and murderous Mulharao to a distant spot, and enthroned on his musnud as Guicowar a young scion of the royal family, under the tutelage of Sir Madhava Rao; thus preserving to Baroda that which it might have lost—its administrative independence.

The new Guicowar was installed on the 27th of May. Served loyally by such men as Sir Lewis Pelly, Mr. James Richey, and their compatriots, the Viceroy and his Council, at this anxious crisis,

saw many perils averted, and the new *régime* quietly established. "Nor can any doubt remain," says a writer on the subject, "that, though the method of this State act was faulty, the motive was righteous, and the results most fortunate for Baroda and the paramount power."

But amid all the changes of fortune, it is pleasant to find that Mulharao had one good feature in his character, according to a journalist in January, 1877—his love for his wife, Luxmubye. "He drives about Madras a little, under the yellow-flowering



VIEW OF THE SUMMER PALACE IN THE GARDEN OF PEARLS, BARODA.

porticos, and enjoys every evening to hear the band play on the beach, the surf thundering by, and the grey walls of St. George near. But his chief solace is found in the company of his child-wife. Mulharao is said to be extremely reserved and haughty now, but constantly peals of laughter are heard from behind the sacred curtain of his zenana."*

though it was with such dreadful crimes as those days at Cawnpore witnessed—would be spared; and the alleged culprit was given up to us. A secret and searching inquiry was instituted, which ended in proving that, for some unknown reason, the prisoner, whose name was Jumna Dass, had practised an imposition, under which lay more than was at that time suspected, as Scindia



A BUNGALOW AT AHMEDABAD, NEAR BARODA.

In the course of the autumn of 1874, Maharajah Scindia, at Gwalior, produced universal excitement throughout India by informing the Resident at his court that Dhoondoo Punt, the infamous Nana Sahib of Bithoor, had voluntarily surrendered himself into his custody,* as one weary of the life of peril and uncertainty he led. It was at first understood that Scindia himself had identified the prisoner, and other native witnesses, with that facility to which we have had occasion to allude so frequently, professed to do so too.

A faint attempt was made to extort from the British authorities a pledge that his life—stained

retained him in his own hands to the end of his days. On this matter the leading English journal shrewdly remarked thus:—"The notorious Rajah of Bithoor was, as the adopted son of the late Peishwa of the Mahrattas, a pretender to the rank which was formerly associated with supreme power in the confederacy. The peishwas, who were, like many other Indian potentates, usurping Ministers, had superseded the authority of the descendants of Sevajee. Their sovereignty, though it was terminated by the British conquest, may perhaps still be respected by some of the descendants of their former subjects; and it is possible that Scindia and Holkar, both representing

* *The World.*

successful military adventurers, may regard with jealousy claims to a title once higher than their own. The two great Mahratta chiefs have since held a ceremonious interview on their common

frontier. If they were engaged in a conspiracy against the Imperial Government, they would probably not select the most ostentatious method of proclaiming the unity of their counsels.*

CHAPTER LXIX.

WAR WITH THE MALAYS.—REVOLT OF ISMAIL AND ZELA.—OPERATIONS OF THE TROOPS.— DEFEAT AND SURRENDER OF ISMAIL.

THE petty States of the Malay Peninsula have for several years had dealings with the British settlements at Singapore and Penang, and the Chinese immigrants, who have passed in great numbers from the islands to the mainland, have established various relations of friendship, and some, unfortunately, of enmity, with the native population. Among all the British possessions, especially in further India, none, perhaps, is more remarkable for its rapid growth and importance than Singapore. If its commerce were limited to the produce of the place, it would hardly give employment to three vessels; but it has become the London of Southern Asia and of the Indian Archipelago, and, together with Penang, by its rise, completed the commercial downfall of Malacca.*

The Malay chiefs were often at war with each other, and sometimes they had quarrels with the Chinese, who, in some places, were sufficiently numerous and strong to have bitter little civil wars of their own; and one result of this petty warfare was the prevalence of piracy, which it became the duty of the British ships-of-war on the station to repress; though our flag was perpetually suffering outrage under the old system, long persisted in, of non-intervention among the warring elements of the Malay States.

At last the Earl of Kimberley, when Secretary of State for the Colonies, gave the first indication to the Governor of the Straits Settlements to take decisive measures for the restoration of order in the Malay Peninsula—a name which, in its widest application, is given to that narrow strip of land extending from the broad mass of the Hindo-Chinese peninsula southwards, from the parallel of 13° 30' north latitude, to that of 1° 14', and between the meridians of 98° and 104° 17' east—a total of 83,000 square miles.

* Lieut. Newbold's "British Settlements in the States of Malacca," &c.

In a despatch to Sir Andrew Clarke, dated 3rd September, 1873, the earl wrote that "Her Majesty's Government find it incumbent to employ such influence as they possess with the native princes to rescue, if possible, these fertile and productive countries from the ruin that must befall them if the present disorders continue unchecked;" and he further instructed Sir Andrew to discover "whether it would be advisable to appoint a British officer to reside in any of these States," in the old Indian fashion, to initiate the policy of annexation; but it by no means follows that, had Lord Kimberley abstained from placing Perak—a wild and outlying district of these Malay States—under "protection," that our ships would have escaped outrage. During that period of non-intervention, when, in the words of the governor, Sir Henry Ord, our policy towards Malacca was "unconnected, inconsistent, and incongruous," Perak was torn by an internal warfare, that ever and anon found its way into Wellesley Province, which is British territory, where our police-stations were frequently attacked by the Malay and Chinese combatants in Larut.

The boats of our men-of-war were also attacked when off the coast; and if the policy of non-intervention had been continued much longer, the Perak war of succession and the Chinese miners at Larut might eventually have fought their way into the streets of Penang, and perhaps those of Singapore. During our first Burmese war, the King of Siam invaded the Malay State of Queddah, from which, as related in its place, the East India Company had purchased Penang. As Britain greatly desired the neutrality of the Siamese potentate, a treaty was made with him, by which he was confirmed in all he had conquered, after committing indescribable atrocities upon the luckless Malays.

The latter became, from thenceforward, the bitter

* *Times*.

enemies of the Siamese, whom they harassed by sea in their war-boats. Both parties appealed to Great Britain, but it would seem that the rights of the Malays were ignored, themselves declared pirates, and their leader a rebel escaped from British surveillance. From that period the Malay pirates became the terror of all voyagers in the Indian waters; and fitting out their prahus in secluded creeks of the Sumatra coast, they have preyed upon merchant-vessels and made descents upon the peninsula, particularly that portion which belonged to the King of Siam.

When Captain Sherard Osborne was serving on board H.M.S. *Ilyacinthe*, she was sent to warn the Malays, who had taken Queddah from the Siamese, to abstain from a course of procedure which would incur the hostility of the East India Company. In his narrative the captain said that "the chief made out a very good case, as seen from a Malay point of view, and nothing but a sense of duty could prevent one sympathising in the efforts made by these gallant sea rovers to regain their own." *

He considered that the Malays should hold a higher place among Eastern nations than we assign them, and says, "There was not a single soul of our party who did not sincerely regret that political expediency should have set us against a race which can produce such men. . . . I would defy seamen of any nation to have excelled them in any quality which renders a sailor valuable. Restrain and bring the Malays under our rule gently, and they will serve us heartily and zealously in the hour of Britain's need. They are the best race of colonial sailors we possess. Grind them down, shoot them down, paddle over them, and they will join the first enemy, and be their own avengers."

In the case of the Sultan of Perak and other Malay princes, so long as we adopted the policy of non-interference our trade with this people was ruined, the merchants were outraged, and even our ships-of-war were assailed; but the moment we firmly intervened, a great tide of prosperity set in. Within a few months after we had established residencies at Perak and Larut, with the British colours floating over them, not less than 10,000 miners were to be seen at work in the latter place building huts and lines of streets, while the tillage of the interior began in places that had been hitherto desolate and wild; and even British capitalists were speculating as to whether they might with safety and good profit open up tobacco plantations, and compete in the market with those already established under the Dutch Resident on the opposite coast, in the Sumatran State of Delhi.

* "Journal in Malayan Waters, 1860."

The people of Perak were extremely anxious for a British protectorate (or Resident), which would put an end to the excessive local taxation under which they groaned, and also secure the produce of their industry from being taken by armed freebooters.

Perak, the scene of the outrage we are about to relate, is the capital of a State of the same name that extends seventy-five miles along the west coast of the peninsula, and is separated from Queddah by the Krian river. A chain of primitive mountains separates it from Tringano. In its southern part are fine alluvial plains and some very productive tin-mines; and it was ruled by its own hereditary sultan till disputed succession induced Lieut.-Colonel Sir William Drummond Jervois, C.B., Governor of the Straits Settlements, to accept a surrender of sovereignty from Ismail, the then sultan or pretender of Perak.

Mr. I. W. W. Birch, who was appointed British Resident, had been formerly Colonial Secretary at Singapore, and was in every way fitted well for his post. Matters remained quiet till suddenly, early in November, 1875, Ismail, who had been deposed in terms of the treaty of 1874, and who had professed to accept the settlement of the lawful sovereign, Sultan Abdullah, as loyally as the rest of the people and the nobles, rose suddenly in arms, and attacked the British Residency at the head of several freebooting chiefs and their men. Mr. Birch, who had been officially ordered to give notice of the change of rulers, had his placards torn down, and was barbarously murdered in his bath, mutilated, and his body was carried off. The document which caused the revolt was the following proclamation:—

"And whereas the Sultan of Perak and other chiefs of that country, with the view of reconciling opposing factions, and promoting order and good government in the country of Perak, have requested Her Britannic Majesty's Government to administer the government of Perak, in such way and manner as they may think most beneficial; now this is to make known to all people that, in compliance with the request of the said Sultan and chiefs of Perak, Her Britannic Majesty has determined to administer the government of Perak in the name of the Sultan; and to this end His Excellency the Governor of the Straits Settlements is about to appoint officers, who will be styled Commissioners and Assistant-Commissioners of Her Majesty the Queen, to carry on the government of the State under His Excellency's instructions.

"Further, that the Sultan of Perak has invested such British officers as are or may be accredited to His Highness from time to time, as such commis-

sioners or assistant-commissioners as aforesaid, with powers to issue and enforce proclamations and orders, and generally to administer the government of Perak; and this is further to make known that a Malay council, consisting of rajahs of Perak of the highest rank, will be appointed by the aforesaid commissioners in matters touching the affairs of the government of Perak.—*Singapore, October 15th, 1875.*"*

All the native rajahs were suspected of complicity in the murder of Mr. Birch (whose assistant, Mr. Swettenham, escaped with safety to Salangore), and that the ultimate object of Sultan Ismail was to expel the British. To punish the outrage, Captain Innes, of the Royal Engineers, with 170 men—of whom only sixty were Europeans of H.M. 10th Regiment, with some armed police and the sepoy of Mr. Birch's guard—attacked with musketry and rockets a stockade occupied by the Maharajah Lela, on the Perak river, but was repulsed, and in the conflict Innes was killed, while Lieutenants George Booth and Armstrong Elliot, with several men of the 10th, were wounded. The retreat was conducted in an orderly manner, and the stockade was then abandoned by the insurgent Lela, in whose village Mr. Birch had been murdered.

General Colborne, with 300 men of the 80th Regiment, left Singapore for Perak on the 11th of November; artillery were summoned from Bengal; and the *Modeste* (corvette), the *Ringdove*, *Thistle*, and *Fly* (gun-boats) were ordered from the China station to Singapore. The residency on the Perak river was held secure, as, prior to Colborne's arrival, the governor had under his orders nearly 800 European troops, with eighty artillerymen, while the sultan offered to assist with men and war-boats. But the Malays became courageous and defiant when, after the repulse of Innes, they saw that our troops were slow in advancing against them.

On the 14th of November an important movement was made against the stockades of the insurgents by the troops and Commander Stirling. "On Sunday morning," says his despatch to Admiral Ryder at Hong-Kong, "all the available officers and men of H.M. ships *Thistle* and *Fly* were brought up the river and quartered in the residency, native boats were fitted to receive two twelve-pound howitzer field-pieces, one seven-pounder boat's gun, two twenty-four-pounder naval rocket-tubes, and a Cohorn mortar, and with much difficulty fifteen other native boats were obtained to transport the troops; and on the same evening, after reconnoitring as far as Qualla Truss, a place of disembarkation was determined on on the right bank of

the river, about a mile below the stockade, which was attacked on the 7th instant. On Monday morning the whole force moved up the river, and disembarked at the place determined on, without opposition. When about 600 yards from the first stockade at Qualla Biah, the enemy opened fire on our boats, which was at once replied to; but we were unable to silence them or drive them out of the stockade till our boats were within 300 yards of and enfilading it, and the artillery had brought their guns into play, when, after having received no reply to our fire for some time, the troops advanced, took possession, and found it abandoned. Two guns were captured here. Continuing our way up the river, I directed the rockets and shell to be thrown into the jungle at intervals, to clear the way for the troops (who burned the houses on their way as they advanced), and about a mile below Passir Sala the enemy again made a stand, and opened fire on us with their rifles, but with no effect, and they were soon dislodged. Nearing Passir Sala to about 1,000 yards, two guns were brought to bear on us, and also a fire of musketry on our flank; the latter, however, was quickly silenced by the advancing troops, while the boats shelled and rocketed the village of Passir Sala, taking up a position at 600 yards. The practice from the seven-pounder gun and rockets was excellent."

This expedition, which was carefully planned by Major Dunlop, the Queen's commissioner, Captain Stirling, of the *Thistle*, and Captain Whitla, of the 10th Regiment, proved a success. The resistance at Passir Sala, where Lela was supposed to be, was very brief. The troops took the place with a cheer, just as the blue-jackets landed. A stockade round Lela's house was beaten down by cannon-shot; the house itself bombarded, looted, and burned. The enemy gave way on every hand; but it was impossible to estimate their loss, as they carried off the killed and wounded. Six guns, a quantity of small arms, some ammunition, together with Mr. Birch's books, papers, and personal effects, were taken here. Our whole force ashore amounted to only 450 men. Of these 300 were Ghoorkas, the remainder being men of the 10th and artillery.

General Colborne, commanding at Perak, having received intelligence that Lela and Ismail had passed through a place called Blanja and marched to the Kinta, decided, on the 14th of December, with the concurrence of Captain Stirling and the Queen's commissioner, to advance without delay from the Perak river, through the jungle, to the bank of the Kinta, and get possession of the capital so named. At a turn of the road, three

* *Straits Observer*, 19th October.

miles from Blanja, the first opposition was encountered. A fire was opened on Colborne's advanced guard, led by Lieutenant Paton, of the 10th Regiment. It came from a stockade, concealed among the dense greenery of the jungle, at thirty yards' distance.

Our troops returned it with promptitude. A royal artillery gun and naval rocket-tube were brought to bear upon the work, which was speedily captured; but, among other casualties, Dr. Randall received a severe wound in the thigh. It was impossible to ascertain either the strength or the loss of the Malays; but after a further advance of ten miles, they opened fire upon us again from another stockade on rising ground in Colborne's front. It was captured by a rush, and on the following morning—the 15th—the troops and naval brigade again advanced, and reached the Papan mines without impediment. From that point a reconnoitring party of forty select men, under Mahmoud, a friendly rajah, went out, with Mr. Swettenham, and halted on open ground two miles from Kinta. On the 17th, the main body stormed another stockade, and pushed on to Kinta, which was taken after a brief resistance, as the enemy abandoned their defences, and fled to their boats in the river. General Colborne deemed it necessary to occupy that part of the country by a military force until matters were settled, the murderers of Mr. Birch given up, or satisfaction obtained.*

At this time the ex-Sultan Ismail and the Maharajah Lela were known to be in the jungle, though their exact position could not be discovered. Lela's followers had begun to desert him in numbers, and several Chinamen offered, for a consideration, to present the British Government with his head and the heads of all the other rebel chiefs—an offer that was, of course, rejected.

During the operations against these stockades, the Victoria Cross was won by Captain (afterwards Major) George Nicholas Channer, of the Bengal Staff Corps, and the following is the record of the act of bravery for which that officer was distinguished:—"For having, with the greatest gallantry, been the first to jump into the enemy's stockade, to which he had been detached with a small party of the 1st Ghorka Light Infantry, on the afternoon of the 20th of December, 1875, by the officer commanding the Malacca Column, to procure intelligence as to its strength, position, &c., Major Channer got completely in rear of the enemy's position, and finding himself so close that he could hear the voices of the men inside—who were cooking at the time, and keeping no look-out

—he beckoned to his men, and the whole party stole quietly forward to within a few paces of the stockade. On jumping in he shot the first man dead with his revolver; his party then came up and entered the stockade, which was of a most formidable nature, surrounded by a bamboo palisade. About seven yards within was a log-house, loopholed, with two narrow entrances, and trees laid latitudinally to the thickness of two feet. The officer commanding reports that if Major Channer, by his foresight, coolness, and intrepidity, had not taken this stockade, a great loss of life must have occurred, from the fact of his being unable to bring guns to bear on it; from the steepness of the hill and density of the jungle, it must have been taken at the point of the bayonet."*

With regard to our policy in this part of Further India, Sir William Jervois, the governor of the Straits' Settlements, a distinguished officer of engineers, who had served in the Kaffir War, and had been Director of Fortifications under Sir John Burgoyne, in 1862, at a meeting of the Legislative Council, after alluding to the past circumstances, which rendered the Indian system of a Resident necessary at Perak, also announced that the chief cause of its failure there was the incompetency and misconduct of the Sultan Abdullah, whom we had established on the throne by the treaty of Pangkor.†

"I find," said the governor, "that Abdullah, contrary to the reports which had been previously made of him, and which represented him as vicious in character and feeble in health, spoke and acted in a manner which gave promise that he could well discharge his duties as a sultan. But, from all I can learn, this apparent improvement in his bearing and conduct was due to his having temporarily abandoned the pernicious use of opium. Shortly after his accession, he speedily relapsed into his old habits. He has, moreover, shown much duplicity, and this, combined with immorality, will account for his having become unpopular with the people, whilst the prevalent habit of opium-smoking, to which he is addicted, has been the great stumbling-block to the conduct of business."

Abdullah was obstinate, and disregarded all advice. He refused to ratify the scheme of taxation prepared by the Resident, to put an end to the black-mail levied by each chief on the river near which he dwelt; and instead of living within the income fixed by the treaty, he resorted to his old policy of "squeezing" his subjects. Mr.

* *London Gazette*, 14th of April, 1876.

† *States Times*.

• Despatches of Major-General Colborne.

Birch, in the governor's opinion, had adopted a most conciliatory tone towards Abdullah, and had exercised great patience with him.

"I have not much hope of ever making Ismail and Abdullah real friends," reported Mr. Birch, shortly before the revolt; "I doubt the ability of the latter to make friends, really and substantially. He is too selfish and too hollow. He merely cares about money, and if he can get that, and spend it, you may keep him quiet. . . . Every day Abdullah is doing some foolish thing, or saying some foolish thing."

Under these circumstances, little development took place in the resources of the province, though, as we have said, Larut prospered exceedingly, and there, particularly, Sir William Jervois found the British Government regarded virtually as the ruling power. He also came to the conclusion that the deposed Ismail was personally attached to the British Government, but, being swayed by the chiefs about him, was afraid lest this fact should become known; eventually he wrote Sir William a letter, professing that *he* should rule Perak by the advice of a Resident, but the former could not entertain the proposal.

"It would have been absurd to do so," he wrote. "We have deposed Ismail and put up Abdullah; and it would be absurd now to depose Abdullah and put up Ismail."

He then visited the former, and lectured him severely on his breach of engagements. He found that the representations as to his character had not been exaggerated. "His imbecility was manifest at every turn. As, however, I wished to give him a fair trial of the promises of amendment which he had made to me, I determined, if he would consent, to adopt a policy of ruling the State in his name. Under the proposed policy British officers will hold in their hands the control of the revenues, the imposition or removal of taxes, the appointment of officials, the superintendence of the police, the establishment of new stations, the formation of new roads and communications—in fact, everything connected with the administration of the country. In a word, my proposal is to govern the country, in the name of the Sultan, by British officers, to be styled Queen's Commissioners, aided by a Malay council."

Such was the wholesome system of innovation so fiercely resented by Ismail and the Maharajah Lela, and the proclamation of which led directly to the murder of Mr. Birch. In conclusion, in acting as he had done—very little removed from the actual annexation of Perak—Sir William reported that he was well aware of the grave

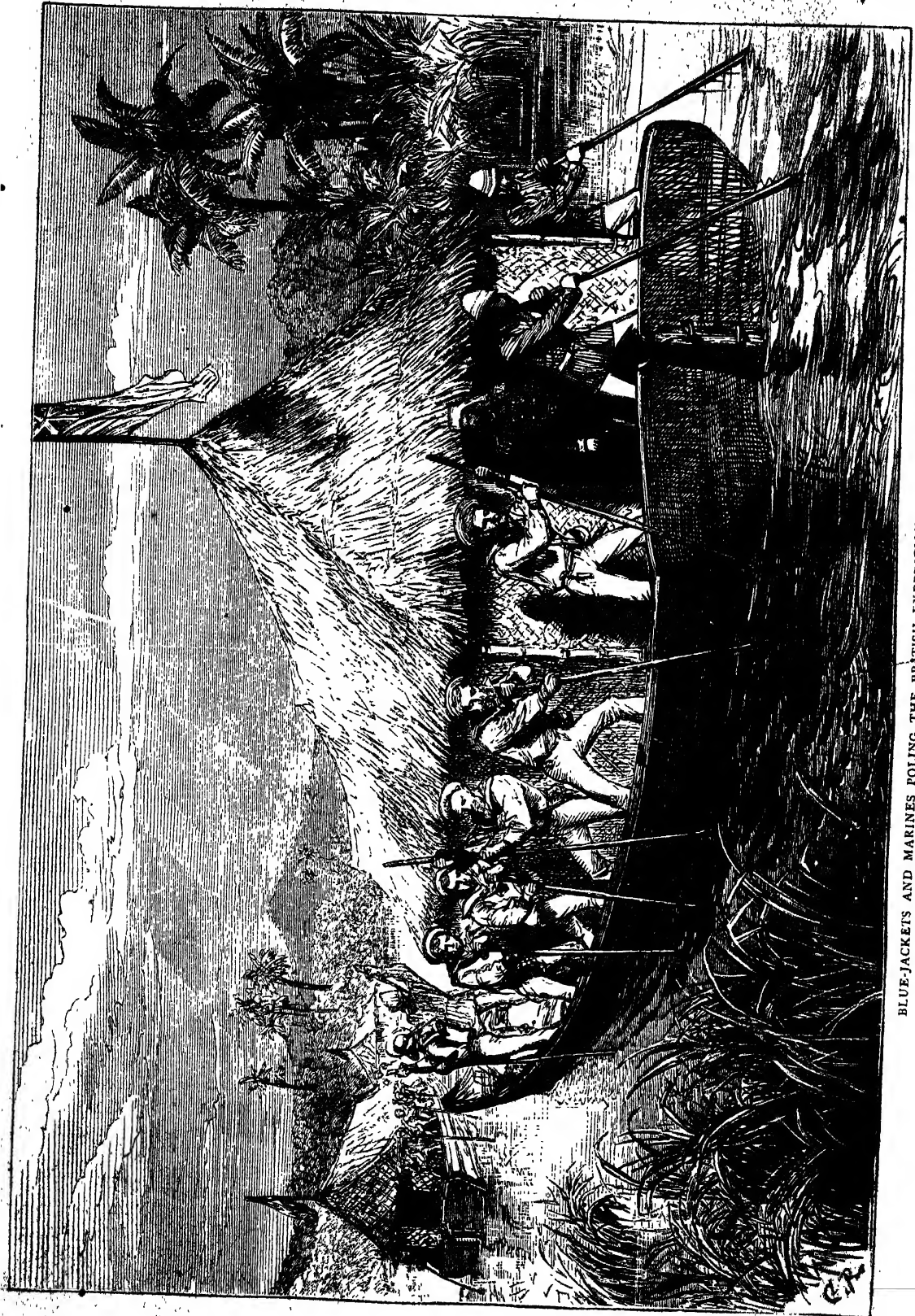
responsibility he incurred, especially as it had been taken without full instructions or authority.

"It appeared to me, however," he adds, "that the situation was one in which the longer action was postponed the more difficult it would be to deal with. I considered, moreover, that it was more difficult to show why the case should be deferred than that action should be forthwith taken. I felt that it was impossible to treat with Abdullah and the Perak chiefs, unless I spoke and acted as if charged with full authority. At the same time, I have endeavoured to avoid any system that may embarrass Her Majesty's Government; and should the policy not meet with their approval, retrogression or progression, according to the views which they may entertain, can without danger be effected." *

But the Earl of Carnarvon (who, upon the formation of Mr. Disraeli's Cabinet in February, 1874, had been for a second time appointed Secretary of State for the Colonies), together with the Government, endorsed fully the policy of Sir William Jervois at Perak.

The beginning of 1876 saw fresh operations inaugurated against the insurgents. On the 4th of January, Brigadier-General Ross attacked and captured Kota Lama, "the haunt of the worst disposed and most turbulent Malays," chiefly on the left bank of the Perak river. To effect this he moved along both sides of the stream, with a slender mixed force. On the left bank Lieutenant-Colonel Cox had a party of artillery, with one gun, and a few of the 3rd Buffs and 1st Ghooorka Light Infantry. On the right bank, under Captain Young, was another party of that regiment, with fifty men of the Buffs; and in three boats in the mid-channel was a detachment under Captain Gardiner. Lieutenant-Colonel Cox entered the village of Kota Lama, and sent word to the brigadier that he had disarmed the inhabitants. That officer then crossed with his staff to a landing-place near the centre of the village, when suddenly his small escort was nearly surrounded by a fierce crowd of Malays, armed with muskets and spears; and but for the steadiness of our seamen and marines, few or none might have escaped. "Just before this attack was made, several officers moved away in the direction of the river, two hundred yards distant. Major Hawkins was, it was supposed, following them, when he was fatally wounded with a spear. No one seems to have seen him fall; but Captain Garforth reports that William Sloper, A.B., came up to him on the ground, shot two Malays who were coming towards him, and stopped with him

* *States Times.*



BLUE-JACKETS AND MARINES POLING THE BRITISH EXPEDITION UP THE PERAK RIVER.

until he said, "Save yourself—you can do me no good now!"*

Surgeon-Major Collis, of the 3rd Buffs, accompanying this expedition, reported: "The severity of the spear wounds in all fatal cases, completely transfixing the body, and the fact of men having been wounded in several places, show the close quarters that the force fought at, and the determined resistance of the Malays."

They made for the jungle, and Kota Lama, with its stores of rice, was given to the flames, after which Brigadier Ross marched back to Qualla Kangsa.

Early in January, Sir William Jervois having obtained reliable information that Ismail, with an armed force, was among the mountains that overlook the Perak river, sent in a body of armed police and some of the Sultan Abdullah's trusted Malays, under Superintendent Hewick, to communicate with Che Karim, a friendly chief, at a place called Solama, to obtain his co-operation in effecting a surprise. The little expedition proved eminently successful. Ismail was attacked on the 19th and routed with loss, having to fly and leave behind him all his baggage and seventeen elephants. Among the slain were Pandak Indut, the actual murderer of Mr. Birch, and the Rajah Kadda, who had been actively enlisting hostile Patani men against us from their State, which lies in the north of the peninsula, and is subject to the King of Siam.

Two days subsequently our troops attacked the village of Rathalma with artillery and rockets, and put the Malays there completely to flight, without loss on our side; and after much wandering and misery, Sultan Ismail fell into our hands on the 22nd of March, and, in token of complete surrender, delivered his royal insignia to Major Anson at Penang. From thence he was sent to Singapore, together with a chief named Datu Sagor, who was treated as a civil prisoner; but the ex-Sultan was released on his parole.

This petty war might have grown into one of great importance had there been a Burmese difficulty on the *tapis*, and still more if we had been seriously embroiled with the Chinese: for the Perak revolt was only crushed by the reinforcements which we poured in from Calcutta and Hong-Kong. Little as this conflict is known at home, we had no less than three naval brigades employed in it or attached to the different forces: that under Captain Alexander Butler, accompanied by Captain N. C. Singleton, of the *Ringdove*, and comprising officers and men of that ship and the *Modeste*, which co-operated with Major-General Col-

borne, on the Perak river; that under Commander Edmund H. J. Garforth, of the *Philomel*, comprising officers and men of the *Modeste*, *Philomel*, and *Ringdove*, who co-operated with Brigadier-General Ross in the Larut Field Force (northern attack); and that under Commander Francis Stirling, of H.M.S. *Thistle*, which co-operated with Lieutenant-Colonel Hill in Sunghie Ujong and in the Sunghie and Lakut rivers.*

In addition to this, a blockade of the north coast of the Perak river, to prevent the ingress of arms, ammunition, and other stores, was established, under the direction of Commander John Bruce, R.N. The services of these various brigades were highly appreciated by General Colborne, Brigadier Ross, and the colonels commanding the corps to which they were attached; and the sailor-like qualities of the officers and men were tested to the utmost. The heavy work performed by them on the Perak river consisted in poling (as oars were of no use in such jungly waters) several boats, laden with guns, ammunition, and stores, for several days, against a strong current that ran at the rate of four knots an hour—the river being very shallow and full of deep holes—under a broiling sun, in latitude 3° north, and in carrying guns, rockets, and ammunition, in addition to their own accoutrements, through the dense dank jungle, over paths so nearly impassable that only seven miles could be gained in each day.*

"The rapidity of the successes of the various expeditions was owing, I learn," wrote the Admiral, "from officers of rank who have reached Singapore from the front, mainly to the special and professional nature of the aid given by the naval brigades, as rocket and gun parties, and in fitting and managing the country boats, which alone could be used. It has been most gratifying to me to hear from all quarters but one opinion of the conduct of the blue-jackets and marines, their constant cheerfulness in undertaking the heavy daily work which fell to their share, their intelligence, and zeal."†

For a month the brigade, under Captain Butler, was without vegetables or bread, and had no other food than preserved meat and the flesh of an occasional buffalo; the men were frequently drenched by rain, and had to march through water and mud that rose above their waistbelts. For the three last days of their advance on Kinta they had to thread their way through a thick jungle, so dense that during that time not a vestige of the sky was visible; and during the ten days' advance they had no cover of any kind, but slept in the "open."

* *London Gazette*, Feb., 1876.

† Despatch of Vice-Admiral Ryder, Singapore, Jan. 17.

* *London Gazette*, 18th February, 1876.

Captain Butler attributed their entire immunity from any disease, previous to the attack on Kinta, to his having been fortunately able to provide them with waterproof sheets, the great importance of which in tropical climates had been fully recognised. All the commanders of these brigades were promoted and decorated; nor were two blue-jackets forgotten—one who saved the life of Dr. Townshend, at Kota Lama, who cut down the Malays that were about to spear him; another who stood to the last by the body of Major Hawkins, and shot down two of the enemy who were about to mutilate it.

The Perak revolt, it was said, if it proved anything, proved that while practically annexing the country we had done so without a force to back up the old Indian policy. No outbreak, certainly, was anticipated, yet long before Mr. Birch began to carry out the orders of the Supreme Government at the Residency, he and the authorities at home knew that the freebooting chiefs, whose suppression was our object, not only objected to a British protectorate, far less an annexation, but had given him a very hostile reception at Blanja, during a tour through the country. Hence it was evident that the proclamation that ceded the administrative government of Perak to the British should have been delayed till Mr. Birch could have done so at the head of an overwhelming military force.

The Peninsula of Malacca has magnificent re-

sources, said a writer on this subject. "Whenever a strip of Perak was ceded to the British Crown, the Malays applied for thousands of acres in excess of what we had to allot. Again, the Dindings had no sooner come into our possession than the Malay population increased, in a few months, from what Sir Andrew Clarke described as 'a handful' to four hundred strong. Under British sway they have increased until they number 120, while, in the States governed by native sovereigns they have dwindled down to about seven souls in the square mile. The chiefs cannot control their own subjects, far less Chinese emigrants from the Straits Settlements; and the question is, Who shall keep the peace in the Malay Peninsula? If it be not kept, then some of the richest and most fertile provinces in Asia will become what Sir Andrew Clarke found in Larut and Perak, when he went to the Straits—'huge cock-pits of slaughter.' The contagion of turmoil," the writer goes on to say, "as we have found from experience, will be ever in danger of spreading to our own territories, unless we defend them by a force which might be better employed in maintaining a just and orderly government all through the peninsula, protecting its trade with our colonies, and gradually evolving out of lands devastated by piracy, plunder, chronic wars of succession, and changeless misrule, a well-regulated, peaceful, industrious, and affluent confederation of States."

CHAPTER LXX.

THE NAGAS EXPEDITION.—THE SUEZ CANAL.

DURING the spring of the same year in which the revolt occurred at Perak (1875), we had some disturbances on the Assamese frontier.

In the sixth chapter of this volume a reference has been made to the Nagas, or Nagahs, as worshippers of the serpent. This is the general name borne, by numerous tribes who inhabit the south-eastern hills of Assam.

They are the most barbarous of all the hill tribes, and go literally naked; and are to be found in the greatest number along the whole mountain ridges between the Sylhet plains and Assam. They are of dark complexion, with athletic and sinewy forms and wild faces, which they frightfully disfigure by tattooing them with the juice of a nut found in their native woods. They are reckless of human

life to a more than usually savage degree, and treacherously murder their neighbours without the least provocation; yet theft is so little known among them, or so detested when discovered, that they leave all they possess openly exposed in their huts, fields, or gardens.

If any person is detected in the act of thieving no mercy is shown them—the *khoubao* pronounces sentence of decapitation without a moment of hesitation. The Nagas bordering immediately on the plains are, for the most part, amicably disposed towards the British Government. Those residing on the hills most remote from the great valley of Assam are said to be fierce, stout, and athletic men, of fairer complexions, but, like all the rest, totally unencumbered by the smallest strip of covering for

any part of the body. They number some 50,000 persons, and all the men are warriors.

Some of their native-made swords, which were brought home by the Prince of Wales, attracted much notice, from the size of their brass guards and keen steel blades; and their method of using these deadly weapons is peculiar, as every male Naga possesses one and is quite master of it. Should it chance, says a writer, that a Naga has a spare hour and desires to be merry, he takes his sword and wanders forth in search of a neighbour, over whose head he flourishes the blade. If the neighbour be a good warrior, as most probably he is, he too will produce his sword, and a hand-to-hand duel ensues till blood is shed, and then they part.

During such encounters, "their friends gather round to witness the scuffle, cheer the combatants, and criticise their play; and thus a very cheerful afternoon is passed. Occasionally a gentleman who is not very skilful gets killed—but what of that? The Nagas think they can spare a man, and certainly nobody thinks that more Nagas are wanted."

These swordsmen dwell chiefly on the sandy hills just outside Jeypore, and are said to be, on the whole, a lively and merry people. They let their beards grow to a vast length, and tie their whiskers in knots. It had been the policy of our Indian Government towards these wild people, without actually ruling, to establish, at least, some control over them. During the years 1872 and 1873, Major Godwin-Austen and Captain Butler were engaged in settling a frontier-line at Muni-pore (or Mounnapura), in the Cassay territory, but under British protection, to determine the exact border of the Naga tribes.

The rajah of that place made himself so unpleasant as to obstruct for a whole year the plans of these officers, one of whom, Captain Butler, was eventually slain by the Naga swordsmen. During 1874 it was necessary for them to continue their operations, as the Burman frontier could not be traced with accuracy until the River Tellizo and its water-sheds had been accurately surveyed; and to achieve this end fresh expeditions were despatched from Calcutta. One of these was under Lieutenant Holcombe, our assistant political agent, who, with singular confidence and courage, at the head of only nineteen sepoy and fifty-four coolies, penetrated into an utterly uncivilised tract on the southern side of the great valley of Assam, among the Nagas who live there, and who come from the country of the Singphos, a warlike people of Indo-China, who have long bodies and short

legs, and are by nature savage and treacherous, and intermarry with the Nagas. Lieutenant Holcombe—who had been specially selected for the daring duty he had to do in consequence of the influence he was supposed to have among these mountain tribes—was quietly engaged in the work of surveying, when a skilfully-schemed attack was suddenly made upon him and his slender party, one morning when the surveyors had just begun breakfast.

Lieutenant Holcombe was standing on a little grassy eminence, showing a Naga chief the action of his breech-loader, when a native stole behind him, and with one stroke of a dagger slashed off his head. This was the signal for a general attack; and from the accounts that came to head-quarters, three Nagas had been set apart to attack each man of the party, as the few survivors agreed in asserting that they were each attacked by this number, and not one escaped without being more or less severely wounded by the formidable blades of the Nagas.

When the startling tidings reached Calcutta that Lieutenant Holcombe and seventy men had been thus treacherously massacred, no time was lost in seeking to retaliate. A strong detachment of the 44th Native Infantry, under Lieutenant-Colonel Nuthall, with 500 men of the coolie corps, which had been originally detailed for service against the Dufflas, were despatched to the front from the fort of Debrooghur, and a week's march up the valley brought them to the scene of the outrage.

It is only during the months of winter that regular troops can penetrate into these miasmatic and wooded regions, that are covered with dank jungle, which forms the fastnesses of those Nagas who boast themselves as the *Nagshuk*, or snake-born race. The fighting that ensued was brief, and our casualties amounted to only twenty men; but ere Colonel Nuthall's column returned to the plains of Assam, he had utterly destroyed all the Naga villages that he could find south of the Dillee river—the abode of 10,000 persons. He shot down forty men, and carried off an immense stock of grain, cattle, and other property.*

In fighting with the Bheels, the Dufflas, but more especially the Nagas, it has been said that we are really waging the last of a strife "that has existed between the Aryan and the Scythic races since the solar and lunar dynasties. This fact may not console us for the loss of a gallant officer or a serious blow to British prestige, nor yet render less deplorable the burden cast upon the Indian finances by a new expedition into these difficult highlands; but even without the help of Huneyman, king of

* *Times of India.*

the monkeys—who did such good service for Rama against Ravana, lord of the ancient Nagas—we have, happily, the power to teach these wild men that their fever-haunted hills cannot protect them if they shed English blood."

One of the most remarkable events of the year 1875, as connecting more closely the interests of Britain and India, was the large interest bought by the former in the Suez Canal—"a transaction not to be regarded as merely an investment by a nation in stock of a trading company, but a very important step, as signifying that for us a free short cut to India is a matter of imperious necessity."

The purchase of the Khedive's interest in that great undertaking, with all the duties and rights appertaining thereto, is, and must remain, a grand commercial arrangement, full of high value to the trade of the world in general and of Great Britain in particular; and it was the legitimate result of the national wealth and that spirit of peace, combined with power, which it is her honest ambition to maintain and extend.

On this matter a leading London journal wrote thus:—"One single act of resolute prudence on the part of the Government has, in a moment, called forth such an universal chorus of approval as we do not remember to have followed any other public announcement. The instant acceptance of the policy as proper, just, pacific, and determined, awakened a prompt response throughout the realm. What does that mean, except a fact which every reasonable statesman abroad should take to heart—namely, that upon a question of even the remote

interests of this empire there is only one party within its confines? From Ireland to Australasia, and from the Orkneys to the Cape of Good Hope, Her Majesty's subjects, at home and abroad, were inspired with one feeling, because the Premier has let it quietly be seen that 'the nation of shop-keepers' knows its just claims, and will maintain them. And considering how absolutely that nation has at once sanctioned the policy adopted by the Government, how heartily it is applauded by M. Lesseps himself, and how no foreign hostility, open or covert, is worth a moment's consideration, the question raised in announcing the decision of the Ministry becomes still more apposite. The great measure now initiated should be carried to its legitimate climax, and the Suez Canal should, if such a result be possible in a business point of view, pass entirely into British hands." *

Whether this desirable climax shall be attained remains for time to show. Apart from the economies or future profits of the great investment, the voice of the people endorsed the Government measure to the fullest extent. With good and useful rights against any enemy, it gave us a footing eastward that could offend none; it linked the interests of Britain and Egypt, without interfering with those of any other Power; it secured to the commercial world the maintenance of a noble work, now indispensable to modern traffic and intercourse; and, as it was happily said at the time, it quietly constituted Queen Victoria trustee of the high road that leads to her empire in the East.

CHAPTER LXXI.

MURDER OF MR. MARGARY AT MANWYNE.—ATTACK ON COLONEL BROWNE'S MISSION.— CORRESPONDENCE THEREUPON.

DURING Lord Northbrook's administration difficulties arose with the King of Burmah in 1875, thus causing his Government to strengthen the forces in the British province; while attention was painfully directed to China by the murder of Mr. Margary and his attendants—an event almost concurrent with the attack made on Colonel Browne's party at Yunnan.

With a view to ascertain what probabilities there were of trade being developed between India and Western China, Sir Thomas Wade, our representative at the Court of Peking, obtained passports for

the expedition, and instructed Mr. Margary, of the British Consular Service in China, to pass from the eastern side and join the party from Burmah, that they might receive his special knowledge and assistance in the prosecution of their work.

"Augustus Raymond Margary," says the *Times*, "was one of those young men of whom England may well be proud. Selected to perform a most responsible and perilous duty, he accomplished it with great success, and traversed regions hitherto untrodden by Europeans." The son of General

* *Daily Telegraph*, November, 1875.

Margary, of the Royal Engineers, this enterprising envoy was only in his twenty-ninth year when he proved, by his life and death, that he was one of those Britons who have often in the East united the courage of the soldier to the training of the civilian; and had he survived the perils of his mission, he would assuredly have attained a high rank among explorers and diplomats.

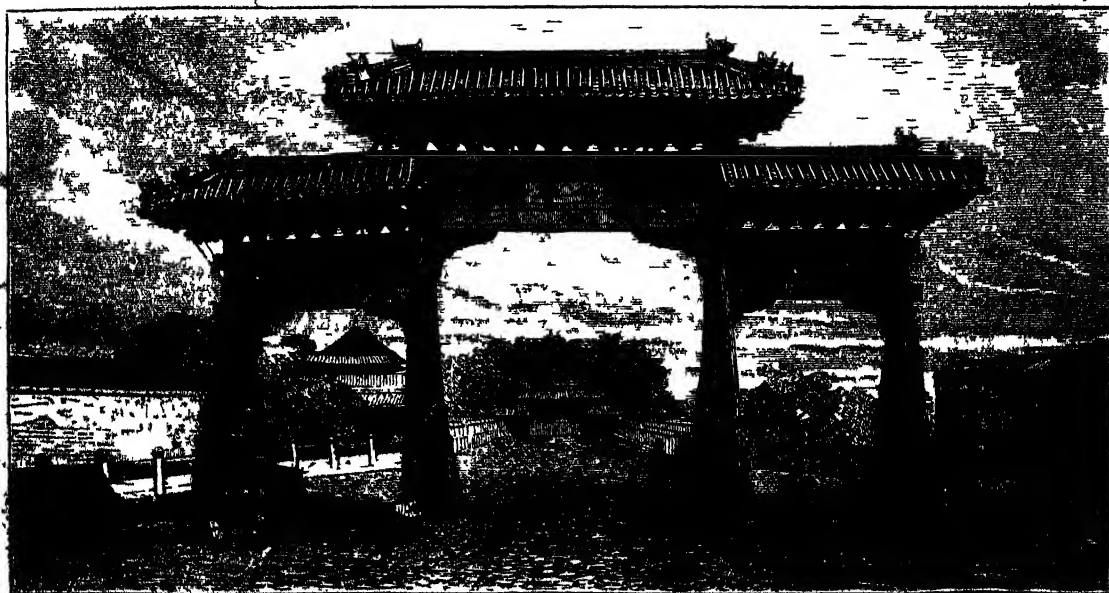
Seven years before this period, in 1868, a mission, under Major (afterwards Colonel) E. B. Sladen, had crossed the Burmese frontier, and reached the city of Momien, in the Chinese province of Yunnan, from whence it was compelled to retrograde, being unable to advance further in consequence of the exclusive spirit, the ignorant jealousy, and hostile opposition of the Chinese authorities then combating for precedence



A MANDARIN

in Yunnan.* By the year 1874 this civil strife, which for nineteen years desolated the most fertile and beautiful of the western provinces of China, was ended by the overthrow of the Mohammedan insurgents, and the authority of the emperor was completely restored up to the borders of Burmah. The fresh opportunity which now arose to open up commercial and diplomatic relations was promptly taken by the Government of India; and to effect this Colonel Horace Browne was sent, with orders to cross China, from Burmah to Shanghai, furnished with promises of safe conduct, with the necessary passports to mandarins and other authorities having been previously gained from the Government at Peking; and, in order

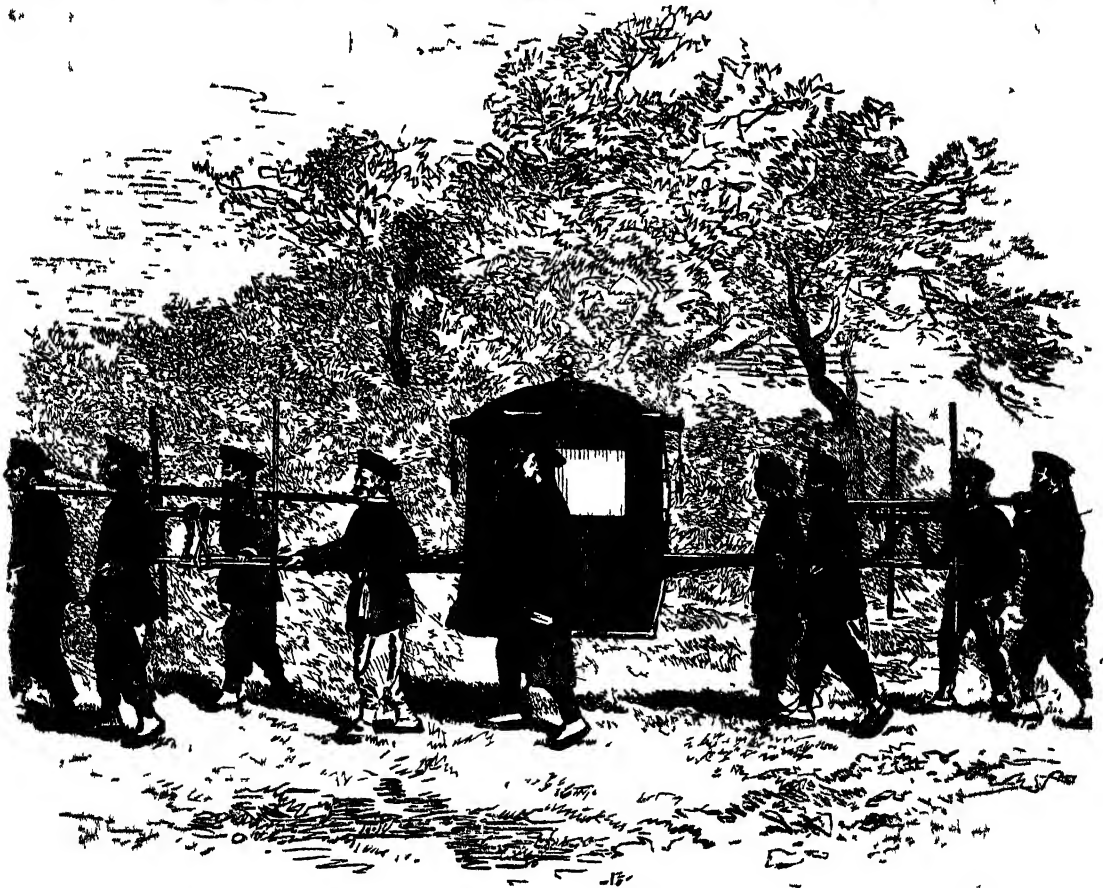
to make it perfectly clear to the former that
* "Mandalay to Momien; a Narrative, &c."



TRIUMPHAL ARCH IN THE GARDENS OF THE PALACE, PEKIN.

the colonel's mission belonged to the same nation as that which had been so familiar at all the treaty ports of the Pacific coast, Sir William Wade, as we have stated, sent Mr. Margary to meet it. By a six years' residence in China, he had thoroughly mastered the language, and made himself familiar with the habits and customs of that remarkable country. It was on the 9th of August, while at Shanghai, he received notice of

plan adopted," he records, "to send me overland from this side to the western border of the province of Yunnan, there to wait at one of the passes for four Indian officers, who are to come over from a place named Bhamò, near the upper sources of the Irawaddy. I am provided with some Chinese despatches from the Tsungli-Yamen at Peking to three governor-generals, who rule the vast territories through which I shall pass. These letters direct



CHINESE PALANQUIN-BEARERS.

his appointment to cross China and meet Colonel Browne's party: thus affording him, as he exultingly stated in his diary, "a magnificent opportunity" for distinguishing himself, as it was the very duty for which he was longing, "to survey the new route for commerce." Though, he adds, "we have suggested to the Government that it would save time and money to send me by sea to Mandalay to join the expedition at its starting point, instead of toiling overland some seven or eight hundred miles, through a new country untrodden by foreigners."*

On the 23rd of August he left Shanghai. "The

them to take every care of me, and to issue orders to all their magistrates and officers along my route, to protect and help me on."

On the 4th of September, 1874, he left the British Consulate at Hangkow—at least, so much of his movements was known to the Government of India, but little more, as from that time, as he himself tells us, he had plunged into darkness for six months.

During all that time he was toiling through regions hitherto unknown to the Europeans, sometimes on river or canal by long, narrow sampans or boats; or borne in chairs by coolies over the

* "Journey of A. R. Margary," Macmillan, 1876.

mountain-ranges, when the weather was, as he tells us, "boiling hot," and he was ill for a month with fever, "and fifty other ailments;" now between vast fields of cotton and sesamum, and anon through scenes then recently desolated by the heavy hands of the "Long-haired Rebels," as the Taipings were called—the same insurgents who were defeated by the Chinese troops under Colonel Charles Gordon;* often perilously mobbed by peasantry, soldiers, and ruffians, who shrieked at him as a "Foreign devil;" far away from "all his fellow-kind," encountering innumerable perils, adventures, and discomforts.

By the end of November, 1874, he reached Yunnan Fu, a division and town of China, on the north bank of a great lake—a place celebrated for its carpets and silks, and containing many fine edifices defaced by the Tartar invaders.

On the 13th of January, 1875, he was at Manwyne, and four days after reached Bhamô, when, after being conducted by a guard of forty Burmese soldiers through the savage Kakhylen hills, with a joyful heart he came in sight of the British flag flying above the little town, and he received a warm welcome and congratulations on his splendid journey from Colonel Browne and the other officers, who had been sent to that point by Lord Northbrook. They had with them an officer's guard of about thirty Sikhs, with a host of baggage animals and plenty of stores.

It had been greatly doubted whether Mr. Margary, even if he succeeded in traversing the perilous districts, would be able to reach the frontier in time; accordingly, as a precaution, another consular officer, Mr. Clement Allan, who could take his place as interpreter to the mission if so required, had been sent round by sea to Rangoon.

"It may easily be imagined," says Dr. John Anderson, F.R.S.E., who was attached to the mission of Colonel Browne, "with what feelings we congratulated the first Englishman who had succeeded in traversing the trade-route of the future, as he called it, and with what pleasant anticipations we heard of the accounts of his arduous but successful journey, and the reception accorded all along the route, crowned by the politeness shown by the dreaded Li-sich-tai (the warrior Viceroy of Yunnan, who extinguished the Mohammedan rebellion). The astonishment and admiration of the Burmese were even greater. In their own minds they had never realised the existence of British officials in China; and now there appeared a veritable Englishman, speaking Chinese fluently,

* "The Ever Victorious Army," by Wilson, 1868.

versed in the use of chopsticks and all other points of etiquette."

In this spirit the Governor of Bhamô and all its people made entertainments in his honour, and for a few days before the mission started, Mr. Margary was the centre of attraction for the natives, and by his cheerful bearing and helpful nature won the entire esteem of Colonel Browne and his brother officers.

The mission started from Bhamô early in February, 1875, and on the morning of the 18th arrived, with their escort, at the last guard-house on the Burman frontier, in a deep narrow gorge, thickly covered with forest trees, festooned with creepers or baboon ropes. This is the valley of Nampoung, which separates Burmah from China; and reports now met them of dangers impending.

The fierce hill tribes, named the KakhyLens, who dwell on that wild frontier, were mustering in strength to oppose their passage or cut them off—a movement encouraged by the authorities of Seray, the principal town in that part of Yunnan. At a council of war which was held, Mr. Margary made light of the hostile rumours, as he had but recently traversed these hills in safety, and he was known to the mandarins of Manwyne and Seray. Thus, to ascertain the truth, this gallant young Englishman volunteered to go in advance, and to send back instructions for the guidance of Colonel Browne, who accepted his offer. though, on the very afternoon before he started, the echoes of the adjacent hills and woods were awakened by the din of gongs and cymbals, and the ferocious KakhyLens, with dark visages and gleaming eyes, were seen peering from amid the trees at the bivouac where the travellers were having their last dinner, which, however, the former did nothing to interrupt.

On the 19th of February, about dawn, Mr. Margary crossed the frontier of China, attended only by his Chinese secretary and servants, who had come with him from Shanghai, and a few Burmese muleteers. Colonel Browne received a letter next day reporting his safe arrival at Seray, where he had been well received, and from whence he was proceeding to Manwyne. The mission followed him to the former town on the 21st, and no further news came of Mr. Margary. But the colonel remarked that the chief of Seray and all his men were armed, and more rumours of hostility filled the air. On the 22nd his little camp was nearly surrounded by menacing bands of armed men; and letters from the Burmese agents at Manwyne to the chief in command of their escort

* "Mandalay to Manna." [1875.]

brought the shocking tidings that Margary and his native servants had been savagely murdered on the previous day, by order of the Chinese Governor of Mowien.

But for the honourable fidelity of their Burmese escort, who repelled all the offered bribes of their assailants to draw off, and allow them only to slay "the foreign devils"—and the valour of the few Sikhs who formed their body-guard, Browne and his whole mission must have shared the fate of Margary. A hard day's fighting ensued with a force sent from the same quarter to attack the colonel and his friends, who, though severely wounded, ere night fell, effected a retreat across the frontier with all their baggage, and at Bhamô sought particulars of the assassination, of which different accounts were given.

The most truthful was supposed to be that of a Burmese, who had seen Margary walking peacefully and confidently about Manwyne, at times with Chinese, at others alone, on the morning of the 21st. At the invitation of some of these, he went to visit a hot spring; but as soon as he had left the town they knocked him off his pony, and slew him with their spears; and thus barbarously ended the peaceful mission to open up a new commercial route between India and China.

That this cruel massacre of unoffending British subjects was executed without the connivance of the imperial authorities, no intelligent European in the East believed; but whether the empress-regent at Peking and the mandarins at Yunnan were, in any secret way, accessories to the outrage, it was difficult to determine; but the equivocating attitude of the Peking Government in dealing with Lord Northbrook's demands for satisfaction led us to the brink of a fourth Chinese war, the withdrawal of the embassy, and blockade of the rivers, though, eventually, the protracted negotiations of our plenipotentiary with the imperial authorities to obtain reparation were brought to a successful issue.

The Foreign Office correspondence on this subject commenced on the 4th of March, 1875, and comprised some eighty letters, and details at considerable length the negotiations with reference to our demands for satisfaction.

Disatisfied with the manner in which the Imperial Government seemed disposed to treat the outrages committed on the mission from India and that from Shanghai, Sir Thomas Wade at last addressed Prince Kung in the following decided terms:—

"In my reply of the 30th September, to your Imperial Highness's communication of the 29th, I had the honour to state that I should write at

greater length to your Imperial Highness in a day or two. It was my intention at the time to review what had passed since the 10th of September, the day on which I wrote to announce that I had decided on the withdrawal of the Legation and the Northern Port Communities. It appears to me, on reflection, unnecessary to repeat again what has been so often repeated. I have forwarded Her Majesty's Government copies of all correspondence and notes of all conferences, up to my departure from Tien-tsin on the 8th of September. Her Majesty's Government will now be similarly informed of all that has passed, in speech or writing, since that date.

"Whether I am justified in asserting that I have been trifled with, Her Majesty's Government will be well able to judge. I shall proceed at once to withdraw the Legation, and I shall instruct Her Majesty's consuls at the ports of Tien-tsin and Newchang to give notice to the British community at these ports that they must retire before the rivers are closed. The members of these communities will file inventories of such property as they may be unable to take away in their respective consulates, and compensation for any loss they may sustain will be claimed in due time of the Chinese Government."

The firm character of this missive had the desired effect, and on the 23rd of October Sir Thomas Wade addressed a letter to the Imperial Commissioner, Li-Hung-Chang, a man of distinguished rank, in which he wrote:—

"This note will be delivered by Mr. Grosvenor, Second Secretary of Legation, who, as His Excellency is aware, has been selected by Mr. Wade to be present at the inquiry which the Chinese Government has promised should be instituted into the circumstances connected with the attack on a mission from the Government of India, travelling under passports in Yunnan, last February, and the murder of Mr. Margary, the interpreter, who had been sent by Mr. Wade to meet the mission in question. In reparation of this outrage, Her Britannic Majesty's Government demands the punishment of those who instigated and took part in it; and it is to the establishment of truth that, according to an imperial decree, dated the 9th instant, His Excellency Li has received a special commission.

"In a telegram which reached Mr. Wade on the 6th instant, the Earl of Derby, Principal Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, instructed Mr. Wade to repeat that the fullest inquiry into the circumstances of the Yunnan outrage is looked for; and in a second telegram, received by Mr. Wade on

the 22nd, he is again desired to state that Her Majesty's Government will watch with attention that the promises given by the Chinese Government in evidence of its good faith are performed, and that the re-establishment of a good understanding will depend on the fidelity with which the engagements of the Chinese Government are observed.

"The engagements referred to are those negotiations which, with the Tsung-li Yamen, have occupied Mr. Wade for the last two months, the end of all being to ensure that the circumstances of the crime of February last shall be duly investigated, and the persons responsible punished. It is to prevent all after-question upon this point that Mr. Grosvenor is sent to Yunnan. It is essential for the satisfaction of Her Majesty's Government that there should be no doubt as to the identity of the persons who may be brought to trial, or the credit of statements that may be made either for the prosecution or the defence. Mr. Wade has informed the Prince of Kung that Mr. Grosvenor will proceed, in the first instance, to the provincial capital, Yunnan Fu, to place himself in communication with His Excellency Li. As to the time he may remain there, Mr. Grosvenor will be authorised to use his own discretion; the length of his stay will be regulated by circumstances. The prince has been further informed that, when he decides on leaving Yunnan Fu, Mr. Grosvenor will move on to Manwyne, if for no other purpose, to collect the remains of Mr. Margary, who was murdered in or near that town. Mr. Grosvenor will then, as he sees fit, either return through China to Hangkow, or he will cross the frontier of Bhamô, following the line taken by Mr. Margary in January. In a despatch, dated the 22nd of August, the Prince of Kung has promised that, whenever a British officer holding passports shall undertake the journey from Yunnan to Burmah, orders shall certainly be given to the authorities on the spot to afford him protection.

"Mr. Grosvenor is supplied with a copy of the prince's despatch referred to, and if he decides to return by Bhamô, he will apply to His Excellency Li to take the necessary steps. He will at the same time communicate with the agent of the Indian Government who is stationed at that place; and, as in the case of Mr. Margary, the agent will see that a guard be sent to the Burmese frontier, to escort him and those with him to Bhamô. Mr. Wade cannot too strongly impress upon His Excellency Li the necessity of assisting Mr. Grosvenor to accomplish his mission in every particular. The crime committed in Yunnan has naturally excited the indignation of Her Majesty's Government, and

subjects; and a suspicion that error in the conduct of the investigation or in his subsequent movements, Mr. Grosvenor has not received from His Excellency the assistance which from the nature of his mission he is entitled to look for, would hardly fail to be productive of the gravest consequences."

That these meant a hostile collision with the Government of India, that of China could have no doubt; and on the 1st of January, 1876, the Earl of Derby, when acknowledging the receipt of Sir Thomas Wade's despatches, concluded thus:—

"You will have received by the last mail my observations on the subjects referred to in several of them; but those which contained a detailed account of your negotiations on the Yunnan affair have required more deliberate consideration. I have now to inform you that your proceedings are approved by Her Majesty's Government, who trust that the concessions you have obtained will not only secure a full and searching inquiry into the attack on Colonel Browne's mission and the murder of Mr. Margary, but will also lead to an improvement of the relations between Great Britain and China. Her Majesty's Government, in their anxiety not to press too hardly on the Chinese Government, or endanger its stability, have in many instances abstained from insisting on the full satisfaction of their claims; and although possessing the means of enforcing them to the fullest extent, have forborne from using these means, in the hope that the Government of China would gradually wake to a clear sense of its duties towards foreign Powers. This hope has not hitherto been realised; and you have found it necessary to demand certain guarantees, which are duly recorded in the notes and decrees enclosed in your despatches.

"The treatment, on a proper footing, of the Ministers of friendly Powers; the representation of China in this and other foreign countries; the proper protection of foreigners travelling in China; the execution of the treaty stipulations in regard to trade and other matters; the establishment of commercial relations between India and Western China—are all subjects to which Her Majesty's Government attach great importance; and they have learned with satisfaction the assurances which have been given to you on these points.

"Her Majesty's Government are animated by the most friendly feelings towards the Government and people of China, and have every wish that the relations between the two countries should be of an amicable and peaceful character; but in order that this wish may be realised, there must be evidence of a similar disposition on the part of the Chinese Government; and this disposition they can

best show, by proceeding, with vigour and earnestness, the investigation in Yunnan, and eventual punishment of the perpetrators of the outrage, and by carrying out the other engagements which they have now undertaken in a straightforward and friendly spirit.

Mr. Governor's mission reached Manwyne about the middle of April. A British escort of 300 men, and a Burmese escort of 4,000, proceeded to Bhamo to meet him; and the Chinese local authorities were anxious to assist his inquiries, which ended in sentence of death being passed on seventeen men for complicity in the murder of Mr. Margary.

Full reparation was made and war averted, though the Chinese Government seemed resolved at first to carry matters with a high hand. It was well known that large stores of new and improved arms and munitions had been imported by them from Europe, and it was averred that the military mandarins deemed their troops, thus equipped, quite competent to meet European or Indian troops in the field. At the last moment the Imperial Government gave way, and prudently submitted both to the official publication of documents and a full inquiry into the double outrage and murder.

A monument was erected to the memory of Mr. Margary in the cathedral at Hong-Kong, by the members of Her Majesty's Diplomatic and Consular Services in China, "in token," as it bears, "of the affectionate esteem" in which they held him.

A subsidiary dispute, which, collaterally with this affair, we had with Burmah, and which also menaced another war, was easily settled as soon as

the Court of Peking felt itself compelled to give way. A Chinese officer of high rank, who was believed to be the principal instigator of the Yunnan outrage, had recently been received with unusual honours at Mandalay. The British, Sir Douglas Forsyth, was duly instructed by Lord Northbrook to demand explanations, and to obtain the recognition of the independence of those border tribes which had placed themselves under the protection of the Government of British India.

The King of Burmah's formal explanations of his reason for receiving the Chinese dignity were necessarily accepted, and the question of the frontier tribes was adjusted without further trouble. Various acts of interference with commercial relations, in violation of former treaties, were disavowed; but the disposition of the Golden Foot still seemed dubious. In case of a war, Burmah would not be a very formidable enemy, as past conflicts had proved; but it was evident that its arrogant and ignorant Court was only waiting to ascertain the probable policy of that at Peking.

Then, early in the year, the young Emperor of China had suddenly died, and the succession passed to a mere child, for whom the government was administered by two empresses—one regent, and the other his grandmother. One result of their intrigues, which were imperfectly understood, was a diminution in the power of the Prince Kung, who for many years had principally directed the affairs of the Celestial Empire; the Government of which, by giving way in the recent dispute, had caused that of Burmah with us to be settled also.

CHAPTER LXXII.

RUSSIAN AGGRESSION IN CENTRAL ASIA.—ANNEXATION OF KHOKAND.—DEPARTURE OF THE PRINCE OF WALES FOR INDIA.

During the early part of 1875, the politicians of India were somewhat disturbed by the progress of the Russian dominion beyond the mountain frontier. The tributary kingdom of Khokand, in Central Asia, which had but lately risen into political importance, had given them much trouble, and the annexation of a part of its territory failed to restore tranquillity. Originally it was a small State in the upper valley of the Tis, bounded on all sides, except that of Khojend, by lofty mountains; but

by certain acquisitions and conquests, the Khan of Khokand soon exercised sway over all the country, from the Ulu-Tau mountains on the north, which form the southern frontier of the Russian Government of Tomsk, to the Aspera range, a mountain continuation of the Mussar-Tagh, on the northern frontiers of Little Bokhara. The whole extent of the khanate is hilly, and forms the nucleus of the great table-land of Eastern Asia, in which it gradually lowers itself to the level of the surround-

ing regions. Its usual military force was 30,000 horse, which Balbi exaggerates to 100,000.

In the course of the summer of 1875, the reigning prince, Khudsyar Khan, who was content enough to be a dependant of the Russian throne, was deposed by an unanimous revolt of his discontented subjects. Kaufmann, the Russian general, was not unwilling to recognise his son, whom the insurgents had placed on the throne; but, as the movement

old Usbec khanates of Central Asia became a Russian province, leaving only some fragments of Bokhara and Khiva to intervene between the advanced posts of ever-aggressive Russia and those of British India, or territory within the boundary of British influence, and which our Government is bound to protect.* The people once more resorted to arms, and obtained the aid of certain tribes which had not previously come in



VIEW IN PEKIN.

had been in reality a demonstration against the Court of St. Petersburg, it became necessary to resort to arms, and the troops of Khokand were repulsed in an attack on Tashkend, a fortified town in a valley near the Tcherchek, having in its midst a castle (built on the site of the palace of the ancient khans), surrounded by lofty walls and deep ditches, and forming the residence of the governor; and after this defeat, the Khokand troops were utterly unable to offer any effectual resistance to the Russians.

Khokand was, in consequence, completely conquered and dismembered; and thus the last of the

contact with Russia; but the discipline and organisation of her troops prevailed in the end, though it will be long ere she succeeds in reducing the fanatical Mohammedans of Central Asia to willing and permanent submission.

Of this advance, which sounded unpleasant to the ear of those in India, a journalist says:—"The hitherto accepted boundary of Khokand, following the line of natural demarcation, is the high mountain ridge of the Karateghin, which reaches no point south of the thirty-ninth parallel. From this point to the extreme western limit of the Peshawur

* *Times*, 1875.



MEMBERS OF THE COUNCIL FOR FOREIGN AFFAIRS IN THE PAVILION OF RECEPTION, TSUNGLI-YAMEN, PEKIN.

district is, as the crow flies, about 350 miles English, and Russia has already possessed the south-east of the Samarcand territory, which is quite as near to the British frontier. The crow, which should fly straight from Khokand to Peshawur, moreover, would have to pass over a country, perhaps the most difficult in Asia, crossing the inaccessible Pamir steppe and the knot of lofty mountains known as 'the Dome of the World,' not to speak of the rugged and pathless wild of Kaffiristan."

It was thus urged by some at home that, as an additional menace to British India, the annexation of Khokand was of minor importance, and that it could not be viewed as a direct act of aggression; but it undoubtedly involved important considerations, as having a reference to Central Asia and our relations with Russia, as defined by conventions and explanations then recent.

In the first place, it was apparent that if Russia intended to demand, as part of Khokand, not only the territory included geographically within that khanate, but all the districts which had at any time been deemed part of it, then an understanding which had been previously made between the Governments of Great Britain and Russia regarding their respective borders, or rather zones of influence in that remote part of the world, would be greatly affected.

Though the force of that understanding was somewhat weakened by certain explanations made by Mr. Gladstone in Parliament during April, 1873, it still remained valid, and drew a line beyond which Russia was not to advance nearer British India; for in the Gortschakoff-Clarendon correspondence, the stream of the Oxus, down to a point called Khojah Saleh (where that great river turns north-west through the vast plain of Bokhara), was declared to be the northern boundary of Afghan dominion, in which Shere Ali was to rule under the protection and restraint of Britain; while, as a further act of courtesy to the latter, Prince Gortschakoff consented to include within Afghanistan the provinces of Wakhan and Badakshan, the latter a mountainous Turkestan khanate, having a military force of 10,000 matchlockmen, and once famous for its gold, pearls, and precious stones.

This concession certainly caused some confusion in the arrangement, as it was likely to evolve serious difficulties in the future. The understanding that these provinces should be included in the territory of Afghanistan and that which made the Oxus the northern boundary of that principality, were at variance with each other geographically, as a portion of both Badakshan and Wakhan lie to the

north of that ancient stream. "If, therefore," said a writer at the time, "the Oxus is to be taken as the limit of the Afghan dominion, Afghanistan is deprived of one-half the benefit of Prince Gortschakoff's 'act of courtesy'; and if the Oxus is not to be the limit of the Afghan dominion—that is to say, of British influence—then the whole question returns to its original perplexity; and with this perplexity we are brought face to face with the Russian annexation of Khokand. Although there is little to fear for British India on account of the annexation of Khokand by Russia, no one can read the correspondence between the British and Russian Governments in 1873 without perceiving that this last event is of great significance, as bearing upon the understanding supposed to have been arrived at therein. We shall best appreciate the nature of the difficulty which now threatens when we remember that, while something was said about a neutral zone by Russia, both the southern limits of Russian influence and the northern limits of Afghan dominion were left practically undefined, in one quarter at least, where they might have come in contact. The understanding which was concluded with Russia in 1873 declared that 'the stream of the Oxus' was 'the northern boundary of the Afghan province' of Badakshan 'through its entire extent.' But we then knew, and still know, very little about the stream of the Oxus in its upper course." *

There was nothing to prevent an immediate extension of the Russian boundary to the bank of that stream of classical antiquity had Gortschakoff or the emperor been disposed to do so; and such a movement would have made the Afghan frontier a matter of deep and direct interest. After the annexation of Khokand in 1875, the only independent State in Central Asia was that founded at Kashgar (or "The City of the Horde") by Yakoob Khan, himself a Khokandi; and beyond the circle of British influence there was nothing else left for Russia to annex.

In 1864, the town of Tchemkend was positively declared to be the last post which Russia intended to acquire in the direction of British India. In that year, Prince Gortschakoff announced that the territorial acquisitions in Turkestan had been brought about by "imperious necessity," and that Imperial Russia had now reached her furthest limits in Central Asia; and the reason given for the extension of the Russian border, even to Tchemkend, by forcibly occupying the towns of the Usbec Tartars along the valley of the Tjarkaria, or Jaxartes, was alleged to be the necessity for

* *Standard*, 1875.

forming a communication between Fort Peroffsky and the western border of the Lake Issyk-Koul, outside the sandy desert; and two sufficient reasons were given why Tchemkend was to be the Russian limit in Central Asia.

One was that the country annexed was inhabited by Kirghises who had already acknowledged the sway of Russia, and that it was fertile, well watered, and well wooded; the other, that it would give the Russians for neighbours the steady agricultural and commercial population of the free khanate of Khokand; and any further conquest, the prince declared, would involve his Government in quarrels with wandering and warlike tribes, and hence lead it "from annexation to annexation." Yet from that day Russia has gone from one acquisition to another—from Tchemkend to Tashkend; from thence to Khojend; from thence to Samarcand; then to Khiva; and, finally, to Khokand—at every step nearer and more near to British India, Prince Gortschakoff meanwhile making the usual assurances that the furthest limit was *now* reached, compatible with safety to the empire and the interests of Russian civilisation. "Having got to Khokand," says a writer, "and having finally suppressed the last remnant of national life in Turkestan proper, what better assurance have we that the same 'imperious necessity' which has made such havoc of Prince Gortschakoff's circulars will not compel the Russian generals to go still farther?"

In 1875, during the early part of the year, a subject of common interest to all Great Britain and to India was furnished by the whisper that went abroad of the long-cherished desire of H.R.H. the Prince of Wales to visit our vast Eastern Empire; while his determination, which was all but universally approved of at home, was received in India with general enthusiasm.

On the 22nd of October the intention of His Highness found public expression, and with it public applause; for while it was natural that the future King of Great Britain and sovereign of India should wish to see his great and famous Asiatic heritage, it was ardently hoped by the nation that his visit might be so conducted as to inspire active and, if possible, lasting loyalty in the many ruling princes and myriads of the Hindostanee people, and thus pave the way to new and useful, if not quite kindred, sympathies between the Eastern and Western divisions of the empire.

Nor was the time deemed an unfavourable one, though there had arisen difficulties which we have already narrated: those with the King of Burmah, in connection with the murder of Mr. A. Raymond Margary, and the disturbances at Perak

and Rangoon threatening complicated trouble in the Straits Settlements; but then it seems vain to look for perfect peace and calmness over the whole of an empire so vast and so varied in its component parts as ours in Asia.

The details of the royal trip having been fully discussed, the Premier made a statement on the 8th of July with regard to the expense of it, for which he asked the vote of the House of Commons. That vote was pretty generally deemed to be an error on the side of economy rather than extravagance; and it is pleasing to recall and record the fact that only a very moderate amount of the expenditure was permitted to fall upon the Indian exchequer.

In reality, the general sentiments of the British people seemed to express that they would rather have seen a handsomer sum-total bestowed on an undertaking of such national importance and political significance; however, all that was done was done with genuine cordiality; and the noble Indian transport ship, the *Serapis*, was docked for the purpose, and rapidly transformed into a temporary but magnificent royal yacht.

This vessel—a screw-propeller of iron, of 6,200 tons burden, with engines of 700 horse-power—was nobly fitted up expressly for the Prince and his suite. His apartments on the upper deck consisted of a reception, dining, and drawing-rooms, divided each from the other only by hangings, so that all three might be thrown into one great State cabin. Each set of rooms was in itself complete, consisting of a bed-room, bath-room, and boudoir, a double arrangement, to allow the Prince to avail himself of each side of the vessel during the outward and homeward voyage, with a view to coolness and comfort.

These apartments were all decorated with almost Oriental elegance; their walls were painted white, relieved with blue and gold, with green window-blinds and hangings of bronze yellow. The polished oak furniture was all of the Tudor fashion, and double sets of Indian punkahs, pulled by six Chinamen, kept the cabins cool and airy. On the upper deck and poop there was constructed a well-covered deck-house, with ample windows on four sides; while in the lower saloon and cabins every accommodation was made for the suite who accompanied the Prince.

Among these were the Duke of Sutherland, the Lords Aylesford, Carington, Suffield, Alfred Paget, and Charles Beresford; Sir Bartle Frere, K.C.B., G.C.S.I., once the Resident in Scinde, and afterwards Governor of Bombay; Major-General Probyn, with Colonel Ellis as equerry; the Rev. Canon

Duckworth as chaplain, and Dr. Fayrer as physician, with Dr. W. H. Russell, the well-known correspondent, diarist, and journalist, as secretary.

Captain the Hon. Henry Cave Glyn, C.B., commanded the *Serapis*, among the officers of which, as sub-lieutenant, was Prince Louis of Battenburg. For the use of the Prince, a stud of horses was stabled on board the vessel, which was accompanied by her consort, the royal yacht *Osborne*, Commander Francis Durand.

Leaving London on the 11th October, the Prince, after passing through Paris, embarked on board the *Serapis* at Brindisi; from whence, escorted by an imposing squadron, she and her consort sailed on Saturday, the 16th October, for the Piræus, in order that *en route* His Highness might visit the royal family of Greece. At Athens he saw the wonderful effect produced by the illumination of the Parthenon, the Acropolis, and other monuments of classical antiquity, by artificial fires at night; and on the 23rd of October was at Port Said, the Mediterranean entrance to the Suez Canal.

At nine on the same evening he reached Cairo, and was there received by the Egyptian Khedive, and stayed for three days in the Ghezireh Palace,

that overlooks the waters of the Nile; and, like the ruins of ancient Athens, the Great Pyramid was specially illuminated for him in the evening by artificial fires. His passing visit was pleasantly signalled by the investiture of the Khedive's son and heir, Prince Tewfik Pasha, with the Order of the Star of India, as knight commander. The Prince of Wales left Cairo for Suez on the afternoon of Tuesday, the 26th October, by railway, for the camel ride of the desert has long been a thing of the past, though the camel may still be seen, as in patriarchal times, treading his solitary way over the sandy waste.

On the same evening the Prince embarked on the Red Sea, down which he passed in five days and a half, reaching the south-west point of Arabia, Aden—our great coaling station—a dreary place of sun-baked rocks and ashes, on the 1st of November; and after being entertained by General Schneider, our Resident, he continued his voyage that night into the Arabian Sea, after which, in due time, the *Serapis* hauled up for the shores of Western India.

And now, having come to this important epoch in the annals of our Eastern Empire, a few glances at social life there may not be out of place.

CHAPTER LXXIII.

SOME STATISTICS OF INDIAN SOCIAL LIFE IN THE PRESENT DAY.

In the year of the Prince's visit, we find the following singular facts in the census of India—a census ever varying, however, and of doubtful enumeration.

In the north-western provinces were 93,904 servants of Government, 20,454 soldiers, and 313,888 who stated themselves as belonging to learned professions. Of the latter 176,701 were priests, and 40,344 pundits, 11,828 were doctors who bled, 17,458 surgeons, 18,497 were apothecaries, 5,312 schoolmasters, 1,970 conjurors, 509 actors, 140 painters of pictures, 1,320 players on tom-toms and other instruments, 8,065 dancing-girls, 499 dancing-boys and rope-dancers, 6,472 bards, with 3,733 acrobats.

The servants numbered 1,413,987: water-carriers, 154,622; washerwomen, 207,568; barbers, 343,893; sweepers, 206,413; keepers of choultries and caravanserais, 16,405; traders, or those who buy and sell, 954,732; carriers, 437,333; 17,656,006 were

agriculturists, of whom 138,559 were engaged with animals, as grooms and so forth; while a million and a half were engaged in the manufacture of textile fabrics, chiefly as weavers; about a million were connected with food and drinks, and the third of that number were mechanics or artisans; 374,826 were dealers in vegetables, and 733,038 were dealers in metals.

There were 2,500 eunuchs, 479,000 beggars, and 26,800 loose women; 226 "flatterers for gain," 111 alms-takers, and 974 budmashees, or armed bravos; 51 makers of caste marks, such as the eye of Siva, and so forth, on the forehead; 97 grave-diggers, 851 jesters, 259 mimics, 1,000 snake-charmers, and 1,123 astrologers.

In addition to these were many designated as editors, astronomers, "calendar brahmins," who make out almanacs, pedigrees, and tell fortunes; pilgrims, fakirs, dervishes, wizards, and devil-drivers.

A very curious element in the statistics of Indian life is the number who perish annually by the bites of snakes and by wild animals. "We chance to have the means at hand," writes Mr. James Routledge (in the *Graphic*), "of verifying our recollection of the entire number of people who die yearly in India from these causes, and the figures convey a frightful fact. The poorer natives, as a rule, build their huts away from the road, amid foliage which seems as thick as jungle, generally close to a cess-pool, and with a ditch in front, over which they pass by a tree thrown carelessly down to serve as a bridge. Nothing can be prettier to the eye. An English labourer seeing the picture would be apt to envy the Bengal labourer, with his pipe and his hut beneath his bamboo-trees. He and his family often sleep virtually on the ground, and the snake has no difficulty whatever in coming to conclusions with any one of the family he may select. Even the cobra will not follow unless attacked, or unless he fancies himself in danger; but then a very little causes him to fancy danger, and his motions are like lightning and very beautiful, and meaning death in a touch."

He then gives us the statistics of casualties in three years, ending in 1869. There were killed by wild beasts in Madras, 888; in Bombay (exclusive of Scinde), 148; in Bengal, 6,741; in the North-Western Provinces, 2,168; Punjab, 310; Oude, 569; Central Provinces, 1,347; Coorg, 147; Hyderabad, 129; British Burmah, 107. Total, 12,554.

In the same period there were killed by snake-bites—Madras, 760; Bombay (again exclusive of Scinde), 588; Bengal, 14,787; North-Western Provinces, 2,474; Punjab, 1,064; Oude, 3,782; Central Provinces, 1,961; Coorg, not given; Hyderabad, 226; British Burmah, 22. Total, 25,664.

In Madras, during the year ending 30th September, 1876, there were devoured by wild animals 1,163 bullocks, cows, and buffaloes, with 430 sheep, goats, horses, and dogs.*

The duties of the Bengal police include the pursuit and apprehension, not only of thieves and murderers, but also the destruction of wild animals. In June, 1876, an enormous tigress became a terror to the dwellers in the village of Russulpore, and the deputy magistrate ordered the head constable, and five other constables of the Salkira Reserve, to hunt the beast where she lay concealed, within a mile of the sub-division office. Proceeding in a body they poured volleys into the jungle, from which she suddenly sprang on a constable named Madhuram, and lacerated him severely; but he

* *Madras Times*, 1876.

clasped her firmly till she was bayoneted by his comrades, and was found to measure five cubits in length.

In fact, the whole of Central India is infested by wild animals of many kinds—hyenas, leopards, bears, wild boars, jackals, and tigers, which, of course, are the most formidable and destructive; but of their entire ravages we have no statistics more recent than those given. The men, the women, the children, and the cattle, are alike all liable to be carried away, torn, mangled, and devoured. "A tiger or a leopard deliberately quarters himself on a village. He takes up his abode in a neighbouring field or garden, and sallies forth every day to appropriate a sheep or cow, as his fancy urges him. Any villager who dares to interfere is struck down—perhaps killed—by a blow of his paw; and it is easy to conceive the consternation such a visitor creates. Probably there is not a firearm in the village, or no one capable of using it with effect if there be. The wretched villagers must simply suffer and be still till a messenger has been despatched to the nearest spot where the *sahib logue* are to be found; and a party of English sportsmen return to finish up the depredator." There are three ways of tiger-shooting: from the howdah of an elephant, from a scaffolding, and on foot. In the second mode, where the sportsman seats himself on a lofty frame, a carcass is laid below to lure the man-eater within easy rifle-shot—a method, though exciting, so little accompanied by danger, that ladies frequently accompany the gentlemen, and take their work or a book with them.

But on foot the sport is full of peril, requiring nerves of iron and an unerring aim with the most perfect of rifles. Brought face to face with the spotted monarch of the jungle, the ball that only wounds and fails to slay ensures generally the death of him who fires it. "Not unfrequently, too, he has to follow up the track of a wounded tiger in thick jungle, where all is darkness a very few paces in front of him; and before he has time to bring the gun to his shoulder, the maddened beast may burst out of the obscurity and strike him to the earth. The man who has shot a tiger on foot has won the blue riband of sport. He may retire upon his laurels. He can listen with an unmoved heart to tales of daring, feeling assured that you have never been so near death as he has."

With all our boasts of the spread of western civilisation in India, the Police Administration Reports prove how much of ancient barbarism and superstition still exists in the heart of the people; and it is somewhat remarkable that, in the year subsequent to the visit of the Prince of Wales, we



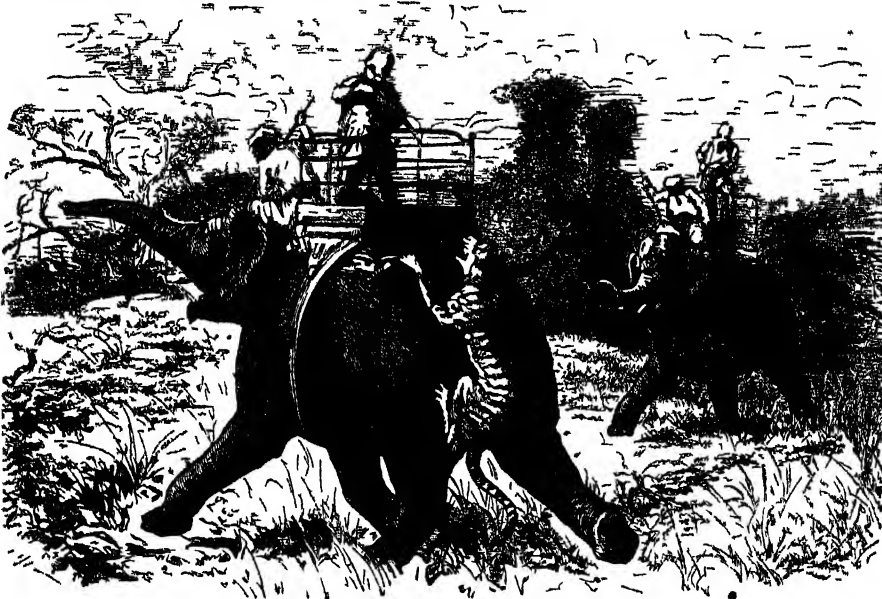
A TIGER-HUNT IN THE KYMMORES.

should have a report of the perpetration of a suttee in Southern India.

In the town of Rama Chandra Puram, in the Stri-vili Puthur division of the province of Tinnevely, a widow lady, aged twenty-five, deliberately immolated herself, in the month of December, in defiance of all the British laws passed against the act of *suttee*. She was childless, and loving her departed husband fondly, ordered a pit and funeral pyre to be prepared in her house for the solemn deed of self-cremation, which she accomplished in the most thorough manner, amid a good deal of religious emotion, ceremonial, and observance. For months before the event she had prepared for

An inquest was held, and the body (finally) burned." The last act of the dismal tragedy may seem superfluous, says a print, but they do these things thoroughly in India; "and, no doubt, all Rama Chandra Puram assembled to see the widow burned by law who had burned herself for love," or, rather, superstition.*

It is but a few years ago that certain officials in Calcutta erected a large oven, in which the bodies of the Hindoos might be rapidly cremated: but this wholesale mode of consuming was rejected as heterodox, yet still, on dark nights, and at the stated places on the holy river, from Calcutta upward to Benares, may be seen the solemn flames



FIGUR-HUNTING WITH ELIHANIS

it. She lavished all her money and jewels on religious mendicants, who had thus their own solid reasons for not thwarting her holy design, and the sequel was thus related by the superintendent of police—

"A few days before her death she, unassisted, dug a pit in the floor of one of her rooms. This was filled by her with sandal and other scented wood. She steeped her clothes in a dye, of which the principal ingredient appears to have been red-ochre. Having made these preparations, she, on the night alluded to, secured all the doors of her house from the inside, enveloped herself in her dyed garments, set fire to the wood, and threw herself into the flames. It was a purely voluntary act; no one assisted her. Her body was found in the pit on the following day, a charred mass. There were also some fragments of dyed cloth.

that reduce the dead to ashes, and may be heard, on the still air of the Indian sky, the wailings that tell of sorrow and separation. The Mohammedan in India, as elsewhere, buries his dead, but the Hindoo commits their ashes to Father Gunga, amid the waters of which they are supposed to be restored to participate in happier scenes than earth can present—a portion of mythology too vast to be entered on here.

To be without a son to close one's eyes is to ensure another period of probation—and perhaps a degrading one—in this world, hence the law of adoption, to which we have had so often to refer. To die in Benares is to secure immortality; and to die on the banks of the Ganges—the highway to heaven—is essential to everlasting joy. Hence, on the Burning Ghaut at Calcutta may be seen at times

* *Globe*, January 10th, 1877.

six or seven bodies, each on its pile of wood—often of the most costly description, if the people be wealthy—surrounded by officiating brahmins and mourning friends.

The Parsees dispose otherwise of their dead. Among the many impure religions and idolatries in British India, none is more remarkable than that of the Parsees—a tribe scattered over all our possessions there, and forming the most wealthy and numerous class of merchants in Bombay, Surat, and Baroach, and who, in commerce, are connected with almost all the European mercantile houses in India. They are the descendants of a body of Persians who, about the year 651, fled from the invasion of the Caliph Omar, and, carrying with them the doctrines of Zoroaster, first appeared in India in the Isle of Diu, off the southern coast of the Goojerat Peninsula, in 766. From thence they emigrated to Damaun, on the eastern shore of the Gulf of Cambay, from whence they sent their colonists to Surat at the embouchure of the Tapti, and to Baroach at that of the Nerbudda. In the city of Bombay their numbers are now estimated at more than 120,000; in other parts of the British dominions in Western India they are estimated at 150,000.

They never become sailors or soldiers, but are all engaged in trade or business. After more than a thousand years' residence in India, they still preserve the colour, blood, and religion of their ancestors—the countrymen of Cyrus and Darius. The Hindoo rajah ruling over the districts in which they first settled not being sufficiently strong to expel them, concluded a treaty, granting them permission to build a temple for that Sacred Fire which they still worship on certain conditions, one of which was that they should never kill a cow, or, on any emergency, eat the flesh thereof—a covenant faithfully kept, it is said, to this day.

They are proprietors of half the houses in Surat. A comely race, athletic, fair comparatively, and well-formed, their women are celebrated for their domestic virtues; but their bloom soon decays, and by the early age of twenty they become coarse and wrinkled. In a portion of her journal relating to Bombay, Mrs. Heber says:—"In our early and late rides I have been interested in observing the men on the sea-shore, with their faces turned towards the east or west, worshipping the rising or setting sun, frequently praying, standing within the surge, their hands joined, and praying aloud with much apparent devotion though, I was astonished to hear, in a language unintelligible to themselves. Others are to be seen prostrate on the ground, devoutly rubbing their foreheads in the sand. . . .

Their principal temple is in the centre of the Black Town, where the everlasting fire is preserved by the priests. I never observed their women at prayer, but they are hourly to be seen, mixed with Hindoos and Mussulmans, in crowds surrounding the wells on the esplanade (which Mr. Elphinstone had sunk at the commencement of the drought, but which in this severe scarcity hardly supplied the population with water), and scrambling for their turn to fill the pitcher and the skin."

Thus in the nineteenth century these singular people still cherish the religious faith of the Zendavesta or Magi, the priesthood founded by Zoroaster some 500 years before Christ.

On a hill in the island of Bombay (called by the Europeans Malabar Hill) stand, all within a short distance of each other, the churchyard of the Christians, the cemetery of the Mussulman, the place where the Hindoos cremate their dead, and the Tower of Silence, where the Parsees leave theirs uncoffined, to be devoured by the birds of the air. It is a lofty square enclosure, without roof or covering of any kind. Huge bloated vultures and kites, gorged with human flesh, throng lazily the summit of the lofty wall surrounding the stone pavement, which is divided into three compartments, wherein the corpses of men, of women, and of children are laid apart, and all nude as they came into the world. Some relative or friend anxiously watches, at a short distance, to ascertain which eye is first plucked out by the birds; and from thence it is inferred whether the soul of the departed is happy or miserable. The Parsees regard with horror the Hindoo method of disposing of the dead, by throwing the bodies or ashes into rivers; yet their own custom is even more repugnant to the feelings of the Europeans in India.

In that wonderful land few things impress the stranger more than the teeming exuberance of animal and vegetable life; and nowhere are those elements more remarkable than among the beautiful Neilgherry Hills, along the slopes of which we fought the armies of Hyder and Tippoo Sahib.

The richest adornment of the Indian landscape is the banian-tree, the size of which is so vast that it would shelter a whole village in case of need. In manufacture the sandal-wood is greatly used, and the pleasant fragrance of it is said never to evaporate; but of all wood in India, there is none so universal in use as the bamboo.

According to Mr. Balfour's work on Indian woods, it is adopted in the manufacture of "hollow cases, bows, arrows, quivers, javelins, spears, and lance-shafts; masts of vessels, spars, yards, and boat-decking; fishing-rods, stakes for stake-nets and

river crab-nets, and fishing-poles; bed-poles, walking-sticks and tent-poles, flag-poles, and the poles of palanquins; scaffolding for building purposes, the floors and supporters of rustic bridges, scaling-ladders, durable water-pipes, and the lever for raising water; carts, litters, and biers; implements for weaving, portable stages for native processions, raised floors for granaries; pen-holder, bottle, can, pot, measure, distilling-tube, tongs, roasting-fork, baskets, buckets, and cooking-pot; rafts for floating heavy timber, framework of houses, floorings of houses, scaffolding, planking, uprights in houses, and roofing; bamboo ware, handles of parasols and umbrellas, hooks, musical instruments, paper, pencils, rules, cages, pipes and pipe-sticks, sumpitons or blowing-tube, chairs, seats, screens, couches, cots, and tables; and parts of it are used as pickles or candied; and other parts are made into paper."

It is possible to go beyond this ample enumeration, but enough has been given to enable the reader, to comprehend the many uses to which bamboo can be applied; hence, when a village is swept away by a storm or by a cyclone, the natives at once proceed to beg for bamboo, as the material which supplies nearly all their wants.

Whether the mass of the Indian people really—at heart—like their European fellow-subjects, is a matter difficult alike to consider and to touch upon. From Bishop Heber's journal we know that, in his days "a bullying, insolent manner" was too frequently adopted by Englishmen towards the natives; and at Agra he found that the French were generally regretted, because, "though oppressive and avaricious," their manners were more conciliating and popular than those of our countrymen; and the bishop tells us of a general officer who boasted that, "when his cook-boat lagged astern he always fired at it with ball." But within this century the old provincial and insular tone of the English character is much changed for the better: improved and developed by travel and friendly intercourse with the people of other lands. The French in India adapted themselves more readily to the new habits and customs of the people, and were less brusque in their manner than the English, who never forgot that they were conquerors, though they often dealt kindly with the natives and won their gratitude; and nowhere was this more nobly evinced than when Clive's sepoys, at the siege of Arcot, contented themselves with the rice-water, to the end that the British soldiers might, in that time of scarcity, obtain the solid rice as food. Apart from fanaticism and much of that inbred ferocity which we have had to detail, there can be little doubt that the natives of

India possess gratitude when kindly treated, and at times are ready to forgive unkindness; and it is impossible to forget how many European lives were saved during the Mutiny by the active gratitude of native servants.

The reports furnished during the years 1874 and 1875 prove by their statistics, in a satisfactory manner, the high value of the sanitary services of those who are engaged in the arduous duty of combating disease and death in British India.*

From these we learn that among the British troops the daily sick and annual deaths per 1,000, in 1874, were as follows:—Bengal, 58.7 and 14.62; Madras, 57.3 and 12.96; Bombay, 53.2 and 10.64; and the Indian army generally, 57.5 and 13.58; but the death-rate in each case was lower in the Madras army than that of any previous year. One explanation of this circumstance is, that in no year of which the statistics have been given did the European troops suffer so little from cholera as in 1874—the number of cases having only been twelve, and the deaths eleven. One-third of the cases of sickness were malarial fevers, which rarely proved fatal: the per-centage of deaths being, for Bengal 1.10, for Madras 1.7, for Bombay 7.6 per 1,000 men. There were many cases of enteric fever; but this disease is chiefly confined to young soldiers.

The military sanitary commission therefore urged that newly-arrived troops should be sent direct to the hills, which hitherto had been used as a sanitarium for those regiments which had become debilitated by long service in the plains. The fact is, that soldiers die from the seeds of diseases brought from the latter, and not by infection caught in the hills; hence, upon the principle that prevention is better than cure, it was deemed desirable that every new regiment should spend its first season among them, especially during the hotter terms of the Indian year.

An examination of the statistics of enteric fever among the European troops in 1874 unfolded some very curious facts; and from which it would appear that enteric fever "is four-and-a-half-fold more frequent among men than among women and children, and that the death-rate among the men is nearly three-fold what it is among officers and women, and about four-fold what it is among children." The figures, as shown in the statistics for 1874, point stringently to the necessity for sending our newly-arrived regiments direct to the hills. The rate per 1,000 in the army generally was:—enteric fever, or disease of the intestines, 1.70;

* "Report on Sanitary Measures in India in 1874-5, together with Miscellaneous Information up to June, 1876," vol. viii., presented to both Houses of Parliament by command of Her Majesty.

dysentery, 1'23; hepatites, 2'16; apoplexy, '95; and all other causes, 13'58. In corps newly landed, the ratios were—enteric fever, 10'17; dysentery, 2'03; hepatites, 2'80; apoplexy, 2'80; all causes, 26'18. To appreciate the mortality in the European army during 1874, it is necessary to institute a comparison with that of preceding years. Thus, it would appear that on taking the ratio per 1,000 of all the deaths in the European troops, the rate, in 1871, was 17'53; in 1872, 24'21; in 1873, 15'30; in 1874, 13'58. While taking the decennial period from 1860 to 1869, including both years, the maximum was:—in Bengal, 45'93 in 1861; in Madras, the lowest was in the same year, and amounted to 16'3; and in Bombay it was the greatest—*i.e.*, 35'1 in 1865. The deaths from consumption and lung-diseases were considerable among the troops invalided in 1874; and during the years 1871-1874 there were 907 men invalided on account of phthisis. From the statistics in these Reports, it was rendered pretty evident that many of the deaths from chest-diseases among our Indian invalids might be prevented. They were generally landed in Britain at an inclement season of year, after being employed in washing decks, &c., on the voyage home, sometimes thrice daily, while taken straight from the burning heat of the Red Sea into the keen winds of the British Channel.

The death-rate among European soldiers' children in India was heavy in the years referred to. In 1871 the mortality per 1,000 children was 74'21; in 1872, 99'08; and in 1873, 60'29. During the seven years, 1868-74, the average mortality in the plains was 94'68, and on the hills, 66'13—facts which pointed to the necessity for sending to the hills every hot season as many young children as possible, and also to the claim which Sir John Lawrence's asylum has on the Indian Government and private benevolence.

The Surgeon-General at Bombay admitted "that a large proportion of the mortality of children under two years of age is preventible, being caused by improper feeding; and thus an allowance of good genuine milk should, by regimental surgeons, be secured for them." But from these Reports, the melancholy fact is evident that in India a very small proportion of soldiers' children ever reach maturity.

Singular to say, the mortality in the native army is not much less than among Her Majesty's troops. The deaths among the sepoys during 1874 were, per 1,000 men, as follows:—In Bengal, 13'1; in Bombay, 10'9; in Madras, 9'8; the mortality in the different presidencies being, for European soldiers, Bengal, 14'62; Bombay, 10'64; and in Madras, 12'96. Our Mussulman soldiers are found

to be the most athletic and healthy; and the Hindoos the least. The health of the troops in the Central India force was announced to be the best; that of those on the Punjab frontier the worst; and in the hospitals everywhere, the most important item in the total of admission was malarial fever, induced, perhaps, by the accommodation provided. "That for the Bengal army consists mostly of rude huts, whose floors are on a level with the ground, and which are built with little regard to sanitary principles. These huts are, moreover, in some cases, overcrowded. . . . No change of any importance took place during the year (1874) with regard to the drainage of military stations and sepoy lines. The system is everywhere one of surface and open drains, and subsoil drainage has nowhere been attempted."

The Report tells us that improvements had taken place during the same year in the cantonments of the Madras army, the lines of which are generally stated "to be kept as clean as it is possible to maintain them; but there are inherent defects in many which cannot be removed without an expense which is beyond the limited means of the sepoy, and but little real improvement can be effected until Government is in a position to undertake the responsibility of building quarters for the native troops."

The Report also asserts that the sepoy is in the habit of actually starving himself to maintain his family: for, though the Madras sepoy alone is generally accompanied by his wife and children, those of the other two presidencies remit all they can save to their native villages. "The Surgeon-General suggests that, as milk enters so largely into the diet of the sepoy and his family, a portion of ground in the vicinity of the lines should be allotted to the grazing of the cattle from which the milk is obtained, the animals being kept in the bazaar lines under proper surveillance. The care of the cattle has an important bearing upon health, as even drinking from stagnant pools affects their milk."*

The health statistics of the general population for 1874 are summarised thus:—The registered death-rates in the selected areas of Behgal averaged 24'72 per 1,000, or 28'51 for the town and 21'20 for the rural areas. The mortality was quoted during the "drying months"—October, November, December, and January—and less during the wet season—comprising June, July, August, and September; but least of all in the dry months of February, March, April, and May.

* "Report on Sanitary Measures in India in 1874-5, together with Miscellaneous Information up to June, 1876," vol. viii., presented to both Houses of Parliament by command of Her Majesty.

As regards contagion in cholera, the Sanitary Commissioner for Bengal remarks:—"I know of no instance of attendants on cholera cases contracting the disease, though I do not think such a thing impossible. Quarantine has never prevented cholera entering any country; and it is well it is impossible, for it would stop commerce and all other intercourse between India and other nations to carry it out effectually. The fact is, that intercourse has increased with the rapidity of communication, and that cholera has decreased is pretty good proof that human intercourse is not the chief cause of the spread of that disease." It would appear that, year by year, according to the Army Sanitary Commission, "as the various questions regarding Indian cholera are submitted to the test of observation and experience, the less mystery there is upon the subject. Up to the present time, there is little to report on our knowledge of the intimate nature of cholera; but so far as practical action can be adopted in mitigating outbreaks of the disease, every year's experience teaches the same lesson: that filth, in air, earth, or water must take a chief place among removable causes of this deadly pestilence."

The internal trade of India is largely conducted by boats upon the great rivers--the Ganges, the Jumna, and the Indus; and prior to the introduction of the railways; by land-carriers, travelling merchants, and at fairs. Major Rennel, in his time, estimated the number of boats employed on the Ganges at 30,000; but an official report records, that there passed one point of the river--Sahibgunge--during 1872, no less than 43,000 boats, of different sizes, at the rate of 100 per day during the first half of the year, and 140 per day during the second.

The Ganges (*i.e.*, Ganga, or "the river")--which the Hindoo believes to be the eldest daughter of the great mountain Himavata, and issuing from the root of the Bujputra-tree, to flow direct from heaven--is navigable throughout the year for small boats to the very foot of the Himalayas, and for six months for boats of a larger size; but from Patna to Calcutta, where the navigation resembles that of the sea, both from the breadth of the mighty stream and the storms that arise, it is necessary to employ strong craft of 100 tons and upwards. Between Calcutta and the sea, among the shallows, the boats are used without keels. Those on the Indus are flat-bottomed, square at stem and stern, low forward and high aft, are propelled by poles, and occasionally by sails, when the wind serves. Their construction is cheap and simple; and the boatmen receive only sufficient wages to afford them a little salt, tobacco, and clothing, while grain is supplied

them for food. By the inland navigation in Hindostan proper, salt, grain, cotton, and manufactured goods are bartered; and the number of boatmen employed on the rivers of Bengal and Behar far exceeds 300,000.

The Bengalee boat, says Bishop Heber, "is decked over, throughout its entire length, with bamboo, and on this is erected a low, light fabric of bamboo and straw, exactly like a small cabin without a chimney: here the passengers sit and sleep; and here, if it be intended for a cooking-boat, are one or two such ranges of brickwork like English hot hearths, but not rising more than a few inches above the deck, with small, round, sugar-loaf holes, like those in a lime-kiln, adapted for dressing victuals with charcoal. As the roof of this apartment is by far too fragile for men to stand or sit on, and as the apartment itself takes up nearly two-thirds of the vessel, upright bamboos are fixed by its side, which support a kind of grating of the same material immediately above the roof, on which, to the height probably of six or eight feet above the surface of the water, the boatmen sit or stand to work the vessel. They have for oars long bamboos, with circular boards at the end, a longer one of the same sort to steer with, a long, rough bamboo for a mast, and one, or sometimes two, sails of a square form (or rather broader above than below), of coarse and flimsy canvas. Nothing can seem more clumsy or dangerous than these boats. Dangerous I believe they are; but with a fair wind they sail over the water merrily."

The budgerows of passage-boats are accompanied by a luggage or cooking-boat, and a dinghee for communication with the shore. The voyage from Calcutta to Allahabad used to occupy between two and three months, and, in consequence of the obstacles to upward navigation of the river, many articles were unattainable in the upper provinces, till Lord William Bentinck adopted measures for giving the rivers of India their present advantages of steam navigation. In 1832, four iron steamers, of sixty tons each, drawing two feet water, were constructed in London, and launched on the Ganges to ply between Calcutta and Allahabad. Then, and for years before, ships on arriving in the Hooghley were generally three weeks in working up to Calcutta, and the miasmatic swamp proved the grave of many a European in the interval. Now the arrival of a ship is announced by telegraph; a steamer comes down the river, or may be awaiting at its mouth, and she is quickly towed clear of the region of death, and, instead of three weeks, in three days may let go her anchor off "The City of Palaces."

Apart from the railways in the present day, land carriage is performed by oxen, buffaloes, elephants, and sometimes by horses; but wheeled vehicles are seldom used. The proprietors of the cattle are generally the owners of the merchandise, and act as their own drivers. Food is obtained without expense by the wayside; but where buffaloes are employed grain is necessary. The articles of merchandise which are thus transported are cotton, tobacco, sugar, betel-nut, grain, and salt.

There is a wandering tribe of carriers in the Deccan called Lomballies, who interchange the commodities of that part of Hindostan for those of

or travelling merchants, resemble the old Scottish chapmen; they deal in muslins and cottons, &c., and come in great numbers from Goojerat to Bombay. They are distinguished by a red turban, shaped in front like the horn of a rhinoceros, and are chiefly Hindoos, though some are Mohammedans. They are generally rich, and have a stationary as well as itinerant business. When travelling they are attended by coolies, who bear their bales of merchandise.

In addition to these are the Borahs, or petty chapmen, who perambulate the country with a variety of small and cheap articles in their boxes or wallets. For the India and Cabul trade the



THE BHISTIS, OR WATER-CARRIER.

Bengal and the adjacent provinces. There are also itinerant grain-dealers, named the Vanjarrahs, in the Mahratta countries—a singular race of people, who travel in large parties with their grain on bullocks, and who occasionally become stationary and apply themselves to husbandry. The Banians,

chief carriers are the Lohanis, a tribe located between Ghuznee and the Indus. They import spices, shawls, brocades, calicoes, muslins, and chintzes; but to glance further at the social life of India, even in the present day, would far exceed the limit of an ordinary chapter.

CHAPTER LXXIV.

THE PRINCE OF WALES AT BOMBAY, POONAH, BARODA, CEYLON, AND TRICHINOPOLY.

At four o'clock in the afternoon of the 8th of November, the Prince of Wales—whose movements we shall detail briefly in chronological order with other events—landed from the *Serapis* at Bombay,

where he was received by the governor of that presidency, Sir Philip Wodehouse, K.C.B., and Lord Northbrook, the Viceroy. The fleet which accompanied him consisted of thirteen vessels of



THE MAHARAJAH OF OODEYPORE AND THE BRITISH RESIDENT.

war, including two turret-ships, the *Abyssinia* and *Magdala*. One portion of it had been drawn up in a double line, and around its inner end the remainder were anchored in the form of a crescent. H.M. ship *Undaunted* bore the flag of Admiral Macdonald, Commander-in-chief on the East India station.

In the harbour were about two hundred ships, all decked with colours, presenting a gay spectacle; and as the *Serapis* steamed in, the yards of the fleet were manned, and loud British cheers rang on every side; then as she entered the sea-way formed by the double line of stately war-ships, their cannon thundered in a salute, while those of the land battery at the Apollo Bunder joined. The live-long day there had been bustle and excitement in

Bombay. All the house-tops commanding a view of the sea had been crowded; so had the beautiful Malabar Hill, dotted with white dwellings and covered with brilliant foliage; all day had crowds of people been hurrying towards the dockyard, on foot, or in every imaginable kind of vehicle, including bullock-gharries, with their jingling bells and flowing sun-curtains; while Europeans, Hindoo Mohammedans, and Parsees, all in parti-coloured and varied costumes, kept pouring towards the fort; and the one thoroughfare which led thither from Colaba was literally filled by a living tide whose excitement was indescribable, when the saluting cannon announced that the Prince had arrived, and in a little time would tread the soil of India.

The light breeze wafted away the smoke, the sky was bright and blue, and the royal visitor could be distinctly seen, in his scarlet uniform, standing on the poop of the white *Serapis*, which, when the salute was over, dropped anchor alongside of the *Osborne* and *Euphrates* transport; while all around the harbour seemed alive with dhows, having flags at their mast-heads, and filled with excited and noisy natives.

On landing, the royal barge had to pass through a double line of ship's boats, moored between the jetty and the *Serapis*; and on stepping ashore the Prince was received as we have said, but under a triumphal arch of evergreens and flags, on each side of which were rows of seats. That on the right was set apart for the members of the Council of Bombay, and that on the left for the members of the municipality. On one side, next to these, were the Rajah of Kutch and the young Guicowar of Baroda; on the other were the Rajahs of Kolapore and Marwar, with Sir Salar Jung, representative of the Nizam of Hyderabad. Some sixty other princes and chiefs, all resplendent in costume and arms, glittering with pearls and cloth of gold, with many European ladies, had seats allotted to them round the amphitheatre, where the guard of honour was furnished by the 7th Royal Fusiliers; and the moment the Prince stepped ashore the tidings were telegraphed to every fortress in India, that one simultaneous salute of welcome might be fired over the whole length and breadth of the mighty peninsula.

Together with his field-marshal's uniform, the Prince wore a white helmet and plume, with a scarlet scarf; and after replying to the address of the corporation, proceeded along the central passage of the landing-stage or amphitheatre, shaking hands with the native princes, and addressing some well-chosen words to each—complimenting the Rajah of Kolapore on his accomplishments in English, the Maharajah of Oodeypore on his old and warlike lineage; nor was the little boy-King of Baroda forgotten. Then here occurred a pretty Indian ceremony, performed by twelve graceful-looking Hindoo girls of the Alexandra Institution. They were brilliantly attired in loose satin dresses of yellow, blue, and pink, and bore little baskets of rare flowers, which they held with one hand above the head of the Prince as he was about to enter his carriage. Then each said: "I would gladly give up my life for thy safety," and strewed the flowers in his path, after the mode of the Hindoo and Parsee women when a bridegroom stands on the threshold of his bride; at this picturesque incident the Prince seemed both sur-

prised and pleased. He was then driven, with Lord Northbrook, towards Government House, which was anciently a monastery of the Portuguese Jesuits, and stands at Parell, four miles from Bombay; but many magnificent additions have been made to the original edifice, which was held by the Company of Jesus until 1720.

The 3rd Hussars, in their white pith helmets, headed the long and brilliant procession, which was closed by a squadron of the Bombay Lancers. During the five miles' drive the line of the procession was described as one of extraordinary interest. "On each hand were dense throngs of natives, not in the cold grey dresses to which we are accustomed in England, but in the picturesque white costumes of the East. Here and there in the white mass was the dark robe of some Parsee, who affects a soberer colour than the majority of his race. On each side of His Royal Highness was a sea of red turbans of many shapes, five miles long, from the dockyard to Parell, broken only by the white, close-wrapped turbans of some group of Mohammedans, or the peculiar and unshapely conical head-gear of the Parsee. In the native town the police, who kept the route, formed—with their dark blue dresses, massive belts, and yellow turbans—a striking contrast to the background of white which filled the footpaths and every window and shop-front. Native ladies did not disdain to be present in the crowd, and their brilliant gold and silver embroidered garments added to the gorgeous variety of the spectacle which greeted His Royal Highness's eyes. On the other hand, viewing the procession from the spectator's point of view, it was but a passing glimpse that any one could have, either of the Prince or of any of the native chiefs who had come to Bombay to do honour unto their future lord."

On the 9th of November the Prince held his birthday levee in the reception-room of Government House, on a stately throne, behind which stood his attendants, clad in scarlet, with Prince of Wales's plumes embroidered on breast and turban, and holding those mystic emblems of Indian royalty, the *moorchuls* and *purhoona*: the former being fans of peacocks' tails, and the latter fly-flappers, made of feathers of the hooma bird, studded with precious stones. At the arrival and departure of the native princes, salutes of cannon were fired in accordance with their relative rank. Thus, the young Maharajah of Mysore was entitled to twenty-one guns; he of Oodeypore, though highest in pride of race, could claim but nineteen guns; and Sir Salar Jung had seventeen. Each prince was attended by from six to nine of his chief

nobles, with the political Resident at his court; and each of their attendant sirdirs, according to Oriental custom, offered a *nuzzur*, or present of five gold mohurs, to the Prince, upon a folded handkerchief laid upon the hands placed together. These were, of course, remitted, being simply touched by the Prince in token of recognition.

The ceremony of Attar and Pan was then performed, when betel-nut is presented, but not put into the mouth, and attar of roses is sprinkled. In each case the Prince of Wales presented the attar and pan to the rajahs, after which, Major Henderson, the officer on duty, did so to the attendant sirdirs; for all things in India are governed by the strict law of precedence.

On this day the Prince of Oodeypore was remarkable among the gorgeous costumes around him for the simplicity of his dress, which was entirely composed of snow-white cotton. Rajpoot-like, his shield was slung upon his back by a gold belt, and on being presented to his future sovereign he held his native tulwar in his hand. He was a young man, dark even for a native of India, with a dull pace and backward manner, that made him hang in the rear of his own followers, all of whom were richly dressed. The alleged descendant of Rama, he is the greatest of all the Rajpoot princes, and possesses a territory having more than 1,200,000 souls.

The illuminations of Bombay on this night exceeded anything that had ever been witnessed there before. Anchored on the placid waters, under the clear Indian sky, the main-decks of our war-ships were literally ablaze with countless fires of many colours, which glared through the portholes, while aloft the yard-arms were coloured with burning lights. Showers of rockets curved through the sky, to fall downward in innumerable cascades or sheets of sparks; and from all the merchant shipping flashed fires of every hue, with showers of ascending rockets. The entire harbour was one blaze of rainbow-hued light; while on the fort and elsewhere oil lamps traced out the features of the buildings with that effect which is so striking in all Oriental illuminations; and but for its unparalleled grandeur, the scene would have been a weird one; and on his return to Government House, after beholding it, the Prince said: "He had always wished to see India, and he should never forget his thirty-fourth birthday, passed in a city of that great empire of the Queen."

On the 10th, after returning the visits of the native princes, he attended an open-air treat given to 11,000 native children, in the oval meadow near the Government offices, and was greeted by a compliment peculiarly graceful and novel.

A Parsee girl, chosen for her rare beauty, and named Miss Ardaseer Wadia, approached the Prince and Sir Philip Wodehouse, laden with wreaths of jasmine. One of these she held before the former, who, mistaking her intention, took it in his hand, but Sir Philip, more experienced in local customs, bowed, and permitted her to place it round his neck. The garlanding of the Prince then followed. She then presented him with a bouquet of roses and yellow Christmas flowers; after which, the Hindoo girls in Mahratta, and the Parsee girls in the language of Goojerat, sang an anthem in his praise, with fervent wishes for his happiness.

The 11th was deemed a kind of naval festival, when the Prince visited an enormous marquee erected on the Esplanade, where upwards of 2,000 seamen, marines, and soldiers were banqueted, and won all their hearts by his genial address, by moving among them, and drinking their healths. He afterwards inaugurated the Sailors' Home, and laid the foundation-stone of the Elphinstone Dock.

The former was an institution commenced in honour of Prince Alfred's Indian visit, and much generosity was exhibited by the native princes on that occasion: the Guicowar of Baroda gave £20,000; while, as it is the custom of wealthy Indians to commemorate great occasions by acts of munificence and charity, in honour of Prince Alfred's visit, the Rao of Kutch set aside £15,000 for the endowment of schools throughout his dominions; Sir A. D. Sassoon gave £10,000 for the erection of a high school in Bombay; the Chief of Jum Khundee gave £10,000 more for the construction of reservoirs; the Princes of Joonaghur and Bhownuggur gave each the same sum for public works; and many other princes were equally lavish in their generosity.

In laying the foundation of the dock, in addition to the European Masonic lodges, the Prince was attended by various others, who wore the usual insignia, sashes, aprons, &c., over Parsee, Hindoo, and Mohammedan dresses; and his chief assistant was Captain Morland, Grand Master of all Scottish Freemasonry in India. On the 12th, Sir Philip Wodehouse, with a brilliant party of some hundreds, entertained the Prince by a visit to the famous caves of Elephanta on the isle, which lies five miles distant from Bombay, and which the four steamers conveying the party reached about sunset. These ancient rock-hewn temples are approached by a steep ascent, for half a mile through rocks, trees, and tropical plants, from the landing-place; and the whole excavation is supposed to have been dedicated to Siva.*

* Trans. Bombay Lit. Soc., 1820.

Elephanta lies among the group of isles that shelter the harbour, and consists of two hills, covered with trees, creepers, and brushwood, abounding in snakes. Near the landing-place is the figure of an elephant, the size of life, hewn out of a rock, which, probably, gave its name to the island; that by which the natives distinguish it being very different. A long stair, hewn, like all the rest of the edifice, out of the living rock, leads to a terrace, from which opens the grim, black interior of the mysterious temple, overhung by mighty weeds of tropical growth. Long tiers of squat columns, elaborately carved, support the flat roof, under which the brightest daylight quickly fades away into artificial evening and then darkness: though for a space the eye can discern the monstrous figures of gigantic gods and goddesses, till at the extremity of the great arcade it may trace out, looming, a colossal bust of the three-faced god of Bhudda, hewn of grey stone out of the side of the mountain, filling the whole place with an oppressive sense of mystery by the changeless aspect of those three great visages, each of which measures seven feet from eye to chin.

Fifteen feet in height, this central figure represents Brahma the creator, Vishnu the preserver, and Siva the destroyer; the faces of the two first are mild and solemn, but that of Siva is very different: "severity and revenge, characteristic of his destroying attribute, are strongly depicted; one of the hands embraces a large cobra di capello, while the other contains fruit, flowers, and blessings for mankind—the lotus and pomegranate are easily distinguished. The lotus, so often introduced in Hindoo mythology, forms the principal object in the sculpture and paintings in their temples, is the ornament of their sacred lake, and the most conspicuous beauty in their flowery sacrifices."*

Though much defaced by the iconoclasm of the Mohammedans and Portuguese, this wonderful temple still retains much of its original splendour; and was the singular place chosen in which to entertain the Prince of Wales. The Great Temple measures 130½ feet by 135 feet; the square pedestals of the pillars, which are ranged in alleys, measure thirty-two feet; and the columns and capitals are circular, and elaborately ornamented. In this extraordinary cave-temple, whose age and origin are unknown, was spread a stately feast, the tables being ranged close by the mighty effigies of the mythological triad; and when the pillared caverns were illuminated to their utmost recesses by red, blue, and green fire, the weird grandeur of the spectacle was beyond all description: the huge and fantastic

shapes of the monstrous idols appeared more preternatural in the glare of red and blue lights burning at each side. The raised table, occupied by the governor, the Prince, and about twenty other guests of rank, had the mighty visages of stone just behind and above their seats. On the right hand of the Prince, as he sat, was the hermaphrodite representation of Siva; on his left was the marriage of Siva with Parvati and the conflict between the former and the ten-headed god. "I am far from advocating Hindooism," says Forbes, "but I confess that a view of these excavations has often caused pious meditation, and filled my mind with awe, though I was surrounded by idols."* But the enjoyment of the company assembled there on the 12th of November was in no way marred by those terrible conceptions of Hindoo mythology.

The Prince of Wales, after visiting the great Hindoo Temple and Holy Tank at Walkeshwar, the Parsee Towers of Silence, and the Hindoo cremation-ground at Sonapore, visited Poonah by special train, and was received by the whole garrison, under Major-General Lord Mark Kerr, and, escorted by a battery of artillery, the Poonah Horse, and governor's Body Guard, passed under a triumphal arch inscribed with Persian characters, and between platforms filled with European ladies and officials and the leading Parsee and Mohammedan inhabitants, whose address of welcome was presented in a silver casket by Khan Bahadoor Pestoorjee, member of the Legislative Council. Poonah—though still full of brahmins and of Mahrattas, who yet speak with pride and regret of the glory of Sevajee, and how, on the adjacent field of Kirkee, fell the honour of the last of the Peishwas—welcomed the Prince with enthusiasm. A procession, which passed between a dense crowd of natives in white robes with head-dresses of every colour, and countless women and half-naked children, conducted him to Gunesh Kind (a palatial residence erected by Sir Seymour Fitzgerald); and when evening fell the fires of welcome burst forth on all the adjacent heights, and from the windows could be seen the distant city, glittering with lamps, torches, and bonfires, Parvatis Hill and Temple rising high in the air over all. This place the Prince visited on the following day, at the cool and bracing hour of six a.m., ascending to the temple on an elephant, up the long and fatiguing flight of several hundred stone steps, all of which are laid upon a slope, and some of which are eight feet in height, and all worn slippery by the feet of pilgrims. In the court of the temple stands a figure of the sacred bull; beyond it, in the gloom of the fane, stands the gro-

* Forbes's "Oriental Memoirs." London, 1810.

* Ibid.

tesque image of Siva, before which at least 2,000 heads are bowed in worship daily. Around were seen the chapels of the gods of Wisdom, Love, and Light, and of Parbutty, the wife of Siva. Below, in the morning haze, stretched the field of Kirkee.

After returning to Bombay, on the 17th of November, the Prince presented new colours to the 21st Native Infantry or Marine Battalion, in presence of the entire garrison; after which he begged Colonel Carnegie, commanding, to give him possession of the old colours (pale yellow, inscribed *Hyderabad*), that he might give their sun-scorched remnants a prominent place in his house at Sandringham. Among many other incidents, such as a performance by snake-charmers, not the least remarkable was a visit paid him by Aga Khan, of one of the best Persian families in British India, and who is lineally descended from Hassan-ben-Sahib, founder, in 1090, of the fierce sect of the Assassins; and the same terrible "old man of the mountain" who played his part in the time of the Crusades, and disposed so summarily of the Marquis of Montserrat and Louis of Bavaria. But it is said that "a more peaceful citizen does not now live in Bombay than the respected representative of the Assassins, who has retained nothing of the old Syrian instincts except the passion for a desert-bred barb."

On the 19th of November, His Royal Highness visited the Government of the Guicowar at Baroda—that boy prince whose succession has been elsewhere detailed, and was received by the able Minister, Sir Madhava Rao. The journey of 260 miles from Bombay was performed by a night-train. The 83rd Regiment, the Bombay Lancers 3rd Hussars, and other corps, formed the guard and escort on the arrival of the Prince, who was received by the Guicowar, who placed him on a gorgeously caparisoned and painted elephant, the howdah of which was solid gold, while the bands played and the cannon pealed their salute. In front was a line of elephants, all kneeling, and the suite followed on others when the procession was formed. The entire road to the Residency, for a mile and a half, was decorated with garlands of flowers. Most picturesque was the pageant. First went footmen in white and scarlet costumes, carrying spears and banners; others in scarlet and white, bearing fluttering bannerets; and then marshal-men on horseback. A state umbrella was held over the Prince's head, while on each side of him men waved feather fans and yaks' tails. Indian cavalry lined the way, while mounted land-holders, lancers, matchlockmen, mounted Indian bands, and the troopers of Baroda,* made up the triumphal march. At the

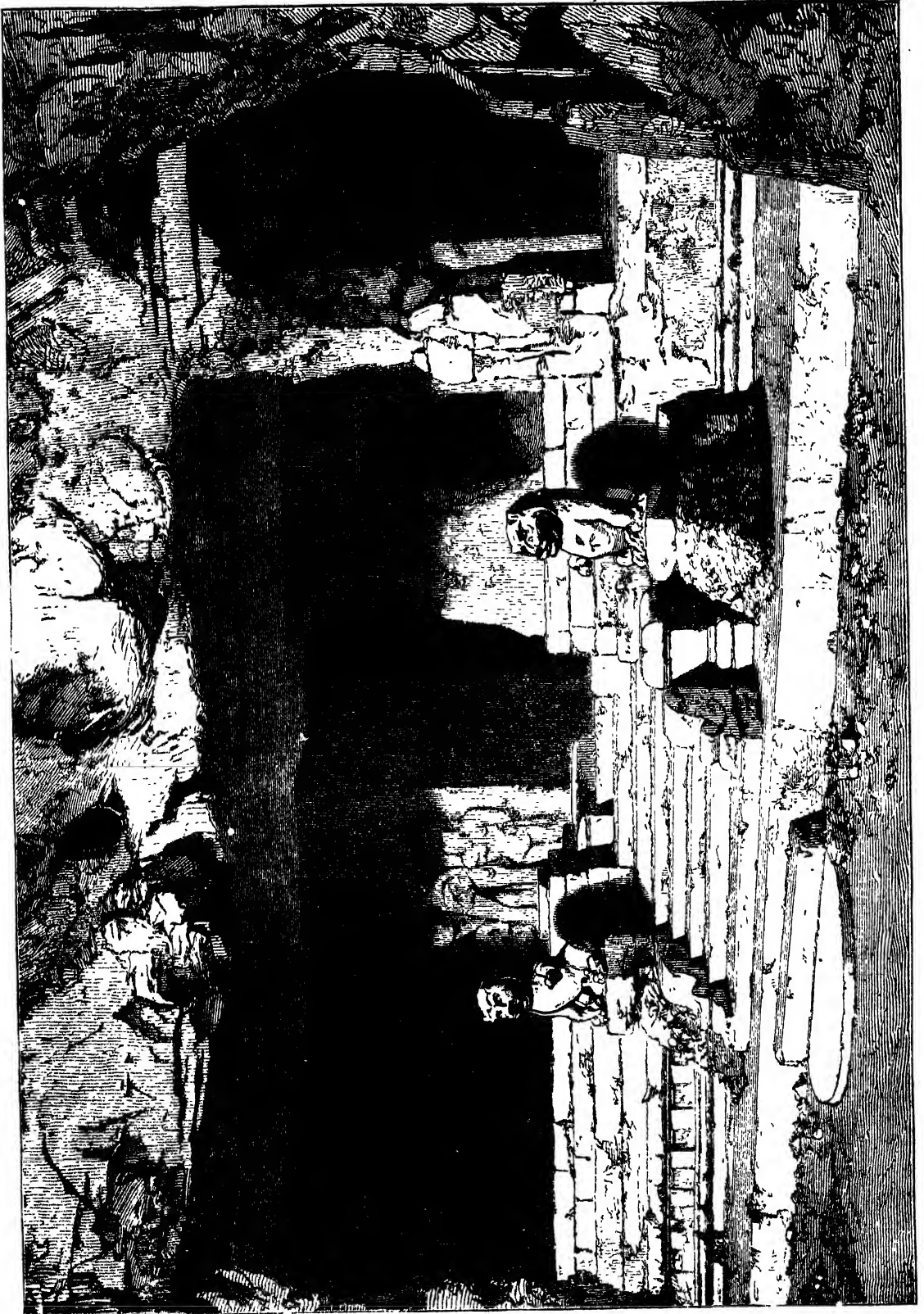
entrance of the Residency were four native chariots, entirely formed of gold and silver, drawn by oxen with gilded horns; a royal salute was fired, the Prince's standard hoisted, as he led the young Guicowar up to the reception-hall, which the latter soon after quitted for his own palace.

In the afternoon, the Prince, to return the visit, drove to the Mooteebagh, through streets lined by soldiers without arms and by police; and a most exciting entertainment was provided for him, including wrestlers and combats between elephants, rhinoceroses and buffaloes, tigers, rams, and camels. For the elephant fight proper, the contending pairs were carefully trained and prepared beforehand with stimulating food and certain drugs; pitted against each other, the vast animals were seen to charge like mountains rolling together, their huge tusks to clash and ring, while their great feet raised the dust in clouds and tore up the earth as they rose erect against each other, and each flourished his great proboscis in the air. In these conflicts, sometimes a weak elephant is forced to the earth, and gored or stamped on till he dies; but, provided the tusks have not been tipped with pointed steel, they generally live to fight again and again.

In the demesne of the Muckwanpoora Palace, eight miles from Baroda, a hunting party was made. The Prince went by rail, and found the elephants, carts, horses, and shikarees already on the ground. "The Prince first examined the cheetahs—hunting leopards or cats, with hooded eyes—they purred like cats, and were five in number. The Prince then mounted an ox-cart with the Duke of Sutherland, and the rest of the suite followed on similar vehicles, which are intended to permit the sportsman to approach the black buck, who are accustomed to see such vehicles traversing the country. These carts were, however, too highly ornamented, and the *cortège* was much too large. The officials', special correspondents', &c., line of carts, drove across the plains of cotton grass, which were very picturesque. The elephants and tamars were halted in the rear."* Herds of the wild black buck began to appear, and one was nearly pulled down by a cheetah after a 500 yard run, but escaped. Ere long it overtook and pulled down another, the blood of which was given to the other cheetahs, and soon two more of the deer were killed; but, though the sun was very hot now, the Prince preferred the use of his rifle.

On the evening of Sunday, the 21st, he again visited the ancient palace of the Guicowar, the way to which was brilliantly lighted by Chinese lanterns in double lines, suspended from bamboos, while every house was ablaze with blue-lights and fire-pots.

* *Times*, Nov., 1875.



At intervals were bodies of Horse and Foot. Men in most fantastic costumes stood upon the bridges. "Their faces were painted chalky white; they wore wigs of scarlet ribbed with gold and robes of tissue tinselled; their hair was powdered and dressed fantastically, or drooping over wan faces with

the 25th of November for Colombo in Ceylon; prior to visiting which, he stopped, on the 27th, at Goa, that famous old settlement of the Portuguese which was ours from 1807 till the year of Waterloo, and is now a quiet and decayed little place, the centre of a peculiar caste known in India as the Goanese



PORTRAIT OF H.R.H. THE PRINCE OF WALES.

piercing black eyes. Those figures were grouped on stands along the road also, and were brilliantly lighted up; but the general effect was distressing and unhealthy. The whole city turned out; and the lights on masses of white clothed figures produced combinations which would drive an artist to despair.*

After leaving Baroda, the Prince once more embarked on board the *Scrapis*, which left Bombay on

* *Times*, Nov., 1875.

—a mixed breed of Portuguese, Hindoo, and African, and are darker in hue than any other natives of Hindostan. The Viceroy came off in an eighteen-oared galley of somewhat ancient fashion, with a tiny poop; his rowers wore conical scarlet hats with antique silver plaques, and conveyed the Prince to the pier, when a salute was fired, and he was received by the municipality, the priesthood, and the garrison, while all around the jetty were "gay little steam barges, in their panoply of royal

blue paint and gilding, with silken canopies and ensigns that hung on the skirts of the *May Frere* in her coat of white, and harmoniously enriched the colours of a natural picture—magnificent even in its ordinary and unadorned loveliness.”

Between lines of sepoy and other Portuguese troops the Prince was conducted to the palace, from whence he set forth to view the ancient monuments of Goa, its quays, arsenals, and Government buildings—all in ruin now. Convents, churches, and crumbling palaces crown the heights; the shores are rich yet with cocoa-nut palms, and dense woods clothe the background; but from “Goa the Golden” the glory has departed. The Prince visited the ancient gateway of Vasco da Gama, under which every Viceroy of Goa must pass; the Palace of the Inquisition, and the Cathedral of St. Catherine—which is worthy of the greatest European city—and the Church of St. Gaetano, which is built after the fashion of St. Peter’s at Rome. In litters, called *mancheels*, he and his suite then visited the Church of St. Dominic, which is decorated by paintings of the Italian masters, and wherein lies the shrine of St. Francis Xavier. After examining the marble altar, gifted by a Grand Duke of Tuscany, the solid gold and silver altar-vessels, and quaint cabinets—particularly the oyster-shell films that fill the windows in lieu of glass—he returned to Panjim, the business-place of Goa, and re-embarked on board the *Serapis*, from which he landed at Colombo on the 1st of December.

Amid salutes from the fleet and shore the Prince was received by the Governor, the Right Hon. W. H. Gregory, and Major-General J. A. Street, C.B., and the municipality, and his procession through the town was one continuous triumph; but the chief feature of the arrival in Colombo was the display by water, when some strange old people had engaged drum and fife bands to play in their barges (most discordantly) loyal airs in various keys, and when, in the odd costumes of the Cingalese, “there were young ladies dressed like old men, and old men dressed like young ladies, seated under canopies of foliage, and placidly waiting for the Prince, who kept them for five hours, owing to unforeseen accidents and the wrong calculations of his suite; but there was nothing but goodwill and loyalty.”* The Prince was greatly impressed by the teeming vegetation of that wonderful isle, on the shores of which the bright blue sea rolls for ever in one long wave upon the golden sand, while the snowy surf is so dazzling in the sunshine that the eye can scarcely look upon it; where the cocoa-nut palms overhang the water, and at night are all sparkling with red fire-

flies; where the wooded hills inland, and the azure bay, wherein the diver hunts for pearls, and the forest, filled with a hundred different kinds of timber, from white satin to sable ebony, are all lovely to look upon—the former wood being so plentiful that the longest bridges are made of it—and over all the mighty talipot-tree, a single leaf of which makes a hut for the peasant and a tent for the soldier. The Prince, like his suite, saw with surprise the native men wearing chignons, semi-circular combs in their hair, long petticoats, and low shoes; and among them were seen old gentlemen adorned with discs, or torques of gold, given them as rewards for their good behaviour by successive Governors of Ceylon.

The Prince’s arrival at Kandy was the next important incident of his royal progress. At the railway station he was received by a guard of honour of Her Majesty’s 57th Regiment, and the band of the old (but now extinct) Ceylon Rifles, the officials, and the great Kandyan chiefs. “These last were marvels to behold,” says an eye-witness, “and their costume was most singular and gorgeous. Upon their heads they wore pincushion-shaped hats of about eighteen inches square. These were of white material so embroidered with gold that the ground was hardly visible. Upon the top were ornaments in a style which, for want of a better name, one would call Chinese. It consisted of a light golden stem some three inches long, from which branched, coming downward, a number of arms like the pendant balls on the top of a Chinese pagoda. From some of these branches hung little twinkling gold stars, while others terminated in small coloured puffs of floss silk. Round their necks they wore collars put on a plain band and pendant some six inches on the shoulders and back. These collars were all plaited, and most of them were finely embroidered with gold. Their jackets were made of superbly rich and stiff brocaded silk. These jackets were made to rise and stick sharply out at each shoulder, exactly as I have seen in certain specimens of old armour. No two out of the twenty chiefs present had the same pattern or coloured brocade. Underneath the jacket was a white shirt, but this was scarcely shown through the massive gold chain which they wore round their necks; while round the waist was a broad embroidered gold belt. But the lower garments were even more extraordinary than the upper; they consisted of masses of muslin folds, giving them the appearance of enormous swollen bellies. In the bulge in front were stuck two or three daggers. The muslins were in all cases very fine, and were white, with a broad stripe round what would have been the

* *Daily Telegraph.*

bottom had not the front part been somehow looped up; beneath were white calico drawers with a frill round the ankle. Below all came the naked foot. Upon their fingers were rings with an immense amount of jewels. Some of the faces of the rings were like small targets: one I saw being more than two inches in diameter, with concentric circles of various kinds of stones. Most of these chiefs were portly in person, and, putting aside the addition due to these skirts, of graceful and pleasant aspect.*

At the knighting of the governor, on the evening of the 3rd of December, in the hall of the old Kandyan kings, in addition to the members of the British colony and the "burghers," who crowded near the Prince's throne—which was an ebony chair, canopied with crimson silk—there was a throng of Kandyan Ratamahatmeyas, in their gorgeous but uncouth costumes. The twenty chiefs formed a semi-circle, and their interpreter, resplendent in blue, gold, and tortoiseshell, rendered to them the gracious remarks of the Prince. They were then presented in fours by the officers in charge of their respective districts; this concluded the ceremony: and the Prince walked down the line of Kandyan ladies, shaking hands with the wives of the chiefs, and saying to each a word or two, which, of course, was unintelligible to them.

The Prince now visited the Dalada Maligawa, or Sacred Tooth of Buddha, which is held in such extreme veneration by the people of Ceylon; and it was fortunate that the temple containing it was within the precincts of the palace, as a storm had burst in all its tropical fury, and the rain was falling as it falls only in Ceylon. Through close ranks of hundreds of Buddhist priests, all clad in robes of yellow silk, with shaven heads and right arms bare, the Prince went along the sacred corridor and up a flight of steps to the shrine, with twenty European attendants, into a little chamber eight feet square, gorgeously lit, but hung with heavy drapery; and the chief priest, after exhibiting many relics, jewellery, and precious stones, produced at last a gold casket covered with diamonds, rubies, and sapphires, the lid of which he raised slowly and with reverence, and therein was all that was mortal of the deity Gautama Buddha!

Saved out of the ashes when he was burned, it was, according to the legend, long kept in the palace of Kalinga—the old name of a kingdom of Madras, called Dantapoor, or "the City of the Tooth"—from whence it came to Kandy in the fourth century. As Buddha was twenty-seven feet in height, it is not surprising to find this dental bone one inch and a half in length, and much

browner than old ivory. Set in a glass pagoda, it is further secured by an iron cage having three keys, each of which has a guardian, and consequently it can only be seen in presence of the three. After this, the Prince was shown the largest emerald in the world, about four inches long and two deep, "in the form of a likeness of Buddha;" and then a sapphire as large as a walnut; receiving from the priests, at the same time, a copy of their sacred books; and so ended the visit to this wonderful tooth, for which a King of Siam offered a million sterling.

The ceremony of hearing the holy words of Buddha was to take place in the Octagon, a tower from whence the Kings of Kandy were wont to view their assembled subjects. It is an eight-sided apartment, opening on a verandah, seated in which the Prince could look down on the vast esplanade in the centre of the town, and on the people massed in many, many thousands, waiting to see the public Perahera, or Procession of Elephants, though the rain was falling still, and effectually marred the ceremony (the antiquity of which extends beyond all historical certainty) by extinguishing the lanterns and torches; and the multitude dispersed, drenched to the skin.

On the 4th of December the Prince left Kandy for an elephant-shooting expedition in the dense jungle about Ruanwalla, near an old Dutch fort of that name; and the tidings that he had met with an accident created some consternation, from exaggeration of the facts, which were these:—The Prince advanced on a platform in the jungle, where seven elephants were hidden, and one of these was named "a rogue," from his charging propensities; and to ensure that he should fall by the royal rifle a number of beaters were sent to drive him past the crow's nest, from which the Prince eventually descended and entered the bush, accompanied by two shots of colonial celebrity. The Prince now wounded an elephant, which escaped with ease. The second chance was more successful; a fine one was brought down, and his tail presented as a trophy to His Highness; but the return journey to Ruanwalla was troublesome: the night was dark, and the native torches, far apart, with fire-flies, were the only lights to be seen. The governor's coachman upset the carriage, from which the Prince escaped unhurt, though covered with the debris, and was able to hold a levee next day at Colombo.*

On this occasion there was even a greater variety of costumes than at Kandy; there were, in addition to the old chiefs already described, the Buddhist priests, with Mohammedans, Hindoos,

* *Standard.*

* *Daily Telegraph.*

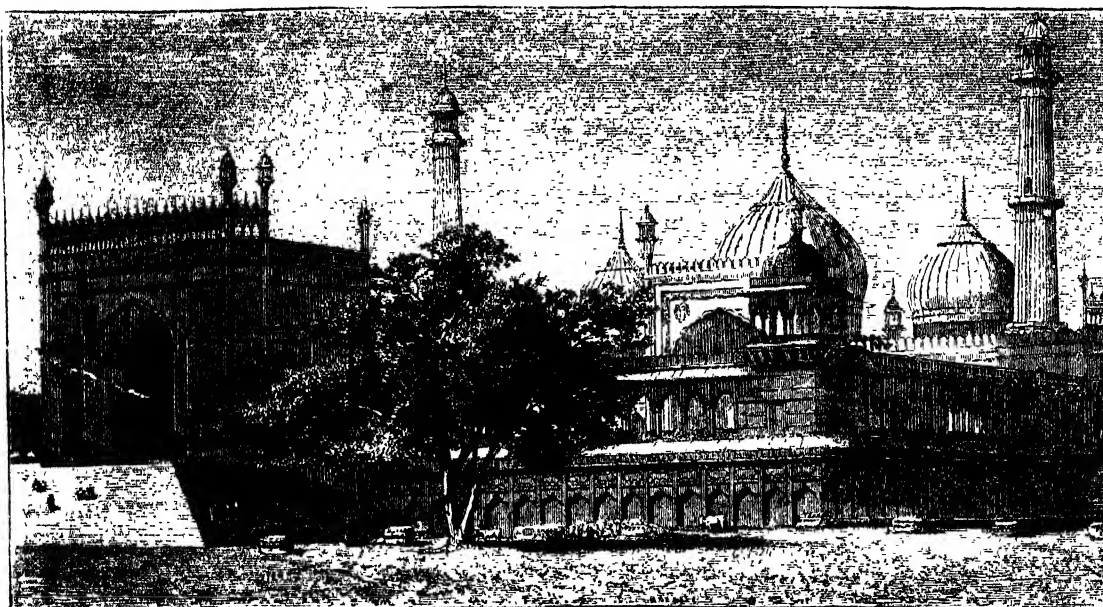
hung down in one coil to their waists. Heavy nose-rings of pearls scarcely, to unaccustomed European eyes, contributed to the enhancement of their beauty. They wore short jackets of embroidered silk in various colours. Their waists were girdled by a belt of elastic gold, supporting loose floating drapery of white muslin, with heavy borderings of gold, studded with jewels and bouquets of flowers. Around their necks hung great strings of pearls down on their bare bosoms; their wrists and ankles glittered with jewelled bangles."

One danced the *Gnyana*, a *pas seul* peculiar to the Carnatic; and the native music and singing continued until past three next morning, long after the

broken by the grass-grown ramparts and sloping glacis of old Fort William—a place of many stirring memories.

At the Ghaut, built by public subscription to commemorate the public worth of James Princep, and which has a magnificent flight of steps on the river front, the Prince landed. Splendidly was it decorated for the occasion, but the finest feature there was a column composed of 1,000 British seamen drawn from the men-of-war and merchant ships with the Union Jack flying over them.

When the various native princes came to that stately ghaut, although the names of each were familiar to the others, many had never met before,



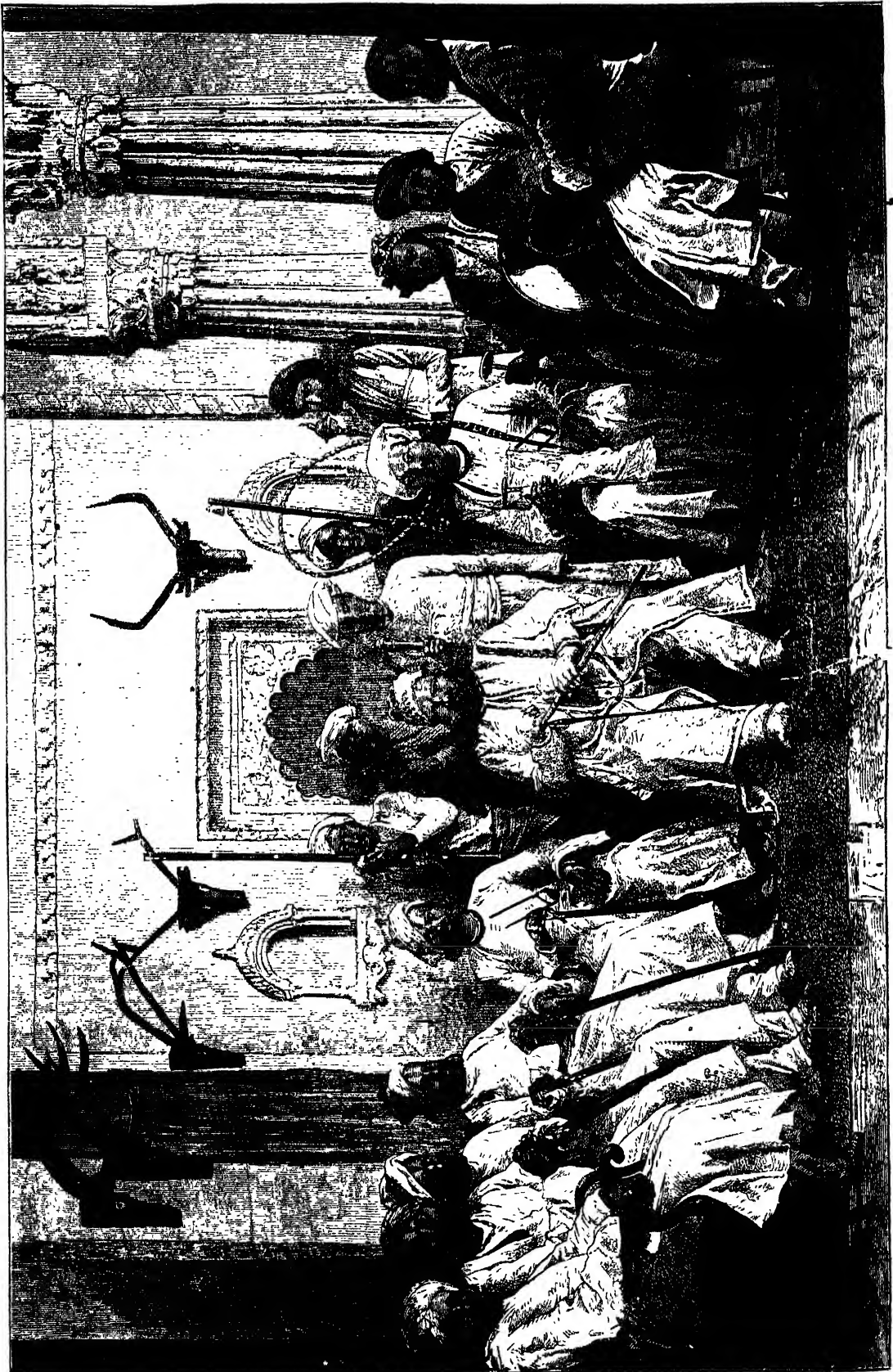
VIEW OF THE JUMNA MUSJID, DELHI.

Prince had retired. On the afternoon of the 18th, after having been at the meet of the Madras hounds, and seen some heavy riding amid the stiff, swampy country and submerged paddy-fields behind the Mount, he embarked on board the *Scrapis*, and sailed for Calcutta.

On the 22nd of December she was off the low, flat, swampy shore of Kedgerce at the mouth of the Hooghley; and proceeding up the stately river, under easy steam, on the following morning reached her moorings opposite Princep Ghaut at midday, when the guns of the men-of-war sent forth their boom—one of them an old sixty-four-gun ship—announcing that the Prince was about to land for the third time on the shore of Hindostan. On the right bank of the river, as the *Scrapis* came up, rose forests of masts covered with countless flags; on the left bank was the vast expanse of the Maidaun,

and they had to be introduced. Among them were seen the Maharajahs of Cashmere and Benares; the former clad in white and gold, with splendid daggers in his sash; the latter grey, bent, and palsied, but gorgeously arrayed in kincob cloth, composed of silk and gold; Scindia with a yellow hat and white robe with diamond armlet, and the riband of the Star of India over his shoulder;* Rewah, Benares, Jodpore, and many others, in all their glittering array of jewels, gay costumes, and kingly splendour, welcomed with bright smiles the Prince, who was also received by the Viceroy with his body guard—the Calcutta Volunteers—under arms, and every man of the least position in the city; and after the usual loyal address he was conveyed to Government House, where he took up his residence, and which faces the Maidaun, which may

* *Daily Telegraph*, 1875.



THE MAHAJAH OF PESHAWAR AND COURT

be best described as the Hyde Park of the "City of Palaces."

On the following day the Prince held his grand reception of the native princes. Among those presented was the Maharajah of Puttiala, son of him who did Britain good service when the way between Delhi and the Punjab was of much vital importance to the Indian authorities. The Prince conversed with him about ten minutes, and presented him with a medal and ribbon in reference to the services of Puttiala in the dark year 1857. Then the guns announced the Maharajah Holkar of Indore, a tall man, who entered the throne-room accompanied by his two sons and his Minister, Ragonath Rao (nephew of Sir Madhava Rao), and a train of *sardars*. Proud, but punctilious, he too received with good grace a gold medal and ribbon.

Next came one, said to be "proud beyond the pride of the proudest," the Maharajah of Jodpore, with a wealth of gems glittering on his neck and breast, his yellow head-dress bound by cloth of gold, displaying an aigrette of diamonds and rubies. His many-folded petticoats descended to his heels, but were looped up by a thick golden girdle. His compeer of Jeypore arrived in a handsome carriage drawn by four white horses, trapped in cloth of gold. The Maharajah of Cashmere had an escort of *sowars* in brass helmets and cuirasses; and then came Scindia, who delighted so much in soldiering that it was said few of our officers could handle a division of horse, foot, and artillery better in the field. Yet lately he had much lessened his authority among his own people by the discovery and imprisonment of the supposed Nana Sahib at Gwalior.

The next presented was the Sultana Jehan, Begum of Bhopal, who arrived in a close brougham, amid a salute of cannon, and who was the descendant of one of those families that had risen to power and place, by British influence, after the Pindaree war. "The door was opened, and out stepped a shawl, supported on a pair of thin legs, and on the top of the shawl was the semblance of a head; but face there was none, for over the head there was drawn a silk hood, and from it depended a screen of some sort of stuff; but this veil concealed features which report says were not at all deserving of such strict retirement, though Her Highness was nearly forty, which is old for India. With her was her daughter, a figure draped and dressed like the first, and quite as old, to judge from appearances, though the lady was only eighteen. They walked very slowly, one after the other, and were led up the steps as if they were performing some remarkable feat."*

* Dr. W. H. Russell.

The last presented was the Maharajah of Kewah, who arrived in a carriage and four, with postilions in green and gold, with breeches and top-boots, and when he took his leave the receptions were over.

The wonderful scene presented by the illumination of Calcutta followed; and to view them the Prince made a circuit of the city, escorted by the Viceroy's Body Guard and a squadron of the Scinde Horse. Everywhere he was received by clapping of hands; but this—the only greeting an Indian crowd can accord—was sometimes varied by a hearty cheer from an occasional group of Britons, and in this the Hindoos sometimes joined.

By a happy notion the Prince resolved to spend Christmas Day on board a British man-of-war; and at the banquet on board the *Serapis* his health was drunk with "Highland honours." She and her consort, the *Osborne*, were then ordered to Bombay to refit for the homeward voyage; while the Prince repaired to Lord Northbrook's house at Barrackpore, a few miles from Calcutta.

On Sunday he visited Chandernagore, now *Calcutta* Pondicherry—the only relic of French ascendancy in India, the little settlement to which we have had to refer more than once in the days of Dupleix and Clive; the administrator of which is now only a lieutenant in the French army, and which, but for British valour and the fortune of war, might have been the capital of a French India.

At Government House, on Monday, the Prince received embassies from Nepal and Burmah, and was present at a singular entertainment in the grounds of Belvedere House, which is the official residence of the Lieutenant-Governor of Bengal, and is engrafted on all that remains of the "Garden House" of Warren Hastings. There were assembled the *élite* of Calcutta, and, as the dusk had fallen, the gardens were beautifully illuminated with festoons of lamps that gleamed amid the luxuriant foliage.

On this occasion, "Sir Richard Temple had brought down from the confines of the north-eastern frontier of India a bevy of the representatives of the wild Naga tribes. The men were fine, stalwart fellows, the women ugly and puny; the dress of the former chiefly consisted of fantastic ornaments, sticking up from their heads; the women were girt from waist to mid-leg in horse-blankets. They exhibited a curious native dance, something like our country dance; but the music was fantastic, and the step grotesque. Then two Naga warriors, stuck all over with tasselled porcupine-quills, and each carrying a leather buckler and a formidable hatchet, like a chopper, sprang into the arena, and

went through the pantomime of a single combat. To these succeeded Naga javelin-men, carrying long spears, with shields of wicker-work, topped with feathers; and the fury and agility with which, to the exciting strains of martial music, they despatched hordes of imaginary enemies, made up a spectacle not to be described."

On the 28th of December the Prince held a levee at Government House, when no less than 2,000 presentations were made, ending with native officers. A State dinner and a native entertainment in the beautiful grounds of the villa of Belgatchia followed. These grounds were laid out, and the mansion built, by Durarkanath Tayon, a native gentleman, who has left an honoured name in Calcutta, as the giver of many sumptuous entertainments, given to make the Europeans and Bengalees better understand each other. All the great native princes were present on this occasion, when a Hindoo pundit presented to His Royal Highness, on a gold plate, a cocoa-nut, some paddy, a few blades of grass, a gold coin, and a bouquet of flowers, as emblems of Indian fertility, plenty, and wealth; while their Vedic students blessed him in song. On this occasion the nautch-dance was a failure; but a melody, to which some lines of Hafiz had been set, was performed by native amateurs, whose singing was nasal, monotonous, and destitute of modulation, to the accompaniment of the sitar, a species of gittern.

Among the feats displayed on this evening was that performed by an ingenious native musician on two silver flutes with his neck. At first it was thought he produced the notes by ventriloquism, as the flutes were without holes or stops; but it seems there is a very delicate apparatus within the instrument, so extremely fine that the smallest quantity of air, propelled by the pressure of the neck on the mouth of the tube, suffices to produce sound.

New Year's Day, 1876, was inaugurated by the Prince holding a Grand Chapter of the Star of India. Most gorgeous and stately was the scene of this episode, but similar to that when the Duke of Edinburgh held the first Grand Chapter. It was in an extensive meadow, carpeted with the greenest turf, and enclosed by canvas, about a mile from Government House; with guards—battalions of Sikhs, bronzed soldiers from the Punjab, and picked men of Bengal—under arms at the entrances to ascertain the rank of all those who claimed admittance. There were sixteen pavilions, adorned with pennons of the chosen colours of the knight to whom they belonged; and beside stood one, who might be termed his esquire, in a fantastic dress of

his master's fancy. At the north-eastern extremity was a dais with silver pillars, canopied with blue silk, the colour of the Order. On this were two chairs; one, of silver and blue, for Lord Northbrook, with a crown behind and golden lions at the sides. On the right was a similar chair, with the triple plume, for the Prince of Wales. In rear of this dais, and along the sides of it, were the rows of seats for spectators—native grandees, British officers in full uniform, and ladies in brilliant costumes. Marines and sailors lined the approach to the grand entrance, and a strong military band encircled the staff from which the Union Jack was floating; but everywhere there was a somewhat incongruous combination of European and Asiatic equipments.

The Rajahs of Jheend and Jodpore arrived first, about eight a.m., in all their Oriental splendour, and there was the Duke of Sutherland in the tartan of a Highland regiment, Lord Alfred Paget in the uniform of a general, and Sir William Gregory in diplomatic costume with the collar of St. Michael and St. George; nor were the gilded hats, red collars, green dragons, and serpent-headed swords of the representatives of the King of Burmah wanting. Amid the thunder of saluting guns, the clash of presented arms, the crash of bands, the hurrying of aides-de-camp and umbrella-bearers, the Prince arrived at eight with all the grand command, preceded by the camp-marshal, Captain R. Grant of the Royal Artillery.

Each knight commander was preceded by six men, at arms and a standard-bearer. The little Begum of Bhopal was the first to enter, muffled up as we have already described, but in the blue of the Order with a shield in the place where her right arm would be, and the medal of the Order hung over her mufflings. Two pages in yellow turbans held her train till she reached her seat. Sir Salar Jung, in black—one account says dark lilac—velvet embroidered with gold, followed; and there were Puttiala, a blaze of brilliants; Lord Napier, his breast covered with medals; Sir Bartle Frere; Scindia, with a white hat and blue feather; and his rival Holkar in a red puggaree; Jeypore the Rajpoot, his robe supported by boys with yellow sugar-loaf hats; Rewah in a diamond helmet, from which a diamond fringe fell over his neck and ears.

Close after the *cortège* of Scindia came that of the Prince. Twelve officers of his suite preceded him; over his head was borne a gold-and-crimson umbrella, and little midshipmen in the costume of the age of Charles II., in blue and silver with plumed hats, bore up his train. The great tent and dais now presented a most brilliant appearance. "I

two lines in front of the central figures on the throne were the great princes of India ablaze with jewels. Behind them were their attendants, scarcely less brilliant. At the further end of the line were the royal servants with fans and *punkahs* (chowries?) of crimson and gold, and other emblems of royalty. Beyond were many other chiefs in wonderful diamonds and precious stones, among them the deputation from Nepal, and the ambassadors from Burmah in pearl helmets. Officers of the fleet and army, officials in court dress, and several officers in foreign uniform were present in this assembly."

On the Prince assuming his seat, the secretary of the Order declared the Chapter to be opened. The roll was called, and the first led to the foot of the throne was the Rajah of Jodpore; he had the golden collar of the Order put round his neck by the Prince, who, in doing so, neither arose nor lifted his helmet, but said:—"In the name of the Queen, and by Her Majesty's command, I here invest you with the honourable insignia of the Star of India, of which most exalted Order Her Majesty has been graciously pleased to appoint you a knight grand commander."

Then followed a blast of trumpets with a salute of seventeen guns, amid which the rajah was led to his seat beneath his banner. The aged Rajah of ~~of scene~~ with a grand white beard, was next installed. ~~cave~~ knights were created with much greater speed, ~~that~~ still with much ceremony; though a remarkable ~~dignour~~ was conferred on two Scottish gentlemen—Colonel the Hon. Henry Ramsay, and Mr. W. Rose Robinson, who were the last; for not only did they obtain the collar of the Order from the hand of the Prince, but each received an accolade on the shoulder from his sword, creating them Knights Bachelors of Great Britain, and then the Chapter was declared dissolved. The Viceroy's guard and the knight

commanders and companions "followed in reverse order of their entry, so that from the durbar tent there seemed to flow an array of banners, plumes, and dazzling colours, the like of which was never seen even at the coronation of a king of Hungary. Nowhere else could be seen such a combination of Asiatic costumes."

But this splendid gathering did not close the festivities of the New Year's Day, which included the unveiling by the Prince of a statue of the unfortunate Lord Mayo on the Maidan; a polo match between the players of Calcutta and Munipore; and a display of fireworks, to witness which the former city poured forth its myriads, and the spectacle of these tens of thousands of brown visages, lit up by mortars, rockets, and coloured fires, was a sight alone worth beholding, and that will be seldom if ever seen again.

By ten in the morning the Prince left Calcutta by train for Bankipore, all the native princes attending at Government House to take their leave of him. The Prince was reminded by Lord Northbrook that Bankipore, the chief civil station of the important division of Patna, was the great headquarters of the local administration which coped with the destitution in Tirhoot; thus it was, with graceful propriety, he visited the chief seat of the famine, where those men who had devoted themselves to the humane task of grappling with that distress were now thanked in person by the heir to the British throne. The great districts of Tirhoot, Chumparun, and Sarun, lying to the north of it, contain more British settlers than any other country region in India. The cultivation of the indigo plant is the chief rural industry of these districts, and this is in the hands of an enterprising body of planters, than whom Her Majesty has no more loyal subjects.

CHAPTER LXXVI.

RESIGNATION OF LORD NORTHBROOK.—ARTILLERY EXPERIMENTS AT DELHI.—POOR EUROPEANS IN INDIA.—THE PRINCE OF WALES AT BENARES, ETC.

ON the 4th of January it was publicly announced in London that Lord Northbrook was to retire from the Government of India, after fulfilling the important duties of Viceroy for four years. At the close of the preceding summer his lordship had intimated that he did not feel able to fulfil the

heavy labours of his office during another season in India. He thus withdrew from his onerous post, not because he had any difference with the Home Office, but simply for the reason stated. Appointed to the viceroyalty within a fortnight of Lord Mayo's assassination, his term would have expired in 1877;

but the climate and the anxieties of ruling had overtaken his strength; and when he did return his services were fully recognised. His predecessor had entered heart and soul into the great work set before him. He had felt all the responsibilities of his position, and had learned and unlearned many things; but his sudden fall by the assassin's dagger deprived the State of those fruits of good government and administration which had ripened in his mind. Called suddenly to succeed him, Lord Northbrook found the East a land with which his services at the Board of Control had rendered him not unfamiliar; thus, he did not approach his new duties unprepared. Yet, the ordeal he had to pass through, with the famine and all its unforeseen emergencies, was a severe one; and it should always be borne in mind, says a journalist, in judging of a modern viceroy's career, that he is subject to influences which did not exist before the electric wire stretched to his remote abode. Day by day, for good or ill, the Home Government and British opinion, such as it is, exert an ever-increasing force upon the ruler of India. He is no longer what he was in the era of Wellesley or Hastings, still less in the days of Dalhousie. His actions come under the almost hourly review of the India Office, and the temptation to give and seek advice is powerful on both sides. If the viceroy is a strong man, he runs the risk of falling into collision with the Secretary of State; if he is made of yielding material, he has two masters—one the Civil Service, the other at Westminster. Under such severe conditions, an Indian viceroy is fettered as he never was before the Mutiny, and the difficulties of his position are proportionately increased.

The 4th and 5th of January, 1876, witnessed the inauguration of some important experiments in artillery and rifle fire at Delhi. A feeling having prevailed among many officers that the musketry practice was not sufficiently practical, Lord Napier of Magdala, when commanding in India, caused certain experiments to be made, with a view to ascertaining the effect of field-guns and rifles under as close an imitation to actual warfare as could be managed; and, following this initiative, General Sir Frederick Haines, an officer who had seen a vast amount of Indian service, and had his horse killed under him at Ferozeshah, instituted "field firing" as a regular part of the musketry course; and, on the occasion referred to, the locality chosen was kept a secret. It was of a strong nature, and supposed to be occupied by two batteries of horse and three of field artillery, three regiments of cavalry, and nine eight-company battalions, which were represented by screens and dummies. Flags

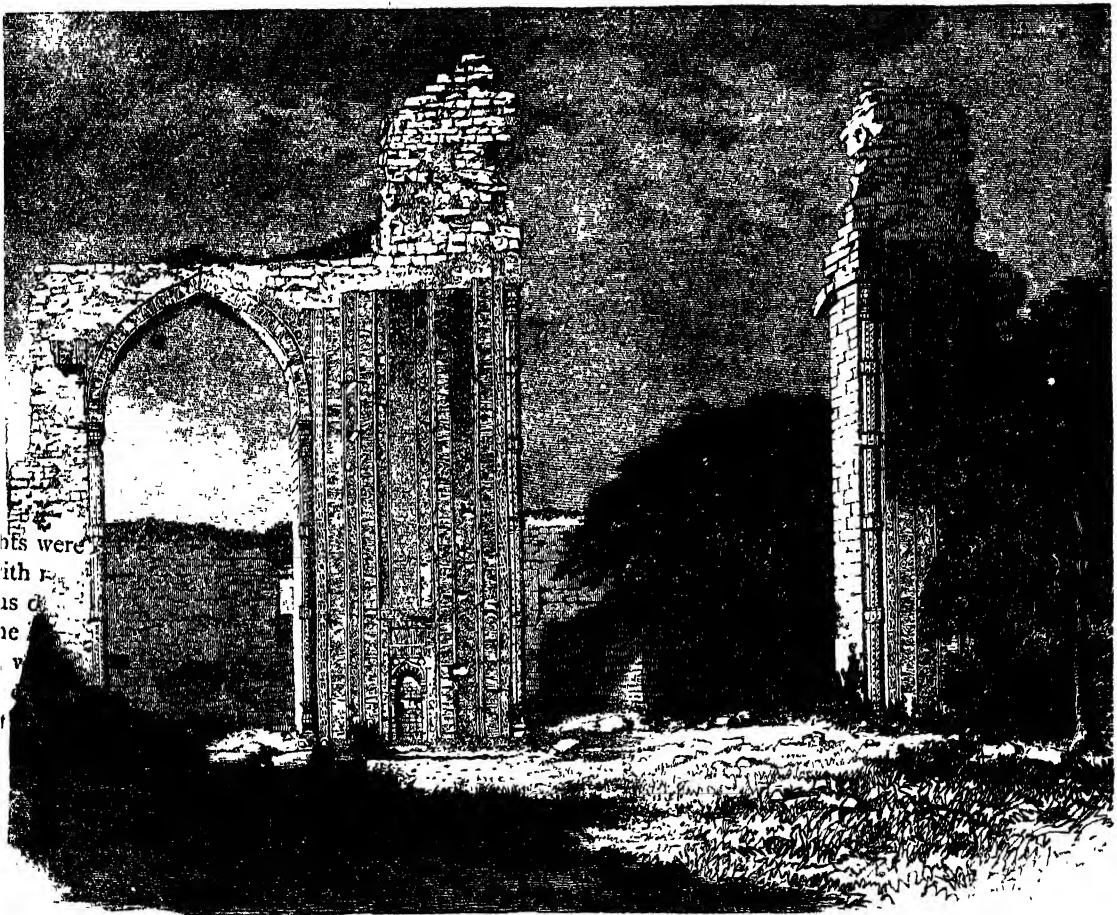
indicated the general line, and periodical explosions the position of the guns. Mud figures represented the skirmishers, three feet in height, as they were supposed to be kneeling; and screens, six feet in height, appeared as the reserves.

The attacking force consisted of five batteries of artillery and eleven regiments of foot: the former to cover the deployment of the latter, and then advance, opened at distances varying from 2,600 to 1,100 yards; and, after a time, "cease firing" sounded, to enable the markers to ascertain the results. During the second stage the artillery advanced to closer range, while the infantry formed to attack at about 1,000 yards, and advanced firing till within 600, when the "cease" was sounded again, and the hits were marked off. When the "cease" sounded a third time, the infantry were within half that distance. In the next stage, they were supposed to be within eighty yards of the enemy, all the advances being over open ground; and the results were these:—

"The artillery fired 1,172 rounds of common and segment shell and shrapnel, both percussion and time fuses being used. The number of hits was 921, but in many cases from eight to twelve were made on the same image of a man; and, judging from the results recorded, with regard to the enemy's guns, it is pretty evident that the number of men placed *hors de combat* by artillery was not more than 100, or about one man for every twelve rounds. Three guns were also dismounted. It used to be calculated that to kill a man his weight in lead was required. We have, since the introduction of rifles, made an enormous step in advance, especially considering the increase of range. At Delhi the number of hits by rifle bullets was 3,747; but many men were, no doubt, hit several times, and some of the bullets would, if fired against living men, have either inflicted but a slight graze or have glanced off a breastplate or button; and to attain the result above indicated, 68,024 rounds were fired. If, therefore, we make a very moderate deduction for men wounded more than once, we arrive at thirty rounds for each man disabled. Unfortunately the hits of the first period were, with regard to one battery, included in the return of the second period. It may be mentioned that, excluding the hits on one battery of the defenders not recorded, there were, in the first period, 161 hits by bullets; the number of rounds fired being 10,225. Assuming that the number of casualties in the battery alluded to was the mean of the batteries on each side, only one man is to be added to the recorded total of 161. Making reasonable deductions for men wounded slightly, or more than

once, we find, at the distance of between 600 and 900 yards, about one shot in twenty disabled a man. Such a result must be deemed very satisfactory, for the ground fired over was strange to the troops. During the second stage—*i.e.*, between 600 and 300 yards—37,837 rounds were fired, and 1,794 hits made. Making deductions as above, that would give one man disabled for every twenty-

Early in January, 1876, a memorial was presented to Lord Northbrook, praying him to take measures for the appointment of a special commission to inquire into the destitution which existed among the British and Eurasian working population. The cause of their extreme poverty was found by the memorialists to be principally the substitution of native labour in the presidencies; and



VIEW OF THE MOSQUE OF THE EMPEROR ALTAMSH, NEAR DELHI.

three cartridges burnt. In the third stage—between 300 up to 80 yards—there were 19,962 rounds fired, and 1,792 hits made, or, after deductions, rather more than twelve rounds to each man disabled."

Though a vast amount of unaimed fire, owing to the trajectory, struck supports and reserves at the longer range, while at the medium bullets passed over both, taking the Delhi experiments as a whole they were deemed eminently successful; and the Commander-in-chief ordered that "field firing" shall be practised annually at every station in India.

the remedies suggested were these: First, the creation of new industries, or the further development of those which were existing, offering a field of employment for European and Eurasian labour; secondly, the establishment of industrial schools, of large centres of industry, and industrial homes, together with amendment of the law relating to European vagrancy; and, lastly, the establishment of colonies on the hill-ranges, and on the islands in the Bay of Bengal.

In conclusion, the memorialists drew Lord Northbrook's attention to the fact that, consequent upon their great poverty, the classes for whom they

appealed were compelled to mix with natives of the lowest caste, with whom their children came in contact, the result being that immorality and vice were increased to an alarming extent; and that such a state of things, it was urged, "lowered the prestige of British Government in the eyes of the native population."

On the 5th of January, the Prince of Wales

Monkey, which is one of the living idols of Hindoo worship. This fane is situated amid a grove of orange, plantain, palm, and citron-trees, and, on his entrance, the Prince was supplied with a plate of parched peas and white sweetmeats. The people were silent but respectful, and every precaution was taken that prudence could suggest to ensure safety among the multitude of fanatics. •



VIEW OF THE TÔPE OR TEMPLE OF DHAMEH, NEAR BENARES.

arrived at Benares, the holy city of the brahminical religion in Lower India, from all parts of which vast numbers of pilgrims resort thither, to visit the temples and perform "poojahs," according to their castes, and to add to the number of Gossains—half hermits, or holy beggars, who abound there. The Prince became the guest of the lieutenant-governor, in the camp adjacent to the city, where, attended by Sir John Strachey, he held a reception, which was attended by the Dehi princes. He visited the Rajah of Vizianagram, and then the Hindoo temples, which previously had been cleared of all persons by the guardians of the Durga

Before sunset he proceeded up the river to Ramnuggur, the palace of the Maharajah of Benares, there to remain until the intended illuminations should be completed. He was thus enabled to see the city by sunset in all its splendour. On the right bank of the Ganges lies the level plain, but on the left rises the great city, so grand, with all its palaces and temples towering high in air above the landing-places—which are flights of hundreds of stone steps, forty or fifty feet broad, and named the Ghauts of Scindia, Nagpore, Vizianagram, and Perhma, from those whose princely mansions are close by.

When darkness fell the Prince entered a barge of long and narrow form, with two wooden horses, nearly the size of life, rearing at its prow. The hull was painted green, and on it were depicted water-plants, fish, and birds. Golden fringes adorned the canopy, below which were seats of blue velvet. Towed by a small steamer, and followed by the European population in lighter barges, that of the Prince came slowly down the great stream to the railway bridge. All day long thousands of natives had been engaged in placing *padelli*, or tens of thousands of little earthen jars,

wherever such a vessel could be placed, filled with oil and supplied with a wick, which, when it came, burned brightly; and thus the whole night river gleamed with light, presenting a city and beyond description grand, when a spectacle tier, its wondrous edifices stooping above relief against the dark blue sky beyond. Myriads of lights were reflected, and out in brilliant forms of those when broken by the dusky through—and many persisted in bathing all night launched upon hundreds of little lamps were Prince from Raybosome. The departure of the salute, salvoes, *uggur* was announced by a royal balloons, rockets, and the ascent of 100

Where, by the process of time, the ghats had been washed away, the gaps were veiled by arcades, divans, and lattice-work, illuminated. They seemed to fleck the whole surface of the river. Upon every step of the ghats lamps were placed in rows, a few inches apart, and along every horizontal line of the towers and palaces above: thus every edifice was marked out in light; while thousands of persons, whose figures appeared in black outline against these vivid floods of flame, presented an appearance that was somewhat demoniac.

On the following day the Prince was at Lucknow, escorted by General Chamberlain and Sir George Cowper, the Chief Commissioner of Oude; and on the 7th he courteously received the lineal descendants of Mirza Jehanghir Shah, heir of Shah Alum, the last independent King of Delhi, and last of the dynasty of the mighty Timour. At the native levée there came many Talookdars and descendants of the kings of Oude. Attended by the Duke of Sutherland and others, he drove to see the Dilkhoosa and Secunderbagh, all shattered in ruin as the cannon left it; and where the pipes of the Highlanders sent their welcome sound to the soldiers of Havelock and Inglis. He visited the place where the noble received his death-wound, where the Bays and Smith fell, where Lawrence died, and where the glorious Havelock lies at rest, where the Alumbagh, in the towers of Comm. shall be India.

which Outram kept many ^{1876.} cannon pealed by the Goo-tinière, he descended into the remains of Claude Martin, to take bequeathed a vast fortune. He viewed the line of Colin existed the ruins of the Residency, at the foundation stone of a poverty was few sepoys who memorial in sub the British in 1857 had remained faithful to the Government, and which was erected at the private expense of Lord Northbrook.

The site chosen was near Aitken's Post, where the natives chiefly fought. Among the troops under arms were the 14th, 65th, and 66th Native Infantry; and the Prince's escort was composed of the 13th Hussars and 19th Bengal Cavalry. A circle of trees, heavy with foliage, deep groves of bright green leaves, enclosed the whole scene, to which more effect was given by the troops presenting arms and the artillery saluting the survivors of the native defenders of Lucknow, who had been collected from different parts of Oude.

Grizzled and grey, about 200 of these faithful veterans were drawn up in old uniforms as varied as their castes and races, their breasts covered with the medals they had won in that terrible contest, when they manned the charred ruins of Lucknow against the masses of the rebels. Some were tall and manly Sikhs; others wiry little Bengalees, half-caste Punjaubees, and men from the coast of Malabar. On the other side of the memorial mound were about a hundred Europeans, including five officers—Major Corbet, Dr. Fayrer, and three others, also survivors of the defence of Lucknow; and the Prince kindly suggested that all should be presented to him.

Then the sight that followed could never be forgotten by those who saw it, as the veterans filed past, many of them being barely able to walk. Many of them were Soubahbars and Jemidars, who had risen from the ranks since the days of the Mutiny. As they went by, saluting the Prince, at the bidding of General Probyn they held out the hilts of their swords, which the Prince touched, and saluting again, each native officer passed on. It was long since many of them had been on parade, but the golden maxims taught by discipline were remembered still; though some there were disposed to linger and gaze wistfully into the pleasing open face of the *Burra Sahib*. "Oh, let me see him!" exclaimed one who was nearly blind; then, peering into the face of the Prince, he thanked Heaven for having "lived till to-day."

Among those present was old Ungad, once famous as a scout, and Carronjee Lali, the com-

appealed were compelled to meet Sir Colin Campbell. The lowest caste, with which he gave an evening fête to contact, the result being an evening fête to were increased to an even Bagh, and presented him such a state of things, what significant gift, as the *prestige of British Government* was the ancient palace native population." ade.

Crashed and shot-riven ruins of the Residency were carefully inspected; there, happily, the spot where each particularly gallant deed was done is indicated by tablets—indicating Inglis' quarters in the Sikh Square, the house where Gubbins lived and where brave Lawrence died; nor was the beautifully-kept cemetery where his bones lie, with those of others who died during the long siege of Lucknow, forgotten.

At Cawnpore, as at that city, clearances on a great scale had been effected, and ruins swept away, so that nothing remains of the old station, from the site of Wyndham's *tête du pont* to the Memorial Church, which stands outside the line of Wheeler's old entrenchments.

On Monday, the 10th, the Prince halted at Cawnpore when *en route* from Lucknow to Delhi. He drove from the station to the Memorial Church, and afterwards visited the Memorial Gardens, where he stood for some minutes in silence by the monument that covers the well where our dead are lying.

"A full moon had risen in a cloudless sky when we started for these historic places," says a correspondent, whom we are tempted to quote at full length. "Of course, there was a certain order to be observed—quite different from what the chronological course of events would warrant; but in the end everything was shown us. The first place to which we drove was the well, situated in the centre of magnificent gardens, at the gates of which all natives were requested to remain. Slowly moving up the pathway, between richly-flowering beds of roses, the cuttings for which had come from England, we come at last to the Memorial, 'sacred to the perpetual memory' of the slain. As is already well known, the well is covered by a marble seraph, which, with outstretched wings, watches over the place where the dead were hidden. I cannot describe the effect of the bright moon's rays on the white marble work—how the whole memorial stood out in its lonely grandeur on that delightful night. They did well to exclude natives from the place: the feeling aroused by the sight of that memorial and the adjacent graveyard is not congenial to them. The slaughter-house where women and children were hacked to pieces is gone; but scores of graves, some with monuments erected by 'passers by,' by

'brother soldiers,' by 'men of the regiment,' and some without either name or date, tell their own story. Over each hang roses from England; the grass is carefully tended, the pathways admirably kept. If they must be buried in alien soil, no more beautiful spot could be discovered in the world. From thence to the Memorial Church, which is an extremely pretty red brick building, and built on the site of Wheeler's entrenchment, was no very great distance. It has only just been consecrated, and has, therefore, an appearance of newness, which does not quite accord with the objects around it. It also boasts an echo, which, I am told, bewilders the clergyman and astonishes his hearers; so that, on the whole, it is scarcely a success. But we had little time for a prolonged inspection, having to hurry away to the river side where the Nana began his miserable butcheries. Coming to the top of a slope which led down to the water's edge, we were requested to dismount, there being no road for carriages; and quitting the vehicles, therefore, at the corner where the victims first gave themselves into the hands of their destroyers, and where, later on, the brother of the Nana was hanged on a gallows we passed down the gully which was before us. It was no great length—some 200 yards, perhaps—and then the Hindoo temple in which the Nana planted his cannon was reached. The scene of so much villany is happily a ruin, yet not so greatly destroyed as to prevent a full appreciation of what took place on that memorable day. On the left of the pile was the place at which the fugitives embarked; their desire was to pass the temple, and so go down the river. The Nana had stationed his men all along the shore on the opposite side of the river, and in the temple too; and how he used them need not be related again. An aged Hindoo said that the Nana, after giving the order for the massacre, ran away. I cannot trust myself to give expression to the feelings which we experienced as we looked at the astonishing scene in the bright moonlight."

The Prince did not visit the Suttee Chaura Ghaut, now better known by the evil appellation of "The Slaughter Ghaut," chiefly because his time was short. In the evening his special train started for Delhi, for which place he travelled all night, and arrived at eight next morning, to find that beautiful city *en fête* to welcome him, the son of a mightier monarch than even Aurungzebe. There were few decorations, for the authorities of Delhi relied on the architectural grandeur of the city, and the military display they could make, as sufficient for the occasion. Thus, the route to the cantonments, through the heart of Delhi, was four miles in length,

and lined by 18,000 troops—Horse and Foot. British, Sikhs, and Ghoorikas, in scarlet and blue, in grey and buff, in green and yellow, with bands playing and colours flying, formed the double line, through which he passed on horseback, accompanied by Lord Napier of Magdala and Sir R. H. Davies, till he issued from the Lahore Gate, and across the long rocky ridge, the scene of many a fierce contest in 1857, and from thence to the camp near the race-course, where he was to be lodged in the heart of the army. In this route he skirted the glacis of the fort, behind the ramparts of which rise the red and white marble domes and cupolas of the royal palace; the Selimgur, once the abode of the Great Mogul, the Tartar Emperor of India; he passed the beautiful Jumna Musjid, on the thirty-two great steps of which were throngs of officers in full uniform, and ladies in gay dresses; past the Kotwallah, where Hodson hung the corpses of the princes he had shot; and through the magnificent "street of silver," while the red morning sun, piercing through the haze, was gilding dome, and tower, the ruins of old Delhi, and the ribbed shaft of the mighty Koutub Minar. On the evening of the 12th a grand ball was given, in splendour exceeding anything that Delhi had witnessed since its kings were lords of all India. In the centre of the suite of rooms, arranged on this occasion, was the hall of the enormous peacock throne, carried off by Nadir Shah in 1739, and the original ceiling of which was silver. Of 1,500 guests who were present, only 300 were ladies. The lieutenant-governor gave the Prince an open-air entertainment on the 13th, at the base of the Koutub Minar, which stands in the ruin-covered plain, ten miles from modern Delhi, and to the summit of which he ascended. He also visited the stately tomb of Houmayoun.* Some brilliant military manoeuvres, performed by the great force of all arms in Delhi, closed the royal visit on the 14th; and four days subsequent found the Prince in the city of Lahore, the capital of the Punjaub.

In addition to the large assemblage of Europeans who welcomed him, on the plateau before the fort were the encampments of the chiefs of the Punjaub, who had come with all their followers to do him honour, and whose tents extended for miles. In front of each camp floated the great banner of a rajah. Their elephants, gorgeously trapped, with howdahs of gold or silver, stood in lines; and there were also their beautiful led-horses, caparisoned in gold and silver; and every rajah's troops, regular and irregular, lined the roadway under arms. Thus lance and sword sparkled, armour flashed, morion, cuirass, plume, banner—

all were bright and beautiful, with such a combination of colours as fairly astonished the beholders. The very spirit of chivalry hovered over these martial faces and noble forms—the stately chiefs making obeisance amidst the roll of the drums, the blare of the trumpets, and the clang and outburst of strange instruments."

Along these varied lines, for four miles, the Prince rode to Government House, an edifice which had been originally the tomb of a cousin of the Emperor Ackbar, where stood a guard of honour of the 92nd Gordon Highlanders, with their colours and pipers; and hither came the native municipality, attired in turbans of the finest muslin, in gowns and robes of gold brocade, with coils of rubies, emeralds, and pearls around their necks, to present an address from the citizens of Lahore.

After holding a levée, the Prince visited the gaol, which was filled with wild and ferocious ruffians. Among these were two Thugs, who were brought before him for inspection. One, aged seventy, had murdered more than 250 persons in his time; the other admitted that he had disposed of only thirty-five. They showed the Prince how the strangling-cord was used. The Prince then asked for the liberation of two unfortunate Englishmen, who had been sentenced for embezzlement, and of twenty-eight other prisoners who were natives. He visited the fort, palace, and tomb of the old Lion of Lahore—Runjeet Sing, of famous memory—and saw the sun setting over the broad fertile plains, and the placid flow of the majestic river. A grand fête in the Shalimar Gardens followed; and next day he crossed the Cashmerian frontier to visit Jummoo the Magnificent, which occupies the right bank of the Taui, a tributary of the Chenab, and is governed by its own maharajah. He was met by the latter with his suite, all mounted on richly caparisoned elephants; and the route from the river to the town was lined by his troops, clad in picturesque uniforms and gaudy antique costumes, the most striking of which were bright suits of chain mail, in the fashion of the first Crusade; while others had helmets and cuirasses, like those of the French Cent Gardes, but with crooked swords and old flint pistols.

This was about sunset: beyond the town were silent and solemn-like hills, and all around it was dense jungle. The evening was cloudy, but the sun burst out ere he sank, and lit the landscape with marvellous effect. "Pink, orange, dark purple, fell upon the snow-capped ridges," says an eye-witness; "threw the three-peaked Tri-conta into bold relief; glittered upon the dome and minarets, the golden spires and white stone buildings

* *Times.*

of Jummoo; lightened the dark green of the jungle; and then left us in gloom." But the city was illuminated, and thickly studded with blue lights.

Next day saw the city filled with Cashmerian troops in honour of the Prince, and many were the strange costumes seen. Among them were those of the Persians, with high, black Astrakhan caps, long cloaks, gaiters, and sandals; some with bell-mouthed blunderbusses, slung across their backs. The maharajah presented the Prince with a sword worth, at the lowest calculation, £10,000. It was studded from pommel to chape with precious stones.

On the 22nd the Prince returned to Lahore, and was present at a ball, given by the Sikh sirdirs and wealthy natives, in the hall of the Government College. His throne was placed under a canopy; along the walls were the emblazoned shields of the Punjaub chiefs, and under each stood, motionless on a pedestal, a Punjaube, either in chain armour or uniform, armed to the teeth. Among those presented on this occasion were some remote members of the royal house of Delhi and of the royal family of Afghanistan, one of whom, the Shahzadah Shapoor, had been seated on the throne. There were also descendants of Nanak Shah, founder of the Sikh faith in the fifteenth century; and of Govind Sing, who made the Sikhs a great

military power. There, too, were Rajpoots, Patans, and wild-looking Beloochees, gathered from the most distant slopes of the Suleiman range, the representatives of fallen dynasties, of lost causes, and fierce antipathies of caste and creed, who now salaamed before the Prince of Wales, and frequently kissed the edge of the golden carpet on which his feet rested; and many were summoned, one by one, to receive from him the medals and ribands, which were fixed on the breast by an aide-de-camp. After this, from the roof of the edifice, the Prince looked down upon Lahore illuminated, when every street and edifice were traced out in lines of vivid light. A nautch followed, and a supper, at which the band of the 1st Royal Scots sang glees.

At Wuzeerabad the Prince performed the ceremony of opening the Alexandra Bridge of the Punjaub Northern State Railway, which spans the Chenab, and had been constructed by Alexander Grant, C.E. Commenced in November, 1871, it is one of the greatest works of its kind, being 9,300 feet long, in sixty-four spans, with foundations seventy feet deep.

From Lahore the Prince travelled to Agra on the 24th, pausing only at the holiness of Unmrtsir to see the Golden Temple. The Sikhs, to whom 600 *ukates*, or priests, are attached.

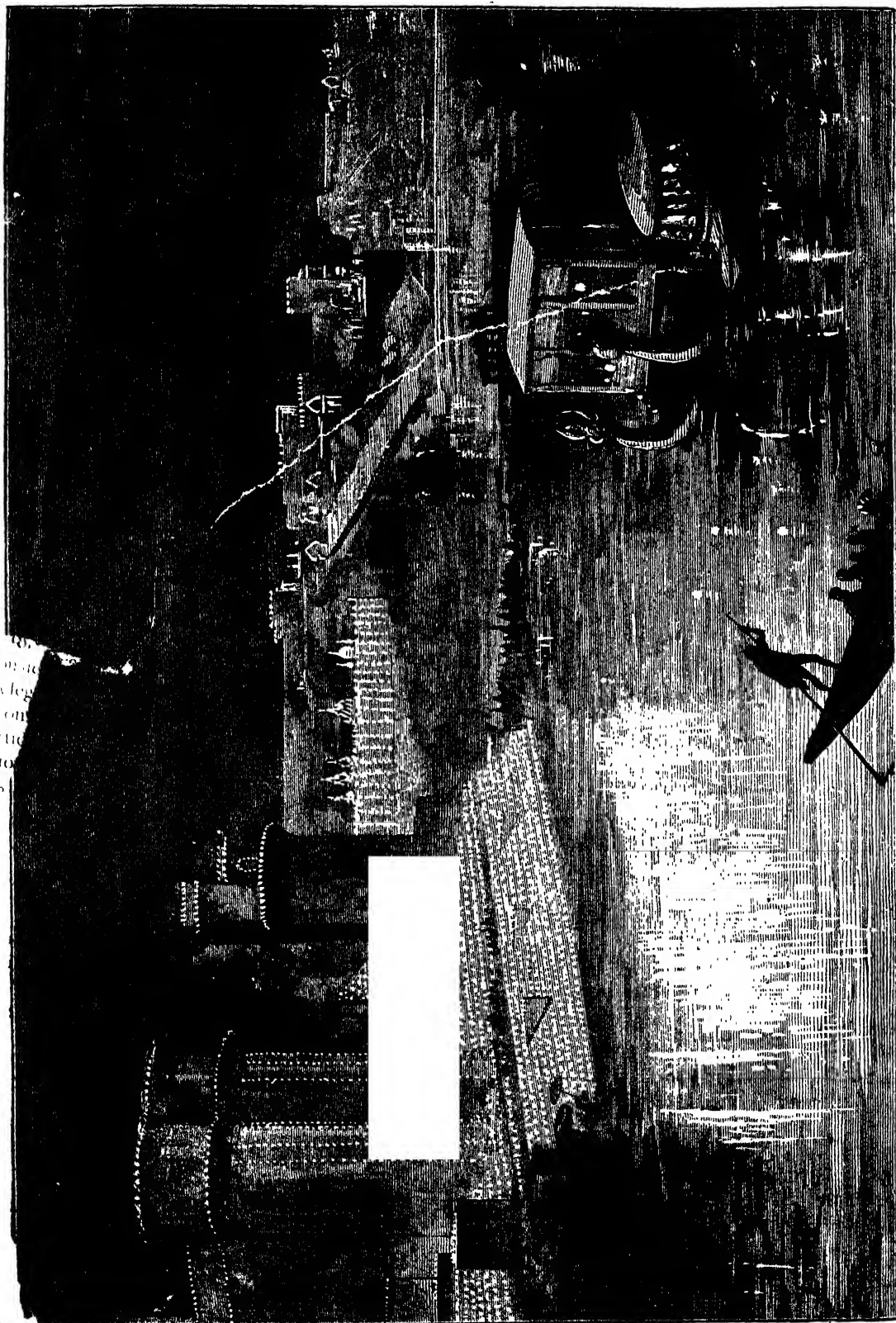
CHAPTER LXXVII.

THE PRINCE OF WALES AT AGRA, GWALIOR, JEYPORE, AND THE TERAI OF NEPAUL, ETC.

AT nine in the morning the royal train came in sight of Agra, the Parasu Rama of the Hindoos, and one of the keys of Western India, towering up amid the golden haze, for a strong wind was blowing, and clouds of dust were drifting upward from the sandy soil. Sir John Strachey, the Lieutenant-Governor of the North-West Provinces, received him at the station with the usual staff and guard of honour, while beyond it, lining the roadway, were 200 elephants, belonging to powerful rajahs, bearing howdahs of gold and silver, with long trappings of wonderful splendour. Outside these was a veritable sea of turbaned heads. Among the armed retainers were men accoutred with matchlocks, javelins, and old-fashioned pistols. H.M. 10th Hussars and 15th Bengal Cavalry formed the escort; along the route were erected

platforms, whereon were bands playing and women dancing, under bright streamers and triumphal arches.

High over all rose the stately fort of Agra, with its massive walls of deep red sandstone, seventy feet in height, with double, and in some places triple, lines of crenelated battlement; while opposite was the Jumna Musjid, the great mosque of Agra, with its three swelling domes of alternate red and white courses rising from richly-arched cloisters. In a howdah of gold, on a caparisoned elephant of vast size—the same on which Lord Lake rode into Agra in 1803—the Prince proceeded through the streets, with a gilded umbrella held over him. The suite followed on elephants two abreast, each person alone in a howdah. The latter were all painted claret colour, with a crown in front, while

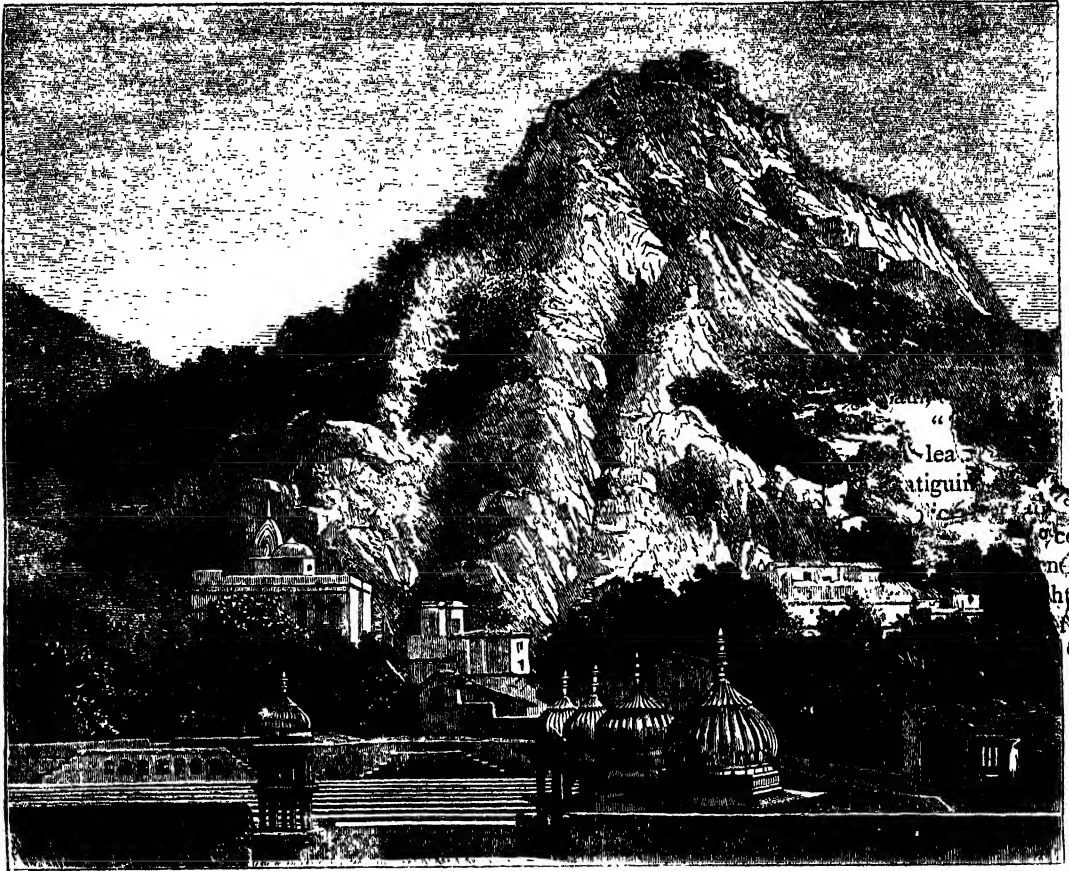


ILLUMINATIONS AT CARDIFF IN HONOUR OF THE PRINCE OF WALES.

housings were scarlet and black. He proceeded thus to the camp of Sir John Strachey, pitched on the same ground where General Greathed fought a cavalry battle when advancing to raise the siege of Delhi.

"When the Prince's elephant arrived in front of the durbar tent, before which the royal standard floated from a lofty staff, the animal faced round. Then in succession, like old-fashioned men-of-war

had less than twenty elephants, fifty camels, six pieces of cannon, twenty led-horses, and about 200 horse and foot, though many had thrice that number. The vanguard was composed of infantry in scarlet; then came two elephants, banner-men, and matchlock-men on foot; twenty camels with gingals; two brass guns drawn by white oxen; cavalry, clad in red, or blue, or cherry colour, some with casques and back and breast-plates, some in chain armour;



VIEW OF THE PYRAMIDAL HILL, ULWAR.

ranging themselves in order of battle one after the other, all the elephants passed before the Prince, wore round, and backed into the station in a curved line. Upwards of 150 elephants, bearing European authorities, civil and military, nawabs, rajahs, and sirdirs, passed in review, saluting the Prince. All this formed a spectacle well conceived and admirably managed." Yet the scene lost much of its splendour owing to a whirlwind of dust.

"Next day, after a general levée, preparations were made in the afternoon for a grand procession past the Prince of all the native rajahs and nobles, with their followers, on the Maidaun. Few of these

and ever and anon bands playing a species of music that can only be described as a noise; while the Rajahs of Boondi, Bekomeer, Kishingar, Bhurtpore, Ulwar, Tonck, Dholapore, Ourtcha, Dutka, Cheskari, Shapone, and Alipore, defiled past with their suwarries."*

The oldest Anglo-Indians averred that they had never witnessed a procession so vast and so varied. The long array of elephants and ginal-camels, the variety of the infantry uniforms, the costumes, the armour of the cavalry, the beauty of the led-horses, the gorgeous trappings, the bullock-ghas, the

* Standard, &c.

ad-
ed.
the
s and
horses
ries ...

their dome-shaped canopies, and the singular combination of the really magnificent with rather stage-like trumpery—all made up a unique and marvellous whole.

In the evening there was an illumination of the Taj-Mahal monument and the adjacent gardens. The scene was one of wondrous effect. A lime-light played steadily upon that snow-white edifice—the glory of Agra, wherein lies the favourite wife of Shah Jehan—and the clouds of a dark and starless night formed an effective background to its mighty mass, which is 1,000 feet in breadth by 1,860 feet long. It is formed of pure white marble, and rises, from a base of solid masonry, twenty-six feet above the gardens, 313 feet square. Its domes and minarets are covered with the most exquisite carving. It occupied 20,000 men twenty years to complete it, at an outlay of £2,000,000. In honour of the Prince the fountains were all playing, and the gardens were lit up by coloured lamps; but when looking on all the wondrous scene, an eye-witness wrote, it was impossible to forget the thousands of workmen who had toiled for years to its completion, “and of the sightless crew who issued from yonder gate when the top stone was added, and the decree was forth that not one of them might ever see the light of day; lest some other potentate, jealous of this might essay to build a structure as handsome in some foreign land.”

There would not have been sufficient light had the object been merely to illuminate the gardens; but it was in good taste to keep them as dark as possible, in order that the Taj might stand out clearer and brighter in the light. The whole glare of the lime-light was thus thrown upon its vast façade; and the Prince, while standing in shadow, could see to the full the exquisite details of that matchless monument.

The Prince devoted the afternoon of another day to visiting the tomb of the great Ackbar, at Secundra, near Delhi. He died in 1605, or two years after the accession of James VI. of Scotland to the British throne, when a few wandering merchants and mariners were all that represented the future great fighting and trading company of the East Indies. His tomb consists of a solid pyramid, surrounded by cloisters, galleries, and domes, and of such vast dimensions, that for a year after the conquest of the adjacent district, a whole regiment of his cavalry was cantoned in it.

Like all his buildings and doings, the tomb of Akbar is exceptional, but of great magnificence. The lower terrace is 320 feet square by thirty feet high. From this rises another, more ornate, 186 feet each way; and a third and fourth

are added, all of red stone. Within and above the last is a white marble enclosure, 157 feet each way, the outer wall of which is entirely composed of marble trellis-work of the most beautiful patterns; and within this is a colonnade of the same material. In the centre of this cloister, on a raised platform, is the tombstone of Ackbar—a splendid piece of arabesque tracing. This, however, is not the true burial-place, as the mortal remains of this great king repose under a far plainer stone in a vaulted chamber of the basement, thirty-five feet square, exactly under the simulated tomb that adorns the summit of the mausoleum.*

The road to it still shows the coshminars, or round stone pillars, which were put up, at the distance of every two miles, along the imperial Mogul routes, extending for more than 700 miles—from Agra to Lahore.

The Prince also visited Futtehpore Sikri, twenty-four miles from Agra. Founded chiefly by Ackbar, surrounded still by a battlemented wall six miles in length, enclosing mosques and palaces, temples and halls—a wilderness of stone it presented in its desolation and abandonment to owls, snakes, and jackals—the most impressive scene of ruin in the world, half buried amid the gathering soil and the decayed vegetation of years. Then the Prince was shown over the ruins by the eleventh descendant of a Fakir, whose tomb crowns the mountain on which the city stands, and to whose prayers Abul Fazil asserts Ackbar was indebted for the birth of a son.

The scene of his next visit was Gwalior, to which we have so often referred in these pages—the great national fortress which dominates, so to speak, all Central India. In a carriage drawn by artillery-horses he crossed the Chumbul by a bridge of boats on the 31st of January, and was met by a cavalry escort seven miles from the capital of Maharajah Scindia, which was long visible from afar over the plain. All the way the route lay between lines of Mahratta Horse, in yellow tunics with scarlet turbans, and horse-housing of the same colours; there, too, were halberdiers in claret colour, their weapons shafted with silver; camels with gingal-men; elephants painted in arabesques and fantastic patterns, colared with silver plates and strings of bells, cruppers of silver, gilded howdahs on their backs, and tinkling bangles round their enormous ankles. Seen at any time, says the correspondent of the *Standard*, or in any light, the streets would have been beautiful; but with such a crowd, such a mixture of gold, silver, and bright colours in the wide roadway, “it was one of the brightest and most lovely scenes I ever witnessed.”

* Fergusson's “Handbook of Architecture.”

The drawing-room of Scindia's palace is the most wonderful saloon in the world, with all its marvellous chandeliers and enormous mirrors. The bedstead of the prince, the whole of his washing-service, and his bath, were of solid and burnished silver.

On the 1st of February there was a review of Scindia's troops in the broad plain below Gwalior, bounded by low hills with pretty villages in front; and in the march past there were five strong battalions of infantry, dressed like our native troops, but with white helmets instead of turbans; three of cavalry, two batteries of horse, and two of heavy bullock artillery, all in a splendid state of discipline. Some of the cavalry wore scarlet, with blue turbans; and one regiment of Lancers was clad in a kind of blue French uniform. On the following morning the courteous and stately Scindia came early, to await the departure of the Prince, to whom he said:—"It has been much to see your face. I can hardly hope to see it again; but, when in England, sometimes turn a kind thought to me, for all I have is yours."

On the 4th the Prince proceeded to visit the Maharajah of Jeypore, a Hindoo State of considerable extent, with a million and a half of population, and the capital of which, unlike all other Eastern towns, is regularly and uniformly built. A wall surrounds it twenty feet in height, nine feet thick, and smoothly coated with red plaster, having seven gates and nine circular bastions. A street 110 feet wide traverses the whole city, which others divide into six equal portions. At five, on the evening of the 4th, the Prince was met at the railway station by the Maharajah; and after a two miles' drive they mounted on elephants, entered by the Ajmere gate, and passed through the city by torchlight. The crowded streets were kept by the Jeypore troops in their ancient native costumes, armed with clumsy matchlocks, round shields, and many weapons of antique warfare. Elephants, camels with gingals, and bullock-batteries, made up the procession: the most singular feature in which was one hundred Naga swordsmen dancing, brandishing their long blades, cutting and slashing right and left, to the dissonance of tom-toms, pipes, and long horns of serpent shape. None of them were dressed alike; many had vests of spotted tiger-skins, and others had hoods rising high at the back of the head; but all wore tufts of black feathers on their heads.

The next day was deemed one of interest, when the Prince shot his first tiger from the roof of a parapeted lodge overhanging a ravine, into which the animal was driven, till within rifle range, by the beaters; and the carcase was borne in great state

to the palace of the Maharajah, when the Prince paid him a visit in durbar. There were present three hundred Rajpoot Thakoors, whose pedigrees exceeded anything that Europe could produce, and who were clad in chain armour, brocade, silk, satin, and jewels. The gallery was filled with ladies; and as evening closed in there was a Rajpoot nautch and an entertainment of jugglers and musical glasses. A banquet followed, and then illuminations, the chief of which was an exhibition on the face of the rock crowned by the fortress of Jeypore. It was the sentence—"We welcome thee," in letters sixty feet in height, formed entirely by coloured lamps.

Six miles north of Jeypore stands the town of Amba Ramba, the temples and palaces of which command a wooded defile, crested by old fortresses and fragments of battlemented walls, offering a combination of the finest scenery with interesting ruins; and this place the Prince visited on the 6th. On the following night he left Jeypore by railway for Moradabad, from whence he proceeded to Nynce Tal in Kumaon, and entered the Terai or wilderness on the frontiers of Nepaul, to have three weeks' tiger and elephant shooting. "This was to be the agreeable recreation, before leaving India, which should compensate for the fatiguing routine of state ceremonies and splendid public exhibitions in so many famous Indian cities and courts of native princes."

The "Terai," or scene of the Prince's hunting operations, is the border of prairie that lies along the great forest at the base of the Himalayas, and runs from east to west, at the base of the vast triangle which is formed on one side by the mountains, and on the other two by the ocean. An evil reputation has for ages been attached to the place, which the natives dread so much, that nothing will induce them to venture within its recesses at certain seasons of the year: for the fever of the Terai is a deadly pest when fully established. Cassids, or runners, in 1859, objected to cross the jungle; and Lord Clyde, when following up the discomfited rebels, was assured that if he approached the dreaded Terai all his native camp-followers would abandon him.

Those mutineers and others who followed Nana Sahib, the Begum, and other leaders, into those malarious regions, in 1858-59, perished in thousands; but privation contributed quite as much as loss of disease to decimate them. It is after the season and when the leaves are falling that the Terai is most perilous; yet old residents, with due precautions, think little of passing through the worst districts, provided they do not linger in the

tries and horses.

but whatever its perils may be, the vast wilderness of the Terai is full of attractions to the sportsman, as an infinity of game find shelter in its recesses. There the elephant, the tiger, and the rhinoceros roam in freedom; and all manner of other wild animals peculiar to Hindostan find their lair amid the rank luxuriance of its vegetation.

The Chief Commissioner of Kumaon, Major-General Sir Henry Ramsay, K.S.I., had established a camp on the skirts of the Terai, on the road leading from Moradabad to Nynce Tal, that the Prince might have his first experience of jungle life before proceeding eastward, as he intended to meet Sir Jung Bahadoor, the Minister of Nepal. Ramsay's camp was somewhat extensive, as he had on the ground 200 elephants, 120 horses, 550 camels, sixty ox-carts, and 1,526 camp-followers and coolies, with the band and seventy-five of the 3rd Ghorkas, twenty of Probyn's Horse, and a detachment of police. It was a veritable canvas city, admirably organised, with tents as white as the snow that capped the Indian Alps. That of the Prince, though smaller than his stately pavilion at Agra, was handsome and simple.

The part of the Terai selected by Sir Henry is ancient forest, intersected by streams, that form in places morasses so deep that the tallest elephants are sunk therein to their shoulders; while the prairie grass is so gigantic, that the course of the game can only be tracked by the waving of the lofty reeds and the motion made by the herds of elephants; while all around the leafy wilderness teems with partridges, peacocks, paroquets, vultures, plover, quail, snipe, and other water-fowl, wolves, jackals, foxes, porcupines, deer, and antelopes. Here, then, the Prince found himself on the 12th of February, with the royal standard floating over a sea of tents.

In beating the jungle, a correspondent says at the time, "the march is done here after breakfast; and instead of taking the line by which the tents and baggage are carried, the Prince of Wales and a number of his suite go through the jungle upon elephants, and shoot along the route, reaching the new camp about sunset. They all start in lines to beat the jungle. Between every sportsman there will be two, or perhaps three, pad elephants, which have only a pad on the back to carry the game on; and the animal does duty as a beater as well. As the Prince's shooting-party, with about fifty elephants, is much larger than tiger-shooting parties are, some experienced hands are with it to beat the route, and keep them all as near in line as possible. Sir Henry Ramsay, who is an experienced sportsman, accompanies the party, and has

charge of all the arrangements till the Prince enters the Nepal territory. Mr. Macdonald, who is the Burra Sahib of the district, and Mr. Elliot Colvin—both shikarees of repute, who we'll know the haunts of the tiger in this locality—are also in charge, and direct the operations. Everything is done according to the usual custom among sportsmen who frequent this part of the world; and the Prince has to take his chance with the others of a shot at whatever is started. At times, a deer or hog will be knocked over at the first or second shot; but some animals will run the whole gauntlet, with guns blazing from every howdah, and may get off without a wound. The long jungle grass much increases their chances of escape. Some of this jungle grass is at times from a dozen to twenty feet high, and the heads of the sportsmen only are often all that are visible as they pass through it."

The Prince saw little more of Nepal than that portion of territory which was presented by Lord Canning to the Government of Khatmandoo; and though the worst part of the State, it teemed with game; otherwise, Sir Jung Bahadoor, whose sole object was to give the Prince sufficient sport, would not have suggested the locality for his visit. It was on the 12th of February they met. Tents had been sent forward and pitched on the banks of the Sarda, which Sir Jung crossed on horseback, with his brother and sons, several officers, a battery of guns, and a regiment of the Nepalese army, which numbers about 15,000 men. Pitching his tent near where that of the Prince was standing, he rode to a clump of trees, and waited the arrival of the former, whom he dismounted to meet and salute and welcome, and to whom he expressed the pleasure it gave his master and himself to see him in Nepal. Everything would be done to render His Royal Highness's visit an agreeable one, and to gratify his every wish. The speaker said, in conclusion, that he had never forgotten the visit which he paid to England in 1850, and the reception extended to him by Her Majesty Queen Victoria and the late Prince Consort. It was his intention to have gone to England last year had not an accident prevented him, but he hoped to be able to repeat his visit on a future occasion.

The Prince of Wales, in reply, thanked Jung Bahadoor for his expressions of goodwill, and for the services of the Nepalese Government to the British cause during the Indian Mutiny. His Royal Highness had always strongly wished to visit Nepal, and was glad to have had an opportunity of doing so.

Jung Bahadoor assured the Prince that nothing in his career gave him greater satisfaction than to

be able to assist the British Government during the Mutiny; and should the necessity again arise, at any future time, he would feel it his duty to render England the utmost assistance that lay in his power.

- Sir Jung gave His Highness two tigers in cages, many other wild animals, and a splendid collection of birds from the mountains of Nepaul.

- It was on the 21st of February that the greatest hunting expedition took place. "According to the best authority," says Dr. W. H. Russell, "there never has been, at any rate in recent times, such a bag of tigers made in Nepaul as there was to-day, save on one occasion, when eight, instead of seven, fell to the rifle; but, I believe, the Prince of Wales is the only sportsman who ever shot six tigers in one day in this country. Of these one was killed before twelve o'clock; the others were killed in what was really one beat, which did not last more than an hour. The Prince killed two of these with single shots—one for each; he disposed of three in two or more shots each, and one was accounted for by outsiders. The scene of this great slaughter was an immense tract of deep prairie on one of the branches of the Sarda—an island with sparse forest and thick jungle, such as tigers love. The afternoon's sport was inaugurated by a display rarely given to any one to witness. With imperfect knowledge on the subject, I hazard the assertion that such a spectacle was never beheld by living man; and, indeed, it may be doubted if the like was ever seen in past ages. This was a procession of 700 elephants, in single file. The Prince sat in his howdah, waiting for three-quarters of an hour, and watching the wonderful column cross the arm of the Sarda. As I saw them afterwards they reminded me of an immense army, seen at a distance moving in column. There were 600 elephants belonging to Nepaul, and about 100 which had come over with the Prince. To each elephant there were at least two persons, the mahout and the man on the pad; but several carried three or four. It is not too much to say that there were 1,800 natives engaged in the beat. The money value of the animals was very great, for all were good; and Sir Jung Bahadoor had sent away 200 of the 800 he had assembled, because they were not up to the work, or fit to do duty with the Prince of Wales in the jungle. Unless you have seen what mountains of sugar-cane and green food an elephant can stuff down his throat, you can form no idea of the vastness of the commissariat arrangements for this hunting-party. When the elephants were all in position, they wore ship from line, stem and stern, to line ahead, and began to

move over the prairie like a vast fleet sweeping over the face of the deep."

One of the animals slain that day was a man-eater—a tigress that had but recently devoured a human being, whose bones were found near its lair. Another had killed nine bullocks and buffaloes belonging to an adjacent village. It is said to be only the old and sickly tigers that take to man-eating. Too slow or weak to overtake an antelope or deer, they pounce on some benighted wayfarer, and on discovering how easily he becomes their prey, they seldom seek for any other food.

On the following day, when the tents were pitched at Jamao, the Prince and Sir Jung Bahadoor, with their attendants, rode out with a pack of tame elephants, to see the mode in which the wild ones are fought and captured. In Nepaul there are certain elephants, of vast size, strength, and cunning, trained to the work; and, it would seem, that nothing pleases the captive animal so much as to beat and batter one of the free into such a state of stupor that the hunters can, with ease, slip round his legs the chains and ropes that take him to captivity. On this occasion there was brought forth an enormous elephant, named Jung Pershad, who had but one tusk having lost the other in some engagement. His whole head and part of his body were painted ~~in~~ ^{red} ~~black~~ ^{white}. Eastward of the camp there were two herds of elephants, and it was Sir Jung's desire to capture them under the eye of the Prince. "Horses were ordered at an early hour," says the journalist before quoted, "and the fast elephants with the pads were sent on ahead for the Prince and his party. Howdahs cannot be used for this work, as they would be swept off by the branches of the trees. The Prince had to get astride on a pad, holding on by a strap—the mahout in front, with a *kookerie* (Ghoorka knife) or bill-hook, to cut creepers and urge his elephant on with twitches in the ear, and a man behind with a mallet to hammer the creature into full speed. These trained racers will do seven miles an hour, the usual pace of the animals being two miles and a half. When the party had ridden a few miles, they found the pad elephants and a number of others. The fighting fellows were on ahead, engaged with some of the wild ones, who headed by an old tusker, were showing a bold front and giving battle resolutely. 'Forward!' was the word. The Prince had, at least, a novel position now; for the elephant, 'kookeried' and 'malletted' behind, dashed on at a speed which would have been exhilarating enough. He went crashing through trees, down ravines, over nullahs, through jungle, in the most rapid manner."

manner; and he had a store of water in his proboscis, which he replenished at every pool, and sluiced himself with to cool his sides as he ran. After two hours of this wild career, over difficult

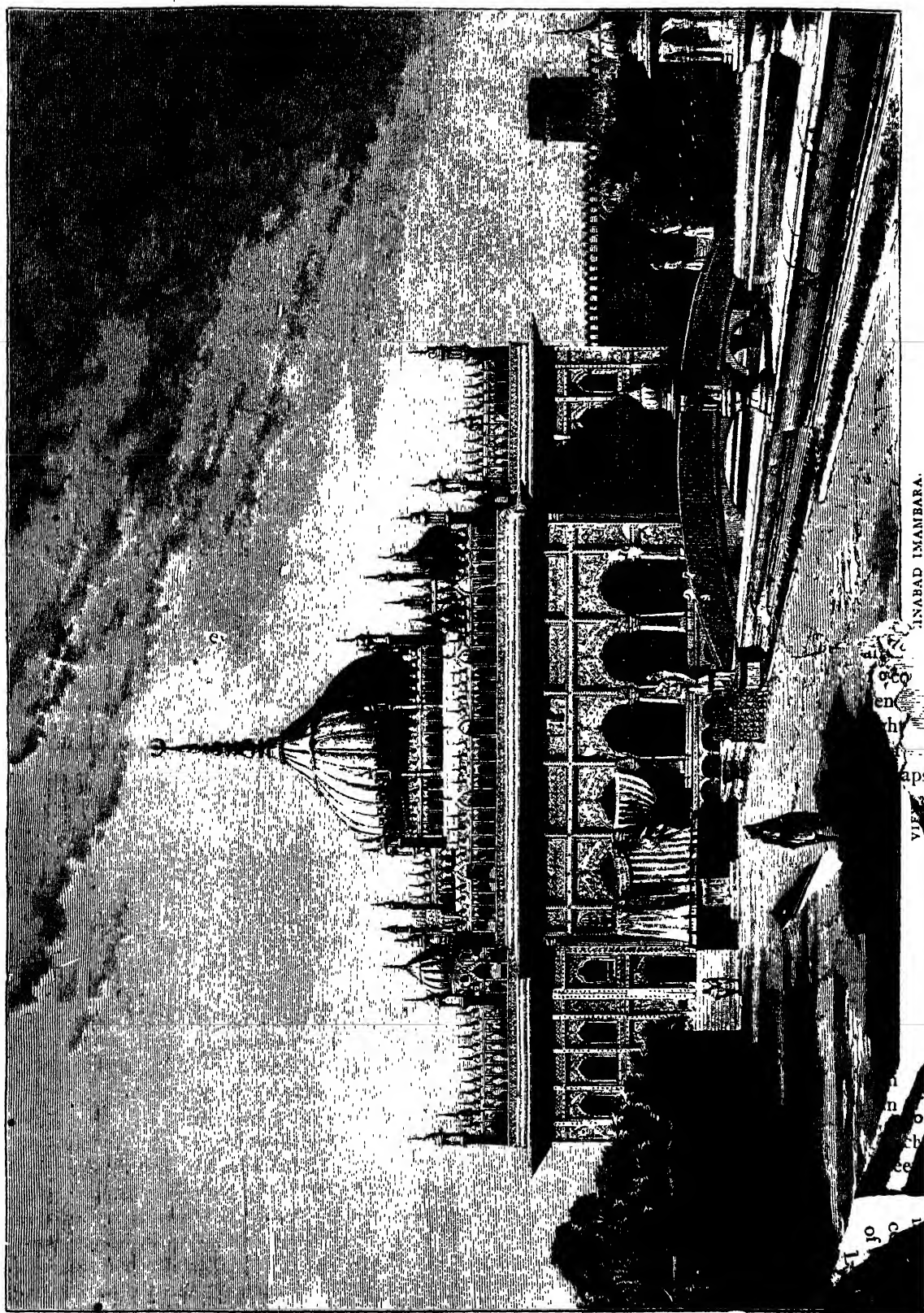
had broken back, 'Mount at once!' exclaimed Sir Jung, 'you are not safe! Get on your elephants.' Another scout came to report that the tusker had struck to the left, and that the fighters were engaged



PORTRAIT OF THE MAHARAJAH OF DHULEPORE.

country, Sir Jung called a halt, and suggested they could have the tents moved up to the place where they were, and continue the chase. But it was decided, red best to return to camp, as it might be better to have the tents struck, moved, and set up by the evening. . . . As they were seated, taking some refreshments, some of the messengers came up to announce that the wild herd

with him. Off went the Prince and party full speed again; but they did not see the battle. They only beheld the result; for, about ten miles back, they came on the captive—his legs tied, an elephant on each side, and one before and one behind him; his proboscis dejected, his tail bleeding, his ribs punched, his head battered, and his bearing exceedingly sorrowful."



In the course of the night the whole herd, fourteen in all, were captured, and fastened up to undergo training and taming, one young creature being reduced to milk diet by hand. This elephant-hunting was such rough work that none of the Europeans would have cared for a repetition of it; and one of the Prince's suite, Mr. Rose, was actually chased by a wild elephant—one with a broken tusk—and he had a narrow escape of being torn or trampled to death, as for one moment he was almost within reach of its trunk.

On the 5th of March the Prince bade adieu to Sir Jung Bahadoor, and, quitting the territory of Nepaul, took the train next day at Bareilly, and passed again through Lucknow and Cawnpore to Allahabad, where he was received by the Viceroy, Lord Northbrook, and by Sir John Strachey, the Lieutenant-Governor. The streets were crowded, but the people were remarkably quiet, though the native display of flags and decorations showed the desire to celebrate his arrival in the holy city: which, being at the delta of the Jumna and the Ganges, is full of associations sacred alike to the Mohammedan and Hindoo. There he held a solemn investiture of the Star of India; and, after visiting the fort and Canning-town, he had a long conference with Lord Northbrook before departing for the Nerbudda to visit Holkar.

His reception in the capital of the Holkar States, on the banks of the Seeptra, had nothing very special in its character. There was not the usual display of elephants and paraphernalia, but for five miles of the way the road was lined by the princely Holkar's feudal cavalry and artillery—the former well mounted and, like the latter, having fine uniforms and excellent weapons. The great chief took his leave of the Prince at the Residency; and His Highness drove, under escort, to visit the chiefs of Central India, whose camps, with banners flying, were pitched at some distance from the town.

After holding a *darbar* with Holkar, in the great hall of the Lalbagh, when all the great sirdars were presented to him by that prince and by General Daly, our Resident, on the 10th of March His Highness took his departure for Bombay, by rail.

On arriving there, next morning, he was met by the Governor of Bombay, Sir Philip E. Wodehouse, Sir V. M. Westropp, the Chief Justice, Lieutenant-General Staveland, and other officials, and received on the *Serapis* an address from the municipality, which was the last State appearance of the Prince in India. On the same day Her Majesty the Queen, to commemorate his visit, appointed His

Royal Highness honorary colonel of eight native regiments, four of which were in future to be designated "Queen's Own," and the other four "Prince of Wales's Own." The final leave-taking was, however, deferred till Monday, March 13th, when a farewell address from Bombay was presented to the Prince on board the *Serapis*, from whence he addressed the following letter to the Viceroy:—

"Her Majesty's ship *Serapis*, Bombay,
"the 13th of March, 1876.

"MY DEAR LORD NORTHBROOK,—I cannot leave India without expressing to you, as the Queen's representative of this vast empire, the sincere pleasure and the deep interest with which I have visited this great and wonderful country.

"As you are aware, it has been my hope and intention for some years past to see India, with a view to become more intimately acquainted with the Queen's subjects in this distant part of her empire, and to examine for myself those objects of interest which have always had so great an attraction for travellers. I may candidly say that my expectations have been more than realised by what I have witnessed, so that I return to my native country most deeply impressed with all I have seen and heard. The information I have gained will, I am confident, be of the greatest value to me, and will form a useful foundation for much that I hope hereafter to acquire. The reception I have met with from the princes and chiefs, and from the native population at large, is most gratifying to me: as the evidence of loyalty thus manifested shows an attachment to the Queen and to the throne, which, I trust, will be made every year more and more lasting.

"It is my earnest hope that the many millions of the Queen's Indian subjects may daily become more convinced of the advantages of British rule, and that they may realise more fully that the Sovereign and the Government of England, have the interests and well-being of India sincerely at heart. I have had frequent opportunities of seeing native troops of all branches of the service, and I cannot withhold my opinion that they constitute an army of which we may feel justly proud. The 'march past' at Delhi of so many distinguished officers and of such highly-disciplined troops was a most impressive sight, and one which I shall not easily forget. I wish also to state my high appreciation of the Civil Service; and I feel assured that the manner in which their arduous duties are performed tends greatly to the prosperity and the contentment of all classes of the community.

"I cannot conclude without thanking you and

all those in authority for the facilities which have enabled me to traverse so rapidly so large an extent of country; and, rest assured, I shall ever retain a grateful memory of the hospitality tendered by yourself and by others who have so kindly received me.

"Believe me, my dear Lord Northbrook,

"Yours very sincerely,

"ALBERT EDWARD."

Amid a general salute from thirteen vessels of war, the *Serapis* sailed at four o'clock, followed by the *Osborne*, the *Raleigh*, and the *Rifleman*, for shore despatches. The ships in the harbour were dressed with flags, and had all their yards manned. The wind was strong and the sea rough; but so soon as the *Serapis* was fairly ahead, the *Undaunted* (flagship), the *Doris*, *Diamond*, *Vestal*, *Arab*, and *Fumna*, with the ironclads *Abyssinia* and *Magdala*, manned their yards, cheered and thundered forth a royal salute, while Admiral Macdonald signalled "God speed you!"

Rissaldar Anoop Sing, of the 4th Prince of Wales's Own Bengal Lancers, and Rissaldar Mahomet Afzul Khan, a well-known native officer, of the 11th Bengal Lancers, accompanied the royal party to England on board the *Serapis*.

The Prince remained upon the bridge till the *Serapis* was fairly in the offing. The night was very

fine, and there was a dead calm when the shore of Western India sank into the sea. The voyage to Aden occupied six days, though the sea was smooth as glass, and the speed of the squadron averaged 272 miles in twenty-four hours. The *Osborne* ran under the quarter of the *Serapis* to exhibit her two elephants, which salaamed to the Prince as she shot ahead. On board the latter, the menagerie—for such it was, consisting as it did of eighty animals of all sorts—seemed to be very comfortable. The elephants walked about the deck, the deer were perfectly tame, and even the tigers from Nepal seemed quite domesticated, though showing their teeth at times. On board there were three which were usually kept in cages, but were sometimes led about with a chain by their native keeper. Some tame spotted deer, of the cheetah species, were allowed to run loose about the decks, where the young carnivorous beasts made every effort to get near them, as if in their native jungles. A small pony, eight hands three inches in height, shared the kennel of a Thibet mastiff, of which there were several specimens on board. The *gaines*, miniature oxen, not much larger than an English calf, had their daily exercise on the upper deck, where, like the rest of the Prince's menagerie, they proved a source of endless amusement to the tars of the *Serapis*, as she sped across the Indian Ocean, up the Red Sea.

CHAPTER LXXVIII.

THE INDIAN "ABSTRACT," 1873-74.—LORD NAPIER RESIGNS THE COMMAND OF THE ARMY.—LORD NORTHBROOK'S ADMINISTRATION.

On the 9th of March, Major Sandeman was sent to Khelat, at the head of 1,000 men, to protect the caravans which traversed the Bolan Pass; and he was also deputed by the Viceroy to settle the differences that existed between the khan and his subjects. About the same time, serious agrarian outbreaks occurred in the Bustar district of Madras, where report alleged 30,000 ryots, mostly armed, had assembled; but troops were sent against them from Vizagapatam.

In the North-west, too, discontent appeared among the ryots, several thousands of whom assembled clamorously before the Government House at Allahabad to complain of the increased land-tax, but dispersed after stating their grievances.*

* *Bombay Gazette*, 1876.

On the 27th of February, a noted Delhi prisoner of State, Feroze Shah, great-grandson of the Emperor Shah Alum, who was rescued from the hands of the Mahrattas by Lord Lake, died at Moulmim; while, about the same time, in the death by epilepsy of the Maharajah of Pattiala, the British Government lost a most faithful and intelligent adherent. Staunch at a time when our authority was shaken to its foundation, the suppression of the Mutiny brought him a deserved reward in the form of increased territory and accession of honour. A warlike prince, in whose veins flowed the Sikh blood, he was nevertheless ardently attached to the cause of education and progress; and his wealth was a subject for marvel even among those who were used to Oriental pageantry.

gality. He it was who became possessor of the magnificent jewels of the Empress Eugénie; and for many a year to come, the story will be told in caravanserais and Hindoo households, how splendidly he entertained the Prince of Wales when journeying from the North to the great city of Agra; but, "probably, the proudest moment of his life was that which he passed when, in presence of the Prince and Viceroy, and thousands of personages of high degree, he followed his knightly banner into the encampment of the Star of India on the 2nd of January, and took his seat immediately in advance of the little Begum of Bhopal."

During the administration of Lord Northbrook, much new and original information concerning India was given by the publication of "An Abstract of Surveys, and other Operations in India, for 1873-4," under the able editorship of Mr. Clements Markham, and almost every page of which records some great work in progress, some novelty of interest respecting the ancient cities and great temples of the land, or some promising discovery in the way of mineral or vegetable wealth, with glimpses of the inner life of India hitherto unknown. This "Abstract" records the great loss of life and craft among the native shipping. Hundreds of vessels, it would siting are annually constructed in British Indian heeren without any competent authority to class or be nde ect them during the progress of building. They his formed of the most cheap and common materials, we are told, and "barely nailed together:" bec he native owners being exceedingly parsimonious, is and picking up scraps of iron gear and fittings anywhere.

This "Abstract" also treats of the trigonometrical survey of India, and shows that in Goojerat maps have been prepared which give every tôpe, field, and tree, while the vast forests of the Dehra Doon have been drawn on the scale of four inches to the mile. Among the topographical researches, Mr. Markham's work contains descriptions of the cities of Devla and Pertabghur, which are noted for the manufacture of that peculiar kind of jewellery now so fashionable among Indian ladies, consisting of green glass in all kind of forms, on Dal which hunting and other scenes are depicted, and high secret of which is so jealously guarded that ilwa kmen will not permit their wives or daughters On ter their workshops, lest its mysteries should Gov ne known. The "Abstract" also reports on r. Nins of a wondrous old city named Mando, ral S dls of which are thirty miles in circum- the and which occupies a plateau, surrounded was n every side by the precipitous Vindhya to and presents an "enormous mass of

mixed palaces, temples, and tanks," while the adjacent towns and villages attest it to have been for centuries the residence of vast armies and now forgotten kings.

In the course of their work, it would seem that the surveyors in Rajpootana came upon a singular old contrivance, by which the modern mode of telegraphy had been anticipated. This was a method of signalling practised across the sandy desert, from Ajmere to Bikaneer, and extensively used by the traders in opium, who thus made known the rate at which the drug was selling in Calcutta.

In the mountainous abode of the Nagas the surveyors found some tracts hitherto unknown; and the Patkoi ranges were discovered to be both rich and populous. On the lower spurs the india-rubber-tree is found to be common, and in the cold season the Nagas tap the trees in the jungle for the collection of gum; and when the price rose from ten to forty rupees per maund, the trees were tapped to such an extent that they were nearly all destroyed. In another direction beyond the Indus we have a report on the immense salt beds of Kohat, where the saline deposit is, in some places, more than 1,230 feet deep and exceedingly pure; while reefs of veritable gold are also reported to be at Wynaad.

Not the least interesting portion of the "Abstract" is that which embodies the fifth report of General Cunningham upon an archæological tour made by him in the Punjaub during 1874, when he opened the mounds in the plain of Yusufzai, and beheld the remains of the people who saw the Greeks of Alexander on their march. He also reported that the ruined temples of the district exhibit a singular blending of Indian with Grecian art, showing Doric, Ionic, and even Corinthian columns, decorated with Hindoo gods and Indian water-plants.

General Cunningham procured a copy of Asoka's rock inscription, which identified the cave of Sudatta, "the illustrious giver," as its name implies, who gave away whatever he was asked for, till he was banished by his people for bestowing a famous white elephant on the Rajah of Kalinga. When exploring, in 1874, the ruins of Sahri-Bahlol, where Buddha gave away his eyes, he found near it an inscription which referred to King Gondophares, who is said to have had St. Thomas as his teacher and slave; and one vast Buddhist monastery near Harapa, on the Ravee, was utilised so far that its materials afforded the sappers and miners ballast for fully 100 miles of the Moultan Railway.

In Great Thibet our surveyors reached and

described the Tengri-Nur lake, in a wild, cold land, where, in winter, the water-falls become transformed to cliffs of ice. The mighty Thibetan tarn, known as Namcho, or the Lake of the Sky, from its altitude—which is 15,200 feet above the level of the sea—is a noble sheet of water, fifty miles in length by about twenty-five in breadth. It receives two considerable rivers and several minor streams, yet, strange to say, has no exit. To the south, the surveyors reported it to be bounded by snowy peaks and mighty glaciers, that culminate in the magnificent Alp of Jang-Ninjinthangla, 25,000 feet in height. In every way the "Abstract" referred to is, from its contents, one of the most important recent works on the Eastern possessions of the British Crown.

On the 10th of April, 1876, Lord Napier of Magdala resigned the command of the Indian army; and in a farewell order, issued on that occasion, his lordship said:—

"In laying down the chief command of Her Majesty's forces in India and the special command-in-chief of this presidency, it is expedient to advert to the circumstances of importance which have affected the army during the period of my command.

"The improvements in artillery, and more especially in small arms, and the extension of the range of deadly fire, rendered necessary a change in the form of attack.

"The Government of India liberally allowed the assemblage of troops on a large scale for manœuvres during the years 1871 and 1872; also, on a smaller scale, at Roorkee in 1873; and at Rawul Pindee, Umballa, and Peshawur, in 1874; and, finally, at Delhi, for the inspection by H.R.H. the Prince of Wales.

"These camps have afforded opportunities of practising on an extended field the new forms of attack, the principles of which were ordered by H.R.H. Field-Marshal the Duke of Cambridge. The army has adopted the change of tactics with intelligence and alacrity, and will be found very handy for attack or defence in whatever form the nature of the enemy, the country, or circumstances, may demand. The labour and exposure entailed by the camps of exercise have been met by the officers and men of all arms with the best and most soldier-like spirit.

"It is highly satisfactory to note that the discipline of the army has improved. One hundred and sixty cases of insubordination, which occurred in 1869 and 1870, have been reduced to forty-nine cases in 1875. This reduction may be attributed, in a considerable degree, to the attention paid to

the rational employment and amusement of the soldiers, to the occupation given by the camps of exercise, to the greater comfort in barracks, and to the action of temperance societies. An extension of all these points, for which there is ample room, will produce better results. A complete record of the offences committed by about 18,000 men in the last five years, shows that the number of court-martial annually has been reduced from 1,177 to 514. The offences of the temperance men, compared with those of non-abstainers, are as one to forty nearly. The progress of the musketry instruction has been excellent, and the figures of merit show great progress. . . . The facts mentioned show that the army, during the past six years, has made a steady advance in all essential points. But, in congratulating it on this result, I would earnestly counsel all concerned to press on in the endeavour to improve, so that, when the day of trial comes—that day for which the army has alone existed—its success may be complete, and be won with the least possible loss.

"I would strongly advise the captains of companies more generally to identify themselves with the men of their own companies, to devote much of their time to their training, instruction, and amusement, so that a bond of union and confidence may always exist between them. To the officers of the native army, where they do not already follow the course advised, I would urge that they should lose no opportunity of studying the characters of their men, that they should carefully instruct their native officers, and, by associating with them in all general plans of regimental administration, and by treating them with kindness and confidence, they should make them feel that their place is on the side of authority. The native officers and soldiers will never shrink from the strictest discipline, provided their *amour propre* is respected."

Of this army, of which Lord Napier gave so favourable an account, the estimated strength, in 1875, stood thus:—Artillery: British, 652 commissioned officers, and 11,653 non-commissioned officers and gunners, with about 795 natives employed in various ways; but since the Mutiny care had been taken that cannon should not be entrusted to native troops.

Our cavalry numbered—British: 252 officers and 4,098 non-commissioned officers and troops; Native: 43 officers (Europeans), and 18,558 commissioned officers and men. Our engineers and sappers: 353 officers, with 3,011 non-commissioned officers and men.

Our infantry numbered—British: officers

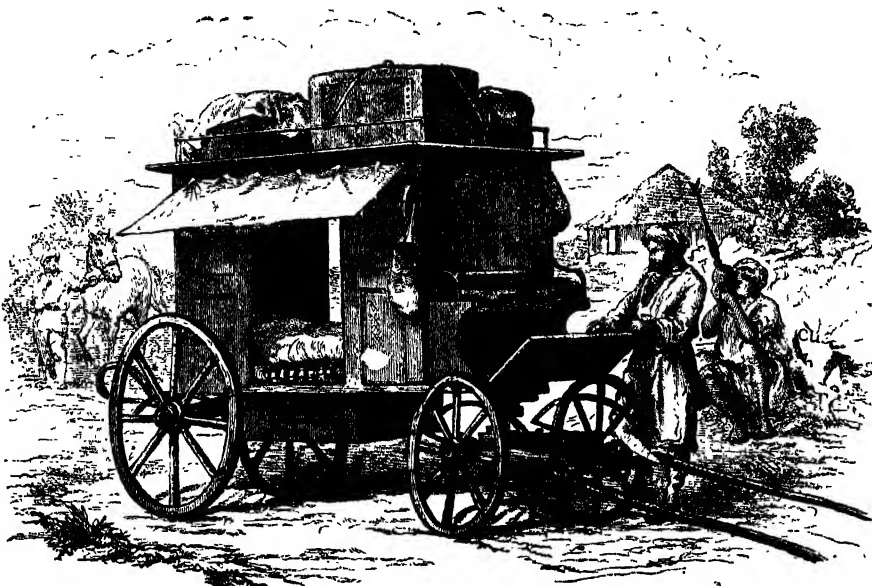


ON BOARD THE "SIR" THE PONY AND THREE XASHIE.

and 44,312 non-commissioned officers and men. The Native infantry: officers (British), 136, with 101,110 non-commissioned officers and sepoys. With this force—something less than 200,000 men generally—we control an empire which is bordered by China on the east, by the Afghan mountains on the west, and which stretches southward from the Himalayas to the Indian Ocean; and, in case of foreign invasion, the Government of India could with ease enrol 100,000 more from among races the most warlike of the Eastern world. The army is a vast power in India, and nothing can be said of that country without some reference to it, as the sword underlies all the administration.*

and staying for a short time as the guest of the Governor of Ceylon, it was justly said of him that, whatever were the deficiencies of his administration, he left the country with a flourishing exchequer and nothing to indicate that days of evil were to come. This was all the more remarkable as he had to encounter a period of calamitous drought, with its inevitable and consequent inroads of famine, causing an expenditure of treasure which, if it had not been otherwise employed, would have been shown as a handsome surplus.

Notwithstanding the peril which menaced Bengal, the revenue for 1874-75 reached more than £50,000,000; while in 1875-76 it reached nearly



THE DAK-GHIASI, OR POST-CHAISE.

On the resignation of Lord Northbrook, Lord Lytton was appointed his successor; and on the former leaving Calcutta in the *Tenasserim* on the 15th of April, taking Colombo on his way home,

* Among the many irregular corps attached to the Indian army, perhaps the most singular is Macdonald's battalion of Meenas, formed by Captain (afterwards General) Macdonald. Like the first recruits of Sir James Outram's Bheel corps, raised in 1831, the Meenas were armed with spears, matchlocks, and bows and arrows. Dressed like Zouaves, they wore Glengarry bonnets; and, to gratify the taste for shrill music possessed by all the Purriar Meenas, "the big war-pipe of the Scotch clans was introduced," says the *Homeward Mail* of 13th December, 1875, and Deolee became vocal with pibrochs, while the Deolee Irregulars marched to such airs as "Johnny Cope" and "The Campbells are coming," played by six sepoy pipers, who wore over their uniforms flowing plaids of the colonel's clan tartan. "The chief sepoy architect answers to the name of Christopher Wren. Another savage of scientific tastes is known as Isaac Newton; and it sounds odd to hear a sepoy bag-piper addressed as Roderick Dhu, and another as Fassifera, so named after the gallant Highland colonel who fell at Waterloo."

£51,000,000; leaving in both these years—though £2,900,000 were applied towards the expense of the famine—a very considerable surplus. The extraordinary expenditure, which would be a source of no danger provided it were reproductive, went on at the rate of £4,000,000 during the two preceding years; and for the then current financial year it was about £3,759,000. The real pressure upon the vast resources of British India comes from the large outlay on necessary public works, which frequently fail to repay it; and, because no principle animates the source of authority, much has often been wasted in the department of railways.

"It is a good sign," says a public printer, "that the Government has diminished its estimate for works to be constructed, and that it has produced of loans. Perhaps we may have still more gratifying that no more taxmif"

templated, and that money will not be borrowed except for the railways and cognate works. The new Tariff Act is said to work well, and all the branches of revenue are in a sound condition. We may observe, however, that the cash balances, after ranging high, are returning to a lower figure. They are now (April, 1876) upwards of £16,000,000, and it is estimated will be £13,500,000 next year. Consequently, they are approaching the limit below which prudence indicates that they should be allowed to fall."*

On the retirement of Lord Northbrook the state of the Indian finance was declared satisfactory—all the more so when there was considered the drain on the Treasury caused by losses occasioned by the adverse rate of exchange. Though some points of his administration—such as the Baroda experiment—were open to criticism, more or less severe, for the general acts of it he merited alike the gratitude and respect of his compatriots.

One of his last public acts in Calcutta was to preside at a meeting held there on the 11th of April, when resolutions were passed urging upon the public to assist in the creation of a bishopric at Lahore, in memory of the late Bishop Milman.

Unlike many of his predecessors, he waged no wars, he annexed no kingdoms, and did not add an ^{un} the already vast empire of British India; th a whole year, he had to fight a hard battle th the hydra-headed enemy—the famine; and it ^h been said that were it only for the part taken ^h him in meeting that deadly danger which in 1873 and 1874 overhung Bengal, he would deserve the highest praise; for it was chiefly due to him that the horrors of the famine in Orissa were not repeated under his *régime*.

In Sir Richard Temple, the Lieutenant-Governor of Bengal, he had an able coadjutor, one whose energy was astonishing, and who personally inspected almost every quarter of his vast government—possessing a population double that of France—from Balasore in Orissa to the jealously-guarded frontiers of Thibet. "Like a Calmuck Tartar, he rode enormous distances without the slightest fatigue, thus showing himself an excellent example to all young Bengalees desirous of sharing some th in the work of governing their native country, ^h according to the system introduced by Sir Campbell, every competitor for the Native Service must show himself as much at home in the saddle and gymnastics, as in English and sciences. In the promotion of primary as well as secondary education in Bengal, Sir Richard Temple was more active than his predecessors.

* *Daily Telegraph*.

In spite, too, of his rather jealous restrictions on the new elective experiment in Calcutta, he rendered excellent service to the cause of local self-government throughout the province. . . . Time will show that the ex-Viceroy's estimate is the right one, and that there are excellent reasons why Sir Richard Temple is by far the most popular of the Lieutenant-Governors of Bengal."*

At the same time, it is certain that Lord Northbrook was one of the most popular of Viceroys. He did not go to India to dazzle or be warlike; and we are told that he was met on his arrival there by many a petition for some respite from the heroic style of government, in words like those which ran:—"If the administration of India for the last few years points to anything more than another it is this: the necessity for giving her rest—rest from over-legislation, from over-taxation, from over-anxiety for change in the name of progress, from over-activity for ambitious administrative improvements."

His policy was peaceful and just; order was well preserved and religion respected; and he sought to soothe the agitation the increase of taxes occasioned among the people; and by striking off Lord Mayo's great programme of public works, and other economies equally necessary, he was able to repeal the odious income-tax.

The new import duty levied on long-stapled cotton, which embittered national jealousy against Manchester, and an ordinance he issued against obscene and seditious plays in native theatres were alike oddly condemned by certain parties; while others alleged—and notwithstanding Lord Napier's high eulogium—that he should have attempted some re-organisation of the Indian army, and that he should also have turned to some account the mass of information collected by the Poonah Ryots Commission; but, in addition to repealing the income-tax, which was fast becoming obnoxious and dangerous, he was able to remit the non-agricultural cess in Bombay and the house-tax in Madras, while reducing the Pandari levy in the Central Provinces, and abolishing the Southern Customs line, which, by stretching like a barrier of obstruction across Southern India, caused so much discontent and ill-feeling.

He methodised the system of public works, encouraged liberal education in Bengal, and turned wisely to the instruction of the Mohammedan population, who had hitherto been carelessly left outside our educational establishments. Deserving natives he favoured when able to do so. One he appointed Director of Public Instruction in Berar, and two others to be attachés in the diplomatic service.

* *Examiner*, 1876.

As regards Afghanistan, it is said he followed the foreign policy of Lord Lawrence, in simply "waiting and watching" the turbulent clans of that mountainous region; and, while averting the misfortune of another war with Ava, sent an embassy to Yarkand.

Had Lord Northbrook not grappled with the famine, and had that scourge spread, with its twin-brother disease, the heir of the British Throne had not made so brilliant and successful a visit to India.

"Ever memorable," says a native journal, "will this rule be for the grand and generous policy adopted by Government; for the vastness of the preparations made in the pursuance of that policy; for the promptitude, energy, and self-sacrifice with which all the officers of Government, from the highest to the lowest, laboured in the mission of

humanity, and for the warm sympathy and active benevolence which it evoked both in Britain and in India. This was the first time in the history of British rule in the East, that the State recognised its duty to maintain its suffering subjects at a time of general scarcity, and performed that duty with a consideration, devotion, and liberality which have not only filled the hearts of the Indian subjects of the Queen with the most lively feeling of gratitude, but the whole civilised world with the highest admiration."

Such praise from the lips of the Hindoos was more ennobling than any patent of nobility; but for his eminent services in India, the Queen was pleased to raise the ex-Viceroy in the peerage of Great Britain, by creating him Viscount Baring of Lee, in the county of Kent, and Earl of Northbrook, in the county of Northampton.*

CHAPTER LXXIX.

LORD LYTTON VICEROY.—THE KOHAT PASS.—"THE ROYAL TITLES BILL."—THE QUEEN EMPRESS OF INDIA.

LORD NORTHBROOK'S successor as Viceroy was Edward Robert Bulwer, Lord Lytton, a writer, poet, and diplomatist of considerable eminence, and only son, moreover, of the great novelist, dramatist, statesman, and orator of the same name. Born in 1831, he had been educated at Harrow, and then at Bonn, in Germany; after which, at the age of eighteen, he entered the diplomatic service of his country in 1849, when he was appointed attaché at Washington, where his uncle, Sir Henry Bulwer (afterwards Lord Dalling and Bulwer), was the British ambassador, and to whom he acted as private secretary.

In the diplomatic service he was successively at Florence, Paris, and the Hague. In 1858 he was paid attaché at St. Petersburg, and afterwards at Constantinople and Vienna. He was twice in positions of great responsibility in Serbia, and in 1860 was Acting Consul-General at Belgrade, when he was employed on a special mission to prevent the renewal of hostilities between the Turks and Servians, after the capital of the latter had been bombarded. In reward for his services on this occasion he was employed as second secretary; and in January, 1863, was promoted to be Secretary of Legation at Constantinople. He was afterwards

at Athens and Lisbon; and, after concluding the negotiation of a commercial treaty between Britain and Austria, he was transferred to Madrid.

During this active career he published many works of fiction, &c., under the *nom de plume* "Owen Meredith;" and, eventually, after being ambassador at the Court of Lisbon, was offered the Governorship of Madras, when vacant, in May, 1875, by the death of Lord Hobart; but accepting the Viceroyalty of India, in succession to the Earl of Northbrook, he left London on the 1st of March, and landed on the 7th of April at Bombay, after which he arrived at Calcutta. Upon reaching Howrah, he was received by several high Government officers, by whom he was escorted in procession to the Government House. The route was lined with British and Native troops. There were large crowds of spectators, and the Viceroy was met with a warm reception. On reaching the Government House, His Excellency was received by the Lieutenant-Governor and the civil and military officials; Lord Northbrook meeting him at the foot of the grand staircase, and conducting him to the throne-room, where he took the oath of office on the 12th of April, 1876, when he was created Viscount of Lytton, Earl of Lytton, and Baron Lytton of Knebworth.

* Gazette, June 9th.

At the close of the interesting ceremony, his lordship, contrary to the general custom of his predecessors, addressed the Council of India. He felt, he said, that on assuming his high office he became "the inheritor of a great duty bequeathed to him by great men, whose manner of discharging it had made their names a part of British history."

He nevertheless did not, and could not, shrink from the unsparing obligations of the arduous task before him, because he relied on the loyal support of able and experienced colleagues, on the sympathy of all Britons, the generous appreciation of the people of India, and the confidence of his sovereign the Queen.

"The vast development which has lately been effected in the means of intercommunication," continued the new Viceroy; "the recent and rapid march of events, both in Asia and Europe; the ever-increasing proximity of the Eastern and Western worlds—all these things have undoubtedly rendered more complex, and therefore more laborious and more anxious than of old, the duties of the Government of India; but what our position has thus lost in simplicity it gains, I think, in grandeur, as the interests affected by it become more numerous, and its influence more widely felt. Discussions long, recently been raised, in Parliament and elsewhere, on the relative position of the Home and the Governments. If I now allude to those discussions it is because my own name has been introduced into them, and I therefore deem myself entitled to take the earliest opportunity in my power of endeavouring to remove from your minds any doubt that such discussions may have suggested, as to the profound sense of personal responsibility with which I assume my place at this table.

"As the mariner, who knows the noble nature of the elements to which he trusts his course, so, fearlessly confiding in that frank and open spirit which I believe to be the special attribute of the British character, I say broadly that, from whatever party the Queen's Government may at any time be formed, I, in my personal capacity here, shall at all times, on your behalf, be ready to welcome its timely and constitutional co-operation, as a guarantee for that salutary freedom of our deliberations and the undisputed dignity of our authority.

By the generous confidence with which I am so highly honoured on the part of my noble friend, Secretary of State for India, and Her Majesty's principal advisers in London, I feel myself supported; but I trust, gentlemen, that it may be good fortune, as it certainly is my desire, to win from your sympathies a support, generous, no less considerate, and no

less gratefully appreciated. Aided by your advice, and relying on your trusted experience, it will be my unremitting endeavour to keep a strict watch over the economical management and cautious progress of our administration.

"Such economy and caution are, indeed, especially imposed upon us by the unprecedented disturbance of our currency at the present moment; but I shall also claim your co-operation in providing with unflinching firmness for the safety and repose of the empire.

"Gentlemen, it is my fervent prayer that a Power higher than that of any earthly government may inspire and bless the progress of our counsels, granting me, with your valued assistance, power to direct them to such issues as may prove conducive to the honour of our country, to the authority and prestige of its august sovereign, and the progressive well-being of the millions committed to our fostering care, and to the security of the chiefs and the princes of India, as well as of allies beyond the frontier, in the undisturbed enjoyment of their just rights and hereditary possessions. In that case, gentlemen, I shall indulge a hope that, if life and health be vouchsafed to me to reach the term of my official tenure, I may then have merited some measure of that esteem and regard with which your thoughts will follow hence my distinguished predecessor when he quits these shores—some claim upon kindly feelings, akin to those with which our wonted sympathies and good wishes will assuredly accompany his progress through every fresh phase of a career already conspicuous and already rich in high achievements."

On the 22nd of the same month, Lord Lytton, accompanied by Lady Lytton (Edith, daughter of the Hon. Edward Villiers), left Calcutta, and took up his residence at Simla, the Court sanatorium of Bengal, to which we have had so often to refer.

It contains many houses, which are scattered along the crest of different mountain ranges, at an average elevation of 7,000 feet above the level of the sea. Many of these mountains are mere vassals of the mighty Himalaya, but would be the boast of other countries. Over these the snowy range extends from N. 30° W. to N. 70° E., embracing consequently an angle of a hundred degrees. The appearance of this mass of snow is that of a wide undulating plain, from which peaks rise in every imaginable shape. Between these peaks are the passes that lead into Kunawar and Chinese Tartary.

The first barrier is but the screen to other assemblages of higher mountains, which again are still the inferiors of the world-like bulwarks on the left bank of the Indus, from whence they slope to

the steppes of Tartary, and are at length lost in the deserts of Cobi and the deep woods and marshes of Siberia. Between the plains of Bengal and Simla the hills are devoid of trees; but on gaining the summit of the range crowned by the latter, we enter a fine forest, consisting of every species of evergreen, oak, and rhododendron.

One of the most pleasing places near the Court sanatorium is a deep dell, named (by some Scottish officer, probably) Annandale, wooded with pine and larch; but, like other forests near Simla, thickly inhabited by baboons, with white or straw-coloured bodies, and black hands and feet. Among the Puharries, the native or resident tribe, infanticide once prevailed to a dreadful extent, as these hill-people had a great aversion to female children; and marriage among them being virtually buying on the part of the husband and selling on the part of the parents, it is an undisputed fact that two or three brothers of a family, if too poor to support a wife each, buy or marry one, who will belong to them all; and the children of these unions are called the children of the first, second, or third brother, according to the order of their birth.*

At Simla the Trades Association presented an address of welcome to Lord Lytton, who, when replying to it, vindicated the policy of the Indian Secretary (the Marquis of Salisbury) regarding the cotton duties, and said that their abolition, or reduction, at the cost of adding to taxation, was never intended; and he spoke with warmth of the marquis' assiduous devotion to the interests of India. For himself, he added that nothing would ever induce him to tax the people of that country for any exclusive benefit to their British fellow-subjects. At that time, however, the smallness of the surplus, and the constantly increasing expenditure, with the unforeseen consequences of the depreciation of the currency, rendered it impossible to make the smallest reduction in the country's limited sources of income.

At the same time a great public meeting was held in Bombay to denounce the Revenue Jurisdiction Act, which was generally condemned by the Indian press; and a resolution was passed to memorialise the Secretary of State against it; while the refusal of the Government to grant the use of the town hall for the meeting produced much bitter comment.

In April, there occurred upon the Punjab frontier several skirmishes between our troops and the restless and lawless Afreedies, in which several men were killed and wounded. The dispute arose thus:—For some time previously, the Indian

Government had paid the Afreedies a yearly subsidy to keep the road through the Kohat Pass in repair, and to protect all travellers.

Kohat is a town and fort of Afghanistan, in the province of Peshawur, and the pass referred to lies on the south side of the Khyber mountains, midway between the town of Peshawur and Kalabagh, in the gorge of the great Salt range. The Sikhs long held possession of Kohat, though surrounded by the Afreedies, one of the most intractable of Afghan tribes.

Towards the close of 1876, they broke their compact by totally neglecting the road; on which we blockaded the pass, and prevented the entire tribe from trading with British territory, thereby causing them much pecuniary loss. On this, the whole of the Afreedies—save one section—professed a desire to submit, and troops were sent from Peshawur to keep possession of Cherat.

The census of Calcutta, taken in the beginning of April, 1876, showed a population of 420,000; but these figures were supposed to be liable to correction.

While the Prince was on his Eastern tour there came to pass that event which caused so much speculation, argument, and discussion at the time—"The Royal Titles Bill," which ended eventually in Her Majesty the Queen, on the 26th of January, 1876, being declared, by a majority of 105 in the House of Commons, Empress of India. It is an event which has now passed into the history of the nation, and on which comment is needless, though the actual value of it has yet to be tested.

On the 28th of April, this increase of the royal dignity was thus formally announced in the gazettes:—

"VICTORIA R.

"Whereas an Act has been passed in the present session of Parliament, intituled 'An Act to enable Her Most Gracious Majesty to make an Addition to the Royal Style and Titles, appertaining to the Imperial Crown of the United Kingdom and its Dependencies,' which Act recites that, by the Act for the Union of Great Britain and Ireland, it was provided that after such union the Royal Style and Titles appertaining to the Imperial Crown of the United Kingdom and its Dependencies should be such as His Majesty, by His Royal Proclamation under the Great Seal of the United Kingdom, might be pleased to appoint; and which Act recites that, by the virtue of the said Act, His Majesty, by His Royal Proclamation under the Great Seal of the United Kingdom, on the 1st day of January, 1801, our said Majesty's Titles are, 'Victoria, by the Grace of God, of the United Kingdom of Great

* *E. I. U. S. Mag.*, 1834.



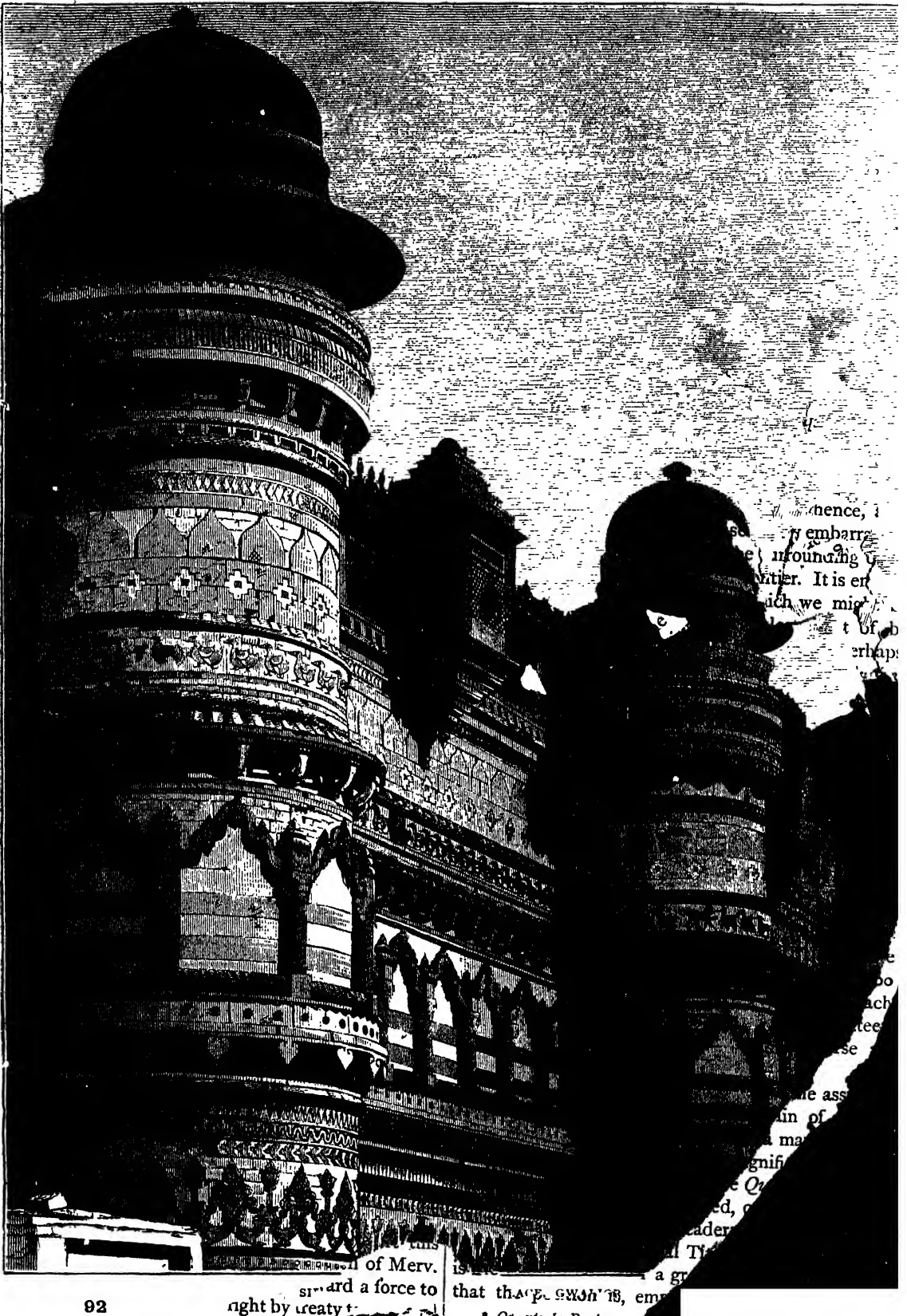
A CARAVAN.

Queen, Defender of the Faith; and which Act also recites that, by the Act for the better Government of India, it was enacted that the Government of India, then before vested in the East India Company, should become vested in us, and that India should thenceforth be governed in our name, and that it is expedient there should be a recognition of the transfer of Government so made by means of an addition to be made to our Style and Titles: And which

Act, after the said recitals, enacts that it shall be lawful for us, with a view to such recognition as aforesaid, of the transfer of the Government of India, by our Royal Proclamation, under the Great Seal of the United Kingdom, to make such addition to the Style and Titles at present appertaining to the Imperial Crown of the United Kingdom and its Dependencies as may seem meet; we have thought fit, and by the advice of our Privy Council, to appoint and declare, and we do hereby, by and



TRAVELLING BY ROAD.



with the said advice, appoint and declare, that henceforth, so far as conveniently may be, on all occasions and in all instruments whercin our Style and Titles are used, save and except all charters, commissions, letters patent, grants, writs, appointments, and other like instruments, not extending in their operation beyond the United Kingdom, the following addition shall be made to the Style and Titles at present appertaining to the Imperial Crown of the United Kingdom and its Dependencies; that is to say, in the Latin tongue in these words: 'Indiæ Imperatrix.'

"And in the English tongue in these words: 'Empress of India.'

"And our will and pleasure further is, that the said addition shall not be made in the commissions, charters, letters patent, grants, writs, appointments, and other like instruments, hereinbefore especially excepted.

"And our will and pleasure further is, that all gold and silver and copper moneys, now current and lawful moneys of the United Kingdom, and of Ireland, silver, and copper moneys which shall hereafter, after this day, be coined by our authority, shall bear the like impressions, shall, notwithstanding the said addition to our Style and Titles, be taken to be current lawful moneys of the United Kingdom; and further, all the

moneys coined for and issued in any of the Dependencies of the said United Kingdom, and declared by our Proclamation to be current and lawful moneys of such Dependencies, respectively bearing our Style or Titles, or any part or parts thereof, and all moneys which shall hereafter be coined and issued according to such Proclamation, shall, notwithstanding such addition, continue to be lawful and current moneys of such Dependencies respectively, until our pleasure shall be further declared thereupon.

"Given at our Court of Windsor, the 28th day of April, 1876, in the 39th year of our reign.

"God save the Queen."

On the 1st of May the Proclamation, announcing the Queen's assumption of the title of "Empress of India," was publicly read at the foot of the column in Trafalgar Square. The under-sheriffs and other officials were in four carriages, with the trumpeters inside; and it is a curious fact that barely 200 persons were present at the ceremony.*

On the 3rd, the event was proclaimed at the Market Cross of Edinburgh by the Scottish heralds, with a guard of the Queen's Own Cameron Highlanders, on which occasion a very large concourse of spectators attended, and the band played the National Anthem.†

CHAPTER LXXX.

OUR INDIAN POLICY.—MISSIONS IN CHINA.—DEATH OF SIR JAMES WEIR HOGG, ETC.

ABOUT this time there was a lull in the affairs of Khelat, and Major Sandeman's advance by the Bolan Pass was greatly retarded by an outbreak of cholera among his troops; but the north-west frontier of Scinde and the Punjab were a source of business to the Government of India, which was anxious to assist the Khan of Khelat in rescuing his dominions from anarchy, and, if possible, to place the frontier under one administration, as there was always pregnant with peril. It was some that there was neither hatred nor enmity between the British and the Afghans in Beloochistan, as there were many good tribes; that in bygone times the Scinde Horse were wont to go in every direction with perfect impunity, and it would be the case again if the British were supporting the khan, then

embroiled with his own people, were strongly carried out; and this was, to a certain extent, the object of Sandeman's expedition.

It was suggested to take the robber-tribes upon the frontier into pay as police, in which capacity they would recognise Britain as a Power not to be trifled with, and respect us accordingly; and that the Khan of Khelat should be subsidised in a sufficiently liberal manner to enable him to influence and control his subjects, while we took possession of those positions in his khanate which would afford him support, both moral and physical, and thus enable him to maintain order with ease within his own bounds; and that, by these means, we should at once have a friendly State on our borders, peace instead of contention with Afreedies and others on

* *Daily Telegraph*.

† *Scotsman*.

our frontier, and also secure the advanced strategical posts in that line of defence which may yet be wanted in order to guard the approaches to India. But the spring of the following year found Major Sandeman's force still necessary to secure peace in the province of Khelat.

The intended occupation of Merv by the Russians seemed to introduce a new, or additional, element of danger on our frontiers, from the fact that it lies so near the Afghan borders, and that a skirmish, however accidental—a few shots exchanged by scouts or outposts—might bring Russia and Cabul into collision, and thus precipitate in Central Asia the whole question between Great Britain and Russia, which the latter asserted they were as anxious to avoid as ourselves.

Merv, or Mervi-Shah-Jehan, is a town of Turkomania, some 300 miles south-east of Khiva, in an oasis of the same name. An earthen wall, four miles in circumference, girds its population of about 3,000, who are chiefly Persians; and though but a poor place now, since pillaged in 1786 by the Usbec Tartars, it was for ages one of the four great cities of Khorassan.

Granting that the occupation of this place would imply no ulterior or unfriendly views towards British India, the risk of disturbing friendly relations by the presence of the Russian flag there could not be small; for the question to be immediately considered is: What would be the effect of the invasion and gradual occupation of all Afghanistan by Russia? "We do not hesitate to say," affirms a writer on this important subject, "that the steady and unresisted advance of our great rival, distorted by a hundred rumours, would unsettle the imaginative Indian mind in a dangerous degree. The elements of disturbance latent among 200,000,000 people must necessarily be numerous; and however devoid of cohesion in quiet times, the spark that would fuse them into formidable union might be kindled at any moment. It is significant how the views of all responsible politicians on the subject of 'Russian aggression' seem converging towards a point of agreement. It is generally admitted that no interference with Afghanistan should pass unchallenged. The more passive school, fairly and ably represented by Mr. Grant Duff, though they refuse to see a menace even in the occupation of Merv, and would remain inactive, though observant, until Herat was attacked, would then declare 'war with Russia all over the world.' The more active school, on the other hand, would rather seek to avert this catastrophe by preventing the occupation of Merv. This they would effect by pushing forward a force to Quettah—which we have a right by treaty

then representing that the occupation of Merv would make it necessary for us to advance to Herat; and considering the danger to peace which we have shown to be involved in the Russian occupation of Merv, the more statesmanlike policy seems to lie in this direction. . . . Whereas every year finds Russia improving her communications and accumulating the means of offence, the resources available on our side for a campaign in Afghanistan do not appreciably increase. Even as matters now stand, the probable difficulties in her way between the Caspian and Herat or Merv, are fewer than those we should encounter in a march from India to either of these points; while from Cearjui on the Oxus to Merv the distance is, of course, trifling. . . . Meanwhile, the danger to peace which it may involve is not lessened by the tone taken by the Russian press. There the prospect of the occupation of Merv is exulted in: as a menace to Britain, as the occupation of a point of vantage, whence, at a critical moment, she might be seriously harassed, and even a force, raised from the surrounding countries, hurled against our Indian frontier. It is enough that the extent of the power which we might be driven to exert, should not be lost sight of by those whom it may concern. Hitherto, perhaps, it is rather the will than the power which has seemed in abeyance; but there are signs of a change in this respect which it would be dangerous to ignore. If this be recognised, as we hope it will be, it is difficult to believe that a firm but courteous representation of the case would not, while as yet no point of honour is involved, suffice to prevent the Russian occupation of Merv."*

The spring of the following year saw the Afghan chiefs on the most friendly terms with the Russians, and seconding the efforts of the Ameer to get a force ready for some purpose. Hence, in February, he had twenty-eight regiments of horse, each 600 strong; seventy-two battalions of infantry, each 800 strong; four heavy gun batteries, seventeen smaller batteries, and five brigades of horse artillery.†

In connection with all these matters, the assertion by the Sovereign of Great Britain of implying imperial supremacy in India may have a great—perhaps useful—significance. "The Queen declares to all the world," says the *Quarterly Review*—speaking, it may be supposed, for the Conservative party, the leader responsible for the "Royal Tiara" is the personal head of a government, and that the position is, em-

* *Quarterly Review*.

never with honour be abandoned. Her position towards the native princes cannot be better expressed than by the title of 'Empress'—a title which indicates a supremacy over other sovereign rulers, and, as such, was assumed by the King of Prussia to mark his supremacy in Germany. The attempts made during the recent discussions (on the Titles Bill) to establish an analogy between India and the colonies showed, we think, a complete misapprehension of the position of both."

In February, 1876, the Russian troops, under General Scobelev, had overrun all Khokand, and made themselves masters of twelve towns there.* And in November it was asserted, by telegram from Lahore to Bombay, that "The Russian ambassador requested the Ameer to restore Abdaal Rahman Khan's estates: otherwise, the Czar would make him Governor of Bokhara, and encourage attacks on Majmana and Badakhshan, invite the inhabitants to revolt, and permit Sikander Khan to invade Herat; and that the chiefs agreed to petition the Ameer for the restoration of Mohammed Yakoub Khan."†

We have stated, in its place, that Lord Lytton, on taking the oath of office at Calcutta, deemed it expedient to adopt the somewhat unusual step of addressing the Council. Of this speech we have given an extract, but the whole tenor of it was evidently meant to correct any misapprehension which might have been caused in India by the enacting spirit of the Home Government.

Lord Salisbury had indicated a desire to control direct, as Secretary of State for India, the course of legislation in the East. A Bill was framed, embodying these pretensions, which, had it become law, would have gone far to lessen the powers and the position of the Viceroy; and, eventually, it was withdrawn; but Lord Lytton came to rule over the vast empire of British India while the impression produced by Lord Salisbury's movement was fresh in the minds of men, and when there were some gloomy forebodings of what might be the sequel to hold; and Lord Lytton, wisely considering that he would dispel these, referred in his speech to the discussions which have recently been raised, in our country and elsewhere, relative to the position of the native and Indian Governments."

It was felt that the man who accepts the sovereignty of India has duties towards that sovereignty, which require fulfilment, even should his duty require these duties be displeasing to the Government for India; for any excessive interference, while lessening his convenience, would impair his authority.

* *Madras Times.*

his authority over the ever-watchful native princes. It was urged in more than one publication at the time that this was a point of capital importance, and that if ever we lost India it would be, too probably, by home pressure and home intermeddling; that, instead of lessening, we should uphold and fortify the Viceroy; for too often it might happen that no wise reflections, born in London and wired to Calcutta, could be an efficient substitute for independent judgment, formed, with a full knowledge of the subject, upon the spot of action.

The month of March saw some troubles likely to ensue with the Chinese by their attacks upon our missionaries. Some time previously the Mission of the Church of England rented a building for the purposes of a chapel in the city of Kien-ning. Thither one of their catechists was sent, with three students, having orders to prepare themselves for future usefulness there.

All was quiet for a time; but after that, for several days, an unusual interest was manifested by the inhabitants, who came to the chapel, bought numbers of books, and pretended to be very friendly in their demeanour; but one day a member of the literati came, and announced to the catechist that he must substitute the name of Confucius for that of Jesus in his books: otherwise, instead of staying where he was in peace, he would get into serious trouble.

Two days after, a number of men burst into the chapel, and said, "What are you doing with all these children here? You are collecting them for evil purposes!" The mob then seized the English catechist, the students, and Church members who were there, dragged them out to the front of the Emperor's temple, stripped them nude, and hung two of them to trees by their thumbs.

A false alarm that the prefect was coming led them to take their victims down; but when they found that official was not approaching they tied ropes to the queues of four Christians, and led them naked through the principal streets of the city, calling out, "Come and see the foreigners we have here!" After long delay the magistrate sent runners, and had the Christians taken to his yamen; but some of the literati went to the prefect and demanded their expulsion from the city. The demand was complied with; and then the English chapel was entirely destroyed, as mob-law reigned supreme at Kien-ning and Yeng-ping, till representations were made on the subject by H.B. Majesty's representative.*

But in the subsequent July these events were

ily

* *China Mail.*

followed by a fearful attack upon the Catholic Christians at Ning-kuoh Fu, in the province of Ngan-hwuy, when a crowd, consisting of 1,000 ruffians, chiefly soldiers, under the guidance of officials, burst into a chapel during Divine service, and brained several members of the congregation. They forced the officiating priest down upon his knees, and demanded that he should cease to promulgate the Christian doctrine. He declined to do so, whereupon the most frightful outrages occurred. He was tortured to death, and then hacked to pieces; a little child whom he had adopted was literally rent limb from limb. The corpse of a clergyman who had died some days before was torn from its grave and mutilated. These outrages were all traced to a military mandarin named Wu, who openly expressed a malignant hatred of the Christian religion; and the result was that the Inland Mission had to abandon all that neighbourhood, while the clergyman in charge of it proceeded by steamer to Wuhu to pray for inquiries, too probably in vain.*

In the summer of 1876 there were lost to India the services of two of her most eminent civilians. On the 27th of May, Sir James Weir Hogg, Bart., died. Born in 1790, he had gone to India at an early age, and practised as a barrister with such success that he became Registrar of the Supreme Court at Calcutta. He was afterwards a Member of Parliament. In 1839 he became a Director, and in 1846 Chairman, of the old East India Company.

On the 23rd of June there died General Lord Sandhurst, G.C.B. and G.C.S.I., so well known in the wars of India under his name of Mansfield, who served with distinction in the Sutlej and Punjaub campaigns, and as Chief of the Staff in 1857, under Lord Clyde, during all the various operations which led to the suppression of the Mutiny. He was only in his fifty-seventh year; and it is worthy of notice that, at the time of his death, with the exception of the Prince of Wales and Duke of Cambridge, he was the youngest general officer holding the colonelcy of a regiment—the 38th, or Staffordshire.

On the 24th of July there died Sir William John Kaye, K.S.I., the eminent Anglo-Indian historian, in his sixty-third year. He began life as a subaltern in the artillery of the old East India Company, and established the *Calcutta Review*. In 1856 he entered the home Civil Service of the Company, and on the transfer of the Government he was appointed Secretary to the Political and Secret Department of the India Office, in succession to John Stuart Mill—a post which he held

with honour for nineteen years, retiring into private life in 1874. The histories of the war in Afghanistan, of the sepoy revolt, and many other works, have fully established his reputation as an Indian historian.

On the 15th of October, the supposed Nana Peishwa, Jumna Dass by name, died in the Maharajah Scindia's jail at Gwalior, where his arrest and detention excited much hostility against the prince among the people of his province.

In 1876, Mr. Henry Cottam, a Ceylon planter, made a bold but unsuccessful attempt, with another Englishman, to explore a new overland route from India to China. With a party he started from Assam, and travelled by the way of the Senga-pani River, their intention being to make their way into the Chinese province of Yunnan, through the Khampti and Sungphob country, and from thence across the Irawaddi.

They were, unfortunately, brought to a standstill mainly through the failure of the provisions for their native followers. In the course of their journey, Mr. Cottam and his companion visited the Brahm Kund, or Sacred Pool of Brahma, which is fed by the Brahmapootra, a stream which traverses the long valley of Assam, in its passage through which it receives no less than fifty-nine tributaries from the Himalaya and Garrow mountains.

The 30th of June this year saw one of the remarkable events in the East—the opening of the first railway in China, the short line from Shan to Kangwan.

On the 18th of August, Lord Lytton, as Viceroy of India, officially notified his intention to hold an imperial assemblage at Delhi on the 1st of January, 1877, to proclaim the Queen as Empress of India; and on the 1st of the following month there occurred the first municipal election at Calcutta.

In November, some interest was excited among military circles in India by the appointment of the two native officers, already mentioned as having accompanied the Prince of Wales to London—Sirdir Anoop Sing Bahadoor, Rissaldar 4th Regiment (P.W.O.) Bengal Lancers, and Sirdir Mohammed Azful Khan, Khan Bahadur, 11th Regiment (P.W.O.) Bengal Lancers. These native orderly officers, or aides-de-camp to the Royal Highness, prior to their return to India, these were both officers of distinguished intelligence, it is impossible to doubt that the seven months they spent in England must have been largely explained by the riches, resources, and power of the paramount State in

* *Celestial Empire*, August 5th, 1876.



naturally excited some comment among the press; and some there were who hinted that—which was probable enough—though Bengal Mohammedans signed it, the wording and general ideas seemed to indicate the hand of a European—in the vicinity, perhaps, of Government House, Calcutta.

The Mohammedans of India are quite cognisant of how, for political reasons, Britain has supported the power of Turkey; and, in its place, we have referred to the remarkable speech made by Lord Northbrook, to the effect that the war in the Crimea had retarded the Indian Mutiny for some time, and lessened its force when it did break forth; and, perhaps, it was the result of the then remoteness of India, and tardy diffusion of intelligence, that when we smote the Turk at Navarino, it created not the smallest interest in Bengal, or anywhere else in the East.

The Sultan, although styled Defender of the Faithful, assumed that title at a comparatively late date; and the real head of Islam is the Scheriff of Mecca, who is recognised as such by millions of Mohammedans, and, above all, by the Asiatics. Like the Christians, the Moslems are split up into many sects; of these the two great divisions are the Sunnees, or Sunnites, and the Sheeans, or Shiites, who hate each other bitterly; thus, in India, where both abound, Government have often had to introduce Hindoo police and British troops to prevent riot and bloodshed between them. In Afghanistan the greater number of the people are Shiites, who are the Puritans of the "True believers;" in Central Asia and Persia they are generally of that denomination; while the Osmanli Turks, including the Sultan, are Sunnees; and hence arose some of the disbelief in the genuine Mohammedanism of the long address to Her Majesty.

On the other hand, it was alleged that India possessed men like Sir Salar Jung, Kazi Shabudeen, Finance Minister at Baroda, and other men quite capable of composing excellent English, either verbally or written, and who could write with fluence and elegance in their own language; and was further urged that there was a great loss to the faith of our Indian Mussulmans, in the large aggregations of whom the Sultan was prayed for. People were reminded that the first of the great Moguls, who were reminded that the first of the great Moguls was an Ottoman of Constantinople, and that the far-famed great cannon there was cast by a Turk, or "the Turk of Roumelia." It was further urged that a Mohammedan meeting of the great Council of Friday in the Cooootollah was held on that day, and it was estimated that the number of people present was not less than 100,000; and, after prayers

for the Queen as Empress of India, and the Sultan of Turkey as Defender of the Faithful, the memorial to the former was read by the committee, adopted, and signed for transmission to London. The *Times* correspondent relates that the proceedings were marked by much earnestness.

On the 28th of November there was an event, which occurred at Rawul Pindi, having in it some of the elements of the late Mutiny, when Lieutenant Harris, of the 21st Punjaub Infantry, was shot dead at rifle practice by a Patan Sepoy. A sudden outbreak of insubordination occurred among the whole detachment at the butts, and when Lieutenant Harris fell, five other shots were fired at the colonel and adjutant, who rushed forward to protect him.* He had simply found fault with the man for his bad shooting, and asked him if "he thought he could hit an Afreedie." Fixing his bayonet the murderer made off, and kept up a fire till his ammunition was expended, after which he surrendered to his fate.

On the 30th of November the Judicial Committee gave judgment in a remarkable Indian appeal—involving the worship of idols and the old Indian right of adoption. It was the case of Koonwar Doorganath Rao *versus* Ram Chunder Sem and others, in a very curious matter to be adjusted by an English court of law—as to the property in a large amount of land, left for the maintenance of idols, and the keeping in repair of the temples "where the worship of the gods and the offering of funeral cakes and libation of waters" was carried on, from the fees of the estates.

Mr. Leith, Q.C., and Mr. Williamson were for the appellant, who claimed to be the custodian of the idol known as Radharholeun Tha Roer, and to set aside certain deeds by which money had been raised, and which had not been wholly devoted to the service of the idols.

Mr. Cowie, Q.C., and Mr. J. Graham, were for the respondents, who had purchased the property, and in whose favour the High Court at Calcutta had decided, and in which the plaintiff, who had a judgment in the Zilla Court, appealed to the Queen in Council. Sir Montague Smith, as one of the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council, gave a lengthened judgment. Their lordships saw no collusion with the parties who had advanced the money, and held that the widow had the management, until the appellant became the "adopted son," to keep up the services in the temple. Her Majesty was advised to dismiss the appeal with costs, affirming the judgment of the High Court at Calcutta.

* *World*, 10th January, 1877.

CHAPTER LXXXII.

THE GREAT CYCLONE OF 1876.

ON the 1st of November, there occurred in the Backergunge district of Bengal a terrific calamity, the cyclone, involving the greatest engulfment of man since the Noachian Deluge. These circular hurricanes are no uncommon event in the Indian seas, though none of such magnitude as that of 1876 is upon record. Backergunge, the scene of this calamity, had a visitation of the same nature in 1584, forming a desolating sequel to an invasion of the Mughals and other parts of the Indian coast have been similarly visited.

Splinter Stavorinus, Admiral of the States-General, records several cyclones in his time; and how, in the month of October, 1754, five ships of the Dutch East India Company were torn by one from their anchors in Fulta Roads and cast ashore.

Thus Coringa, on the coast of Coromandel—one of the best ports on that side of the Bay of Bengal, and defended from the south-west monsoon by the Point of Godavery—twenty years after we took it from the French, was utterly destroyed in December, 1789, by three great storm-waves, which rolled upon it in succession during a cyclone. M. de la Place, of the French frigate *Favorite*, who collected his account on the spot,* says:—

“Coringa was destroyed in a single day. A frightful phenomenon reduced it to its present state. In the month of December, at the moment when the high-tide was at its highest point, and the north-west wind, blowing with fury, accumulated the waters at the head of the bay, the unfortunate inhabitants of Coringa saw with terror three monstrous waves coming in from the sea, following each other at a short distance. The first, sweeping over everything in its passage, brought three feet of water into the town; the second augmented these ravages by inundating all the low country; and the third overwhelmed everything.”

The town and 20,000 of its inhabitants disappeared, vessels at anchor in the mouth of the river were uprooted from their moorings, and swept like corks into the plains surrounding Yonaon—a French village (nine miles above the embouchure of the Godavery), which suffered very much. In retiring the sea left vast heaps of sand and mud, which rendered all search for property or bodies impossible, and shut up the mouth of the river for large ships. The only trace of the ancient town

now* is the house of the Master Attendant and the dockyards surrounding it.

Coringa was visited by another of these inundations in 1839, by a single wave from the sea, when again 20,000 persons are said to have perished,† though this must be an exaggeration, while “vessels were drifted from the docks and rivers, and a large sloop (of 50 to 100 tons burden) was carried four miles inland.”

In 1805 a cyclone tore H.M.S. *Sheerness* from her anchors, and cast her a bulged wreck on the rocks in the harbour of Trincomalee; while on the Madras coast, which lies north and south, there are cyclones, at times, of such fury that no vessel can lie with the remotest hope of riding them out and the surf breaks in nine days in the water. I did this in 1809, when H.M.S. *Porpoise* was lost, and the wreck of an old vessel which had been blown up twenty years before was upheaved from its oozy bed in the sea, and flung upon the shore. Our great expedition to Java, consisting of transports and men-of-war, sailed but a few days before, but, unfortunately, escaped.

“In the Bay of Bengal,” says Mr. Piddington, President of the Marine Courts of Inquiry, Cuttack, “my researches, both published and unpublished, enable me to say that the storms (cyclones) travel at the rates of from little more than from two to thirty-nine miles per hour; but this last very high rate has occurred only in one instance, and from three to fifteen miles may be taken as the usual rates. The low rate of little more than two miles an hour (fifty-three miles in twenty-four hours) is that of the tremendous storm and inundation of Burrisal and Backergunge, at the mouth of the Burrampooter [*sic*] and Ganges, in June, 1822, which upwards of 50,000 souls and vast property in houses, cattle, &c., perished. The great action over one point, and in part to its south-east storm all day at Burrisal, exactly the wind required to dam up the great estuary of the Burrampooter.”

On this occasion no fewer than 1000 persons were brought to birth by the storm.

* Piddington's "Sailors' Horn-Book."

† Asiatic Society's Journal.

‡ Sailors' Horn-Book.

* About 1840. Vol. I., p. 285.

taking refuge in tree-tops—a circumstance which sufficiently depicts the terror and peril of such a visitation.

Backergunge, the scene of the last great cyclone, is one of the strangest tracts of land in British India. It is in the Eastern Sunderbunds, bounded on the east by the Puddah or Great Ganges, on the south by the Bay of Bengal, and on the west by the Hooringotta, comprising a superficies of 4,564 square miles.

This territory, notwithstanding its proximity to the sea, is in some places remarkable for its fertility, though much of it is singular marsh land, called *ghars*, *khals*, and *donees*, or islands—a kind of wilderness. Periodically overflowed by the waters of the Ganges, and enriched by their alluvial deposits, every portion of the crop-growing part of Backergunge has been brought down from countries hundreds of miles away, and piled up by the restless rivers and the sea till a district has been formed large enough for a principality.

"Two of its recognizest streams of earth are for ever at this, an ancient work—the Ganges and the Brahmapootra—and their discoloured waves roll perpetually down, from the mountains of Thibet and the plains of the north-west, that red and yellow mud which has formed a province. The labour of their labours is hidden under the mud, and when the leadsman brings up off Sangor Island, it has, as likely as not, come 100 miles, from Gangotri or the Jumna. The two great rivers unite in the estuary called Meghna, sending out to the left a labyrinth of arms and branches which interlace the alluvial soil with a thousand channels, and turn into an archipelago the province which the Brahmapootra and its Indian sister have created."

Flat and monotonous, yet fertile and green, these isles are like nothing in the world save themselves, and in some places raise two rice crops, which render them the principal granary of Calcutta; but in others the soil and the water are alike infested by wild animals. In 1801 the population was estimated at only 926,725, of whom five-eighths were Hindu, and the majority of the remainder Mughls and Musulmans. Some Portuguese colonists, desirous to see of those who in 1666 were invited by the 'Hagta Khan' to enter his service, still from a deplorable state of degradation.

It is chiefly remarkable for the extreme poverty of its population. The river Dacoits—a race whom the waters were long to have been fully suppressed by the British authority. The town of Backergunge is the capital of the district.

situated on a small insolation of the Ganges, to which it gives its name; but it has greatly declined since 1801, when, in consequence of the separation of the district from Dacca Jelalpoore, the courts of judicature and revenue were removed to Burrisal; yet it has still an extensive commerce in rice, salt, and cotton fabrics.

It is a moist and steaming corner of India, the whole district of Backergunge, yet not an inch of it fails in fertility; canes and reeds cover the shoals, mangroves fringe the banks, and nowhere in Bengal are there richer rice-gardens, more feathery topes of palm, or more fruitful orchards of plantain, tamarind, and mango, with plantations of sugar-cane, betel, and cocoa. Yet those who tend them, amid their toil have to contend, ever and anon, with snakes, tigers, and alligators; and there yearly a tribute of human life is paid, especially by the woodcutters.

The waters teem with fish, some of which are great in size, and are the food of man and his four-footed enemies alike—as the spotted leopards devour them if they fail to find a child at the wells or a peasant in the woods. "It is a land," says a writer, "of strange swooning sounds, of sweeping tempests and sudden dislocations, of earth undermined and carried off by the rushing rivers. There is an unusual thundering noise heard here, called the 'Burrisal guns,' and to this day nobody knows its origin. A well-to-do land-owner will wake up to find his property wafted away, by the Meghna or Madhumati, to the other side of the creek; and others who have painfully constructed valuable tanks for fresh water, see a single wave of the dreaded 'bore' sweep into the hollow and destroy it for ever. There is a regular name for such victims of nature in the Sunderbunds: they are styled *nadi-bhangi-log*, or 'river-broken people'; but, for the most part, the enormous population of these Indian swamps fares prosperously, growing betelnuts for half Asia, catching fish for Calcutta, weaving reed-mats and covers for the boatmen of the Ganges, and producing vast crops of paddy and sugar-cane. They are, on the whole, a gentle and simple people, largely Mohammedan in creed; for the Hindoo hates and dreads the sea: and in these islands there is a marine peril twice a month, with a far more tremendous danger periodically. At new and full moon the 'bore' comes up the Meghna in a wall of white water fifteen feet high, crushing every boat not drawn up—a terrible rolling bank of foam, which, on account of its speed, the people call the *shar* or arrow; and, now and again, the cyclone sweeps the Meghna and depopulates its islands and shores."

There no help avails man or any living thing caught in the swiftly-moving folds, or the irresistible tidal-wave that comes rolling in from the Indian Ocean, wrenching up, throwing prostrate, sweeping away, and submerging all that the hand of man has made. Such a wave, on the last night of October and 1st of November, burst, without premonitory warning, upon the unhappy people we have described, submerging, almost in a minute, three large islands—Dakhin-Shahabazpore, Hattiah, and Sundup—numerous smaller ones, and also the coast for five miles inland, destroying, as reported by Sir Richard Temple, 215,000 human beings.*

These islands are all situated in or near the estuary of the Meghna, the stream formed by the confluence of the Ganges and Brahmapootra. The largest, being the first-named, is 800 miles square in extent, with a population of 240,000. That of Hattiah and Sundup together was about 100,000. Up to eleven p.m. there was not the slightest danger; but before midnight the storm-wave had swept across the isles—in some places to the height of twenty feet—and all was over.†

The natives usually go to rest at sunset, in the little huts under the bamboos, of which there are long clumps stretching everywhere; and, happily, it is the custom in these districts to plant dense groves of trees, but more especially of cocoa-nut and palm, round the villages; and almost all who survived saved themselves by climbing into the branches, when the strange screaming sound—the din of the cyclone, amid the dead silence that always reigns at night in Bengal—was heard, coming from the south-west. It is not, says a print of the month, the continuous whistle of a Western tempest, but a fierce overwhelming uproar, like the thundering of surf upon leagues of stony beach; and, in an instant, the isles of the Meghna and its broad channel became the very centre of that terrific circular storm of wind and water combined. The latter, piled up, "turned almost like a wheel over Lakhpar, and, whirling downward again, drove with its western segment the heaped-up waves of the two great rivers in a wall of death thrice as high as the 'bore,' washing clean over the rich and populous islands. They stand some twenty feet above mid-tide, yet this dreadful wave of the cyclone rose, at least, another twenty feet, high over the dry land, submerging every hamlet and cattle shed; drowning men, women, and children in their sleep; bursting over tank, and garden, and temple—in a few minutes slaying nearly a quarter of a million of human creatures. Imagine

the horror of that scene—of that death so abrupt, pitiless, and inevitable. From the moment when the first howl of the cyclone was heard tearing upward from the ocean, to the awful return stroke of the tempest, herding before it the dark waves of water, scarcely *thirty minutes* elapsed. Tens of thousands of human beings were by that time caught up and washed like drift-wood into the boiling bay; tens of thousands more were choked in their beds by whelming waves and ruined buildings; and all the work of their hands, all their possessions, and all their cattle were similarly seized in the black flood and destroyed."*

A few escaped, but their sufferings were great; in one instance, no less than 100 were saved together, by floating on the strong roof of a large bungalow, belonging to Mr. Harvey, a wealthy European Zemindar of Dacca. In many instances, the water on entering the houses burst up the roofs, and the recession of the tidal-waves took them out to sea, with the wretched people shrieking as they clung to them. A few were actually taken thus from Sundup across the *Bay of Bengal*, ten miles broad, to Chittagong; but the majority were never heard of again. The flatness of the country made trees the only secure refuge, in almost all the towns who failed to reach them. The whole town of Dowlut-Khan, the head-quarters of the division, was swept away; and save only the named Baboo Uma, and his family, all the people perished. In the town of Burrisal 3,000 houses were swept away, with their inhabitants, and the paddy-fields destroyed.†

All the boats were swept away, and, as wheeled carriages are unknown, the survivors were thus deprived of all means of communication. Of those who escaped, many were betel-nut pickers and cocoa-gatherers, who are wont to be dexterous in clambering and swinging their light frames from tree-top to tree-top. Thus, these men, on finding themselves dashed against the stems of palms and areca-trees, managed to climb out of the whirling waters, and cling to the tossing branches till the wave subsided and the dry land was seen, covered with mud, the *débris* of houses, and the bodies of the drowned, with their cattle of every description.

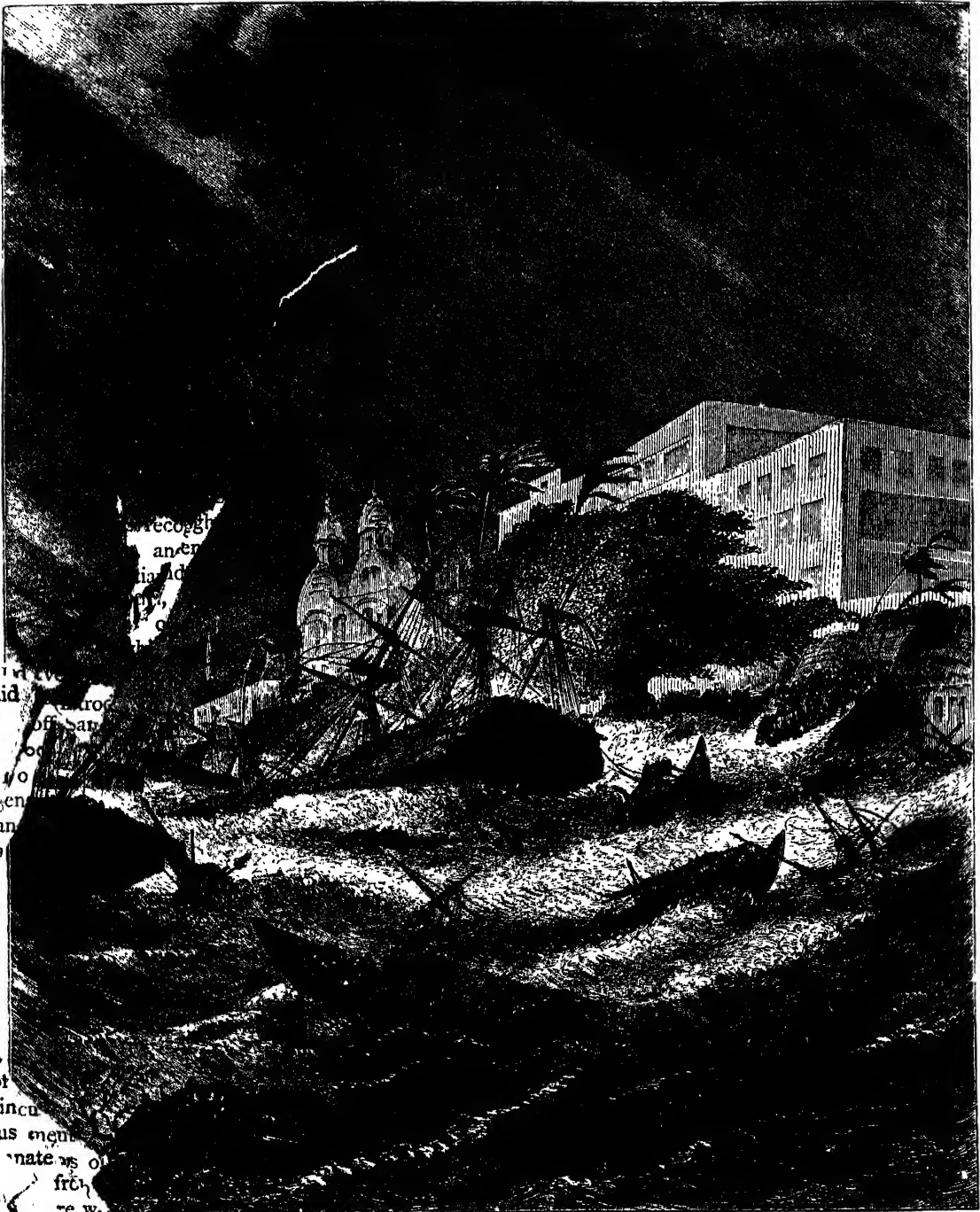
All the civil officers and police officials at Shahabazpore perished, save the deputy commissioner in charge. "A strange fact about the storm," says the *European Mail*, "is that, in Shahabazpore and Hattiah, most of the property was done by the storm-wave from the south, and down the Meghna. Several

* *Calcutta Gazette*, November 25th, 1876.

† *European Mail*, November 23rd.

* *Daily Telegraph*.

† *European Mail*.



CYCLONE AT CALCUTTA.

son-
py us
re, in
gene-
Sci-
ever, an
ld be
the Meghna, which re-

for this. One is that the cyclone, struck the shore first near
for some distance, and then
Another is that the wind
the Meghna, which re-

bounded with terrific force when the pressure
relaxed. A third supposition is that there were
two parallel storms, with a centre of calm between
them. The first or third theory seems most prob-
able, as the destruction came from the south."

In this terrible calamity—the most devastating ever known—the Indian officials were not slow in doing their duty. Sir Richard Temple, the Lieutenant-Governor of Bengal, with a numerous and active staff, was speedily at Backergunge, from whence he reported that 3,000 square miles had been laid desolate; the whole of that space, shore and island, being left ghastly, drowned, and bare; while there was every fear lest the as yet uncounted bodies of the dead, with the carcasses of the cattle and of all the carrion-eating creatures in the jungles, where the rats, the snakes, and even the insects, had all shared one common fate, might infect the humid air and breed a pestilence.

It was reported that even the birds had been destroyed by this stupendous storm-wave. The stench from the thousands of corpses soon became insufferable, and a general outbreak of cholera was hourly expected; but at Nookholly only did it manifest itself.*

Ere long it was found that the condition of the survivors was better than might have been expected, and that they were not suffering very seriously from want of food, while their recuperative energies asserted themselves in a remarkable degree. For some days there was much distress; but as Backergunge is a great rice-producing district, the stores of its peasantry are ample, and mostly kept under ground. These were, of course, thoroughly soaked,

but not destroyed; and wherever Sir Richard Temple and his staff went, he found the scared people drying their grain in the sunshine. The ripe cocoa-nuts also gave subsistence till the next harvest, the growing crops of which had been seriously injured, and in many places swept away.

The timely distribution of relief roused the people at once from dark despondency, and enabled them hopefully to apply themselves to such forms of self-help as were possible in their circumstances. One of the chief causes for apprehensions after that of the storm passed away, was as regarded cattle for agricultural and other purposes; the destruction of which exceeded even that of human beings, relatively to numbers, it was evident there would be a difficulty in meeting the requirements of the next sowing season as regarded the preparation of the land.

Distance precluded the transport to Backergunge of the Bombay cattle, which were, at that very time, perishing for lack of sufficient food, otherwise, in the calamities



THE EJANGAL, A SAVAGE OF THE SIRGOUJA.

two places might have been mutually relieved. For some days much disorder prevailed, and robberies were attempted; but this state of affairs was speedily rectified. About six depôts were established; persons absolved from their distress at once relieved; but no large number of persons were relieved. Sir Richard Temple was

* Government Gazette, &c.

* Euro

Those Afreedies whom he had met at Peshawur having manifested a friendly spirit, the blockade was now restricted to only 1,100 men of the Kohat Pass section: all the other tribes having separated from them, so far as even to express a wish to be regimented in the British service, which was unnecessary, though it could be done at any time to the extent of many thousand men, all hardy and active mountaineers.

In an address presented to the Viceroy by the tea-planters of Kangra, in the province of Lahore—of old known as Nagorkate, wherein Mahmoud of Ghizni found the accumulated riches of its idols—he was urged to afford them further facilities for the transmission of specie through the Government treasuries, as it would seem that, during the preceding ten years since 1866, the quantity of tea exported from British India had risen to 28,126,100 lbs. The Indian tea was used principally in Great Britain for mixing with other teas; but some progress had been made in the consumption of pure and unmixed Indian tea. The proportions then supplied by the different tea-growing districts of British India were:—Assam, fifty per cent.; Cochin and Thibet, twenty-six per cent.; Darjeeling, thirteen per cent.; the Himalayan districts, six per cent.; and British Burmah, five per cent.

The quantity now grown is but a small part of what India, if called upon, could produce, as she possesses every advantage of soil and climate for the growth of tea, and might, if needed, supply all the wants of Britain in that respect, and perhaps the wants of all the world beside.

In replying to the address of the tea-planters, the Viceroy said:—

"In the excellent results of the tea-plantations of the Kangra Valley, which have been fostered and encouraged by the Government of India, I recognise imperial benefits so considerable as to entitle the authors of those benefits to a special claim on the consideration of the Government. Your undertaking has afforded lucrative employment to thousands of the population of this district. The effect of its example, no less than its results, is not merely local; and so far as its social and political influence extends, besides being eminently creditable to the British character, it is also conducive to the stability of the British Raj."

At a meeting held subsequently on this subject by the Indian section of the Society of Arts in London, it was stated that India now produced, and was capable of producing in any quantity, teas which were of a quality, strength, flavour, and purity, not only equal to, but superior to those of China or any other Eastern country, and which

were adapted to all tastes, the plainest or the most fastidious, and at moderate prices; and one speaker urged all who heard him, "in their own interests as consumers, and as a duty they owed to their countrymen in India—men who had long toiled and struggled to meet their wants, without as yet any adequate profit in their investments—to a more direct and extended use of Indian tea, thereby affording a fair harvest of profit to the cultivators, for which nothing was now wanting but an increased consumption of their produce in this country."

While at Lahore, Lord Lytton made a handsome donation to the fund being collected for the restoration of the Imperial Mosque, the work of which was then in progress—a liberality which was received by the Mohammedan population with the liveliest satisfaction. He also directed that the pupils of the Normal School, whom he met in passing the Hazareaccut, should be feasted at his expense; and, as a token of his hospitality, he gave orders for the entertainment of 300 guests daily for a fortnight.*

It was on the morning of 15th December he started for Jacobabad, escorted by a troop of the Scinde Horse—smart soldiers in dark green uniforms, armed with swivel guns and double-barrelled Jacob rifles. He arrived at Shikarpur, where he was received with cordiality, for luncheon, and went through the formalities. The Chairman of the Municipal Council, having read an address, his lordship resumed the following terms:—

"Gentlemen,—I feel much gratified in receiving, in my fitting passage through this city, the kindly address which you now come to read on behalf of yourselves and the inhabitants of this ancient town. The sentiments of affection and devotion to the throne, to which your address, afford a lead and example with which our beloved ruler will be pleased to see her subjects in this district conform. The assumption by the Government of India, that she closely associates her relations with this country is, as you may have observed, an expression on her part of her interest in your welfare and prosperity, of as much regret to myself that the financial exigencies of the Government have compelled the Government to withhold those loans which, in various instances, they have so frequently granted to the municipalities. It is averred, that the proverbs of our Afghan neighbours are, 'the land of the British is a land of the British,' which thus

of two great piers, containing 711,000 yards of cubic stone and concrete blocks, designed by Mr. Parkes. By October, 1876, about £60,000 of the estimated sum had been paid.

The actual work of construction had been commenced in the preceding year, and the northern groyne, which alone had been taken in hand, abuts 1,000 feet into the surf. There is no tide worth mentioning, the greatest difference between high and low water falling short of two feet. On the other hand, during the south-west monsoon a very strong current sweeps along the coast, hurrying with it a vast quantity of loose sand.

Madras stands close upon the shore, and is unfavourably situated, either for the purposes of commerce or the requirements of a capital. The coast forms nearly a straight line, swept by the current above-mentioned; and until the construction of the new harbour, with its double piers, there was neither ^{island} for shipping nor island to break the tremendous surge. Thus, large ships generally moored at two miles from the shore, and in nine fathoms' water; but the station in the roads was always ^{very} hazardous during the monsoon. There was also very great difficulty, and even no small danger, in landing from vessels, in consequence of the furious surf, which, even in the mildest weather, breaks upon the shore, and which no boats of European construction can withstand.

The craft of the country, generally called *masulaks*, or accommodation-boats, which are used for crossing this dangerous surf, are singularly formed: without ribs or keel, with flat bottoms, and without any iron in their whole fabric. Their planks, which are very thin, are sewed together, having straw in the seams instead of caulking; and they are thus so flexible that they yield like leather to the impulse of the waves. They are large and light, with a bench at one end, cushioned and curtained, so that passengers may be kept dry while the wild surf is breaking all around them. An European boat, enduring one-half of the concussions which these *masulaks* hourly undergo unharmed, would infallibly be torn to pieces.

The new harbour was intended to obviate this peril and discomfort; but one peculiarity of the Madras coast is, that whenever a groyne—as at the fort, for example—has been abutted into the surf, the sand drifts about its base, and the sea recedes therefrom to some considerable distance; and the northern breakwater of the new harbour has proved no exception to this rule. Hence, a large tract of dry land was formed in front of the Custom House, which but a few months before—even at the time of the prince's visit—was permanently covered by

the sea; and the surf now breaks at the foot of the landing-stairs, where, until quite recently, the long swell rolled past in one unbroken volume.

Much of this has been caused by the two groynes or breakwaters not being carried on simultaneously, in which case they would mutually have protected each other: the southern groyne intercepting the sand-drift from the south, while the other stopped it from the north. Another mistake in the construction of these important works has been alleged to be the employment of nodules and small pieces of laterite, instead of great blocks of granite, which is procurable within a distance of nine miles.

The engineer, we are told, “assures the Chamber of Commerce that he is perfectly satisfied with the progress already made, and is quite confident that the work will be completed within the estimated cost. At the same time, he recognises the probability of a serious accumulation of sand at the mouth of the harbour in about fifty or sixty years, by which time the silt will have travelled along the outer edge of the groynes and ^{will} ~~will~~ ^{be} ~~be~~ ^{run} ~~run~~ ^{down} ~~down~~ the surf ever so far out to seaward.”

But many discomforts would ^{be} ~~be~~ ^{lay} ~~lay~~ ^{to} ~~to~~ ^{attend} ~~attend~~ the shipping at Madras, for in ^{the} ~~the~~ ^{they} ~~they~~ ^{we} ~~we~~ find a shipmaster complaining bitterly ^{of} ~~of~~ ^{the} ~~the~~ ^{reverses} ~~reverses~~ in which the steamers and other vessels ^{are} ~~are~~ ^{run} ~~run~~ ^{together} ~~together~~, “so that, were it to come result would be most disastrous. Every one more anxious than his neighbour to get ^{to} ~~to~~ ^{the} ~~the~~ ^{shore} ~~shore~~, so as to ensure a supply of boats, ^{will} ~~will~~ ^{at} ~~at~~ ^{last} ~~last, have anchored with their sterns ⁱⁿ ~~in~~ ^{the} ~~the~~ ^{breakers} ~~breakers~~, and no room is left ^{for} ~~for~~ ^{the} ~~the~~ ^{ships} ~~ships~~ coming in from sea to pass in shore ^{at} ~~at~~ ^{their} ~~their~~ ^{berth} ~~berth~~. Another serious cause of ^{the} ~~the~~ ^{complaint} ~~complaint~~ is the manner in which a net-work of ^{the} ~~the ^{dhows} ~~dhows~~ ^{is} ~~is~~ ^{allowed} ~~allowed to spread across the south ^{of} ~~of~~ ^{the} ~~the~~ ^{anchorage} ~~anchorage~~. These wretched ^{are} ~~are ^{drawn} ~~drawn~~ ^{up} ~~up~~ ^{scope} ~~scope~~ of coir cable ahead ^{and} ~~and~~ ^{on} ~~on~~ ^{purpose} ~~purpose~~ to catch the ^{un} ~~un~~ ^{propellers} ~~propellers~~. It used to ^{be} ~~be~~ ^{that} ~~that~~ ^{vessels} ~~vessels~~ were only allowed to ^{go} ~~go~~ ^{ward} ~~ward~~ in the north-east monsoon.~~~~~~~~

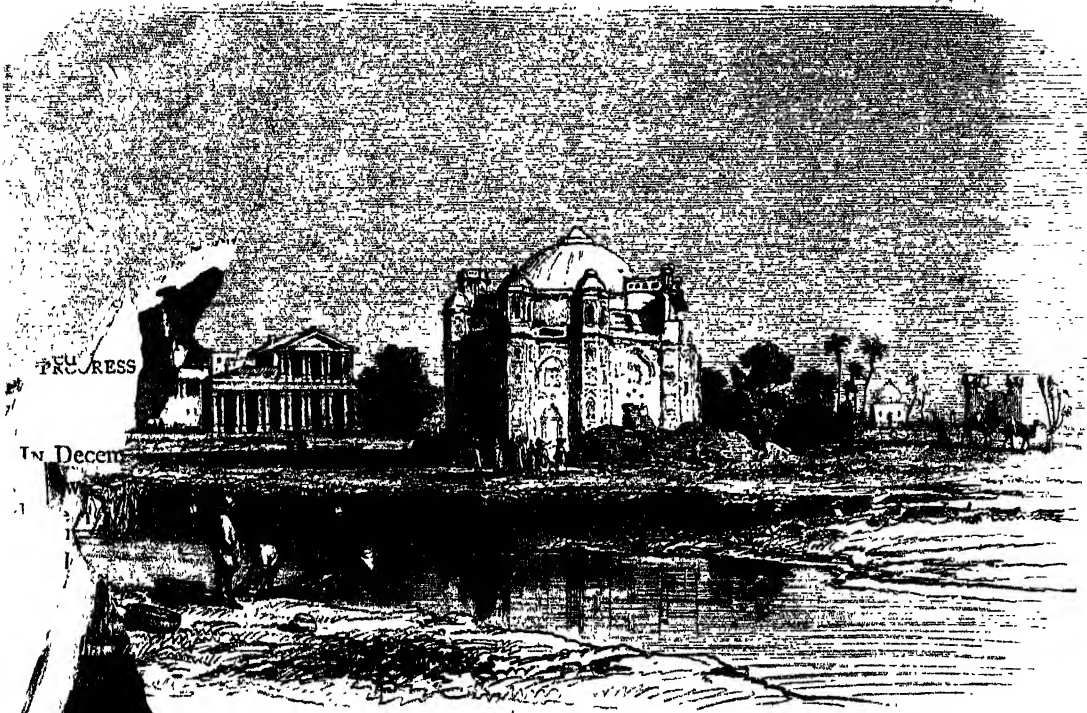
The attention ^{of} ~~of~~ ^{the} ~~the ^{authorities} ~~authorities~~ became ^{occupied} ~~occupied~~ by the silting ^{of} ~~of~~ ^{the} ~~the~~ ^{harbour} ~~harbour~~, and the ^{various} ~~various~~ ^{tracts} ~~tracts~~ of ^{the} ~~the ^{presidency} ~~presidency~~ ^{bordering} ~~bordering~~ ^{on} ~~on~~ ^{the} ~~the~~ ^{coast} ~~coast~~ that in the ^{last} ~~last~~ ^{official} ~~official~~ ^{district} ~~district~~ ^{advances} ~~advances~~ Kistná and ^{and} ~~and~~~~~~

sentence: "No rain, no crops—condition of people unchanged." The Bombay Government began to send large quantities of grain; but the collectors were directed not to distribute gratuitous alms except in cases of extreme necessity, and, so far as possible, to exact a fair day's labour on the relief works.

Subscriptions were opened in Bombay, when the cholera appeared and began to increase; while in Madras there was much distress, during November, in the districts of Kurnaul, Cuddapah, and Bellary.

district of Godavery, one of the noblest of Indian rivers, which is computed to be 900 miles in length.

Distress was also beginning to be felt in Tanjore, so commonly called the Garden of India; and riots took place in many towns, resulting in the plunder and waste of rice and ghee. Immense quantities of rice were fortunately procurable from Orissa, itself once the scene of a most disastrous famine, but now the veritable granary of the eastern coast; and the greatest activity prevailed at every



VIEW OF THE ENGLISH CHURCH, LAHORE.

stitution in Mysore, but the gloomy there than in the being gradually denuded of the natural result has been to check the trees disappear, the clouds in the distance, the occupied the landly greet included paymeis authentic pasting to pla to certain indiv of destitu- "ouish." The cause by thei, containing a were not socy of the Britislo, of whom the Merference of Gelonging to twenty yance he had pu, 0,000 were on whereditary title, tters were the 1st whom this ch accounts are, to in out ant docum also from generoe be amount of ell- x- e red

port between False Point and Madras to avert or soften the coming catastrophe.

As both the Godavery and the Kistna bring down such a quantity of detritus and other *débris* of their banks and beds, no vessel of good average tonnage can come within six miles of the shore. In consequence of this, all goods and grain for the distressed districts had to be taken off in open boats, that sailed well enough when wind and current favoured, but were apt to make slow progress and ship seas when impelled by oars alone.

At False Point there was only the semblance of a steam-tug, and at Coconada there was one steam-launch of indifferent power. There was no efficient service of tow-boats for such ports on the coast as possess fairly-sheltered anchorages; and it was now

+ Bombay Government

ghna, which

np



"It was not, and is not enough," says the

Madras Times, "to offer nine-tenths of the amount with unquestionable security for the payment of the small balance on an early day. It was then, and is still, absolutely necessary that the total instalment should be paid up at the fixed date, with the alternative of the land being sold for arrears in thirty days. It is true there was, and is, an appeal to the Board of Revenue, submitted through the collector, but, as a rule, nothing comes

of it. At the same time, the Zemindar is precluded from applying the legal screw to his own defaulting tenants, through whose laches he may have been reduced to this ignoble embarrassment, though it is only too probable that he has already contrived to 'squeeze' them in some indirect fashion. Be that as it may, landed property in the Lower Provinces is not now such a favourite mode of investment as it was some years ago."

CHAPTER LXXXIV.

INFANT MORTALITY IN CALCUTTA.—"THE MODEL STATE."—A NARRATIVE OF THE LIFE AND DEEDS OF AN AMBASSADOR.—STORY OF NARANDRA RAO BAHADOOR.

THE returns of infant mortality in Calcutta, brought forward in October, 1876, afford some curious statistics. According to Dr. Payne, the health-officer of the capital of British India, in his Quarterly Report, a native child born healthy in that city "has a chance of life considerably less than that of a person attacked by cholera;" and adds, that nothing has been efficiently done in the way of sanitation to prevent the frightful "massacre of the innocents," which for centuries has been going on all over Hindostan.

"Of every thousand Hindoo children," he states, "born about 1875, there died 596 within a year, and of the Mohamunedans no less than 735; while the annual average of the latter was 598." In England certain districts have been styled "Herodian," in which the infant mortality averaged from nineteen to thirty per cent., whereas in Calcutta seventy-three perished out of every hundred in a single year. This does not result from the Indian climate being less favourable for little children than that of Britain; neither does it arise from careless nursing: for the Indian mother, whether at labour in the factory or in the field, has her babe ever within sight, and in her immediate custody; yet the melancholy fact remains that of native children, one, at least, out of every two surely perishes within the first twelve months after birth. After all, the cause, it would seem, is not far to seek, though generations will pass before any radical change is effected.

During the eight years from 1868 to 1875, both inclusive, there died in Calcutta 17,017 infants under the age of twelve months. Of these 4,204 were carried off by various febrile diseases; 2,351

by convulsions; 582 by cholera; 1,100 by tetanus, which has been directly traced to imperfect ventilation and filth. They also die of various other diseases, and of the effects of the heat of the climate.

In Calcutta this disease, which is a scourge almost exclusively in the city which are inhabited by the natives and by Eurasians. If the cause were in fault, the greatest mortality would be looked for among the Europeans; but the ratio is eighteen per cent., including that of soldiers and those who are known as "whites;" while the well-to-do Europeans have a much lower rate of mortality than the Mohamunedans or Hindoos; though the latter are told, whose habits are so different from those of the natives, pay no attention to every violation of the rules of hygiene.

That the cause of

with its birth, is of a labourer, native quality, a few feet high, times, in the care of the attendants, and the burning of the principal is, in the mind of the people, a great evil.

is, in the mind of the people, a great evil.

as can be got to leave it, who betake themselves to a balcony outside, or block the doorway, until his departure. He knows full well that, as soon as his back is turned, all will be as it was when he arrived; for it is among the first principles of native midwifery that air should be kept away from a newly-born child. This process of asphyxiation seems to be carried on for a variable period; but in no case, as far as I can ascertain, is the period less than seven days: it often extends to ten, and with Mohammedans much longer; nor does it alter under any extremes of natural heat."

Dr. Payne appeals to his brother practitioners to recognise the accuracy of his delineation in the matter referred to. Thus, it cannot excite much surprise, that in the entire number of deaths between 1867 and 1876, 8,000 took place within fourteen days after birth. Dr. Payne remarks in his report, that "human sacrifice—suttee and female infanticide—were once as deeply rooted in home life and tradition as the suffocation is now, but they are now suffered to disgrace the administration. It was intentionally caused by them. In the last, the moral law of the foreign ruler, not of the land, makes it easier to discover the remedy for this existing and pitiful infanticide, and suggest an efficient remedy against it as "a national custom."

Sacrifices were never practised by either the Hindus or Mohammedans; they were, doubtless, the cause of the depopulation of the country, as Thuggee, or the sacrifice to Kali by the low caste Brahmins, and the human sacrifices to the goddess Kali. Under British rule human sacrifices were practically confined to a few hill tribes; and though the practice of the male infanticide was falling rapidly among the Rajpoots, when Dr. Payne wrote on the subject to the Government, it was still so difficult now, that female

by Dr.
and is
e sup-
All
i ac-
t be
heir
dge
—

of its suppression will be nigh at hand; but for the Government to interfere at present would be one of those blunders that are as bad as a crime."*

But genuine civilisation is making its way slowly, hand-in-hand with education, in British India, and, perhaps, nowhere so much as in Travancore, which is justly styled "The Model Native State of India." Of all the native chiefs who visited Calcutta to meet the Prince of Wales, none attracted more attention than the maharajah of that south-western province: not so much for the splendour of his costume or his jewels, as for his high position as a ruler. Much of the credit of having raised Travancore to a state so perfect has justly been given to Sir Madhava Rao, who was for many years its dewan; but it must be borne in mind that improvements in native states cannot be carried out without the entire concurrence of the ruling power. Fortunately, both prince and minister co-operated cordially at Travancore. British codes of law were introduced, and British judges were appointed to the Sudder Courts; an efficient police was organised; hospitals were built, dispensaries founded, and schools opened. Transit dues and other restrictions to free trade were abolished; and the second prince of the country has condescended to do that which no Indian prince did before—to give lectures on useful and popular subjects to the people.

That all these improvements are real, and not merely established in name, has caused the settlement of more Europeans (chiefly as coffee planters) in Travancore than in any other native state, and they all testify to the rapid improvement of the country. The maharajah who visited the Prince of Wales was born in 1832, and succeeded to the throne in 1860.

Two curious episodes, in the December of 1876, grew out of the Mohammedan *furor* and address to the Queen; one of these was a sermon preached by the Akhoond of Swat, and a mock Turkish ambassador making his appearance at Mandalay.

The former personage, who affected to be a prophet (and whose strange title afforded *Punch* so much amusement from time to time), preached a *Jehad* to a great multitude in the Musjid, on a Friday; he foretold that the end of the world and the day of judgment were drawing near; that the great kingdom of Islam was in danger from heathen Feringhees; and that if Roum (*i.e.* Constantinople) fell into their hands, Islamism would be at an end:

and that all true believers should prepare to die in the name of God and religion; while they should assist the Sultan

with subscriptions of money, as the believers in India and Arabia were doing; and that he would induce the Ameer of Afghanistan to join in the *Jehad*.*

It has been said that since a King of France was imposed upon by a mock ambassador from the Shah of Persia, royalty had not permitted itself to be so hoaxed as His Golden-Footed Majesty—surrounded as he is by all the terrors of despotism—permitted himself to be by a sham ambassador from the Ottoman Empire.

This daring impostor proved to be an Abyssinian, or Arab, named Shereef Mohammed, a liberated slave, who arrived at Rangoon some time in the month of October. There he fell into the hands of some designing individuals, who, after representing to the King of Ava that a Turkish ambassador had arrived at Rangoon in a state of illness, induced him to send down to that place an official, named Mounq Galay, with orders to cure and bring on His Excellency to Mandalay. This was actually done; and the Golden Foot, being flattered with the idea that the Commander of the Faithful had really sent an embassy, and that no doubt there were presents of immense value coming from some ship or fleet in the Irawaddi, entertained Shereef Mohammed right royally, presenting him with money for himself and precious stones for the Sultan, in anticipation of those which he believed to be on the way; and after transacting all the necessary business with His Majesty, the *pseudo*-ambassador and his attendants set off in all haste for Rangoon, where a quarrel about the division of the spoil led to a full exposure of the imposition. The cook of the "mission" had been promised a gift of 300 rupees on their return to Rangoon, and on applying for it found his claim repudiated. In a fit of rage he revealed the whole affair to the police.

Shereef Mohammed, the mock ambassador (according to the *Rangoon Gazette*), stated that he had been induced by Mounq Galay, and a broker named Hassan, who acted as interpreter, and composed a letter in the name of the Sultan, to play the perilous part he did. The trio laid the blame on each other, and each in turn disclaimed having absorbed the spoils—somewhere about 30,000 rupees. Mounq Galay, who was accused by one of the party of having taken the lion's share, was arrested in Moulmien and brought to Rangoon; but it appeared that he had the express authority of the king to take up "the ambassador," which was an undoubted fact, and that it was improbable he would expose his family, who were all in Moulmien, to the cruel vengeance of an offended

despot, he was released, though strongly suspected by the British authorities to have been the head and front of the whole affair.*

So much confusion existed about this mock ambassador, that, some weeks before, the Rangoon paper stated that an Egyptian minister had gone to the Court of Ava, and that the impostor was the cook of the real mission, the members of which had died on their way to Burmah; and he had been thus encouraged to take their papers and assume their character.

Whether it was in connection with the intended proclamation of the Queen as Empress at Delhi, or with the anticipated famine, it is impossible to say; but in the December of 1876 a curious prediction was circulated. The seers and astrologers in Pudukottah, a town of the district of Tanjore, and formerly the seat of the Government of the Hereditary Poligar, on the 6th of the Tamil month—corresponding with the 19th of December—saw a being resembling a human figure, in the east, and after three days in the ocean. This phenomenon, they said, was the great and sudden calamities on the coast, after which there would be great plenty throughout Bengal.

In the middle of the month the frontiers far apart reached Calcutta. The Luschais were becoming troublesome. Suffering from a partial failure of the usual in such cases, they replenished by a raid upon their neighbours. The event, which made it likely to be that, according to the number of human performance of these, as we have a little of makir

The other from K. Khelat be ca quer pen to the re J

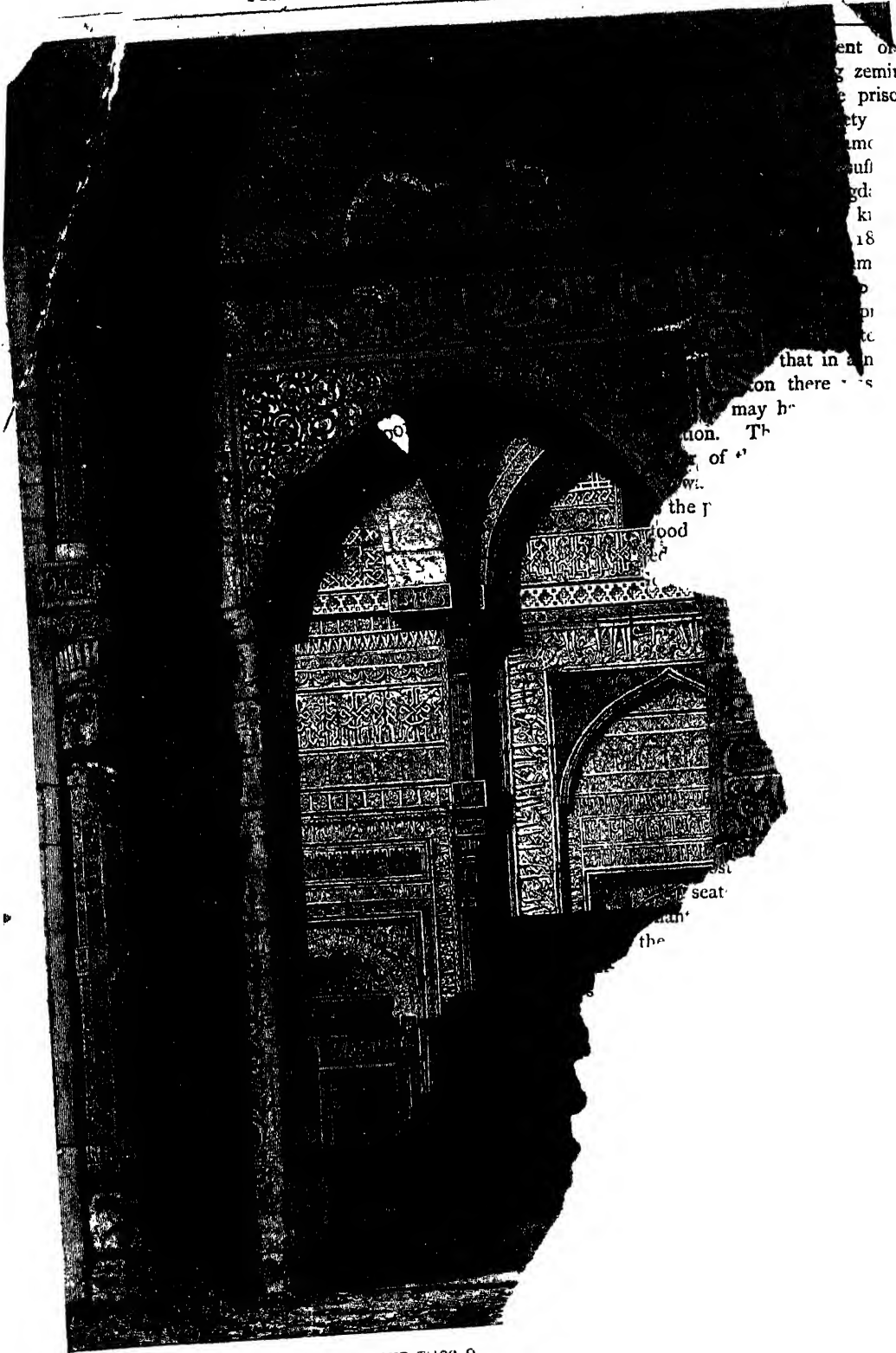
bikarpore, when a formal agreement was entered into by that prince and Major Sandeman to refer all future quarrels to British arbitration, the negotiations arranged by the major being fully ratified by

a high craggy rock, surmounted by a temple, held by them in extreme veneration, and in the service of which 200 Brahmin priests are constantly engaged. Of the twenty-seven constellations of



BY A MAHARAJAH.

Hindoo astronomy *Krithica* is the third in order, and in the Tamil month *Karthica* (November) this constellation is supposed to have peculiar potency. The *Deepum* on the lofty rock of Trincomalee is lighted at six p.m. in honour of this constellation, which is the caldron which contains it is flushed with naphor, and new cloths, of greater or lesser



VIEW OF THE VICCA

